



# MARTIAL GOD ASURA

BOOK 06

*Kindhearted Bee*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Martial God Asura

(Xiuluo Wushen)

(修罗武神)

by

Kindhearted Bee

(Shan Liang de Mi Feng)

(善良的蜜蜂)

# Synopsis

---

One night a mysterious and unexplained phenomenon occurs in the nine provinces. Five years later Chu Feng, a regular outer disciple of the Azure Dragon school, awakens one of the mysterious nine lightning beasts. And discovers an egg sealed inside him. From there we follow Chu Feng as he crosses the continent, beating up strongest senior brothers, raiding tombs, destroying sects and of course as he conquers beauties.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Flowerbridgetoo, Yang Wen Li @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.



# **Volume 6 - Hundred Refinements**

## **Ordinary Realm**

# Chapter 2150 – Lord Pavilion Master

---

“W-W-What’s going on?” Wang Qiang asked in a puzzled manner.

“Hey, brats, are the two of you trying to die? You must kneel and kowtow to the people of Luyang’s Pavilion when they pass by. If you do not wish to kneel, you must hide yourself immediately.”

Suddenly, from not far away, an old middle-aged man with sideburns shouted at Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Although that man had the appearance of a middle-aged uncle, his actual age was at least two hundred years old. He had already surpassed the age range of the younger generation.

“W-What? W-We need to k-kneel and k-kowtow just from t-them passing by? T-They a-are this a-arrogant?”

“I r-refuse. I-I’m not going to k-kneel. I s-shall see w-w-what they can do t-to me,” Hearing the advice from the middle-aged uncle, Wang Qiang instead decided to go against it. He placed his hands on his hips and held his head high up. It was a fearless appearance.

“The hell! You ugly fellow without clothes on, have you truly grown tired of living?” Seeing that Wang Qiang was refusing to hide, and instead revealed such an arrogant appearance, the middle-aged uncle grew worried.

“A-Aiyah! W-Who a-are you calling u-u-ugly?” Wang Qiang was immediately displeased by the middle-aged uncle’s insult. As he spoke, he began to walk toward that uncle.

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to shake his head with a smile on his face. He was able to tell that Wang Qiang did not really plan to beat up that uncle. After all, he had warned them out of kindness.

Wang Qiang was merely giving himself a reason so that he could get off the stage. He actually also wanted to hide.

As for Chu Feng, as he was not familiar with what that so-called Luyang's Pavilion was, he would naturally not take risks. After all, they had just arrived in this place. As such, they should do things with care.

Thus, Chu Feng followed Wang Qiang and arrived at that uncle's hiding place.

“What is this? You're planning to attack me after I warned you out of kindness?”

“Come, come, come. Although I am not fond of bullying the weak or the young, I, Liu, will not pamper such a shameless bastard as you.”

That uncle was not made afraid by Wang Qiang walking toward him aggressively. He placed both hands on his waist, raised his neck and emitted the aura of a rank three Half Martial Emperor.

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and secretly laughed. Both him and Wang Qiang had seen through that uncle's cultivation long ago.

However, that uncle was actually still showing off his aura at such a time. It was clear that he was very confident in his cultivation.

At the very least, he did not place Chu Feng and Wang Qiang in his eyes.

“Uncle, please don't be m-mistaken. I am n-not planning to f-fight you. I have m-merely come to r-r-reason with you.”

“T-Tell me, t-there are n-neither g-grievances nor g-grudges between us, w-why w-would you a-attack me personally a-after j-just meeting me?” Wang Qiang said with an expression of unreconciliation.

“My, what is this? I can't speak the truth?” The uncle was also unreconciled. However, his expression suddenly changed. With a lowered voice, he said, “Brat, we'll settle this later.”

After he finished saying those words, the uncle carefully turned his gaze toward the sky. At the same time, he started to hide himself even further away.

Seeing that, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang also turned their gazes toward the sky.

At this moment, not only was the ear-piercing bell growing louder and louder, a large group of troops were moving about in the sky in a majestic manner.

This group of people were covered by purple clouds. It was simply impossible to see through the clouds. Other than the many Luyang's Pavilion's banners that fluttered in the air, one could only hear the grandiose sound of footsteps. Those footsteps were from people walking in the air.

However, after Chu Feng unleashed his Heaven's Eyes, he was able to see through everything.

Monstrous beasts and humans were traveling together in the purple clouds. However, regardless of whether they were monstrous beasts or humans, they were all wearing the same sort of outfit. From this, it could be seen that they should be from the same power.

Merely, in the Holy Land of Martialism, the monstrous beasts and humans possessed their respective powerful factions. Only very rarely would there be a power composed of both monstrous beasts and humans.

Furthermore, the people in this power all possessed very powerful cultivations. Regardless of whether they were monstrous beasts or humans, they were all Martial Emperor-level experts. Furthermore, there were more than eight thousand of these sorts of experts in total.

A total of over eight thousand Martial Emperors. Just thinking about it, one could very well imagine how terrifying this sort of



disposition of forces was. Furthermore, the overall quality of these Martial Emperors was not low either. In fact, many among them were peak Martial Emperors, existences a single step away from becoming Half Martial Ancestors.

In addition, there were several tens of war chariots among this group of people. Furthermore, all of the war chariots were headed by Half Martial Ancestors.

Among the war chariots, one was the most dazzling. It had the appearance of a mobile castle. Through his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see that the war chariot was truly splendid and majestic.

Not mentioning the precious ornaments all around the chariot, there were also several tens of beautiful young women around it.

Those women were wearing exposing clothing. Their cultivations ranged all over. Generally, they were all not very powerful.

Furthermore, there was a common aspect to them; they were all very young. Even the oldest among them should not be more than thirty. As for the youngest, they were only in their teens.

These women were either serving tea or showing their grace. They were all surrounding a single man.

To be exact, it was a young man wearing gorgeous clothing. His appearance was very distinguished and elegant. Although Chu Feng was unable to see through his cultivation, he had a faint sensation that man's actual age was most definitely not as young as his appearance. That man was most definitely an old codger that had lived for hundreds of years.

A several hundred year-old man was actually being served by this many young women. Chu Feng felt truly disgusted by it.

It would be one thing if he took care of the women serving him. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that this man viewed the women to be nothing more than playthings.

“That is?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze shone.

He was shocked to discover that the man was wearing an unusual headdress, That headdress should be a treasure. Most importantly, on that headdress was a single character.

The character ‘Chu!!!’

At the moment when Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression, the crowd kneeling on the ground started to shout in unison.

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

“We pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master!!!”

.....

.....

The people from Luyang’s Pavilion came rapidly and left rapidly.

In merely a short moment, they were already far away in the distance. Hearing the tolling of the bell grow further and further away, the people kneeling on the ground began to stand back up.

“I wasn’t chosen again. If this is to continue, I’m not kneeling again.”

At this moment, some of the people who had knelt on the ground earlier sighed and complained. However, for the great majority of them, they reacted as if nothing had happened, and continued on with what they were doing earlier.

They actually did not feel the slightest humiliation in kneeling and kowtowing to the people from Luyang’s Pavilion. It was as if what they had done was only natural.

“Hey, u-uncle, w-what’s going o-on here?” Wang Qiang asked that uncle.

“The two of you have just arrived, right?” That uncle was

frowning as if he had seen a monster as he looked to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

“Y-Y-Yep,” Wang Qiang nodded his head with on his face. That fellow’s attitude changed extremely fast.

It was no wonder that he would end up being knocked around in the Sealing Ancient Village even though he was extremely powerful. At this moment, Chu Feng truly pondered whether Wang Qiang was someone fond of being mistreated.

# Chapter 2151 – Eating With One’s Life On The Line

---

“Since you’re newcomers, I will not bicker with you.”

“Forget about it, I’ll explain to you two what happened. What just passed by us is the strongest power in this place, Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Furthermore, when that bell sounds, it means that the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master is passing by.”

“When the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master passes by, everyone must greet him by kneeling and kowtowing. Furthermore, they must loudly shout, ‘we pay our respects to Lord Pavilion Master.’”

“Else, if they are to be discovered by the people from Luyang’s Pavilion, they will be killed on the spot.”

“Thus, if one does not wish to kneel, one must hide. To stand in the middle of the crowd like the two of you were doing earlier would simply be akin to courting death, understand?” The middle-aged man said.

“So that’s the case. T-Then, I must thank you for your warning, u-uncle.”

“W-Wait, s-something’s amiss. Since a-all those that do not wish to kneel have hidden t-t-themselves, why w-would those kneeling be so h-happy? H-Hell, a-aren’t they d-d-demeaning themselves?” Wang Qiang said with a confused expression.

“As I said, Luyang’s Pavilion is the strongest power here. Many people want to join them. After all, they would be able to strut around should they be able to join.”

“There have been times in the past that people were chosen from those that were kneeling and brought directly to Luyang’s



Pavilion.”

“Those people that were kneeling were all people that wanted to join Luyang’s Pavilion,” The middle-aged man said.

“I u-understand. I-Indeed, they w-were demeaning t-themselves,” Wang Qiang said in disdain.

“Uncle, may I ask who it is that created that Luyang’s Pavilion?” Chu Feng asked curiously. He was unable to forget the headdress that man was wearing.

After all, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had also worn one such headdress. However, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master’s headdress had the character Ying on it.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the headdress with the Ying character on it meant that the person wearing it was from the Ying Heavenly Clan.

If so, it might be possible that the man wearing the Chu character headdress would be from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Hehe, speaking of the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, he is truly an amazing character. He is someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan,” That uncle said.

“Chu Heavenly C-Clan?” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang immediately opened his mouth and involuntarily turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had already told Wang Qiang the fact that he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan on their way to the Outer World. Thus, Wang Qiang already knew about the complicated relationship Chu Feng had with the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Ugly fellow, don’t tell me you don’t even know about the Chu Heavenly Clan? They are the rulers of an Upper Realm. They are an existence that controls countless Ordinary Realms and Lower Realms. To us, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan are not humans. Rather, they are gods. Do you understand?” The middle-

aged man said to Wang Qiang.

“G-Got it, got it. H-How could I not e-even know about the Chu H-Heavenly Clan?” Wang Qiang said with a teehee laughter.

“With how fearless and ignorant the two of you were acting, it is truly possible that you do not know about the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Well, it is fate that brought us together. Thus, I’ll give you two this advice. While you can offend anyone, you must not offend the people from Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“In truth, Luyang’s Pavilion was not able to become the hegemon of this place because they possessed absolute strength. Rather, it was precisely because the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master is from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, there were barely any powers that dared to fight him head on. Upon finding out that he planned to proclaim himself hegemon over this region, many powers capable of contending against him decided to leave this region. That is how he managed to become the hegemon here,” The middle-aged man said.

“Uncle, w-where d-do you find the tastiest f-food here?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Ugly fellow, are you listening to me or not?” Seeing that Wang Qiang was not paying much attention to the many things he said, the middle-aged man revealed an expression of anger.

“U-Uncle, I am l-listening to you. M-Merely, I am t-truly hungry,” Wang Qiang held his stomach and exclaimed miserably.

“How could martial cultivators be hungry? The way I see it, you’re feeling gluttonous, no?” The middle-aged man said with disdain.

“Hehe, y-yes, yes, yes,” Wang Qiang did not bother to refute him, and nodded his head repeatedly. He was smiling very shamelessly.

“If you want to eat fine food, then it would naturally be the

Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. The food there is the most delicious.”

“Unfortunately, the food there is also truly expensive. Even I am unable to afford it. As for you two brats, you are even more unable to afford it,” The middle-aged man said.

“N-N-Nonsense! T-This person here is a r-rich fellow. How c-could we not even b-be able to afford f-food? U-Uncle, lead the w-way, we’ll t-treat you,” Wang Qiang said while pointing to Chu Feng.

“Are you for real or just joking around?” The middle-aged man revealed a skeptical gaze.

“T-Truly. U-Uncle, we are truly a-able to afford t-the f-f-food,” Wang Qiang said.

“No, what I’m asking is whether or not you two are really going to invite me to a meal,” The middle-aged man said.

Hearing those words, Wang Qiang’s expression immediately changed. He thought to himself that this uncle was actually a glutton.

“Uncle, what is the most important thing between people?” Chu Feng asked the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man was puzzled. Thus, he asked, “What is it?”

“It’s trust. The two of us are both honest and good young men. As such, we will not deceive you,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, boy, you appear to be more trustworthy, much more trustworthy than that stutterer.”

“Very well, I’ll lead the way for you two,” The middle-aged man said.

“The hell! T-This is d-discrimination!” Wang Qiang had a displeased expression.

However, the middle-aged man ignored Wang Qiang and started

to chat with Chu Feng.

As they chatted, they arrived before a restaurant.

That restaurant was very extravagant. It was the tallest restaurant in the city, with a total of a hundred floors.

Furthermore, all of the tiles, bricks and ornaments were red. It possessed a very distinguished characteristic.

This was the famous Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant.

Most importantly, several tens of guards stood at the entranceway of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. Furthermore, the majority of them were peak Half Martial Emperors.

Their leader was actually a Martial Emperor-level expert. Although his cultivation wasn't very high, it remained that he was a Martial Emperor.

A Martial Emperor that could move about unhindered in the Holy Land of Martialism actually ended up being a gatekeeper in this place.

From this, one could tell that the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant possessed quite a remarkable background.

“See, I didn't deceive you two. This Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant is ran by our City Master. If you two don't have the money, it's best that you not dine in there.”

“The reason for that is because our City Master is vicious and merciless. He is not someone that the two of you can afford to offend. If you are to offend him, you will be killed,” The middle-aged man started to panic slightly after seeing the guards. He began to urge Chu Feng and Wang Qiang to go elsewhere.

“Uncle Liu, don't be afraid. We can afford to eat here.”

Chu Feng smiled calmly. After chatting on their way here, he had already come to know that this middle-aged man was called Liu



Yue. He was a native to this city, and did not belong to any sect or power. Although his cultivation was relatively decent, he possessed no status in the city.

Chu Feng felt that this Liu Yue possessed a good nature, and was a character with integrity. Else, he would not be one of those people that refused to kneel to Luyang's Pavilion.

Furthermore, as he was the first person Chu Feng and Wang Qiang got to know after entering into the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Chu Feng truly wished to invite him to a proper meal.

"Chu Feng, think about it properly. This is truly not a joke," Liu Yue was still not at ease. After all, from what had happened earlier, he felt that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were being overly confident.

"Uncle Liu, have you forgotten what is the most important between people?" Chu Feng asked.

"Forget about it. At the very most, I'll just die. Come, I'll show you two the way," Liu Yue agreed half doubtingly. Uncertainty still filled his heart.

Thus, even though Liu Yue was walking toward the entrance of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant confidently, he was mumbling nonstop, "This is truly ridiculous. For the sake of a meal, I'm gambling even my life."

# Chapter 2152 – Looking Down Upon Others With Dog's Eyes

---

“Stop!” However, right after Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue approached the restaurant, several tens of guards blocked their path.

The guard with the Martial Emperor-level cultivation was standing at the forefront of the guards. He had a very fierce and ill-intended gaze.

“Liu Yue, is this a place where someone like you can set foot? Scram!” It turned out that those people had not come here for Chu Feng. Rather, their target was Liu Yue.

“Is this the way that such a big restaurant does business, the way that it entertains its guests?” Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed as he asked coldly.

“We would naturally be refined and courteous when entertaining guests. However, for little bandits like you who only plan to stir up trouble, there is no need for us to show you any etiquette,” Seeing that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had arrived together with Liu Yue, the guards also did not place them in their eyes.

Suddenly, the leading guard shouted at them, “Scram immediately. If you don’t scam immediately, do not blame us for being impolite!”

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” Seeing that, Liu Yue became even more panicky. He grabbed Chu Feng and Wang Qiang with his hands and tried to pull them out of this place.

However, the moment he grabbed them, Liu Yue was startled. He was surprised to discover that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were standing firmly like Mount Tai; he was simply unable to move them at all.

“I shall see how you all are going to be impolite,” Chu Feng said

coldly.

“Truly one who refuses a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit. You are courting a beating,” In response, the leading guard snorted coldly. Then, a layer of boundless oppressive might swept forth.

“Huuu~~~”

The oppressive might of a rank two Martial Emperor swept across. Immediately, violent whistling wind could be heard. Like a fierce tiger descending from the mountain, the surrounding space started to distort.

After that oppressive might was revealed, the corners of that guard’s mouth lifted involuntarily.

Naturally, this oppressive might was not the limit of his power. However, he felt that this oppressive might was more than sufficient to blow Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue rolling and crawling on the ground and leaving them bruised and bloodied.

Not only would they suffer external injuries, they would also suffer internal injuries. Without at least eight or ten years, they would not be able to recover from those injuries. In fact, it might even be possible that their future prospects would be ruined.

However, that guard did not feel that he was being excessive at all. The way he saw it, this was the consequence of offending him. Chu Feng and the others had brought this upon themselves.

“.....”

However, after that powerful oppressive might dispersed, the guards present all revealed astonished expressions. This was especially true for that Martial Emperor-level guard; he was so shocked that his mouth was wide open. His expression was uglier than even someone who had just been fed swine feces.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were not moved in the slightest; they were not at all affected by his oppressive might. Furthermore, even Liu Yue, a mere Half Martial

Emperor, was completely unharmed.

“Are you done?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ah?” That guard’s expression changed. He was at a complete loss.

“Then it’s my turn,” As Chu Feng spoke, coldness flashed through his eyes. Then, his rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth.

“Boom~~~”

Immediately, heaven and earth started to tremble. The guards present were all like fallen leaves as they were knocked flying by the shaking. Ruthlessly, they crashed into the Hundred Levels Red Sparrow’s Restaurant.

The powerful impact caused even the Hundred Levels Red Sparrow’s Restaurant to tremble violently. As for those guards, they all vomited out mouthfuls of blood; they were seriously injured.

“T-T-T-This...” At this moment, Liu Yue was struck dumb. No matter what, he had never expected Chu Feng, a mere young man, to be this powerful.

After all, he knew very well that the leader of the guards was a Martial Emperor, an actual Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng was actually able to send a Martial Emperor flying with merely his oppressive might. He was truly stunned by this.

“What audacity!!!” Right at this moment, a white-haired old man walked out from the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant. This old man wore gorgeous clothes, and revealed a golden gaze. Furthermore, he possessed the cultivation of a rank seven Martial Emperor.

“C-Crap, quickly, we need to escape,” Seeing that old man, Liu Yue revealed a frightened expression. He turned around and tried

to leave.

As someone from this place, he knew how powerful that old man was. He was the master of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant, the City Master of this city. He was the strongest person in this city.

Since Chu Feng had actually injured his subordinate, it was obvious that Chu Feng would end up suffering.

Even though the aura Chu Feng emitted was extremely powerful and had deeply astonished Liu Yue, his cultivation was too low. Thus, he was simply unable to tell that Chu Feng's aura was that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Thus, the way he saw it, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, he would not be more powerful than that City Master. If they did not escape now, the only thing that awaited them would be death.

“Insolent fools, you are truly filled with overwhelming audacity!”

However, right at this moment, that City Master suddenly turned around and angrily berated the guards lying on the floor.

Not only did he berate them, he even raised his hand and gave the guards resounding slaps to their faces, leaving them with bloodied noses and swollen faces.

“Quickly, apologize to the three guests immediately!” The City Master shouted.

“Dear guests, please spare us, please spare us,” The guards did not dare to hesitate. They immediately crawled back up while grunting with pain, and then kneeled before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue. With snot and tears, they began to kowtow and beg for forgiveness.

It was a truly wretched and miserable scene.

However, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang completely ignored the begging from the guards. It was as if they did not even see them.

The two of them knew very well that dogs like them who would threaten others based on their master's power were unworthy of their sympathy.

“You bunch of dogs who look at others with contempt with your dog eyes, continue to kneel!” Seeing that, the City Master shouted again. Then, he put a smile on his face, turned to Chu Feng and said, “Dear guests, please come in. The inconsiderate reception of the guards was my fault. Today, the meal's on me. Please, eat as you wish.”

At this moment, Liu Yue was completely baffled. He thought to himself, ‘What the hell is this? The fierce and vicious City Master had always been someone who shields his people. If anyone dares to attack his subordinates, he'd definitely skin them alive.’

‘What Chu Feng did just now most definitely triggered the anger of the City Master. Yet, why did what I anticipate not happen? Instead, everything's turned around. The City Master is actually greeting them with a smile on his face?’

“That's more like it,” Chu Feng had an expressionless face as he walked into the restaurant.

Although Liu Yue was confused by why the City Master was acting in such a servile manner, Chu Feng knew why very well.

That City Master had noticed the disturbance outside the moment the guards had blocked their path.

Merely, he had not concerned himself with it. From this, it could be seen that the City Master was also looking down on Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Liu Yue, and was deliberately allowing his guards to drive them away.

As for his current behavior, it was naturally because he was scared by Chu Feng's strength.

Although that City Master was also a Martial Emperor, he should know very well how meek his status was before Chu Feng, a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. He knew very well whether or not he could afford to offend Chu Feng.

Then, that City Master personally led the way for Chu Feng and the others. He brought them to the most luxurious room in the restaurant.

“Dear guests, what might you all wish to eat? All of the food that we serve here is made with the best quality materials. We then have Royal-cloak World Spiritists create medicinal pellets that our top-notch cooks use to make the food.”

“Not only is our food delicious, it also smells extremely good, and can strengthen one’s body and replenish one’s martial power,” the City Master introduced his restaurant.

“Y-Y-You g-got dumplings?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Naturally. Dumplings are a specialty of our restaurant. We have all kinds of dumplings,” The City Master said proudly.

“G-Good, b-bring me a s-shit load,” Wang Qiang said.

“This...” Hearing those words, the City master started to frown. He said, “I’m sorry, while we have all kinds of dumplings, [we do not possess excrement dumplings.](#)”

“Puu...” Hearing those words, the tea that Chu Feng just drank was sprayed out with his laughter. Furthermore, by pure coincidence and unlucky seating, his tea was sprayed directly onto Wang Qiang’s face.

The way Wang Qiang said large amount sounds exactly the same as saying number two.

## Chapter 2153 – Wang Qiang’s Charm

---

“Bang~~~”

Wang Qiang slammed his palm onto the table. Then, he used his sleeve to wipe away the tea Chu Feng had sprayed all over his face.

With an angry expression on his face, he looked to the City Master, “W-W-What is w-with your comprehension a-ability?”

“I’m t-telling you to bring me a l-lot of dumplings, not to b-bring me dumplings with e-excrement filling.”

“Did you t-take me a-as a c-crazy man? W-W-Why would I e-eat excrement dumplings?”

“Eh... it is this old man’s fault. I will go and prepare the dumplings right away. Dear guests, please wait.”

At this moment, that City Master’s face turned green with fear. Evidently, not only was he afraid of Chu Feng, he was also very afraid of Wang Qiang. Thus, even though he had yet to ask what Chu Feng and Liu Yue wanted to eat, he immediately left to escape from Wang Qiang’s anger.

“T-Truly, w-what is w-with his c-comprehension ability?” Wang Qiang continued to complain.

As for Chu Feng, he was laughing nonstop. He felt that Wang Qiang was truly amusing. Traveling with him truly made the journey a lot more fun.

Then, a server arrived so Chu Feng and Liu Yue could order their food. Chu Feng was completely unrestrained, and practically ordered all of the delicious specialties this place offered.

However, even with this being the case, the City Master still added many additional delicious delicacies for Chu Feng and the others.

When the delicacies began to arrive, filling the table and piling



up like a small mountain, even Chu Feng nearly drooled. It must be said that the aroma of the food was truly good.

As for Wang Qiang, he began to eat large mouthfuls of food. That fellow did not even use chopsticks when eating. He was actually grabbing the food with his hands. Even when drinking his soup, he would use his hand. It was truly a disgusting sight.

That being said, Liu Yue, who had been very offended and carefree earlier, appeared to be very awkward and silent right now.

“Uncle Liu, don’t be afraid. This City Master will not dare to do anything to you today. Likewise, he will not dare to do anything to you in the future,” Chu Feng managed to guess what Liu Yue was worried about.

“Chu Feng, Wang Qiang, may I know exactly what sort of origin the two of you possess?” Liu Yue asked. As he spoke those words, he took a deliberate glance at Wang Qiang.

Evidently, he was not only afraid of the City Master, he was also scared of Wang Qiang. After all, he had been very rude toward Wang Qiang earlier, and even declared him to be ugly and a stutterer. It could be said that he had insulted Wang Qiang’s shortcomings without any restraint.

It was as Wang Qiang said, what Liu Yue had done was make discriminative personal attacks.

Originally, Liu Yue had not cared about insulting Wang Qiang. However, after he realized that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were not simple, he began to regret his decisions. In the end, he was worried that Wang Qiang would take revenge on him.

“Our origins are not important. What is important is that we are your friends.”

“Wang Qiang, say, am I correct?” Chu Feng was able to see through what Liu Yue was worried about. Thus, he used his hand to push Wang Qiang.

“R-Right, U-Uncle Liu, it’s a-all thanks to you. If n-not for you, we w-w-would not have been able to find t-this much good f-food,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile. As a carefree individual, Wang Qiang did not hold a grudge against Liu Yue.

Seeing Wang Qiang’s reaction, Liu Yue smiled in a relieved manner.

“Come, Uncle Liu, let me offer you a toast of wine,” Chu Feng raised his wine cup.

“I-I-I’ll offer you a t-toast too,” Wang Qiang also joined in.

“Good,” In response, Liu Yue raised his own wine cup too.

After drinking the wine and several more cups of wine, Liu Yue let go of all the worries in his heart and became more and more merry.

As the saying goes, after wine, one’s true nature will show. Liu Yue was a typical such individual. After several cups of wine, he became very talkative and started to say all sorts of things.

“Chu Feng, Wang Qiang.”

“Listen to me. I can tell that the two of you are extraordinary people. It is no wonder that you are so bold.”

“However, I must still advise the two of you. This place is not a safe place at all.”

“Not mentioning Luyang’s Pavilion, a demonic woman also appeared here in recent days. That demonic woman is extremely malicious. She goes around to seduce men all over the place. Then, she’ll eat the flesh of those men. The two of you must be careful.”

“Especially you, Chu Feng. Look at how soft-skinned and tender-fleshed you are. It’s not safe at all out there.”

“By comparison, Wang Qiang would be much safer,” Liu Yue said drunkenly.

“The hell! Uncle Liu, what are you i-i-implying with that? A-Are

you s-saying that I am n-not as handsome as C-Chu Feng?" Hearing those words, Wang Qiang was displeased.

"I'm not trying to insult you. Merely, you are truly not as handsome as Chu Feng," At this moment, Liu Yue was extremely bold. He spoke without any worry.

"A-Aiya, if y-you say it like that, I'll be u-u-un-unhappy. I don't know about Chu Feng, but i-in terms of being charming, I, W-Wang Qiang am definitely the first under heaven."

"Here, l-let me e-explain it like this. I-In this world, t-there is no woman t-that I, Wang Qiang, c-cannot handle. Not t-to mention a demonic w-woman, even if it is a woman that is as b-beautiful as a flower, she w-would not be able to e-escape should I, Wang Qiang, w-want to c-c-capture her," Wang Qiang smirked while patting his chest.

"Puu..." Hearing those words, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself and burst into laughter.

Although the time Chu Feng and Wang Qiang knew one another could not be considered an extremely long time, it was not short either.

Thus, Chu Feng knew whether or not that fellow was popular with women.

At the very least, Chu Feng knew that Wang Qiang had tried to hit on Xian Miaomiao, Tantai Xue, Bai Ruchen, Sima Ying and even the Misty Peak's Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu and Dong Xue, all those beautiful women.

Merely, not a single one of them felt a favorable impression toward Wang Qiang.

Even when conversing with Wang Qiang, they only did so because they were unwilling to offend Wang Qiang, as he possessed a high level of cultivation and was Chu Feng's friend.

In fact, for Xian Miaomiao, she would rain ruthless insults at

Wang Qiang should he dare to approach her. She would refuse to even give him the chance to approach her.

Thus, Chu Feng knew very well that Wang Qiang was boasting.

He simply possessed no fate with women.

“C-C-Chu Feng, y-you’re actually laughing at me? I h-have considered you a b-b-brother in vain,” Seeing Chu Feng bursting into laughter, Wang Qiang was displeased.

“Wang Qiang, I am truly not laughing at you. I am just unable to contain myself,” Chu Feng said while laughing.

Wang Qiang sighed. “It would a-appear that you w-will not trust me u-unless I s-show you some proof.”

“S-Since that is the c-case, I, W-Wang Qiang, will s-show great k-kindness and b-broaden y-your horizons t-today,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he took out a box from his Cosmos Sack.

Although Wang Qiang’s outfit was extremely tattered, that box was extremely exquisite. After Wang Qiang opened that box, a red jade bottle appeared within it.

“H-Here, the two of you, l-look carefully. M-Make that e-extremely carefully. T-This is my t-treasure.”

“W-With this, r-regardless of how p-proud and aloof a w-woman might be, even if she is fond of w-women and p-possesses no interest for m-men, s-she will still f-fall for m-me completely once I u-use this treasure. F-For the rest of h-her life, s-she will re-refuse to leave me,” Wang Qiang held the bottle and said proudly.

“Puu~~~” Seeing that jade bottle, Chu Feng burst into more laughter. Even Liu Yue burst into laughter.

The reason for that was because the red jade bottle had a slip of paper pasted onto it. On that paper were several words. The handwriting of the words was extremely ugly. However, that was not the important aspect. Most importantly was the content of the

words:

‘Whoever this hits shall fall in love with me!!!’

## Chapter 2154 – That Is The Demonic Woman

---

“F-Fuck! Chu Feng, U-Uncle Liu, the two o-of you a-are truly r-refusing to believe me here.”

“F-Forget about it. If you d-don’t believe me, so b-be it. T-Those with s-strength do not necessarily need to p-prove themselves.”

“I, Wang Qiang, am a l-low-key i-individual,” Wang Qiang placed away the bottle.

Chu Feng and Liu Yue seemed to have anticipated this action from Wang Qiang. Thus, the two of them did not bother to expose him. However, they were still unable to contain their laughter.

“No, i-it would s-seem that I must prove m-myself.”

“E-Else, the t-two of you w-will really t-t-take me, Wang Qiang, as s-someone who boasts.”

As Wang Qiang spoke, he moved to the window and looked outside. Evidently, he was planning to find a beauty to test out his charm so that he could prove himself to Chu Feng and Liu Yue.

Originally, Chu Feng did not take Wang Qiang’s action to heart at all. Based on his understanding of Wang Qiang, he determined that Wang Qiang was putting on an act, that he would not do anything.

Even if he did do something, it would only be a farce. In fact, he might end up concluding with a tragedy.

“Wow, t-that beauty, s-she’s beautiful enough,” However, not only was Wang Qiang becoming more and more serious, he even started to shout loudly.

“Where? Let me see,” Seeing that, Uncle Liu also stood up and rushed to the window.

“Aiyah, when did such a beauty appear in our city? This is the first time I’ve seen someone like her,” To Chu Feng’s surprise, even Uncle Liu reacted with excitement.

With both of them acting like this, Chu Feng became curious too. Thus, Chu Feng walked to the window to look. He discovered that a large group of people were standing around the city gate.

The great majority of them were men. Densely packed, they formed a small sea of people. In the center of that sea of people was a woman.

That woman was truly beautiful, devastating beautiful, in fact. Her enchanting figure and curvy outline could be said to be perfect. Her fair and exquisite skin seemed to be extremely soft.

A rarity. She was truly a rarity. Especially when she wore that red dress, she appeared extremely hot and sexy.

“Haha, the h-heavens a-are helping me. T-That girl is m-mine,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he planned to leap out through the window.

“Wait,” However, Chu Feng grabbed Wang Qiang. He said, “Something’s fishy about that woman. With how beautiful she is, why would she be standing there and exposing her beauty to that many men? Someone like her should be extremely conceited. Ordinary men should not be able to enter her discerning eyes.”

“Aiya, y-you’re o-overthinking it. I-Isn’t a w-woman’s beauty f-for men to s-see? D-Don’t tell me that t-their beauty is for t-themselves to see,” Wang Qiang brushed it off.

“That’s only one of the reasons. Most importantly, I am unable to see through her cultivation,” Chu Feng said solemnly.

“Doesn’t matter. Just w-watch my p-performance.”

“N-No m-matter how powerful she might be, t-today, I, y-your brother am going t-to conquer her,” Wang Qiang leapt out through the window of the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant and landed in the sea of people.

Then, Wang Qiang passed through the crowd and arrived at the center of the crowd. Suddenly, he shouted, “Ahhh!!!”

Not only did his shout successfully capture the attention of that woman, he also captured the attention of everyone around him.

Although that red-dressed woman was extremely beautiful, Wang Qiang's outfit was truly strange. Thus, his appearance caused the crowd's gaze to shine with shock.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang started to look at that red-dressed woman with an adoring gaze. Slowly, he began to walk toward that woman one step at a time.

Not only was he walking toward her, he was even reciting poetry as he walked toward her.

“Ahh!!!”

“M-M-My d-dear beauty.”

“I am w-willing to b-be t-turned into a s-stone bridge and endure five h-hundred years of wind, sun and r-rain. I w-wish for n-nothing m-more than you w-walking over me so t-that I might s-see the color of y-your p-panties.”

Wang Qiang's words stunned not only the surrounding crowd, but even Chu Feng and Liu Yue who were still far away.

“The hell!? A hoodlum!”

“Scoundrel! Animal! Simply a pervert!”

Immediately, the crowd burst into an uproar. The men present were all enraged. They rolled up their sleeves and planned to attack Wang Qiang.

They had the appearance of masses beating up a hoodlum to help out a beauty.

However, that red-dressed woman did not reveal the slightest trace of anger. Instead, her eyes narrowed into two beautiful crescents as she asked Wang Qiang, “To dare speak to me like that, do you not fear death?”

“To d-die by a t-t-tree peony, e-even in d-death, I w-will f-feel



accomplished,” Wang Qiang said proudly.

“What about you all?” The red-dressed woman looked to the other surrounding men.

“I’m willing.”

“I’m also willing to die for you.”

In response, the men all began to shout their willingness to die. They even began to swear upon the heavens to express their determination.

“Very well. Since you all are willing to die for me, then go ahead and die for me,” Suddenly, that red-dressed woman’s eyes shone with crimson light, revealing a frightening killing intent.

At the same time, her beautiful body started to change.

Her alluring figure immediately grew fatter by more than tenfold. Her fair skin turned fiery red.

Her black hair turned red as well, and started to flutter about everywhere in a demonic manner.

Her delicate, ruby-lipped mouth became enormous. As she opened that mouth, sharp teeth were revealed.

“This is bad,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed. His body shifted, and he began to fly toward where Wang Qiang was standing.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at the moment Chu Feng moved, a beast-like roar sounded. Then, a violent wind began to sweep around in all directions.

Faced with that violent wind, Chu Feng was actually unable to approach it. In fact, he was pushed back repeatedly.

After the violent wind passed, Chu Feng was shocked to discover that many of the buildings in the city had collapsed. There were

countless casualties.

The men that had surrounded that red-dressed woman earlier had all disappeared.

This included Wang Qiang.

“Damn it!”

Chu Feng flew into the sky and used his Heaven’s Eyes and spirit power to survey the surroundings. However, he was simply unable to find that red-dressed woman nor Wang Qiang.

The woman had disappeared. Wang Qiang had also disappeared, along with all of the men that had surrounded that woman.

In that moment of chaos, Chu Feng suddenly recalled what Liu Yue had mentioned earlier. He said that a demonic woman that specialized in capturing men had appeared in this area in recent days.

Thus, Chu Feng returned to the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant and asked Liu Yue, “Uncle Liu, was that woman earlier the legendary demonic woman?”

“I, I, I don’t know either. Merely, that seemed to resemble it,” At this moment, Liu Yue was deeply frightened. After all, the might emitted by the red-dressed woman earlier had been truly frightening.

“Dear guest, that was indeed that demonic woman,” Right at this moment, the Hundred Levels Red Sparrows Restaurant’s owner, this city’s City Master, appeared.

“You know about that demonic woman?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dear guest, this old man does know a bit about that demonic woman,” The City Master said.

“Tell me about it,” Chu Feng said.

“No one knows whether that demonic woman is a demon or a ghost. All we know is that woman originates from the Darknight

Ghost Forest,” The City Master said.

“Darknight Ghost Forest?” Chu Feng started to frown. He felt amiss merely by hearing the name of that place.

# Chapter 2155 – Move Aside

---

“The Darknight Ghost Forest is a very frightening place. It possesses many spirit formations from the Ancient Era. It is simply impossible for ordinary people to set foot in there. Thus, no one dares to enter that place. It is a forbidden area.”

“In truth, other than that demonic woman, practically no living creature could survive in the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“The demonic women have always been feeding on young men. It seems to be capable of increasing their cultivation. However, no one knows exactly why they need to do that.”

“Wait a moment, you said they? There’s more than a single demonic woman?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. However, the number of demonic women is not a lot either. One would generally appear once every several hundred years,” The City Master said.

“One every several hundred years? Could they be the same one?” Chu Feng asked.

“That shouldn’t be possible. The reason for that is because all of the demonic women that appeared before were killed. Thus, it’s impossible for them to be the same demonic woman.”

“Furthermore, even though the demonic women that appeared before were strong, they were still at a level that we could handle. However, the demonic woman that has appeared this time around is exceptionally powerful.”

“Dear guest, I am able to tell that you are a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, you should have also sensed that demonic woman’s strength earlier. She is most definitely not an ordinary Half Martial Ancestor,” The City Master said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded. Earlier, as he was worried for Wang Qiang’s safety and only wanted to save Wang Qiang, he had

forgotten about that.

With his strength, if he were to truly fight against that demonic woman, he might really be no match for that demonic woman.

After all, that demonic woman was able to capture that many people in front of Chu Feng without him being able to do anything. Instead, Chu Feng was shook back several meters by a single scream from that demonic woman.

From that, it could be seen that that demonic woman was extremely powerful. Her strength greatly surpassed Chu Feng's.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He couldn't just ignore Wang Qiang. After all, Wang Qiang was his friend.

However, with how powerful that demonic woman was, Chu Feng would be no match for her. As such, how was he to save Wang Qiang?

"Dear guest, although the demonic woman that appeared this time around is much more powerful than the ones that appeared before, the demonic women that appeared before were all very strong too."

"Actually, there is a method to eliminate demonic women," That City Master said.

"What is the method?" Chu Feng asked.

"Across from the Darknight Ghost Forest is a mountain called Radiance Immortal Mountain."

"Inside Radiance Immortal Mountain is a spring. That spring is called the Demon Subduing Spring."

"The water of the Demon Subduing Spring is capable of restraining the demonic women."

"As long as you sprinkle the spring water from the Demon Subduing Spring onto the demonic woman, the demonic woman's strength will decrease enormously," The City Master said.

“Where is that Radiance Immortal Mountain?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dear guest, please wait a moment,” As the City Master spoke, he took out a map. He marked three locations on the map with circles. Then, he drew a line and handed the map to Chu Feng. He said, “Dear guest, please have a look. This is where our Red Sparrows City is located. As for this here, it is the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Opposite from the Radiance Immortal Mountain is the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“The demonic woman is in the Darknight Ghost Forest. That place has always been their lair. No one knows how the demonic women are able to survive in the Darknight Ghost Forest.”

“As for the Demon Subduing Spring, it is located in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Merely, its exact location is very hard to tell.”

“The reason for that is because the location of the spring changes constantly. Thus, no one knows its exact location.”

“Furthermore, dear guest, if you plan to go there, you must be careful. Although the Radiance Immortal Mountain might sound very upright, there are many ferocious beasts living in it. Many of the ferocious beasts even possessed Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivations. It is a truly dangerous location,” The City Master said.

Chu Feng put away the map, and then asked, “Why are you helping me?” Chu Feng had already managed to see through the nature of the Red Sparrows City’s City Master and knew that he did not seem to be an individual who would help others out of kindness of his heart.

“That demonic woman is extremely cunning. Instead of committing her crimes in the vicinity of the Darknight Ghost Forest, she instead came here to commit her crimes.”

“It’s actually very simple. She is afraid of the powers in the vicinity of the Darknight Ghost Forest and the Radiance Immortal

Mountain. That is why she came to bully us, who are weak.”

“Dear guest possesses the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor at such a young age. It means that Dear Guest most definitely possesses an extraordinary origin. If you are willing to help take care of that demonic woman, it would be a blessing for us.”

“As for me, I have not done much. I have only provided dear guests a bit of useful information,” The City Master explained himself in a very deferential, honest and sincere manner.

Chu Feng smiled indifferently. He stared at the City Master with his sharp gaze and said, “I hope that what you have said is the truth.”

“Uncle Liu, let’s go,” After Chu Feng said those words, he turned around and a light wind swept through the room. Then, Chu Feng and Uncle Liu disappeared.

Right after Chu Feng left, that City Master’s complexion turned deathly pale. Pea-sized beads of sweat began to drip down his face like rain.

Then, his body grew weak and, with a ‘putt,’ he fell to his butt. He began to involuntarily and violently tremble.

“Lord City Master, what’s wrong?” Seeing that, a large amount of guards rushed in.

“I’m fine,” The City Master waved his hand. Then, he said, “Today, you all have nearly brought forth a great calamity for me. You bunch of bastards with no eyes. We are not people that can afford to offend just anyone.”

“Lord City Master, exactly who is that man?” Some curious guards asked.

“I also do not know exactly who he is. However, he is most definitely not someone that we can afford to offend. Not to mention the power that might be standing behind him, merely he

himself with his cultivation of rank one Half Martial Ancestor would be able to completely destroy our Red Sparrows City with a wave of his sleeve,” The City Master said.

Hearing those words, the guards all revealed expressions of fear. One by one, they began to feel lingering fear.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?”

After moving several miles away from the Red Sparrows City, Liu Yue held a Cosmos Sack and looked to Chu Feng with an excited yet embarrassed expression.

That Cosmos Sack was given to him by Chu Feng. Contained within it were weapons, cultivation resources and a large amount of treasures.

To Liu Yue, the things in that Cosmos Sack might be things that he would not be able to gather in his entire lifetime.

At this moment, Liu Yue finally realized why even the Red Sparrows City’s City Master was afraid of Chu Feng. Chu Feng was no ordinary person.

Merely, Liu Yue felt embarrassed to accept such an enormous gift. After all, he and Chu Feng were neither related nor friends. Furthermore, he had not provided any enormous assistance to Chu Feng. They were merely strangers that only recently became acquainted with one another.

“Uncle Liu, my identity might end up bringing you disaster in the future. Take that Cosmos Sack and move far away from Red Sparrows City, far away from this place,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and left without waiting for Liu Yue’s response.

While Chu Feng and Liu Yue had only recently been acquainted, he did not wish for this short while of knowing him to bring harm upon Liu Yue.

Chu Feng knew that although he was still a nobody right now, he



would one day have enemies.

Perhaps, at that time, wanted posters for Chu Feng would be spread all over. If Liu Yue were to continue to stay in Red Sparrows City, someone like the Red Sparrows City's City Master might end up selling Liu Yue out for the sake of personal benefits.

Chu Feng journeyed according to the map and passed over mountain ranges. He traveled without sleeping or eating.

He did so because he wanted to arrive at Radiance Immortal Mountain quickly. He wanted to rescue Wang Qiang; he did not want Wang Qiang to be eaten by that demonic woman.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped. He looked to the vast and limitless mountain range before him. A surprised expression appeared in Chu Feng's gaze.

That mountain range could be said to be the most enormous mountain range Chu Feng had encountered so far. Even the giant continuous mountain ranges in the Holy Land of Martialism were not as vast as the one before him.

As for this mountain range, it was that Radiance Immortal Mountain.

"Move aside!" Suddenly, a shout sounded from behind Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2156 – Bizarre Ferocious Beast

---

Chu Feng turned around and discovered that there were several hundred silhouettes on the distant horizon. They were speeding toward him through the air.

Those people were all riding a sort of horse-like animal. However, those were not horses, nor were they monstrous beasts. Instead, they should be a sort of special mount. The mounts possessed extremely fast speed; they were actually able to reach the speed of Half Martial Ancestors.

Thus, although they were very far away when they shouted at Chu Feng, they were already less than ten thousand meters away from Chu Feng after a mere moment passed.

“Hey, are you deaf or what? I said move out the way, can you not hear me?!” The woman leading the group shouted at Chu Feng angrily.

That woman appeared to be only eighteen or nineteen years old. Her appearance could be said to be very young. That said, she was quite a beauty. However, her eyes were filled with hostility.

Chu Feng completely disregarded that woman. The reason for that was because she was only a rank one Martial Emperor. Although that cultivation was very strong for someone her age, she could not amount to anything before Chu Feng.

However, although that woman was weak, the people following behind her were all very strong.

The great majority of them were peak Martial Emperors. However, there were also Half Martial Ancestors among them. The strongest in the group were two white-haired old men.

Those two old men possessed the exact same appearance. They should be twin brothers. Although they were wearing ordinary clothing, they were unable to contain their extraordinary air. The

two of them were rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

“Is this place your home? Why must I move aside just because you demand it?”

“Furthermore, with how vast the sky is, why don’t you all move around me? Why must you move through where I am standing? Are you all fine in the brain?” Chu Feng ended up refuting them.

Although there were two rank six Half Martial Ancestors among his opponents, and their overall strength was very strong, likely originating from an extraordinary power, Chu Feng was not scared of them.

Although Chu Feng was not fond of stirring up troubles, he was not one to cower from troubles. Chu Feng would not tolerate someone picking a fight with him.

“Aiyo, you have truly grown tired of living. Do you know who I am?”

“Kneel immediately. Else, I’ll break your legs,” That woman raised her whip and lashed at Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

As there was a distance of ten thousand meters between her and Chu Feng, her whip would naturally not reach Chu Feng. However, after martial power was instilled into the whip, it turned into a ten thousand meter-long golden whip. Like a giant dragon, the whip lashed toward Chu Feng.

However, how could such an attack possibly injure Chu Feng?

“Humph.”

Chu Feng stood where he was without moving at all. He merely snorted coldly.

“Huu~~~”

Immediately, the oppressive might of a Half Martial Ancestor swept forth. The ten thousand meter-long giant golden whip was

instantly shattered by Chu Feng's oppressive might.

“Rank one Half Martial Ancestor?”

Sensing Chu Feng's aura, the expressions of many of the people in the group changed. Even the two white-haired old man who stood aloof and remote from the group turned their gazes toward Chu Feng. A trace of surprise was present in their eyes.

Evidently, they had not expected someone of Chu Feng's age to have that sort of cultivation.

“You dare go against my younger sister? I shall cripple you!”  
However, a robust black haired man shouted angrily.

Once he said those words, other than the two white-haired old men with cultivations of rank six Half Martial Ancestor, the rest of the Half Martial Ancestors all unleashed their dense killing intent. They were planning to attack Chu Feng.

They were planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at this moment, an ear-piercing roar sounded from the depths of the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

Once that roar was heard, the mountain range started to tremble, and thousands of birds soared into the sky. It was a magnificent sight.

Seeing this scene, the robust man immediately shouted, “It's the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“[Heeah!!!](#)”

He kicked the saddle of his mount fiercely, causing it to rapidly run toward the direction of that roar.

“Heeah!!!”

.....

.....

Following that, the others also kicked their saddles and rushed into the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

In the blink of an eye, the furious crowd had all rushed into the vast Radiance Immortal Mountain.

“Humph,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng snorted coldly.

The way Chu Feng saw it, those people were lucky to leave.

If they were to truly fight earlier, Chu Feng would likely massacre all of them.

As they had already aimed their killing intent at Chu Feng, if Chu Feng didn’t kill them, he would instead be killed by them.

Furthermore, Chu Feng would have had to eliminate all of them. Else, if they were to escape to their power, they would cause him no end of trouble.

However, they left, and Chu Feng was not someone who planned to pursue them relentlessly. After all, he was not someone who refused to spare others.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng’s body shifted. He also entered the vast Radiance Immortal Mountain.

Wang Qiang was captured by that demonic woman, and might end up being eaten by her at any moment. As such, Chu Feng was in a battle against time. He had to find that Demon Subduing Spring quickly.

After entering the Radiance Immortal Mountain, Chu Feng spread out his spirit power and activated his Heaven’s Eyes to survey his surroundings. He wanted to quickly find that Demon Subduing Spring.

However, the Radiance Immortal Mountain was too enormous. It was larger than even the ten Nine Provinces Continents.

With how enormous that mountain range was, it would be very

difficult for even Chu Feng to search for something.

In the blink of an eye, three days and night passed. However, Chu Feng... had yet to discover anything.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyebrows moved.

He discovered a ferocious beast.

This Radiance Immortal Mountain was just like the Red Sparrows City’s City Master had described it. There were a lot of ferocious beasts in here. Over the course of the past three days and nights, Chu Feng had encountered a lot of ferocious beasts.

Generally, Chu Feng would not waste time on them. Thus, he would conceal his aura and dodge the ferocious beasts.

Merely, this ferocious beast was somewhat different.

Although it was not very large, being only around ten meters tall, it had a very fierce appearance.

Its body was completely pitch-black, and looked like a metal frame. Just by looking at it, one could tell that it was very strong.

Especially that face, it was like that of a ghost; it was extremely frightening.

Furthermore, this ferocious beast also possessed a very strong cultivation. It was emitting the aura of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

At this moment, that powerful and strange ferocious beast was currently eating. Upon careful inspection, it was actually eating a person.

It was a ferocious beast that fed on people.

Ferocious beasts were very commonly seen. It was also very common for ferocious beasts to eat people, let alone someone who was already dead.

However, Chu Feng was still very surprised. The reason why Chu

Feng was so surprised was because he discovered that the flesh of that ferocious beast was cultivation resource.

Furthermore, the Natural Energy contained in its flesh was extremely dense. If Chu Feng were to eat its flesh, he would be able to gain a great amount of Natural Energy.

Even though Chu Feng already possessed enough Natural Energy to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor in his dantian, Chu Feng could not be too relaxed because of that.

Instead, he had to continue to accumulate Natural Energy. He could not let any opportunity to accumulate Natural Energy slip by him. Thus, he would naturally not let this ferocious beast get away.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shot forth rapidly like an arrow leaving a bow. He was rushing toward that ferocious beast.

“Woosh~~~”

To Chu Feng’s surprise, after that ferocious beast sensed Chu Feng approaching it, it did not charge to attack Chu Feng like the other ferocious beasts.

Instead, that ferocious beast actually turned around and rapidly fled. Furthermore, its speed was extremely fast.

It had actually managed to throw Chu Feng far behind.

Sound of telling one’s horse to run.

# Chapter 2157 – To Save Or Not

---

“Zzzzz~”

Upon seeing that, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes as his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on his body.

With the assistance of the power of the Divine Lightnings, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased by two levels in succession. From rank one Half Martial Ancestor, he became a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

After his cultivation increased, Chu Feng’s speed also increased enormously. His speed was many times faster than lightning itself.

However, even with that being the case, he was unable to close the distance between him and that strange ferocious beast.

The speed of that ferocious beast was simply astonishing. It had already surpassed the speed that it should possess based on its cultivation.

“Roar~”

Suddenly, a roar sounded from the forest, alarming the vicious ferocious beasts inside the forest and causing them to flee in all directions.

At this moment, a majestic, enormous azure dragon appeared underneath Chu Feng with overwhelming imposingness.

That was his Supreme Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

After Chu Feng unleashed the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, his speed immediately increased by many times.

At this moment, Chu Feng stood on the head of the azure dragon. The azure dragon turned into a ray of azure light that shuttled rapidly through the forest. It was so astonishingly fast that it could raise one’s hackles.



Under this sort of situation, the distance between Chu Feng and that ferocious beast finally began to shorten. After a short moment, the distance between them was less than a thousand meters.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

.....

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, right after he caught up to that ferocious beast, the ferocious beast suddenly turned around, opened its fierce mouth and shot forth many black bodies of light that appeared like black meteors at Chu Feng.

Those bodies of light all possessed very strong Ancestral-level martial power. After they approached Chu Feng, they exploded on the spot, scattering their power everywhere. Their might was extremely shocking.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation?”

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to frown. He finally understood why that ferocious beast was so fast that he could only catch up to it after unleashing all of his strength.

It turned out that this ferocious beast’s battle power surpassed that of ordinary Half Martial Ancestors by two levels of cultivation.

One must know that when compared to ordinary Martial Emperors and Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

As for that ferocious beast, it possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation, one level

less than Chu Feng. This meant that this ferocious beast was a special and powerful foe. It was no wonder that it stood out.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to rejoice. He rejoiced at the fact that ferocious beast was only a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. If it was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, it would be very difficult for Chu Feng should he encounter it.

After all, this ferocious beast possessed the cultivation of rank four Half Martial Ancestor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. When added together, it possessed the same battle power as an ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

That level of battle power was equally matched to Chu Feng when he went all-out. If that ferocious beast possessed a higher level of cultivation, Chu Feng would be no match for it.

“Regardless of what sort of origin you might have, your life will be mine today.”

As Chu Feng spoke, the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader appeared in his hand. Then, while standing on the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he brandished the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader and began to attack the ferocious beast head on.

“Roar~~~”

However, that ferocious beast was not to be outdone. Seeing that it could not escape Chu Feng, it brandished its two sharp claws and pounced at Chu Feng. It was planning to meet Chu Feng with force.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

In an instant, rumbles and energy ripples sprang up everywhere. The ferocious power caused enormous waves that wreaked havoc through their surroundings.

The battle between the two lasted for an entire hour. The surface area of the forest that was destroyed by their battle was simply

incapable of being estimated. The only thing visible were surging black smoke and enormous toppled trees.

However, in the end, that ferocious beast was still defeated by Chu Feng. One thing worthy of mentioning was that Chu Feng did not unleash his Incomplete Ancestral Armament to defeat this ferocious beast with battle power on par to him. He had used merely the Furious Coiling Dragon Beheader to defeat it.

However, without a doubt, for this ferocious beast to force Chu Feng to this state meant that it was very extraordinary.

That was definitely a very powerful ferocious beast.

“How strange. It would be one thing for a ferocious beast to not attack others of its own initiative, but its flesh is actually a cultivation resource too.”

“Oh, how great it would be if I could encounter a couple more,” Chu Feng mumbled.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, rumbling sounded from the distance. Chu Feng began to feel trembling from his feet nonstop.

In response, Chu Feng turned around and used his Heaven’s Eyes to survey what was happening in that direction.

Under the Heaven’s Eyes, everything became clear. In a forest like this, there was practically nothing capable of blocking Chu Feng’s line of sight. Even though the distance was very far, Chu Feng was still able to clearly see what was happening.

Upon seeing what was happening with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s gaze changed. He was surprised to discover that a group of ferocious beasts was pursuing several tens of martial cultivators.

At this moment, the ferocious beasts held absolute superiority. They were killing those fleeing cultivators.

While being pursued as they ran away, cultivators were dying

nonstop. As for those people, they were the same ones that had gotten into a quarrel with Chu Feng outside the Radiance Immortal Mountain.

That woman who had held the whip with the intention to lash Chu Feng earlier was also among them.

The rest of the cultivators were all giving their lives to protect that woman. Merely, the difference between their strengths was too wide. If this were to continue, all of them would be eliminated by the ferocious beasts.

“Serves you right,” Chu Feng mocked.

From the actions of those people earlier, he was already able to tell that they were scum who would bully others using their superior status and strength.

The continued existence of these people might cause countless innocent people to suffer by their evil hands. The way Chu Feng saw it, it was better that they die.

Although Chu Feng did not act to save them, he continued to survey them with his Heaven’s Eyes. Chu Feng wished to see exactly how they would meet their deaths.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze changed slightly.

He was surprised to discover that the woman was crying. Tears were rolling down her eyes and fluttering everywhere as she ran for her life. Chu Feng seemed to be able to hear the sound of her weeping. That sort of sensation caused Chu Feng to feel soft-hearted.

Had it been before, for people like her, Chu Feng would not be touched even should they start crying.

However, at this moment, when Chu Feng saw the tears filling that woman’s face, he began to enter a mental struggle as to whether he should save them or not.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng could read the woman's lips as she cried. Chu Feng was able to tell that she was not crying for help, but instead urging.

That crafty and unruly woman was actually urging the people that had pledged their lives to protect her to escape without her.

This thawed Chu Feng's ice-cold heart.

Chu Feng felt that a woman like her should be extremely selfish, that she would not be someone who cared about the lives or deaths of others. However, it would appear that that woman was not like that.

"Sure enough, I am still unable to ignore those that need help."

Suddenly, Chu Feng stood up. He put the corpse of the ferocious beast away in his Cosmos Sack. Then, he turned into a ray of light and rapidly charged toward the direction of that group of people.

"Everyone, quickly, save yourselves! Do not concern yourselves with me! Quickly, run away!"

Sure enough, that woman was shouting for the others to escape. It was as Chu Feng had seen. She was urging the people that had pledged their lives to protect her to disregard her and escape.

"We shall protect young miss with our lives. All those behind, stop and hold them back!"

"Those in the front, quickly bring the young miss away! Do not fly in the sky, but run, run through the forest! It'll be easier to escape that way!"

However, the urging from that woman only caused her guards to be even more determined to protect her with their lives. One by one, they began to fiercely fight against the ferocious beasts. Even if they were badly mutilated by the ferocious beasts, they would refuse to cower.

Those people were most definitely using their lives to buy time

for their young miss.

# Chapter 2158 – Become My Bodyguard

---

“Quickly, save yourselves. Do not throw away your lives for nothing because of me.”

Seeing that everyone was staking their lives for her, that woman started to cry even more desperately. Her sparkling tears and expression of self-blame did not seemed to be a disguise.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, a roar was heard. Following the roar, a rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level ferocious beast rushed out. It broke through the barricade of guards and, with its bloody mouth wide open, pounced toward that woman.

“On no!” Seeing this scene, the expressions of the guards all changed enormously. Even that woman was so frightened that her body started to tremble.

The strongest among the group of people they had here were peak Martial Emperors. Practically none of them could stop a rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level ferocious beast. All of them would end up dying here.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at this moment of imminent peril, an invisible power suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

That power was so strong that it was simply capable of reversing heaven and earth, toppling all living things. It was so strong that... it caused all of the ferocious beasts present to freeze on the spot.

Regardless of whether they were currently brandishing their sharp claws or leaping into the air, all of the ferocious beasts were frozen in place, as if petrified.

“What’s going on?”

“What is this?”

“The heck’s going on?”

The sudden change stunned all of the people present. They were all at a loss as to what was going on.

“Animals that dare harm people shall be killed.”

At the moment when the crowd was confused, a voice suddenly sounded. After that voice was heard, a boundless killing intent appeared.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

Suddenly, all of the ferocious beasts started to explode. They turned into puddles of blood. They were all killed by someone with a single strike.

“It’s you?”

At this moment, the woman revealed an incomparably shocked expression.

She had noticed the person that had attacked the ferocious beasts. However, she had never expected that person to be him.

That person was naturally Chu Feng.

“It’s actually him?”

Immediately after her, all the rest of the people present noticed Chu Feng too.

At the beginning, they were shocked, as they had not expected Chu Feng to be this powerful.

However, their shocked expressions soon turned into expressions of fear.

They had not forgotten their clash with Chu Feng several days ago. When recalling that clash now, they realized how unlucky they were.

If Chu Feng were to attack them now, all of them would definitely be killed.



Panic. Not to mention the guards, even that woman revealed panic in her eyes.

“I was the one that attacked you that day. It is not related to them. If you wish to kill someone, then kill me alone.”

Surprisingly, at such a time, that woman actually stood before the rest of the people and planned to shoulder all the blame from that day.

“Tsk~~”

However, Chu Feng ignored them and snorted lightly. Then, he turned around and prepared to leave.

Seeing that Chu Feng did not plan to attack them, that woman summoned up her courage and asked, “Why did you save us?”

“You wish to know?” Chu Feng turned around.

“Mn,” That woman nodded.

“A sudden impulse, that’s all,” Chu Feng left those words and prepared to leave again.

“Wait a moment,” However, that woman rushed toward Chu Feng and asked, “I’m sorry. I was in the wrong earlier. I hope that you will not mind it.”

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly. He said, “If a single sorry is all that was required, would you not look further into it should I kill your family and then tell you sorry afterward?”

“I...” That woman bit down on her lip tightly. She did not know how to respond.

“Forget about it, I am not a narrow-minded individual,” Chu Feng did not wish to make things difficult on her. He casually waved his hand to express his intention of not planning to do anything to her.

“May I know your name?” That woman moved toward Chu Feng again.

“My name is none of your concern, for you and I are only strangers,” Chu Feng said.

“If you refuse to tell me your name, I’ll address you as Lord Benefactor.”

“Lord Benefactor, I am called Tang Ying. I am from the Flowing Stream City’s Tang Family. I am sorry that I offended Lord Benefactor earlier. As Lord Benefactor has saved me, I must repay you.”

“If Lord Benefactor needs my assistance in the future, you can come to our Tang Family to find me. Regardless of what it might be, I will definitely assist you,” That woman said in a very sincere manner. Her attitude was completely opposite from the time when she first encountered Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly at the woman’s hundred-and-eighty-degree change in behavior.

Originally, he had planned to dismiss her. However, Chu Feng suddenly thought of his purpose in coming to this place: to find the Demon Subduing Spring.

It had been several days now. Yet, Chu Feng have yet to discover anything. It would not do for him to continue on like this.

Chu Feng had saw the map and knew that the Flowing Stream City was located not far away from this Radiance Immortal Mountain. Perhaps they would know about the location of the Demon Subduing Spring.

Thus, Chu Feng turned around and asked, “Do you know where the Demon Subduing Spring might be located in this Radiance Immortal Mountain?”

“Lord Benefactor, you’re searching for the Demon Subduing Spring Water?” Hearing those words, Tang Ying’s expression immediately turned to one of joy.

Seeing Tang Ying revealing an expression that seemed like she

knew about it, Chu Feng continued to ask, “Mn, do you know where I can obtain it?”

“I do, I do. However, if you wish to know about it, you must first tell me your name,” Tang Ying said while putting her hands behind her back.

“Hey! Didn’t you say that you would help me regardless of what it might be? Is this how you treat your benefactor?” Chu Feng said with a frown.

“Of course I’ll help. But, Lord Benefactor, you should at the very least have some trust in me, no? It would be too narrow-minded for you to refuse to tell me even your name.”

“Unless... you are a narrow-minded individual, and are still angry from what happened several days ago.”

“I doubt that’s the case, right? After all, you’re a grown man, and thus should be a magnanimous individual, right?”

“Furthermore, although I attacked you, my attack did not reach you,” Tang Ying looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. Her smile was quite beautiful. However, that gaze of hers was simply one of contempt.

At this moment, Chu Feng started to frown even more. He discovered that this girl by the name of Tang Ying was not as simple as he thought her to be. She was most definitely someone hard to deal with.

However, for the sake of saving Wang Qiang, Chu Feng had no choice but to compromise with her. Thus, he said, “Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng, your name is quite pleasant to hear,” Tang Ying nodded in a satisfied manner. After hearing Chu Feng’s name, she smiled even more happily.

“Enough of this, tell me about the Demon Subduing Spring,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, I’ll address you as Chu Feng. Chu Feng, the Demon Subduing Spring that you are searching for can only be encountered by chance, and not sought after.”

“The Demon Subduing Spring is naturally in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. However, if you wish to search for it, it will all depend on luck. If you are lucky, you might find it just by turning around. If you are not lucky, you might not be able to find it even after searching for eight or ten years.”

“The reason for that is because the location of that Demon Subduing Spring is ever-changing,” Tang Ying said.

“It’s actually that difficult to find?” Chu Feng was able to tell that Tang Ying didn’t seem to be lying to him. However, it was precisely because she was not lying to him that Chu Feng became even more anxious.

After all, Wang Qiang had been captured by that demonic woman and could end up losing his life at any moment. Chu Feng did not have time to waste. Any moment he wasted could lead to Wang Qiang being killed by that demonic woman and becoming her meal.

At this moment, Chu Feng could only pray, pray that the demonic woman would think Wang Qiang to be too ugly, and eat the other men she had captured first, leaving Wang Qiang for last.

“However, there’s good news too. The people from our Tang Family have encountered the Demon Subduing Spring by chance before. Furthermore, we have collected a lot of the Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“Thus, there is a lot of Demon Subduing Spring Water in our Tang Family.”

“If you want some, you can accompany me to the Tang Family. However, there will be a condition for that,” Tang Ying said.

“What is the condition?” Chu Feng asked.

“You must become my bodyguard and protect me,” Tang Ying said.

## Chapter 2159 – Ghostfiend Beast

---

“Is this how you repay your benefactor? If I had known this was what you were going to do, I would’ve let the ferocious beasts eat you alive,” Chu Feng said in a displeased manner.

He felt that since Tang Ying’s family possessed Demon Subduing Spring Water, she should be giving him some should she really want to repay him. Yet, she had actually brought forth another condition. Her actions were truly too excessive.

“Aiyah, don’t get angry. I’m not asking for much. You merely need to protect me for ten years,” Tang Ying said.

“Don’t even think about it,” Chu Feng said.

“Then five years.”

“One year.”

“Half a year.”

“One month. One month should be fine, no?”

“You must know that it’s the Demon Subduing Spring Water that I’m talking about here. It’s extremely precious. If you do not do something that would assist me, I will not have any excuse to ask my father for it,” Tang Ying said with a difficult expression.

“Fine, I’ll agree to it. However, I will only protect you for a month, and not a day more.”

“Furthermore, you must bring me to retrieve the Demon Subduing Spring Water right now. I need it urgently,” For the sake of Wang Qiang’s safety, Chu Feng decided to compromise.

“Haha, great, this is truly great.”

“But, you must wait a moment. After my Third Brother returns, we can go together,” Tang Ying said.

“How long must I wait? I do not have too much time to waste,”

Chu Feng said.

“We already sent out the signal for help when we were being hunted by the ferocious beasts earlier. I believe that they will soon arrive,” Tang Ying said.

“If that’s the case, I’ll wait for a bit,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes.

He was actually planning to comprehend the way of martial cultivation, and see if he could attempt to reach a breakthrough the bottleneck. After all, as long as he broke through the bottleneck, he would reach a breakthrough in his cultivation, becoming a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

Although Chu Feng was already a Half Martial Ancestor now, he knew that a rank one Half Martial Ancestor would not amount to much in the Outer World. As such, he must quickly reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

“You all, take this medicine. It will be able to cure your injuries,” Right at the moment when Chu Feng planned to attempt to comprehend the way of martial cultivation, he discovered that Tang Ying was treating the injuries of her guards.

As those people had been injured by ferocious beasts, their injuries were absolutely not limited to superficial wounds. The way Chu Feng saw it, even though the medicinal pellets that Tang Ying took out were decent quality medicine, they were not sufficient to heal those people’s injuries quickly.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng extended his finger, pointed to the distance and made a circular motion with it. He drew a circle on the distant ground, pointed to it and said, “All of you, enter that circle.”

“Eh... sir, w-what are you planning to do?” Hearing those words, the guards were startled.

Although Chu Feng could be considered to be someone in their

camp now, they were still unable to accept it that easily. As such, they were still on guard against Chu Feng.

“Aiya, just do as you’re ordered. Go, go, go, don’t dillydally around,” Tang Ying said.

Those people seemed to not dare to go against Tang Ying. One by one, they entered the circle Chu Feng had drawn on the ground.

“Chu Feng, exactly what are you planning to do?” Then, Tang Ying asked curiously.

However, Chu Feng ignored her, instead looking directly to those people.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After all the people entered the circle, Chu Feng’s hands began to change in rapid succession. Many rays of boundless spirit power began to fly toward the circle, entering it and forming a spirit formation.

“Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spirit Power?”

After seeing the spirit power that Chu Feng had unleashed, the crowd present were all stunned.

However, Chu Feng did not bother with them. Instead, he wholeheartedly continued to set up his spirit formation. It was a healing spirit formation.

Being within that healing spirit formation, those people’s badly mutilated bodies were soon healed. Furthermore, their pain also completely disappeared. It could be said that their injuries had been completely healed.

“Done,” Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and that spirit formation vanished like smoke in thin air.

At this moment, the people inside that circle were all healthy and energetic. They possessed even more vigor than when before they had been injured.



“Many thanks,” At this moment, those people hurriedly clasped their fists to express their thanks. They all had slightly ashamed expressions on their faces.

After all, they were on guard against Chu Feng earlier when Chu Feng was actually doing so to treat them.

“Wow, Chu Feng, you’re amazing. Not only is your martial cultivation strong, you’re actually also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Amazing, you are simply my idol. For me to have such a powerful bodyguard, I have truly picked up a treasure!” Tang Ying ran toward Chu Feng and shouted excitedly.

“Can you quiet down?” Chu Feng cast an eye at her. Then, he added, “At most an hour. If your brother does not come in an hour, you must bring me to your Tang Family.”

“Okay, okay, okay, that’s no problem,” Tang Ying said with a beaming smile. After knowing that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, her impression of Chu Feng grew even more favorable. In fact, there were even traces of adoration in her gaze.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Not long after, over a hundred figures flew over from the sky.

These were all people that Chu Feng had seen before; they were the people from the Tang Family that Chu Feng had run into several days ago. Merely, this group of people were composed of a lot of experts. Practically all of the Half Martial Ancestor-level experts were in that group. Those two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors were also present.

“Little sister, you have truly scared me to death. When I saw that distress signal that you sent out, I thought that something had happened to you.”

“Eh? Why are there so few people? Where did they all go?” The black-haired robust man was evidently the third brother that Tang

Ying had spoken of. After he approached them, he immediately started to question her nonstop.

Suddenly, his gaze landed on Chu Feng. After he discovered Chu Feng, boundless killing intent immediately surged forth.

He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “So it was you!”

“Kill him!!!”

Once his order was spoken, those Half Martial Ancestor-level experts all unleashed their weapons and prepared to attack Chu Feng.

Upon seeing that, Tang Ying hurriedly said, “Big brother, what are you doing?! He is my savior!”

“What?!” Hearing those words, not only was that robust man surprised, the others that had just arrived with him were also surprised.

“Big brother, he indeed saved us. Furthermore, he has become my bodyguard,” Tang Ying said.

“Little sister, what are you talking about? Why am I unable to make sense of what you’re saying?” That robust man revealed an expression of confusion.

Then, Tang Ying began to explain all that had occurred to that robust man.

Merely, even after he learned of what had happened, the impression that robust man had of Chu Feng did not change. There was still hostility in his gaze. Furthermore, he said to Tang Ying, “Little sister, our Tang Family is currently under special circumstances. How could we bring such an unknown stranger to our Tang Family?”

“Big brother, isn’t our Tang Family raising an army right now? Haven’t those two people also been invited to our Tang Family?” Tang Ying pointed to the two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

“Nonsense! Who are these two seniors, and who is that boy? How could he possibly compare to these two seniors?” The robust man spoke with a low voice. From his words, one could tell that he looked down on Chu Feng deeply.

“Humph,” The two old men also uttered light snorts. It was as if they were agreeing to that robust man’s words.

However, as Chu Feng only cared about saving Wang Qiang, he simply did not take their words to heart. Instead, he stood up and said, “Hey, Tang Ying, since your brother has arrived, we can go now, right?”

“Go? Where?” The robust man spoke with an unpleasant tone.

“Big brother, I have already promised Chu Feng that we will immediately set off for the Tang Family after you arrived,” Tang Ying explained.

“That won’t do. We have yet to capture the Ghostfiend Beast. We cannot return like this,” The robust man said.

“Why are you all trying to capture that Ghostfiend Beast?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is none of your concern,” The robust man spoke coldly.

“Big brother, how could you speak to Chu Feng in such a manner? He is someone that saved me,” Tang Ying cast a side eye at her brother. Then, she said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, we have actually come here with the intention of capturing the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“I know that. I’m asking why you all want to capture that Ghostfiend Beast,” Chu Feng said.

“To cure my father. My father is seriously injured. Only the Ghostfiend Beasts’ bone powder can cure him,” Tang Ying said.

“In that case, does it mean that as long as that Ghostfiend Beast is captured, we will be able to return to your Tang Family

immediately?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right,” Tang Ying nodded.

“Tell me the characteristics of that Ghostfiend Beast,” Chu Feng said.

In response, Tang Ying hurriedly began to explain what she knew of the Ghostfiend Beast to Chu Feng.

After hearing what Tang Ying said, Chu Feng immediately revealed a joyous expression. Actually, he had already guessed that the so-called Ghostfiend Beast that Tang Ying and the others were talking about might be the strange ferocious beast he had killed.

After Tang Ying explained its characteristics and appearance to him, Chu Feng was certain that the strange ferocious beast he had killed was that Ghostfiend Beast.

“That makes it simple. We can leave for the Tang Family now,” As Chu Feng spoke, he placed his hand on his Cosmos Sack.

“Yoh, based on your words, you seem to be indicating that the Ghostfiend Beast is easy to capture? It is not that I am looking down on you. But, with your mere cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, a single spit from the Ghostfiend Beast would be able to drown you alive,” The robust man mocked Chu Feng.

The two old rank six Half Martial Ancestors also snorted disdainfully as they looked to Chu Feng with gazes of contempt.

“Oh?” Chu Feng was not angered by those words. Instead, he sat on the ground and said, “In that case, go and have it spit a mouthful of saliva to drown me to death.”

“What did you say? Say it again?” The robust man thought that Chu Feng was provoking him and became enraged. He had the appearance of wanting to attack Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored that man’s words. Instead, he retrieved a Cosmos Sack from his waist, and tossed it

upward. As light flickered from the Cosmos Sack, a loud “boom” was heard. Then, something crashed onto the ground.

Upon seeing the thing that was on the ground, all the people present, including even the robust man and the two old men, revealed stunned, tongue-tied expressions.

# Chapter 2160 – Terrifying Everyone

---

Upon seeing the silhouette on the ground, the crowd all blurted out together, “Ghostfiend Beast?!”

They all managed to recognize that it was the Ghostfiend Beast that they had been painstakingly searching for.

“D-d-did you kill it?” The robust man asked while looking at Chu Feng with an astonished expression.

“Who else then? You?” Chu Feng sneered as he cast an eye at the robust man. Chu Feng had managed to return all the mockery from that robust man with merely that one sentence.

Hearing those words, the robust man’s expression changed to one of awkwardness.

After all, he knew very well that he would not be able to kill the Ghostfiend Beast with the strength that he possessed.

“Wow, Chu Feng, aren’t you too powerful? Do you know how much effort we have put into capturing that Ghostfiend Beast? Even when senior Luo Tian and Luo Di encountered the Ghostfiend Beast, it still managed to escape from them multiple times.”

Tang Ying had an excited expression. As for the Luo Tian and Luo Di that she spoke of, they were naturally the twin rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level old men.

“Humph,” Hearing those words, the two brothers snorted coldly. Evidently, they were displeased by Tang Ying’s words.

Then, that Luo Tian even said to Chu Feng, “Little friend, one must be honest.”

“What are you implying?” Chu Feng asked.

“You know very well what I’m implying. You know very well that the Ghostfiend Beast is not only a rank four Half Martial

Ancestor, it also possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. Its true battle power is on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors.”

“As for you, you are merely a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Although it is very inconceivable that you would be able to obtain that level of cultivation at your age, that is not a cultivation level where you can kill the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“Tell the truth, who was it that killed the Ghostfiend Beast, and where did you manage to find the corpse of that Ghostfiend Beast?” Luo Tian asked with a cold tone. Earlier, he had completely disregarded Chu Feng. However, after Chu Feng took out that Ghostfiend Beast, he completely viewed Chu Feng as his enemy.

“That’s right. Although he is strong, that Ghostfiend Beast is stronger. It is impossible for him to have killed that Ghostfiend Beast,” At the same time, the others present also managed to react. One by one, they expressed their disbelief that Chu Feng had killed the Ghostfiend Beast.

At this moment, Chu Feng, who had been sitting on the ground, slowly stood up. He gently patted away the dust on his buttocks, and then began to walk toward the twin old men, Luo Tian and Luo Di.

When Chu Feng was less than two meters from the brothers, he stopped and said, “I collected this corpse in the Radiance Immortal Mountain. As for the person that killed that Ghostfiend Beast... he stands before you.”

“Hahaha, little friend, it is truly not that I am looking down on you. Rather, your strength is clearly present before us. There is an enormous disparity between your strength and that of the Ghostfiend Beast.”

“It is not that us two brothers do not believe you. Instead, go and ask the crowd present; who would possibly believe you?” Luo Tian

and Luo Di burst into loud laughter. Their laughter was filled with mockery.

“Hahaha...” Following their laughter, the people from the Tang Family that had arrived late all burst into loud laughter.

“Zzzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes. When the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared, Chu Feng’s aura increased from rank one Half Martial Ancestor to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Immediately after that, a loud ‘bang’ was heard as a powerful oppressive might swept forth from within Chu Feng. That oppressive might directly smashed toward Luo Tian and Luo Di.

Due to the fact that they were so close to one another, and Chu Feng’s oppressive might was so powerful, the two old men were directly struck by Chu Feng’s oppressive might, and knocked several meters away before they even managed to react.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Like arrows shot out from a bow, the two aged bodies were shot forth explosively. They pierced through all the boulders and trees that they crashed into, leaving a complete mess behind them.

However, even with this being the case, the two old men were still knocked several hundred thousands of meters away before crashing to a stop.

“Heavens!!!”

This sudden scene caused everyone to open their mouths wide with shock. When the crowd looked back to Chu Feng, not to mention the others, even the robust man who had looked down on Chu Feng earlier revealed a very serious expression.

After all, those two old men were actual rank six Half Martial Ancestors. However, they were knocked flying by Chu Feng’s



oppressive might.

Furthermore, the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings on Chu Feng's body astonished the crowd even more.

While no one recognized Chu Feng's Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings in the Holy Land of Martialism, this was not true in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Practically everyone knew that the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, as well as that heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, were the symbols of people from Heavenly Clans. They were abilities that only the wielders of Heavenly Bloodlines possessed.

How powerful were the Heavenly Clans? In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, all of the Heavenly Clans were huge monsters ruling over a region.

It would not be an exaggeration to say that regardless of how powerful the Tang Family might be, when compared to Heavenly Clans, they would be nothing more than little brooks against vast seas; they were simply incapable.

It was precisely because of that that the people from the Tang Family were this startled. Not to mention Chu Feng's heaven-defying battle power, merely his background was already capable of terrifying them endlessly.

At this moment, many of the people from the Tang Family were already shivering in fear with their legs gone soft.

After all, they had planned to kill Chu Feng earlier. Yet, he was someone from a Heavenly Clan, someone that they could not afford to offend.

“Bastard brat! Today, this old man shall dismember your body to ten thousand pieces!”

Suddenly, a roar filled with overwhelming anger sounded. At the same time, boundless killing intent swept forth, covering this

region.

It was the twin old men, Luo Tian and Luo Di. They were rapidly rushing over. Before they even arrive, their voices and killing intents have already arrived.

Although Chu Feng's oppressive might had beaten them back, he had merely beaten them back, and not really injured them.

Thus, although they might not be completely uninjured, they had only suffered light wounds.

However, to be knocked flying by a member of the younger generation, and for it to have been done before their employers on top of that, caused the two old men to feel completely humiliated. As such, they wanted to teach Chu Feng a lesson.

“If you wish to fight, I do not mind. However, let me tell you this beforehand. I do not have the time to bother with you. If you insist on making me fight, I will do so with the intention to kill,” Chu Feng spoke coldly. At the same time, intense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

“What an arrogant brat. You dare boast this shamelessly? Very well, let us experience what abilities you might possess. We shall see how you will kill us.”

The voices of Luo Tian and Luo Di sounded once again. At this moment, their voices did not sound from afar. Instead, they had already approached Chu Feng, and were in his and the crowd's line of sight.

“That is?!!!”

However, when they saw the current Chu Feng, Luo Tian and Luo Di were immediately stunned, as if they had been petrified.

Not only did the two men immediately retrieve their overwhelming killing intent, the two of them also revealed astonished and terrified expressions.

Someone from a Heavenly Clan. If the Tang Family feared them, then the two brothers also feared them.

“Puu,” Seeing this scene, Tang Ying hurriedly covered her mouth with her hand. She had nearly burst out laughing.

While Luo Tian and Luo Di were people that they had hired using a great amount of wealth, those two old farts were extremely arrogant. They could be said to consider everyone beneath themselves. Those two old farts would refuse to even look at her and her third brother face-to-face.

However, at this moment, after the two old men saw Chu Feng, they actually revealed gazes of fear.

Furthermore, the two old men had been shouting that they would teach Chu Feng a lesson, that they would dismember Chu Feng to ten thousand pieces. Yet, at this moment, they were filled with cowardice. The way Tang Ying saw it, this was simply too funny.

“What’s wrong? Why aren’t you attacking me?” Chu Feng said without a trace of politeness.

“I...” The brothers Luo Tian and Luo Di were at a loss as to what to say. However, they did not dare to say anything like teaching Chu Feng a lesson again.

Humiliating. Even without others pointing it out, Luo Tian and Luo Di both knew that they had been humiliated right now.

However, there was nothing they could do about it. After all, the two of them truly did not dare to offend the people of the Heavenly Clans.

# Chapter 2161 – Distinguished Guest Treatment

---

“Aiya, this is a misunderstanding, truly a misunderstanding.”

“I truly never expected Brother Chu Feng to be this powerful. It would appear that the Ghostfiend Beast was indeed killed by Brother Chu Feng.”

“Earlier, it was my fault. I have no eyes, and wrongly accused Brother Chu Feng. I shall apologize to Brother Chu Feng here,” The robust man saw the awkward situation and stood forward to try to mediate the situation.

However, even though he was nodding and bowing to apologize to Chu Feng, Chu Feng was still in no mood to bother with him.

“Brother Chu Feng, I am called Tang Yong. I am the third young master of the Tang Family. To be able to get to know Brother Chu Feng here today, it is truly a honor for me, Tang Yong, and our Tang Family.”

“I hope Brother Chu Feng would not take offense at my rudeness earlier,” That Tang Yong’s skin was extra thick. Even though Chu Feng was ignoring him, he still continued on.

His current expression was completely different from before. Seeing that eager smile on his face caused Chu Feng to feel disgusted. Someone like him was simply too fake.

If it wasn’t for Wang Qiang, Chu Feng would truly not want to deal with these people. However, for the sake of Wang Qiang, Chu Feng could only force himself to reluctantly deal with them.

Although he felt surprised by it too, Chu Feng began to feel that the person he had the worst impression of at the beginning, that Tang Ying, appeared to be a lot more favorable compared to the rest of them.

“Can we return to the Tang Family now?” Chu Feng continued to ignore Tang Yong and asked Tang Ying.

“Third brother, can we go?” Tang Ying did not dare to make her own decision. Thus, she turned to Tang Yong.

“Of course, let’s set off right away.”

“Merely, this Ghostfiend Beast. Brother Chu Feng, what sort of price are you planning to sell it to us for?” Tang Yong asked. Perhaps he might have tried to seize the Ghostfiend Beast from Chu Feng earlier. However, he would not dare to do so now, and could only offer to purchase it from Chu Feng.

“You all only need the bones, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ehh...” Tang Yong was at first startled by those words. The reason for that was because, according to his knowledge, although Ghostfiend Beasts were hard to find, only their bones were precious. Other than the bones, the rest of the Ghostfiend Beast was simply worthless.

Although he did not understand why Chu Feng would ask such a useless question, Tang Yong still smiled and nodded. “Yes, we only needed the bones.”

“Then I shall given them you all for free,” Chu Feng said.

“H-How could we accept such an enormous...?” At this moment, not to mention Tang Yong, even Tang Ying, Luo Tian, Luo Di and the rest of the people from the Tang Family had an enormous change in their expressions.

“I said that I’m going to gift the bones to you all. If you think that you cannot accept it for free, then go ahead and present me with some more Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“However... the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast must be handed to be in perfect condition. Understand?” Chu Feng said.

“Yes, that’s absolutely doable,” Tang Yong nodded his head

repeatedly. At the same time, the rest of the people from the Tang Family also revealed smiles on their faces.

They themselves knew best how much their Tang Family needed the Ghostfiend Beast's bones right now.

If Chu Feng were to attempt to profit from their misfortune and demand a sky-high price for the bones, their Tang Family would still be willing to accept his demands should they be within their capabilities.

Yet, Chu Feng actually only wanted Demon Subduing Spring Water. They had truly never expected this.

Afterward, Chu Feng and everyone else began to proceed toward the Tang Family.

The city that the Tang Family was located in was much larger than Red Sparrow's City. At the same time, it was also much more majestic and flourishing.

As for the Tang Family, they occupied half of this vast city. The region that the Tang Family occupied was all sealed off with spirit formations and tightly guarded. Ordinary people were simply unable to set foot in there.

Furthermore, this Tang Family could truly be said to possess countless experts. If it were to be placed in the Holy Land of Martialism, practically no one other than the blind old man and the other Chu Clan's servants would be a match for them.

However, Chu Feng was able to sense that although the Tang Family was powerful, they could not be considered to be a huge monster in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They could only be considered as a family that occupied a region.

From this, it was no wonder that Dark Hall's Hall Master looked down on the people in the Holy Land of Martialism like he had. It was true that the Holy Land of Martialism simply could not compare to even the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As Chu Feng began to meet more and more people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he began to realize what was meant by the saying ‘beyond the heaven are higher heavens, beyond the person are stronger people.’

After arriving in the Tang Family, Chu Feng handed the Ghostfiend Beast to the people of the Tang Family. Furthermore, he had gotten to know that Tang Ying’s father, the master of the Tang Family, was seriously injured, and was waiting for the bones of the Ghostfiend Beast to cure his injury.

After finding out that Chu Feng was an extraordinary individual, the people from the Tang Family naturally treated Chu Feng extremely well. They did not dare to neglect him in the slightest.

However, Chu Feng was not fond of noise. Thus, he drove all of the servants that were dispatched to serve him out. However, he was unable to drive out Tang Ying no matter how hard he tried.

“Chu Feng, I truly never expected that you were someone from a Heavenly Clan, that you were a wielder of Heavenly Bloodline.”

“Wow, it is no wonder you’re this powerful. I’ve seen many people with Heavenly Bloodlines before. But, this is still the first time I’ve met a member of the younger generation as powerful as you.”

“In your clan, you must be an extraordinary person too, right? Could it be that you are the strongest member of the younger generation in your clan?”

“Oh, that’s right, Chu Feng, exactly which Heavenly Clan do you belong to?”

“You wouldn’t be from the Chu Heavenly Clan, right? Could it be that you’re someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan that was dispatched to train in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Tang Ying chattered nonstop beside Chu Feng. The gaze with which this girl was looking at Chu Feng was filled with even

greater adoration now.

Chu Feng ignored her. His eyes were closed as he continued to comprehend how to break through the bottleneck to rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

“Haha, I’m joking with you. I know that you definitely wouldn’t be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. If you were, you would’ve mentioned it already.”

“You should be from one of the other Heavenly Clans, right? But, which one though? You should be from the Ying Heavenly Clan right? After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan is the closest to this place,” Although Chu Feng was ignoring Tang Ying, Tang Ying continued to talk to herself nonstop.

“Is the Ying Heavenly Clan very close to this place?” Chu Feng opened his eyes and looked to Tang Ying. While Chu Feng was not interested in other things, he was very interested in the Ying Heavenly Clan.

After all, Chu Feng knew that the Dark Hall’s Hall Master that had nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism was from the Ying Heavenly Clan.

“They could be considered to be the Heavenly Clan closest to this place,” After Tang Ying said that, her expression changed. She asked, “Eh, in that case, you’re not from the Ying Heavenly Clan then? Then which Heavenly Clan are you from?”

“Mn, let me guess,” Tang Ying placed her hands behind her back and began to waver left and right. She entered deep contemplation.

“Fifth Young Miss, the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat that Lord Chu Feng requested is here,” Right at this moment, a message sounded from outside the palace hall.

“Good, bring it in,” Tang Ying ordered. Then, someone pushed in a large basin of meat.



“This should have been prepared by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, right?” Chu Feng asked. Looking at that large basin of Ghostfiend Beast meat, he was able to tell that it was most definitely the work of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

The reason for that was because even Half Martial Ancestors would not be able to cut the meat this delicately. Although the bones had been removed, the meat had not been harmed in the slightest.

It was a bone removing technique. Although it appeared to be simple, it was actually very hard to accomplish. It was something that only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist would be able to accomplish.

“That’s right, for the sake of curing my father’s injury, we have invited the assistance of a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“It is that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist that declared my father’s illness to be very difficult to treat, and that he could only provide treatment after father swallowed a powder ground from a Ghostfiend Beast’s bones,” Tang Ying explained.

“You needed to invite a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? A power like your Tang Family does not possess a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Chu Feng was a bit surprised. He had originally thought that the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist was from the Tang Family.

However, after hearing what Tang Ying said, it was clear that this was not the case.

However, if a power like the Tang Family was placed in the Holy Land of Martialism, they would be an major existence that not even the Ancient Era’s Elves could match up to. As such, how could they not even have a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?

Could it be that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists were as rare in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm as they were in the Holy Land of Martialism?

# Chapter 2162 – The Tang Family’s Great Enemy

---

“Of course. All of the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists are extremely conceited. It is generally very difficult to request their assistance. To have one join our Tang Family would be even harder.”

“As for someone like you who became a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it is even more rare.”

“Chu Feng, you are the strongest person I’ve seen in my life; you are simply my idol.”

“Exactly how did you cultivate to become this powerful?” Tang Ying asked with an expression of admiration.

“Am I allowed to light a fire here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Light a fire? That’s no problem at all. What is it you’re planning to do?” Tang Ying asked.

“Roast meat to eat,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, a fire spirit formation was ignited in the palace hall.

Then, Chu Feng clenched his fist and formed a fork with martial power.

Chu Feng pierced the fork into the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, sat before the fire spirit formation and began to roast the meat.

This fire spirit formation was one used especially for roasting meat. This, the intensity of the fire was very fierce. Placing the meat on top of it, the meat would be cooked very fast. However, it would not be charred.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? You couldn’t possibly be thinking about eating that Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, right?” Tang Ying asked with a shocked expression.

“Why else would I be roasting it? Do you want to have a try? However, you are only allowed a single small bite at most,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

It was not that Chu Feng was stingy. Rather, the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast contained Natural Energies. Logically, Chu Feng would not spare a single bite. He was already very generous to be willing to have Tang Ying a small bite of the meat.

“Chu Feng, are you crazy? The meat of the Ghostfiend Beast cannot be eaten. It contains a deadly poison,” Seeing that Chu Feng was truly planning to eat the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat, Tang Ying was so frightened that her face turned pale.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng examined the Ghostfiend Beast’s meat carefully. It was only then that he discovered that the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast really did contain poison. Furthermore, the poison was hidden very deep, and was extremely toxic.

However, after Chu Feng discovered the poison, he still opened his mouth and took a large bite of the meat before beginning to chew it.

“Holy mother!!!”

“You’re really eating it!!!”

At this moment, Tang Ying, who stood beside Chu Feng, was terrified by him. She grabbed her hair wildly.

As for Chu Feng, the speed at which he ate the meat was very fast. In merely a short moment, the large basin filled with meat all entered Chu Feng’s stomach.

The current Chu Feng was no longer an ordinary human. No aspect of him could be compared to ordinary humans. As long as he wished to eat it, not to mention a basin of meat, even if it was several tens of elephants, he would still be able to eat all of it.

After eating all the meat of the Ghostfiend Beast, Chu Feng felt that the Natural Energies in his dantian had become much more

ample. Although it was not enough for him to break through to rank four Half Martial Ancestor, it was not very far away from it.

Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng revealed a satisfied smile.

“Y-Y-You’re actually fine?” Seeing that Chu Feng was not only completely unharmed after eating the meat, but his complexion even grew rosy, Tang Ying opened her mouth wide in shock.

“It’s truly delicious. It was your loss to not eat it.”

“However, you can’t eat it even if you wish to do so now, since it’s all gone now,” Chu Feng wiped his mouth while smiling mischievously.

“Heavens, you are simply abnormal! The meat of the Ghostfiend Beast is extremely poisonous. How could you be fine? Could it be that you possess a body immune to poison?” Tang Ying looked as if she had seen a monster as she began to size up Chu Feng.

“Enough of the nonsense. I’ve handed the Ghostfiend Beast to you all. Now, where’s my Demon Subduing Spring Water? Why is it still not here?” Chu Feng asked. After all, saving Wang Qiang had been Chu Feng’s goal the entire time.

“The Demon Subduing Spring Water is a bit special. It need to be contained in special containers. Thus, it is slow going to retrieve it.”

“Furthermore, I know that you most likely want the Demon Subduing Spring Water to take care of that demonic woman in the Darknight Ghost Forest. Our Tang Family possesses a special artifact to take care of it. It would be very difficult for the demonic woman to resist should you use the Demon Subduing Spring Water with the special artifact.”

“Merely, it is even more time-consuming to fill that artifact with Demon Subduing Spring Water. Just wait patiently for a bit longer. I would not deceive you,” Tang Ying said.

Chu Feng felt that Tang Ying really didn’t seem to be deceiving

him.

Furthermore, after the Tang Family learned of his identity as a person from the Heavenly Clans, they acted extremely respectful toward him, and did not dare to offend him.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the rest of the Tang Family would also not try to deceive him. As such, he asked, “Tell me, who it is that your Tang Family managed to offend?”

“How did you know that?” Hearing those words, Tang Ying’s eyes went wide open. She expressed an expression of shock.

“How complicated could it be? Your city is extremely huge. I can tell that there are a lot of other powers and ordinary families in this city other than your Tang Family.”

“However, on the way here, I noticed that other than some individual powers, many of the powers and ordinary commoners in the city have disappeared. Furthermore, they seemed to have just left not long ago.”

“Furthermore, your Tang Family is concealed within your formations. Not only have you all activated all of the defensive formations and spirit formations, the people of your Tang Family also have nervous expressions. It is as if a great enemy is about to arrive.”

“Furthermore, other than the people from your Tang Family, you all have also invited over a lot of outsiders. Furthermore, they are all expert martial cultivators.”

“All of this signifies that your Tang Family is facing a great enemy. Likely, someone will come to invade soon.”

“Am I right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Wow, Chu Feng, you are simply amazing. You actually managed to discover all that just through observation?” Tang Ying revealed an amazed expression.

“After I finish what I must do, I will abide by my promise and become your bodyguard for a month.”

“Since I am going to protect you, I must first know the situation that your Tang Family is facing right now, as well as who exactly it is that your Tang Family has offended.”

“Thus, exactly what happened? Tell me the truth,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s the Cao Family. Like our Tang Family, the Cao Family is a subsidiary power to Luyang’s Pavilion,” Tang Ying spoke honestly.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart was startled. The reason for that was because the Pavilion Master of that Luyang’s Pavilion was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, Chu Feng was particularly interested in that Luyang’s Pavilion. After all, that was the first person from the Chu Heavenly Clan that he had seen since his arrival in the Outer World.

However, Chu Feng did not interrupt Tang Ying, nor did he reveal any change in expression. Instead, he continued to listen.

“Our Tang Family and the Cao Family both govern over a region. Originally, our two families always minded our own business. Furthermore, due to the fact that we were neighboring powers, our relationship was pretty decent too. We were friends of hundreds of years.”

“However, after Luyang’s Pavilion came to rule over this place, an enormous change occurred. Due to the fact that Luyang’s Pavilion demands a lot of tribute every year, our Tang Family and the Cao Family ended up having constant friction with one another for the sake of contesting for benefits.”

“Especially the past two years. Our Tang Family and the Cao Family have become absolute enemies,” Tang Ying said.

“Wait a moment, didn’t you say that your Tang Family and that Cao Family were both subsidiary powers to Luyang’s Pavilion? If

that's the case, why would Luyang's Pavilion let your two families have this sort of friction without doing anything?" Chu Feng asked.

"Luyang's Pavilion has never once bothered itself with these things. They only care about their own interests. As for their subsidiary powers, it is a battle for the survival of the fittest. They have never once involved themselves with the battles between their subsidiary powers," Tang Ying explained.

After hearing that, Chu Feng's gaze grew deep. His impression of Luyang's Pavilion grew worse yet again. However, he did not express that. Instead, he said, "Continue."

"With the relationship between our Tang Family and the Cao Family having worsened to this degree, our friendship of many years has long since been cast aside. We have become genuinely hostile powers."

"However, the most disgusting aspect is that our Tang Family and the Cao Family already set up an arranged marriage for me before I was even born."

"I am to be married to the Cao Family's youngest son."

"However, no one expected that the Cao Family's youngest son would be retarded at birth. No matter how they tried to cure him, they were unable to do so. As such, how could my father be willing to marry me off to him?"

"Furthermore, as we are already hostile powers, my father decided to meet with the Cao Family to withdraw the marriage agreement."

"However, none of us expected that the Cao Family would declare war against our Tang Family with the reason being that we broke our promise of marriage."

"They had already planned and schemed for this battle for a very long time. Before they even declared war, they had already invited



many outside experts. Thus, our Tang Family was caught completely unprepared.”

“When we discovered that the situation was amiss, it was already too late.”

“Right now, although the overall strength of our Tang Family and the Cao Family does not differ by much, it is the Cao Family that holds the advantage. If we were to truly enter a battle, it would definitely be our Tang Family that would end up losing.”

“As my father does not wish to be defeated, he began to invite experts from all over. Several days ago, he went to ask one of his good friends to lend us a hand.”

“However, never did we expect that his good friend had already been bribed by the Cao Family. He actually joined hands with the Cao Family and mounted a sneak attack against my father.”

“That is why my father ended up being seriously injured,” As Tang Ying mentioned this matter, she gnashed her teeth angrily.

## Chapter 2163 – The Situation Turning Bad

---

“Is your father the strongest person in your Tang Family?” Chu Feng asked.

“My father is a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. He is indeed the strongest person in our Tang Family,” Tang Ying said.

“Your father is the strongest person in your Tang Family. Yet, he was injured from the sneak attack. Thus, why did the Cao Family not seize this opportunity to attack your Tang Family? Why would they give your father time to heal his injuries?” Chu Feng asked in a very puzzled manner.

“It’s my father’s good friend. Perhaps his conscience got to him after he injured my father and was unable to continue.”

“It was him who pleaded to the Cao Family to spare my father. Furthermore, he also requested for time for my father to heal his injuries. Else, he declared that he would fight for our Tang Family instead.”

“However, should the Tang Family present my father time to heal his injuries, he would no longer involve himself in this matter,” Tang Ying said.

“It’s actually this melodramatic?” Black lines ran down Chu Feng’s face.

“That’s right, it’s very melodramatic. However, it remains that if it wasn’t for my father’s good friend, my father would’ve already been killed by the Cao Family that day,” Tang Ying said.

“This thing is interesting. It is truly quite a drama,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he asked, “Then, what is the length of time the Cao Family gave your father to heal his injuries?”

“We still have another month,” Tang Ying said.

“Then there should be enough time,” Chu Feng said.

“Enough time for what?” Tang Ying asked.

“I must go and eliminate that demonic woman first. However, since I’ve promised to be your bodyguard for a month, I must protect you.”

“This is especially true when your Tang Family is faced with your great enemy. At that time, you should be in greater danger. As your bodyguard, how can I not be by your side?”

“However, if it’s a month, I should be able to finish eliminating the demonic woman, and then come to protect you,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying. Chu Feng was someone who abided by his promises. As such, he would definitely do as he had promised.

“Chu Feng... I...” Suddenly, Tang Ying’s expression changed. She started to suck in her lips. It was as if she was feeling some sort of grievance.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am sorry. When I first saw you, I deliberately tried to pick a quarrel with you,” Tang Ying said.

“I know,” Chu Feng said with a smile, “Even a fool could tell that you were deliberately picking a quarrel with me. After all, you could have travelled through any region in that vast sky. Yet, you insisted on traveling where I was standing.”

“That is why I need to apologize to you. I picked a quarrel against you for no reason at all. Yet, not only did you not hold a grudge, you even saved me and the many guards of our Tang Family.”

“As you are my savior, my benefactor, I should have repaid your kindness unconditionally. However, when you mentioned that you wanted to find the Demon Subduing Spring, I brought forth conditions, and demanded that you be my bodyguard.”

“Not only did you agree to it, you are actually also this diligent towards it, and are thinking about my safety.”

“But, I have clearly treated you like that, yet you have still treated me this good. I... I... wuu... I am truly a wretch.”

As Tang Ying said those words, tears were already present in the corners of her eyes. Then, like water from the Yellow River, the tears were unstoppable, breaking through the dams and surging out from her eyes.

In the end, Tang Ying was still only a girl that had just reached the age of adulthood. However, her temperament was still only that of a girl.

It was because there were not many people that had treated her with sincerity in her life that she ended up being moved to tears when she encountered someone like Chu Feng.

“Hey, hey, hey, don’t act like this. Anyone that doesn’t know what happened might think that I did something to you,” Chu Feng urged with a smile.

“Wuu!!!” However, Tang Ying started to cry even louder.

“Stop crying. If you continue to cry, I’m going to act,” Chu Feng suddenly said.

“Act, what?” Tang Ying started at Chu Feng with a bewildered expression.

“Your Tang Family possesses all those experts. What if they decide to put me to death from anger?”

“If I had truly done something to you, my death would be justified. However, I have not done anything. Tell me, would my death be wrong or not?”

“Thus, if you continue to cry, I’m going to be shameless and bring you to the bed. I will have you have a taste of my ability.”

“Like that, even if your Tang Family were to kill me, I would not have died with grievances,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile across his face.

“Puu...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Tang Ying not only stopped crying, she even burst into laughter. She looked to Chu Feng and said, “When I first met you, you were quite cold. Never would I have expected that you’re actually a hoodlum.”

“All men are hoodlums. However, I will only act like a hoodlum toward people that I have a favorable impression of.”

“However, don’t take my words to heart. I was merely joking around with you,” Chu Feng spoke with righteousness.

“You...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying, who was confident in her charm, was naturally somewhat angered. However, after thinking about it a bit, she did not break out with her bossy young miss temperament.

Instead, she forced down her anger and spoke to Chu Feng gently. “Chu Feng, I am actually not the type of person like the me that you first met. I was only angered because of this matter of the arranged marriage with the Cao Family.”

“The reason for that is because my eldest brother and second brother said that if my father is not healed by the time the Cao Family attacks us, I must, for the sake of preserving our Tang Family, marry that retard.”

“Do you wish to marry that retard?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course not. I’ve never even met him before,” Tang Ying said as she shook her head.

“Then don’t,” Chu Feng said.

“But, this matter is already not something that I can decide,” Tang Ying said.

“What’s there to fear? I’m with you,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a beaming smile, “I’ll protect you.”

Hearing those words, Tang Ying’s expression grew sluggish again. She felt as if she did not dare to believe what she just heard.

However, as she looked at Chu Feng who had an expression of sincerity across his face, she started to smile happily and said, “Okay.”

She did not understand why. However, after Chu Feng said those words, she started to believe him deeply. She felt that Chu Feng would truly be able to protect her.

“Young miss, this is bad!” Suddenly, a servant girl rushed in.

“A’cai, aren’t you supposed to be serving my father? Why would you run over here?” Tang Ying asked impatiently.

“Young miss, this is truly bad. You must escape immediately.”

“That Grandmaster [Kangping](#) has fed Master the Ghostfiend Beast’s bone powder. Yet, he is still unable to cure Master’s injury.”

“I heard the Eldest Young Master’s discussion with the Second Young Master. They said that they planned to marry you to the Cao Family before they attacked the Tang Family so as to resolve the conflict with the Cao Family,” The servant girl said.

“How could this be?!” Hearing those words, Tang Ying collapsed onto her butt. She had a completely dejected expression on her face.

“Do you want me to bring you away?” Chu Feng asked.

“I naturally want to run away. However, I cannot disregard the safety of the Tang Family,” Tang Ying’s voice grew very low. It went without saying that she was feeling very depressed.

“Since that’s the case, bring me over so that I can have a look at your father. I am also a world spiritist. I also possess some understanding of healing techniques. Perhaps I might be able to provide some assistance,” Chu Feng said.

“How could I have forgotten about that? Very well, let’s go over immediately,” Tang Ying stood up, grabbed Chu Feng and began to

rush out.

“Young miss, you cannot go over there. Have you forgotten that Master has personally ordered that you are not allowed to enter his sleeping chambers?” The servant girl said.

“We have no time to worry about that,” Tang Ying ignored the servant girl, tightly grabbed Chu Feng and rushed out with quick steps.

At that moment, Chu Feng was the last straw for her to clutch at. She had placed all of her hopes onto Chu Feng.

Kangping → Peace and Prosperity. Not sure if it's his name or title yet.

# Chapter 2164 – Gazes Of Despise

---

Following Tang Ying, Chu Feng soon arrived at the sleeping chambers of the Tang Family's Family Head.

Several figures were gathered in the sleeping chambers of the Tang Family's Family Head. Among them was Tang Ying's third brother, Tang Yong.

There were two other men. Those two men were much older than Tang Yong. The oldest among them was actually over five thousand years old.

“Little sister, why would you be here?”

“Didn't father order that you were not allowed to enter this place?”

After seeing Tang Ying and Chu Feng, not only did that Tang Yong walk toward them and address Tang Ying as 'little sister', the two other men also walked toward them and addressed Tang Ying as 'little sister' as well.

Chu Feng was surprised by this scene. He had truly never expected Tang Ying's older brothers to be this old. Judging by this, Tang Ying's oldest brother was over five thousands years older than her.

An age gap this enormous would simply be impossible to be spoken of as siblings in a small power. Instead, it should be the relationship of one's ancestor and one's descendant.

For example, the founder of the Azure Dragon School, the Azure Dragon Founder, was only over a thousand years old. Furthermore, if it wasn't for the treasures left behind by Qing Xuantian, he would not have been able to survive for over a millennium. After all, his cultivation was very weak.

However, Tang Ying's three older brothers had all been able to live for at least ten thousand years or longer. The reason for that



was because they were all Half Martial Ancestor-level experts.

This was the disparity between cultivation realms. Not only would one's cultivation increase one's strength, it would strengthen all aspects of oneself.

As for Tang Ying's oldest brother, he was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. He possessed the strongest strength among the Tang Family siblings.

Although he was over five thousand years old, when compared to the experts in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would be seen as extremely amazing to have been able to obtain his current level of cultivation in a mere five thousand years. In fact, he could be considered to be a martial cultivation genius.

However, Chu Feng felt that he would not be considered to be a genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. At the very most, he would be considered to be gifted.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had heard from his father that only people that possessed extraordinary heaven-defying battle power would be considered geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. An example of such would be the Heavenly Clans.

"Eldest brother, second brother, third brother, this is Chu Feng. He is the one that killed the Ghostfiend Beast."

"Not only does Chu Feng possessed overwhelming strength, he is also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He said that he wished to help treat father's injury," Tang Ying hurriedly said.

Tang Ying's oldest brother used his deep gaze to size up Chu Feng. Then, he revealed a light smile, and said with a tone that was neither servile nor overbearing, "Nice to meet you, Brother Chu Feng. I am Tang Ying's oldest brother, Tang Long." One could tell that he was a person of experience.

"Brother Chu Feng, I am Tang Ying's second brother, Tang Hu. I

have heard of you from my third brother.”

“Those two were truly insensible. I hope that you do not take their offense to heart.”

Tang Ying’s second brother also walked toward Chu Feng to speak to him. Compared to Tang Ying’s oldest brother, her second brother was much more enthusiastic and polite. By the same manner, he also appeared to be more fake.

Although Chu Feng was young, he had experienced a lot. Thus, his sense of perception was very strong. He was generally capable of distinguishing whether people were treating him with sincerity or putting on an act.

As for Tang Ying’s oldest brother and second brother, it was evident that they were not welcoming Chu Feng with sincerity.

“There’s no need to mention things that happened in the past anymore. May I have a look at the Tang Family’s Family Head?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend, are you really a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Right at this moment, an old man with long blonde hair who was wearing a Royal Cloak World Spiritist Cloak slowly walked out from within the depths of the sleeping chamber.

That old man’s cultivation was not very strong; he was only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. However, he was extremely old. He was likely over ten thousand years old.

At his age, his face should be filled with wrinkles and aged spots. However, he had no such thing.

Not only did his face have no wrinkles or age spots, it was also extremely rosy, comparable to an infant’s skin. In fact, his entire body was glimmering. It was as if he was a living Immortal.

Without having others mention it, Chu Feng knew that he must

be that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist Tang Ying had spoken of, that so-called Grandmaster Kangping.

“Grandmaster Kangping, Chu Feng is truly a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Tang Ying said.

“Indeed, my little sister and our Tang Family’s many guards have all experienced Brother Chu Feng’s abilities,” Tang Yong added.

“Oh?” However, that Grandmaster Kangping began to size up Chu Feng with a gaze of disbelief.

Sure enough, it was as Tang Ying had said, this Grandmaster Kangping was extremely conceited. Although his cultivation was only that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, there was a dense amount of disdain in the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng.

Seeing that the attitude of that Grandmaster Kangping was not good, Chu Feng did not face him with a smile either. Instead, he coldly said, “What’s this? Do I need you to inspect and verify whether or not I’m a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Haha, there’s no need for that. Merely, little friend, this old man has trained in world spirit techniques for no less than ten thousand years.”

“Since I began to train in world spirit techniques, I have meticulously studied healing techniques. That is the reason why I ended up delaying my martial cultivation. Else, it would be impossible for me to only be a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.”

“However, my painstaking efforts were not in vain. Right now, no one in the territory governed by Luyang’s Pavilion does not know about me, Kangping.”

“While I do not dare to boast about anything else, I dare say that I, Kangping, am second to none in terms of healing others.”

“The injury to the Tang Family’s Family Head is too serious. It is not that I cannot heal him. Rather, it is that I am unable to completely heal him within a month’s time.”

“When even I am unable to cure him, little friend, are you really certain that you want to attempt to cure him?” Grandmaster Kangping said to Chu Feng.

“Just because it’s an injury that you cannot cure, does that mean that others cannot cure it too?” Chu Feng refuted.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the expression of that Grandmaster Kangping changed. A displeased expression appeared in his gaze.

However, he did not reveal his displeasure. Instead, he smiled and said, “If little friend wishes to attempt it, I will naturally not stop you.”

“Merely...” Grandmaster Kangping looked to the Tang Family’s four siblings, “your father’s injury is very serious. It has already injured his soul. I was only able to stabilize his injury through a spirit formation I’ve formed with meticulous effort. Although I am unable to cure him within a month’s time, it remains that I have preserved his life.”

“However, if someone decides to take their own initiative and destroy what I have set up, your father might end up losing his life in the process.”

“At that time, I will not take responsibility for it.”

“This...” Hearing those words, Tang Long, Tang Hu and Tang Yong all revealed difficult expressions. As it concerned their father’s life, they would naturally not dare to act recklessly.

“Brother Chu Feng, we thank you for your kind intentions.”

After hesitating for some time, Tang Long said to Chu Feng with a smile, “It is not that we are looking down on you. Merely, Grandmaster Kangping is truly someone who has great knowledge of healing techniques. Thus... I think it is better to listen to him.”

“In merely two hours, I will be able to completely cure your father. If I am unable to accomplish that, you all can do as you

wish to my life,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what are you saying? There’s no need for you to risk your life like this, no?” Hearing those words, Tang Ying was extremely shocked. She hurriedly moved toward Chu Feng and advised him against it. After all, she did not wish for Chu Feng to lose his life because of her family matters.

“Rest assured, I possess certainty of success,” Chu Feng lightly patted Tang Ying’s hand that was grabbing him. He was indicating to her to not worry.

“...” Seeing Chu Feng acting this confident, Tang Long and his brothers also revealed surprised expressions.

However, compared to Tang Yong, Tang Long and Tang Hu’s gazes contained a bit of doubt.

The two of them did not know much about Chu Feng, nor had they seen his abilities. Thus, they were uncertain as to whether Chu Feng was truly capable or whether he was boasting.

# Chapter 2165 – The One Courting Death Is You

---

“Little friend, you are truly one who dares to say anything.”

At that moment, Grandmaster Kangping smiled coldly. Then, he turned to Tang Long and said, “Eldest Young Master Tang, although your father’s injury is unstable, I am still capable of containing it. Since this little friend is so confident, why don’t you let him give it a try?”

“Grandmaster Kangping, is it truly fine?” Tang Long revealed a difficult expression. He truly did not believe in Chu Feng.

As he was someone who had lived for thousands of years, he was naturally able to tell that Kangping wanted Chu Feng to try healing his father because he wanted Chu Feng to die. However, he did not wish to use his father as a test subject.

“Big brother, just let Chu Feng make an attempt. Or could it be that you really want me to marry into the Cao Family?”

“Right now, father is seriously injured with an injury that is hard to treat. It is the perfect timing for the Cao Family to eliminate our Tang Family.”

“Even if I am to be married off to them, it would still be very unlikely that the Cao Family will spare our Tang Family.”

“Only by improving the condition of father’s injury will our Tang Family have a chance to survive,” Tang Ying urged.

“This...” Tang Long was placed in an even more difficult situation. Thus, he entered deep contemplation. Perhaps because he felt that what Tang Ying said was very reasonable, he ended up saying to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, please be careful.”

“Rest assured,” As Chu Feng spoke, he moved past the others and entered deeper into the sleeping chamber.

Deep inside the sleeping chamber was a special bed. That bed was formed through a combination of spirit formations and over ten thousand kinds of medicinal herbs. It was especially useful for healing injuries.

At that moment, an old man was lying on the bed. This old man barely had any hair. His entire body was filled with wrinkles and age spots. Fortunately, he was still breathing. Else, he would practically be no different from a dried corpse.

It was likely that this old man was more than ten thousand years old. Even if his injuries were capable of being cured, he would likely not be able to continue to live for long.

As for his cultivation, it was not weak at all. He was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. This old man... was naturally the Tang Family's Family Head.

Actually, Chu Feng had been secretly observing the Tang Family's Family Head after he entered the sleeping chamber. He only said those words after he determined that he would be able to treat him.

At that moment, Chu Feng spread open his hands. Many streams of Dragon Mark Royal-level spirit power began to appear. Chu Feng was planning to begin his treatment.

After seeing Chu Feng's world spirit power, the people present, with the exception of Tang Ying, were all surprised.

The reason for that was because it was the first time for all of them to see Chu Feng unleashing his world spirit techniques. Even though they already knew that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, they remained shocked after personally seeing him in action.

After all, it was extremely rare for there to be such a young Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Right at that moment, that Grandmaster Kangping suddenly

said, “Little friend, I’ll say what must be said first. If something is to happen to the Tang Family’s Family Head, even if you wish to live, you will not be able to do so.”

Chu Feng turned around and said, “Unfortunately, my life and death is not decided by you,”

“Of course, it will not be me, but instead the people of the Tang Family,” Grandmaster Kangping said.

“Wrong,” Chu Feng smiled indifferently, “only I get to decide my life and death.”

“Oh, you’re truly arrogant.”

“If you are capable of healing the Tang Family’s Family Head, this old man shall cripple his cultivation,” Grandmaster Kangping revealed an expression of anger. He had finally completely revealed his displeasure toward Chu Feng.

“You must honor your words then,” Chu Feng said.

“I, Kangping, am always one to keep my word,” Grandmaster Kangping spoke confidently. He possessed absolute confidence that he would be able to live.

“Since you wish to cripple yourself like this, I shall help you accomplish your aim.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his hands began to move as he began to form his spirit formation. Soon, a grand spirit formation appeared and covered the entire area around Chu Feng and the Tang Family’s Family Head.

Once that spirit formation appeared, the expression of that Grandmaster Kangping changed enormously. He was shocked to discover that even he was unable to see through the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up.

Although he felt extremely unreconciled, a trace of panic appeared in his gaze.



Merely, that trace of panic persisted for merely an instant before disappearing. It was replaced with his former confidence.

Following that, the corners of Kangping's mouth rose slightly. Then, he leisurely sat on a seat to the side and began to drink his tea.

"Grandmaster Kangping, is this truly fine?" Tang Long and his brothers asked nervously.

"Humph, how would I know," Kangping sneered. Although he said it like that, it could be determined from his confident gaze that he firmly believed that Chu Feng would definitely fail.

"Tang Ying, I'll say the unpleasant words first. If something is to happen to father, do not blame me, your older brother, for being rude toward your friend," Tang Long said to Tang Ying fiercely.

At the same time, Tang Hu and even Tang Yong began to send voice transmissions to Tang Ying.

They were all trying to shift their responsibility. Like that, even if something were to happen to their father, they would not have to shoulder any blame.

At that moment, Tang Ying became increasingly nervous.

She was not afraid that her older brothers would punish her. Rather, she was afraid that Chu Feng would fail. If Chu Feng failed, then, with the temperament of her three older brothers, they might really end up killing Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng possessed a special status, it remained that the Tang Family was faced with a great enemy and on the brink of a crisis.

Under these sort of circumstances, the people of the Tang Family would not have any apprehensions. They were extremely bold. Even if Chu Feng was someone from a Heavenly Clan, if Chu Feng were to truly harm their father, they would not spare him.

Under those sort of circumstances, Tang Ying felt that time was dragging past. This short period of two hours felt like multiple days to her. It was a torture to her psyche.

Fortunately, after a period of one hour finally passed. The spirit formation that covered the surroundings was also lifted.

When the spirit formation was lifted, the crowd present all revealed surprised expressions.

Not only was Chu Feng standing there, even the Tang Family's Family Head was standing there. Furthermore, the Tang Family's Family Head was radiating health and vigor; how could he possibly resemble someone that had been seriously injured?

Needless to say, they had guessed wrong. Their father had managed to recover. Chu Feng had succeeded.

“Damn it!” At the moment when the people from the Tang Family were rejoicing, that Grandmaster Kangping's expression changed. He turned around and tried to escape.

“Woosh~~~”

However, before he could escape, a figure blocked his path. It was Chu Feng.

“Grandmaster Kangping, didn't you say that you would honor your words?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“You are courting death!”

Grandmaster Kangping flipped his wrist and revealed an Imperial Armament. With frightening Ancestral-level martial power, he thrust his Imperial Armament at Chu Feng's dantian.

That ferocious killing intent caused the surrounding space to shatter. He was not only planning to cripple Chu Feng's cultivation, he was planning to kill Chu Feng.

However, not to mention the Ancestral-level martial power, even if that Imperial Armament were to directly land onto Chu Feng's

body, it would not be able to cause Chu Feng any harm.

Chu Feng was like an impenetrable wall; even grand Imperial Armaments would not be able to penetrate his body. In fact, they would not even be able to cut through his clothing.

“The one courting death is you.”

Suddenly, coldness flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes as his oppressive might swept forth. “Boom,” that Grandmaster Kangping was knocked flying. Then, he firmly crashed into the palace wall.

Chu Feng’s attack was truly ruthless. When Kangping fell to the ground, his body was covered completely with blood, and his health was so weak that he was only a breath away from death.

“Brother Chu Feng, what are you doing? Grandmaster Kangping is our guest,” Seeing this scene, the three Tang Family brothers all started to panic.

Especially Tang Long and Tang Hu. Their bodies shifted, and they arrived before Kangping, blocking him. They were afraid that Chu Feng would attack Kangping again.

As for what Grandmaster Kangping had said earlier, they did not take it to heart. After all, many people already knew that they had invited Grandmaster Kangping to heal their father. If Grandmaster Kangping were to die in their Tang Family, it would ruin their Tang Family’s reputation once the news spread.

Furthermore, in addition to their own interests, Grandmaster Kangping was also a good friend to the Tang Family’s Family Head.

With how special their relationship was, they would naturally not let Chu Feng kill Kangping.

“What am I doing? He wished to kill me, are you saying that I shouldn’t kill him?” Chu Feng spoke coldly.

“Even if he is in the wrong, you shouldn’t be this ruthless,” Tang

Long spoke very furiously.

However, right at that moment, an angry shout sounded. “Shut up! You unfilial sons, how could you speak to little friend Chu Feng this rudely?” That shout caused the entire sleeping chamber to tremble violently. It was the Tang Family’s Family Head.

“Father, you!!!” The three Tang brothers were bewildered by how their father was standing on Chu Feng’s side and berating them.

In fact, it was not only the three brothers that were confused; even Tang Ying revealed a puzzled expression.

They all knew very well that Grandmaster Kangping possessed an extraordinary relationship with their father, that they were close friends of many years.

Even if Chu Feng had cured their father’s injury, with the relationship their father had with Kangping, their father should be speaking on Kangping’s behalf.

So, why was he speaking on Chu Feng’s behalf?

# Chapter 2166 – Jackals Of The Same Tribe

---

“Kangping, I have considered you my friend in vain. Never would I have expected that you would go and help the Cao Family harm me like this,” Just when the four siblings were puzzled, the Tang Family’s Family Head turned his ferocious gaze toward Grandmaster Kangping.

“Grandmaster Kangping, you... exactly what did you do to my father?”

Hearing those words, the expressions of Tang Long and Tang Hu changed immediately. They were already able to determine that the situation was amiss from what their father just said. They drew their weapons and pointed them at Grandmaster Kangping.

At the same time, seemingly as if they had heard the commotion in the area, a large group of Half Martial Ancestor-level guards from the Tang Family rushed in. They all drew their weapons and aimed them at Kangping as well.

One thing worthy of mention was that the Tang Family’s eldest son, Tang Long, was not using an Imperial Armament. Rather, his weapon was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

Although it was not an excellent quality weapon, being inferior to the Magma Emperor Sword that Chu Feng had refined, it remained an actual Incomplete Ancestral Armament. The might of his weapon greatly surpassed that of Imperial Armaments.

“Hahaha, since you all have discovered it, I will no longer conceal it either.”

“The Cao Family has already guessed that you will definitely come to find me should you want to heal your injuries. Thus, the Cao Family found me a step earlier.”

“What I must do is very simple: I merely need not heal your injuries,” Grandmaster Kangping said.

“Not heal his injury? Is it really that simple?” Chu Feng sneered, “You used tricks to make the Tang Family’s Family Head enter a deep state of unconsciousness, losing all ability to fight.”

“Furthermore, you placed many poisonous formations inside his body at the location of his injury. If someone else were to attempt to heal his injury and accidentally triggered those hidden poisonous formations, they would cause the death of the Tang Family’s Family Head.”

“As for the reason why you refused to let me heal the Tang Family’s Family Head earlier, it was because of your ego as a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. You thought that your medical expertise would be insulted should I be allowed to treat him.”

“As for why you decided to allow me to treat the Tang Family’s Family Head later, it was because you wanted to borrow my hands to kill the Tang Family’s Family Head. Like that, you would also be able to eliminate me, who you despised, and thus kill two birds with one stone.”

“However, you must not have thought that I had already seen through all the things that you did. before I even began treatment of the Tang Family’s Family Head. I had already planned on how to undo the hidden poisonous formations and the other tricks you’d done to the Tang Family’s Family Head, as well as how to heal the Tang Family’s Family Head. Two hours just happened to be enough time to accomplish all of that.”

After Chu Feng said those words, the eyes of the crowd present all shone. They did not expect that Chu Feng had actually seen through everything.

“It was indeed all thanks to little friend Chu Feng. Else, I’m afraid that this old man’s life would sooner or later, have ended by your hands,” The Tang Family’s Family Head was also filled with gratefulness.

“Bastard, if it wasn’t for you, this old man’s plan would’ve succeeded,” Suddenly, coldness flashed through Kangping’s eyes. He actually planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

However, right after he unleashed his killing intent, before he could even attack, two streams of blood squirted out of his body.

It was the brothers Tang Long and Tang Hu. The two men had both pierced through Kangping’s body with their respective weapons, nailing him to the wall.

“Haha, humans will die for riches just as birds will die for food, go ahead and kill me,” Sensing that he would not be able to escape, Kangping did not beg for forgiveness, and instead burst into loud laughter.

“I have considered you a senior in vain. For you to harm my father like this, even killing you would not be able to alleviate the hatred in my heart.”

“I must properly torment you first,” After Tang Long said those words, the Incomplete Ancestral Armament in his hand trembled. As a strange power entered Kangping, he began to scream miserably, as if his heart and lungs were being split open.

“Long’er, it’s enough. Although he was heartless toward me, I cannot be unrighteous toward him. Considering our many years of friendship, let him die comfortably,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“Tang Haichuan, enough of your pretended righteousness. Don’t you think that I do not know what you did in the Immemorial Beast’s remnant. If it wasn’t for you, I...”

“Boom~~~”

Before Kangping could finish his words, his body exploded into a

mist of blood.

He was killed. Not by the brothers Tang Long and Tang Hu. Rather, he was killed by the Tang Family's Family Head.

“Truly one who refuses the face that is given to him,” After killing Kangping, the Tang Family's Family Head said those words fiercely.

Seeing this scene, the three Tang Family brothers all revealed unrestrained expressions. They all felt that Kangping should be killed.

However, Tang Ying revealed a face filled with shock. She was confused, because her father seemed to have implied that he would leave Kangping an intact corpse earlier. Yet, he had then personally shattered Kangping's body.

At that moment, although there was no change in Chu Feng's expression on the surface, in his heart, he had a whole new understanding of the Tang Family's Family Head.

It was clear that the Kangping had not secretly attacked the Tang Family's Family Head without reason.

It was very possible that the Tang Family's Family Head had done something to wrong Kangping years ago, causing Kangping to harbor hard feelings against him. Then when the Tang Family's Family Head was seriously injured, and the Cao Family was willing to back him, he found the opportunity to take revenge against the Tang Family's Family Head.

From this, it could be seen that the Tang Family's Family Head was not a good fellow either. Compared to that Kangping, they were simply jackals of the same tribe.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng still had to save the Tang Family's Family Head for Tang Ying's sake.

“You three, why are you still standing here? Go and apologize to little friend Chu Feng immediately. If it wasn't for little friend Chu



Feng, I would've been killed by that Kangping."

"And you three, you were actually stopping little friend Chu Feng from treating me earlier. You all are simply fools out-and-out," The Tang Family's Family Head berated the three Tang brothers angrily.

"Father, we were foolish."

"Brother Chu Feng, please forgive us for our rudeness earlier," Tang Long and his brothers all had ashamed expressions on their faces. They first admitted their wrongs to their father, then bowed and apologized to Chu Feng.

"It's fine, your actions were all understandable," Chu Feng said with a light smile.

"Little friend Chu Feng, it is truly all thanks to you this time around. If it wasn't for you, it would not only be me, instead, likely our entire Tang Family would have..." The Tang Family's Family Head sighed.

"Little friend Chu Feng, for you to be able to have your cultivation and exquisite world spirit techniques at such a young age, may I know which Heavenly Clan managed to nurture such an outstanding genius like yourself?" The Tang Family's Family Head asked.

"If I were to tell you that I do not belong to a clan, would you believe me?" Chu Feng asked instead of answering.

"Haha, of course. Why would I not believe you?" The Tang Family's Family Head burst into laughter. He naturally knew that Chu Feng was not speaking the truth. However, he also understood that Chu Feng did not wish to tell him which Heavenly Clan he was from. Thus, being tactful, he did not continue to ask.

"That said, little friend Chu Feng, not only have you saved my life, your actions are equivalent to saving our entire Tang Family. As such, I must thank you properly."

“What is it that you wish? Go ahead and tell me without any hesitation. As long as it is something that our Tang Family possesses, I will definitely provide you with it,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“It would do if you could provide me with some more Demon Subduing Spring Water,” Chu Feng said.

“Demon Subduing Spring Water?” The Tang Family’s Family Head was startled by those words. He was confused as to why Chu Feng would need something like that.

Although the Demon Subduing Spring Water was precious, it remained only capable of being used against the demonic woman, and not much else.

“Father, it’s like this...” Seeing that, Tang Ying stepped forward to explain why Chu Feng needed Demon Subduing Spring Water to her father.

“Since that’s the case, why are you all still standing here? Quickly, go and order people to prepare the Demon Subduing Spring Water,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

In response, a guard clasp his fist and reported, “Master, actually, we have already prepared the Demon Subduing Spring Water that Young Miss had us prepare. Merely, we did not dare to bring it into your sleeping chamber, and were waiting for Young Miss to receive it.”

“Quickly, have it delivered here,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

Then, a guard walked in. He held a special bottle in his hand. Chu Feng received the bottle and opened it to look. Sure enough, there was special spring water inside it.

Although it was the first time he had seen this sort of spring water, he felt that it should be the Demon Subduing Spring Water.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt joy in his heart. He finally saw

some hope to save Wang Qiang's life.

## Chapter 2167 – Chu Feng, Quickly, Escape

---

“Thanks,” Chu Feng received the Demon Subduing Spring Water and expressed his thanks to the Tang Family’s Family Head. Then, he turned to Tang Ying and said, “I will go and eliminate that demonic woman first. After that, I will return and uphold my promise to be your bodyguard for a month.”

“Tang Long, Tang Hu, prepare men to help little friend Chu Feng eliminate that demonic woman,” The Tang Family’s Family Head ordered.

“There’s no need for that. I myself am sufficient,” Chu Feng said. The way he saw it, other than the Tang Family’s Family Head, no one in the Tang Family was stronger than him.

As for the Tang Family’s Family head, he would definitely stay to oversee the Tang Family. As such, it would be impossible for him to go and assist Chu Feng in eliminating that demonic woman. Thus, rather than bringing a bunch of burdens with him, it would be better for Chu Feng to go alone.

“Merely, little friend Chu Feng, for you to go alone, I fear...” The Tang Family’s Family Head was worried.

“Father, please rest assured. Chu Feng was able to kill even the Ghostfiend Beast. No matter how strong that demonic woman might be, she would not necessarily be a match for Chu Feng,” Tang Ying declared proudly.

“Oh?” Hearing that, the Tang Family Family Head revealed a surprised gaze. Although the people from Heavenly Clans were all very powerful, he evidently had not expected Chu Feng to be so powerful that he could even kill a Ghostfiend Beast. After all, he also knew that Ghostfiend Beasts were extraordinary existences.

“Since that’s the case, then, little friend Chu Feng, I wish you luck on your journey,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“Eldest Young Master, this is bad!” Right at this moment, a Half Martial Ancestor-level expert rushed in.

When this old man saw the Tang Family’s Family Head after rushing in, he immediately revealed an overjoyed expression. Happiness appeared on his panicking face.

“Master, y-y-you’ve actually recovered? This is truly great! Even the Heavens are looking out for our Tang Family!” said that old man.

The Tang Family’s Family Head noticed that something was amiss. Thus, he asked, “What happened?”

“Master, the Cao Family has refused to comply with their agreement. They have led their army to attack us before the promised time. Right now, the Cao Family’s army is already outside the city; they have already sealed off our Tang Family, and are planning to besiege the city,” The old man reported.

“What?!” Hearing those words, the crowd present all revealed surprised expressions.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

.....

.....

Right at that moment, rumbles began to sound from outside. Someone was attacking the Tang Family’s defensive formation.

Chu Feng immediately activated his Heaven’s Eyes. After he looked outside, he discovered that a dense amount of people had already entered the city. From all directions, they had tightly sealed off the Tang Family.

There were a lot of experts among them. Especially the leading old man; his age was about the same as the Tang Family’s Family Head. He was an extremely thin old man.

Not only was this old man thin, his stature was also very short and small. His height was only around a hundred and sixty centimeters. He was shorter than even ordinary women.

However, this old man's eyes gave off a shrewd light. Furthermore, he emitted the powerful oppressive might of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Without even having others introduce him, Chu Feng was able to guess that that old man must be the Cao Family's Family Head.

At that moment, that Cao Family's Family Head was unleashing nonstop attacks at the Tang Family's defensive formation.

The might of an Incomplete Ancestral Armament being used by him, a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, could be said to be extremely frightening. Cracks had already started to appear in the Tang Family's defensive formation; it would soon be destroyed.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded. The Cao Family's Family Head had managed to shatter the Tang Family's defensive formation.

After destroying the defensive formation, the Cao Family's Family Head shouted, “Soldiers of the Cao Family, listen up. Kill all the people from the Tang Family!!!”

“Yes Milord!!!”

Following his shout, an elite army of several tens of thousands entered the Tang Family's territory following the Cao Family's Family Head.

Their oppressive Ancestral-level oppressive might arrived before them. Countless palaces and towers were shattered by their oppressive might. In merely an instant, thousands of people from the Tang Family were killed.

In response, the Tang Family's Family Head shouted, “All those

from the Tang Family that are alive, prepare to face the enemy!!!”

Then, he soared into the air and charged into the sky.

“Tang Haichuan? You’re actually fine?” The people from the Cao Family were shocked by the appearance of the Tang Family’s Family Head.

“Unfaithful vile bastard, did you consider the promise of a month’s time to be fart?!” The Tang Family’s Family Head’s anger was overwhelming. As he cursed at the Cao Family’s Family Head, he held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and charged to attack the Cao Family’s Family Head.

At the same time, the elites from the Tang Family also soared into the air and collided with the Cao Family’s army.

“Unfaithful? You are the one who decided to violate the marriage agreement first. Yet you dare to say that I am unfaithful? How shameless can you be?” The Cao Family’s Family Head said coldly.

“Do you not fear Zhao Chengxing?” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“Hahaha. You’re talking about Zhao Chengxing, that man who mounted a sneak attack against you and left you with a serious injury?”

“Truth be told, the reason why I dared to come and attack your Tang Family is because I have already eliminated him.”

“Today, your Tang Family shall be eliminated,” Once the Cao Family’s Family Head declared that, the void started to tremble. It was as if he was completely confident that he would be able to eliminate the Tang Family.

“What shameless boasting!!!” The Tang Family’s Family Head was so enraged that his complexion turned red. At the same time, his attacks grew more and more ferocious.

However, the Cao Family’s Family Head was not afraid in the

slightest. As the two men fought, their attacks engulfed their surroundings. The others simply did not dare to approach them.

“Brother Chu Feng, I’m sorry to inconvenience you, but please protect my little sister. If you are able to find an opportunity, please bring her away from here.”

“Please!” After Tang Long said those words to Chu Feng, he soared into the sky and joined the battle.

“Chu Feng, what should we do?” Tang Ying looked at Chu Feng with a panicky expression.

“Don’t panic, your Tang Family will not necessarily be defeated,” Chu Feng said.

“Really?” Tang Ying felt disbelief.

“I have already observed the situation. Although the Cao Family is very strong, your Tang Family is not weak either. In the amount of people and overall strength, your Tang Family is equally matched with the Cao Family. Thus, your Tang Family might not necessarily be defeated,” Chu Feng said.

“But, according to our reliable sources, the strength of the Cao Family should surpass that of our Tang Family,” Tang Ying still felt disbelief.

“There’s only one explanation for this. That is, the Cao Family has really taken care of your father’s old friend before coming to attack the Tang Family. This is why their strength has suffered some damage,” Chu Feng said.

“Clap, clap, clap, clap, clap~~~”

“Not bad, your analysis is very good.”

“However, as long as I am here, the Tang Family will definitely be defeated.”

Right at that moment, the sound of clapping was heard. Following that, an indifferent voice was heard.



This person was wearing the outfit of the Cao Family. He had the appearance of a young man. However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this man had lived for at least several hundred years.

This man's cultivation was not weak either; he was a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, his aura was much stronger than that of ordinary rank four Half Martial Ancestors; he was an existence that possessed heaven-defying battle power. Although his heaven-defying battle power was only capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, he remained stronger than ordinary Half Martial Ancestors.

“What arrogance,” Chu Feng laughed mockingly. Although his opponent was a rank four Half Martial Ancestor that possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, Chu Feng did not place him in his eyes at all.

Although Chu Feng was not afraid, Tang Ying turned pale with fear after seeing that man. She began to step back repeatedly. It was as if she had just seen a demon. Chu Feng was able to sense that Tang Ying was shivering from head to toe.

“Haha, it would seem that you do not know who I am,” That man laughed out loud.

“I could care less who you are,” Chu Feng said.

“Hahaha, you are truly young and ignorant,” That man was not angered by Chu Feng's words. Instead, with a smile on his face, he looked to Tang Ying, “Tang Ying, tell this ignorant fool exactly who I am.”

After hearing those words, Tang Ying suddenly pushed Chu Feng away and shouted, “Chu Feng, quickly, escape. Do not concern yourself with me.”

# Chapter 2168 – Huge Change In Expression

---

Chu Feng was surprised by the intense reaction from Tang Ying. He realized that this man seemed to be truly extraordinary.

However, Chu Feng remained calm and collected. With a smile on his face, he said to Tang Ying, “Have you forgotten that I am your bodyguard? How could I abandon you?”

“But... Chu Feng,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying immediately revealed a touched expression. However, she was still worried about Chu Feng.

“There’s no but. Regardless of who it is, as long as they pose a threat to you, I will protect you from them,” Chu Feng said.

“Oh, this is truly a story of love. It is no wonder that Tang Ying would refuse to marry into our Cao Family. It turns out that she has an affair with her bodyguard,” The man sneered. However, Chu Feng noticed dense killing intent in that man’s smiling gaze.

“You’re still here? It would seem that you are truly planning to die by my hands,” Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed, revealing a dense amount of chilliness.

In a battle between two armies, the soldiers would fight for their own masters. Although this man was smiling, daggers were hidden in his smile.

Chu Feng had already sensed his killing intent; that man was determined to kill Chu Feng. Thus, there was no need for Chu Feng to act leniently toward someone like him. Even if he wanted to escape, Chu Feng would not allow him to escape.

“Yoh, what shameless boasting. No matter what, I am a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Where did you, a mere rank one Half Martial Ancestor, obtain the courage to hoot at me like that?” Finally, mockery appeared in that man’s smile.

“Rank one Half Martial Ancestor? Are you certain of that?” As

Chu Feng spoke, lightning flashed in his eyes. As lightning serpents intertwined with one another, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared. At the same time, Chu Feng's aura increased from that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor to that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor instantly.

“You're someone from the Heavenly Clans?” The man's expression changed to one of surprise upon seeing Chu Feng's current appearance.

However, his surprised expression persisted for merely a moment. Soon, he smiled again, “Since you're from the Heavenly Clans, it would mean that you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. In other words, your true battle power is on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors. No wonder you're this confident.”

“However, it would appear that you might not have known that I have killed people from the Heavenly Clans before too. Thus, do not think that I will spare you just because you're from the Heavenly Clans.”

“For you must know that I am the Third Young Master of the Cao Family, the renowned Cao Yuxuan!!!”

When he spoke that last sentence, that man suddenly started to shout his words. His voice spread through the entire Tang Family. Even the people outside the city heard his voice.

“Cao Yuxuan?” Hearing that name, the expressions of countless Tang Family experts changed. Involuntarily, they turned their gazes over.

“It's really him! Why would he be here?” After the crowd used their various methods to verify the status of the man far away from them, their expressions became even uglier.

Noticing the reaction from the people of the Tang Family, Chu Feng felt that the situation was amiss. Thus, he turned to Tang

Ying and asked, “Tang Ying, tell me about this Cao Yuxuan.”

“Chu Feng, Cao Yuxuan is the Cao Family’s third son. He is a Divine Body. Although he is a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, he possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation. Furthermore, his Divine Power is capable of increasing his cultivation by another level. Thus, his actual battle power is that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.”

“He is the strongest genius to appear in the Cao Family in the past twenty thousand years. My eldest brother fought against him before. However, he was defeated from a single strike.”

“Most importantly, he is part of Luyang’s Pavilion, one of the three personal disciples of Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master. Even in Luyang’s Pavilion, he possesses an extremely high status. Even my father does not dare to act rudely toward him.”

“Originally, he should have been in closed-door training in Luyang’s Pavilion. Furthermore, he also declared that he would not participate in the struggle between the Tang Family and the Cao Family.”

“However, it is evident that he has gone against what he had declared before and is planning to participate in this struggle.”

“But... with his special status, practically no one would dare to fight against him. I’m afraid that our Tang Family will...”

“Chu Feng, quickly escape from here. You are unrelated to our battle to begin with. I do not want you to be implicated,” Tang Ying said.

“Are the people of your Tang Family actually stupid?” Black lines filled Chu Feng’s forehead.

When the Cao Family possessed such a trump card, their Tang Family should have given in to them sooner. Yet, the Tang Family did not do that, and even believed that this Cao Yuxuan would not participate in his family’s battle.

How could that possibly be real? One must know that that was his family. How could he disregard the life and death of his family? How could he not use his special status?

At that moment, Chu Feng had no choice but to admire the intelligence of the Tang Family. The reason for that was because the overall intelligence of the Tang Family was truly low.

It was no wonder they were so passive in all respects in the battle against the Cao Family, no wonder they have ended up in such a state.

“But, Luyang’s Pavilion has never participated in this sort of thing. Who would’ve thought that Cao Yuxuan would...?” Tang Ying said with grievances.

“Fool, Cao Yuxuan is part of the Cao Family. How could he disregard the life and death of the Cao Family?” Chu Feng said with an expression of helplessness.

“Yoh, judging from your tone, it seems that you’re afraid?”

“If you’re scared, you can scram right now. I will spare your life.”

“However, rest assured, even if you are to scram right now, I will also not kill Tang Ying.”

“No matter what, Tang Ying was the fiancée of my younger brother. Although our Cao Family will not take her as our bride again, we will also not kill her.”

“I will bring her to our Cao Family as a slave, and make her the plaything of our Cao Family’s servants.”

“Tang Ying, I will let you know the consequences of breaking the marriage agreement,” Cao Yuxuan stared at Tang Ying with a beaming smile. Coldness filled his gaze.

“Are you done speaking?” Chu Feng asked calmly.

“So what if I have, and what if I haven’t?” Cao Yuxuan said.

“If you are done, it is time to send you on your way. If you are

not, I will give you time to say some more.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. With a flip of his palm, he directly unleashed his Magma Emperor Sword. Then, he charged toward Cao Yuxuan to attack him.

“Come, arrogant Heavenly Clansman. Today, I will let you know that the people of the Heavenly Clans are not unequalled.”

With a loud shout from Cao Yuxuan, blue gaseous substances began to spread from his body.

After the blue gaseous substance appeared, it turned into a blue dagger that hovered above Cao Yuxuan’s forehead. At that moment, Cao Yuxuan’s aura began to rapidly increase. His cultivation increased to that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

“Haah!!!”

Cao Yuxuan then flipped his palm, and a giant silver axe appeared in his hand; It was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Boom~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng collided with Cao Yuxuan.

The battle between the two men caught the attention of practically everyone from the Tang Family and the Cao Family. Even the two Family Heads that were going all-out to kill one another would take glances at the battle between Chu Feng and Cao Yuxuan from time to time.

After all, Cao Yuxuan possessed a special status and powerful strength. He brought fear to the people of the Tang Family.

As for Chu Feng, his status of a member of the Heavenly Clans also caught the attention of the people from the Cao Family.

If he were someone else, they would not be afraid. However, as he was someone from the Heavenly Clans, they would, to a greater or lesser degree, feel fear.

“I truly never expected that you all would be able to request the

assistance of someone from the Heavenly Clans,” The Cao Family’s Family Head said.

“Are you afraid now? The Heavenly Clans are not something that your mere Cao Family can offend,” The Tang Family’s Family Head said.

“Hahaha, our Cao Family would naturally not dare to offend the Heavenly Clans. However, our Yuxuan is able to.”

“Don’t forget that our Yuxuan is someone that has killed people from the Heavenly Clans before. After all, behind him is Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master,” The Cao Family’s Family Head said proudly.

“That little friend is surnamed Chu, are you not afraid that he might be from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The Tang Family’s Family Head asked.

“Ridiculous! The Chu Heavenly Clan is that noble, how could your mere Tang Family be able to request their help?”

“Cao Haichuan, do not be carried away with your wishful thinking. Today, you will be killed by me, and your Tang Family will be eliminated by my Cao Family.”

“Even that Heavenly Clan brat will be killed by my son, Cao Yuxuan. All of you will be killed,” The Cao Family’s Family Head said ruthlessly.

Furthermore, the Cao Family’s Family Head spoke those words very loudly. Practically everyone heard his words.

After hearing his words, the people from the Cao Family fought even more vigorously. At that moment, they started to overwhelm the Tang Family.

Evidently, their morale was strengthened by their Family Head’s words. They felt that they would definitely win today.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, a loud explosion was heard.

After hearing that loud explosion, everyone turned their gaze to the battle between Chu Feng and Cao Yuxuan.

“This... this is impossible!!!”

Upon seeing the scene, the expressions of the crowd all changed enormously. They were all stunned.



## Chapter 2169 – You’re Mistaken

---

If one must describe what had happened, then all the people that were able to see what was happening over at Chu Feng’s side were all stunned.

This was especially true for the Cao Family’s Family Head. As he was absolutely confident in his son, it was even more difficult for him to accept the truth before him.

Cao Yuxuan, the pride of their Cao Family, had been defeated. He had only fought Chu Feng for a short moment, but had already been defeated.

Just then, he had collapsed onto the ground. The Incomplete Ancestral Armament he had held in his hand before was currently in Chu Feng’s grasp. However, he was unable to take back his Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

The reason for that was because not only was he covered in blood, his aura was also extremely weak, and his body was shivering nonstop. He had completely lost his ability to fight.

The only thing that he could do was stare at Chu Feng fiercely.

“If I knew that you were this useless, I would not have gone all-out from the very beginning.”

“You have truly disappointed me,” Chu Feng was saying what he was really feeling.

After hearing how Tang Ying had described Cao Yuxuan, and seeing the reaction from the crowd, Chu Feng had truly thought that this Cao Yuxuan before him was an exceptional genius with overwhelming strength.

Thus, Chu Feng did not wish to waste time on him, and also did not want to be careless against him. Therefore, he had unleashed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament from the very beginning, and also used his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

However, the result was that while the two fighters both possessed heaven-defying battle power on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng managed to easily triumph over Cao Yuxuan.

“Cao Yuxuan was actually defeated?!”

At that moment, the crowd finally came to believe what they were seeing. One by one, they revealed a whole new level of respect as they looked to Chu Feng again.

This was especially true for the people in the Tang Family; they had truly never expected that Chu Feng would be this powerful, so powerful that he could defeat Cao Yuxuan.

As both of their families served Luyang’s Pavilion, they both knew very well how powerful Cao Yuxuan was. Cao Yuxuan was practically unequaled among those of the same battle power.

Back then, their Tang Family’s Eldest Young Master had fought against that Cao Yuxuan, only to suffer a crushing defeat by his hand.

Their Eldest Young Master was someone that had trained in martial cultivation for over five thousand years. Yet, Cao Yuxuan was someone who had only trained in martial cultivation for several hundred years. From this, it could be seen how enormous the disparity between the two men’s talent was.

If the appearance of Cao Yuxuan had caused the people from the Tang Family to become extremely depressed, then Cao Yuxuan’s defeat by Chu Feng’s hands had lifted the spirits of the people from the Tang Family by the same extreme degree.

Instantly, all kinds of noises began to resound nonstop. There were even those from the Tang Family that were bold enough to start insulting Cao Yuxuan, saying that he was not up to much either.

Cao Yuxuan was burning with fury as he shouted while pointing

at Chu Feng, “Damned bastard, return my Incomplete Ancestral Armament!!!”

“Do you know what is meant by spoils of war? This Incomplete Ancestral Armament is my spoil of war from defeating you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he smeared the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with his palm.

“Puu...” Immediately, Cao Yuxuan vomited out a mouthful of blood. Immediately after, his aura became even weaker. He appeared like someone on the verge of dying.

“You damned bastard! You dared to sever my connection with my Incomplete Ancestral Armament! I will kill you!!!” Using all his strength, Cao Yuxuan stood up and pounced toward Chu Feng.

However, how could the current him be a match for Chu Feng? Chu Feng raised his leg and kicked. “Bang,” Cao Yuxuan was kicked to the ground.

Then, Chu Feng held his Magma Emperor Sword and pointed it at Cao Yuxuan’s dantian. While looking in the direction of the Cao Family’s Family Head, he shouted, “Cao Family, immediately surrender yourselves without fighting. Else, I will kill your Cao Family’s Third Young Master.”

“Delusional,” The Cao Family’s Family Head said.

“Puu~~~”

Chu Feng waved the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand and hacked off one of Cao Yuxuan’s arms.

“Ahhh!!!”

With his arm hacked off, Cao Yuxuan let out a miserable scream. He screamed so miserably in pain not only because of the pain he felt from losing his arm. Rather, Chu Feng’s slash caused even his soul to suffer damage. An unbearable pain was tormenting him from the place where he had lost his arm.

“I’ll kill you!!!”

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually attacked his son, the Cao Family’s Family Head immediately surged with overwhelming killing intent. He moved his palm and gathered boundless Ancestral-level martial power with the intention of attacking Chu Feng.

However, right after his Ancestral-level martial power was gathered, another surge of Ancestral-level martial power appeared and blocked it. It was the Tang Family’s Family Head.

“Little friend Chu Feng is our Tang Family’s honored guest, how could I allow your Cao Family to injure him?” The Tang Family’s Family Head spoke coldly.

“Tang Haichuan, if something is to happen to my son, even without my Cao Family doing anything, Luyang’s Pavilion will definitely eliminate your Tang Family,” The Cao Family’s Family Head roared angrily.

Hearing those words, the Tang Family’s Family Head’s expression changed slightly. He naturally knew of Cao Yuxuan’s special status. While their Tang Family could kill anyone from the Cao Family, Cao Yuxuan was someone that they absolutely could not kill.

Merely, if they were to allow the Cao Family to attack Chu Feng, their Tang Family would likely also be unable to escape from a calamity after Chu Feng’s death. At that moment, the Tang Family’s Family Head was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

“The person that injured your son is me, Chu Feng. The one that is tormenting your son is also me, Chu Feng.”

“This matter is unrelated to the Tang Family. If you wish for revenge, aim it at me, Chu Feng. I, Chu Feng, will keep you company at any time,” Chu Feng spoke loudly.

“Chu Feng, you...”

At that moment, not to mention Tang Ying, the rest of the people from the Tang Family also revealed surprised expressions.

They had truly never expected Chu Feng to be such an upright and loyal individual. He actually planned to shoulder all the responsibility himself.

“Ahh~~~”

Right at that moment, Cao Yuxuan let out another miserable scream. Chu Feng had actually hacked off his other arm.

“Bastard! Do you know who my son is?! He a personal disciple of Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master!”

“You dared to injure him! You will definitely have to bear the consequences of your actions!” The Cao Family’s Family Head shouted.

“Is Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master that amazing?” Chu Feng sneered. If it were another power, Chu Feng might be scared.

However, that Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master was a person from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Chu Feng possessed resentment toward the Chu Heavenly Clan to begin with.

Furthermore, after he knew about the conduct and deeds of that Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, Chu Feng felt great antipathy toward him.

Thus, while using the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master to threaten others might do, it was completely useless against Chu Feng.

“You are called Chu Feng, right? Let me ask you, are you someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The Cao Family’s Family Head asked.

“No,” Chu Feng answered without the slightest hesitation. The reason for that was because he was truly not a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan right now.

“There we go. I knew that you wouldn’t be.”

“However, I believe that you should know what sort of existence the Chu Heavenly Clan is. They are rulers from the Upper Realm!”

“Regardless of which Heavenly Clan you might be from, you will never be able to compare to the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan. As for the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, he is someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan,” The Cao Family’s Family Head declared.

“Haha...” Chu Feng laughed. He truly never expected for the Chu Heavenly Clan to have such a grand reputation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

If he were still someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, perhaps he would truly have much fewer obstructions should he announce the title of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

However, he could not. After all, he was someone who had been discarded by the Chu Heavenly Clan, someone driven out of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

It was precisely because of that Chu Feng felt it to be very laughable. He was laughing at himself for being so lamentable.

At the same time as he felt pity for himself, Chu Feng’s heart surged with resentment, resentment toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Right at that moment, Cao Yuxuan began to threaten Chu Feng while gnashing his teeth angrily. “Continue laughing, there will be a day when you cannot laugh anymore.”

“Brat, I will give you two options. You can either kneel, kowtow and apologize right now, and I might be in a good mood and consider sparing your life.”

“Else, you can go and kill me right away. However, my master will definitely not spare you. Not only will you die, all those around you will die too.”

“At that time, you will come to regret, regret everything that you’ve done today. Unfortunately, there is no medicine for regret.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed. He did not expect that Cao Yuxuan, a fish on the chopping block, would dare to threaten him like this.

This caused Chu Feng to become very furious. He was very furious because this guy only dared to act this arrogantly because he was relying on a single scum from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Did you think that I wouldn’t dare kill you?” Chu Feng pointed the Magma Emperor Sword at Cao Yuxuan.

“If you truly consider the consequences, you will definitely not dare,” Cao Yuxuan said fiercely. His eyes were emitting absolute confidence.

“Bang~~~”

However, right after his words left his mouth, the Magma Emperor Sword pierced downward. The sword penetrated his heart and let out overwhelming Ancestral might. As flame surged forth from the sword, Cao Yuxuan was turned to ash instantly. He had been utterly killed.

“It would appear that you were mistaken,” Chu Feng said coldly.

# Chapter 2170 – Treachery

---

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually killed Cao Yuxuan, everyone revealed stunned expressions. Regardless of whether they were people from the Tang Family or the Cao Family, they all stood there blankly.

At that moment, it was as if space itself had frozen.

Tang Ying, who stood behind Chu Feng, was so frightened by Chu Feng's action that her face turned pale and her mouth opened wide.

“Noo!!!!!!!”

After a moment of silence, the Cao Family's Family Head let out a hysterical and painful snarl.

After all, Cao Yuxuan was the most outstanding genius to have appeared in the Cao Family in many years. Practically everyone from the Cao Family had placed their hopes onto Cao Yuxuan. They all hoped that Cao Yuxuan would one day lead the Cao Family to emerge in power and become a region's hegemon.

However, Cao Yuxuan had actually been killed. This was equivalent to their Cao Family's hopes being extinguished. This result was something that the people from the Cao Family could not accept, something that they were unwilling to accept.

“You damned animal! Today, I must dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!”

After his furious howl of grief, the Cao Family's Family Head let out a soaring killing intent. He ignored the Tang Family's Family Head, turned around and flew toward Chu Feng with the intention to kill him.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right after the Cao Family's Family Head started to fly



toward Chu Feng, a figure immediately followed after him and began to unleash fatal attacks at him.

That person was naturally the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Tang Haichuan, my son is the personal disciple of Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master. Now that he has been killed, are you planning to protect the person that killed him?"

"Can your Tang Family shoulder this responsibility?" Being blocked by the Tang Family's Family Head, the Cao Family's Family Head could only bring up Luyang's Pavilion to threaten the Tang Family's Family Head.

After all, he also knew that if the Tang Family's Family Head were to insist on getting in his way, he would have no opportunity to kill Chu Feng.

Furthermore, with how powerful Chu Feng was, if he were to continue to help the Tang Family fight against the Cao Family, the Cao Family might really end up being eliminated today.

"You are the great enemy of our Tang Family. Even if it wasn't for little friend Chu Feng, I would still kill you, let alone when little friend Chu Feng is our Tang Family's honored guest," The Tang Family's Family Head declared.

"Since you're insistent on this, your Tang Family shall die together with that animal," Seeing that his threats were useless, the Cao Family's Family Head began to unleash ferocious attacks at the Tang Family's Family Head. He planned to quickly kill the Tang Family's Family Head.

"Soldiers of the Tang Family, listen up. Kill all of these unwanted guests from the Cao Family," The Tang Family's Family Head seemed to be determined. With a single order, he increased the morale of the Tang Family's fighters, leading them to enter a fierce battle against the people of the Cao Family again.

"Chu Feng, quickly, leave this place."

“The identity of Cao Yuxuan is truly extraordinary. If people from Luyang’s Pavilion were to come, you will be met with a disaster,” Tang Ying urged Chu Feng to escape.

“You wish to leave? I fear that it’s too late now,” Right at that moment, an aged voice sounded. Following that, an old man appeared before Chu Feng.

That old man had a head full of black hair, a sinister expression and a frightening appearance. Especially that pair of eyes, they were murderous-looking. How could he possibly resemble a human? [His appearance was simply akin to that of an oni.](#)

After this old man appeared, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because not only was the aura that this old man emitted very strong, that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, the outfit that he was wearing was also that of Luyang’s Pavilion.

It was very clear that old man was someone from Luyang’s Pavilion.

“Tang Haichuan, Cao Kuofeng, how much longer are the two of you going to continue with your internal strife?!!!” After that old man appeared, he shouted loudly, and caused space and the void to tremble. The echoes of his voice resounded nonstop.

“Elder Yuan Zhen?” Upon seeing that old man, the expressions of the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head both changed. They both revealed expressions of surprise.

“Elder Yuan Zhen, the Tang Family has colluded with that Heavenly Clan child to kill my son. Please, you must obtain justice for my son,” The Cao Family’s Family Head declared.

“Elder Yuan Zhen, don’t listen to his crazy and unfounded ravings. Although it is true that Cao Yuxuan was killed by Chu Feng, it is completely unrelated to my Tang Family,” The Tang Family’s Family Head declared.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed. He

did not expect that the Tang Family's Family Head, who had acted in righteousness and declared that Chu Feng was his honored guest earlier, would immediately distance himself the moment someone from Luyang's Pavilion appeared.

The Tang Family's Family Head's actions had verified the opinion that Chu Feng had of him before. Sure enough, the Tang Family's Family Head was no loyal individual.

"If you are truly unrelated, go and personally kill that child to prove your innocence."

"As long as you kill that child, I will guarantee that the Cao Family will not be allowed to make your Tang Family enemies again," That Elder Yuan Zhen said.

"Elder Yuan Zhen, there are neither grudges nor grievances between our Tang Family and the Cao Family to begin with. Yet, they decided to attack our Tang Family with such a large force, leaving a disastrous amount of casualties in our Tang Family. We cannot just settle this matter like this," The Tang Family's Family Head declared.

"Although the Cao Family is indeed in the wrong this time around, it remains that Cao Yuxuan has died in your Tang Family's territory. Although he was not killed by someone from your Tang Family, your Tang Family cannot escape responsibility. You know this very well in your heart."

"Right now, you have two choices. You can continue to protect that child. However, if you are to do so, it would mean that you have decided to go against our Luyang's Pavilion. How much longer could your Tang Family continue to exist if that were to happen? You should have a very clear idea of that."

"As for your other choice, you are to immediately settle your grudges with the Cao Family and then personally kill that child. As for the damages the Cao Family has caused your Tang Family, I will ask Lord Pavilion Master to order the Cao Family to

compensate your Tang Family for it.”

After Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, he looked to the Cao Family’s Family Head and added, “Cao Family’s Family Head, do you have any objections?”

At that moment, the Cao Family’s Family Head was filled with unwillingness. However, he did not dare to disobey Elder Yuan Zhen. Thus, he nodded and said, “If the Pavilion Master is to order it, I am willing to compensate the Tang Family. However, Tang Haichuan must personally kill that Chu Feng.”

“Tang Haichuan, the Cao Family has declared their position. It is your turn now,” Elder Yuan Zhen said to the Tang Family’s Family Head.

“Little friend Chu Feng, excuse my offense.”

Suddenly, coldness flashed through the eyes of the Tang Family’s Family Head. Then, while holding his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, he flew toward Chu Feng.

At the same time, the other people from the Tang Family also understood their Family Head’s intentions. Thus, one by one, they unleashed their weapons and surrounded Chu Feng from all directions.

“Stop!” Seeing this, Tang Ying hurriedly spread open her arms and stood before Chu Feng.

“Lil’ Ying, move aside!” The Tang Family’s Family Head shouted. He had already approached Chu Feng.

“Father, you cannot do this. Chu Feng only killed Cao Yuxuan for the sake of our Tang Family.”

“Chu Feng is the benefactor of our Tang Family. If you are to do this, you will become a treacherous betrayer. If news of this matter were to spread, what face would our Tang Family have left to exist with? You absolutely must not do this,” Tang Ying said while crying.

She had truly never expected things to turn out this way. Chu Feng had only disregarded consequences and killed Cao Yuxuan for the sake of helping their Tang Family.

Yet, her father, the Tang Family's Family Head, actually wanted to personally kill Chu Feng for the sake of their Tang Family's interests, their Tang Family's existence. She was truly unable to accept this.

"Tang Haichuan, your daughter's heart has already run into the grasp of an outsider. For the sake of the Tang Family's future, I suggest you... place righteousness before family," That Elder Yuan Zhen spoke coldly.

At that moment, he acted as if he was a spectator. He did not plan to personally attack Chu Feng. However, he very much wanted to personally see the Tang Family's Family Head kill Chu Feng.

"Lil' Ying, move aside immediately. Are you truly planning to go against your father for a mere outsider? Are you really planning to disregard the safety of the Tang Family?" The Tang Family's Family Head's sharp gaze narrowed. Dense killing intent appeared in his eyes.

Bee used the character ghost. It is the same character as the Japanese oni. While there are many different kinds of ghost appearances, I felt that this man's appearance would resemble that of an oni.

# Chapter 2171 – Heaven-Defying Battle

---

“Father, you...” Tang Ying began to cry in an even more heart-broken manner. She truly never expected that her father would be this sort of person.

“Tang Ying, go ahead and move aside,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng pushed Tang Ying to the side. Not only did he push her aside, he also used a spirit formation to restrict Tang Ying’s movements.

He was already able to determine that if Tang Ying still refused to move, the Tang Family’s Family Head, that vicious and merciless old fox, would really disregard the fact that she was his daughter and personally kill her.

“Chu Feng, you have courage. Tell me, which Heavenly Clan are you from, for you to dare to kill our Pavilion Master’s personal disciple,” Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

“Haha, what’s this? Are you also afraid? What a bullshit Luyang’s Pavilion. Turns out you’re afraid of my identity too.”

“This is the reason why you do not dare to personally attack me, right? You also fear that you will offend the power behind me should you kill me, isn’t that right?”

“That is why you want the Tang Family and the Cao Family to kill me instead. Like that, even if the power behind me is to come and demand justice, you will have scapegoats to excuse yourselves from all responsibility.”

“Most laughable of all is that this Tang Family is actually so stupid. They are actually willing to become the scapegoat. Hahaha!!!”

“It is no wonder your Tang Family would end up in its current state. I can only say, serves you right,” Chu Feng laughed mockingly.

Hearing those words, the expressions of the everyone from the Tang Family changed. Originally, they were confused as to why Elder Yuan Zhen refused to personally kill Chu Feng.

However, they now finally realized the reason why. It turned out that Elder Yuan Zhen was afraid of Chu Feng's identity. That was why he did not dare to personally kill Chu Feng.

However, Elder Yuan Zhen demanded that the Tang Family kill Chu Feng. This was simply equivalent to having their Tang Family become his scapegoat.

At that moment, the expressions of everyone from the Tang Family became very unsightly. After all, no one was willing to become a scapegoat.

"You're very smart. Unfortunately, there's nothing you can do," Elder Yuan Zhen laughed mockingly. Then, he looked to the Tang Family's Family Head and said, "Tang Haichuan, kill him."

"Father, have you not heard what Chu Feng just said? Luyang's Pavilion is simply exploiting you. They are planning to make you their scapegoat," Tang Ying shouted loudly.

At that moment, the Tang Family's Family Head was once again stuck between a rock and a hard place. He had actually already guessed Elder Yuan Zhen's intentions.

Merely, there was nothing he could do about it. For the sake of the continued existence of his Tang Family, he could only choose to rely on Luyang's Pavilion. After all, Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Originally, he had already made the firm resolution to kill Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng had declared to everyone what Elder Yuan Zhen's intention was, that their Tang Family would become the scapegoat should they kill Chu Feng.

If he continued to choose to kill Chu Feng at such a time, not only would he be a treacherous betrayer, he would also be an utter fool.

Thus, this left him hesitant to kill Chu Feng.

“Tang Haichuan, if you refuse to kill that Chu Feng today, your Tang Family will definitely not be able to continue to exist.”

“However, if you are to kill that Chu Feng, I will guarantee you that your Tang Family will achieve meteoric success in the future; your Tang Family will become the Pavilion Master’s trusted aide,” Elder Yuan Zhen said.

“Elder Yuan Zhen, is what you said for real?” asked the Tang Family’s Family Head. He knew very well that Elder Yuan Zhen, although having the same cultivation as him, was a trusted aide to the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master. As such, there was a lot of weight behind his words.

“How could I, Yuan Zhen, a trusted aide to the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master, deceive you?” Elder Yuan Zhen spoke in a displeased manner.

“I was ignorant. Elder Yuan Zhen, please forgive me,” Seeing that Elder Yuan Zhen was angered, the Tang Family’s Family Head hurriedly apologized.

“[Truly great dog material](#),” Chu Feng mocked with a sneer. If he had known that the Tang Family’s Family Head was this sort of person, Chu Feng would definitely not have healed him.

“Courting death!”

At that moment, the Tang Family’s Family Head suddenly pointed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament at Chu Feng, and an oppressive might that contained surging killing intent shot toward him.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at that moment, a dragon’s roar suddenly sounded. Not only had Chu Feng dodged the Tang Family’s Family Head’s attack, he was also standing atop the Azure Dragon.



Not only was Chu Feng's speed extremely fast, his might was also very powerful. The inescapable net formed by the people from the Tang Family was instantly broken through by Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had broken through the net, the surroundings of the Tang Family were sealed off by a spirit formation. As such, it would be difficult for Chu Feng to easily break through the spirit formation barrier in a short period of time. If he wished to escape, there would only be a single path to escape. That was through the direction where the Cao Family had come from, through the breach in the spirit formation opened by the Cao Family's Family Head.

"Where do you think you're escaping to?" Seeing that Chu Feng was flying toward him, how could the Cao Family's Family Head sit and watch without doing anything? He held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

"Did you think you can stop me just because you're a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor!" Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, holding the Magma Emperor Sword in hand, he sliced at the space before him.

"Rumble~~~"

Immediately, a slash of flames appeared out of thin air. The might of that slash seemed to be capable of slicing through space itself.

That was not an ordinary martial skill. Rather, it was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

Seeing such a powerful attack, the expression of the Cao Family's Family Head changed. Regardless of how much he detested Chu Feng, he had to admit that Chu Feng's strength was truly heaven-defying.

Even though Chu Feng's battle power was clearly only on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors, the attack that he

had unleashed right now caused even the Cao Family's Family Head, a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, to feel life-threatening danger.

In such a situation, even that Cao Family's Family Head did not dare to act carelessly toward Chu Feng. He hurriedly unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill to block Chu Feng's incoming attack.

“Rumble~~~”

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills collided with one another. Immediately, they turned into surging energy ripples that began to spread in all directions. However, the two attacks were at a stalemate.

“Both you and your son will die by my hand.”

After that attack, not only did Chu Feng not seize the opportunity to escape, he instead unleashed another Heaven Taboo Martial Skill aimed at the Cao Family's Family Head.

“What shameless boasting!” The Cao Family's Family Head was not to be outdone. He also held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

Before the two men actually approached one another, violently surging energy ripples were already wreaking havoc through their surroundings. However, once again, their attacks ended up in a stalemate.

Chu Feng was fighting against a grand rank seven Half Martial Ancestor with his cultivation of rank three Half Martial Ancestor and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

At that moment, not to mention the people from the Tang Family, even the people from the Cao Family were stunned. None of them anticipated for Chu Feng to be this powerful.

“Tang Haichuan, join hands with me to kill this child. Not only will our Cao Family settle all grudges with your Tang Family, I am

also willing to compensate your Tang Family immediately,” The Cao Family’s Family Head shouted.

At the beginning, he was unwilling to compensate the Tang Family when Yuan Zhen demanded that he do so. However, after having fought against Chu Feng and discovering that Chu Feng was much stronger than he had imagined, fear emerged in the Cao Family’s Family Head’s heart.

As Elder Yuan Zhen would not interfere, the Cao Family’s Family Head could only ask the Tang Family’s Family Head to join him in killing Chu Feng.

“You must keep your word,” The Tang Family’s Family Head needed to kill Chu Feng to begin with. It was only after he saw the Cao Family’s Family Head attack Chu Feng that he decided to watch with folded arms.

However, now that the Cao Family’s Family Head had spoken those words, he would naturally not continue to watch with folded arms. He held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament in hand and joined the battle.

At that moment, two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors were fighting against Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng was pushed into a disadvantaged state after the Tang Family’s Family Head entered the battle, there was still no sign that he would be defeated.

“This Chu Feng, how could he be so powerful?”

At that moment, the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family were all stunned. After all, Chu Feng was fighting against both of their Family Heads by himself.

Being a dog = a servant/slave.

## Chapter 2172 – If I Survive

---

“The Half Martial Ancestor realm is indeed different from the Martial Emperor realm,” At that moment, Chu Feng was also frowning.

Back when he was a Martial Emperor, not only was Chu Feng peerless among those of the same battle power, he was able to defeat even those with battle power that surpassed him by a level.

However, when Chu Feng was now facing two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors, not to mention defeating them, he felt enormous pressure just fighting them.

Although Chu Feng possessed another trump card, as he had not yet used his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Chu Feng was not certain as to whether the Cao Family’s Family Head and the Tang Family’s Family Head would have any more trump cards.

After all, this place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and his opponents were actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestors. Since they even possessed Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, it would not be impossible for them to have learned Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

Furthermore, other than those two Family Heads, there was also that Elder Yuan Zhen, who was standing to one side like a tiger watching its prey.

Although that Elder Yuan Zhen was also a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor like the two Family Heads, Chu Feng was able to sense that his aura was stronger than that of the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head.

Currently, he had yet to do anything, because he did not want to shoulder the responsibility of killing Chu Feng, a responsibility that might lead to trouble in the future.

However, Chu Feng was able to sense that he was not planning to

let him escape. If the Cao Family's Family Head and the Tang Family's Family Head were truly unable to defeat him, then that Elder Yuan Zhen would definitely act to take care of him.

“Exactly who is that Chu Feng?” Seeing that the two Family Heads were unable to defeat Chu Feng even after joining hands, that Elder Yuan Zhen started to frown. His deep gaze grew increasingly colder.

Although Chu Feng was a person from the Heavenly Clans, could activate his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings to increase his cultivation to that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor, and possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, his battle power should only be on par with ordinary rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

However, according to what he knew about the Heavenly Clans, it would be difficult for ordinary Heavenly Clansmen to defeat rank six Half Martial Ancestors even if they could increase their battle power to be on par with rank six Half Martial Ancestors after using their various abilities like Chu Feng had.

After all, their power was something that they had obtained by relying on their Inherited Bloodline, and not their actual cultivation.

However, not only did Chu Feng easily kill Cao Yuxuan, who also possessed a battle power equivalent to that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, he was even fighting against two actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestors right now.

He was simply too heaven-defying. Chu Feng had already surpassed the comprehension Elder Yuan Zhen had of Heavenly Bloodlines.

Thinking of that, Elder Yuan Zhen's body shifted. He began to approach Chu Feng and the two Family Heads. At the same time, his wrinkled old hand began to move toward his Cosmos Sack.

It was as Chu Feng had anticipated; Elder Yuan Zhen was not planning to spare Chu Feng, regardless of which Heavenly Clan he might be from.

If the two Family Heads were truly unable to kill Chu Feng, he would immediately act to kill Chu Feng.

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, a ray of blood flashed in the sky. Then, Chu Feng’s body moved back explosively.

At that moment, Elder Yuan Zhen’s eyes began to shine. A trace of joy appeared in his previously grave gaze.

The reason for that was because a bloody wound had appeared on Chu Feng’s left shoulder. That wound reached deep into his bone. Not only had Chu Feng lost a huge chunk of his flesh, a large scar was left on his shoulder bone. Currently, a large amount of blood was rushing out from that wound. It was a truly frightening sight.

“That Chu Feng is injured. He was injured by the two Family Heads,” Seeing this, the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family, the two powers that were fighting one another before, actually started to cheer.

“It would seem that you’re only this much too,” Seeing that they had successfully injured Chu Feng, the Tang Family’s Family Head revealed a relaxed smile.

As for Chu Feng, not only did he have a painful expression on his face, he was also glowering angrily. He tightly clenched onto his Magma Emperor Sword as he swept his gaze at the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head. Gnashing his teeth, he said fiercely, “If I, Chu Feng, survive today, I will definitely extinguish your Tang and Cao families!”

“What arrogance! Unfortunately, you will not have the chance to do so, because you will definitely die today!” Right after the Tang Family’s Family Head said those words, he once again started to

unleash an attack at Chu Feng.

The Cao Family's Family Head also held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng again.

“Boom!!!”

“Boom!!!”

As if they followed up on their victory and pressed home the attack, the Cao and Tang Family Heads both unleashed their Heaven Taboo Martial Skills simultaneously.

The two Heaven Taboo Martial Skills were one fire-based and the other water-based. As they interweaved with one another, not only did they not decrease one another's strength, their might even increased enormously.

“Come!” Furious, not only did Chu Feng not dodge the attack, he instead raised the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand and unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill composed of both wind and lightning toward the two Family Heads.

“Rumble~!!!!”

The three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills collided with one another. The powers of wind, lightning, water and fire turned into surging energy ripples that swallowed the entire region.

“Ahhh!!!!”

A scream was heard from within the rumbling. It was Chu Feng's voice.

At that moment, all of the Half Martial Ancestor-level experts revealed joy on their faces. After Chu Feng's scream stopped, they were no longer able to sense Chu Feng's aura.

This was especially true for the two Family Heads that had their attention fixed onto Chu Feng the entire time. They were able to sense that Chu Feng's body had exploded into pieces after his violent scream.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, a blazing sword fell from the sky, piercing the ground. It was Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword.

Seeing that, the Tang Family and Cao Family’s Family Heads immediately waved their sleeves to disperse the energy ripples.

At that moment, the crowd present were all overjoyed. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s figure was no longer capable of being seen in the sky.

This meant that Chu Feng had been killed. Furthermore, he had been killed without even a corpse remaining.

“Noo!!!!”

Seeing this scene, Tang Ying knelt onto the ground with tears flooding out from her eyes uncontrollably.

“Chu Feng, I am the one who caused your death, it is all because of me.”

At the same time, Tang Ying began to ruthlessly slap herself.

Self-blame. Extremely pained self-blame. The way she saw it, if it wasn’t for her, Chu Feng would not have died.

“Little sister, what are you doing? That Chu Feng was extremely daring, and actually killed Lord Pavilion Master’s personal disciple. His death is the fault of his own crimes. Do not harm yourself for someone like him. It is unworthy of you.”

Seeing that, Tang Long removed the spirit formation that had restricted Tang Ying and used his own power to completely seal off Tang Ying’s movements. He feared that she would continue to inflict harm upon herself due to self-blame.

“Release me! Release me! I no longer want to be part of the Tang Family! I no longer want to stay in such a despicable family!” Tang Ying shouted hysterically.



“What did you say? Say it again!” Hearing those words, Tang Long who was deeply distressed for his younger sister earlier immediately revealed an expression of anger.

“I said that I refuse to stay in a family that breaks faith and abandons right, I will no longer be a part of the Tang...”

“Paa~~~”

Before Tang Ying could finish her words, a resounding slap landed on her face. That slap knocked her fiercely to the ground.

After that slap, blood began to flow from Tang Ying’s face. That slap was from Tang Ying’s eldest brother, Tang Long. His slap was many times more powerful than the slaps which Tang Ying had given herself earlier.

“You insolent fool! How long did you even know that Chu Feng?! Yet, for a mere outsider, you actually plan to disregard the family that has given birth to you and raised you?!”

“Since you are that shameless and are willing to leave our Tang Family for a mere outsider, I might as well beat you to death today, so that you don’t shame our Tang Family anymore!” Tang Long pointed at Tang Ying and spoke in a very fierce manner.

# Chapter 2173 – The Cicada Sheds Its Carapace

---

“Big brother, don’t be like this. This is only a sudden impulse from our little sister.”

Upon seeing this, Tang Hu and Tang Yong hurriedly rushed over. No matter what, they were unable to watch as Tang Long beat Tang Ying to death.

The scene of the Tang Family’s four siblings was seen by the people from the Cao Family. Furthermore, they were immensely enjoying themselves. The way they saw it, this was merely a rare show.

However, at the moment when the Tang Family’s four siblings were making a ruckus, Elder Yuan Zhen slowly walked toward the Magma Emperor Sword.

“This Incomplete Ancestral Armament is no small matter. Through this Incomplete Ancestral Armament, that Chu Feng’s origin can be determined.”

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Elder Yuan Zhen extended his hand and grabbed. Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword was pulled into his hand.

When speaking of it pleasantly, he wanted to use this Incomplete Ancestral Armament to determine Chu Feng’s origin. However, he had actually just planned to seize it for himself.

“This...” However, right after he grabbed the Magma Emperor Sword, Elder Yuan Zhen’s expression changed enormously. Then, he clenched his fist, and with a “boom,” the Magma Emperor Sword was shattered.

“How could this be?!” Seeing this scene, many people revealed shocked expressions.

After all, that was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Regardless of how powerful that Elder Yuan Zhen might be, with his cultivation, he would not be able to so easily destroy an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Crap! We’ve been deceived!” At that moment, the Tang Family and the Cao Family’s Family Heads were the first to react.

At the moment when the Magma Emperor Sword was shattered, they had realized that the Magma Emperor Sword was not an actual Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

However, as they had fought against Chu Feng earlier, they knew very well that the weapon Chu Feng had used was an actual Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

For the situation at hand to occur, it would only mean one thing — that Magma Emperor Sword was a fake created by Chu Feng, whereas the real one was taken away by Chu Feng.

In other words, Chu Feng had not died. Instead, he had seized the opportunity to escape.

Merely, no one noticed how Chu Feng had escaped.

“Why are you all still standing there? Quickly, go and chase after him! If that Chu Feng isn’t killed, all of you will have to suffer the consequences!” Elder Yuan Zhen shouted angrily. After he finished saying those words, he disappeared.

He had left the area through the breach in the spirit formation that was created by the Cao Family to search for and capture Chu Feng.

“Damn it!” In response, the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head’s bodies shifted as they rushed in pursuit of Chu Feng.

At that moment, only the people from the Tang Family and the Cao Family remained. They all had bewildered expressions on their faces.

Even though Elder Yuan Zhen had not declared it clearly, they were able to realize that it seemed that Chu Feng had not died, and had instead escaped.

Upon thinking that they had tried to kill someone from the Heavenly Clans, only to end in failure and with that person's escape, everyone became extremely frightened. In fact, those that were more cowardly even started to shiver.

Even though they were all martial cultivators, and should have great wisdom and the capability to withstand shock, it remained that they were filled with endless fear when they thought of how there would be people from the Heavenly Clan coming here to attack them.

After all, what they would face at that time would be the calamity of certain death.

“Chu Feng is alive?” However, at this moment when the great majority of people were filled with fear, Tang Ying revealed an expression of happiness.

Even though she knew that the Tang Family would be in an extremely dangerous situation should Chu Feng escape alive, that her family might face fatal dangers, she still wished for Chu Feng to be able to escape alive.

She did not want Chu Feng to die.

As for Chu Feng, he was naturally alive.

Chu Feng had utilized the undying and indestructible property of his body that he had gained after fusing with the Five Elements Secret Skills. He had dispersed his body into the five different energies of wind, lightning, water, fire and earth.

Then, using his world spirit techniques, he had altered the aura of the energies, as well as how evident they appeared to be.

Then, taking advantage of the energy ripples formed by the collision of the three Heaven Taboo Martial Skills that engulfed

the entire surrounding area, he snuck into the energy ripples and secretly escaped from the Tang Family.

As for the reason why Chu Feng had decided to escape, it was because he did not possess absolute certainty in being able to defeat the Tang Family's Family Head, the Cao Family's Family Head, and that Elder Yuan Zhen, those three rank seven Half martial Ancestors.

Today, the Tang Family had decided to betray Chu Feng, their benefactor, for the sake of their own self-interest. Chu Feng was determined to obtain revenge.

Thus, for the sake of his vengeance, Chu Feng had to escape. When he held certainty of being able to defeat the Tang Family's Family Head, he would return to take care of the Tang Family.

In short, Chu Feng would absolutely not swallow what was done to him here today. He would definitely teach the Tang Family a ruthless lesson.

Furthermore, it would not only be the Tang Family. Chu Feng would also not spare that Cao Family.

Chu Feng had not been joking around when he said that he would eliminate the Tang and Cao Families.

.....

After escaping the Tang Family, Chu Feng proceeded for the Darknight Ghost Forest directly. Although Chu Feng should have hidden himself, as he had just escaped danger, and should be escaping as far away from the Tang Family as possible, Chu Feng had not forgotten about Wang Qiang's safety.

Since he had already obtained the Demon Subduing Spring Water, Chu Feng must proceed for the Darknight Ghost Forest immediately to search for that demonic woman and save Wang Qiang.

Else, Chu Feng feared that if he were to delay too long, Wang

Qiang would be killed by that demonic woman.

The Darknight Ghost Forest was located opposite the Radiance Immortal Mountain. Although its area was not as vast as the Radiance Immortal Mountain, the Darknight Ghost Forest was still very large.

Most importantly, the trees inside the Darknight Ghost Forest were very special. Not only were the branches and leaves like sharp blades, they were also pitch-black in color.

Furthermore, there were no living creatures in the Darknight Ghost Forest. Even the wind was unable to penetrate the forest. That place looked as if it had been cursed. It was so quiet that it was scary.

As Chu Feng walked in the forest, the place could be said to be pitch-dark. Even though this sort of darkness was unable to block Chu Feng's vision, the stifling sensation still caused Chu Feng to feel uneasy.

“Wang Qiang, you disappointing fellow, you must stay alive.”

At that point in time, Chu Feng had already been searching in the Darknight Ghost Forest for several days now. However, he was still unable to find any traces of Wang Qiang or that demonic woman.

This caused Chu Feng to feel even more uneasy. After all, that demonic woman was said to feed on men. The more time passed, the greater the possibility that Wang Qiang would be killed by her.

“That is?!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng revealed a stunned expression as terror and unease appeared in his eyes.

Immediately afterward, Chu Feng's body shifted as he rapidly flew forward.

Soon, Chu Feng arrived at a very dangerous forest. There were many Ancient Era's formations in that place. Furthermore, they

were hidden very well. It would be simply impossible for ordinary people to discover them. Furthermore, if they were to trigger those Ancient Era's formations, they would definitely be killed.

After Chu Feng passed through the Ancient Era's formations, he arrived at the central region of the vast forest. In that place, Chu Feng saw a whole bunch of bones.

The current state of those bones were all exactly the same; all their source energies had been refined. They were extremely frail.

Due to the fact that the bones had already deteriorated, Chu Feng was unable to determine the cultivations that the owners of the bones had possessed when they had been alive, nor was he able to determine their genders.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell that it had not been a long time since the owners of the bones had been killed. If he had to calculate the time of their death, Chu Feng felt that they must be the group of people that had been brought away together with Wang Qiang that day.

## Chapter 2174 – Wang Qiang's Dead?

---

Other than the bones, there was also a small bed formed by piling up trees. Furthermore, there were traces of a campfire.

All of this signified that someone had been living here before.

What sort of people would have lived in this sort of place? Naturally, it would definitely be that demonic woman.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that this place must be that demonic woman's base, that the bones here were the remains of the people captured by that demonic woman that time.

However, as the bones were already deteriorated, Chu Feng was unable to determine which set of bones were Wang Qiang's. However, he must determine whether or not Wang Qiang's bones were among this pile of bones.

It would be fine if Wang Qiang's bones were not present in the pile of bones. However, if Wang Qiang's bones were present, it would mean that Wang Qiang had died by the hands of that demonic woman. As for that, it was something that Chu Feng did not wish to happen.

With no other alternative, Chu Feng decided that he would count the number of bones present. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had realized that the situation was amiss when Wang Qiang decided to harass the demonic woman. At that time, Chu Feng had subconsciously paid attention to all the people present at that time.

Intentionally or otherwise, Chu Feng remembered the number of people captured by that demonic woman.

Thus, through counting the number of bones, Chu Feng could have a rough determination as to whether or not Wang Qiang's bones were present here.

Although there was no reliable basis for his theory, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang would be the last to die among that group of men



captured.

“Damn it!”

“Damn it!!”

“Damn it!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously, and he began to gnash his teeth in anger. At the same time, an intense sense of grief surged forth in his eyes.

“God damn it!”

Then, Chu Feng clenched his fist and ruthlessly smashed it down onto the ground. He caused the earth to tremble as if an earthquake had hit. The trembling continued.

Chu Feng had counted the pile of bones. Their numbers was actually the same as the amount of people captured that day. This meant that Wang Qiang’s should also be among them.

However, those were bones. If Wang Qiang’s bones were also among them, it would mean that Wang Qiang was definitely dead.

“Why am I this weak? Why am I this weak?”

“I’m useless, I’m truly useless! When I am unable to even protect my friend, how am I supposed retrieve my dignity?”

“Trash! Chu Feng, you are simply trash! Through and through, you are trash!!!”

Chu Feng started to shout hysterically. He was truly heartbroken and filled with sorrow in that moment. Although he did not shed tears, he was feeling extremely pained.

While Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had not known each other for a very long time, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang was someone that could be befriended ever since he had first met him.

After knowing that Wang Qiang had protected him in the shadows before, Chu Feng felt extremely grateful toward him.

Especially when Wang Qiang told him that he only felt Chu Feng to be pleasant, Chu Feng was determined that Wang Qiang would be his brother.

Yet now, Chu Feng saw Wang Qiang being captured by the demonic woman, but was powerless to do anything about it. Due to him being unable to do anything, Wang Qiang ended up being eaten alive by that demonic woman.

When he thought of how Wang Qiang would've been skinned and had his tendons pulled by that demonic woman before being eaten one large bite at a time and dying miserably, Chu Feng felt enormous hatred for that demonic woman. At the same time, he detested himself for being useless, for being weak.

Suddenly, a dull voice sounded. "Was a relative of yours eaten by that demonic woman?"

Chu Feng abruptly stood up upon hearing that voice. He cast his fierce gaze toward the direction of the voice.

However, upon seeing it, Chu Feng stood there in a stunned manner. It was actually an old monk.

This old man was very thin, and his outfit was extremely worn. There were a lot of patches on his already worn-out cotton clothes, causing him to look like a beggar.

However, although his clothes were worn, they were very neat and tidy; they were actually untainted by even a speck of dust.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this shriveled old monk was no ordinary person.

The reason for that was because he possessed no cultivation, and appeared no different from an ordinary person that had never embarked on the path of martial cultivation. However, how could an ordinary person reach such a dangerous place?

"Who are you?" Chu Feng held down his sorrow over Wang Qiang's death and questioned the old monk cautiously. However,

Chu Feng did not address that old monk as ‘senior.’

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether this old monk was friend or foe. In fact, he was unable to determine whether this old monk was even human or not.

After all, this place was not only the Darknight Ghost Forest, it was also the demonic woman’s base. As such, there would be no reason for this old monk to come here for no reason at all.

“Judging from the reaction you had earlier, I know for certain that you must have a relative that died by that demonic woman’s hand.”

“However, if you wish to find that demonic woman for revenge, I’d urge you to leave this place as soon as possible. Even if you have brought Demon Subduing Spring Water with you, the disparity between your cultivations is still too enormous. As such, it is impossible for you to be a match for that demonic woman,” The old monk said calmly.

“You know that demonic woman?” Chu Feng asked.

“What if I do?” The old monk asked.

“Quickly, tell me where that demonic woman is ,” Chu Feng flipped his wrist and revealed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword.

At the same time, he unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. Chu Feng’s boundless aura soon engulfed the entire surrounding region.

However, even when faced with such a Chu Feng, the old monk’s expression remained unchanged. Instead, he smiled lightly and said, “Not to mention that I do not know, even if I did, I would not tell you.”

“Taking the side of evil, you also deserve to die!” The anger Chu Feng had held back with great difficulty exploded. He gripped his

Magma Emperor Sword and rushed to attack the old monk.

“Woosh~~~”

The old monk waved his sleeve and caused a light burst of wind. That wind actually blew Chu Feng back repeatedly. Not only was Chu Feng blown back, even his oppressive might and killing intent was dispersed by that gentle breeze.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt a chill in his heart. Although he had already guessed that the old monk might be a cultivation expert, Chu Feng did not expect that he would be so powerful.

If Chu Feng were to fight against the demonic woman straightforwardly, he would be no match for her.

Likewise, if Chu Feng were to fight against this old monk straightforwardly, even a hundred Chu Fengs would not be enough to kill this old monk.

“Seeing that you have only done such a foolish action due to your grief over the death of your relative, this old monk will not bicker with you today,” The old monk said calmly.

“Are you a human or not?” Chu Feng asked.

“So what if I am, and so what if I’m not?” The old monk refused to answer.

“That demonic woman willfully slaughters innocents. How can you ignore her actions?” Chu Feng asked. He was trying to pry into whether the old monk was on the side of the demonic woman or not.

After all, that old monk’s strength was definitely above that demonic woman’s. If he wanted to kill that demonic woman, it would be impossible for that demonic woman to survive.

“Willfully slaughter innocents? If the death of humans would be innocent, then what about the deaths of ferocious beasts and monstrous beasts?”

“Even the grass and trees have lives. Your casual steps will easily trample countless living things.”

“A single martial skill from you would destroy an innumerable amount of lives. Are you to say that you are not willfully slaughtering innocents?”

“If I must eliminate evil in the world, then this old monk should eliminate all the people in the world,” The old monk said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Even though the old monk was using sophistry, what he said was not without reason.

After all, it was true that flowers, plants and trees were all living things. When experts fought with one another, merely an energy ripple from them could destroy a region; a single martial skill would cause the death of countless flowers, plants and trees.

If innocents must be mentioned, those flowers, plants and trees had never offended anyone. Thus, their deaths would truly be very innocent.

“Since we have met, it would mean that it is fate. As you are feeling aggrieved and heartbroken from the death of your relative, it would mean that you are an affectionate and honest individual. As such, I will give you a word of advice.”

“To obtain revenge, one must first have the strength to do so. As for comprehending the path of martial cultivation to reach successive breakthroughs, one must have a calm heart.”

“Thus, you are hopeless the way you are,” The old monk said. After he finished saying those words, he stepped into the air and began to walk away. Although his footsteps were very slow, his speed was extremely fast. In merely a blink of an eye, he had reached the sky.

“Senior, exactly who are you?” Chu Feng shouted.

Although that monk did not have any intention of eliminating

the demonic woman, he also had no intention of attacking Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng had lost his reasoning from anger earlier and attacked the old monk while also offending him repeatedly, the old monk still did not harm Chu Feng.

Instead, he provided Chu Feng with advice. It could be said that he had indirectly helped Chu Feng. Thus, regardless of whether the old monk was a human or not, he had earned Chu Feng's respect, earned the title of 'senior.'

"I am merely a nobody. Pretend like you never met me. Do not mention me to anyone else, it will be of no benefit to you," The old monk's voice sounded. However, his figure had already disappeared without a trace.

# Chapter 2175 – Rank Two Half Martial Ancestor

---

“Exactly who was that person?” Chu Feng’s gaze grew complicated.

Even though he didn’t know who that old monk was, Chu Feng had decided to follow his advice, and began to put forth great effort to pacify the grief and indignation he was feeling.

Chu Feng had to do his best to comprehend the way of martial cultivation so that he could break through to rank two Half Martial Ancestor as soon as possible.

As long as he became a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng would be able to take care of the Cao and Tang Families. Even if he were to encounter that Elder Yuan Zhen again, Chu Feng would also not be afraid.

However, there was one thing that Chu Feng did not listen to the advice of the old monk on; he did not leave the Darknight Ghost Forest.

Wang Qiang had died by the hands of that demonic woman. Chu Feng absolutely could not leave the matter at that. In fact, Chu Feng was unable to wait; he was impatient to kill that demonic woman. Else, the regret and hatred in his heart would not be alleviated.

Thus, Chu Feng set up many layers of spirit formations around the residence of that demonic woman. As long as the demonic woman returned, Chu Feng would be able to discover and track her.

Simply put, Chu Feng was planning to ambush her.

While Chu Feng was hiding in the Darknight Ghost Forest, training and lying in wait for the demonic woman, Luyang’s Pavilion had already gained news of what had happened in the

Tang Family.

In a certain sleeping chamber in Luyang's Pavilion, Elder Yuan Zhen was kneeling on the ground. In the direction that he was kneeling toward was a large bed.

The square-shaped bed was over a hundred times the size of an ordinary bed. Special gauze cloth dangled on the four sides of the bed.

Within the gauze cloth, one could not clearly see what was happening on the bed even when using world spirit techniques to do so.

Although one could not see what was happening on the bed clearly, one could faintly see through the gauze with one's naked eye that there were several tens of women absolutely naked on the bed. They were all serving a single person. As for that person... he was the Luyang's Pavilion Pavilion Master.

"If he's dead, then let it be. After all, I have only ever taken on three personal disciples because of a sudden urge."

"Merely, that fellow by the name of Chu Feng absolutely cannot be allowed to escape. I must let the people of the world know that, not to mention a disciple of mine, a disciple of this Chu Luyang, even if it's a dog of mine, no one can be allowed to kill them," From the bed sounded the voice of the Luyang's Pavilions Pavilion Master, [Chu Luyang](#).

"Merely, Lord Pavilion Master, since that Chu Feng is surnamed Chu, could he be from your Chu Heavenly Clan?" Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

"Chu Feng? I do not recall there being a person by that name in our Chu Heavenly Clan," After Chu Luyang said those words, his tone suddenly changed. He added, "No, there seems to have been one by such a name."

"There is someone by the name of Chu Feng?" Hearing those



words, Elder Yuan Zhen's expression changed enormously. At that instant, he was covered with sweat as fear and nervousness filled his face.

The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were not people that a minor character like himself could afford to offend. If Chu Feng was truly someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, he feared that even his Lord Pavilion Master would not be able to protect him.

“Indeed, there is a fellow by that name. However, he has long since died. Furthermore, even if he were alive, it would be useless. The reason for that is because he was trash that did not even possess a Heavenly Bloodline.”

“Hahahaha...” Chu Luyang burst into sudden laughter, “If you hadn't mentioned it, I would've forgotten about that father and son. They are the greatest joke to our Chu Heavenly Clan. Hahahaha.”

Chu Luyang laughed frantically. It was as if he had truly recalled a very funny joke.

However, Chu Luyang's laughter caused Yuan Zhen to feel completely baffled. He truly did not understand how a single person would make Chu Luyang indulge in such laughter.

“Lord Pavilion Master, even if that Chu Feng is not a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he is most definitely someone from another Heavenly Clan.”

“For him to have escaped, I fear that there will be trouble in the future,” Elder Yuan Zhen said worriedly.

“Oh Yuan Zhen, I have nurtured you for this long, how could you not even understand something as simple as this?” Chu Luyang said.

“Please forgive this subordinate for his ignorance,” Elder Yuan Zhen lowered his head.

“Let me ask you, if you were someone from the Chu Heavenly

Clan, would you not declare the name of the Chu Heavenly Clan should you encounter trouble?”

“Even if you are not from the Chu Heavenly Clan, but instead from another Heavenly Clan, you would still declare your Heavenly Clan’s name should you encounter trouble, no?” Chu Luyang said.

“Lord Pavilion Master is very wise. This subordinate would indeed do so,” Elder Yuan Zhen nodded.

“It would not only be you, any normal person would do so. However, did that Chu Feng ever mention his clan?” Chu Luyang asked.

“He did not,” Elder Yuan Zhen replied.

“There you go. Why did he not mention his clan?” Chu Luyang asked.

“Could it be, that even if he declared his clan, his clan would not help him?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

“That’s right. If his clan would protect him, why would he not bring forth his clan’s name?”

“Thus, do not tremble with fear whenever you encounter someone with a Heavenly Bloodline.”

“There are a lot of people in the Heavenly Clans. As for bastards that possess Heavenly Bloodline but not the acknowledgement of their clans, they are even more numerous,” Chu Luyang said.

“This subordinate understands,” Elder Yuan Zhen came to a sudden realization. His expression turned to one of joy.

At that moment, he finally realized why Chu Feng had the name Chu Feng even though he was not part of the Chu Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because he simply did not belong to any Heavenly Clan. Instead, he was a bastard renounced by his Heavenly Clan.

“It’s good that you understand. Furthermore, remember this: even if he is someone from a certain Heavenly Clan, my Luyang’s Pavilion will still have no fear.”

“You can withdraw now,” Chu Luyang said.

“This subordinate shall take his leave,” Elder Yuan Zhen bowed respectfully. Then, he turned to leave.

“Wait,” Suddenly, Chu Luyang’s voice sounded.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, a title plate flew out from the bed and landed in Elder Yuan Zhen’s hand.

“Lord Pavilion Master, this is?” Upon receiving that title plate, Elder Yuan Zhen immediately revealed an overjoyed expression on his aged face.

That was a title plate that allowed one to mobilize Luyang’s Pavilion’s elders. In other words, it was an emblem of power. With that title plate in hand, even those with strength greater than Elder Yuan Zhen would have to follow his orders obediently.

“After you capture that Chu Feng, do not kill him immediately. You must properly torture him,” Chu Luyang said.

“Lord Pavilion Master, could it be that you know who he is?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked.

“Know who he is?”

“How could I know some trash like him? I merely dislike his name. That’s why I will not let him have a comfortable death. This is the price he must pay for having the wrong name,” Chu Luyang said.

“This subordinate understands. I will definitely not disappoint Lord Pavilion Master,” Elder Yuan Zhen vowed.

.....

Chu Feng had no idea what had happened in Luyang's Pavilion. The entire time, he had been in the Darknight Ghost Forest waiting for the return of the demonic woman while painstakingly training.

Just like that, several more days passed in a flash...

Although the demonic woman had never returned, Chu Feng's training had not been in vain.

Currently, Chu Feng was sitting in a concealment formation. He was concentrating fully.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a boundless aura spread out from Chu Feng's body. If it wasn't for the fact that his spirit formation had stopped the spreading of the aura, it would definitely have created a huge commotion.

The very next moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes. Not only were his eyes brightly spirited, they were also sharper than before.

However, at the same time, ice-cold killing intent emerged in Chu Feng's eyes.

He slowly clenched his right fist and sensed the surging power in his body. Suddenly, he looked to the direction of the Tang Family and declared with a low voice, “Tang Family, it is time for you all to pay.”

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's body shifted. His speed was many times faster than before.

It turned out that Chu Feng's current cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, he had become a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

After several days of laborious training, Chu Feng had finally managed to break through the barrier, and become an actual rank

two Half Martial Ancestor.

The name Luyang... lu → land. Yang → as in yin and yang. Yang is the male/positive/hot principle.

# Chapter 2176 – Lingering Fear

---

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared in the place near where Chu Feng was previously meditating.

It was actually that mysterious old monk.

At that moment, the old monk's gaze was fixed to the sky. Astonishment filled his deep gaze.

If others were to look at the sky that he was looking at, they would not discover anything special about it. However, the old monk saw a scene, a scene that surprised and even astonished him as he looked to the sky.

“That seemed to be the legendary Divine Tribulation.”

“But, ninety percent of its power is still lingering in the sky. Such a frightening power, but only a tenth actually descended?”

“Could it be that it's because only a tenth of its power descended that the might of the Divine Tribulation did not appear?”

“How did he accomplish that? Not only does he train in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, he also managed to make the legendary Divine Tribulation weaken its power to use only a tenth of its power to punish its cultivator?”

Suddenly, the old monk turned his gaze toward the direction that Chu Feng had left in. His gaze remained in that direction for a very long time. He had started to ponder.

“That child, exactly what is his origin?”

“Chu Feng; could it be that he's from the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The more he pondered, the more complicated the old monk's gaze became.

If someone who recognized this old monk saw his current gaze, they would definitely feel disbelief.

The reason for that was because very few people had ever managed to make him reveal that sort of gaze, let alone a young man.

.....

“Father and grandfather are truly amazing. If it wasn’t for the experience that they have imparted me with, breaking through would definitely be as difficult as scaling the heavens.”

Chu Feng was concealed in the void as he flew toward the direction of the Tang Family. Even though he was already a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, he was feeling lingering fear.

The reason for that was because while his breakthrough appeared to be normal, it was anything but normal. It was not as simple as Chu Feng having reached a breakthrough from rank one Half Martial Ancestor to rank two Half Martial Ancestor. In addition to that, he had also experienced the cleansing process of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Merely, the first cleansing process was not as world-shaking as the legends had it. In fact, it could be said that it did not cause any change to the world.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still felt as if he had just survived a calamity.

When Chu Feng first broke through his bottleneck, before he even broke through in cultivation, Chu Feng sensed a very frightening power appearing in the sky. Furthermore, that power was aimed at him. That was the power of the Divine Tribulation.

Chu Feng felt that if all of the power of the Divine Tribulation were to land, he would definitely die without even his soul remaining.

However, the power of the Divine Tribulation did not all descend upon him. In the end, only a tenth of its power descended upon him.

As for the reason why this was the case was all thanks to his father Chu Xuanyuan and his grandfather Chu Hanxian.

At the same time when Chu Feng's father had imparted the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique to Chu Feng, he had also imparted to him the method to handle the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

After all, the power of the Divine Tribulation was capable of causing massive destruction. The higher a cultivation one tried to reach a breakthrough in, the more frightening the power of the Divine Tribulation. Although one needed a very powerful willpower when facing the Divine Tribulation, it would simply be impossible for one to withstand the power of the Divine Tribulation should one try to meet it head-on.

Thus, if one wanted to withstand the might of the Divine Tribulation, there needed to be a certain method of doing so. The easiest method of doing so would be to temper oneself. Through the power of the Divine Tribulation, one could cleanse one's body so that it could adapt to the power of the Divine Tribulation.

With each breakthrough, one could gradually increase the strength of the cleansing process so as to be able to take on an even more powerful Divine Tribulation.

However, it remained that the Divine Tribulation was extremely frightening. If one did not undergo any treatment before receiving all of the Divine Tribulation's powers, not to mention adapting to it, one might directly be killed by the Divine Tribulation.

As for this time, Chu Feng had received the Divine Tribulation's first cleansing. The reason why he had only received a tenth of the Divine Tribulation's power was precisely because of that concealment formation.

No one would've thought that a mere concealment formation would be able to misguide the Self-punishment Mysterious Formation and let the legendary Divine Tribulation only descend



with a tenth of its power.

However, Chu Feng knew about it. As for the reason why he knew, it was all thanks to his father and grandfather.

“The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique truly possesses a well-deserved reputation. It would appear that my future cultivation journey will be very difficult,” Chu Feng frowned slightly. After the Divine Tribulation’s first cleansing, the always confident Chu Feng was no longer that confident anymore.

Although a tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power might not appear to have created any commotion, to the point where even the grasses and trees in the surrounding region were unaffected, that didn’t mean that a tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power would be extremely weak.

On the contrary, the power was not weak at all. In fact, it was much more frightening than the complete power of the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

The reason for that was because all one-tenth of the Divine Tribulation’s power had struck Chu Feng. Not a single bit was wasted.

Even though Chu Feng had managed to withstand it without suffering any injuries, he had done so with great difficulty. Thus, this allowed him to know that what had happened here today was merely the beginning, that his next breakthrough would definitely be even more challenging.

The reason for that was because even if he were to use a concealment formation when attempting his next breakthrough, it would be impossible for the Divine Tribulation to only descend with a tenth of its power.

The power of the Divine Tribulation that would strike him the next time would be twenty percent.

Furthermore, the power of the first Divine Tribulation would be

incomparable to that of the next one. After all, the stronger one's cultivation was, the more powerful the Divine Tribulation would be.

Most importantly, when the power of the Divine Tribulation that descended upon Chu Feng surpassed fifty percent, it would no longer be formless. Instead, it would become visible to everyone.

At that time, not only would its power be boundless, it would also have enormous momentum.

In other words, if Chu Feng did not wish to create a grand commotion when attempting to break through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor, he must find a hidden location to conduct his breakthrough.

Else, he would most definitely create an enormous commotion.

Furthermore, when Chu Feng attempted to break through to rank two Martial Ancestor, the concealment formation will lose its effectiveness.

At that time, what Chu Feng would have to withstand would be the entire power of the Divine Tribulation.

Thus, before that, Chu Feng must grow accustomed to the boundless power that the Divine Tribulation possessed. Else, he would definitely be killed.

All of those things combined to determine that Chu Feng's future path of martial cultivation would be filled with difficulties.

"This Tang Family truly did not place me in their eyes."

In merely a blink of an eye, Chu Feng had arrived at the Tang Family. He discovered that the Tang Family had not even activated their defensive formation, and their security was extremely lax. Compared to the time when they had fought against the Cao Family, it could be said to be a difference of heaven and earth.

"Could it be a trap?" Chu Feng's gaze changed. In the end, he

decided to conceal his aura and secretly infiltrate the Tang Family.

Because what the Tang Family did to him was truly too excessive, no matter what, Chu Feng was unable to contain the anger and hatred he held toward them.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was very cautious after infiltrating the Tang Family. However, he soon discovered that he was overthinking things. There was simply no trap at all. Rather, the Tang Family truly did not place him in their eyes.

The reason for that was because not only was the Tang Family's security extremely lax, none of the experts had remained in the Tang Family. Of the people from the Tang Family that remained, there was actually not a single Half Martial Ancestor.

Suddenly, Chu Feng saw a servant girl. Chu Feng recognized that servant girl. It was the same servant girl that had secretly reported to Tang Ying that her two older brothers were planning to marry her off to the Cao Family.

Chu Feng felt that this servant girl could be considered to be Tang Ying's trusted aide. Thus, he captured her when she was off guard and brought her to a secluded area.

“Lord Chu Feng, it's you?!”

To Chu Feng's surprise, the frightened servant girl's fear disappeared the moment she saw Chu Feng. Furthermore, she even revealed a delighted expression.

## Chapter 2177 – The Pitiful Tang Ying

---

“Don’t address me as ‘Lord,’ merely Chu Feng will do,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“Lord Chu Feng, d-did you return with reinforcements? Have you come to eliminate our Tang Family?” That servant girl asked.

“If you’re talking about the group of people in the Tang Family now, then no, I, Chu Feng, will not kill them. I, Chu Feng, am not one who kills the weak,” Chu Feng shook his head. To Chu Feng, the people remaining in the Tang Family right now were all powerless individuals. As such, Chu Feng would not kill them.

“Lord Chu Feng, you are truly a good man. I-In that case, can you save our Young Miss?” The servant girl begged Chu Feng.

“Your Young Miss? Are you talking about Tang Ying?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes, it’s our Young Miss Tang Ying,” That servant girl said.

“What happened to Tang Ying? Quickly, tell me about it,” Chu Feng asked.

The servant girl did not conceal the matter from Chu Feng, and began to inform him of everything that had happened.

“Tang Haichuan, you are truly bold. For the sake of preserving your Tang Family, you actually refuse to let off even your own daughter,” Fury immediately emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes after knowing what had happened.

It turned out that after Chu Feng escaped, although Elder Yuan Zhen was furious that the Tang and Cao Families allowed Chu Feng to escape, he did not violate his promise, and really made the Tang and Cao Families reconcile with one another. Furthermore, at the same time, he made the Cao Family compensate the Tang Family for their loss. He also made them hand over many territories to the Tang Family.

After that battle, although the Tang Family's loss was great, the benefits they had obtained were much greater than their losses.

To the Tang Family, this was truly a profit from a disaster. However, Elder Yuan Zhen had a demand. That was, he wanted the Tang Family's Family Head to marry his youngest daughter Tang Ying to the Cao Family's Family Head's youngest son, that retard.

Faced with that decision, the Tang Family's Family Head chose the interests of the Tang Family without the slightest hesitation, and sold his own daughter to the Cao Family.

When speaking of that matter, it was quite a coincidence. The Alliance Ceremony between the Tang and the Cao Families was to be held in several days' time. At that ceremony, Tang Ying would officially be married off to the Cao Family.

"Lord Chu Feng, the reason why Elder Yuan Zhen disliked our Young Miss is precisely because she pleaded for you that day."

"Right now, our Young Miss can be said to be completely isolated; the people that were closest to her have betrayed her."

"Right now, the only person that could save our Young Miss would be you, Lord Chu Feng."

"Lord Chu Feng, I beg of you, please, please save our Young Miss."

"If our Young Miss is truly to be married off to the Cao Family, she might end up dying there. That Cao Family most definitely plans to torture our Young Miss."

"After all, Cao Yuxuan was killed by you, and all the people in the Cao Family know that you possess an extraordinary relationship with our Young Miss. They will definitely aim their hatred for you at our Young Miss," When she spoke to this point, the servant girl fell to her knees before Chu Feng. Her cheeks were already covered in tears.

“You are very loyal to your Young Miss. Rest assured, I will save her.”

“However, do not mention that you have seen me to anyone. Pretend like I never appeared, because it will only serve to harm you.”

Hearing Chu Feng’s words, the servant girl raised her head and planned to express her thanks. However, to her surprise, she discovered that Chu Feng was already gone. Furthermore, there was a floating Cosmos Sack where Chu Feng had previously been standing.

After receiving that Cosmos Sack, the servant girl’s expression immediately turned sluggish. The reason for that was because the riches and treasures contained in the Cosmos Sack were things that she would find very difficult to obtain in her entire lifetime.

.....

Chu Feng traveled rapidly. He managed to arrive at the Cao Family before the Alliance Ceremony of the Tang and Cao Families.

For the sake of the marriage, the Cao Family had invited a vast amount of guests. Not only had the nearby powers arrived, even some of the people from Luyang’s Pavilion had arrived. Elder Yuan Zhen was naturally among their ranks.

Tomorrow was the day of the Tang and Cao Families’ Alliance Ceremony. It would also be the day that Tang Ying would be married into the Cao Family.

Chu Feng planned to save Tang Ying beforehand. He absolutely could not allow Tang Ying to undergo that marriage ceremony with the Cao Family’s youngest son.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, the Tang Family had already handed Tang Ying to the Cao Family at an earlier date. They had truly and completely sold Tang Ying away.

After a series of inquiries, Chu Feng finally found out where Tang Ying was located. Not only did she not receive the treatment of a bride, she was even imprisoned in an underground prison.

The prison was very heavily guarded. It would simply be impossible for ordinary people to enter it. However, this posed no threat to Chu Feng.

In order to not alarm anyone, Chu Feng did not kill anyone. Instead, he used a special technique to render the people inside the underground prison unconscious. It was only then that he entered the prison.

Before Chu Feng even reached the cell that Tang Ying was held in, Chu Feng was already able to see Tang Ying being held inside the prison.

At that moment, Tang Ying was tightly bound by spirit formation ropes. Not to mention moving, she was unable to even speak.

Although Tang Ying was not crying, her reddened eyes were already swollen. This meant that she had cried for a very long time before.

Her eyes were dispirited. It was as if she had no more longing for living anymore; it seemed she was determined to die.

The way Chu Feng saw it, if it wasn't for the fact that her movements were restricted by spirit formation, she would've likely killed herself by now.

After all, she had been betrayed by her closest people, her family.

When Chu Feng saw the scene in the underground prison, what emerged in his heart was not only pain, but also anger.

The reason for that was because Tang Ying was not the only person in that prison cell. Standing before her was a woman.

That woman was quite good-looking, and was dressed quite

gorgeously. In a revealing outfit, she appeared very alluring.

However, although this woman might appear to be young, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that she was at least a thousand years old.

“Why aren’t you speaking? You damned bitch, tell me why you decided to break the promise of marriage, why did you refuse to marry my son? Is it because of that Chu Feng?”

“Speak, speak! Oh, I nearly forgot, you are unable to speak. Even your ability to speak has been taken from you by your family members.”

“However, you cannot blame your family. After all, you are so shameless.”

“Hehe, I might as well tell you this. Cao Yuxuan’s death by that Chu Feng’s hand is also related to you. Cao Yuxuan’s mother will definitely not spare you. Sooner or later, you will die.”

“However, there is simply no need for Cao Yuxuan’s mother to take care of you. The reason for that is because I will not spare you. Your decision to break the marriage with my son before is simply an insult to my son.”

“Thus, don’t you think that you will really become our Cao Family’s daughter-in-law because we allowed you to be married to my son.”

“After the marriage ceremony tomorrow, it will be the time of your death, Tang Ying. However, I will not let you die easily. I will make you first wish that you were dead.”

“I have already gathered a hundred homeless wanderers, as well as a hundred of the ugliest monstrous beasts. I will have them rape you in succession.”

“You want to remain chaste? You want to look down upon my son? I’ll have you suffer torment, pain and ruin before you die!!!” That woman pointed to Tang Ying and said fiercely.



After hearing those words, Chu Feng knew that this woman was most definitely the Cao Family's youngest son's mother.

Being insulted like that, Tang Ying would naturally also be furious. However, as she was unable to speak, she could only glower at the retard's mother.

“Bitch, you dare glare at me?!” The retard's mother was immediately furious. She raised her hand and made to swat Tang Ying's cheek.

# Chapter 2178 – Friends

---

“Paa~~~”

After a crisp sound, that woman’s expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because not only did her slap not land on Tang Ying’s face, it was instead caught by someone.

Naturally, the person who had blocked her slap was Chu Feng.

“W-Who are you?” Evidently, this woman did not know who Chu Feng was. She had an extremely startled expression.

“I am Chu Feng,” Chu Feng declared.

“What, y-y-you are Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, that woman immediately turned around to flee. However, her hand was still in Chu Feng’s grasp. As such, how could she possibly escape?

“Men! Help! Chu Feng is here!” In panic, the woman started to shout for help.

“Humph,” However, Chu Feng merely snorted coldly. Then, with a flip of his sleeve, he knocked that woman into the corner of the prison.

Then, with another flip of Chu Feng’s sleeve, he undid the spirit formation sealing Tang Ying.

“Punish her however you wish. For someone like her, there is no need to show any mercy,” Chu Feng said as he pointed to that woman.

“No, don’t!” Upon hearing that, the woman immediately screamed in terror. However, her voice grew weaker and weaker. It was not only her voice that became very weak; even her aura became very weak. She was completely restricted by Chu Feng.

“Who are you calling a bitch?! If you want to talk about bitches, you’re the bitch. Who doesn’t know about your actions of inciting

the Cao Family's Family Head?"

"In order to be married to the Cao Family's Family Head, you even killed your twin younger sister. You are simply inhuman!"

Tang Ying was finally able to unleash her anger now. Unrestrained, she started to beat up the woman, leaving her face completely bruised and lacerated.

Tang Ying beat her unconscious.

After seeing that she had lost consciousness, Tang Ying finally ceased her attacks. Her anger seemed to have been alleviated, as the anger that she had shown previously was substituted by nervousness.

"Chu Feng, why would you be here? The Cao Family and the Tang Family are searching for you all over," Tang Ying said to Chu Feng nervously.

"I have naturally come here to save you. Don't forget, I am your bodyguard," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

"But..."

"There's no but. I'll ask you this: if I were to bring you away, would you be willing to leave with me?" Chu Feng asked.

"The current Tang Family is no longer my, Tang Ying's, family. As for the people in the Cao Family, they are determined to torture and humiliate me. I would naturally want to leave. But..."

"There's no but. If you wish to leave, I can bring you away now. Although you will have no relatives from this point on, you will have friends," Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a smile.

"But..." As Tang Ying spoke, she looked to the place where she had been tied up earlier.

Her intentions were very clear. If she were to leave, the Cao Family would definitely discover that she had escaped. If that were to happen, the situation would be bad.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly extended his finger and pointed at that woman.

With each flick of his finger, a strand of spirit power entered that woman's body.

In the blink of an eye, an enormous change occurred to that woman's body. Not only did her facial appearance turn into Tang Ying's appearance, even her clothes turned into Tang Ying's clothes.

Then, with a wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, that woman ended up at the place where Tang Ying had previously been tied up. Even the spirit formation that had been restraining Tang Ying, that had been canceled by Chu Feng, once again reemerged.

Merely, the spirit formation ropes were no longer tying up Tang Ying. Instead, they were tying up that woman.

However, to others, it appeared just as if the ropes were tying up Tang Ying.

“Chu Feng, you couldn't possibly...” Seeing this scene, Tang Ying immediately thought of something. She was both startled and delighted.

“That's right. I'm going to have that retard marry his deranged mother. I'll completely humiliate the Cao Family,” Chu Feng declared.

“I truly never expected for you to be this malicious,” Although Chu Feng's plan was extremely crazy, Tang Ying supported it absolutely. Just thinking about the expression the people from the Cao Family would have caused Tang Ying immense satisfaction.

“Malicious? When facing good people, I, Chu Feng, will be the best person. However, when facing bad people, I, Chu Feng, will be the worst person.”

“Perhaps I will not be able to compare to others in terms of goodness, but in terms of evilness, I, Chu Feng, will not lose to anyone,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Tang Ying felt warmth in her heart. This was especially true as she had just been betrayed by her family, by the people that she had trusted most in her entire life. She felt so extremely warm that tears began to roll down her eyes.

“Hey, hey, hey, stop crying. This is the way life is. This is the nature of your family. Although it might be cruel for you to see their true nature today, it remains a good thing. As for why, you will understand in the future,” Although Chu Feng’s words were a bit harsh, he had also raised his hand to personally wipe away Tang Ying’s tears.

At that moment, Tang Ying felt extremely glad. She was glad that she had decided to go to the Radiance Immortal Mountain that day. She was glad to have met Chu Feng.

Before, she felt that there was nothing left for her in this world. However, she now discovered that that wasn’t the case.

At the very least, she had a true friend. As for that person, it was Chu Feng.

Although she and Chu Feng had only known one another for a short time, Chu Feng was willing to brave dangers for her.

Then, Chu Feng brought Tang Ying out of the Cao Family.

As for the guards of the underground prison, Chu Feng naturally woke them back up. The guards did not know that they had lost consciousness earlier. However, they felt that something was amiss. Thus, the first thing they did was to run to the prison cell that Tang Ying was imprisoned in to survey her.

It was only after they opened the prison cell and discovered that Tang Ying was still there that the guards breathed a sigh of relief.

Suddenly, the warden asked. “Eh, this is strange, when did the

Sixth Madam leave?” He only remembered when the Sixth Madam arrived at this place, and did not remember the Sixth Madam leaving.

“She should have just left, right?” In response, the various guards started to hurriedly lie.

Naturally, they would not dare to say that they did not know when the Sixth Madam had left.

The reason for that was because if they said it like that, it would mean that they had neglected their duty, something that they would be punished for.

“Mn, it’s good that that’s the case. Sixth Madam has been in a bad mood recently. We cannot afford to offend her,” As the warden spoke, he began to lead the guards out.

“Wuu!”

“Wuu!!”

“Wuu!!!”

Right at this moment, that woman suddenly regained consciousness. When she saw the prison guards, she tried to cry for help. However, she was surprised to discover that not only was she unable to speak, she was also unable to move in the slightest. All she could do was let out muffled groans.

In panic, tears started to roll down her cheeks.

“Damned bitch, the fuck are you shouting about?!” The warden walked into the prison cell, raised his hand and ruthlessly slapped that woman.

“Milord, is this really fine? After all, she is to be married off to our Young Master tomorrow,” The other guards were all startled to see this.

“The hell are you all afraid of? Do not forget that I, your lord, know world spirit techniques,” The warden said. As he spoke, he

began to use his world spirit techniques to heal that woman. Soon, the cheek with the bloody handprint was healed.

“Haha, Milord, you’re truly amazing,” In response, the guards started to flatter their warden.

“Of course,” The warden had a proud expression. As he spoke and laughed, he walked out of the prison cell.

However, he had no idea that the woman he had hit earlier was not Tang Ying. Rather, it was the Sixth Madam that he did not dare to offend.

# Chapter 2179 – Retarded Sex Fiend

---

At that moment, Chu Feng had already brought Tang Ying to a place far from the Cao Family. Not only did he prepare sufficient travel expenses for Tang Ying, he had also used his world spirit techniques to help her alter her appearance.

Unless one was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would simply be impossible for anyone to see through Tang Ying's altered appearance.

“From today on, your name can remain Ying. However, your full name cannot be Tang Ying, understand?”

“Furthermore, I can only bring you here. You will have to travel the rest of your journey yourself. Get as far away from here as you can and do not return here,” Chu Feng instructed Tang Ying.

“Chu Feng, will we be able to meet again in the future?” Tang Ying asked.

“If fate wills it, we will definitely meet again,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, will you eliminate all the people of our Tang Family?” Tang Ying asked.

“It would be best that you do not ask about this matter. I fear that the answer will make you feel uncomfortable,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Tang Ying grew silent. She knew that Chu Feng would definitely not spare the people of the Tang Family.

Even though the people from the Tang Family had betrayed her, it remained that they were her relatives. The affection of many years was not something that could be erased so easily.

Upon thinking that her father and old brothers would all be killed, she felt very pained and reluctant.

However, she did not know how she could persuade Chu Feng to spare them. After all, the Tang Family had indeed wronged Chu



Feng enormously.

Furthermore, she owed Chu Feng enormously.

“No matter what, I must still thank you,” Tang Ying said to Chu Feng.

“Stop acting this foolishly. In the future, you must make sure to not believe people that easily. Remember, you must take care of yourself,” Chu Feng said to Tang Ying with a smile.

“Mn,” Tang Ying nodded.

“Go on, I’ll see you off from afar,” Chu Feng said.

Tang Ying smiled sweetly. She did not wish for Chu Feng to see a sad expression on her during their separation; she wished to leave behind a good impression for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because she knew that this separation might be a separation of a lifetime.

Tang Ying walked away. Gradually, she disappeared from Chu Feng’s line of sight.

As for Chu Feng, he felt even more sadness in his heart. In one’s life, one would meet many people that would end up separating. Tang Ying was one such person for him.

However, he wished that Tang Ying would be able to live a better life in the future. The reason for that was because Chu Feng could imagine how painful it must be for her to be betrayed by the family that that she loved the most.

After silently looking at the direction in which Tang Ying had left for a very long time, Chu Feng turned around and began to proceed toward the direction of the Cao Family.

Tang Ying’s guess was correct, Chu Feng would spare neither the Tang Family nor the Cao Family.

Tomorrow, at the Alliance Ceremony held at the Cao Family, it would be the time for Chu Feng to dispense justice on the Tang and

Cao Families.

.....

The next day, the Alliance Ceremony between the Tang and the Cao Families began as scheduled. All of the people who were able to enter this place could be considered famous and powerful existences in the area.

Even though both the Tang Family and the Cao Family were actually unwilling to enter this alliance – the two families were, after all, killing one another not long ago, and both had suffered casualties in the process – they had to appear very merry, as there were this many guests, and even Luyang's Pavilion's Elder Yuan Zhen and many other experts present.

After seeing the merry appearance of the Tang and Cao Families, the guests that had arrived were all quite surprised. After all, they had heard that the Tang and Cao Families were at each other's throats not long ago.

Originally, many people were skeptical when they heard the news that the Tang and Cao Families would be allying with one another. They had come here with doubt in their hearts. However, to their surprise, the Tang and Cao Families were actually really going to become allies.

Even though they had questions in their hearts, it remained that people from Luyang's Pavilion were present. As such, the guests did not raise any mood-dampening questions. Instead, they all pretended to be very happy.

With this being the case, this Alliance Ceremony naturally became even livelier. It had reached what the Tang and Cao Families had hoped for.

During the lively excitement, no one noticed that an uninvited guest had infiltrated this Alliance Ceremony. This person was naturally the person that the Tang and Cao Families were secretly

searching for, Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had been surveying the strength of the people from Luyang's Pavilion the entire time.

The reason why Chu Feng was only surveying the strength of the people from Luyang's Pavilion was because he was already capable of ignoring the Tang and Cao Families' forces.

The reason for that was because even their strongest Family Heads would not be a match for Chu Feng now.

Chu Feng also did not place that Elder Yuan Zhen in his eyes. Between those with the same battle power, Chu Feng did not fear anyone.

However, Chu Feng knew that the power of Luyang's Pavilion was most definitely not limited to this. Although Elder Yuan Zhen's status might be high in Luyang's Pavilion, his strength was definitely not overly strong.

Thus, Chu Feng was focused on surveying the others from Luyang's Pavilion. After surveying the others from Luyang's Pavilion, Chu Feng felt relief.

The reason for that was because of the people from Luyang's Pavilion that had come to this Alliance Ceremony, the strongest person was actually Elder Yuan Zhen. The others were weaker than even Yuan Zhen. As such, Chu Feng would naturally not have to be afraid of them.

However, even after he determined that the people present in the Alliance Ceremony would pose no threat to him, Chu Feng did not act immediately. The reason for that was because he wanted to enjoy a great show first.

As for that, it would be the scene of the Cao Family's Family Head's Sixth Madam being married to the Cao Family's youngest son.

From Tang Ying, Chu Feng came to find out that even though the

Cao Family's youngest son was retarded, he was extremely perverted, and had defiled many women.

In fact, even many children had ended up being captured by his vile hands. Most disgustingly, he would even defile boys who were young and tender-looking.

Furthermore, many of the children were killed by him from the rape due to being too young. He was most definitely an animal.

As for that animal's mother, that so-called Sixth Madam, she was not a good person either.

Originally, the person the Cao Family's Family Head had grown fond of was actually the Sixth Madam's twin sister. However, for the sake of position and wealth, the Sixth Madam had personally caused the death of her twin sister.

The Cao Family's Family Head also knew about this matter. However, it remained that the dead could not be brought back to life. Furthermore, the Sixth Madam's appearance was exactly the same as her twin sister's. Thus, not only did the Cao Family's Family Head not kill her, he instead took her as his wife.

After the Sixth Madam married into the Cao Family, she immediately started to incite trouble. Any servant she was not fond of was killed by her immediately. She was extremely cruel.

Thus, Chu Feng did not feel any sense of guilt when doing such a thing to that mother and son. Instead, he felt that it was what they deserved. After all, he felt that what he schemed could be said to be helping the heavens do a good deed.

Moreover, his actions would completely disgrace the Cao Family, and also humiliate the Tang Family. As such, this could be said to be killing three birds with one arrow.

The Alliance Ceremony continued without a hitch. It was merely a ceremony that caused one to feel sleepy.

After the Alliance Ceremony ended, Chu Feng's highlight of the

day, the marriage between Tang Ying and the Cao Family's youngest son, finally appeared on stage.

When Cao Yu appeared on stage, many people wanted to laugh. That fellow was extremely ugly. It was as if he was soft in the head. His mouth was crooked, and his eyes were slanted. Furthermore, saliva was dripping from his mouth nonstop.

His appearance resembled neither the Cao Family's Family Head nor his mother.

However, if that was all there was to it, the crowd would not have wanted to laugh. Most importantly, he was being helped up to the stage by two servant girls.

Furthermore, as he walked, his eyes were fixed onto the servant girls' chests nonstop. The more he looked, the more saliva he began to drool. His pervertedness was extremely obvious.

Seeing Cao Yu acting like this, the rumors of his outrageous lust were verified. When thinking of a retard that lacked intelligence and did not even know who his parents and siblings were, yet would have such lust and think about doing perverted things all day, [how could one not feel the urge to laugh?](#)

Chinese people are not PC at all. They would only be PC if the person is in front of them or the person is of a higher status than them. So yeah... when judging this from a Western POV, what Bee wrote is definitely not something publishable in the 21st century. But China? Still there.

## Chapter 2180 – Outrageous Boldness

---

“Hey, what’s going on with the Cao Family? It’s Young Master Cao Yu’s happy occasion, why are his hands and feet bound?” Right at this moment, a voice sounded from a seat afar. This voice caught the attention of the crowd.

Naturally, it was Chu Feng who spoke. However, no one knew that it was Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng had disguised his appearance.

“What’s going on? Did the Cao Family really bind Cao Yu’s limbs? Why did they do that?!”

Hearing those words, the crowd were all surprised. However, upon closer inspection, they noticed that while Cao Yu’s hands were covered by his special groom’s outfit, they were completely motionless. It seemed as if they were truly bound.

At this moment, the crowd finally realized why Cao Yu did not do anything even though he was nearly driven mad with lust by the two servant girls supporting him.

It turned out, his hands were bound. Even if he wished to move... he would not be able to.

“Haha, my youngest son was inattentive when he was training a martial skill several days ago. It led to his hands being injured. That is why his arms are not moving,” The Cao Family’s Family Head explained.

“So Young Master Cao Yu also knows martial skills. This is the first time I’ve heard of that, hahaha!!!” Chu Feng laughed mockingly. Furthermore, his laughter was very loud. It practically filled the entire Cao Family.

While others might be scared of the Cao Family, Chu Feng was not afraid of them.

After Chu Feng said those words, many people present also had

the urge to laugh. The reason for that was because they all knew that even though Cao Yu possessed cultivation, it had been instilled in him by the Cao Family using special methods, that he simply did not know how to cultivate.

Thus, it was most definitely utter nonsense for the Cao Family's Family Head to declare that Cao Yu had injured his hands because he was training in a martial skill.

Furthermore, upon thinking that the Cao Family's Family Head lied because he was trying to conceal the fact that his son was too perverted, the people present felt it to be even more laughable.

However, out of respect for the Cao Family, not a single person dared to laugh. One by one, they all swallowed their laughter.

“Hahaha, little friend, you truly know how to crack jokes. There is no one in our Cao Family who does not know how to train in martial cultivation, let alone when it's my son,” The Cao Family's Family Head said with a beaming smile. Although he spoke pleasantly, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng contained a trace of killing intent.

He was using his killing intent to threaten Chu Feng. Furthermore, voice transmissions were entering Chu Feng's ears.

Those were voice transmissions from the people of the Cao Family. Some were asking who Chu Feng was, and others were telling Chu Feng to watch his words. In short, like the Cao Family's Family Head's gaze, they were all threatening Chu Feng.

All the things that were happening right now were things that had Chu Feng anticipated.

Of course, Chu Feng was not afraid of this sort of situation. The reason for that was because even if the Cao Family did not try to do anything to him, he would still not spare them.

In fact, it was not only the people of the Cao Family who disliked Chu Feng, the people from Luyang's Pavilion also felt disdain for

Chu Feng.

No matter what, the Cao Family was a subsidiary power to Luyang's Pavilion. For Chu Feng to incite troubles for the Cao Family like that meant that he also did not place their Luyang's Pavilion in his eyes.

However, to Chu Feng, he did not care about any of this. The reason for that was because he was not planning to spare either the Cao Family, the Tang Family or Luyang's Pavilion today.

"Go and invite the bride out. Do not hold up this ceremonious occasion," Elder Yuan Zhen said. He spoke those words in order to alleviate the awkward situation.

"Yes," The people from the Cao Family understood Elder Yuan Zhen's kind intentions. Without hesitation, they soon brought the other main character today, Tang Ying, onto the stage.

When Tang Ying was brought to the stage, her head was covered by a veil. The veil was very special, and capable of blocking all sorts of observation methods. Thus, no one was able to see her facial appearance.

Actually, even if the veil was removed, no one would be able to discover that it was not Tang Ying. After all, the facial alteration spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up was still there. Only Chu Feng was able to lift that spirit formation.

Thus, at this moment, the person that was doing the ritual kneeling and bowing to heaven and earth with Cao Yu, the person that was marrying him, was not Tang Ying. Rather, it was Cao Yu's biological mother.

"First bow to the heaven and earth!!!"

"Second bow to one's parents!!!"

"Husband and wife, bow to one another!!!"

When the marriage director shouted the final instruction, Cao



Yu, with the assistance of the servant girls, bowed to Tang Ying.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that Tang Ying was being supported by a strong Cao Family servant girl during the kneeling and bowing ceremony.

The reason for this was naturally because they were afraid that Tang Ying would refuse to do the ceremony. However, no one would've expect that the person kneeling and bowing with Cao Yu was simply not Tang Ying at all. Rather, it was Cao Yu's own mother.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Suddenly, a surge of wind suddenly swept forth and moved directly toward the wedding stage.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In response, the Cao Family's Family Head who sat on the stage also waved his sleeve, and unleashed his aura of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. He planned to use his own strength to suppress that wind.

“Huu~~~”

However, the wind suddenly accelerated. Even though the majority of the wind was suppressed by the Cao Family's Family Head, there was still a gust of wind that reached the bride on the stage. That wind blew away the red veil covering the bride's face.

When the red veil was lifted, the expressions of the crowd all changed to ones of shock. This was especially true for the people of the Cao Family. They stood there as if petrified; they were completely stunned. Soon... their complexions turned ashen.

“That... that seems to not be the Tang Family's Young Miss, right?”

Tang Ying could be considered to be a celebrity in the surrounding region. Thus, many people recognized her. When

they discovered that the woman on stage was not Tang Ying, they were all surprised. After all, today was the wedding ceremony between Tang Ying and Cao Yu.

Suddenly, a cry of surprise sounded from the crowd. “I-I-Isn’t that the Sixth Madam?”

“What? The Cao Family’s Sixth Madam? Isn’t she Cao Yu’s biological mother?”

The crowd were all shocked upon hearing those words. Although not many people had met the Cao Family’s Sixth Madam before, a lot of people knew that the Cao Family’s Sixth Madam was Cao Yu’s mother.

“Heavens! It really is the Sixth Madam! This means that Cao Yu has undergone a marriage ceremony with his own mother!”

“Heavens! Exactly what is going on here?! Why would the Cao Family’s Family Master betroth his own wife to his son?!”

The crowd were all stunned and confused as to what the Cao Family was thinking.

As for the people of the Cao Family, they felt that they were completely disgraced. This was especially true for the Cao Family’s Family Head; his complexion turned from blue to purple, and then from purple to green. He was nearly driven insane.

“Tang Haichuan, what is the meaning of this?!” In anger, the Cao Family’s Family Head looked to the Tang Family’s Family Head. He thought that this was caused by the Tang Family.

“Why are you shouting at me?! Didn’t I already hand my daughter to your Cao Family? Why are you demanding things from me now?” The Tang Family’s Family Head immediately shifted responsibility away from himself.

“Yoh, yoh, yoh, what’s this? Before the marriage even began, you’ve already sent your daughter away? What is the meaning behind that? Family Heads, why am I confused?” Right at this

moment, Chu Feng's voice sounded again.

“Insolent! The person that caused the wind earlier was you! Exactly who are you?! You dared to come stir up troubles in my Cao Family?!” The Cao Family's Family Head pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

At this moment, the crowd present all turned their gazes to Chu Feng.

From the very beginning, Chu Feng had been creating troubles for the Cao Family. The people present also wanted to know exactly who this outrageously bold man was.

# Chapter 2181 – Merely A Single Sword Strike

---

“Cao Family’s Family Head, what’s wrong? How could you have forgotten about me this quickly?” Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he flipped his sleeve and removed the clothes he wore.

At this moment, not only did Chu Feng reveal his true appearance, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings also covered his entire body.

“It’s you?!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, not only were the people from the Tang and Cao Families shocked, even the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Elder Yuan Zhen was shocked.

His expression changed enormously as he stood up nervously.

“Those Thunder Wings and that Thunder Armor...”

“He... he... he is someone from the Heavenly Clans!!!”

“Heavens! Judging by his age, he should be a member of the younger generation. A member of the younger generation actually possesses this level of cultivation, exactly which Heavenly Clan managed to nurture such a genius?”

In addition to the people from the Tang and Cao Families, many of the people that did not know who Chu Feng was also revealed shocked expressions. In fact, they were much more astonished than the Tang and Cao Families.

Many people did not know about the conflict between Chu Feng and the Tang and Cao Families. That said, it didn’t change the fact that they revealed astonished expressions upon seeing Chu Feng.

The reason for that was not only because Chu Feng had revealed that he had a Heavenly Bloodline, the cultivation that he had obtained at his young age also caused countless people to gasp with admiration.

“Everyone, I bet you all do not know who I am.”

“To make a long story short, I am called Chu Feng. Days ago, when the Cao Family was attacking the Tang Family, I received a request from the Tang Family’s Young Miss Tang Ying and fought for the Tang Family.”

“In that battle, in order to save the Tang Family, I killed the Cao Family’s Third Young Master, Cao Yuxuan.”

“Precisely because of that, Luyang’s Pavilion decided to interfere in this matter, and demanded that both the Tang and Cao Families to lay down their personal grudges to join hands and take care of me.”

“As for the Tang Family, for their own interests, they decided to break faith and aim their weapons at me, who had been helping them the entire time.”

“Everyone, I ask of you all, is this the way one should act?” Chu Feng spread his hands and asked the crowd.

At this moment, the crowd had burst into an uproar. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was truly too astonishing.

Merely his declaration that he had killed Cao Yuxuan caused the crowd to gasp in surprise. After all, Cao Yuxuan’s reputation had not been falsely obtained.

Chu Feng had helped the Tang Family kill Cao Yuxuan. Yet, the Tang Family instead kicked their benefactor in the teeth. This came as an even greater disbelief for the crowd.

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you would dare to come here alone,” Suddenly, Elder Yuan Zhen laughed and walked out.

When he first saw Chu Feng, he was frightened. He became extremely nervous because he feared that Chu Feng had brought reinforcements.

However, after he observed his surroundings, he discovered that Chu Feng had not brought any reinforcements with him. Instead, he had arrived by himself. Upon discovering that, his nervousness was immediately cast away, and replaced with a mocking smile.

The reason for that was because he was able to ascertain that Chu Feng was a so-called ‘bastard child’ that Chu Luyang spoke of. All of the Heavenly Clans had a lot of bastard children. As for those bastard children, they simply did not have any backing.

Right after Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, the expressions of the surrounding crowd changed once again. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen did not declare what Chu Feng had said to be false. Since he did not deny it, it indirectly verified what Chu Feng had said.

Upon thinking that Chu Feng had actually killed the Cao Family’s genius Cao Yuxuan, and that the Tang Family were actually ingrates, the crowd became even more astonished.

“Haha...” At this moment, Chu Feng laughed. He said, “Taking care of you bunch, I myself will suffice.”

“What shameless boasting,” Elder Yuan Zhen snorted coldly. Then, he said to the Cao and Tang Families’ Family Heads, “Tang Haichuan, Cao Kuofeng, I will present you two with an opportunity to redeem yourselves. This time, do not let him escape.”

“Elder, please rest assured. We will definitely not give him the opportunity to escape again.”

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

As they spoke, Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng unleashed their respective Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and charged to attack Chu Feng.

Their actions immediately caused their Ancestral-level martial power to scatter in all directions.

At the same time, two enormous surges of power surged toward Chu Feng.

They were extremely powerful, and definitely not ordinary martial skills. They had already surpassed Heaven Taboo Martial Skills.

Being utilized with their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, they turned into two sinister and enormous ferocious beasts. The two ferocious beasts roared nonstop. It was as if they were going to devour everything. Their might was simply unstoppable.

Those were two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills. As Chu Feng had anticipated, the two Family Heads really had grasped Emperor Taboo Martial Skills. Although their mastery over their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills was not comprehensive, it remained that they were actual Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

“This sort of sensation!!!”

“Could those be legendary Emperor Taboo Martial Skills?!”

The expressions of many people changed enormously. Astonishment filled their eyes.

From the two martial skills' might, they were able to determine that those were Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

However, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, his battle power remained only at the level of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor after he used his various abilities. The crowd truly did not understand why the two Family Heads, two rank seven Half Martial Ancestors who could clearly kill Chu Feng effortlessly, would have to unleash such powerful attacks against him.

Why would they use their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and Emperor Taboo Martial Skills? Even if their opponent was someone from the Heavenly Clans, wouldn't this be too excessive still?!

“Today, you will undoubtedly die!”

When the two Family Heads successfully unleashed their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills and sealed off Chu Feng's path of escape with their Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, they revealed complacent smiles.

The way they saw it, they had allowed Chu Feng to escape last time out of carelessness.

However, this time around, they had unleashed their strongest attacks right away. As such, there was no way for Chu Feng to escape.

However, they had no idea that even though Chu Feng appeared to still be a rank one Half Martial Ancestor that had increased his battle power to that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor through his various techniques, Chu Feng's actual cultivation was already that of a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

After using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng's cultivation had already increased to that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Adding on his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, Chu Feng's actual battle power was equal to that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was practically unrivaled among those of his same level of battle power. Even though the two Family Heads had unleashed their strongest attacks, Chu Feng still possessed no fear of them.

Merely, Chu Feng had deliberately concealed a level of cultivation. His intention was precisely to make the two Family Heads become careless.

“Rumble~~~”

At this moment, the Emperor Taboo Martial Skills the two Family Heads unleashed with their Incomplete Ancestral Armament struck from the sky.



Before the two martial skills actually reached Chu Feng, they had already caused space itself to rumble nonstop. The might of these attacks were simply akin to the arrival of doomsday.

Merely sensing their might could cause one to feel enormous fear. Their frightening might was fixed onto Chu Feng.

“Heh...”

However, even though he was faced with such a frightening might, Chu Feng smiled and stood there motionlessly. It was as if he was waiting for death.

“Rumble~~~”

Finally, the two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills struck Chu Feng. They turned into two violently surging energy ripples that began to sweep out in all directions.

At this moment, the entire region was engulfed in primal chaos. Countless innocent people met their miserable deaths in this place. They were utterly destroyed by the energy ripples.

At the same moment, Chu Feng’s aura also disappeared.

“Haha...”

The Tang Family and Cao Family’s Family Heads, the two former enemies, were unable to contain themselves, and started laughing.

The way they saw it, Chu Feng would definitely be killed by them this time around. Finally, they had eliminated a hidden danger.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, the sound of wind began to be heard from the frightening energy ripples.

A great wind swept forth. In an instant, it completely dispersed the frightening energy ripples.

At the same time, five elemental energies of wind, lightning, water, fire and earth started to rapidly fly toward the two Family

Heads.

“What is that?!”

Seeing the bodies of elemental energies, the expressions of the two Family Heads changed enormously. The reason for that was because they sensed fatal danger from the five elemental energies.

Furthermore, the speed of those five elemental energies was extremely fast, so fast that they were simply impossible to dodge.

“Woosh~~~”

When the five bodies of elemental energy managed to approach the two family heads, they actually began to condense together.

At this moment, enormous shock appeared in the two Family Heads’ alarmed gazes.

The reason for that was because those five bodies of energies fused together into a humanoid shape. Furthermore, that person was Chu Feng.

At the time when Chu Feng regained his body, he was less than three meters from the two Family Heads. He slashed with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament Magma Emperor Sword that he held in his hand.

“Boom~~~”

A blaze of fire swept forth through the air. Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng, the Family Heads of the Tang and Cao Families, were chopped in two.

# Chapter 2182 – Massacring The City

---

With merely a single strike, the two Family Heads' bodies were hacked in two from the blazing slash.

The two bodies were destroyed. However, the two Family Heads were not actually dead. Instead, they turned into two spirit bodies and flew to escape.

However, Chu Feng spread open his hand, and a boundless attractive force spread forth.

The two spirit bodies were rapidly sucked toward Chu Feng's palm. Furthermore, they were rapidly decreasing in size. Finally, like two rats, they were being firmly held by Chu Feng.

At this moment, the two Family Heads were struggling nonstop. However, they were simply unable to escape Chu Feng's grasp. This caused their faces to be filled with panic.

“Tang Family's Family Head, when you decided to kick your benefactor in the teeth and attack me that day, did you think that you would see this day?” Chu Feng asked with a cold voice. Dense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me. Please take Lil' Ying into consideration and spare my life,” The Tang Family's Family Head began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness nonstop.

“You still have the nerve to mention Tang Ying to me?” Upon hearing him mention Tang Ying, the killing intent in Chu Feng's eyes increased instead of decreasing.

“Elder Yuan Zhen! Elder Yuan Zhen, save me!!!” Sensing that the situation was amiss, the Tang Family's Family Head immediately turned to plea Elder Yuan Zhen for help.

“Today, no one will be able to save you.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he clenched his fist. “Puchi,” Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng’s spirit bodies were smashed to pieces. They had been utterly killed.

Seeing this scene, many of the surrounding people were startled. None of them expected Chu Feng to be this powerful, for him to be able to easily kill the two Family Heads.

“So you were hiding your cultivation.”

At this moment, Elder Yuan Zhen’s eyes were shining. He had noticed that Chu Feng’s cultivation was that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor after activating his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. However, he had clearly only been a rank three Half Martial Ancestor earlier. This made him realize that Chu Feng had deliberately hidden his cultivation earlier, that he had intentionally let the two Family Heads become careless.

“You only realized that I had concealed my cultivation now? I’m afraid that it’s already too late,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, he swept his gaze over his surroundings and said to the people present, “Today, I, Chu Feng, will massacre this city. Those of you who are unrelated to this, leave immediately.”

Once Chu Feng finished saying those words, surging killing intent sprang forth. The boundless killing intent flowed into the air and turned into black clouds that filled the sky. The black clouds resembled savage ferocious beasts that galloped in the sky. Their frightening aura filled the region.

“Run away!”

Sensing the killing intent and seeing Chu Feng’s abilities, the crowd all realized that Chu Feng was not joking around. Thus, many people began to soar into the sky and fly far away to escape this place. They were deeply afraid that they would be implicated in the battle that was about to take place.

After all, the attacks the Tang and Cao Family Heads had

unleashed at Chu Feng earlier had already killed many innocent bystanders.

Although the people had escaped from the Cao Family, they had not actually escaped from the city. After all, they were all curious, and fond of watching lively excitements.

Although this lively excitement could not be viewed from nearby, these people felt that they must still view it from afar.

“People of the Tang and Cao Families, listen up. If you all wish to get away, you can still do so right now.”

“Else, do not blame me, Chu Feng, for being ruthless later. If you must blame someone... you all can only blame yourselves. I have given you all the chance to escape, it is only you all that refused to take it,” Chu Feng said coldly. There was not the slightest trace of emotion in his words.

“You have killed our Family’s Family Head, we will definitely not leave the matter at that. Chu Feng, we will take your dog life!”

“Chu Feng, you son of a bitch, you damned animal, I will dismember your body to ten thousand pieces, I will destroy you!”

“Chu Feng, I will excavate your ancestral tomb and kill all of your descendants! I will end your family line!!!”

As the Family Heads of the Tang and Cao Families had just been killed by Chu Feng, the people from both families were filled with fury. As such, how could they be afraid of Chu Feng? Many among them were pointing their fingers at Chu Feng as they rained curses upon him. Their curses were more and more vulgar and offensive.

“Boom~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved his sword. Immediately, a slash swept through the void and landed on a group of people that were cursing at him.

Immediately, as the blazing slash flew past, blood sprayed in all

directions. The people that were cursing at him earlier were all killed by Chu Feng. Not a single person survived his attack.

“Truly, you are people who refuse the face that is given to you,” After killing those people, Chu Feng snorted coldly. He did not feel the slightest sympathy for them.

Although Chu Feng was not a cold-blooded murderer, he was not a overly-sensitive individual either. He would give people a choice before killing them. However, if his opponents refused to escape, Chu Feng would definitely not spare them.

At this moment, even though there were still a lot of people from the Tang and Cao Families that felt endless hatred for Chu Feng, they were also afraid of Chu Feng after seeing how he had massacred so many of their clansmen.

At this moment, the countless people from the Tang and Cao Families present all turned mute. Very few among them dare to insult Chu Feng again.

In fact, many of them were shivering from fear. Before, they had yet to discover, had yet to realize, that this gentleman-like young man was actually a cold-blooded demon.

His declaration of massacring this city seemed to not be just a farce.

“Chu Feng, did you really think that you would be able to kill everyone present just because you were able to kill Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng?” Elder Yuan Zhen asked with a cold, mocking laugh.

Although Chu Feng had unleashed his overwhelming might earlier, Elder Yuan Zhen still felt Chu Feng to be nothing than a joke.

“I, Chu Feng, am always one who can do what I say. I declared that day that if I, Chu Feng, survived, I would definitely eliminate the Tang and Cao Families,” Chu Feng said.

“Ignorant fool who doesn’t know the immensity of heaven and earth. While you can behave atrociously toward the Cao and Tang Families, our Luyang’s Pavilion will not allow for it,” After Elder Yuan Zhen said those words, he flipped his wrist and revealed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

It was a giant blue ruler. It was a very good quality Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Compared to the Incomplete Ancestral Armaments that the two Family Heads had, it was much better.

There was no need to mention how powerful that weapon was. Once that weapon was unleashed, it immediately affected the weather with strong wind that moved the clouds.

“Roar~~~”

After the enormous blue ruler appeared, Elder Yuan Zhen tossed it toward the sky. A roar was heard, and then an enormous wave surged into the sky. The wave began to spiral in the sky. Soon, it turned into an enormous water beast.

That monster resembled a giant turtle. However, its size was truly enormous; it was as if it could support both the heavens and the earth. As it lay horizontally in the sky, it was like a Divine Beast had descended upon the world.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, that enormous water beast opened its mouth and shot out a stream of water toward Chu Feng. The might of that attack was very powerful.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

Seemingly sensing the provocation of that Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword Chu Feng held in his hand actually began to tremble nonstop.

That was right, it was trembling in excitement to battle. It was impatient to fight against that enormous water beast. It was as if the Magma Emperor Sword was unwilling to allow two tigers to

live on the same mountain.

“Go ahead, Magma Emperor.”

Seeing that, Chu Feng lightly tossed the Magma Emperor Sword. “Boom!” The Magma Emperor appeared.

“You dare to hoot before this Emperor? Today, this Emperor shall teach you a proper lesson, you damned turtle bastard.”

The Magma Emperor was like an unchained fierce tiger. It was extremely ferocious, and managed to actually split apart the ferocious stream of water with its body. Then, it began to attack that enormous water beast.

That enormous water beast was not to be outdone. It opened its mouth and began to bite at the Magma Emperor. At the same time, it used its claws to claw at the Magma Emperor.

At this moment, two huge monsters were fighting in the sky. As water and fire were incompatible with one another, the two huge monsters were fighting to determine a victor and loser.



# Chapter 2183 – All Shall Be Killed

---

The two Incomplete Ancestral Armaments fought busily in the sky.

As for Chu Feng and Elder Yuan Zhen, they started to observe the battle like spectators.

The two of them both had the intention to have their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments fight by themselves to determine which among them was stronger.

After all, the strength of one's weapon would also represent the strength of the weapon's master.

“It's useless, water is the antithesis of fire to begin with. Furthermore, Elder Yuan Zhen's Wave-calling Heaven-piercing Ruler is a very high quality Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Thus, it is impossible for ordinary Incomplete Ancestral Armaments to contend against it.”

“That's right. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen is a trusted aide to Lord Pavilion Master. That Wave-calling Heaven-piercing Ruler was personally bestowed to Elder Yuan Zhen by Lord Pavilion Master. That weapon is definitely not something ordinary Incomplete Ancestral Armaments could compare to.”

“That Chu Feng actually dares to fight against Elder Yuan Zhen? He is most definitely one who does not know the immensity of heaven and earth.”

At this moment, although the other experts from Luyang's Pavilion did not join Elder Yuan Zhen in fighting against Chu Feng, their tongues were wagging. At the same time, they revealed confident gazes.

They were confident in Elder Yuan Zhen. Even though Chu Feng had managed to easily kill the two Family Heads who possessed the same level of cultivation as Elder Yuan Zhen, they knew very well

that even though Elder Yuan Zhen was also a rank seven Half Martial Emperor, his strength was not something that Tang Haichuan and Cao Kuofeng could compare with.

According to what they knew, Elder Yuan Zhen was practically unparalleled among those with the same battle power.

Thus, they felt that even though Chu Feng was powerful, he would absolutely be no match for Elder Yuan Zhen.

Furthermore, Elder Yuan Zhen was an actual rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, whereas Chu Feng was only someone who had increased his battle power to that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor after using his various abilities and adding his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. They felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to be a match for their Elder Yuan Zhen.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at this moment, roars, screams and anguished wailing suddenly sounded from the sky.

When they looked up, not to mention the people from Luyang’s Pavilion, even the people from the Tang and Cao Families were stunned.

In the sky, the battle between the two huge monsters had come to an end. The outcome of the battle had been determined.

Merely, the outcome was something that people found difficult to accept. The reason for that was because the Magma Emperor was currently violently beating up that enormous water beast. Its beating was causing that enormous water beast to howl in grief nonstop. Waves of water were spraying from its body like blood.

“It would appear that your Incomplete Ancestral Armament is the same as you, completely useless,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Humph, a comparison of weapons cannot be regarded as one’s true ability. Since you’re a martial cultivator, if you wish to

compete, you should naturally use your own strength to do so,” Elder Yuan Zhen snorted coldly. Then, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The enormous water beast immediately turned back into that enormous ruler and returned to his hand.

“Heeaahh!!!” Then, he shouted loudly and unleashed a slashing attack at the Magma Emperor.

That attack was no ordinary attack. The power of that attack was much more powerful than that of the Incomplete Ancestral Armament itself. The speed of that slash was so fast that the Magma Emperor was simply unable to dodge it.

“Boom!” A loud explosion. With that slash, that Elder Yuan Zhen actually managed to hack the Magma Emperor back to its original form, back to that enormous fiery sword.

Seeing this scene, the people from Luyang’s Pavilion were immediately overjoyed. However, before they could cheer for their Elder Yuan Zhen, they were shocked to discover that a figure had appeared before that Magma Emperor Sword and grabbed it.

The very next moment, that figure turned into a flash of light and rapidly charged toward Elder Yuan Zhen.

“You’ve finished your slash. It’s my turn now.”

Chu Feng held the Magma Emperor Sword and raised it up high. Then, coldness flashed through his eyes as he unleashed the overhead slash at Elder Yuan Zhen.

“Boom~~~”

A flame strike was unleashed. Like the Tang Family’s Family Head and the Cao Family’s Family Head, that Elder Yuan Zhen was hacked into two.

The only difference was that those two Family Heads were separated at the waist, whereas Elder Yuan Zhen was separated from head to groin.

“How could this be?!?!”

Seeing this scene, the people present were all terrified. None of them expected that Chu Feng would be this powerful. After all, Elder Yuan Zhen was no ordinary rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

“Damn it!” Even though his physical body was destroyed, Elder Yuan Zhen had yet to die. Instead, he had escaped to a distance as a spirit body.

His current appearance was simply exactly the same as that of the Tang and Cao Family’s Family Heads. As for his end, it would naturally also be the same.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng opened his hand. Immediately, a frantic attractive force was shot forth. Then, Elder Yuan Zhen’s spirit body, like the two Family Heads before him, was sucked into Chu Feng’s grasp.

However, his spirit body did not shrink. Instead, he was captured by Chu Feng in his normal state. Thus, Chu Feng’s hand was grabbing him by the neck.

At this moment, Elder Yuan Zhen was struggling violently and attacking Chu Feng’s hand.

However, as his physical body was already destroyed, and his dantian alongside it, even though his cultivation and soul had fused together to form this spirit body, he was much weaker than before.

Thus, not to mention struggling free from Chu Feng, even his attacks at Chu Feng were unable to cause any harm.

“Chu Feng, release me! I am the trusted aide to the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master! If you release me right now, I can let bygones be bygones!”

“However, if you do not release me right now, I’ll definitely make

you suffer the consequences of your actions! I will make you wish you were dead! I'll make you regret all that you've done today!" Although Elder Yuan Zhen was captured by Chu Feng, he did not admit defeat. Instead, he began to fiercely threaten Chu Feng.

In response, Chu Feng lifted his other hand and gave Elder Yuan Zhen's spirit body two resounding slaps.

The two slaps left Elder Yuan Zhen's head completely distorted. Even though he was already a spirit body, he still grimaced in pain from the slaps.

"What makes you think that you're qualified to threaten me now?" Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, if you dare, then go ahead and kill me! You damned son of a bitch! You bastard child of the Heavenly Clans!"

"If you dare, then go on, kill me! I will make you know what the consequences of killing me are!" Elder Yuan Zhen snarled angrily.

"I have already heard those words from Cao Yuxuan."

"As for you, your end will be the same as his. You will also be killed by me, like that Cao Yuxuan."

After Chu Feng finished those words, a surge of boundless martial power was emitted from his palm. "Bang!" Elder Yuan Zhen's spirit body exploded.

After killing Elder Yuan Zhen, Chu Feng retrieved Elder Yuan Zhen and the two Family Heads' Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and Cosmos Sacks. Then, he turned his murderous gaze toward the people present.

"Run away!" Regardless of whether they were people from the Luyang's Pavilion, the Cao Family or the Tang Family, they all immediately turned around and began to escape.

The person that they were relying on had been killed. At this moment, if they did not escape, what awaits them would only be

death. They... did not want to die.

“I have declared that I will massacre this city. Did you all think that I was joking?”

As he looked to the fleeing people, the killing intent in Chu Feng's eyes grew more and more concentrated. Then, he began to swing with the Magma Emperor Sword in nonstop succession. Fiery slashes began to drop from the sky in all directions.

Although the slashes were formed with flames, they were extremely sharp, and simply unstoppable. Not only were the people sliced through by them, many buildings were also sliced apart.

At this moment, as if it was raining, blood was sprinkling down all over the Cao Family. The buildings were all destroyed and collapsing.

Miserable screams resounded nonstop. A tragic sight filled one's line of sight.

However, to Chu Feng, he felt that all these people deserved to die.

Chu Feng had already presented them the opportunity to escape earlier. However, they had not escaped. The reason for that was because they felt that Chu Feng would not be able to win. In other words, they were looking down on Chu Feng.

Yet now, after Elder Yuan Zhen was killed, they actually turned around and started fleeing right away. This meant that they simply did not have any moral backbone or spirit of loyalty at all. Their so-called declarations for revenge were nothing more than empty words.

If there were people that dared to stand and fight Chu Feng without escaping at such a time, Chu Feng might actually have spared those people out of consideration for their loyalty.

Unfortunately, there was no such person in the enormous Cao

Family. This was equally true for all the guards from the Tang Family. Even the grand and powerful Luyang's Pavilion did not have one such individual.

They all say that birds of a feather flock together. In this place ruled by Luyang's Pavilion, what Chu Feng saw was lamentable.

At the very least, the people following Luyang's Pavilion that Chu Feng had encountered thus far were nothing more than scum.

The way Chu Feng saw it, powers like them were no different from demon sects. It would be better to kill them than to leave them alive.

As he thought of it, Chu Feng grew more and more ruthless in his killing. It was as if the people that he was killing were scum rather than people.

He felt as if he was not massacring, but rather helping the world eliminate evil.

Chu Feng had kept his word, and ended up killing a lot of people.

Not a single person from Luyang's Pavilion was spared. The elites from the Tang and Cao Families were also all killed.

However, the old, weak, young and disabled were all kept alive. The way Chu Feng saw it, this battle was simply unrelated to them. Although they were part of the Cao Family, Chu Feng felt that they were no different from the group of weak people left behind in the Tang Family; he felt that they were all innocent.

Chu Feng was not afraid that the people from the Cao and Tang Families that he spared might come to retaliate against him in the future.

If these people were capable of retaliation against him, it would only mean that he was too weak. In that case, he would deserve the retaliation.

## Chapter 2184 – Loss

---

At the time when Chu Feng began his massacre, the innocent people had already escaped the city.

It was only after the rumbling stopped that the people dared to venture back into the city.

After the people saw that Chu Feng dared to kill even the people from Luyang's Pavilion, they were stunned by Chu Feng's boldness to make Luyang's Pavilion his enemy.

However, when the crowd saw that Chu Feng left many alive even after killing all of the Cao Family's elites, and that many of those that he left alive were children and members of the younger generation, the crowd's astonishment surpassed their astonishment toward Chu Feng's massacre.

After all, in the world of martial cultivators, massacres were common occurrences. If one didn't kill another, one would instead be killed by others. To be lenient toward one's enemy would be equivalent to being cruel to oneself.

That was why massacres were such a common occurrence. Killing all of one's enemy's family was nothing extraordinary either.

However, what Chu Feng had done, leaving people alive after a massacre, was something very rarely seen.

After all, if one did not eliminate the roots, it would cause no end to future trouble.

However, it was precisely because Chu Feng decided to spare the roots that he caught the attention of a group of people.

At this moment, those people were secretly following Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng who was walking in the sky suddenly turned around and shouted with a cold voice, "Who is it?!"



After his shout left his mouth, from the seemingly empty sky behind him appeared thirteen silhouettes.

There were men, women, old and young among these people. However, they all possessed a common feature; that was, they all had very ordinary appearances.

They were the sort of people who would be very hard to notice when placed in a crowd of people.

As for their cultivation, they were not very strong either. The weakest among them were Martial Kings, while the strongest were only Half Martial Emperors.

However, it would be impossible for them to tail Chu Feng with their cultivation. This meant that these people had used special methods to conceal their cultivations.

Their actual cultivations were definitely not as simple as what Chu Feng could determine.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had a sensation that the gray-clothed old man who led that group of thirteen was definitely capable of killing him instantly, that he was an absolute peak expert.

“Little friend, please don’t misunderstand. We are from the Red Butterfly Society. Thus, we hold absolutely no malice toward you,” That leading gray-gowned old man said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. His attitude was very amiable.

“Red Butterfly Society?” Chu Feng revealed a confused expression.

“You don’t even know about the Red Butterfly Society?” Seeing that Chu Feng actually did not know about the Red Butterfly Society, a young man from the group revealed a displeased expression.

Although that man appeared to be around Chu Feng’s age, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that he was at least ninety years old.

Although someone at that sort of age would still be considered a member of the younger generation in the world of martial cultivators, he would be a dying old man when considered among ordinary commoners.

As the attitude of that man was nasty, Chu Feng would naturally not respond with amiability. Thus, he asked disdainfully, “Must I know about the Red Butterfly Society?”

“You bastard, you truly do not know the immensity of heaven and earth!!!” Seeing Chu Feng’s attitude of disdain, that young man immediately revealed an ominous glint.

In response, that gray-cloaked old man shouted, “Zhao Xiao, do not be rude!”

“Lord Elder, I...” Being shouted down by that old man, that man by the name of Zhao Xiao was very displeased. However, in the end, he did not try to refute him, and instead moved to the side and spoke no more. It could be seen that he deeply feared that old man.

With a smile on his face, the old man asked Chu Feng, “Little friend, your name is Chu Feng, right? May I address you by your name?” His attitude was still very courteous.

“Of course, a name is meant to be addressed. Senior, how should I address you?” Chu Feng asked courteously.

“This old man is surnamed Liu, and named Chengkun. I am one of the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders.”

“As for the Red Butterfly Society, it could be considered a special power. Our existence is so that we can confront the vicious powers that take advantage of their position to prey on the weak.”

“As for Luyang’s Pavilion, it is our main target. I can tell that you, Chu Feng, seem to have conflict with Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Thus, I have come with the identity of the Red Butterfly Society’s management elder to invite you to join our Red Butterfly

Society so that you can confront Luyang's Pavilion together with us," Elder Liu Chengkung said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's tensed heart was set at ease. Although he did not know what the Red Butterfly Society might be, it remained that they were, at the very minimum, not his enemies.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still shook his head apologetically and said, "Thank you for your kind intentions. However, I do not plan to join any power."

This was a decision that Chu Feng had already made at an earlier time. He did not want to join any power because he did not wish to repeat the past and bring about harm to any power he joined.

He knew that he would definitely make enemies in the future. In fact, he had already made enemies.

Thus, he does not wish for any power he joined to be targeted after he escaped from his enemies.

"Chu Feng, are you truly not planning to consider it? Luyang's Pavilion is very powerful. As for that Yuan Zhen, he is Chu Luyang's trusted aide. Although his cultivation was not strong, he held a very high status that few in Luyang's Pavilion could match. He was definitely not something that Cao Yuxuan could compare to."

"Perhaps you might have still had a way out after killing Cao Yuxuan. However, after killing Yuan Zhen, Chu Luyang will definitely come for revenge even if he must dig three feet underground to find you."

"In this sort of situation, it will be truly too dangerous for you to take on Luyang's Pavilion alone."

"However, if you are to join us, we can guarantee your safety," Elder Liu Chengkun said.

"Elder Liu, I am truly sorry," Chu Feng shook his head. He was

able to tell that Elder Liu Chengkun held good intentions. However, Chu Feng was determined. Thus, he would not accept the invitation.

“You are truly one who cannot tell good from bad!” In response, that man by the name of Zhao Xiu pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Zhao Xiao, shut up!” In response, Elder Liu Chengkun once again shouted at Zhao Xiao.

Furthermore, he fiercely stared at Zhao Xiao. Then, he turned back around and said to Chu Feng, “People have their own ambitions. Since little friend Chu Feng does not wish to join our Red Butterfly Society, I will also not force you to do so.”

“Merely, I hope that little friend Chu Feng will not mention the fact that we have come to find you today.”

“Rest assured, I understand these sorts of things. Merely, Elder Liu, you really should properly discipline your subordinate,” As Chu Feng spoke, he looked to Zhao Xiao. Then, he added, “His manners are truly lacking. You must know that not everyone will not bicker with him like the way I am.”

“You!!!” Zhao Xiao wanted to say something. However, after sensing Elder Liu Chengkun’s gaze, he swallowed the words that he wanted to say. That said, he was so furious that his complexion turned deep red and an unconcealed hostile coldness filled his eyes.

“Haha...” Faced with Zhao Xiao’s fierce and malicious gaze, Chu Feng laughed disdainfully. If Elder Liu Chengkun wanted to do something to him, Chu Feng would definitely be scared. After all, there was an enormous difference in strength between them.

However, someone like Zhao Xiao was nothing more than a minor character. Chu Feng simply did not place him in his eyes at all.

“Elder Liu, farewell. I hope that you all will stop following me,”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and left.

“Little friend, take care,” This time around, Elder Liu Chengkun did not continue to follow Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng left, that Zhao Xiao said, “Lord Elder, that man by the name of Chu Feng simply did not place us in his eyes. We must teach someone like him a lesson. How could we let him leave like that?”

“Firstly, it is us who decided to invite him. As such, he had the right to refuse us.”

“Secondly, our Red Butterfly Society is very low-profile to begin with. Furthermore, that Chu Feng is obviously not someone from this region. Thus, it is normal for him to not know about us.”

“Lastly, we are not Luyang’s Pavilion. The objective of our Red Butterfly Society is to get rid of evil for the people of the world, and attack those vicious powers that bully the weak.”

“If we are to attack Chu Feng just because he refused to join us, how will we be different from Luyang’s Pavilion?” Elder Liu Chengkun asked.

“...” Hearing that question, Zhao Xiao became speechless. Thus, in the end, he could only nod in an ashamed manner. “Elder, I was foolish.”

Even though he appeared to have admitted to his wrong, it could be seen from the expression in his eyes that Zhao Xiao did not feel that he was wrong.

As for Elder Liu Chengkun, he was looking at the direction that Chu Feng had left in the entire time. It was only after a long time passed that he shook his head and said, “That child is most definitely not an ordinary person. In the future, his achievements will be inestimable. It is the loss of our Red Butterfly Society to fail in inviting that child into our Red Butterfly Society.”

# Chapter 2185 – Treasure

---

“Loss?” Hearing that word, the expressions of the people present changed.

“Lord Elder, is that Chu Feng really that powerful?” A yellow-haired man asked in a very astonished manner.

“There’s no mistake. That child will continue to mature. His future accomplishments will be immeasurable,” Elder Liu Chengkun said.

Hearing those words, the rest of the crowd all revealed astonished expressions. The reason for that was because Elder Liu Chengkun rarely praised someone in such a manner. However, since he praised Chu Feng like that, it meant that Chu Feng was definitely extraordinary.

“Lord Elder, are you not overestimating that Chu Feng? Why is it that I am unable to see anything exceptional about him?” Zhao Xiao said with an unreconciled expression.

Elder Liu Chengkun smiled lightly. Then, he said to Zhao Xiao, “Without mentioning cultivation, in terms of one’s temperament, you are much inferior to that Chu Feng.” After he finished saying those words, Elder Liu Chengkun waved his sleeve, entered the void and left.

Seeing that, the expressions of the crowd all turned sluggish. They were all able to tell that their Lord Elder was truly angered.

“Zhao Xiao, although we were unable to personally kill Yuan Zhen and the others because of that Chu Feng, it remains that Yuan Zhen and the others have died. Thus, it could be said that we have accomplished our mission.”

“I will give you a month of vacation. Go and properly rest yourself,” The yellow-haired man said to Zhao Xiao.

After he finished saying those words, he also entered into the

void. Following after him, the others also began to enter the void and leave.

After everyone left, Zhao Xiao revealed an incomparably furious expression. He looked to the direction that Chu Feng had left in and started to gnash his teeth with a murderous gaze.

.....

Cao Family. At this moment, a large group of people had arrived.

They were not only limited to the experts from Luyang's Pavilion, they were actually being led by the Pavilion Master of Luyang's Pavilion, Chu Luyang.

Chu Luyang was wearing golden armor with a black cloak. He appeared extremely domineering and gave off extraordinary airs.

However, Chu Luyang had an extremely ugly expression on his face.

Rolling black clouds and flickering lightning filled the dark sky. It was a frightening doomsday-like sight. It was caused by the influence of Chu Luyang's mood.

It turned out that Chu Luyang had just so happened to pass by this area today. He recalled that Yuan Zhen was here, and decided to come to this city to have a look while also demonstrating his might to the Tang Family, the Cao Family and the others present.

Unfortunately, he had come a step too late. He had arrived right after Chu Feng massacred the people of the Cao Family.

As for Chu Feng, he had just left not long ago. It was precisely because of that moment of difference that caused Chu Luyang to feel enormous fury.

One must know that Yuan Zhen was able to become his trusted aide even though his cultivation was weak was because the two of them possessed a special relationship.

Thus, Chu Luyang possessed special sentiments for Yuan Zhen.

Else, it would have been impossible for Yuan Zhen to have such a high status in Luyang's Pavilion.

Yet, someone as important as Yuan Zhen was actually killed by Chu Feng. How could Chu Luyang possibly accept this?

“Lord Pavilion Master, our Family Head has died miserably. Please, you must uphold justice for us.”

The people from the Cao Family that survived the massacre were all kneeling all around Chu Luyang and lamenting nonstop.

Suddenly, Chu Luyang shouted, “All of you, shut up!”

“Wuaah~~~”

The people from the Cao Family that surrounded him were all knocked flying. Those that suffered light injuries ended up vomiting blood, whereas those that suffered heavy injuries died on the spot.

“A bunch of useless trash. If it wasn't for you all, how could Elder Yuan Zhen have died?”

After Chu Luyang said those words, he waved his sleeve. Immediately, his oppressive might surged forth and engulfed his surroundings. “Bang, bang,” sounds of firecracker-like explosions began to be heard in succession.

When the explosions ended, all of the people from the Cao Family, regardless of age or gender, were killed.

It turned out that those explosions were the sounds of people from the Cao Family exploding.

Vicious. Compared to Chu Feng, Chu Luyang was truly ruthless. He was someone who viewed human lives like grass, someone who would kill whoever he wanted to kill. Even if they were his subordinates, he would still show no mercy.

However, when faced with this scene, the experts from Luyang's Pavilion did not show any change in expression.



They had already seen too many of such scenes. It was already a common occurrence to them.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, several figures flew over from all directions. They all landed onto the ground and then kneeled around Chu Luyang.

All of those people were experts from Luyang’s Pavilion. Among them, the person with the lowest cultivation was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

“Lord Pavilion Master, we are incompetent; we were unable to find traces of that Chu Feng,” An old man that lead the group of experts said while trembling with fear.

“Trash!!!” Hearing those words, Chu Luyang was immediately furious. His gaze shone, and his oppressive might was unleashed once again. Before his oppressive might, the Half Martial Ancestor-level experts were blown away like leaves. When they crashed into the ground, they were all seriously injured.

“Lord Pavilion Master, the dead cannot be revived, please restrain your grief and accept what has happened,” A fair-skinned man sporting a head of long, blazing hair stepped forward and tried to console Chu Luyang.

“Hong Xi, do you know why I am this furious?” Chu Luyang turned to that man called Hong Xi.

“Elder Yuan Zhen was your competent subordinate. For him to be killed, you should naturally be furious,” Hong Xi said.

“That is only part of the reason, but not all. In addition to that, it is because everyone in this world knows that I regard Yuan Zhen highly. Yet, that Chu Feng still killed him. He simply does not place me in his eyes at all.”

“I am not furious only because Yuan Zhen was killed. More than that, it was because someone dared to not place me in their eyes in my territory,” Chu Luyang spoke in an extremely furious manner.

“That man indeed deserves to die. If he is to end up in my hands, I will definitely make him wish he was dead,” Hong Xi said.

“Hong Xi, I will hand that Chu Feng to you. Even if you have to dig three feet underground, you must still find him.”

“Remember, I want him alive. I will make him personally kneel before me. Then, I shall personally pull out the tendons of his hands and feet before crippling his cultivation. I will torture him and make him wish he was dead,” Chu Luyang spoke with fuming rage between gritted teeth.

“Lord Pavilion Master, please rest assured, this Hong Xi will definitely capture that Chu Feng alive for you,” That man by the name of Hong Xi spoke very confidently.

“You have never disappointed me,” Chu Luyang nodded. He knew Hong Xi’s abilities very well.

“Oh, that’s right, eliminate that Tang Family for me too. After all, Yuan Zhen’s death is also related to them,” After Chu Luyang finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he soared into the sky.

Following closely behind him, the rest of the experts from Luyang’s Pavilion all soared into the sky in succession. In the rolling black clouds were many enormous palace-like war chariots of Luyang’s Pavilion.

Leading his peak experts, Chu Luyang left. However, that man by the name of Hong Xi and his subordinates remained in the Cao Family. They were still kneeling on the ground.

It was only after Chu Luyang left far away with his subordinates that they stood back up.

“Milord, what should we do?” An old man walked forward to ask Hong Xi for instructions. Even though he was a rank eight Half Martial Ancestor, he was extremely respectful toward Hong Xi.

“Go to the Tang Family first. There are definitely clues there,”

Hong Xi said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Once he said those words, wind immediately appeared under his feet. Then, he disappeared. Following closely behind him, those subordinates of his also disappeared.

.....

As for Chu Feng, he did not know about what had happened in the Cao Family.

After he left the Cao Family, he returned to the Darknight Ghost Forest.

He had not forgotten about Wang Qiang. He was determined to avenge him.

As he did not know the demonic woman's whereabouts, Chu Feng felt that guarding and waiting in the Darknight Ghost Forest for her appearance would be his best option.

Unfortunately, after Chu Feng had painstakingly waited for several days, there was still no fruit.

At the same time, Chu Feng did not make any headway in terms of his martial cultivation either.

Even though he was racking his brains to comprehend the way of martial cultivation day and night, he was unable to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng felt increasingly vexed, and even a bit at a loss.

At this moment, the sky had already darkened. He was standing on the peak of a black tree as he looked to the night sky.

As he looked to the many stars in the sky and the beautiful scenery, Chu Feng revealed an increasingly worried expression.

“Eggy, if you were here, then perhaps I would not be this

distressed,” Chu Feng took a deep sigh. His longing for Eggy was growing more and more.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed. Standing high up, he looked downward and discovered a trace of strange motion.

There was no sign of that motion. However, Chu Feng was able to sense it with his intuition as a world spiritist. Sensing that something was amiss, Chu Feng unleashed his Heaven’s Eyes.

Once he unleashed his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s expression revealed deep shock.

A faintly visible abnormal sign was forming in the direction in which Chu Feng had noticed the motion. That place was most definitely extraordinary. Chu Feng felt that even if there wasn’t a Natural Oddity there, there would definitely be some sort of treasure present.

# Chapter 2186 – Immortal-cloak World Spiritist

---

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng’s body shifted as he rapidly rushed toward that place. After he descended to the ground, he discovered that there didn’t seem to be anything abnormal on the surface.

However, Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes were not deceiving him. Thus, Chu Feng used special methods to enter deep underground.

After passing through layers of soil, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated, he discovered an entrance to a tunnel with his Heaven’s Eyes deep underground.

Chu Feng passed through the entrance, and discovered that even though the tunnel was very well-hidden, it was also very crudely made. It was as if it was a hole dug by an enormous mole, without any sign of being polished.

Although it was not polished, this place was sealed off by a layer of powerful and invisible spirit power. The only way to enter would be through the entrance that Chu Feng had discovered; it was impossible to enter this place by digging directly underground.

In short, this place was most definitely not formed by nature. Else, this place would not have been sealed off by such a powerful spirit formation. Furthermore, even though the spirit power in this place was invisible, Chu Feng was able to sense that it was very strong and ancient.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to see the spirit power, Chu Feng knew that the spirit formation here was most definitely not created by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Instead, this should be the work of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“This is strange.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed.

As that place was created by someone, there should naturally be a lot of hurdles. However, Chu Feng had been completely unhindered in his journey so far.

The reason for that was not because there were no hurdles set up in this place. Instead, Chu Feng could tell that there used to be a lot of hurdles here. Merely, they were all broken through by someone.

Furthermore, the hurdles were only just recently broken through.

“Someone has come here before me?”

“Who could it be?”

Chu Feng revealed a doubting gaze. Even though the hurdles were broken through, he became increasingly cautious.

He felt that it was very possible that someone had been to this place before. It might even be possible for that person to still be in here.

However, faced with the enticement of treasures, Chu Feng was unwilling to let such an opportunity slip by him so easily. Thus, he decided to gamble, and chose to continue onward.

Finally, Chu Feng reached the end of the tunnel. His surroundings were no longer the narrow tunnel. Instead, it was a vast space.

There was a coffin in the center of that place. Surrounding the coffin were all sorts of treasures. Not only were there a lot of cultivation resources, there were also a lot of treasures useful for world spiritists. All of those things were useful for Chu Feng.

Merely, surrounding the coffin and the treasures was an ancient grand formation.

That spirit formation was extremely dangerous. The way Chu Feng saw it, it was simply an impregnable fort. Not to mention

undoing that formation, Chu Feng believed that he would be instantly killed by that spirit formation should he approach it.

However... to Chu Feng's greatest surprise there was a person before that grand formation. That person was the old monk Chu Feng had met before.

At that moment, that old monk had also set up a spirit formation. He was using his spirit formation to undo the ancient spirit formation surrounding the coffin and treasures.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

As Chu Feng looked at the spirit power composed of gold and red colors, that spirit power that seemed like the multi-colored twilight of a sunrise or sunset, he was able to determine that the old monk was definitely an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

The reason for that was because the spirit power that he was emitting was something that Chu Feng had never seen before. Furthermore, merely by sensing it, Chu Feng was able to tell that that spirit power was many times more powerful than his own Dragon Mark Royal-cloak world spirit power. In fact, the two spirit powers were simply incomparable to one another.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that it was most definitely Immortal-cloak world spirit power.

“That veined pattern, it's Dragon Mark. He's... actually a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Upon closer inspection, Chu Feng was even more shocked. Dragon Marks filled that sunset-colored world spirit power.

This meant that the old monk was not only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he was also a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt something that he rarely felt – lingering fear. After all, when he had first encountered the old monk, Chu Feng had attacked him. However, looking at it now, he

was merely trying to strike a stone with an egg.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally understood the words spoken by the old monk that day. That day, he truly had been foolish.

“Scram!”

Right at that moment, a boundless killing intent appeared. Following that, a hundred enormous figures appeared before Chu Feng.

Those... were actually a hundred world spirits from the Demon Spirit World. Merely, these hundred world spirits from the Demon Spirit World were much more powerful than all the world spirits Chu Feng had seen before.

They were all wearing armor, and appeared very ferocious. Any one of them would possess sufficient power to kill Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was unable to sense the cultivations of those world spirits. However, he was able to guess that those hundred world spirits were all Martial Ancestor-level experts at the very minimum. In fact, he felt that they might even be existences that surpassed Martial Ancestors.

The reason for that was because the oppressive might and killing intent they emitted made Chu Feng feel as if he had stepped into the gates of hell.

With a single thought, Chu Feng would be killed instantly.

Standing before Chu Feng, they simply did not appear like ordinary world spirits. Instead, they appeared more like a hundred Grim Reapers.

“Do not be rude.”

Suddenly, that old monk’s voice sounded. He did not look in Chu Feng’s direction, and instead continued to wholeheartedly set up his spirit formation. However... it was evident that he had noticed Chu Feng’s arrival.



“Buzz~~~”

After the old monk said those words, the hundred Demon Spirit World's world spirits all disappeared.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the hundred Demon Spirit World's world spirits had not actually disappeared. Instead, they had just concealed themselves, and were still in the surroundings.

“Senior, this is...” Chu Feng wanted to ask.

“Hush, speak later. I'm about to succeed,” As the old monk said those words, he still did not look at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng understood the old monk's intentions. Thus, he moved to the side and spoke no further. Instead, he began to carefully observe the old monk's spirit formation.

The more Chu Feng observed, the more afraid he became. The spirit formation this old man was setting up was simply too exceptional. It was a spirit formation that had surpassed Chu Feng's understanding of spirit formations.

That was a grand spirit formation that Chu Feng had never seen before. As he observed the spirit formation, Chu Feng grew obsessed with it.

To world spiritists, a powerful spirit formation was akin to a work of art.

Not only was it capable of fascinating others, one would also be able to obtain many benefits should one possess a good sense of comprehension.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt an unprecedented sensation from the spirit formation. Chu Feng faintly felt that a new gate was appearing in his world spirit space.

That was a gate that could connect to Immortal level world spirit power. Merely, even though the gate had appeared, it had yet to open.

This was the same as how Chu Feng had gathered sufficient Natural Energy to break through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor, but was unable to do so due to the bottleneck blocking his path.

However, Chu Feng was still overjoyed. Even though he was unable to open the gate leading to Immortal level spirit power, he was, at the very least, able to sense that gate. Before... he was unable to even sense it.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. Surging spirit power began to engulf the surroundings like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses.

Suddenly the impregnable tunnel started to shake nonstop. Even Chu Feng was forced back repeatedly by that violently surging spirit power.

“Success? That ancient spirit formation was actually broken through?”

Even though Chu Feng was blown away by the surging spirit power, he still revealed a joyous expression. The reason for that was because he was able to sense that the ancient grand spirit formation that sealed the mysterious coffin and treasures had been broken.

The mysterious old monk had broken through the ancient spirit formation.

# Chapter 2187 – Demonic Woman's Origin

---

After the ancient spirit formation was broken through, the old monk stood up.

After he stood up, a total of a hundred world spirit gates appeared beside him.

The next moment, the hundred Demon Spirit World's world spirits that had concealed themselves all started to appear. They began to enter the world spirit gates in succession.

After he finished doing those things the old monk walked toward the coffin. After the coffin was opened, Chu Feng discovered that a woman was lying in the coffin.

This woman was very pleasant and sweet-looking. She was wearing a red muslin skirt, and appeared very natural, unrestrained and gave off a refined air. She was a rarely-seen beauty. However, she was already dead.

Even though her corpse was undamaged, Chu Feng was able to tell that she had been dead for a very long time, completely dead.

However, compared to the woman, Chu Feng was more surprised by the pearl she held between her hands.

That pearl was very large and could only be carried with two hands. That was also the reason why Chu Feng was able to notice it immediately.

The outside of the pearl was transparent. However, inside the pearl was a vortex.

That vortex was slowly revolving. It was somewhat strange. Furthermore, it was emitting an incomprehensible aura.

Although Chu Feng was unable to determine the usage of that pearl, Chu Feng was able to ascertain that the pearl was a treasure, a treasure more precious than all of the treasures outside of the

coffin.

“Do you wish to know who she is?” The old monk asked Chu Feng.

“Who is she?” Chu Feng asked.

“She is the demonic woman that you want to kill,” The old monk said.

“How could that be? She has clearly died a long time ago,” Chu Feng said while pointing to the corpse in the coffin.

“Indeed, she has died a long time ago. However, that does not mean that she is not the demonic woman that you want to kill,” The old monk said with a smile.

“Senior, exactly what is going on?” Chu Feng asked.

“You wish to know?” The old monk asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“This demonic woman is called Zhao Hong. She is the daughter of the Reincarnation Sect’s Sect Master, the ruler of the Reincarnation Upper Realm. She was a rarely seen martial cultivation genius.”

“When she was only twenty years old, she replaced her father, who was over ten thousand years old, and became the new Sect Master of the Reincarnation Sect. At the same time, she also became the number one expert in the Reincarnation Sect.”

Upon hearing that, Chu Feng felt shock. The Reincarnation Sect was actually the ruler of a world, and that Zhao Hong was actually the number one expert in the Reincarnation Sect. In other words, this meant that this woman by the name of Zhao Hong was an Upper Realm’s strongest expert.

She was someone who became the strongest expert of an Upper Realm at the mere age of twenty. Oh how powerful of an existence she must be.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized what it meant to be a genius. When compared to an actual genius, he was simply not worth anything.

“As Zhao Hong possessed outstanding talent, she would naturally also be proud and arrogant. As such, not a single man in the Reincarnation Upper Realm was able to catch her eyes.”

“However, by coincidence, she arrived at the All Heaven Upper Realm, and got to know the strongest genius of the All Heaven Upper Realm, Liu Shou.”

“Zhao Hong and Liu Shou were the ideal couple. Furthermore, they fell in love at first sight. Soon, the two of them entered the river of love.”

“However, Zhao Hong was taught by her father since she was a child to be wary of outsiders. As such, she was not someone who would trust easily.”

“Even though she knew that her love for Liu Shou was real, she was still on guard against him the entire time.”

“It was only on the day of their marriage that Zhao Hong completely lowered her guard against Liu Shou. However, she never would’ve thought that she would end up being poisoned by Liu Shou on the night of their marriage.”

“It turned out that Liu Shou possessed exuberant ambitions, and was never truly in love with Zhao Hong. He had approached her all for the sake of obtaining the Reincarnation Pearl.”

“Zhao Hong was in enormous grief after discovering the truth. She felt enormous hatred toward Liu Shou’s deceit. Thus, she refused to tell Liu Shou the whereabouts of the Reincarnation Pearl.”

“With that being the case, that Liu Shou decided to use all means to obtain his goal. He began to cruelly torture Zhao Hong’s family members in front of her, leaving them in miserable states, yet not

allowing them to die.”

“Finally, enraged by the lack of results, Liu Shou decided to kill all of Zhao Hong’s family members right in front of her. His method were so very cruel that one’s hackles would rise just by thinking about it.”

“At the moment when Zhao Hong’s father was killed, Zhao Hong’s bloodline suddenly exploded. She managed to overcome the poison that had erased her strength, and destroyed the spirit formation that had sealed her cultivation.”

“However, that Liu Shou was very powerful. Even though Zhao Hong had managed to overcome the poison, she was still only equally matched with Liu Shou. In the end, it concluded with both fighters injured and no victor to be seen.”

“Zhao Hong knew that this tragedy was caused by the Reincarnation Sect’s Sect Protection Treasure, the Reincarnation Pearl.”

“She did not wish for the Reincarnation Pearl to cause more harm. Thus, while she was still barely alive, she disappeared with the Reincarnation Pearl and concealed herself in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“In the end, Zhao Hong ended up dying. She died here. However, the power of the Reincarnation Pearl caused her to rise from the dead.”

“Zhao Hong was reborn with grievances. After she was reborn, she lost all her memories, and her appearance became extremely ugly, resembling that of a monster.”

“It is because the grievances of her past life are too strong that she began to detest men like she does now. She began to take joy in killing men, and started to eat their flesh.”

“Strangely, as Zhao Hong ate more men, her cultivation began to subsequently increase. Even though it was only her first

resurrection, she had already reached a state where no one could stop her.”

“Fortunately, an expert from an Upper Realm passed by this region by coincidence and beheaded her.”

“However, after killing the demonic woman, that expert was also seriously injured, and ended up dying. However, before dying, he used a special formation to turn his body and remaining power into a spring with water specializing in curbing evildoers.”

“As for that... it became the Radiance Immortal Mountain’s Demon Subduing Spring Water.”

“However, the demonic woman possessed the Reincarnation Pearl on her actual body. Thus, after her death, she was reincarnated. It could be said that she possessed an undying body.”

“Although she did end up losing all of her power with each resurrection, and had to cultivate all over again, her talent remained the same. This made it so that her cultivation speed was extremely fast.”

“Furthermore, even though she forgot everything about her previous life with each resurrection, she still possessed the same sort of grievance. Thus, after she gained a certain amount of cultivation, she would start to instinctively hunt men, and repeat what she did in her previous lives,” The old monk explained.

“In that case, that means that the demonic woman cannot be killed?” Chu Feng asked.

“She can. As long as I take away that pearl, she will not be able to resurrect after she is killed again,” As the old monk spoke, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. The Resurrection Pearl entered her hand.

“Crash~~~”

After the Resurrection Pearl entered his hand, the demonic woman’s undamaged body instantly turned into dust. Not even her

bones remained.

“With this, she will no longer be able to resurrect,” said the old monk.

Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “That demonic woman could be considered to be a pitiful individual. However, she is also abominable. If you plan to kill her, I will not stop you. Merely, your current strength is greatly insufficient.”

“Thank you, senior, for your advice,” Chu Feng clasped his fist and expressed his thanks.

“You do not have to thank me for this. For the two of us to be able to meet twice here, it can be considered fate,” The old monk said with a light smile.

“Senior, since you are a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, might you be willing to help this junior with one thing?”

“Although this junior is unable to repay senior now, as long as you are willing to help me, this junior will definitely repay you in the future,” Suddenly, Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” The old monk asked.

“I possess a special world spirit in my body that has been sealed with a special formation. I have attempted to help her undo that spirit formation. However, she has entered deep sleep ever since.”

“I do not know when she will be able to wake up. However, I am very worried, since she has been asleep for so long. If possible, I hope that senior could help me attempt to remove that seal, help me wake her up,” Chu Feng said.

“That is an insignificant matter. I am able to help you. Furthermore, I do not need you to repay me. I merely want you to answer a question of mine. However, you must answer truthfully,” The old monk said.

“Senior, please ask away,” Chu Feng said.



“You are most definitely not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Exactly which Heavenly Clan are you from?” The old monk asked.

“Senior, if I were to say that I do not belong to any Heavenly Clan, would you believe me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I would,” The old monk smiled lightly. Then, he said, “In that case, let me rephrase my question; which Heavenly Clan does your Heavenly Bloodline belong to?”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng did not conceal the matter. After all, he had a request for the old monk. Thus, since the old monk had only asked such a simple question, he would definitely answer honestly.

“So it was the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Hearing Chu Feng’s answer, the old monk nodded. Then, he said, “It is the loss of the Chu Heavenly Clan to not treat you well.”

This old monk was very intelligent. Merely from Chu Feng’s answers, the old monk had determined that even though Chu Feng had come from the the Chu Heavenly Clan, he should be someone abandoned by them.

## Chapter 2188 – Bad News

---

“May I ask another question? If I can, I am willing to give all those to you,” The old monk pointed to the treasures surrounding the coffin.

Chu Feng started to think about it. In the end, he nodded and said, “Senior, please ask away.”

He was able to sense that the old monk does not seem like a bad person. At the very least, he did not possess any malicious intentions toward him. If he did, he could simply force Chu Feng to tell him what he wanted to know. There was no need for him to conduct an exchange with Chu Feng.

Furthermore, there were a lot of treasures that Chu Feng did not possess among the treasures there. Those were treasures that would be useful for Chu Feng to set up spirit formations, refine weapons and concoct medicinal pellets with.

Most importantly, there were a lot of cultivation resources among the treasures. Should Chu Feng refine all of the cultivation resources, he would definitely benefit from them. It might even be possible for him to gather sufficient Natural Energies in his dantian to break through to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Is your father called Chu Xuanyuan?” The old monk asked.

“Senior, how did you manage to guess that?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. After all, he had never mentioned this matter to anyone.

“Haha, there are a lot of people that knew of Chu Xuanyuan. However, only a few people knew that Chu Xuanyuan is someone that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Coincidentally, I happen to be one of those few people.”

“As for you... you are someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, and also someone who trains in the Divine Punishment Mysterious

Technique. Thus, the greatest possibility would be that you're Chu Xuanyuan's son."

"After all, it is impossible for others in the Chu Heavenly Clan to be qualified to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," The old monk said with a light laugh.

"Senior, could it be that you are my father's friend?" Chu Feng asked.

"Friend?" Hearing that question, the old monk actually revealed a wry smile. He said, "I do wish to become your father's friend. Unfortunately... this old monk is not qualified."

Chu Feng was startled to hear those words. He was able to tell that the old monk was not joking around.

Yet, an expert as powerful as him was actually not qualified to become his father's friend? Then, how powerful must his father be?

"Forget about it, let me have a look at that world spirit," The old monk said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and immediately brought out the sleeping Eggy.

"It's actually an Asura World Spirit?" After seeing Eggy, the old monk revealed a surprised expression. Then, he smiled and said to Chu Feng, "You are truly extraordinary. Not only do you train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, you're also an Asura World Spiritist."

"Merely in terms of world spirit techniques, you will be stronger than your father. However, it will likely be extremely difficult for you to reach your father's heights. The path of martial cultivation is not something where one's accomplishments will be determined by mere talent alone."

"Haha, I've spoken too much," The old monk laughed. Then, he waved his sleeve and Immortal-level spirit power flowed from

him. His Immortal-level spirit power covered Eggy.

“This?!” However, after the old monk’s world spirit power came into contact with Eggy, his expression changed.

Chu Feng noticed an awkward expression in the old monk’s deep gaze.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the old monk waved his sleeve repeatedly. He actually withdrew his spirit power that covered Eggy. After his spirit power returned to his body, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “This old monk owes you a favor. I can only help you in the future.”

“Senior, what do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am powerless against the spirit formation that has sealed your world spirit,” The old monk said.

Actually, Chu Feng had anticipated that the old monk might be unable to remove the spirit formation sealing Eggy the moment he saw the old monk’s reaction. Merely, when it was determined that that was truly the case, Chu Feng still felt very disappointed.

However, even though that was the case, Chu Feng still smiled as he said to the old monk, “Senior, you are being too courteous. I cannot thank you enough for being willing to help me.”

The old monk sighed in embarrassment. Then, with a shift of his body, he disappeared.

“Senior?!”

“Senior?!” Chu Feng called out for the old monk repeatedly. However, there was no response. From that, Chu Feng knew that the old monk must’ve left.

Merely, Chu Feng had never expected that old monk to leave so hurriedly, so hurriedly that he did not even bother to bid farewell.

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked at Eggy. At that moment, he seemed to have realized something.

He determined that the old monk must've left so hurriedly because he was embarrassed that he had agreed to remove the spirit formation sealing Eggy, only to discover that he would not be able to do so after attempting to do so.

“Mother, it would seem that your world spirit techniques must be above those of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” Thinking of that, Chu Feng revealed a smile on his face. It was a smile of pride.

Even though that monk was extremely mysterious, so much so that Chu Feng didn't even know his name, Chu Feng had a faint sensation after chatting with the old monk that his father and mother were both extremely powerful.

throughout the world, how could there be people that did not want their parents to be powerful? Chu Feng was naturally no exception.

After that, Chu Feng returned Eggy to his world spirit space. Then, he went and gathered all of the treasures around the coffin.

Of course, the cultivation resources were an exception. Chu Feng did not take them into his Cosmos Sack. Instead, he directly refined them.

To Chu Feng's surprise, after he completely refined those cultivation resources, the amount of Natural Energies in his dantian were so abundant that he could reach rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng was overjoyed such an outcome. After all, back when he was in the Holy Land of Martialism, it was very difficult for him to even gather enough Natural Energies to reach a single breakthrough in cultivation.

He had only been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a short time. Yet, he had already gathered so much Natural Energy. This was truly something that he had never expected.

At the same time, it also allowed Chu Feng to realize the benefits

of the Outer World.

Chu Feng continued to comprehend the way of martial cultivation over the following days. He wanted to reach rank three Half Martial Ancestor as quickly as possible.

After all, that old monk had clearly indicated to him that his current strength was insufficient to be a match against that demonic woman. Thus, if he wanted to avenge Wang Qiang, he had to increase his cultivation.

In the blink of an eye, several more days passed. Chu Feng was still unable to break through his bottleneck. This caused Chu Feng to realize the difficulty in martial cultivation that others had to go through.

After all, before he trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, Chu Feng was able to break through all bottlenecks and reach a breakthrough in cultivation should he simply possess sufficient cultivation resources.

“Ji, ji, ji~~~”

Suddenly, bird cries were heard. Furthermore, those cries were very ear-piercing.

Hearing the sound, Chu Feng immediately stood up and revealed a cautious expression.

After all, he was still in the Darknight Ghost Forest. The Darknight Ghost Forest was a place with no living creatures. As such, how could there suddenly be bird cries?

Confused, Chu Feng looked toward the direction from where the cries sounded. Upon looking, Chu Feng discovered that it was a special sort of bird. Although its cry sounded like that of a little bird, its voice was very loud and clear. Even though it was very far away, Chu Feng was able to hear it clearly. Furthermore, it was the size of a northern goshawk.

Most importantly, there was a spirit formation on the bird.

Dandelion-like bodies of light were spreading from that spirit formation nonstop.

As that bird flew past rapidly, it spread those bodies of light all over the places it passed.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that those bodies of light contained a special sort of message.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng extended his hand and unleashed a suction force.

One such body of light that was over ten thousand meters away was sucked to Chu Feng’s fingertips. Then, it merged into Chu Feng’s fingertips.

“Damn it!” After Chu Feng received the message, he immediately revealed a furious expression.

The reason for that was because that message was related to him.

To put it simply, the message was meant to be passed to Chu Feng.

As for the reason why Chu Feng was furious, it was because it was not good news for him.

# Chapter 2189 – To Proceed While Braving Death

---

The message was being spread by a person from Luyang's Pavilion by the name of Hong Xi.

It was unknown what sort of method that person had used. However, he had managed to capture Tang Ying, as well as that servant girl by the name of A'cai.

He wanted Chu Feng to show up at the Tang Family within ten days so that they could capture him. Should Chu Feng not appear in ten days' time, he would skin Tang Ying alive.

Furthermore, judging by the time, the time limit was about to arrive. If Chu Feng did not hurry to the Tang Family, Tang Ying's life would likely be lost.

However, Luyang's Pavilion had most definitely come prepared this time around. With Chu Feng's current strength, he would definitely be courting death should he go there.

“How did this happen? Could it be that servant girl by the name of A'cai led them to Tang Ying?”

“Truly foolish! Didn't I tell her to run far away? Why would she still be captured?”

Chu Feng was uncertain as to what sort of method Hong Xi had used to capture Tang Ying.

However, Chu Feng felt that the person called Hong Xi was most likely not lying.

The reason for that was because he was able to tell that there was more than a single bird spreading the message. Likely, there were a lot of them.

After that news spread, there would definitely be a lot of people that would proceed toward the Tang Family to watch the show. If



Tang Ying was not present then, that Hong Xi would have humiliated himself and the people of Luyang's Pavilion would be looked down upon by others.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's body shifted and he began to fly toward the Tang Family.

Even though he knew that proceeding to the Tang Family would be disastrous...

Even though Chu Feng did not have a deep relationship with Tang Ying, and they were merely acquaintances...

Even though Chu Feng had already saved Tang Ying three times and had been meticulously virtuous and dutiful toward her...

Even though Chu Feng had only provoked Luyang's Pavilion because he had helped that Tang Ying...

For some unknown reason, Chu Feng was actually unable to contain his desire to save Tang Ying.

Thus, even though he knew that it was a trap, Chu Feng was still determined to go there.

The reason for that was because he was truly unable to abandon Tang Ying, he was unable to let her be killed because of him.

The reason for that was because there was something that flowed in Chu Feng's body that was haunting him.

As for that something, it was called the ‘unyielding and upright nature of a man’!!!”

.....

Chu Feng's guess was correct. Tang Ying had indeed been captured. Furthermore, other than Tang Ying and that servant girl by the name of A'cai, the rest of the Tang Family had all been massacred by the people from Luyang's Pavilion.

As for how Tang Ying was captured, it was more or less what Chu Feng had already deduced. Hong Xi had used the servant girl by the name of A'cai to find Tang Ying.

Currently, that servant girl and Tang Ying were both suspended atop a thousand meter-tall iron pole and tied with thorny vines.

The sharp thorns had already pierced through the two women's tender flesh and blood was flowing from their skin nonstop, dyeing their clothes red. The health of the two women had become extremely poor.

"Young Miss, I have let you down. It is all my fault. I am the one that has harmed you. My death cannot atone for my crimes, my death cannot atone for my crimes."

The servant girl was crying. Her tears were falling like rain. It was not because of the pain she felt. Rather, it was because she felt that she had implicated Tang Ying.

"A'cai, stop crying. This is not your fault. I have heard about that Hong Xi's ability from father and the others. Practically no one could withstand his tortures. As such, it is natural for you to give in."

"Furthermore, you only mentioned the location where my mother was buried."

"Actually, it is all my fault. I was the one who did not listen to Chu Feng's advice to quickly leave this place," Tang Ying said.

"Young Miss, it is not your fault. After all, you just wanted to pay your respects to your mother before leaving," The servant girl said.

"That's right. I decided to pay respects to my mother. However, because of this, I've implicated Chu Feng now," Tang Ying said.

"Could it be that Lord Chu Feng will really come?" The servant girl asked. She did not feel like Chu Feng would come. However, she wished that Chu Feng would come.

Even though she knew that Chu Feng would likely die should he come here, it remained that there would be a chance of survival for them should Chu Feng come. However, if Chu Feng were to not come, they would definitely be killed.

“I hope that he will not come,” Tang Ying said.

“If he doesn’t come, you will die. If he comes, you will still die,” Suddenly, a man appeared out of thin air and stood before Tang Ying. This person was Hong Xi.

“Kill me!!!” Tang Ying shouted.

“Don’t be in such a rush. I will soon let you reunite with your family. Merely... I’m afraid that your family will not treat you well even if you are to meet them in the netherworld. After all, you are a traitor to the Tang Family. Hahaha!!!” Hong Xi laughed frantically.

“You damned demon! You shall die miserably! Chu Feng will not spare you! He will definitely not spare you!” Tang Ying shouted furiously.

She knew that all the remaining people of her Tang Family were killed by that Hong Xi. He did not spare even the children. All those that he killed were innocent people.

“You couldn’t possibly really be thinking that Chu Feng will show up, right? You’re thinking that he will brave dangers for an insignificant nobody like you?” Hong Xi sneered.

Tang Ying grew silent upon hearing those words. Even though there was not much of a change to her expression, her heart was extremely hurt.

After her family betrayed her, she felt that there was only a single person she could rely on in this world—Chu Feng.

Merely, would Chu Feng really show up? Would Chu Feng throw his life away for her, someone that he barely knew?

Even though she did not wish for Chu Feng to come, she would still feel sad should Chu Feng really not show up.

“Truth be told, I never hoped that Chu Feng would come to save you. The truth is, he will absolutely not come,” Hong Xi said.

“Then why did you do this?” Tang Ying asked in confusion.

“I am doing this all to ruin that Chu Feng’s reputation. I will let everyone know that while you treat that Chu Feng as your friend, that Chu Feng will still refuse to come save you,” As Hong Xi said those words, he looked into the distance.

There were a lot of silhouettes in the distant sky. Those were all people that had received the message Hong Xi had spread, and arrived to watch the show.

After all, Hong Xi had let out more than a single bird to spread his news. Thus, practically everyone knew that Luyang’s Pavilion was planning to use the Tang Family’s Young Miss as a threat to make that Chu Feng show himself.

In the beginning, many people did not know what sort of grudges and grievances there were between Chu Feng and Luyang’s Pavilion.

However, it remained that there were no wind-proof walls in the world. Thus, as the crowd gathered, the people that knew about what had happened began to narrate the course of events to the crowd.

At that moment, practically everyone present knew about the grudges and grievances between Chu Feng and Luyang’s Pavilion.

Even though they had all come here for the sake of watching the show, the great majority of them did not feel that Chu Feng would really come for a mere Tang Ying.

“Woosh~~~”

Just then, a golden light flashed past the sky, and entered the

city.

“Boom~~~”

After that golden light entered the city, it began to rapidly change, and turned into the figure of a man.

“Chu Feng?”

Seeing that person, Tang Ying’s expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because that person was none other than Chu Feng.

Merely, that was not Chu Feng’s actual body. Rather, it was a clone formed with a world spirit formation.

“Do not bother surveying your surroundings anymore. With merely the bits of perception that you all possess, it is simply impossible for you all to find my actual body,” Chu Feng said to Hong Xi.

He was able to tell that Hong Xi and the experts from Luyang’s Pavilion were all using their perception to try to find him. Merely, they were simply unable to find him.

“And here I thought that you would actually be daring enough to come. Turns out, you actually only dare to come forth with your clone. You couldn’t possibly be thinking that you would be able to kill all of us and save Tang Ying with that mere spirit formation clone, right?” Hong Xi laughed mockingly.

“Hahahaha!!!” The others from Luyang’s Pavilion also burst into loud laughter.

In fact, many of the bystanders unrelated to Luyang’s Pavilion also started to laugh mockingly.

Even though the clone Chu Feng had formed with a spirit formation was much inferior to his actual body, it still gave off the aura of his actual body.

Thus, everyone was able to tell that Chu Feng was only a rank

two Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, even if he were to show his actual body, it would still be impossible for him to be a match for Hong Xi and the others. As such, how could a mere clone possibly be a match for them?

“Release Tang Ying and A’cai. If you are to do that, I will show myself immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” Hearing those words, Hong Xi’s expression changed immediately.

In fact, the expressions of everyone present changed.

None of them had expected that Chu Feng would truly come to save Tang Ying.

# Chapter 2190 – Whole New Level Of Respect

---

“I said, release Tang Ying, and I’ll show myself immediately,” Chu Feng repeated himself.

“Heh, do you take me as a fool? Do you think that I will be toyed around with by you that easily?” Hong Xi said mockingly.

“You have no other choice,” Chu Feng said.

“No other choice? I think you’re mistaken here,” Hong Xi laughed coldly. Then, he extended his palm and grabbed at Tang Ying. Immediately, a boundless oppressive might appeared out of nowhere, covering Tang Ying and the servant girl.

The moment Hong Xi acted, everyone was able to sense Hong Xi’s aura. He was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. In other words, he was a peak Half Martial Ancestor-level expert, someone only a step away from becoming a Martial Ancestor.

For someone as powerful as him, he would be able to kill Tang Ying and her servant girl with a single thought. There was simply no need for him to use his oppressive might to do so.

“Show yourself immediately. Else, I will kill them right now,” Hong Xi threatened fiercely.

“Hong Xi, I know that you possess Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists among your subordinates. However, you should also know that it would be simply impossible for you all to determine where I’m located with your strength.”

“If you dare to kill Tang Ying and A’cai, I will definitely not show myself. I dare to guarantee you that you will never be able to accomplish the mission that your master gave you.”

“However, if you are to spare them, I will immediately show myself. I will definitely keep my word.”

“Today, I have already given you the chance to kill me. The

choice is up to you now.”

“Of course, if you choose to insist on killing Tang Ying and not spare them, then it would mean that you are extremely cowardly. The person that will be mocked and ridiculed by the people of the world would not be me, Chu Feng. Instead, it will be you, Hong Xi.”

“However, if I am to not show myself after you released Tang Ying, the person mocked by the people of the world will instead be me.”

“Furthermore, if you choose the former and make it so that you will never be able to capture me again, I believe your master will also not be happy with you.”

“Thus, you should know what to choose,” Chu Feng said confidently. It was as if he had already seen through Hong Xi.

“Heh... you are quite smart,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Hong Xi suddenly burst into laughter. He was no fool, and was naturally able to weigh the pros and cons.

In this sort of situation, he truly appeared to have no other choice but to release Tang Ying as Chu Feng had said. However, he was unwilling to do so. The reason for that was because it would mean that he had lost to Chu Feng in this contest should he do as Chu Feng wanted.

However, he also did not wish to let go of this opportunity to kill Chu Feng, nor did he want to be punished by his master and mocked by the people of the world for letting Chu Feng go.

Thus, in the end, he waved his sleeve and destroyed the thorny vines tying Tang Ying and the servant girl up.

At that moment, Tang Ying and the servant girl had regained their freedom.

“You can go,” Hong Xi said.



Tang Ying and the servant girl were both bewildered by this scene. They seemed to be at a loss as for what to do, whether to escape or not.

However, they then turned around and began to hurriedly flee toward the distance. Their rear views were very sorry in appearance.

“Tell your men to release their tracking,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Hong Xi’s expression changed. However, in the end, he looked to the men beside him.

In response, the men’s expressions changed. Even though there was not a lot of change to their appearance, a lot of people present knew that those men were world spiritists.

As such, they must’ve used special techniques to lock onto Tang Ying and her servant girl’s aura. Thus, no matter where Tang Ying and her servant girl were to flee to, they would still be captured by Hong Xi’s subordinates.

However, their tricks were seen through by Chu Feng. Thus, at that moment, Hong Xi’s subordinates had no choice but to stop what they were doing. With that, as long as Tang Ying and A’cai fled far enough, it would be extremely difficult for Hong Xi to find them again.

Even though the people from Luyang’s Pavilion did not chase after Tang Ying and A’cai, and had also released their tracking of them, some of the bystanders began to have the idea of tracking them.

In fact, some people had already entered the void, and were tailing Tang Ying from the shadows.

After all, they all knew how powerful Luyang’s Pavilion was. If they were able to find Tang Ying to hand to Luyang’s Pavilion, they would definitely be able to gain many benefits.

“The people present, listen carefully: If any of you dare to think

about doing anything to Tang Ying and her servant girl, I will definitely make you all wish you were dead,” Chu Feng’s voice sounded again. Even though it was only from his clone, his voice contained great killing intent, and was extremely chilly.

At this moment, the expressions of the people who thought about tailing Tang Ying all turned sluggish. They no longer dared to move.

Even though they all felt that Chu Feng was powerless to even protect himself now, they, for some reason, felt that Chu Feng’s words were no joke. It was as if he was truly capable of doing what he said.

They felt that if they were to do something to Tang Ying today, they might really end up dying by Chu Feng’s hands. As such, in the end, not a single person dared to tail Tang Ying from the shadows.

At that moment, many people started to have new opinions of Chu Feng.

His simple sentences had demonstrated his perceptive ability, as well as his careful frame of mind.

Even though it was a path to his own destruction for Chu Feng to come here, he had already planned everything out.

Before this, no one would’ve truly thought that a mere member of the younger generation would be able to accomplish all this against a major power with strength greatly surpassing his own.

In fact, many people felt that Chu Feng would not show up, that it would mean that Chu Feng was a fool should he show up, that not only would he die, but Tang Ying would also die.

However, looking at it now, the crowd felt that they had truly underestimated this Chu Feng before.

The current situation was that Tang Ying had been released. If Chu Feng were to not show himself, Hong Xi would have lost

enormously.

In fact, many people felt that Chu Feng would not show himself.

The reason for that was because the people that he wanted to save today had already been saved. Furthermore, he was able to get away safely. Thus, Chu Feng had already won.

Most importantly, no one would give up their lives for the sake of their reputation. The crowd automatically felt that Chu Feng would not do so either.

“They have already gotten far away. They are safe now. You can show yourself,” Hong Xi said.

“Don’t be in such a rush. Wait a bit longer. The two of them have low levels of cultivation. You must give them a bit more time,” Chu Feng said.

“Could it be that you do not dare to show yourself?” Hong Xi said coldly.

“Are you afraid?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Nonsense! Me, afraid?” Hong Xi started to frown as he replied with a cold voice.

“You fear that I will not show myself because you will end up losing enormously should that be the case. Furthermore, you will be ridiculed by the people of the world,” Chu Feng said.

“Ridiculous, even if someone is to be ridiculed, it will be you. You will be the one who will be ridiculed for breaking your promise. As for I... how could I possibly be ridiculed?” Hong Xi said.

“Indeed, I will be ridiculed. However, you will also be ridiculed. If people were to ridicule me for breaking my promise, they would also ridicule you for being extremely stupid.”

“You!!!” Hong Xi revealed a furious expression. He finally realized that he had been made a fool of. If Chu Feng were to really not show himself, he would end up losing enormously.

At that moment, Hong Xi was filled with regret. He regretted his impatience in wanting to kill Chu Feng that caused him to lose his calm and be exploited by Chu Feng.

“Look, didn’t I say that you were afraid?” Chu Feng laughed.

Suddenly, Hong Xi shouted, “Vile bastard!!!” Then, he raised his hand and shot out a palm strike. “Boom!” Chu Feng’s clone was destroyed by him.

## Chapter 2191 – Chu Feng’s Appearance

---

Seeing Hong Xi destroying Chu Feng’s clone caused the expressions of many people present to turn sluggish.

This ending seemed to represent that Chu Feng would truly not show himself.

Even though they had already anticipated this, the crowd were still disappointed to see that things would end this way.

After all, if this was truly the case, this show would truly have been too dull.

At the same time, it would also mean that Chu Feng was, like the great majority of people, a spineless coward.

“Everyone, you’ve all seen this. I, Hong Xi, am straightforward and upright. I have kept my word.”

“As for that Chu Feng, he is extremely despicable; he is someone that goes back on his word.”

“Actually, I, Hong Xi, already expected that he would not show himself. I also know that he is despicable and shameless.”

“However, I still gave in to his demands. The reason for that is because I wanted everyone to see his true colors. I wanted everyone to know that there’s a despicable man by the name of Chu Feng in our Luyang’s Pavilion’s territory.”

“Everyone, you must be careful when you encounter that child. Do not be entrapped by him. The reason for that is because that child is a fully deserving vile bastard,” Hong Xi feared that the people would truly think that he was stupid. Thus, he began to find excuses for himself.

Most ridiculous of it all, though it was unknown as to whether the crowd wanted to flatter Hong Xi or what, but many of them actually took what Hong Xi said to be the truth and began to nod.

In fact, many among them even started to applaud Hong Xi.

“Who said that I, Chu Feng, am someone who goes back on my words, that I will not dare to show myself?”

Suddenly, right at that moment, a figure flew over and entered Hong Xi and the others’ line of sight.

Upon seeing that man, the people present, including Hong Xi, were all startled. The reason for that was because that person was Chu Feng, the real Chu Feng and definitely not a clone.

“Chu Feng?!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, even Hong Xi revealed a surprised expression. He seemed to not dare to believe that Chu Feng would really show himself.

“What’s wrong? Hong Xi, as one of the six grand Vice Pavilion Masters of Luyang’s Pavilion, could it be that you cannot tell whether I am here with my actual body or as a clone?” Chu Feng mocked with a smile.

He was never one to do something without certainty of success. Before coming here, he had already thoroughly investigated that Hong Xi.

Hong Xi was not only a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, he was also one of the six most powerful individuals in Luyang’s Pavilion underneath Chu Luyang.

His strength was most definitely not limited to merely that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Reportedly, even ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors would not be a match for him.

It was not because he possessed heaven-defying battle power that surpassed ordinary people. Rather, it was because he was a special monstrous beast. He possessed a special Inherited Bloodline that could allow him to increase his cultivation by a level.

In other words, even though his actual cultivation was that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, his cultivation would increase to that of a rank one Martial Ancestor should he activate his

Inherited Bloodline.

“Hahaha, I truly never expected this. Chu Feng, not only are you bold, you’re also very astute. You actually dared to appear by yourself.”

“You couldn’t possibly think that I wouldn’t dare to kill you, right?” After Hong Xi confirmed that it was Chu Feng’s actual body, he was immediately overjoyed. All of the displeasure that was on his face before disappeared, and was replaced with a sense of superiority.

The way he saw it, as long as Chu Feng showed himself, he would be the victor. The reason for that was because Hong Xi felt that Chu Feng would undoubtedly be killed by him because of the difference between their strengths.

Pleasure. He felt extreme pleasure. He felt so much pleasure, that Hong Xi actually forgot himself.

“Who told you that little friend Chu Feng came alone?” However, right at that moment, an old man’s voice sounded.

Following that, the space beside Chu Feng started to fluctuate like water. Soon, an old man appeared from that space and stood beside Chu Feng.

“It’s you?!”

Upon seeing this person, the expressions of the great majority of the people present changed. The reason for that was because this old man was one of the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders, Elder Liu Chengkun.

Furthermore, Elder Liu Chengkun was not concealing his aura. Instead, he had unleashed his aura, his cultivation.

His aura greatly surpassed that of Half Martial Ancestors. Sensing that aura, people felt fear from it. The reason for that was because that Elder Liu Chengkun was actually a Martial Ancestor.

A rank one Martial Ancestor, an actual Martial Ancestor-level expert, an expert that had truly grasped the strength of Ancestral-level martial power.

However, compared to others, Chu Feng did not reveal any trace of surprise after Elder Liu Chengkun appeared.

The reason for that... was because before Chu Feng had appeared, he had already known that this Elder Liu Chengkun would come to help him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you can rest assured. I have already ordered my men to receive Tang Ying and her servant girl. They are already safe now,” Liu Chengkun said to Chu Feng through voice transmission with a beaming smile.

“Thank you, Elder Liu, for your assistance,” Chu Feng replied through voice transmission. His tone was filled with gratefulness.

Actually, the reason why Chu Feng dared to show himself was precisely because he had discovered Elder Liu Chengkun after arriving to this place.

in the beginning, Chu Feng had merely sent a voice transmission to Elder Liu Chengkun to ask him whether or not he could help him get Tang Ying after they escaped.

At that time, he was uncertain of whether or not Elder Liu Chengkun would help him. After all, he had refused Elder Liu Chengkun’s invitation not long ago.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, not only did Elder Liu Chengkun agree to help him without the slightest hesitation, he even told Chu Feng to not quietly leave, and instead show himself after Hong Xi released Tang Ying.

He told Chu Feng that his reputation would be ruined should he escape. At that time, it would become a stain throughout his life. Furthermore, he would be ridiculed all his life for it. Even if Chu Feng managed to obtain an extremely high level of



accomplishment in the future, there would still be people that would dishonor him using that.

At that time, Chu Feng realized that Liu Chengkun would definitely show himself to help him should he show himself.

Actually, even if Liu Chengkun had not said such a thing to Chu Feng, Chu Feng had not planned to escape without a trace either.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that he not only carried his own reputation, he also carried his father Chu Xuanyuan and his grandfather Chu Hanxian's reputations.

Not only could he not afford to shame himself, he could not afford to shame his father and grandfather.

Thus, no matter what, Chu Feng would show himself. Even if he could not defeat Hong Xi, he would still fight him. He had decided to place all of his hopes onto his Evil God Sword.

However, as Liu Chengkun had decided to help him, Chu Feng felt more confident.

Merely, it remained that he did not have much of a relation with Liu Chengkun. They had only met each other once. Furthermore, Chu Feng had refused his invitation.

Thus, Chu Feng truly felt extremely grateful that Liu Chengkun was willing to help him unconditionally.

"So, Chu Feng was actually a part of your Red Butterfly Society? No wonder he's bold enough to go against our Luyang's Pavilion."

"This is the perfect opportunity. Liu Chengkun, I have yet to settle my debt with you from last time," Hong Xi said fiercely.

"I think you are mistaken. Little friend Chu Feng is merely a like-minded individual to us. However, he does not actually belong to our Red Butterfly Society," Elder Liu Chengkun explained on behalf of Chu Feng.

Liu Chengkun's simple explanation caused Chu Feng's

impression of him to increase greatly.

Originally, Chu Feng had wanted to explain. However, it remained that Liu Chengkun had helped him like this. Thus, Chu Feng decided not to explain.

Yet, Liu Chengkun had actually decided to explain for him. This meant that Liu Chengkun was truly a good individual.

“Enough of your superfluous words. Today, both of you shall die,” Once Hong Xi said those words, his eyes immediately turned red as an overwhelming killing intent emerged.

Immediately afterward, Hong Xi’s face started to change. Crimson scales began to bore out of his skin. Soon, his clothes ruptured, and his body size increased by threefold.

Even though he still had the appearance of a human, his body was completely covered with crimson scales. Sharp and strong black fingernails appeared on his fingers and he looked very much like a monster.

Most importantly, his aura had increased. He was no longer a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, he had become a rank one Martial Ancestor.

# Chapter 2192 – Trapped In Danger

---

“Come. Today, the two of us shall settle the grudges we have from the past.”

In response, Liu Chengkun waved his sleeve. Stepping on the air, he began to walk calmly toward Hong Xi.

At the moment he waved his sleeve, a little crystal bowl was tossed toward Chu Feng.

After that little crystal bowl approached Chu Feng, it began to rapidly increase in size. From the size of a palm, it increased to the size of a washbowl. In an upside-down manner, it hovered on top of Chu Feng’s head and spun slowly.

As it spun, a faint light began to sprinkle down from the bowl like a waterfall of light.

In the end, a defensive barrier was formed. That defensive barrier surrounded Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, your life is mine!!!”

At that time, the other experts from Luyang’s Pavilion all rushed toward Chu Feng and surrounded him. They all unleashed their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and began to attack Chu Feng.

Ferocious martial skills and frightening blade rays, they were all incomparably powerful. To Chu Feng, all of those attacks were capable of taking his life should he be struck by them unprepared. Even if he managed to survive, he would be seriously injured.

However, being underneath the crystal bowl, Chu Feng was completely unharmed.

Regardless of how powerful their attacks were, regardless of whether they were the attacks of rank seven Half Martial Ancestors, rank eight Half Martial Ancestors or even rank nine Half Martial Ancestors, none of the attacks were capable of

breaching the defensive barrier formed by the crystal bowl.

The crystal bowl was a defensive treasure. Chu Feng was absolutely safe should he stay inside it.

Unless that Hong Xi were to act, none of the current people from Luyang's Pavilion would be able to bring any harm to Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, that Hong Xi was simply unable to do anything to Chu Feng right now. The reason for that was because he was locked in a busy battle against Elder Liu Chengkun.

Hong Xi was holding a large crimson blade. That blade was ten meters long, and emitted a very strong bloody odor. It was as if the blade was made of blood.

With each movement, the blade would let out a frightening snarl. His weapon was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. However, it was an extremely powerful one.

From the discussion of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng came to know that the crimson sword was an extremely famous Incomplete Ancestral Armament. It was called the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade.

It was indeed a blade formed by the condensation of blood. That was the reason why it reeked so strongly of blood, and emitted an intense killing intent.

Furthermore, the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade was forged by a demonic beast world spiritist. Thus, when it was being used by a demonic beast, the Infernal Bloodsoul Blade would be more powerful than when it was used by a human.

As for Elder Liu Chengkun, he had also unleashed his own Incomplete Ancestral Armament. When compared to Hong Xi's Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Elder Liu Chengkun's Incomplete Ancestral Armament looked even more special.

His Incomplete Ancestral Armament was actually a picture scroll. The picture scroll had a painting of a sea. That sea was so vivid and lifelike; it was actually surging in the picture scroll.

The picture scroll was not being held in Elder Liu Chengkun's hand. Rather, it was completely revealed. Like a special dragon, that picture scroll hovered around Elder Liu Chengkun to fight for him.

From the conversation of the surrounding crowd, Chu Feng found out that that picture scroll also possessed an extraordinary origin.

It was formed by refining a vast sea. Thus, the sea inside the picture scroll was not fake. Rather, it was an actual sea.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

At this moment, the battle between the two men grew increasingly more intense. Even though they were equally matched, Chu Feng started to frown.

With his sharp perception and intuition, Chu Feng felt that Elder Liu Chengkun was already going all out, and had unleashed his strongest strength in the fight.

However, as for Hong Xi, Chu Feng kept feeling that he still had hidden tricks up his sleeve. If he were to truly go all out, Elder Liu Chengkun would definitely be no match against him.

Suddenly, Hong Xi shouted, “Emperor Taboo: Blood Lizard Transformation!”

Then, crimson gaseous flames began to emit from his body. The gaseous flames started to rapidly transform. In the end, the gaseous flames turned into a giant thousand-meter-long [red lizard](#).

The giant red lizard appeared to be a spirit body, as it was translucent. However, it was emitting an extremely powerful aura, and was controlled by Hong Xi.

At that moment, its bloody mouth was wide open as it moved to

bite at Elder Liu Chengkun.

Before the mouth even arrived, the might of the attack was already extremely terrifying.

“Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave!”

Elder Liu Chengkun was not to be outdone. He, too, unleashed a very powerful Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Immediately, violent waves of water that contained extremely powerful Ancestral-level martial power began to surge in the sky. It looked like a vast sea had appeared in the sky.

Elder Liu Chengkun was very experienced in battle. At the same time as he started to attack Hong Xi from afar with his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, he was also moving backwards and maintaining his state of superiority against Hong Xi.

“As expected of a Martial Ancestor. They are not people that can be compared with someone who obtained the cultivation of Martial Ancestor through abilities.”

Seeing the successive tidal waves swallowing the giant red lizard, the great majority of the people present, with the exception of Chu Feng, all felt that Elder Liu Chengkun was going to win.

“Old fart, quite a good technique you have there. However, do not think that you will be able to stop me with only this.”

Suddenly, Hong Xi’s voice sounded from within the surging waves in the sky. Following that, Hong Xi’s figure reappeared.

Merely, when Hong Xi’s enormous figure reappeared, there was an enormous change when compared to before.

If the enormous lizard from before was only a phantom image, then the current Hong Xi’s entire body was rapidly increasing in size.

Hong Xi’s body was fusing with his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. As this situation continued, the aura that Hong Xi was emitting

grew more and more powerful.

“Crash, splatter~~~”

At that moment, Hong Xi began to move forward while braving the waves. He had managed to withstand the overflowing giant waves from Elder Liu Chengkun, and was closing the distance to him. Furthermore, his speed was growing faster and faster. It seemed like he would be able to overtake Elder Liu Chengkun.

“Crap!”

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to frown even deeper. His ill premonition had happened.

Elder Liu Chengkun had already unleashed all of his power. And now, Hong Xi had unleashed his final trump card.

However, Hong Xi's trump card was yet to be completely revealed. If he were to reveal it completely, the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill that Elder Liu Chengkun had unleashed with his Incomplete Ancestral Armament would likely not be a match for Hong Xi.

Hong Xi had relied on his Inherited Bloodline and that Incomplete Ancestral Armament specialized for Monstrous Beasts. As such, his might surpassed that of Elder Liu Chengkun.

“How could this be? Hong Xi, he's actually this powerful? He was actually able to reverse the battle?”

At that moment, the people who thought that Elder Liu Chengkun was going to win all revealed expressions of shock. None of them had anticipated that Hong Xi would be so powerful, so powerful that he could reverse the situation.

“Reverse the situation? You all are overthinking it. Our Lord Hong Xi is someone unequalled among those with the same level of battle power to begin with. That Red Butterfly Society's Liu Chengkun only managed to fight our Lord Hong Xi to a draw before because our Lord Hong Xi was deliberately going easy on

him,” The people from Luyang’s Pavilion said proudly.

“So that was the case?! Lord Hong Xi is truly amazing!!!”

“In that case, it would seem that not only will that Chu Feng not be able to escape today, that Liu Chengkun will also end up meeting a calamity today?!”

At that moment, the crowd all cast glances at Chu Feng. Then, they looked back to Liu Chengkun. Inevitably, there was a slight amount of pity in their gazes.

After all, if Liu Chengkun hadn’t come for Chu Feng, he would not have involved himself with this mess. If he hadn’t involved himself with this mess, he would not have ended up in such a dangerous situation now.

Hong Xi’s name literally means Red Lizard.



# Chapter 2193 – The Power Of Asura

---

“Senior Liu Chengkun, please do not worry about me. You should leave right now!” Chu Feng shouted. He did not wish to implicate Liu Chengkun.

However, Liu Chengkun smiled lightly at Chu Feng’s urge to leave. He said, “Little friend Chu Feng, a man should not give up so easily.”

“Although I, Liu Chengkun, am quite old, I am still a man. Furthermore, our Red Butterfly Society possesses numerous grudges and grievances with this Luyang’s Pavilion to begin with. Furthermore, I, Liu Chengkun, also possess a great personal hatred against this Hong Xi.”

“Thus, this is not simply a matter that concerns you alone. No matter what, I will not let this Hong Xi get away today. Even if it must end in mutual destruction, I must still kill him.”

After saying those words, Elder Liu Chengkun shouted loudly. After that shout, his Incomplete Ancestral Armament began to shine brightly. At the same time, Elder Liu Chengkun’s aura also became much more powerful.

Subsequently, the Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave unleashed by Elder Liu Chengkun also became much more powerful. Successive enormous waves shattered space itself. Once again, they began to drown Hong Xi, making it extremely difficult for him to continue onward.

Willpower and killing intent.

Elder Liu Chengkun had completely unleashed all of his power. He had already reached his limit. However, he was still able to increase his power. He had only managed to accomplish all that by relying on his willpower to kill Hong Xi.

“Humph,” Hong Xi snorted mockingly. He seemed to have

already seen through this fact. Thus, he sneered, “Merely an arrow at the end of its flight. I shall see how much longer you can persevere.”

“Damn it. This wouldn’t do if it is to continue like this,” At that moment, Chu Feng was extremely nervous.

Even though Elder Liu Chengkun had declared that he possessed personal hatred with that Hong Xi, and that his death would be unrelated to Chu Feng, Chu Feng would still blame himself should Elder Liu Chengkun really die here today.

“I can only give it a try,” Suddenly, a determined expression flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes. He placed his palm onto his Cosmos Sack.

He was planning to use the power that he could not control, the Evil God Sword!!!

Even though the Evil God Sword appeared to only be an Imperial Armament, it was most definitely not a mere Imperial Armament. Else, it would be impossible for even his father to warn him about using the Evil God Sword.

The power of the Evil God Sword was extremely frightening. Chu Feng did not have the ability to control it. If things went wrong, Chu Feng might even end up being killed by the Evil God Sword.

However, that power that he could not control was the only thing that Chu Feng could rely on. After all, there was such an enormous difference in cultivation between him and that Hong Xi. It would simply be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Hong Xi with his own strength.

“Chu Feng, don’t worry,” However, right at that moment, a soft and gentle voice entered Chu Feng’s ears, advising him against using the Evil God Sword.

Chu Feng’s body trembled upon hearing that voice. His heart tensed up. At that moment, he felt as if he had been struck by

lightning.

However, the sensation he felt was not one of pain. Rather, it was one of immense joy. He was truly and immensely overjoyed. It was as if the greatest thing had happened in this world.

The reason for that was because that voice he heard sounded very familiar. It was Eggy's voice, the voice of Her Lady Queen.

After hearing Eggy's voice, Chu Feng immediately cast his awareness into his world spirit space. He wished to see what had happened there.

Upon reaching his world spirit space, he was even more incapable of controlling his emotions, and revealed an ecstatic expression.

Eggy, Her Lady Queen, had woken up.

Wearing a black dress, she was still as exceptionally beautiful as she always was. With a smile on her face, she looked at Chu Feng.

"Milady Queen, you're finally awake."

"Is it really you? I'm not dreaming, right?" Chu Feng was truly overjoyed. He did not expect that Eggy would wake up at such a time.

"Hey, hey, hey! Where are you touching? Are you deliberately taking advantage of this Queen?!" Eggy curled her lips and cast a disdainful gaze at Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was not behaving honestly at all. Not only had he hugged the little beauty into his bosom, he was also rubbing her nonstop with his hands. He was so bold that he was using his hands to touch Eggy's exquisite and perfect cheeks.

However, even though that was the case, Eggy merely called Chu Feng out for his actions, and did not push him away.

"Haha, Eggy, it is truly you. Do you know how much I missed

you?” Chu Feng said.

“Enough of this disgusting behavior. This Queen did not really fall asleep. I have heard all of your soliloquies throughout these days.”

“In the future, if this Queen is not present, you must not say those sorts of things. Else, even if I am fine, I will be disgusted by your words to the point where I will not be fine,” Eggy said with her lips curled.

Even though she revealed a disgusted facial expression, her beautiful eyes were displaying happiness.

“In that case, you know about all the things that happened?” Chu Feng asked.

“I remember them even better than you,” Eggy raised her head and spoke proudly.

“Then, the spirit formation my mother placed on you, did you...!!!” Chu Feng asked.

“I know. Although your mother sealed my cultivation, that spirit formation was indeed beneficial to me. As such, I am unable to blame her.”

“If you don’t believe me, look,” Eggy smiled sweetly, then unleashed her aura.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense the cultivation of Her Lady Queen Eggy. She was many times more powerful than before.

It was as his father had declared, Eggy was a Half Martial Ancestor now. Not only that, she had also surpassed Chu Feng’s cultivation.

Chu Feng was merely a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. However, Eggy was already a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

“Let’s go. Let this Queen out. I will personally teach that ignorant

stinky lizard.”

“This Queen will make him know that not just anyone can be bullied by him. That you, Chu Feng, are under the umbrella of this Queen.”

Eggy waved her fists around angrily. Even though she had just regained consciousness, she knew all about what Chu Feng had experienced. Thus, she was impatient to teach that Hong Xi a lesson.

“Of course. No... wait.”

“Milady Queen, although your cultivation is strong, you are only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. That Hong Xi, on the other hand, is a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he has reached rank one Martial Ancestor after using the power of his Inherited Bloodline. Would you... really be able to contend against him?” Chu Feng asked with a frown. He was worried for Eggy.

“Really be able to contend against him? What sort of words are those? Who are you looking down on? Are you looking down at Your Lady Queen, or are you looking down at me?” Eggy asked with a furious expression.

“This...” Chu Feng did not dare to answer.

“Haha, look at your expression. I am only toying with you,” Eggy smiled proudly. Her smile was extremely beautiful. Looking at that smile, Chu Feng was nearly intoxicated.

“Rest assured, regardless of how powerful that Hong Xi’s cultivation might be, his battle power is too weak. As for this Queen, my battle power is capable of surmounting seven levels of cultivation.”

“No, that’s wrong. If, according to what your father said, all Martial Emperors and Martial Ancestors possess battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, then this Queen’s battle power, when compared to theirs, is capable of

surmounting four additional levels of cultivation.”

“However, even if it is only surmounting four levels of cultivation, the Queen is still able to contend against ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors are definitely no match for this Queen. Thus, you don’t have to worry.”

“This Queen will definitely teach that Hong Xi a lesson so bad that he will cry and go look for his mom,” Eggy said proudly.

“Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Milady Queen, you are truly amazing,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

He knew very well that Her Lady Queen was someone that never lied. Since Her Lady Queen declared that she possessed a battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, that meant that she most definitely did.

Before, Chu Feng had guessed that Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power would be much stronger than his own. However, it turned out that Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power was even more amazing than he had guessed it to be.

Chu Feng had only managed to obtain his current heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation after breaking through to the Half Martial Ancestor realm. However, Her Lady Queen’s heaven-defying battle power was even stronger than his still.

“This Queen was also only able to increase my battle power after my cultivation increased to the Half Martial Ancestor level. If this Queen is able to reach Martial Ancestor level, my battle power will increase by another level,” Eggy added proudly.

“Heh, since that is the case, it is time to let them experience how powerful Milady Queen is,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“No,” Eggy shook her head.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked in a surprised manner.

Eggy smiled sweetly. She said, “What this Queen will let them experience is the power of Asura.”

# Chapter 2194 – Prepared To Kill You

---

“Rumble~~~”

Explosions began to sound in the sky nonstop.

Following the rumbles, surging waves began to spray in all direction like ferocious waterfalls.

At that moment, torrential rain covered the sky. The rain shattered the mountain stone and destroyed the city. In fact, many of the cultivators outside the city were forced to retreat far away. They did not dare to involve themselves in the matter.

It was Hong Xi. At that moment, Hong Xi's body had completely fused with that martial skill. He had turned into an actual giant monster that reached the sky.

Even his Incomplete Ancestral Armament had changed. It had turned into a demon-like crimson giant creature that fought alongside Hong Xi.

The giant creature that the Incomplete Ancestral Armament had turned into did not possess a complete body, as its body was changing nonstop. However, one would be terrified with a single glance at its eyes streaming with killing intent.

Furthermore, that giant creature possessed a strength on par with Hong Xi.

At that moment, Hong Xi was simply unstoppable. He was suppressing Elder Liu Chengkun and forcing him into a state of constant retreat.

A difficult expression was clearly present on Elder Liu Chengkun's face.

Everyone could tell that Liu Chengkun would likely not be able to last for much longer.

“Emperor Taboo: Holy Spirit Army!”



Forced to such a situation, Liu Chengkun shouted. He had unleashed another Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Once that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was unleashed, a total of eight thousand bodies of light shot forth. Merely, those bodies of light did not fly toward Hong Xi to attack him. Rather, they flew toward Chu Feng.

“Heeaahh!!!”

After the bodies of light approached, they began to transform. One by one, they turned into armored soldiers three meters tall holding spears in their hands.

Those soldiers all possessed cultivations of rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Once they appeared, they immediately started to attack and kill the people from Luyang’s Pavilion that surrounded Chu Feng.

This caught the people from Luyang’s Pavilion that surrounded Chu Feng off guard. They were powerless to defend themselves. In fact, other than the rank nine Half Martial Ancestors, the rest of them were all killed by the Holy Spirit Army.

“Chu Feng, quickly, escape!!!”

Right at that moment, a voice transmission entered Chu Feng’s ears. That voice transmission was from Liu Chengkun.

“Trying to let him escape? I’m afraid that you won’t be able to do so.”

Upon seeing that, Hong Xi sneered. He had already seen through what Liu Chengkun was planning to do. Thus, with a thought, the crimson monster formed by the Incomplete Ancestral Armament turned around and started flying toward Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

The crimson monster broke free from the tidal waves and began to charge toward Chu Feng to attack him. Wherever it passed, the

sky would turn crimson. It was as if a life-seeking demon was proceeding toward Chu Feng to demand his life.

“Crash~~~”

Before that crimson monster even managed to approach Chu Feng, an enormous sky-shadowing tidal wave came from behind it and trapped the crimson monster.

It turned out that enormous wave was unleashed by Elder Liu Chengkun’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Not only did the wave arrive, Elder Liu Chengkun’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament had also arrived. At that moment, the two Incomplete Ancestral Armaments started fighting one another.

At that moment, Chu Feng had just returned his awareness to his body and was startled upon seeing the scene before him.

After Liu Chengkun let go of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the might of his Emperor Taboo: Great Tidal Wave decreased enormously.

As for Hong Xi, even though he had also let go of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, his strength was still as ferocious as before. At that moment, he had already managed to close a lot of the distance between them, and was less than a hundred meters away from Liu Chengkun.

“Heeaaahh!!!”

Liu Chengkun shouted. Then, he clenched his teeth and increased the strength of his waves, barely managing to stop Hong Xi’s incoming attack. However, anyone could tell that Liu Chengkun would not be able to last for much longer.

“Puu~~~”

Suddenly, Liu Chengkun sprayed out a mouthful of blood and stained the lapel of his clothes.

This scene verified to the crowd that Liu Chengkun was truly

unable to persist for much longer.

“Chu Feng, escape now!!!” Liu Chengkun suddenly shouted.

This time around, he was no longer sending Chu Feng a voice transmission. Instead, he was shouting out loud at him. After all, everyone was already able to tell that he was planning to let himself be killed here in order to let Chu Feng escape safely.

Chu Feng was extremely moved by Liu Chengkun’s actions. Even though he was clearly powerless to defend himself, he was still thinking about Chu Feng’s safety.

It could be seen that Liu Chengkun was truly willing to give up his life for Chu Feng.

However, it was clear that he had only met Chu Feng once before.

Feeling extremely moved, Chu Feng said, “Senior Liu Chengkun, I have troubled you.”

“Just leave the rest to me.”

“What?!” The people present were all startled by those words. They all looked to Chu Feng with confused expressions.

What was this?

Liu Chengkun had risked his life in order to obtain an opportunity for Chu Feng to escape. Yet, Chu Feng was not only not planning to escape, he even said those things. Could it be that he had gone insane?

“Chu Feng, what did you say? I dare you to say it again!” At that moment, Hong Xi, who had held absolute superiority, no longer continued to press on toward Liu Chengkun. Instead, he turned his gaze toward Chu Feng.

Merely, his current gaze could be said to be filled with mockery. His gaze simply did not appear to be a gaze of someone looking at another person. Rather, it was the gaze of someone looking at a fool, a moron, an idiot.

In his eyes, the current Chu Feng was a fool, a moron, an idiot.

“Say, what is coming up will be the time of your death,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Time of my death? Even the rank one Martial Ancestor Liu Chengkun is no match for me. You are but a mere rank two Half Martial Ancestor, where did you obtain your confidence from?”

“Oh, I nearly forgot. You are a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline. Your Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings are capable of increasing your cultivation to rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, compared to ordinary Half Martial Ancestors, you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.”

“After using all your various techniques, you will be able to fight against rank seven Half Martial Ancestors. Thinking of it, you are truly quite amazing.”

“However, do not forget that I am an actual rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, after activating my Inherited Bloodline, my cultivation has increased to that of a rank one Martial Ancestor.”

“Not to mention activating my Inherited Bloodline, even if I do not use my Inherited Bloodline’s power, I will still be able to easily kill you.”

“Before me, you are nothing more than an ant,” Hong Xi said.

“Oh? You’re actually that powerful? In that case, why am I still alive?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“If it wasn’t for Liu Chengkun’s obstruction, you would already be dead,” Hong Xi said.

“Haha...” Chu Feng laughed lightly. Then, he looked to Liu Chengkun and said, “Since that Hong Xi is that confident, Senior Liu Chengkun, please do not stop him. We should allow that Hong Xi to reveal his might. I also want to see how he shall kill me.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, what are you...!?” Liu Chengkun was completely puzzled. He did not understand what Chu Feng was thinking.

“Senior Liu, I know that you possess many grudges and grievances against that Hong Xi. However, today is the day for me to settle my debt with that Hong Xi.”

“Thus, Senior Liu, please,” Chu Feng said to Liu Chengkun while claspng his fist.

Chu Feng’s intentions were very clear. He wanted Liu Chengkun to step aside. Regardless of what Hong Xi might do to him, he did not want Liu Chengkun to interfere.

“This... okay then,” Liu Chengkun had an expression of helplessness as he sighed. Then, he retrieved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and actually moved to the side.

Even though he felt that Chu Feng’s request was very unfathomable, Liu Chengkun saw Chu Feng’s confident gaze and felt that he was truly able to contend against Hong Xi.

Thus, he also wished to see if Chu Feng truly had even more tricks up his sleeve.

At the same time Liu Chengkun moved to the side, Hong Xi also stopped his attacks and retrieved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament. However, he did not immediately attack Chu Feng. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Old fart Liu, do not be anxious. After taking care of this little bastard that does not know the immensity of heaven and earth, I will come and take care of you.”

Once those words were said, the expressions of the crowd present all changed. What Hong Xi inferred with those words was that it would only take him but a moment to take care of Chu Feng.

It was true that with the difference in strength between the two men, it would not take Hong Xi a lot of time to take care of Chu

Feng.

“Chu Feng, are you prepared to die?” Hong Xi held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and shouted at Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng lightly laughed. He said, “I have not prepared myself to die. However, I have prepared to kill you.”

# Chapter 2195 – Asura World Spiritist

---

“Senior Liu Chengkun, please take back this bowl. I plan to take care of this Hong Xi,” Chu Feng said to Liu Chengkun.

Once Chu Feng said those words, not to mention Hong Xi, even many of the bystanders started laughing.

It would be impossible for a mere rank two Half Martial Ancestor, even if he was someone who possessed a Heavenly Bloodline, to be a match against Hong Xi. Exactly where did Chu Feng gain the confidence to say those sort of words?

However, even with this being the case, Liu Chengkun still retrieved his crystal bowl. He might be the only person present that still had some expectations of Chu Feng.

“You are truly one who will not shed a tear until you see your coffin. Originally, I had thought about giving you a straightforward death. However, it would appear that... I must teach you a lesson today.”

“Else, you will not know how frightening I, Hong Xi, am.”

Hong Xi began to attack. He unleashed a special sort of martial skill. His Ancestral-level martial power turned into countless crimson bats.

Those bats were very small. However, they possessed sharp teeth and claws. Furthermore, they were very powerful. It was impossible for anyone below the Martial Ancestor level of cultivation to withstand their attacks.

Most importantly, there were a lot of such bats. They covered the entire sky, and were simply capable of swallowing up a vast city.

At this moment, those bats were flying toward Chu Feng. They were going to devour all of Chu Feng’s flesh and drink all his blood!

That was not a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. In fact, it was not even a Taboo Martial Skill. Instead, it was a rank three martial skill.

“That is, the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique!!!”

However, that mere rank three martial skill caused Liu Chengkun’s expression to change enormously.

He knew very well how cruel and ruthless of a person Hong Xi was. He was one of the most outstanding confessive, extortive, homicidal demons in Luyang’s Pavilion, and possessed countless methods to torture others.

Although the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique was only a rank three martial skill, it was one of the most powerful torture methods Hong Xi possessed.

In the past, there was a very unyielding rank nine Half Martial Ancestor-level expert from the Red Butterfly Society that ended up confessing to the location of a Red Butterfly Society branch due to the torture from that Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique.

This led to the Red Butterfly Society’s branch being completely wiped out.

From this, it could be seen how frighteningly powerful Hong Xi’s Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique was. After all, that expert was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. When even he failed to withstand the torture, could Chu Feng really be able to withstand it?

Thus, after recognizing that it was the Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique, Elder Liu Chengkun prepared himself to act. The reason for that was because he was unable to watch as Chu Feng suffered torment before him.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a world spirit gate appeared before Chu Feng.



After that world spirit gate appeared, black gaseous flames began to billow from the gate. Soon, the black gaseous flames covered the sky, and turned into a wall that separated heaven and earth. The wall stood in front of Chu Feng.

“Ji, ji, ji~~~”

At the moment the black gaseous flames appeared, the bats of Hong Xi’s Blood Bat Cursed Soul Technique that previously covered the sky started to charge toward the black gaseous flames explosively.

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. After the crimson bats entered the black gaseous flames, not the slightest amount of energy ripples appeared. As if they were sand and stones being tossed into the sea, they disappeared completely.

“Roar~~~”

Soon, a strange roar sounded from the black gaseous flames. After that, a frightening killing intent began to spread all over.

“This sort of sensation, what is going on?”

“Heavens! What is that? Why would that aura be so frightening?!”

Sensing the frightening killing intent, the expressions of the crowd all turned sluggish. In fact, some of the more cowardly individuals turned pale and started to shiver with fear.

The very next moment, the black gaseous flames that covered the sky began to condense together. Soon, a figure appeared.

“Wow! What is going on?!!!”

Seeing the beautiful woman that had appeared before them, not to mention the men present, even many women’s eyes started to shine. In fact, many people were unable to contain themselves, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

Beautiful, truly too beautiful. The beauty of her Lady Queen was

capable of attracting countless gazes, and causing people to drool regardless of where she might be.

“Who is that beauty?” The crowd began to discuss Eggy spiritedly. After all, no one had seen Eggy appear. Thus, they did not know where she had come from. In fact, they had all forgotten about the world spirit gate Chu Feng had opened.

“Asura World Spirit, Chu Feng... could it be that you’re an Asura World Spiritist?” At that moment, it was Liu Chengkun who spoke first. Furthermore, at that moment, Liu Chengkun was extremely emotional.

By chance, Liu Chengkun had met an Asura World Spiritist before. As such, he had also seen an Asura World Spirit.

Thus, at the moment when the black gaseous flames began to spread, he was extremely astonished. The reason for that was because the sensation he felt from the black gaseous flames greatly resembled that of the Asura World Spirit he’d seen before.

After seeing Eggy, he was even more certain that Eggy was an Asura World Spirit. As the world spirit gate was opened by Chu Feng earlier, Liu Chengkun became certain that Chu Feng was most likely an Asura World Spiritist.

At that moment, Liu Chengkun was truly overwhelmed with excitement. Before this, he had never thought that Chu Feng would be an Asura World Spiritist.

“Senior Liu, please excuse my humble performance. Indeed, this junior is an Asura World Spiritist,” Chu Feng smiled lightly and admitted his identity.

“For real?! Chu Feng... he’s actually an Asura World Spiritist? In that case, that beauty is not a human, but a world spirit? Furthermore, she is an Asura World Spirit, the most savage and cruel world spirits of the Seven Spirit Worlds?”

At that moment, the people present were all unable to remain

calm. After all, even to them, Asura World Spirits were akin to legends.

In the Lower Realms, Asura World Spiritists were rarely seen. After all... Asura World Spiritists were the rulers among world spiritists. They were existences that all the powers wanted to recruit into their ranks.

“You’re actually an Asura World Spiritist?” At that moment, even Hong Xi started to frown.

As a Vice Pavilion Master of Luyang’s Pavilion, Hong Xi naturally knew about how powerful Asura World Spiritists were. Without mentioning their strength, merely their identity as Asura World Spiritists would cause countless powers to try to recruit them regardless of price.

Chu Feng was actually an Asura World Spiritist. To their Luyang’s Pavilion, this was not good news at all.

“Yoh, you’re already scared before the actual battle has even begun?” Chu Feng mocked with a smile on his face.

“Scared? It’s merely a rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level world spirit. She’s not much more powerful than you. Why would I be afraid?”

“Are you even capable of making me scared?” Hong Xi sneered disdainfully.

Even though Hong Xi was indeed a bit scared, he could not reveal his fear, because he was a Vice Pavilion Master to Luyang’s Pavilion. Otherwise, he would end up bringing shame to Luyang’s Pavilion.

In fact, Hong Xi knew very well that he was unable to stop now. Even if Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist, he must still kill Chu Feng. Else, Chu Feng would cause no end of trouble.

“Even if this Queen only possesses the cultivation of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, it will still be extremely easy for me to kill

you,” Eggy said.

“Sure enough, like master like world spirit. Both of you only know how to boast shamelessly.”

“That said, you are quite attractive. Taking your beauty into consideration, I will not kill you. Instead, I will capture you alive and make you my plaything. Every night, you will serve me on the bed,” Suddenly, Hong Xi smiled viciously. Then, he prepared to attack Eggy.

“Courting death,” In response, coldness flashed through Eggy’s eyes. Then, as her skirt fluttered, boundless black gaseous flames erupted from her body like a volcanic explosion.

In the end, the black gaseous flames turned into an enormous black claw and grabbed at Hong Xi.

“Noo!!!” Seeing that scene, Hong Xi actually shouted.

The reason for that was because he was actually unable to move before the black claw. He could only watch helplessly as the black claw that held a fatal threat moved to grab him.

# Chapter 2196 – The Savage Queen

---

The black sharp claw covered the sky. It was even more enormous than Hong Xi, who had turned into a giant monster.

Furthermore, even though the sharp claw was coming from the front, Hong Xi was unable to dodge it.

In the end, he was captured by the claw and tightly held by it. The sharp nails pierced through his enormous body, causing his monstrous beast blood to splatter all over.

“Ahhh!!!” After being captured by the sharp claw, Hong Xi let out a miserable scream.

At the beginning, the crowd was confused. It was merely being captured and injured by a claw, was there really a need for him to cry so miserably? For an expert of his level, there shouldn't be a reason for him to have such a low level of endurance, no?

However, upon closer inspection, the crowd discovered that they had wronged Hong Xi. The reason for that was because Hong Xi's current situation was truly extremely miserable.

Hong Xi's body was being torn apart. Piece by piece, his flesh was breaking away from his body.

As for the flesh that broke away from his body, it was immediately refined. The sight was truly too horrible to watch.

“Stop, stop!!!!” As Hong Xi screamed in pain, he shouted for Eggy to stop.

However, how could Her Lady Queen possibly pay attention to him? Not only did she not stop, her attacks grew even more ferocious.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, an explosion sounded from Hong Xi's body. Hong Xi's instrument to pass on his lineage had actually exploded.

“Ahhh!!!!” At that moment, Hong Xi screamed even more miserably. Tears were even rolling out of his eyes.

It was not only him, all of the men present felt a pain in their lower parts upon seeing that scene.

At that moment, they all had the same sort of opinion. That is, one must not harass a beauty like that.

The reason for that was because if they were to encounter a celestial fairy-like beauty who was actually a ruthless demoness, they would definitely end up in the same sort of miserable state as Hong Xi.

“Damned bitch! You actually destroyed my little brother! I’ll kill you! I’ll kill you!!!” Hong Xi snarled with grief.

He knew very well that Eggy had used a special method to destroy his partner. Thus, his partner was completely destroyed. No matter what he did, he would not be able to restore it.

Not to mention that he would soon die, even if he were to somehow survive this ordeal, he would still not be able to pass on his lineage for the rest of his life.

As a man, as a male lizard, that was something that he could not accept.

“It would seem that the lesson that I gave you is still insufficient. In that case, I shall let you experience how frightening Asura is.”

Eggy smiled coldly. The coldness in her eyes grew stronger. Then, black gaseous flames began to appear from the black claw. The black gaseous flames were like sharp blades as they dug into Hong Xi’s body.

“Ahhh!!!” Under such a situation, Hong Xi’s screams grew more and more miserable. Hearing his screams, the bystanders felt their blood run cold.

Even though the crowd did not know exactly what those black

gaseous flames that entered Hong Xi's body were doing, they were certain that they could not imagine what sort of pain Hong Xi was suffering right now.

At that moment, many people started to sigh. Hong Xi had tortured people his entire life. Yet now, he ended up being tortured by another instead.

However, Eggy remained quite humane toward Hong Xi. After she tore apart Hong Xi's body and refined his source energy all while he was still alive, she killed Hong Xi.

Actually, after Eggy refined his source energy, even if she didn't kill him, Hong Xi would not be able to survive.

After ruthlessly killing Hong Xi, Eggy happily returned to Chu Feng's world spirit gate. She did not bother to stay outside.

However, at that moment, the bystanders were all stunned. At that moment, the surroundings were absolutely silent. It was so quiet that it was frightening.

It was not that the people here did not wish to speak. Rather, they were truly scared after seeing Eggy's ruthlessness and overwhelming might. They feared that Eggy might start to dislike them and then leave them in a state the same as Hong Xi.

Asura. The legendary Asura World Spirit. Today, they had finally experienced one.

At this moment, they all understood why Asura World Spirits were said to be the most powerful and ruthless existences among the Seven Spirit Worlds.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you have truly broadened my horizons!!!" At the moment when the crowd were all stunned, Elder Liu Chengkun walked toward Chu Feng in midair. He had an excited expression on his face.

"It is all thanks to senior today. Else, I fear that I, Chu Feng, would have met my end here," Chu Feng clasped his fist to express

his thanks. After what happened here today, Chu Feng had an extremely good impression of Liu Chengkun.

Liu Chengkun sighed. “Speaking of it, I am ashamed. Little friend Chu Feng never needed my assistance. However, I insisted on getting involved. I am truly ashamed,” Elder Liu Chengkun said with an ashamed expression.

The way he saw it, with how powerful Chu Feng’s world spirit was, even if he had not involved himself, Chu Feng would have still been able to kill Hong Xi. Instead, it was because he insisted on involving himself that he ended up delaying Chu Feng from killing Hong Xi.

“Senior, if it wasn’t for you buying time for me, I would not have been able to defeat Hong Xi,” Chu Feng said.

Liu Chengkun’s expression changed. Curiously, he asked, “Oh? Why is that?”

“It is hard to explain with few words. Senior, let’s leave this place first. I will slowly explain things to you after,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, let’s go,” Liu Chengkun nodded his head repeatedly. Then, his body shifted as he entered the void.

Chu Feng also entered the void and the two of them began to journey in the shadows to quickly leave that place.

“Heavens! Exactly who is that Chu Feng? How could he be so powerful?”

“Powerful, too powerful. He simply does not need to do anything. Merely a single world spirit of his was able to kill the renowned Hong Xi. One must know that Hong Xi is a Vice Pavilion Master of Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Isn’t that Asura World Spirit too frightening? She was clearly only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. How was it that she was able to kill a rank one Martial Ancestor?”



“Her heaven-defying battle power is truly too ridiculous. Wouldn’t this mean that she possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, more powerful than the people of the Heavenly Clans?”

“Four levels of cultivation? No, it should be more. Else, how could she kill Hong Xi that easily? The way I see it, she must have a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

After Chu Feng and Liu Chengkun left, the people present were like freed horses. Immediately, they let loose all their emotions and started to let their tongues run wild.

They had to speak and unleash all the words that they had contained in their stomach, and all the shock they had felt in their hearts. Else, they would stifle themselves ill.

The reason for that was because what had happened had truly broadened their horizons. Likely, they would remember a name for the rest of their lives. As for that name, it would be Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, he was also overjoyed right now. Eggy’s strength was too powerful. Even though she only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, rank one Martial Ancestors were simply unable to withstand Eggy at all.

Thus, even though Eggy was only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng felt that she would be able to fight against even rank two Martial Ancestors.

A rank six Half Martial Ancestor capable of fighting against a rank two Martial Ancestor? Likely, no one would believe that something like that was possible. After all, it was truly too heaven-defying.

“Milady Queen, exactly what sort of origin do you possess? Are you the only one that’s this powerful? Or could it be... that all of

the Asura World Spirits are as powerful as you?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

## Chapter 2197 – Not Killed By Me

---

Eggy curled her lips and said, “You wish to know? Well, that’s simple. You merely need to summon a couple more Asura World Spirits. Wouldn’t that solve the problem then?”

“Forget about it. What use is there in summoning that many world spirits? Eggy, you alone are enough for me,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you serious or are you lying?” Eggy said with an expression of disbelief. However, she had a slightly delighted expression in her eyes.

“Of course it’s real. You are enough for me, my treasured Eggy,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Pah, enough of trying to take small advantages of me. Call me Queen,” Eggy said.

“Yes, Milady Queen,” Chu Feng hurriedly said.

“That’s more like it,” Eggy smiled sweetly. It could be seen that her mood was very good.

“Eggy, after refining a rank one Martial Ancestor, did you manage to make any progress in your cultivation?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Rank one Martial Ancestor? That guy’s actual cultivation was only that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Although rank nine Half Martial Ancestors might appear to be decent, they are simply unable to increase this Queen’s cultivation at all. After all, I killed him that easily. Thus, how could he possibly be able to help me increase my cultivation?”

“If you want me to increase my cultivation, you must seize the moment to quickly increase your cultivation. Only with you becoming stronger will I be able to become stronger. You don’t want me to protect you all the time, right?” Eggy said with a beaming smile.

“Of course,” Chu Feng nodded. Indeed, he did not want Eggy to protect him all the time. Instead, he wanted to protect her.

“Well then, concentrate on your journey, and chat with that old man a bit more. This Queen is going to rest now,” After Eggy finished saying those words, she laid down in the world spirit space.

“Rest well,” Although Eggy had gone to rest and refused to continue to chat with Chu Feng, the smile on Chu Feng’s face did not decrease in the slightest.

The sensation of Her Lady Queen being here was completely different to the sensation of her not being here. As long as Her Lady Queen was there, Chu Feng’s heart would not feel empty.

Actually, what Chu Feng had said to Her Lady Queen was said with sincerity. It was not that Chu Feng did not possess the capability to summon more world spirits. On the contrary, as long as he wished to summon more, not to mention a couple, even several hundreds of thousands would be of no issue to him.

However, Chu Feng did not wish to do that. After all, everyone knew that world spirits needed to refine source energies in order to increase their cultivation in this world. As for obtaining source energies, one must enter a path of constant killing.

Chu Feng would not go and kill people for no reason or cause. Killing powerful experts would be difficult. As for killing weak people, the world spirits would not be able to gain much of a benefit should he do that.

Thus, even though he only had a single Eggy, it was already very difficult for him to support her needs. If he were to summon more world spirits, there would be a problem when the time came to distribute the source energies after killing people. As Chu Feng did not wish to treat Eggy unfairly, he wanted to give her all of the source energies.

However, if he were to summon more world spirits, it would be unwise for him to be too prejudiced. As such, Chu Feng decided that he might as well not summon any more.

Apart from that, there was another reason. Chu Feng felt that even though they might all be Asura World Spirits, they would likely be inferior to Eggy in terms of strength.

His mother had spent meticulous effort to seal only Eggy and that Xue Ji in his body. There was most definitely a reason for that.

Thus, rather than summoning world spirits inferior to Eggy, Chu Feng felt that he might as well not summon any world spirits.

It was just like Chu Feng's Five Elements Secret Skills. Should the Five Elements Secret Skills be summoned, they would come out with cultivations one level above Chu Feng's.

For example, Chu Feng was currently a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. Should he summon the Five Elements Secret Skills, they would come out as five rank three Half Martial Ancestors.

While this might make them appear to be more powerful than Chu Feng, it was actually not the case.

Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. With his cultivation of rank two Half Martial Ancestor, he would be able to easily kill rank five Half Martial Ancestors and even fight against rank six Half Martial Ancestors.

That was the power of his Heavenly Bloodline. Everyone with a Heavenly Bloodline possessed that heaven-defying strength.

However, the Five Elements Secret Skills were different. At the Half Martial Ancestor level, they did not possess any heaven-defying battle power that surpassed other Half Martial Ancestors. At the very most, they would only be able to fight against experts of their same level of cultivation. In fact, they might not necessarily be able to defeat those experts.

After all, no matter how strong they might be, they remained merely Secret Skills, whereas their opponents were actual martial cultivators.

Thus, at that moment, the Five Elements Secret Skills were only able to provide Chu Feng with an undying and indestructible body against those with a relatively same level of battle power as him. They had practically no use in actual battle.

Right at that moment, Elder Liu Chengkun who was traveling together with Chu Feng suddenly said, “Chu Feng, your Asura World Spirit is extremely powerful.”

“Although her cultivation is not as strong as the Asura World Spirit I met before, for her to be able to kill Hong Xi that easily, her heaven-defying battle power is definitely at least capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, or even five levels of cultivation.”

“As for the Asura World Spirit I saw before, he only had a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.”

“Senior Liu, you’ve met other Asura World Spirits before?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“I have. This old man was fortunately able to see an Asura World Spirit once. That Asura World Spirit was released by a certain Upper Realm’s world spiritist, and was extremely powerful.”

“However, I feel that you will one day become a world spiritist even more powerful than him. The reason for that is because you have your cultivation at such a young age. I have never seen someone as powerful as you at your age.”

“Furthermore, your world spirit is also more powerful than that Asura World Spiritist’s world spirit. At the very least, her battle power surpasses that of the other world spirit.”

“Thus, I feel that your future accomplishments will definitely

surpass that world spiritist's. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will not be able to contain you," Liu Chengkun said.

'Sure enough, Milady Queen is extraordinary,' Chu Feng smiled a brighter smile. What Liu Chengkun said had already verified Chu Feng's guess. Among Asura World Spirits, Eggy was an existence more powerful than normal.

At that moment, the sweet voice of Her Lady Queen, who had clearly stated that she would be going to rest, suddenly sounded once again, "Never would I have expected that there would be Asura World Spiritists here too. Doesn't this mean that I will have the chance to fight against the fellows of our Asura Spirit World again?"

"That's true. I also wish to experience how powerful Asura World Spiritists might be," Chu Feng said in anticipation.

As they spoke, Chu Feng and Elder Liu Chengkun arrived at a mountain range. This mountain range was not very large. However, both the mountain range and the surrounding several tens of miles were completely uninhabited.

However, hidden in the mountain range was an underground palace. Without even Liu Chengkun saying anything, Chu Feng already knew that this must be the Red Butterfly Society's territory.

Merely, there was actually not a single person in the underground palace. It was as if this place was already abandoned.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, three figures suddenly flew out from the depths of the underground palace.

The person leading the group was a yellow-haired man. Chu Feng had met him before. He was also someone from the Red Butterfly Society. Back then, that man had used special methods to conceal his cultivation. However, he did not do so today. Thus, Chu Feng

was able to sense that he was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Although his strength was inferior to Liu Chengkun's, he was still extremely powerful.

As for the other two individuals, they were Tang Ying and her servant girl, A'cai.

Earlier, when Tang Ying and A'cai had escaped, Liu Chengkun had secretly dispatched his men to receive them. As for the person who had received them, it was that yellow-haired man.

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Tang Ying and A'cai both revealed pleasantly surprised smiles. Evidently, neither one of them had expected that Chu Feng would be able to survive.

"I pay my respects to Lord Elder!!!" After that yellow-haired man approached them, he immediately greeted Liu Chengkun respectfully. Then, he turned to Chu Feng and greeted him respectfully too, "It is a pleasure to meet you, little friend Chu Feng."

"Senior, you are being too courteous," Chu Feng hurriedly returned his greeting. He was able to tell that this yellow-haired man was much older than him. He, too, was someone who had lived for thousands of years.

"Chu Feng, let me introduce him to you. He is called Huang Luo. He is one of our Red Butterfly Society's elders," Liu Chengkun introduced.

"Chu Feng pays his respects to Senior Huang," Chu Feng clasped his fist again.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please don't. I, Huang Luo, am unable to bear your respect," Huang Luo laughed. It could be seen that he had a very good impression of Chu Feng. Else, he would not be this courteous.

"Lord Elder, it seems that you've succeeded in killing that Hong Xi?!" Huang Luo asked with an excited expression.



“He has indeed been killed. However, he was not killed by me. Instead, it was little friend Chu Feng who killed him,” Liu Chengkun said.

“What?” Hearing those words, not to mention Huang Luo, even Tang Ying and A’cai revealed stunned expressions.

# Chapter 2198 – Not Wanting To Become A Burden

---

“You all must still not know that little friend Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist, right?” Liu Chengkun said to the three people with a smile on his face.

“Asura World Spiritist?!!!” Sure enough, after hearing those words, Huang Luo, Tang Ying and A’cai were all startled.

If it were someone else that said those words, the three of them would definitely not believe it. However, Liu Chengkun was not someone who joked around. Thus, all of them believed him.

However, they still found it difficult to believe. After all, Asura World Spiritists were so very rare.

“Chu Feng, you’re too amazing, no? You’re actually an Asura World Spiritist? Why didn’t you mention it sooner?!” Tang Ying was wild with joy. She already knew that Chu Feng was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, she did not know that he was an Asura World Spiritist too.

One must know that Asura World Spiritists were no small matter. For example, if there were two Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, the value of the one that was an Asura World Spiritist would greatly surpass that of the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“You never asked me about it,” Chu Feng smiled lightly.

“But, even if little friend Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist, it shouldn’t be possible for him to have defeated Hong Xi. Could it be that little friend Chu Feng, you’re concealing your cultivation?” Huang Luo asked curiously.

“You’re mistaken. Little friend Chu Feng’s Asura World Spirit is extremely powerful. With merely that one world spirit, little friend Chu Feng killed Hong Xi.”

“Furthermore, Hong Xi simply did not have the ability to fight back,” Liu Chengkun explained.

“Ssssss~~~!!!!”

Hearing those words, the three individuals were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

From what Elder Liu Chengkun said, they were already able to tell that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Hong Xi by himself, and that it was Chu Feng’s world spirit that had killed Hong Xi.

However, generally, one’s world spirits would always be weaker than oneself. At the very most, they would possess the same level of cultivation as their master.

However, Chu Feng’s world spirit was actually even more powerful than him. This indirectly showed that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were very strong. Else, how could he possibly be able to control a world spirit more powerful than himself?

“Tang Ying, A’cai, what do you two plan to do? Are you planning to leave this place of troubles, or do you two plan to join the Red Butterfly Society?” Chu Feng asked Tang Ying. He had actually only followed Liu Chengkun here for Tang Ying’s sake.

“Join the Red Butterfly Society?” Hearing those words, Tang Ying and A’cai’s eyes shone.

“I have consulted with Senior Liu. As long as the two of you are willing, the Red Butterfly Society is willing to offer shelter to you two,” Chu Feng said.

“That is indeed the case. If you two are willing, our Red Butterfly Society shall become your home,” Liu Chengkun nodded.

“Thank you, Senior, for your kind intentions. Also, thank you Chu Feng. However, the two of us really do not wish to trouble you all any further.”

“Especially you, Chu Feng. We are but mere strangers that have only known one another for a short period of time. Yet, you’ve already saved me countless times. Furthermore, after you clearly instructed me that I must quickly leave this place, I still allowed myself to be captured by Hong Xi, and ended up implicating you. I truly...” As she spoke to that point, Tang Ying had an expression of guilt.

“Do not mention the things of the past anymore. Don’t forget, we are friends. Furthermore, I am your bodyguard,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Chu Feng, thank you. You are the best person I, Tang Ying, have ever met in my life. However, I truly do not wish to trouble you anymore,” Tang Ying said.

“In that case, it seems that you plan to bring A’cai far away from here?” Chu Feng already understood Tang Ying’s decision.

“Mn,” Tang Ying nodded.

“If that’s the case, I’ll help change your appearances again. Remember, this time around, you must get further away from here,” Chu Feng said. Last time around, he had already altered Tang Ying’s appearance before parting with her. However, she was still captured by Hong Xi. Furthermore, her appearance was also transformed back.

Thus, this time around, Chu Feng prepared to take his time altering her appearance so that even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to see through her altered appearance.

“Chu Feng, change our appearances to ones that are more ordinary,” Tang Ying said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed. Although Tang Ying could not be considered to be an absolute beauty, she was still very good-looking. Even A’cai was quite good-looking.

As the saying goes, everyone loves beauty. As for women, it was even more so for them.

Yet, Tang Ying actually voiced such a request. This meant that she was truly prepared to live the rest of her life ordinarily.

“Okay then,” In the end, Chu Feng nodded his head. Then, he began to alter Tang Ying and A’cai’s appearances. Chu Feng was extremely meticulous this time around. Even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to see through their altered appearances.

Merely, the current appearance of the two girls was inferior to even a tenth of their original appearances. Chu Feng felt very sorry to look at them.

This was especially true for Tang Ying. After all, she was the Young Miss of the Tang Family, someone who had possessed both status and wealth before. She used to be blessed. Unfortunately... people were unpredictable.

“Chu Feng, thank you,” After seeing their altered appearances, neither Tang Ying or A’cai felt any sense of loss. Instead, they were very happy.

After all, to the two of them, this was equivalent to a chance for them to be reborn.

“Let’s go. I’ll see you two off,” Chu Feng said. He was still worried for Tang Ying and A’cai. Thus, he wished to personally escort them far away from the area controlled by Luyang’s Pavilion.

“Chu Feng, I truly do not wish to trouble you anymore,” Tang Ying shook her head. She added, “Let us leave alone.”

“Since that’s the case, allow me to see you two off then,” Huang Luo said.

“There’s no need, truly no need. I do not wish to trouble everyone. After all, I am also a martial cultivator. I was born into

this dangerous world of martial cultivation. You all will be able to protect me for the time being, but will not be able to protect me forever. Let us leave by ourselves. It is also time for me to mature,” Tang Ying said.

Hearing Tang Ying saying it like that, Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo didn't know what to say. The two of them both looked to Chu Feng. After all, Tang Ying... was Chu Feng's friend.

“Very well. Tang Ying, A'cai, the two of you must take care of yourselves,” Chu Feng did not force Tang Ying.

“Chu Feng, seniors, I will forever remember your assistance to us. Farewell,” After saying those words, Tang Ying and A'cai both bowed to Chu Feng, Liu Chengkung and Huang Luo respectively.

Chu Feng and the others did not refuse them. They all knew that Tang Ying had a knot in her heart. Doing this would instead make her feel more comfortable.

After that, Tang Ying and A'cai left. Even though Tang Ying was hiding her state of mind, Chu Feng was still able to tell that she was feeling very reluctant to part.

She was reluctant, yet she still insisted on leaving. The reason for that was because she did not wish to become Chu Feng's burden.

“Seniors, thank you two for your help today. I, Chu Feng, am unable to return the favor of your assistance today. Please accept these Incomplete Ancestral Armaments,” Chu Feng took out four Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. They were the weapons from the Tang Family's Family Head, the Cao Family's Family Head, Elder Yuan Zhen and that Hong Xi.

“Chu Feng, it is actually you who saved me today. I absolutely cannot accept those,” Liu Chengkun refused.

“Senior, we are but strangers who met by chance. Yet, you were willing to brave fatal danger to your life to rescue me. If you do not accept these, I, Chu Feng, will feel always feel uncomfortable,”

Chu Feng said.

“If that really is the case, then you really do not have to do this. Little friend Chu Feng, I merely have a single request for you,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Senior, please speak,” Chu Feng said.

“Could you join our Red Butterfly Society?” Liu Chengkun said.

“...” Chu Feng revealed a difficult expression upon hearing those words. He really did not wish to join any power, because he possessed hidden difficulties.

“Haha, little friend Chu Feng, do not take it to heart. I was merely joking,” Seeing Chu Feng’s difficult expression, Liu Chengkun started to laugh as if he was joking.

However, as he laughed, Liu Chengkun’s complexion suddenly changed. Then, his mouth opened wide, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood. The blood landed directly onto Chu Feng.

After vomiting that mouthful of blood, Liu Chengkun’s body started to twitch violently. Soon, he lost consciousness. However, even though he had lost consciousness, his body was still twitching nonstop.

# Chapter 2199 – Accidental Discovery

---

“Senior!!!” Upon seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly set up a healing formation. He had Liu Chengkun lay onto the healing formation, and then began to infuse his spirit power into Liu Chengkun’s body to diagnose and heal him.

“Dang! That old man is truly too tired of living. You have merely refused him once more. Yet, he actually decided to mutilate himself?” Eggy said in a very surprised manner.

“No, he is not self-mutilating, nor is he injured. Rather, he is ill,” Chu Feng said.

“Ill?” Hearing those words, Eggy’s expression changed. She did not understand why Liu Chengkun would be ill all of a sudden.

“Yes, he is indeed ill. Furthermore, he is extremely ill. This should be a relapse of his illness,” After Chu Feng said those words, he grew silent, and started to set up another spirit formation to help Liu Chengkun treat his illness.

The spirit formation he set up this time around was very powerful. Chu Feng even added a lot of rare healing medicinal herbs into his spirit formation. He was planning to use that spirit formation to treat Liu Chengkun’s illness.

Unfortunately, that illness was truly too difficult to cure. It took an entire day and night of effort for Chu Feng to stabilize Liu Chengkun’s illness.

However... he had only managed to stabilize it. Chu Feng was shocked to discover that he was simply unable to cure Liu Chengkun’s illness. In fact, he was incapable of even helping Liu Chengkun regain consciousness.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly amazing. Even our Society President needed at least two days and night to stabilize Elder Liu’s illness. Never would I have expected that you would be able to



stabilize his illness in a single day,” Huang Luo stepped forward and said to Chu Feng.

“In that case, you all already know of Senior Liu’s illness?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I will not conceal this from you. What Elder Liu has is an incurable disease. Only Immortal-cloak World Spiritists would be able to treat his illness.”

“However, even for Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, they must still treat him on a daily schedule. Furthermore, they must continue to do so for an entire year in order to cure his illness.”

“For existences like Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, how could they possibly be willing to spend an entire year to treat the illnesses of people like us? That is why Elder Liu’s illness could be said to be an incurable disease.”

“In fact, Elder Liu’s illness has already entered the terminal stage. He will not be able to continue to live for much longer.”

“That is also the reason why his illness relapsed so quickly. His situation is truly becoming more and more unstable,” Huang Luo said in succession.

After knowing about that matter, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Even though Chu Feng had not known Liu Chengkun for long, he greatly admired Liu Chengkun and felt indebted to him.

Upon thinking that a good man like him would not be able to live for long because of his illness, Chu Feng felt truly unreconciled.

“Chu Feng, it is actually not a coincidence that we appeared at the Tang Family. Rather, Elder Liu deliberately brought me there with him.”

“He had received the news, and deduced that you might go to save Tang Ying. That is why he wanted to help you.”

“Elder Liu truly thought very highly of you. He deeply hoped that

you would be able to join our Red Butterfly Society. He even declared that it was the loss of our Red Butterfly Society for you to refuse to join us.”

“At the same time, he also declared that even if you were to refuse to join our Red Butterfly Society, he still did not wish for a talent like you to fall at the hands of Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Speaking of it, I am ashamed. After Elder Liu made that decision, I even urged him not to bear dangers because of you.”

“The reason for that was because I am very certain that even Elder Liu would not have certainty in being able to defeat Hong Xi. Merely... he refused to listen to my advice.”

“Thus, Chu Feng, Elder Liu was truly prepared to sacrifice himself to help you before he even left for the Tang Family,” Huang Luo said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt even more unwell.

“Chu Feng, I can tell that you are a passionate person. I also know that you will definitely feel uncomfortable after knowing about all this.”

“However, you actually do not have to feel too uncomfortable. The reason Elder Liu was willing to sacrifice himself for you is also because of the fact that he knew he would not be able to live for long.”

“Rather than being tormented to death by his illness, he was more willing to die with meaning. To him, dying to save you was something very meaningful,” Huang Luo said.

“Senior, you don’t have to say it like that. Since you said that his illness is curable by Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, it means that Senior Liu will not necessarily die,” Chu Feng said.

“While it is true that Immortal-cloak World Spiritists will be able to cure him, and we have also attempted to find him an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to heal him. But...!” Huang Luo did not finish

his words, and started to sigh.

Chu Feng was actually trying to tell Huang Luo that he would one day become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. If Liu Chengkun was still alive then, he would be willing to treat Liu Chengkun's illness.

Merely, Chu Feng did not wish to boast. After all, he was not yet an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. He also did not know how long it would take for him to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. That was the reason why he did not say those things.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the underground palace suddenly started to shake. A large motion came from the surface above.

“Crap! Could it be that people from Luyang's Pavilion have pursued us here?” Huang Luo's expression immediately changed.

“Senior Huang, wait here first. I'll go out and have a look,” As Chu Feng spoke, he flew out of the underground palace. After concealing his aura, he soared into the sky.

Merely, after he soared into the sky and looked to the mountain forest down below, Chu Feng was unable to find any trace of people from Luyang's Pavilion. In fact, he did not even discover any destruction to the mountain below.

Unable to find anything, Chu Feng decided to cast his gaze toward the direction where the quake originated from.

“That is?”

After using his Heaven's Eyes to observe his surroundings, Chu Feng was shocked to discover that a soft light had appeared at the location where the quake had originated from.

That light was very beautiful. However, he was only able to see it when using his Heaven's Eyes.

“That light is strange. I did not see it before I coming here. It is

definitely man-made.”

Chu Feng was unable to determine what that light was. However, he wanted to go and investigate it. Thus, he hid himself in the void, then began to carefully proceed toward the location that the light covered.

Finally, Chu Feng entered the location covered by the light. It was a lake in the mountain range.

That light invisible to the naked eye was covering the entire lake.

After entering the lake, the light grew more and more concentrated.

Inside the dense concentration of light, Chu Feng’s spirit power actually lost its effectiveness. Likewise, his Heaven’s Eyes also lost their effect.

“Could it be a treasure?”

At that moment, Chu Feng had a faint sensation that the light should be coming from some sort of treasure. Else, it would be impossible for it to isolate his spirit power and even his Heaven’s Eyes’ power of observation.

Although Chu Feng was unable to determine what sort of treasure it was, Chu Feng was certain that it was most definitely not caused by the people from Luyang’s Pavilion.

‘Who came here?’

‘Who used this sort of treasure?’

‘What is their intention? Could it be that there are treasures in the lake?’

With many questions in his mind, Chu Feng continued onward. However, the further he proceeded, the less Chu Feng could see.

In the end, Chu Feng was only able to see things within ten meters of him. For everything more than ten meters away, he could only see indistinct shadows.

In such a situation, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless. Although he had concealed his aura, he decided that he would take out his Magma Emperor Sword. After concealing the light emitted by the blazing Magma Emperor Sword, he proceeded onward even more carefully.

Chu Feng had a sensation that he was growing closer and closer to that treasure.

Finally, Chu Feng saw an indistinct silhouette. It was growing closer and closer, closer and closer. Finally, that silhouette came within ten meters of Chu Feng's line of sight.

“Sssss!!!”

Upon seeing that figure, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

He saw a woman. She was very beautiful. Although her beauty could not compare to Eggy's, she was definitely not someone that Tang Ying could compare with.

Her straight and lifted nose, her lush and soft lips, and that sexy oval face. It could be said that this woman's facial features were extremely good.

Furthermore, in addition to her exquisite facial features, that woman also had an extremely good figure. She had curves all at the right places. It could be said that she possessed a demon-like figure.

Furthermore, that woman's skin was extremely good. Not only was her skin fair like snow, her skin was also sparking and translucent like a pearl.

Most importantly, such a beauty was actually wearing nothing right now.

Just like that... completely naked, she appeared before Chu Feng's line of sight.

## Chapter 2200 – Free Treatment

---

She didn't seem to be bathing. Rather, it seemed like she was treating her injuries. The reason for that was because she was sitting in the water with her legs crossed. Surrounding her was a spirit formation. Furthermore, her eyes were tightly closed. Only her long eyelashes were trembling slightly.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that woman's tightly closed eyes suddenly opened. When she saw Chu Feng, she immediately revealed an astonished expression.

Evidently, she was startled. However, immediately after that, her shock and astonishment were replaced with killing intent.

“Drop dead!!!”

Seeing Chu Feng, the woman shot forth a fist strike. As Chu Feng was within ten meters of her, that strike arrived instantly.

Rank one Half Martial Ancestor. This woman's age should be about the same as Chu Feng's. However, she possessed the cultivation of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. That sort of strength at her age was truly not weak at all.

Furthermore, she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. In other words, even though she was only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor, she actually possessed the strength of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Merely, although her strength was very strong for someone of her age, she could not be considered very strong for Chu Feng.

At the very least, she was simply unable to injure Chu Feng.

“Crash~~~”

With a single thought from Chu Feng, the incoming fist's power

was neutralized.

“It was an accident,” After Chu Feng said those words, he immediately flew away and distanced himself from the lake.

Chu Feng had wanted to leave to avoid the problem. However, he kept feeling that it was inappropriate for him to do that. After all, he had managed to see a young girl’s naked body.

Whether he did it intentionally or not, it remained that he owed her for seeing her naked body. As such, Chu Feng decided to stand at the surface of the lake and wait for the woman to appear.

“Buzz~~~”

Sure enough, the multicolored sunset-like light began to rush toward the lake. Soon, it completely disappeared.

“Splatter~~~”

Following that, a wave surged into the sky, and a figure appeared before Chu Feng.

It was that woman. She was wearing clothes now. Her long light green skirt made her resemble a spirite.

However, for some unknown reason, even though this woman was already wearing clothes, her completely naked appearance kept appearing in Chu Feng’s mind as he saw her.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, a sharp sword appeared in the woman’s hand. That sword was only a meter long. It was also light green in color. However, once the sword appeared, a boundless might appeared alongside it. That was not an ordinary sword. Rather, it was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Even if you are to use your Incomplete Ancestral Armament, you will still be no match against me. How about we solve this peacefully?” Chu Feng said.

“Bastard sex fiend, tell me your name!” That woman pointed her

sword at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Sex fiend? I think you’re mistaken here. I did not look at you on purpose.”

“Furthermore, if I were truly a sex fiend, would there be a need for me to escape? Your strength is inferior to my own. I am completely capable of raping you. As such, why must I only look at your naked body?” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the woman’s face turned deep red. However, she seemed to feel that what Chu Feng said was not without reason.

“Enough of your quibbling. If you did not do so for the sake of seeing my naked body, why did you appear here?” The woman asked.

“I was resting in the mountain, it was you who caused the mountain to shake. I thought something happened, and thus stepped into the sky to check things out.”

“After seeing the light, I felt that something was strange. Thus, I came here to investigate what was going on,” Chu Feng explained.

“You can see the light?” The woman asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Then, how did you manage to break through the layer of light?” The woman asked.

“Break through? There was simply no obstruction. Thus, how could there be a need to break through it?” Chu Feng said.

“What? You did not encounter the defensive spirit formation?” The woman asked.

“Evidently not,” Chu Feng shrugged.

“That damned old fart. He actually dared to deceive me,” Suddenly, the woman became furious. As she spoke, she took out a crystal ball and tossed it far away.



In response, Chu Feng extended his palm and caught the crystal ball.

“The twilight that could seal off spirit power was released by this crystal ball?” After inspecting the crystal ball carefully, Chu Feng asked the woman, “Where did you obtain this?”

“Why do you care? Return it to me,” The woman extended her hand.

“You don’t even want it anymore. Thus, since I’ve picked it up, it’s mine now,” Chu Feng said jokingly.

“Who said I didn’t want it? I was merely playing with it by tossing it around,” The woman quibbled.

In response, Chu Feng smiled. Then, he tossed the crystal ball back to the woman. He said, “That crystal ball is indeed capable of spreading out a fluctuation capable of stopping spirit power. However, it simply does not contain any defensive formation.”

“Damned old fart, he indeed deceived me,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, the woman grew even more furious, and began to gnash her teeth angrily. However, she still put the crystal ball away.

Suddenly, the woman’s expression changed. It turned fiery red. It was as if she was broiling. At the same time, heat began to spread from her.

At the same time, her body became incomparably weak. It was as if she would die in the very next moment.

“Damn it,” The woman immediately turned around and rushed back into the lake.

In response, Chu Feng started to frown. His gaze began to change. In the end, he also entered the lake. He had decided to follow the woman.

“Why are you following me? Have you not seen enough?” Upon

seeing Chu Feng, the woman asked in a displeased manner.

“With your world spirit techniques, even if you were to strip yourself naked and soak in the lake, you would not be able to cure your illness. I, on the other hand, am able to help you,” Chu Feng said.

What Chu Feng said was the truth. He had already managed to discern the change that was happening to the woman’s body, and determined that she had a special sort of illness.

Chu Feng was able to associate her being naked in the water to a sort of healing technique.

Unfortunately, that woman’s world spirit techniques were insufficient; she was merely an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. For a world spiritist of her level, it would be very difficult for her to cure her illness in a short period of time.

“You’ve actually managed to discern that I am ill?” The woman revealed an astonished expression. At the same time, she was on guard against Chu Feng.

“I accidentally saw your body earlier. However, I most definitely did not do that on purpose. If you wish to blame someone or something for it, you can only blame your lousy crystal ball.”

“If you didn’t use it to let out a light that only a world spiritist could see, I might not have been able to find you. However, as you have used it, it attracted me toward it.”

“However, regardless of how it came to be, it remains that I have seen your body. Thus, I feel that I must apologize to you for it. Furthermore, as a compensation, I am willing to stabilize your illness for free,” Chu Feng said.

“Enough of your nonsense. My illness is something only a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist or those above them would be able to stabilize in a short period of time,” The woman said.

“That’s why I can,” Chu Feng said.

“Liar. At your age, how could you possibly be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?” The woman revealed an expression of disbelief. In fact, she even felt deep contempt toward Chu Feng. She felt that Chu Feng was boasting.

“Do you believe me now?” With a thought from Chu Feng, a strand of Dragon Mark Royal-cloak spirit power was emitted from his body and started to spiral around him.

“You’re actually really a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist?!” Upon seeing that, the woman’s eyes opened wide as she revealed an astonished expression.

“So, do you want me to help? If I am to help you, you will not have to undress. However, if you plan to rely on yourself, I’m afraid you’ll have to undress again. Furthermore, you will not be able to stabilize your illness in a short period of time.”

“Furthermore, with how things are with you now, you will not be able to leave this place, and must stay in the lake to treat your illness.”

“If someone is to pass by this place and see you like I did, I wouldn’t dare to guarantee that they would be a man of honor like myself, and not do anything to you,” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!”

“I’ll tell you this, I am the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Management Elder Su Jingrui’s personal disciple.”

“If you dare to do anything to me, I will have you suffer the consequences of your actions,” The woman threatened Chu Feng fiercely.

# Chapter 2201 – Absolute Trust

---

“Since you don’t want my help, then forget about it,” Chu Feng stood up and prepared to leave the lake.

“Hey, hey, hey! Who said that you could leave? I’m telling you to help me treat my illness. But... you must not think about doing anything ulterior to me,” The woman said loudly.

“Do I look like that sort of person?” Chu Feng asked.

“You do,” The woman nodded without the slightest hesitation.

“You truly have a pig brain,” Chu Feng sighed helplessly. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, his world spirit power began to appear.

Then, Chu Feng’s hands began to change rapidly. His world spirit power also started to transform nonstop. In merely the blink of an eye, he created a golden-bright and dazzling spirit formation that surrounded the woman’s body.

“This guy!!!” After seeing the spirit formation Chu Feng had created, the woman revealed an astonished and admiring gaze.

As a fellow world spiritist, she had never expected Chu Feng to not only be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, his world spirit techniques were also this skillful.

After seeing Chu Feng’s abilities, the woman began to cooperate with Chu Feng. Thus, it became much easier for Chu Feng to treat her illness.

With Chu Feng’s meticulous effort, he finally managed to stabilize the woman’s illness. At the very least, her illness would not relapse for the time being.

However, even though this woman’s illness had been stabilized rather quickly, her illness was actually even more serious than Elder Liu Chengkun’s illness. Likely, even Immortal-cloak World Spiritists would find it very difficult to cure her illness.

Chu Feng truly did not know how this woman had contracted such a powerful illness. Most importantly, her illness seemed to be something she had been born with. In other words, it had been destined that she would contract this illness since she was born.

“Never would I have expected that you actually do have some real skills. Hey, what’s your name?”

“Which power are you from? How come I’ve never heard of a character like you? You’re so young, yet you already possess the cultivation of a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, and also a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. You are simply capable of comparing with that bunch of bastards from the Heavenly Clans. However, I feel that you are even stronger than them.”

“Furthermore, most importantly, you are a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, your world spirit techniques surpass all of the other Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists I’ve met before. Tell me, exactly who are you?”

“Someone like you cannot be a nameless nobody.”

After the woman’s illness was stabilized, she began to ask Chu Feng questions in succession. She had completely forgotten the matter of Chu Feng seeing her naked.

“Could it be that you don’t know that you should tell others your name first when asking for their name?” Chu Feng said.

“I am called Xu Yiyi. I am a disciple of the Sunset Cloud Valley,” The woman said.

“I am called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“What? You are that Chu Feng?” Hearing those words, that Xu Yiyi woman once again revealed an astonished expression. Merely, her astonishment this time around was even greater than all her previous astonishments combined. She was so shocked that her mouth even hung open.

“You know me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I don’t. However, I’ve heard of you. You didn’t go save your friend?”

“That’s reasonable too. With your cultivation, if you had gone to save your friend, your life would definitely be lost,” Xu Yiyi said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng realized what was going on. For the sake of capturing Chu Feng, Hong Xi had spread the news of Tang Ying’s capture everywhere. Likely, this Xu Yiyi had received that news.

“I have only managed to stabilize your illness, and not bring it under permanent control. I urge you to quickly continue with your journey. Else, your illness might act up again. After all, not everyone is as kind-hearted as me, not everyone will not take advantage of others, and even lend a helping hand,” Chu Feng said.

“Hey hey hey! Judging from your tone, it seems that you’re not happy? Is it because of the fact that I said that you didn’t go save your friend, that I indirectly said that you are not loyal to your friends, that caused you to be angry?” Xu Yiyi said with a ‘teehee’ laughter.

“The two of us are already even. Farewell,” As Chu Feng spoke, he entered the void.

After all, he had only come out to inspect the situation outside. Huang Luo might be very worried right now. Thus, Chu Feng felt that he should return quickly and explain what was going on to Huang Luo.

In response, Xu Yiyi shouted, “Hey hey hey, wait! I have a gift for you,”

However, Chu Feng had only helped her to make it up to her for accidentally seeing her naked. Now that he had compensated her for his action, he no longer owed her anything. As such, he would naturally not accept anything from her.

Thus, Chu Feng heard her calls but did not wish to accept her gift.

“What a petty man. I can’t even crack a joke with you.”

“I didn’t even do anything to you after you saw me naked. Why did you run away right after I cracked a joke?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had left, Xu Yiyi pouted her lips in a displeased manner. She opened her hand and looked to the title plate on her palm and shook her head, “It’s you who was too narrow-minded. It’s not me that didn’t want to help you.”

After saying those words, Xu Yiyi’s petite body moved. Like a cyan light, she soared into the clouds and began to fly toward the distance. As for that direction, it was the direction of Luyang’s Pavilion.

As for Chu Feng, he naturally did not notice the direction that Xu Yiyi had left in. At that moment, he had returned to the underground palace.

“Senior Liu, you’ve awakened?!!!” After returning, Chu Feng immediately revealed an overjoyed expression. The reason for that was because Liu Chengkun had awakened.

“Chu Feng, I have heard from Huang Luo what happened. I truly do not know how to thank you for stabilizing my illness,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Senior, that is merely something that this junior should do. How are you feeling now?” Chu Feng asked in a deeply concerned manner.

“I am not exaggerating at all. Compared to all the other times when I wake up from my illness, this time around is the most comfortable.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, your world spirit techniques are truly exceptional. Although you are a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, your world spirit techniques have already surpassed

those of our Society President. Little friend Chu Feng, you are truly worthy of being an Asura World Spiritist,” Liu Chengkun praised.

“Senior, if you continue to flatter me like this, I will grow conceited,” Chu Feng scratched his head awkwardly.

“Chu Feng, it seems that the motion earlier was unrelated to Luyang’s Pavilion?” Huang Luo asked.

After seeing that Chu Feng was not worried at all after returning, he had managed to guess the result of Chu Feng’s inspection. However, he wanted to ascertain his guess.

“It was merely a passerby, and not someone from Luyang’s Pavilion. Furthermore, her cultivation was only that of a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. She poses no threat to us,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s great,” Huang Luo nodded in relief.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this old man has a presumptuous request. I don’t know if you might come to our...” Liu Chengkun said.

However, before Liu Chengkun finished his words, Chu Feng interrupted and said, “If Senior Liu wants to invite me to be a guest to the Red Butterfly Society, you don’t have to mention it anymore.”

“Eh...” Hearing those words, Liu Chengkun was placed in an awkward situation and unable to continue his words.

Huang Luo was also placed in an awkward situation. They had both thought that Chu Feng would refuse. However, they had not expected that Chu Feng would refuse so bluntly.

“The reason for that is because even if Senior Liu doesn’t invite me, I would’ve asked Senior Liu to bring me to the Red Butterfly Society to have a look,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Hearing those words, Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo both revealed overjoyed expressions. They truly never expect that Chu



Feng would... take such a long pause between his sentences.

Furthermore, they had not expected that Chu Feng would actually agree to be a guest of the Red Butterfly Society.

“Hahaha, this is great. It is our Red Butterfly Society’s blessing to have an honored guest like little friend Chu Feng.”

“Our Society President will definitely be extremely fond of you after seeing you,” Liu Chengkun was very happy. He was simply wild with joy.

“Senior, please stop flattering me. Those words should be things that I should say,” Chu Feng was telling the truth. As matters stood, he possessed a certain amount of understanding of the Red Butterfly Society.

The Red Butterfly Society’s range of activity was only in the territory controlled by Luyang’s Pavilion. It was a power that dared to meet Luyang’s Pavilion head-on.

The Red Butterfly Society was also what Luyang’s Pavilion wanted to eliminate. Thus, the various branches and headquarters of the Red Butterfly Society were all constructed in places that no one knew about. Furthermore, their movements were also very secretive. Only the people from the Red Butterfly Society knew of their locations.

This was especially true for the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters. Their headquarters was their greatest secret. In fact, the location of the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters would always change after a certain period of time. Furthermore, members of the Red Butterfly Society without sufficient qualifications would not know of the location of their headquarters. This was even more so the case for an outsider like Chu Feng.

However, right now, Elder Liu Chengkun had actually invited Chu Feng to their headquarters as a guest. This was simply

absolute trust in Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2202 – Deliberately Making Things Difficult

---

After deciding, Chu Feng followed Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo until they directly arrived outside of a small city.

Although the small city was not very large, that was only so when compared to the other cities in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. If this city were to be placed in the Nine Provinces Continent, it would be considered a small country with countless tangled and complicated powers.

According to Liu Chengkun, the strongest person in the city was the master of the city. As for his cultivation, it was only that of a peak Half Martial Emperor.

Being managed by the city master, the small city was very neat and tidy. The ordinary commoners in the city could be said to be living in peace and working happily.

However, no one would've imagined that this unremarkable looking city actually possessed an underground city below it. Furthermore... that underground city was the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters.

At that moment, Chu Feng had followed Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo into the underground city.

Although it was considered an underground city, due to powerful world spirit techniques, there was a blue sky, white clouds and a blazing sun in that underground world. Furthermore... not only was the sun emitting blazing heat, it would also rise from the east and set in the west everyday.

Looking at it, that place resembled a completely different world. However, with a single glance, Chu Feng was able to tell that all of these were done by a world spiritist. To put it simply, this underground palace could be said to be an independent space

created by a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

Furthermore, in that independent space were many powerful defensive formations and slaughtering formations.

If one wished to bypass those spirit formations, one must pass through a spirit formation gate. However, outside of the spirit formation gate stood a total of a hundred Half Martial Ancestor-level experts.

Those guards all possessed grave expressions. They were on high alert as they surveyed the surroundings. Furthermore, they all held Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. They were truly well-trained guards.

At the very least, this was the first time Chu Feng had seen guards as earnest to their task as them.

“We pay our respects to Lord Elder.”

Right after those guards saw Liu Chengkun, they all immediately revealed respectful gazes. One after another, they began to greet him respectfully.

Furthermore, the guards also hurriedly opened the world spirit gate.

“Thank you all for your troubles,” Liu Chengkun said to the guards. He did not put on the airs of arrogance that elders generally had. Instead, he was concerned for the guards from the bottom of his heart.

“No, not at all,” The guards replied in unison. Their voices were very loud and clear. It could be seen from their attitude that they respected Liu Chengkun from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Yoh, isn’t this Elder Liu? You’ve finally returned.”

Before Liu Chengkun, Huang Luo and Chu Feng even entered the world spirit gate, a voice sounded from within the gate.

Turning his head toward the direction of the voice, Chu Feng’s

expression immediately changed. There were two men. One had the appearance of a middle-aged man, whereas the other had the appearance of a young man.

Chu Feng had seen that young man before. It was that fellow that had disliked Chu Feng on the day Chu Feng had first met Liu Chengkun and the others. Chu Feng even remembered his name to be Zhao Xiao.

As for that middle-aged man, he possessed an appearance that resembled that Zhao Xiao. Chu Feng felt that middle-aged man to most likely be Zhao Xiao's father.

Neither of the two men were hiding their cultivation. Zhao Xiao possessed a cultivation the same as Chu Feng's, he was a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

As for Zhao Xiao's father, he possessed the same cultivation as Elder Huang Luo, a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

"Mn?" Suddenly, Zhao Xiao's father noticed Chu Feng. His expression changed immediately. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, "Who is that man?"

"Father, that man is that Chu Feng," Zhao Xiao said. His 'father' verified that Chu Feng's guess was correct, that the middle-aged man was indeed his father.

"Chu Feng? How could someone like him be allowed to enter our Red Butterfly Society's headquarters? Men! Capture that Chu Feng!" Zhao Xiao's father shouted.

"Who dares?!" Elder Liu Chengkun shouted coldly. Once he said those words, not a single guard dared to move.

"Elder Liu, how could you bring someone like him to our Red Butterfly Society's headquarters?"

"As an elder of the Red Butterfly Society, have you forgotten even the most basic rule that we have? Not to mention an outsider like him, even for the people of our Red Butterfly Society, they would

not be allowed to enter our Red Butterfly Society's headquarters without a significant amount of contribution to our Red Butterfly Society!" Zhao Xiao's father shouted loudly.

"Impudent! Have you forgotten your status?! How dare you speak to me in such a manner?!" Liu Chengkun was angered. Not only that, he even unleashed his own oppressive might.

Once his rank one Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might was unleashed, not to mention Zhao Xiao, even Zhao Xiao's father's expression changed enormously.

Even if he was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, an existence a step away from becoming a Martial Ancestor, it remained that he was not yet a Martial Ancestor. When faced with the oppressive might of a rank one Martial Ancestor, he would not be able to withstand it.

"In that case, what if I am to say that to you?!" Right at that moment, a sneer sounded from within the world spirit gate. Following that, a boundless oppressive might appeared.

Not only did that oppressive might instantly neutralize Liu Chengkun's oppressive might, it also caused Chu Feng to frown deeply.

The reason for that was because that oppressive might was much more powerful than Elder Liu Chengkun's oppressive might.

That was not the oppressive might of a rank one Martial Ancestor. Instead, it was the oppressive might of a rank two Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, that oppressive might was very vicious. It was not simply there to frighten someone.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt that his body was about to be crushed, his breathing was about to stop and blood was about to burst out. Then, unable to contain himself, a mouthful of blood sprayed from Chu Feng's mouth.

Following that, "snap, snap" sounds began to be heard from Chu

Feng's body nonstop. Chu Feng's bones were being shattered by that oppressive might.

“Zhao Ruofan, what are you doing?! Little friend Chu Feng is an honored guest invited by me, how could you injure him like this?!” In response, Liu Chengkun, who was also in a very difficult state started to shout.

“Haha...” Soon, a laugh was heard. At that moment, an old man had appeared at the world spirit gate.

“We pay our respects to Lord Vice President,” Upon seeing that old man, the guards hurriedly clasped their fists to greet him. Even Huang Luo, who was also being crushed by the oppressive might's pressure, bore the pain from the oppressive might and greeted that old man respectfully.

“Grandfather, Elder Liu, he actually... unleashed his oppressive might at father and I for the sake of an outsider. Grandfather, you must uphold justice for us,” After seeing that old man, Zhao Xiao revealed an expression of grievance. He was on the verge of crying. He truly had the appearance of a [grandson](#).

His ‘grandfather’ explained the identity of the old man. Evidently, he was not only the Red Butterfly Society's Vice President, he was also closely related to Zhao Xiao and his father.

“Rest assured, as the Vice President of the Red Butterfly Society, I have always handled things justly. I will definitely not allow anyone to violate the rules of our Red Butterfly Society,” After Zhao Ruofan said those words, he suddenly pointed to Chu Feng and said, “Men! Capture that outsider!”

“Who dares?!!!” Liu Chengkun was so furious his eyes turned red.

“I dare!!!” Zhao Ruofan shouted. His oppressive might increased.

His surging oppressive might suddenly descended. Not only did his oppressive might overwhelm Chu Feng to the ground, it also made Liu Chengkun fall on his knees with a loud “putt.”

“Lord Vice President, please be lenient. Elder Liu is seriously ill,” In response, Huang Luo hurriedly started pleading for mercy.

“Seriously ill? How many years ago has it been since he was declared to be seriously ill? However, he’s living better off than anyone else.”

“You have returned together with him. As such, you are his accomplice. Thus, you must kneel too,” Seeing that Huang Luo was begging for mercy for Liu Chengkun, the anger in Zhao Ruofan’s eyes increased. Using his oppressive might, he forced Huang Luo to also kneel before him.

Then, Zhao Ruofan swept his cold gaze at the guards. “What’s this? Are you all not even listening to the orders of your Vice President?”

At that moment, how could those guards possibly dare to continue to stand there? One by one, they hurriedly moved forward to capture Chu Feng.

“Liu Chengkun, listen carefully. Don’t think that you can strut around in the Red Butterfly Society just because you’re the Society President’s master.”

“In this Red Butterfly Society, I, Zhao Ruofan, hold the highest authority after the Society President!” Zhao Ruofan pointed at the kneeling Liu Chengkun and spoke fiercely.

“The Society President has arrived!!!”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from within the world spirit gate.

Hearing that voice, the expression of Zhao Ruofan, who had been wearing an expression of complacency, suddenly changed.

Grandson is also a derogatory term.



## Chapter 2203 – Society President

---

At the moment the declaration of the Society President's arrival was heard, Zhao Ruofan hurriedly removed his oppressive might that was crushing Chu Feng, Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo.

Escorted by a group of Red Butterfly Society experts, Chu Feng managed to see the Red Butterfly Society's President.

Merely, Chu Feng was surprised to find out that the mysterious Red Butterfly Society's President was actually a female.

The Lady Society President appeared to be very young. She could not be considered extremely beautiful. However, she was very dignified and charismatic.

Furthermore, she was much younger than Chu Feng had imagined the Society President would be. She was actually not even a hundred years old. Strictly speaking, she was still only a member of the younger generation.

However, her strength was not weak at all. Chu Feng was able to tell that she was a rank one Martial Ancestor.

This was the first time Chu Feng had seen a member of the younger generation with the cultivation of Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng felt that her strength was not only limited to that of a rank one Martial Ancestor. Else, she wouldn't be qualified to become this Red Butterfly Society's President or make Zhao Ruofan, a rank two Martial Ancestor, fear her like that.

That's right, he was afraid. Even though Zhao Ruofan had managed to conceal his fear very well, Chu Feng was able to tell from Zhao Ruofan's flickering gaze that he was panicking and feeling uneasy.

"I pay my respects to Lady Society President!!!"

Sure enough, after adjusting himself, Zhao Ruofan hurriedly

stepped toward that Lady Society President to respectfully greet her.

In response, the others also greeted her respectfully. Even Liu Chengkun and Huang Luo, who had been forced to kneel on the ground, hurriedly stood up to greet her respectfully.

“Vice President Zhao, what are you doing? Why did I see my master and Elder Huang kneeling on the ground earlier? Furthermore, not only is my honored guest lying on the ground, he is also seriously injured,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President asked.

“Honored guest?” Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan’s expression turned sluggish, and more fear appeared in his gaze.

“Chu Feng is the honored guest that I had my master go invite,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“This subordinate deserves to die. This subordinate did not know that Chu Feng was invited here by Lady Society President. That is why I acted to stop him, and accidentally injured him,” The Vice President hurriedly kneeled to the ground.

However, Chu Feng noticed that even though he was very afraid and had made the appropriate apologetic actions, he was not kneeling on the ground completely. If it were someone else, they would definitely kneel with both of their knees. However, he was only kneeling with one knee.

“There is no fault to Vice President Zhao in strictly upholding the rules I set. However, my master is ill. I hope that you do not make him kneel the next time you try to display your might.”

“Although in terms of status, you are above my master, my master is your senior in terms of seniority,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Yes, what Lady President said is extremely correct. This subordinate will definitely remember that. I will not dare to act

rudely toward Elder Liu again,” Zhao Ruofan nodded repeatedly.

As for Zhao Xiao and his father, they stood to the side and did not dare to even raise their heads. It could be seen that they feared the Red Butterfly Society’s President even more than Zhao Ruofan.

Truly, what one fears will come. After the Red Butterfly Society’s President finished warning Zhao Ruofan, she cast her gaze toward Zhao Xiao and his father. She said, “I’ve heard that the two of you... were actually also stopping my master and the others?”

“Lady Society President, we were wrong,” In response, Zhao Xiao and his father immediately kneeled to the ground. As for the two of them... they were kneeling with both knees.

To be exact, they were on all fours, and did not dare to even raise their heads. This was especially true for Zhao Xiao, as his body was actually shivering with cold. He seemed to be extremely scared of that Society President.

“Vice President Zhao is our Red Butterfly Society’s Vice President. As per his post, he is qualified to question my master’s actions.”

“However, Zhao Xuan and Zhao Xiao, is there a need for me to mention your statuses?”

“Yet, the two of you actually also dared to question my master’s actions? Do you know what is meant by seniority?” After saying those words, the Red Butterfly Society’s President unleashed her powerful oppressive might, flipping them over on the ground.

Even though the two of them were only forced to roll several times in the ground and did not suffer any substantial injuries, the actions of the Red Butterfly Society’s President were sufficient to demonstrate her anger.

“Lady President, we were wrong. Please have mercy.”

In response, even though Zhao Xiao and his father had already been publicly shamed, they still hurriedly crawled back up and

kneeled on the ground. They did not dare to show the slightest bit of disrespect.

“To offend one’s superior is unpardonable. Men! Imprison Zhao Xuan and Zhao Xiao,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said coldly.

“Yes,” Faced with the order from the Red Butterfly Society’s Society Master, no one dared to not comply. The Red Butterfly Society’s guards began to step forward to tie up Zhao Xiao and his father, then speedily, escorted them away.

In that sort of situation, not only did Zhao Xiao and his father not dare to beg for forgiveness, even their grandfather Zhao Ruofan, the grand Red Butterfly Society’s Vice President, did not dare to ask for leniency.

“Vice President Zhao, is there anything else you need?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President asked Zhao Ruofan.

Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan’s body grew stiff, and his expression grew slightly ugly. After all, even a fool could tell that the Red Butterfly Society’s President was driving him out.

However, even though he knew that that was the case, he did not dare to show any bit of inappropriate behavior. Instead, he hurriedly made a respectful gesture and said, “This subordinate shall leave now.”

“Wait,” Right at that moment, Liu Chengkun suddenly spoke.

“Elder Liu, is there something that you still need?” Zhao Ruofan asked.

“You injured little friend Chu Feng earlier. Although it was only a minor injury, it remains that little friend Chu Feng is an honored guest. Are you planning to leave without even apologizing for your actions?” Liu Chengkun said.

“This...” Zhao Ruofan revealed a difficult expression. If Liu Chengkun were to have demanded that Zhao Ruofan apologize to

him, he would be willing to do so. After all... Liu Chengkun currently possessed the backing of Lady Society President.

However, he was truly unwilling to apologize to Chu Feng, an outsider. Thus, he turned his gaze to the Red Butterfly Society's President.

He thought that since his son and grandson were already being punished, the Lady Society President should be willing to give him some face.

"I feel that what master said is very reasonable," The Red Butterfly Society's President said.

The words spoken by the Red Butterfly Society's President caused not only Zhao Ruofan but also the guards present to have a change in expression.

As the Vice President of the Red Butterfly Society, Zhao Ruofan was someone with status below a single person and above everyone else. Even their Lady Society Master would not deliberately make things difficult for him. Generally, should he make any minor mistakes, she would simply laugh it off.

However, the behavior of their Lady Society President was completely different in this instance. If it was because of Liu Chengkun, they could understand. After all, he was her master. However, she actually wanted the Vice President to apologize to Chu Feng. This was something that the guards were truly unable to understand.

However, as the matter was already decided, Zhao Ruofan would also not dare to put forth any excuses. As such, he could only clasp his fist at Chu Feng unwillingly as he said, "Little friend Chu Feng, this old man did not know that you were Lady Society President's honored guest. Please forgive me for my offense."

"Vice President Zhao, you are overly courteous. As Lady Society President said, there was no wrong to your action in upholding

your duty. Thus, how could I find fault with you?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. Even though he was clearly injured by Zhao Ruofan, he did not express the slightest bit of anger.

Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan, who was originally feeling very unpleasant, started to sneer in his heart.

After knowing about the matter between Chu Feng and Luyang’s Pavilion, he had thought Chu Feng to be some sort of extraordinary thorn. But it turned out that he was also one that feared consequences. Even though he had made Chu Feng kneel on all fours, Chu Feng did not dare to blame him in the slightest.

At that moment, Zhao Ruofan truly thought that this brat by the name of Chu Feng was scared of him.

## Chapter 2204 – Might Be Alive

---

“However, Vice President Zhao, you remain the Vice President of the Red Butterfly Society. As someone holding a status below only a single person, it is not suitable for you to make conclusions without prior investigations.”

“While it is fine for me, after all, I am an outsider, and it was reasonable for you to attack me, it is different for Senior Liu.”

“Even if we do not mention how he is your Red Butterfly Society’s management elder and how you should possess basic trust in him, he is also seriously ill. ”

“Yet, you insisted on punishing him, and even forced him to his knees. Is that not too excessive?”

“Furthermore, it would be one thing if you were really doing so to uphold your duty. But, earlier, you deliberately said to Senior Liu ‘Don’t think that you can strut around in the Red Butterfly Society just because you’re Society President’s master.’”

“I don’t know if I am overthinking things, or if you hold some resentment toward Senior Liu to begin with. Might you have only used my presence here to deliberately make things difficult for Senior Liu so as to show off your might as the Vice President?”

“It is truly not me, an outsider, being too meddlesome. Merely, as Senior Liu is Lady Society President’s master, even if he possesses a status inferior to yours, his seniority is much higher than yours.”

“I truly feel that even if you are the Vice President, you should treat Senior Liu with more respect. It is truly wrong for you to borrow your status as the Vice President to deliberately attack Senior Liu.”

“After all, his health is truly unwell,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you!!!” Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan’s expression turned green. When Chu Feng was saying those words,

he had wanted to interrupt Chu Feng the entire time. Merely... Chu Feng had refused to give him the opportunity to do so.

In fact, the expressions of Liu Chengkun, Huang Luo and the others also changed. Involuntarily, they looked at Chu Feng with a whole new level of respect.

Chu Feng's words were truly ruthless. Even though he was only attacking Zhao Ruofan indirectly, he had informed the Red Butterfly Society's President of Zhao Ruofan's wicked conduct.

As everyone knew, their Lady Society President was someone who respected her master very much.

"Vice President Zhao, is that true? Did you really say those things when you had my master kneel?" Sure enough, the Red Butterfly Society's President currently had a furious expression on her face.

In fact, those were things that she knew about even without Chu Feng mentioning them.

Merely, it remained that she had arrived later. Thus, it was unsuitable for her to do anything to Vice President Zhao.

Yet now, Chu Feng had declared those things. As the Society President, she now had to do something about Vice President Zhao's actions.

"Lady Society President, I... that was truly not my intention. I merely..." Zhao Ruofan started to panic slightly. After all, what Chu Feng had declared had actually happened. They were things that all the people present had witnessed. Thus, it was difficult for him to explain himself.

"You don't have to say anymore. I only hope that this is the last time something like this will happen. If this is to happen again, I fear that the our Red Butterfly Society's Vice President seat will have no choice but to be given to someone else."

"I truly do not wish for our Red Butterfly Society's Vice President to be someone who will use his position for private interests and



private revenge,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said coldly.

Her words let Chu Feng realize that Zhao Ruofan and Liu Chengkun should possess personal grudges and grievances. Else, the Red Butterfly Society’s President would not have used those words to describe Zhao Ruofan’s conduct today.

“Lady Society President, I... I...” Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan’s expression grew even more unsightly. He was at a loss as for what to say. He had never expected things to become this serious, for Lady Society President to have the intention to remove him from the Vice President position.

“Say no more, you can leave now,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President waved her hand coldly.

“This subordinate will leave now,” Zhao Ruofan did not dare to say anything, and could only retire from that place.

Although the people from the Red Butterfly Society felt that the warning of their Lady Society President was already very strict, Chu Feng felt that the Red Butterfly Society’s President was too forgiving to only give Zhao Ruofan a verbal warning, and not any substantial punishment.

Although Chu Feng did not know why she would be this forgiving, he knew that there must be a reason for it. It was because of that secret reason that the Red Butterfly Society’s President did not dare to actually do anything to Zhao Ruofan.

Afterward, Chu Feng really received the honored guest treatment, and was situated in an excellent palace in the Red Butterfly Society to rest.

Not only was the palace very excellent, there were also many servant girls to serve him. In fact, he even had personal cooks.

From this, it could be seen that Chu Feng received very good treatment here.

However, Chu Feng noticed that the Red Butterfly Society’s

President did not completely trust him.

Although he was treated very well, there was a spirit formation around the palace. Inside the spirit formation, ordinary people were simply unable to inspect the situation outside.

However, the spirit formation was unable to shield Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes. Merely... it remained that Chu Feng was here as a guest, and a guest should comply with the wishes of the master.

Furthermore, as Chu Feng did not have too much interest in the Red Butterfly Society, Chu Feng did not bother to waste time inspecting the situation and the strength of the Red Butterfly Society.

After all, he had only decided to come here as a guest to give face to Liu Chengkun and repay him for helping him.

Chu Feng did not plan to stay here for long. After all, he had still not avenged Wang Qiang. That was something that had been preoccupying his mind the entire time.

"Eggy, if we are to encounter that demonic woman, are you confident in being able to take care of her?" Chu Feng's awareness was in his world spirit space. He was sitting on the ground with Eggy and chatting face to face.

"I am also uncertain as to exactly what level of strength that demonic woman possesses. However, I felt that she was at least a Martial Ancestor. At the very most, I am only thirty percent confident in being able to defeat her," Eggy said.

"Thirty percent? That demonic woman is that powerful?" Chu Feng frowned. He knew that he did not possess sufficient strength to take care of that demonic woman. Thus, he could only place all of his hopes onto Her Lady Queen.

However, even Her Lady Queen said that she only possessed thirty percent confidence in being able to defeat that demonic woman. Then, wouldn't it mean that avenging Wang Qiang would

be something that was very distant?

Suddenly, Eggy said, “Chu Feng, I feel that your head is muddled by hatred, that you’ve turned foolish.”

“Eggy, why would you think such a thing of me?” Chu Feng asked.

“While it is true that Wang Qiang was captured by that demonic woman, how are you so certain that Wang Qiang is dead?”

“Although I do not know much about that stutterer Wang Qiang, I feel that he is not a simple man. That is especially true after the two of you started to travel together. I felt even more certain then that he was not simple.”

“Would a guy like him be so easily killed?”

“Don’t forget, he is someone that grew up in an Ancient Era’s Remnant,” Eggy said.

“But, the number of bones in the Darknight Ghost...”

Before Chu Feng could finish, Eggy interrupted, “It’s easy to explain those bones. Perhaps the demonic woman had already left that pile of bones before she went to capture Wang Qiang and the others. It is also possible that she captured more people afterwards.”

“Although the amount of bones was the same as the number of people she captured that day, that does not mean that Wang Qiang’s bones would definitely be among them.”

“I have actually also thought of that. But, it remains that I have received no news of Wang Qiang,” Chu Feng said.

“While it is very suspicious for there to be no news of Wang Qiang, it is also true that there has been no news of that demonic woman. Do you not feel that to be even more suspicious?” Eggy asked.

“Indeed, what you say is very true,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Although I also feel that it would be unlikely for that stutterer Wang Qiang to still be alive, it remains that there is still a chance that he might be alive.”

“Thus, do not make yourself look this miserable all day, do not immerse yourself in the death of your brother all day long. If he turns out to have never been dead to begin with, wouldn’t you have grieved for nothing?”

“Rather than feeling sad for Wang Qiang, you should think about how to take care of that old fart,” Eggy said.

## Chapter 2205 – Chat Between Master And Disciple

---

“Old fart? Eggy, are you talking about that Red Butterfly Society’s Vice President?” Chu Feng asked.

“Who else other than him? Do you not feel him to be someone that is extremely detestable?” Eggy said.

“Indeed. However, it remains that it is a domestic matter of the Red Butterfly Society. There does not seem to be a reason for me to get involved,” Chu Feng said.

Eggy stood up emotionally and said to Chu Feng in a disappointed manner, “Oh please. There’s a lot of reason for you to be involved, okay?”

“Indeed. Senior Liu has treated me very well. Furthermore, the Red Butterfly Society’s President is his disciple. For the sake of Senior Liu, it does seem like I have a reason to help them take care of that Vice President. Merely, it remains that I am not someone from the Red Butterfly Society.... If...”

“Fool, that’s not what I’m talking about,” Eggy interrupted Chu Feng.

“What other reason could there be then?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“What other reason?” Eggy placed her hands on her waist, “He has injured you. That is enough reason for you to kill him.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng suddenly burst into laughter. Then, he stood up and said, “Indeed, that is a reason.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, a trace of coldness appeared in Chu Feng’s gaze.

Today, it was clearly the first time he met that Zhao Ruofan. There was simply no hatred nor grievance between them. Yet, that

Zhao Ruofan had attacked him. Not only did he injure him, he also forced him onto all fours.

Indeed, Chu Feng could not disregard such hatred. Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that Zhao Ruofan's character was not good at all. Moreover, he had noticed that Zhao Ruofan was extremely hostile toward Liu Chengkun.

Thus, Chu Feng had decided that he might as well go and eliminate that Zhao Ruofan. After all, leaving him alive would only cause disaster.

"That's more like the Chu Feng I know," Seeing Chu Feng's reaction, Eggy smiled sweetly.

As Eggy knew Chu Feng very well, she was able to tell that killing intent had emerged in Chu Feng's heart. As such, that Zhao Ruofan would die sooner or later.

Actually, Eggy was deliberately inciting Chu Feng. She was able to tell that Chu Feng was reacting as if his hands and legs were tied because of his refusal to join the Red Butterfly Society.

Had it been before, if someone had dared to attack Chu Feng and even forced him to the ground on all fours, Chu Feng would have definitely not spared that individual.

However, this time around, Chu Feng had not looked deeply into the matter. The reason for that was because that Zhao Ruofan was part of the Red Butterfly Society. Chu Feng felt that he was not qualified to involve himself in the business of the Red Butterfly Society, and that he should not attack someone from the Red Butterfly Society, as he had not joined them.

As for the reason why he reacted in such a manner, it was because he felt guilty toward Liu Chengkun. After all... he had refused Liu Chengkun's invitation repeatedly.

However, Chu Feng had now been awakened by Eggy. Eggy let him know that he did not have to overthink things if he wanted to

take care of a single person. As long as he possessed a simple justification, it would suffice.

At the same time. In an extremely hidden forbidden area in the Red Butterfly Society. The Red Butterfly Society's President and Liu Chengkun were together.

"Lady Society President, it was truly all thanks to your assistance today. Vice President Zhao was determined to make things difficult for me. If it wasn't for your arrival and declaration that Chu Feng was invited by you, I fear that it would truly have been extremely hard for me to disentangle myself," Liu Chengkun said with a grateful expression.

"Master, there are no outsiders here. You do not have to address me as Lady Society President. Just address me by my name," The Red Butterfly Society's President said.

"Lady Society President, regardless of whether or not there are other people present, you are still the Society President. As such, it is only natural that I address you as such," Liu Chengkun said respectfully.

"But master, this position of the Society President should have been yours. After all, this Red Butterfly Society was personally established by your mother. You..." When mentioning this matter, the Red Butterfly Society's President became emotional. She seemed to be feeling injustice for Liu Chengkun.

Liu Chengkun sighed. "I know my body best. Over these years, had it not been for your constant treatments, I would have already died. As such, how could I succeed the Red Butterfly Society?"

"Furthermore, you possess the strength. No one will dare refuse you as the Society President. Even that Zhao Ruofan has no choice but to comply."

"However, if I were to become the Society President, how would the people be willing to accept me? The Red Butterfly Society

would end up being ruined by my hands,” Liu Chengkun said with a wry smile.

“Master, your cultivation is only affected because of your illness. If it wasn’t for the fact that you were born with that illness, how could your cultivation only be that of a rank one Martial Ancestor? It would not be strange for you to be a rank five Martial Ancestor now,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“This is fate. No matter what one says, it’s useless,” Liu Chengkun waved his hand.

“No, master, this is not fate. One’s fate is determined by oneself, and not the heavens.”

“I have thought of a way to completely cure your illness. If you don’t trust me, look at this,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President took out two title plates with a beaming smile across her face.

The two title plates appeared to be very normal. They were merely two wooden title plates.

However, the two title plates were anything but normal. Both of them were emitting a faint glimmer. That glimmer was no ordinary glimmer. Rather, it was world spirit power. Furthermore, it was Immortal-level world spirit power.

This was especially true for Liu Chengkun after he saw the four words on the title plates. Immediately, his expression changed enormously.

The four words were: ‘[Golden Crane](#) True Immortal!!!’

“Golden Crane True Immortal, [Xiaoli](#), you managed to obtain the Golden Crane True Immortal’s invitation title plates?!” Liu Chengkun asked extremely emotionally. <sup>2</sup>

“Master, you’re finally willing to call me by my name,” At that moment, the Red Butterfly Society’s President was smiling beautifully. Then she nodded and said, “Indeed, these are invitation title plates given to me by the Golden Crane True



Immortal.”

“Master, you also know that only Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are capable of healing your illness. As for that Golden Crane True Immortal, not only is he an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he is also a True Immortal-level expert. His world spirit techniques are definitely not something that ordinary Immortal-cloak World Spiritists could compare with,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

As for Liu Chengkun, he was nodding his head repeatedly. He naturally knew how powerful True Immortals were; they were existences above Martial Ancestors.

If the Martial Ancestor realm could be said to be the limit of the human body, then True Immortals were beings that had surpassed the limits of the human body.

“Although it would be impossible to have the Golden Crane True Immortal treat master’s illness, the Golden Crane True Immortal personally created a grand formation at the Immortalization Assembly conducted on the Mount Cloud Crane. Upon entering that spirit formation, Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists will obtain the opportunity to comprehend and contact Immortal-level spirit power.”

“As for these invitation title plates, they are the entrances ticket to the assembly. I have decided that I will go there with Vice President Zhao. The two of us are both Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. Even if I am unable to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it might be possible for Vice President Zhao to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“As long as one of the two of us is able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, we will be able to completely treat master’s illness.”

“After master is healed from your illness, it will not be an issue for you to live for another five thousand years. Your future

accomplishments will definitely surpass Vice President Zhao's. At that time, I will have master become the Society President," The Red Butterfly Society's President said excitedly.

At that moment, the previously excited Liu Chengkun grew silent.

"Master, what is wrong? Are you not happy with this?"

"Indeed, I have purchased these two invitation title plates from others using a great amount of wealth and damaged our treasury."

"But, master, I have done all this for your sake," The Red Butterfly Society's President said.

"Xiaoli, your master knows of your kind intentions. As such, how could I blame you? Furthermore, you are the Society President. Thus, you are qualified to make all kinds of decisions."

"Merely, is it possible to change the person that will go to Mount Cloud Crane with you?" Liu Chengkun said.

"Change a person?" The Red Butterfly Society's President frowned. She said, "Master, please forgive this disciple for being unfilial and saying things that I should not say."

"I know that you possesses deep grievances with Vice President Zhao. However, when considering the greater good, among our Red Butterfly Society's Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, only he and I are capable of becoming Immortal-cloak World Spiritists."

"If someone else is to go instead, I fear that we will end up wasting... the invitation title plate that I spent a great amount of our wealth to purchase."

Golden Crane, or Jin He, could be both a title or a name because Jin(gold) is a surname. But, It is highly unlikely that someone would name their child 'crane,' the bird. Thus, I feel that it is more likely a title. Also did some search on baike, he is a Daoist. More likely to be a title than a name.

Her name means Little Jasmine.

## Chapter 2206 – All Out Recommendation

---

“Xiaoli, I naturally know that there is no one more suitable than him in our Red Butterfly Society. However, there are individuals that are more suitable than him outside of our Red Butterfly Society,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Master, I don’t understand what you mean by that,” the Red Butterfly Society’s President said with a confused expression.

“Chu Feng, the honored guest I invited here today, his world spirit techniques most definitely surpass Zhao Ruofan’s,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Chu Feng?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President revealed a skeptical expression. She said, “Master, you’ve seen that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques? It is not that this disciple does not trust you, rather, that Chu Feng seems to be truly young. He is no different from a child.”

“For him to have his cultivation of rank two Half Martial Ancestor at his age, it would mean that he is very talented. However, it also means that he has focused wholeheartedly on martial cultivation.”

“How could someone who has wholeheartedly focused on martial cultivation like him possibly be a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist? How could his world spirit techniques possibly surpass Zhao Ruofan’s who has trained for thousands of years?”

“Not long ago, my illness had relapsed ahead of time.” Liu Chengkun said. “It was Chu Feng who stabilized my illness. As for the time it took him, it was a day and night.”

“A day and night?” Hearing those words, the Red Butterfly Society’s President revealed an astonished expression.

After all, she was the one who had been stabilizing Liu Chengkun’s illness every time it relapsed. Furthermore, it would

always take her at least two days and nights to stabilize Liu Chengkun's illness.

Yet, Chu Feng had actually only used a single day and night. As such, how could she not be startled? However, after being astonished, she became even more skeptical.

“Although you might not believe me, that is the truth. Huang Luo can bear witness to it.”

“Most importantly, Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist,” Liu Chengkun continued.

“Asura World Spiritist?!” Hearing those three words, the Red Butterfly Society's President's expression changed enormously.

It was not that she had a low tolerance for shock. Rather, this matter was no small matter. After all, Asura World Spiritists were extremely rare.

“Master, are you certain of that?” The Red Butterfly Society's President asked.

“I saw it personally. Else... how could a rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level world spirit be able to kill Hong Xi?” Liu Chengkun said.

“You're saying that Chu Feng used his world spirit to kill Hong Xi, and that his world spirit is only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor?!” The astonishment in the Red Butterfly Society's President's eyes grew stronger and stronger.

“That's right,” Liu Chengkun nodded. Then, he added, “Furthermore, the aura of his world spirit is without a mistake that of an Asura World Spirit.”

“Sssss~~~” At that moment, even the Lady Society President was unable to contain herself, and sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Then, a smile appeared on her astonished face. She said, “In that case, this Chu Feng could be considered to be a gift to our Red Butterfly Society by the heavens.”

Hearing what the Red Butterfly Society's President said, Liu Chengkun's expression changed. He said, "Xiaoli, I have indeed invited Chu Feng to join our Red Butterfly Society. Merely... he did not wish to do so."

"Master, you're saying that Chu Feng does not wish to join our Red Butterfly Society?" Hearing those words, the smile on the face of the Red Butterfly Society's President immediately froze.

"That is indeed the case," Liu Chengkun shook his head.

"Master, if that Chu Feng is truly as you described him to be, I am willing to have him replace Vice President Zhao and accompany me to Mount Cloud Crane."

"After all, he is an Asura World Spiritist. It would be understandable for me to nurture him. Merely... if he isn't a part of our Red Butterfly Society, how could I have him accompany me?"

"Master, please try to advise that Chu Feng again. As long as he is willing to join our Red Butterfly Society, I am most definitely willing to bring him with me," The Red Butterfly Society's President said. Judging from her appearance, it seemed like she would definitely refuse to give Chu Feng the opportunity should he refuse to join their Red Butterfly Society.

"You don't have to mention this matter anymore. He doesn't want to join, and I do not want to force him," Liu Chengkun said.

"That is truly too much of a pity then," The Red Butterfly Society's President sighed. It could be seen that she really wanted Chu Feng to join their Red Butterfly Society.

"Xiaoli, do you know why I thought so highly of Chu Feng after seeing him once?" Liu Chengkun asked.

"Master, that is actually also what I wanted to ask," The Red Butterfly Society's President said.

"His moral quality. He helped the Tang Family take care of the

Cao Family. Yet, the Tang Family decided to kick their benefactor in the teeth, and joined hands with the Cao Family to take care of him.”

“Logically, he should feel hatred for all of the people in the Tang Family.”

“Yet, Chu Feng did not. Even though the Tang Family was unrighteous and unjust toward him, Chu Feng still decided to brave dangers to save the Tang Family’s Young Miss Tang Ying. From this, it could be seen that he is a person that is able to clearly distinguish grudges and grievances, someone who is affectionate and true.”

“Do we really need someone like him to join our Red Butterfly Society? Even if he doesn’t join our Red Butterfly Society, he will definitely come to our aid should our Red Butterfly Society be in danger in the future,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Master, what you say is reasonable. However, that is merely your hypothesis,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Indeed,” Liu Chengkun smiled. He did not deny that. However, he still continued, “Then, let me ask you this. If there was an unrivaled grand character, someone that surpassed the Golden Crane True Immortal, would you want to befriend that person or not?”

“If possible, I would definitely try to befriend that person. Merely...”

Before the Red Butterfly Society’s President could finish her words, Liu Chengkun interrupted her, “Merely, if you are to wait for that person to become a grand character to befriend that person, your actions will be akin to boot-licking. At that time, he will not truly befriend you. At the very most, he will take into consideration that you were his former acquaintance and act politely toward you.”

“However, if you were to befriend him before he matured, he would definitely treat you extremely well after he becomes a grand character.”

“Xiaoli, you must remember this. What people need the most is not to [add flowers to a brocade](#). Rather, it is to send charcoal in snowy weather.”

“.....” Hearing those words, the Red Butterfly Society’s President grew silent. She found what her master had said to be very sensible.

“But master, there are a lot of different kinds of geniuses. Many of them are people that ruled over a region in their youth. However, not many of those geniuses were actually able to mature in strength. Instead, the majority of them ended up dying young,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“I understand what you are thinking. However, I dare to guarantee that the genius Chu Feng will definitely not die young,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Master, I have already declared to Vice President Zhao that we’ll be going, if I am to go back on my word now, wouldn’t it be...?”

“After all, Vice President Zhao is a distant relative to a management elder in the Sunset Clouds Valley,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Xiaoli, I, your Master, has watched you grow up. I naturally understand what you are thinking.”

“Actually, it is also because of Zhao Ruofan’s distant relative in the Sunset Cloud Valley that you acted so leniently toward him.”

“You must be thinking that he will be able to curb Luyang’s Pavilion. After all, Luyang’s Pavilion relies on the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“But, Xiaoli, I can tell you this with certainty. In the future, Chu Feng is someone that not even a hundred thousand Luyang’s



Pavilions would be able to compare to,” Liu Chengkun said.

At that moment, the Red Butterfly Society’s President grew silent. She was placed in a difficult situation. Liu Chengkun did not say anything. Just like that, he stood there looking at his disciple.

“Master, since I have till tomorrow to announce this matter, allow me to consider it a bit more,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Very well,” Liu Chengkun nodded. He revealed a disappointed expression in his aged gaze. Based on his understanding of his disciple, he knew that it would be hopeless to make her bring Chu Feng with her to Mount Cloud Crane.

“Lady Society President, this subordinate is a bit tired. I will return to rest,” Liu Chengkun bowed respectfully. Then, he turned and left.

“Master,” Seeing Liu Chengkun leaving, the Red Butterfly Society’s President wanted to say something. After Liu Chengkun left, she muttered with a low voice, “Master, I am thinking for the sake of the Red Butterfly Society. I hope that you will one day understand your disciple’s pains.”

Add flowers to a brocade → adding things to something that’s already perfect. Aka. flattering someone. Sending charcoal in snowy weather → helping someone in their time of need.

## Chapter 2207 – Above Martial Ancestor

---

After Liu Chengkun left the forbidden area, he did not return to his own residence. Instead, he arrived at the palace that Chu Feng was resting in.

Liu Chengkun was currently sitting face to face with Chu Feng. Deeply concerned, he asked, “Chu Feng, how are your injuries?”

“Senior, please rest assured. They were merely some light injuries and, have already healed,” Chu Feng said indifferently. He was worried that Liu Chengkun would feel guilty for his injuries.

“It’s great that you’re fine,” Sure enough, after seeing that Chu Feng was fine, Liu Chengkun revealed a smile. Then, he said, “Chu Feng, there is good news.”

“What is this good news?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you know of the Golden Crane True Immortal?” Liu Chengkun asked.

“I do not” Chu Feng shook his head.

“He is a True Immortal-level expert,” Liu Chengkun said.

“True Immortal-level expert, could it be a cultivation realm above Martial Ancestors?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

The reason for that was because this was the first time he was hearing the words ‘True Immortal.’

In fact, even Eggy grew spirited. The reason for that was because her understanding of martial cultivation also stopped at the Martial Ancestor level. She truly had no idea of martial cultivation above Martial Ancestor.

Both Chu Feng and Eggy were able to deduce that it was very possible for True Immortal... to be the cultivation realm above Martial Ancestor.

“Chu Feng, you actually don’t know of the True Immortal

realm?” Seeing Chu Feng’s confused expression, Liu Chengkun was extremely surprised.

Although very few people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were capable of becoming True Immortals, everyone knew of the True Immortal realm.

“Senior, truth be told, I am from a Lower Realm. At our Lower Realm... the Half Martial Ancestor cultivation realm is already the limit. There are simply no Martial Ancestor-level experts. Thus... I simply do not know of the cultivation realms above Martial Ancestor,” Chu Feng said.

“So you’re actually from a Lower Realm. It’s no wonder I’ve never heard of you before. But... if you’re from a Lower Realm, you must definitely reveal your talent on the Hundred Refinements Stage. Could it be that you’ve refused all of the invitations from the various major powers?” Liu Chengkun revealed an astonished expression.

He knew very well that all of the people from the Lower Realms would have to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage. Furthermore, there would always be talented individuals who appeared in the Hundred Refinements Stage. Every year, the various powers of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would always proceed for the Hundred Refinements Stage to invite the excellent talents from the Lower Realms.

Liu Chengkun had also been to the Hundred Refinements Stage on behalf of the Red Butterfly Society. The way he saw it, someone like Chu Feng was most definitely the most powerful existence in the Hundred Refinements Stage.

A person like him would be someone that all the powers would fight over. At that time, it would not be a question of whether or not he would want to join a power. As such, how did Chu Feng manage to arrive here safely?

“Due to a certain reason, I was unable to enter the Hundred

Refinements Stage,” Chu Feng said.

“Ssss~~~” Hearing those words, Liu Chengkun was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. He discovered... that Chu Feng was more and more remarkable.

“Senior Liu, can you explain the True Immortal realm and the cultivation realms above it to me?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Of course. If Martial Emperors are capable of unleashing their body’s full potential, then Martial Ancestors are capable of unleashing the limits of their body’s power. However, both of them are still limited by their human bodies.”

“However, True Immortals, that realm above Martial Ancestors, are cultivators who have transcended the limits of their bodies.”

“In other words, once one reaches True Immortal Realm, they will no longer be humans. Rather, they will become immortals.”

“Very few people in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm are capable of reaching the True Immortal realm. However, it is reported that there are a lot of True Immortal realm experts in the Upper Realms.”

“For example, after you reach the Upper Realm, it is very possible that an island in the sea or a city in the wilderness are all not real. Instead, they would be things created by True Immortal-level experts,” Liu Chengkun said.

“In that case, True Immortals have already transcended their physical bodies, and can change their forms at will?” Chu Feng was very shocked. The reason for that was because it would mean that their cultivation, Source Energy and dantian had combined into one, causing even their souls to transform to a higher level.

To put it simply, a person would then be able to change into any sort of object as long as they wanted to do so. Thus, it would not be too excessive to declare those people as ‘Immortals.’

“That is indeed the case,” Liu Chengkun nodded.

“Then, what about the cultivation realms above True Immortal?” Chu Feng asked.

“The True Immortal realm is merely the introduction toward Immortality. Above the True Immortal realm is the Heavenly Immortal realm. And above the Heavenly Immortal realm is the Martial Immortal realm.”

Chu Feng was extremely entranced. He firmly remembered the three realms of cultivation in his heart.

True Immortal, Heavenly Immortal and Martial Immortal.

“If True Immortal is the introduction, then Heavenly Immortal would be the transformation, and Martial Immortal would be the actual integration with Immortality,” Liu Chengkun continued.

“I have heard that even in the vast and omnipotent Upper Realms, very few people are able to become Martial Immortals. Furthermore, all of the Martial Immortals are unsurpassed existences.” When mentioning the Martial Immortals, Liu Chengkun had an expression of reverence filling his face.

“Then, what about the cultivation realms above Martial Immortal?” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“The path of martial cultivation is never-ending. There are naturally cultivation realms above Martial Immortal.”

“Exalted; that is the realm above Martial Immortal. Although that is a legendary realm of cultivation, there has been people that have reached that realm.”

“For example, the Mount Cloud Crane where the Golden Crane True Immortal is living at right now was created by an Exalted.”

“Thus, Mount Cloud Crane could be said to be one of the most famous wondrous locations in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Liu Chengkun said.

“As for the cultivation realms above Exalted, next would be the

Utmost Exalted. Above the Utmost Exalted is the Martial Exalted.”

“Furthermore, it seems like there are cultivation realms above Martial Exalted. Merely, even I have never heard of those cultivation realms.”

“However, I feel that since Exalted is already akin to legend, Martial Exalted would be a myth. As for the cultivation realms above Martial Exalted, they would be existences akin to gods,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Perhaps that might be the case,” Chu Feng nodded his head in agreement. Even though those realms of cultivation were very distant from him, he had managed to tell how magnificent of a scale the world of martial cultivation was merely from those cultivation realms. At the same time, he had also realized how far from the top he really was.

‘Exalted, Utmost Exalted, Martial Exalted. I wonder what level of cultivation my father is?’ Chu Feng thought to himself.

Although Liu Chengkun had said that Martial Immortals were already unsurpassed in the Upper Realms, Chu Feng felt that his father’s cultivation should have surpassed Martial Immortal, that he would be at least an Exalted.

“Senior Liu, what is with the Golden Crane True Immortal you mentioned to me earlier?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Golden Crane True Immortal is not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, no one knows which Upper Realm he is from. He appeared three years ago and occupied Mount Cloud Crane, which was created by that legendary Exalted.”

“Although the Golden Crane True Immortal only appeared three years ago, his fame has already spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He is an existence feared and revered by the various powers. He is a true grand character, an

absolute expert that stands at the apex of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Furthermore, not only does the Golden Crane True Immortal possess a very powerful cultivation, he is also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Moreover, he is planning to host an assembly in the upcoming days.”

“He is planning to use his world spirit techniques to assist our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“Our Red Butterfly Assembly has used a great sum to purchase two invitations from others. I want you to accompany our Lady Society President there,” Liu Chengkun said.

## Chapter 2208 – The Descent Of A Crisis

---

“Really?” Chu Feng was overjoyed after hearing what Liu Chengkun said.

Naturally, he was overjoyed at the chance to be able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, it was not because of the fact that he would become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, an extremely amazing existence, but rather because he would be able to treat Liu Chengkun’s illness after becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Should that happen, Chu Feng would be able to undo a knot in his heart.

“Of course. Tomorrow, I will invite you to the grand hall, and Lady Society President will publicly announce this matter,” Liu Chengkun said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng felt very grateful. Even though he did not know about the details, he was able to guess that the invitation must have been very difficult to obtain. He knew that Liu Chengkun must’ve pulled a lot of strings to get that invitation for him.

After all... he was not a part of the Red Butterfly Society.

However, Chu Feng had no idea that Liu Chengkun had not managed to obtain the invitation for him.

“There’s no need to be this courteous toward me. Go on and rest yourself. I will personally come to get you tomorrow,” After Liu Chengkun said those words, he left.

“That old man treats you truly well. You should just join the Red Butterfly Society,” At that moment, even Eggy urged Chu Feng to join the Red Butterfly Society.

“Indeed, Senior Liu treats me extremely well. However, Eggy,



you should know the reason why I do not wish to join any power,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s why I was just saying it. It’s a joke. Don’t take it to heart,” Eggy laughed mischievously.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng felt even more disconcerted. The more Liu Chengkun treated him well, the guiltier he felt for refusing Liu Chengkun’s invitation.

At that moment, in another area within the Red Butterfly Society.

Zhao Ruofan was not alone in his palace; his son Zhao Xuan and his grandson Zhao Xiao were also present.

“Grandfather, you are truly amazing. Lady Society President has just imprisoned, us yet you’ve already managed to get us out,” Zhao Xiao said with a smile on his face. The word ‘flatterer’ was written all over his face.

“So what if she’s the Lady Society President? Even she needs to consider the status of our Zhao Family.”

“After all, we possess backing from the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“If it wasn’t for my distantly related cousin, the Sunset Cloud Valley would’ve already helped Luyang’s Pavilion eliminate our Red Butterfly Society,” Zhao Ruofan said proudly.

“Of course,” Zhao Xiao and his father nodded repeatedly. They were also very proud when their distant relative in the Sunset Cloud Valley was mentioned.

“Lord Father, I have heard that Lady Society President has spent a great amount of wealth to purchase two invitation title plates to Mount Cloud Crane.”

“Is she planning to go there with you?” Zhao Xuan asked.

“Truth be told, that girl Liu Xiaoli has already mentioned that matter to me before. Furthermore, she will announce this matter

tomorrow,” Zhao Ruofan said complacently.

“Lord Father, you are amazing.”

“Congratulations grandfather.”

Zhao Xiao and his father continued to flatter Zhao Ruofan.

As for Zhao Ruofan, the smile on his face grew prouder and prouder. Ambitions unknown to others were flickering in his aged eyes.

However, right at the moment when the grandfather, son and grandson were feeling proud, an enormous crisis was quietly descending upon them.

At that moment, many warships were on the road from Luyang’s Pavilion to the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters. It was an impressive display of manpower. They were currently hidden within the void, and proceeding rapidly toward the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters.

On one of the gorgeous warships, the Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master was in the same gorgeous palace that he had been in before.

However, his surroundings were no longer filled with beautiful women. In fact, he did not even dare to sit on the main seat.

The reason for that was because there were several tens of figures in the palace. These people were not wearing the clothing of Luyang’s Pavilion. Instead, they were wearing red clothes that shone with a sunset-like glow.

On their waists were a title plate. On the title plates were three words: Sunset Cloud Valley.

As for the old man leading the group, he had blazing red hair, a blazing red beard, and a body covered with a twilight glow. He looked like an immortal descending upon the world of mortals. As for his cultivation, it was unfathomable.

“Myself had heard that an abnormal sign would form should one master the Sunset Cloud Mysterious Technique to the pinnacle. In the past, I thought it was merely bragging. However today, upon seeing Elder Su, I am surprised to discover that it was actually true,” Chu Luyang spoke politely.

Chu Luyang was a very conceited person. However, when before this Elder Su, he did not dare to show any disrespect.

The reason for that was because he knew very well that the Chu Heavenly Clan would leave the fates of their members that they dispatched to train in the Lower Realms to the heavens. Even if they were to be killed, the Chu Heavenly Clan would not avenge them.

Merely, the great majority of people did not know about this. Furthermore, even if they did, they would not believe it to be true.

However, this Elder Su was different. Not only did he know about it, he also believed it to be true. Thus, when before Elder Su, Chu Luyang’s status as a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan was completely useless.

Before him, Chu Luyang was nothing more than a martial cultivator with a far inferior cultivation.

Perhaps he might be a supreme existence in the eyes of others, however, when before that Elder Su, he was nothing more than an ant.

“Pavilion Master Chu, truth be told, ever since the founding of our Sunset Cloud Valley, less than ten people have managed to master the Sunset Cloud Mysterious Technique to a state of producing an abnormal sign.”

“Other than our successive Valley Masters, our Elder Su is the only other person that has been able to master the Sunset Cloud Mysterious Technique to a state of producing an abnormal sign,” A two-meter-tall yet extremely thin old man began to flatter Elder

Su.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that his appearance actually resembled Zhao Ruofan slightly.

“Elder Su is amazing indeed,” Chu Luyang continued to politely flatter Elder Su.

“Pavilion Master Chu, there is no need to continue with the flattery. This time around... since I have agreed to help you eliminate the Red Butterfly Society, I will definitely eliminate them for you.”

“Merely, Elder Zhao, is that information you received the truth? Are you certain that what you have is the location of the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters?”

“You must know that I have no time to waste,” Elder Su, who was emitting an abnormal sign all over, questioned the extremely thin old man.

“Elder Su, please rest assured. I have a distantly related cousin. He is in the Red Butterfly Society, and holds the position of Vice President. It was him who personally informed me of the location of the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters. There is absolutely no mistake,” The thin as a match Elder Zhao said.

“Very well,” Elder Su nodded.

At that moment, Chu Luyang had a joyous expression. He knew very well how powerful this Elder Su was. It could be said that Elder Su was the strongest existence in the Sunset Cloud Valley apart from the Valley Master.

Right now, Elder Su was willing to help him eliminate the Red Butterfly Society. In fact... he did not even have to use a single soldier. The people that he had dispatched with him today were nothing more than a display.

‘Chu Feng, you should also be in the Red Butterfly Society, right? I will let you know the consequences of offending me,’ Chu Luyang

declared in his heart fiercely.

He knew that Chu Feng had left together with Liu Chengkun.

Even though Liu Chengkun had declared that Chu Feng was not a part of the Red Butterfly Society, Chu Luyang firmly believed that Chu Feng had joined the Red Butterfly Society, that the Red Butterfly Society was Chu Feng's backing.

Right at that moment, a female's voice was heard. "Pavilion Master Chu, I have a request. I don't know if you might be able to help me with this?"

Chu Luyang turned his gaze around. It turned out that it was the little beauty Chu Feng had accidentally come across while she was naked in the lake, Xu Yiyi.

"Miss Yiyi, what is your request, there is no harm in telling me about it. As long as I, Chu, am able to accomplish it, even if I am to go through water and tread on fire, I will definitely not refuse you," Chu Luyang declared while patting his chest. He knew very well how special that Xu Yiyi's status was.

The reason for that was because Xu Yiyi was Su Jingrui's, Elder Su's, personal disciple. Even though this girl was not very old, and her strength was inferior to his own, she remained someone that he dared not offend.

"There is no need for you to go through water and tread on fire. It is merely a small request. Can you spare that Chu Feng?" Xu Yiyi asked.

"Chu Feng?" Hearing those words, Chu Luyang's expression immediately turned sluggish. His expression was as if he had accidentally stepped into a pile of dog shit.

He had truly never ever expected that Xu Yiyi would be pleading for leniency for Chu Feng!!!

## Chapter 2209 – Beam Jumping Clown

---

After feeling a bit stunned, Chu Luyang asked, “Miss Yiyi, what sort of relationship might you have with that Chu Feng?”

“He is my friend,” Xu Yiyi said without the slightest hesitation.

“Eh...” At that moment, Chu Luyang’s expression turned very ugly. He felt enormous hatred for that Chu Feng. It could be said that... he detested Chu Feng more than he detested the Red Butterfly Society. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had successively killed two of his trusted aides.

However, more than that, he was confused as to exactly when Chu Feng got his bullshit luck to actually become friends with Xu Yiyi?

“If it is too difficult for Pavilion Master Chu, you can forget about it,” Xu Yiyi curled her lips in a slightly displeased manner. Then, she looked to Elder Su, grabbed his arm and shook it around like a spoiled child, “Master, someone wants to kill my friend. What are you going to do about this? Will you uphold justice for me?”

Seeing that Xu Yiyi actually began to request assistance from her master, Chu Luyang’s face turned green. Hurriedly, he said, “No, not difficult, not at all, it’s not difficult at all. I will order my men immediately, and tell them that the grudges and grievances between our Luyang’s Pavilion and Chu Feng will be written off with a single stroke, that we will no longer look into it.”

“In that case, thank you, Pavilion Master Chu,” Xu Yiyi said to Chu Luyang with a beaming and proud smile on her face.

“Miss Yiyi, you’re being too polite,” Although this was what Chu Luyang was saying, he was feeling extremely sullen in his heart.

As for the others present, they all held smiles on their faces. No one interrupted. The reason for that was because they all knew how much Elder Su pampered Xu Yiyi.

Regardless of what sort of conflict Chu Luyang had with Chu Feng, since Xu Yiyi had spoken out against it, Chu Luyang had no choice but to give up.

.....

In the blink of an eye, the next day arrived. Right on schedule, Liu Chengkun went to receive Chu Feng, and personally brought him to the Red Butterfly Society's meeting hall.

The meeting hall was filled with people. There was Elder Huang Luo, who Chu Feng was familiar with, as well as many more people that he was not familiar with. However, never did Chu Feng expect that Zhao Xiao and his father would also be present.

They had clearly been imprisoned yesterday. Yet, they'd already been released. From this, it could be seen that their punishment yesterday was nothing more than a facade.

However, to Chu Feng's greatest discomfort, when he and Liu Chengkun arrived at the meeting hall, the crowd all looked at him with astonished expressions. Even the Red Butterfly Society's President had such a gaze.

"Elder Liu, the meeting here today is a meeting for our Red Butterfly Society's upper echelon members. Why are you bringing that Chu Feng here?" Sure enough, Zhao Ruofan, the Red Butterfly Society's Vice President, spoke in a very displeased manner.

"Upper echelon members? It seems that Zhao Xiao does not possess the qualifications to participate in this meeting then," Liu Chengkun took a glance at Zhao Xiao who stood beside Zhao Ruofan.

"How could that be compared? No matter what, Zhao Xiao is a part of the Red Butterfly Society. But what about Chu Feng? Who does he think he is?" Zhao Ruofan said.

"Who does he think he is? Chu Feng is the honored guest invited by Lady Society President," Liu Chengkun said.

Hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan's expression immediately turned sluggish. Involuntarily, he turned his gaze to their Lady Society President. He was also afraid that Chu Feng had been invited here by their Society President.

If that was the case, he would very likely bump into the spearhead should he excessively block Chu Feng's access. Zhao Ruofan did not wish to enter an awkward situation like the one from yesterday again.

At the moment when Zhao Ruofan was worried as to whether he had spoken wrongly already, Liu Chengkun also turned his slightly worried gaze toward the Red Butterfly Society's President. He was also afraid that his disciple would not give him face, and directly drive Chu Feng out of this place.

"Have a seat," The Red Butterfly Society's President said to Chu Feng and Liu Chengkun with a smile on her face.

Hearing those words, Liu Chengkun revealed a smile. Then, he led Chu Feng and took seats in the meeting hall.

As for Chu Feng, even though he appeared to be fine on the surface, he was feeling very awkward in his heart. He had already realized that what Liu Chengkun had told him yesterday was unreliable.

Sure enough, Liu Chengkun spoke, "Lady Society President, I have heard that you've obtained two invitations to enter Mount Cloud Crane? Might it be possible for one of the invitations to be bestowed to little friend Chu Feng?"

The people present were all greatly alarmed by his words. Even Chu Feng was dumbfounded by them. The reason for that was because it meant that his guess was correct, that Liu Chengkun simply had no certainty in being able to allow Chu Feng to enter Mount Cloud Crane to train.

"Liu Chengkun, what are you saying?! How could we hand over



an invitation that our Red Butterfly Society had gone through great difficulties to obtain to an outsider?!” Zhao Ruofan shouted furiously. He was so furious that he no longer addressed Liu Chengkun as Elder, but instead directly called him by his name.

In fact, it was not only Zhao Ruofan who was furious. Many other elders were also furious. One by one, they were whispering to one another and wagging their tongues.

“This matter is decided by Lady Society President. Although you might be the Vice President, you seem to not have the qualifications to decide this matter,” Liu Chengkun said.

“I am, no matter what, the Vice President of the Red Butterfly Society. Thus, I must consider the interests of the Red Butterfly Society,” Zhao Ruofan shouted.

“Are you really considering the interests of the Red Butterfly Society, or are you actually considering your own interests? I believe you know best which it is,” Liu Chengkun snorted coldly.

“You!!!” Zhao Ruofan grew more and more furious. He was on the verge of acting out violently. However, a sudden thought arrived in his heart. Then, he turned his gaze to the Red Butterfly Society’s President. He said, “Lady Society President, please be the judge. Say... is the request from Elder Liu not deliberately creating troubles? Is this not overly excessive?”

At that moment, Zhao Ruofan finally revealed a confident expression. After all, he felt that it was already decided that he would be the one to proceed for Mount Cloud Crane together with the Red Butterfly Society’s President. Even if Liu Chengkun tried to interfere, he would not be able to alter that.

Zhao Ruofan knew very well that he was able to obtain the confidence of the Red Butterfly Society’s President not only because of his own personal strength and capabilities. Most importantly, it was because he possessed a distant cousin in Sunset Cloud Valley.

Thus, he was certain that Liu Chengkun would be humiliated today for trying to cause disruption.

“Actually, I have called all the elders here today precisely to announce this matter.”

“I have indeed received two invitation title plates that could grant access to Mount Cloud Crane,” As the Red Butterfly Society’s President spoke, she took out the two invitation title plates.

Seeing the two title plates, the eyes of practically everyone present shone. They all revealed light smiles on their faces. After all, they all knew that it was extremely difficult to obtain those invitation title plates.

Yet, the Red Butterfly Society’s President had actually obtained two such invitation title plates. This indirectly displayed to them that their Red Butterfly Society was quite powerful.

This was especially true for Zhao Ruofan. At that moment, he was smiling so wide that his face was like that of a steamed bun. The way he saw it, one of the two invitation title plates in their Lady Society President’s hand already belonged to him.

“I believe everyone already knows about the usage of the title plates. The main purpose in entering Mount Cloud Crane is to obtain Golden Crane True Immortal’s assistance to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“This is an extremely rare opportunity that occurs once in a hundred years or even a thousand years. After all, not all Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are willing to help us.”

“However, it is precisely because the opportunity is so rare that it must be given to those with the ability. Else, this opportunity will have been wasted.”

“I believe everyone knows who the person that is most qualified to go with me in our Red Butterfly Society will be. He is none other than Vice President Zhao,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President

said.

“That’s true. It is only Lord Vice President that is able to compete with Lady Society President in terms of world spirit techniques,” Many of the management elders present nodded their heads.

“Elders, you all are flattering me,” Even though Zhao Ruofan was speaking modestly, his widely smiling aged face was not at all modest.

“However, even I do not possess much certainty in being able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist by entering Mount Cloud Crane.”

“I believe Vice President Zhao feels the same, right?” Suddenly, the Red Butterfly Society’s President said to Zhao Ruofan.

“Of course. It is not that easy for one to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. However, this old man will definitely try his hardest, so as to not fail to live up to Lady Society President’s expectations,” Zhao Ruofan nodded while smiling. After all, when even their Lady Society President declared that she was not confident, it would be unsuitable for him to say that he was filled with confidence.

“Mn,” The Red Butterfly Society’s president nodded in satisfaction.

Seeing that the Lady Society President was nodding, the smile on Zhao Ruofan’s face grew even stronger. He was so overjoyed that he actually disregarded the situation at hand and picked up the teacup on the side table and started drinking it merrily.

His behavior was truly relaxed, carefree and contented. It was as if he was certain that he would obtain that invitation title plate.

Furthermore, while drinking his tea, he took a deliberate glance at Chu Feng and Liu Chengkun.

His mocking gaze seemed to be saying ‘no matter how you two try to cause disruptions, it will be useless. It is the people’s

expectation for me to go to Mount Cloud Crane. As for you two... you are nothing more than beam jumping clowns.'

"That is why I invited Chu Feng here today," The Red Butterfly Society's President continued.

"Snap~~~"

Hearing those words, the teacup Zhao Ruofan held shattered on the spot.

## Chapter 2210 – Dangerous Game Of Chess

---

After that shattering sound, everyone turned their gazes to Zhao Ruofan.

Not only had Zhao Ruofan shattered the teacup in his hand, the tea water in the cup had also splashed all over him.

Awkward. Zhao Ruofan was placed in a truly awkward situation. It was the words of the Red Butterfly Society's President that made him feel such awkwardness.

The reason for that was because even a fool could tell that their Lady Society President's final words possessed special meaning.

"Vice President Zhao, what's wrong?" The Red Butterfly Society's President asked even though she already knew the answer.

"Lady Society President, are you implying that Chu Feng is to go to Mount Cloud Crane instead of me?" Zhao Ruofan asked directly.

Once he said those words, many of the people present sucked in a mouthful of cold air. None of them had expected Zhao Ruofan to be so direct.

"Vice President Zhao, I had said that the invitation title plate should be given to an able individual," The Red Butterfly Society's President said.

"Please excuse this subordinate for his offense, but I truly do not feel that Chu Feng surpasses me in any aspect."

Zhao Ruofan spoke what he felt. After all, this matter concerned him. Furthermore, the Red Butterfly Society's President had agreed to have him go with her before.

Thus, even though she was going back on her promise, he still insisted on fighting against her decision. Even if it meant that he would offend her, he would still not hesitate.

He knew very well that the value of a single Immortal-cloak World Spiritist was not something that even the entire Red Butterfly Society could match up against.

If he were as to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he would not care even if he were to be forced to leave the Red Butterfly Society.

“Haha...” Hearing what Zhao Ruofan said, the Red Butterfly Society’s President laughed out loud. She stood up and said to the crowd, “Elders, how old do you think Chu Feng is?”

“Little friend Chu Feng seems to not even be thirty years old. His age would cause him to be considered a member of the younger generation’s younger generation. Even if he were to be placed among ordinary commoners, he would still be considered to be young,” Elder Huang Luo replied.

Hearing what Huang Luo said, the other elders also nodded. In terms of age, Chu Feng was indeed extremely young.

This was especially true when viewed from the viewpoint of the world of martial cultivation. It would not be excessive to say that Chu Feng’s age was simply akin to that of a child that had just set foot into the world of martial cultivation.

“How many people of Chu Feng’s age with rank two Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivations have you all seen before?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President continued to ask.

“Extremely rare. At the very least, I’ve never met another,” Huang Luo replied.

“Indeed, it’s extremely rare.”

The other elders also nodded in succession. Regardless of whether or not Chu Feng was an outsider, it remained that they had to acknowledge his strength.

“I believe there is no need for me to mention to you all how talented Chu Feng is in terms of martial cultivation. However, he

possesses another identity that I believe you all might not know about.”

“Chu Feng is actually an Asura World Spiritist,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President continued.

“Asura World Spiritist?!”

Once those words were said, other than the people that already knew about this, the people present were all shocked.

Even Zhao Ruofan, Zhao Xuan and Zhao Xian were stunned.

After all, Asura World Spiritists were no small matter. They were extremely respected existences!!!

“Not only is Chu Feng an Asura World Spiritist, he is also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“To be able to train in both martial cultivation and world spirit techniques and obtain such extraordinary accomplishments at such a young age, I believe that no one has seen someone like Chu Feng before, right?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President asked.

“Never, this is simply unheard of,” The crowd said.

“Little friend Chu Feng is truly an absolute genius,” In fact, there were even people that started to flatter Chu Feng with the intention of courting favors from him.

It must be said that when the people found out that Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist, there was an enormous change in their attitude toward him.

“That is why Chu Feng is our Red Butterfly Society’s honored guest. In the future, no one is allowed to act rudely toward Chu Feng,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President spoke those words very loudly and clearly.

At that moment, the people present all nodded their heads to express their approval of their Lady Society President’s decision.

They understood the intention of the Red Butterfly Society’s

President. An Asura World Spiritist, even if he was only a Royal-cloak World Spiritist now, would be someone that all the powers would want to rope in.

After all, the future potential that an Asura World Spiritist possessed was unable to be estimated.

When looking at it from another point of view, it would be the Red Butterfly Society's fortune to be able to invite Chu Feng to be their guest.

Thus, the Red Butterfly Society should capture this opportunity and think of all the ways to curry favors with this future grand character they could.

Before, the crowd had felt Liu Chengkun's request to have Chu Feng accompany their Lady Society President to Mount Cloud Crane to be deliberately creating troubles. However, they now felt that his request was extremely reasonable and fair. At that moment, practically everyone was in favor of that request.

"Lady Society President, you told me before that I would be accompanying you," Zhao Ruofan said. Even though he knew that those words would end up offending the Red Butterfly Society's President, he still said them. The reason for that was because he truly did not wish to miss out on a chance of becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

"Ah?" Hearing those words, the crowd were all startled. After all, they had never known about that, and also didn't know whether or not Zhao Ruofan was lying.

However, more than anything, they were shocked by how Zhao Ruofan dared to publicly declare such a thing. His actions were simply challenging their Lady Society President's authority.

"Vice President Zhao, why do I not remember ever saying that sort of thing to you?" The Red Butterfly Society's President did not admit to it. Not only that, she also took a displeased glance at Zhao



Ruofan.

At the same time, the air in the vast palace hall turned ice cold. Everyone present managed to sense that chilliness.

Facing the gaze of the Red Butterfly Society's President, as well as her invisible anger, Zhao Ruofan's body shivered. In the end, he was afraid of their Lady Society President.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Zhao Ruofan kneeled onto the ground. In a very apologetic manner, he declared, “This subordinate is stupid, this subordinate was wrong.”

“Merely, Lady Society President, my older cousin said that if I am able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, our Red Butterfly Society would be able to become the Sunset Cloud Valley's subsidiary power, that the Sunset Cloud Valley would be willing to help our Red Butterfly Society against Luyang's Pavilion.”

“Thus, this subordinate is most definitely not trying to strive for this opportunity for my own personal gains. Instead, it is for the sake of our Red Butterfly Society.”

“What?!” Hearing what Zhao Ruofan said, the expressions of the crowd all changed. After all, what he had said was no small matter.

“Vice President Zhao, is what you said the truth?” The Red Butterfly Society's President narrowed her eyes. Her gaze was filled with suspicion.

Based on her understanding of Zhao Ruofan's character, she did not believe his words. Merely, she also did not dare to ascertain them to be false, nor did she want to declare him to be lying in public. After all, Vice President Zhao's older cousin was someone that she could not afford to offend.

“This subordinate would not dare to deceive Lady Society President,” Although Zhao Ruofan spoke those words with

confidence, he was feeling very scared. The reason for that was because he knew that he had made it all up, that his older cousin had never mentioned those things before.

However, for the sake of entering Mount Cloud Crane, he must stake his all. Even if he would be punished by the Red Butterfly Society's President in the future, he must still seize this chance.

If worst came to worst, he could always leave the Red Butterfly Society. However, if he were to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist in the process, it would truly mean meteoric success for him.

This was a very dangerous game of chess that he was playing. However, he must continue to play it.

## Chapter 2211 – Poisoning

---

“I will say the same thing. This is a rare opportunity. Thus, it should be given to he who is more able,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President firmly refused.

Upon hearing those words, Liu Chengkun was on the verge of crying. He truly never expected for his disciple to support him like this at such a crucial time.

Just yesterday, his disciple had refused him. Yet today, for the sake of allowing her master to leave the stage without being humiliated, she actually stood by him. In fact, she even disregarded Zhao Ruofan’s status. This truly moved Liu Chengkun.

At that moment, Liu Chengkun felt that his decision to hand the position of the Red Butterfly Society’s President to his disciple was correct.

In fact, it was not only Liu Chengkun that was moved, Chu Feng also felt a whole new level of respect for the Red Butterfly Society’s President. His impression of her had changed enormously.

The way Chu Feng saw it, regardless of what sort of hidden troubles she might have that led to her giving way to Zhao Ruofan incessantly, she at least respected her master and deeply cared for him.

If she were truly to choose between Liu Chengkun and Zhao Ruofan, Chu Feng felt that the Red Butterfly Society’s President would end up choosing Liu Chengkun.

“Please excuse this subordinate for offending you. However, Lady Society President, how are you so certain that this subordinate’s world spirit techniques would definitely be inferior to little friend Chu Feng’s?” Zhao Ruofan gathered up his courage to say those words.

“Could it be that you wish to compete against Chu Feng in terms

of world spirit techniques?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President asked in a very annoyed manner.

Once those words were said, all of the management elders’ expressions changed. In fact, some among them even started to secretly send voice transmission to urge Zhao Ruofan to stop arguing against the Lady Society President.

The reason for that was because they were all able to tell that their Lady Society President was angered. If Zhao Ruofan were to continue on like this, he would definitely suffer consequences.

As for Zhao Ruofan, he was definitely flustered and scared.

However, he still clenched his teeth and said, “If this subordinate is to be defeated, I am willing to withdraw. Merely... I fear that little friend Chu Feng would not dare to compete.”

After he finished saying those words, Zhao Ruofan turned his gaze to Chu Feng. His gaze was filled with provocation.

At the same time, the rest of the crowd also turned their gazes toward Chu Feng. Merely, their gazes were filled with worries.

At that moment, it was not only the Red Butterfly Society’s President, even the elders who were unfamiliar with Chu Feng started to sweat coldly.

Even if Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist, it remained that he was only a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. At his age, even if he was a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, how strong could he possibly be?

However, Zhao Ruofan was someone who had trained in world spirit techniques for a very long time. His abilities were something that the people here all knew very well.

The crowd was worried that Chu Feng would be defeated. In fact, they felt that Chu Feng would definitely be defeated.

It was not because they were truly concerned for Chu Feng.

Rather, they did not wish to miss the opportunity to befriend Chu Feng. After all, they felt that Chu Feng was someone who could potentially become a grand existence.

Yet, if Chu Feng were to be defeated by Zhao Ruofan today, it would be equivalent to their Red Butterfly Society having offended Chu Feng. None of them wished for that.

“Heh...” Seeing that Chu Feng was not responding, Zhao Ruofan revealed an expression of complacency in his mocking gaze.

The way he saw it, even though this game of chess he was playing was very dangerous, it was the path to a steady victory.

The reason for that was because he did not feel that Chu Feng had the courage to compete in world spirit techniques against him. He felt that Chu Feng was most definitely finding a pretext to refuse the competition.

However, regardless of what sort of excuse Chu Feng might use, should he refuse to compete, it would mean that he was scared. In that case, Zhao Ruofan would be able to obtain the qualifications to go to Mount Cloud Crane.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, “Vice President Zhao, while I, Chu Feng, might lack everything else, courage is one thing that I do not lack.” Not only did he say that, he also had a confident expression on his face.

“Are you implying that you are planning to compete with me in world spirit techniques?” Zhao Ruofan asked in shock. He did not expect that Chu Feng would dare to take up the challenge.

“I am ready to take you on at any time,” Chu Feng said calmly.

Hearing those words, the crowd were all stunned. Chu Feng’s calm expression displayed to them that he was most definitely someone who had experienced grand situations. This was something that none of them had expected before.

This was especially true for Zhao Ruofan. At that moment, his

eyes were filled with astonishment.

He had heard absolute confidence from Chu Feng's words. It was as if Chu Feng was absolutely confident that he would be able to defeat him in the match.

Scared. Even though Zhao Ruofan was unwilling to admit to it, he was, at that very moment, scared. He was scared that he would be defeated by that brat Chu Feng.

However, as the arrow was already placed onto the bow, he no longer had any way to escape from the match. After careful deliberation, he said, "Since you are willing to take me on at any time, we shall compete here tomorrow."

"Sure," Chu Feng nodded.

"If there is nothing else, Lady Society President, this subordinate shall take his leave," Zhao Ruofan respectfully saluted the Red Butterfly Society's President, turned around and left without even waiting for her response.

As matters stood today, he had already completely gone against the desires of the Red Butterfly Society's President. Thus, he was no longer worried about what she thought.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I truly never would have expected that you are an Asura World Spiritist. You are truly a well-hidden genius."

The Red Butterfly Society's other elders all began to act friendly toward Chu Feng.

Even though they'd been acting disdainfully toward him before, Chu Feng decided to give Liu Chengkun face and meet them with smiles.

.....

Late at night. Zhao Ruofan's palace was brightly lit.

"Grandfather, why did you not directly take care of that Chu

Feng? Why must you give him the opportunity to take a breather?" Zhao Xiao, who stood beside Zhao Ruofan, asked in a very puzzled manner.

"I have already had a falling out with that girl Liu Xiaoli. Likely, she will make things difficult for me in the future. We will not be able to continue to stay in this Red Butterfly Society anymore."

"The reason why I've done all this is so that I can have a chance to enter Mount Cloud Crane."

"Thus, I cannot afford to lose. I must obtain absolute certainty of victory. I must defeat that Chu Feng," Zhao Ruofan said.

"But, will you be absolutely confident tomorrow?" Zhao Xiao was confused.

"Step, step, step~~~"

Right at that moment, Zhao Xiao's father walked in hurriedly.

After seeing the arrival of his son, Zhao Ruofan waved his sleeve and set up a soundproofing spirit formation around his palace.

Then, he asked, "Xuan'er, did you complete the task?"

"Lord Father, please rest assured. Your son has completed it accordingly," Zhao Xiao's father said in a very proud manner.

"In that case, Chu Feng has already taken it?" Zhao Ruofan continued to ask.

"I saw him taking it personally. There is no mistake," Zhao Xiao's father said.

"Very well," Zhao Ruofan revealed an extremely pleased expression. Then, he snorted lightly and said, "That thing is colorless and odorless. Even if it is to enter his body, he would still not be able to detect it. It will only activate when he starts setting up his world spirit formations."

"When it is activated, Chu Feng will only be able to use a tenth of his world spirit power."

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, you are still too inexperienced to compete against me.”

“Hahaha!!!” After saying those words, Zhao Ruofan burst into loud laughter.

“Grandfather is truly amazing,” At that moment, Zhao Xiao had managed to understand what was happening. It was no wonder that his grandfather did not compete with Chu Feng on the spot. It turned out that he had ordered his father to poison Chu Feng.

Like this, his grandfather would have absolute certainty of victory in the match tomorrow.

After all, Zhao Xiao felt that Chu Feng would be no match for his grandfather even if he was able to unleash all of his world spirit power, let alone ten percent.

.....

At the same time. In Liu Chengkun's palace. Chu Feng was drinking and chatting with Liu Chengkun.

Originally, there were a lot of visitors in that place. They were all the Red Butterfly Society's management elders. However, at that moment, only Chu Feng and Liu Chengkun remained there.

Although the people had all left, Liu Chengkun still had a smile on his face. It could be seen that his mood was very good.

Furthermore, his complexion was rosy. It could be seen that he had drunk a lot of wine today.

“Senior Liu, is that servant girl that poured wine for me earlier a part of your palace?” Chu Feng asked.

“That's right. All of the people in my palace are people that I carefully selected, my trusted aides. After all, I feel reassured to use my own people,” Liu Chengkun was very proud of this. Furthermore, he even started to crack jokes, “Little friend Chu Feng, why did you ask about that? You couldn't possibly be fond of



that girl, right?”

“I will not conceal this from you. Although she might appear young, she is over a thousand years old. It seems to me that the gap between your ages is not quite appropriate. However, if you do not mind it, I am able to betroth her to you as your concubine.”

“Senior Liu truly knows how to joke around. While it is true that I possess interest in her, it is not in that aspect,” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile on his face.

“Then, little friend Chu Feng, what aspect are you talking about?” Liu Chengkun asked with a beaming smile. Perhaps it might be because he drank too much, but he revealed a mischievous old man smile on his aged face.

“Earlier, she poisoned my wine,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“What?!” Hearing those words, Liu Chengkun immediately stood up. Then he stood there, stunned like a statue.

## Chapter 2212 – Confidence

---

Silence. Chu Feng's words struck Liu Chengkun like a lightning strike. It jolted Liu Chengkun completely awake.

“Little friend Chu Feng, say what you just said again,” Liu Chengkun asked.

“I have been poisoned by your servant girl,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“Poisoned? What sort of poison?” Liu Chengkun asked worriedly. He could tell that Chu Feng was not joking. However, something like poisoning was no small matter. As such, how could he not be nervous?

“A poison that will restrict one's world spirit power. The poison has entered my body and fused with my soul. Even if I am to destroy my physical body, I will still not be able to break free from the poison.”

“Fortunately, the poison will not activate yet. It will only activate when I start to activate my world spirit power.”

“Furthermore, even should it activate, it will also not cause fatal danger to my life. All it will do is restrict my world spirit power. In other words, when the poison is activated, I will only be able to use a tenth of my world spirit power,” Chu Feng said.

“Damn it! Who would poison you with this sort of poison? Zhao Ruofan! It must have been Zhao Ruofan!” Liu Chengkun said while gnashing his teeth.

“It was indeed him. There was an uninvited guest at the feast today. Although he concealed himself extremely well, I was still able to recognize him. He was Zhao Ruofan's son, Zhao Xiao's father, Zhao Xuan,” Chu Feng said.

“It was Zhao Xuan?” Liu Chengkun asked.

“That’s right. He snuck in and was focused on me the entire time. It was only after I took the poison that he left at ease,” Chu Feng said.

“So it was Zhao Ruofan. For the sake of tomorrow’s match, he actually used such despicable methods. I will definitely make him pay,” After knowing what had happened, Liu Chengkun was filled with anger. He turned around and prepared to leave.

“Senior Liu, please wait,” Seeing that Liu Chengkun was planning to go and settle this with Zhao Ruofan,. Chu Feng hurriedly spoke to stop him, “There is one thing that I must tell you still.”

“Chu Feng, what is it?” Liu Chengkun asked.

“I had already noticed that there was poison in the wine before I even drank it. Thus, I drank the poisoned wine on purpose,” Chu Feng said.

“On purpose?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, why did you take the poison on purpose?!” Liu Chengkun had an expression of shock. He did not understand what Chu Feng was thinking.

“I took the poison precisely so that I could make Zhao Ruofan feel that he had prevailed.”

“As for the reason why I dared to take the poison, it is because I possess a body immune to poisons. At the very least, that poison is incapable of causing me harm,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you actually possess a body immune to poison?” Liu Chengkun was even more shocked upon finding out about that.

“Senior Liu, tell me, do you wish to eliminate that Zhao Ruofan?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do. I have found him to be repulsive the entire time. But,

Xiaoli, she...” Liu Chengkun was placed in a difficult situation. He seemed to have hidden troubles.

Even without Liu Chengkun explaining things to him, Chu Feng was able to guess that the ‘Xiaoli’ that he spoke of must be the Red Butterfly Society’s President.

However, that was not what was important. What was important was the fact that they currently possessed the opportunity to eliminate Zhao Ruofan. Thus, without the slightest hesitation, Chu Feng said, “This is a great opportunity to eliminate Zhao Ruofan. At the very least, we will be able to deprive him of the authority and status he holds in the Red Butterfly Society.”

“Thus, Senior Liu, you only need to capture that servant girl that had poisoned me. Then, do not alert the enemy for now.”

“It will be fine should we have her tell us what happened. Tomorrow... we will completely expose Zhao Ruofan’s wicked conduct,” Chu Feng said.

“Tomorrow? Why are we not exposing him right now? If we are able to expose Zhao Ruofan’s wicked conduct now, there will be no need for a match tomorrow,” Liu Chengkun said.

“No, I’m going to compete. I must let Zhao Ruofan and everyone else know that I, Chu Feng, possess sufficient qualifications to enter Mount Cloud Crane.”

“I will let them know that I would be able to defeat Zhao Ruofan and obtain the qualifications to train in Mount Cloud Crane even if this didn’t happen,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay then, let’s do as little friend Chu Feng suggests,” Seeing that Chu Feng was determined, Liu Chengkun did not try to urge him against it anymore.

Then, he left to find that servant girl. Originally, that servant girl was planning to escape. However, never did she expect that her actions would’ve been exposed so quickly. Thus, before she could

escape, she was captured by Liu Chengkun.

At the beginning, the servant girl was unwilling to admit that she had poisoned Chu Feng. However, after Chu Feng began to narrate the process of how she had poisoned him in clear detail, she was immediately terrified.

She had truly never expected Chu Feng to know all of the details of how she had poisoned him. Thus, without even being tortured, the servant girl admitted to it.

As for the mastermind behind her, it was naturally Zhao Ruofan.

In fact, she had already been bribed by Zhao Ruofan many years ago. She had stayed by Liu Chengkun's side precisely so that she could assist Zhao Ruofan in dealing with him.

"I have trusted you in vain. Not only did you betray me, you even poisoned my honored guest," At that moment, Liu Chengkun was furious. He was fuming with rage between gritted teeth.

He would not mind if that servant girl were to do anything to him. Yet, this servant girl had actually dared to poison Chu Feng; that was something that he could not tolerate.

"Lord Elder, I am sorry. It is all this servant's fault. Over the years, you have treated me extremely well. If Vice President Zhao ordered me to do harm to you, I would not have been able to do it."

"That is why I only agreed to provide information to him, that I would never do anything that would harm you. This time, I poisoned Lord Chu Feng all because of my obsession with riches."

"But, it remains that I have attended to you for all these years. Even if I have never provided any meritorious service, I have still worked hard. I do not have any other requests. I only hope that Lord Elder will give me a quick death," The servant girl knew that she would be killed. Thus, she did not beg for forgiveness, and only begged for a quick death without being tortured.

"You don't have to die. In fact, you can live very pleasantly," Chu

Feng said.

“Milord, you’re not going to kill me?” The servant girl was shocked to hear those words.

“As long as you expose Zhao Ruofan before Lady Society President tomorrow, and expose how he had you stay at Elder Liu’s side, as well as all of the things he had you do, I can guarantee you that you will not be killed,” Chu Feng said.

“Lord Elder, is that true?” The servant girl acted as if she did not believe what Chu Feng had said. Thus, she looked to Liu Chengkun.

“How could little friend Chu Feng lie to you?” Liu Chengkun snorted and said with a cold and disappointed tone.

“Lord Chu Feng, thank you for sparing my life. I will definitely follow your orders. You can tell me to do anything. I will definitely expose Zhao Ruofan and tell all of his evil conducts,” The servant girl hurriedly kowtowed to Chu Feng. She was feeling so grateful toward Chu Feng that she was weeping bitter tears.

As for Chu Feng, he smiled lightly. Then, he said, “I do not need you to add details to your story when you’re exposing Zhao Ruofan. It will do if you just tell the truth.”

.....

# Chapter 2213 – Breaking Through The Formation

---

“If both sides are ready, the match shall start. However, you two are to decide upon the rules of the match,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“You decide,” Chu Feng said casually to Zhao Ruofan.

“Even if you didn’t say so, it should be me who gets to decide. After all, I have trained in world spirit techniques for much longer than you, and could be considered to be your senior,” Zhao Ruofan sneered. He did not appreciate Chu Feng letting him decide at all.

At that moment, many of the Red Butterfly Society’s elders started to frown. Ever since yesterday, when Zhao Ruofan had had a falling out with their Lady Society President, the crowd discovered that Zhao Ruofan was acting more and more shameless.

Even though they all felt a great amount of disbelief, they faintly had the feeling that these were Zhao Ruofan’s true colors.

At that moment, many people felt disgusted with Zhao Ruofan as their Vice President.

“Enough of your superfluous words. Tell me, how do you want to compete?” Chu Feng said.

“Very simple, an exchange in attack and defense. I will set up a defensive formation for you to breach.”

“If you are able to break through it, it’ll be your win,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“Since that is the case, let’s start,” Chu Feng said.

“I’m not done yet. The time which the two of us are to spend on setting up our world spirit formations must be the same. You must set up your spirit formation to breach my defensive formation in the same amount of time I use to set up my defensive formation. If

you spend more time than me, it will be your loss,” Zhao Ruofan added.

“Isn’t that too difficult?” Once Zhao Ruofan said those words, before Chu Feng could even reply, the Red Butterfly Society’s other elders began to spiritedly discuss his proposal. They all felt those rules to be very unfair.

However, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, “You can start then.”

“You agree to the rules?” Zhao Ruofan was shocked. Even he did not expect Chu Feng to agree to the rules so easily.

“Do you not understand human speech?” Chu Feng said impatiently.

“What arrogance. I will let you experience the abilities of a true Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Zhao Ruofan snorted coldly. Then, he began to set up his defensive spirit formation.

When his boundless world spirit power appeared, many of the people present revealed astonished expressions. Even the Red Butterfly Society’s President acted in such a manner.

The reason for that was because Zhao Ruofan’s methods were truly akin to moving clouds and flowing water. They were so natural, and flowed like calligraphy as they linked with one another. In his hands, that extremely complicated spirit formation appeared to be extremely simple. Effortlessly, he set up his spirit formation.

In merely a short moment, in the time of a count to ten, he had managed to create a defensive spirit formation that looked like a fort. That defensive spirit formation covered Zhao Ruofan within it.

“Chu Feng, I have finished setting up my spirit formation. It is your turn now. Remember, you cannot spend more time than me on setting up your spirit formation,” Zhao Ruofan spoke complacently.



“Done? He actually completed his spirit formation in such a short period of time?” The crowd were all astonished upon hearing those words. However, upon closer inspection, the crowd discovered that the fort dazzling with golden light was truly extremely powerful. It was likely not something that an ordinary rank two Half Martial Ancestor could breach, let alone using only world spirit techniques.

“Zhao Ruofan was actually concealing his abilities before. So this is his actual strength in terms of world spirit techniques,” At that moment, even the Red Butterfly Society’s President was frowning.

As matters stood, she naturally wished for Chu Feng to win. However, as she saw the spirit formation that Zhao Ruofan had set up, even she felt that it would be very difficult for Chu Feng to win. The reason for that was because the spirit formation that Zhao Ruofan had set up possessed an extremely powerful defense even though he spent a very short amount of time to set it up.

In comparison, it was more difficult to break through a spirit formation than it was to set up a defensive spirit formation.

To set up a spirit formation capable of breaking through a defensive formation in the same time it took for the defensive spirit formation to be set up was extremely difficult. Even she did was not certain she would be able to accomplish that.

When even she could not accomplish it, how could Chu Feng possibly be able to?

This was not something that only the Red Butterfly Society’s President was worried about. Liu Chengkun, Huang Luo and many of the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders were also worried about it.

“Open your tiny eyes and watch carefully. Your granddaddy will spend less time setting up my spirit formation than the time you spent to set up your spirit formation.”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng actually said those words. He shocked all of the people present.

Arrogance. He was so arrogant that he could cause people's hair to stand on end. It could be said that he simply did not place Zhao Ruofan in his eyes at all.

At that moment, even those people that were originally standing on Chu Feng's side had a change in gaze. They felt that what Chu Feng said was truly too boastful.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly Chu Feng's hands began to rapidly change. His boundless spirit power began to emerge from his body like golden dragons.

In the end, they actually turned into eighteen golden dragons that spiraled around Chu Feng.

“I'm done,” Chu Feng said.

“Done? Done already?”

Hearing those words, the crowd was astonished. The reason for that was because Chu Feng spent but a mere instant to set up those eighteen golden dragons. If Zhao Ruofan taken ten entire seconds to finish his spirit formation, Chu Feng had finished his spirit formation in merely a single second. This was truly too fast.

To the crowd's greatest surprise, Chu Feng's eighteen golden dragons were all vivid and lifelike. They were emitting intimidating might all over. From their intimidating strength, they really did appear to have surpassed Zhao Ruofan's spirit formation.

“Merely false bravado. What matters in spirit formations is their practicality, and not how artistic they might be,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“How do you know that my spirit formation is not practical?”

Chu Feng asked.

“Your spirit formation will definitely not be able to break through my spirit formation,” Zhao Ruofan said with full confidence. He was not saying those words recklessly. As a world spiritist, he was able to deduce the strength of a spirit formation. The way he saw it, the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up would not be able to break through his defensive spirit formation.

In fact, it was not only Zhao Ruofan who felt that way. The Red Butterfly Society’s President was also shaking her head repeatedly.

The way she saw it, Chu Feng was truly too careless. He was clearly capable of spending more time. Yet, for the sake of face, he decided to finish his spirit formation instantly. She felt that a spirit formation like that would definitely not be able to break through Zhao Ruofan’s defensive formation.

“Are you certain, certain that my spirit formation will not be able to break through your spirit formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“Absolutely certain,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“Then open your dog eyes, and carefully watch how my spirit formation will break through your spirit formation,” Once Chu Feng said those words, his eyes shone with coldness.

“Roar~~~”

Following that, eighteen ear-piercing dragon roars were heard in unison. Following that, the eighteen golden dragons soared into the air and began to fly toward Zhao Ruofan’s spirit formation.

“Rumble~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. That explosion punctured the heavenly dome and shattered the void and space itself.

At that moment, even the extremely sturdy Red Butterfly Society palace hall started to tremble violently.

This scene alarmed the guards stationed in the Red Butterfly

Society. They thought that something had happened. One by one, they hurriedly flew over.

However, after they approached, they all stood there stunned.

It was not only the people that had arrived later that stood there stunned. The people in the palace hall, apart from Chu Feng, were all stunned.

Inside the palace hall, eighteen golden dragons were displaying their impressive power. They were spiraling around Zhao Ruofan. Their killing intent was pressing toward him nonstop. Their dreadful gazes seemed to be saying that they would devour Zhao Ruofan instantly should Chu Feng give the order.

As for the spirit formation that Zhao Ruofan had set up, it had already been shattered, turning into golden light and drifting through the air.

Even though the crowd were all in disbelief and finding it hard to accept, the truth was placed before their eyes.

Chu Feng had successfully broken through the defensive spirit formation!!!

## Chapter 2214 – Not Enough For Me To Kill

---

After a long moment, the Red Butterfly Society's President blurted out, "Amazing."

The way she saw it, Chu Feng was truly amazing. He had decided to break through Zhao Ruofan's spirit formation not by trying to find flaws. Instead, he had decided to forcibly shatter it with a powerful slaughtering formation.

However, a slaughtering formation that powerful was something that should be extremely difficult to set up. Yet, Chu Feng had managed to successfully set it up in an instant. She felt that to be truly unimaginable.

At that moment, she and the management elders present all realized that Chu Feng's arrogance was not because he was conceited. Rather, it was because he possessed the capability to be arrogant.

"Impossible! How could this be?!" Zhao Ruofan had a shocked expression.

He was unable to accept the outcome. He was truly unable to accept it, unable to accept that his defensive world spirit formation would be broken through so easily.

Confused, he turned his gaze of blame to his son, Zhao Xuan. His gaze seemed to be asking 'did you really succeed in poisoning Chu Feng?'

As for Zhao Xuan, he was stunned. He had clearly seen Chu Feng drinking the wine and the poison within the wine with his own eyes. Thus, how could he not be affected?

"So your world spirit formation is actually that weak. It would seem... that I have won," Chu Feng mocked.

Once Chu Feng's words were said, not to mention Zhao Ruofan, even the others that wanted Chu Feng to win were stunned.

Won? This match ended this easily?

“Enough of your nonsense. You have merely broken through my defensive spirit formation. This does not mean that I will not be able to break through your defensive spirit formation,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“Oh, I understand then,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he began to set up a spirit formation. In merely a split second, Chu Feng had set up a defensive spirit formation.

The spirit formation he set up was an enormous golden cat. The cat was ten meters tall and sitting on the ground. It had a somewhat hilarious appearance. The reason for that was because the cat was smiling; it was simply a ‘lucky cat.’

However, after the cat appeared, the eyes of the Red Butterfly Society’s President and the other Royal-cloak World Spiritists all shone.

The reason for that was because that cat was most definitely not an ordinary cat.

“You!” Terrified. As a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, Zhao Ruofan was actually terrified.

However, this cannot be blamed on him. After all, even he was able to tell how powerful Chu Feng’s defensive spirit formation was. It was a spirit formation capable of absorbing spirit power, a sort of defensive technique meant to be used against world spirit techniques.

If he was given sufficient time, Zhao Ruofan might be able to break through Chu Feng’s defensive spirit formation. However, it would simply be impossible for him to break through it instantly.

“What’s wrong? Go ahead. The rules shall be the same as what you declared earlier. The time you spend on setting up your spirit formation to break through my defensive spirit formation cannot surpass the time I spent setting up my spirit formation. Else, it

would mean that you have lost,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, the strongest method of a world spiritist is not their world spirit techniques. Rather, it is their ability to summon world spirits.”

“The strength of one’s world spirit is the best embodiment of the strength of a world spiritist,” Zhao Ruofan suddenly said.

“You’re implying that you wish to compete with me in terms of world spirits?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. Do you dare?” Zhao Ruofan asked.

“Zhao Ruofan, don’t you act like a sore loser! Everyone knows that a world spiritist’s cultivation is crucial to the strength of the summoned world spirits. After all, world spirits are unwilling to submit to masters inferior to themselves.”

“Little friend Chu Feng is merely a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, whereas you are a rank two Martial Ancestor! With such an enormous difference in cultivation, how could your world spirits be comparable?!” Liu Chengkun shouted.

At that moment, the others also began to spiritedly discuss Zhao Ruofan’s suggestion. They all felt that Zhao Ruofan’s action was that of a sore loser.

After all, he was the one who had suggested that they compete in defensive spirit formations. Yet now, he wanted to change the competition to world spirits instead. This was truly too shameless.

“Haha, I am asking Chu Feng, not you,” Zhao Ruofan snorted coldly. He completely ignored the comments from the crowd. Instead, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, do you dare or not?”

“Chu Feng, don’t be afraid. With this Queen here, how could you admit defeat? Let me take care of him,” Her Lady Queen’s voice was suddenly heard. She was angry. The shameless Zhao Ruofan had invoked Her Lady Queen’s anger.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng felt that his body was filled with boundless power. It was as if he did not have to fear anything, that nothing could make him cower.

Thus, with full confidence, Chu Feng said, “Go ahead and release your world spirits.”

“Agreed?”

“Chu Feng actually agreed?”

Dumbfounded. Not to mention Liu Chengkun and the others, even Zhao Ruofan, his son and his grandson were all dumbfounded.

Was Chu Feng this bold because he actually possessed the ability, or was it because he lacked the brains?

A mere rank two Half Martial Ancestor dared to compete with a rank two Martial Ancestor with world spirits?

If this was not courting death, then what else could it be?

“As you wish,” However, after a short moment of astonishment, Zhao Ruofan revealed a confident smile.

Once he said those words, he soared into the air and left the vast palace hall. He had flown out.

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

.....

At this time, a total of thirty world spirit gates were opened.

After the thirty world spirit gates appeared, over a hundred world spirits flew out of them in succession.

They were emitting celestial light and imposing airs. It turned out that these world spirits were from the Fairy Spirit World.



Among the Seven Spirit Worlds, the world spirits from the Fairy Spirit World could be considered relatively strong ones. Furthermore, they all possessed a special characteristic — conceit. They all gave off airs of standing above everyone.

However, it must be said that after over a hundred Fairy World Spirits appeared, the majority of the people from the Red Butterfly Society all felt cold sweat for Chu Feng.

Without mentioning the special characteristics of the Fairy Spirit World's world spirits, merely their strength was already enough for the crowd to become worried. The strongest few were rank one Martial Ancestors, whereas the weakest few were rank eight Half Martial Ancestors.

Any random one of them was many times more powerful than Chu Feng. No matter how one looked at it, Chu Feng seemed to be doomed to lose.

“Heh...” However, after seeing those Fairy World Spirits, Liu Chengkun, who had been worried for Chu Feng earlier, actually laughed.

After all, he had personally seen Chu Feng's Asura World Spirit, and knew how powerful she was. Even Hong Xi was killed by her. He felt that these Fairy World Spirits would likely not be a match for her.

With a smile on his face, Zhao Ruofan mocked, “Chu Feng, you couldn't possibly be scared witless, right?” The way he saw it, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng's world spirit techniques might be, he would definitely be no match for him in terms of world spirits.

“I'm afraid of scaring you witless,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he opened a world spirit gate. Her Lady Queen Eggy appeared before the crowd in a stunning manner.

“That's a world spirit? How could it be that beautiful?” Sure

enough, after seeing Eggy, the people present, regardless of whether they were men or women, were all stunned by Eggy's exceptional beauty.

After all, her beauty was so rarely seen in the world. Even women were attracted by her beauty. As for men, there was no need to mention them.

“How are they to fight?” However, at the moment when the crowd were all stunned by Eggy's beauty, some among them started to become worried. After all, Eggy's cultivation of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor was truly too weak.

Although a rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level world spirit would be extremely powerful for Chu Feng's cultivation, there was too enormous of a gap when compared to Zhao Ruofan's world spirits.

“Hahaha, rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Are you certain you have not dispatched that world spirit to her death?” Zhao Ruofan laughed mockingly. For a rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level world spirit to fight against his army of world spirits would definitely be an overestimation of their ability.

“Hey hey hey, and here I thought how amazing an Asura World Spirit might be. Turns out, it's nothing more than trash.”

“However, it must be said that little girl, your appearance is quite decent. With the way you look, we are truly unable to bear killing you. How about you admit defeat right now, and we'll spare your life?”

It was not only Zhao Ruofan who started to mock Chu Feng. His Fairy Spirit World's world spirits actually began to mock Her Lady Queen. At that moment, they simply did not appear like a bunch of Fairy World Spirits. Rather, they looked more like a bunch of hoodlums.

“One, two, three, four, five, six, seven...” However, at that

moment, Her Lady Queen actually began counting.

“Little girl, what are you doing?”

“Could it be that you’ve been scared witless by us?” The Fairy World Spirits asked in confusion.

However, Eggy ignored them. It was only when she counted till a hundred and seven that she stopped.

“There’s actually only a hundred and seven,” Eggy shook her head in disappointment.

“We’re asking you a question here! What are you doing?!” The Fairy World Spirits said impatiently.

At that moment, an ice-cold killing intent suddenly flashed through Eggy’s eyes. She said, “With merely this many, it’s simply not enough for this Queen to kill.”

“What? What did you say?” The Fairy World Spirits all opened their eyes wide. They did not dare to believe what they just heard.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, dark black gaseous flames instantly exploded. Like the devil’s claws, the black gaseous flames extended toward the hundred and seven Fairy World Spirits.

The Grim Reaper’s scythe was fixed onto them.

# Chapter 2215 – Complete Defeat And Fall From Grace

---

“Stop!”

Sensing that the situation was bad, Zhao Ruofan shouted and planned to interfere. He was planning to save his hundred-plus world spirits.

After all, Eggy had unleashed her killing intent. If he didn't interfere, his hundred-plus world spirits would definitely be killed.

“Impudent!”

However, right at that moment, a loud shout was heard. That shout caused space and the void itself to tremble.

At the same time, a boundless power also swept forth. In a flash, that power sealed off Zhao Ruofan's power and formed an invisible cage around him.

Zhao Ruofan was unable to attack or cause any harm.

It was the Red Butterfly Society's President. Even though she was only a rank one Martial Ancestor, and might appear to be inferior to Zhao Ruofan, her body was currently flickering with purple light. She looked like a celestial fairy.

It turned out that she was actually a Divine Body. Not only was she a Divine Body, she was also capable of increasing her cultivation by a level through the use of her Divine Power.

Having activated her Divine Power, her current cultivation was that of a rank two Martial Ancestor, the same level of cultivation as Zhao Ruofan.

However, her battle power was stronger than Zhao Ruofan's. Zhao Ruofan was only an ordinary rank two Martial Ancestor without any heaven-defying battle power.

She, on the other hand, was someone who possessed heaven-defying battle power.

Although her heaven-defying battle power was only capable of surmounting a single level of cultivation, when added on to her current cultivation of a rank two Martial Ancestor, she was capable of fighting against ordinary rank three Martial Ancestors. Thus, she would naturally be able to subdue Zhao Ruofan, a mere ordinary rank two Martial Ancestor.

“Eeeaahh~~~”

At the moment Zhao Ruofan was stopped, miserable screams began to be heard from the sky.

Massacre. A hair-raising massacre was currently happening.

The people present were all people that had seen major events. They were all people that have seen killings and massacres before.

However, the massacre that was happening right now caused them to tremble with fear.

Not only was the killer a beautiful young girl, her killing methods were also extremely ruthless.

Cruel. Although the hundred-plus Fairy World Spirits were killed in but a short moment, they all met with extremely cruel and miserable deaths. Before dying, they were all filled with cuts and bruises.

“Are there any more world spirits? This Queen has not yet killed enough,” After killing all of Zhao Ruofan’s world spirits, Her Lady Queen mocked him.

She did not feel the slightest bit of guilt in killing those world spirits. Instead, joy filled her face. It was as if killing was a very merry thing to her.

“You!!!” Zhao Ruofan was so furious that his body trembled nonstop. Only he knew how much effort he had put into

contracting those world spirits.

Yet now, they were all killed by Eggy. His meticulous efforts of many years were all ruined today.

“Seems like there aren’t any more. With merely this bit of ability, I truly don’t know where you got the confidence to compete with Chu Feng in terms of world spirit techniques.”

“Could it be that you’ve gone senile?” Eggy mocked. She did not care about Zhao Ruofan’s twitching lips, or his expression as if he had been fed feces. Just like that, she confidently, beautifully and charmingly walked into the world spirit gate before disappearing from everyone’s line of sight.

“Lady Society President, why did you stop me from saving my world spirits?” Zhao Ruofan asked angrily. As matters stood, he no longer cared about offending the Red Butterfly Society’s President. There was not the slightest trace of respect in his tone. Instead, he only wanted to obtain justice.

“Why?” The Red Butterfly Society’s President smiled coldly. She said, “Earlier, you had clearly stated that you would compete in defensive spirit formations. However, you ended up losing. Yet, you refused to admit your defeat, and insisted that Chu Feng set up a defensive spirit formation for you to attempt to breach.”

“Chu Feng did not bicker with you, and set up one such spirit formation. Yet, what did you do? You did not even dare to attempt to try breaching it.”

“Why did you not dare? It’s because you knew that you would not be able to set up a spirit formation that could break through Chu Feng’s defensive spirit formation in such a short period of time.”

“Thus, you decided to withdraw your previous remark, and demanded that Chu Feng compete with you with world spirits. Furthermore, you even declared that Chu Feng’s world spirit was

merely a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, and was merely seeking death by coming out. This meant that you had already decided to kill Chu Feng's world spirit."

"However, after the world spirits began to fight, you discovered that your world spirits were no match for Chu Feng's world spirit. Thus, you actually planned to personally interfere, planned to use your power to ruin the contest between the world spirits."

"Let me ask you, as the Red Butterfly Society's Vice President, do you not think that your actions and deeds today have been extremely disgraceful?"

"..." Zhao Ruofan was left speechless. He knew fully well how shameless he had been today.

"It would seem that Vice President Zhao doesn't have anything to say. However, I do have things to say. May I speak?" Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, there is no harm in you saying what you want to say," The Red Butterfly Society's President said with a beaming smile. Her attitude toward Chu Feng was extremely good now.

If she had only decided to help Chu Feng because of Liu Chengkun before, now, after personally seeing Chu Feng's world spirit techniques, she firmly believed that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques far surpassed her own.

She felt that a person like Chu Feng most definitely possessed unbounded potential, and would be able to accomplish great things in the future.

Right now, without even her master telling her, she herself wanted to befriend Chu Feng. After all, a genius like him was someone rarely seen in even ten thousand years.

"Vice President Zhao could be said to have put forth meticulous effort for today's competition. Perhaps everyone present is unaware of this, but his action of repeatedly going back on his

word and changing the rules of the competition are merely cheap tricks.”

“He already used his main trick on me last night,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, why is it that I do not understand what you are implying?” Some elders asked in confusion.

“Senior Liu, please,” Chu Feng said to Liu Chengkun.

“Liuzhu, get out here!” Liu Chengkun shouted.

Then, that servant girl walked out. She bowed to the crowd present.

Upon seeing that servant girl, the expressions of Zhao Ruofan and Zhao Xuan changed enormously.

‘What’s going on? Why would she be here? Could it be that the poisoning has been exposed?’

‘No, that’s impossible. The plan went off flawlessly. How could it have been exposed?’

Even though they were panicking, Zhao Ruofan and Zhao Xuan still held a trace of hope in their hearts. They hoped that all of this was merely a coincidence.

“Lady Society President, Elders, this servant deserves to be punished to death. I should not have given in to Vice President Zhao and Lord Zhao Xuan’s threats and poisoned Lord Chu Feng’s wine,” Suddenly, that servant girl fell to her knees.

“Putt~~~”

Zhao Ruofan sat on the ground. He was completely stunned.

It was not a coincidence. That servant girl had already admitted to it. This was most definitely not a coincidence. Their crimes were actually really exposed.

“Outrageous servant! You dare to frame us father and son?! You shall be killed!!!” Zhao Ruofan shouted angrily. Then, he planned



to kill that servant girl.

“Boom~~~”

However, a loud explosion was heard. That servant girl was not injured. Instead, Zhao Ruofan was knocked several steps back. Even though he managed to stabilize himself, scarlet blood was flowing from the corner of his mouth.

“I am still alive, how could I allow you to behave this atrociously?!” The Red Butterfly Society’s President shouted furiously. Then, she looked to the servant girl and said, “What happened? Tell me honestly.”

As for that servant girl, she did not attempt to conceal anything, and spoke of the course of events in detail to the crowd present.

Not only did that servant girl confess, she also took out evidence against Zhao Ruofan and Zhao Xuan. Faced with this irrefutable evidence, Zhao Ruofan and his son were unable to argue.

“Truly never would I have expected Vice President Zhao to be this sort of person,” The tongues of the elders present were wagging. Disdain filled their eyes as they looked to Zhao Ruofan, Zhao Xuan and even Zhao Xiao.

“Boom~~~”

A bolt from the blue. Not only was Zhao Xuan stunned, Zhao Xiao was also stunned. They both fell onto their butts.

It was a complete defeat and fall from grace. Likely, from today on, the three of them, grandfather, son and grandson, would no longer be able to remain in the Red Butterfly Society.

“Zhao Ruofan, I trusted you and appointed you as our Red Butterfly Society’s Vice President in vain.”

“Never would I have thought that you were this despicable. For your own personal interest, you actually did such a thing. You truly deserve to die,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President lashed

out at Zhao Ruofan angrily.

“Deserve to die? If you have the ability, go ahead and kill me. I shall see if my older cousin will let you, will let the Red Butterfly Society, get away with it!” Zhao Ruofan shouted.

# Chapter 2216 – Arrival Of Ill-intended Guests

---

“Don’t you use your older cousin to frighten me. You are a part of our Red Butterfly Society. As such, I am qualified to punish you as per the rules of our Red Butterfly Society.”

“This is our Red Butterfly Society’s domestic affair. No one will be able to interfere with it,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Domestic affairs? Haha. Very well. Then go ahead and kill me, go ahead and kill my son and grandson.”

“I shall see whether or not a second tier power like the Sunset Cloud Valley will be able to interfere in the domestic affairs of a third tier power like the Red Butterfly Society,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“Sunset Cloud Valley?” Upon hearing those three words, the expressions of many elders changed enormously. They all revealed fear.

At this moment, even the Red Butterfly Society’s President was left speechless. The killing intent that she had revealed earlier started to slowly dissipate.

“Sunset Cloud Valley?” Upon hearing those three words, Chu Feng’s eyes shone. After all, he had heard of that place from that woman called Xu Yiyi.

This Zhao Ruofan was the second person to mention the Sunset Cloud Valley. Furthermore, Chu Feng had already noticed that the Sunset Cloud Valley seemed to be Zhao Ruofan’s hidden trump card that he had been relying on the entire time.

“Senior Liu, exactly what is that Sunset Cloud Valley? What sort of relationship does it have with Zhao Ruofan?” Chu Feng sent a voice transmission to ask Liu Chengkun.

“The influential powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could be separated into three tiers. Our Red Butterfly Society could be considered to be a third tier power, whereas the Sunset Cloud Valley is a second tier power.”

“The Sunset Cloud Valley is very powerful. It is an existence that our Red Butterfly Society cannot compare to. Even Luyang’s Pavilion, that huge monster, has submitted to the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“As for Zhao Ruofan, he possesses a distant relative, that older cousin that he mentioned, that is a management elder in the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“It is because of that older cousin that our Lady Society President yields to him so much,” Liu Chengkun informed Chu Feng through voice transmission.

“No wonder he dares to act this arrogantly. Sure enough, he has backing,” Chu Feng started to frown slightly. Although Zhao Ruofan was a worthless nobody, since he had such backing, it would truly be difficult to take care of him. After all, this matter concerned the continued existence of the Red Butterfly Society. It was no longer a matter of Chu Feng’s personal life and death.

“Humph,” Seeing that the people from the Red Butterfly Society were somewhat terrified, the complacent expression on Zhao Ruofan’s aged face grew even denser.

“You two, get up! Do not shame our Zhao Family!” Zhao Ruofan shouted at his son and grandson.

Zhao Xuan and Zhao Xiao hurriedly stood up. Before, they were extremely frightened. However, now, they were confident.

“Zhao Ruofan, with your character, our Red Butterfly Society will no longer shelter you. However, taking into account your previous contributions, I will not punish you too extremely.”

“However, you and Zhao Xuan are to be expelled from our Red

Butterfly Society today,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said coldly.

“Liu Xiaoli, I might as well tell you things bluntly. My older cousin has said that as long as I leave the Red Butterfly Society, the Sunset Cloud Valley will assist Luyang’s Pavilion and eliminate the Red Butterfly Society.”

“Why do you think that your Red Butterfly Society was able to survive till today after fighting against Luyang’s Pavilion for so long? It was all because of me, Zhao Ruofan, being here,” Zhao Ruofan sneered.

“Do not use your older cousin to threaten me. Till this date, your older cousin has not helped our Red Butterfly Society with anything,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Then go ahead and try expelling me from the Red Butterfly Society. However... you shall bear the consequences of your actions,” Zhao Ruofan said confidently.

The Red Butterfly Society’s President frowned. She did not dare to take that risk. At this moment, she was at a loss as to what to do.

The reason for that was because she had been scared by Zhao Ruofan’s threat.

“Liu Xiaoli, if you have me continue to stay in the Red Butterfly Society, it will only be beneficial and not detrimental to the Red Butterfly Society.”

“Furthermore, little friend Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques indeed surpass my own. It is also reasonable and fair for him to proceed to Mount Cloud Crane. However, his world spirit techniques are most definitely above yours too.”

“Thus, you might as well have little friend Chu Feng proceed to Mount Cloud Crane together with me,” Zhao Ruofan said.

“Clamor~~~”

Once Zhao Ruofan said those words, the management elders present immediately started discussing it.

Zhao Ruofan was actually forcing their Lady Society president to hand over her own invitation to him. That was a rebellious behavior against one's superior, something truly unforgivable.

"Can you guarantee that the Sunset Cloud Valley will be willing to take our Red Butterfly Society as their subsidiary power should I hand the invitation to you? That they will help our Red Butterfly Society eliminate Luyang's Pavilion?" The Red Butterfly Society's President asked.

"Of course. If I cannot accomplish that, you can kill me then," Zhao Ruofan said confidently.

"Society President, while I am fine with not having the invitation, you absolutely cannot hand an invitation to Zhao Ruofan. There is absolutely no credit to his words, he is simply untrustable," Chu Feng said.

"You are not qualified to butt into our Red Butterfly Society's domestic matters," Zhao Ruofan shouted at Chu Feng.

"Then what about us? We, the management elders, are qualified to butt in, no?" Liu Chengkun asked with glaring eyes.

"Vice President Zhao, it must be said that your actions have been too excessive today. It was you who put forth the suggestion to compete with little friend Chu Feng in world spirit techniques. In the end, not only did you lose, you actually dare to demand Lady Society President's invitation. Your action is simply a rebellion against your superior."

The other management elders also started to reprimand Zhao Ruofan. After all, they were members of the Red Butterfly Society. Thus, they were unable to tolerate Zhao Ruofan's actions.

"Humph," However, Zhao Ruofan scoffed at the crowd's reaction. Then, he turned to the Red Butterfly Society's President

and said, “I have said all that I should. You can decide your actions.”

“I can hand you the invitation. However, should you dare to deceive me, I will definitely take your life,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“Lady Society President, you mustn’t,” In response, Liu Chengkun and the others all began to advise against it.

“Say no more. I have decided,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President waved her hand. For the sake of the Red Butterfly Society’s future, she had decided to sacrifice her treasured opportunity.

“As expected of the Society President, you are truly sensible,” Zhao Ruofan revealed a complacent gaze. Then, he took a mocking gaze at Liu Chengkun, Chu Feng and the others.

His gaze seemed to be saying ‘So what if you won against me in this world spirit techniques match? So what if you have ruined my reputation completely? I still obtained the invitation to Mount Cloud Crane. Furthermore, I snatched it from the Lady Society president.’

“Snap~~~”

Seeing that sort of provocative gaze, Liu Chengkun tightly clenched his fist, causing it to give off cracking echos.

Anger. How could he not be angry? Even though he knew that Zhao Ruofan was a vile character, he was unable to do anything to him. This caused him to feel extremely sullen.

It was not only him. The Red butterfly Society’s President was also sullen. The Red Butterfly Society’s management elders were also sullen.

It could be said that all of the people in the Red Butterfly Society were feeling extremely sullen.

However, there was truly nothing else they could do. This was the truth. After all, Zhao Ruofan possessed the backing of a Sunset Cloud Valley's management elder.

"Lady Society President, this is bad!!!" Right at this moment, a person rushed in with a panicky expression.

"What happened? Why are you making a big fuss?!" The Red Butterfly Society's President shouted furiously.

She was not angry because of the person that had rushed in. Rather, she shouted furiously because she wanted to vent the anger in her heart.

"Lady Society President, the Luyang's Pavilion is here! They currently have us surrounded! It's not only Luyang's Pavilion, even the Sunset Cloud Valley is here!" That person spoke in a panicky manner.

"Are you serious?!" The Red Butterfly Society's President asked.

"This subordinate would not dare deceive Lady Society President. Right now, they have completely surrounded us. Lady Society President, what should we do?!" That person asked.

In response, the Red Butterfly Society's President flipped her palm. Then, a watermelon-sized crystal ball appeared. The scene of the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters' surroundings appeared on the crystal ball.

At this moment, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously. In an instant, some people turned pale, and some were even shivering with fear.

What appeared was indeed Luyang's Pavilion's army. Furthermore, it was not only Luyang's Pavilion, the Sunset Cloud Valley was also present. At this moment, they had surrounded the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters, sealing it off completely.

Furthermore, anyone could tell that they had come with ill-intentions.



“Zhao Ruofan! Speak! Exactly what is going on here?!” The Red Butterfly Society’s President was furious. She grabbed Zhao Ruofan’s by his lapel.

“This... this... this...” Zhao Ruofan, who had been feeling immensely proud of himself earlier, was completely stunned now. Not to mention explaining, he was unable to even finish a single sentence.

What sort of situation was this? Exactly what sort of situation was this?

Not to mention the others, even he did not know what was going on!!!

## Chapter 2217 – Well-deserved Death

---

“Tell me, exactly what is going on here?! Why would the Sunset Cloud Valley be helping Luyang’s Pavilion attack us?!”

“Didn’t you say that the Sunset Cloud Valley wouldn’t do anything because your older cousin is there?!”

At this moment, the Red Butterfly Society’s President was emitting overflowing killing intent. If Zhao Ruofan did not give her a reasonable justification, she would definitely kill him on the spot.

“Misunderstanding, this must be a misunderstanding. Lady Society President, please let me out to talk to them. Perhaps this might really be a misunderstanding,” Zhao Ruofan said while trembling with fear.

“Lady Society President, maybe you should let him try talking to them, Else...” A management elder sighed helplessly.

If the Sunset Cloud Valley was truly helping Luyang’s Pavilion against them, they would definitely be killed today.

Perhaps the only opportunity for them to live would be to rely on Zhao Ruofan. After all, his older cousin was a management elder in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, heaven and earth started to tremble violently. The people from Luyang’s Pavilion had started attacking.

“Follow me out,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President brought Zhao Ruofan and flew out.

In response, the other management elders followed them out.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this matter is unrelated to you. I will think of a way to bring you away,” Liu Chengkun said to Chu Feng.

“Senior Liu, I cannot run away. Perhaps that Luyang’s Pavilion has not come for the Red Butterfly Society, but me instead,” As Chu Feng spoke, he flew into the air and started to chase after the Red Butterfly Society’s President and the others.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you...!!!” Liu Chengkun had originally wanted to stop him. However, seeing how determined Chu Feng was, he ended up sighing before flying after Chu Feng.

At this moment, Chu Feng and the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders and elites had all arrived in the sky.

After they personally saw the many experts from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the grand army from Luyang’s Pavilion, they began to feel even more uneasy.

If this battle were to truly commence, their Red Butterfly Society would definitely have no chance of surviving. Without mentioning the army from Luyang’s Pavilion, merely the Sunset Cloud Valley’s experts would be sufficient to completely eliminate their Red Butterfly Society.

“You all are quite courageous to actually show up here,” Chu Luyang was standing at the front of Luyang’s Pavilion’s army, and coldly swept his gaze over the people from the Red Butterfly Society. Contained in his eyes was the anger that he had accumulated over the years, as well as complacency in being able to secure certain victory.

“Mn?” Suddenly, Chu Luyang revealed a gaze with even greater hatred.

His eyes were on Chu Feng!!!

Chu Luyang pointed to Chu Feng and asked, “Are you... Chu Feng?”

Although he felt enormous hatred toward Chu Feng, this was still the first time that he had seen Chu Feng face to face. His impression of Chu Feng remained only on the portraits drawn by

the people that had seen Chu Feng before. That was why he needed to ask to confirm Chu Feng's identity.

In response, Chu Feng wanted to admit to it. However, Liu Chengkun pulled Chu Feng away and indicated to him not to admit to it.

"It is I," However, Chu Feng still admitted to it.

"Very well. Truly, your fame does not compare to seeing you for myself," Even though Chu Luyang had tried his hardest to conceal his hatred, his killing intent was involuntarily leaking out from him.

"Go and speak," Sensing that the situation was bad, the Red Butterfly Society's President signaled to Zhao Ruofan with her eyes. Furthermore, she secretly held Zhao Ruofan's life in her hands. If Zhao Ruofan dared to attempt escape, she would immediately kill him.

As this matter concerned his life, Zhao Ruofan hurriedly asked, "Misunderstanding, could there be a misunderstanding?"

"Who the hell are you? What makes you think that you're qualified to speak to me?" Chu Luyang said with contempt. He was able to tell that Zhao Ruofan was not the boss of the Red Butterfly Society.

"Wait a moment," Right at this moment, an extremely thin old man wearing the Sunset Cloud Valley's outfit walked out.

"Older cousin, so you were here. This is truly great. Please tell them of our relationship. Exactly what is going on here?" Upon seeing that old man, Zhao Ruofan was overjoyed. The reason for that was because that old man was his distant older cousin.

Upon hearing what Zhao Ruofan said, the people from the Red Butterfly Society were all secretly delighted. It was as if they had seen a trace of hope to live.

After all, the person Zhao Ruofan was relying on was present.

In this manner, the misunderstandings would be explained more easily.

“My foolish little brother, do you still not understand the situation now? Did you truly think that I will help your Red Butterfly Society?”

“I might as well tell you the truth. The reason why I asked you about the location of the Red Butterfly Society was precisely so that I could help Luyang’s Pavilion eliminate your Red Butterfly Society in a single stroke.”

“As for you, do not blame me for not taking our old affection into consideration. After all, the battlefield is a heartless place, and the two of us belong to different factions. Thus, I will not act leniently toward you,” That Elder Zhao said with a beaming smile.

“Boom~~~”

It was like a bolt from the blue. Upon hearing those words, Zhao Ruofan collapsed on the spot.

He had never expected that the person he had trusted and relied on the entire time, his older cousin, would actually be exploiting him, and had the intention of killing him.

“So it was you who sold us out! You damned absolute disgrace! I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!!!!” At this moment, the Red Butterfly Society’s President was overflowing with killing intent. Without saying anything more, she shot forth her palm and surrounded Zhao Ruofan with her boundless Ancestral-level martial power.

Then, her martial power turned into blades that pierced Zhao Ruofan’s body. She was planning to split him apart alive.

“Older cousin, save me! Please consider the fact that we are relatives!” Even though he was left in a very petty and low situation, Zhao Ruofan knew that his older cousin was the only person that could save him now.

“Relative? You’re nothing more than a distant relative. As far as I’m concerned, your life is of no value at all,” That Elder Zhao said indifferently. Even though he was smiling as he said those words, his words had revealed how treacherous and ruthless he was.

“Ahhh~~~”

Right at this moment, Zhao Ruofan let out a heart-tearing and lung-splitting scream. It was an extremely miserable scream.

The Red Butterfly Society’s President was planning to kill him. However, she did not plan to let him die easily. Instead, she planned to make him suffer before dying. Else, she would not be able to alleviate the anger in her heart.

As for Zhao Ruofan, not only did the people from the Red Butterfly Society not feel any sympathy for him, even the outsiders did not feel any sympathy for him.

This was especially true for the people of the Red Butterfly Society. When they saw what was happening to Zhao Ruofan, they all felt a sense of satisfaction.

“Pah, you deserve it,” In fact, there were even management elders that started to spit at Zhao Ruofan.

Miserable. Zhao Ruofan was truly miserable. However, it was as that management elder had said, he deserved it.

“Boom~~~”

Following a muffled explosion, Zhao Ruofan’s body shattered to pieces. He was completely killed.

“And here I thought that the Red Butterfly Society was a power devoted to righteousness. It turns out that you’re also this ruthless.”

“If my guess is correct, you must be the Red Butterfly Society’s President, right?” Chu Luyang said mockingly.

“Enough of your rubbish. The ruler is the king, and the loser the

thief. Today, I admit defeat.”

“However, all of the operations against your Luyang’s Pavilion were arranged by me. If you have any grievances, aim them toward me. Do not harm the others,” The Red Butterfly Society’s President said.

“You’re telling me to cut the grass but not eliminate the roots, to leave behind future troubles, is that right?”

“Let me ask you this then: do I really look like a brainless idiot?” Chu Luyang smiled mockingly. Then, he shouted, “Men! Eliminate the Red Butterfly Society! Leave not a single fowl or dog alive!!!”

Once Chu Luyang’s command was spoken, Luyang’s Pavilion’s elites, as well as the many Sunset Cloud Valley’s elders all revealed their weapons and unleashed their boundless killing intent. They were planning to unleash a slaughter.

Their killing intent surged forth from all directions and caused everyone to feel a fatal threat.

Death. Today, they were destined to be killed. Not a single one of them would be able to escape.

At this moment, the Red Butterfly Society’s President, Liu Chengkun and the many people present all closed their eyes.

They knew that resistance was futile. Thus, they had decided to give up on resisting. One by one, they made the preparations to die.

Merely, they were unreconciled. They were unreconciled to die just like this.

“All of you, stay your hands,” Right at this moment, an extremely imposing voice sounded. That voice caused space itself to tremble violently, and the legs of the crowd present to grow soft.

After that voice was heard, the expressions of the people from the

Sunset Cloud Valley and Luyang's Pavilion all changed. They immediately retrieved their weapons and their boundless killing intent.

Then, respectfully, they bowed toward the direction where the voice was heard. At the same time, they said, "We pay our respects to Elder Su!!!"

Chinese families used to live in places called 'courtyards.' Back then, raising chickens and having dogs would be common. So killing even the chickens and dogs would mean utter extermination of the family.



## Chapter 2218 – Get Along Peacefully

---

The sudden unforeseen event caused the crowd from the Red Butterfly Society to be at a complete loss.

Only Chu Feng, who had kept his eyes open the entire time, managed to see what had happened. All of this was caused by the appearance of an old man.

It was an old man whose body was giving off an abnormal sign.

A sunset-like glow was lingering around his body. He emitted an extremely domineering air. Especially his cultivation, it was so unfathomably powerful. However, one thing was certain; he was stronger than every person present here.

Faced with this old man, not to mention the others, even the seemingly undisciplined and out-of-control Chu Luyang had an expression of humbleness.

All of this demonstrated that the old man was an extraordinary existence.

Furthermore, a beautiful woman was following beside him.

After seeing that woman, Chu Feng's eyes immediately shone. The reason for that was because that woman was Xu Yiyi.

"It's her?" Chu Feng was extremely surprised to see Xu Yiyi. Although he knew that she was a member of the Sunset Cloud Valley, he had not expected her to appear here.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that this was definitely not a coincidence. At the very least, he felt that that elder had not ordered the armies from Luyang's Pavilion and the Sunset Cloud Valley to stop for no reason.

"Chu Feng, long time no see," Xu Yiyi said to Chu Feng with a smile on her face. Her attitude was very amiable. It was as if she had just met a friend that she had not seen for a very long time.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you know her?” At that moment, everyone from the Red Butterfly Society looked to Chu Feng with astonished expressions.

Their gazes were both of shock and joy. They all faintly realized that the reason why they were still alive might be because of that young lady.

“It doesn’t seem to have been that long a time since we last met, no?” Chu Feng said with a light smile. His reply brought extreme joy to all of the people in the Red Butterfly Society.

Evidently, their guesses were correct. Chu Feng knew that woman. Furthermore, judging from the appearance of that woman, she was most definitely not someone ordinary. Perhaps they would be able to escape a calamity today.

“To me, it’s been a long time,” Xu Yiyi said with a light smile.

“Why would you be here?” Chu Feng asked.

“I originally only came here to enjoy the show. However now, you should be thanking me,” Xu Yiyi said.

“Thank?” Upon hearing that word, the crowd were all startled.

“Master, it’s time for you to speak, no?” Xu Yiyi shook that Elder Su’s arm coquettishly.

“Rest assured,” That Elder Su smiled lightly. Then, he looked to the Red Butterfly Society and said, “Who is the leader of the Red Butterfly Society?”

Liu Xiaoli took several steps forward, then bowed respectfully as she answered, “Milord, junior Liu Xiaoli is the President of the Red Butterfly Society.”

It was not that Liu Xiaoli was scared. Rather, when facing someone like that, Liu Xiaoli did not dare to be neglectful. Furthermore, she realized that this old man might be able to save their Red Butterfly Society.

“Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master and the Red Butterfly Society’s President, listen up.”

“From today on, Luyang’s Pavilion and the Red Butterfly Society must get along peacefully. You are not allowed to fight anymore.”

“If any party is to do otherwise, our Sunset Cloud Valley will personally extinguish that party,” Xu Yiyi’s master declared.

“Elder Su, this... this...” Chu Luyang had an astonished expression. He was stunned completely speechless.

The Sunset Cloud Valley had clearly come here to assist his Luyang’s Pavilion in eliminating the Red Butterfly Society. Why would it turn out this way?

“What’s wrong? Do you have any objections with what I said?” Xu Yiyi’s master turned his displeased gaze toward Chu Luyang.

Upon seeing that gaze, Chu Luyang’s heart trembled. In the end, even though he was filled with unwillingness, he could only lower his head and make this compromise. Respectfully, he said, “Luyang wouldn’t dare.”

“Since you do not dare, then make sure to implement this rigorously. If I am to discover that Luyang’s Pavilion still dares to attack the Red Butterfly Society, I will definitely make your Luyang’s Pavilion cease to exist.”

“Red Butterfly Society, this holds the same for you too. Understand?” Xu Yiyi’s master declared.

After he finished saying those words, Xu Yiyi’s master turned around and entered the war chariot. He was planning to leave.

“Catch,” As for Xu Yiyi, she waved her sleeve and tossed a title plate to Chu Feng.

“What is this?” Chu Feng caught the title plate and asked curiously.

“That is our Sunset Cloud Valley’s Death Exemption Title Plate.

With that title plate in hand, no one in our Sunset Cloud Valley or our Sunset Cloud Valley's subsidiary powers will dare to do anything to you. Else, it would mean that they are disrespecting my master," Xu Yiyi said.

"It's actually a Death Exemption Title Plate?" After hearing those words, the expressions of all the crowd present changed enormously. Even the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley had a change in expression. After all, not even they possessed a Death Exemption Title Plate.

'Exactly where did that Chu Feng obtain his dog shit luck to be able to receive this sort of treatment?!' Chu Luyang was most definitely the most furious person of everyone here.

They were clearly here to eliminate the Red Butterfly Society. Yet, it turned into a forced peaceful coexistence. He was willing to disregard all of that.

However, that Sunset Cloud Valley's Death Exemption Title Plate was something that he was unable to accept.

He had spent an enormous amount of wealth and tried to make connections all for the sake of obtaining one such Death Exemption Title Plate. However, even after spending all that effort, he had still not obtained one.

Yet, Chu Feng had actually managed to obtain one that easily. How could he possibly accept that?

"Yiyi, let's go," Xu Yiyi's master's voice sounded from within the war chariot.

Xu Yiyi smiled sweetly at Chu Feng and then flew into the war chariot.

At that moment, Chu Feng truly wanted to express his thanks to Xu Yiyi. He had truly never expected that Xu Yiyi would do this sort of thing for him.

Unfortunately, Xu Yiyi left too quickly, and simply did not give

him the time to thank her.

At that moment, Xu Yiyi had already entered the war chariot. With a beaming smile, she said to her master, “Thank you master. I never expected that you would agree to my unreasonable demand.”

“Unreasonable? Indeed, it is a bit unreasonable.”

“However, something like this is something that I can settle with a single sentence. Since it is beneficial to you, there is no reason for me to not do it,” Her master said.

“Master, you are the best to me,” Xu Yiyi smiled very happily. Then, she raised her head and said, “Why didn’t you ask me why I wanted to help that Chu Feng?”

“What if I did, and what if I didn’t? As long as you’re happy, it doesn’t matter,” Her master said.

“Master, you are the person who treats me the best in this entire world!!!” Xu Yiyi hugged her master’s arm tightly.

As for her master, he started to gently caress Xu Yiyi’s long hair with a smile on his face. His gaze was filled with pampering love. It was as if he was a gentle father looking at his daughter.

.....

The army from Luyang’s Pavilion and the Sunset Cloud Valley withdrew from the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters.

However, the people from the Red Butterfly Society were still in a panicky state. They were still unable to calm themselves. It was as if they were unable to believe that the Luyang’s Pavilion army would’ve really left, that they really managed to escape a calamity.

“Chu Feng, please accept my respect,” Suddenly, Liu Xiaoli publicly half kneeled and bowed to Chu Feng.

“Society President, what are you doing?” Chu Feng asked in confusion.

“If it wasn’t for you, today, our Red Butterfly Society would’ve definitely been extinguished. It was you who saved us,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Thank you little friend Chu Feng for saving us,” At that moment, everyone from the Red Butterfly Society half knelt in the sky and bowed to Chu Feng.

“Society President, Senior Liu, seniors, please get up,” Chu Feng hurriedly helped Liu Xiaoli up.

After Liu Xiaoli got back up, the elders and elites from the Red Butterfly Society stood up in succession.

“Chu Feng, you do not have to be embarrassed. We know that if it wasn’t for you, our Red Butterfly Society would have been eliminated today.”

“Merely, I have one thing that I am very curious about. Do you know who your friend’s master is?” Liu Xiaoli asked. The other elders also raised their ears to wait for Chu Feng’s response.

They were all able to tell that Xu Yiyi’s master was most definitely an extraordinary character.

## Chapter 2219 – Tier One Powers

---

“I have heard from her that her master’s name is Su Jingrui,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s actually Su Jingrui?” Hearing that name, Liu Xiaoli, Liu Chengkun and the others all revealed astonished expressions.

“No wonder, no wonder they addressed him as ‘elder’ and not ‘Valley Master’,” Liu Xiaoli said with a low voice.

“Exactly who is that Su Jingrui?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“You don’t know?” Liu Xiaoli and the others were even more shocked.

“I don’t,” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

“That Su Jingrui is the strongest person in the Sunset Cloud Valley apart from the Valley Master,” A management elder said.

“No, I’ve heard that Su Jingrui’s strength is not weaker than the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master,” Liu Chengkun said.

“In short, that Su Jingrui is extremely powerful. Regardless of whether it is his status or his strength, they are both extremely high in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

“With him supporting the Red Butterfly Society, Luyang’s Pavilion will likely not dare to do anything to us either.”

“As for all this, it’s all thanks to you, Chu Feng. I don’t know how I should thank you,” Liu Xiaoli looked to Chu Feng gratefully.

Although their Red Butterfly Society could not attack Luyang’s Pavilion either from today on, it remained that their Red Butterfly Society was the one that had benefitted from this. After all, this was equivalent to them having escaped from the tiger’s den, having escaped from certain death. As for all of this, it was thanks to Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng was merely an honored guest that she had wanted to

rope into the Red Butterfly Society before, he had turned into a great benefactor to her now.

“If you truly want to thank me, just invite me to another feast,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“That’s no problem. Men! Prepare a feast! Bring out all of our Red Butterfly Society’s delicacies.”

“I will prepare a feast today. All of the Red Butterfly Society’s members must participate in this feast so as to express our thanks to Chu Feng,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Lady Society President, please allow this subordinate to handle it,” A management elder asked for permission.

“Go ahead. Make sure to prepare it properly,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“As per your order,” That elder did not dare to be neglectful. He turned around and entered the Red Butterfly Society.

“Lady Society President, then what about that Zhao Xuan and Zhao Xiao?” Another management elder asked.

“Zhao Xuan dared to poison Chu Feng together with Zhao Ruofan. His crimes cannot be forgiven. Kill him.”

“As for Zhao Xiao, even though he should also be killed, it remains that he did not directly participate in it. As such, it would suffice to expel him from our Red Butterfly Society,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“For real? Release him? This Red Butterfly Society’s President is too irresolute, no?” After hearing Liu Xiaoli’s decision, Eggy’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“Milady Queen, if it was you, what would you do?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“If it was me, I would definitely kill without exception. I would not leave a single person from the Zhao Family alive,” Eggy said with firm resolution.



As for Chu Feng, he asked no more. Each person possessed their own way of handling things.

Liu Xiaoli was indeed a bit too benevolent. As for Eggy, she was a bit too ruthless.

If it was Chu Feng making the decision, he would definitely investigate this matter first. If Zhao Xiao was truly innocent, he would definitely release him. However, if he did any misdeeds, he would definitely not spare him.

However, Liu Xiaoli decided to spare him without even investigating. Her actions were truly a bit too forgiving.

However, it remained that this was the Red Butterfly Society's domestic affair. Thus, Chu Feng did not try to involve himself in it too much.

.....

The feast that followed was very grand. As for Liu Xiaoli, she even publicly announced the matters of what happened today.

She informed all of the people from their Red Butterfly Society that they should have been eliminated today, but were saved by Chu Feng.

Gratefulness. After finding out about this matter, everyone felt extremely grateful toward Chu Feng.

Admiration; After finding out that Chu Feng was actually friends with Su Jingrui's personal disciple, both men and women felt great admiration for Chu Feng.

However, only Chu Feng knew that he had only met Xu Yiyi once. Thus, this time around, he truly owed her a favor.

.....

The feast continued for three nights and three days. After the feast, Liu Xiaoli ordered her people to search for the next location to move their headquarters to.

Even though Luyang's Pavilion did not dare to come to disturb the Red Butterfly Society after being threatened by the Sunset Cloud Pavilion, for the sake of guarding against the unexpected, Liu Xiaoli still wanted to move the headquarters quickly.

Merely, due to the fact that the time for Mount Cloud Crane's assembly was about to arrive, Liu Xiaoli was unable to personally search for a new location or construct the new Red Butterfly Society's headquarters. The reason for that was because she had to proceed for Mount Cloud Crane with Chu Feng.

Only Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli were on the journey to Mount Cloud Crane. After all, the Red Butterfly Society could only be considered to be a third tier power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and not a major power. Thus, if they were to bring forth too extravagant of a display, they would only be mocked by others, or even provoke others. Thus, it was better for them to be low-profile.

Before Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli even arrived at Mount Cloud Crane, their pupils shrank back and their eyes revealed astonished expressions when they'd just seen the appearance of that Mount Cloud Crane from afar.

As its name implied, Mount Cloud Crane was a mountain.

Merely, this mountain was not a mountain on the surface of the earth. Rather, it was a mountain floating above the clouds.

Looking from afar, Mount Cloud Crane had the appearance of a red-crowned crane. However, for some reason, whether it was an illusion or not, that crane's two enormous wings were actually moving. It was as if the enormous crane was alive, and not a mountain.

It was a magnificent sight. Even though Chu Feng had seen many magnificent sights, Chu Feng was still astonished by the spectacular sight of that crane.

Unable to contain herself, Liu Xiaoli praised, “Is this the ability of an Exalted? It is truly something that causes one to broaden their horizons. It is truly worthy of being a spectacle of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.” Likely, it was also her first time coming to Mount Cloud Crane.

“Move aside, move aside,” Suddenly, a group of people flew by, Aggressively, flying toward Mount Cloud Crane.

The closer Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli got to Mount Cloud Crane, the more they encountered such powers flying by from all directions. Furthermore, they were increasingly more aggressive.

This was especially true when they saw people like Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli, who had arrived by themselves. Toward those people, they were even more aggressive.

“It would seem that there will be people like them regardless of what sort of place we might be at,” Chu Feng said.

“People like them?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“People that bully the weak and fear the strong,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Liu Xiaoli’s expression changed slightly. She revealed a worried expression.

“Chu Feng, Golden Crane True Immortal is extremely famous in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. His influence is enormous.”

“Thus, even though he is only holding an assembly to assist world spiritists, practically all of the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have dispatched people to participate in this assembly.”

“Earlier, the group of people that passed by us were from a tier two power. As for those tier two powers, they are all existences that we cannot afford to offend,” Liu Xiaoli said to Chu Feng.

“There seems to be quite a lot of tier two powers in the Hundred

Refinements Ordinary Realm. How are they distinguished?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“There is also a difference in strength between the tier two powers. If a power’s leader possesses strength reaching that of a rank six Martial Ancestor, they would be able to declare themselves a tier two power,” Liu Xiaoli explained.

“Then what about tier one powers?” Chu Feng asked.

“Tier one powers are generally overseen by True Immortal-level experts,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Wasn’t it said that very few people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm are capable of becoming True Immortals?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. That’s why there are only four tier one powers right now,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Which four?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Buddha’s Heavenly Temple.”

“The Immortal Sword School.”

“The Zhou Heavenly Clan.”

“And the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Liu Xiaoli said.

# Chapter 2220 – Chanced Encounter Under The Mountain

---

“The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm couldn’t possibly only have two Heavenly Clans, right?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Of course not. There are over a dozen Heavenly Clans in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, only the Zhou Heavenly Clan and the Kong Heavenly Clan are capable of becoming tier one powers. As for the other Heavenly Clans, they are generally only tier two powers.”

“However, the Heavenly Clans remain Heavenly Clans. Among the tier two powers, the vast majority of them are very powerful. However, there are always exceptions to the rule, as a couple of them are not very strong,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Indeed, even the same bloodlines have differences in strength.”

Chu Feng gasped with emotion. Originally, he had felt that since the Chu Heavenly Clan was able to rule over an Upper Realm, it would mean that the other Heavenly Clans that remained in the Ordinary Realm would definitely be their respective region’s rulers.

After all, the power of Heavenly Bloodlines was so very outstanding.

However, after hearing what Liu Xiaoli said, Chu Feng realized that it was not as simple as he had thought it to be.

Sure enough, there were people from the Heavenly Clans that failed to live up to the expectations of their Heavenly Bloodlines.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Oh, that’s right, President Liu, have you heard of the Infant Soul Sect before?”

Chu Feng had not forgotten about the mission that his father had given him, the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

“Infant Soul Sect? I’ve never heard of it before,” Liu Xiaoli shook her head. Then, she asked curiously, “What sort of power is that?”

“No, it’s nothing. I’ve merely heard of that power being in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm by others when I was in the Lower Realm. Furthermore, I was told that they were a very strong power. That is why I asked you about them out of curiosity,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“I reckon that to be a rumor. If they are truly very powerful, it would be impossible for me to not have heard of them. Even among the second tier powers, I have never heard of one called the Infant Soul Sect,” Liu Xiaoli said with a smile.

“That should be the case,” Chu Feng said. Even though he said it like that, Chu Feng firmly believed that the Infant Soul Sect existed. He believed that his father would not deceive him.

Merely, as the Infant Soul Sect was a power engaged in corrupt and evil practices, their conduct might be extremely well-hidden. That might be the reason why Liu Xiaoli had never heard of them before.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, do not address me as President anymore. If possible, just address me as Liu Xiaoli. Our age difference is not that great, and we’re both members of the younger generation, thus, there is no need for you to feel too restrained toward me.”

“Furthermore, you are the benefactor of our Red Butterfly Society. If you continue to address me like that, I will truly feel embarrassed,” Liu Xiaoli suddenly said.

“Age difference not that great? There’s several decades between you two, no?” Eggy laughed.

Chu Feng ignored Eggy’s remarks. After all, when Liu Xiaoli had already said it like that, it would be unsuitable for Chu Feng to refuse. Thus, he said, “Very well. Then, from today on, I’ll address

you as Liu Xiaoli. However, if your Red Butterfly Society's people decided to beat me up after hearing me address you by name, I will find you to get revenge for me."

"What are you saying, how could they?" Liu Xiaoli laughed.

"Oh, that's right. Chu Feng, I've told you all this so that you can know that there are truly too many experts that have arrived at Mount Cloud Crane. As for us, with our strength, we are merely minor characters."

"It is best that we keep a low profile. Even if people are to speak rudely to us, we must tolerate it if we can. After all, by taking a step back, one could see the wide sea and sky; by tolerating things for a bit, the breeze will be still, and the waves will be quiet," Liu Xiaoli said.

"I understand," Chu Feng smiled and nodded. Actually, from the time Liu Xiaoli began to explain this to him, Chu Feng already understood her intentions.

After that, the two of them continued toward Mount Cloud Crane.

Sure enough, the closer they got to Mount Cloud Crane, the more experts they saw. Furthermore, many of the older generation were Martial Ancestor-level experts.

This allowed Chu Feng to truly realize that the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was a gathering of experts.

The Half Martial Ancestor realm that very few people were able to step into in the Holy Land of Martialism was present everywhere here. This truly brought Chu Feng great astonishment.

It was no wonder the people from the Ordinary Realm looked down upon the people of the Lower Realm. When compared in such a manner, the cultivation talent that the people from the Holy Land of Martialism possessed was truly inferior.

“Chu Feng? Hey, what a coincidence,” Suddenly, a voice sounded. It was Xu Yiyi.

Chu Feng was overjoyed upon hearing Xu Yiyi’s voice. After all, she had helped him enormously. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to express his thanks toward her.

However, when he turned around, Chu Feng discovered that it was not only Xu Yiyi who had arrived. Nine individuals had arrived with Xu Yiyi.

Those nine people were all from the Sunset Cloud Valley, as they wore the Sunset Cloud Valley’s outfits, and a Sunset Cloud Valley’s title plate hung around their waists.

Among them were two men and three women about the same age as Liu Xiaoli. Although they could still be considered to be part of the younger generation, they were close to a hundred years old.

As for their cultivations, they were all inferior to Liu Xiaoli’s; they were all still only Half Martial Ancestors. In fact, those three women were only rank one Half Martial Ancestors, inferior to even Chu Feng’s cultivation.

As for the other four people among the nine individuals, they were four old men. They were at least several thousand years old. As such, it was obvious that they would not be weak. They were all Martial Ancestors.

If Chu Feng guessed correctly, they should not be the Sunset Cloud Valley’s disciples. Instead, they must be elders.

“Chu Feng, why would you be here?” Xu Yiyi asked curiously.

“I have come to participate in the Immortalization Assembly held by Golden Crane True Immortal. What about you?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am the same,” Xu Yiyi said excitedly.

“You’re also? But you...” Chu Feng wanted to say that she was



clearly not a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, and was merely an Insect Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

However, upon thinking about it, Chu Feng did not say anything. Chu Feng felt that Xu Yiyi must've come here with other intentions.

“Haha. After all, our Sunset Cloud Valley obtained ten invitations. I wanted to come to join in the fun. Thus, my master ended up giving me one of the invitations,” Xu Yiyi said with a beaming smile.

Liu Xiaoli and Chu Feng were both extremely surprised upon hearing those words. This was especially true for Chu Feng; he felt speechless.

He thought to himself, ‘Xu Yiyi’s master truly pampers Xu Yiyi. He actually gave her such a precious invitation just for her to come play.’

‘Headstrong, this is truly headstrong. After all, the Sunset Cloud Valley is wealthy.’

Suddenly, a fair-skinned man with small eyes stepped forward and asked, “Yiyi, these two are? Shouldn’t you introduce them to us?”

As he said those words, that man was sizing Chu Feng up nonstop with his tiny eyes. His tiny eyes were filled with hostility.

‘Crap, I’m going to be attacked again,’ Experienced with this sort of thing, Chu Feng sighed in his heart.

He was able to tell that tiny-eyed man was most definitely fond of Xu Yiyi, and had mistaken Chu Feng as his rival in love.

“This person over here is Chu Feng. The person who wreaked havoc in Luyang’s Pavilion’s territory is him.”

“As for this person, she is the Red Butterfly Society’s President,” Xu Yiyi introduced Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli to them.

Then, Xu Yiyi courteously introduced the nine individuals from the Sunset Cloud Valley to Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli.

It was as Chu Feng had guessed, the five people from the younger generation were all the Sunset Cloud Valley's disciples. Merely, they were not ordinary disciples. Instead, they were all personal disciples of the Sunset Cloud Valley's management elders.

As for those four old men, they were all the Sunset Cloud Valley's elders. One among them was called Ning Shuang. That person seemed to be a management elder. His strength should be extremely strong.

As Liu Xiaoli knew that these people were all extraordinary individuals, she began to respectfully greet every one of them.

However, who would've thought that when she began to greet that small-eyed man, he revealed an expression of contempt and said, "So it's actually the Red Butterfly Society. Even a power like the Red Butterfly Society was able to obtain two invitations? The way I see it, for those two invitation title plates, you all must've completely exhausted your third tier power's treasury, right?"

Furthermore, when that tiny-eyed man said those words, he deliberately took a side eye at Chu Feng. From that, it could be seen that the target of his mocking words was not Liu Xiaoli. Rather, it was Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2221 – Provocation

---

“Jiang Hao, what are you saying?! They are my friends! Furthermore, Chu Feng is not a part of the Red Butterfly Society,” Xu Yiyi said in a displeased manner.

“Someone not from the Red Butterfly Society was actually capable of obtaining an invitation? It seems that you’re very rich?” That Jiang Hao said to Chu Feng in a very mocking manner.

“Jiang Hao, you are truly too ill-informed and narrow-minded. It seems that you have never heard of brother Chu Feng’s past achievements,” Right at that moment, another of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s male disciples stepped forward.

Chu Feng knew that the person that spoke was called Li Rui.

However, different from Jiang Hao, this Li Rui did not emit any hostility toward Chu Feng.

“Humph, merely someone from a third tier power. I am not interested in their past achievements,” Jiang Hao said with contempt. He was emitting his superiority of a tier two power’s management elder’s personal disciple all over.

The three Sunset Cloud Valley’s female disciples began to chuckle. Although they did not say any mocking words, it could be seen that they also looked down upon Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli.

As for those four elders, it remained that they were experienced individuals. Thus, they remained very calm and collected. It was as if they were mere observers. They neither said anything, nor displayed any mocking behavior.

However, at the same time, they also did not reprimand Jiang Hao for his rudeness. Even that Elder Ning Shuang did not reprimand Jiang Hao.

“Not interested? You’re not interested in even an Asura World Spiritist?” Li Rui said.

“Asura World Spiritist?” Upon hearing those words, that Jiang Hao’s expression immediately changed. Then he chuckled and said, “You couldn’t possibly be implying that Chu Feng is an Asura World Spiritist, right?”

“I won’t conceal this from you. Brother Chu Feng is indeed an Asura World Spiritist. Right now, not many people know about this yet. However, it will definitely spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in the future,” Li Rui said.

“Asura World Spiritist?”

“Chu Feng, are you really an Asura World Spiritist?” At that moment, the three women who had had expressions of contempt on their faces immediately changed their expressions and began to voluntarily attempt to communicate with Chu Feng.

Even those four elders had a change in their expressions. Involuntarily, they began to size Chu Feng up seriously.

“You all do not have to ask anymore. Chu Feng is indeed an Asura World Spiritist. Furthermore, his world spirit is extremely powerful. Luyang’s Pavilion’s Hong Xi was killed by Chu Feng’s world spirit,” Xu Yiyi said.

“Humph, so what if that is the case? There are countless promising young geniuses. However, the great majority of them end up dying young or prematurely. Only the geniuses that are able to grow up are the true geniuses. Else, they’re nothing more than dog farts,” Jiang Hao said.

“Jiang Hao, why do your words seem to contain such a great amount of grievances? Could it be that you’re jealous of Chu Feng?”

“That’s right, everyone knows that you like Junior Sister Yiyi. You’re afraid that Junior Sister Yiyi will be snatched away by Chu Feng, and decided to attack him, right?”

Before Xu Yiyi and Li Rui could say anything, those three female

disciples already began to speak on behalf of Chu Feng.

Chu Feng felt helpless toward this change. They only had such an enormous change in their attitudes because of the fact that he was an Asura World Spiritist.

Snobbish. They were definitely doing this for their own self-interest. Thus, even though they were helping him, Chu Feng did not feel any sense of gratefulness toward them.

It was not that Chu Feng was an ungrateful person. Rather, Chu Feng knew that they were people that would not help him should he encounter actual troubles.

“Humph. I’m telling you all, this place is Mount Cloud Crane. What we compare here are one’s world spirit techniques. If one’s world spirit techniques are insufficient, even if one is an Asura World Spiritist, it is of no use.”

“That place, do you all see that? Don’t you think that you will definitely be able to enter Mount Cloud Crane just because you hold an invitation title plate. If your strength is insufficient, you will still be asked to leave,” Jiang Hao declared as he pointed to Mount Cloud Crane’s entrance.

That place was very far away, and very difficult to see with the naked eye. However, all the people present were world spiritists. After using their special observation methods, they were able to see that there was a row of spirit formations before the entrance.

Each one of the spirit formations was an entrance. There were a total of several tens of such spirit formation entrances.

If one wished to pass through the spirit formation entrance, one must hold an invitation title plate. However, strangely, even though everyone was holding one such invitation title plate, some people were able to successfully enter, whereas others were sent back. Furthermore, after being sent back, their invitation title plates also disappeared.

“What’s going on? Why are those people all being sent back? Could it be that their invitation title plates were fake?” Xu Yiyi asked curiously.

“No, their invitation title plates are not fake. Rather, those spirit formations possess special requirements. Likely, only those that satisfy the requirements are allowed to enter Mount Cloud Crane.”

“It would seem that just having an invitation title plate is not enough for one to enter that place to train,” Chu Feng said.

“What? There’s actually such a rule? Why didn’t they say this beforehand? This is truly bullshit,” Xu Yiyi had a displeased expression.

After all, she knew very well how strong her world spirit techniques were. If one truly had to satisfy a certain requirement to enter, she felt that she would definitely not be able to pass through the spirit formation entrances. Even though she possessed an invitation title plate, she would’ve come in vain.

“You all see that, right? Even if one is a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist and possesses an invitation title plate, you will still be refused entrance if your world spirit techniques are insufficient.”

“Mister Asura World Spiritist, let me ask you, are you still that confident now? C’mon, tell me frankly, are you scared witless now?” Jiang Hao said to Chu Feng provocatively.

“Scared? You should be the one that’s scared, no?” Chu Feng replied calmly.

“Me, scared? I, Jiang Hao, started learning world spirit techniques since when I was ten years old. Right now, I have meticulously studied world spirit techniques for eighty-one years.”

“I have relied on my actual abilities to become a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“As for you, haha... it is not that I am looking down on you but,

becoming a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist at your age, I believe you should know best whether or not you've obtained assistance from others."

"Although your world spirit techniques might appear to be on par with us, the difference will show immediately the moment you use them," Jiang Hao said to Chu Feng with a face filled with contempt.

"Jiang Hao, if you dare to act rudely towards my friend again, do not blame me for becoming impolite," Xu Yiyi said in a very annoyed manner. She was truly angry.

"Yiyi, it is truly not that I am trying to act rude towards your friend. Rather, I just want him to know the truth, and not become overly conceited, because that will end up delaying his future prospects," Jiang Hao explained.

"Conceited? The way I see it, you're the one that's conceited, no?" Xu Yiyi said without the slightest trace of politeness.

"What Junior Sister Yiyi said is extremely reasonable."

"That's right. Jiang Hao, you are the one acting high and aloof from the very beginning. Chu Feng has been extremely low profile compared to you," Those three women chuckled.

What caused Chu Feng to feel the most speechless was that while those three women were speaking on his behalf, they were also throwing flirtatious glances at him. They were nearly on the verge of brazenly telling Chu Feng that they wanted him.

"If you all do not believe me, I shall prove it to you all now. I, Jiang Hao, am someone with actual abilities. It will be extremely easy for me to pass through that entrance. As for you, Chu Feng, hehe... good luck," Jiang Hao cast a glance at Chu Feng, then rapidly flew toward the spirit formation gate with his invitation title plate in hand.

"Truly a crazy fellow. What does him being able to enter or not

have anything to do with Chu Feng?” Xu Yiyi said with contempt.

“Junior Sister Yiyi, Jiang Hao is only acting this hostile towards Brother Chu Feng because he likes you. After all, you were truly enthusiastic when you saw Brother Chu Feng,” Li Rui laughed.

“Pah! Don’t disgust me with that. If it wasn’t for the fact that his master was a fellow apprentice to my master, and has maintained a decent relationship with him the entire time, I would’ve already asked my master to kill him with a palm strike. How could I continue to allow him to buzz around me like a housefly all day?” Xu Yiyi was so furious that her little face turned deep red. It could be seen that she was extremely fed up with Jiang Hao.



## Chapter 2222 – Ascending The Mountain

---

“It’s enough. Even if we do not care about him, we must enter. Let’s go. Stop wasting time here.”

“After all, this Immortalization Assembly has a time limit. It would not be good for us to miss the time limit,” One of the female disciples urged.

“Let’s go,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

Then, Xu Yiyi, Chu Feng and the others flew toward the entrance with the spirit formations.

The crowd were all talking and laughing on their way here. This lessened the anger that Xu Yiyi was feeling by a lot. Finally, she revealed a sweet smile on her face again.

After approaching the entrance, Xu Yiyi’s expression changed again. It was not only her expression that changed; the expressions of many of the people present had changed.

That Jiang Hao had clearly arrived before them. Yet, he had not set foot into the spirit formation entrance. Instead, he stood there and waited for Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and the others to arrive.

“Yiyi, watch carefully as I, who possess actual abilities, pass through this spirit formation entrance!”

“Chu Feng, you watch carefully too! Today, I will let you know that what is required in world spirit techniques are actual abilities and not shortcuts!”

Jiang Hao had shouted those words. Thus, it was not only Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and the others that heard him; everyone present heard his words.

At that moment, the gazes of all of the surrounding crowd were turned toward Xu Yiyi, Chu Feng and the others.

“This bastard, he’s truly seeking a beating,” At that moment, Xu

Yiyi was truly furious. She rolled up her sleeves and prepared to step forward to teach Jiang Hao a lesson.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, Jiang Hao actually stepped into the spirit formation entrance. He did not give Xu Yiyi the opportunity to attack him.

“Bang~~~”

However, the very next moment, Jiang Hao was actually knocked back by the spirit formation. Furthermore, he lost his balance and landed on his butt.

Furthermore, at that moment, the invitation title plate he held in his hand disappeared.

“Wahahahaha!!!”

When this scene occurred, before Chu Feng and the others could react, the surrounding crowd burst into loud laughter.

Humiliation. This was truly humiliating.

If he had kept a low profile as he entered the spirit formation gate, no one would have laughed at him even if he was sent back.

However, before entering, Jiang Hao had spoken such boastful words. Thus, it was extremely humiliating to be sent back out.

“Damn it! There is definitely something wrong with this spirit formation! How could I, a genius world spiritist, be unable to enter it?!” Jiang Hao’s face was deep red with embarrassment as he shouted in an extremely unreconciled manner.

“Jiang Hao, it’s enough. Have you not disgraced yourself enough?” At that moment, Elder Ning Shuang shouted in a displeased manner.

It could be seen that Elder Ning Shuang was someone with a high status in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Thus, after he said those words, Jiang Hao did not dare to say anymore. Instead, he walked gloomily over to Chu Feng and the others. He did not dare to even raise his head.

“Jiang Hao, is this your ‘true abilities’?” Although Jiang Hao said no more, Xu Yiyi was unwilling to forgive, and started to mock him.

“Yiyi, while it is true that I didn’t manage to enter the spirit formation gate, but since even I failed to enter, that means that Chu Feng will definitely not be able to enter either,” Jiang Hao said.

“And what if Chu Feng manages to enter?” Xu Yiyi asked.

“If he manages to enter, I will publicly apologize to him. I will recognize him as my big brother,” Jiang Hao said.

“Enough of your nonsense, you are tens of years older than Chu Feng. Why do you want to act young and become Chu Feng’s younger brother?” Xu Yiyi said with contempt.

“Then, I’ll publicly apologize and admit that I, Jiang Hao, am inferior to him,” Jiang Hao said.

“That’s not enough. Since you firmly believed that Chu Feng was inferior to you, you should gamble with something more serious,” Xu Yiyi was unwilling to forgive.

“More serious? Very well. If Chu Feng is able to enter, I, Jiang Hao, will swallow manure to kill myself today,” Jiang Hao said.

“Then it’s decided. Chu Feng, quickly, enter it,” Xu Yiyi said gleefully. She was looking forward to Jiang Hao swallowing manure.

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” Liu Xiaoli said. She was actually a bit scared of Jiang Hao, and wanted to break free from him as soon as possible.

“Mn,” In response, Chu Feng nodded. Then, Chu Feng and Liu

Xiaoli both entered the spirit formation entrance.

As for their result, they most naturally passed through easily. Not only did Chu Feng pass through the spirit formation entrance, Liu Xiaoli also passed through it.

“What the hell! This is impossible! There’s definitely something wrong with that spirit formation!”

“It’s one thing for that Chu Feng to be able to enter, but how could that Red Butterfly Society’s President enter it too?! There’s definitely something wrong with that spirit formation!” Jiang Hao shouted in irreconciliation.

“Jiang Hao, don’t you refuse to admit your defeat. Quickly, kill yourself by swallowing manure,” Xu Yiyi said gleefully.

“Eh, this...” Jiang Hao was stunned. He had only casually said those words, and never thought about actually swallowing manure.

“Jiang Hao, what is said cannot be retrieved. You should be able to do what you declared.”

“After Chu Feng comes out, remember to apologize to him. Else, others will say that our Sunset Cloud Valley’s disciples are sore losers.”

“As for killing yourself by swallowing manure, you can consider it to be a joke,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

Seeing that Elder Ning Shuang had spoken on the matter, Xu Yiyi did not continue to demand that Jiang Hao kill himself.

As for Jiang Hao, he heaved a sigh of relief.

After that, Xu Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang and the others all began to walk toward the spirit formation entrances.

As for Xu Yiyi, right after she stepped foot into the spirit formation entrance, she was immediately sent back out.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that only two of the ten

individuals from the Sunset Cloud Valley ended up successfully passing through the spirit formation entrance. One was the strongest person among them, Elder Ning Shuang. As for the other, it was the man that had spoken for Chu Feng, Li Rui.

“It seems that the spirit formation entrances are truly rigorous in their audit. Only those with a superb level of world spirit techniques are capable of entering them.”

“Indeed. Senior Brother Li Rui and Elder Ning Shuang do possess the strongest world spirit techniques among all of us here.”

“In that case, it means that it’s not the world spirit entrances that have issues. Rather, Chu Feng and that Red Butterfly Society’s President really do possess actual abilities that satisfied the requirements to enter,” At that moment, the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley that had failed to enter began to discuss among themselves.

“Jiang Hao, is there anything else you want to say?” Xu Yiyi said.

“Humph, I, Jiang Hao, am someone who will honor my words. However, I still refuse to believe that Chu Feng managed to enter with actual abilities,” Jiang Hao said resolutely.

“You’re still unwilling to accept it? If you still continue with your rubbish, I’ll make you swallow manure,” Xu Yiyi said.

“Yiyi, you...” Jiang Hao was left speechless.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a strange motion was suddenly felt from the depths of Mount Cloud Crane. Following that, a deep and resounding thunder-like sound entered the ears of all the crowd present.

“Those that managed to pass through the entrance, you all only need to continue straight onward. After reaching the top of the mountain, there will be a competition. The first four individuals that break through that competition will be allowed to enter the

spirit formation I set up and comprehend the way of world spirit techniques.”

It was the Golden Crane True Immortal. Even though he had not revealed himself, everyone knew that this was the Golden Crane True Immortal’s voice.

“For real? With all those invitation title plates being sent out, only four people are actually able to enter that spirit formation?” The crowd were all shocked.

“It’s hopeless. That Chu Feng is definitely done for. Even though he managed to pass through the entrance, he will not be able to enter the spirit formation,” Jiang Hao felt joy and delight in Chu Feng’s calamity.

## Chapter 2223 – Gathering Of Experts

---

“Jiang Hao, enough of your bad mouthing,” Xu Yiyi was truly unable to endure Jiang Hao anymore. She actually raised her foot and kicked Jiang Hao, trampling him so hard that he tumbled on the ground.

Seeing this scene, the three women from the Sunset Cloud Valley began to chuckle.

The reason for that was because they knew that Jiang Hao possessed a cultivation above Xu Yiyi's. If he had wanted to dodge, Xu Yiyi would simply not have been able to kick him.

However, he did not dare to dodge. In fact, he did not even dare to guard against her kick. That was why such a humiliating scene occurred.

Indeed, it was humiliating. After all, Jiang Hao had been kicked to the ground in public, which was seen by many people. Thus, at that moment, Jiang Hao had a furious expression. Merely, his anger was not aimed at Xu Yiyi. Rather, it was all aimed at Chu Feng.

“He's definitely hopeless. Do you all know how many Royal-cloak World Spiritists have come to participate? All of those that were able to obtain invitation title plates possess extraordinary strength.”

“I dare to guarantee that it is definitely hopeless for Chu Feng,” Jiang Hao said angrily.

“If you continue on with your bullshit, do you believe that I won't cut you down?” As Xu Yiyi spoke, she actually took out her Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

“Junior sister Yiyi, don't be so impulsive,” Upon seeing that, the three female disciples hurriedly moved to stop Xu Yiyi. They were afraid that Jiang Hao would not dodge Xu Yiyi's attack. Should

that happen, Jiang Hao might end up dying.

“Yiyi, although what Jiang Hao said is somewhat excessive, it is not without justification. If it is true that only four people will be allowed to enter the spirit formation, then not to mention Chu Feng, even Elder Ning Shuang and Li Rui will have practically no hope.”

“After all, practically all of the most famous Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have gathered here. They all possess extremely powerful world spirit techniques,” One of the three elders said.

“That’s true. I even saw the Four World Spiritist Emperors earlier. Furthermore, I’ve heard that the world spiritist experts from the Zhou Heavenly Clan, Kong Heavenly Clan, Immortal Sword School and Buddha’s Heavenly Temple have all arrived. Especially the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple, I’ve heard their world spiritists are extremely powerful.”

“No, no, no, in terms of being most powerful, it would definitely be the Four World Spiritist Emperors. After all, the four of them have dedicated their entire lives to world spirit formations.”

At that moment, the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley began to spiritedly discuss the people that had arrived.

As for Xu Yiyi, she grew quiet. The reason for that was because she had heard about all those people that they were talking about. They were indeed people that possessed extremely high academic attainments in world spirit techniques.

Thus, she could only quietly look to the entrance of Mount Cloud Crane. Then, with a low voice, she muttered, “It’s this difficult. Wouldn’t this mean that Chu Feng and the others have entered in vain?”

.....

At that moment, Chu Feng and the others were proceeding



toward Mount Cloud Crane's summit.

The journey toward the summit was not easy at all. If one wanted to arrive there safely, one must pass through many layers of difficulties.

Fortunately, Li Rui, Liu Xiaoli and Elder Ning Shuang were following Chu Feng the entire time. Else, with their world spirit techniques, they would most definitely not have been able to continue onward so smoothly.

"Little friend Chu Feng, may I know who your master might be?" Elder Ning Shuang asked curiously. He discovered that even though they were both Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, Chu Feng's world spirit techniques greatly surpassed his own. It could be said that there was an enormous difference in mastery between Chu Feng's world spirit techniques and theirs.

Thus, he truly wanted to know exactly who it was that had managed to nurture such a powerful world spiritist genius like Chu Feng.

"I have two masters. One is called Zhuge Liuyun, and the other is called Qiu Canfeng," Chu Feng said.

"Zhuge Liuyun, Qiu Canfeng?" Both Elder Ning Shuang and Li Rui were startled upon hearing those names. The reason for that was because they'd never heard of them before.

Although they had never heard of them before, the two of them unanimously came to the conclusion that Zhuge Liuyun and Qiu Canfeng must be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's hidden experts, or even experts from the Upper Realm.

However, only Chu Feng knew that his two masters were respectively in the Nine Provinces Continent's Azure Dragon School and the Eastern Sea Region's Crippling Night Demon Sect.

If one were to determine one's strength with cultivation, then his two masters would definitely be laughingstocks in the eyes of

countless people should they be placed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, his two masters possessed incomparably high status in Chu Feng's heart. This was especially true for Zhuge Liuyun, because he could be considered to be the person who had guided Chu Feng onto the path of a world spiritist.

Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might end up becoming, the two of them would forever be his greatly respected masters.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, "There seems to be problems ahead."

The reason for that was because there was a layer of purple fog ahead. Many people were gathered in the fog.

To be exact, all of those people were being blocked by the purple fog.

Although no one could tell what was inside the purple fog, Chu Feng was able to guess that it must be a spirit formation.

"Elder Ning Shuang, look, it's the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Grandmaster [Pocket](#), and the Immortal Sword School's Daoist Three Swords."

"The Four World Spiritist Emperors. Even the Four World Spiritist Emperors are here," Li Rui revealed an astonished expression. It was as if he had just seen his idols.

Turning his gaze toward the direction of Li Rui's gaze, Chu Feng saw a monk wearing a world spiritist cloak and a white-haired old man.

The world spiritist cloak that monk was wearing was somewhat special; it was actually covered with pockets. Likely, he must be that Grandmaster Pocket.

As for that white-haired old man, although his hair was as white as snow, his skin was smooth like jade and tender like a baby's skin.

Most importantly, he carried three long swords on his back. Those three swords were all different from one another. However, they were all Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. Likely... he was that Daoist Three Swords.

These two individuals were both very strong. Chu Feng was unable to see through their cultivations. Thus, Chu Feng felt that they were very likely to be peak Martial Ancestor-level experts.

However, the ones that gave Chu Feng the greatest impression were those so-called Four World Spiritist Emperors.

They were four fatties. Each of them were two meters tall. However, they were also two meters wide. They were truly fat, so fat that they resembled balls, four giant balls.

Furthermore, other than all of them being fat, the four of them also possessed the same appearance.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that their same appearances were not obtained from the alteration of their appearances. Rather, they were born this way.

In other words, they were quadruplets.

At that moment, Chu Feng truly wondered to himself what sort of mother would be able to give birth to four brothers like them? How enormous must her stomach have been to contain all of them?

“With only four people being allowed in the spirit formation, it would appear that it is practically hopeless for us,” Upon seeing so many world spiritist experts, Liu Xiaoli revealed a worried expression.

“Who are those people?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Brother Chu Feng, you don’t know them?” Li Rui asked in astonishment.

Chu Feng shook his head.

“Then, I’ll skip the others and tell you about the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Grandmaster Pocket and the Immortal Sword School’s Daoist Three Swords.”

“When they were young, the two of them were both world spiritist geniuses whose names were renowned throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. I’ll say it this way, even without this assembly, the two of them will sooner or later become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists by relying on themselves. This is something that everyone firmly believes will happen.”

“Merely, the two of them are more infatuated with martial cultivation. That is why they ended up delaying their world spirit talents. That is also the reason why the two of them possess extremely strong cultivations.”

“If their world spirit techniques cannot be said to be among the peak in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, their martial cultivations would definitely place them among the peak experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“As for the Four World Spiritist Emperors, they are even more exceptional. Their mother is one of the few Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Furthermore, the four of them also possess extremely powerful world spirit techniques. Reportedly, the four of them have competed against an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist with world spirit techniques, and managed to defeat that Immortal-cloak World Spiritist even though they were only Royal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“Although their victory must also be attributed to their mother using her treasures to assist them, it remains that it should be impossible for Royal-cloak World Spiritists to defeat an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, treasures or not.”

“However, the four of them accomplished it. From this, it could be seen how powerful their world spirit techniques were. If it were

only comparing one's attainments in world spirit techniques, the four of them would likely be even more powerful than Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords. The four of them are true world spiritist geniuses," Li Rui said.

"Hearing what you said, it seems like they are truly amazing. However, it seems that they have all been stopped by that thing," Chu Feng pointed to the purple fog ahead.

It was as he had said; there were over two hundred world spiritists gathered here right now. Furthermore, their numbers were increasing nonstop. The reason why they had all stopped here was because they were unable to pass through the purple fog.

Suddenly, a man from the Zhou Heavenly Clan shouted, "I refuse to believe that I will be blocked by a mere spirit formation after training for so long!" Following that, he unleashed his boundless aura.

Rank one Martial Ancestor. He was a rank one Martial Ancestor-level expert.

"Zzzzz~::~"

Suddenly, multicolored lightning began to flicker as Thunder Armor appeared on his body, and Thunder Wings extended from his back.

At that moment, his cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Martial Ancestor. Instead, it had increased to that of a rank three Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, an entire level above Chu Feng.

Thus, at that moment, his true battle power was actually on par with ordinary rank seven Martial Ancestors. His strength could be said to be extremely powerful.

After all, even when placed in the Hundred Refinements

Ordinary Realm, rank seven Martial Ancestors were extremely powerful individuals.

Koudai means pocket. Not sure if it's a name or a title. Felt it is more likely a title though.

# Chapter 2224 – Snorting Disdainfully

---

“Heavenly Bloodlines are powerful indeed.”

At that moment, many people revealed admiration and envious gazes. The reason for that was because Heavenly Bloodlines were truly powerful. Not to mention their Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, merely their frightening heaven-defying battle power was already a thing that countless people dreamed of.

“I refuse to believe that a layer of fog will be able to stop me.”

After that man from the Zhou Heavenly Clan felt the admiring gazes from the crowd, he became even more conceited. Holding an Incomplete Imperial Armament in his hand, he flew toward the purple fog.

“Boom~~~”

He started to attack. He turned into a golden ray of light that soared into the sky before charging straight into the purple fog.

Once the golden light appeared, violent wind sprang up all over. The power behind his attack was very terrifying. In fact, many of the people present fell to the ground. Some were even blown far away, rolling about on the ground.

It turned out that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s expert did not use an ordinary attack. Rather, he had unleashed an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, right after he landed into the purple mist, he let out a scream.

Following that, together with the Incomplete Ancestral Armament he held in his hand, he was knocked out of the purple fog.

At that moment, not only was that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s expert

badly mutilated, he had also suffered serious internal injuries.

“Didn’t work? Even martial power is useless? But, world spirit techniques are clearly useless,” The world spiritists present were all in utter confusion.

The attack unleashed by that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s expert earlier was truly powerful. When even he failed to pass through the purple fog, the people present were truly at a loss as to what to do. After all, they had already attempted all kinds of methods before.

“This remains an assembly meant for world spiritists. The way I see it, only world spirit techniques would work. Allow me to give it a try,” Right at that moment, a world spiritist from the Kong Heavenly Clan began to set up a spirit formation. His spirit formation was a sort of spirit formation used to break through other spirit formations.

Once he began to set up his spirit formation, the gazes of many people present became very marvelous.

The reason for that was because the spirit formation that that world spiritist was setting up was something that many people present were incapable of setting up. Even though they were all Royal-cloak World Spiritists, there was still a difference in strength.

Suddenly, that Kong Heavenly Clan’s World Spiritist shouted, “Break!!!”

His majestic spirit formation turned into an extravagant war chariot. With might capable of pulverizing space itself, that war chariot charged into the purple fog.

However, after his spirit formation entered the purple fog, there was absolutely no change to the purple fog.

Not only that, he even suffered a backlash from it. Although he appeared to be relatively fine, he had actually suffered very serious internal injuries, and ended up fainting on the spot.



“Sure enough, it didn’t work. What are we to do now? Neither world spirit techniques nor martial power works. Could it be that this place is the summit of Mount Cloud Crane?” The crowd began to spiritedly discuss the matter with expressions of worry. After all, no one wanted to come here in vain.

“This place is not Mount Cloud Crane’s summit,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke. Not only that, he was also walking toward the crowd.

“Where did this brat come from?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd all revealed displeased expressions.

The reason for that was because the people present here were all grand characters. Someone like Chu Feng, a nameless individual from the younger generation, was not qualified to interfere with their business.

“Where I’m from doesn’t matter. What does matter is that I can help you all pass through that fog,” Chu Feng said.

“Help us pass through it? What arrogance,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked with a laugh.

“Indeed. What shameless boasting.”

.....

At that moment, the others also started to laugh.

After all, even the Four World Spiritist Emperors, Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords, these grand characters among Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists, were unable to pass through that purple fog. As such, the crowd did not feel that a nameless person from the younger generation like Chu Feng would be able to pass through the purple fog.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the mockery from the crowd and continued onward toward the purple fog. At that moment, he had arrived at the frontmost area of the crowd.

“Scram! We do not have time to waste with you!” Suddenly, the second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors shouted at Chu Feng.

Furthermore, he actually unleashed his rank one Martial Ancestor’s oppressive might. The power of his oppressive might was not weak at all. If Chu Feng were to be struck by it, even if he didn’t die, he would definitely suffer serious injuries, and might even become crippled.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a boundless oppressive might suddenly appeared. That oppressive might completely crushed the oppressive might unleashed by the second eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor.

That oppressive might was extremely powerful. Although it was also invisible, everyone present was able to sense how frightening it was. The reason for that was because that oppressive might was many times more powerful than the oppressive might unleashed by the second eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor.

In fact, it was even more powerful than the oppressive might unleashed by that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s expert earlier. In other words, the person who had unleashed that oppressive might was stronger than an ordinary rank seven Martial Ancestor.

However, even though that oppressive might was extremely powerful, it completely disappeared the moment it crushed the second eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor’s oppressive might. It was as if it had never appeared as it left no trace at all.

Even though the oppressive might came and left without a trace, the crowd all turned their gazes toward the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Grandmaster Pocket.

“Grandmaster Pocket, we possess neither grievances nor grudges, why did you stop me?” The second eldest of the Four World

Spiritist Emperors asked in a very displeased manner.

Although his cultivation was far inferior to Grandmaster Pocket's, it remained that his mother was extremely strong. Thus, as he possessed the backing of his mother, he was not at all afraid of Grandmaster Pocket.

“Amitabha. Please forgive this old monk for speaking forthrightly. Naturally, there are neither grievances nor grudges between us. However, there are neither grievances nor grudges between you and that young [almsgiver](#) either.”

“As such, how could you attack him with such a strong attack, an attack so powerful that it would ruin his future, just because of a single sentence that he said?”

“Why, you ask? It's because he's shooting off his mouth,” The second eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor said.

“Based on what you said, you're implying that young almsgiver is not even qualified to speak?” Grandmaster Pocket asked.

“He's not; he's a nobody. Are you saying that you think he is qualified to speak?” The Four World Spiritist Emperors' second eldest said.

“To this old monk, all living things are equal. Not only is this young almsgiver qualified, everyone present is qualified to speak,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“I feel what Grandmaster Pocket says to be very correct. Why is it that you can make suggestions, but this young friend cannot?” Right at that moment, Daoist Three Swords also spoke. Furthermore, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Young friend, what method might you have in mind? Go ahead and tell us about it. If anyone dares to attack you again, I will definitely take care of them.”

“You all!!!” The second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperor's became extremely displeased.

“Second, forget about it. Since they want to waste time, let them waste time. I refuse to believe that a mere brat will be able to do anything,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“Young almsgiver, if there is any method that you have in mind, just say it,” Grandmaster Pocket said to Chu Feng. His attitude was very polite.

“That fog is a concealment formation. It is there to prevent us from seeing what the actual thing blocking us is. Thus, we must first remove that fog,” Chu Feng said.

“What a bunch of rubbish. Who doesn’t know that?” The Four World Spiritist Emperors snorted disdainfully at Chu Feng.

“Do you all understand the principle of not interrupting when someone else is speaking?”

“To not even know about that principle, has your mother not taught you all about how to write the word ‘respect?’” Daoist Three Swords spoke coldly.

“Watch your words!” The Four World Spiritist Emperors were immediately enraged. Four waves of rank one Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth.

“Watch my words? What, do the four of you have complaints about what I said?” Daoist Three Swords snorted coldly. He directly crushed all four waves of oppressive might, and even forced the Four World Spiritist Emperors back repeatedly, nearly knocking them to the ground.

Perhaps it might be because they felt how powerful Daoist Three Swords was, but even though the Four World Spiritist Emperors were feeling very unreconciled, they did not refute him anymore.

At that moment, the three of them suddenly recalled that while Daoist Three Swords might be inferior to them in terms of world spirit techniques, they were simply incapable of comparing with him in terms of martial cultivation.

There were a lot of people present. Among them were many hidden experts, and many experts from first tier powers. However, in terms of martial cultivation, it was likely that not one would be a match for Daoist Three Swords.

Furthermore, Daoist Three Swords was different from Grandmaster Pocket. Grandmaster Pocket possessed a benevolent heart. Even if someone was in the wrong, he would only, at the very most, teach them a simple lesson. Very rarely did he ever kill others.

However, Daoist Three Swords was completely different. Although he was an upright individual, he was also very ruthless. Many of the people that had spoken back to him ended up being killed by him.

Daoist Three Swords was renowned for being extremely tyrannical.

Thus, while the Four World Spiritist Emperors dared to talk back to Grandmaster Pocket, they truly did not dare to refute Daoist Three Swords.

Almsgiver is the way chinese monks refer to strangers.

# Chapter 2225 – Displaying One’s Ability for the First Time

---

“Young friend, go ahead and continue,” Daoist Three Swords said to Chu Feng.

“This purple fog is extremely hard to deal with. Likely, it will be impossible for any of us to break through it alone.”

“I am capable of setting up a spirit formation. However, I will need the assistance of everyone’s power in order to break through that fog,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance. You will set up the formation, yet will need our power? What makes you think you’re qualified to do that?” Sure enough, the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke again. Furthermore, their words were filled with disdain.

In fact, it was not only the Four World Spiritist Emperors that were looking down upon Chu Feng. Many of the world spiritists present were lightly laughing at Chu Feng with mocking laughter.

Like the Four World Spiritist Emperors, they were also looking down on Chu Feng. They felt that Chu Feng was nothing more than a beam jumping clown, and possessed no qualifications to order them around.

“What makes him qualified? He’s qualified because he is no ordinary Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist,” Right at that moment, Liu Xiaoli spoke. Furthermore, when she spoke those words, she actually revealed a trace of anger.

Chu Feng’s heart was moved upon seeing that sight. He knew that Liu Xiaoli was not someone who was fond of publicity, nor was she someone fond of stirring up troubles.

On the contrary, she was a very conservative individual. Logically, in such a situation, she should be keeping a low profile.

However, she did not. She did it for his sake.

Liu Xiaoli was standing up for Chu Feng.

“What a joke. A little brat pretending to be a know-it-all is not enough, turns out there’s another assistant.”

“Very well then. Tell me, if he is not an ordinary Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist, what is he?” The eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor asked mockingly.

“He is an Asura World Spiritist,” Liu Xiaoli spoke those words one word at a time.

The moment the words ‘Asura World Spiritist’ was heard, the crowd grew completely quiet. It was an absolute silence. Everyone stood there as if they were petrified.

After a moment of silence, someone asked, “Asura World Spiritist? You say that he’s an Asura World Spiritist?”

“Since when were there so many Asura World Spiritists? There’re actually so many Asura World Spiritists now that even a random brat can declare himself to be an Asura World Spiritist,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors said mockingly. They simply did not believe that Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist.

“Chu Feng, prove it to them, and let them know how powerful you are,” Liu Xiaoli said to Chu Feng. She was truly unable to contain her anger. She was furious at how an exceptional talent like Chu Feng would be held in contempt by a bunch of old farts.

“Originally, I did not intend to prove anything. I merely wanted to join hands with everyone and break through that purple fog.”

“However, if I must prove myself in order to obtain everyone’s assistance, then I do not mind proving myself either.”

Right after Chu Feng finished saying those words, he opened his world spirit gate. Then, a boundless amount of dark black gaseous flames swept forth from that world spirit gate.

“Roar~~~”

After the black gaseous flames appeared, a violent wind immediately started to blow in that region. Ghost-like wails and wolf-like howls were sounding nonstop.

“This sensation!? How could it be this frightening?!” The expressions of many of the people present changed upon sensing the black gaseous flames.

Even Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords, who had experienced grand spectacles, had a change in expression.

The reason for that was because the crowd felt a killing intent they’d never felt before from the black gaseous flames. That killing intent simply did not resemble something a human was capable of unleashing. That killing intent caused even their souls to shiver.

“Excellent, excellent. It is truly a blessing to our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for an Asura World Spiritist to appear here,” Grandmaster Pocket said with a beaming smile on his face.

“Grandmaster Pocket, in that case, he really is an Asura World Spiritist?” The crowd all revealed astonished gazes.

“That unrivalled sensation is definitely one of an Asura World Spiritist,” Before Grandmaster Pocket could answer, Daoist Three Swords said. Furthermore, he even took the initiative to walk to Chu Feng’s side and ask him courteously, “Young friend, are you called Chu Feng?”

“Senior, junior is indeed called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng replied courteously.

At that moment, he had closed his world spirit gate. He had not made Her Lady Queen show herself.

After all, there were knowledgeable individuals here. It would suffice should he let them know that he was an Asura World Spiritist.



“Brother Chu Feng, go ahead and set up your spirit formation. Regardless of whether or not others will support you, I will definitely support you,” Daoist Three Swords patted his chest. It could be seen that he was a man of character.

However, one thing was without a doubt; after he verified that Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist, his attitude toward him became much more enthusiastic.

“Amitabha, this old monk is also willing to support almsgiver Chu Feng,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Chu Feng smiled courteously at his two supporters. He knew that many more people would be willing to support him after those two men decided to support him.

“Humph, I refuse to believe that brat will be able to set up any heaven-defying spirit formation,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors continued to scoff at Chu Feng. They did not have a whole new level of respect for him just because he was an Asura World Spiritist.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng began to set up his spirit formation. Once he began to reveal his fluid and rapid motions in setting up his world spirit formation, the expressions of the crowd changed immediately.

Even the Four World Spiritist Emperors revealed astonished expressions.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s methods in setting up his spirit formation were truly at the apex of the Royal-cloak World Spiritist level.

As the saying goes, once an expert unleashes his talent, people will know whether or not he is a true expert immediately. After Chu Feng unleashed his techniques, the doubt the crowd held toward him disappeared instantly.

It was instead replaced with a whole new level of respect.

“Expert. He is an actual world spiritist expert,” Someone was unable to contain himself from commending Chu Feng.

“Amazing. As expected of an Asura World Spiritist. It would appear that we have truly failed to recognize Mount Tai today.”

Following that, more and more people began to express their admiration for Chu Feng. Those people that had looked down on Chu Feng earlier revealed expressions of shame.

The techniques Chu Feng used to set up his spirit formation were things that many people present were incapable of accomplishing.

He was a true master!!!

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, light flourished; Chu Feng’s spirit formation was completed.

At that moment, many people were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Merely by looking at that spirit formation, they were able to tell that it was very powerful. Most importantly, Chu Feng had finished setting up that spirit formation in such a short period of time.

As for that, it greatly manifested how masterful in world spirit techniques Chu Feng was.

“Everyone, I am unable to break this fog by myself. I will need everyone’s help.”

“Everyone, you all merely need to pour your world spirit power into this formation to help me.”

“Of course... the greater the amount of world spirit power, the better. Thus, I hope that seniors will not be too stingy with your world spirit power.”

“After a sufficient amount of spirit power is gathered, I will then activate this spirit formation to break through that purple fog,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after Chu Feng finished saying those words, two boundless streams of spirit power began to pour into Chu Feng’s spirit formation like two golden dragons.

It was Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords. The two of them kept their promise, and took the initiative to support Chu Feng. They began to steadily pour spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

Following them, Liu Xiaoli, Elder Ning Shuang and Li Rui also began to pour their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

“Young friend, I’ll trust you.”

Suddenly, a world spiritist from the Zhou Heavenly Clan spoke. Although his reputation was not as grand as Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords’, he remained a very famous world spiritist.

“I’ll also trust you!!!”

“Buzz, buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

.....

Following that, the other people present also began to pour their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

With the increase in the amount of people, the spirit power in the spirit formation began to surge violently.

That change caused the crowd to firmly believe that Chu Feng’s spirit formation was no small matter. In the end, apart from the Four World Spiritist Emperors, all of the people present poured their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

Even the world spiritists that arrived later and did not know what had happened joined in pouring their spirit power into Chu Feng's spirit formation without the slightest hesitation the moment they found out what was happening.

However, the Four World Spiritist Emperors were still not joining.

## Chapter 2226 – Quite Amazing

---

“Four World Spiritist Emperors, why are you all still not helping?” Daoist Three Swords looked to the Four World Spiritist Emperors with a very displeased expression.

“While you all might be willing to exhaust your power for that brat, the four of us are not,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“Very well, if Brother Chu Feng is able to help us break through that purple fog, those who have helped will all be able to pass through it. However, those who have not helped will not be allowed to pass,” Daoist Three Swords said.

“Daoist Three Swords, don’t you try to bully us excessively. While others might be afraid of your Immortal Sword School, we four brothers are not afraid at all!!!” The eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor spoke in a furious manner.

“Haha, the four of you brothers are not scared of our Immortal Sword School? Even your mother does not dare to say something like that,” Daoist Three Swords laughed mockingly.

Hearing those words, the Four World Spiritist Emperors clenched their fists in fury. Rage fumed between their gritted teeth, and flames of fury were burning in their eyes.

However, none of them dared to actually act out against Daoist Three Swords. They knew that they would definitely be no match for him.

Furthermore, what Daoist Three Swords had said was true too. Likely, even their mother would not dare to say that she was not afraid of the Immortal Sword School.

“Brat, what will you do if you are unable to break through that purple fog?” Suddenly, the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor turned his furious gaze to Chu Feng.

Being unable to do anything to Daoist Three Swords, he planned to vent his fury on Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, even though he was not someone fond of stirring up troubles, he was also not someone afraid of troubles. Faced with the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors deliberately making things difficult for him, Chu Feng would not be polite with them either. Thus, he replied, “What will you do if I am able to break through the purple fog?”

“What will I do? If you are able to break through the purple fog, I will give you an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.”

“However, if you fail to break through that purple fog, you must publicly kneel and kowtow to me to apologize. Then, you are to slap yourself a hundred times and scram immediately,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors shouted angrily.

“Very well. If I am unable to break through that purple mist, I will do as you said. However, I do not want an Incomplete Ancestral Armament if I am able to break through the purple mist.”

“Instead, I want you to publicly kneel and kowtow to apologize to me. Then, you are to slap yourself a hundred times and scram immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“You dare speak to me like this?” The anger on the face of the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor grew stronger.

“Why wouldn’t I dare to speak to you like this?” Chu Feng smiled mockingly. Then, he said, “Do you dare to take this bet or not? Speak frankly.”

“You!!!” Hearing those words, the expression of the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor grew tensed. He was actually scared.

He would not be afraid if it was merely a gamble with an Incomplete Ancestral Armament on the line. If he were to lose, then so be it. After all, he did not care about an Incomplete

Ancestral Armament at all.

However, to publicly kneel and kowtow to apologize, and then slap himself a hundred times was something that he was incapable of doing.

“Big brother, forget about it. He is merely a nobody, there is no need for you to make things too difficult on him. You should just give him a chance,” Right at that moment, the third of the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke.

“Very well, since my third brother is pleading for leniency for you, I will not bicker with you,” The eldest of the World Spiritist Four Emperors said.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly at the words spoken by the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor.

It was not only Chu Feng who laughed. Many of the people present snickered in their hearts. They were all able to tell that it was not the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors that was sparing Chu Feng. Rather, he was scared of gambling against Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Four World Spiritist Emperors also felt very humiliated.

Thus, they were currently looking at Chu Feng with gazes of hatred that resembled invisible daggers. They wished that they could kill Chu Feng with their gazes.

However, they only dared to threaten Chu Feng with their malicious gazes, and still began to obediently instill their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

It must be said that the spirit power of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was truly strong. After they instilled their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation, Chu Feng’s spirit formation started to surge even more violently.

Everyone was able to sense that the power of Chu Feng’s spirit

formation had grown to a very frightening level. At the same time, they began to worry. With how powerful the spirit formation had become, would Chu Feng really be able to control it? They felt that the spirit power contained in the spirit formation seemed to have already surpassed the limits of a Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Haha, big brother, that brat is going to fail. All of the world spiritists present are experts. All of their world spirit power is extremely strong.”

“With that much spirit power, the spirit power contained in that spirit formation is on the verge of exceeding the limits of Royal-level spirit power.”

“That brat will not be able to control it. The way I see it, not to mention that he will not be able to break through the purple mist, he himself will likely suffer an enormous backlash from the spirit power gathered,” The second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors also noticed that the situation was amiss. Thus, he sent a voice transmission to his big brother rejoicing at Chu Feng’s incoming disaster.

“Humph, he’s reaping what he’s sown. Brothers, increase your spirit power. As long as that brat fails, I shall see what else Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket can say,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said through a voice transmission.

After receiving his voice transmission, his three younger brothers also began to frantically pour their spirit power into Chu Feng’s spirit formation. They wanted to make Chu Feng fail in controlling that spirit power and publicly humiliate himself.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, “Formation, activate!!!”

After that, his spirit formation flashed with light that filled the entire surrounding area.

“Boom~~~”



Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. That spirit formation had exploded. The energy formed by the gathering of boundless spirit power broke through Chu Feng's spirit formation and began to spread in all directions. Those energy ripples were going to swallow everything in the surroundings.

“Oh no!” At that moment, many of the people present revealed frightened gazes. The reason for that was because the power contained in that energy ripple of spirit power was truly extraordinary, and not to be looked down upon.

“Trash, you are unable to even properly control a spirit formation. Yet you dared to demand that we...” Upon seeing that sight, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors immediately rejoiced in Chu Feng's misfortune, and began to rain curses upon him.

“This...” However, before he could finish his words, he turned tongue-tied and stood there in a stunned manner.

“Heavens, he actually!!!” At that moment, many of the people present were also stunned like the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

The explosion that they thought would have happened did not actually happen. Instead, the boundless spirit power was actually immobile in the air.

It was controlled, controlled by Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted, “Break!!!”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The golden light that covered the sky began to gather in one place like golden raindrops, that then turned into golden waves.

One wave after another, they began to crash into the purple fog.

“Quickly, look! That purple fog has started to gradually vanish!”

Seeing that scene, someone cried out in alarm. After that, practically everyone present revealed overjoyed expressions.

The purple fog that they were helpless against was actually gradually vanishing. As such, how could they not be overjoyed?

“How could this be? He actually managed to control such an enormous amount of spirit power?”

At the moment when everyone was overjoyed, the expressions of the Four World Spiritist Emperors became very ugly. The reason for that was because this wasn't the result they had hoped for.

However, what they did not wish to happen the most was actually happening. The purple fog was being dispersed by Chu Feng's spirit formation. Furthermore, the dispersed area was steadily increasing.

This not only brought enormous joy to the crowd, this also caught the attention of a gaze in the depths of Mount Cloud Crane.

It was a golden red-crowned crane. The crane stood high in the clouds as it looked down like a divine being overlooking mortals.

However, it actually revealed an astonished expression in its bright and expressive eyes.

Suddenly, the golden red-crowned crane actually spoke human speech.

“That brat, he's quite amazing.”

# Chapter 2227 – Floating Islands

---

“Mn?”

Upon hearing what that golden crane said, a questioning voice suddenly sounded from beside it.

The person who spoke was actually that old monk wearing ordinary clothing Chu Feng had met in the Darknight Ghost Forest.

Originally, the old monk was resting with his eyes closed. However, upon hearing what the golden crane said, he turned his gaze toward the direction of the golden crane’s gaze.

“It’s him?” Suddenly, the old monk revealed an expression of surprise.

“Buzz~~~”

After hearing what the old monk said, the golden crane’s body began to change. From a crane, it turned into a golden old man.

Golden clothes, golden hair, a golden beard and golden eyebrows. In fact, even his skin was golden. Especially those golden eyes, they were extraordinarily spirited.

Standing there, he gave off dazzling golden light. He was the master of Mount Cloud Crane, the renowned Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Old Poisonous Substance, you know that brat?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked the old monk.

“I have met him once before. That child possesses an extraordinary origin. However, it is unsuitable for me to tell you about his origin,” The old monk said.

“You’re actually being mysterious with me now?” The Golden Crane True Immortal curled his lips. Then, he said, “Even if you refuse to tell me, I am not interested in knowing either way.”

“Golden Crane, I’ve heard that you’ve come to this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for the sake of finding a disciple to impart what you’ve learned in your lifetime.”

“The way I see it, that Chu Feng is a very decent candidate,” The old monk said.

“That Chu Feng is indeed decent. However, that is only in terms of world spirit techniques. Although he is indeed an extremely rare world spiritist genius, it remains that what I am mainly imparting will be things associated with martial cultivation. Thus, he is not suitable,” Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Perhaps that Chu Feng will give you a pleasant surprise in terms of martial cultivation,” The old monk said.

“I don’t know about that. I have seen many geniuses like him. However, only a few ever managed to truly mature.”

“I do not have to time to waste on a brat like him,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“But it seems like the one you’ve chosen does not appreciate your kind intentions?” The old monk said.

Hearing those words, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s gaze flickered slightly. However, he soon revealed a confident smile. He said, “That brat is a bit rebellious. However, sooner or later, I will be able to subdue him and make him my disciple.”

.....

At the same time, the purple fog was dispersing more and more from Chu Feng’s attack.

Finally, it was completely dispersed. After the purple fog was dispersed, a world spirit wall flickering with golden light appeared.

Naturally, that world spirit wall was a defensive spirit formation. Originally, that defensive spirit formation had been very powerful. It had injured that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s expert, as well as many

other world spiritists.

However, after the purple fog disappeared, the power of that defensive spirit formation greatly diminished as well. Furthermore, its flaws were also exposed.

Thus, there was simply no need for Chu Feng to do anything, as the Four World Spiritist Emperors and the others managed to easily break through that spirit formation wall.

After that spirit formation wall was shattered, a bottomless cliff appeared.

No one would've expected that there would be such an enormously vast bottomless cliff on Mount Cloud Crane.

Most importantly, over two hundred floating islands were floating above the cliff. Furthermore, all of the floating islands were different from one another.

It was truly a spectacular sight that filled one's entire line of sight.

“Heavens! I'm not dreaming, right?!”

“A blessing, this is most definitely a blessing. It would appear that the Golden Crane True Immortal is truly good to us. Even though he set up that purple fog, that enormously difficult problem for us to overcome, he also prepared such a blessing for us.”

After seeing those floating islands, many of the people present revealed overjoyed expressions. Even the Four World Spiritist Emperors had smiles on their faces.

“Senior Ning Shuang, exactly what is so special about those islands? Why is everyone so excited?” Chu Feng asked curiously. He discovered that Elder Ning Shuang and Li Rui also had extremely excited expressions. Likely, they knew the secret of the islands.

“Little friend Chu Feng, the founder of Mount Cloud Crane is an Exalted level expert. What are Exalted? They are existences akin to legend. However, he truly existed.”

“As for those islands, they too were legends. Reportedly, that Exalted had left behind many treasures on those islands.”

“This holds especially true for one of the islands. Reportedly, that Exalted trained on that island before. If one were to train on that island, one would be able to comprehend the secrets of martial cultivation, and easily reach a breakthrough,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“So that’s the case,” After learning about it, Chu Feng secretly activated his Heaven’s Eyes and began to inspect the two hundred-plus floating islands.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques had grown more and more powerful, his Heaven’s Eyes had also grown more and more powerful. Not only had they become much more perceptive, the people beside him were also unable to notice him using his special observation technique.

“Sure enough, there are treasures here.”

After observing the floating islands, Chu Feng felt joy in his heart.

He discovered that, of the two hundred-plus floating islands here, there were at least thirty-nine floating islands that contained treasures.

He had identified them all with his Heaven’s Eyes. Furthermore, if his analysis was correct, Chu Feng felt that he had discovered the island that the legendary Exalted had trained on.

If one were to observe that floating island with ordinary observation techniques, one would only find it to be an ordinary island.

However, Chu Feng noticed that there was a special martial

power lingering on that island. That martial power was in an illusory state. However, the martial power was metamorphosed into a special pattern. It was as if a special martial skill was flowing through the island.

However, Chu Feng knew that was not a martial skill. Instead, it should be an indication that special profoundness was hidden in that place.

Merely, that martial power was truly well-hidden. Unless one possessed an observation method like the Heaven's Eyes, it would be extremely hard for one to discover it.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that even though only thirty nine islands contained treasures, there were spirit formations hidden on all two hundred plus islands.

Those spirit formations should have been added by others, as they had not been set up long ago.

Furthermore, the spirit formations were of different strengths. Only by breaking through the spirit formations would one be able to enter into the depths of the islands. Else, one would be isolated and kept outside of the islands.

Chu Feng felt that those spirit formations must be the doings of the Golden Crane True Immortal.

In other words, it was very possible for these islands to be a trial.

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

.....

Right at that moment, light suddenly began to shine. Over two hundred teleportation formations appeared on the cliff. Furthermore, an illusory small-scale island was floating above every teleportation formation. This indicated that those

teleportation formations corresponded to the two hundred-plus floating islands.

“Everyone, congratulations on reaching this place. Before you all is the final step to ascending Mount Cloud Crane.”

“You all can group up in pairs and enter an island. Each of the islands contains a spirit formation. Only by breaking through that spirit formation will you all be able to enter the depths of the islands.”

“In the depths of each island is a teleportation formation. Once you enter that teleportation formation, you all will be able to reach the summit of Mount Cloud Crane.”

“Twenty hours. You all have twenty hours. After twenty hours have passed, all those that have reached the summit of Mount Cloud Crane are to conduct a contest of world spirit techniques.”

“This contest will be a melee. Only the first four individuals that successfully break through the siege will be able to enter the spirit formation I have personally set up.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal’s voice sounded. Sure enough, as Chu Feng had anticipated, the islands were a type of test.



## Chapter 2228 – Cold Shine

---

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Once the Golden Crane True Immortal’s words were said, the crowd present immediately charged toward those teleportation formations. They all wanted to be the first choose the islands which they felt contained treasures.

This was especially true for the Four World Spiritist Emperors. They were the fastest among everyone. At that moment, the four of them had already entered two respective floating islands.

After the two of them entered the teleportation formations, those teleportation formations disappeared. In other words, only two individuals were allowed to enter a teleportation formation. After two individuals entered a teleportation formation, the teleportation formation would disappear, and others would not be able to enter.

Furthermore, Chu Feng noticed that the two islands chosen by the Four World Spiritist Emperors indeed contained treasures. This meant that their perceptions were very decent.

Unfortunately, they had not managed to choose the island that the Exalted had trained on.

“Brother Chu Feng, let us meet again on the summit of Mount Cloud Crane,” Daoist Three Swords clasped his fist at Chu Feng. Then, he and another world spiritist from the Immortal Sword School set foot into a teleportation formation. The island corresponding to the teleportation formation they entered was also an island that contained treasures.

“Almsgiver Chu Feng, til we meet again,” Grandmaster Pocket bid his farewell to Chu Feng courteously. Then, he entered a teleportation formation by himself. Seeing him enter the teleportation formation, a world spiritist from the Buddha’s

Heavenly Temple also entered that teleportation formation.

However, Chu Feng noticed that the island Grandmaster Pocket chose was one without treasures.

Chu Feng did not feel that Grandmaster Pocket did not possess the perceptive ability to determine which islands possessed treasures. Perhaps, he had deliberately chosen an island without treasures because he did not wish to compete with others.

Unfortunately, that world spiritist that had followed him was destined to not be able to obtain any treasures .

“Let us go too,” Chu Feng said to Liu Xiaoli.

“Mn,” Liu Xiaoli nodded.

“Brother Chu Feng, please wait,” Right at that moment, Li Rui grabbed Chu Feng.

“Brother Li Rui, do you need anything?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Brother Chu Feng, my world spirit techniques are relatively weak. I fear that if I am to journey with Elder Ning Shuang, both of us will fail in breaking through that spirit formation on the floating island.”

“Thus, I hope to be able to journey with you. Might it be possible for you to bring me instead?” Li Rui asked.

“.....” Chu Feng did not answer. Instead, he looked to Liu Xiaoli beside him.

“If that’s the case, I can go with Elder Ning Shuang,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“That would be good too,” Elder Ning Shuang nodded with a smile.

“Very well then,” Seeing this, Chu Feng naturally did not refuse. Instead, he secretly sent a voice transmission to Elder Ning Shuang to tell them which island they should choose.

The island Chu Feng chose for them not only contained treasures, it also possessed a spirit formation that was not too difficult to pass. With the abilities the two of them possessed, they should be able to break through that spirit formation easily.

“My thanks,” Elder Ning Shuang trusted Chu Feng’s judgment enormously. After receiving Chu Feng’s recommendation, he revealed an overjoyed expression. Then, together with Liu Xiaoli, he entered the teleportation formation to that island.

“Let’s go too,” Then, Chu Feng brought Li Rui and arrived before a teleportation formation. That teleportation formation was precisely the one that led to the floating island where that Exalted had trained.

Merely, no one was able to tell what was special about that island. As such, no one had thought about choosing that floating island.

“Brother Chu Feng, are we to choose this island?” At that moment, Li Rui revealed a puzzled expression.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he stepped into the teleportation formation.

Seeing Chu Feng enter, Li Rui revealed a slight hesitation. The reason for that was because he felt that the island was too ordinary. Else, why would no one think about choosing that island?

However, in the end, he clenched his teeth and entered the teleportation formation after Chu Feng.

“He actually chose correctly? Is that a coincidence?” The Golden Crane True Immortal noticed that scene. His gaze grew complicated.

“The way I see it, it’s the embodiment of his strength. Could it be that you didn’t notice that boy’s gaze had turned slightly unusual earlier?” The old monk said.

“Indeed, it was unusual. It seems that he possesses an observation method that surpasses those of ordinary individuals,” The Golden Crane True Immortal nodded in agreement. However, he then sighed.

“Why are you sighing?” The old monk asked.

“A clever person may become the victim of his own ingenuity,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What do you mean?” The old monk asked.

“That island is indeed the island where that Exalted trained before. Merely, the cliff that he had trained in was already sealed. With that brat’s world spirit techniques, it is simply impossible for him to undo the seal.”

“Thus, even if he has chosen correctly, he will still wind up empty-handed. As such, it would be better had he chosen another island,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“You old codger. You’re truly too selfish. You actually went out of your way to seal the location where the Exalted trained.” The old monk said with an expression of contempt.

“No, it was not me who sealed it. Instead, it was personally sealed by that Exalted,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the old monk’s expression changed slightly. Then, he said, “It would seem that that brat is truly unfortunate then.”

.....

At that moment, Chu Feng and Li Rui had already set foot onto that island.

After arriving on the island, Chu Feng and Li Rui were surprised to discover that the island was a place of charm and beauty.

Compared to when looking from the outside, this island was much more vast.

It was very large, extremely large. The surface area of this island simply surpassed one's imagination.

Although the island was enormous, Chu Feng and Li Rui were immediately blocked by a layer of spirit formation right after walking several steps inward.

In other words, if they failed to remove the spirit formation, they would not be able to enter the depths of the island.

However, something like that would naturally not be able to stop Chu Feng. Using merely a short moment of time, Chu Feng completely undid the spirit formation.

“Wow! Brother Chu Feng, your world spirit techniques are truly amazing.”

“If it wasn't for the fact that your spirit power still remains Royal-level spirit power, I would truly be skeptical as to whether you were an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” Li Rui exclaimed in admiration. He was praising Chu Feng nonstop.

After all, he was also a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. However, when he saw the spirit formation, he felt as if he had seen an enormous mountain. It would simply be impossible for him to pass through the spirit formation in twenty hours' time.

However, Chu Feng had actually managed to undo that spirit formation in only a short period of time. This showed him that even though the two of them were both Royal-cloak World Spiritists, there was an enormous difference in strength between their world spirit techniques.

“Brother Li Rui, you are flattering me. Let's go,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

Suddenly, Li Rui asked, “Brother Chu Feng, do you sense that this place contains a special sort of power?”

“Indeed, there's a special power here. It seems to be binding world spirit gates,” Chu Feng also noticed the strangeness of the

place.

“You are truly clever. While that power does not possess much usefulness, it is able to make world spiritists unable to open their world spirit gates here.”

“In other words, they will not be able to summon their world spirits,” Li Rui said.

“That is indeed the case. This power is very ancient. It is very likely the doing of that Exalted. Merely, why would he set up such a power here? Could it be that he dislikes world spiritists?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“I do not know about that. However, there is one thing that I do know,” Li Rui said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“You will die,” Li Rui suddenly narrowed his eyebrows. Coldness shone in his previously smiling eyes. His killing intent was overflowing.

“Boom~~~”

At that time, he flipped his palm. Then, a burst of martial power surged toward Chu Feng.

That surging martial power was extremely strong. If Chu Feng were to be struck by it, he would undoubtedly be killed.

Li Rui was planning to kill Chu Feng!!!

## Chapter 2229 – No Match

---

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Seeing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately flickered with lightning. His Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings instantly appeared alongside his dazzling lightnings.

In merely an instant, Chu Feng’s aura had increased from rank two Half Martial Ancestor to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Woosh~~~”

After Chu Feng’s cultivation increased, he did not bother to dodge Li Rui’s attack. Instead, he made a fist and shot it forth.

He was planning to use his own strength to receive that Li Rui’s attack; he was planning to meet force with force.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion sounded. Heaven and earth started to tremble. Not only did Chu Feng disperse Li Rui’s attack with his fist strike, he also knocked Li Rui back, causing him to reveal an expression of astonishment.

Shocked. Li Rui was extremely shocked. After all, he was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. The way he saw it, even if Chu Feng were to unleash his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, even if his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivations was considered, he would only be able to contend against ordinary rank seven Half Martial Ancestors, and would most definitely not be a match for him.

However, judging from the situation now, things had clearly not gone the way he had anticipated. Chu Feng was not as simple as being able to contend against rank seven Half Martial Ancestors. Instead, his strength had already surpassed that of ordinary rank seven Half Martial Ancestors.

“It would seem that I have underestimated you,” After a moment of astonishment, Li Rui revealed a fascinating smile. It was as if he felt greater anticipation for the upcoming battle.

“Why are you attacking me? I don’t seem to remember any grudges or grievances between us,” Chu Feng asked with a cold tone. Even if he must fight Li Rui, he must first know why. After all, Li Rui’s identity was somewhat special; he was Xu Yiyi’s senior brother.

“Xu Yiyi? Is it because of her?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze changed as he mentioned Xu Yiyi’s name.

“Clever. Indeed, it’s because of junior sister Yiyi. Although we do not know why that is the case, all of us can tell that junior sister Yiyi thinks very highly of you.”

“She values you more than even us, her fellow martial brothers and sisters,” Li Rui said.

“You’re overthinking things. While it is true that Xu Yiyi treats me very well, it is only because I helped her before. Perhaps she feels grateful toward me, and is not actually fond of me. At the very most, the two of us would only be friends,” Chu Feng explained.

“I naturally understand what you mean. However, it remains that there is the possibility that she likes you. As for me, I must completely eliminate that possibility,” Li Rui said.

“It seems that you are determined to kill me?” Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed. Coldness emerged in his eyes.

“I know that your world spirit is extremely powerful, and was capable of killing even Hong Xi. If it wasn’t for the fact that this place prevents the summoning of one’s world spirits, I would naturally not dare to fight against you.”

“Furthermore, a place like this is filled with dangers. Even if you are to die here, no one would find anything unusual about it.”



“Thus, this is the best opportunity for me to kill you.”

“Bang~~~”

After Li Rui said those words, an explosion sounded from his body. Then, light yellow gaseous flames were emitted from his body.

At that moment, his long hair fluttered in the air. Soon, it stood up straight and, began to sway left and right.

Being illuminated by the light yellow light, Li Rui appeared to have turned a light yellow color.

Furthermore, there were many veined patterns moving about in the gaseous flames.

Most importantly, his aura had increased. From his original cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, the aura that he currently emitted was that of a rank eight Half Martial Ancestor.

“Divine Power?” Chu Feng was already able to tell that Li Rui’s light yellow gaseous flames were a sort of Divine Power.

It was that Divine Power that had increased Li Rui’s cultivation by a level. Furthermore, his battle power had also received an enormous increase.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, Li Rui flipped his palm, and a black blade appeared in his hand.

It was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Li Rui was extremely strong to begin with. Adding on his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Li Rui’s strength had increased by an enormous amount. As his light yellow gaseous flames spread to the surrounding space, the surrounding space started to shatter.

“Heh...” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng suddenly laughed. He was able to tell that not only was Li Rui planning to kill him, he was extremely determined to kill him.

“I, Li Rui, am never one to do something that I am not confident in. Since I attacked you today, I will definitely kill you.”

“Clank~~~”

Li Rui unleashed his attack. His black blade was slashed at Chu Feng.

Before the blade arrived, the surging oppressive might brought forth by the blade blew Chu Feng’s hair into disorder, and caused his clothing to flutter in the wind. Even his face was distorted.

“Clank~~~”

When the black blade landed, sparks and energy ripples flew about in all directions.

It was blocked.

At that moment, Chu Feng was holding his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword, horizontally before him.

He had blocked Li Rui’s attack with that sword.

“Impossible!!!”

Li Rui was greatly alarmed. It was reasonable for him to not be able to easily kill Chu Feng as a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. After all, Chu Feng possessed a battle power capable of contending against ordinary rank seven Half Martial Ancestors.

However, he had clearly increased his cultivation to that of a rank eight Half Martial Ancestor now. Even if Chu Feng possessed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament, it should still be impossible for him to block his attack.

He should be able to easily kill Chu Feng!!!

“Since you want to kill me, there is no reason for me to let you live.”

At the moment when Li Rui was astonished, Chu Feng unleashed attacks at Li Rui with lightning speed.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Numerous blade rays shot toward Li Rui, leaving him without a way to escape.

It was a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. Chu Feng had unleashed a fatal attack from the get-go. Like Li Rui did to him, Chu Feng did not plan to give Li Rui the time to take a breath.

“I refuse to believe!!!”

Li Rui shouted. Then, he swept out the black blade in his hand.

“Boom~~~”

His slash shook heaven and earth, and shattered space itself.

Even Chu Feng’s blade rays were completely dispersed by Li Rui’s slash.

In fact, Chu Feng was also forced back many steps by the aftermath of that slash.

“.....”

At that moment, Chu Feng was frowning. He knew that the situation was bad.

The reason for that was because Li Rui had also unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill. However, its might was able to completely suppress his own Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

This meant that Li Rui was no ordinary character, that he also possessed an extremely strong battle power.

If he were fighting against an ordinary rank eight Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng would be able to contend against that individual. Even if he couldn’t win, he would at least be able to force a draw.

However, when faced with Li Rui, Chu Feng would not be a match.

Suddenly, Li Rui shouted, “Emperor Taboo Martial Skill: Endless

Twilight!!!” Then, many streams of twilight began to appear from his body. After the twilight appeared, it formed many blade rays that began to shoot toward Chu Feng from all directions.

Faced with the incoming attack, that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill that seemed to be impossible to resist, a determined expression flashed through Chu Feng’s gaze.

“Puu, puu, puu~~~”

Countless twilight blade rays began to penetrate Chu Feng’s body. They ruthlessly tore Chu Feng’s body apart and crushed his bones. Not even a speck of his body remained.

However, even with that being the case, the twilight blade rays were still flying toward where Chu Feng had previously stood and completely shattered the surroundings.

At the moment when the twilight blade rays stopped, the surrounding several thousand meter area around Li Rui was completely destroyed. Even the ground beneath Li Rui’s feet was destroyed and turned into an enormous thousand-meter-deep abyss.

“I said it before. I, Li Rui, will never do something I have no certainty of. Since I have decided to act, you will undoubtedly die,” Li Rui revealed a proud expression.

“However, Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, although you have died, I must admit that you were very powerful. Your battle power surpassed that of ordinary Heavenly Clansmen.”

“Fortunately, I am the one who attacked you this time. If it were someone else, they might really not have been able to kill you.”

After he finished saying those words, Li Rui took a long breath. He seemed to be trying to sense something.

However, after that breath, his expression suddenly changed. Li Rui revealed an alarmed expression, and began to nervously gaze at his surroundings.

After a short moment, he tightly clenched his fist. From head to toe, blue veins surged forth.

“That bastard! He actually escaped?!” Li Rui yelled with fuming with rage from between gritted teeth.

# Chapter 2230 – Exalted's Remnants

---

At a certain location on the island.

Suddenly, five unremarkable bodies of energies flew rapidly through the air. Shortly afterward, they fused together.

Soon, the five energies turned into the appearance of a man. It was Chu Feng.

“What a close call. If I didn’t possess the Five Elements Secret Skill, it would have been difficult for me to escape.”

What Chu Feng said was what he actually felt. Li Rui’s battle power was extremely strong; he was not an ordinary opponent. If Chu Feng were to fight him head on, he would definitely be no match for Li Rui.

However, Chu Feng’s Five Elements Secret Skills had bestowed him a special power, an indestructible and unkillable body against those with a similar level of battle power. Even if Chu Feng’s body was to be torn to pieces and his bones crushed, he would still not suffer any damage.

Although Chu Feng might not be able to defeat his opponent, it would also be very difficult for his opponent to kill Chu Feng. For Chu Feng, Li Rui was one such opponent.

Of course, if Chu Feng’s opponent was too strong, if his opponent was many times stronger than him, even if he were to use his Five Elements Secret Skills, he would not be able to escape death.

When before absolute power, all sorts of techniques became useless.

“This guy, he truly gave a lot of thought to this. He knew that this Queen would be unable to appear here; that is why he dared to attack you.”

“After we leave this place, let this Queen take care of him,” Her

Lady Queen said angrily.

“There’s no need, I will personally take care of that guy,” Chu Feng said.

“It would naturally not be difficult for you to handle him. But, you would need to become at least a rank three Half Martial Ancestor. Else... it would be very difficult for you to defeat him,” Eggy said.

“It’s merely rank three Half Martial Ancestor. I might become one without even leaving Mount Cloud Crane. After all, this island is the island where the Exalted trained,” Chu Feng said.

“So, you’ve found it?” Her Lady Queen revealed an expression of joy.

“Naturally. It is there,” Chu Feng pointed to the forest ahead.

“There?” Her Lady Queen revealed a skeptical gaze. That forest appeared too ordinary; she was unable to determine anything.

“Inside that forest is the entrance to the cultivation location. However, one must use a special spirit formation in order to make it appear.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up his spirit formation. He was not worried about Li Rui catching up to him, because he had made many preparations in his escape. Those preparations he set up would end up affecting Li Rui’s judgement, making it impossible for him to find his current location.

At the moment when Chu Feng was earnestly setting up his spirit formation, he did not know that up in the distant sky and above the white clouds were two gazes that were fixed onto him.

“That spirit formation is truly wondrous. Unfortunately, it is impossible for him to succeed,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“You’ve completely sealed off this place, it’s naturally impossible

for him to remove the seal,” The plain clothed old monk said with contempt.

“Old Poisonous Substance, didn’t I already say that it wasn’t sealed by me, but that Exalted instead?” The Golden Crane True Immortal said angrily.

“Fine, fine, fine. I got it, okay? In that case, can you not help him undo that seal?” The old monk said.

“You think I don’t want to help him? The thing is, I cannot undo that seal,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

The old monk did not reply. Instead, he snorted lightly. However, his eyes were revealing a skeptical gaze. He did not believe that the Golden Crane True Immortal was truly unable to undo the seal.

At that moment, Chu Feng had finished setting up his spirit formation. Once his grand spirit formation was activated, dazzling light filled the surroundings, seemingly covering that entire forest.

However, not long after the spirit formation was activated, Chu Feng stopped it. Not only did he stop its activation, he also dispersed the spirit formation.

“What’s wrong? Could it be that it’s not there?” Eggy asked in a confused manner.

“No, it is there. That place is the entrance,” Chu Feng pointed to a certain place in the forest.

“Then why did you undo the seal? Why did you disperse your spirit formation?” Eggy asked.

“I can’t undo the seal; it’s too difficult. Not to mention now, even if I am to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, I would still not be able to undo the seal,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s that difficult?” Eggy revealed an expression of regret.

“In the end, it’s because my strength is insufficient,” Chu Feng



stood up and began to walk away. He had already given up.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, strange fluctuations suddenly pulsed from behind him.

Chu Feng turned around to look. Immediately, his pupils shrunk and his expression changed enormously. Shock filled his eyes.

He was shocked to discover that a world spirit gate had opened. As for that world spirit gate, it was... precisely the entrance to the place where that Exalted had trained in.

“You, you’ve clearly undone the seal. Yet, you actually deceived this Queen. You are truly unruly. Watch how this Queen will take care of you later,” Upon seeing that world spirit gate, Eggy was extremely happy. Even though she was blaming Chu Feng, she had an extremely enchanting smile.

“I... this was not unsealed by me,” Chu Feng said.

“What? It’s wasn’t unsealed by you?” Eggy was also very shocked.

“It really wasn’t unsealed by me. The reason for that is because it is simply impossible for me to undo the seal. Thus, evidently, it has opened by itself,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?” Eggy became even more shocked.

At that moment, above the clouds, the old monk also revealed an elated expression. He walked over to the Golden Crane True Immortal and patted his shoulder. “Golden Crane, you have a sharp tongue but a soft heart, eh? Didn’t you say that you were not going to help? Turns out, you still helped.”

“But, you are neither a relative nor a friend to him, so why did you help him? Say, could it be that you still want to take him as a disciple?”

“It wasn’t me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What did you say?” The old monk asked.

“It opened by itself,” The Golden Crane True Immortal replied.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the expression of the old monk turned serious. He stared carefully at that world spirit gate. It was as if he was seeing through everything inside the world spirit gate.

“There are no dangers inside. Did you truly not open it?” The old monk asked again.

“Why would I deceive you? It’s truly not me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said in an annoyed manner.

“In that case, things are even more interesting,” A faint smiling expression appeared in the old monk’s serious gaze.

If it wasn’t the Golden Crane True Immortal, that would mean that the seal was undone by the legendary Exalted.

Even if it wasn’t personally undone by the Exalted, it would mean that Chu Feng had done something that satisfied the mechanism left behind by the Exalted, and caused the world spirit gate to open.

In other words, Chu Feng had obtained the acknowledgement of that Exalted, and received the opportunity to enter that place.

At that moment, Chu Feng had already entered the world spirit gate.

After passing through the world spirit gate, Chu Feng’s eyes were opened to a new sight.

It... was another world.

He was standing on the summit of a cliff. As far as the eye could see, extremely beautiful painting-like scenery filled the world.

Most importantly, after Chu Feng entered that place, he felt a sensation that he had never felt before. It was as if there were many mysteries hidden in that world. He felt that if he could comprehend those mysteries, he would be able to obtain a whole

new understanding toward the path of martial cultivation, allowing for easier breakthroughs of the cultivation bottlenecks.

“Wow! There are so many Natural Oddities. Chu Feng, you’ve struck rich!” At that moment, Eggy was unable to stop herself from cheering.

The reason for that was because there was a stone wall above the cliff. Although the stone wall was made of stone, it was constructed in a framework of shelves. The shelves were filled with all different kinds of unusual artworks.

However, all of the artworks were constructed from Natural Oddities that contained a dense amount of Natural Energy.

Most shockingly, the stone wall was enormous, and contained a very large amount of Natural Oddities – they were in the several thousands.

## Chapter 2231 – Continuous Breakthroughs

---

“That boy has struck an enormous fortune. All those works of art were most likely personally created by that Exalted. That craftsmanship is many times superior to yours,” The plain clothed old monk said.

“Watch your words. You’re speaking as if your craftsmanship could be comparable to that,” The Golden Crane True Immortal stared at the old monk in a very displeased manner.

“I am naturally unable to compare, either. Truth be told, with so many treasures, I also wish to collect them,” Saying those words, the old monk’s expression changed. He looked profoundly at the Golden Crane True Immortal, “You couldn’t possibly be planning to refuse to hand them to that brat, right?”

“Humph, what sort of person do you consider me, Golden Crane, to be?” The Golden Crane True Immortal rolled his eyes and then said, “Since he discovered them, they’re his.”

“Not bad. It seems that I have looked down on you,” The old monk said with a beaming smile. Then, he turned his gaze toward the location where Chu Feng was at. However, his expression changed immediately. He said, “That brat, what is he doing?”

“What’s wrong?” Hearing those words, the Golden Crane True Immortal also turned his gaze toward Chu Feng’s location in curiosity.

Once he saw the scene, the Golden Crane True Immortal immediately flew into rage. Angrily, he started shouting, “Ruining masterpieces! Truly ruining masterpieces!!! Has that brat gone crazy?!!!!”

It was not that the two of them were exaggerating. To them, those Natural Oddities were all works of art, all objects for collections. After all, they were all things left behind by that

Exalted.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged on the ground with his mouth wide open, devouring the Natural Energies contained in the Natural Oddities.

It was not that Chu Feng did not know how precious those Natural Oddities were. Merely... to him, the most precious thing would be the Natural Energies.

The thousands of Natural Oddities all contained enormous amounts of Natural Energies. Chu Feng did not wish to miss this opportunity. As such, he was frantically refining them.

Finally, Chu Feng stood up and bowed to those Natural Oddities. He said, "Thank you, senior!!!"

"How was it? With all those Natural Energies, what level of cultivation are you capable of breaking through to now?" Her Lady Queen asked curiously.

"You might find it unbelievable if I tell you. However, the Natural Energies contained here were truly enormous."

"If my guess is correct, the Natural Energies contained in my dantian right now should be sufficient for me to break through to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile. He was feeling extremely happy right now. After all, sufficient Natural Energy to reach rank nine Half Martial Ancestor would save him a lot of time.

"Not bad, not bad. Boy, it seems like this trip has truly been worthwhile for you," Eggy also felt happiness for Chu Feng.

After all, as she had been with Chu Feng the entire time, she knew best how difficult it was for him to accumulate Natural Energies.

Yet now, he had managed to gather sufficient Natural Energies to break through to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor at once. This truly surpassed her imagination.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng exclaimed, “This is the Outer World. A place with experts is a place with opportunity,”

Perhaps those Natural Energies might not amount to much to others. However, Chu Feng knew very well how important those Natural Energies were.

“A waste, truly a waste. Without those Natural Energies, the value of those collectibles made of Natural Oddities has decreased enormously.”

“What is that boy thinking? Could it be feces filled his head?” The Golden Crane True Immortal was still lamenting. He stared at those Natural Oddities with an expression of heartache.

As for Chu Feng, he simply could not hear the Golden Crane True Immortal’s complaint. At that moment, he sat cross-legged on the ground with his eyes closed. He had begun to comprehend the power here so that he could reach a breakthrough.

Time passed by rapidly. In the blink of an eye, four hours passed.

Chu Feng opened his eyes and set up a special concealing formation around him. Then, he closed his eyes again.

“It’s coming,” Right at that moment, the old monk suddenly cast his gaze towards the depths of the sky.

“What’s coming?” The Golden Crane True Immortal also looked to the deep sky in curiosity.

“That is?!!” Immediately, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s expression changed enormously. Incomparable shock appeared on his aged face.

“Divine Punishment, could that be the legendary Divine Punishment?!” The Golden Crane True Immortal muttered in astonishment.

“It is indeed the Divine Punishment. Furthermore, it is caused by Chu Feng,” The old monk said.

“That brat actually trains in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?!” The Golden Crane True Immortal revealed an astonished expression. Then, unable to contain himself, he asked the old monk, “Exactly what is his origin?”

Hearing those words, the old monk smiled lightly. He said, “Didn’t you say that you weren’t interested?”

“Old Poisonous Substance, don’t keep me in suspense. Quickly, tell me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal urged.

“I already told you before that I would not tell you. If you wish to know, go and ask him yourself,” The old monk said with a beaming smile.

“You damned old bastard.”

“You’re trying to force me to take him as a disciple? I’m not going to be duped by you,” The Golden Crane True Immortal snorted coldly. However, his gaze was still fixed onto the sky.

The power there was too frightening. Even an expert like him felt horror upon seeing it.

“Strange, why is the power of the Divine Punishment not descending? Why is it just hovering in the sky?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Who said it hadn’t descended? Twenty percent of it has already descended, and is currently tormenting that brat,” The old monk said.

“Mn?” The Golden Crane True Immortal turned his gaze to Chu Feng, and discovered that Chu Feng was indeed clenching his teeth with a painful expression.

“But, it’s only twenty percent. That’s too strange,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What’s strange about it? That is his ability,” The old monk said.

“Not only does he train in the legendary Divine Punishment

Mysterious Technique, he was actually also able to deceive the heavens to have the Divine Punishment only descend with twenty percent of its power. Exactly what is the origin of that brat?" The Golden Crane True Immortal became even more curious about Chu Feng's identity.

"I feel that that is not what's amazing about him," The old monk said.

"What do you mean?" The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

"He only spent four hours there to comprehend the mysteries of the path of Martial Cultivation and break through the bottleneck of rank two Half Martial Ancestor. His comprehension ability is his strongest aspect," The old monk said.

"Now that you mention it, that's true," The Golden Crane True Immortal nodded in approval.

Suddenly, the Golden Crane True Immortal's gaze changed. He said, "He broke through. He managed to successfully withstand the power of that Divine Punishment."

"That's right. Although twenty percent is very frightening, it is but a piece of cake to him," The old monk nodded.

It was as it the two of them said, Chu Feng's cultivation had increased. He was no longer a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, and had become a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Although he was only a rank three Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng would be able to defeat Li Rui should he use his various abilities.

However, Chu Feng's eyes were not yet open. He was still comprehending the mysteries of martial cultivation left behind by that Exalted.

He was still searching for a junction to break through yet another bottleneck. He did not want to miss this rare opportunity, as he wanted to continue to breakthrough.



“He’s still comprehending. I wonder, will he be able to reach another breakthrough?” The old monk said.

“It’s difficult. There’s not much time left. If he wants to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he only has fourteen hours left.”

“As for the path of martial cultivation, the further one reaches, the more difficult it becomes. The bottleneck to rank four Half Martial Ancestor is much harder to breakthrough than the bottleneck to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.”

“Fourteen hours is absolutely not enough,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said with determination.

“That’s true,” The old monk nodded in approval.

Time passed by rapidly. It was now close to fourteen hours since Chu Feng had broken through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Right at this moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain clothed old monk both raised their heads upward. They once again looked to the sky.

The power of the Divine Punishment appeared once again. Although it was invisible to ordinary people, those that were capable of seeing it all noticed it.

“It’s here again! He actually succeeded!!!”

At this moment, these two grand characters both revealed astonished expressions.

It was precisely because they were cultivation experts and had experienced the realms of cultivation that Chu Feng was breaking through before that they were astonished upon discovering that Chu Feng reached another breakthrough in a mere fourteen hours.

“Buzz~~~”

At this moment, the power of the Divine Punishment in the sky was gradually descending.

The power of the Divine Punishment this time around was many times more powerful than the previous one. Furthermore, it was no longer twenty percent that descended. Instead, thirty percent of the Divine Punishment descended.

No matter how one looked at it, the power of the Divine Punishment this time around was much more terrifying than last time.

However, there was not too much of a change in Chu Feng's expression compared to the last time. Although he had a pained expression, he was able to withstand the Divine Punishment.

# Chapter 2232 – Rank Four Half Martial Ancestor

---

“It strengthened. Thirty percent of the power from the Divine Punishment descended this time around,” The Golden Crane True Immortal seemed to have realized something.

“Likely, forty percent of the Divine Punishment’s power will descend the next time. If this is to continue, there will be a day when all of the Divine Punishment’s power will descend.”

“It seems that his heaven deceiving technique is unable to deceive the Divine Punishment forever.”

“There will be a day when he will have to face the true Divine Punishment,” The old monk said.

Compared to the Golden Crane True Immortal, the plain clothed old monk knew more about the situation with Chu Feng’s breakthrough. When he had broken through to rank two Half Martial Ancestor, a tenth of the Divine Punishment’s power had descended. When he broke through to rank three Half Martial Ancestor, twenty percent of the Divine Punishment’s power had descended.

And now, to the rank four Half Martial Ancestor, thirty percent of the Divine Punishment’s power descended.

If things were to continue in this fashion, Chu Feng would have to receive all of the Divine Punishment’s power when he broke through to rank two Martial Ancestor.

“The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is truly legendary. If I had not seen it for myself, I would never have believed that there were people from the Heavenly Clans that were capable of practicing it.”

“However, even if he has trained in it, that would not necessarily mean that he will be able to withstand its power. At the time when

he attempts to breakthrough to rank two Martial Ancestor, it will be the time when he will meet his death.”

“No, perhaps it won’t even have to be rank two Martial Ancestor. It might even be possible for him to be killed by the power of the Divine Punishment before he breaks through to the Martial Ancestor realm.”

“I will admit that this child is a rare genius. Furthermore, he is quite fortunate to be able to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“However, I do not feel that he will be able to withstand it,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

The old monk did not refute the Golden Crane True Immortal. It was not that he did not want to refute him; rather, he was also uncertain as to whether or not Chu Feng would be able to withstand the power of the True Divine Punishment.

Silence. Upon thinking that Chu Feng might end up dying in the future because of the powerful Divine Punishment, the two grand experts both grew silent.

They quietly stared at Chu Feng, who was receiving the torment of the Divine Punishment.

After a moment, the old monk said, “He succeeded.”

However, it remained that Chu Feng had managed to successfully withstand the Divine Punishment’s power. His cultivation had increased again. From a rank three Half Martial Ancestor, he had reached rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

In merely the span of several hours, Chu Feng had managed to reach two successive breakthroughs, and went from rank two Half Martial Ancestor to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“With his comprehension, he will be able to reach another breakthrough again in a short period of time should he continue to stay there.”

“However, the time limit is about to arrive. He still doesn’t know the location of the teleportation formation. If he does not hurry, those four spots will be taken by others,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“With his talent, even if he did not rely on your spirit formation, he himself would be able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist sooner or later.”

“If I were him, I would not be thinking about your spirit formation. Instead, I would continue to stay here and train, so as to not miss this great opportunity.”

“Even if I were unable to reach another breakthrough, I will definitely benefit from comprehending longer in the place where the Exalted trained,” The old monk said.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes and stood up.

In response, Eggy hurriedly asked, “Chu Feng, you’re not going to continue training?”

“The time limit is almost here. I must leave this place,” Chu Feng said.

“But, if you continue to stay here, you might be able to reach another breakthrough in your cultivation. This is an extremely rare opportunity. If you let it go, you will not be able to obtain it again,” Eggy said.

“Indeed, that’s possible. While I do not dare to ascertain too much, I am certain that I can reach rank five Half Martial Ancestor.”

“Merely, I must quickly become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Else, I will not be able to cure Senior Liu Chengkun.”

“The Golden Crane True Immortal’s spirit formation is the best opportunity for me to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,”

Chu Feng said.

“Oh you, I truly don’t know what to do with you. You’re considering others, but who is considering you?” Eggy said with a displeased expression. She did not care about the life and death of others, and only wanted Chu Feng to become stronger.

“One must know how to repay kindness. Senior Liu Chengkun has helped me before. As such, I must help him.”

“Furthermore, even if I do not train in this place, I will still be able to reach breakthroughs in cultivation sooner or later. Milady Queen, you couldn’t possibly not feel that little confidence in me, right?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“Yes, yes, yes. Let’s go, let’s go. Since you’ve decided, do not waste any more time,” Eggy said in an annoyed manner.

“I knew that Milady Queen was the most sensible person,” Seeing that Eggy had agreed to it, Chu Feng was very happy.

“Pah, pah, pah! You’re the one who’s completely stubborn. This Queen merely does not wish to waste time with you,” Eggy curled her lips.

“Yes, yes, yes. What Milady Queen says is very true. Since that’s the case, Milady Queen, let’s set off,” As Chu Feng spoke, he walked out of that place.

Right after Chu Feng exited the world spirit gate, the gate immediately closed.

“Ruined. Even if you are to return again, you will likely not be able to enter again,” Even though Eggy had agreed to Chu Feng’s decision to leave, she still had an expression of regret.

“As far as I’m concerned, my gains today are already sufficient.”

“Milady Queen, please be at ease. Even if I am to miss this opportunity, I will definitely be able to find another opportunity,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he turned into a flash of light and

soared into the sky.

Furthermore, Chu Feng opened his eyes wide, and was searching for the teleportation formation leading to Mount Cloud Crane's summit.

After all, he did not have much time. It might even be possible for those people that had ascended to the summit to already be competing with one another.

With only four spots, Chu Feng had to obtain one. Else, it would not only mean that he had missed his opportunity to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would also mean that he had abandoned the opportunity to continue to train on that cliff in vain. It would truly be an enormous loss then.

Fortunately, after Chu Feng searched for a while, he discovered the teleportation formation to Mount Cloud Crane's summit.

“Clank~~~”

However, right when Chu Feng approached the teleportation formation, a blade ray suddenly appeared. It was slashing toward Chu Feng with the intention to take his life.

However, Chu Feng currently possessed the cultivation of rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, he simply did not need to increase his cultivation with his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. With his non-increased cultivation, his body shifted slightly and easily dodged the slash.

“You were actually waiting for me here? You're truly considerate,” Chu Feng looked to the direction where the blade ray had come from and spoke with a cold voice.

“Since I've already attacked, I must succeed. Else, after you leave this place and criticize my actions to Junior Sister Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang, wouldn't I have to suffer the consequences?”

A man holding a black blade slowly appeared from the distant forest. It was none other than Li Rui, who had tried to kill Chu

Feng before.

“Did you know that if you hadn’t waited for me here, you would’ve been able to live for a bit longer?”

“However, since you’ve chosen to wait for me here, then you won’t be able to live past today,” Chu Feng spoke with a cold smile.

“A defeated loser actually dares to speak with me in such a manner? What shameless boasting.”

As Li Rui spoke, his light yellow gaseous flames appeared once again. After he increased his cultivation from rank seven Half Martial Ancestor to rank eight Half Martial Ancestor, he once again unleashed the martial skill he had used to kill Chu Feng before, that Emperor Taboo: Endless Twilight.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

His attack was completely the same as his attack last time; twilight formed blade rays that shot toward Chu Feng from all directions with enormous power.

“Zzzzzzz~~~”

At the moment when the twilight blade rays were about to reach Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings emerged.

Then, standing in the same location, Chu Feng waved his sleeve.

“Boom~~~”

Immediately, martial power surged, and a violent wind appeared. Chu Feng actually managed to forcibly disperse Li Rui’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Not only that, Li Rui was knocked flying like an arrow. He crashed through trees and mountain rocks, leaving behind a scene of devastation in his path.

When he stopped, his mouth opened, and mouthfuls of blood began to spray from his mouth nonstop.



He was evidently seriously injured.

“You know whether or not I’m shamelessly boasting now, right?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded.

Li Rui turned his gaze toward Chu Feng. His expression changing instantly. He was completely stunned.

“You, your cultivation, could it be that you were hiding your cultivation earlier?” Li Rui asked in a panic.

He had realized that the current Chu Feng was two entire levels of cultivation above his cultivation from mere hours ago.

With such a cultivation, it was impossible for him to defeat Chu Feng.

“I didn’t conceal my cultivation. I merely managed to increase it in this period of time,” Chu Feng said.

“What? You managed to increase your cultivation in such a short period of time? Impossible! That is most definitely impossible! Don’t you try to deceive me!!!” Li Rui shook his head repeatedly. He refused to believe Chu Feng’s words.

“I don’t care if you don’t believe me. After all, you’re someone who’s going to die anyways,” Chu Feng walked toward Li Rui one step at a time. Even though he had a smile on his face, his gaze was filled with dense killing intent.

“Chu Feng, I am the Sunset Cloud Valley’s management elder Hu Haitian’s sole disciple. If you kill me, my master will definitely not let you get away with it!” Sensing that the situation was bad, Li Rui spoke his master’s name to threaten Chu Feng.

However, who would’ve thought that Chu Feng would only lightly smile? Then, he raised his hand and smashed his palm downward.

“Boom!” Li Rui was completely annihilated, with not even his bones remaining.

“If I didn’t dare to kill even you, I would not be called Chu Feng,”  
Chu Feng said.

## Chapter 2233 – Chu Feng’s Arrival

---

After Chu Feng killed Li Rui, he collected his clothing, personal items and Cosmos Sack.

“Why don’t you check what treasures might be in his Cosmos Sack?” Eggy asked curiously.

“I will not touch his things. I am going to hand them to Xu Yiyi intact,” Chu Feng said.

“Why do you plan to hand them to her? You couldn’t possibly be trying to let her know that you’ve killed Li Rui, right?” Eggy asked.

“Milady Queen, while I can deceive others, I cannot deceive Xu Yiyi. After all, she has treated me with sincerity,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay, okay, do as you wish,” Eggy said indifferently.

Then, Chu Feng entered the teleportation formation. When he appeared again, he had arrived at the summit of Mount Cloud Crane.

This so-called summit was very vast. Even though white clouds covered the surroundings, it still had an enormous surface area. To put it simply, it looked like a small-scale plain floating in the sky.

The first thing that appeared in Chu Feng’s eyes was a grand formation. That grand formation was flickering with golden light, and looked like a magnificent building.

Furthermore, Immortal-level spirit power was flowing through it. Additionally, there were Dragon Marks shown in that spirit power. That spirit power was extremely fascinating. As a world spiritist, Chu Feng was involuntarily attracted to it.

Likely, that was the comprehensive spirit formation set up by the Golden Crane True Immortal.

Merely, to ascend to that comprehensive spirit formation would not be a simple task.

One first had to pass through a grand formation. At that moment, there were over a hundred people in that grand formation. Among them were Grandmaster Pocket, Daoist Three Swords and Liu Xiaoli.

To Chu Feng's surprise, there were already three people that had passed through that grand spirit formation, and were standing outside the comprehension formation.

Those three individuals were the Four World Spiritist Emperors' second, third and fourth brothers.

Although they had managed to pass the grand formation and reach that comprehension spirit formation, the three of them did not immediately enter that comprehensive formation. Instead, they were standing there and waiting.

The person they were waiting for was none other than their eldest brother.

At that moment, the Four World Spiritist Emperors' eldest was fighting against Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords.

To Chu Feng's surprise, the two experts, Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords, were actually being suppressed by the single eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor.

However, they were fighting with fists. Furthermore, they were not fighting using martial power. Rather, they were using a special sort of spirit power. That power originated from the armor they were wearing.

That armor were created with spirit power. However, they were very special. At this moment, the source of everyone's power originated from those armors.

Furthermore, the armors were all slightly different. The great majority of the people were wearing silver armor, and a small portion of them were wearing bronze armor.

However, the Four World Spiritist Emperors, Grandmaster

Pocket and Daoist Three Swords, the six of them, were wearing golden armor.

Although their strength did not differ enormously, it was clear that the golden color was the strongest, while the silver color was weaker, and the bronze color was the weakest.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’re finally here,” Suddenly, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Elder Ning Shuang hurriedly ran toward Chu Feng.

“Elder Ning Shuang, what is going on here?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“You’ve come late, and still don’t know about the rules here. Let me explain them to you,” Elder Ning Shuang pointed at the entrance of the grand formation the people were in and said, “Look over there. That is the entrance. That is not an ordinary entrance. Instead, it is a spirit formation.”

“By entering that place, that place will suit you up with armor depending on the strength of your spirit power.”

“Once the spirit armor is placed onto your body, all of your martial power will be restricted. Thus, the power you can use to fight with will only be the power granted by that world spirit armor.”

“After you are given a suit of armor, you will be able to enter that grand formation and fight with others. As long as you defeat all of the people present, you will be sent to the comprehension formation.”

“Merely, if your spirit power is insufficient, not only will you be unable to obtain armor, you will also be sent out by that formation. You will not even be qualified to enter.”

“I, as well as all these other people here, are people who have failed to enter,” Elder Ning Shuang pointed to the people standing outside the spirit formation.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng finally understood why Elder Ning Shuang was standing here. It turned out that his world spirit power was not strong enough, which made him unqualified to even get a suit of armor.

Thinking of that, Chu Feng took a glance toward Liu Xiaoli, who was in the formation. Even though she had not been given golden armor, she was wearing silver armor. This indirectly showed that Liu Xiaoli’s spirit power was quite decent.

“The situation right now seems to be bad. It appears that the Four World Spiritist Emperors are trying to dominate all four spots,” Chu Feng suddenly said.

After all, the second, third and fourth brothers of the Four World Spiritist Emperors had already exited the formation. If the eldest brother were to also exit the formation, it would be hopeless for the rest of them.

“That’s right. The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ world spirit techniques are truly too strong. After donning the armor, even Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket are no match for the four of them.”

“You can see it too. Right now, three of them have already successfully exited the formation. Only their eldest remains. However, he, by himself, is actually able to contend against both Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket.”

“If this is to continue, I fear that Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket will not be able to stop them. The four brothers will end up occupying all four spots,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“The way I see it, Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket are simply unable to stop him,” Chu Feng said.

“Unable to stop him?” Elder Ning Shuang was surprised.

“Yes, they are unable to stop him. If he wanted to leave, he

would've been able to do so long ago. The reason why he has stayed so long is to deliberately toy with Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket," Chu Feng said.

"He's actually toying with Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket?" Elder Ning Shuang was even more shocked. After all, Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket were prodigies in terms of world spirit techniques too.

"Earlier, Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket spoke out for me. Thus, they felt grievances toward them. Merely, as their strength was inferior to theirs, they did not dare to do anything to them."

"However, the situation is different now. Due to the Golden Crane True Immortal's spirit formation, they have finally obtained strength that surpasses that of Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket."

"With the arrogant natures of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, they would naturally disregard consequences and take this chance to push Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket around," Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Elder Ning Shuang turned his gaze toward the spirit formation again. He realized that Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket were painstakingly persisting. However, even with the two of them joining hands, they were truly no match for the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

"Chu Feng, quickly enter that spirit formation. There is only a single spot left. If you do not go now, the Four World Spiritist Emperors will likely end up occupying all four spots," Elder Ning Shuang said.

"Mn, Elder Ning Shuang, I'll go then," As Chu Feng spoke, he walked toward the spirit formation.

Suddenly, Elder Ning Shuang asked, "Chu Feng, where's Li Rui?"

Chu Feng revealed a very undisturbed expression. He turned around and said, “Li Rui had a bit of an accident. I will tell you in detail later,” Then, he entered the spirit formation.

“Hahaha, Daoist Three Swords, Grandmaster Pocket, in terms of battle power, the two of you are many times stronger than me.”

“However, in terms of world spirit techniques, even if the two of you are to join hands, you are still no match for me,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket while suppressing them.

While Grandmaster Pocket did not have too much of a reaction when being mocked by a member of the younger generation with strength much inferior to his own, Daoist Three Swords was so furious that his complexion turned deep red.

The more furious Daoist Three Swords appeared, the more complacent the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors felt. This was truly what he wanted to see.

Suddenly, someone shouted, “Everyone, look! It’s Chu Feng! Chu Feng has arrived!!!”

Once those words were heard, the expressions of everyone present changed.

When they saw that Chu Feng was stepping toward the entrance of the spirit formation, even the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors started to frown.

When not even Grandmaster Pocket and Daoist Three Swords were a match for him, the only person that could defeat him would be Chu Feng.



# Chapter 2234 – Intentional Retaliation

---

“Chu Feng, you’re finally here.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Liu Xiaoli immediately revealed a cheerful expression. Like everyone else, she focused her gaze onto Chu Feng.

In fact, it was not only them, as even Grandmaster Pocket, Daoist Three Swords and the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors stopped their fight to look toward Chu Feng.

They all wanted to know what sort of armor Chu Feng would be able to obtain. After all, he was an Asura World Spiritist.

Furthermore, it was all thanks to Chu Feng that they were able to break through the purple fog earlier.

In the crowd’s hearts, Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were the strongest among the people present.

“Weren’t you smiling happily earlier? Why do you have a sulky expression now? Could it be that you’re feeling pressure now that little brother Chu Feng has arrived?” Daoist Three Swords mocked the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

He knew that he would not be a match for the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. Thus, he felt extremely happy when Chu Feng appeared.

The reason for that was because he knew that Chu Feng would be able to suppress the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor.

“Humph? Pressure? You’re saying that he could pressure me?”

“It is great that he has come. I will let him know who the actual world spiritist genius is,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors declared.

Even though he was speaking with a very unyielding tone, only he knew that he was feeling a slight lack of confidence when facing

Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng's display of world spirit techniques earlier had been extremely strong.

Before the focused attention of the crowd, Chu Feng closed his eyes and carefully felt the special spirit power covering his entire body in the form of a suit of armor.

"The Golden Crane True Immortal is truly amazing. He is actually able to set up a spirit formation as wondrous as this."

When Chu Feng personally experienced the power of that spirit formation covering his body and sealing away his strength before transforming into a sort of new strength formed with spirit power in his body, he felt as if his body was being completely transformed.

A spirit formation as profound as that was truly very amazing.

"Hahaha!!!"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng heard sudden laughter.

Upon hearing that laughter, Chu Feng opened his eyes and discovered that it was the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors that was laughing.

At that moment, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was looking at Chu Feng and laughing heartily with both hands holding his belly and body convulsing. It was truly frantic laughter.

"That fool is having a spasm. The hell is he laughing about?" Eggy asked in a confused manner.

"Something seems amiss," Chu Feng said.

"What's amiss?" Eggy asked.

"Look at everyone's reaction," Chu Feng said those words and turned his gaze to the crowd.

At that moment, Eggy noticed that the others were not laughing like the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. However, their expressions had all changed.

If they had been filled with anticipation toward Chu Feng earlier, then their current expressions were filled with disappointment.

“Daoist Three Swords, did you see that? That trash is unable to even form armor. He is not qualified to even enter this place.”

“Yet, you actually placed your hope on trash like him to take care of me? Say, how ignorant could you be?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked Daoist Three Swords.

“Little friend Chu Feng is still in that spirit formation. He has not been sent out by it. How can you be so certain that he will not be able to form armor?” Daoist Three Swords said.

“Haha, whether he can or not is something that will be decided in an instant. He has already been in there for so long. Yet, he still hasn’t condensed any armor. You think that he still has hope?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized why the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was laughing at him, and why the crowd had such an expression.

It turned out that they had already determined that he could not form any armor.

However, Chu Feng was not panicking. Only he knew that the spirit power was still assimilating into his body and transforming his body and power.

He had not failed. Merely, he needed time; he merely needed a bit more time than the others.

“It seems that child’s spirit power is truly pure. He is actually going to condense a suit of Dragon Marked Armor,” Above the clouds, the Golden Crane True Immortal was looking down below with a shocked expression in his eyes.

“Golden True Immortal, you are truly one to slack off. Since you bothered to spend the time to set up that spirit formation, why didn’t you do so properly? You made it so that the spirit power is insufficient, causing it to take so long to form a suit of Dragon Marked Armor,” The plain clothed old monk said.

As a fellow Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he had already seen through the fact that the Golden Crane True Immortal had not set up that spirit formation up diligently.

That was the reason why the process to condense Chu Feng’s Dragon Marked Armor was taking so long, as the spirit formation did not possess a sufficient amount of spirit power.

It ended up leading the others to think that Chu Feng was unable to condense any armor at all.

“How could I know that there would be someone capable of condensing Dragon Marked Armor?” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

Although both the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain clothed old monk knew the reason why Chu Feng had yet to condense any armor, the others did not.

The others had all already concluded that Chu Feng was unable to condense any armor because his spirit power was insufficiently pure.

“What a bore. We four brothers will have taken the four spots this easily. This is truly too boring, and not challenging in the slightest. Can’t you all give us some pressure?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said with a sigh.

“You have yet to occupy the last spot.”

Suddenly, Daoist Three Swords unleashed his attack. It was not only him, Grandmaster Pocket also unleashed his attack. Evidently, the two of them did not want to hand the final spot over to the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors so easily.

“Don’t waste your time. You all can come at me together. The final spot for the comprehension formation is definitely mine,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors declared.

“As you wish,” In response, the silver-armored Liu Xiaoli also unleashed her attacks.

She was trying to buy time for Chu Feng. Even though others all felt that Chu Feng had failed to forming any armor, Liu Xiaoli felt that Chu Feng would succeed.

In such a situation, more and more people began to attack the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

They all knew that even if they did not attack him, he would, sooner or later, attack them.

Rather than being defeated by him one by one, it would be better to assist Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket while they were still not defeated.

Perhaps they might be able to defeat the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors this way. This way, they would be able to beat down his arrogance.

However, things did not turn out the way they wanted. The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was truly too powerful. Although they were all wearing golden armor, his battle power was much stronger than Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket’s.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Each and every punch from the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors brought forth thunderous sounds and enormous power capable of cutting through a mountain. Practically every punch from him would knock someone out, causing them to lose the ability to fight for a short period of time.

“Daoist Three Swords, Grandmaster Pocket, I originally did not plan to injure the two of you. However, there’s no other way

around it. This is the rule set up by the Golden Crane True Immortal. Only by defeating the two of you will I be able to enter the comprehension formation.”

“Thus, do not blame me for being too ruthless.”

After defeating the others, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors finally started to unleash attacks at Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket.

Although he had declared that he did not wish to harm them, he was attacking them with ferocious attacks. It was as if he was planning to kill Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Suddenly, Grandmaster Pocket was caught off guard, and received many punches from the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

After the punches landed, Grandmaster Pocket was knocked flying before ruthlessly crashing into the world spirit wall. When he fell to the ground, his complexion turned red, and blood flowed from the corner of his mouth.

“Grandmaster Pocket is actually vomiting blood!!!”

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all shocked.

When the others had been defeated, they had not vomited blood.

However, Grandmaster Pocket was vomiting blood. This meant that the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ attack toward Grandmaster Pocket had been stronger than his attacks toward the others. He was deliberately retaliating against Grandmaster Pocket.

## Chapter 2235 – Make You Pay

---

“Showing no respect to your elders and superiors, you’re courting death!”

Seeing that Grandmaster Pocket had been beaten to a state of vomiting blood, Daoist Three Swords became furious.

Perhaps due to his fury, Daoist Three Swords’s attacks grew sharper and sharper. Unfortunately, regardless of how much sharper his attacks had become, they had not become stronger.

The world spirit armor had completely sealed away his martial power. At that moment, the only power he could use was the power bestowed to him by his world spirit armor. In fact, even his defensive ability was far inferior to before.

Like this, not to mention injuring the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, Daoist Three Swords was unable to even land a single attack on him.

At that moment, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was receiving the attacks from Daoist Three Swords without fighting back. He was dodging while mocking, “Daoist Three Swords, what you’ve said is incorrect. I am not showing no respect to my elders and superiors.”

“Rather, it is truly because the rules are like this. Thus, you must not blame me. It is truly not me who is being ruthless in my attacks. Rather, it is that I must defeat you all in order to win.”

Although the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke as if he was innocent, the smile on his face allowed everyone to know that he did not mean the words he said at all.

“Enough of your nonsense! Fight me!” Daoist Three Swords shouted angrily.

“Since you refuse to appreciate my kindness, do not blame me for being impolite,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors

unleashed his attack.

Once he started to attack, Daoist Three Swords was completely suppressed.

Furthermore, his attacks grew more and more ferocious. He was simply incomparably overbearing. Faced with them, Daoist Three Swords was only able to defend. He had lost all ability to fight back.

Step by step, Daoist Three Swords was forced back. He was at an absolute disadvantage.

“Bang~~~”

Even though he was already retreating the entire time, Daoist Three Swords failed to dodge an attack in time, and ended up being struck by the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

After that punch, many more punches were shot toward him.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

In merely an instant, several punches landed on Daoist Three Swords.

Faced with these attacks, Daoist Three Swords lost all ability to fight back, and was knocked back repeatedly.

If Grandmaster Pocket was merely vomiting a small amount of blood from the corners of his mouth, then Daoist Three Swords was currently violently spraying blood from his mouth.

However, even with this being the case, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors still showed no signs of stopping. Even though he had forced Daoist Three Swords into a corner, he was still violently beating at Daoist Three Swords with his fists.

“Stop! He has already lost!” Chu Feng shouted.

“Lost? You are not the one who gets to decide that. Rather, I am the one who gets to decide that,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked.



“Damn it!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was so furious that he started to tightly clench his fists.

He truly had the urge to rush in and teach the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors a lesson. Unfortunately, his world spirit armor had yet to finish forming. As such, he was simply unable to enter the spirit formation at all.

Seeing the anger on Chu Feng’s face, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors revealed an even more complacent expression. He said, “What’s up? You’re feeling displeased?”

“If you’re not pleased with the way I do things, then come on in and beat me, you damned trash.”

After saying those words, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors turned his gaze to his surroundings and shouted, “I know that many of you people here disapprove of my actions! However, who among you all could possibly stop me?!”

“In this place, I am king! I can do whatever I please! None of you can stop me!”

After saying those words, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors raised his fist once again. He was actually planning to continue to beat down on Daoist Three Swords.

It could be seen that the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors felt deep hatred for Daoist Three Swords threatening him earlier.

That is why he had decided to use this opportunity to ruthlessly beat up Daoist Three Swords. Even though Daoist Three Swords had already lost the ability to fight, he still refused to stop.

Right at that moment, an extremely imposing voice suddenly sounded. It was the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“It is merely a spar. He has already been defeated. Is there really a need for you to be this overbearing?”

“Remember, this place is merely an arena set up by me, and not a place for you all to settle your personal grudges.”

Once the Golden Crane True Immortal’s words were heard, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors did not dare to strike down with his raised hand.

It was an awkward situation. He who was boasting earlier was left in a very awkward situation right now.

Daoist Three Swords spit out the blood in his mouth. Then, he snorted coldly and said, “It seems that there is still someone capable of stopping you here.”

“Fortunately, there is someone capable of stopping me. Else, you’d be left in a very miserable state,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said. As matters stood, he no longer cared about revealing his intentions of teaching Daoist Three Swords, this expert martial cultivator, a lesson.

Daoist Three Swords was not angry. Instead, with a beaming smile, he said, “After we leave this place, I will have you know what miserable really means.”

Hearing those words, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors suddenly frowned. He was scared.

Although Daoist Three Swords was smiling, he felt a frightening chill from Daoist Three Swords’ smiling gaze.

He had suddenly realized that Daoist Three Swords was truly angry. Likely, he would not be willing to let this matter go. After leaving this place, Daoist Three Swords would definitely come to teach him a lesson.

Unfortunately, it was already too late for him to be scared now. Thus, he did not continue to say anything, and did not dare to look at Daoist Three Swords again. Instead, he turned his gaze to Liu Xiaoli.

The reason for that was because everyone else here had been

defeated by him. Only Liu Xiaoli remained standing.

“Do you know why I left you for last?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors asked Liu Xiaoli.

“Why?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“Because I knew that you were with that Chu Feng.”

“That Chu Feng is so very amazing, eh? So very arrogant, no? Originally, I planned to properly teach him a lesson, and let him know who the true genius in terms of world spirit techniques is.”

“Unfortunately, he is not even qualified to enter this place.”

“Thus, I can only aim the lesson that I’ve prepared for him at you,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors looked to Liu Xiaoli with a mischievous smile.

“Enough rubbish, if you want to attack me, then go ahead,” Liu Xiaoli said in a disapproving manner. She seemed to have already guessed what the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors planned to do. Thus, she revealed a very unyielding appearance.

“As you wish,” As the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke, he prepared to attack Liu Xiaoli.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again. “If you dare to be too excessive, I will make you pay.”

“What did you say? Say it again!” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors suddenly stopped his hand and turned around to ask Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s brows narrowed. Coldness filled his eyes. He stared at the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors and spoke one word at a time, “If you dare to be too excessive, I will make you pay!”

“Hahaha!!!” After Chu Feng’s words left his mouth, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors burst into loud laughter.

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, you are truly capable of making me

laugh. It would be one thing for Daoist Three Swords to threaten me. Yet, trash like you actually also dares to threaten me? What makes you think you can threaten me?”

“In terms of world spirit techniques, you’re not even qualified to set foot into this place.”

“In terms of cultivation, you’re so weak that I can crush you to death with a single finger.”

“You want to make me pay? How exactly are you going to do that?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked.

Once his words were heard, many of the people present began to shake their heads.

Even though what the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors had said was too excessive, it was the truth.

As for Chu Feng, he did not answer. However, his cold gaze was fixed onto the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors the entire time.

## Chapter 2236 – Dragon Marked Armor

---

Being stared at by Chu Feng's gaze, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors felt very uncomfortable. However, he still did not believe that Chu Feng possessed any capability of teaching him a lesson.

Thus, in a disapproving manner, he said, "Trying to scare me? Did you think I was someone that was easily scared?"

After that, the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor's body shifted, and he arrived before Liu Xiaoli.

A fist flickering with golden light began to crash toward Liu Xiaoli's body like a torrential storm.

How could Liu Xiaoli, who wore silver armor, be able to withstand an attack from the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors? She was practically unable to dodge even a single fist. She was immediately beaten up nonstop like a sandbag.

When even Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket were unable to withstand that sort of attack, how could Liu Xiaoli possibly be able to withstand it?

Soon after, Liu Xiaoli started vomiting blood and lost consciousness. Miserable. In terms of being miserable, Liu Xiaoli was most definitely the person that had suffered the most miserably in the spirit formation.

She was the only person that was beaten unconscious.

"She is truly unable to take a beating. I have yet to even go all-out," Seeing Liu Xiaoli losing consciousness, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors did not have the slightest trace of guilt. Instead, he licked his lips, as if itching to continue his beating.

In fact, if it wasn't for the fact that the Golden Crane True Immortal had warned him to not be too excessive earlier, he would definitely not have stopped just because Liu Xiaoli fainted.

The eldest of the four World Spiritist Emperors raised his head, looked to his three brothers standing outside the spirit formation and said with a beaming smile, “Little brothers, your big brother will come to join you all now.”

“Mn?” However, right after he finished saying those words, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors started to frown.

Logically, he should have already completely defeated all of the people in the spirit formation. As such, the spirit formation should have teleported him out. Yet, there was no reaction at all?

Could it be that someone had managed to slip past him?

However, he knew best how strong his attacks were. Everyone was defeated by him. Furthermore, all those defeated by him had lost their ability to continue fighting.

Only by teleporting him out would those people be able to regain their freedom and battle power. Yet, what was with this situation right now?

Even though he felt it to be extremely inconceivable, he still turned around to look. He was trying to figure out whether or not there was anyone present that he had not beaten to a state of losing their ability to fight.

“You!!!” Upon turning around, the expression of the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor immediately changed.

Sure enough, there was someone standing in the grand formation completely undamaged. As for this person, he was someone that the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ eldest never had expected.

That person was none other than Chu Feng!!!

“Chu Feng?!”

Upon seeing the current Chu Feng, not to mention the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, practically everyone’s expressions changed enormously.

Not only had Chu Feng entered the grand formation, there was also a world spirit armor on his body.

If it were an ordinary world spirit armor, it would not be enough to cause the crowd to become so astonished.

However, not only was Chu Feng's world spirit armor shining with golden brightness, there were also dragons galloping within it.

Mightily! Domineering! Extremely Imposing!!!

This meant that Chu Feng's world spirit armor was a level above even the golden armor that the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors wore.

“What's going on? There're actually dragon marks galloping in Chu Feng's world spirit armor?”

“Could it be that it's not that he was unable to condense any spirit armor, but rather that the spirit armor he was condensing was so powerful that it caused him to take much longer to condense it?”

“So that's how it was! It wasn't that Chu Feng was unable to condense any world spirit armor. Rather, it was that the armor that he was condensing surpassed all of ours!!!”

At that moment, the crowd finally realized that they had been mistaken earlier.

How could Chu Feng be said to be unable to condense any spirit armor? He was simply condensing spirit armor that surpassed all the others'.

Ashamed. Guilt. They were feeling ashamed and guilty for feeling disappointed with Chu Feng earlier.

However, more than that, they were feeling pleasantly surprised. Chu Feng had brought them an enormously pleasant surprise.

After feeling pleasantly surprised, the crowd all turned their

gazes to the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. They all wanted to see exactly what sort of reaction he would have at the moment. Upon seeing his expression, many people were unable to keep themselves from laughing.

The expression of the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor, who had previously acted so arrogantly and mocked Chu Feng, was simply marvelous.

His gaze was fixed as if stunned, and his complexion had turned green. In fact, his lips were even twitching.

After all, he was no fool. He was able to tell that the world spirit armor that Chu Feng had condensed was stronger than his own. Thus, naturally, the strength that Chu Feng possessed would surpass his own.

“I said that I would make you pay,” As Chu Feng said those words, he turned into a golden ray that flew toward the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

“Come! As if I’m afraid of you?!” With so many people watching, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors did not show weakness. Instead, he also charged toward Chu Feng.

However, everyone was able to tell that he was lacking confidence, that he was putting on a bold face to fight against Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. The eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor was knocked flying before ruthlessly smashing into the wall of the spirit formation.

When he fell to the ground, he started to vomit blood, and was unable to move a single step.

With merely a single attack, Chu Feng had beaten him to a state of losing the ability to fight.



Such a scene shocked everyone. Even Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket revealed shocked expressions.

A single strike was all it took. The difference between their spirit power was simply too enormous.

Even though the crowd had already realized that the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors would definitely not be a match for Chu Feng, they had never expected that he would lose so miserably.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. Chu Feng did not plan to let the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor get away. He rushed toward him and began to ruthlessly kick his head.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Stop immediately!!!”

Upon seeing that scene, the three brothers that stood outside the comprehensive formation started to panic. They hurriedly shouted at Chu Feng to stop.

“What am I doing? I’m naturally beating him up. However, you all cannot blame me for that. After all, that is the rule of this place, and I am only doing things according to the rules.”

With a smile on his face, Chu Feng repeated what the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors had said before to his three brothers.

“Enough of your nonsense! The rules of this place say it is enough as long as one has lost the ability to fight! Our big brother has already lost the ability to fight, why are you still attacking him?!”

“Stop immediately!!!” The three brothers shouted.

“Lost the ability to fight? That is not decided by you all. Instead, it is decided by me. The way I see it, he has yet to lose the ability to fight. Thus, I cannot stop yet.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng gathered strength into his

feet and began kicking the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors more ruthlessly.

It was not only his head. His chest and his legs were also attacked by Chu Feng.

“Stop! Stop immediately!”

“Lord True Immortal, that child has gone against your rules. I believe that he should be punished severely.”

Feeling helpless, the three brothers actually began to request for assistance from the Golden Crane True Immortal.

However, to their disappointment, the Golden Crane True Immortal did not even bother to say a word. He had simply ignored them. It was as if he couldn't hear what they were saying at all.

This caused those three brothers to have very ugly expressions on their faces. The reason for that was because it would be impossible for the Golden Crane True Immortal to not hear what they were saying. It was evident that his decision to not say anything to stop Chu Feng meant that he was deliberately allowing Chu Feng to beat up their older brother.

## Chapter 2237 – Despicable And Shameless

---

“Almsgiver Chu Feng, this is, after all, only a sparring match. Even if he is in the wrong, you shouldn’t learn from him. It is better that you stop when victory is determined,” At that moment, Grandmaster Pocket spoke out against Chu Feng’s actions.

Grandmaster Pocket was, after all, a buddhist monk. Even though the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors had acted excessively toward him before, he who held a merciful heart did not hold a grudge against the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. Instead, he was actually pleading for him.

As Grandmaster Pocket was a benevolent individual, Chu Feng would naturally give him face.

When Chu Feng stopped his attacks, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors had already lost consciousness. Not only had he lost consciousness, his appearance was also extremely miserable.

Even though he was covered by his spirit armor, he was still so badly beaten that he had bloody eyes, a bloody nose and a swollen face. In fact, shattering sounds could be heard from all around his body.

Those were the sounds of bones shattering. Chu Feng had shattered the bones all over the eldest Four World Spiritist Emperor’s body. Although those injuries were not fatal, he was most definitely the most serious injuries of all of the people present in the competition.

“You damned bastard. It was but a mere spar. Yet you beat our big brother to such a state. Chu Feng, we are not done with you,” At that moment, the three brothers were gnashing their teeth in fury.

“What are you all talking about? I was merely doing things according to the rules. After all, if your big brother does not lose

the ability to continue fighting, I would not be able to teleport out from this place.”

“Look, the teleportation formation has yet to start even now. That means that he has yet to lose his ability to fight,” Chu Feng raised his hand and shrugged as he spoke sophistry.

“Has yet to lose his battle power? If you are to beat him again, he’ll be beaten to death by you!” The three brothers said fiercely.

“Really? Then why have I still not been teleported out?” Chu Feng asked.

“You?!!!” The three brothers were left speechless. They were so furious that their veins were bulging. They felt as if their hearts, livers, spleens and lungs were all about to explode from anger.

“That’s true, we have all lost our ability to fight, why has Chu Feng still not been teleported out?”

At that moment, the others also realized the same thing. Logically, since the others present had lost their ability to fight, Chu Feng should have been teleported out.

If that had happened, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors would not have been beaten up like this. However, why had Chu Feng not been teleported out?

“Cough cough, it’s about time. Else, those little guys will say that you’re not being fair,” Above the clouds, the plain clothed old monk spoke to the Golden Crane True Immortal with a beaming smile on his face.

“You damned Old Poisonous Substance, it was clearly you who wanted me to control the spirit formation so that Chu Feng could teach that guy a lesson for a while longer. Yet now you’re saying that I’m being partial?”

The Golden Crane True Immortal glared at the old monk with contempt. Then, light flashed in his eyes, and Chu Feng was immediately covered with spirit power and disappeared from the

spirit formation. When Chu Feng reappeared, he was standing beside the three brothers.

“Chu Feng, you have balls. However, the consequences of your actions and deeds today are things that you will not be able to endure,” The three brothers ruthlessly sent voice transmissions to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng snorted lightly at the three brothers’ threats. With contempt, he replied, “Anytime.”

“Go ahead and enter the spirit formation,” Right at that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s extremely imposing voice sounded from the sky.

In response, Chu Feng and the other three Four World Spiritist Emperors all stepped into the comprehensive spirit formation without the slightest hesitation.

Once the four of them entered the comprehensive formation, that enormous spirit formation, that huge monster, started to change.

At the same time, surging Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak spirit power began to surge forth in the spirit formation like waterfalls. They were pounding against Chu Feng and the three Four World Spiritist Emperors nonstop.

It could be seen that the comprehensive formation had begun its work.

At that moment, Chu Feng hurriedly closed his eyes and began to comprehend with his heart. That spirit power was truly vast, and contained the profoundness of world spirit techniques.

As long as he had enough time, Chu Feng was certain that he would definitely be able to completely open that gate in his world spirit space to access the Immortal-level spirit power.

Furthermore, as long as he could connect with the Immortal-level spirit power, he would definitely be able to become an

Immortal-cloak World Spiritist with the world spirit techniques that he had grasped.

At the moment when Chu Feng was wholeheartedly comprehending, those three Four World Spiritist Emperors looked at one another. Then, grins appeared on their faces.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the three men started to set up spirit formations. At the moment when the three men clasped their hands together, a special spirit formation enveloped Chu Feng.

After being enveloped by the spirit formation, the Immortal-cloak spirit power that was surging toward Chu Feng before was cut off, and started to surge toward the three brothers instead.

“What are you three doing?” At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his eyes.

“What are we doing? Although four people can enter this place, the spirit power contained in the spirit formation is, after all, limited.”

“Us three brothers all want to become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Unfortunately, it seems to us that the spirit power here is insufficient for that. Thus, we will not be able to share it with you,” The second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said with a sinister expression.

“Despicable! Truly too despicable!” Upon hearing those words, before Chu Feng could say anything, Daoist Three Swords and the others had already lashed out against the three brothers.

“Humph,” Faced with the reprimands from the crowd, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors sneered.

He had woken up. Furthermore, he had treated his injuries. Originally, he had been filled with grievances. However, when he saw what his three brothers were doing to Chu Feng in the spirit formation, he raised his thumbs toward them and also sneered in

his heart, 'Chu Feng, so what if you possess outstanding spirit formations and are able to enter that comprehensive formation? In the end, you're still going to be toyed with by my three brothers. You reap what you sow. Serves you right.'

.....

"Truly despicable. Golden Crane, you should just kick the three of them out. Isn't this clearly a violation of the rules?" Above the clouds, the plain clothed old monk was also angered by the three brothers' actions.

"I did not set any rule stating that the people inside the comprehension formation are not allowed to obstruct others. Thus, it is improper for me to set up that rule now. Else, it would be too clear that I am discriminating in favor of Chu Feng."

"Furthermore, if that Chu Feng is unable to handle such a minor trick, how is he to handle those four's frantic revenge after he leaves this place?"

"After all, Chu Feng has already set himself up as their enemy. With the temperaments of those four, they will definitely not spare Chu Feng. As for that... it is something that Chu Feng will have to handle by himself," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"That's true. The world of martial cultivation is like that. A single conflict of words would cause people to fight one another. Even killing because of that is but a mere common occurrence."

"As for Chu Feng, he has humiliated those four before all those people," The plain clothed old monk nodded in agreement.

"Are the three of you planning to play dirty against me here?" Chu Feng revealed a cold gaze and spoke coldly.

"Play dirty? Are you blind? We are doing things openly," The second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors laughed mockingly. His expression was filled with complacency.

The reason for that was because not only was their isolation

formation extremely profound by itself, the three of them all held a treasure in their hands. As for their treasures, they were capable of greatly increasing the strength of their spirit formations.

Thus, they felt that even if Chu Feng possessed heaven-defying capabilities, he would not be able to break through their spirit formation.

They felt that Chu Feng would be destined to suffer by their hands.



## Chapter 2238 – The True Immortal's Anger

---

“Golden Crane True Immortal, do you not care about this matter?” Chu Feng raised his head toward the sky and asked loudly.

“Humph, you’ve decided to ask for the Golden Crane True Immortal’s assistance just because you can’t win against us? Seems like you only possess that bit of ability too,” Seeing that Chu Feng actually complained to the Golden Crane True Immortal, the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ expression changed.

They were not worried that Chu Feng would be able to break through their spirit formation, because they felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to break through their spirit formation.

However, they were still afraid of interference from the Golden Crane True Immortal. After all, when Chu Feng was beating down on their eldest brother, they had already, to a greater or lesser degree, realized that the Golden Crane True Immortal was secretly supporting Chu Feng.

Else, Chu Feng should have long since been teleported to the comprehensive formation; how else could he have been allowed to continue to beat up their big brother for so long? How could he only be teleported out after their big brother was beaten unconscious? It was clearly unreasonable.

Thus, they were afraid, afraid that the Golden Crane True Immortal would continue to pamper Chu Feng.

After all, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s fame was widespread throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He was an extraordinary character. If the Golden Crane True Immortal were to truly discriminate in favor of Chu Feng, there would be nothing that they could do.

However, Chu Feng’s question hung in the air for a very long

time. Yet, there was no response from the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Hahaha. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, it would seem that Lord True Immortal is not willing to bother with you.”

“Since Lord True Immortal is not bothering with this, it means that we have not violated the rules. Chu Feng, you can just continue to watch as the three of us become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“Hahahaha!”

Seeing that the Golden Crane True Immortal did not respond after so long, the three brothers in the comprehensive formation, as well as their eldest brother outside, were unable to keep themselves from laughing at Chu Feng.

They were ridiculing him. Their laughter was filled with unconcealed ridicule toward Chu Feng.

“It seems that the Golden Crane True Immortal really does not care about this. In that case, I am at ease,” Chu Feng said.

“At ease?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd all changed. They revealed puzzled gazes.

The expressions of the three brothers in the comprehensive formation also changed. They were confused by what Chu Feng meant.

“This means that I can give you all a taste of your own medicine,” Chu Feng continued.

“Haha, so you are actually one who will not shed a tear until you see your coffin. Very well, go ahead and give it a try. We shall see how you are to break through our spirit formation,” The three brothers finally realized what Chu Feng meant. Thus, they mocked him.

“As you wish,” Once Chu Feng said those words, his hands began

to change rapidly.

Surging spirit power began to rush out from his body to continuously bombard the spirit formation set up by the three brothers.

“This won’t do. Although Chu Feng’s spirit formation is amazing, those three brothers’ spirit formation is not affected in the slightest,” Seeing that scene, many people present started to worry for Chu Feng.

“It is not that those three brothers’ spirit formation is amazing. Rather, they should have used treasures to increase the strength of their spirit formation. Else, how could those three possibly be able to contain little friend Chu Feng with their own strength?” Daoist Three Swords said.

Suddenly, someone shouted, “No, their formation is not unaffected! It seems that their spirit formation will not be able to continue to resist Chu Feng’s attacks!”

At that time, the crowd realized that Chu Feng’s attacks were growing more and more ferocious. The spirit formation the three brothers had set up was starting to distort. It was as if their spirit formation would collapse at any moment.

However, the joy of the crowd lasted but a split second.

They soon discovered that the spirit formation was like rubber. Although the spirit formation was distorting and extending outward nonstop, it didn’t seem like that spirit formation would be broken through.

“That spirit formation is too strange. If this is to continue, it will be very hard for Chu Feng to break through it.”

The crowd all started to worry for Chu Feng. After all, through the things that had happened earlier, they all discovered that Chu Feng’s character greatly surpassed that of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. They were truly worried for Chu Feng because they all

hoped that he would win.

However, Chu Feng was now sealed within that formation, and simply unable to comprehend the Immortal-level spirit power.

On the other hand, the surging Immortal-level spirit power was pounding onto the three brothers nonstop.

No matter how they looked at it, the current situation seemed very unfavorable for Chu Feng.

“It’s useless. Chu Feng, I might as well tell you this. Unless you possess Immortal-level spirit power, regardless of how powerful your spirit formation might be, you will not be able to break through our spirit formation,” The second eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors proudly declared.

“Oh, now that you mentioned it, you’ve reminded me,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, while continuing with his current spirit formation, he began to set up another spirit formation.

Soon, another spirit formation was completed. That spirit formation fused together with his previous spirit formation.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, the Dragon Mark Immortal-level spirit power in the comprehensive formation seemed to have received an order, and started to pound against the spirit formation the three brothers had sealed Chu Feng with.

As Immortal-level spirit power was extremely powerful, it managed to shatter, destroy and completely engulf the spirit formation the three brothers had set up in merely a short moment.

“Heavens! Chu Feng is actually controlling that Immortal-level spirit power,” Seeing this scene, the crowd were all shocked.

After all, the Immortal-level spirit power would not help Chu Feng for no reason. It was most definitely Chu Feng’s doing to make the Immortal-level spirit power help him.

Merely, the crowd could not understand what sort of method Chu Feng had used to control the Immortal-level spirit power.

Could it be that it was simply not Chu Feng who controlled the Immortal-level spirit power, but instead the Golden Crane True Immortal who had helped him from the shadows?

“No, this is impossible! You are but a mere Royal-cloak World Spiritist! How could you control Immortal-level spirit power?!” When even the others were feeling disbelief, the Four World Spiritist Emperors naturally felt even greater disbelief.

Suddenly, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors turned to the sky and shouted, “Lord True Immortal, although I do not know what sort of relationship you have with that Chu Feng, you shouldn’t be helping him like this, no?! Do you really think this is fair?!”

Even though he was unable to enter the comprehensive formation, he could not watch as his three brothers suffered.

As he believed that it was most definitely the Golden Crane True Immortal who had helped Chu Feng, he actually started to publicly question him.

“Boom~~~”

However, right after his words left his mouth, a muffled explosion sounded from his body. He who had completely cured the injuries inflicted upon him by Chu Feng was instantly mutilated. Powerless, he fell to the ground.

He began to vomit mouthfuls of blood nonstop.

Seeing this scene, the complexions of the crowd present all turned pale. They did not even dare to utter a single word.

They were all able to tell that it was the Golden Crane True Immortal who had done that. The questioning from the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors must’ve angered the Golden Crane True Immortal, causing him to inflict a lesson upon him.

“Your skills being inferior is your own fault. Do not use this Immortal as an excuse for your own failure.”

“I will consider this a first offense, and not bicker with you. However, if anyone dares say that this Immortal is helping someone again, do not blame me for not giving you the opportunity to live.”

Sure enough, after that attack, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s voice exploded from the sky like ten thousand thunders.

When that voice sounded, not only did the sky and the earth violently tremble, the crowd’s hearts were also trembling.

Everyone could feel the Golden Crane True Immortal’s anger. This Lord True Immortal’s anger was truly capable of toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, splitting heaven and earth. They felt as if the end of the world had arrived.

Although his attack had seriously injured the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, everyone knew that he had acted leniently.

If he hadn’t, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors would definitely have been killed without a corpse remaining.

After all, the Golden Crane True Immortal possessed the ability to kill him instantly. Furthermore, he did not have to worry about killing him either.

Regardless of how powerful the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother might be, she would still be no match for the Golden Crane True Immortal.

# Chapter 2239 – Formation Of The Immortal-cloak

---

“In that case, it means that it is not Lord True Immortal that interfered, but rather Chu Feng who had managed to control the Immortal-level spirit power himself?” After things were cleared up, the crowd became even more astonished.

“Chu Feng, we are not done with you!!!”

Right at that moment, the three brothers inside the comprehensive formation suddenly let out furious shouts.

Upon turning their gazes toward them, the crowd discovered that the three brothers were already sealed in a spirit formation.

That spirit formation caused them to be unable to comprehend the slightest trace of Immortal-level spirit power.

At that moment, the vast amount of Immortal-level spirit power in the comprehensive formation was continuously pounding against only Chu Feng.

“That’s the end!!!”

Seeing this scene, many people revealed smiles.

The three brothers were simply unable to break through the spirit formation Chu Feng had sealed them with. The reason for that was because not only was Chu Feng’s spirit formation extremely profound, but he had also managed to control Immortal-level spirit power to assist him.

With the Immortal-level spirit power serving as a foundation, no matter what sorts of treasures the three brothers possessed, they were still unable to break through Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

As such, they could only watch as Chu Feng enjoyed the boundless Immortal-level spirit power by himself without being able to do anything.

Hatred. At that moment, the three brothers' eyes were filled with concentrated hatred. They were itching to skin Chu Feng alive and drink his blood.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his tightly closed eyes. He looked at the three brothers as his lips raised into a smile.

“The three of you were originally able to enjoy the Immortal-level spirit power together with me.”

“Yet, you three insisted on using tricks against me. You have forced me to this. This was caused by your overestimation of your capabilities. You all have reaped what you've sown,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, after leaving Mount Cloud Crane, we will definitely take your dog life!!!” The three brothers said furiously.

However, their threatening words only managed to obtain a light smile from Chu Feng. He said, “Don't speak as if you all would have spared me if I didn't go against you.”

“At the moment I broke through that purple fog, you all had already determined to kill me. However, you all must not know that I dared to go against you four brothers because I did not place you all in my eyes.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he ignored the expressions of the three brothers, closed his eyes and began to continue to comprehend the profoundness contained in the Immortal-level spirit power.

“You damned bastard, you dare to look down on us like this?!” Faced with Chu Feng acting like that, not to mention the three brothers inside the spirit formation, even the seriously injured eldest brother was filled with overwhelming fury.

“Boom~~~”



Suddenly, Chu Feng's body began to completely absorb all of the vast and boundless amount of Immortal-level spirit power like a bottomless pit.

After the Immortal-level spirit power was all absorbed into Chu Feng's body, the comprehensive formation started to shatter.

“This!!!” Seeing that scene, the expressions of the crowd all changed. They did not understand exactly what was happening before them.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was confused, Chu Feng's body suddenly let out a vast amount of Immortal-level spirit power.

Merely, the Immortal-level spirit power that he emitted was completely different from the Immortal-level spirit power that had entered his body before.

Earlier, Dragon Mark Immortal-level spirit power had entered his body.

And now, although it also very pure, it was Insect Mark Immortal-level spirit power that was being emitted.

The Immortal-level spirit power that he emitted was clearly many times weaker. However, upon seeing the Immortal-level spirit power, the people present all revealed astonished expressions.

“Chu Feng, he, he, he....”

“Could it be that he has already become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” someone said in excitement.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Chu Feng succeeded?” At that moment, in terms of being happy, no one's happiness could surpass Liu Xiaoli's. After all, as long as Chu Feng became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he would be able to treat her master Liu Chengkun's illness.

“Grandmaster Pocket, did Chu Feng... really become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Someone turned to ask Grandmaster Pocket because they did not dare to believe their eyes, did not dare to believe that Chu Feng had become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Almsgiver Chu Feng possesses exceptional talent. He has indeed become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“He is so young, yet has already become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. There have only been two people who have accomplished this feat in the history of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Grandmaster Pocket was full of praises for Chu Feng.

After verifying that Chu Feng had become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Feng changed once again.

An Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. An Asura World Spiritist. A man this young.

Genius. This was most definitely the sign of an exceptional genius!!!

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a ray of light suddenly shone from the sky and enveloped Chu Feng.

When that ray of light dissipated, Chu Feng had also disappeared. At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived above the clouds.

Merely, Chu Feng was simply unable to see the Golden Crane True Immortal, and was only able to hear his voice.

“You are called Chu Feng?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Senior, this junior is indeed called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng replied.

“You are extremely talented in terms of world spirit techniques.

You are a rarely-seen genius.”

“However, the more talented one is, the more others will envy them. You are destined to become famous after today; a misfortune, perhaps. There will be two kinds of people that will notice you.”

“The first kind will be those who will want to attract you because they cherish of talent.”

“The other kind will be those who will want to kill you out of their jealousy toward you.”

“However, even those who want to attract you might end up becoming people who will want to kill you. The world of martial cultivation is filled with dangers everywhere. You need to prepare yourself.”

“Thank you, Lord True Immortal, for pointing this out to me. It was all thanks to Lord True Immortal that this Chu Feng could become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

Although Chu Feng was unable to see the Golden Crane True Immortal, he was grateful toward the Golden Crane True Immortal. Thus, he respectfully bowed in the direction that the Golden Crane True Immortal’s voice was coming from.

“You have become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist by relying on your own comprehension. There is not too much of a relationship with me. Thus, you do not have to thank me, it was all thanks to your own abilities.”

“This Immortal is also a person who cherishes talents. As a talent like you is very rare, I have prepared a meager gift for you.”

Once the Golden Crane True Immortal’s words were said, a sandalwood case floated out from the fog and arrived before Chu Feng.

Chu Feng received the case and opened it. Immediately, his eyes shone. Contained in the case were three medicinal pellets. The

three medicinal pellets were three different colors. Each and every one of them contained an enormous amount of medicinal power. Furthermore, each one was stronger than the last.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the medicinal powers of those medicinal pellets were related to one's world spirit techniques.

"Senior, may I know what these medicinal pellets are?" Chu Feng asked.

"Those are Immortal Transformation Pellets. They are specially created for Immortal-cloak World Spiritists."

"Upon using the Immortal Transformation Pellets, your Heavenly Bloodline will temporarily be sealed. You will not be able to use your Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. Even your heaven-defying battle power will disappear. However, your cultivation will increase enormously."

"I have prepared three such Immortal Transformation Pellets for you."

"The first one is capable of increasing your cultivation to rank three Martial Ancestor."

"The second one is capable of increasing your cultivation to rank four Martial Ancestor."

"As for the third one, it is capable of increasing your cultivation to rank five Martial Ancestor."

"Perhaps these three Immortal Transformation Pellets will be able to save your life in times of danger," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

## Chapter 2240 – Young Master Li Ming

---

Chu Feng felt overjoyed upon hearing those words.

He current did possess a lot of enemies. Not mentioning Luyang's Pavilion, merely the Four World Spiritist Emperors already had the intention to kill him.

It was indeed very difficult for him to protect himself with merely the strength of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Even for Her Lady Queen, who possessed overwhelming battle power, she was only able to easily kill rank one Martial Ancestors. When faced with rank two Martial Ancestors, a fierce battle would be unavoidable.

However, those three Immortal Transformation Pellets were capable of increasing Chu Feng's cultivation from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to Martial Ancestor. Especially the third medicinal pellet, it was capable of increasing Chu Feng's cultivation to rank five Martial Ancestor. That was no small matter at all.

It would truly be a qualitative leap.

Thus, Chu Feng knew that the Immortal Transformation Pellets were most definitely not ordinary medicinal pellets. Even if they were concocted by the Golden Crane True Immortal, it would likely have been a very laborious process.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng carefully put the medicinal pellets away. Then, he asked, "Senior, how long will the effects of the medicinal pellets last?"

"The effects will last for an hour," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"One hour? If fighting against others, that would suffice," Chu Feng said.

"It would naturally be enough. However, you must remember

this. Although your cultivation will increase after using the medicinal pellets, your Heavenly Bloodline's power will be sealed. Not only will you not be able to use your Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, even your heaven-defying battle power will be gone."

"For example, should you take the first medicinal pellet, you will be able to obtain the strength of a rank three Martial Ancestor for an hour."

"However, even though you will be able to control the martial power and use it to unleash martial skills, you will only be able to contend against rank three Martial Ancestors. All rank four Martial Ancestors will be able to easily kill you."

"Thus, when faced with different enemies, you must make sure to use different Immortal Transformation Pellets. Remember, you must not be careless," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"Thank you for your reminder, senior. This junior will forever remember senior's grace today," Chu Feng clasped his fist and thanked him.

"Grace? This Immortal is merely fond of talent, and does not wish for you to be killed by others that harbor evil intentions."

"However, even though I am fond of talent, this Immortal will still not conceal the fact that you have killed that Li Rui."

"I will personally announce this matter to the crowd. However, before I announce it, you should first confess to that man from the Sunset Cloud Valley," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart tightened. However, he still clasped his fist and bowed, "Senior, that is something that this junior has done. As such, I will assume the responsibility."

"That would be the best," After the Golden Crane True Immortal's voice sounded, a spirit formation enveloped Chu Feng. When the light of the spirit formation dissipated, Chu Feng had

left that place.

After Chu Feng left, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain clothed old monk appeared.

“It seems that you truly do not plan to take him as your disciple?” The plain clothed old monk asked the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“That child’s talent is indeed rare. However, I, Golden Crane, am not a half-hearted individual. Since I have already chosen that brat, I will naturally not choose Chu Feng instead.”

“Since you think so highly of Chu Feng, why do you not take him as your disciple?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked the old monk.

“You think I do not want to take him as a disciple? You should know that I think very highly of him. I feel that his accomplishments in the future will surpass that brat that you think highly of,” The plain clothed old monk said.

“Are you saying those words to incite me?”

“Even if Chu Feng’s accomplishments today have been decent, I still feel that his future accomplishments will be inferior to that brat that I’ve chosen,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“This, I’m not going to argue with you. You have your own vision, whereas I have mine. Arguing will serve no purpose.”

“I will only tell you this. I truly wanted to take that Chu Feng as my disciple. Merely, you also know what sort of mysterious technique I train in. There is nothing I can teach him,” The plain clothed old monk said helplessly.

“Who said you had to teach him? You could simply have him be your disciple, and not teach him anything, granting him only the status of your disciple.”

“Like that, you would be able to openly protect him.”

“Else, for a talent like him to rely only on himself, it will be very easy for him to die young.”

“Not mentioning the others, merely those four brats already harbor killing intent toward him. Else... I wouldn’t have given him those three Immortal Transformation Pellets.”

“You should know how dark the world of martial cultivators is.”

“However, should you take him as your disciple, I wouldn’t have to interfere in this matter,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“That is precisely the reason why I cannot take him as my disciple. You also know how many enemies I have,” The plain clothed old monk said.

“This...” At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal was startled. He seemed to have thought of something. After a while, he said, “It shouldn’t be an issue in this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, no?”

“Who knows when they will chase me over here,” The plain clothed old monk smiled wryly.

“Oh you,” The Golden Crane True Immortal sighed. Then, he said, “If that is the case, you really should distance yourself from that Chu Feng. If he is by himself, there will still be a chance that he will survive.”

“However, if he is to become involved with you, he will definitely be killed.”

“See, didn’t I say that?” The plain clothed old monk sighed helplessly. Then, he looked to the Golden Crane True Immortal with a beaming smile. He said, “How about you help him some more?”

“Forget about it. We are neither relatives nor friends. Even if I am extremely fond of talent, I have already helped as much as I can. After all, he is but a stranger that I’ve met once,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.



“That’s true,” The plain clothed old monk nodded. Then, he said, “In that case, whatever accomplishments he might be able to obtain will all depend on himself.”

“Even if you are worried for him, it would be useless. If he truly possesses abilities, he will definitely break through the hardships. After all, it was like that for the two of us back then too.”

“However, if his strength is insufficient, even if he is to be killed by others, it cannot be blamed on them. After all, the world of martial cultivators is cruel like that,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

The plain clothed old monk sighed deeply. He knew that what the Golden Crane True Immortal had said was very true.

At the moment when the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain clothed old monk were conversing, Chu Feng had been teleported out of Mount Cloud Crane.

It was not only Chu Feng that was here. At that moment, everyone was gathered here.

At that moment, it was not only Xu Yiyi and the others that were unable to ascend Mount Cloud Crane that were here; even Liu Xiaoli and the others that had managed to ascend Mount Cloud Crane were here.

At that moment, practically everyone was looking at Chu Feng with gazes of admiration. In fact, many of the younger generation were looking at him with gazes filled with envy and adoration.

Clearly, everyone already knew what had happened at the summit of Mount Cloud Crane.

“Chu Feng, you are truly amazing. I’ve heard that you’ve become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Wow! You simply surpass my imagination. I am truly proud to have a friend like you.”

Xu Yiyi rushed toward Chu Feng. Like a horse that had thrown off its reins, she started to jump around non-stop after reaching Chu Feng.

“There’s no need for you to be this excited, no?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Of course I’m excited. You are the second youngest Immortal-cloak World Spiritist in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Xu Yiyi said excitedly.

“Second? Who is the first?” Liu Xiaoli asked curiously.

“Don’t you know? It would naturally be the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s number one genius, Young Master Li Ming,” Xu Yiyi said.

“Young Master Li Ming?” Liu Xiaoli revealed a surprised expression. It was not only her; many of the others present also revealed such expressions.

“You all couldn’t possibly have never heard of Young Master Li Ming, right? He is our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s most talented, most demon-level genius.”

“Oh, that’s right. I’ve heard that the Golden Crane True Immortal even wanted to take him as his disciple.”

“However... he was refused,” Xu Yiyi said.

# Chapter 2241 – The Whole Truth Revealed

---

“For real? He actually refused the Golden Crane True Immortal?” The crowd were all astonished upon hearing those words.

What sort of existence was the Golden Crane True Immortal? Everyone present knew that he was one of the most powerful existences in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Countless people wanted to become his disciple, yet were refused. And now, he wanted to have that Young Master Li Ming as his disciple, but was actually refused. This was truly astonishing.

“Actually, that cannot amount to much. After all, that Young Master Li Ming is truly a demon-level genius. Countless people were refused by him. The Golden Crane True Immortal was only one of them,” Xu Yiyi said.

After hearing what Xu Yiyi said, the crowd felt even more astonished. They never expected that there would be such a demon-level genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

At the same time, the crowd all wanted to know exactly how powerful that Young Master Li Ming was.

“In that case, doesn’t this mean that Chu Feng is the second demon-level genius to appear in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“That’s right. Regardless, Chu Feng is our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s second youngest Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” Xu Yiyi said in a very happy manner.

The crowd nodded at Xu Yiyi’s words. They were all expressing their approval.

At this moment when everyone was joyous, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Jiang Hao had a worried frown. He, who disliked Chu Feng and viewed him as his rival in love, would naturally not wish for Chu Feng to obtain this sort of accomplishment.

“Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang, I have a matter that I must confess to you all,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what’s made you so serious?” Seeing Chu Feng’s serious expression, Xu Yiyi was unable to contain herself from smiling.

“It’s concerning Li Rui,” Chu Feng said.

“Li Rui?” the mention of that name caused the crowd’s expression to turn sluggish.

After all, everyone was able to tell that Li Rui was nowhere to be seen. In fact, they all wanted to know what had happened to Li Rui.

“Now that you mention it, Chu Feng, where’s Li Rui?” Sure enough, Elder Ning Shuang and the others from the Sunset Cloud Valley questioned Chu Feng.

“Li Rui has been killed by me,” Chu Feng said.

“What?!” Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd all changed. This was especially true for the female disciples, who were so scared that their complexions changed color.

“Chu Feng, you are truly brazen! You actually killed my fellow martial senior!” As for Jiang Hao, he directly revealed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Stop!” However, before Jiang Hao could attack Chu Feng, Elder Ning Shuang stopped him. Then, he forced a smile and said to Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, you cannot joke about that sort of thing.”

“Elder Ning Shuang, I am not joking. I truly killed Li Rui,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?!”

“Chu Feng, you really killed Li Rui? Exactly what is going on?” Xu Yiyi asked.

At that moment, it was not only Xu Yiyi who had a nervous and confused expression. Many of the people present also revealed confused expressions. They did not understand why Chu Feng would kill Li Rui.

Furthermore, with Chu Feng's cultivation and Li Rui's cultivation, it shouldn't be possible for Chu Feng to kill Li Rui.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor?”

Right at that moment, the crowd noticed that Chu Feng's cultivation was no longer that of a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, but had instead increased to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

Unable to contain herself, Liu Xiaoli asked, “Chu Feng, your cultivation?” Compared to others, she was even more certain that Chu Feng was clearly only a rank two Half Martial Ancestor before coming here.

“I increased my cultivation after entering Mount Cloud Crane,” Chu Feng said.

Unable to contain himself, Elder Ning Shuang asked, “Two successive levels?” After all, that was no small matter.

“That's right,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Sssss~~~”

Many of the people present were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. It was not that they possessed a low endurance toward shock and surprise, but rather increasing two levels of cultivation in succession was truly too astonishing.

At that moment, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Feng changed again. They seemed to finally understand why Chu Feng possessed his level of cultivation at such a young age.

Everything was not a coincidence. This child was truly a demon-level character.

However, at this time when the crowd were exclaiming in admiration at Chu Feng's astonishing talent, there was someone who was unable to sit and continue to watch what was going on. That person was Jiang Hao.

“Who cares why he did it? Those that kill another shall pay with their life. Those who owe another shall pay their debt. That is heaven's law and earth's principle. Today, I... shall avenge senior brother Li Rui!” Jiang Hao shouted.

“Clank~~~”

Jiang Hao raised his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and pointed it at Chu Feng.

“Stop!” Xu Yiyi stepped before Chu Feng, blocking Jiang Hao. She shouted at him, “I refuse to believe that Chu Feng would kill senior brother Li Rui!”

“I can testify that Chu Feng indeed killed Li Rui,” Right at that moment, a voice filled with imposing might sounded from Mount Cloud Crane.

When that voice was heard, the crowd were all astonished. They did not expect that the Golden Crane True Immortal would actually come to testify.

What sort of status did the Golden Crane True Immortal possess? If he were to come out to testify, it would mean that Chu Feng's killing of Li Rui was certainly the truth.

Out of consideration for their faces, even if Chu Feng was a rare young genius and an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, the Sunset Cloud Valley would definitely not spare Chu Feng.

“This Immortal has seen the course of events personally. It is true that Chu Feng has killed Li Rui. However, it was Li Rui who tried to kill Chu Feng first. Chu Feng was forced to counterattack, and ended up killing Li Rui,” The Golden Crane True Immortal's voice sounded again.

“So it was actually Li Rui who tried to kill Chu Feng first?” Hearing those words, many people heaved a sigh of relief.

If Li Rui was truly the one to attack first, it would mean that he was in the wrong. Thus, even if Chu Feng had killed him, it would be reasonable.

“As this matter happened in my Mount Cloud Crane, I will declare that if Chu Feng had killed someone in a completely uncalled-for manner, I would most definitely look into it. However, Chu Feng’s killing this time around is justified.”

“Back then, if this Immortal had wanted to prevent Chu Feng from killing Li Rui, I would have been able to do so too. However, this Immortal did not do that. The reason for that is because I felt that Li Rui deserved to die.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal only said those words, and said no more after that. However, the crowd all understood the Golden Crane True Immortal’s intentions.

The Golden Crane True Immortal was absolving Chu Feng of responsibility. He had explicitly declared that Chu Feng was not in the wrong to kill Li Rui. If the Sunset Cloud Valley insisted on looking into the matter, it would be possible that the Golden Crane True Immortal would get involved in the matter as well.

Regardless of how powerful the Sunset Cloud Valley might be, it remained only a tier two power. As such, how could they possibly be a match for the Golden Crane True Immortal?

“Little friend Chu Feng, is that really what happened?” Elder Ning Shuang asked.

“Precisely,” Chu Feng nodded.

“But, there are neither grievances or grudges between you and Li Rui, why would he try to kill you?” Elder Ning Shuang was confused.

“It was because of Xu Yiyi,” Chu Feng looked to Xu Yiyi.

“Me?” Xu Yiyi revealed a puzzled expression.

“Li Rui liked you. He felt that my existence was a threat to him.”

“Thus, like Jiang Hao, he viewed me as a rival in love.”

“However, different from Jiang Hao, who has openly displayed his hatred toward me, Li Rui had concealed his hatred,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, while the outsiders felt surprised, the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley were not surprised. Evidently, they all knew that Li Rui liked Xu Yiyi.

“Elder Ning Shuang, you should remember that I was originally supposed to enter the floating island together with Society President Liu that day. It was Li Rui who insisted on accompanying me instead,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. It was indeed Li Rui who suggested that,” Elder Ning Shuang nodded.

“In that case, did you know that those floating islands all possessed a special power left behind by the Exalted that made it impossible to summon one’s world spirits there?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally. Not only do I know that, they all knew that too,” Elder Ning Shuang looked to Xu Yiyi and the others.

“I got it,” Suddenly, Xu Yiyi seemed to have thought of something. Thus, emotionally, she said, “Li Rui deliberately accompanied you to the same floating island because you would not be able to summon your world spirit. He felt that as long as you were unable to summon your world spirit, you would not be a match for him, and he would be able to kill you.”

“Precisely,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Judging from this, it seems that Li Rui had already schemed this.”

“Who would’ve expected that he was so despicable?”



Hearing till this point, many outsiders started to curse at Li Rui. The reason why they were doing that was because they wanted to use this opportunity to get closer to Chu Feng.

However, no matter what, Li Rui was still a disciple of the Sunset Cloud Valley. Hearing others speaking of Li Rui in such a manner, the expressions of the crowd from the Sunset Cloud Valley turned unsightly.

## Chapter 2242 – A Helping Hand

---

“It would seem that Li Rui was indeed at fault for this matter. I will report this matter to our Valley Master honestly.”

“Furthermore, our Valley Master is not someone who cannot distinguish between right and wrong. Thus, little friend Chu Feng, please rest assured. Our Sunset Cloud Valley will definitely not look further into this matter,” Elder Ning Shuang said to Chu Feng.

It was not that he did not mind Li Rui’s death. After all, Li Rui was a talented individual. As such, how could he not be pained by Li Rui’s death?

However, from the process of what had happened, it was obvious at a glance who was in the wrong and who was in the right. Everyone present was able to tell. Thus, even if their Sunset Cloud Valley was feeling unreconciled, it would still not be suitable for them to look further into this matter.

Furthermore, from their short interaction, Elder Ning Shuang was very fond of Chu Feng. As such, he truly did not wish to look further into this matter.

“Chu Feng, and here I thought that you would not dare to come out!!!”

Right at that moment, a voice filled with killing intent suddenly exploded. Following that, four figures rapidly approached.

It was the Four World Spiritist Emperors. Those four brothers were actually daring enough to attack Chu Feng before he had even left the vicinity of Mount Cloud Crane.

“Stay your hand,” Upon seeing that, Elder Ning Shuang hurriedly moved before Chu Feng, blocking him.

He also unleashed his aura of a rank five Martial Ancestor and completely dispersed the surging oppressive might from the Four

World Spiritist Emperors.

While the Four World Spiritist Emperors were very powerful, their eldest being a rank five Martial Ancestor, Elder Ning Shuang was also a [rank five Martial Ancestor](#).

As such, he would naturally not look on helplessly as they attempted to bring harm to Chu Feng.

“Scram! You are but a dog of the Sunset Cloud Valley, yet you dare oppose us?”

However, who would’ve thought that the Four World Spiritist Emperors would completely disregard Elder Ning Shuang? In fact, they did not even place the Sunset Cloud Valley in their eyes.

“Don’t you think about harming little friend Chu Feng,” Elder Ning Shuang said determinedly.

“You are truly one who will not shed a tear until you see your coffin. If my mother is to be angered, not to mention you, your entire Sunset Cloud Valley will not be able to bear the consequences.”

Hearing those words, Elder Ning Shuang’s gaze wavered. If it were the Four World Spiritist Emperors alone, he would indeed be capable of handling them. However, upon mentioning their mother, Elder Ning Shuang started to waver before them.

The reason for that was because not only was the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, she also possessed extremely powerful strength in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. She could be considered an influential individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

She was indeed not someone that he could afford to provoke.

Seeing that Elder Ning Shuang was starting to panic, the Four World Spiritist Emperors grew even more arrogant. Their eldest pointed to Elder Ning Shuang’s nose and said, “Old dog from the

Sunset Cloud Valley, scam immediately and I will pretend like nothing has happened.”

“You!!!” Elder Ning Shuang was so furious his complexion turned red. However, in the end, he resisted the anger, and did not erupt.

“What about me? Scam right now. Else, do not blame me for being rude toward you,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said fiercely. His arrogance was completely revealed.

“I’ve finally managed to catch you all!!!”

However, right at that moment, a voice exploded like a thunderbolt. Even space itself started to tremble violently.

Turning toward the direction of the voice, everyone saw that it was actually Daoist Three Swords.

“Crap!” Upon seeing Daoist Three Swords, the expressions of the Four World Spiritist Emperors all changed enormously.

They had left an enormous grievance against Daoist Three Swords on Mount Cloud Crane. Thus, it was extremely bad for them to encounter him here.

“I said that I would let you know what miserable really means after leaving Mount Cloud Crane,” Daoist Three Swords said to the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

“Daoist Three Swords, you are, after all, a senior. Are you planning to bully your juniors?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors started to panic. He turned around and prepared to flee.

“Humph, this Daoist has always been one to keep his word. Since I have said that I will teach you a lesson, how could I possibly spare you all just because of my seniority?” Daoist Three Swords sneered. Then, he began to walk toward the Four World Spiritist Emperors in midair. Although his footsteps appeared to be slow, he traversed several miles with each step. In merely the blink of an eye, he managed to catch up to the fleeing eldest Four World

Spiritist Emperor.

“Pow, pow, pow, pow~~~”

After arriving before the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, Daoist Three Swords began to swing his arms to unleash ruthless slaps to his face.

Not only were his slaps resounding, they were also very powerful. In merely a short moment, the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was slapped dazed. Blood covered his face as he swayed from side to side before losing consciousness. From midair, he began to fall to the ground.

“Big brother!!!”

Seeing that the situation was bad, the three younger brothers immediately rushed to catch their big brother.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right when they were about to catch their big brother, a figure suddenly appeared before them, blocking their path.

Upon seeing that person, the expressions of the three brothers all turned ashen.

The reason for that was because that person was none other than Daoist Three Swords.

“Since you’re blood brothers, you shall naturally share in your punishments.”

“Since your eldest brother has fainted, the three of you shall receive the following punishments on his behalf,” After Daoist Three Swords said those words, he did not bother to wait for the three brothers to reply, and began to flail his arms about nonstop, leaving countless blurs in their path.

“Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow,” firecracker-like sounds began to explode nonstop.

During that period of time, the three brothers’ heads were beaten

back and forth as their blood splattered all over.

When Daoist Three Swords stayed his hand, those three brothers had also fainted. From midair, they all smashed into the ground beside their eldest brother.

Seeing this scene, many people began to applaud in their hearts. After all, Daoist Three Swords' slaps were truly satisfying to the heart; he had helped the crowd settle the arrogance of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

"Wow! Chu Feng, Daoist Three Swords actually helped you take care of the Four World Spiritist Emperors!" Xu Yiyi said excitedly.

"As if. The way I see it, it's because they possessed personal conflicts. How could Daoist Three Swords help a nobody like Chu Feng?" Jiang Hao said with an expression of denial.

However, who would've thought that, right at that moment, Daoist Three Swords stepped into the air and began walking toward Chu Feng's direction. Furthermore, he ended up stopping before Chu Feng.

"Little brother Chu Feng, rest assured. I have struck them unconscious with my martial power."

"Unless someone is to treat them, they will definitely be unconscious for several days and nights. At the very least, they will no longer pose a threat to you today," Daoist Three Swords said to Chu Feng.

At that moment, many of the people present had their eyes wide open and their tongues tied. This was especially true for the people that had not entered Mount Cloud Crane. At that moment, they had bewildered expressions.

As matters stood, they were all certain that Daoist Three Swords had not attacked the Four World Spiritist Emperors for no reason or cause. Instead, he had actually done so to help Chu Feng out of his trouble.

Merely, they did not understand how Chu Feng had managed to claim a connection to a grand individual like Daoist Three Swords.

Feeling extremely grateful, Chu Feng hurriedly bowed to Daoist Three Swords, “Thank you senior.”

“The four of them were disrespectful toward their seniors. They were truly excessive. Even if they did not attempt to cause trouble for you, I still would have had to teach them a lesson. Else, if they were allowed to continue to act unrestrained like that, they might end up causing countless evils,” Daoist Three Swords said carefreely.

However, his expression suddenly changed. He turned serious and said, “Little brother Chu Feng, might you be interested in coming to our Immortal Sword School as a guest?”

Hearing those words, the already-astonished crowd opened their mouths wide with shock.

This was especially true for Jiang Hao. He had an expression as if he had just been fed feces.

No one would’ve thought that not only would Daoist Three Swords lend Chu Feng a helping hand, he would even voluntarily invite Chu Feng to be a guest of their Immortal Sword School.

That could be said to be a supreme honor!!!

This is not a mistranslation. Bee had mistaken their cultivation. On [Chapter 2224](#), he mentioned all four of them were rank 1 Martial Ancestors, which makes sense since he mentioned the 2nd eldest is a rank 1 in many chapters and the four of them are quadruplets. However, now the eldest is a rank five instead?

## Chapter 2243 – Razed To The Ground

---

“Eh...” Faced with the sudden invitation from Daoist Three Swords, Chu Feng revealed a difficult expression.

“Why would Chu Feng have this sort of reaction? He couldn’t possibly be thinking about refusing, right?” Seeing that Chu Feng was hesitating to answer Daoist Three Swords, the crowd began to have misgivings.

‘Humph, that guy truly doesn’t know how to tell good from bad. Serves him right,’ As for Jiang Hao, he started to sneer in his heart.

The way he saw it, grand characters like Daoist Three Swords were all people who held grudges; they were not people that one could afford to offend.

This was especially true for Daoist Three Swords, who was famous for his fiery temper.

If Chu Feng were to refuse his invitation before all these people, it would simply be akin to slapping him in the face. Thus, Jiang Hao felt that Chu Feng would definitely suffer consequences today.

In fact, it was not only Jiang Hao that was thinking like that. Many people present were also thinking that way.

“Little brother Chu Feng, could it be that you have some difficulties with my request? That’s fine, if there are difficulties, you can go ahead and tell me about it,” Daoist Three Swords said with a smile.

Hearing what Daoist Three Swords said, Jiang Hao nearly fainted from anger.

What the hell was this?

Didn’t Daoist Three Swords possess a fiery temper? Wasn’t he someone that refused to allow others to talk about him? Why



would he have such a good attitude toward Chu Feng?

“Senior, this junior does indeed have something that I must take care of. I fear that I will have to let you down,” Chu Feng said. The ‘something’ he mentioned was naturally Liu Chengkun.

Liu Chengkun’s illness would always relapse several times a year. Before, his relapse would always occur at the same time. However, it had become unstable recently.

Chu Feng had to hurry back to the Red Butterfly Society with Liu Xiaoli so that they could return before his relapse occurred. Like that, he would be able to prevent Liu Chengkun from suffering the pain of a relapse of his illness.

“Haha, it’s alright. Little brother Chu feng possesses things that he must take care of. If you have the time in the future, you can come and visit our Immortal Sword School at any time. As long as I am there, you will definitely be treated as an honored guest,” Daoist Three Swords said. As he spoke, he tossed a title plate to Chu Feng.

Seeing that title plate, the crowd all revealed stunned gazes. This was especially true for Jiang Hao. He was completely stupefied, and his eyes were filled with envy.

That title plate was the Immortal Sword School’s invitation title plate. Those who held the invitation title plate would not only be allowed entrance to the Immortal Sword School, they would also be received as an honored guest.

What sort of place was the Immortal Sword School Sect? It was one of the four first-tier powers of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. To anyone, being able to obtain one such invitation title plate would be an honor.

“Chu Feng, quickly, accept it. That is the Immortal Sword School’s invitation title plate,” Seeing that Chu Feng was still standing there, Xu Yiyi beside him pinched Chu Feng’s leg to urge

him.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng not only received the title plate, he also bowed again to express his thanks to Daoist Three Swords. After all, merely from the reaction of the crowd, Chu Feng was able to tell that the title plate was highly valued.

“It is fate that has brought us here together. Thus, there is no need for you to stand on ceremony, for it will only create distance between us.”

“Little brother Chu Feng, in that case, I hope we meet again,” Daoist Three Swords clasped his fist.

“Farewell,” Chu Feng clasped his fist in response.

After Daoist Three Swords left, Grandmaster Pocket also arrived before Chu Feng while leading the experts from the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple.

“Good indeed, good indeed. Actually, this humble monk also wishes to invite almsgiver Chu Feng to our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple as a guest.”

“However, since almsgiver Chu Feng has matters at hand, I will not force you. Merely, this humble monk must thank almsgiver Chu Feng.”

“If it weren’t for almsgiver Chu Feng’s assistance, we would likely not have been able to pass even that purple fog, much less be able to even see the appearance of the comprehensive formation,” Grandmaster Pocket said with a smile.

“Grandmaster, you are being too modest. What this junior has done are all things that I should have done,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Almsgiver Chu Feng is truly humble. Although you possess a demon-level character’s talent, you do not give off the slightest air of arrogance. It has been a very long time since I’ve meet a sensible young person like you.”

“Good, good. This is a good thing,” Grandmaster Pocket praised Chu Feng nonstop.

Even though everyone knew that Grandmaster Pocket was a benevolent person, it was still very rare for him to praise someone in such a manner.

At that moment, many of the surrounding crowd were staring blankly at that scene. This was especially true for the people from the Sunset Cloud Pavilion; they all had expressions of astonishment on their faces.

After all, both Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket were extremely influential grand individual's. For both of them to think so highly of Chu Feng meant that it was most definitely not a mistake. Instead, it meant that Chu Feng possessed outstanding aspects.

After Grandmaster Pocket left, the Zhou Heavenly Clan and the Kong Heavenly Clan, those two other tier one powers, actually also moved toward Chu Feng to greet him.

Although they did not explicitly state it, they both made it clear that they wished to invite Chu Feng to be guests at their powers.

However, it remained that it was only Daoist Three Swords who actually ended up granting Chu Feng an invitation title plate.

However, regardless, it remained that all four of the tier one powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the four most powerful huge monsters, had actually all extended an olive branch to Chu Feng. That by itself was sufficient to indicate how valuable they viewed Chu Feng to be.

Originally, due to Chu Feng's killing of Li Rui, the others from the Sunset Cloud Valley had felt some hatred and complaint toward Chu Feng.

However, after seeing the invitations from those grand characters, their impression of Chu Feng had changed.

In fact, even Jiang Hao, who had viewed Chu Feng as an enemy from the very beginning, had a change of sight. His gaze became very complicated. However, undoubtedly, the hatred that he held toward Chu Feng appeared to have decreased at that moment.

Afterwards, many others proceeded toward Chu Feng to greet him. However, they merely greeted him. It seemed that none of them were inviting Chu Feng to be their guests.

After all, they were no fools. When even the four tier one powers had been refused, even if they were to offer invitations to Chu Feng, they would definitely receive a refusal.

“It seems that it will be hopeless for me to invite you to our Sunset Cloud Valley as a guest,” Xu Yiyi looked at Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

Following that, Elder Ning Shuang added, “Little friend Chu Feng, if you have the time in the future, this old man hopes that you will come visit our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“Miss Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang, after I finish the matter at hand, I will personally come and pay you all a visit,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s a deal! You promised that. You must come,” Xu Yiyi said.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng replied earnestly.

“Pinky swear,” Xu Yiyi extended her pinky.

“Sure,” Chu Feng smiled and extended his pinky to hook with Xu Yiyi’s pinky.

Then, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli began to return toward the direction of the Red Butterfly Society.

Calculating the time, the new headquarters of the Red Butterfly Society should not have been completed yet.

Thus, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli did not proceed toward the location of the new headquarters, and instead proceeded toward the location of the old headquarters.

However, when the two of them returned to the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters, before they even descended, their expressions changed enormously.

The city above the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters had been destroyed. Not only had the city been destroyed, but the entire place had been turned into an enormous ravine.

This meant that someone had razed the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters to the ground.

"What, what is this?" Seeing this scene, Liu Xiaoli was immediately stunned. Disbelief filled her face as her eyes instantly turned red.

After all, with the scene before her, even without any explanation, one could guess that the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters must have been attacked by others.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng's eyes were not red like Liu Xiaoli's, he was also somewhat stunned.

He had entered Mount Cloud Crane and discovered the place where the Exalted had trained. He was clearly capable of increasing his cultivation to at least that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. However, he had given up on that.

Why did he do that?

It was all for the sake of becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist so that he could return to treat Liu Chengkun's illness.

Yet, what was this? The Red Butterfly Society's headquarters had clearly not yet moved. Thus, why would it be leveled to the ground?

Didn't this mean that Liu Chengkun and the others might've suffered a calamity? That even though Chu Feng had become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he would not have the opportunity to cure Liu Chengkun's illness?

## Chapter 2244 – Liangchen's Villa

---

“Who is it?!” Suddenly, Chu Feng turned his sharp gaze toward the distance.

Sure enough, several figures were in that location. They were rapidly flying over.

Upon seeing those people, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli hurriedly rushed toward them.

The reason for that was because those people were actually all members of the Red Butterfly Society.

Merely, those people all possessed weak levels of cultivation. At the very least, not one of them was a management elder.

“Lady Society President, Lord Chu Feng, you all have finally returned! Our Red Butterfly Society has encountered an enormous calamity!!!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli, those people all started weeping bitter tears.

“Enormous calamity? Why would our Red Butterfly Society suffer a calamity out of nowhere?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“Calm yourselves. Exactly what happened, exactly who did this, do you all know about it?” Chu Feng asked.

“We do,” The leader of that group nodded his head repeatedly. He was an old man that had lived for over a thousand years. Yet, tears and nasal mucus covered his face. Even his lips were trembling nonstop.

It could be seen that what had happened back then was truly tragic. It seemed that the Red Butterfly Society had truly suffered disastrous casualties. Else, he wouldn't be grieving in such a manner.

“Was it Luyang's Pavilion?!” Chu feng asked. The way he saw it,

only Luyang's Pavilion would dare to attack the Red Butterfly Society. As such, the most likely culprit would be Luyang's Pavilion.

"No," That man shook his head.

"Then who was it?" Upon hearing that it was not Luyang's Pavilion, Chu Feng's expression changed. He was unable to understand whom other than Luyang's Pavilion would eliminate the Red Butterfly Society, whom other than Luyang's Pavilion possessed the strength to eliminate the Red Butterfly Society.

"It was Liangchen's Villa," The Red Butterfly Society's survivors said in unison.

"Liangchen's Villa?!" Liu Xiaoli was startled to hear those words. Then, she asked, "Why would Liangchen's Villa attack our Red Butterfly Society with no reason or cause? We have never had any grudges or grievances with them."

"We also do not know why. That day, Liangchen's Villa's Villa Master personally led their army here. Without saying anything, they began to massacre our Red Butterfly Society's people."

"It was not only the people from our Red Butterfly Society that ended up being massacred. Even those innocent commoners in that city were all massacred. Not a single person was spared," The survivors' leader said.

"All killed? Then, what about Elder Liu Chengkun?" Chu Feng asked. At that moment, Chu Feng, who was always calm, became nervous.

Of the people in the Red Butterfly Society, the person Chu Feng worried for the most, the person he cared for the most, would be none other than Liu Chengkun.

"Elder Liu, he... he... he was also killed!!!" The man wept.

"What?!" Hearing those words, the expressions of both Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli simultaneously changed.

Struck by five lightnings. At that moment, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli felt as if five Divine Lightnings had struck them straight on the head, stunning them completely.

“Are you certain, certain that Elder Liu and the others were killed?” Chu Feng asked again. He was unwilling to accept that Liu Chengkun had been killed.

“Lord Chu Feng, we are certain, because we had personally seen Lord Elder and the others being killed.”

“Not only did they kill Lord Elder, they also took his and the others’ corpses away with them. We did not even have the chance to bury them,” When mentioning these things, the survivors began to weep even more tearfully.

“If Senior Liu and the others were all killed, how did you all manage to survive?” Chu Feng was confused. In terms of power, the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders were most definitely more powerful than these people. Since they were also present that day, it shouldn’t be possible for them to have survived.

Regardless of what sort of reason the attackers might have, since they had killed even the innocent commoners, they should not have spared these people from the Red Butterfly Society. Unless...

“We also do not understand why they didn’t kill us,” The survivors shook their heads. Then, with a ‘putt,’ they knelt to the ground. They said to Liu Xiaoli, “Lady Society President, we are incompetent. We failed to protect our Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters. Please punish us.”

“What are you all doing? This is not your fault. How could I punish you all? Quickly, get up. All of you, get back up,” With shivering hands, Liu Xiaoli started to help them up one by one. As she walked in the air, her footsteps began to waver.

To Liu Xiaoli, although Liu Chengkun was only her master, he



exceeded her biological father in her heart. At the moment she discovered that Liu Chengkun had died, her heart had been thrown into utter confusion.

As for Chu Feng, he entered a deep contemplation.

Suddenly, he said, "They did it on purpose."

"What?" Liu Xiaoli's expression changed. She hurriedly asked, "Chu Feng, what do you mean by on purpose?"

"They deliberately left them alive so that they could tell us who it was that extinguished the Red Butterfly Society, so that we could go and find them for revenge," Chu Feng said.

"Ah?!" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Liu Xiaoli and the survivors all came to a sudden realization.

"Tell me, what sort of strength does that Liangchen's Villa possess?" Chu Feng asked Liu Xiaoli. He had realized that Liu Xiaoli should have an understanding of Liangchen's Villa.

Furthermore, he also realized that Liangchen's Villa should not be a simple power. Else, Liu Xiaoli would not be so astonished upon hearing their name.

Furthermore, he had discovered upon looking at Liu Xiaoli that her cheeks were already wet. They were drenched with tears.

After all, Liu Chengkun was her master, and the Red Butterfly Society was her home. Now that her master and the many elders in the Red Butterfly Society had all been killed, the pain that she felt would be extremely difficult to bear.

However, Chu Feng discovered that even though Liu Xiaoli was feeling very pained, there was no anger in her eyes. He was puzzled by that.

Could it be that Liu Xiaoli did not wish for revenge? Or could it be that she did not dare attempt to take revenge?

Liu Xiaoli did not answer Chu Feng immediately. Instead, she

closed her eyes. After a long time passed, she opened her eyes again and said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, you don’t have to concern yourself with this matter.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. He had verified that it was not that Liu Xiaoli did not wish for revenge, but rather that she did not dare to attempt to take revenge.

That Liangchen’s Villa was most definitely not an ordinary power. Else, Liu Xiaoli wouldn’t be acting in such a manner where she would refuse to take revenge for the death of her master.

“I cannot ignore this matter. Even if you do not tell me about them, I will still not spare that Liangchen’s Villa,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you really shouldn’t concern yourself with this. This matter is personal to our Red Butterfly Society. Allow me to handle it. I do not wish to implicate you into it,” Liu Xiaoli started to urge Chu Feng against it.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked Liu Xiaoli in the eyes. He discovered that it was not that there was no anger in Liu Xiaoli’s eyes. Rather, her eyes were filled with rage.

Merely, she had deliberately concealed her anger and the urge to take revenge.

It turned out that it was not that she did not wish for revenge, nor was it that she did not dare to take revenge.

Rather, she had already made the decision as to how to take revenge.

Merely, she did not want Chu Feng to involve himself in it.

She was afraid of implicating Chu Feng.

Thus, she wanted to take revenge by herself.

## Chapter 2245 – Must Take Revenge

---

“Liu Xiaoli, I know that you are doing this with good intentions. I also know what you are thinking. However, you should know this.”

“Your master and I were but strangers. Yet, he was willing to sacrifice his life in order to save me.”

“I do not care whether he suffered from a serious illness and had limited time, it remains that he was willing to give up his life to save me.”

“To me, his grace and kindness are as enormous as the heavens themselves.”

“To me, Chu Feng, Senior Liu Chengkun was not only a benefactor, but rather a close relative.”

“And now, he has been killed. This is a hatred that I cannot live on with while ignoring.”

“Yet you, you actually want me to sit by and watch without doing anything? How could I possibly do that?!”

“Give me a reason! Give me a reason why I should sit by and watch without doing anything, why I should look on without lifting a finger, why I should remain indifferent toward Senior Liu’s death!” Chu Feng stared at Liu Xiaoli and shouted.

Liu Xiaoli did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face. The reason for that was because she did not know how to answer Chu Feng.

She was unable to provide a reason for Chu Feng to sit by and watch without doing anything.

She was unable provide a reason for Chu Feng to look on without lifting a finger.

She was also unable to provide a reason for Chu Feng to remain indifferent.

“Liu Xiaoli, it is impossible for me, Chu Feng, to ignore Senior Liu Chengkun’s revenge. If you still consider me a friend, tell me what you know concerning that Liangchen’s Villa.”

“However, if you do not wish to tell me, I will also not make things difficult for you. However, you should know that even if you do not tell me, I will still be able to find out about it from others,” Chu Feng said earnestly.

He actually did not blame Liu Xiaoli. Merely, he wanted her to understand that he would definitely involve himself in the matter.

Hearing those words, Liu Xiaoli grew completely quiet. It was not only her, those Red Butterfly Society’s survivors were also completely silent.

They did not expect that Chu Feng would place such a heavy importance on the grace Liu Chengkun had shown him.

At that moment, everyone felt Chu Feng’s absolute determination in taking revenge.

Even though they were all heartbroken by the death of Liu Chengkun and the others, they felt warmth in their hearts after hearing what Chu Feng said.

“Liangchen’s Villa only possesses power comparable to that of a third tier power. In fact, they are inferior to even our Red Butterfly Society.”

“Though Liangchen’s Villa’s Villa Master is the strongest person there, I have certainty that I can fight him.”

“However, that is not the important aspect. The strength of Liangchen’s Villa is not important at all. What is important is the background of the Liangchen’s Villa’s Villa Master.”

“His name is Ying Liangchen. He is a member of the Ying Heavenly Clan,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Ying Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng’s gaze changed upon hearing

those words. Perhaps Chu Feng might not be susceptible to the mentioning of other Heavenly Clans, however, the Ying Heavenly Clan possessed a special significance to Chu Feng.

After all, the Dark Hall's Hall Master who had wreaked havoc throughout the Holy Land of martialism had been a member of the Ying Heavenly Clan.

Chu Feng still remembered that man's name. He was called Ying Chong.

Although Ying Chong was already dead, Chu Feng's impression of the Ying Heavenly Clan was extremely bad due to the various evils Ying Chong had done.

And now, after Chu Feng discovered that the Liangchen's Villa's Villa Master was actually also from the Ying Heavenly Clan, his impression of the Ying Heavenly Clan grew even worse.

"That Ying Liangchen is not only a member of the Ying Heavenly Clan, he is also the biological son of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. He possesses an extremely grand status in the Ying Heavenly Clan."

"Furthermore, it is said that Ying Liangchen is the the most pampered son of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief."

"If something were to happen to him, the Ying Heavenly Clan would definitely spare no effort to kill the person that did it to him," Liu Xiaoli continued.

"If he is someone from the Ying Heavenly Clan, why did he not continue to properly stay in the Ying Heavenly Clan but instead stayed in that so-called Liangchen's Villa?" Chu Feng asked.

"That Ying Liangchen possesses a superb talent for martial cultivation. It is said that he is the most talented individual to have appeared in the Ying Heavenly Clan."

"However, he is not fond of martial cultivation, and instead enjoys sightseeing and amusements. He is fond of being free and

unconstrained, fond of living a life without worries.”

“Furthermore, as he possesses a special identity, very few people dare to do anything to him. Thus, his father decided to pamper him, and allows him to do as he wishes.”

“Over the years, Ying Liangchen had set up villas at many locations with beautiful sceneries all over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for that Liangchen’s Villa, it is one of the many villas he has established,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“So that’s the case. In that case, does he have powerful experts protecting him?” Chu Feng asked.

“While I cannot be certain about others, I can be certain that Ying Liangchen most definitely does not possess powerful experts from the Ying Heavenly Clan protecting him from the shadows.”

“The reason for that is because I’ve heard that what Ying Liangchen hated the most was being followed by the people from the Ying Heavenly Clan when he amuses himself outside.”

“Thus, there is also no one from the Ying Heavenly Clan in the many villas he has established. All of the people in them are outsiders.”

“Furthermore, as that Ying Liangchen is fond of controlling others, there is no one more powerful than him in his villas. He is always the most powerful person in his villas,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“If that is the case, it will be easy to take care of,” Chu Feng said.

After all, Liu Xiaoli had already declared that Ying Liangchen’s strength was on par with her own.

If Ying Liangchen was only that powerful, there would simply be no need for Liu Xiaoli to act. Chu Feng himself would be able to take care of Ying Liangchen. After all, the Golden Crane True Immortal had bestowed Chu Feng three Immortal Transformation Pellets.

“Although it is very likely that Ying Liangchen does not possess any guards protecting him from the shadows, I have heard that his father has requested an expert to set up a spirit formation on him.”

“When Ying Liangchen’s life is in danger, his father will be able to see all that he is seeing.”

“If anyone dares to attempt to take Ying Liangchen’s life, his father, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, would personally see it.”

“Thus, if one attempts to kill Ying Liangchen, they will become enemies with the entire Ying Heavenly Clan,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“I understand,” Chu Feng said. Then, he looked to Liu Xiaoli and said very earnestly, “Liu Xiaoli, I have only a single request that I hope that you will agree to.”

“What is it?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“Do not involve yourself in this matter. Let me take care of Ying Liangchen. No matter what, I will definitely kill him and avenge Senior Liu, as well as the others of the Red Butterfly Society that died,” Chu Feng said.

“No, I can agree to any other request. However, that request is something that I cannot agree to,” Liu Xiaoli refused immediately. Then, she stubbornly said, “Chu Feng, if you cannot sit and watch but remain indifferent, then I, Liu Xiaoli, cannot sit and watch but remain indifferent even more.”

“Hear me out,” Chu Feng said, “If you kill Ying Liangchen, you will definitely be chased by the Ying Heavenly Clan. As for you... you are not someone who can afford to offend the Ying Heavenly Clan.”

“As for me, at the very least, I am an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. You also saw what happened at the foot of Mount Cloud Crane. Even the four tier one powers tossed olive branches at me.”

“Even if I am to kill Ying Liangchen and cause the Ying Heavenly

Clan to want to kill me, I am able to join a first tier power for asylum. At that time, the Ying Heavenly Clan will not be able to do anything to me,”

“Although that might be the case, but... with your cultivation, how could you possibly take care of Ying Liangchen?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“You do not have to worry about that. I possess certainty of being able to kill Ying Liangchen,” Chu Feng said.



## Chapter 2246 – Strongest Genius

---

“This...”

Liu Xiaoli was slightly hesitant. After all, this matter was a private affair concerning their Red Butterfly Society. And, most importantly, she wanted to personally kill Ying Liangchen to avenge her master Liu Chengkun.

“If you trust me, leave this matter for me to handle. Even if you do not care about yourself, you should still consider them,” Chu Feng looked to the Red Butterfly Society’s survivors.

“Don’t forget, this Red Butterfly Society was entrusted to you by Senior Liu. The Red Butterfly Society must continue to expand. It absolutely cannot be allowed to be eliminated like this,” Chu Feng added.

Chu Feng’s words just so happened to reach Liu Xiaoli’s heart. Although Liu Chengkun had been killed, she absolutely could not allow the Red Butterfly Society to perish.

That held true especially now. The Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters had been destroyed, and practically all of their elites had been killed. If even she were to die, there would truly not be anyone that could continue to maintain the existence of the Red Butterfly Society.

If that were to happen, the Red Butterfly Society would likely collapse completely in a short period of time.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Liu Xiaoli bent her knees and kneeled in midair. She bowed to Chu Feng.

In response, the rest of the people from the Red Butterfly Society also kneeled and bowed toward Chu Feng.

“What are you all doing? Quickly, stand back up,” Chu Feng

hurriedly stepped forward to help Liu Xiaoli back up.

However, not only was Liu Xiaoli unwilling to get back up, she also started to kowtow to Chu Feng. She said, “Chu Feng, I, Liu Xiaoli, am currently unable to repay the grace you’ve shown our Red Butterfly Society. However, I will remember this kindness in my heart. In the future, I will definitely repay it.”

“Thank you, Lord Chu Feng, for the grace you’ve shown us today. We will remember it in our hearts, and definitely repay you in the future,” Following that, the survivors of the Red Butterfly Society began to kowtow to Chu Feng.

“Everyone, quickly, get back up. If someone were to see this, even if I kill Ying Liangchen by myself, the Red Butterfly Society will definitely not be able to escape responsibility.”

“Right now, your top priority is not thanking me. Rather, it is to reorganize your Red Butterfly Society,” Chu Feng said.

It was only after hearing those words that Liu Xiaoli and Red Butterfly Society’s survivors began to stand up.

Then, Chu Feng managed to gather the information on the location of Liangchen’s Villa from Liu Xiaoli. Then, he proceeded toward Liangchen’s Villa by himself.

As for Liu Xiaoli, she did not follow Chu Feng. Her top priority right now was to reorganize the Red Butterfly Society’s various branches that were scattered all around, and gather the remaining people from the Red Butterfly Society so as to prevent the complete dissolution of the Red Butterfly Society.

On their way to Liangchen’s Villa, Eggy asked, “Chu Feng, don’t you feel that this is a trap?”

“It’s naturally a trap. They have deliberately left survivors so that we and others will know that it was the Liangchen’s Villa’s Ying Liangchen that eliminated the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, do you think that it was really done by the Liangchen’s Villa?” Eggy asked.

“It was definitely done by the Liangchen’s Villa. Merely, they must have been incited by someone,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re saying that it’s Chu Luyang?” Eggy asked.

“Naturally. After all, Xu Yiyi’s master personally declared that Luyang’s Pavilion was not allowed to attack the Red Butterfly Society again. Else, the Sunset Cloud Valley would not let them get away with it.”

“However, with Chu Luyang’s temperament, how could he possibly leave the matter at that? That is why he went to ask the Liangchen’s Villa’s Villa Master, Ying Liangchen, to help him.”

“Like that, he will be able to extricate himself from responsibility, and also eliminate a thorn in his side. It could be said that he has killed two birds with one stone.”

“After all, no matter how powerful the Sunset Cloud Valley might be, they will, upon considering the relationship Ying Liangchen has with the Ying Heavenly Clan, not attack Ying Liangchen,” Chu Feng said.

“It seems that the two of us are truly thinking the same thing. Merely, how did that Chu Luyang managed to make that Ying Liangchen do his dirty work?” Eggy asked in a puzzled manner.

“Birds of a feather flock together. They most definitely knew one another to begin with. Neither one of them are good birds. As long as it is something that benefits their own interests, so what if they were to kill some people?” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, it would mean that after killing Ying Liangchen, Chu Luyang will be next?” Eggy asked.

“Even if Chu Luyang is not related to this matter, I will still not spare him,” Chu Feng said.

“Why?” Eggy asked.

“Because he attempted to kill me before,” Chu Feng said.

.....

Liangchen’s Villa. On a mountain range.

The mountain scenery was beautiful like a drawing. It was a very rare scene of beauty. This was also one of the reasons why Ying Liangchen had established Liangchen’s Villa here.

Although the surrounding scenery was fascinatingly beautiful, it was not the most important reason why Ying Liangchen was fond of this place.

The reason why Ying Liangchen was so fond of this place that he even named the villa after himself was because this place was filled with beauties.

Gathered in Liangchen’s Villa were countless beauties. To put it simply, this was none other than the place where Ying Liangchen went to to seek sexual pleasures.

Inside a palace hall in Liangchen’s Villa. At this moment, this place was filled with women. They were completely naked, and the entire scene revolved around two men.

Although it was a very unbearable sight, all of the women present did not show the slightest trace of shame. It was as if they had grown accustomed to it. They were using all their capabilities to please those two men.

As for the two men, they were deeply enjoying the pleasures.

However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that one of the two men was actually a white-haired old man.

That old man possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Ancestor. He was the villa manager of Liangchen’s Villa. He could be considered to be one of Ying Liangchen’s trusted aides.

As for the other individual, he was a young man with a head of

blue hair. This man possessed a cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. He was none other than Ying Liangchen.

Ying Liangchen was currently sharing his women with his villa manager.

This could be considered to be one of Ying Liangchen's kinks. Of course, even though he was willing to share, those that he would share were all women that he had already toyed with.

In other words, to Ying Liangchen, those women could not be considered to be his women. Rather, they were only a group of playthings.

“Lord Villa Master, why did you decide to help that Chu Luyang? Furthermore, you even deliberately left people behind to inform everyone that it was us who extinguished the Red Butterfly Society. To our Liangchen's Villa, that would be very detrimental.”

“After all, that Red Butterfly Society is a famous group of fugitives. They will likely come to frantically take revenge on us in the future,” The villa manager asked in a puzzled manner. Worry could be heard in his voice.

“You are mistaken with that. What sort of power is their Red Butterfly Society? They are a power that stated that they will rid the world of evils on behalf of the heavens.”

“As for my Liangchen's Villa, we have done a lot of malicious deeds to capture women for me. Yet, why did the Red Butterfly Society dare to make Luyang's Pavilion their enemy, yet not dare to make my Liangchen's Villa their enemy?” Ying Liangchen asked.

“This... this subordinate is slow-witted. Lord Villa Master, please explain it to me,” The villa manager said.

“That's simple to explain. They are not afraid of my Liangchen's Villa, nor are they afraid of me, Ying Liangchen. Rather, they are afraid of the Ying Heavenly Clan standing behind me; they are

afraid of my father.”

“Thus, in the end, the Red Butterfly Society is a power that only dares to bully the weak and fears the strong. That is the reason why they dared to make Luyang’s Pavilion their enemies, but not make us their enemies.”

“Thus, you can rest assured. The Red Butterfly Society will not dare to pick a quarrel against my Liangchen’s Villa. Even if they dare to come, I will make them suffer the consequences. With this Young Master here, you can rest assured.”

“No matter what, this Young Master is the second strongest genius to have appeared in the Ying Heavenly Clan,” Ying Liangchen patted his chest and said confidently.

“Second strongest? Lord Villa Master, please don’t be modest. I have heard that you are the strongest genius to have ever appeared in the Ying Heavenly Clan,” The villa manager said.

“No, I am not the strongest. The strongest is my younger brother,” Ying Liangchen said.

“Younger brother? Your younger brother actually possesses even better talent in martial cultivation than you?” The villa manager asked curiously.

“His name is Ying Chong,” Ying Liangchen said.

## Chapter 2247 – Overwhelming Anger

---

“Ying Chong? Lord Villa Master, why has this subordinate never heard that name before?” The villa manager said.

“You naturally would have never heard of his name before,” Ying Liangchen smiled lightly. He said, “Do you know why I am so talented, yet my father still allowed me to go outside instead of keeping me in the Ying Heavenly Clan to nurture me?” Ying Liangchen asked.

“This subordinate is slow-witted. Lord Villa Master, please explain!!” The villa manager said curiously.

“Actually, it is not that my father has never thought about nurturing me. In fact, before I was five hundred and eighteen years old, I had been kept in the Ying Heavenly Clan the entire time. My entire daily life would always revolve around martial cultivation.”

“Even though all of my clansmen knew that I did not possess much interest in martial cultivation, my father still insisted on fully nurturing me. The reason for that is all because my talent was the best in the history of our Ying Heavenly Clan.”

“However, when I was five hundred and eighteen years old, my younger brother Ying Chong finally grew into an adult. He took the test of talent and obtained a superb result, a result that surpassed even my own.”

“Furthermore, ever since my younger brother Ying Chong has started martial cultivation, he has not only displayed his outstanding talent for martial cultivation, he has also display his adoration for martial cultivation, as well as his perseverance on the path of martial cultivation.”

“Ever since that day, my father began to wholeheartedly nurture my younger brother Ying Chong. As for my younger brother Ying Chong, his performance began to satisfy my father and the

clansmen more and more. As a result, I obtained my freedom,” Ying Liangchen said.

“Never would I have expected that such a genius has actually appeared in the Ying Heavenly Clan. In that case, in the near future, your younger brother will definitely show his face in worldly affairs. Once that is to happen, he will definitely amaze the entire world,” The old villa manager said.

“That’s right. That is also what our Ying Heavenly Clan thought too. Unfortunately, no one will ever get to know his name again. Even if they do, very few people would remember him,” When saying those words, Ying Liangchen revealed a regretful and sorrowful expression.

“Why?” The villa manager was confused.

“I also do not know about the specific details. I’ve merely heard that he had entered a certain ancient remnant to train, and ended up being consumed by a spirit formation. Calculating it, it should have been several years since that happened.”

“Although I did not have much contact with him, and did not possess much sentiment toward him, it remained that it was his existence that allowed me to enjoy such an unrestrained livelihood.”

“Thus, I am also quite saddened by his death. After all, he was still so young,” Ying Liangchen said.

“The two of you are, after all, blood brothers. As Lord Villa Master is a loyal and true individual, you will naturally feel sad,” That villa manager said.

“Heh...” Hearing the villa manager saying that he was a loyal and true individual, Ying Liangchen smiled a profound smile. Then, he said, “It is precisely because my younger brother has died that my father turned his vision to me once again. The days when I can continue to live this freely will not last long.”



“That is why I agreed to help Chu Luyang do that sort of thing. I only helped him because I fancied those beauties in his palace,” Ying Liangchen said.

“Although this subordinate dislikes that Chu Luyang, it is true that there were truly many top quality women in his palace,” When mentioning this matter, the old villa manager revealed an expression of lust. He even started to gulp down his saliva in excitement.

“Haha, rest assured, after this Young Master is done playing with them, I will bestow them to you,” Ying Liangchen said.

“Thank you, Lord Villa Master,” The old villa manager hurriedly bowed as he spoke excitedly.

.....

Right at this moment, Chu Feng arrived before Liangchen’s Villa.

After arriving at Liangchen’s Villa, the anger in Chu Feng’s heart burst forth instantly.

He saw several heads being hung above the entrance of Liangchen’s Villa. Those were all the heads of the Red Butterfly Society’s elders. Among them was Liu Chengkun’s head.

Although they were only heads now, Chu Feng was able to determine through the bruises and scars on the faces of the heads that Liu Chengkun and the others had been tormented miserably before being killed.

“Clank~~~”

Chu Feng pulled out his Magma Emperor Sword and pointed it at Liangchen’s Villa. Then, he shouted, “All the people of Liangchen’s Villa, listen carefully! You can either scam or die!!!”

Once those words were spoken, heaven and earth started to tremble. It was like there were thunderclaps hovering in the sky as Chu Feng’s words echoed in the air.

It was not only Liangchen's Villa; the entire mountain range was startled by Chu Feng.

“What boldness! Who is it that dares to behave atrociously in our Liangchen's Villa?!!”

Right after Chu Feng said those words, not only did a single person not escape from Liangchen's Villa, but over a hundred guards rushed out of Liangchen's Villa. They all had fiendish appearances, and immediately surrounded Chu Feng with the intention of taking his life.

Upon seeing those people, Chu Feng knew that not a single one of them are good people, that all of them had done all sorts of evil.

After all, if they were truly good, how could they be willing to serve someone like Ying Liangchen?

At this moment, Chu Feng was filled with rage to begin with. Upon seeing this bunch of evildoers, his anger grew even more furious.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The Magma Emperor Sword Chu Feng held in his hand began to move about. Immediately countless flame rays were shot forth in all directions.

In merely an instant, the Liangchen's Villa guards that had come out to attack Chu Feng were all killed.

At the same time, the flame rays shot downward toward the villa, engulfing it in raging flames.

“Eggy, help me kill them. Leave none alive. Kill all of them,” As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his world spirit gate and released Eggy.

“Rest assured, this Queen's most beloved exercise is slaughter,” Her Lady Queen smiled sweetly. Then, she clenched her lily-white hand. Immediately, dark black gaseous flames began to rise from her hand. Then, the gaseous flames turned into a three meter-long

black scythe.

With the scythe in hand, Her Lady Queen began her massacre. Not to mention those guards that rushed out to attack her, even the people that were planning to flee were not spared by Her Lady Queen. They all received miserable deaths.

Her Lady Queen did not spare a single living creature that appeared in her line of sight. Even the exquisite buildings in the villa were destroyed by Her Lady Queen.

Even though Her Lady Queen was as beautiful as a fairy, her methods were more ruthless and savage than even the methods of demons.

At the moment when Her Lady Queen was wantonly wreaking destruction and massacring the people of Liangchen's Villa, Chu Feng descended from the sky and arrived before the heads of Liu Chengkun and the others.

With a face filled with apology, he bowed to Liu Chengkun and the others' heads, "Seniors, Chu Feng has returned late."

Chu Feng knew that those heads were not fake, that they were indeed Liu Chengkun and the others' heads. However, Chu Feng felt that the only remains of Liu Chengkun and the others' corpses must be their heads.

Thus, after he bowed to the heads, he used his world spirit techniques to form bodies for them so that they would appear to be whole.

Then, he used his world spirit techniques to create many coffins, and placed their corpses into the coffins before placing the coffins into his Cosmos Sack.

"Wow! I'm not dreaming right? The Red Butterfly Society's President is actually this beautiful?" Suddenly, a lascivious laugh was heard. It was Ying Liangchen.

At this moment, Ying Liangchen was covered with his Thunder

Armor, and Thunder Wings were growing from his back. His cultivation had already increased from rank seven Half Martial Ancestor to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

However, it remained that he was someone who possessed a Heavenly Bloodline. Thus, like Chu Feng, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. In other words, after his current cultivation had increased to that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, his actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank three Martial Ancestors.

## Chapter 2248 – Debauchery

---

The reason why Ying Liangchen came out with his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings unleashed was because he had originally thought that it was the Red Butterfly Society that had come to attack his Liangchen's Villa, and furiously rushed out with his villa manager with the intention of massacring the attackers.

However, after he saw Her Lady Queen, his eyes immediately flashed with light. He was bewildered by Her Lady Queen's beauty, and even started drooling.

It was not only him; even that old villa manager who stood behind him had the same reaction as him.

Those two fellows were truly outrageously bold in their lust; they were actually thinking indecent thoughts toward Her Lady Queen.

"I am your ancestor," Her Lady Queen revealed an ominous glint. Holding the scythe in her hand, she hacked down, sending a blade ray toward Ying Liangchen.

"Boom~~~"

That blade ray was extremely powerful, and sliced through even space itself.

However, even though Ying Liangchen was faced with this sort of power, he merely raised his hand and waved at the blade ray. Immediately, a strong burst of wind was brought forth, forcibly scattering Her Lady Queen's slash.

"My dear beauty, you are truly hot-spirited. However, this Young Master is precisely fond of difficult and untamed horses like you."

"Come. This Young Master will definitely subdue you. I will ride the enchanting untamed horse that is you."

Ying Liangchen laughed lasciviously. At the same time, he extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Immediately,

boundless martial power turned into countless enormous hands. Like dragons soaring into the sky, those hands soared into the sky and surrounded Her Lady Queen.

Seeing this scene, Her Lady Queen started to frown. Even though her Lady Queen possessed overwhelming battle power, her cultivation was truly too weak.

While she was able to easily take care of someone like Hong Xi, it was difficult for her to handle someone with battle power on par with an ordinary rank three Martial Ancestor like Ying Liangchen.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at this moment, a figure suddenly shot up from the ground and arrived before Her Lady Queen, blocking her.

That person shot forth a fist strike and completely shattered all of the vicious enormous hands.

That person was Chu Feng. Merely, there was an enormous difference to the current Chu Feng compared to before.

His entire body was glimmering with twilight. That was Immortal-level spirit power.

Merely, the Immortal-level spirit power that surrounded him appeared different from ordinary Immortal-level spirit power. It appeared to resemble the aura of an Immortal.

Being enveloped by this Immortal's aura, Chu Feng's cultivation was no longer that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, it had increased to that of a rank three Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng had taken the first Immortal Transformation Pellet.

“Who are you?!” Ying Liangchen revealed an annoyed expression with killing intent filling his eyes as he looked to Chu Feng, who had appeared out of nowhere.

“I am called Chu Feng,” Chu Feng replied coldly.

“So you're that Chu Feng. Brat, you are truly bold. You actually

dare to stir up troubles at my Liangchen's Villa?!"

"However, that's fine. You've saved this Young Master the time to go and capture you."

After finding out Chu Feng's identity, Ying Liangchen revealed a cold smile. Evidently, he had heard about Chu Feng.

However, more clearly than anything, Ying Liangchen simply did not place Chu Feng in his eyes at all.

"I'll ask you this. Were you the one that killed the people of the Red Butterfly Society?" Chu Feng asked.

"Yes, I killed them. What about it?" Ying Liangchen replied in a disapproving manner.

"What about it? Those who owe a debt shall repay their debt. Those who kill another shall pay with their life. Today, I, Chu Feng, will make you pay with your life."

Before Chu Feng even finished saying those words, he had already slashed forth with his Magma Emperor Sword. Immediately, a pillar of flame soared forth. Like a sea of flame, it surged toward Ying Liangchen.

Even though Chu Feng's Heavenly Bloodline, his Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and heaven-defying battle power were all restricted, he had, through the miraculous power of the Immortal Transformation Pellet, turned into an actual rank three Martial Ancestor.

As such, his attack was no small matter at all.

"Brat, don't you think that this Young Master is a pushover. This Master Ying is the strongest genius of the Ying Heavenly Clan!"

Although Chu Feng's attack was very powerful, Ying Liangchen was not afraid at all. He flipped his wrist, and an enormous green hammer appeared in his hand.

That was also an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Even though

Ying Liangchen was quite thin, he was able to unleash extremely powerful might using that enormous green hammer.

“Boom~~~”

With a smash of the hammer, space started to crumble. Chu Feng's attack was also destroyed.

“Heeaahh!!!”

Following that, Ying Liangchen shouted loudly, and then he actually threw his enormous green hammer at Chu Feng.

“Roar~~~”

When the enormous green hammer was thrown at Chu Feng, it started to roar. Soon, an enormous monster appeared.

It was a huge humanoid monster with green armor covering its entire body. The giant monster's body shone with lingering green light. It possessed overwhelming power. As it moved its mountain-sized fist, it rushed to attack Chu Feng.

Even though that monster was enormous, its speed was extremely fast. The might of its punch rushed rapidly toward Chu Feng.

“Humph.”

However, faced with this attack from the Incomplete Ancestral Armament, Chu Feng snorted coldly. He clenched his five fingers into a fist and shot forth a punch.

The size difference of the two fists was truly enormous.

After the two fists collided, a loud ‘boom’ was heard. Immediately, energy ripples began to spread all around. Chu Feng did not move in the slightest. However, Ying Liangchen's Incomplete Ancestral Armament stepped onto the mountain, and then began to take several more steps back, stomping countless palaces to the ground in the process. In fact, its enormous body caused even the mountain range to be full of cracks.



“That guy, how could he be this strong?!”

“That bastard Chu Luyang actually dared to deceive me?!”

Upon seeing how powerful Chu Feng was, Ying Liangchen was both shocked and furious.

He was shocked because he had heard from Chu Luyang that Chu Feng was merely a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

He was furious because he felt that Chu Luyang had deceived him. After all, the Chu Feng before him was an actual rank three Martial Ancestor.

It would be one thing if he were a rank three Half Martial Ancestor. Yet, he was a rank three Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, his battle power was so strong, simply on par with his own even.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was emitting overwhelming killing intent. He had come with ill intentions. It was clear that he planned to kill him.

Even though Ying Liangchen was extremely confident, he would still feel panic when faced with such a maverick as an opponent.

“I do not have the time to bother wasting with you. Magma Emperor, I’ll leave this guy to you.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng tossed the Magma Emperor sword he held in his hand. Immediately, blazing fire filled the sky as the overwhelmingly domineering Magma Emperor appeared before that giant monster.

“Come, little guy. This Emperor will properly teach you what is actual fear.”

The Magma Emperor and Chu Feng were linked with one another. Thus, as Chu Feng became more powerful, he too would become more powerful. Right now, with the assistance of the Immortal Transformation Pellet, Chu Feng’s cultivation had reached that of a rank three Martial Ancestor. As such, the Magma

Emperor's strength had also increased enormously.

The Magma Emperor's every punch and kick would give rise to surging waves of flame. In no time, he had completely turned this region into a frightening sea of flames. The flames were going to burn everything in their surroundings.

Faced with the Magma Emperor's ferocious attacks, that Ying Liangchen's Incomplete Ancestral Armament was actually unable to match up to it. At this moment, it had entered a state of absolute inferiority.

"How could this be? My Green Flame Emperor Hammer is actually no match for that fiery humanoid?" Ying Liangchen became even more astonished upon seeing the scene before him.

"You do not have the time to be worrying about someone else," At this moment, Chu Feng had already arrived before Ying Liangchen. Furthermore, he shot forth a punch aimed directly at Ying Liangchen.

"Damn it!" Everything had happened too suddenly. Ying Liangchen was unable to react in time. As such, Chu Feng's punch landed on Ying Liangchen's chest.

## Chapter 2249 – Hair Stand Up In Anger

---

“Boom~~~”

The punch knocked Ying Liangchen several tens of thousands of meters away, knocking him out of the entire mountain range.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still chased after him, unwilling to let him get away. Soon, he arrived before Ying Liangchen once again.

Merely, when Chu Feng saw the currently Ying Liangchen, his gaze changed to reveal an expression of surprise.

Even if Chu Feng’s earlier punch had not been powerful enough to kill Ying Liangchen, it should have been enough to seriously injure him.

However, other than a few bloodstains, Ying Liangchen was practically uninjured.

“Bastard, seems like you have some abilities. If it wasn’t for the fact that I had this, I might have actually been beaten to death by you.”

Ying Liangchen took out an item from under his clothes. It was a pearl. Merely, that pearl had already been shattered.

Needless to say, the power behind Chu Feng’s punch had been absorbed by that pearl. It was because of that pearl that Ying Liangchen was able to stand before Chu Feng practically uninjured.

“Chu Feng, you shouldn’t be a relative of that Liu Chengkun, no? So, why are you fighting for him?” Ying Liangchen asked. From his appearance, it seemed that he did not wish to continue to be tangled with Chu Feng, and was trying to make peace.

“Enough of your rubbish!” However, Chu Feng’s killing intent had already been unleashed. As such, he would not make peace.

With a loud shout, Chu Feng began to rush toward Ying Liangchen to attack him again.

“Bastard, do you know who I am? I am the son of the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief! If you dare to kill me, my father will not spare you!” While fighting against Chu Feng, Ying Liangchen started to shout threats at Chu Feng.

“I, Chu Feng, have come here today precisely so that I can take your dog life,” Chu Feng spoke coldly.

“It seemed that you are insistent on killing me today. Since that is the case, I will also not act leniently toward you anymore!”

Ying Liangchen snorted coldly. Then, boundless power surged forth from his body. His power swept forth in all directions. Following that, boundless power surged into the sky.

Soon, the void started to twist as an enormous monster appeared in the sky.

It was a giant creature, so enormous that it hid the sky and covered the earth. Its power was incomparably frightening. As wave upon wave of its frightening oppressive might swept forth, Chu Feng felt that his bones were being jolted to a crackle.

It was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. This Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was something that Chu Feng had seen the Dark Hall’s Hall Master use before. Merely, the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had not fully mastered it. Furthermore, as his cultivation had been too weak, this had made it so that only an enormous mouth had appeared.

However, that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was now being fully unleashed by Ying Liangchen. It took the form of a giant creature.

That beast was so enormous that it covered the entire sky. It was both oppressive and powerful. It was simply incomparable to the time when the Dark Hall’s Hall Master had unleashed that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Originally, I had thought about giving you a chance and sparing your life. However, never would I have expected that you would refuse a toast, only to be forced to drink a forfeit. You have forced this Young Master to unleash my strongest skill.”

“Bastard who has overestimated his ability, drop dead! This is the disparity between you and this Young Master!” Ying Liangchen shouted. Then, that enormous beast started to descend from the sky.

As it descended, its frightening might also descended from the sky. That oppressive might was going to crush Chu Feng to death.

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng raised his hand and shot forth a punch. Immediately, boundless power soared into the sky.

“Roar~~~”

Following a loud clamor, that descending giant creature actually let out a miserable howl of grief.

Then, with a loud ‘boom,’ that enormous beast shattered into pieces.

At the same time, the surrounding space and the ground started to shatter nonstop as a boundless power started to engulf the surroundings, devouring everything in its path.

Chu Feng’s fist strike was no ordinary fist strike. Instead, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.

Even though the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation appeared to be a very simple technique, it was extremely domineering and incomparably fierce.

Ying Liangchen’s martial skill was actually very powerful too. In terms of martial skills, the two martial skills were actually equally matched.

In terms of battle power, as Ying Liangchen was an extraordinary genius, his battle power could also be said to be on par with Chu Feng's.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to defeat Ying Liangchen's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill when he possessed the same battle power and martial skills was actually all because of the bamboo slip in his dantian.

Back then, Chu Feng had managed to obtain comprehension from the bamboo slip, and achieve a whole new understanding of martial skills.

That had led to the power of Chu Feng's martial skills increasing enormously. That was also the reason why Chu Feng's strength greatly surpassed those with the same battle power as him.

"Impossible! This is impossible! I spent a total of three hundred years to master that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill!"

"Even when faced with Emperor Taboo Martial Skills that have also been mastered, I should still be able to fight against them!"

"How could you break through my Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?! Furthermore, you managed to destroy it that easily! How could that be possible?!"

Astonishment filled Ying Liangchen's face. As he spoke those words, mouthfuls of blood were spraying from his mouth nonstop.

Although Chu Feng's fist had not struck him, and had instead destroyed his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, the power of Chu Feng's fist was simply too strong.

Merely the aftermath of Chu Feng's attack was sufficient to jolt Ying Liangchen to a seriously injured state.

At this moment, Ying Liangchen's entire body was covered with blood. He had changed beyond recognition and fallen to the ground. He was powerless to even move. He had completely lost his ability to continue fighting.

“Don’t kill me. Don’t kill me. Chu Feng, speak your condition. Whatever it might be, I will definitely satisfy you,” Seeing that Chu Feng was walking toward him with overwhelming killing intent, Ying Liangchen was completely terrified.

“I have one thing I need to ask you,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it? Go ahead and ask. As long as you don’t kill me, I will answer all your questions,” Ying Liangchen said.

“There were neither grievances or grudges between you and the Red Butterfly Society; why did you kill them? Did someone prompt you to kill them?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. I was incited to kill them by someone. It was Chu Luyang. It was Luyang’s Pavilion’s Chu Luyang. He had sent me a letter telling me the location of the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters, and asked me to help him eliminate the Red Butterfly Society.”

“I will not deceive you. I have his personally written letter. There is also his origin life seal imprinted onto it. If you don’t trust me, you can look at it yourself,” Ying Liangchen was truly scared. He took out the letter and handed it to Chu Feng even without Chu Feng interrogating him.

Chu Feng extended his hand, and the letter flew into his hand.

Upon opening the letter, he discovered that the letter really did contain Chu Luyang’s aura, as well as his origin life seal.

Even if one’s aura could be forged, one’s origin life seal could not be forged. Thus... that letter was most definitely written by Chu Luyang.

The contents of the letter were pretty much what Chu Feng had thought they would be. Chu Luyang had requested Ying Liangchen’s assistance in eliminating the Red Butterfly Society’s management elders.

Of course, he had also mentioned in the letter to eliminate Chu

Feng and the Red Butterfly Society's President should Ying Liangchen encounter them.

"You damned bastard!" After Chu Feng finished reading the contents of the letter, his rage burst forth once again.

The reason for that was because the benefits for Ying Liangchen that Chu Luyang mentioned in his letter was that he would allow Ying Liangchen to choose beauties from his Luyang's Pavilion.

For the sake of those beauties, Ying Liangchen had decided to go to the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters to massacre them. His action truly caused one's hair to stand up in anger.

"You actually decided to massacre so many innocent people for the sake of satisfying your own lust?! You are truly devoid of conscience! Even if I were to kill you ten thousand times, it would not be enough to alleviate the hatred in my heart!!!" Chu Feng pointed at Ying Liangchen and shouted furiously.



## Chapter 2250 – Killing Even God

---

“Don’t, don’t, don’t, please don’t kill me, please don’t kill me. Chu Feng, I admit that my heart was possessed by a ghost, that I should be killed...”

“I regret my decisions now. Unfortunately, my regret is useless. I beg of you, please give me another chance. Give me a condition, no, give me ten conditions, a hundred conditions.”

“You can demand as many conditions as you want. As long as you don’t kill me, I will definitely satisfy all of your conditions!” Ying Liangchen was actually so terrified by Chu Feng that he actually started weeping. A man who had been alive for hundreds of years was actually so scared by Chu Feng that tears covered his face. From this, it could be seen how much of a coward he was.

“I do have a condition. My condition is to take your dog life,” Chu Feng said.

“You really are so insistent on killing me all for the sake of that bunch of old farts? You’re willing to make an enemy of our Ying Heavenly Clan all for the sake of that bunch of old farts?” Ying Liangchen was unable to understand Chu Feng’s mindset.

“In my eyes, the lives of that group of people that you considered to be old farts were much more valuable than your dog life,” Chu Feng did not wish to bother speaking superfluous words with Ying Liangchen. Thus, he approached Ying Liangchen and held his hand into a fist. He was planning to kill Ying Liangchen.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, a strange fluctuation suddenly emitted from within Ying Liangchen’s body. Then, that fluctuation took a humanoid form.

It was a middle-aged man wearing a blueish-black gown. He also had a head of blue hair. On his head was a headdress with the

character ‘Ying.’

Although it was only an image, Chu Feng could tell that middle-aged man’s actual body should possess an extremely powerful strength.

Likely, he should be the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Head.

“Father, save me, save me! He’s planning to kill me!” Upon seeing that middle-aged man’s image, Ying Liangchen hurriedly started to cry for help. His cry revealed the identity of that man. Sure enough, he was his father, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Who are you?” Compared to Ying Liangchen, his father was much more calm. Like a hawk, he stared at Chu Feng with his eyes.

Although his image did not contain any cultivation, Chu Feng was able to sense how powerful he was.

Powerful. He was most definitely an expert with strength greatly surpassing Chu Feng’s. Even though he was only an image, and did not possess any cultivation, he was able to threaten Chu Feng with only his imposing airs.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng possessed a resolute mindset, and was not someone that would be intimidated. Thus, Chu Feng replied calmly, “I am called Chu Feng.”

“Why do you want to kill my son?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Your son has killed my relatives. I plan to kill him for revenge. Is there anything wrong with that?” Chu Feng said.

“Of course! He is the son of our Ying Heavenly Clan, a person who possesses our Ying Heavenly Clan’s bloodline. How could I allow you to kill him?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said with a cold voice.

Killing intent. Even though his image did not contain any

cultivation, Chu Feng felt enormous killing intent from his image.

“Unfortunately, you have no means of stopping me.”

“Furthermore, your image will not be able to scare me. If you were truly worried about your son, you should never have allowed him out to commit evil.”

“However, it is too late now. I am insistent on killing him,” Chu Feng said those words and then raised his fist again. Boundless martial power began to gather in his fist. The surrounding space started to tremble. The ground below him started to shatter.

The power behind his fist was sufficient to kill the already seriously injured Ying Liangchen.

Chu Feng was planning to kill Ying Liangchen right before the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, right before his father. He wanted the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief to personally see his son being killed.

“Stop! Chu Feng, stop immediately! If you dare to kill my son, even if I must search till the ends of the earth, I will still find you!”

“Our Ying Heavenly Clan will definitely not let you get away with this! Not only you, all those related to you will be killed too!”

“Not only will you end up losing your life because of your actions today, you will also implicate all those that you are acquainted with. They will all end up losing their lives because of your actions today,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief threatened fiercely.

“Haha...” However, faced with the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s threats, Chu Feng laughed. Chu Feng’s laughter was abnormally cold. There was not the slightest trace of emotion.

Liu Chengkun had provided enormous grace to Chu Feng. Not only did Chu Feng considered him as a senior, he even considered him as his own relative.

Chu Feng had proceeded to Mount Cloud Crane and worked so

hard to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist not because he wanted to obtain stronger power.

His main purpose was so that he could treat Liu Chengkun's illness. Chu Feng had already made the preparations that, regardless of how long it would take, he would definitely help Liu Chengkun and cure his illness.

However, after Chu Feng finally became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist through meticulous effort, he did not even have the opportunity to help Liu Chengkun cure his illness.

The reason for all this was because of that Ying Liangchen.

If it wasn't for him, how could Liu Chengkun be dead?

Chu Feng's hatred could only be removed by Ying Liangchen's blood.

Not to mention that Ying Liangchen was merely the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's son, even if he was a god, Chu Feng would still kill him.

Even if he was the heavens themselves, Chu Feng must still eliminate him.

“Boom~~~”

With a swing of his hand, Chu Feng's fist landed explosively. Before Ying Liangchen could even utter a scream, he was shattered to pieces by Chu Feng's punch.

“Chu Feng, you will regret this! You will regret your actions today!”

Even though Ying Liangchen had died, his father's image was still present.

At this moment, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had an extremely ugly expression on his face. His lips were trembling, and his eyes filled with a cold light as he stared fiercely at Chu Feng.

Anger. Chu Feng was able to sense that the Ying Heavenly Clan's

Clan Chief was extremely furious; that he was like a soon-to-erupt volcano.

His killing intent was many times stronger than before. It was truly frightening.

Unfortunately, no matter how frightening his killing intent might be, he was unable to do anything to Chu Feng.

“I will wait for you to come find me for revenge. However, remember this; be sure you can kill me, otherwise... I will definitely kill you.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he flipped his sleeve. Immediately, boundless spirit power surged forth.

His spirit power started to tear the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s image apart.

Although Chu Feng was unable to do anything to the image of the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief with his martial power, he was able to destroy the image with spirit power.

“Bastard! You damned animal!!!” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief roared angrily.

However, his voice was growing softer and softer. Soon, it had disappeared completely. His image had been completely shattered by Chu Feng.

.....

At the same time. In a certain palace in the Ying Heavenly Clan.

The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was standing there. His posture was exactly the same as his image’s posture.

Rage was burning in his eyes. He was clenching his fists so hard that crackling sounds could be heard. His surging killing intent caused his clansmen to be so afraid that they did not dare to speak. In fact, no one dared to ask their Clan Chief exactly what had happened.

The reason for that was because they all knew that this matter was most definitely related to Ying Liangchen.

However, the surging anger of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief did not explode.

He actually managed to forcibly contain his anger. His fortitude was definitely not something that ordinary people possessed.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief extended his finger and used it to draw in the empty space before him.

Soon, Royal level spirit power formed an image in that space. It was the image of Chu Feng. However, it was very vivid and lifelike. It was as if Chu Feng were actually standing there.

“That man is called Chu Feng. All of you, go and investigate everything about that Chu Feng,” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

“Yes, Milord!!!” The crowd present all said in uniform. After bowing, they all withdrew from the room and started to investigate Chu Feng's identity.

In the blink of an eye, only the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief remained in this vast palace.

“Chu Feng, what a Chu Feng, I will definitely dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!” The Ying Heavenly Clan Chief spoke as he gnashed his teeth angrily.

# Chapter 2251 – Beat The Grass To Scare The Snake

---

After killing Ying Liangchen, Chu Feng returned to Liangchen's Villa.

At this moment, Chu Feng discovered that Liangchen's Villa has been completely leveled to the ground. All that remained were the fragments of buildings, as well as thick smoke.

Practically everyone in Liangchen's Villa has been killed. Her Lady Queen was truly ruthless in her attacks.

At this moment, only two figures were in Liangchen's Villa. One was Her Lady Queen Eggy. As for the other, it was the Magma Emperor.

“Chu Feng, what do you think? This Emperor not only took care of this hammer, I also helped this girl kill that old fart, helped her refine that old fart's source energy.”

“You must consider this a meritorious service made by this Emperor. In the future, once you find a better weapons, you must set this Emperor free.” On the Magma Emperor's enormous palm was a hammer. That hammer was Ying Liangchen's hammer.

“Set you free? Set you free so that you can go and bring harm upon the innocent?” Chu Feng asked.

“As long as you set me free, I will definitely not go around to willfully slaughter the innocent. Where is this? This is the Outer World! This Emperor also wanted to properly experience this marvelous world,” The Magma Emperor said with an expression of anticipation.

“Rest assured, as long as you follow me properly, I will let you experience this world,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and grabbed. The Magma Emperor returned to the form of the Magma Emperor Sword and arrived in Chu Feng's grasp.

Chu Feng was naturally capable of returning freedom to the Magma Emperor. Merely, he did not trust that Magma Emperor at all.

For example, even its action today in assisting Eggy eliminate that Liangchen's Villa old manager was only because it was controlled by Chu Feng. If it were not controlled by Chu Feng, Chu Feng did not think that it would have assisted Her Lady Queen in eliminating that old villa manager.

With the nature of that Magma Emperor, it would already be decent should it not attempt to attack Her Lady Queen.

After all, the Magma Emperor was an existence that had nearly destroyed the entire Holy Land of Martialism back in the day. In the end, it was an existence that possessed a demonic nature.

No, to be exact, it was a demon.

"Chu Feng, it seems that you've settled that Ying Liangchen?" Eggy walked over and asked.

"Mn. He is settled," Chu Feng nodded.

"Then, where are we going to now?" Eggy asked.

"Luyang's Pavilion," Chu Feng said.

"Right away?" Eggy was surprised. She naturally knew that Chu Feng wanted to kill Chu Luyang. Yet, she had never expected him to be this impatient.

"Even though it was Ying Liangchen and the people of his Liangchen's Villa that killed Senior Liu and the other elders of the Red Butterfly Society, the main perpetrator is Chu Luyang."

"I do not wish to give that animal another day to live," Chu Feng said.

"Since that's the case, let's kill to our satisfaction," After Her Lady Queen said those words, she returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space through the world spirit gate.



As for Chu Feng, he began to proceed for Luyang's Pavilion directly.

Actually, with that letter in hand, Chu Feng could have directly handed that letter to Xu Yiyi's master and have him eliminate Chu Luyang.

However, Chu Feng was afraid of the situation changing. Furthermore, he wanted to personally eliminate Chu Luyang. Thus, he decided to act first and report later, to kill Chu Luyang first before mentioning what had happened to the Sunset Cloud Valley.

After all, no matter what, Luyang's Pavilion was a subsidiary power of the Sunset Cloud Valley. As such, Chu Feng could not kill Chu Luyang without reason or cause. If he were to kill Chu Luyang, he needed to provide a reasonable justification.

However, as Chu Feng possessed that letter, it had become very easy for him to explain.

Chu Feng did not cause any alarm upon arriving at Luyang's Pavilion. Instead, he disguised himself as a guard of Luyang's Pavilion and infiltrated into it.

He was planning to survey whether or not Chu Luyang was in Luyang's Pavilion. Only if Chu Luyang was present would Chu Feng reveal himself. After all, his only target was Chu Luyang.

At this moment, Chu Feng had arrived at the depths of Luyang's Pavilion. Furthermore, through the use of his Heaven's Eyes, he discovered Chu Luyang in a heavily guarded palace ahead.

Chu Luyang was taking a noon nap. Women surrounded his side. However, to Chu Feng's fury, there were actually children among those females.

That Chu Luyang was truly scum. He actually even defiled children. He was simply worse than an animal.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. "Chu Luyang, get the hell out

here!!!” Following that, he raised his hand and shot a punch at the palace.

“Buzz~~~”

However, his sleeping chamber was protected by a spirit formation. Although his fist strike was very powerful, it was unable to destroy the palace.

Instead, Chu Feng had beaten the grass and scared the snake; he had alarmed Luyang’s Pavilion. Immediately, countless Luyang’s Pavilion experts rushed forth and surrounded Chu Feng.

No matter what, Luyang’s Pavilion remained an actual tier three power. Their overall strength surpassed even that of the Red Butterfly Society. Their guards were numerous, and their strength was very strong; they were definitely not a power that Liangchen’s Villa could compare to.

“Chu Feng? It’s you?!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, many of the people from Luyang’s Pavilion were shocked. None of them had expected Chu Feng to dare to come here.

At this moment, Chu Luyang finished putting his clothes on and flew out from his palace. After seeing Chu Feng, he also felt extremely surprised.

“Hahaha...” After his moment of surprise, Chu Luyang burst into frantic laughter.

“Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, I truly never expected that you would dare to walk right into a trap,” At this moment, Chu Luyang was overjoyed. He looked to Chu Feng and said, “Before, you were sheltered by Xu Yiyi, making me unable to kill you. However, there is now no one to protect you.”

“Chu Luyang, you’ve done countless evil deeds. Today, I have come to take your dog life,” Chu Feng spoke coldly.

“Take my life? With merely you?”

“Oh, I’ve nearly forgotten. You’re no longer a rank two Half Martial Ancestor, but are instead a rank four Half Martial Ancestor now. Your cultivation has increased quite quickly, no?”

“Oh, that’s right, you’re also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Your status is enormously superior to before. Likely, a lot of powers will want to curry favors with you, no?” Chu Luyang said mockingly. It seemed that his sources of news were extremely fast and abundant, for him to have already heard about what had happened on Mount Cloud Crane.

“Truth be told, your identity as an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist is truly sufficient to cause many people to become afraid of you.”

“Likely, any other third tier power would not dare to kill an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist like you. After all, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are so rare. The death of one would be a pity to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“However, if you dared to come create troubles for me with that on your mind, then you would be thinking wrongly.”

“While others might not dare to kill you, I, Chu Luyang, will definitely not spare you. The more astonishing talent you reveal, the more I, Chu Luyang, must kill you.”

“Brothers of Luyang’s Pavilion, listen up! Seize that Chu Feng! Today, whoever it is that manages to take that Chu Feng’s head shall be greatly rewarded by me!” Chu Luyang shouted.

“Kill!!!!” Once those words were spoken, the experts of Luyang’s Pavilion reacted as if they had been scattered with [chicken blood](#). One by one, they started to roar before charging to attack Chu Feng from all sides.

Blade rays, sword silhouettes and martial skills filled the sky. From all directions, they came at Chu Feng.

How could this possibly be considered to be taking Chu Feng's head? They were simply planning to destroy Chu Feng completely.

It is said that chicken blood makes one go berserk.

# Chapter 2252 – Beaten Till Begging For Forgiveness

---

“Humph,” Chu Feng snorted coldly at the densely packed crowd that charged to attack him from all directions.

Chu Feng swallowed a gulp of saliva. Immediately, an Immortal aura-like light started to shine from his body. It was Immortal-level spirit power, the effects of an Immortal Transformation Pellet.

In order to prevent against the unexpected, he had sealed the two remaining Immortal Transformation Pellets in his mouth through a special method.

He would be able to take them instantly the moment he wished to do so.

Right now, Chu Feng had taken the second Immortal Transformation Pellet. Thus, at this moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation was rising dramatically.

In a blink of an eye, his cultivation went from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank four Martial Ancestor. He had made an enormous leap in martial cultivation.

“Come! I shall see who can possibly kill me!!!”

As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, boundless Ancestral-level martial power formed a scythe and began to relentlessly slice across the surrounding crowds.

The speed of the scythe was too fast, and its power was too strong.

None of the people that had charged to attack Chu Feng were able

to escape.

Instantly, screams began to sound nonstop as blood splattered all over. The several thousand individuals that had rushed to attack Chu Feng, regardless of whether they were Half Martial Ancestors or Martial Ancestors, were all instantly killed by Chu Feng. In fact, not even an intact corpse remained of them.

“This... this... how could this be?!”

Seeing this scene, not to mention the others, even Chu Luyang was stunned.

How did Chu Feng’s cultivation suddenly become this powerful? His cultivation had actually increased from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank four Martial Ancestor?

Even if Chu Luyang were to unleash all of his abilities, he would still only be capable of fighting against rank three Martial Ancestors. Thus, he held absolute no odds of victory when facing a rank four Martial Ancestor-level Chu Feng.

If even he had no chance of defeating Chu Feng, it would mean that there was no one in the entire Luyang’s Pavilion capable of handling Chu Feng.

“Run away!!!”

At this moment, the people of Luyang’s Pavilion started to panic. One by one, they turned around and started fleeing. They did not dare to stay in this place for a moment longer.

They had managed to react. This was simply not alerting one’s enemy at all. Instead, it was a deliberate trap cast by Chu Feng.

Today, it was true that someone was going to engage in slaughter. Merely, it would not be their Luyang’s Pavilion. Instead, it would be Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was going to massacre them. If they did not quickly flee from him now, they would meet the same fate as the people that

had been killed before; they would end up miserably dying at Chu Feng's hands.

“Damn it!”

“Woosh~~~”

When all of his subordinates were escaping, Chu Luyang would naturally not stay behind so that he could be killed. With a turn of his body, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were unleashed, increasing his cultivation from rank seven Half Martial Ancestor to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

Following that, light began to flicker underneath his feet as he unleashed a Heaven Taboo movement martial skill to flee from Chu Feng.

“Where do you think you’re escaping to?”

Right after Chu Luyang turned around and started escaping, before he could even flee a hundred meters away from Chu Feng, Chu Feng had already arrived before him like a phantom.

Chu Feng swung his arm and raised a strong wind as a powerful slap ruthlessly landed on Chu Luyang's face like a shocking thunderbolt.

“Pow~~~”

That slap contained extraordinary strength. The sound of the slap resonated through heaven and earth. Not only did the slap leave Chu Luyang with a bloody nose and mouth, it had also stunned him.

Not to mention continuing to escape, Chu Luyang was even powerless to continue flying. He began to fall from the sky before crashing into the ground miserably.

It was only when Chu Luyang fell to the ground that the crowd was able to see that his mouth had been beaten crooked. Half of his face had been completely twisted.

Chu Feng's slap could be said to have ruthlessly beaten Chu Luyang.

However, it was clear that Chu Feng was still furious. After he descended to the ground, he grabbed Chu Luyang's collar with one hand and began to go to work on Chu Luyang's cheeks with his other hand.

“Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow~~~”

A series of small, firecracker-like sounds began to echo nonstop. Chu Luyang's face could be said to have been completely destroyed by Chu Feng's beating.

In fact, it was not only his face. Chu Luyang's entire head was nearly shattered by Chu Feng's slaps.

After Chu Feng shattered Chu Luyang's skull with his slaps, he raised his leg and began to ruthlessly kick at Chu Luyang's body. Soon, he had completely shattered Chu Luyang's body with his kicks.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, after Chu Feng had beaten Chu Luyang to a state that could no longer be considered to be human-looking, a weak body of light rushed out from Chu Luyang's body and began to rapidly flee into the distance.

That body of light was extremely small. It was a hundred times smaller than the size of a firefly. Unless one possessed superb eyesight, it would be simply impossible to notice that body of light otherwise.

Furthermore, that body of light was fleeing so rapidly. If it had been someone else, especially someone who was ruthlessly ravaging a body, they would definitely not notice that body of light.

However, Chu Feng noticed that body of light. He extended his hand and grabbed. Immediately, a burst of attractive energy



sucked that body of light into his hand.

Right after the body of light entered his hand, Chu Feng started to clench his hand.

Once Chu Feng clenched his hand, that body of light started to rapidly increase in size. In the end, it became a body of light the size of a human.

It turned out that that body of light was Chu Luyang; it was Chu Luyang's spirit body.

Chu Luyang was truly a wily old fox. He had used special methods to shrink the size of his spirit body. He was planning to use this method to escape.

Unfortunately, his opponent was Chu Feng, who possessed discerning eyes. Thus, even though his trick was brilliant, he was still seen through by Chu Feng with a single glance.

At this moment, Chu Feng was grabbing onto the neck of Chu Luyang's spirit body. Waves of powerful martial power began to enter the spirit body nonstop, ravaging it.

Under this sort of situation, Chu Luyang's spirit body grew weaker and weaker. If this were to continue, he would undoubtedly die.

“St-stop.”

“Chu Feng, we can talk things over. What we had before were merely small frictions. There is no need for us to insist on killing one another.”

“If I did anything wrong before, I will apologize and make amends to you. I will compensate you for my wrongdoings.”

“Please, please spare my life. As long as you spare my life, our grudges shall be written off at one stroke,” Chu Luyang realized that the situation was extremely bad, and started to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

“Small frictions? Originally, it was indeed only small frictions. However, with the way things are now, it is no longer small frictions.”

“Chu Luyang, the Sunset Cloud Valley personally stepped forth to mediate the situation between you and the Red Butterfly Society. The Red Butterfly Society had already agreed that they would no longer continue their conflict with your Luyang’s Pavilion.”

“Yet you, why, why did you have to insist on eradicating them? Why did you have to eliminate the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters? Tell me!!!” Chu Feng clenched his fist holding Chu Luyang’s neck as he shouted at Chu Luyang.

The coldness that filled Chu Feng’s eyes caused Chu Luyang to shiver with fear.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? Why don’t I understand?”

“What did you say happened to the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters? You’re saying that the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters has been eradicated? Who did that? Who is daring enough to do such a thing?!” Chu Luyang revealed an innocent expression as he pretended to not know anything.

“You’re still pretending? I have already been to Liangchen’s Villa. Ying Liangchen already admitted to everything. It was you who incited him to eliminate the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re falsely accusing me. Chu Feng, you’re most definitely falsely accusing me.”

“Exactly what is going with that Ying Liangchen?! There are neither grievances nor grudges between him and I, why must he try to frame me like this?” Chu Luyang still refused to admit to his crimes. The reason for that was because he knew that he would

definitely be killed should he admit to them, whereas he would have a chance to live should he refuse to admit to it.

## Chapter 2253 – Who Dares To Kill Me

---

“Pow, pow, pow~~~”

Seeing that Chu Luyang was refusing to admit to it, Chu Feng grew even more furious. He raised his arm and ruthlessly slapped Chu Luyang.

However, it turned out that Chu Luyang’s spirit body was much more resilient to being beaten up than his physical body. After several slaps, his head was actually undamaged.

Although his head was undamaged, that did not mean that Chu Luyang did not feel the pain. On the contrary, he felt it completely. His face was distorted, and his expression was ugly. He was suffering unbearable pain.

“Look carefully, did you write this or not?” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the letter with Chu Luyang’s origin life seal.

“This?” Upon seeing that letter, Chu Luyang’s eyes immediately turned lifeless. He was stunned. Evidently, he had not expected that Chu Feng would have obtained that letter.

“This is framing, I’m most definitely being framed. Chu Feng, go and bring that Ying Liangchen here, I will confront him.”

“I must personally ask him why he must frame me like this, why he would frame me.”

However, even with this being the case, Chu Luyang still refused to admit to his wrongdoings. He even put forth a request to confront Ying Liangchen.

“Heh.... confront?” Toward Chu Luyang’s trick, Chu Feng sneered. Then, he said, “You wish to confront Ying Liangchen? That’s absolutely doable. Merely, you’ll have to confront him in hell.”

“What? You... you...” Hearing those words, Chu Luyang’s

expression changed. His expression became even uglier than before, even more astonished than before.

“You killed Ying Liangchen? You actually killed Ying Liangchen?!” Chu Luyang asked in a very astonished manner.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng said.

Once Chu Feng said those words, Chu Luyang was stunned like a chicken. He was completely struck dumb. Even though he had already guessed that it was possible, it remained to only be a guess.

However, he was now certain of it. Merely, he felt it truly difficult to believe.

If Chu Feng dared to kill even Ying Liangchen, it would mean that he would have absolutely no chance of living.

“What are you doing? Stop immediately!!!”

Right at this moment, a voice filled with imposing might sounded from the sky.

Following that, several old men descended from the sky and landed in Luyang’s Pavilion.

These old men were all people from the Sunset Cloud Valley. Chu Feng had seen these people before when the Sunset Cloud Valley had joined hands with Luyang’s Pavilion to surround the Red Butterfly Society back then.

These people should all be elders of the Sunset Cloud Valley. Their cultivations were all pretty strong. Practically, they were all Martial Ancestors. Among them, the strongest expert was an old rank six Martial Ancestor.

To Chu Feng’s surprise, Elder Ning Shuang was also among them.

“Elders, save me, quickly, save me!”

Chu Lunyang acted as if he had seen hope the moment he saw those elders. Immediately, he started crying for help.

“Stop immediately!!!”

“Luyang’s Pavilion is our Sunset Cloud Valley’s subsidiary power. Chu Luyang is Luyang’s Pavilion’s Pavilion Master. If you dare to kill him, you will have committed a capital offense!!!” The leading elder pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Little friend Chu Feng, what is going on? We can talk things over,” Elder Ning Shuang also spoke to inquire Chu Feng.

“Elder Ning Shuang, please look for yourself,” Chu Feng was suspicious of the other individuals. Thus, he directly tossed the letter to Elder Ning Shuang.

After Elder Ning Shuang received the letter, he began to carefully read it. The other elders stood behind him and began to look at the letter too.

Upon seeing the contents of the letter, the expressions of all the elders from the Sunset Cloud Valley changed slightly.

“Chu Feng, could it be that this really happened?” Elder Ning Shuang asked Chu Feng.

“Elder Ning Shuang, the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters has been massacred,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Luyang, you are truly outrageous! You dared to even ignore the words of Elder Su?! You have truly grown tired of living!” Elder Ning Shuang was immediately furious. He pointed at Chu Luyang and started to reprimand him.

“Lord Elder, I am being wrongly accused, wrongly accused. How could I dare to ignore the words of Elder Su?” Chu Luyang continued to cry out with grievance.

“You dare to still declare that you were wrongly accused?! This letter here contains your origin life seal! Are you trying to say that your origin life seal can also be falsified?!” Elder Ning Shuang shouted.

“Chu Luyang, you have truly disappointed us,” The leading elder also revealed an expression of displeasure. However, he did not reprimand Chu Luyang too excessively. Instead, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Little friend Chu Feng, Chu Luyang’s refusal to listen to Elder Su’s words is something that our Sunset Cloud Valley will take care of. We will definitely return justice to the Red Butterfly Society.”

“There’s no need. This matter has already happened, and the conclusive evidence is present. There is no need for elders to trouble yourselves. I, Chu Feng, will personally execute Chu Luyang on the spot today,” Chu Feng said.

“Stop!!!” The leading elder shouted once again. He said, “Chu Feng, this is a personal affair of our Sunset Cloud Valley. Even if Chu Luyang has committed a crime, it should be up to our Sunset Cloud Valley to personally handle this matter. It is best that you do not involve yourself.”

“Else... if you, an outsider, are to kill Chu Luyang, you would’ve committed a serious capital offense.”

“Serious capital offense? How is it wrong for me to kill someone that should be killed?” Chu Feng asked.

“You are truly stubborn,” The leading elder snorted coldly. In a very ill-intended manner, he said, “If you are to release Chu Luyang right away and hand him over to me to handle, I will consider it as if nothing had happened. However, if you insist on being stubborn, do not blame me for being impolite toward you.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. He had already realized that Chu Luyang might not necessarily be killed should he hand him to the Sunset Cloud Valley.

The reason for that was because he already felt a suspicion that the leading elder in this group of elders had the intention of exonerating Chu Luyang of his crimes. Likely, he possessed a deep relationship with Chu Luyang. Thus, Chu Feng knew that he

absolutely could not hand Chu Luyang to that leading elder.

Thinking of that, determination flashed through Chu Feng's eyes. He said, "I am determined to kill Chu Luyang. Today, even the Emperor of Heaven will not be able to save him!"

Once Chu Feng said those words, the surging martial power in his palm entered Chu Luyang's body.

Following a loud 'boom,' Chu Luyang's spirit body was shattered to pieces. He had been completely killed.

"What audacity!!!" Seeing that Chu Feng had actually really killed Chu Luyang, the leading elder and the other elders were all immediately furious.

This was especially true for the leading elder. At this moment, he unleashed his overwhelming killing intent. He was planning to publicly execute Chu Feng.

"Elder Song Ming, please stay your hand. Little friend Chu Feng possesses a special relationship with Yiyi. Furthermore, he is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. You cannot kill him," In response, Elder Ning Shuang hurriedly moved before the elders, blocking them. He also began to plead for Chu Feng.

"Scram! I am a Sunset Cloud Valley's Law Enforcement Elder! I see only the laws and decrees of our Sunset Cloud Valley in my eyes!"

"I do not care what sort of status that Chu Feng possesses. As long as he is someone who has committed crimes against our Sunset Cloud Valley's laws, he shall be killed!!!" That Elder by the name of Song Ming directly pushed Elder Ning Shuang aside. As he spoke, he proceeded to move forward to attack Chu Feng.

"I shall see who dares to kill me!!!"

Right at this moment, Chu Feng raised his hand, revealing a title plate.



Upon seeing that title plate, regardless of whether it was Elder Song Ming, who was leading the crowd, or the other elders who planned to attack Chu Feng, they were all stunned.

“Death Exemption Title Plate?” After a moment of astonishment, someone blurted out those words.

## Chapter 2254 – The Situation Turning Bad

---

After seeing the title plate Chu Feng held in his hand, Elder Ning Shuang finally took a sigh of relief.

The reason for that was because the title plate Chu Feng held in his hand was the same title plate that Xu Yiyi had given him that day. It was an actual Death Exemption Title Plate. With that title plate in hand, regardless of what sort of crime Chu Feng might have committed, the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley were still not allowed to kill him.

Otherwise, this would mean that they were refusing to give Xu Yiyi's master face.

Unless it was the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master or Xu Yiyi's master, there was no one else in the Sunset Cloud Valley with the authority to kill Chu Feng.

Thus, the so-called Law Enforcement Elders present would naturally not have the authority to execute Chu Feng.

"It would seem that I will not be dying today," As Chu Feng saw the expressions of those elders, their expressions that seemed as if they had been fed feces, Chu Feng's lips lifted into a cold smile.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Elder Song Ming was so furious that he started to gnash his teeth angrily. Even though the distance between them was very far away, Chu Feng was actually capable of hearing the sound of his teeth gnashing.

"If there's nothing else, I'll take my leave now," Chu Feng said those words and then turned to leave.

"Stop right there!" Elder Song Ming shouted. Following that, his oppressive might of a rank six Martial Ancestor swept forth and completely sealed off this region of space, trapping Chu Feng.

"What are you doing?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

“What am I doing? You’ve killed Chu Luyang. I should be executing you. However, since you have Elder Su’s Death Exemption Title Plate in hand, I will take Elder Su into consideration, and spare you for now.”

“However, just because I am not going to kill you today does not mean that I will let you get away. I will bring you back to our Sunset Cloud Valley and hand you to the Lord Law Enforcement Head Elder, as well as Lord Valley Master to personally handle.”

“Men! Arrest that child!” Elder Song Ming shouted.

Once his command left his mouth, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s elders all flew toward Chu Feng. Using special ropes, they tied Chu Feng up.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng would naturally not wish to be captured. However, that Elder Song Ming’s strength was that of a rank six Martial Ancestor.

Faced with him as an opponent, Chu Feng would not be able to match him even if he were to take the last Immortal Transformation Pellet to increase his cultivation to that of a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Thus, escape would be impossible. As such, instead of struggling powerlessly, Chu Feng felt that it would be better to just give in and follow them.

After all, he would be able to provide a proper explanation after arriving at the Sunset Cloud Valley.

As concrete evidence was present, that Chu Luyang deserved to die. Chu Feng refused to believe that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master would be unable to distinguish between right and wrong, and kill Chu Feng because he killed someone that deserved to be killed.

After that, Chu Feng was arrested and escorted to the Sunset Cloud Valley.

On the way there, the effect of Chu Feng's Immortal Transformation Pellet soon dissipated. In an instant, he went from a cultivation of rank four Martial Ancestor back to that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Your cultivation has returned to normal now? Although I do not know what sort of method you used to increase your cultivation, I detest people like you who use despicable methods to increase their cultivations the most,” Elder Song Ming mocked Chu Feng. His tone was filled with contempt.

The other elders also cast gazes of contempt toward Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored their gazes of contempt.

“Little friend Chu Feng, hear me out. You do not need to respond,” Right at this moment, a voice transmission quietly entered Chu Feng's ears. It was Elder Ning Shuang.

“Chu Feng, our Sunset Cloud Valley's upper echelons have already found out about what you've done on Mount Cloud Crane. There is one thing that I must tell you.”

“Li Rui's master, Elder Toubu, is an extraordinary existence in our Sunset Cloud Valley. [He is the Head Elder of the Law Enforcement Department.](#)”

“As for these people, they are all part of the Law Enforcement Department. Thus, to put it simply, they are all subordinates to Li Rui's master.”

“Furthermore, Xu Yiyi's master, Elder Su, is currently in closed-door training. If Li Rui's master insists on punishing you, I'm afraid that there will not be anyone that will speak up for or plead leniency for you,” Elder Ning Shuang said through voice transmission.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown.

Back then, it was Xu Yiyi's master, Elder Su Jingrui, who had declared that Luyang's Pavilion and the Red Butterfly Society were

not allowed to be enemies again, that he would eliminate them should they do so.

However, he had only said those words, and not left behind any concrete instructions.

Unless he were to testify to that matter himself, and inform others that he had indeed said those words, it would be very difficult for others to testify for Chu Feng.

If Elder Su did not appear to testify, even if Chu Feng were capable of proving that Chu Luyang had secretly prompted Liangchen's Villa to eliminate the Red Butterfly Society's headquarters, Luyang's Pavilion would likely not be charged with any wrongdoings.

After all, Luyang's Pavilion was the Sunset Cloud Valley's subsidiary power, whereas the Red Butterfly Society was not. Thus, so what if Chu Luyang eliminated the Red Butterfly Society?

However, it was true that Chu Feng had eliminated Chu Luyang. If the Sunset Cloud Valley's Law Enforcement Division was determined to take care of Chu Feng, the current situation for Chu Feng would be very bad.

"However, little friend Chu Feng, right now, there is good news too. That is, you're an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist."

"Our Lord Valley Master is a person fond of talented individuals. As long as you can provide a proper explanation, there is still leeway for this matter."

"And as long as we can wait until Elder Su leaves his closed-door training to explain this matter, and inform Lord Valley Master that he had indeed declared those words, it would mean that Luyang's Pavilion was in the wrong first. With that, you will be able to be set free without fault of crime," Elder Ning Shuang continued.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng nodded at Elder Ning Shuang.

Chu Feng was very thankful toward Elder Ning Shuang, and not

only because of what he had said.

Chu Feng was very grateful toward Elder Ning Shuang merely because of his arrival here today.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that if Elder Ning Shuang were not present today, the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley would definitely not have spared him.

Not to mention bringing Chu Feng back to the Sunset Cloud Valley, even if Chu Feng possessed the Death Exemption Title Plate in hand, they would still have executed him on the spot.

Thus, Chu Feng was fortunate that Elder Ning Shuang had been present. It was only because of his presence that Chu Feng managed to escape a calamity and not die by the hands of these Law Enforcement Elders.

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng was brought back to the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Merely, to Chu Feng's surprise, that Elder Song Ming did not announce this matter.

Not only did he not report this matter, he even used the reasoning that he had an important matter to bring Elder Ning Shuang to the Law Enforcement Department.

As for Chu Feng, he was directly brought to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's residence.

"Chu Feng, this situation is amiss," The sharp-minded Queen detected that the situation was amiss.

"I've also noticed it. They have deliberately taken Elder Ning Shuang away. Evidently, they do not wish to make this matter public, they do not want Xu Yiyi and the others to know that I've been captured and brought back here."

"They are planning to execute me with lightning speed," Chu Feng said.

“What are we to do then?” Her Lady Queen started to panic slightly. After all, Chu Feng was currently a lamb in a tiger’s den. He had no choice but to allow himself to be punished by others.

“The situation is not that bad either. Fortunately, Elder Ning Shuang has witnessed everything and knows about what happened. Thus, they do not dare to put me to death directly.”

“They will still have to bring me to their Valley Master and have him personally convict me of my crime. Only by doing that will they be able to cast themselves from responsibilities.”

“Like that, they will be able to have excuses when they see Xu Yiyi’s master in the future.”

“However, as long as I meet the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, I will have the opportunity to explain the situation. I will then have the chance to continue to survive,” Chu Feng said.

“Let’s hope that’s the case,” Her Lady Queen was still worried.

Oh hey, another Tuoba as the head of the Punishment/Law Enforcement Department.

## Chapter 2255 – Toying Methods

---

Finally, Chu Feng was brought to the outside of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's residence. Merely, before he was even able to approach that mansion, he was stopped by an old man.

That old man actually possessed the cultivation of a rank seven Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with anger.

Even without others mentioning it to him, Chu Feng was able to guess that old man must be Li Rui's master, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Head Law Enforcement Elder.

"We pay our respects to Lord Head Law Enforcement Elder," Sure enough, those Law Enforcement Elders all hurriedly saluted to Li Rui's master upon seeing him.

Li Rui's master completely ignored his henchmen. Instead, he directly walked toward Chu Feng and arrived before him. With a low voice, he said to Chu Feng, "I know what you're thinking. You must be trying to use your identity as an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to plead for your life and escape this calamity."

"However, I'll tell you this. You are truly underestimating me. Since I have dared to allow you to meet Lord Valley Master, I will naturally have made preparations to make you meet certain death."

"Lord Valley Master does not know that you're an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, nor does he know about the trifle that Su Jingrui had with Luyang's Pavilion and the Red Butterfly Society."

"Thus, later on, as long as I report to Lord Valley Master about you killing Chu Luyang, Lord Valley Master will let me execute you."

"As long as I manage to kill you, even if Su Jingrui is to come out from his closed-door training and explain the situation, it will be



useless.”

“After all, it will be Lord Valley Master who will have personally killed you, and not me.”

“Thus, at that time, I will, at the very most, receive some verbal reprimand as a punishment. However, you, on the other hand, will be dead,” Li Rui’s master said coldly and sinisterly.

“Head Law Enforcement Elder, your tricks are truly vile. No wonder you were capable of nurturing a disciple as sinister and treacherous as Li Rui,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Courting death,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Rui’s master was furious. He directly grabbed Chu Feng’s neck with his aged yet powerful hand.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt as if he was about to suffocate, that his body was about to explode.

After all, his opponent was a rank seven Martial Ancestor. That level of cultivation was truly powerful. He was someone capable of instantly killing Chu Feng.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng was still not afraid. He said, “What’s wrong, Head Law Enforcement Elder? Could it be that you’re so eager to avenge your disciple that you’re planning to kill me right now? Could it be that you’re not planning to allow me to meet your Lord Valley Master?”

“No, you naturally have to meet him,” Li Rui’s master released his hand. He said, “However, I’ll let you suffer true despair before meeting Lord Valley Master.”

As Li Rui’s master spoke, he took out a medicinal pellet and then said to Chu Feng, “As you are an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, you should know what sort of medicinal pellet this is, no?”

“After you take this medicinal pellet, you will become a mute that is unable to speak. Even your world spirit power will be sealed, and unable to be released from your body.”

“At that time, you will not be able to argue with anything that I say. As such, you will have no choice but to admit guilt.”

“You wish to prove yourself as an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist so as to draw support from Lord Valley Master to escape a calamity?”

“Haha, that’s not going to happen.”

“You shameless and despicable little man! You!!!” At this moment, Chu Feng was furious.

However, before Chu Feng could finish his words, Li Rui’s master grabbed his mouth and force-fed him that medicinal pellet.

“Wuu~~~”

The next moment, Chu Feng felt an enormous medicinal power sealing his throat and body.

That was not a poisonous medicinal pellet. Rather, it was a medicinal pellet that used enormously formidable world spirit power to seal one’s body.

Thus, even though Chu Feng possessed a body immune to poison, he was unable to resist that medicinal pellet’s effect.

Chu Feng was truly incapable of speaking. Furthermore, he was also unable to release his world spirit power.

He had already lost the ability to prove himself as an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

At this very moment, Chu Feng’s complexion turned ashen.

Seeing such a Chu Feng, Li Rui’s master revealed a complacent smile. He said, “You must’ve never expected to meet such a sullen death, right? However, even if this is the case, it will still not be able to alleviate the hatred I have for you killing my disciple.”

“Men! Bring him over!” Li Rui’s master said.

Then, being led by Li Rui’s master, the Law Enforcement Elders

began to advance toward the entrance of the Valley Master's residence.

“Chu Feng, what are we to do? Are you truly unable to speak? Are you truly unable to release your spirit power?” At this moment, Her Lady Queen started to panic.

At this moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had no clue as to the situation at all. Not only does he not know Chu Feng was a rarely seen Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he also did not know about the agreement between Luyang's Pavilion and the Red Butterfly Society.

And now, as Chu Feng was unable to speak, he would not be able to justify his actions.

Furthermore, Elder Ning Shuang had been brought to the Law Enforcement Department.

As such, there was simply no one that could exonerate Chu Feng. Therefore, Li Rui's master could say whatever he wanted to right now. Chu Feng was truly facing a great catastrophe, truly about to be killed.

“This medicinal pellet is indeed very powerful. If I were still a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, I would really not be able to do anything to that medicinal pellet.”

“However, I am an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist now. As such, I possess certainty in being able to undo the effect of the medicinal pellet,” Chu Feng said.

“Then how long will it take?” Eggy asked anxiously. She feared that there would not be enough time.

“Rest assured, it will not be long,” Chu Feng said confidently.

Although that medicinal pellet was capable of preventing Chu Feng from releasing his world spirit power outside of his body, it was unable to prevent Chu Feng from using spirit power within himself.

At this moment, although Chu Feng still had a dejected and despair-filled expression on the surface, he was actually using his spirit power to undo the effect of that medicinal pellet within his body.

At the same time, Chu Feng was brought to the entrance of the residence of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master.

After arriving at the entrance, Chu Feng was forced to kneel on the ground.

At the same time, Li Rui's master and the other Law Enforcement Elders all kneeled on the ground.

"Subordinate Tuoba Shangshui request to see Lord Valley Master!!!" Li Rui's master said respectfully.

Not long after he said those words, the entrance to that palace slowly opened.

Looking through the entrance, Chu Feng was able to see that there was a middle-aged looking man sitting on the main seat in the palace.

He had a very handsome and youthful appearance. However, his airs and manners of bearing were extraordinary.

Chu Feng was able to sense the aura of someone who had lived for thousands of years. It was not something that could be hidden with merely his youthful face.

Furthermore, the same sort of twilight as Xu Yiyi's master was lingering on his body. That was an abnormal sign.

Evidently, this person was the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master.

"Elder Tuoba, for you to come to my place at such a time, could there be some important matter?" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked.

"Elder Tuoba, who is that youngster?" Suddenly, the Sunset

Cloud Valley's Valley Master turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

“Lord Valley Master, this man is called Chu Feng. He killed Luyang's Pavilion's Pavilion Master Chu Luyang. This subordinate wishes to request Lord Valley Master to convict him of his crimes,” Li Rui's master said.

“What? Chu Luyang was killed?” Upon hearing that Chu Luyang was killed, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's expression changed slightly. Then, in a skeptical manner, he asked, “You said that Chu Luyang has been killed by this youngster?”

## Chapter 2256 – What Is Your Motive

---

“Lord Valley Master, Chu Luyang was precisely killed by this child,” Li Rui’s master replied.

“However, with his cultivation, how could he possibly possess the strength to kill Chu Luyang?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed a puzzled expression.

“Lord Valley Master, this child used despicable means to murder Chu Luyang,” Li Rui’s master said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng wished that he could spit at Li Rui’s master’s face.

He thought to himself, ‘This old fart truly dares to say anything. He actually started to put the label of despicable on my head.’

“You really killed Chu Luyang?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master turned to ask Chu Feng.

It was not as simple as a mere question; the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was also observing Chu Feng. He was trying to see whether or not Li Rui’s master had used any special martial techniques to forcibly restrict Chu Feng.

If Li Rui’s master had truly used some sort martial technique to restrict Chu Feng, this Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master would naturally be able to tell with a single glance.

However, this was also the reason why Li Rui’s master was clever. He seemed to know this Valley Master very well, and knew that he would observe Chu Feng to determine whether or not Chu Feng had been restricted.

As such, he had not used martial techniques to suppress Chu Feng, and instead meticulously prepared that medicinal pellet for Chu Feng to be forced to take.

As for the result, it would naturally be the same as what Li Rui’s

master had anticipated. The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley master did not manage to detect the existence of the medicinal pellet.

"I am asking you whether or not you killed Chu Luyang," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked once again.

Upon seeing this, Li Rui's master tried to speak so that he could decide Chu Feng's crimes. However, to his surprise, Chu Feng actually nodded.

He had pleaded guilty?

Li Rui's master was very shocked to see that Chu Feng had actually nodded to it. Originally, he thought that even if Chu Feng couldn't speak, he would definitely not plead guilty.

However, Chu Feng had actually pleaded guilty. This made Li Rui's master very confused. He did not understand what Chu Feng was thinking.

Seeing that Chu Feng have nodded, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master sighed and said, "Chu Luyang is, after all, a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan. As he was a subordinate of our Sunset Cloud Valley, I must provide him with justice,"

"That is why this subordinate wished to ask Lord Valley Master to convict this Chu Feng," Li Rui's master pleaded.

"Is there even a need for me for something like this? According to the laws of our Sunset Cloud Valley, those that dare to kill people of our Sunset Cloud Valley are all to..."

Before the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master could finish his words, an aged old lady hurried out from within the palace. She said, "Lord Valley Master, this is bad! Lady Yan's illness has relapsed again!"

"My mother's illness has relapsed again?" Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master hurriedly and worriedly stood up from his seat.

He had had an extremely calm expression earlier. However, at this moment, his face was covered with panic.

It could be seen that this Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was a filial son. Else, he would not panic like that after finding out that his mother's illness had relapsed.

"Elder Tuoba, I have ordered you to ask for an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, have you managed to find one?!" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked Li Rui's master.

"Lord Valley Master, regarding this... Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are truly too difficult to find. This subordinate is incompetent. So far, I have yet to manage to successfully petition one," Li Rui's master said with an ashamed expression.

However, no one noticed that Li Rui's master took a stealthily glance at Chu Feng when he said those words.

Chu Feng noticed his gaze. From that gaze, Chu Feng saw a sinister smile.

He was smiling in complacency.

At this moment, Chu Feng came to a realization. Not only was the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master a person fond of talents, he was also someone who urgently needed the assistance of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to help cure his mother's illness.

In this sort of situation, if the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master found out that Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng would definitely be saved.

However, Chu Feng was unable to speak. He could only watch as the opportunity to survive slipped past him without him being able to grab onto it.

That was the reason why Li Rui's master was so complacent. He was feeling proud of how quick-witted he felt himself to be.

"Go, go and ask for for an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist again.



No matter what, you must successfully petition one,” After the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said those words, he followed that old lady and began to proceed toward the inside of the palace. Evidently, his mother was located inside the palace.

“Lord Valley Master, then, what about this child?” Li Rui’s master hurriedly asked.

“Is there even a need to ask? Kill him!!!” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master shouted.

“Yes, Milord,” At this moment, Li Rui’s master once again revealed an extremely complacent smile.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke. “Lord Valley Master, you wish to help cure your mother’s illness, no? Perhaps myself would be able to help,”

“This!!!”

Once Chu Feng spoke, Li Rui’s master’s expression immediately changed. He was frightened green in the face.

He truly could not understand how Chu Feng was able to speak after he was fed that medicinal pellet.

He had clearly heard that medicinal pellet to be something that even Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to undo.

As for Chu Feng, he had only just become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, he was also an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. No matter what, he should not be able to undo the effects of that medicinal pellet.

Exactly what was going on? Why was he able to speak?

“What did you say? You can cure my mother’s illness?” At this moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master turned his sharp gaze toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng felt killing intent in the gaze of that Valley Master.

Evidently, this Valley master did not believe that Chu Feng possessed the ability to treat his mother's illness. Thus, the first thing that came into his mind was that Chu Feng was deceiving him.

Furthermore, as he was worried and vexed for his mother's illness, his mood was extremely bad. As such, he would not be able to tolerate anyone deceiving him at such a time.

“Lord Valley Master, do not listen to the crazy and unfounded ravings of this child. How could he possibly be able to treat Lady Yan's illness?”

At this moment, Li Rui's master started to panic. He hurriedly walked toward Chu Feng and used his boundless martial power to restrict Chu Feng, preventing him from babbling nonsense again.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at this moment, boundless spirit power suddenly burst forth from Chu Feng's body.

It was Immortal-level spirit power. At this moment, not only was the spirit power hovering around Chu Feng, it was also being controlled by Chu Feng.

Being enveloped by this spirit power, Chu Feng's aura became completely different. It was as if he were a grand expert.

“Lord Valley Master, do you recognize this?” Chu Feng asked loudly.

“Damn it!” Seeing that Chu Feng had actually unleashed his Immortal level spirit power, Li Rui's master started to panic even more. He unleashed his surging martial power with the intention of beating down Chu Feng's spirit power.

“Stop!!!”

However, right at this moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master shouted furiously.

Once that furious shout was heard, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might swept forth. It not only forcibly scattered Li Rui's master's oppressive might, it also forced Li Rui's master back several steps, nearly knocking him to the ground.

“Tuoba Shangshui, is this how you handle things?!!!” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master pointed at Li Rui's master and shouted furiously.

Seeing that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was furious, Li Rui's master hurriedly kneeled to the ground. He said, “Lord Valley Master, this subordinate does not know what he did wrong.”

“You do not know what you did wrong? I asked you to go and petition an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to treat my mother's illness.”

“In the end, after seeking and asking for so long, you've yet to successfully request an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. If that was even true.”

“However, right now, there is clearly an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist standing right before you. Why did you not tell me about this?”

“Exactly what is your motive?” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master stared at Li Rui's master furiously.

This Valley Master was truly angered.

## Chapter 2257 – Revealing One’s Ability

---

“Lord Valley master, please calm your anger. This subordinate truly didn’t know that this Chu Feng was actually an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” Li Rui’s master hurriedly tried to explain.

“You didn’t know?” The Sunset Cloud Valley revealed a suspicious expression.

“Lord Valley Master, this subordinate would not dare to deceive you. I truly didn’t know,” Li Rui’s master continued to explain.

“You didn’t know? Head Law Enforcement Elder, you really didn’t know that I was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“If you really didn’t know that I was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, why did you force-feed me that medicinal pellet that restricted my spirit power and my ability to speak?”

“Could it be that it wasn’t because you were afraid that Lord Valley Master would find out that I’m an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng asked Li Rui’s master. His tone was very sharp, stabbing straight at the crucial things.

“What? You actually fed him a medicinal pellet that sealed his spirit power and even his speech?” Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was extremely shocked.

“Lord Valley Master, please do not listen to his nonsense. I simply did not feed him such a medicinal pellet,” Li Rui’s master hurriedly explained.

“You shut up first!” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master berated coldly. Li Rui’s master no longer dared to quibble. Like that, he quietly kneeled on the ground.

In response, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master looked to Chu Feng and asked, “You are called Chu Feng?”

“Yes,” Chu Feng replied.

“Chu Feng, if you have received unjust treatment, I will definitely obtain justice for you later. However, I have a presumptuous request right now,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Do you want me to treat your Lady Mother’s illness?” Chu Feng asked.

“Are you willing?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Lord Valley Master, please lead the way,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Please follow me,” Seeing that Chu Feng agreed to help, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed a relaxed smile.

However, before showing the way for Chu Feng, he used his sharp gaze to look at Li Rui’s master, “Elder Tuoba, wait here. Before I return, you are not allowed to leave.”

“Yes, Milord,” Li Rui’s master replied respectfully.

At that moment, he no longer possessed the same sort of complacency he had earlier. Instead, nervousness and unease filled his face.

Being led by the Valley Master, Chu Feng walked deep into the Valley Master’s residence. He then arrived at a neat and tidy bedchamber.

This bedchamber was not very large, and was decorated very simply. Although it was not majestic, it was very neat. When looking at it, one would feel very comfortable.

Right after entering the bedchamber, Chu Feng heard the painful voice of an elderly person.

It was a female. She was extremely old, so old that her body was filled with wrinkles and age spots. Even her hair was nearly all gone, as were all of her teeth.

As for this woman, she was being tormented by the pain of her illness so much so that she had lost consciousness.

Needing no introduction, Chu Feng managed to guess that this old woman must be the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's mother.

Merely, to Chu Feng's surprise, the mother of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master did not possess a high level of cultivation. In fact, her cultivation could be said to be very weak.

She was actually only a Martial Emperor. Furthermore, she was only a rank one Martial Emperor.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that level of cultivation could be considered extremely weak.

However, that was not the important aspect that Chu Feng was focused on. His focus was fixed onto this old woman's illness.

Upon seeing her, without even waiting for the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master to say anything, Chu Feng walked up toward her and began to stabilize her illness.

As the saying goes, an expert's ability will be revealed the moment they act.

Once Chu Feng started, he immediately caused the gaze of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master to change. All of his misgivings and hidden caution against Chu Feng were mostly dispelled at that moment.

The reason for that was because after Chu Feng started, not only did the Valley Master's mother's face no longer possess that painful expression, her complexion also turned a lot more mild.

In fact, when Chu Feng stopped, the complexion of the mother of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had become rosy. Although she had not woken up and started to sleep, it was a very sound sleep.

Furthermore, all of this took Chu Feng less than an hour.

“Young Hero, your art of healing is truly amazing,” At that moment, the old lady who served the Valley Master’s mother had a joyous expression on her face. She was unable to contain herself from praising Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, without mentioning other things, but merely for the fact that you have treated my mother’s illness, I, Bai Xiuzhu, am extremely grateful,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master actually turned to Chu Feng and bowed with clasped fists.

He, an individual with a status high and above Chu Feng’s, was someone who would rarely make such a respectful gesture to another, much less someone with the status of a prisoner like Chu Feng.

However, he did such a thing. From that, it could be seen how much importance his mother held in his heart.

“Lord Valley Master’s words are too serious. I merely did what I was capable of,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, I might as well get right to the point. Are you capable of curing my mother’s illness?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Lord Valley Master’s mother’s illness is indeed very dangerous. However, curing her illness is not that hard either. It is not an incurable disease.”

“Actually, if a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist possessed exquisite ability in the art of healing and wholeheartedly treated her illness, they would also be able to cure her,” Chu Feng said.

“Truly? But, all of the Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists I’ve requested before all said that only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist could treat her illness,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Perhaps it is because they do not dare to attempt to cure her

illness out of a fear of failure. However, Lord Valley Master, you can rest assured. I am able to cure your mother's illness. Furthermore, I do not need to wait until later. I can do it right now," Chu Feng said.

"Right now? You're truly capable of curing her right now?" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was in disbelief.

"To be exact, I must cure her right now. If her treatment is to continue to be delayed, your mother's illness might end up being a danger to her life," Chu Feng said.

"A danger to her life?" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master frowned.

"Could it be that Lord Valley Master didn't know that your mother's illness has reached a very dangerous level?" Chu Feng asked.

The way Chu Feng saw it, this Lord Valley Master should know very well about his mother's illness being very serious. Else, he would not have been requesting for and petitioning Immortal-cloak World Spiritists so urgently.

"Chu Feng, as long as you are able to cure my mother's illness, even if you have truly killed Chu Luyang, I can treat it as if nothing has happened."

"Furthermore, I will also provide you with rewards. You can make any demand of me," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master also knew that his mother's illness was very serious.

Else, he would not have not questioned Chu Feng, and instead directly proposed rewarding Chu Feng.

"We can set the matter of Chu Luyang aside till later. Right now, the treatment of Lord Valley Master's mother is the most urgent."



“Merely, your mother’s illness is truly special. Thus, I must use a special method to treat her illness. For that, I will need Lord Valley Master’s assistance,” Chu Feng said.

“How should I assist? Please tell me,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“I will need Lord Valley Master’s blood. I am going to completely exchange your mother’s blood with yours,” Chu Feng said.

“No problem,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master agreed without the slightest hesitation.

# Chapter 2258 – Return Justice To You

---

“Lord Valley Master, please don’t agree to it this urgently,” Chu Feng smiled.

He continued, “Other than your blood, I will also need Lord Valley Master’s source energy. I will have to use your source energy to wash your mother’s source energy.”

“How could that be allowed?!!!”

“One’s source energy is one’s foundation. If one’s source energy is altered, not only will it ruin one’s foundation, it might even cause one’s death,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, before the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley master could speak, the expression of that old lady immediately changed.

“If one’s source energy is altered improperly, it would indeed lead to the conditions that you spoke of. However, if one’s source energy is altered properly, it will, at the very most, lead to one’s body suffering damage. However, that damage is something that can be repaired after resting for some time and using some precious medicinal herbs. It will not affect one’s future,” Chu Feng said.

“Young Hero, you said that is the case if the source energy is altered properly. However, if it isn’t altered properly, it will indeed affect one’s cultivation, and even bring harm to one’s life,” That old lady was still worried.

“Must this be done?” However, compared to the old lady who served his mother, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was rather calm.

“This is the only method to cure your mother’s illness. It is precisely because this method demands a high expertise in world spiritist techniques that ordinary Royal-cloak World Spiritists

would not dare to attempt to cure your mother, and say that they cannot cure her,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, may I know how much certainty you hold in your methods?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“I possess a hundred percent certainty,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, it is not that I do not trust you. Merely, this matter not only concerns my own safety, it also concerns the safety of our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“If I wasn’t the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, I would definitely agree to it without complaint. After all, you are curing my mother’s illness.”

“However, as I am the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, I must take responsibility for everyone in the Sunset Cloud Valley, as well as responsibility for myself.”

Before the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master could finish his words, Chu Feng interrupted him, “Lord Valley Master, you want this Chu Feng to set up a [‘guarantee?’](#)”

“You are truly intelligent. Might that be doable?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked. Likely because he was feeling embarrassed to ask Chu Feng to do that, his tone was not very confident, and even felt a bit like he was pleading.

As for the so-called ‘guarantee,’ it was actually very simple.

Since Chu Feng said that he possessed a hundred percent certainty in success, he could not make any mistakes when taking the Valley Master’s source energy.

If a mistake were to occur, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master would definitely not spare Chu Feng.

However, as it was, after all, him who had requested for Chu Feng to treat his mother’s illness, he inevitably felt embarrassed to demand that Chu Feng establish such a ‘guarantee.’

However, Chu Feng felt that this Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master possessed a decent character.

After all, Chu Feng possessed the status of a prisoner. It was normal for him not to trust Chu Feng. This was be even more the case when Chu Feng was demanding his source energy.

Actually, this Lord Valley Master could simply not say anything, and try to get on good terms with Chu Feng first.

In fact, it would be not too late for him to immediately become hostile toward Chu Feng the moment he discovered that Chu Feng's behavior was errant, or if Chu Feng caused harm to his source energy.

After all, if he had done that, Chu Feng would not feel any misgivings toward him in his heart should he succeed, and he would be able to immediately take care of Chu Feng should Chu Feng fail. It would be a much better deal for him.

However, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master did not use such a hypocritical method. Instead, he directly informed Chu Feng of what he planned to do. To this, Chu Feng felt quite a lot of admiration.

At the very least, this meant that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was very honest.

"Yes, that is fine," Chu Feng said.

"Great. Never would I have expected you to be such a frank and straightforward individual with how young you are."

"Since that's the case, let's start right away," Seeing that Chu Feng agreed to it so straightforwardly, the impression the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had toward Chu Feng grew better.

Then, Chu Feng began to set up his spirit formation to extract the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's blood. This was a very simple matter. In merely a short moment, Chu Feng finished it.

After that, Chu Feng began to set up the spirit formation to extract the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's source energy. Chu Feng set up this spirit formation meticulously. After all, if he were to fail, the consequences would be enormous.

At the moment when Chu Feng finished setting up his spirit formation and prepared to extract the source energy of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, he said, "Lord Valley Master, it will be extremely painful. That pain is something that I am unable to help you relieve. You must endure it."

"That's fine. Go ahead," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had an unchanged expression. He did not even blink.

"Buzz~~~"

Chu Feng did not bother with anymore superfluous words, and activated the spirit formation. He began to concentrate on extracting the source energy of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master.

"Wuu~~~"

Once Chu Feng began, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, this expert of martial cultivation, this man of steel, actually also had a change in expression. Then, his face started to distort.

Pain, it was truly painful. If one's soul was one's foundation, then one's source energy would be the foundation of the soul. Without source energy, one would not be able to condense even a soul.

And now, Chu Feng was altering the Valley Master's foundation. The pain from that was something unbearable for ordinary people.

The fact that this Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master only had a change in expression and complexion without crying out in pain meant that his tolerance was extremely strong.

As for Chu Feng, he kept his promise. Not only did he manage to extract a small portion of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's foundation without bringing harm to him, he also managed to

successfully eradicate the illness within his mother's body.

The old lady serving her was a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. When Chu Feng declared that the Valley Master's mother's treatment had been completed, she hurriedly stepped forward to inspect her.

After careful and repeated inspection, the old lady was pleased beyond expectation. She cried out, "It's gone, it's really gone. Young Hero is truly worthy of being an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. He has truly managed to eradicate the illness from Lady Yan."

In response, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master also revealed a joyous expression. He bowed respectfully to Chu Feng and said, "Thank you, little friend Chu Feng, for treating my mother's illness."

"Little friend Chu Feng's world spirit techniques are truly excellent. I am truly wrong to have doubted little friend Chu Feng earlier. As such, I shall apologize to little friend Chu Feng here. I hope little friend Chu Feng does not take offense," His bow was not only an expression of his gratefulness toward Chu Feng, it also expressed his deep apology.

"Lord Valley master is being too serious. We are not well acquainted with one another. Furthermore, I am someone who carries a crime to my name. In this sort of situation, it was reasonable for Lord Valley Master to be on guard when I wanted to use your source energy," Chu Feng said with an indifferent expression. What he said was also what he really felt.

"Never would I have expected you to be so open-minded at your young age. It would seem that... Elder Tuoba has truly wrongly accused you this time around," An appreciative expression appeared in the gaze with which the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master looked to Chu Feng.

"Merely, I don't understand. Since you are being wrongly accused, why did you admit that you killed Chu Luyang earlier?"

The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked.

"It's because I indeed killed Chu Luyang," Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the expression of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master changed slightly. Then, he asked, "Little friend Chu Feng, exactly what is going on? Can you tell me in detail?"

"Even if Lord Valley Master didn't ask about this, I would still tell Lord Valley Master about this matter."

Then, Chu Feng told the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master about what had happened in full detail.

After knowing about the whole matter, the expression of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master turned very serious.

"Little friend Chu Feng, please wait here for a moment," After the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master finished saying those words, he turned and left.

When he returned, two more people returned with him. They were Elder Ning Shuang and Xu Yiyi.

Seeing the different expressions that Elder Ning Shuang and Xu Yiyi had, Chu Feng knew that they must've known what had happened.

"Chu Feng, are you okay?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi asked in a deeply concerned manner.

"Be at ease. Aren't I standing here?," Chu Feng said with a smile.

Xu Yiyi knelt onto the ground and said, "Lord Valley Master, Elder Tuoba, he... as the Head Law Enforcement Elder of the Law Enforcement Division, he actually consciously went against the laws in order to settle his personal grudge."

"He deliberately hid the truth, and even forced Chu Feng to take poison. His manner of conduct is truly enough to make one's hair rise in anger."

"This disciple earnestly requests that Lord Valley Master severely

punish Elder Tuoba in accordance with our Sunset Cloud Valley's criminal laws."

"Lord Valley Master, Elder Tuoba deliberately trapped me in order to take care of little friend Chu Feng. His actions are truly vile. I hope that Lord Valley Master will be able to give little friend Chu Feng justice," Elder Ning Shuang added.

"Rest assured. I will definitely return justice to little friend Chu Feng," At that moment, although the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had a calm expression, his eyes were surging with anger.

The original term in chinese for what I translated as guarantee is 'military order.' Basically, one will vow that one will succeed in battle. Should one fail, one will be punished according to military law. It is there to strengthen the sense of responsibility for the military commander.



# Chapter 2259 – Dead On Refusal To Admit Fault

---

Afterward, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master brought Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang to the entrance of the palace where Li Rui's master and the other Law Enforcement Elders were kneeling.

Due to the fact that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had left to find Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang through a side exit, Li Rui's master and the others did not know about Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang being present beforehand.

As such, once they saw Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang, those Law Enforcement Elders immediately revealed dejected expressions. They felt as if they were about to face an imminent catastrophe.

However, Li Rui's master was comparatively calm. At the very least, he did not reveal too much of a guilty conscience.

From this, it could be seen that he was truly an astute and circumspect individual.

“Head Elder Tuoba, I have revered you and respected you as the Head Law Enforcement Elder in vain.”

“I truly never expected that, for your own personal grudge, you would invert right and wrong, black and white, to plot Chu Feng's death,” Xu Yiyi furiously denounced Li Rui's master.

“Xu Yiyi, as a disciple, you actually dare to speak to the Head Law Enforcement Elder in such a manner?! Do you even have seniority in your eyes?!” Faced with Xu Yiyi's criticism, Li Rui's master actually became furious and started to criticize Xu Yiyi instead.

“Elder Tuoba, are you still going to pretend?” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked coldly.

“Lord Valley Master, this subordinate is slow-witted, and does

not understand what I have done wrong,” Li Rui’s master said with a puzzled expression.

“For now, I will not look into the fact that you have deliberately concealed the fact that little friend Chu Feng is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“I will also not yet look into the fact that you used a special method to seal little friend Chu Feng’s speech and spirit power.”

“However, you clearly knew that Chu Luyang had gone against the order from Elder Su Jingrui first, and received a well-deserved death as such.”

“Yet, you still brought little friend Chu Feng here, and asked me to order his execution. This is something that I absolutely cannot let you off for,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said in an extremely furious manner.

“What? Chu Luyang went against orders from Elder Su first?”

“What? Elder Su ordered Chu Luyang to do something?”

“Exactly what is going on here? Lord Valley Master, this subordinate doesn’t understand,” Li Rui’s master said with a puzzled expression.

“Don’t understand? How could you not understand? When my master warned Chu Luyang, your subordinates here were also present. Are you trying to say that they did not report this matter to you?” Xu Yiyi pointed at those Law Enforcement Elders.

“”What? There was actually such a thing? Why did you all not inform me of it?” Li Rui’s master had a furious expression as he turned to berate his subordinates angrily. He acted as if he truly did not know about those things.

“Lord Head Elder, we truly didn’t know about it,” However, those elders actually started to shake their heads repeatedly at the questioning from Li Rui’s master.

Furthermore, with confused expressions, they turned to Xu Yiyi and asked, “Yiyi, what did Elder Su say to Chu Luyang? Why do we not know about it? You have completely confused us here.”

“You all! You all are actually pretending to be confused?!” Seeing that they had refused to admit their faults, Xu Yiyi was so furious that her body started to tremble.

“No, we’re not pretending to be confused, we truly do not know what’s going on. Yiyi, for some things, you should not make irresponsible remarks,” Those Law Enforcement Elders said with innocent expressions on their faces.

“Good, very good. It would seem that you have already planned this in private, and have decided to dead on refuse to admit your faults,” Right at that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master laughed out loud. Merely, his laughter was very cold.

It was so cold that it caused the Law Enforcement Elders’ hearts to shiver and their expressions to change.

They started to panic, but even though their hearts were already panicking, they still did not modify their previous remarks. From this, it could be seen that they had already decided with Li Rui’s master to dead on refuse to admit their faults.

Although this method was very foolish, they felt that it was the only way to get out of this situation.

If they dead on refused to admit their faults, there would still be a chance to take a breath. However, if they were to admit to their faults now, they would likely receive very severe punishments.

While Li Rui’s master might not be killed, as he was highly important and indispensable in the Sunset Cloud Valley, the rest of the Law Enforcement Elders might not necessarily be able to escape death.

That was the reason why they dared to pretend as if they knew nothing before the very eyes of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley

Master. It was not because they were daring or bold. Rather, they were fighting for the opportunity to survive.

“Lord Valley Master, we would not dare to deceive you. We truly do not know what happened between Elder Su and Chu Luyang,” Those Law Enforcement Elders all kowtowed and spoke in unison.

“You all should know that deceiving me is a capital offense? However, I have decided to give you all an opportunity.”

“Thus, I’ll ask you all again. When Elder Su Jingrui told Chu Luyang that he was not allowed to attack the Red Butterfly Society again, that it would be a capital offense should he do so, did you all hear it or not?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Lord Valley Master, we truly did not hear it,” The Law Enforcement Elders said while shivering.

They were afraid, really afraid. However, even though they were feeling extremely afraid, they were determined to insist on not knowing about that matter.

The reason for that was because there was already no path of return for them now.

“Lord Valley Master, our Law Enforcement Department has always been loyal and devoted to the Sunset Cloud Valley. We have never once deceived you.”

“Yiyi, Ning Shaung, exactly what sort of benefit did the two of you receive from Chu Feng for you to wrongly accuse myself and my subordinates like this?” Right at that moment, Li Rui’s master spoke with a furious expression.

This old codger was not only quibbling, he even started to make false countercharges.

“You, you, you’re actually saying that we are wrongly accusing you?!” Hearing those words, Xu Yiyi became even more furious. Thus, she looked to the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and said, “Lord Valley Master, please uphold justice.”

“Lord Valley Master, please uphold justice,” Li Rui’s master as well as the other Law Enforcement Elders actually also dared to request for the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master to uphold justice.

“Very well.”

“What exactly happened will all be known once Elder Su Jingrui comes out from his closed door training.”

“I will also know who exactly among you all have deceived me at that time. As for those who have deceived me, I will definitely not let them off easily!” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master shouted furiously.

“However, even if you all truly didn’t know that Elder Su Jingrui warned Chu Luyang that he was not allowed to attack the Red Butterfly Society, it remains the truth that you all have concealed the fact that little friend Chu Feng is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“It is also true that you all used special methods to seal little friend Chu Feng’s speech, making him unable to speak. Thus, you have indirectly admitted to the false criminal charges you all have planted onto him,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, you have wrongly accused us. I never knew that Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, nor did I use any special methods to make him unable to speak,” Li Rui’s master was still dead on refusing to admit his fault.

“You still dare to refuse to admit your wrongdoings?” Right at that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master waved his sleeve and directly knocked Li Rui’s master to the ground. He rolled on the ground for several loops before finally stopping.

At that moment, Li Rui’s master was bleeding from all seven apertures on his head. His complexion had turned pale, and his aura extremely weak. He had been severely injured.

Furious. The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was truly furious. Else, he would not have injured Li Rui's master so heavily.

Even though he had already seriously injured Li Rui's master, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was still furious. He pointed at Li Rui's master and said, "The witness is present, and the evidence is definite. Yet, you dare to still refuse to admit your crimes? Tuoba Shangshui, did you really think that I would not dare to kill you?"

Even though Li Rui's master was already seriously injured, he still hurriedly crawled back up and knelt before the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master again. He kowtowed, but did not dare to say another word.

Only his aged body was shivering in fear.

## Chapter 2260 – Number One Expert

---

“I’ll tell you all this; what you have done today is very vile. This is especially true because you all are Law Enforcement Elders. As such, this matter is even more vile.”

“Right now, I will spare your dog lives for the time being. After Elder Su Jingrui leaves his closed-door training, I will properly punish you all then.”

“All of you, scram. Scram back to the Law Enforcement Department and ponder your mistakes. Without my order, you all are not allowed to go anywhere else. Anyone who goes against my orders will be killed without exception,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master shouted angrily.

“Yes, Milord,” Li Rui’s master and the other Law Enforcement Elders left while trembling with fear.

At that moment, both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang had astonished expressions on their faces.

As people of the Sunset Cloud Valley, they all knew that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master possessed a deep relationship with Li Rui’s master.

Originally, none of them had expected that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley master would truly severely punish Li Rui’s master for Chu Feng’s sake. They thought that he would only lightly discipline Li Rui’s master.

However, they now discovered that they had been mistaken.

Their Lord Valley Master had not only publicly beaten up Li Rui’s master, he even beat him up so ruthlessly. This truly surpassed their imagination.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please rest assured. After Elder Su Jingrui comes out from his closed-door training, I will definitely punish them severely,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master

said to Chu Feng with a face filled with apology.

“Lord Valley Master is being too courteous,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is not be being overly courteous. Rather, I cannot allow you to be wronged. Thus, I must definitely return justice to you,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley master said as he patted his chest.

After hearing what the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said, Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang became even more astonished.

After all, with the status that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master held, there was simply no need for him to be this courteous toward a member of the younger generation like Chu Feng.

Afterward, when the Sunset Cloud Valley invited Chu Feng back into his palace and ordered his servant to prepare generous gifts to express his gratitude toward Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang were even more astonished.

However, after thinking about it, they seemed to have realized something. After all, Chu Feng was not an ordinary member of the younger generation; he was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

The two of them had personally seen Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket, as well as the other grand characters from first tier powers, offering Chu Feng invitations outside of Mount Cloud Crane.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are truly extraordinary,” At that moment, Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang gasped with admiration in their hearts.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I wish to invite you to become a guest elder of our Sunset Cloud Valley. Might you be willing?” Suddenly, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

Once the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said those words, the person that was feeling the most joyous was none other than



Xu Yiyi. Even though she did not say anything, she started to shoot meaningful glances at Chu Feng nonstop. She was telling him to hurriedly accept it.

As someone from the Sunset Cloud Valley, she knew that there was not a single guest elder in the Sunset Cloud Valley right now.

It was not that they did not wish to invite people to become their guest elders. Rather, they did not have any suitable people to become their guest elders. The reason for that was because the title of ‘guest elder’ came with a very respectful and high-standing status in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Without sufficient strength, it would simply be impossible for the Sunset Cloud Valley to invite someone to be their guest elder.

“Thank you, Lord Valley Master, for your kind intentions. Merely, I, Chu Feng, truly do not plan to join any power,” Chu Feng said in an apologetic manner.

Hearing those words, not to mention Xu Yiyi, even Elder Ning Shuang was startled. They truly never expected that Chu Feng would refuse.

“Little friend Chu Feng, our Sunset Cloud Valley’s guest elder is actually only a nominal title. It will not bind you,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said with a smile.

His intentions were very clear. If Chu Feng wanted to proceed to a higher elevation, it would be completely fine. This nominal title would not affect Chu Feng from joining other powers in the future.

“Chu Feng, just accept it. You should know that our Sunset Cloud Valley’s guest elder title is not only unfettered to our Sunset Cloud Valley, it is also a very noble status.”

“Let’s say it this way: if you are to become our Sunset Cloud Valley’s guest elder, then... your status would surpass even ordinary management elders. Even Elder Ning Shuang’s status would be greatly inferior to yours.”

“Furthermore, although our Sunset Cloud Valley is a second tier power, both our Lord Valley Master and my master are rank eight Martial Ancestor-level experts.”

“Among the second tier powers, our Sunset Cloud Valley is most definitely among the finest of all. If we are to continue to develop like this, our Sunset Cloud Valley will definitely become a first tier power one day.”

“Even if the Four World Spiritist Emperors wished to create trouble for you in the future, our Sunset Cloud Valley would also be able to back you up,” At that moment, Xu Yiyi spoke to Chu Feng through a voice transmission. This girl was truly anxious. She really wanted Chu Feng to become their Sunset Cloud Valley’s guest elder.

However, even after what Xu Yiyi told him, Chu Feng still shook his head decisively. He said to the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, “Lord Valley Master, I, Chu Feng, truly do not plan to join any power.”

Chu Feng truly did not plan to join any power. Else, he would not have refused Liu Chengkun back then.

Now that Liu Chengkun was dead, Chu Feng inevitably felt guilt in his heart. Thus... he was even more determined to not join any powers.

Even though Chu Feng had already offended some people, and should be finding formidable powers to back him up, Chu Feng would still not agree to join any of them.

Not only was this a decision that he had already made before coming to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, most importantly, if he were to agree to join other powers now, he would have truly let Liu Chengkun down.

“That’s alright. If little friend Chu Feng wishes to join our Sunset Cloud Valley in the future, the doors to our Sunset Cloud Valley

will always be wide open for you,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master did not try to force Chu Feng.

“Merely, little friend Chu Feng, I have a request. Might little friend Chu Feng be willing to help me with it?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, Yiyi and Elder Su Jingrui are people who have saved my life.”

“Furthermore, Elder Ning Shuang also helped me on Mount Cloud Crane. Although I am not a part of the Sunset Cloud Valley, I am already associated with the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“Thus, Lord Valley Master, there is no harm in making your request. As long as it is within my capabilities, I will definitely help out,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that is the case, I’ll say it bluntly then. Originally, our Sunset Cloud Valley was actually only a small sect. Even among the tier three powers, our Sunset Cloud Valley was only a minor character.”

“In fact, for a period of time, we were on the verge of being exterminated.”

“Do you know how our Sunset Cloud Valley managed to obtain our current standing?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Lord Valley Master, please tell me how,” Chu Feng said.

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master smiled lightly. He said, “Regarding this, we would have to start from fifty thousand years ago.”

“At that time, the founder of our Sunset Cloud Valley was merely a child still.”

“At that time, a peak expert appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. That person declared himself to be

someone from the Ancient Era's War Clan. Wearing silver armor and holding a silver spear in hand, he began to challenge the many powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and defeated all of them."

"At that time, he could be considered to be the fully deserving number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

# Chapter 2261 – The Disappeared Tomb

---

“I know, I know. That man held a silver spear and wore silver armor. He proclaimed himself to be from the Ancient Era’s War Clan. His name was [Zhan Haichuan](#).”

“I’ve heard that Zhan Haichuan was the most famous existence to have appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in the last fifty thousand years. He is simply akin to a legend.”

“However, not long after he became famous, he disappeared. From that point on, no one ever heard any news about him,” Xu Yiyi interrupted.

“Indeed, he disappeared for a very long time. After he disappeared, everyone thought that he left the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, that is not the truth.”

“Not long after our Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master succeeded the position of Valley Master, that expert who had once stood at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Lord Zhao Haichuan, once again appeared.”

“Furthermore, due to a chance encounter, Lord Zhan Haichuan befriended our Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master.”

“Lord Zhan Haichuan bestowed a lot of treasures to our Sunset Cloud Valley. He even taught our second generation Lord Valley Master the method to nurture our disciples, as well as how to choose elites.”

“To tell you the truth, even our Sunset Cloud Valley’s mysterious protection technique, our Sunset Cloud Mysterious Technique, was not something created by our founder. Rather, it was given to us by Lord Zhan Haichuan.”

“Lord Zhan Haichuan felt fond of the name of our Sunset Cloud Valley. As he just happened to possess a special mysterious

technique that would give off an abnormal sign as if one had sunset clouds lingering around oneself should one master it, he felt that that mysterious technique suited our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“Thus, it is all thanks to Lord Zhan Haichuan that our Sunset Cloud Valley was able to obtain our prosperity today,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, is that for real? Why have I never heard of this before?” Xu Yiyi opened her mouth wide in shock. Astonishment filled her beautiful eyes.

After all, Zhan Haichuan was an individual with astonishing fame. As such, this was no small matter at all.

In fact, even Elder Ning Shuang had an astonished expression on his face. It would seem that this was not something that everyone in the Sunset Cloud Valley knew about.

“Lord Zhan Haichuan mentioned that it was best to keep this matter confidential. Other than the successive Valley Masters and during moments of necessity, it would be best to not mention this matter to anyone else.”

“However, today, as I have a request for little friend Chu Feng, I would naturally have to be sincere. That is the reason why I have mentioned this matter,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Wow! Chu Feng, your reputation is truly huge. This is something that even we didn’t know about before. Likely, even my master does not know about this. We were only able to know about this today thanks to you,” Xu Yiyi said happily.

“Indeed, there are not many people that know about this matter right now. The few of us here are the only ones that know about it. Thus, we must keep this matter confidential,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master reminded everyone.

“Yes,” Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang said in unison.

“I hope that little friend Chu Feng will help our Sunset Cloud Valley keep this matter confidential too,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said to Chu Feng. His tone was very polite.

“Lord Valley Master, please rest assured. I will definitely not mention this matter to anyone,” Chu Feng said.

“I trust little friend Chu Feng. If I didn’t, I wouldn’t have told you about it,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said with a smile.

Actually, Chu Feng being an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist was only a part of the reason why the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master thought so highly of Chu Feng. Most importantly, it was because Chu Feng had cured his mother’s illness and saved her life.

“Lord Valley Master, then, what happened after that?” Chu Feng asked. He knew that this matter was not resolved.

“Actually, when our Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master became acquainted with Lord Zhan Haichuan, Lord Zhan Haichuan was already in his old age, and nearing the end of his life.”

“Lord Zhan Haichuan said that he had been proud and aloof all his life, and had been unwilling to believe anyone. As such, he had never had a friend his entire life.”

“He said that countless people would think about his inheritance, should he die. As such, he believed that he would not be able to escape his tomb being dug up.”

“However, he did not mind any of that. After all, after death, everything would be gone. Even if what he had accumulated in his entire life was snatched away, what could he possibly do?”

“Lord Zhan Haichuan only hoped that there would be people who would go and offer respects at his grave every year after he died,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Although an exceptional expert like that would be looked up to

by others his entire life, it is also destined that he would be lonely his entire life. Perhaps this might not have bothered him in the past, however, when one is about to die, it would naturally change one's frame of mind."

"If I am not mistaken, the Sunset Cloud Valley's second generation Valley Master must have been the person chosen by Zhan Haichuan to offer respects at his grave every year after his death, right?" Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng's judgment is truly good," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

Seeing that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had confirmed Chu Feng's guess, the gaze with which Xu Yiyi looked to Chu Feng was immediately filled with little stars. It was a gaze of adoration.

It was not only her; even Elder Ning Shuang looked to Chu Feng with an admiring gaze. The reason for that was because he had been focused on listening the entire time, and hadn't even bothered to think about where the story was going.

As for Chu Feng, he was thinking about all of that at the same time as he was listening. This sort of line of thought was truly not something that ordinary people possessed.

"Could it be that the tomb of that Lord Zhan Haichuan is located in the Sunset Cloud Valley?" Chu Feng asked.

"Indeed," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master nodded. Then, he said, "After that, our Sunset Cloud Valley's successive generations of Valley Masters would always go and offer their respects to Lord Zhan Haichuan's grave every year."

"Furthermore, as per the instructions of our second generation's Valley Master, we would always offer our respects toward the grave at least three times a year."

"However, at the time when our sixth generation Valley Master



succeeded the position of Valley Master, a strange thing occurred. Lord Zhan Haichuan's tomb disappeared," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

"Disappeared?" Hearing those words, both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang were astonished. Although Chu Feng had a relatively calm expression, there was also surprise in his eyes.

"Where was that tomb built? Could it have been discovered by someone and plundered?" Chu Feng asked.

"That tomb was built in our Sunset Cloud Valley's forbidden area. Other than our Sunset Cloud Valley's successive generations of Valley Masters, no one else knew about this matter. Furthermore, no one else had the authority to enter that forbidden area."

"Furthermore, Lord Zhan Haichuan set up many spirit formations in the area. If one were to only offer respects to his tomb, it would be fine. However, if anyone tried to do anything to his tomb, they would trigger those spirit formations guarding the tomb."

"The spirit formations that Lord Zhan Haichuan left behind to guard his tomb are no small matter. If one were to trigger them, our Sunset Cloud Valley's forbidden area would not even be able to withstand the spirit formations. However, our Sunset Cloud Valley's forbidden area is still here. This means that no one has triggered those spirit formations," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

"But, how could a tomb disappear by itself?" Chu Feng said.

"According to our sixth generation Lord Valley Master, he had discovered things that were amiss before he tried to offer his respects to Lord Zhan Haichuan's tomb."

"Thus, our sixth generation Lord Valley Master was determined that the tomb was still inside the forbidden area. Merely, due to

the fact that Lord Zhan Haichuan's tomb was too powerful, it might have disappeared because of some unforeseen event."

"However, since the tomb has disappeared, we are thus unable to offer our respects to it. Thus, I wish to request little friend Chu Feng's assistance to see whether or not you might be able to find that tomb again," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

"A tomb that could disappear? That is truly extraordinary. That tomb must have been personally built by that Lord Zhan Haichuan, right?" Chu Feng asked.

"Indeed, it was personally built by Lord Zhan Haichuan," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master nodded.

"Something is definitely fishy regarding this," Chu Feng started to ponder. The reason for that was because a tomb would not disappear without good cause. Chu Feng felt that it might be dangerous if he were to attempt to find the tomb.

Zhan → War/Battle Haichuan → Sea River.

## Chapter 2262 – Inside The Forbidden Area

---

At that moment, Eggy's voice sounded. "Chu Feng, how could a tomb possibly disappear by itself without reason or cause?"

"It was either plundered by someone, or that self-proclaimed Ancient Era's War Clan's Zhan Haichuan did not trust the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley, and thus set up some sort of formation on his tomb."

"As soon as the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley possessed an errant heart and intended to open his tomb to obtain his legacy, that tomb would then disappear by itself."

"Thus, it is best that you do not accept this request. You should not involve yourself with this matter,"

"Although that might be the case, it remains that the Sunset Cloud Valley has treated me very well," Chu Feng took a glance at Xu Yiyi.

Chu Feng would never forget that if it wasn't for Xu Yiyi's invitation that day, both he and the Red Butterfly Society would've been exterminated.

Furthermore, if it wasn't for the Death Exemption Title Plate given to him by Xu Yiyi, Chu Feng would have been directly killed by those Law Enforcement Elders at Luyang's Pavilion.

As such, Xu Yiyi could be said to have saved Chu Feng twice. This grace was something that Chu Feng had engraved in his heart.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master did not seem to be a bad individual. Merely his filial piety toward his mother was already something that Chu Feng admired.

As such, Chu Feng wanted to help them a lot. However, he also felt what Eggy said to be reasonable too.

If the tomb of that Zhan Haichuan had truly concealed itself

because the sixth generation Valley Master of the Sunset Cloud Valley had possessed errant thoughts in his heart, if Chu Feng were to find it, it would mean that he had helped evildoers do evil.

However, even though Chu Feng was distrusting of the Sunset Cloud Valley's sixth generation Valley Master, he possessed confidence in the current generation Valley Master.

Thus, Chu Feng said to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, "Lord Valley Master, are you certain that the disappearance of that expert's tomb is unrelated to your Sunset Cloud Valley?"

"Little friend Chu Feng, I understand what you mean by that. Your way of thinking is very normal too."

"However, I will not conceal this matter from you. The sixth generation Valley Master is my master."

"Thus, while I do not dare to vouch for the other Lord Valley Masters, I dare to vouch for my own master."

"With his character, he would definitely not long for Zhan Haichuan's treasures and think of doing things to that tomb."

"Actually, the sixth generation Lord Valley Master, my master, was troubled by this matter the entire time. He felt guilty and depressed for letting the second generation Lord Valley Master and Lord Zhan Haichuan down."

"As such, my master lived for only a short five thousand years before dying."

"Little friend Chu Feng, the final wish that my master had before dying was for me to find Lord Zhan Haichuan's tomb."

"Over the years, I have always been trying to befriend an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. However... Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are truly too snobbish. Truth be told... I do not trust a single one of them."

"However, little friend Chu Feng is different. Even though we

have only known one another for a very short period of time, I am able to tell that you possess excellent moral quality.”

“Else, you wouldn’t have risked your life by killing Chu Luyang for the sake of the people from the Red Butterfly Society. After all, no matter what, what flowed in Chu Luyang’s body was the blood of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, if possible, I truly hope that you will help me.”

“As long as you are willing to help me, regardless of whether you will succeed or not, I will definitely thank you heavily again,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said to Chu Feng with sincerity all across his face.

“The spirit formations set up by an expert like Zhan Haichuan are most definitely not ordinary spirit formations. A tomb personally established by an expert like Zhan Haizhuan is most definitely an extraordinary tomb.”

“I, Chu Feng, do not have certainty in being able to find the tomb. However, I am willing to give it a try,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, in that case, you’ve agreed to my request?” At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master had an expression of joy all over his face.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile.

“I will have to inconvenience little friend Chu Feng then,” Upon verifying that Chu Feng had agreed to help, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was immediately overjoyed and unable to conceal his smile.

After that, it was decided that Chu Feng would first stay in the Sunset Cloud Valley to rest for a day, and enjoy the treatment of a distinguished guest.

Early in the morning on the next day, Chu Feng was brought to that forbidden area by the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this is the place where the tomb used to be,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master handed Chu Feng a map.

“Lord Valley Master, you’re not coming with me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Actually, I want to accompany little friend Chu Feng very much. However, it remains that Tuoba Shangshui has committed a crime. As such, I must watch over him.”

“Furthermore, although this is a forbidden area, there are not many dangers inside. Thus, little friend Chu Feng can rest assured.”

“Furthermore, in this period of time, I will give an order telling others that they are not allowed to close off this forbidden area. Thus, you will be able to enter and leave that place at any time.”

“If you are to discover anything amiss, you can come out at any time. I will have Elder Ning Shuang wait for you here. If there is anything, you can inform him about it,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, can I accompany Chu Feng inside?” Xu Yiyi asked.

“Cough cough,” Right after Xu Yiyi said those words, Elder Ning Shuang coughed twice. Then, he said, “Yiyi, do not forget that this place is a forbidden area that only Lord Valley Master is allowed to enter.”

“I know, but...” Xu Yiyi revealed a tangled expression. It was not that she didn’t know about the rules of the forbidden area. Merely, she truly wanted to accompany Chu Feng.

“Yiyi, it’s better that you wait for me here,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng didn’t want Xu Yiyi to accompany him because he knew that it would be very likely that he would encounter dangers

in trying to find that tomb.

Even if those dangers would only be dangers in terms of world spirit techniques, it remained that Chu Feng would only be able to protect himself. As such, he was worried that Xu Yiyi would encounter dangers should she accompany him inside.

“Okay then,” Seeing that Chu Feng had spoken against it, Xu Yiyi nodded her head in a slightly unwilling manner.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I’ll have to trouble you then,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master clasped his fist toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng will definitely do his best,” Chu Feng also returned a clasped fist to the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master.

After that, Chu Feng stepped into the forbidden area by himself.

The forbidden area was very large. It could most definitely be considered an isolated space. It would not be too excessive to say that it was a small world.

Furthermore, it possessed scenery like something out of a painting. Not only were there green hills and clear waters, thick vegetation covered the entire place.

Butterflies were spiraling around flowers as birds sang in the forest.

Occasionally, a little rabbit would leap out from the underbrush, and the silhouette of a sika deer could be seen in the distance.

It had been a very long time since Chu Feng had seen little animals like these. The reason for that was because as Chu Feng’s strength grew stronger, he was only able to see ferocious beasts and monstrous beasts, even in the countryside.

As for those cute little animals, they simply did not possess the ability to survive in those sorts of conditions, and thus had already gone extinct.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng, let this Queen out,” Suddenly, Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded by Chu Feng’s ears.

Very rarely did Her Lady Queen ask to come out by herself. Chu Feng would naturally not hesitate. He immediately opened his world spirit gate to allow Her Lady Queen out.

Soon, a figure even more beautiful than celestial fairies stepped out from the world spirit gate. She was none other than Her Lady Queen.

At that moment, Her Lady Queen’s hands were on her waist. She closed her eyes and took several long breaths.

Her several breaths caused the butterflies to fly gracefully toward her. They began to revolve around Her Lady Queen.

This sort of scene caught Chu Feng’s gaze. However, Chu Feng’s gaze was mostly focused on Her Lady Queen’s face.

As he looked to the slightly trembling long eyelashes, Chu Feng felt an indescribable sensation.

In short, it was a very pleasant sensation.

“How could this be said to be a forbidden area? This is simply a paradise,” After Eggy opened her eyes, she spoke with a sweet smile.

“The reason this place is deemed to be a forbidden area is precisely because that Zhan Haichuan’s tomb is located here.”

“However, judging from things, it seems that Milady Queen is very fond of this place?” Chu Feng said as he looked at Eggy.



## Chapter 2263 – A Cat That Can Speak

---

“I’ve grown tired of looking at rare and unusual plants and flowers. To look at these ordinary plants and flowers gives me a different sort of sensation,” Eggy said. As she said those words, she waved her hand and drove the butterflies hovering around her away.

“Why did you drive them away? They were attracted over by you, you know,” Chu Feng said.

“They’re annoying to see. If it wasn’t for the fact that I’m in a good mood, I would’ve killed them,” Eggy said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed slightly. The reason for that was because he knew that Eggy was not joking with those words. She was truly capable of doing that sort of thing.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly recalled that his Queen was not a kind-hearted celestial fairy. Rather, she was a vicious and merciless little demon woman.

“Let’s go. This Queen shall see why a tomb would disappear for no reason,” As Her Lady Queen spoke, she soared into the sky and began to fly toward the depths of the forbidden area.

The direction in which Her Lady Queen flew was the same direction where the tomb had originally been located.

The reason why Her Lady Queen knew about the direction was because she had seen the map that Chu Feng had seen earlier through his eyes.

Although this place was very large, Her Lady Queen’s speed was very fast. On top of that, as they knew their destination, they soon arrived at the place where the tomb had once been.

That place looked excessively ordinary. It was nothing more than a plot of land within the forest.

If it wasn't for the fact that the map indicated that the tomb had been located here, Chu Feng would never have believed that an exceptional expert's tomb would be located in that place.

"Chu Feng, are you able to see anything amiss?" Eggy asked Chu Feng. After arriving here, Chu Feng had been inspecting the surroundings with his Heaven's Eyes the entire time.

And now, Chu Feng had already inspected this place for an entire hour now.

"No, I am unable to determine anything," Chu Feng said.

"Then what are we to do?" Eggy asked.

"I can only use spirit formations to test things out," Chu Feng said as he started to set up a spirit formation.

Meanwhile, in the forest was a large yellow-colored cat. That cat was lying lazily on top of a tree branch.

That cat did not appear to be extraordinary at all; it resembled all of the other animals in the forest. Merely, that cat had been staring at Chu Feng and Eggy the entire time.

When Chu Feng began to set up his spirit formation and unleash a boundless amount of Insect Mark Immortal-level spirit power, the cat's eyes actually started to shine. Then, it began to look at Chu Feng even more earnestly.

As for Chu Feng, he did not notice that abnormal cat. Instead, he continued to wholeheartedly set up his spirit formation.

However, after Chu Feng finished setting up his spirit formation, and after the spirit formation began to flicker with light from its activation, a disappointed expression appeared in Chu Feng's eyes.

It was useless. He was unable to discover where the tomb had gone to with his Heaven's Eyes.

As for his spirit formation, it too was unable to discover where the tomb had disappeared to.

It was as if the tomb has never been there. Chu Feng was simply unable to detect it at all.

“Didn’t work again?” Eggy asked.

“No, I must try again.” Chu Feng was unwilling to give up. He racked his brains and thought up a new spirit formation.

Chu Feng felt that he might be able to find some clues should he use his Heaven’s Eyes alongside that spirit formation.

“Meow~~~ it’s useless,” At the moment when Chu Feng was about to try again, a voice that sounded like a cat’s, yet was still speaking in human speech, suddenly sounded from behind Chu Feng.

Chu Feng hurriedly turned his gaze toward the voice. He discovered that there was a yellow cat lying on top of a large tree branch.

Although that cat’s size was not enormously large, it was very fat. Furthermore, it was a very old cat. Its yellow fur had already faded. Although it was yellow, its fur was more whitish in color.

In short, that cat did not possess a fond-looking appearance. It could be considered to be a relatively ugly cat.

However, that cat possessed intelligence. At that moment, it was looking at Chu Feng and Eggy.

Before Chu Feng could say anything, Her Lady Queen asked curiously, “Were you the one speaking earlier?”

“You don’t say! If it wasn’t this great sir who spoke, could it instead be you, silly girl, who spoke?” That cat-like human-like voice sounded again. Merely, this time around, Chu Feng and Eggy clearly saw that the voice originated from that old cat’s mouth.

“Wow! This is interesting. Such an ugly cat is actually capable of human speech,” Her Lady Queen acted as if she had seen a treasure. She leapt before the cat, grabbed the cat’s tail and held it

up.

“Release this great sir, you damned silly girl. Do you know who I am?” That old cat extended its sharp claws and began to frantically claw at Her Lady Queen.

Speaking of it, that old cat was truly ferocious. The place where it aimed its claws at was actually Her Lady Queen’s exceptionally beautiful, fair, soft and tender cheeks. It was simply trying to ruin Her Lady Queen’s face.

However, even though the old cat was capable of speech, it evidently did not possess any cultivation. Apart from being able to speak, it was no different from an ordinary cat.

Thus, it was completely toyed around with by Her Lady Queen, and unable to reach Her Lady Queen with its claws at all. It was truly a miserable sight.

“Chu Feng, this is the first time that I’ve seen a cat that can speak. I wonder what a cat like this would taste like. How about the two of us make it into a stew to test out its flavor?” Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile.

“Don’t, don’t, don’t!” Hearing those words, that old cat was immediately worried. It hurriedly said to Chu Feng, “Boy, quickly have this damned silly girl release this great sir. This great sir is capable of helping you find that tomb.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s gaze changed. With a cold tone, he asked, “You know that I have come to find the tomb?”

“You don’t say! If you didn’t come here to find the tomb, why did you come to this place to set up a spirit formation to search for the tomb?” The old cat said.

“Exactly what are you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Have this damned silly girl release this great sir first,” The old cat howled.

In response, Chu Feng signaled Eggy with his eyes. After Eggy released the cat, Chu Feng continued to ask, “Go ahead, tell me exactly what you are and why you are capable of human speech. Furthermore, why are you here, and what do you know about that tomb?”

“What am I?”

“Haha, I fear that I will scare you to death if I am to tell you,” At that moment, that old cat revealed a cheshire grin on its face. It was an extremely complacent smile.

“Paa~~~”

However, before it could even finish saying its following words, Eggy slapped down with her palm. Her palm ruthlessly landed on that old cat’s head.

Her palm not only smashed that old cat to the ground, it also caused that old cat’s eyes to flicker with stars. That old cat nearly fainted on the spot.

“When you’re being questioned, answer quickly. Do not bother with superfluous words. Else, do you believe that this Queen will make you into stew?” Her Lady Queen said ruthlessly.

“You damned silly girl. It is only now that you dare to bully this great sir.”

“Had it been before, a single fart from this great sir would have been able to kill a thousand of you.”

“No, not a thousand, but rather ten thousand, a hundred million even,” The old cat said very angrily.

“Aiya, you dare talk back? Watch how this Queen will take care of you,” As Her Lady Queen spoke, she planned to attack the old cat again.

“Eggy,” In response, Chu Feng hurriedly stopped Eggy. As he spoke, he also pulled the cat away from Eggy and behind him.

Regardless of whether or not that old cat knew about the situation there, Chu Feng knew that Eggy was definitely capable of smashing the old cat to pieces with her palm.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng did not want the old cat to die yet.

Perhaps this cat would truly be crucial to finding the tomb.

After all, for a talking cat like this to appear in a place like this was already something extremely strange.

“We actually do not have any malice at all. We merely wish to ask about the state of affairs in regards to that tomb, as well as why you would be here,” Chu Feng asked that old cat.

“Mn, boy, your attitude is pretty decent. Since that’s the case, this great sir shall tell you about it.”

“This great sir has been here for many years now.”

“However, that’s not important. What’s important is... you need to know that this great sir used to be extremely powerful. Furthermore, this great sir knows how to find that tomb,” The old cat said.

## Chapter 2264 – Cunning

---

“In that case, may I know what I must do in order to find that disappeared tomb?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is a very simple question. You just need to go there to find it,” The old cat pointed to the southeastern forest.

“There?” Chu Feng was hesitant.

At that moment, the old cat began to walk in that direction. It pointed to the land below its paws and said, “The tomb is located here.”

“It’s best you don’t deceive me. There is simply nothing there,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was not saying those words irresponsibly. Instead, he had already used his Heaven’s Eyes to inspect that area, and did not detect anything strange in that place.

“Boy, this great sir would not deceive you. Merely, your world spirit techniques are truly too weak. With your world spirit techniques, it is simply impossible for you to find the tomb,” The old cat said.

“You are the first that dared to say that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques are lacking after seeing him use his world spirit techniques. Damned cat, you are clearly pretending to understand when you don’t,” Eggy revealed a cold gaze in her eyes. She did not believe what the old cat said.

“Are you saying his world spirit techniques are not lacking? If his world spirit techniques are not lacking, there is simply no need for me to tell him where the tomb is, he would be able to find it himself. Furthermore, he would also be able to summon that tomb,” The old cat said.

“Could it be that you know how to find the tomb?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course. This great sir will teach you a spirit formation. With that, you will be able to reveal the tomb.”

“Of course, this great sir will not help you without reason. You must first agree to one thing,” The old cat said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you have any cigarettes?” The old cat asked.

“Cigarettes?” Chu Feng was confused.

“From the way you reacted, it seems like you don’t smoke. But, you should have seen a tobacco pipe before, right? Make a pipe for this great sir.”

“Oh, that’s right. Make it according to this dimension, this composition and this appearance,” As the old cat spoke, it began to use its claw to sketch out the appearance and composition of the tobacco pipe. Soon, it finished its sketch.

“Yoh, you’re quite skillful,” In response, Her Lady Queen was unable to keep herself from voicing a bit of praise.

The reason for that was because the old cat’s sketch was not only very detailed, the old cat also finished the sketch very quickly.

Not to mention a cat, even for a martial cultivator, something like drawing a design that detailed would be very difficult to accomplish.

From merely that point, one could determine that this cat was truly extraordinary.

“Boy, what are you still standing there for? Quickly, go and make one such pipe for this great sir,” That old cat began to boss Chu Feng around.

“Hey, damned cat, you’re looking for a beating!” In response, Her Lady Queen was angered. She raised her hand with the intention of beating the old cat.

However, Chu Feng stopped her again. Then, Chu Feng waved



his sleeve, and a small amount of Immortal-level spirit power appeared. In the blink of an eye, that small amount of spirit power took form of a tobacco pipe.

That tobacco pipe soon condensed into an actual pipe. One simply could not tell that it was formed with spirit power. Furthermore, its measurements and appearance were exactly the same as the sketch from that old cat.

However, when that immaculate tobacco pipe reached the old cat's grasp, "It's decent enough" was the only evaluation Chu Feng received.

"As you're a world spiritist, you most definitely possess Spirit Loosening Herb. Give some to this grand sir," The old cat began to boss Chu Feng around again. It was acting as if it were truly a great sir.

As for Chu Feng, he was not angered by the old cat. He took out several bits of Spirit Loosening Herb and handed them to the old cat.

The old cat placed the Spirit Loosening Herbs onto the ground. Then, it said, "Dry them up."

Chu Feng continued doing as the old cat ordered. After all, to Chu Feng, those things were simply extremely easy to accomplish. At the very least, they were much easier to do than setting up spirit formations.

"Give me a Cosmos Sack," The old cat said.

Chu Feng was not stingy. He took out an empty Cosmos Sack and handed it directly to the old cat.

Then, that old cat hung the Cosmos Sack around its neck and began to remove the leaves from the Spirit Loosening Herb before stuffing them into the Cosmos Sack.

After that, the old cat took a small portion of the Spirit Loosening Herb and stuffed it into the tobacco pipe. Then, it said to Chu

Feng, "Light it."

Chu Feng pointed at the tobacco pipe with his finger, and a spark fell into the tobacco pipe. After the Spirit Loosening Herb's leaves were ignited, a smoke began to rise.

As for that old cat, it began to suck on the tobacco pipe in a very familiar manner. Not only was the old cat sucking on the pipe, it was also blowing out smoke.

The smoke was coming out from both his mouth and his nose. In fact, that old cat was capable of even changing the shape of the smoke to all kinds of different shapes.

As the old cat continued to suck on the pipe, it closed its eyes. It was truly taking pleasure in it.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt even more that the old cat was extraordinary. It was not only because it was smoking like an experienced individual.

For one, although Chu Feng knew that the Spirit Loosening Herb was a medicinal herb, he only knew that its roots were useful and thought the leaves to not be of much use at all.

However, he truly never expected that one could smoke the leaves of the Spirit Loosening Herb like tobacco. Furthermore, the smell of the Spirit Loosening Herb was much more fragrant than tobacco.

"The Spirit Loosening Herb's medicinal usage is not much. However, when smoking it like tobacco, it can barely pass," The old cat said while enjoying the pleasures of his smoking.

"Are you able to tell me how to find the tomb now?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course not. You still haven't agreed to help me yet," The old cat said.

"Are you to saying that this smoke is not enough?" Chu Feng

said.

“Of course not. It is merely smoke. You wish to obtain the whereabouts of the tomb from me with merely smoke? You are truly getting carried away by your wishful thinking, no?” The old cat cast a gaze of contempt at Chu Feng.

“Very well. Go ahead and tell me what you want me to help you with,” Chu Feng said.

“Is the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple still present?” The old cat asked.

“It is,” Chu Feng said.

“Then go to Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and find their current Abbot. Tell him that their founder, Lord Tiger, is trapped in this place. Tell him to find at least ten Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists and have them come here to save me,” The old cat said.

“Hahaha, Lord Tiger? You’re clearly an old and lousy cat. There’s an enormous difference between you and a tiger, no?” At that moment, Eggy started to laugh at the old cat’s remarks.

However, Chu Feng had a very serious expression on his face. The reason for that was because he felt that the cat’s bearing, as well as the tone that it spoke with, both seemed to indicate that it was not joking around or lying.

Could it be that this cat was truly the founder of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple? If that was real, wouldn’t it be too ridiculous?

Buddha’s Heavenly Temple was a sacred place devoted to Buddhism. How could its founder be a cat?

At that moment, Chu Feng began to size up the old cat once again. However, no matter how he looked at the cat, it only resembled an ordinary cat to him.

However, the old cat was clearly extremely extraordinary. At the

very least, the fact that it could speak was already extremely extraordinary.

This made Chu Feng realize that he was simply unable to see through that cat.

“Are you truly the founder of Buddha’s Heavenly Temple?” Chu Feng asked.

“This great sir would never lie,” The old cat replied.

“Then why are you trapped here?” Chu Feng asked.

“Is there even a need to ask? It’s naturally because of the treasures here,” Eggy said.

“Humph, damned silly girl, you are truly looking down on me too excessively, no?” The old cat laughed disdainfully. Then, it turned to Chu Feng and said, “Boy, if you are to help this great sir, after I get out of here, I will definitely have the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple protect you.”

“Even if what you say is the truth, I am still unable to help you just like this. The reason for that is because I am uncertain if what you are saying is true or false. After all, the current you is without any cultivation at all,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s simple. I’ll tell you some secrets regarding Buddha’s Heavenly Temple,” The old cat said indifferently.

“First, I do not have much of an understanding toward Buddha’s Heavenly Temple. Next, I am not interested in the secrets of Buddha’s Heavenly Temple,” Chu Feng said.

“Then what do you want?” The old cat asked.

“How about this: you tell me how to find the tomb first. If what you tell me is useful, I will then go and find the people from Buddha’s Heavenly Temple to bring them here,” Chu Feng said.

“That won’t do. What if I am to tell you how to find the tomb, but then you decide to refuse to find people from Buddha’s

Heavenly Temple?” The old cat had a disbelieving expression on its face. Cunning was written all over it.

## Chapter 2265 – Situation Turning Bad

---

“If you refuse to tell me, it would mean that you are deceiving me,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you threatening me?” The old cat’s eyes narrowed as it started at Chu Feng.

“No, it’s not a threat. Rather, I am just waiting for your decision,” Chu Feng also narrowed his eyes as he revealed a slight smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng and the old cat were looking at one another. Neither one of them said anything.

Just like that, the two continued to look at one another for a long time.

After a while, the old cat was finally unable to contain itself. It said, “Forget about it, forget about it. Seeing that you are someone of the younger generation, this great sir will yield to you and help you find that tomb first.”

The old cat began to act immediately after it said those words. After agreeing to help Chu Feng find the tomb, it immediately leapt onto that empty field.

Then, its two claws began to move about in unison. In a very experienced manner, the old cat began to draw the diagram for a spirit formation.

As the saying goes, one would know whether someone was an expert the moment they unleashed their skill. When the old cat unleashed its skill, even Chu Feng’s eyes started to shine brightly.

In fact, even Her Lady Queen, who had been making remarks at the old cat the entire time, revealed an astonished expression in her beautiful eyes.

“I truly couldn’t tell that even though that cat is ugly, its

knowledge of world spirit techniques is quite profound,” Her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself, and started to praise the old cat.

Chu Feng nodded in agreement to Her Lady Queen’s praise.

Amazing. The spirit formation diagram the old cat was outlining was that of an extremely powerful spirit formation. It was a spirit formation that even Chu Feng felt he might not be able to see through. The composition of that spirit formation had actually surpassed all of the spirit formations that Chu Feng had previously grasped.

That spirit formation was an extremely powerful unsealing formation. It was a spirit formation that was extremely difficult to set up.

The amazing aspect of that old cat was that it had managed to sketch out the diagram of that extremely difficult-to-set-up unsealing formation into a diagram that was much easier to understand.

If knowing about that spirit formation and being able to outline a diagram to show how to set it up was the old cat’s ability, then the fact that the old cat was able to make the outline diagram for a spirit formation that was extremely difficult to set up much easier would mean that the old cat was extremely skillful.

.....

At the same time. Outside the forbidden area. The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, who had originally stayed in his own residence, had arrived at another forbidden area in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

This place was a special location for the important people in the Sunset Cloud Valley to undergo closed-door training.

The reason why he had come here so urgently was because Xu Yiyi’s master, Su Jingrui, had just come out from his closed-door

training.

He wanted to know whether or not Su Jingrui had truly ordered Chu Luyang that he was not allowed to attack the Red Butterfly Society again. He also wanted to know whether those Law Enforcement Elders were present when those words were said.

“Truly outrageous! Their crimes cannot be forgiven!!!”

Suddenly, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master let out a shout of overflowing anger.

Although he trusted Xu Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang and Chu Feng, he also trusted Li Rui’s master, as well as his Law Enforcement Department’s Elders.

Thus, to a greater or lesser degree, he still had suspicions in his heart, and could not be absolutely certain about the truth of the situation.

This was also the reason why he had not severely punished Li Rui’s master or the Law Enforcement Elders on the spot.

However, after hearing Su Jingrui’s accounting of the matter, the truth had been revealed. As for that result, it was something that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master found difficult to accept.

After all, he had placed enormous trust in Li Rui’s master and those Law Enforcement Department’s Elders.

“I was truly blind to entrust such a heavy amount of power to him.”

“I am fortunate to have discovered this matter. If I didn’t, who knows how many more people he would have ended up killing?”

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master suddenly had a sensation of a sudden realization. The reason for that was because it was not the first time that something like this had happened.

In the past, he had chosen to believe in Li Rui’s master. However,



after what had happened today, he suddenly felt that all his previous decisions had been mistakes.

“Lord Valley Master, these things have already happened. Even if you are to blame yourself now, it would be useless. Right now, your top priority should be to punish Tuoba Shangshui accordingly and choose a new Head Elder for the Law Enforcement Department.”

“Someone like Tuoba Shangshui absolutely cannot be allowed to hold heavy responsibility again,” Su Jingrui said.

“Elder Su, how do you think I should punish Tuoba Shangshui?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“You are the Valley Master. Thus, you should be the one to decide,” Su Jingrui smiled lightly.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master looked to his surroundings. After he confirmed that there was no one in the surroundings, he said to Su Jingrui, “Senior brother, there are no outsiders here. So, just put forth a proposal for your junior brother.”

“You still consider me as your senior brother?” Su Jingrui smiled lightly. However, his smile contained a special meaning.

“Senior brother, it remains that I am currently the Valley Master. As such, for certain things, I must consider the general situation. However, in my heart, you have always been my senior brother,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master actually bowed respectfully to Su Jingrui after he finished saying those words.

In response, Su Jingrui sighed. Then, he said, “I had already told you that Tuoba Shangshui had issues with his character. Yet, you insisted on putting him in an important position.”

“Senior brother, it was you who did not want to bother with the affairs of our Sunset Cloud Valley. Otherwise, the position of the Head Law Enforcement Elder was definitely going to be yours.

How could he possibly have had the chance to become the Head Law Enforcement Elder?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Are you implying that it’s my fault?” Su Jingrui cast a side eye at the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master.

“This junior brother did not mean that,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said with a slightly apologetic tone. Although he was the Lord Valley Master and held a high status, he did not possess the arrogance of a Valley Master before Su Jingrui. Instead, he possessed the humility of a junior brother.

“The rules established by our founder cannot be altered. Not to mention that Tuoba Shangshui had a problem with his moral character, even if he was an outstanding talent, he cannot be tolerated after making this sort of mistake.”

“You should kill him,” Su Jingrui said.

“This...” Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master entered a difficult situation.

He understood all of it. Merely, it was as Su Jingrui had said, he was reluctant to kill Tuoba Shangshui.

“How about this? As long as you’re willing to kill him, I am willing to take on the position of the Head Law Enforcement Elder,” Su Jingrui said.

“Senior brother, you should’ve said so sooner,” Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master immediately revealed an overjoyed expression. He said, “Like this, when little friend Chu Feng comes out, I will immediately execute Tuoba Shangshui, as well as his henchmen, as per the rules of our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“This would also be the perfect timing to curb the unhealthy air brewing in our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“It seems that you possess eyesight like Yiyi, and think very

highly of that Chu Feng,” Su Jingrui said with a smile.

“Now that you mention it, Yiyi’s eyesight is truly decent. That Chu Feng is truly a rare talent. Unfortunately, he will not be able to be utilized by our Sunset Cloud Valley,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“His talent is indeed decent. However, to say that he’s a talent, wouldn’t that be a bit excessive?” Su Jingrui said.

“Senior brother, you have been in closed-door training the entire time, and don’t know about what has happened in this short period of time. That Chu Feng became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on Mount Cloud Crane.”

“Have you ever met an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist as young as him?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“He became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Hearing those words, Su Jingrui was very shocked.

“Furthermore, I have personally seen his world spirit techniques. My mother’s illness has been thoroughly cured by him,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“That is truly a good thing,” After knowing that the Valley Master’s mother’s illness had been cured, Su Jingrui revealed a joyous expression. He then said, “In that case, it would seem that Chu Feng is truly a talent.”

“Lord Valley Master, this is bad!” Right at that moment, a management elder rushed over anxiously.

“What has happened?” In response, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master’s expression changed. The reason for that was because that management elder was the person that he had ordered to secretly monitor the Law Enforcement Department.

“Elder Tuoba, he, he charged into the forbidden area,” That management elder said.

“Which forbidden area?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Chu Feng, it’s the forbidden area Chu Feng is in.”

“Not only has he entered the forbidden area, he has also captured Elder Ning Shuang and Xu Yiyi,” That management elder said.

“What?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui both changed enormously.

## Chapter 2266 – Strange Smile

---

“Why would he enter the forbidden area? Furthermore, how did he know that Chu Feng had entered that forbidden area?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Regarding that, this subordinate does not know about it. Merely, after he rushed out, he injured the elder that Lord Valley Master ordered to watch over him, and then began to directly proceed for that forbidden area,” That management elder said.

“Which forbidden area?” Su Jingrui hurriedly asked. At that moment, his face was also covered with nervousness. While he might not be worried for the safety of others, it would be impossible for him to not worry about Xu Yiyi’s safety.

“Follow me,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master did not bother with any more superfluous words. His body shifted as he soared into the sky. Su Jingrui followed closely behind him.

Merely, after the two of them arrived at the forbidden area, their expressions changed enormously once again. The reason for that was because they were surprised to discover that the entrance to that forbidden area was actually sealed.

Furthermore, the management elders in charge of guarding this forbidden area had all been injured.

Upon seeing that, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master hurriedly took out a world spirit key with the intention of opening the sealed entrance. However, it was only when he attempted to open the gate that he discovered that his world spirit key had been rendered useless.

“Damn it! That Tuoba Shangshui actually struck me first,” At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed an even more furious expression. In fact, his surging killing intent had also appeared.

“What’s wrong? Could it be that you’re unable to open the gate?” Su Jingrui asked.

“Back then, there was some issue with this forbidden area’s entrance gate. Back then, I ordered Tuoba Shangshui to request many Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists to repair the gate.”

“Logically, my key should definitely be able to open the gate. However, it is unable to open the gate now. This definitely means that Tuoba Shangshui did something back then,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Regardless of how many Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists there might be, it remains that they are only Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists. As such, how could they possibly repair a gate like this?” Su Jingrui revealed a puzzled expression.

The reason for that was because Su Jingrui truly felt that the forbidden area’s entrance gate was extremely firm, something that even he would not be able to break through.

A gate like that would be impossible for Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists to construct. In fact, they might not even be able to make repairs to it.

“Senior brother, you don’t know about this. There are a lot of secrets concerning this,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed a difficult expression.

Under normal circumstances, it would be true that Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists would not be able to make repairs to such a gate.

However, that expert Zhan Haichuan seemed to know that this forbidden area’s gate would have issues after a long time, so he deliberately imparted a method to allow even Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritists to make repairs to the gate.

Merely, Su Jingrui did not know about the things regarding Zhan Haichuan, and it would not be suitable for the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master to explain this matter to Su Jingrui right now.

“There's no other way around it. As human life is beyond value, we must force our way through.”

“The two of us shall attack it in turn. We will definitely be able to break through this gate. Merely, after we break through the gate, I fear that there will not be anyone capable of making another such gate for this forbidden area,” Su Jingrui said to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master.

In fact, Su Jingrui felt this to be the only method to solve the situation at hand. However, he was worried that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master would disagree to his method. That was the reason why he mentioned it with a consulting tone.

Although the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was his junior brother, Su Jingrui knew that his junior brother was extremely stubborn.

As for this forbidden area, it has been with their Sunset Cloud Valley for a very long time. The entrance gate to that forbidden area could be said to be the remnants of their ancestors.

Although they were tasked with an extremely important task right now, and must charge into the forbidden area, it remained that Su Jingrui was afraid that his junior brother would refuse to agree to breaking the gate.

“There's no other alternative. Senior brother, please step aside; I'll attack the gate first.”

To Su Jingrui's surprise, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master not only did not refuse his proposal, he did not even hesitate in the slightest.

As he spoke, he had unleashed a sledgehammer glimmering with

a red sheen, and began to smash it at the forbidden area's entrance gate.

“Boom~~~”

Once that hammer strike was unleashed, rumbles resonated all over. The surrounding space was shattered by the impact of the hammer. The sky turned dusky as a dazzling red light scattered in all directions.

The might of the hammer was truly frightening. It was no longer something that an Incomplete Ancestral Armament could compare with.

The reason for that was because this hammer was simply not an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Rather, it was an Ancestral Armament, an actual Ancestral Armament.

However, an attack that powerful only caused that forbidden area's entrance to tremble slightly. Other than that weak tremble, not even a single crack appeared on the gate.

From this, it could be seen that the gate was extremely firm.

“All of you, step back,” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said to the elders behind him.

Actually, those elders were afraid of being injured by the energy ripples from their Valley Master's attacks, and had already moved far away.

Upon hearing what the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said, they rushed further away. The reason for that was because they knew that their Lord Valley Master might end up using even more powerful attacks now.

“Emperor Taboo Martial Skill: Ten Thousand Beasts Gale Strike!!!”

Sure enough, after the elders moved far away, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master held his Ancestral Armament and drew



support from the Ancestral Armament's power to unleash an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Extremely ferocious beasts formed from gale-force winds began to appear, numbering over ten thousand.

At that moment, those ferocious beasts were pounding themselves against the entrance gate in succession. Their might was so strong and their attacks so imposing that they left this region in a state akin to hell.

Being bombarded with that sort of ferocious attack, tiny cracks finally began to appear on the entrance gate. Furthermore, the cracks began to grow in number.

.....

At the same time. Inside the forbidden area. A dazzling spirit formation appeared.

It was a majestic grand formation. The spirit formation was standing within the forest.

Inside the spirit formation was a pagoda. Surrounding the pagoda were twenty four beastmen holding giant swords in their hands.

They were so vivid and lifelike that they simply appeared no different from actually being alive. However... they were not real. Rather, they were only beings formed by the spirit formation.

The reason for that was because after that spirit formation was activated, both the pagoda and the twenty four sword-holding beastmen began to emit light specific to Immortal-level spirit power. Furthermore, that light was growing brighter and brighter.

“Chu Feng, why am I feeling that this spirit formation is somewhat fishy?” Her Lady Queen sent a secret voice transmission to Chu Feng.

“I also feel it to be somewhat fishy. However, as we have already

come this far, we can only give it a try.”

“Eggy, watch that old cat for me. If it tries to do anything amiss, stop it immediately,” Chu Feng replied to Eggy through a voice transmission.

“No problem,” Her Lady Queen extended her hand and grabbed. Immediately, that old cat was within her grasp.

“Meow~, damned silly girl, what are you doing? Release this great sir!” The old cat was displeased, and started to loudly and frantically shout at Eggy.

“Damned cat, this Queen does not trust you. If your spirit formation is capable of summoning that tomb, then it will be fine. If your spirit formation cannot summon the tomb, this Queen will give you a taste of a feeling worse than dying,” Her Lady Queen said coldly.

“Damned silly girl, you dare to threaten this great sir?! You two are simply biting the hand of your benefactor! You two are simply devoid of conscience!” The old cat’s shouts grew louder. Its voice was starting to tremble slightly. It could be seen that it was also very afraid of Her Lady Queen.

“Rest assured, if your spirit formation works, this Queen will not make things difficult for you,” In response, Her Lady Queen revealed a pleased smile.

However, neither Chu Feng nor Eggy noticed that the old cat also revealed a slight smile as the light of the spirit formation grew brighter and brighter.

As for that smile, it was very strange.

## Chapter 2267 – Do You Need My Assistance?

---

The spirit formation grew more and more powerful. It was as if a bright sun had appeared in the forest as it illuminated the surroundings.

At that moment, the power of that spirit formation had reached its peak.

“Snap~~~”

Suddenly, the twenty four giant beastmen in the spirit formation waved their enormous swords at the pagoda in the middle of the spirit formation in unison.

“Boom~~~”

As the giant swords struck down, the spirit formation was immediately shattered into a vortex of spirit power that began to spin and revolve in that region as they assimilated into the earth.

“Crap, we’ve been duped!”

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed. He had already noticed that the situation was amiss.

There was simply no such so-called tomb here. As for the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up earlier, it seemed to be an unsealing formation. Just then, it seemed to have split open another spirit formation.

What was going to be released by that spirit formation?

“Why did you deceive me?” Chu Feng revealed a furious expression as he asked that damned cat.

“Boy, it seems too late for you to only realize it right now,” The damned cat had a half smile of a successful plot on its face.

“You dared deceive us? I’ll kill you,” In response, Her Lady Queen immediately unleashed overwhelming killing intent. As she spoke, she planned to rip the old cat in her hand to pieces.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at that moment, a roar was heard. Following that, a boundless power surged forth from the ground.

At the moment that boundless power appeared, a boundlessly powerful oppressive might surrounded that region of space.

At that moment, not to mention Chu Feng, even Her Lady Queen was unable to move in the slightest. The two of them had their movements restricted by that strange yet powerful oppressive might.

The next moment, Chu Feng and Eggy were able to see with their naked eyes bodies of energy rushing out from the bottom of the ground and entering that old cat's body.

That sort of situation persisted for two entire hours. That region of space only calmed down after two hours passed.

Chu Feng and Eggy finally regained their ability to move at that point.

However, neither Chu Feng nor Eggy dared to attack the old cat again.

Not only did the two of them not dare to attack the old cat, the always violent Lady Queen actually released the old cat of her own accord.

The reason for that was because they were able to feel an extremely frightening aura from that old cat. It was an inestimable aura.

Powerful, that old cat was extremely powerful. Its strength was many times more powerful than that of the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master. Perhaps that old cat might be a True Immortal-level existence.

It was simply no longer a question of whether or not Chu Feng and Eggy wanted to kill the old cat anymore. Rather, they simply

did not possess the strength to kill that old cat.

“Don’t be afraid, I will not kill you two. No matter what, the two of you could be considered to have helped me. If it wasn’t for the two of you, I would not have been able to regain my cultivation,” The old cat said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

As it spoke, it picked up the tobacco pipe that had fallen to the ground earlier and began to draw smoke from it once again.

At that moment, the old cat possessed the strength to instantly kill Chu Feng and Eggy. However, from its appearance, it seemed that the old cat truly did not plan to kill Chu Feng and Eggy.

“What’s wrong? Frightened to a speechless state?”

“Don’t be scared. I said that I wouldn’t kill you two, so I will definitely not kill you two. After all, this great sir always keeps his promises.”

“Although that damned silly girl was very disrespectful towards this great sir earlier, this great sir has decided to spare her by taking you into consideration boy,” The old cat said to Chu Feng.

After it finished saying those words, it smiled a profound smile and said, “Asura World Spiritist, never would I have imagined that an Asura World Spiritist would appear in this place where [even birds don’t shit](#). That is quite rare indeed.”

“Exactly who are you?” Chu Feng asked. He became even more certain that this old cat was extraordinary. Likely, he would be a grand character.

“Humph, if I were to tell you who this great sir is, I fear that I will scare you to death. However, in a place like this where even birds don’t shit, I bet you’ve never heard of this great sir’s accomplishments. Thus, I will not bother to tell you about them.”

“You merely need to know that you have helped this great sir earlier,” The old cat said with a beaming smile.

“Is the disappearance of Lord Zhan Haichuan’s tomb related to you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course it’s related to me. His tomb has been plundered by this great sir. However, this great sir had underestimated him, and ended up being caught by his trap.”

“Fortunately, this great sir is very agile. Only my cultivation ended up being sealed, while my physical body managed to escape. Else, I would’ve already been killed,” That old cat said.

The things spoken by the old cat finally allowed Chu Feng to know the truth.

“How did you know that Lord Zhan Haichuan’s tomb was located here?” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“There is no such thing as a wall that doesn’t leak air in this world. Since this great sir wanted to find out where Zhan Haichuan was, I was naturally able to.”

“However, Zhan Haichuan was truly a top tier character. Even though he had already been dead for many years, this great sir was still made a fool of by him. From my moment of carelessness, I actually ended up being sealed here by him for over two thousand years.”

“If it wasn’t for the appearance of you, boy, this great sir might have to be trapped here for even longer,” The old cat looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. His tone was filled with gratefulness.

However, facing the old cat’s gratefulness, Chu Feng felt a sensation of guilt. As matters stood, he was certain that this old cat was the tomb raider.

However, even though this old cat had successfully robbed Zhan Haichuan’s tomb, it had also been caught in Zhan Haichuan’s spirit formation. This had led to its martial cultivation being sealed and it being trapped here, unable to escape.

As for Chu Feng, he had been taken advantage of by this old cat,

and ended up undoing the seal on its cultivation to allow it to regain its freedom.

Most importantly, this old cat was truly too powerful. Even the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master would not be a match for it.

Thus, even though Chu Feng now knew that Zhan Haichuan's tomb had been robbed by this old cat, there was nothing that he or the Sunset Cloud Valley could do to the old cat.

"Chu Feng, get the hell out here! Else, I will kill Xu Yiyi and Ning Shuang!"

"Speak immediately! I know that you're here! Aren't you a loyal and true individual?! Are you planning to watch as your friends meet miserable deaths by my hand?!"

Right at that moment, thunderous voices began to sound from the distance. At the beginning, the voices were quite indistinct. However, later on, they grew more and more distinct.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. The reason for that was because he was already able to tell that it was Li Rui's master's voice.

"How could this happen?!"

Upon sensing that the situation was amiss, Chu Feng hurriedly looked into the distance with his Heaven's Eyes. Upon inspecting the situation, Chu Feng grew even more nervous.

Not only did Chu Feng see Li Rui's master, he also saw Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang. At that moment, both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang were tied up with special chains.

Not only were their limbs restricted, the chains were also over their necks. As for the other end of those chains, they were in Li Rui's master's hand.

At that moment, Li Rui's master acted as if he were pulling dogs along as he pulled Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang around.

“That bastard!” Chu Feng was furious. He planned to soar into the sky to confront Li Rui’s master.

“Chu Feng, don’t go. You will only be throwing your life away,” Her Lady Queen grabbed Chu Feng and advised him against it.

“Eggy, I cannot do nothing,” Chu Feng said.

“But, even if you are to go, you will only be throwing your life away,” Eggy said.

“Mn?” Seeing the argument between Chu Feng and Eggy, that old cat turned its gaze toward the direction of Li Rui’s master. Then, with a beaming smile, it said, “Boy, you seem to have encountered troubles. Do you need this great sir’s assistance?”

Place where even birds don’t shit → extremely desolate place.



# Chapter 2268 – Kowtow And Beg For Forgiveness

---

Before Chu Feng could say anything, Her Lady Queen asked, “You’re willing to help?”

“Little girl, as long as you’re willing to apologize for your rudeness earlier, this great sir will be willing to help you all take care of that little trash,” The old cat smiled mischievously as he said those words.

“Lord Tiger, this little girl was in the wrong earlier. I hope that Lord Tiger will not take offense,” Surprisingly, right after that old cat said those words, Eggy bowed to the old cat.

“And here I thought that this great sir was already shameless enough. Never would I expect that you, silly little girl, would be even more shameless than me,” At that moment, black lines ran down the old cat’s forehead. It had truly never expected that the incomparably rude and unreasonable Eggy would have no moral integrity at all.

“Lord Tiger, this little girl has already acknowledged my mistake. Would you be willing to properly teach that old codger a lesson?” Eggy continued. She smiled very sweetly, making it impossible for others to find an excuse to refuse her.

“Little girl, although you are truly lacking in moral integrity, this great sir is fond of that. As such, this great sir will help you,” The old cat laughed mischievously. Then, let out a loud shout, “Hey! The person you’re trying to find is here!”

“What are you doing?” At that moment, Her Lady Queen became anxious.

The reason for that was because she discovered that not only had that old cat betrayed their location, it had also used its oppressive might to restrict their mobility.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Eggie were simply unable to move at all. They could only wait for Li Rui's master to come.

In that sort of situation, not to mention Her Lady Queen, even Chu Feng had no idea what the old cat was planning.

Was the old cat going to help Chu Feng and Eggie, or was it going to bring harm upon them? After all, Chu Feng and Eggie had been deceived by the old cat once already.

.....

At the moment when Chu Feng and Eggie were still unable to ascertain the situation, that Li Rui's master had already heard the voice of the old cat and entered the forest.

"Chu Feng, I've finally found you," Upon seeing Chu Feng, Li Rui's master's old face turned extremely frightening. He had an appearance of itching to eat Chu Feng alive.

"Chu Feng, you've got to run away!!!" At the same time, Xu Yiyi hurriedly shouted at Chu Feng, telling him to run away.

"Run away? Not to mention running, the two of them are unable to even walk," Right at that moment, the old cat spoke. As it spoke, it took a leisurely puff of its tobacco pipe. It was truly unhurried and unrestrained.

"Who are you?" Upon seeing an ugly cat that was actually capable of speaking, Xu Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang and even Li Rui's master were shocked.

"Who I am is not important. What's important is that I will be the one who will control your fate later," The old cat said to Li Rui's master with a beaming smile.

"What did you say?" Li Rui's master revealed a slightly angry expression.

However, the old cat's expression remained unchanged when faced with the anger of Li Rui's master. It continued, "Little trash,

don't say that this great sir is inhumane, for this great sir will give you two options."

"Your first option is to kill yourself right now. By killing yourself, you will solve all your troubles. Not only will you be able to die comfortably, you will also save this great sir the time taken to personally kill you."

"As for your second option, it would be for this great sir to kill you. However, if this great sir is to kill you, you will definitely meet a very miserable death."

"Thus, I'd advise that you choose the first option," The old cat said.

"What is this joke that you're telling? Do you know who I am?" Li Rui's master said.

"Who are you?" The old cat asked indifferently.

"I am Tuoba Shangshui, the Head Law Enforcement Elder of the Sunset Cloud Valley. In the Sunset Cloud Valley, I am someone with a status below only a single person, and above tens of thousands."

"You, a mere stray cat, actually dare to say this sort of thing to me? You should know that I possess ten thousand means to torment you to death," Sure enough, Li Rui's master was furious.

To Li Rui's master, he felt that his grand status had been blasphemed.

It was truly blasphemy. In the Sunset Cloud Valley, Li Rui's master held the highest position other than the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui. As such, he could be said to be the third most powerful individual in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

In fact, other than the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui, there was truly no one else capable of speaking to Li Rui's master in such a manner.

Originally, he had thought that his capture of Chu Feng today would mean that Chu Feng would definitely die, that he would definitely be able to avenge his disciple's death.

However, never had he expected that a stray cat would appear out of nowhere. Furthermore, that stray cat actually dared to boast so shamelessly at him. This was something that he was truly unable to tolerate.

In fact, it was not only Li Rui's master who had a shocked expression, even Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang had shocked expressions.

They truly could not understand where a stray cat would have the courage to speak those sorts of words to Li Rui's master.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Eggy were quiet. The reason for that was because the two of them knew that the old cat truly possessed the means to speak to Li Rui's master in such a manner.

"It seems that you have chosen option two," The old cat said indifferently.

"If I don't teach you a lesson, you will truly not know how powerful I am!" Li Rui's master shouted angrily. Faced with the contempt and provocation from the old cat, Li Rui's master unleashed his attack.

He immediately unleashed his oppressive might of a rank seven Martial Ancestor. The people present all felt a life threatening sensation.

This was especially true because his oppressive might was not merely a threat. It was surging violently toward the old cat. He intended to shatter the old cat into pieces.

However, the old cat's expression remained unchanged. Suddenly, its eyes flickered with coldness.

The very next moment, an extremely powerful oppressive might poured out from the old cat's body.

Once that oppressive might appeared, it immediately created a clear-cut contrast against the oppressive might sent forth by Li Rui's master.

If Li Rui's master's oppressive might was akin to a river.

Then the old cat's oppressive might would be the vast sea.

“Boom~~~”

As the two oppressive mights collided with one another, the old cat's oppressive might immediately devoured Li Rui's master's oppressive might. Then, like ten thousand invisible swords, the old cat's oppressive might pierced through the body of Li Rui's master.

“Puchi~~~”

Li Rui's master's knees grew weak as he fell to his knees.

“What's going on?”

The expressions of Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang changed instantly. They both revealed astonished and puzzled expressions.

The reason for that was because the old cat's oppressive might was aimed at Li Rui's master. As such, neither of them felt how powerful the old cat's oppressive might was.

Consequently, they did not know why Li Rui's master would suddenly kneel on the ground.

Not only was Li Rui's master kneeling on the ground, his complexion was also deathly pale and without the slightest trace of rosiness. Furthermore, he was trembling nonstop.

“How could this be? How could this be?” Li Rui's master muttered as if he had received an enormous fright.

“You actually dared to attack this great sir? Today, this great sir shall let you know what it means to be unable to live and unable to die,” The old cat said with a trace of anger.

“Milord, please spare me. Milord, please spare me!”

“It is this lowly one who had eyes, but not pupils. It is this lowly one who failed to recognize Mount Tai. Milord, I beg of you, please spare me, please give this lowly one another chance.”

Suddenly, Li Rui’s master began to kowtow and beg for forgiveness. Perhaps it might be because he wanted to express his sincerity, but he was knocking his head onto the ground very forcefully.

As he kowtowed, loud clanks could even be heard. Soil was sent flying into the air. Blood started flowing from his forehead. In fact, energy ripples even formed from him knocking his head onto the ground.

The grand Sunset Cloud Valley’s Head Law Enforcement Elder...

The aggressiveness he displayed earlier was completely gone. All he displayed right now was the petty and lowly character of someone wanting to survive.

## Chapter 2269 – The Savage Cat

---

“This...”

Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang’s mouths were both slightly open as their gazes flickered.

They were showing shock and confusion all over their faces. They had been completely muddled by the scene that had occurred before them.

However, Li Rui’s master completely disregarded the expressions that Xu Yiyi and Ning Shuang were looking at him with. At that moment, he continued to ruthlessly kowtow and beg for forgiveness.

He had completely renounced his dignity.

“As you’ve already chosen the path you want to take, there is no leeway to return. Prepare to receive this great sir’s punishment,” The old cat was actually completely unconcerned with Li Rui’s master’s begging.

It extended a fingernail and pointed at Li Rui’s master. Immediately, a ray of light shot into the body of Li Rui’s master.

“Ahhh!!!!!!”

The next moment, Li Rui’s master let out an incomparably loud scream.

It was an anguished wail of pain and misery. His howl resonated throughout the entire region.

Seeing Li Rui’s master acting like that, even Chu Feng’s expression changed slightly. He was able to tell that Li Rui’s master was truly suffering from a pain that ordinary people would be unable to endure.

As for Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang, their eyes were wide open, and their tongues were tied with shock. This was especially true

for Xu Yiyi; her little mouth was opened completely round.

As matters stood, regardless of how slow they might be, they were able to tell that the cat before them, that ugly and old cat, was no ordinary cat.

However, why would such a cat appear in the Sunset Cloud Valley's forbidden area?

All kinds of confusion and questions began to hover in their hearts.

After a series of anguished howls, Li Rui's master's voice grew weaker.

Just like that... after he howled in pain for an entire hour, his voice finally stopped completely.

Although his body was still completely fine, he was absolutely dead.

"So weak. He only lasted for an hour," Upon seeing that Li Rui's master had died, the old cat spoke in a disappointed manner.

"....."

Hearing those words, Xu Yiyi, Elder Ning Shuang and even Chu Feng and Eggy started having black lines rolling down their foreheads.

Although Li Rui's master's body had not received any serious injuries, merely from the painful howls, as well as his body movements before death, they were able to guess that the torment that Li Rui's master had felt was a sort of torture to the soul.

As for that sort of torture, it would generally be over a hundred times, a thousand times or even ten thousand times more difficult to endure than the torture of one's physical body.

Earlier, Li Rui's master, the grand rank seven Martial Ancestor, was shouting in pain so much that his voice had grown hoarse. From that it could be determined that the pain he had felt was



truly intolerable, something that no one could withstand.

However, that old cat had actually said such a thing. It could be seen how savage the old cat was.

“Chu Feng, now I’ve taken care of that guy, it’s time to take care of you. Although you let out this great sir, this great sir will not repay you. The reason for that is because this great sir is precisely one to kick a benefactor in the teeth.”

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that old cat suddenly revealed a strange smile. Then, it extended its fingernail and pointed at Chu Feng. Immediately, a ray of light shot forth and entered Chu Feng’s forehead.

Once that strange light entered Chu Feng’s body, a strange motion was immediately felt. The very next moment, Chu Feng let out mournful screams much like Li Rui’s master had let out earlier.

“Ahhh~~~~~”

The mournful screams began to resonate. Chu Feng immediately grabbed his head with his hands and and fell with his knees hitting the ground. Then, he started to roll around. One would feel painful just by looking at the reaction from the enormous pain that Chu Feng was feeling right now.

“You damned bastard! This Queen will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!”

Her Lady Queen was immediately enraged upon seeing that the old cat had actually attacked Chu Feng. As she spoke, boundless dark black gaseous flames began to spread. The gaseous flames started to rush toward the old cat to attack it.

“Humph, it’s best that you shut up. You are only a mere Asura World Spirit. While others might fear you, this great sir is not afraid of you at all.”

However, that old cat laughed with contempt at Her Lady Queen's attack. Without even lifting its paw, the old cat let out boundlessly powerful oppressive might with only a thought. The oppressive might surrounded Her Lady Queen.

Her Lady Queen stood where she was, uninjured. However, her complexion changed enormously. She was no longer capable of moving. In fact, she could not even utter a single word. She had been completely restricted by the old cat.

"All of you, listen carefully. That Zhan Haichuan's tomb, as well as the treasures that he left behind have all been plundered by this great sir."

"People of the Sunset Cloud Valley, if you all feel displeased by this, you can come and find me for revenge. However, I will tell you all this. This great sir is one who holds grudges deeply."

"As long as a single person from your Sunset Cloud Valley dares to create troubles for this great sir, this great sir will definitely exterminate every single person from your Sunset Cloud Valley, destroying it completely." After the old cat said those words ferociously, its body shifted, and it disappeared.

Although what it spoke was only an ordinary threat, its words caused Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang to turn pale with fear, and their foreheads to be filled with sweat.

In fact, their bodies even began to shiver uncontrollably.

Fear. From the words spoken by the old cat, the two of them felt a fear that surpassed the fear they felt from their Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui.

In fact, the fear they were feeling was the most frightening fear that they had ever felt in their lives.

In that one split second, they felt as if they had seen the people in the Sunset Cloud Valley suffering from a calamity.

Thus, they were firmly certain that what that old cat had said

was no joke at all.

“Ahhh~~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s anguished wailing grew even louder.

Even though Her Lady Queen had regained her freedom after the old cat left, the pain that Chu Feng felt did not decrease, and instead increased.

“Chu Feng,” Her Lady Queen hurriedly ran toward Chu Feng’s side. However, no matter what she tried to do, she was unable to alleviate the pain Chu Feng was feeling.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong, what’s happening to you?” After being woken up by Chu Feng’s screams, Xu Yiyi also revealed an astonished expression.

“Elder Ning Shuang, quickly, find Lord Valley Master. We need him to save Chu Feng,” Xu Yiyi said to Elder Ning Shuang. She was so worried that her tears were flowing from her eyes.

“Got it, I’ll go right away, I’ll go right away.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, just hold on for a while longer, a while longer,” In a panic, Elder Ning Shuang hurriedly left.

At the same time, outside the forbidden area. For the sake of destroying the gate, Su Jingrui was unleashing taboo martial skills nonstop, and bombarding the entrance gate with them.

Su Jingrui held a gigantic hammer that looked exactly the same as the hammer that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master held. However, they were clearly two different weapons.

Without a doubt, Su Jingrui’s hammer was also an Ancestral Armament. The hammer emitted endless power.

When the hammer was used to unleash Su Jingrui’s ferocious taboo martial skills, he left that region of space in utter chaos.

As the elders looked at the scene, they were all terrified.

When they saw their Lord Valley Master standing behind Su Jingrui, they felt a complicated mood in their hearts.

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had a very ugly expression. His aura was also very weak.

For the sake of breaking through the entrance gate to the forbidden area, he had truly over-exerted his energy. That was the reason why he had switched with Su Jingrui.

However, even with this being the case, that forbidden area's entrance gate was still undamaged. Although it was filled with cracks, it would still take quite some time to completely destroy the gate.

The management elders present were all very scared that the two pillars of support for their Sunset Cloud Valley would end up causing major harm to their vitality for the sake of destroying a gate.

However, they did not dare to voice their concerns. The reason for that was because neither their Lord Valley Master nor Su Jingrui were impulsive people. Since they were willing to disregard all considerations to destroy the gate, the two of them must possess their own reasons for it.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was suddenly heard. That forbidden area's entrance gate was finally shattered.

However, at that moment, not a single person present revealed a joyous look.

Instead, they all revealed frightened expressions on their faces.

# Chapter 2270 – Eagerness To Protect One's Master

---

Invisible oppressive might filled this region. Although the oppressive might could not be seen, it could be felt.

It was as if a Grim Reaper was quietly descending upon this region.

Even the weather was affected by the invisible oppressive might. Black clouds began to surge about as rolling thunder began to be heard.

That oppressive might was not from the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, nor was it from Su Jingrui. The reason for that was because the two of them, and even the management elders present, all knew very well that they did not possess the level of strength to be able to emit oppressive might that powerful.

Furthermore, that oppressive might was coming from inside the forbidden area. It was that oppressive might that had shattered the forbidden area's entrance gate.

Thus, everyone present subconsciously felt that a frightening existence had left the forbidden area.

However, why would the forbidden area possess such a frightening existence?

“Roar~~~~”

Right at that moment, red light suddenly appeared in the sky. The red light surged about and soon filled the entire sky, turning it crimson like blood.

As the crowd looked to the crimson gaseous flames that filled the sky, they felt as if they could smell the dense reek of blood. It was truly frightening and sinister.

As the crimson gaseous flames rolled about, the invisible

oppressive might took visible form. In the end, the crimson gaseous flames turned into an enormous crimson face.

That enormous face covered the sky and hid the earth. Its eyes were eerie, and its appearance twisted. It was simply the face of a demon.

Ugly, sinister, gloomy, oppressive and frighteningly cold.

At that moment, that enormous face opened its large mouth and revealed its sharp fangs.

With low ear-piercing howls, it began to move toward the crowd to engulf them. It was planning to devour all of the people present at once.

“What exactly is that?”

As they looked to the enormous and frightening face, the people present all started to panic. Even the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui, the two grand rank eight Martial Ancestor level existences, revealed frightened expressions.

The reason for that was because regardless of who it was, they would only feel one sort of sensation from the enormous and frightening face and those sharp fangs — the sensation of powerlessness.

The aura of death was so very close to them. When death finally arrived, they were simply powerless to resist.

“Could today be the end of our Sunset Cloud Valley?”

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed an expression of despair. It was not that he did not possess any integrity, nor was it because he did not wish to resist. Rather, he simply did not even possess the strength to resist right now.

All of the people present acted as if they were petrified. They had lost all battle power, and could only watch powerlessly as the enormous mouth moved toward them with the intention of

devouring their lives.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when everyone felt they would be killed, that enormous demon-like mouth suddenly turned into a vortex.

The vortex started to surge and rage before finally disappearing into thin air.

It was not only that enormous and frightening face that disappeared, even the suffocating sensation the crowd had felt earlier disappeared along with it.

The shattered space started to fuse together. Soon, that region of space regained its former tranquility. It was as if nothing had ever happened.

However, the hearts of the crowd were unable regain their tranquility.

The reason for that was because they all knew that the enormous and frightening face's enormous mouth that was moving toward them to devour them was no ordinary mouth. Instead, it was simply the gates of hell. As long as they were devoured by that mouth, they would have no hope of survival.

“Lord Valley Master, what was that earlier?” A management elder asked courageously. When he said those words, his voice was trembling slightly.

“I don't know either,” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master shook his head. He truly had no idea what that thing earlier was. He was also pondering it right now.

“Lord Valley Master, why would such a frightening thing appear from the forbidden area? Exactly what is going on?”

Many other management elders began to question their Lord Valley Master. The reason for that was because the scene earlier

had truly been too dangerous.

Not only did it concern their own safety, it also concerned the safety of the entire Sunset Cloud Valley. As such, they wanted to know the truth.

“Lord Valley Master has already said that he doesn’t know. Do you all not understand that?!” Right at that moment, Su Jingrui shouted angrily.

Upon hearing his shout, the management elders all shut their mouths. No one dared to ask anything anymore.

Even though they were all very concerned about the safety of the Sunset Cloud Valley, they also knew that they had truly gone beyond their authority earlier. If their Lord Valley Master did not wish to tell them, they did not possess the authority to insist on asking.

“Lord Valley Master, this is bad!!!”

Right at that moment, Elder Ning Shuang rushed out of the forbidden area in a panic.

“Ning Shuang?” Upon seeing Elder Ning Shuang, the expression of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master changed. Together with Su Jingrui, they rushed toward Ning Shuang.

“Lord Valley Master, Lord Elder, please follow this subordinate inside. Little friend Chu Feng is on the verge of dying,” After Elder Ning Shuang said those words, he hurriedly turned around and began to lead the way.

“What?” Upon hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master immediately revealed a nervous expression and followed Elder Ning Shuang into the forbidden area.

On their way there, Elder Ning Shuang began to explain the general situation of what had happened to the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui.



After they found out that Li Rui's master had died, the two of them were both very shocked.

They felt even more shocked when they found out that Li Rui's master was killed by an old cat.

When Ning Shaung explained to them that the mysterious old cat declared that it had plundered Zhan Haichuan's tomb, threatened Xu Yiyi and him about the consequences of going against it and used a mysterious technique to torture Chu Feng, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui immediately recalled the demon-like giant face that had appeared from the forbidden area earlier.

They both felt that the old cat Elder Ning Shuang spoke of was the creator of that giant face.

They felt that old cat was deliberately demonstrating its might to the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley. Like how it had threatened Elder Ning Shuang and Xu Yiyi earlier, the old cat was demonstrating its might to tell the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley to not provoke it.

It was declaring that if the Sunset Cloud Valley were to provoke it, eliminating the Sunset Cloud Valley would be an effortless task for it.

“Why would such a frightening existence suddenly appear in our Sunset Cloud Valley's forbidden area?”

“How did it enter our forbidden area? Exactly what happened in here?” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had a very ugly expression.

After all, what had happened was truly no small matter at all. In fact, it concerned the continued existence of their Sunset Cloud Valley. As such, he had no choice but to be worried.

“Only little friend Chu Feng knows what has happened. No, his world spirit might know about it too,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“Mn,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master nodded. Then, he increased his speed.

As the three men hastened their journey, they finally arrived at the location where Chu Feng had been injured.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still howling in pain. Merely, his voice was no longer loud and clear like before. It was not that he was not in as much pain as before. Rather, he was in so much pain that he did not even have the strength to scream.

“Let me have a look,” As the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master spoke, he moved toward Chu Feng to diagnose his situation.

Unfortunately, after diagnosing Chu Feng’s state, he started to frown, and revealed an expression of helplessness.

“Lord Valley Master, how is it? Exactly what’s going on with Chu Feng?” Xu Yiyi asked anxiously.

“I am unable to tell,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master shook his head helplessly.

“I have a medicinal pellet that could relieve pain. We can give it to him and see if it helps,” Su Jingrui said.

“Do you know what is meant by prescribing the right medicine for one’s illness?! When you want to prescribe Chu Feng medicine when you do not even know what happened to Chu Feng, are you capable of taking responsibility if he dies after taking the medicine?!” At that moment, Her Lady Queen shouted angrily.

She walked over to Chu Feng’s side and shouted, “All of you, move aside. Enough of your fake sincerity and concern here.”

“Don’t you think that I do not know what you all are thinking. You all just want to know what that damned cat was, no?”

“If you all want to know, then wait until Chu Feng wakes up and ask him personally then. However, if Chu Feng doesn’t wake up, don’t think about knowing anything.”

Once Eggy said those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Su Jingrui and even Elder Ning Shuang started to frown.

They were all able to tell what Her Lady Queen's intention was.

That is, if Chu Feng would be fine, then everything would be fine. However, if something were to happen to Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen would not tell the Sunset Cloud Valley anything.

Although Her Lady Queen's attitude was very vile, they found it hard to blame her.

After all, Her Lady Queen was saying those words out of eagerness to protect her master.

## Chapter 2271 – A Bizarre Scene

---

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen started to emit a boundless amount of dark black gaseous flames from her body.

Merely, the dark black gaseous flames this time around were very different from how they usually were, they were no longer so wild and domineering; they actually possessed a trace of warmth.

After those gaseous flames were emitted, they covered Chu Feng and began to slowly assimilate into Chu Feng's body.

The very next moment, Chu Feng, who was in miserable pain, started to appear to suffer less pain. Even his screams stopped.

“It was actually capable of retarding Chu Feng's pain?”

“Is this what it means to be an Asura World Spirit?”

Upon seeing the ability revealed by Her Lady Queen, even the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui's expressions changed as they revealed shock in their eyes.

They were all able to tell that Her Lady Queen was healing Chu Feng. However, the pain that Chu Feng had been suffering from was very special, it was something that even they were powerless against.

Yet, Her Lady Queen was actually capable of treating the pain that even they were powerless against.

This gave them a whole new opinion of the legendary Asura World Spirit.

.....

Ever since Chu Feng received the attack from the old cat, he had entered a strange state.

Even though he had been screaming in pain and even rolling and

crawling nonstop, demonstrating the overwhelming pain that he felt, all that was only an involuntary display of pain from Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's actual awareness had entered a strange environment.

This place looked like purgatory. Black flames colored the entire place. They were surging and burning Chu Feng, causing him to feel incomparable pain.

However, through the flames, Chu Feng was able to faintly see a bizarre scene. However, as the flames were raging nonstop, and he was in enormous pain the entire time, it led to him being unable to see that scene properly.

After being tormented for a very long time, Chu Feng suddenly felt a warm sensation appearing from his surroundings, covering his body.

Being covered by that warm sensation, the black flames that were surrounding him began to gradually wane. At that moment, the faintly discernable scene grew increasingly clear.

Chu Feng saw the birth of a child. When that child was born, the child actually carried an abnormal sign with it.

Silvery light filled the highest of the heavens, brightly illuminating the night sky.

Suddenly, a silver spear appeared from the depths of the silvery light. That silver spear was so enormously huge that it was simply impossible to describe its dimensions.

It was as if it was simply not a spear, but rather a Divine Armament that carried unsurpassed Divine Might that could bring about the destruction of the world.

However, a weapon that frightening was actually descending from the sky. In the end, it turned into a ray of silvery light and entered into the body of that child.

After that, the child was revered by the people around it, and was deemed to be beloved of the heavens.

In a flash, the scene suddenly jumped. That child had grown into to a boy, and had begun martial cultivation.

That boy's talent for martial cultivation was extremely strong, greatly surpassing others of his age. He was truly superior to the rest.

Once again, the scene jumped. That child had become a youngster. At that time, not to mention the people of his generation, even the people of the older generation were unable to match up to him.

The scene began to jump nonstop. Although it was jumping very fast, Chu Feng managed to see the process of this child growing up.

It was the process of that child growing up to be a hot-blooded man.

Holding a silver spear in hand and wearing silver armor, that man departed from his clan. He entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and began to defeat numerous experts.

With an undefeated record, he became the unparalleled legend of a generation.

“Zhan Haichuan?”

Chu Feng's heart was moved. He was certain that the child he was seeing was Zhan Haichuan.

Thus, what he was seeing was actually the growth of Zhan Haichuan.

Merely, those scenes were jumping too quickly. Furthermore, they only recorded until Zhan Haichuan entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and defeated numerous experts.

After that, the scenes shattered into countless fragments that drifted before Chu Feng.

“It seems that the place where Zhan Haichuan grew up is extremely extraordinary. Is it a sealed region in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

Lingering ripples emerged in Chu Feng’s heart.

Even though the scenes had been jumping extremely quickly, and some of the episodes were incomplete, Chu Feng noticed particularities.

Zhan Haichuan came from a clan. His clan was located in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, his clan was a very hidden clan, and their base was a hidden place cut off from the rest of the world.

At that moment, Chu Feng wanted to know that hidden place very much.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng noticed that Zhan Haichuan would always train at a special place whenever he reached a breakthrough in cultivation.

That place possessed an extremely dense amount of Ancient Era’s aura. Although he had only seen images of the scene, Chu Feng felt that place to be a location specially suited for martial cultivation, a place specially set aside for obtaining comprehension.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that place to be even more amazing than the floating island on Mount Cloud Crane where that Exalted had trained.

Chu Feng felt that if he could find that place and train there, he might be able to achieve continuous breakthroughs in cultivation again, that it would allow him to make great progress in his cultivation.

Merely, due to the fact that the episodes that he had seen earlier were all disjointed, missing many of their crucial contents, Chu Feng was only able to ascertain that the place where Zhan Haichuan’s clan was located must be in the Hundred Refinements

Ordinary Realm.

However, as for the actual location of that clan, Chu Feng had no idea.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the fragments scattered about in his surroundings began to rush toward Chu Feng.

In the end, they all entered Chu Feng’s mind.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng did not obtain any new information after those fragments entered his mind.

However, Chu Feng felt that those fragments wouldn’t have entered his mind without cause. He felt that they should possess a special connection with Zhan Haichuan or Zhan Haichuan’s clan.

The very next moment, everything in Chu Feng’s surroundings started to gradually disappear and turned into pitch darkness.

Chu Feng began to hear a voice in his ear. In fact, he was able to feel a familiar aura. It was Eggy’s aura. Eggy was right beside him.

Chu Feng realized that his eyes were actually closed. Thus, he hurriedly opened his eyes.

Sure enough, upon opening his eyes, he discovered that he was currently lying on a special bed. It was a bed especially used for healing injuries. Although it was not very big, it was very comfortable.

As for Eggy, she was sitting on the bedside with her head lying beside him. At that moment, she had fallen asleep.

“Eggy?” Chu Feng immediately felt sour in his heart the moment he saw the current Eggy.

Eggy’s sleeping posture was very beautiful, sweet and enchanting. She was the sort of woman that one would feel attracted to with a single glance.



However, her body was also extremely weak. Her face was extremely pale, and her aura was very weak.

Rather than saying that the current Eggy was asleep, she resembled being unconscious even more.

Chu Feng did not know exactly what had happened. However, he realized that Eggy should have been injured, seriously injured.

## Chapter 2272 – Extremely Confused

---

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’ve awakened,” Right at that moment, a familiar voice was suddenly heard.

It was the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master. It was not only him; Su Jingrui had also walked in from outside the room. Judging from the way things appeared, it seemed that the two of them had been keeping watch outside the entire time.

The voice that Chu Feng had faintly heard earlier seemed to be the sound of their discussions.

“Lord Valley Master, Elder Su,” As Chu Feng spoke, he got up from the bed and bowed to the two men.

Not mentioning the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, Su Jingrui was someone that had truly saved Chu Feng’s life at the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters that day.

Thus, even though Chu Feng did not possess much of a relationship with Su Jingrui, he was still very respectful toward him.

In response, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said, “Little friend Chu Feng, you have only just been healed from your serious injuries, there’s no need for you to be overly courteous.”

“Judging from the way things seem, little friend Chu Feng, you’re fine now?” Su Jingrui said with a smile.

“Seniors, please rest assured, Chu Feng is fine now.”

“Merely, seniors, what happened to Eggy? Why did she become so weak?” Chu Feng asked in a deeply concerned manner.

He was not worried about why he was lying here, nor was he worried about what happened during the time when he was half unconscious.

At that moment, what he was concerned about the most was why

Eggy would be in such weak health.

“Eggy? Are you talking about this Asura World Spirit?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you were attacked by that strange cat in the forbidden area. Do you still remember that?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“I do. Merely, I lost consciousness after it attacked me. As such, I have no idea what happened afterwards,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. After that strange cat injured you, you were in enormous pain the entire time. Faced with you being tormented by pain, we were unable to do anything.”

“I had diagnosed your injuries and concluded that If we did not do anything about it, you would very likely end up dying.”

“Fortunately, your Asura World Spirit ended up using her special methods to relieve the pain you were feeling.”

“Unfortunately, it seems that her method was very damaging to her. After your injuries were alleviated, she became extremely weak.”

“Furthermore, after you were brought here, she has been standing by your side the entire time. Currently, it has been half a month since she started guarding you.”

“During this half month period, she did not even blink once. In fact... she has only just fallen asleep,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

Upon hearing up to that point, Chu Feng finally realized what had happened. It turned out that he was not able to withstand the pain of the burning black flames because he possessed a strong constitution. Rather, it was because Eggy had acted to help him. That gentle and warm power had been emitted by Eggy.

After hearing what had happened, Chu Feng looked to Eggy again. When he saw that beautiful yet withered face, Chu Feng felt even greater pain in his heart.

It was a truly unbearable pain.

“Eggy, it seems that you have saved me again. I am indebted to you once again.”

Chu Feng extended his hand and gently caressed Eggy’s extremely beautiful yet withered face. He felt extremely pained in his heart.

Afterward, Chu Feng set up a spirit formation on the spot and began to heal Eggy.

With Chu Feng’s exquisite healing formation, Eggy’s complexion grew much better.

However, Eggy did not show any sign of waking up. On the contrary, she began to enter a deeper sleep.

Chu Feng had done that deliberately. He wished to allow Eggy to enjoy a proper rest.

After healing Eggy for some time, Chu Feng opened his world spirit gate and sent Her Lady Queen back into his world spirit space.

“Little friend Chu Feng, your world spirit techniques are truly exquisite. It is already extremely rare for someone of your age to be able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. For someone to have world spirit techniques as exquisite as yours, is even rarer.”

“It’s no wonder that everyone thinks so highly of you. You are truly an exceptional genius.”

This was the first time that Su Jingrui saw Chu Feng using his world spirit techniques. Although what Chu Feng used was merely a healing formation, Su Jingrui was still able to tell that Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques were exceptional.

“Elder Su, you’re flattering me,” Chu Feng said with a smile. Due to Xu Yiyi, Chu Feng’s impression of Su Jingrui was extremely good.

“Little friend Chu Feng, may I know exactly what happened after you entered the forbidden area?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked. At the same time, Su Jingrui also revealed a concerned expression.

Chu Feng understood the reactions of the two men. After all, this matter concerned the safety of the Sunset Cloud Valley. It would instead be abnormal should they not be concerned about this matter.

Chu Feng did not try to conceal anything, and began to tell the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui what had happened in full detail.

“Never would I have expected that we were still unable to preserve Lord Zhan Haichuan’s tomb in the end.”

“However, the matter of Lord Zhan Haichuan’s tomb being in our Sunset Cloud Valley has been something that only our successive Valley Masters knew about. This information would absolutely not be leaked. Thus, how did that strange cat come to know about it?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master started to frown as he pondered nonstop.

“That’s true. This matter is truly well-hidden. If it wasn’t for what had happened, I likely would have never known that the forbidden area actually contained Senior Zhan Haichuan’s tomb,” Su Jingrui added.

“Lord Valley Master, Elder Su, it is all this junior’s fault. It was because this junior was foolish that I ended up being deceived by that old cat and releasing it,” Chu Feng said with a face filled with an apologetic expression.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you absolutely must not say something

like that. You only entered the forbidden area as per my request.”

“Furthermore, you almost ended up losing your life because of it. Because of that, I already feel extremely ashamed. If you are to say it like this, I would feel even more ashamed,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master had an ashamed expression all over his face.

Not only did he not blame Chu Feng, he instead felt a great amount of self-blame. After all, he had seen Chu Feng’s state that day. If it wasn’t for Eggy, Chu Feng might really have ended up dying.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this matter is truly not your fault. You must not bear this matter in your heart,” Su Jingrui also urged. As one of the main pillars of support for the Sunset Cloud Valley, he also did not blame Chu Feng.

“Seniors, regardless of what you say, it remains that I have created more troubles. I will definitely repay you all for my faults in the future.”

“Merely, I, Chu Feng, still possess things that I must do. As such, I will not be staying for too long,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you’re going to leave?” Seeing that Chu Feng planned to leave, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master revealed a shocked expression.

“Lord Valley Master, could it be that you needed something else from me?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, I do not have anything else. Merely, I have yet to properly receive you into our Sunset Cloud Valley,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master still had the intention of having Chu Feng stay.

“Lord Valley Master, I, Chu Feng, have come here as a prisoner. I am already extremely grateful to be able to receive the treatment of a distinguished guest upon coming here,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng has never been a prisoner. It was all

caused by that Tuoba Shangshui. However, he has died now. It can be considered that the wrong that little friend Chu Feng has suffered from was avenged.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you can rest assured. Although Tuoba Shangshui’s subordinates were not killed by that cat, I have personally had them accompany Tuoba Shangshui,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

Chu Feng understood the intentions of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master’s words. Those Law Enforcement Elders must have all been executed by the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master did such a thing because he wanted to provide justification for Chu Feng.

He was using this method to express how much he valued Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Lord Valley Master, there is one thing that this Chu Feng is confused about.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, what are you confused by? There is no harm in speaking your mind,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Why would Tuoba Shangshui concern himself over the death of his disciple Li Rui that much that he would brave dangers himself to put me to death?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chu Feng felt that Tuoba Shangshui was a treacherous and selfish individual that cared deeply for the long-term.

Someone like him would definitely be able to tell whether something was beneficial or detrimental. To make things this big for the sake of a personal disciple was something extremely unworthy.

However, Tuoba Shangshui did precisely that. He even braved dangers himself for the sake of avenging his disciple Li Rui.

Chu Feng was truly confused by why he would do this.



## Chapter 2273 – The Appointed Date

---

“The relationship between Tuoba Shangshui and Li Rui is indeed extraordinary. Li Rui was actually Tuoba Shangshui’s biological grandson. He was also the sole heir to the Tuoba Family.”

“Merely, very few people knew about this matter. Even Li Rui himself did not know that his master was actually his biological grandfather,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Even I did not know about this matter. How did you know about it?” Su Jingrui asked in astonishment.

“I believe you were also able to tell that they possessed an extraordinary relationship. Because of that, I had my men secretly investigate the matter.”

“Tuoba Shangshui also possessed his own reasoning as for why he did not want to make this matter public. Thus, I did not reveal the matter either,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“But, even if Li Rui was the only heir to the Tuoba family, there shouldn’t be a reason for Tuoba Shangshui to react like this for him, no? His actions before he died did not resemble his style,” Su Jingrui was still doubtful.

“If Tuoba Shangshui still possessed the ability to create more heirs, he would naturally not react in such a manner over Li Rui’s death,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“There was actually such a thing?” Su Jingrui revealed an astonished expression. He seemed to have thought of something.

“Yes, if that wasn’t the case, he would definitely not have acted in such a manner,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“With his character, I guess this could be considered karma,” Su Jingrui sneered.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized what had happened.

Tuoba Shangshui might have suffered some sort of encounter that caused him to lose the ability to reproduce. As Li Rui was the sole heir to the Tuoba family, it would mean that he was Tuoba Shangshui's sole seed. That was the reason why Tuoba Shangshui had cared so much for Li Rui.

"Little friend Chu Feng, since you plan to leave, I will not insist on making you stay. These are my regards, please accept them," As the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack and handed it to Chu Feng.

"Lord Valley Master, I have already received your gifts before. As such, I absolutely cannot accept these too," Chu Feng hurriedly refused.

The reason for that was because the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master had indeed presented Chu Feng with a lot of gifts already. Those gifts were very valuable items. Not only were there a lot of world spiritist treasures, there were also many Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.

As for the items in the Cosmos Sack that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master was presenting today, they were even more precious than the items he had given Chu Feng previously.

"Little friend Chu Feng, if you do not accept them, our Lord Valley Master will not let you out of our Sunset Cloud Valley."

"Thus, it is better that you accept them," Su Jingrui said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, Elder Su is not joking around," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said with a smile. Although he said it with a joking tone, it seemed that he truly planned to do this.

That was, if Chu Feng refused to accept his gifts, he would refuse to let Chu Feng leave.

In the end, he was still feeling guilty toward Chu Feng, and wanted to use this method to decrease the guilt that he felt.

“Since that’s the case, Chu Feng will accept them then. Lord Valley Master, thank you,” Chu Feng also knew that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was feeling ashamed. Thus, in the end, he accepted the Cosmos Sack.

“Little friend Chu Feng, let me see you off,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master wished to personally escort Chu Feng.

“Lord Valley Master, before leaving, I wish to go and bid my farewells to Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s no issue at all. I’ll order my men to summon them here,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, there’s no need for that. I can go and see them personally,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s good too. I’ll show you the way,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Lord Valley Master, the Three Stars Hall is still waiting. I think it would be unwell to ignore them the entire time, no?” Right at that moment, Su Jingrui said.

“Eh...” Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master immediately revealed a difficult expression.

“Lord Valley Master, if you have things that you must take care of, please go ahead and take care of them. This Chu Feng can go find Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang personally,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master nodded. Although he did not personally lead the way for Chu Feng, he ordered others to guide Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng left, Su Jingrui asked the Valley Master, “Today is the appointed date with the Three Stars Hall. With Chu Feng here, he might be able to help us. Why did you not mention this matter to him?”

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master took a long sigh. Then,

he said, “Our Sunset Cloud Valley have already wronged and troubled little friend Chu Feng enormously. For the sake of helping us, he nearly ended up losing his life. I find it truly difficult to inconvenience him again.”

“After all, he is not someone of our Sunset Cloud Valley. Even in coming to our Sunset Cloud Valley, he was forced here after being held prisoner by Tuoba Shangshui.”

“In that case, we can only admit defeat then. After all, the Three Stars Hall invited [Daoist Gold Star](#) over to help them. Even though Daoist Gold Star is also only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it remains that he is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. There is no one in our Sunset Cloud Valley capable of competing against him,” Su Jingrui said.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master sighed again. Then, he said, “Thus, let me go alone. Senior brother, you do not have to accompany me to receive this humiliation.”

“How could I do that? I also took part in this gamble back then. Even if we must admit defeat, I must still accompany you.”

“Today, us martial brothers shall allow ourselves to be ridiculed by that old fellow from the Three Stars Hall together,” Su Jingrui said with a smile.

Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was at first startled. Then, he looked to Su Jingrui and saw that he had a determined expression on his face. Thus, he smiled lightly and said, “Sure enough, it is only senior brother who is willing to endure trials and tribulations together with me.”

“Of course,” Su Jingrui smiled.

Then, the two men’s bodies shifted. They began to fly toward the northwestern region of the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Located in that direction was the place where the Sunset Cloud Valley would receive their honored guests.

.....

Chu Feng first arrived at Elder Ning Shuang's location to bid farewell to Elder Ning Shuang. Then, he arrived at Xu Yiyi's residence.

"Chu Feng? Why would you be here? How are you? Are you feeling better now?"

"Did you know that you have been unconscious for many days now? I wanted to go see you the entire time. However, your world spirit refused entry to everyone," When Xu Yiyi saw Chu Feng, she immediately revealed an overjoyed expression. Joyfully, she ran toward Chu Feng.

"Yiyi, rest assured, I have recovered completely," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"You've truly recovered completely?" Xu Yiyi was a bit skeptical, and began to personally inspect Chu Feng. Upon discovering that Chu Feng was truly fine, Xu Yiyi revealed a joyous expression and patted Chu Feng's shoulder, "Not bad, you've actually recovered this quickly. That day, you truly scared me."

"Rest assured, I am truly fine now," Chu Feng said with a smile. He was able to tell that Xu Yiyi had been worried for him from the bottom of her heart.

Afterwards, Chu Feng started to chat with Xu Yiyi. After a while, Chu Feng told her about his intention in coming.

"Chu Feng, you're leaving? But you've just recovered from your injuries, shouldn't you...?" Xu Yiyi revealed an expression of reluctance to part.

"I have already mentioned this to Lord Valley Master. I have also met your master. They have already consented to it. Furthermore, Lord Valley Master even sent me an enormous gift," Chu Feng said.

"In that case, it seems that I will not be able to make you stay either," Xu Yiyi said.

Chu Feng did not answer her. Instead, he smiled and shook his head.

“Chu Feng, do you really not plan to become our Sunset Cloud Valley’s guest elder?” Xu Yiyi asked.

“Yiyi, I possess my own reasons. I hope that you can understand,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well then,” Xu Yiyi said no more. Merely, her gaze grew even lonelier.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said, “Someone’s here.”

“Little sister Yiyi, I’ve come to see you,” Sure enough, not long after Chu Feng said those words, a woman ran in.

This woman was rather good-looking. Her age was about the same as Xu Yiyi’s. She wore a long green skirt and appeared very spirited.

As for her cultivation, it was not weak either. She was a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this woman was not a disciple of the Sunset Cloud Valley.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to clearly see the words ‘Three Stars Hall’ on the title plate hanging on her waist.

“Little sister Biyu, why would you be here?” Upon seeing this woman, Xu Yiyi had a joyous expression.

“Have you forgotten? Today is the appointed date between our Headmaster, your Valley Master and your master,” The woman said with a smile.

Bee used a different Daoist when referring to Daoist Three Swords and this Daoist Gold Star. In Daoist Gold Star, he literally wrote Daoist (Dao Ren/ Dao Person), whereas for Daoist Three Swords, he wrote Daoist (Zhen Ren/True Person). Zhen Ren/True

Person is kinda like an enlightened daoist. Still daoist though...

## Chapter 2274 – Marriage

---

“The appointed date?”

Hearing those words, Xu Yiyi was somewhat perplexed. However, her expression soon changed as two rays of light shone from her eyes. Excitedly, she asked, “Could you be talking about that bet?”

“That’s right, it’s precisely that bet.”

“Originally, I was looking forward to a marvelous confrontation between Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. After all, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists are so very rare.”

“However, never would I expect that your Sunset Cloud Valley would actually fail in inviting an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to help them. My anticipation has all been for naught,” The green skirted woman said in a rather disappointed manner.

“Not managed to invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? How could that be?” Upon hearing those words, Xu Yiyi involuntarily looked to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng noticed that something was amiss from Xu Yiyi’s meaningful gaze.

“I was right over there earlier. I personally heard your Lord Valley Master and your master mentioning that. The two of them have admitted defeat, and were receiving punishment from our Lord Headmaster.”

“However, it remains that they are your Valley Master and your master. Thus, it would be unsuitable for people of the younger generation like myself to be present after they admitted defeat. As such, I was driven out by Lord Headmaster,” The green skirted woman said.

“I understand now,” Xu Yiyi retrieved the gaze that she was looking at Chu Feng with and revealed a somewhat desolate



appearance.

She had already managed to guess that their Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and her master must not have requested Chu Feng's assistance.

Although she did not know why they had not requested Chu Feng's assistance, she knew that they must have had their reasons.

Thus, since both their Lord Valley Master and her master had not requested Chu Feng's assistance, it would be unsuitable for her to request his assistance.

“Actually, it was only a joke to begin with. Victory or defeat truly doesn't matter. After all, our Three Stars Hall possesses an extremely close relationship with your Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“Merely, the bet between you and senior brother Dou Kang, I fear that he will not be willing to leave the matter at that,” The green skirted woman said to Xu Yiyi in a concerned manner.

“Aiya, I nearly forgot that. What am I to do about that?” Once that woman mentioned that matter, Xu Yiyi's face was immediately covered with anxiety. She was so nervous that she became unable to sit or stand still, and started to pace left and right. It was as if a major matter weighed on her heart.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng asked, “Yiyi, exactly what sort of gamble was it? May I know about it?”

He was already able to tell that this gamble concerned the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui's honor.

Furthermore, even Xu Yiyi was involved.

However, if it was truly related to world spiritists, then he might be able to provide assistance.

“It's like this. Our Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall are allies. As for our Lord Valley Master and my master, they are also close friends of many years with the Three Stars Hall's

Headmaster. Their relationship is extremely close.”

“Our Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall both possess a cherished desire. That is, we both want to invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to become our guest elder.”

“However, although our Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall are strong, we remain only tier two powers. As such, we have not been able to successfully invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist for many years.”

“At this time last year, my master, Lord Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster were drinking together.”

“Originally, they were talking and laughing. However, for some unknown reason, they started to discuss their issue with Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Furthermore, because of that, they ended up quarreling with one another.”

“Due to drinking, their quarrel grew more and more intense. Then, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster began to belittle our Lord Valley Master and my master. He declared that we simply did not possess the ability to invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“Our Lord Valley Master and my master naturally refused to accept that.”

“As such, they ended up making a bet. Both of our powers were to invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on this date this year, and have them compete with one another to see whose Immortal-cloak World Spiritist was stronger.”

“However, you also know that our Sunset Cloud Valley has not managed to successfully invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“The only one...” Xu Yiyi sighed, “ I think our Lord Valley Master and my master did not mention this matter to you. Else, you wouldn’t not know about it,”

“The two seniors have indeed not mentioned this matter,” Chu Feng nodded. However, he was feeling sour in his heart.

The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master would have been able to mention this thing to him easily. However, he didn't do so. It was most definitely because he was worried about inconveniencing Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng had not wanted to urgently leave upon waking up, then perhaps the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master would have mentioned this matter to him. That was why Chu Feng felt guilty.

"Then, what will happen if they are to lose the bet?" Chu Feng asked.

Before Xu Yiyi could answer Chu Feng, that green skirt girl interrupted, "They're all old friends, nothing too serious will happen. At the very most, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Xu Yiyi's master will be jokingly insulted by our Three Stars Hall's Headmaster. What's crucial is my senior brother Kou Kang."

"Young lady, may I know what is up with your senior brother Kou Kang?" Chu Feng asked the green skirted woman.

"Regarding senior brother Kou Kang..." When mentioning this matter, the green skirted woman first smiled mischievously. Then, she said, "My senior brother Kou Kang is amazing. Not only is he our Three Stars Hall's number one disciple, he is also our Lord Headmaster's personal disciple."

"Countless girls are in love with my senior brother Kou Kang. However, senior brother Kou Kang does not even take a glance at them."

"It was only when senior brother Kou Kang saw little sister Yiyi that he fell in love at first sight."

"Unfortunately, my little sister Yiyi's vision is higher than even the heavens. She was actually not fond of the personal disciple of our Lord Headmaster, the number one disciple in our Three Stars Hall. Hahaha," The green skirted woman burst into loud laughter. As she spoke, she glanced at Xu Yiyi.

“He’s asking you about the bet, why did you have to mention all that?” Xu Yiyi pouted her lips and cast a ruthless side-eye at the green skirted woman.

“Isn’t the complicated relationship between you crucial to the bet? Thus, I must naturally explain it in detail,” The green skirted girl said while laughing mischievously.

It could be seen that the relationship between her and Xu Yiyi was truly close. It could be seen that she had said all that purely with the intention of making fun of Xu Yiyi.

“Are you going to explain or not? If not, I’ll explain,” Xu Yiyi said.

“I will, I will,” The woman smiled sweetly. Then, she looked to Chu Feng and said, “Not long after our Lord Headmaster and the two seniors set up their bet, my senior brother Kou Kang and little sister Yiyi both found out about it.”

“The two of them both felt that their respective powers would end up winning. As such, they began to quarrel with one another.”

“In the end, my senior brother Kou Kang was truly smart. Seeing that little sister Yiyi had already lost her rationality to anger, senior brother Kou Kang quick-wittedly made a proposal.”

“He said that since little sister Yiyi so firmly believed that the Immortal-cloak World Spiritist invited by the Sunset Cloud Valley would be more powerful, they might as well make a bet of their own.”

“He declared that if the Immortal-cloak World Spiritist invited by the Sunset Cloud Valley were to win, he would no longer bother little sister Yiyi.”

“However, if the world spiritist invited by the Sunset Cloud Valley were to lose to their Three Stars Hall’s world spiritist, then little sister Yiyi would have to marry him,” The green skirted woman said.

“There’s actually such a thing?”

“Girl, what were you thinking? You decided to gamble your marriage just like that?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to smile. Upon seeing Xu Yiyi’s reddened face, the smile on Chu Feng’s face grew even stronger.

## Chapter 2275 – Endlessly Excited

---

“Aiya, don’t smile. I am miserable enough.”

“Back then, I was so infuriated by that Kou Kang that I lost my ability to reason. Furthermore, I was confident in our Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“That’s why I thought that I could just gamble, that I wasn’t afraid.”

“However, who would’ve thought that our Sunset Cloud Valley would not be able to find an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist after an entire year passed,” As Xu Yiyi said those words, there was a hint of complaint in her tone. Her complaint seemed to not be aimed at their Lord Valley Master or her master. Rather, it seemed to be aimed at Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, he naturally noticed it. He was able to tell that Xu Yiyi was complaining about his refusal to help their Sunset Cloud Valley.

Thus, Chu Feng smiled and said, “Then, do you wish to marry that Kou Kang?”

“Of course not. If I did, why would I make such a bet with him? I merely do not wish for him to continue to bother me. That is the reason why I agreed to the bet,” Xu Yiyi said in grievance.

“I understand then,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, he said to the green skirted woman, “Young lady, may I know at what sort of level the Immortal-cloak World Spiritist invited over by your Three Stars Hall is?”

“Daoist Gold Star that we managed to invite seemed to be an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” That woman replied.

“If that’s the case, then I can handle it,” Chu Feng looked to Xu Yiyi and said, “I’ll battle on behalf of your Sunset Cloud Valley.”

Hearing those words, the woman's expression immediately changed.

Originally, she had thought that Chu Feng was Xu Yiyi's friend. That was why she had spoken to Chu Feng with a decent attitude.

However, after Chu Feng said those words, when he stated that he would be able to handle it, and that he would battle on behalf of the Sunset Cloud Valley, the impression the green skirted woman had toward Chu Feng changed immediately.

She was now looking to Chu Feng with a disgusted gaze. The way she saw it, Chu Feng, someone who was not much older than her, was most definitely boasting.

Furthermore, his boasting was no ordinary boasting.

Who was Daoist Gold Star? When ignoring his cultivation, he was an actual Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

How could someone like Chu Feng possibly be able to handle him?

"Really? Chu Feng, you're really willing to help us?"

However, after hearing what Chu Feng said, Xu Yiyi revealed an overjoyed expression. Her expression and her gaze was simply akin to someone seeing a benefactor. It was filled with gratefulness.

Upon seeing Xu Yiyi's reaction, the green skirted woman's expression changed once again. She was perplexed and confused by what was happening.

Xu Yiyi was no fool. On the contrary, she was very bright. Why would she reveal such an excited appearance toward someone who was boasting like this?

"Little sister Yiyi, I've been here for so long now. Isn't it about time you give me an introduction?" The green skirted woman said.

At that moment, she suddenly wanted to know exactly who this man before her who possessed a decent relationship with Xu Yiyi

was.

She wanted to judge from Chu Feng's identity as to whether or not he was truly someone with actual ability, or someone that was only boasting.

"Haha, look at me. I was only concerned about my own worries, and forgot to introduce the two of you," Xu Yiyi said with a beaming smile.

"Little sister Biyu, did you hear about the appearance of a genius world spiritist during Mount Cloud Crane's Immortalization Assembly held by Golden Crane True Immortal?" Xu Yiyi asked in a deliberately mystifying manner.

"I do. There was a youngster who managed to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on Mount Cloud Crane. Furthermore, he had obtained the good graces of various major powers."

"If I am not mistaken, that person is called Chu Feng. Mentioning it, that Chu Feng is now very famous in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"Likely, in the near future, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will know of that youngster by the name of Chu Feng becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist."

"If possible, I truly want to get to know him too. After all, he is the second young Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to have appeared in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," That woman began to talk enthusiastically. Furthermore, an expression of anticipation filled her delicate little face as she said those words.

Hearing what the green skirted woman said, Xu Yiyi covered her mouth with her hand and started to chuckle.

"Why are you laughing? Do you not want to know who Chu Feng is?"

"Oh, that's right. Didn't you also go to Mount Cloud Crane? Did



you see that Chu Feng?” The woman turned to ask Xu Yiyi.

“Not only did I meet him, I already knew him before going to Mount Cloud Crane,” Xu Yiyi said proudly.

“Are you for real, or are you lying?” The woman had a skeptical expression.

“Truth be told, this person here is the Chu Feng that you wish to know,” Xu Yiyi said as she pointed to Chu Feng.

“Ah?” Hearing those words, the woman immediately opened her mouth wide in astonishment.

Stunned. Even though she had guessed that the man before her might possess a special identity, she had never associated him with Chu Feng.

However, upon looking at Chu Feng now and recalling what he had said to Xu Yiyi, she realized that it was truly possible for the man before her to be that Chu Feng.

Else, why would he boast about battling Daoist Gold Star?

“You are really Chu Feng? The Chu Feng who defeated the Four World Spiritist Emperors and became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on Mount Cloud Crane?” The green skirted woman stared at Chu Feng as she questioned him.

“It was indeed I,” Chu Feng nodded.

“You are really Chu Feng?” The green skirted woman asked again. At that moment, her eyes were shining.

“Yes, it really is me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his finger and let out a strand of Insect Mark Immortal-level spirit power from his fingertip. Like a little snake, his spirit power began to revolve around his finger.

“Wow! You are actually that Chu Feng?! Wow!!!” At that moment, the eyes of that green skirted woman that were originally shining were now filled with countless little stars.

Then, the green skirted woman grabbed Chu Feng's hands and said, "Chu Feng, I am a disciple of the Three Stars Hall. My name is Song Biyu. I am extremely pleased to get to know you. So... could we be considered to be friends now?"

"Yes," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Wow! This is truly great! I've become friends with Chu Feng!"

"Chu Feng, did you know that you're simply my idol? It is not only me. After hearing about your accomplishments, everyone in our Three Stars Hall viewed you as their idol."

"You are simply too amazing. You are simply our model. You have truly won honor for us, the younger generation," The green skirted woman was extremely excited. It was as if she had been fed a stimulant.

"Hey, hey, hey, little sister Biyu, be a bit more reserved, okay?" Seeing this scene, Xu Yiyi spoke in contempt.

"Aiya, it's not that I'm not trying to act reserved. Rather, I'm seeing my idol here. Furthermore, I've become friends with my idol. How could I not be excited?" Song Biyu said with a beaming smile.

She had been tightly grabbing onto Chu Feng's hands with her fair-skinned and beautiful lily-white hands the entire time. There was not the slightest trace of embarrassment to be seen. Instead, she was elated.

"I truly do not know what to do with you," Xu Yiyi cast a helpless side eye at Song Biyu. Then, she said to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, are you really willing to battle on behalf of our Sunset Cloud Valley?"

"Should I watch as you are married to someone that you do not like then?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Then there's no time to lose. Let's go over there right now," Xu Yiyi said with a joyous expression.

“Yay, yay, I’m finally able to see a marvelous showdown between Immortal-cloak World Spiritists,” Song Biyu followed after them in great delight.

Seeing Song Biyu’s expression, Chu Feng realized that she was also a simple-minded girl.

Else, as a disciple of the Three Stars Hall, why would she be this happy upon finding out that the Sunset Cloud Valley had found a helper?

However, Chu Feng was fond of her personality. At least, this meant that she did not place much importance on fame and profit.

After that, Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu left directly for the place where the Sunset Cloud Valley was receiving the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster.

Merely, before they arrived at the palace, they were blocked by a man. To be exact, that man had blocked Xu Yiyi.

This man also had a Three Stars Hall title plate hanging on his waist. He was looking at Xu Yiyi with an extremely lecherous expression.

Without needing any introduction, Chu Feng knew that this person should be that so-called Kou Kang.

## Chapter 2276 – It's Chu Feng?

---

“Little sister Yiyi, we meet again. Have you missed me?” Kou Kang said to Xu Yiyi.

“Disgusting. Is little sister Yiyi something that you can say?” Xu Yiyi said with a disgusted expression.

Upon hearing what Xu Yiyi said, that Kou Kang's expression turned somewhat unsightly. He who possessed a high status and extraordinary strength was evidently not very used to being spoken down to in such a manner.

However, his annoyed expression disappeared in a flash. Soon, he smiled again and said to Xu Yiyi, “Oh, I've nearly forgotten. I shouldn't be addressing you as ‘little sister’ anymore. Instead, it should be ‘wife’.”

“Kou Kang, don't you act this shameless! You have yet to win our bet!” Xu Yiyi said furiously.

“Yet to win? Your Lord Valley Master and your master have already entered to apologize to my esteemed master.”

“I was only giving you face, so I came out instead of staying in there to see their unsightly appearances,” Kou Kang said.

“You!!!” Hearing what Kou Kang said, the fury in Xu Yiyi's eyes increased. After all, what Kou Kang had said was, to a greater or lesser extent, degrading the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui.

“Yiyi, there's no need to bother speaking with him. It's best that we go and take care of proper business,” Chu Feng grabbed Xu Yiyi's hand, moved around Kou Kang and began to proceed toward the palace.

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually grabbed his beloved's lily-white hand, Kou Kang was immediately furious.

One must know that Xu Yiyi's lily-white hands were something that even he had never touched before.

To Kou Kang, this was equivalent to his beloved's first time being snatched away by someone else right before his face.

This was especially meaningful to Kou Kang right now, as he already considered Xu Yiyi as his future wife.

Thus, the displeasure he felt was several tens of times greater. As such, how could he not be furious?!!!

“Courting death!!!” Kou Kang shouted furiously. Then, he swept forth his oppressive might of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

At the same time, a powerful fist that carried with it the whistling of wind was smashed toward Chu Feng's face.

At that split second, neither Xu Yiyi nor Song Biyu were able to see Kou Kang's movements clearly. However, they both realized that Kou Kang had unleashed an attack.

At that moment, the expressions of the two beauties changed enormously.

The reason for that was because they both knew that not only was Kou Kang a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, he also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

In other words, Kou Kang's actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank eight Half Martial Ancestors.

Faced with such a powerful Kou Kang, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu naturally felt that Chu Feng would not be his match.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

However, at the moment when the Xu Yiyi was worried, lightning suddenly blossomed from Chu Feng's body.

After Chu Feng's body was covered with his Thunder Armor, Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank four Half Martial Ancestor

to rank five Half Martial Ancestor. Then, he extended his palm and grabbed Kou Kang's fist.

“.....”

Once his fist was grabbed, Kou Kang was immediately startled. Shock filled his eyes.

It was not only him, Song Biyu was also shocked.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had revealed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

Thus, even though Chu Feng currently had the cultivation of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor whereas Kou Kang had a cultivation of rank six Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng was still able to easily receive his attack.

After all, in terms of heaven-defying battle power, Chu Feng surpassed Kou Kang by an entire level.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve and shook off Kou Kang's fist.

His powerful sweep caused Kou Kang to spin around for half a loop before finally stabilizing himself.

“Great job, Chu Feng,” Seeing Chu Feng beat Kou Kang back, Xu Yiyi was overjoyed.

Even though she already knew that Chu Feng possessed extraordinary battle power, she only knew that Chu Feng was actually that powerful after seeing his ability for herself.

“You damned bastard!” Kou Kang felt that he had been humiliated. Thus, he clenched his fist and planned to attack Chu Feng again.

“Stop!!!” Right at that moment, a furious shout sounded from the distant palace.

Turning toward the direction of the palace, the crowd noticed that the palace's entrance was open, and three extremely imposing figures were standing there.

They were the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Xu Yiyi's master Su Jingrui.

As for the third individual, he was a white-haired old man wearing a hairpiece and a blue daoist robe. That old man was emitting an air of righteousness all over. Likely, he should be the Headmaster of the Three Stars Hall.

"Kou Kang, what are you doing?" The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster asked coldly.

Kou Kang bowed and said, "Master, this person was being rude toward junior sister Yiyi. I was teaching him a lesson on behalf of junior sister Yiyi,"

"Lord Valley Master, master, senior, please do not listen to his nonsense. Chu Feng has not been rude toward me at all," Xu Yiyi hurriedly said.

"Kou Kang, you must be overthinking things. Little friend Chu Feng is our Sunset Cloud Valley's esteemed guest. Not to mention that he will not do anything to Yiyi, even if he really did do something to Yiyi, it shouldn't be you who should attack him," Right at that moment, Su Jingrui said. Furthermore, his tone was very ill-intentioned.

"Senior Su, I..."

After hearing what Su Jingrui said, Kou Kang's expression turned very ugly.

It was not only Kou Kang's expression that turned ugly, even the expression of Kou Kang's master, the headmaster of the Three Stars Hall, changed.

He was not against Su Jingrui publicly reprimanding his disciple.

Rather, he simply did not expect that Su Jingrui would do such a thing for a mere youngster.

With his understanding of Su Jingrui, he felt that Su Jingrui was not someone to do this sort of thing; the fact that he had done such a thing meant that the youngster was no small matter. At the very least, he was someone that Su Jingrui thought very highly of.

Merely, what sort of youngster would be able to make Su Jingrui think so highly of him?

Confused, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster began to carefully inspect Chu Feng.

Upon inspecting Chu Feng, his eyes started to shine.

He discovered that Chu Feng was very young. At least, he was over fifty years younger than his disciple.

Over fifty years younger meant that Chu Feng had trained in martial cultivation for over fifty years less than Kou Kang. However, Chu Feng was able to possess his current cultivation. This was truly remarkable.

Furthermore, Chu Feng possessed a Heavenly Bloodline.

There were two characteristics that wielders of Heavenly Bloodlines all possessed. One, they possessed a heaven-defying battle power three levels above that of ordinary people.

As for that, Chu Feng had already revealed it.

Next, they were capable of unleashing Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings that could increase their cultivations. If both were used, they could increase their cultivation by two levels.

Currently, Chu Feng had only unleashed his Thunder Armor. If he were to also unleash his Thunder Wings, his strength would surpass the current Kou Kang.

The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster was truly astonished by Chu Feng's strength.



“Chu Feng?” Suddenly, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster was astonished by the name Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he recalled someone.

“Brother Su, that little friend is called Chu Feng?”

“Could he be that Chu Feng who instantly became famous on Mount Cloud Crane?” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster asked Su Jingrui.

“Precisely,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui said in unison.

“Ssss~~~”

Hearing those words, the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air. Unable to contain himself, he looked to Chu Feng again. This time around, he had a marvelous expression.

Even though he had thought that might be the case earlier, he truly never expected that this youngster would truly be that Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2277 – Unreasonable Demand

---

“This guy is that Chu Feng?”

Upon seeing the emotional reaction from his master, Kou Kang was startled.

After all, he had also heard about Chu Feng’s famous name. Chu Feng was an extremely renowned individual right now. He had heard that even the four first-tier powers had tossed olive branches at Chu Feng.

Why would someone like him be with Xu Yiyi?

Furthermore, it seemed that the two of them possessed an extraordinary relationship. Wouldn’t this mean that he had a very powerful rival in love?

At that moment, Kou Kang felt an enormous pressure enveloping his entire body.

“Rumors are truly inferior to seeing things for oneself. It turns out that not only does little friend Chu Feng possess extraordinary attainments in terms of world spirit techniques, you are also very much talented in terms of martial cultivation.”

“I am the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster, Ouyang Yuqing. It is a pleasure to meet you, little friend Chu Feng,” Right at that moment, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster walked toward Chu Feng and greeted him of his own accord.

“I am Chu Feng. It is my pleasure to meet Headmaster Ouyang,” Chu Feng replied courteously. After all, this man before him was an existence on the same level as the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui.

As for Kou Kang, he was truly surprised to see his master initiate a greeting toward a member of the younger generation like Chu Feng.

At the moment when Kou Kang was surprised, his master, who had always shielded him, suddenly revealed a serious expression. He said to Kou Kang, “Kou Kang, you were rude toward little friend Chu Feng earlier. Why are you still not apologizing?”

“Master, I...” Kou Kang looked to his master in shock. His gaze was filled with grievance.

As for Chu Feng, he stood to the side and reacted like an observer. He did not say anything. After all, he would not plead for leniency for someone like Kou Kang.

“You what? Yiyi has already mentioned that Chu Feng did not do anything rude toward her. Yet you still attacked little friend Chu Feng. You are the one that is being rude here.”

“Why are you still not apologizing to little friend Chu Feng? Have you forgotten my usual guidance?” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster berated Kou Kang again. His tone was very strict.

Being intimidated by his own master, even though Kou Kang was very unwilling, he still clasped his fist toward Chu Feng and said, “Brother Chu Feng, it was I, Kou Kang, who was impulsive earlier.”

“It’s fine,” Chu Feng reacted very casually to Kou Kang’s apology. It was as if he did not appreciate that apology at all.

The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster did not say anything about Chu Feng’s reaction. After all, his disciple’s apology was not sincere either.

“Say, the two of you are in the wrong here. You’ve clearly managed to invite little friend Chu Feng, why did you two instead tell me that you haven’t managed to invite an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, and stated that you would receive my punishment?”

“Old fellows, could it be that the two of you are deliberately playing with me?” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster looked to

the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui in a slightly displeased manner.

"That's not the case. Although little friend Chu Feng is our esteemed guest, we have not asked little friend Chu Feng to participate in our matter. As such, he does not know about it," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master explained.

"Lord Valley Master, since I've already heard about this matter now, if you do not mind, I wish to spar against the Immortal-cloak World Spiritist invited by the Three Stars Hall on behalf of the Sunset Cloud Valley," Chu Feng said.

"Little friend Chu Feng, are you serious?" Hearing those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui were overjoyed.

"Chu Feng has just become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. I happen to want to find seniors to swap pointers with. Today would be a rare opportunity for me to do so," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Someone like you think you can spar with me?"

Right at that moment, another figure flew out from the palace in the distance.

It was another old man. Merely, that old man had a head of blonde hair and a face full of blonde beard.

Furthermore, on his head was a headdress with a golden star on it.

That old man's aura was not very strong. At least, his aura was inferior to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster and Su Jingrui.

However, he possessed a different sort of symbol on his body. It was the clothes he was wearing. It was a world spiritist cloak.

Immortal-level world spirit power was hovering around his world spiritist cloak. Although it was only Insect Mark Immortal-

level spirit power, he was most definitely an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Evidently, he was that Daoist Gold Star.

After Daoist Gold Star appeared, he immediately cast his gaze at Chu Feng. Merely, his gaze was filled with displeasure and disdain. “Are you certain that you want to spar against me?”

Seeing that the attitude of that Daoist Gold Star was very bad, Chu Feng did not present a good attitude either. Instead, he laughed coldly and then said, “You’re an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist and I’m also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Why can’t I spar against you?”

“Are you implying that you are not an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, but instead a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? If you are a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, I will concede right now.”

Chu Feng’s words were evidently aggressive. After all, Daoist Gold Star was evidently only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Humph, even if we’re both Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, there is still a difference in how strong one might be.”

“You are merely someone who has just managed to obtain Insect Mark Immortal-level spirit power. You cannot be considered to be an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist yet.”

“Thus, you are still not qualified to spar against me,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“Daoist Gold Star, it is not up to you to decide whether or not little friend Chu Feng is qualified to spar against you. Instead, it is up to our Sunset Cloud Valley to decide,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said. His tone was quite ill intended too.

“Since your Sunset Cloud Valley insists on humiliating yourselves, I am willing to help you accomplish your aim.”

“However, the title of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist is not something that one can bring dishonor to. This is especially true for a brat like him,” Daoist Gold Star looked to Chu Feng. With a cold tone, he said, “I am willing to spar with you in terms of world spirit techniques. However, if you lose, then you are not allowed to declare yourself an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist again.”

“Then what if you are to lose?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is impossible for me to lose,” Daoist Gold Star said confidently.

“Aren’t you too overconfident? This could no longer be considered confidence, but rather arrogance instead,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Very well, let’s assume that it’s possible that I might lose. I will do whatever you want me to do. How about it?” Daoist Gold Star said confidently.

“If you are to lose, I will not want you to do anything too excessive. I merely want you to apologize to me publicly,” Chu Feng said.

“Apologize to you?” Although he declared that he would do anything if he were to be defeated, Daoist Gold Star revealed a displeased expression upon hearing Chu Feng demanding an apology.

“What, are you afraid?” Chu Feng asked.

“Afraid? Why would I be afraid of someone that I will defeat?”

“Very well, this old man shall agree to your demand. If I am to lose, I will publicly apologize to you.”

“However, if I am to win, I want to add another demand for you,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng said.

“I want you to kneel on the ground and apologize to me,” Daoist

Gold Star said those words one word at a time.

“Gold Star, is this not too excessive?” Su Jingrui’s eyebrows narrowed as he spoke coldly.

“Daoist Gold Star, little friend Chu Feng has not done anything to humiliate you. Why must you demand an apology from him?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was also very displeased.

“Someone of his quality actually wants to spar against me. That itself is an insult toward me,” Daoist Gold Star said.

Xu Yiyi was unable to watch it anymore and declared, “But you clearly put forth a demand earlier. Yet now you want to add another demand. This is simply unfair.”

“He wishes to spar against me with his mere status. Do you think that is fair?” Daoist Gold Star said.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, both the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui were furious. The reason for that was because Daoist Gold Star was truly too conceited.

“Very well, I agree to your conditions,” However, to everyone’s surprise, Chu Feng actually agreed to Daoist Gold Star’s irrational demands.

## Chapter 2278 – A Sinister Laugh

---

Everyone was startled by Chu Feng's acceptance of the conditions.

It was not because they felt that Chu Feng would definitely lose.

This was especially true for the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others. They all knew how strong Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were.

They felt that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were very strong, that even though he had only just become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he possessed the strength to compete against Daoist Gold Star.

They were only feeling confused because they felt that Daoist Gold Star's demands were truly irrational. Yet, Chu Feng had actually agreed to them.

In this sort of situation, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui involuntarily glanced at one another.

After glancing at one another, they seemed to have reached a mutual understanding. They then looked to Chu Feng. The confusion in their eyes had disappeared and was replaced with admiration.

They both felt a possibility. That was that Chu Feng had dared to agree to those demands because he possessed the certainty of absolute victory. At the very least, he was very confident in himself.

It was precisely because of the confidence that Chu Feng possessed that the two grand characters felt admiration for Chu Feng.

They felt that the young needed that sort of drive.

“This is truly what they meant by a newborn calf not being afraid



of tigers. Since you have decided, we can start,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“Very well, how do you want to compete?” Chu Feng said.

“How to compete? We shall fight with world spirit techniques until one is defeated,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“Until one is defeated? What sort of ‘defeat’ do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“It means me beating you to a state of being unable to fight back,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“You’re planning to use world spirit techniques to compete in an actual battle against Chu Feng?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley master and the other spectators all revealed astonished expressions.

“Precisely,” Daoist Gold Star nodded.

“That isn’t really fair, no?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“How is it not fair?” Daoist Gold Star asked coldly.

“Your cultivation is, after all, that of a rank six Martial Ancestor, whereas little friend Chu Feng is only a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. With how enormous the difference in your cultivations is, how could the two of you possibly battle with world spirit techniques?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Humph,” Daoist Gold Star smiled lightly. He said, “That’s something that you all are ignorant about. I am going to use world spirit techniques to fight against him. I am not using my martial power. So why would my cultivation possibly matter?”

At that moment, Su Jingrui said, “Everyone knows that a world spiritist’s cultivation directly decides the strength of a world spiritist. After all, a world spiritist will also need a powerful build.”

“Although we are not Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, we are,

after all, Royal-cloak World Spiritists. As such, we know about that sort of thing.”

“So what? It is he who wants to challenge me. Are you saying that I cannot utilize my advantage?”

“In that case, I might as well not compete. I’ll just admit defeat, okay? After all, no matter what I do, you’ll all say that I’m the one in the wrong. Isn’t that right?” After Daoist Gold Star finished saying those words, he looked to the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster and said, “Headmaster Ouyang, how about we just leave? After all, it seems that your two old friends are unable to take a defeat with grace.”

At that moment, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster had a wry smile on his face. He actually also deeply disliked Daoist Gold Star’s attitude.

However, it remained that Daoist Gold Star was someone that he requested help from. Furthermore, he had exhausted a great amount of effort in order to invite Daoist Gold Star here.

At that moment, he was placed in a very difficult situation because he did not wish to offend either side.

“It turns out, only I alone am an outsider. You’re also with them,” Daoist Gold Star was able to see through the attitude of the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster. Thus, he felt increasingly angry and displeasure filled his face.

In response, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster hurriedly tried to explain. “Brother Gold Star, you’re overthinking things. How could you be an outsider? This is merely a friendly spar. It’s not as serious as you think it is.”

However, before he could finish, Daoist Gold Star laughed coldly. Then, he said, “Ouyang Yuqing, you know best why I agreed to come here.”

“I did not fancy the rewards that you gave me. Instead, it was

because I, Gold Star, and your Three Stars Hall both possessed the word 'star.' As such, I considered it fate."

"It was because of that fate that I decided to help you. Else, did you really think that bit of reward you gave me would be enough to make an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist help you?"

Hearing those words, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster revealed a displeased expression. He said, "Gold Star, are your words not too excessive?"

"You have not come here for free. It was also you who declared how much you wanted to be paid. Furthermore, I had already given you your rewards."

"Yet now, you are actually saying those things to me? Do you really think it is appropriate?"

"To put it pleasantly, I have requested your presence here."

"However, to put it bluntly, you were merely hired by me."

"Is there someone who speaks to an employer the way you're speaking to me?"

Anger. The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster's tone was filled with anger. Furthermore, it was also very imposing.

He had revealed all of the displeasure he felt earlier.

"Pah! I gave you face, and you really considered yourself to be someone grand?"

"This is your pay. Today, your daddy I will return it to you. From this point on, your daddy I am not related to you in the slightest."

Daoist Gold Star was truly not someone to be trifled with. He took out a Cosmos Sack and tossed it at the Three Stars Hall's headmaster.

As for the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster, he was not one to be polite either. Not only did he receive the Cosmos Sack, he also opened it to check its contents carefully.

“It’s missing twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said.

“I have accompanied you here and wasted a lot of my time. Those twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments are my compensation,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“Didn’t you declare earlier that you didn’t care about this bit of reward? That you’ve come here because of fate? Why is there a compensation fee now?” Su Jingrui mocked.

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others present, even Chu Feng and the others of the younger generation, started to sneer.

While Daoist Gold Star might appear to be an extraordinary individual, he was actually extremely petty. He was indeed someone to be sneered at.

“Good, very good.”

“Three Stars Hall, Sunset Cloud Valley, I, Daoist Gold Star, will remember you all.”

“You all will soon know the consequences for going against me, Daoist Gold Star, are.”

Daoist Gold Star’s expression began to distort. However, in the end, he still took out twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments and tossed them at the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster.

Upon seeing the twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, Chu Feng’s heart started to move. The reason for that was because those twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments were all of extraordinary quality.

They could be said to be top quality Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. In fact, their quality even slightly surpassed Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword.

It was no wonder Daoist Gold Star would return everything but

keep the twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.

“I will not bother seeing you off then,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said after putting the twenty Incomplete Ancestral Armaments away.

“There’s no need for you all to see me off,” Daoist Gold Star snorted coldly. Then, he waved his sleeve and prepared to swagger off.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Why are you leaving? Could it be that you are afraid of competing?”

Daoist Gold Star stopped his footsteps. He turned around and asked, “What? You still want to compete against me?”

“I never declared that I would not compete with you,” Chu Feng said.

“Hah...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Daoist Gold Star burst into laughter. Merely, his laughter was very sinister. It caused one to shiver upon hearing it.

## Chapter 2279 – A Person's Dignity

---

“If you are to compete with me now, it will no longer be a matter concerning the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley. Instead, it will be a personal matter between the two of us.”

“Thus, the gambling stakes must change,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“How do you want to change it? Go ahead and tell me,” Chu Feng seemed to have already anticipated that Daoist Gold Star would say such a thing. Thus, his reaction was rather calm and collected.

“If you wish to compete with me in terms of world spirit techniques, you must use your life as the price. Unless one's opponent is to die... the match shall never end,” Daoist Gold Star said.

“Daoist Gold Star, you're actually planning to gamble your lives?” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others' expressions all changed enormously.

“Very well, I accept,” However, to the crowd's surprise, Chu Feng actually calmly accepted the extremely excessive demand from Daoist Gold Star.

In response, Xu Yiyi shouted, “Chu Feng!!!” Then, she began to shake her head at Chu Feng nonstop.

Her intention was very clear. She was urging Chu Feng to not be too impulsive, and telling him to not joke around with his life.

At the same time Xu Yiyi was doing that, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Su Jingrui and even the Three Stars Hall's headmaster were all sending voice transmissions to Chu Feng.

Their intentions were the same as Xu Yiyi's. They too were urging Chu Feng against it, because they did not want Chu Feng to gamble with his life.

Faced with the crowd's urgings, Chu Feng wanted to explain

things to them in secret, and tell them what he was thinking.

However, with that moment of hesitation from Chu Feng, that Daoist Gold Star's lips lifted into a mocking smile. He said, "What's wrong? After being incited by the crowd, you do not dare to compete anymore? Sure enough, you're nothing more than a coward."

It seemed that Daoist Gold Star had also managed to guess that the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others were urging Chu Feng against it. That was why he deliberately mocked Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, do not be incited by him. To begin with, this was merely an ordinary spar. There is no need to raise it to a level of confrontation with one's life on the line. He is evidently just trying to bully you," Xu Yiyi said.

"Bully him? Little girl, you should understand the situation first. It is he who is insisting on competing with me. I am not forcing him to compete with me," Daoist Gold Star said.

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui both opened their mouths. They wanted to speak on Chu Feng's behalf.

However, before the crowd could speak, Chu Feng suddenly gestured with his hand and said, "Seniors, please say no more."

"I know what seniors are all thinking. I also know what this Daoist Gold Star is thinking."

"In his eyes, I, Chu Feng, am merely a member of the younger generation. Not to mention cultivation, he feels that even my world spirit techniques will simply not be a match for his own."

"He feels that I will definitely be defeated should I compete against him, that I would be bringing about my own destruction should I agree to his demands."

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned his sharp gaze to

Daoist Gold Star.

He said, “However, a Buddha’s worth is determined by a single incense stick, whereas a person’s worth is determined by their dignity.”

“Although I, Chu Feng, am a member of the younger generation; although I, Chu Feng, possess a cultivation inferior to his, I do not feel that I, Chu Feng, am inferior to Daoist Gold Star.”

“More than that, I do not feel that my world spirit techniques are inferior to Daoist Gold Star’s.”

“I am going to compete against you. Originally, I had only wanted to battle on behalf of the Sunset Cloud Valley. However, from your repeated insults, belittling and provocations, I, Chu Feng, am unable to tolerate it anymore.”

“The reason for that is because I, Chu Feng, do not feel myself to be inferior to you. On the contrary, I feel that I am stronger than you. At the very least, I managed to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist as a member of the younger generation. What about you?”

“Daoist Gold Star, I dare ask, how many years did you train in order to finally become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? How many years have you trained in order to obtain your current level of cultivation?”

“You!!!” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Daoist Gold Star’s expression changed. The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had said was not without reason. When he was at Chu Feng’s age, not to mention world spirit techniques, even his martial cultivation was greatly inferior to Chu Feng’s.

If one were to compare their current attainments, he would indeed be superior to Chu Feng. However, in terms of talent, his talent was much inferior to Chu Feng’s.

“Thus, I do not feel that I am inferior to you. As such, I refuse to



allow your repeated insults toward me.”

“Only I, Chu Feng, know how much effort I’ve exhausted in order to obtain my current standing. That is not something that you can reject.”

“Thus, I am going to fight for myself now. Even if I am to gamble with my life at stake, I am still going to fight,” Chu Feng said.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the expressions of many of the people present changed. They began to look to Chu Feng with gazes of greater admiration.

There were an enormous amount of conceited individuals in this world of martial cultivation. However, the great majority of them were people that would only bully the weak and be afraid of the strong.

Before people weaker than themselves, they would act as if they were gods, and consider everyone else to be beneath them.

However, when facing individuals stronger than them, those people would immediately change completely, and start to act as if they would kneel and lick the other’s shoe.

However, Chu Feng was different. When facing Daoist Gold Star, an existence clearly more powerful than himself, Chu Feng did not show the slightest sign of cowardice.

His moral integrity was extremely rare nowadays.

“Little friend Chu Feng, since you’ve already decided, I will no longer urge you against it. I merely want to tell you one thing...”

“... you must give your all, and battle to your heart’s content,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

After he finished saying those words, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master soared into the sky. After soaring into the sky, he moved far off into the distance.

He was creating an empty space for Chu Feng and Daoist Gold

Star to compete with one another.

In response, Su Jingrui, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster and the others also soared into the sky and moved to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master's side.

Following that, Chu Feng also soared into the sky. He looked to Daoist Gold Star below and said, "Come. It will depend on whether or not you have the ability to take my life."

"Good, very good. Since you are so eager to die, I shall help you accomplish your aim."

Once Daoist Gold Star said those words, he immediately unleashed his attack. His Immortal-level spirit power surged forth from within his body. It was extremely ferocious and incomparably domineering.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

His magnificent world spirit power turned into an enormous sledgehammer. Like a mountain peak, it smashed up toward Chu Feng from down below.

Gale-force winds whistled from the hammer, and space itself started to tremble nonstop. It was as if the hammer would be able to smash a hole through the sky.

"Oh no!"

Upon seeing the world spirit hammer, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others all started to frown.

Daoist Gold Star was using his spirit power. However, his spirit power's battle power was definitely at the level of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

As for Chu Feng, his actual cultivation was only that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Even if he were to use the power of his lightning and his heaven-defying battle power, he would only be able to barely contend against ordinary rank nine Half Martial

Ancestors.

However, that battle power was something that was only possible when Chu Feng used both his martial power and Heavenly Bloodline.

Right now, the two of them were competing with world spirit techniques, and were not allowed to use the slightest bit of martial power.

Everyone knew that while world spirit techniques could also be used to fight, the strength of one's world spirit techniques would depend on setting up a spirit formation over an extended period of time.

When confronting others head-on, what was most important was the speed and intensity of the attack. Thus, world spiritists simply did not have the time to set up powerful spirit formations, and had to change their attacks according to the situation.

In that sort of situation, the battle power of one's world spirit techniques would generally be much inferior to a cultivator's actual battle power.

“Humph.”

However, right at the moment when the crowd were sweating cold bullets for Chu Feng, at the moment when several experts were planning to act to save Chu Feng, Chu Feng actually let out a slight snort.

Then, Chu Feng's five fingers were clenched into a fist. He pointed his fist downward and shot forth a punch.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, boundless Immortal-level spirit power shot out from Chu Feng's fist like a waterfall filled with Immortal-level spirit power.

In an instant, the spirit power overflowing from Chu Feng's fist

landed on the giant hammer from Daoist Gold Star.

“Rumble~~~”

The two collided. Immediately, extremely loud explosions could be heard. Following that, spirit power spattered everywhere, shattering the space around them in the process.

Originally, Chu Feng’s spirit power had been like water. However, when it collided with the giant hammer, it gained frantic power and smashed the giant hammer apart.

The might of the attack was so strong that it even shook the heavenly dome.

# Chapter 2280 – Situation Turning Bad

---

“How could this be?”

Seeing this scene, not to mention the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others, even the expression on Daoist Gold Star’s face changed enormously.

The reason why Daoist Gold Star had been able to unleash an attack with his world spirit technique that possessed a battle power on par with rank nine Half Martial Ancestors was because he was an actual rank six Marital Ancestor.

Thus, even though he was only using spirit power, he was still able to unleash a battle power of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

As for Chu Feng, his actual cultivation was only that of a mere rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

With his low level of cultivation, how could he possibly be able to unleash spirit power with battle power on par with rank nine Half Martial Ancestors?

Furthermore, he even managed to defeat Daoist Gold Star’s attack with one strike?

“Crash~~~”

Right at the moment when Daoist Gold Star was astonished, a torrential rainstorm-like sound was heard from the sky above.

He raised his head to look, and was immediately struck dumb.

The sky was filled with spirit power that was densely packed together. At that moment, it was sweeping toward him.

It was coming at him with an aura of death.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when the spirit power that filled the sky began to sprinkle downward, Daoist Gold Star waved his sleeve and sent

forth a layer of spirit power that turned into an oval-shaped protective barrier that covered him completely.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

Like a torrential rain, the spirit power began to fall like a myriad of sharp blades.

However, the world spirit barrier created by Daoist Gold Star acted like an indestructible fort.

Even though Chu Feng’s attack was extremely powerful, and caused energy ripples to fly about in all directions, it was unable to break through the fort created by Daoist Gold Star.

“Huu~~~”

Right at that moment, the indestructible fort suddenly disappeared.

Merely, when Daoist Gold Star’s figure reappeared again, a watermelon-sized spheroid was in his hand.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Daoist Gold Star tossed the sphere upward. As the sphere spun, it let out a boundless amount of attractive power.

Chu Feng’s spirit power was rapidly absorbed by that sphere.

As more and more spirit power was absorbed by the sphere, the sphere actually started to emit waves of oppressive might that caused ripples to appear in space itself.

When the spirit power Chu Feng had unleashed was absorbed completely, the ripples created by the waves of oppressive might became so intense that they were frightening.

“That’s a spirit formation,” Upon seeing the strange sphere of light, the eyes of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others shone brightly.

They finally realized why Daoist Gold Star had only blocked Chu

Feng's attack with his defensive barrier earlier. It turned out that he had been setting up a spirit formation.

“Not bad, not bad. You were actually able to block my first attack. You're pretty decent.”

“However, the next attack will completely destroy you.”

Suddenly, Daoist Gold Star tossed the sphere out again.

Once the sphere was tossed, a ray of light that contained enormous power began to surge toward Chu Feng.

Most importantly, that sphere itself possessed an extremely powerful might.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng did not dare to underestimate the sphere, and began to unleash spirit power to attack the sphere nonstop. He wanted to stop the sphere.

However, the sphere was unstoppable. All of the spirit power Chu Feng had shot toward it was absorbed.

Soon, the sphere was about to reach Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng was unable to stop it.

“Oh no!”

Seeing that scene, the crowd were once again extremely worried for Chu Feng.

This match was a match of world spirit techniques. As such, one could not use martial power.

With how powerful that sphere was, Chu Feng might be able to dodge it should he utilize his martial power to unleash a movement type Taboo Martial Skill.

However, he could not use martial skills right now. As such, how was he to dodge it?

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd were worried, Chu Feng turned into a ray of light and dodged the incoming sphere.

“Chu Feng, you actually used a martial skill? You have lost this match. Go and kill yourself immediately. Do not force me to personally kill you,” Daoist Gold Star shouted loudly. His voice was filled with complacency.

After all, the two of them had only just started fighting, yet he was already able to force Chu Feng to use a martial skill. This completely demonstrated how powerful he was. As such, he would naturally be pleased.

“Foolish dog, look carefully. Am I using a spirit formation or a martial skill here?” Chu Feng said mockingly.

“This?!!!”

Hearing those words, the crowd all began to carefully inspect Chu Feng. Upon closer inspection, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others were immediately overjoyed, whereas Daoist Gold Star revealed a gloomy expression.

The reason why Chu Feng’s speed was so fast right now was because there was a body of light underneath his feet. That body of light was as fast as lightning. That was how Chu Feng had obtained his lightning fast speed.

However, that body of light was not a martial skill. The reason for that was because it did not contain the slightest bit of martial power. Instead, it contained pure spirit power.

Thus, it was not a martial skill, but instead a world spirit formation.

“Little friend Chu Feng is truly amazing. He has actually grasped such a powerful spirit formation. That speed is simply even faster than Taboo Martial Skills,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, Su Jingrui and the others were all overjoyed.

Even the Three Star Hall’s headmaster began to applaud Chu



Feng. After all, he had already had a falling out with Daoist Gold Star, and thus wanted Chu Feng to win.

However, in terms of being happy, the person that was the happiest right now was none other than Xu Yiyi. Even though she was clearly standing in the air, she was still jumping and hopping in joy. Not only that, she was also cheering for Chu Feng, and even shouted at Daoist Gold Star, “Hey! Daoist Gold Star! You are an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, how could you not tell the difference between spirit power and martial power? Could it be that your vision has been blurred by your old age?”

Although everyone was feeling happy for Chu Feng, there was one exception. In fact, that person’s expression was equally as ugly as Daoist Gold Star’s expression. That person was none other than Kou Kang.

Who was Kou Kang? He was someone who liked Xu Yiyi, and viewed Chu Feng as his rival in love.

It would be one thing for Chu Feng to be in the limelight right now. However, his beloved was actually even cheering for Chu Feng in a love-struck manner.

In fact, even his junior sister Song Biyu had a reaction similar to Xu Yiyi’s. This caused Kou Kang to truly feel stifled.

“Even if that is the case, you will still undoubtedly be defeated.”

After that, Daoist Gold Star grew even more furious. He began to form hand seals with one hand, and that spirit formation sphere actually started to turn again. Once again, it started to chase after Chu Feng.

Furthermore, this time around, its speed was even faster, and its power was even mightier.

“Damn it!”

With the golden sphere coming toward him, Chu Feng started to frown. He did not dare to be careless in the slightest. He began to

utilize the spirit formation underneath his feet to wholeheartedly escape.

Chu Feng was shocked to discover that the speed of that sphere was truly too fast. He was no longer able to stop anywhere, and had to run away nonstop.

Else, he would be caught by the sphere. Once he was caught, Chu Feng knew that he would be met with a disastrous fate.

The reason for that was because the sphere was very strong. Furthermore, it was very strange. It seemed to possess the effect of being an antithesis to spirit power. That sphere was no ordinary spirit formation.

Chu Feng felt that it would absolutely be impossible for him to block it should he not use martial power to unleash a taboo martial skill. If the situation was bad, he might even end up being crushed to death by the sphere.

“Humph. You dared insult me as a foolish dog? What are you now? Are you not a running dog fleeing in panic?”

Seeing that Chu Feng was fleeing nonstop without even bothering to turn his head around, Daoist Gold Star started to mock him.

“What do we do? Master, will Chu Feng be able to turn the situation around?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered a disadvantageous situation, Xu Yiyi became extremely worried. She looked to her master Su Jingrui.

Faced with this, Su Jingrui started to frown deeply.

He then said, “Although Daoist Gold Star is only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he remains someone who has meticulously studied world spirit techniques for thousands of years.”

“Although that spirit formation sphere might appear to be simple, it is extremely difficult to deal with. Right now, Chu Feng is only able to dodge that spirit formation, and simply does not have the time to set up a spirit formation to counterattack.”

“If this is to continue, I fear that the situation will be far from good.”

## Chapter 2281 – Contrary To Expectation

---

“Ah?” After hearing what Su Jingrui said, Xu Yiyi’s already worried face was filled with even more nervousness.

In fact, it was not only Xu Yiyi who was worried. The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, Su Jingrui, and even the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster, who did not possess much of a relationship with Chu Feng, were deeply worried for him.

Very few people would want a talented genius like Chu Feng to die like so, so easily.

“Continue to run. I shall see how much longer you can run. Today, you will undoubtedly be killed,” Daoist Gold Star grew more and more complacent.

“Undoubtedly be killed? That’s not for certain,” Although Chu Feng appeared to be in a very sorry state as he was escaping the entire time, he did not appear to have the attitude of admitting defeat.

“You are truly one who is reluctant to admit your defeat. Do you know the origins of my spirit formation?”

“This spirit formation of mine was obtained from a remnant of Grandmaster Kai Hong. It is a spirit formation left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong!” Daoist Gold Star said proudly.

“Grandmaster Kai Hong? That is actually a spirit formation created by Grandmaster Kai Hong?!”

“No wonder, no wonder...”

Hearing those words, the expressions of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others all changed enormously.

While Chu Feng did not know who Grandmaster Kai Hong was, they did.

Grandmaster Kai Hong was someone who had died tens of

thousands of years ago. However, his legend still circulated throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm even now.

Grandmaster Kai Hong was a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. He was a legend in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

In fact, Grandmaster Kai Hong was deemed to be one of the most powerful world spiritists in the history of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

For the spirit formation Daoist Gold Star had unleashed to actually be something created by Grandmaster Kai Hong, it was no wonder that the spirit formation would be so powerful.

“This spirit formation of mine is capable of absorbing all spirit power. It is simply impossible for Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists to break through my spirit formation.”

“Furthermore, my spirit formation is extremely mighty. Unless you are to use martial power, it is impossible for you to withstand my spirit formation’s attack.”

“Chu Feng, no matter how much spirit power you might possess, sooner or later, you will exhaust it. However, my spirit formation will not stop, nor will it perish until it manages to strike you.”

“Thus, today, you will undoubtedly be killed,” Daoist Gold Star said those words with absolute confidence. It was as if he had truly grasped victory in his hand.

“That’s not for certain,” However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s figure suddenly shifted. He began to fly toward Daoist Gold Star.

“What? Are you going to walk right into my attack?”

“Or could it be that you are trying to achieve mutual destruction?”

“Haha. I am truly sorry to inform you of this, but you will not be

able to cause me harm. You, on the other hand, will be killed by me.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was flying rapidly towards him, Daoist Gold Star was not afraid. He waved his sleeve, and a layer of spirit power appeared. Soon, his spirit power formed a fort that completely protected him within it.

Following that, one of his hands began to change nonstop as he formed hand seals in succession. He was making the defenses of his fort stronger and stronger.

Seeing that spirit formation fort, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others were completely discouraged.

Daoist Gold Star's current spirit formation fort was even stronger than what he had unleashed to block Chu Feng's previous attack. Unless Chu Feng was capable of setting up an even more powerful spirit formation, it would simply be impossible for Chu Feng to break through that spirit formation fort.

If Chu Feng was unable to break through that spirit formation fort and was stopped by it, it would mean that the spirit formation sphere that was chasing after him the entire time would finally be able to strike him.

“I cannot let little friend Chu Feng die like this. I must stop him.”

Thinking of this, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master quietly moved his body toward Chu Feng and Daoist Gold Star.

At the same time, surging martial power began to gather in his palm. He was planning to save Chu Feng.

In fact, it was not only the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master. Su Jingrui was also doing the same sort of thing as him. He too was preparing to save Chu Feng in this moment of imminent peril.

At the very least, the two of them wanted to preserve Chu Feng's life.

However, right at the moment when everyone felt that Chu Feng would undoubtedly be defeated, Chu Feng's lips were raised into an upward curve.

“Puu~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng opened his mouth. Then, a walnut-sized sphere of light shot out of his mouth and flew rapidly toward the fort.

Everything happened too quickly. By the time the crowd noticed what had happened, the sphere of light Chu Feng shot out of his mouth had already landed on Daoist Gold Star's defensive fort.

“Boom~~~”

Rumbles sounded nonstop as energy ripples swept forth. That sphere of light actually managed to shatter Daoist Gold Star's defensive fort instantly.

“That is a spirit formation?!”

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others were all greatly alarmed. The reason for that was because they were able to tell that the sphere of light Chu Feng had spit out was no ordinary spirit formation. Instead, it was a sort of very powerful slaughtering formation.

Else, it would be impossible for him to be able to break through Daoist Gold Star's defensive formation that easily.

“Damn it! I've been made a fool of!”

Daoist Gold Star's expression also changed enormously. The reason for that was because the sphere of light Chu Feng had spit out was already extremely close to him. It was impossible for him to dodge the sphere.

Unable to dodge, he could only wait for the sphere of light to strike his body like a shooting target.

“Paa~~~”

Finally, that sphere of light landed onto Daoist Gold Star's chest. However, to the crowd's surprise, that sphere of light did not let out the expected explosion or ferocious energy ripples. Instead, it landed onto Daoist Gold Star's body like a feather.

"Truly despicable."

Seeing this scene, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others all started to gnash their teeth angrily.

The reason for that was because a layer of spirit formation armor had appeared around Daoist Gold Star. That armor contained a special sort of power. It was that armor that had managed to block the sphere of light Chu Feng had spit out.

However, that spirit formation armor was not a spirit formation that Daoist Gold Star had set up. Rather, it seemed to be a protective treasure that would automatically activate to save its master's life during crucial moments.

That sort of behavior was simply akin to cheating. However, due to the fact that even though that spirit formation armor was created by a treasure, it only emitted spirit power, it could not be said that Daoist Gold Star was cheating.

That was the reason why the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others felt Daoist Gold Star to be despicable.

"Chu Feng, you've lost."

Daoist Gold Star was smiling so strongly that his face became filled with wrinkles like a steamed bun. He was truly overjoyed.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was less than a meter away from his spirit formation sphere. It would simply be impossible for Chu Feng to escape from it now.

"Is that so?" However, Chu Feng's smile remained unchanged after hearing what Daoist Gold Star said.

Seeing that smile, the crowd's hearts all tensed up. They were all



unable to make head or tails of it.

Even though a calamity loomed, how could Chu Feng still smile so easily?

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when the crowd was puzzled, the spirit formation sphere that had been chasing after Chu Feng the entire time, that spirit formation created by the legendary Grandmaster Kai Hong, actually brushed past Chu Feng’s side.

The spirit formation sphere did not strike Chu Feng. Instead, it turned into a ray of light that carried frightening might with it as it began to fly toward Daoist Gold Star.

“Boom~~~”

The sphere struck Daoist Gold Star. Immediately, a loud explosion was heard.

Surging energy ripples completely engulfed Daoist Gold Star.

“How could this be?”

At that moment, not only were the people of the younger generation like Xu Yiyi stunned, even the grand characters like the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master were stunned.

That was clearly Daoist Gold Star’s spirit formation. Why would it strike Daoist Gold Star instead?

# Chapter 2282 – The Outcome Of The Battle Has Been Determined

---

“Huu~~~”

Suddenly, a stream of boundless martial power turned into a ferocious gale that swept out in all directions, dispersing the violently surging berserk spirit power.

At the same time, Daoist Gold Star's figure once again appeared in everyone's line of sight.

Daoist Gold Star was uninjured. Merely, he no longer had the smile he previously had.

At that moment, extreme unwillingness filled his aged face. His eyes were filled with confusion.

The reason for that was because he was only able to block the attack from that spirit formation sphere by utilizing his rank six Martial Ancestor's martial power at the moment of peril.

However, they had clearly agreed that they were not allowed to use martial power, and only allowed to use spirit power in their match.

The fact that he had used martial power meant that he had lost.

“Daoist Gold Star, you've used martial power. You have lost,” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said with a beaming smile. His tone contained traces of mockery.

He was truly in a cheerful mood. He was feeling happy for Chu Feng. Even though he did not know why Daoist Gold Star's spirit formation would turn to attack him, it remained that the result was that Chu Feng had won.

“Brother Gold Star, although your spirit formation is powerful, it seems that you are incapable of controlling it.”

“As an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, you were actually attacked by your own spirit formation. If this matter were to be known, I wonder how many people would start to talk about it during their leisure time.” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster mocked.

Although he was the one who had asked Daoist Gold Star to come here, Daoist Gold Star’s manner of conduct was truly too vile.

Thus, since the two of them had already had a falling out with one another, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster would naturally not be courteous towards Daoist Gold Star anymore.

Thus, he seized the opportunity to insult Daoist Gold Star to relieve himself of the discontent that he had felt before.

As for Daoist Gold Star, he ignored the mockery from the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster.

Instead, his eyes were fixed onto Chu Feng. He asked, “Brat, exactly what did you do? Why would my own spirit formation attack me?”

“It’s very simple. I saw through your spirit formation and set up a spirit formation that could undo your spirit formation.”

“The spirit formation I used earlier was not to attack you. Rather, its purpose was to attract your spirit formation and make your spirit formation attack it instead,” Chu Feng said.

Once Chu Feng provided his explanation, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

They finally realized why Daoist Gold Star’s spirit formation would move to attack him instead. It turned out that it was all caused by Chu Feng.

Merely, after the crowd realized what had happened, they all felt great disbelief.

After all, the spirit formation Daoist Gold Star had used was extremely powerful, and something created by Grandmaster Kai Hong. It would be one thing if Chu Feng knew about the method to undo the spirit formation. However, exactly how did he manage to set up that spirit formation?

Wasn't Chu Feng being chased by Daoist Gold Star's spirit formation the entire time?

"Nonsense! I clearly did not see you set up your spirit formation."

"Are you planning to tell me that you finished setting up your spirit formation in your stomach?" Daoist Gold Star said.

"That's right, you've guessed correctly," Chu Feng smiled and nodded.

"What? Chu Feng actually finished setting up that spirit formation in his stomach?"

"No wonder, no wonder Chu Feng spat out his spirit formation from his mouth. It turns out that spirit formation originated from his stomach."

The crowd was even more astonished upon hearing Chu Feng's verification. The reason for that was because it was indeed possible for some powerful world spiritists to set up spirit formations using only their thoughts, without needing their hands. They were capable of controlling their spirit power and setting up their spirit formations formlessly.

However, it remained that only a very small amount of people were capable of accomplishing that feat.

Furthermore, even if some people were capable of that feat, they would only be able to do so for simple spirit formations. As for the spirit formation Chu Feng had set up earlier, it was capable of undoing a spirit formation created by Grandmaster Kai Hong. As such, it was most definitely not an ordinary spirit formation.

Therefore, the crowd was astonished by it.

“Enough of your nonsense! How could you possibly be able to set up a spirit formation that could undo my spirit formation in your stomach?!”

Daoist Gold Star’s reaction was very intense. He evidently did not believe that Chu Feng was capable of accomplishing that sort of thing.

“For some things, just because you are unable to accomplish it does not mean that it would be impossible for me to accomplish too,” Chu Feng smiled again. His smile was filled with mocking intent.

“Impossible! You must have used some sort of cheating method! Else, with your world spirit techniques, it is absolutely impossible for you to surpass me,” Daoist Gold Star continued.

“Humph,” Chu Feng felt disinclined to even bother answering what Daoist Gold Star said. He merely snorted. The disdain and contempt contained in his snort was self-evident.

“What are you snorting about?!” Daoist Gold Star asked furiously.

“I am merely sighing with regret that Daoist Gold Star is actually a sore loser,” Chu Feng said.

“You dare call me a sore loser?!” Daoist Gold Star became even more furious.

“Are you not a sore loser?”

“Earlier, it was you who declared that we were to bet with our lives in this match.”

“And now, you’ve used martial power. As such, you have lost. Yet, you have now decided to frame me for cheating to shift all responsibility of your defeat. Are you not a sore loser?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

“Daoist Gold Star, a loss is a loss. Why bother making all those

excuses?”

“There’re all these people here. You shouldn’t let yourself be looked down on by the younger generation,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others added to Chu Feng’s mockery.

Faced with the gazes of contempt from the crowd, Daoist Gold Star’s expression grew increasingly ugly.

As matters stood, he truly regretted. He regretted being overly confident and making that sort of gamble.

And now, it was actually him who had ended up losing. This was simply karma.

However, it would be one thing if it was something else. However, the consequence of defeat was his life. He had trained for so many years, and experienced countless tribulations and crises. Yet, was he to die here today just like that?

“Haha...” Thinking of that, Daoist Gold Star actually grew calm. He laughed and said, “I, Gold Star, am indeed a sore loser. What can you all possibly do to me? Could it be that you all think that you can kill me?”

“You all should know that some of my friends knew of my coming to this place. If I do not return safely, it will not only be the Sunset Cloud Valley, but the Three Stars Hall will also have to shoulder this responsibility.”

“I, Gold Star, have journeyed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for countless years. While I do not have much of anything, I do have a lot of friends. If something is to happen to me, your Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall can forget about having peaceful days in the future.”

“This Daoist Gold Star is truly shameless!” Hearing those words, Xu Yiyi was so furious her little face turned deep red.

She had actually already guessed that Daoist Gold Star would not

keep his promise, and would go back on his word should he lose.

Merely, she had never expected that Daoist Gold Star would be so confident and bold when saying those words. In fact, he even turned to threaten them. Xu Yiyi was truly unable to tolerate his actions.

“Daoist Gold Star, while it is true that we will not be able to kill you, we are able to trap you in this place.”

“If you do not provide a suitable explanation today, we will not let you leave,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said coldly.

“You dare?!” Daoist Gold Star shouted angrily.

“Why wouldn’t we dare? While you, Daoist Gold Star, possess many friends, how could our Sunset Cloud Valley, a power that has existed for so many years, have less friends than you, a single person?” Su Jingrui said coldly.

Following that, a boundless oppressive might rained down. That oppressive might completely sealed the entire region.

Sensing that fatal oppressive might, Daoist Gold Star started to panic slightly. Although he was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, his cultivation was no match for the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others.

Thus, he asked, “What do you all plan to do?”

“Apologize to little friend Chu Feng,” Su Jingrui and the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said in unison.

# Chapter 2283 – Exceptionally Good Opportunity

---

“What if I refuse?” Daoist Gold Star asked with a frown.

“In that case, do not blame us for being impolite towards you,” Su Jingrui and the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master’s voices grew even colder.

“You dare?” Daoist Gold Star snorted coldly, and unleashed his oppressive might of a rank six Martial Ancestor.

“Boom~~~”

However, right after Daoist Gold Star unleashed his rank six Martial Ancestor’s oppressive might, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui’s oppressive might that were lingering in the sky immediately charged towards Daoist Gold Star like a group of ferocious beasts.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui were two rank eight Martial Ancestors. Thus, their oppressive might was extremely powerful.

As Daoist Gold Star was only a rank six Martial Ancestor, he was unable to withstand a single blow from the oppressive might of the two men.

In no time at all, Daoist Gold Star’s oppressive might was completely crushed. As for Daoist Gold Star himself, he also felt a fatal sensation again.

He knew that if he were to allow the oppressive might to continue to crush down towards him, even if he was able to live, he would definitely be seriously injured.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui were not joking around. The two of them were truly planning to attack him for the sake of Chu Feng.



Suddenly, Daoist Gold Star shouted, “Stop!!!”

Once his words were heard, the oppressive might that was descending towards him immediately stopped.

Although the oppressive might stopped, it had not disappeared. Like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses, like a tiger glaring at its prey, the oppressive might surrounded Daoist Gold Star.

It would be one thing if Daoist Gold Star were to concede and apologize. However, if he refused to concede, they would not spare him easily.

Under that sort of situation, Daoist Gold Star was left with no alternative. As such, he said, “Good, very good. I, Gold Star, will firmly remember what has happened here today.”

After Daoist Gold Star finished saying those words, he looked to Chu Feng, clasped his fist and bowed, “Chu Feng, it is I, Gold Star, who was in the wrong earlier. I shall offer you my apology here.”

Although Daoist Gold Star had clasped his fist, bowed and offered his apology, the crowd present were all able to tell that Daoist Gold Star did not mean a single word he said. His apology was absolutely fake.

The tone of his apology was even more vile than Kou Kang’s apology earlier.

This caused Xu Yiyi and the others to feel extremely displeased.

This Daoist Gold Star was truly too excessive.

“It’s alright. I am always a person of great moral stature, and do not remember the offenses committed by others of low moral stature,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“You!!!” Hearing those words, Daoist Gold Star was so furious that the corner of his lips started to twitch. Although he had indeed apologized to Chu Feng, it was simply a fake apology. He

never expected that Chu Feng would actually take it to heart. Not only that, he even spoke such words.

Who was the person of great moral stature?

Who was the person of low moral stature?

If Chu Feng was the person of great moral stature, wouldn't it mean that he, Gold Star, would be a person of low moral stature?

Chu Feng's undisguised insult caused Daoist Gold Star to feel extremely displeased.

Upon hearing what Chu Feng said, Xu Yiyi and the others started to smile.

Regardless of whether or not Daoist Gold Star's apology was sincere or not, it remained that he had, after all, apologized. As for Chu Feng, he gladly accepted that apology.

If news of this matter were to spread, Daoist Gold Star's reputation would greatly decrease.

"That should be enough, no?" Daoist Gold Star turned his gaze to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui. Evidently, he felt very humiliated after apologizing to Chu Feng, as his expression had grown even uglier, and his tone became increasingly unpleasant.

"We won't bother seeing you off," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master waved his hand. As matters stood, he no longer considered Daoist Gold Star a guest.

"Humph," Daoist Gold Star snorted coldly. He brushed his sleeve and then soared into the sky. Merely, before leaving, he suddenly stopped in midair, turned around and cast his gaze at Chu Feng.

Bitter resentment and hatred. There was even killing intent in his gaze.

Evidently, Daoist Gold Star had firmly remembered Chu Feng and this grievance.

“Gold Star, you only have yourself to blame for what has happened here today. If you dare to make things difficult for little friend Chu Feng in the future, our Sunset Cloud Valley will definitely not spare you,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said coldly.

“What happened today is also related to our Three Stars Hall. Thus, if something is to happen to little friend Chu Feng, our Three Stars Hall will also not watch with folded arms,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster spoke loudly.

“Humph,” Daoist Gold Star did not say anymore. He snorted coldly and then left.

As the saying goes, it was a joy to have a guest from a distant place.

For honored guests like the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster, one should naturally properly entertain them.

Originally, as Chu Feng had already bid his farewell, he should be leaving. However, due to the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others urging him to stay, Chu Feng decided that he would participate in the banquet before leaving.

At the banquet, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others were naturally praising Chu Feng nonstop.

In fact, even the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster openly tossed out an olive branch at Chu Feng. Even though he did not say it explicitly, he had revealed his appreciation for Chu Feng.

When even the people of the older generation were acting in such a manner, the two girls Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were praising Chu Feng to high heaven. This was especially true for Song Biyu; she was looking at Chu Feng as if she were seeing her idol.

There were not many people present at the banquet to begin with. Other than Kou Kang, the others present were all praising

Chu Feng. This caused Kou Kang, who was not fond of Chu Feng, to feel extremely awkward.

On one hand, he was extremely fed up with Chu Feng. As such, he naturally did not wish to falsely praise Chu Feng like the others.

On the other hand, the others were all praising Chu Feng, so if he were to not praise Chu Feng, his resentment toward Chu Feng would be too obvious. This would make him appear to be extremely small-minded.

However, when he saw his beloved, his master and his junior sister all thinking so highly of Chu Feng, Kou Kang truly felt as if rage was burning all over his body.

He pondered left and right, and suddenly thought of a brilliant scheme.

He felt that he could not resign himself to fate. Else, Xu Yiyi would definitely fall into Chu Feng's hands. It might even be possible that his master would end up being on Chu Feng's side.

He must strike back. And now, it was the time for him to strike back.

“Brother Chu Feng, let me offer you a toast.”

Thinking about this, Kou Kang stood up and offered Chu Feng a cup of wine. This time around, his attitude was extremely different from before. At the very least, he appeared to be very sincere.

“Cheers,” One does not strike someone who smiles at you. Although Chu Feng knew that Kou Kang's toast was definitely not sincere, Chu Feng must give his master face. Thus, he did not refuse him.

“Brother Chu Feng, you are so young, yet you've already become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, you even defeated the long-renowned Daoist Gold Star today. You are truly the pride of us, the younger generation.”

“As a fellow member of the younger generation, I have become a bit itchy after seeing Brother Chu Feng revealing your might today.”

“Unfortunately, my world spirit techniques are lacking because I have been wholeheartedly focused on martial cultivation.”

“Earlier, when I fought against Brother Chu Feng, I discovered that Brother Chu Feng’s battle power is also very strong in terms of martial cultivation.”

“As today is a rare opportunity, I wish to spar with Brother Chu Feng. Brother Chu Feng, what say you?” Kou Kang said with a beaming smile.

“Kou Kang, what is your intention? Chu Feng has just fought against Daoist Gold Star earlier. He has already exhausted his strength. Yet you’re challenging him now? What is your motive with this?” Xu Yiyi immediately stood up and began to lash out at Kou Kang.

She knew very well what sort of character Kou Kang was. With a single glance, she had determined what Kou Kang was thinking. While he declared that he wished to spar with Chu Feng, he was actually just trying to teach Chu Feng a lesson.

## Chapter 2284 – The Confident Kou Kang

---

“Junior sister Yiyi, what you’ve said is incorrect. Firstly, Brother Chu Feng’s strength and vigor has not been exhausted.”

“In addition, Brother Chu Feng was only using world spirit techniques earlier. He had not used the slightest bit of his martial power. Thus, if I am to compete against him now, I would not be taking advantage of him in the slightest,” Kou Kang said.

“Chu Feng is a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, whereas you are a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. There are two entire levels of cultivation between you two. As such, how could it possibly be fair?” Xu Yiyi said.

“It is indeed true that my cultivation is above Brother Chu Feng’s by two levels of cultivation.”

“However, Brother Chu Feng is a wielder of a Heavenly Bloodline. If he is to use his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his cultivation will increase to rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, I will not gain any advantage with my higher level of cultivation.”

“Of course, I am, after all, older than Brother Chu Feng, and have trained in martial cultivation for a longer time than Brother Chu Feng. If we are to spar, I will yield to Brother Chu Feng. After all, it is only a sparring match. I will stop once victory is determined, and not take things too seriously,” Kou Kang said with a beaming smile.

“Master, Kou Kang is clearly trying to bully Chu Feng,” Feeling helpless, Xu Yiyi turned to request help from her master Su Jingrui.

However, Su Jingrui was only smiling without saying anything. It was not only Su Jingrui. Even the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster did not have the

intention to say anything to stop Kou Kang.

With their status, if they wanted to stop Kou Kang, they would be able to do so easily with a single word.

The reason why they didn't say anything was because they also wanted to see exactly how talented Chu Feng was in terms of martial cultivation.

After all, Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were already so powerful. If his battle power in the field of martial cultivation would be equally as powerful, he would truly be an exceptional genius.

Kou Kang's strength was not that much stronger than Chu Feng's. Even if he was stronger, he would not be that much stronger. Furthermore, both of them were part of the younger generation. As such, it would be perfect for them to spar.

Thus, the three old fellows were all looking forward to the sparring match.

They were not concerned with the outcome of the match. They were only concerned with how strong Chu Feng's battle power would be in terms of martial cultivation.

Kou Kang was very scheming. Seeing that the three grand characters did not speak to stop him, he realized their intentions. Thus, he grew even more confident. He said to Chu Feng, "Brother Chu Feng, if it is too difficult, please don't worry yourself over this. I was merely giving a suggestion. If you truly do not wish for it, we can forget about it and pretend that I never said anything."

"Since we have already eaten and drunk to one's content, it would be pretty good to stretch my muscles and bones."

"Since Brother Kou Kang is interested, I, Chu Feng, will naturally be willing to keep you company," As Chu Feng spoke, he put the wine cup in his hand down. He then stood up and moved to the center of the palace hall.

Although there were only a few participants at the banquet, the palace hall that the banquet was being held in was not small at all. It was more than sufficiently large for Chu Feng and Kou Kang to spar in.

Right at that moment, Xu Yiyi's voice transmission entered into Chu Feng's ears, "Chu Feng, don't be careless. The reason why that Kou Kang who clearly knows that you are a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline still dares to challenge you is because he is a Divine Body."

"After utilizing his Divine Power, his cultivation will increase from rank six Half Martial Ancestor to rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. On top of that, he possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation. As such, he is capable of fighting against ordinary rank nine Half Martial Ancestors."

"Furthermore, his Divine Power is very powerful. At the very least, of all of the people of the younger generation I've seen so far, there has not been a single person capable of defeating Kou Kang."

"Although I deeply detest him, I must still admit that he is a rare martial cultivation genius among the current people of the younger generation."

Chu Feng did not answer Xu Yiyi after hearing her voice transmission. Instead, he smiled at Xu Yiyi confidently.

Actually, even if Xu Yiyi didn't mention it, Chu Feng would be able to guess that it was something like that.

However, even if this Kou Kang was no ordinary character, and could compete against ordinary rank nine Half Martial Ancestors after using his various techniques, he, Chu Feng, was also capable of contending against ordinary rank nine Half Martial Ancestors after using his various techniques.

Furthermore, with Chu Feng's battle power, ordinary rank nine



Half Martial Ancestors would simply be no match for him.

This was also the reason why Chu Feng was willing to take on Kou Kang's challenge even though he knew that this Kou Kang possessed some abilities.

“Zzzzz~”

As dazzling lightning flashed, Chu Feng's Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared simultaneously. His cultivation directly increased from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation was also openly unleashed.

Everyone present was able to tell how powerful the Chu Feng standing before them was. They were simply unable to judge Chu Feng's battle power with his martial cultivation.

“Good. Heavenly Bloodlines are truly exceptional. I, Kou Kang, am honored to be able to spar with Brother Chu Feng today.”

Although Kou Kang said those words with praise toward Chu Feng, his gaze was filled with obvious contempt.

As Kou Kang spoke, his gaze started to change. Following that, light blue gaseous flames began to surge from his body.

The light blue gaseous flames were clearly gaseous. Furthermore, there were not a lot of such gaseous flames.

However, the moment the gaseous flames appeared, it brought forth the sensation of a violently surging sea.

Divine Power, it was a special sort of Divine Power.

As the light blue gaseous flames rapidly surged, they soon formed into a light blue armor that covered Kou Kang.

Although the armor possessed an ordinary appearance, it was not even a tenth as imposing as Chu Feng's Thunder Armor. The two of them could simply not be discussed together.

However, that light blue armor formed with Divine Power possessed the same sort of power as Chu Feng's Thunder Armor. That is, it increased Kou Kang's cultivation by one level.

At that moment, Kou Kang was no longer a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Instead, his cultivation had increased to that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation was also completely revealed. All of the people present were able to sense how powerful he was.

Comparatively, the might that Kou Kang revealed actually even surpassed Chu Feng's.

"Kou Kang is truly Kou Kang. His battle power is truly not something that the disciples of our Sunset Cloud Valley can match up to."

After Kou Kang revealed his Divine Power, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui were unable to stop themselves from praising him.

Kou Kang's talent could not be considered to be the best in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, to the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, Kou Kang was most definitely the strongest genius to appear in the last ten thousand years.

"Brother Chu Feng, regardless of whether or not you possess a Heavenly Bloodline, it remains that I, Kou Kang, possess a higher cultivation than you."

"Thus, I will not go all-out in this sparring match. I will only consider it to be a spar, and stop the moment the outcome of the battle is determined," Kou Kang said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

Although what Kou Kang said might appear to be courteous, his

tone was actually filled with provocation and contempt. It was as if he was indirectly telling Chu Feng that he simply did not place Chu Feng in his eyes at all.

As for the so-called stopping once the outcome was decided, it was utter bullshit. If possible, Kou Kang would definitely beat Chu Feng to death.

The reason why he said those things was because he knew that he would not be able to beat Chu Feng to death before all these experts.

Since he would not have the opportunity to kill or seriously injure Chu Feng, Kou Kang decided that he might as well not bother to injure Chu Feng. Like that, it would show that he was even grander.

Chu Feng had already seen through all of Kou Kang's little schemes. However, Chu Feng did not expose him. Instead, he calmly said, "Since it's a sparring match, we will naturally have to stop once the outcome is determined. Brother Kou Kang, there's no need for you to be modest. Go ahead and unleash your attacks."

"Brother Chu Feng, be careful. I, Kou Kang, will be attacking now."

Once Kou Kang said those words, he began to let out successive footsteps. His footsteps were extremely heavy, bringing forth heavy wind. However, his speed was extremely fast. As his palms swung back and forth, countless blurs formed.

Kou Kang did not use any martial skills. Instead, he attacked purely with his physical body. However, his attack instantly stunned both Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu, the two other members of the younger generation present.

The reason for that was because Kou Kang's speed, power and might were simply perfect.

The current Kou Kang was most definitely not the same Kou

Kang who had casually unleashed an attack at Chu Feng earlier. Although he had declared that he would yield to Chu Feng, he was actually taking this very seriously.

He was determined to defeat Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2285 – Fire And Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation

---

“Huu, huu~~~”

The wind brought forth by the punch whistled like ferocious beasts, like an army of thousands of men and horses.

Kou Kang’s strength was no small matter. Although his attacks changed continuously, they also arrived instantly.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

Chu Feng’s body shifted. Immediately, his aura changed enormously.

His fists were like tigers and his legs were like dragons. They turned into countless blurs as he rushed forth to meet the incoming Kou Kang.

Not only did Chu Feng completely block all of Kou Kang’s attacks, he even began to unleash counterattacks at Kou Kang, suppressing his attacker.

“This guy.”

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually managed to easily block his attacks, and even began to unleash counter attacks at him, Kou Kang started to frown.

One should know that his punches and kicks were all very sharp.

Among the people of his same generation, the majority of them would only be able to produce such sharp attacks using martial skills. Practically none were capable of unleashing such sharp attacks without martial skills.

Thus, his skill with punches and kicks had always been his pride.

That was the reason why he had not used martial skills to begin with. He thought that if he was able to suppress Chu Feng using

only his punches and kicks, he would be able to reveal how powerful he was.

However, at that moment, not only did Chu Feng's punches and kicks not appear to be weaker than his own, they instead seemed to be stronger than his own. This completely shattered the scheme he'd had in mind.

"Amazing. Never would I have expected that little friend Chu Feng's punches and kicks have reached this degree of mastery. They are simply unpredictable and unfathomable. If this were a world without martial skills, then merely with little friend Chu Feng's mastery of his martial arts, it was likely that very few people of the same level of battle power as him would be able to contend against him."

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Su Jingrui and the Three Stars Hall's headmaster all revealed pleasantly surprised expressions.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's martial arts skills were truly proficient. Even they would not be able to reach Chu Feng's level of mastery.

"Brother Chu Feng, a martial cultivator's battle power is dependent on their usage of martial skills."

"Although your ability with punches and kicks is pretty decent, it remains that what really matters to martial cultivators are their martial skills."

"I will be using martial skills now. Prepare yourself, because what I will be using will be a Mortal Taboo Martial Skill."

"However, you don't have to worry too excessively either. Like my punches and kicks, I will only put forth half of my effort into my martial skills. As long as you prepare yourself, I will not be able to injure you," Suddenly, Kou Kang moved back explosively and shouted at Chu Feng. After that, he began to unleash his martial

skill.

“Pah! You clearly went all-out with your punches and kicks, yet you dare to say that you’ve only put forth half of the effort? You are truly shameless!” Xu Yiyi began to curse and mock Kou Kang.

“Haha, Brother Ouyang, although my disciple’s words might be a bit excessive, she was not speaking nonsense. This disciple of yours is truly someone who boasts a lot,” Su Jingrui looked to the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster with a smile.

When even Xu Yiyi was able to tell that Kou Kang’s earlier attacks with his punches and kicks were an all-out effort, how could the experts like Su Jingrui possibly not?

“Young people are always fond of winning. However, it is true that Kou Kang’s behavior isn’t good. I will criticize him about it afterwards,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster could only smile wryly. He was rather embarrassed.

The conversation between Su Jingrui and the others was heard by Kou Kang. Upon hearing his master’s embarrassed laughter, Kou Kang also felt slightly embarrassed.

Thus, he did not immediately unleash the Mortal Taboo Martial Skill that he had completed forming at Chu Feng. Instead, he deliberately removed half of its might before unleashing it at Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~~”

Once the fist strike was shot out, martial power started to surge. The surging martial power turned into a ferocious leopard. With its mouth wide open, the leopard rushed to devour Chu Feng.

Although Kou Kang had deliberately decreased the might of his martial skill by half, it remained that the martial skill he used was a Mortal Taboo Martial Skill. As such, it was still frighteningly powerful.

“Woosh~~~”

However, even though Chu Feng was faced with such a powerful attack, he didn't dodge. Instead, he charged toward Kou Kang's martial skill in a straight line.

Chu Feng's speed was extremely fast. It was because he was not simply running. Instead, he was using a Mortal Taboo-level movement martial skill.

Thus, in merely a blink of an eye, Chu Feng had already arrived at the leopard formed with martial power.

“Bang~~~”

Chu Feng shot forth a punch and destroyed that leopard completely.

The Mortal Taboo Martial Skill Kou Kang had unleashed was like air; it did not give Chu Feng the slightest bit of resistance.

Thus, the might of Chu Feng's punch did not decrease. Showing no quarter, it continued straight toward Kou Kang.

Furthermore, due to the fact that the punch was so fast, Kou Kang simply did not have the time to dodge at all. As such, he ended up being struck by Chu Feng's punch.

“Boom~~~~”

Following a loud explosion, Kou Kang was knocked several meters back.

Even though Kou Kang had managed to block the might of Chu Feng's punch during his moment of imminent peril, he was still knocked back several meters by that punch.

In fact, when he managed to steady himself, a trace of blood began to flow from the corner of his mouth.

“Great! Great ability!”

At that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master actually disregarded his status and started to applaud Chu Feng.



In fact, it was not only the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master who was so exceptionally excited. Even Su Jingrui and Kou Kang's master had the same sort of pleasantly surprised expression.

Chu Feng's punch was a very ordinary Mortal Taboo Martial Skill. It did not contain a lot of power. However, Chu Feng was able to unleash it with a power that surpassed that of the martial skill itself.

If it wasn't for the fact that Chu Feng had managed to unleash that martial skill so perfectly, it would have been impossible for him to injure Kou Kang.

Chu Feng had already proven his battle power to be exceptional with his martial arts earlier. And now, after using his martial skills, he had demonstrated that he was extraordinary.

As matters stood, the three old men were all certain that Chu Feng was not only a genius in terms of world spirit techniques, his attainments in terms of martial cultivation were equally exceptional.

Chu Feng was truly an exceptional genius.

"Brother Kou Kang, I think that it would be best that you stop yielding to me. Else, I fear that I might end up injuring you because I am unable to control my strength," Chu Feng said with a mocking smile.

"You!!!" Kou Kang was already extremely displeased when the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master started to applaud him being injured by Chu Feng in an undisguised manner. However, Chu Feng now actually said such a thing. This caused Kou Kang to feel even gloomier.

Most importantly, Kou Kang was actually unable to find a way to refute Chu Feng. After all, he was the one who had been boasting about not using his full strength earlier. Now, he could only suffer the consequences of his own actions.

However, Kou Kang was a rather shrewd individual. Even though he was burning with fury, he still ended up forcibly swallowing his fury that was about to explode.

With a smile on his face, Kou Kang said to Chu Feng, “Brother Chu Feng is truly extraordinary. I was careless earlier.”

“Since that is the case, I will no longer hold myself back. Merely, the attack that I will use will be extremely powerful. I hope that Brother Chu Feng will not take offense if I end up injuring you.”

Right after Kou Kang said those words, his long hair started to drift. He spread his arms wide open, and waves of boundless martial power began to emit from his palms.

At that moment...

A vortex of freezing cold appeared on Kou Kang’s left palm.

A vortex of blazing flames appeared on Kou Kang’s right palm.

Although the two vortexes were floating above Kou Kang’s palms, they both emitted an aura capable of causing destruction upon the world.

Those were two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

“That is?!”

Upon seeing that scene, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui immediately stood up emotionally.

Even the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster stood up abruptly. His expression changed enormously. Compared to the two old men from the Sunset Cloud Valley, he was even more emotional right now.

“Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation!!!”

“Kang’er, he, he actually successfully mastered the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragon Transformation?!!!”

The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster exclaimed loudly and

emotionally.

# Chapter 2286 – Clear Cut Contrast

---

According to a legend, there once appeared two Divine Beasts at a certain region in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They were two Dragons!!!

One was an ice dragon, whereas the other was a fire dragon.

When the two dragons galloped in the sky, they appeared to be capable of causing the destruction of both the heaven and earth. Their might was truly imposing and intimidating.

By chance, an expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm managed to see this scene of the two dragons soaring into the sky.

Seeing that astonishing scene, his martial power surged forth violently. In that very instant, he came to a sudden enlightenment.

As a result, that expert began to devote the rest of his life to comprehend what he had felt that day. In the end, he managed to create two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

Emperor Taboo: Ice Dragon Transformation.

Emperor Taboo: Fire Dragon Transformation.

The two martial skills were ice and fire. They both possessed incomparable might. Both of them were high quality Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

However, the strongest aspect of the two martial skills were not themselves. Rather, it was when they were fused together.

According to that legend, as long as one could successfully fuse the two martial skills together, the might that one would obtain would surpass that of Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

As for that martial skill capable of surpassing Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, it was the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

By pure chance, the Three Stars Hall managed to obtain the two martial skills. Furthermore, they deemed the two martial skills as their most valuable, their hall protection, treasures.

Although the outstanding disciples and elders of the Three Stars Hall were all allowed to cultivate the two martial skills, very few people were actually able to grasp the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

However, at that moment, it seemed that not only had Kou Kang grasped the two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, he had also mastered them, bringing them to the transcendent level of the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

“Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation!!!”

Suddenly, Kou Kang shouted loudly. The two vortexes of fire and ice that he held in his palm shot out.

“Roar~~~”

Once the two vortexes left his hand, their size increased rapidly, and they turned into two enormous dragons of fire and ice.

The two dragons possessed devastating power. When the two dragons coiled with one another, the might that they gave off felt akin to a choking sensation.

Not to mention people of the younger generation like Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu, even the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others revealed serious expressions. They were deeply worried for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because not only had that legendary martial skill, the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation, been successfully unleashed by Kou Kang, the two enormous dragons that formed from the martial skills were also rushing straight towards Chu Feng.

They did not possess the appearance of fighting till victory and defeat was determined. Instead, they were simply planning to take

Chu Feng's life.

“Oh no!”

At that moment, everyone felt that the situation was very bad for Chu Feng. Even though Kou Kang's Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation was confined to the palace hall and not truly world-shaking, its might definitely surpassed that of ordinary Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

Would Chu Feng be able to take on such a powerful Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?

No. No one felt that Chu Feng would be able to take it on.

However, at the moment when everyone was worried for Chu Feng, at the time when experts like Su Jingrui were planning to act to save Chu Feng, no one noticed that Chu Feng had already firmly clenched his right fist.

Furthermore, wave upon wave of frightening martial power was being gathered inside his fist.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shot forth his fist.

There was no special prior indication. However, once Chu Feng's fist was shot forth, it immediately revealed world-shaking might.

“Boom~~~”

Surging energy ripples instantly filled the entire palace hall. Enormous power caused even the palace hall to sway left and right. Ear piercing thunder could even be heard outside the palace hall.

Many of the Sunset Cloud Valley's elders that were ignorant of what was happening even thought that something had happened. One by one, they unleashed their weapons and arrived outside of the palace, surrounding it.

While the outside of the palace was very chaotic, quite a major disturbance occurred inside the palace too.

Other than Chu Feng, all of the people present had dumbstruck expressions.

That legendary Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, that Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation, had disappeared.

Everyone was able to clearly see that the overwhelmingly powerful Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation was destroyed by Chu Feng's punch.

"That was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. But, why would it be so powerful? It managed to defeat even the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation with a single strike?"

"It is as if that Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation was simply unable to contend against it."

The Three Stars Hall's headmaster felt great disbelief. As the headmaster of the Three Stars Hall, he knew very well that his disciple Kou Kang had already managed to unleash the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation perfectly with the cultivation that he possessed. It would simply be impossible for ordinary Emperor Taboo Martial Skills to contend against the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

Yet, Chu Feng's punch had managed to defeat the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

Furthermore, although the might of Chu Feng's punch had disappeared, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui were all able to tell that the might of Chu Feng's punch had not been canceled out by the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation.

Instead, it had been dispersed by Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng had not dispersed the might of his attack, even if Kou Kang managed to live through it, he would have been definitely be seriously injured.

The way they saw it, with the might of that punch, Kou Kang

would have most likely died.

“Brother Kou Kang’s strength is truly extraordinary. I, Chu Feng, am truly in admiration.”

“It would seem that our sparring today would have to end in a draw,” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

It was not that Chu Feng did not wish to teach Kou Kang a lesson. Merely, he wanted to give the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster face. Likewise, he also wanted to give face to the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui.

Taking his three seniors into consideration, Chu Feng decided to stop. At the very least, when the outcome of the spar was a tie, it would not be too humiliating for the Three Stars Hall.

After all, Kou Kang represented the Three Stars Hall.

“Chu Feng, this sparring match is still not over. Let’s contin...”

“Cough, cough~~~”

Kou Kang did not plan to stop. Merely, before he could finish his words, he burst into a series of violent coughs.

It could be seen that even though Kou Kang had managed to successfully unleash the Fire and Ice Coiling Dragons Transformation, that martial skill seemed to have brought an enormous burden onto his body.

“Are you certain?” Chu Feng frowned slightly. He was slightly displeased.

Chu Feng discovered that Kou Kang was truly a shameless person that refused one’s good intentions. Chu Feng had already yielded to him, yet he still wanted to continue.

If this Kou Kang insisted on continuing with this spar against Chu Feng, Chu Feng would definitely teach him a lesson.

“Of course. Victory or defeat must be determined from this sparring match,” Kou Kang said firmly.



However, right at that moment, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster shouted loudly, "Kang'er, it's enough!"

"Master, I wish to continue..." Kou Kang was unwilling to give up.

"Quiet!" The Three Stars Hall's headmaster glared at Kou Kang angrily.

The reason for that was because he knew very well that Chu Feng was giving his Three Stars Hall face. That was why he did not defeat Kou Kang earlier.

However, this disciple of his was truly incapable of differentiating good from bad. That was the reason why he was furious.

"Enough, enough, it was only a sparring match to begin with. Let's just stop."

"Come, let's continue to drink wine," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui said with smiles on their faces.

Although the two of them both declared that this match had ended in a tie, their gazes were fixed on Chu Feng.

Those gazes were filled with pleasant surprise.

After all, they knew that the match had not actually ended in a tie. Rather, Chu Feng had won.

They were pleasantly surprised, not because of Chu Feng's overwhelming battle power being at the level of an exceptional genius...

... but also because of Chu Feng's character.

Kou Kang had been aggressive from the beginning. He had been planning to embarrass Chu Feng. They were able to see through all of Kou Kang's intentions.

However, even in such a situation, Chu Feng was actually still able to act leniently toward Kou Kang. This character of his was

truly extraordinary.

Especially when compared to Kou Kang's aggressive and indiscriminating behavior. It was simply a clear-cut contrast to Chu Feng's lenient way of handling things.

This not only caused the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui to think even more highly of Chu Feng, even Kou Kang's master began to admire Chu Feng even more.

As for Kou Kang, even though he was feeling unreconciled, he did not dare to say anything after being glared at angrily by his master. After that he became completely silent, and didn't say a single word.

As the focus had turned to Chu Feng, even though Kou Kang was extremely depressed, no one bothered to pay attention to him.

"Little friend Chu Feng, Daoist Gold Star is not someone easy to deal with. He will likely bear grudges for what happened here today for the rest of his life."

"With his personality, he will definitely attempt revenge against you. In the future, it would be best that you avoid places where he is," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said to Chu Feng.

"That's true. Although we have already threatened him, with his personality, he will most likely come to create troubles for you still," The Three Stars Hall's headmaster added.

# Chapter 2287 – Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds

---

“Chu Feng understands seniors’ kind intentions.”

“Merely, seniors, there is truly no need for you all to worry excessively for me.”

“Ever since I decided to challenge Daoist Gold Star, I was already aware that I would become his enemy.”

“Thus, I have made preparations for him to come for revenge against me in the future,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng is truly bold,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the others no longer tried to say anything.

“Speaking of it, I truly never expected that Daoist Gold Star would obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s spirit formation. That spirit formation is truly breathtaking,” Su Jingrui said.

“Regardless of how breathtaking it might be, didn’t it still get broken through by little friend Chu Feng? Little friend Chu Feng is truly talented in terms of setting up spirit formations,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Indeed, indeed,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster and Su Jingrui nodded their heads repeatedly.

When making mention of that matter, the two girls Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu revealed idolizing gazes. To them, Chu Feng had already accomplished what was impossible for people of the younger generation.

He had undoubtedly become their absolute idol.

“When mentioning Grandmaster Kai Hong, I remembered something. I think that you all might not know about this either,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“What is it?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui asked in unison.

“Another of Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants have been discovered. Furthermore, this remnant might be the most authentic remnant left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong.”

“Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remains might even be in that remnant. The wealth he gathered over his lifetime, as well as his powerful techniques, might also be in that remnant,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“There’s such a thing? Where was it discovered?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui immediately revealed curious gazes. The two of them became extremely excited.

At that moment even Chu Feng and the other members of the younger generation present revealed curious expressions. Although Chu Feng did not know about this Grandmaster Kai Hong, he was able to guess from the conversation of the crowd that Grandmaster Kai Hong was a grand character when he was alive.

His remnants would definitely be extraordinary.

“[Extremely Remote](#) Unmarked Burial Mounds!!!” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds?!!” Hearing those words, even the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and Su Jingrui revealed astonished expressions.

Chu Feng did not know about that place. Thus, he quietly asked Xu Yiyi, “What sort of place is the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds?”

“The Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds is a forbidden area in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. That place has existed since the Ancient Era. It is a very dangerous place.”

“Furthermore, it is said that there are still a lot of unsolved mysteries in that place. However, there has not been a single

person capable of solving all of the mysteries there.”

“The reason why that place is called the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds is because there are many tombs there. However, all of the tombs are empty.”

“Although those tombs are all empty, there have been a lot of people that have died in those tombs. The majority of them were all people that ventured into those tombs,” Xu Yiyi said to Chu Feng.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng now had a rough understanding of the situation with the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

“Why would it be there? Although the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds is very famous, there has never been any treasure to appear from that place. It is a truly inauspicious location.”

“How could Grandmaster Kai Hong construct his tomb there?”

“Furthermore, how was this whole thing discovered?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked curiously.

“Speaking of it, it is truly fascinating. Reportedly, a demonic woman appeared in the vicinity of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“Demonic woman?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately started to shine.

“What kind of demonic woman?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master asked.

“It was an extremely ugly demonic woman that feeds on men,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

Upon hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. An ugly appearance and feeds on men? All of those features greatly

resembled the description of the demonic woman that had captured Wang Qiang.

According to the old monk, there should only be one such demonic woman. Thus, Chu Feng felt that the demonic woman that the Three Stars Hall's headmaster spoke of should be the same demonic woman that had captured Wang Qiang.

'No wonder that demonic woman never returned to the Darknight Ghost Forest. It turns out it had gone to that place,' Upon remembering that demonic woman, Chu Feng felt overwhelming fury. However, Chu Feng did not say those words. Instead, with a calm expression, he continued to listen to the Three Stars Hall's headmaster.

"As that woman had caused enormous problems, the surrounding powers began to attempt to capture her. However, that demonic woman was not weak. Even though the many powers had joined hands, they were still unable to subdue that demonic woman."

"Feeling helpless, they ended up requesting reinforcements. After careful preparations, they finally surrounded that demonic woman outside of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds."

"However, no one would've thought that that demonic woman would actually charge into the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds after being completely surrounded."

"Had it been before, no one would have been willing to enter a forbidden area like the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Furthermore, those powers that had surrounded that demonic woman were also not very strong. They did not possess the qualifications to explore the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds."

"However, due to the fact that the demonic woman had killed many people, those people decided to clench their teeth, brace

themselves and charge into the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds after that demonic woman.”

“As the group pursued the demonic woman, they began to fight her. During their fight, they inadvertently discovered a remnant hidden underground.”

“After entering the remnant, the crowd obtained an astonishing discovery. They discovered that the place that they had excavated was only the tip of the iceberg for that remnant.”

“They discovered that hidden deep underneath the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds was an extremely enormous remnant. Likely, there were a lot of treasures hidden in that remnant.”

“However, due to the fact that the remnant was very dangerous, it was simply impossible for those people that discovered it to penetrate deeply. As such, they could only search for others to help them. That was how the information spread.”

“Afterwards, more and more capable individuals rushed to that remnant in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“There were Immortal-cloak World Spiritists that felt that it was very possible that the remnant was left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong, that the largest of the remnant would be where Grandmaster Kai Hong buried himself.”

“At that moment, the various powers are all proceeding for that place.”

“In fact, I was thinking that we should proceed for the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds together after our appointment is over.”

“After all, if it is truly the remnant where Grandmaster Kai Hong buried himself, it would definitely be a place filled with treasures.”

“Perhaps we might also be able to obtain some benefits,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“If that truly is the case, then we must indeed go and participate in the liveliness,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master was also looking forward to it very much.

“Senior, has that demonic woman been captured?” Chu Feng asked.

“How could those people have the heart to concern themselves with the demonic woman after discovering the remnants and treasures? The demonic woman has fled.”

“However, I’ve heard that, for some unknown reason, even though there were many people trying to capture that demonic woman, she still lingers around the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“Do you know her exact location?” Chu Feng asked.

“That I do. It’s at a place outside of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds by the name of Fallen Goose Mountain Range. The demonic woman has been appearing in the vicinity of that place constantly.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, why are you so interested in this?” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster asked curiously. The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master, Su Jingrui and the others also cast curious gazes toward Chu Feng.

“I was merely curious. I never expected there to be such a baffling creature in this world, a creature that would only feed on men,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

He had not said the truth. The reason for that was because he knew that the Ying Imperial Clan would soon order his arrest.

As Chu Feng had already made enemies with a lot of people, he did not wish to implicate the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

However, if he were to tell them that there was grievance between him and that demonic woman, the Sunset Cloud Valley



and the Three Stars Hall would likely not sit and watch and remain indifferent. They would most likely try to provide assistance to help Chu Feng take care of that demonic woman.

However, that demonic woman was currently located in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, a place where many powers were gathered.

Thus, for the sake of not implicating the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, Chu Feng planned to take care of the demonic woman by himself.

Although Chu Feng knew that that demonic woman was very strong, it remained that Chu Feng still had another Immortal Transformation Pellet given to him by the Golden Crane True Immortal.

That last Immortal Transformation Pellet was capable of increasing Chu Feng's cultivation to that of a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Even though he would have increased his cultivation his spirit power, and the power of his Heavenly Bloodline, as well as his heaven-defying battle power, would be sealed, however it remained that he would become a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng refused to believe that demonic woman would be so powerful that she could contend against a rank five Martial Ancestor.

The term for extremely remote in chinese is eight desolate. As in, the eight desolate directions away from the center. So... NE, NW, SE, SW, N, W, S, E

## Chapter 2288 – Chu Feng's Value

---

“Haha, nothing is too bizarre in this world. Actually, within the territory of our Sunset Cloud Valley, in a place called the Darknight Ghost Forest, there also exists a demonic woman that would only feed on men like the one that has appeared in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“Our Sunset Cloud Valley has even removed the demonic women many times. Unfortunately, we are unable to exterminate them completely. Every so often, another demonic woman will appear,” The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

“I think that those so-called demonic women are only martial cultivators that have trained in a special sort of demonic technique. It is actually not surprising at all,” Su Jingrui added.

Hearing till this point, Chu Feng realized that even though the demonic women have been appearing in the Sunset Cloud Valley's territory the entire time, the Sunset Cloud Valley did not have much of an understanding toward the demonic women.

In fact, they did not even know that the demonic woman in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds originated from their territory.

However, it was understandable, since the strength of the demonic women was always limited. It was only when the powers surrounding the Darknight Ghost Forest were unable to handle the demonic women that they would ask for assistance from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Likely, the demonic women would immediately be killed once the Sunset Cloud Valley dispatched their experts to take care of the demonic women. As such, it was normal for them to not be concerned with the demonic women. After all, they had never considered the demonic women as a threat.

“Lord Valley Master,” Right at that moment, someone shouted from outside the palace.

“Didn’t I said to not disturb me unless there are important matters?” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said in a slightly annoyed manner.

When Chu Feng created a major commotion when sparring against Kou Kang, Elders from the Sunset Cloud Valley had already arrived at the palace to inquire about what was happening.

As they were inquiring out of worry for the safety and well-being of the people in the palace, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master did not lash out at them. Instead, he merely told them that everything was fine and ordered them to withdraw.

However, there was clearly no commotion this time around. Yet, there were elders rushing over here to report something. As such, this caused the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master to become somewhat annoyed.

After all, the topic of their discussion right now was something that deeply interested him – it was concerning Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants. It might even be possible for him to obtain a great amount of benefits from this newest remnant.

As such, he would naturally be displeased to be annoyed at such a time.

“Since you have already informed them not interrupt you unless something important has happened, perhaps something important has truly happened?” Su Jingrui said.

Hearing what Su Jingrui said, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master felt that to be reasonable too. Thus, he waved his sleeve and opened the gates to the palace. He then said, “Come in.”

“Lord Valley Master,” That elder walked in. He did not say anything, and immediately moved before the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master. With his back bent, he presented a letter to

the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master.

The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master opened the letter and began to view its contents. Su Jingrui and the Three Stars Hall's headmaster who stood beside him also turned their gazes to the letter out of curiosity.

Once they read the contents of the letter, the expressions of the three men immediately changed. After the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master folded the letter and put it away, the three men all looked to Chu Feng.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you've killed the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's son, Ying Liangchen?" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked Chu Feng.

Once the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said those words, the expressions of Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu changed instantly. They both revealed expressions of panic.

Xu Yiyi, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and the others all knew that Chu Feng had killed Chu Luyang. However, they did not know that Chu Feng had killed the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's son.

Furthermore, the person he had killed was that Ying Liangchen.

Although Chu Luyang was a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the Sunset Cloud Valley was not worried about his death, since the Chu Heavenly Clan did not care about the life and death of their members.

However, the Ying Heavenly Clan was different. The Ying Heavenly Clan was a second tier power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They possessed strength that was not inferior to their Sunset Cloud Valley.

Furthermore, that Ying Liangchen that Chu Feng had killed was the most beloved son of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

If that had truly happened, the Ying Heavenly Clan would

definitely not let Chu Feng get away with it.

“Yes, such a thing did happen,” Chu Feng nodded.

Hearing those words, the crowd present all grew silent. The reason for that was because this was an extremely important matter.

“Why did you kill him?” Xu Yiyi asked in a very puzzled manner.

“It was Ying Liangchen who extinguished the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters. Although he was asked to do so by Chu Luyang, it remained that he was the culprit. As such, how could I not kill him?” Chu Feng said.

“You... But....” Xu Yiyi didn’t know what to say to Chu Feng, and sighed.

“Exactly what is going on here? Is there anyone willing to explain to me what is happening?” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster asked curiously.

After all, he still didn’t know about the matter regarding Chu Feng and Chu Luyang.

Afterward, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master began to tell the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster about what had happened.

“I do not think that little friend Chu Feng is in the wrong in this matter,” After knowing about what had happened, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said firmly.

“Little friend Chu Feng is naturally not in the wrong. Merely, the crucial aspect is the Ying Heavenly Clan. They will not leave this matter be,” Su Jingrui said with a frown.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master suddenly stood up. He fixed his gaze onto Chu Feng and said in a very serious manner, “Little friend Chu Feng, our Sunset Cloud Valley is willing to protect you.”

“If the Ying Heavenly Clan insists on killing you, our Sunset Cloud Valley is willing to declare war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for you.”

“Boom~~~”

Those words struck down like a sudden clap of thunder. Kou Kang was unable to contain his shock, and nearly sprayed out the wine in his mouth.

What sort of situation was this? The Sunset Cloud Valley was willing to declare war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for Chu Feng? One must know that the Ying Heavenly Clan was not a power that one could easily provoke.

Compared to Kou Kang’s astonishment, Su Jingrui smiled lightly. He seemed to have already anticipated such a decision from the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master.

As for Xu Yiyi, she was not only astonished. More than shock, she was extremely excited and pleased beyond belief.

As she still did not know how valuable Chu Feng was, she had truly never expected that the Sunset Cloud Valley would be willing to go to war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for Chu Feng.

One must know that the Ying Heavenly Clan was an extremely strong power of influence. Compared to the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, the Ying Heavenly Clan was even more difficult to handle.

“Lord Valley Master, this is a personal grudge between the Ying Heavenly Clan and myself. There is no need for the Sunset Cloud Valley to get involved in it” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you do not have to overthink it. Regardless of whether or not you will join our Sunset Cloud Valley, our Sunset Cloud Valley will always consider you to be our distinguished guest, to be our friend.”

“When a friend is met with a calamity, even if we must climb a

mountain of blades or dive into a sea of flames, we will still not hesitate to do so. Thus, our Sunset Cloud Valley is determined to involve ourselves in this matter,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said resolutely.

After hearing those words, Kou Kang’s expression grew even more unsightly.

He never expected the Sunset Cloud Valley to value Chu Feng so highly. Even though Chu Feng was not a member of the Sunset Cloud Valley, they were still willing to confront a power like the Ying Heavenly Clan for him.

If that was the case, it would truly be hopeless for him to obtain Xu Yiyi. The treatment Chu Feng had obtained was truly too grand. This indirectly illustrated that Chu Feng’s status in the Sunset Cloud Valley was extremely high.

That sort of status was not something that he could compete against.

However, what brought Kou Kang even more despair was that, during this moment when he was astonished by how much the Sunset Cloud Valley valued Chu Feng, his master, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster, actually also stood up.

“Although I have only just met little friend Chu Feng, I also deeply admire little friend Chu Feng’s loyalty to his friends.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you were not in the wrong to begin with. It was that Ying Liangchen who deserved to die. If the Ying Heavenly Clan should be too overbearing toward you and insist on killing you for revenge, our Three Stars Hall is willing to direct justice and help you battle against the Ying Heavenly Clan,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

Once the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said those words, Kou Kang had an expression as if he was just fed feces. He was so astonished that he lost his grip on the cup of wine in his hand,

dropping it onto the floor and shattering it.

In addition to Kou Kang, even the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui, who had a close relationship with the Three Stars Hall's headmaster, were greatly shocked.

Although the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley were allies, and the Three Stars Hall would provide support should the Sunset Cloud Valley have troubles, the words spoken by the Three Stars Hall's headmaster were clearly not aimed at the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Rather, they were completely meant for Chu Feng.

Especially that 'help you battle against the Ying Heavenly Clan.' That one phrase had completely illustrated his position.

The Three Stars Hall was planning to stand up for Chu Feng regardless of the Sunset Cloud Valley's position.

The reason for that was because this was how much value Chu Feng possessed to the Three Star Hall's headmaster.



# Chapter 2289 – Unable To Tell Good From Bad

---

Chu Feng was very surprised by the declaration from the Three Stars Hall's headmaster.

At the same time, he also felt very grateful. After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan would not be easy to deal with at all. For the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall to be willing to help him like this was most definitely an enormous grace and kindness.

However, Chu Feng had already decided that he would take care of his own things himself. He did not wish to implicate the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

Furthermore, even if the two of them might be able to handle the Ying Heavenly Clan by joining hands, Chu Feng's actual enemy was the Infant Soul Sect.

Although Chu Feng did not know much regarding the Infant Soul Sect right now, he felt that, according to what his father had told him, the Infant Soul Sect was very powerful, and most definitely not something the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall could compare to.

Thus, Chu Feng absolutely could not allow others to know that he possessed an extraordinary relationship with the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. Else, once Chu Feng made even stronger enemies, he might really end up implicating the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

“Seniors, this Chu Feng appreciates your kind intentions.”

“However, it remains that I am the one who has provoked this calamity. As such, I should be the one to shoulder it.”

“I do not wish to rely on others. Furthermore, I am part of neither the Sunset Cloud Valley nor the Three Stars Hall. I do not wish for the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars

Hall to end up dying because of me,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng...” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster opened their mouths in unison. They seemed to be wanting to urge Chu Feng against it.

“Seniors, this is my personal matter. I truly do not want seniors to be involved. If seniors continue to insist, I, Chu Feng will take my leave right now,” Chu Feng stood up.

“Eh...” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster and the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master were both at a loss. They did not expect that Chu Feng would refuse their kind intentions like that.

“Bang~~~”

A loud sound was heard. The table before Kou Kang was shattered into pieces. With a furious expression on his face, he pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “Chu Feng! You are truly one that is unable to differentiate good from bad! My master and Lord Valley Master are willing to help you out of their kind intentions. And yet, you actually refuse to appreciate their kindness?! Who do you think you are?! Apologize to my master immediately!”

“Shut up!” However, who would’ve thought that right after Kou Kang’s words were spoken, the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster would coldly glare him down.

At that moment, Kou Kang felt as if he had fallen down into a bottomless abyss. He was feeling truly ice-cold.

He was only trying to stand out for his master to retrieve his honor. Yet, never did he expect that his master would instead shout him down.

How could he possibly tolerate this? Kou Kang truly had the feeling of wanting to die.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you have your own decisions to make. We will not be able to force you. However, we also possess our own determination. Since you do not wish to continue to discuss this

subject, we shall no longer talk about it,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said with a smile. He had actually made a concession.

Although he had made a concession, his intent was also very clearly stated. While Chu Feng could refuse their intentions to help him, they would insist on helping him. The reason for that was because there was nothing that Chu Feng could do regarding their decisions.

“Senior, I have already made my decision. Farewell.”

However, even though the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster had made a concession, Chu Feng still resolutely turned around and began to walk toward the door of the palace.

Chu Feng’s actions could truly be said to be excessive.

Chu Feng was doing all of this deliberately. He wanted to make the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster give up on helping him. He wanted them to know that they would not be able to move him, nor would they be able to entice him regardless of what they might do.

Even though his actions today might be extremely drastic, although his behavior might be extremely indiscriminating and might even cause a misunderstanding or grudges, Chu Feng still felt that he had to do it.

After all... he was only doing this for the sake of the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. He was secretly protecting them.

“Chu Feng!!!”

Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were all stunned by Chu Feng’s departure.

To the two of them, it was an enormously pleasant surprise that the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were willing to help Chu Feng. It would be one thing for Chu Feng to refuse their goodwill. Yet, he actually even disrespected the two leaders in such a manner. The two of them were truly confused by Chu Feng’s actions.

As for Kou Kang, he had managed to grasp an extremely rare opportunity to retaliate against Chu Feng. He readjusted his frame of mind, and then spoke to the Three Stars Hall's headmaster in a resentful manner.

"Master, that Chu Feng is truly one that is unable to differentiate good from bad. His upbringing is simply lacking. Master, why would you want to help him like this?"

"What do you know?" However, even now, Kou Kang was still berated by his master.

After that, the Three Stars Hall's headmaster ignored Kou Kang and looked to the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master and Su Jingrui, "What do you two think?"

"That boy Chu Feng does not want to implicate us. However, if we insist on helping him, he will still appreciate our kindness," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said.

"Although I have only just met that boy, and do not know him well, I truly feel that he is a brat of character. It has been many years since I've last seen a brat like him, much less one as talented as he is," The Three Stars Hall's headmaster said.

"Your intention is that even if Chu Feng refuses to appreciate our kind intentions, we must still fight against the Ying Heavenly Clan?" The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master asked.

"For a rare genius like Chu Feng, if he is to mature, it will not only be beneficial to our Three Stars Hall and your Sunset Cloud Valley. He might even be an enormous assistance to our entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. We absolutely cannot allow the Ying Heavenly Clan to ruin him," The Three Stars Hall's headmaster said.

"In that case, things will be simple," The Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master said with a light smile.

"That's true. While the Ying Heavenly Clan is not one to be

despised, they will still have to make careful consideration should our Three Stars Hall join hands with your Sunset Cloud Valley,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s spread the news,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“What do we say?” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster asked.

“It’ll be that we will fight for Chu Feng, of course,” The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master said.

“Very well,” The Three Stars Hall’s headmaster revealed a smile.

At that moment, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were looking at one another. The two of them were completely baffled.

Chu Feng had clearly been extremely excessive earlier. Yet, their three lords were actually not angry. In fact, they even decided to continue to insist on helping Chu Feng. This caused both Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu to feel disbelief.

When the two girls were already feeling like that, one could easily imagine what sort of expression Kou Kang had on his face just then. It was truly as ugly as ugly could be.

However, there was nothing he could do. After all... he was simply unable to interrupt the conversation.

Afterwards, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall began to spread the news.

They had declared the truth of Ying Liangchen massacring the Red Butterfly Society’s headquarters, and then Chu Feng avenging them. With that, they caped themselves with a cloak of righteousness.

After that, they declared that they would uphold justice, and pledge their lives to protect Chu Feng. If the Ying Heavenly Clan were to insist on killing Chu Feng, they would wage war against the Ying Heavenly Clan.

.....

Luyang's Pavilion. This formerly glorious location had been completely ruined since the day Chu Luyang had been killed. Many of the experts that were once part of Luyang's Pavilion had left it. What remained was merely a bunch of scattered remnants. They no longer carried the glory of their golden age.

However, at that moment, several tens of grand characters appeared at Luyang's Pavilion.

There were men and women among them. There were extremely old elderly people, as well as youthful members of the younger generation. Although those people were of both high and low cultivations, no one dared to be disrespectful toward them.

The reason for that was because they all possessed a common identity. That is, they were members of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

They had all arrived for the sake of Chu Luyang's death.

## Chapter 2290 – Enormous Shock

---

“We cannot sit and remain indifferent to big brother Chu Luyang being killed. No matter what, he is a member of our Chu Family.”

“The reason why our Chu Heavenly Clan will not concern themselves with this matter is because of the rules set up by our Ancestor stating that we are not allowed to interfere with the matters that occur in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“However, us fellow clansmen who are also tempering ourselves in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm cannot disregard this matter,” A middle-aged man said.

That man was over eighty years old. Although he could still barely be considered a member of the younger generation, his age was comparatively old among the people of the younger generation. As for his cultivation, it was inferior to even Chu Feng’s; he was only a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

“We cannot disregard this matter? How are we supposed to concern ourselves with this matter? Our cultivations are inferior to big brother Chu Luyang’s. As for that bastard Chu Feng, he was able to kill even big brother Chu Luyang. How are we supposed to avenge him?” Another tan-skinned man said.

He was also a member of the younger generation. Merely, his cultivation was even weaker than the other man’s; he was only a rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

“You all are truly lacking in gathering intelligence,” Right at that moment, a white-haired old man stood forth.

This old man’s name was Chu Luotang. His cultivation was that of a rank three Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he was close to five hundred years old. Among this group of people, he was the oldest member. He was also the most renowned individual among them.

Thus, after Chu Luotang stepped forward, the clansmen of the

Chu Heavenly Clan that were ceaselessly debating with one another all quieted down.

“Big brother Luotang, could it be that you’ve received some sort of information?” Someone asked.

“Of course,” Chu Luotang smiled lightly.

Then, he said, “We will naturally have to avenge Chu Luyang. Merely, there is simply no need for us to act at all. The reason for that is because not only has that Chu Feng killed Chu Luyang, he has also killed Ying Liangchen.”

“I believe that brothers and sisters all Know who Ying Liangchen is right? He is the most beloved son of the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.”

“Right now, the Ying Heavenly Clan has already posted an order for Chu Feng’s capture. They are determined to avenge Ying Liangchen.”

“Regardless of how powerful that Chu Feng might be, it would be impossible for him to be a match for the Ying Heavenly Clan. After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan is a clan that wields a Heavenly Bloodline. Although they are incapable of matching our Chu Heavenly Clan, they possess some strength in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Right. I have also heard of that matter,” Once Chu Luotang said those words, many people began to confirm that they had also heard such news.

“Furthermore, Chu Luyang is a member of the Sunset Cloud Valley. The Sunset Cloud Valley will not disregard the death of Chu Luyang. I’ve heard that Chu Feng was arrested by people from the Sunset Cloud Valley that day.”

“If that information is true, it might be possible that there would simply be no need for the Ying Heavenly Clan to act. Not long from now, the news of Chu Feng being killed by the Sunset Cloud Valley



will start to spread,” Chu Luotang continued.

“What big brother Luotang says is very reasonable.”

“That’s right, the Sunset Cloud Valley will definitely not remain indifferent. Perhaps there will simply be no need for us to worry about it and the Sunset Cloud Valley will take care of that Chu Feng.”

“In that case, we have truly worried for nothing.”

After Chu Luotang said those words, the rest of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen present all began to voice their agreement. Finally, smiles appeared on their previously worried faces.

Suddenly, someone asked, “Merely, big brother Luotang, you said that Chu Feng was captured by the Sunset Cloud Valley. Is that really true?”

“I have already had my men confirm that matter. Likely, we will know whether or not it is true very soon,” Chu Luotang said confidently.

“Sure enough, it is big brother Luotang who thinks things through thoroughly,” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation began to praise Chu Luotang in succession.

After a series of praises, Chu Luotang revealed a complacent smile.

“Milord,” Not long afterward, a shout was heard from afar.

It was a black-clothed man. He was an expert with the cultivation of a peak Half Martial Ancestor. He was not a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Instead, he was Chu Luotang’s subordinate.

Thus, even though the black-clothed man possessed a cultivation stronger than many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation present, he still hurriedly greeted them with a respectful bow after approaching them.

“How was it? Did you manage to gain any information?” Chu

Luotang asked. The rest of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen also looked to that black-clothed man with anticipating gazes.

“Milord, I have,” The black-clothed man said.

“Has Chu Feng been captured by the Sunset Cloud Valley?” Chu Luotang asked.

“Yes, that is absolutely certain. Chu Feng was indeed captured by the Sunset Cloud Valley,” The black-clothed man said.

“Good. That Chu Feng deserves to die. Like this, big brother Luyang can be considered to have been avenged.”

“That Chu Feng is truly daring. He actually dared to kill a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan. Likely, he also knew that our Chu Heavenly Clan would not concern themselves with the lives and deaths of our members in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. That is why he dared to act so unscrupulously.”

“Unfortunately for him, he had no idea that big brother Chu Luyang had already obtained a backer in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for his backing, it was the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

“Now that Chu Feng has been captured by the Sunset Cloud Valley, he will likely not be able to escape death. He has reaped what he has sown. Serves him right.”

Hearing those words, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan present were all overjoyed. It was as if they had heard the news of Chu Feng’s death.

It was only Chu Luotang that remained calm. He did not urgently come to a conclusion, and instead continued to ask, “Then what is the situation of that Chu Feng now? Has he been killed by the Sunset Cloud Valley?”

“He has not,” That black-clothed man said.

“Chu Feng was actually not killed?” Hearing those words, the

expressions of the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan all grew stiff as their smiles instantly froze.

“If the rumors are true, the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley should have arrived promptly that day, and witnessed Chu Feng’s killing of Chu Luyang. With irrefutable evidence, why would the Sunset Cloud Valley still leave Chu Feng alive? Exactly what is up with the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Law Enforcement Department? Do they not know how to do their jobs?!” Chu Luotang asked furiously.

He was unable to understand why the Sunset Cloud Valley would keep Chu Feng alive.

“Milord, as for the exact reasons, this subordinate is also uncertain. Merely... the Sunset Cloud Valley has already made a declaration,” The black-clothed man said.

“What sort of declaration?” Chu Luotang asked.

“The Sunset Cloud Valley claims that Chu Feng’s killing of Ying Liangchen was justified, that Ying Liangchen deserved to die. They have also declared that if the Ying Heavenly Clan insists on killing Chu Feng, the Sunset Cloud Valley is willing to declare war on the Ying Heavenly Clan on behalf of Chu Feng,” The black-clothed man said.

“Boom~~~”

Those words came like a sudden clap of thunder to the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan. They felt as if their brains were about to explode. Some of the members of the younger generation that lacked the ability to endure shock felt their bodies grow soft before falling down onto their butts.

What was going on?

Wasn’t the Sunset Cloud Valley Chu Luyang’s backer?

Why would the Sunset Cloud Valley not avenge Chu Luyang and kill Chu Feng, but instead start to stand up for Chu Feng?

Exactly what was going on?

At that moment, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were all struck dumb. They were truly unable to understand why such a thing would happen. They felt as if they had received an enormous shock.

“Has the Sunset Cloud Valley gone mad? They are actually willing to declare war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for a mere Chu Feng?”

“Even if the Sunset Cloud Valley possesses a deep background in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Ying Heavenly Clan is also not a power that one can trifle with. If the two of them are to declare war on one another, both sides will suffer.”

“The Sunset Cloud Valley is actually willing to declare war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for someone that they possessed no relationship with before? Have their heads been kicked or what?!” Chu Luotang gnashed his teeth with rage as he shouted loudly.

“Milord, that declaration was jointly declared by the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall; the Three Stars Hall is also planning to back Chu Feng,” That black-clothed man added.

“Three Stars Hall? The Three Stars Hall is actually also planning to help Chu Feng?”

Hearing those words, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen present that were already shocked by the news earlier received an enormous shock once again.

## Chapter 2291 – Must Die

---

“Big brother Luotang, what is going on here? Exactly what sort of origin does that Chu Feng possess?”

“He killed big brother Luyang. It would be one thing for the Sunset Cloud Valley to not avenge big brother Luyang, but why would they instead offer their support to that Chu Feng? Furthermore, why would the Three Stars Hall also be involved in this?”

Feeling confused, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen present all turned their gazes to Chu Luotang.

They all knew that it was not a coincidence that Chu Feng had obtained that sort of treatment, and began to suspect that Chu Feng might be of extraordinary origin, that he was not someone to be trifled with.

After pondering for some time, Chu Luotang said, “It would appear that the news from Mount Cloud Crane is true.”

“What news?” Someone asked in confusion.

“That Chu Feng is a genius world spiritist. On Mount Cloud Crane, in that Immortalization Assembly held by Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu Feng defeated all the expert world spiritists gathered and became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” someone explained.

“Ah? According to the information we have, that Chu Feng should be quite young. He has become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist at such a young age?” After knowing about what happened, many of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen revealed astonished expressions.

The reason for that was because that news was not good news at all.

“But even if he is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, there

shouldn't be a reason for the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall to try to win him over like that, no?" someone voiced their confusion.

"If he were only an ordinary Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, that would naturally be the case."

"However, an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist as young as Chu Feng would definitely be worthy. In the eyes of the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the fact that a member of the younger generation is capable of accomplishing what Chu Feng has means that his future potential is so enormous that it cannot be measured," Chu Luotang said.

A female member of the Chu Heavenly Clan who was already several hundred years old yet still had the appearance of a young girl said, "That's right. I have also heard that Chu Feng is not only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, but also an Asura World Spiritist."

"Asura World Spiritist?"

After hearing that, some of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen revealed even uglier expressions.

No matter what, they were people from the Chu Heavenly Clan. As such, they were all people that had a lot of experience, and had seen great things before. As such, they knew very well that the title of an Asura World Spiritist was much more powerful than that of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

"Damn it! Could it be that big brother Luyang will have to die in vain like this?"

At that moment, the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan present were all at a loss as for what to do. Although they all wanted to avenge Chu Luyang, they did not possess sufficient strength to do so.

None of them were fools. They all realized that the Sunset Cloud

Valley and the Three Stars Hall would definitely protect someone of Chu Feng's talent.

After all, the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley were already willing to wage war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for Chu Feng.

Thus, not to mention that they did not possess the strength to kill Chu Feng, even if they were capable of killing Chu Feng, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall would also not be willing to let them get away with it.

At that moment, they all felt that obtaining revenge for Chu Luyang would be hopeless.

“Why are you all panicking? Have you all forgotten the purpose in Chu Luyang's coming to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu Luotang said.

“What was his purpose?” The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan expressed their confusion.

“It was for his younger brother, Chu Luxuan,” Chu Luotang said.

“Chu Luxuan,” Hearing that name, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, regardless of whether they were young or old, all revealed a change in expression.

Although some among them had left the Chu Heavenly Clan for hundreds of years now, they were still extremely familiar with the name Chu Luxuan.

As for the people of the younger generation that ended up coming to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm afterwards, the name ‘Chu Luxuan’ was even more profound in their hearts.

Chu Luxuan was still a member of the younger generation. However, the status that he held in the Chu Heavenly Clan was absolutely not something that they could compare with.

The reason for that was because Chu Luxuan possessed a superb

talent for martial cultivation. His extraordinary status had been decided since the moment he was born.

Even in their powerful clan filled with geniuses, Chu Luxuan was someone who was acknowledged.

“The reason why Chu Luyang came to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was actually because he wanted to pave the road for his brother. The reason for that was because he knew that his brother would, sooner or later, come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to conduct missions.”

“Do you all think that Chu Luxuan, Chu Luyang’s blood brother, will ignore the matter of his brother’s death?” Chu Luotang asked.

“He would definitely not. Although I have only met that Chu Luxuan twice, he is certainly not someone to be trifled with,” A member of the younger generation said.

“There we go. Although there is nothing we can do about that Chu Feng right now, when Chu Luxuan arrives in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it will be the descent of misfortune for that Chu Feng,” Chu Luotang said.

“That’s right. No matter how exceptionally talented Chu Feng might be, how could he possibly be able to match the geniuses of our Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“When Chu Luxuan arrives at this place, there will definitely be countless powers that will try to curry favor with him.”

“At that time, what could that Chu Feng possibly amount to? Once Chu Luxuan gives the order, countless powers will shield Chu Luxuan and attack Chu Feng.”

“At that time, even the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall will not dare to shield Chu Feng.”

At that moment, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan once again saw hope for vengeance.



The way they saw it, if Chu Luxuan wished to take care of Chu Feng, there would be no hope for Chu Feng at all. Without a doubt, he would be killed.

After all, Chu Luxuan was an actual genius of their Chu Heavenly Clan.

To these people, they felt that a genius from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would definitely not be able to compare to a genius like their Chu Luxuan.

Suddenly, a man asked, “Oh, that’s right. Big brother Luotang, I’ve heard that Chu Feng is also a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline. Furthermore, his talent is pretty decent too.”

“Moreover, he is surnamed Chu. He couldn’t possibly be a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan, right?”

When that man asked those words, he had a slightly worried expression in his eyes.

The reason why he was worried was because Chu Feng was an Asura World Spiritist.

Regardless of how talented that Chu Feng’s talent for martial cultivation might be, his mere identity as an Asura World Spiritist was already extremely extraordinary.

If that Chu Feng were to truly be a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, then, for no other reason other than the fact that he was an Asura World Spiritist, the Chu Heavenly Clan would focus on his nurture.

As for those people whose nurture was the focus of the Chu Heavenly Clan, they were not people that they could afford to provoke.

“Impossible. How could someone that disgraceful appear in our Chu Heavenly Clan? Furthermore, I’ve never heard of an Asura World Spiritist appearing among our Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation,” Chu Luotang said resolutely.

“In that case, that Chu Feng should be a bastard child from a certain Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Heavenly Clan,” After hearing what Chu Luotang said, that man revealed a relieved expression.

“It is one thing for him to be a bastard child. However, he actually dared to deliberately change his surname to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s surname. He is truly shameless. Exactly how deeply did he want to become a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan?” Some of the people of the younger generation present started to mock Chu Feng.

“There are countless shameless individuals in the world. People like Chu Feng who want to claim a connection to our Chu Heavenly Clan are not rare either.”

“However, regardless, that Chu Feng must pay for his conduct and deeds. Our Chu Heavenly Clan is not a clan that just anyone can provoke,” Chu Luotang said.

The others from the Chu Heavenly Clan all nodded at his words.

Although they were merely a bunch with the lowest tier status in the Chu Heavenly Clan, they still felt great pride in being members of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

They felt that there were no powers capable of contending against the Chu Heavenly Clan.

That there was no one capable of contending against the experts of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Thus, regardless of where they might be, all those that dared to offend the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan must be killed.

# Chapter 2292 – Meeting The Demonic Woman Again

---

Chu Feng had no idea what that group of people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were planning.

Chu Feng did not even know about the joint declaration from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had directly proceeded for a location after leaving the Sunset Cloud Valley. As for that place, it was the Fallen Goose Mountain Range.

Although the Fallen Goose Mountain Range was located in the vicinity of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, it was also an extremely vast place.

There were many powers around the Fallen Goose Mountain Range. In fact, some among them were not weaker than Luyang's Pavilion and the Red Butterfly Society.

However, even though that demonic woman had lingered around this area the entire time, there had not been any power that managed to capture her.

Reportedly, that demonic woman was only pushed to flee into the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds because of experts whose assistance these powers had jointly requested.

However, after the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds' remnants were discovered, no one had the heart to bother with the demonic woman. Seizing that opportunity, the demonic woman actually returned to the Fallen Goose Mountain Range.

Reportedly, the powers around the Fallen Goose Mountain Range had been attempting to capture that demonic woman the entire time. Merely, like the situation was for them before, they were unable to do anything to the demonic woman.

At that moment, a person was standing at a location in the Fallen Goose Mountain Range by the name of Heavenly Wolf Peak.

That person was Chu Feng.

It had actually been several days since Chu Feng had arrived at the Fallen Goose Mountain Range. After making some inquiries, Chu Feng discovered that even though the demonic woman had been in the Fallen Goose Mountain Range the entire time, there were only a few locations where she would frequently appear.

In the past days, the demonic woman had already appeared several times. Merely, Chu Feng had not had the fortune to encounter her.

After calculating the locations where the demonic woman had appeared, Chu Feng felt that the next location where the demonic woman would appear would be this Heavenly Wolf Peak. Chu Feng had thus arrived here with the intention of waiting to ambush the demonic woman.

While standing on the Heavenly Wolf Peak, Chu Feng was thinking about a question.

Chu Feng felt that it was very possible that the demonic woman lingering around several locations was because she was searching for something. As for her eating men, that was only a matter of convenience for her.

That was why Chu Feng became curious as to what exactly that demonic woman was searching for that caused her to disregard others trying to kill her.

“There’s nothing abnormal?” Chu Feng declared after surveying the surroundings with his Heaven’s Eyes. He became even more puzzled.

Like the many other places where the demonic woman had frequently appeared, there was nothing abnormal about this Heavenly Wolf Peak. Chu Feng was unable to guess what sort of

treasure could possibly be hidden in a place like this.

“Could it be that I’ve been mistaken? Could it be that the many locations that demonic woman has frequently appeared in possessed a different purpose, that it was not because there was something hidden here?”

He sighed and muttered to himself, “Milady Queen, if only you were here with me, you would be able to help me analyze this matter.”

Although he was saying those words, he did not hope for Her Lady Queen to wake up quickly.

The spirit formation that he had set up earlier was meant to help Her Lady Queen recover. The longer she slept, the more beneficial it would be for her.

“Mn?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze flashed. Through his Heaven’s Eyes, he noticed that a group of people were flying toward his current location from the distance.

There were both men and women in that group of people. They were all members of the younger generation. The oldest among them were only a few decades old, while the youngest possessed an age similar to Chu Feng’s. They were all wearing the same apparel. Likely, they should be from the same power.

Although they were all members of the younger generation, their cultivation, when compared to Chu Feng’s, was enormously lacking.

No matter what, Chu Feng was a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. However, that group of people were composed only of Martial Emperors. Among them, the strongest individual was merely a rank five Martial Emperor.

Those people were talking and laughing. It seemed they were discussing something.

As Chu Feng was bored, he decided to listen to their conversation to see whether or not they might be talking about the demonic woman. Thus, after using some special abilities, the conversations they were having entered Chu Feng's ears.

“Senior brother Liao, I've heard that that demonic woman frequently appears around here. We wouldn't be so unlucky to run across that demonic woman here, right?” The female disciples present were staring at the strongest man in the group.

Furthermore, each and every one of them were all pretending to be frightened little sheep. It was clear that they were trying to gain that man's affection.

“Junior sisters, you all do not have to worry. With me here, even if we were to encounter that demonic woman, she would still not be able to harm you all,” A rather ugly-looking man who walked at the back of the crowd patted his chest and guaranteed their safety.

“You don't have to continue to joke around. You want to take care of that demonic woman with your cultivation? Likely, after seeing the demonic woman, you will be the first to run away,” The women started to laugh loudly.

Then, they turned their gazes to the man leading the group. They said, “We would only trust it if it was senior brother Liao who said that he would protect us.”

After hearing what the women said, that so-called senior brother Liao's lips lifted into a confident smile. He said, “Rest assured. With me here, no one will be able to harm you all.”

Hearing what that senior brother Liao said, those women were overjoyed. They appeared exceptionally excited. Then, they began to praise that senior brother Liao nonstop.

Listening till that point, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself anymore. It was not that Chu Feng disliked flirtatious individuals. But Chu Feng was fed up with individuals who would blow their

own trumpet and believe themselves to be infallible.

Chu Feng had already managed to determine that this group of people were most likely disciples of a power around the Fallen Goose Mountain Range. When even their masters were unable to do anything to that demonic woman, they actually had the nerve to declare that they would take care of that demonic woman. They were truly too boastful.

That crowd of people continued in Chu Feng's direction. Originally, Chu Feng had decided to ignore them. He planned to take care of his own business and not pay attention to them.

However, who would've thought that after that crowd of people saw Chu Feng, that man with the ugly appearance pointed at Chu Feng and shouted loudly, "Hey! Who are you?! Who said you could come here?!"

For the sake of showing himself off to those female disciples, that ugly-looking fellow actually utilized his oppressive might when he shouted at Chu Feng.

Merely, the oppressive might of a mere rank three Martial Emperor was simply akin to a joke before Chu Feng.

"This place seems to be an uninhabited location. Why can't I come here?" Chu Feng refuted.

At that moment, those men and women had already descended to the ground. Not only had they landed on the Heavenly Wolf Peak, they had also surrounded Chu Feng as they did so.

At that moment, that senior brother Liao who possessed the strongest strength also revealed an ill-intended expression. With a cold voice, he said, "This place is where that demonic woman frequently appears. For someone like you to be here is simply akin to courting death. Scram immediately. Else, if you are to encounter that demonic woman, we will not bother saving you."

Overwhelming arrogance. That senior brother Liao could be said

to have fully displayed the behavior of someone who believed himself to be infallible.

However, his clearly pretentious prick-like behavior actually caused those females to reveal dazed and lovestruck gazes filled with adoration.

Sensing the gazes filled with adoration from the women, that senior brother Liao grew even more complacent. He said to Chu Feng, “Hey, I’m talking to you, are you deaf?”

Faced with such a rude bunch, Chu Feng would naturally not yield to them. Originally, he had planned to teach them a lesson so that they did not disturb his leisure.

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng planned to attack them, Chu Feng’s gaze suddenly flashed. Then, he immediately turned his sharp gaze to the southwest.

Upon seeing what was there, Chu Feng immediately felt extremely excited, and revealed an ecstatic expression. He even began to involuntarily tighten his fists. He felt as if all of the nerves in his body were throbbing.

Filled with excitement, he muttered, “You’re finally here.”

It turned out that Chu Feng had seen a figure in the direction that he was looking toward.

That figure was extremely fast. It was currently flying toward Heavenly Wolf Peak. As for that figure, it was a figure that Chu Feng had seen before; it was precisely that demonic woman who had taken Wang Qiang away.

The enemy that Chu Feng had sought after for so long was finally here. How could Chu Feng not be overjoyed?

Today would be the day that he would avenge Wang Qiang.

“Who? The fuck kinda nonsense are you spouting?” Ignorant to what was happening, that man surnamed Liao still didn’t know



that a crisis was approaching them. The only thing in his mind was to continue to show off his might. Thus, he actually walked over to Chu Feng and pointed at Chu Feng's nose.

“Scram immediately!” Chu Feng said in a displeased manner.

At that moment, the only thing in Chu Feng's mind was taking care of that demonic woman. He was no longer in the mood to take care of that bunch of trash.

“Aiyah! You actually dare to speak to me in such a manner? It seems that you've truly grown tired of living!”

Seeing that Chu Feng had actually spoken to him in such a manner, that man surnamed Liao was immediately furious, and actually grabbed Chu Feng's lapel.

At that moment, the others present all started to smile. They were rejoicing in Chu Feng's misfortune.

Regardless of whether they were men or women, they all had anticipating expressions. They were all anticipating the scene of their senior brother Liao ruthlessly teaching Chu Feng a lesson.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at that moment, a strong gale suddenly arrived. The gale was so strong that it knocked those men and women rolling and crawling on the ground. They nearly even fell down from Heavenly Wolf Peak.

“What's going on?!”

“Why would there be such an enormous wind?!” The men and women all had puzzled expressions.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. There's this much fresh young meat. This is truly an unexpected harvest,” Right at that moment, a gloomy and cold voice sounded from not too far away.

“Heavens!!!”

Seeing that scene, the crowd present, with the exception of Chu

Feng, all had an enormous change in expression. They who had held arrogant expressions earlier were now completely pale with fear. It was as if they have seen a ghost. They were truly terrified.

The reason for that was because that demonic woman was currently standing atop Heavenly Wolf Peak.

Her ferocious gaze was like that of a hungry wolf seeing rabbits. She was using that sort of gaze to run her eyes over every one of the people present on the Heavenly Wolf Peak.

## Chapter 2293 – Overwhelming Killing Intent

---

The demonic woman had revealed her actual appearance from the very beginning.

Red skin and long red hair. Sharp fangs filled her beast-like mouth.

That demonic woman was not naked. Instead, she was wearing a long skirt. However, it was precisely because of the matching of that long skirt with her fierce appearance that she appeared to be particularly frightening.

At the moment they saw the demonic woman, the men and women present started to tremble in fear. Not to mention the fact that the demonic woman's oppressive might had locked down the entire place, even if she did not use her oppressive might, those people would not have the courage to run away from her either.

“Sen-senior brother Liao, think of something.”

In panic, those men and women all turned their gazes to that individual surnamed Liao.

“We-we’re screwed.”

“We are definitely screwed.”

However, that man surnamed Liao was so frightened by the demonic woman that he began to make delirious remarks. Not only was he trembling violently, one could even notice that the crotch of his pants was completely wet.

That senior brother Liao who had been acting so arrogantly and boasted about teaching Chu Feng a lesson earlier had pissed his pants in fear of that demonic woman.

At that moment, those men and women all gave in to despair. Facing that demonic woman, they did not even have the courage to beg for forgiveness. Other than waiting for death, they could do

nothing.

“Demonic woman, we meet again.”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded.

Once Chu Feng’s voice was heard, those men and women all revealed stunned expressions. They never expected that the man that they were looking down on earlier would actually dare to speak to the demonic woman in such a manner.

Furthermore, he was very calm, and showed not the slightest bit of fear. It was as if the demonic woman was nothing more than an ordinary individual before him.

“Mn?” At that moment, that demonic woman turned her gaze to Chu Feng. Seeing that Chu Feng was actually not scared of her, the demonic woman was also very surprised. Thus, she asked, “You’re not afraid of me?”

“Do you not wish to know when we last met?” Chu Feng asked indifferently.

“We’ve met before?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, that demonic woman was even more astonished. Then, her mouth lifted into a strange smile. She said, “A young and tender boy like you was actually able to live after seeing me? That is truly miraculous.”

“However, this time around, I will not let you, my fine food, escape my grasp.”

After saying those words, that demonic woman extended her lizard-like tongue and licked her lips.

She did not care about when Chu Feng might have met her before. What she was concerned about was the fact that Chu Feng actually managed to escape being eaten by her after encountering her. As such, she was determined to eat him this time around.

“It seems that you truly have absolutely no recollection of me. However, that makes sense too. After all, the last time we met, we

did not really fight with one another.”

“However, I will not let you get away this time around,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, that demonic woman’s gaze changed slightly. She said, “You’ve deliberately come to find me?”

“You’ve killed my friend. I must avenge him,” Chu Feng said.

“Interesting. You, a mere rank four Half Martial Ancestor, are actually thinking about killing me?” That demonic woman said with a mocking laugh.

“Rank four Half Martial Ancestor?” The mockery from the demonic woman came crushing down on the men and women that were threatening Chu Feng like an invisible sledgehammer.

The majority of them were Martial Emperors. Even the strongest among them, that senior brother Liao, was only a rank five Martial Emperor.

Yet, the fellow that they were looking down on earlier was actually a rank four Half Martial Ancestor?!

Perhaps a rank four Half Martial Ancestor might not amount to much before the demonic woman, but it was an existence so unsurprisingly frightening for them.

Thinking about how they had actually dared to threaten him earlier, the group of men and women all felt lingering fear.

“You are but a mere rank one Martial Ancestor yourself,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

Chu Feng had already noticed that demonic woman before she had even managed to approach him. At that time, Chu Feng had already ascertained the demonic woman’s cultivation.

Rank one Martial Ancestor. That was the cultivation of this demonic woman. Chu Feng had to admit that the demonic woman was very strong. At the very least, she was much more powerful

than him.

However, Chu Feng was daring enough to stand here and wait for the arrival of the demonic woman, and then even declared that he would kill her.

Naturally, the reason for that would be because of the final Immortal Transformation Pellet that he possessed. After taking it, Chu Feng's cultivation would increase to that of a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Although he would lose his Heavenly Bloodline's ability, as well as his heaven-defying battle power because he would have increased his cultivation through world spirit techniques, it remained that he would become a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Compared to a rank one Martial Ancestor, a rank five Martial Ancestor was four entire levels of cultivation above it. Thus, Chu Feng was confident that he would be able to kill this demonic woman here today.

That Immortal Transformation Pellet had been inside Chu Feng's mouth the entire time. Furthermore, Chu Feng had already swallowed it. The pellet was already starting to take effect.

"A mere rank one Martial Ancestor. You said those words quite effortlessly."

"Did you really think that you would be able to kill me, a rank one Marital Ancestor, with your cultivation of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor?" The demonic woman mocked.

"How would we know if I don't try?"

"Boom~~~"

Once Chu Feng said those words, overwhelming oppressive might immediately swept forth. Even that demonic woman was forced back two steps by that oppressive might.

"Rank five Martial Ancestor, you're actually a rank five Martial

Ancestor?!”

Astonishment appeared in the demonic woman's eyes as she looked at Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because the aura Chu Feng was emitting now was most definitely not that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, but a rank five Martial Ancestor instead.

Yes, Martial Ancestor as opposed to Half Martial Ancestor. The enormous gap in cultivation caused even that demonic woman to feel disbelief.

“What? A rank five Martial Ancestor?!”

Hearing what the demonic woman declared, those men and women that had threatened Chu Feng earlier had an enormous change in their expressions once again. Fear filled their eyes as they looked to Chu Feng.

“Do you now know why I am so confident?”

After taking the Immortal Transformation Pellet, Chu Feng did not want to bother to speak superfluous words with the demonic woman. As he said those words, he had already shot his right fist out toward the demonic woman, carrying overwhelmingly destructive power.

Chu Feng's speed was simply too fast. Before that demonic woman could react, Chu Feng's powerful fist had already landed on her face.

“Boom~~~”

The enormous power of his fist shot that demonic woman several thousands of meters out into the distant forest.

As the demonic woman crashed through the forest, she destroyed everything in her path.

“Mn?”

Although the fist connected, and the power of his fist was

extremely strong, Chu Feng did not have any joy on his face. Instead, he started to frown.

His fist strike should have been more than enough to shatter that demonic woman into pieces and kill her.

However, that demonic woman's body was not shattered. Instead, she was merely knocked flying. Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that not only was the demonic woman not dead, she was also uninjured.

However, how could a mere rank one Martial Ancestor be able to withstand the attack of a rank five Martial Ancestor?

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. Interesting. You actually dared to hit me. I am determined to eat you alive.”

Sure enough, a frightening snarl soon sounded from that demonic woman.

“A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?”

At that moment, Chu Feng also revealed an astonished expression.

He was able to sense the strength that the demonic woman possessed. Although her cultivation was indeed only that of a rank one Martial Ancestor, that demonic woman possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation; an entire level more than Chu Feng's own heaven-defying battle power.

Thus, even though Chu Feng was a rank five Martial Ancestor now, that demonic woman, by relying on her cultivation of rank one Martial Ancestor and her heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, was evenly matched against him.

“Boom~~~:



Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. That demonic woman had soared into the sky and was flying toward Chu Feng.

Not only was she very imposing, she was also carrying overwhelming killing intent with her.

# Chapter 2294 – Undying And Indestructible

---

“It would appear that I cannot be careless.”

Seeing that the demonic woman’s strength was not weak, Chu Feng hurriedly took out his Magma Emperor Sword. Only then did he begin to fly toward that demonic woman.

The demonic woman was not to be outdone. She shouted, “Did you think that you were the only one with an Incomplete Ancestral Armament?!”

Originally, Chu Feng thought that the demonic woman would take out an Incomplete Ancestral Armament from her Cosmos Sack.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, that demonic woman took out her Incomplete Ancestral Armament, not from her Cosmos Sack, but from within her body. It was a pair of crimson daggers. The two daggers extended from that demonic woman’s palms.

Most strangely, the two weapons, after extending from her palms, did not cause the slightest trace of blood. It was as if that demonic woman’s palms were merely a place to store the weapons.

At that moment, what Chu Feng was the most concerned with was not the strange ability of that demonic woman. Instead, it was the might and killing intent emitted by that demonic woman.

Her might was overwhelming, and her killing intent was boundless. Neither one of them could be looked down upon. As such, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless in the slightest.

“Clank, clank, clank, clank, clank~~~”

Sparks began to flutter in the sky like dragons and snakes. Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword and that demonic woman’s dual crimson daggers were colliding in the sky nonstop.

With each collision, they would let out loud rumbles and cause

firework-like sparks.

The two fighters were so fast that they would end up colliding over a thousand times in an instant.

Although their attacks were mighty, fierce and exceptionally terrifying, they were a dazzling feast to the eyes.

This was especially true because the sky had already darkened now. Thus, their battle became even more dazzling to the eyes.

“Amazing. That guy is actually capable of fighting against that demonic woman?”

“I’ve heard that even our Lord Sect Master does not possess certainty of defeating that demonic woman.”

At that moment, those men and women had managed to crawl back up. When those women looked at Chu Feng, who was fighting against that demonic woman in the distance, their gazes became complicated.

“Why are you all still standing here to look?! Quickly, get moving! I will not bother with you all once that demonic woman returns!”

That senior brother Liao crawled back up and shouted angrily at the others. After saying those words, he disregarded the others and was the first to leave.

“You’re showing off your authority now? Earlier, when that demonic woman was trying to kill us, we seem to remember that you didn’t try to help us either.”

At that moment, those female disciples no longer had the sort of adoration in their gazes that they’d had previously when they looked to their senior brother Liao. Instead, their gazes were filled with disgust.

“Let’s go. That demonic woman is too powerful. Who knows how much longer that guy can last. It’s best that we hurry up and

return to ask for Lord Sect Master to come and help,” The ugly looking man also urged.

It was only after hearing those words that the female disciples began to soar into the sky and fly toward the direction where they had come from.

However, even with that being the case, they would still turn their heads to look at Chu Feng meaningfully. A faint amount of reluctance to part was present in their eyes.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The battle between Chu Feng and that demonic woman grew fiercer and fiercer. The two of them had already utilized a lot of their abilities. This included even taboo martial skills.

Chu Feng was shocked to discover that not only did this woman possess an astonishing battle power, her proficiency in terms of martial skills was also extremely strong.

Even though Chu Feng possessed superb comprehension toward martial skills, he was still unable to suppress that demonic woman.

“Those trash must have gone to find reinforcements. I do not have the time to waste on you here.”

“I will end this senseless battle right now.”

Once that woman said those words, her hands suddenly started to emit dazzling light. Those two rays of light were capable of piercing through even space itself. They shot toward Chu Feng.

Although that technique appeared to be very simple, its might was extremely terrifying. The reason for that was because it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

“Heeaahh!!!”

In such a situation, Chu Feng was left with no other choice. He clenched his right fist and shot it forth explosively. He had unleashed the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Heavenly Dome

Transformation.

“Boom~~~”

The two Emperor Taboo Martial Skills collided with one another. Their collision immediately brought forth boundless energy ripples. The energy ripples were so strong that the mountains, creeks and forests below were completely razed to the ground. Even space itself was shattered by the impact. As for Chu Feng, he was also knocked back repeatedly.

At the moment when the energy ripples weakened, Chu Feng discovered that he was not the only one knocked back by the impact. That demonic woman was also knocked back by the impact.

Merely, like Chu Feng, she was also uninjured.

“Damn it. This won’t do.”

“Must I really use the Evil God Sword?”

When Chu Feng saw that he was unable to defeat that demonic woman using his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, he entered a predicament.

After all, unleashing the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation with the Magma Emperor Sword could be said to be the strongest ability that Chu Feng possessed right now.

When even that failed to defeat that demonic woman, Chu Feng truly did not know what could be done. As such, that uncontrollable Evil God Sword had become Chu Feng’s final hope.

However, that Evil God Sword was truly unreliable. Firstly, that Evil God Sword would create a backlash against Chu Feng. As Chu Feng did not possess sufficient strength to utilize it, it was very likely that the Evil God Sword would end up taking his life.

And most importantly, Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether or not that Evil God Sword would truly be able to defeat that demonic

woman.

Right now, no matter what, he was still equally matched against that demonic woman. However, if he were to change his Magma Emperor Sword to the Evil God Sword, if that Evil God Sword ended up not being as powerful as Chu Feng anticipated it to be, or if Chu Feng was unable to unleash the might of the Evil God Sword, it would be very possible for the Evil God Sword to become a disadvantage for Chu Feng.

After battling that demonic woman, Chu Feng was certain that the demonic woman was no ordinary character. It could be said that she was one of the hardest opponents that he had met so far.

If Chu Feng decided to use the Evil God Sword and ended up putting himself in a disadvantaged state because of it, it would be very likely that he would be giving the demonic woman an opportunity to kill him.

“No, it’s not an absolute predicament yet.”

When Chu Feng thought of that, his body suddenly shifted. Suddenly, a dragon roar sounded from below his body.

Secret Skill. It was the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. Chu Feng had unleashed the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and began to fly toward the demonic woman with rapid speed.

“You wish to attempt close combat after failing to defeat me with martial skills? Very well, I will accompany you with it. I shall let you wholeheartedly accept your defeat.”

The demonic woman was not concerned with Chu Feng. Seeing that Chu Feng wanted to fight against her in close combat again, she did not try to deliberately keep her distance. Instead, she also started to fly toward Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In a blink of an eye, the two fighters collided with one another again. Merely, this time around, their attacks were even more

deadly. It was as if any one of their attacks would be fatal to their opponent should they end up landing.

“Woosh~~~”

After the two of them fought for a moment, a cold crimson ray suddenly flashed past.

Not only did the demonic woman dodge Chu Feng’s fatal attack with his Magma Emperor Sword, the crimson dagger she held with her right hand was also aimed at Chu Feng’s dantian.

Her dagger contained a special sort of martial skill. As long as Chu Feng was struck by it, it would not be as simple as his dantian being damaged. Instead, his body would explode on the spot, killing him in the process.

“Puu~~~”

Following a muffled sound, the dagger was pierced into Chu Feng.

“Bang~~~”

In an instant, a muffled explosion was heard. Chu Feng’s completely intact body immediately shattered on the spot.

“I admit that you are very strong. However, you are still no match for me.”

Seeing that she had successfully killed Chu Feng, the demonic woman’s lips were raised into a complacent smile.

“Are you certain of that?”

However, the very next moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again. By the time Chu Feng’s voice was heard, he already appeared behind the demonic woman. Furthermore, his right fist was tightly held. Contained within his right fist was overwhelming destructive power.

Chu Feng had unleashed the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation. At that moment, he shot forth that Emperor

Taboo at the demonic woman's body.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's fist was so close to her that the demonic woman was simply unable to dodge it.

“Boom~~~”

After the fist strike landed, energy ripples started to spread immediately.

This time around, the demonic woman was struck by Chu Feng's fist completely unguarded.

Chu Feng's fist was no ordinary fist. Instead, that fist strike contained the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation!!!

“Boom~~~”

The might of that Emperor Taboo began to wreak havoc in the sky. The space that was just reformed was once again shattered.

With how mighty that attack was, there was no need to even mention the demonic woman's body. In an instant, her body had already been shattered to dust.

However, even though that demonic woman had been shattered to dust by Chu Feng, Chu Feng did not have a joyous expression on his face. Instead, he had a serious expression, and his eyes were filled with shock. Alarmed, he cried out, “This sensation, could it be?”

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. That's right. I am the same as you, I possess an undying and indestructible body.”

The very next moment, energies began to condense at a location not far away from Chu Feng. Soon, that demonic woman's body was reformed. Not only was she completely uninjured, even her skirt was completely undamaged.



# Chapter 2295 – The Powerful Demonic Woman

---

“Undying and indestructible?”

“No, you are not truly undying and indestructible. You are merely the same as me, someone who has grasped a secret skill to allow your physical body to be undying and indestructible,” Chu Feng said to the demonic woman.

Although everything happened instantly, and the ability that demonic woman used was clearly different from his own, Chu Feng noticed the existence of a secret skill from that very instant.

And now, Chu Feng was certain that the reason that demonic woman had managed to survive after being struck by him was because of that secret skill.

Originally, Chu Feng was trying to use his Five Elements Secret Skill to protect his body; he was planning to utilize the effect of his undying and indestructible body to mount a sneak attack to kill that demonic woman with a single strike.

However, Chu Feng truly never would have anticipated that that demonic woman not only possessed overwhelming battle power and proficient mastery with her martial skills, but had also grasped a secret skill similar to his own.

“I truly never expected that you would actually see through it.”

“Indeed, I have used a secret skill. However, you’re quite decent yourself. You’ve actually grasped all those secret skills. However, as long as you die, those secret skills will be mine,” The demonic woman said to Chu Feng with a smile.

“Both of us possess undying and indestructible bodies, how are you supposed to kill me?” Chu Feng asked.

Although Chu Feng appeared to be very calm, he was actually

slightly panicky. The effect of his Immortal Transformation Pellet would only last for an hour. He would soon return to his actual cultivation.

If Chu Feng was incapable of defeating the demonic woman or escaping from this battlefield, he would return to being a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. At that time, he would not be able to make up for the disparity in battle power.

At that time, he would undoubtedly be killed by that demonic woman.

Thus, Chu Feng was watching that demonic woman carefully. The reason for that was because he did not only use his Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation with his punch earlier.

For the sake of preventing against accidents, Chu Feng had used another method as a security, a method specially used to curb the demonic women.

Merely, that method's effect had yet to activate. That was the reason why Chu Feng was panicky. He was uncertain as to whether or not that method of his ended up working.

“Wuu~~~” Right at that moment, the expression of that demonic woman suddenly changed. Then, her mouth opened as she sprayed out a mouthful of blood with a ‘puu.’

“What is this?” The demonic woman covered her chest with her hands. She had an astonished expression on her face. She was completely at a loss as to what was happening.

The reason for that was because not only was the demonic woman's red skin flickering blue and purple nonstop, her body was also starting to distort.

Most importantly, the demonic woman's aura was growing weaker and weaker. Furthermore, it was still weakening.

“Heh... seems like it's effective,” At that moment, Chu Feng finally revealed a smile of relief.

“It’s you?! You did this?!” Hearing Chu Feng’s laughter, the demonic woman’s expression grew even more sinister.

“You are, after all, a demonic woman. You couldn’t possibly not know about the Demon Subduing Spring Water, right?” Chu Feng mocked.

“Demon Subduing Spring Water, you used Demon Subduing Spring Water? When?!” The demonic woman revealed an astonished expression.

“At the same time when my punch struck you earlier. I used Demon Subduing Spring Water with my punch. Right now, the Demon Subduing Spring Water has already completely filled your body and fused with you,” Chu Feng said complacently.

“So that’s the case. Never would I have expected that you would be this clever. I have truly been made a fool of by you.”

“Haha, this is truly more and more interesting,” After the demonic woman heard what had happened, she no longer had an expression of anger, and instead burst into loud laughter.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression turned sluggish. His gaze turned ill as he revealed an extremely confused expression.

He was firstly confused by the fact that the demonic woman did not call him despicable, and instead said that he was clever.

Then, and most importantly, he was confused by why the demonic would say that it was more interesting. She had clearly been struck by the Demon Subduing Spring Water. If this were to continue, her strength would grow weaker and weaker. At that time, she would no longer be able to contend against Chu Feng.

When the difference between the demonic woman’s strength and Chu Feng’s strength grew too great, that demonic woman’s undying and indestructible body would also lose its effect.

Chu Feng knew that there were no true undying and indestructible bodies in the world. At the very most, those abilities

would only work on people with about the same level of cultivation.

However, if one were to encounter a much more powerful opponent, one would still end up being killed.

Thus, when the demonic woman's strength grew weak enough to be completely unable to contend against Chu Feng, Chu Feng would be able to break through that demonic woman's secret skill and kill her.

However, even though the demonic woman was already in a crisis, she was not only not scared, but instead started to laugh. It was as if she possessed another hidden trump card that would grant her absolute victory.

This caused Chu Feng to feel extremely uneasy.

"I already have a whole new level of respect for you now. I truly never expected that you would be able to force me to this level."

"However, it would be best that you not think that I will definitely be killed just because you sprinkled some Demon Subduing Spring Water on me."

"The person who will undoubtedly die is still you," Right after the demonic woman said those words, her gaze started to flicker. Immediately afterward, a world spirit gate appeared before her.

"How could this be?" Chu Feng's expression changed enormously upon seeing that world spirit gate.

Chu Feng had truly never expected that not only did that demonic woman possess overwhelming battle power and astonishing techniques, but she was actually also a world spiritist.

Most importantly, the moment she opened her world spirit gate, Chu Feng felt an enormously strong world spirit power.

Not only was that demonic woman a world spiritist, she was an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist like Chu Feng.

The fact that the demonic woman was a world spiritist was already extremely shocking. But the fact that her world spirit techniques were capable of reaching such a level of proficiency shocked even Chu Feng even more.

At the same time Chu Feng was shocked, he became more worried. The reason for that was because it seemed that the demonic woman was going to release her world spirits.

Furthermore, judging from her confident appearance, the world spirits that she would unleash would most likely be no small matter either. Likely, their strength would surpass even Chu Feng.

“Haha, little girl, this is interesting. You actually encountered such a difficult opponent among the people of the younger generation.”

Following the rumbling noises, an enormous figure walked out from that world spirit gate.

Sure enough, that world spirit was very powerful. Although it only possessed the cultivation of rank three Martial Ancestor, it possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

In other words, that world spirit's actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank six Martial Ancestors. He was one entire level of cultivation above the current Chu Feng.

However, to Chu Feng's greatest surprise, it was actually a Fairy Spirit World's World Spirit.

Not only was that demonic woman an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, the world spirits that she contracted were actually from the Fairy Spirit World.

[Demonic woman and fairy](#), this was simply an unimaginable combination.

After releasing her world spirit, the demonic woman did not attack Chu Feng immediately. Instead, she turned to question him,

“Hey, you got any more abilities left that could allow you to contend against this world spirit of mine?”

“What if I do, and what if I don’t?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s palms were on his Cosmos Sack. He was prepared to use his final trump card, the Evil God Sword.

“If you do, then go ahead and use them.”

“You are a rare opponent to come by. Thus, I am going to battle to my heart’s content today.”

“However, the one who will be defeated in the end will still be you,” The demonic woman said confidently.

Chu Feng frowned. He asked in a skeptical manner, “Are you certain that you are planning to give me time to unleash my abilities?”

“I am not a despicable person. If you have more abilities, go ahead and use them. I will give you the time,” The demonic woman said.

For some unknown reason, when that demonic woman said those words, Chu Feng felt a sort of unfathomable trust in her words.

Even though he felt it to be unfathomable, Chu Feng still moved his hand away from his Cosmos Sack, away from his Evil God Sword.

The reason for that was because if the demonic woman was willing to give Chu Feng time, then Chu Feng possessed another ability that could allow him to fight against that demonic woman. Furthermore, he was even more confident in being able to defeat the demonic woman with this method.

Furthermore, compared to the Evil God Sword, this method was much more secure.

As for that method, it was naturally the Five Elements Secret Skills.

The Gold Immortal Profound Technique.

The Wood Immortal Profound Technique.

The Water Immortal Profound Technique.

The Fire Immortal Profound Technique.

And the Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

At that moment, Chu Feng's cultivation was that of a rank five Martial Ancestor. If he were to utilize the Five Elements Secret Skills and unleash the Gold, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth Immortals, then, with their special ability, the strength of the Five Immortals would be one level of cultivation above Chu Feng's, making them rank six Martial Ancestors.

There was, however, a reason why Chu Feng did not unleash the Five Immortals from the Five Elements Secret Skills, and had even considered using the Evil God Sword before them.

The reason for that was because even though the Immortal Transformation Pellet had increased Chu Feng's cultivation and allowed him to use martial power and martial skills, there were still restrictions to it.

That sort of restriction was something that Chu Feng could not explain.

The reason for that was because secret skills like the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the White Tiger Slaughter Techniques were things that Chu Feng could use willingly.

In fact, he would even be able to utilize the characteristics of the Five Elements Secret Skills when being attacked to give himself an undying and indestructible body.

However, if he wanted to unleash the Five Immortals and have them fight for him, it would be very difficult.

It was not impossible, just very difficult.

If an explanation must be made, then perhaps it would be

because that method surpassed Chu Feng's cultivation by too much. As such, it was difficult for Chu Feng to unleash them.

After all, the Immortal Transformation Pellet had increased Chu Feng's cultivation from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank five Martial Ancestor. That was a total of ten levels of cultivation. That itself was already extremely miraculous.

Thus, it was reasonable for there to be certain restrictions.

Fortunately, while the Five Elements Secret Skills were hard to unleash, they were not impossible to unleash. It would merely be that Chu Feng would need more time to unleash them.

However, that demonic woman was actually willing to give him the time.

"Since you are willing to give me the time, I will unleash my technique," Chu Feng said.

"Go ahead. I will absolutely not mount a sneak attack at you," The demonic woman said. She even revealed an anticipating gaze.

She was truly looking forward to seeing what sort of ability Chu Feng would use next, and completely disregarded the pain brought upon her by the Demon Subduing Spring Water.

FBT originally translated it to fairy. However, it's actually Xian → Immortal; which is sometimes translated to celestial fairies (generally for the females. I have also translated it as such sometimes). I had kept it as Fairy for consistency.



# Chapter 2296 – The Tragic Death Of Wang Qiang

---

Actually, being given the advantage by the demonic woman like this, Chu Feng would feel that it would be an unfair victory even if he did manage to win.

However, this was the only opportunity Chu Feng had at defeating the demonic woman. Thus, Chu Feng must grasp it.

“Haaah!” Thinking of that, Chu Feng did not hesitate any longer. He shouted loudly, and then a majestic aura began to emanate from his body.

At that moment, the demonic woman’s eyes shone. Her lips were actually raised into a smile.

After Chu Feng shouted loudly, he closed his mouth and then opened it abruptly. Then, with a ‘puu,’ scarlet colored blood sprayed out from Chu Feng’s mouth like a pillar.

Seeing this scene, the demonic woman was stunned. Evidently, she was greatly surprised by Chu Feng’s sudden vomit of blood.

However, this was only the beginning.

After spraying out a mouthful of blood, blood began to flow from the corners of Chu Feng’s eyes, as well as his nose and ears.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression became exceptionally ugly. His aura also began to weaken and his entire body grew more and more unstable.

It was as if he was under enormous pressure, and was about to explode and die at any moment.

“Hey, what is with your condition?”

At that moment, even that demonic woman was unable to remain calm. The reason for that was because this simply did not

resemble Chu Feng using any ability. Instead, he was clearly mutilating himself.

“Girl, do not be careless,” Suddenly, the Fairy World Spirit summoned by that demonic woman warned her loudly.

The very next moment, Chu Feng’s clothes began to flutter. At the same time, five bodies of energy shot out from Chu Feng’s body.

Gold, wood, water, fire and earth.

After the five bodies of energy left Chu Feng’s body, they took humanoid forms. They turned into five enormous and extremely imposing Immortals.

Like celestial soldiers and divine generals, they stood before Chu Feng.

Those five were precisely the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, Wood Immortal Profound Technique, Water Immortal Profound Technique, Fire Immortal Profound Technique and Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

“These... are secret skills?”

When the demonic woman saw the Five Elements Secret Skills, she also revealed a shocked expression. After all, the five immortals currently possessed the cultivation of rank six Martial Ancestors.

Upon seeing the five immortals, that Fairy World Spirit gasped, “This is going to be a bit difficult now.”

“How is it? Can you handle them?” That demonic woman asked.

“They’re merely difficult. It doesn’t mean that I will not be able to handle them.”

“Crash~~~”

Immediately after saying those words, that Fairy World Spirit spread of its hands wide. Two golden-bright and dazzling long

whips appeared in his grasp.

“Pa, pa, pa~~~”

Immediately after that, the two golden whips began to whistle and spiral in the sky like two golden dragons.

Although the five immortals all possessed the cultivation of rank six Martial Ancestors now, they were actually unable to prevail against that Fairy World Spirit’s whips in the slightest.

They were completely restricted.

“This is bad. That demonic woman’s world spirit is actually stronger than I had anticipated. The five immortals will likely not be a match for it,” Sensing that the situation was bad, Chu Feng felt that it would be best that he take care of this matter himself.

The reason for that was because if the demonic woman were to be defeated, her world spirit would not be able to do anything anymore.

“Puu~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng took a step, he immediately felt that his blood was surging over. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt that his surroundings were swaying left and right. He had become dizzy, and his vision blurred. Not to mention fighting, even walking a single step had become extremely difficult.

“Damn it.”

Chu Feng gnashed his teeth angrily. He never expected there to be such an enormous burden on his body after using the Five Elements Secret Skills.

“It seems that you’ve paid considerably in order to unleash those five secret skills.”

“It is impossible for the current you to defeat me. Even though I

am being restricted by the Demon Subduing Spring Water, you will still not be able to defeat me,” The demonic woman said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

After hearing what the demonic woman said, Chu Feng’s frown grew deeper. Not only did this demonic woman possess overwhelming strength, her power of observation was also extremely strong. It was as if she had noticed what Chu Feng was planning before he even acted upon it.

“I have a question. Why do you insist on killing me? I seem to have had no conflicts with you before,” The demonic woman said.

“You killed my brother. Naturally, I will have to avenge him,” Chu Feng said.

“I have truly killed many people. However, among them, only a few left an impression. However, that brother of yours should likely not be an ordinary individual, right?” The demonic woman asked. Evidently, as she had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng, she became interested.

“Of course,” Chu Feng said.

“Then what sort of characteristics did your brother possess? Why don’t you tell me about it,” The demonic woman asked curiously.

Then, Chu Feng began to describe Wang Qiang’s characteristics to that demonic woman.

“It’s actually him?” Hearing those words, the demonic woman’s expression changed slightly. Evidently, she remembered Wang Qiang.

Chu Feng was not surprised. After all, compared to other people, Wang Qiang truly possessed many distinguishing features. He was the sort of person that would leave a deep impression on others.

“Did you eat him?” Chu Feng asked. At that moment, Chu Feng felt that it was impossible for him to defeat the demonic woman. Thus, he wanted to verify whether or not Wang Qiang was truly

dead.

“No, I felt that guy to be disgusting,” The demonic woman said.

“In that case, he’s still alive?” Hearing what the demonic woman said, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

“No, he’s dead. Furthermore, due to how vulgar he is, he has no doubt met a miserable death,” The demonic woman said.

“You killed him?” Chu Feng’s expression changed instantly. Boundless rage began to bubble up in his heart.

“I sliced off his flesh piece by piece while he was still alive. Then, I fed them to dogs.”

“After his flesh was all sliced off, I extracted all of his source energy. Thus, he died in miserable pain.”

“Thinking about his heart-tearing and lungs-splitting screams from that day, it is still a very pleasurable feeling.”

As that demonic woman said those words, she smiled in an overjoyed manner. It was as if what she had described was something that gave her immense pleasure.

From the appearance of the demonic woman, it appeared that she was not joking around.

At that moment, the scene of Wang Qiang dying miserably appeared in Chu Feng’s mind.

Anger filled Chu Feng’s heart, and killing intent started to soar.

“I’ll kill you!”

After a loud shout of anger, the weather started to change. Chu Feng’s body moved. He passed by the battle between the five immortals and that world spirit. Like a humanoid beast that carried intense killing intent, Chu Feng rushed rapidly toward that demonic woman.

Chu Feng’s speed was so fast that he arrived before that demonic

woman in an instant.

With his Magma Emperor Sword in hand, Chu Feng slashed at the demonic woman.

“You?”

Seeing the current Chu Feng, the demonic woman had an astonished expression.

The way she saw it, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to unleash such overwhelming power with how seriously injured he was.

However, Chu Feng had accomplished exactly that feat. He had managed to accomplish it through anger.

In other words, Chu Feng had forgotten about the enormous pain of his body because of the anger caused by Wang Qiang’s death. He disregarded everything, and unleashed strength what should have been impossible for him to unleash.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword was about to hack down toward the demonic woman, a world spirit gate appeared before the demonic woman.

At the moment when Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword hacked down toward the demonic woman, a giant hand extended out from that world spirit gate and grabbed Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword.

“This?”

At that moment, Chu Feng was greatly alarmed. Even though it was merely a hand, and had not completely unleashed all of its aura, Chu Feng was able to sense that the world spirit from this world spirit gate possessed strength that surpassed his own.

“Oh no, someone’s coming.”

Suddenly, the demonic woman’s gaze flashed. She took a serious

glance toward the distance. Then, she turned to Chu Feng and smiled lightly.

She said, “I have remembered your appearance. I am only letting you live for a while longer. The next time we meet shall be the time of your death.”

“Woosh~~~”

After the demonic woman finished saying those words, she smiled meaningfully at Chu Feng. Then, she turned around and started flying away.

At the same time, the world spirit that the demonic woman let out earlier also left with her.

As for the world spirit that had blocked Chu Feng’s sword strike, it did not appear. Instead, after the demonic woman turned to leave, it returned to its world spirit gate.

Chu Feng looked to the direction where the demonic woman had left. However, he did not give chase.

The reason for that was because he knew he was no match for that demonic woman.

If he decided to chase after her, he would undoubtedly be killed.

## Chapter 2297 – Court Cloud Sect

---

The demonic woman left. Her figure had disappeared completely.

However, Chu Feng continued to stand there. He looked to the direction that the demonic woman had disappeared in and remained stunned for a long period of time.

He was defeated. Without a doubt, the result of the battle was Chu Feng's defeat.

Furthermore, according to Chu Feng's observation, the demonic woman didn't seem to be very old; her age was about the same as Chu Feng's.

In other words, today, not only was Chu Feng defeated by a member of the same generation, he was also defeated by a person of similar age to his own.

Although that demonic woman could not exactly be considered to be human, it remained that her age was present right before him.

Thus, being defeated in that battle was a blow to Chu Feng's ego.

However, the greatest blow to Chu Feng was the fact that he was unable to avenge Wang Qiang.

◦

After the effect of the Immortal Transformation Pellet disappeared, Chu Feng would return to his true level of cultivation of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. There was truly too enormous of a difference between him and the demonic woman.

Thus, while Chu Feng could continue to cultivate and meticulously train to increase his strength, the demonic woman possessed a talent that was not inferior to his own. As such, her cultivation would most definitely also continue to increase.

With the performance exhibited by the demonic woman right now, it would truly be very unlikely for Chu Feng to be able to



surpass her. At the very least, it would be very difficult for Chu Feng to do so in a short period of time.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally felt the threat of a genius of a fellow member of the younger generation in the Outer World.

Sure enough, there were demon-level geniuses as powerful as or even stronger than Chu Feng in the Outer World.

“Young Hero, are you alright?”

After a short while, several tens of figures arrived from the direction where those men and women escaped to.

These people were all elderly individuals. Their cultivations were generally all at the Martial Ancestor level. The old man who lead the group was even a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Judging from the title plates on their waists, as well as the clothes that they were wearing, Chu Feng knew that these people should be from the same power as those men and women.

“Young Hero, it is a pleasure to meet you. I am the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master, Guo Shun.”

The old man with the cultivation of rank five Martial Ancestor that led the group was very polite toward Chu Feng as he asked cautiously, “Young Hero, you were the one who beat back that demonic woman earlier, right?”

As for those elders from the Court Cloud Sect, they were all trembling with fear. In fact, they did not even dare to look Chu Feng in the face or show any bit of disrespect toward him.

After all, Chu Feng’s current cultivation was that of a rank five Martial Ancestor. Regardless of how seriously injured he might be, or how strong his battle power might be, his cultivation was still right before their eyes.

As for the five immortals beside Chu Feng, they were rank six Martial Ancestors; they were existences stronger than even their

Sect Master. As such, they would naturally be in fear before that sort of power, and not dare to show the slightest trace of disrespect.

“It is I who was fighting against that demonic woman earlier,” Chu Feng spoke the truth. There was no need for him to hide something like that. Furthermore, those disciples from the Court Cloud Sect had also seen the battle between Chu Feng and the demonic woman earlier.

“Young Hero is truly powerful. Our Court Cloud Sect has been chasing after that demonic woman for a very long time. However, we have never been able to capture her. Every single time, we would end up letting her escape without even the opportunity to fight her head-on.”

“Young Hero, you should have just entered this place recently. Yet, you were able to obstruct that demonic woman and even fight against her. You are truly amazing,” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said.

“That demonic woman is very powerful. It might be fortunate that you all were unable to stop her. Else, if you all were to force her into a corner, none of you would be a match for her,” Chu Feng said.

When Chu Feng mentioned that matter, the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master sighed. Although he did not say anything, he had an awkward expression on his old face.

As for Chu Feng, he did not say anything more and prepared to leave.

“Wuu~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng took a step, his complexion immediately changed as an unbearable pain rushed through his entire body.

The reason why he had been able to attack the demonic woman

earlier was because his pain had been temporarily shadowed by the killing intent to avenge his brother.

However, Chu Feng no longer possessed that overwhelming killing intent. As such, he had returned to a state of being unable to move his body properly.

“Young Hero, it seems to me that you are seriously injured. If you do not mind, what do you think about coming to our Court Cloud Sect to recuperate?” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said to Chu Feng.

The subordinates of his, the elders from the Court Cloud Sect, were quite discerning individuals. Once their Sect Master spoke, they immediately took out a war chariot. They wanted to use the war chariot to drive Chu Feng around.

“I’ll have to trouble you all then.”

Chu Feng was able to tell that the people of the Court Cloud Sect were sincere. Furthermore, he was indeed extremely weak. When the effect of the Immortal Transformation Pellet ended, Chu Feng would end up in an even more miserable state.

Thus, rather than recovering from his injuries in the wilderness, he felt that it would be better that he recuperate at the Court Cloud Sect. At the very least, the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master was a rank five Martial Ancestor. In times of crisis, he would be able to protect Chu Feng.

After entering the war chariot, the effects of Chu Feng’s Immortal Transformation Pellet soon wore off.

The people of the Court Cloud Sect were all astonished when Chu Feng’s cultivation returned from rank five Martial Ancestor to rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Young Hero, your cultivation?” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master directly asked Chu Feng out of curiosity.

“This is my actual cultivation. However, I possess the means to

increase my cultivation to rank five Martial Ancestor instantly. As for the five rank six Martial Ancestors you all saw earlier, they too are one of my abilities.”

Chu Feng did not try to conceal the matter. The reason for that was because he knew that the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master was no ordinary character. Even if Chu Feng wanted to conceal things from him, he would not be able to.

However, Chu Feng did not mention the fact that he had already lost the ability to increase his cultivation. The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew very well that these people from the Court Cloud Sect were afraid of him precisely because of his earlier cultivation of rank five Martial Ancestor.

Thus, Chu Feng wanted them to think that he would be able to increase his cultivation to what he previously had immediately should he wish to do so.

Only by doing that would he be able to continue to give the people of the Court Cloud Sect a sense of danger. Only by doing that would Chu Feng be able to feel safer.

“Young Hero possesses outstanding strength at such a young age. You are truly worthy of admiration.”

“There have been extremely few people in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of accomplishing what Young Hero has.”

“May I know Young Hero’s distinguished name?” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master asked.

“Chu Feng,” Chu Feng did not try to conceal his name.

“Chu Feng?” Hearing that name, the people from the Court Cloud Sect were all astonished. Involuntarily, they began to carefully inspect Chu Feng.

“Young Hero, are you that Chu Feng that killed Ying Liangchen, and is wanted by the Ying Heavenly Clan?” The Court Cloud Sect’s

Sect Master asked.

“Precisely,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Young Hero is truly a courageous individual. That Ying Liangchen is someone who has done all sorts of evil. It is only because he was shielded by the Ying Heavenly Clan that no one dared to do anything to him.”

“For Young Hero Chu Feng to have killed him, you have truly helped eliminate evil for the people of the world. You have helped many people release their resentments,” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master praised.

After finding out about Chu Feng’s identity, the people from the Court Cloud Sect felt less alarmed and afraid of Chu Feng. Instead, they became more cordial and respectful of Chu Feng.

However, due to the fact that Chu Feng was injured, they did not chat with Chu Feng for long. Instead, they began to take care of Chu Feng more considerately.

After arriving at the Court Cloud Sect, Chu Feng asked that he be left alone to treat his injuries. Thus, the Court Cloud Sect prepared a private location for Chu Feng to recuperate.

At that moment, the disciples of the Court Cloud Sect were already in an utter uproar.

It turned out that the disciples that had encountered Chu Feng just so happened to run into their Sect Master and elders on their way back. That was the reason why they were able to arrive at the battle between Chu Feng and the demonic woman so quickly.

After those disciples returned, while the male disciples were fine, the female disciples were unable to sit tight. They began to proclaim how powerful and great Chu Feng was.

At that moment, practically all of the Court Cloud Sect’s core disciples were discussing Chu Feng. The female disciples began to feel endless adoration for Chu Feng.

Of course, they still didn't know Chu Feng's identity yet.

At the same time. Inside the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master's palace. That Lord Sect Master had a change in expression.

He no longer possessed the cordial and benevolent expression that he had displayed previously. Instead, his eyes were ice-cold as he looked to the direction of the location where Chu Feng was recuperating.

"Lord Sect Master, we have already received the wanted portraits issued by the Ying Heavenly Clan," An elder handed a portrait to the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master.

The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master opened the picture scroll. Upon looking at it, he immediately revealed a joyous expression.

"Sure enough, it is him," At that moment, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master revealed a smile of greed.

"Lord Sect Master, you truly plan to hand that Chu Feng to the Ying Heavenly Clan?" That elder asked.

"That Chu Feng is extremely valuable. I naturally cannot let such a great opportunity slip by," The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said.

"But, Lord Sect Master, other than Chu Feng's portraits that the Ying Heavenly Clan has dispatched to the various sects and schools, we have also just received another piece of news," The elder said.

"What sort of news?" The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master asked casually.

"The Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley have said that they will support Chu Feng. They have declared that if the Ying Heavenly Clan insists on attacking Chu Feng, they are willing to declare war on the Ying Heavenly Clan for Chu Feng," That elder said.

“What?” Hearing those words, the smile on the face of the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master instantly froze.

# Chapter 2298 – Hopeless Situation

---

Silence. Dead silence.

The silence lasted for a very long time. Then, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master finally spoke, "Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley, those two are second tier powers not inferior to the Ying Heavenly Clan. Among the second tier powers, they are extremely well-known."

"That's right. Lord Sect Master, if the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley were to find out that we handed Chu Feng to the Ying Heavenly Clan, they will likely not spare us," That elder said.

"That will indeed be the case if they were to find out about it. However, wouldn't it be fine if they didn't find out about it?"

"Furthermore, how could we allow others to know about something like this? This should be kept a secret to begin with," The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said.

"However, Lord Sect Master, that Chu Feng possesses some sort of ability that allowed him to compete against that demonic woman. I fear that... it will be very hard for us to take care of him," That elder said.

"I know about that even without you telling me about it. However, I already have a thorough plan," The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said.

"Lord Sect Master, what sort of plan do you have in mind?" That elder asked.

"Demonic woman," The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said.

"Demonic woman?" Hearing those two words, the elder revealed a startled expression. However, his expression soon turned to one of astonishment. Worried, he said, "Lord Sect Master, could it be that you're planning to find that demonic woman and have her



take care of Chu Feng?”

“Precisely,” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said.

“But, Lord Sect Master, we are enemies with that demonic woman, how could she be willing to help us?” That elder was unable to think of a reason why that demonic woman would help them.

“Could it be that you’ve forgotten what we were supposed to do today?” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said.

“How could this subordinate forget that we have already discovered the hideout of that demonic woman? We were planning to inform the other powers so that we could join forces to suppress the demonic woman,” That elder replied.

“Wrong. Not only did we find out the hideout of that demonic woman, we also discovered the reason why she has lingered around this place the entire time.”

“This, this is a cooperation. I believe that demonic woman will agree to help us,” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said confidently.

“Then, Lord Sect Master, who do you plan to dispatch to discuss this matter with that demonic woman?” That elder asked.

“You do not have to worry about this matter, as I have already sent someone over,” The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master said.

In response, that elder did not continue to ask. However, he was still worried.

.....

By forcibly using the Five Elements Secret Skills when his body was under restrictions, Chu Feng ended up damaging his body considerably.

Even though Chu Feng possessed exquisite mastery in world spirit techniques, it still took him several days to completely heal

his injuries.

After he completely cured himself from his injuries, Chu Feng walked out from the private residence provided by the Court Cloud Sect.

Merely, at that time, Chu Feng still didn't know that the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was plotting against him.

Thus, out of courtesy, Chu Feng went to inform the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master of his intention to leave.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, you're planning to leave?" After finding out that Chu Feng was planning to leave, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master started to panic slightly.

After all, the person that he had dispatched to request the demonic woman's assistance had yet to return. If Chu Feng were to insist on leaving now, it would be impossible for them to forcibly detain him.

The reason for that was because he firmly believed that Chu Feng was able to increase his strength from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank five Martial Ancestor at will. As such, he did not dare to forcibly obstruct Chu Feng.

Suddenly, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master thought of a great idea. Thus, with a difficult expression, he asked Chu Feng, "Young Hero Chu Feng, are you an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?"

"I am indeed an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist right now. However, I am only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist," Chu Feng said modestly.

"Even if you're only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it remains that you are extremely extraordinary. After all, you are still so young," The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master praised. At the same time, he revealed a complicated expression.

The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master had lived for over ten thousand years. He was someone who had a lot of experience

under his belt, and was a master of disguise.

Although he had wanted to take care of Chu Feng the moment he discovered Chu Feng's identity, Chu Feng, who had always judged others by their words and expressions, was simply unable to see through how dangerous this old man really was.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was hesitant as he spoke; it was as if he had something to ask of Chu Feng. Thus, out of gratefulness, Chu Feng asked, "Could it be that Sect Master has something that you need my assistance with?"

"There is indeed something that I wish to request Young Hero Chu Feng's assistance with. Earlier, when we were chasing after that demonic woman, we accidentally entered the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. That place is a forbidden area."

"Many of my elders ended up being infected by some sort of strange illness after entering that place. We were unable to cure them no matter what we tried. Right now, their lives are in imminent danger. Thus..." The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said.

"Sect Master, please bring me to them," Chu Feng said straightforwardly.

After that, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master brought Chu Feng to a location. There were indeed several tens of elderly individuals there. All of them were suffering from some serious illness. If their illness was not treated immediately, they would indeed die.

Furthermore, those elders all possessed strong levels of cultivation; they were all Martial Ancestors. Among them were even ten rank four Martial Ancestors.

The strongest person among them was an individual with the same level of cultivation as the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master, a rank five Martial Ancestor. However, his illness was also the most

serious among the group.

Later on, Chu Feng discovered that this rank five Martial Ancestor old man was actually the Court Cloud Sect's Head Law Enforcement Elder, one of the strongest battle powers of the Court Cloud Sect.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, how is it? Can they be cured?" The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master asked.

"I can give it a try," Chu Feng said.

After that, Chu Feng began to help treat the illness of those Court Cloud Sect's elders.

After several days of effort, Chu Feng finally managed to develop a method to cure their illness.

He ended up successfully curing the illness of those Court Cloud Sect's elders.

Those people that were cured were all extremely grateful toward Chu Feng. Some even teared up in gratitude. After all, what Chu Feng had done was akin to saving their lives.

For the sake of delaying Chu Feng longer, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master held a banquet. On the surface, it was to express his gratitude toward Chu Feng. However, he was actually stalling for time.

Merely, the banquet was held in secret. In fact, even the news of those elders' illness being cured was not spread out.

This... allowed Chu Feng to notice that something was amiss.

When a good occasion like the one at present happened, why did they not publicize it?

Unless there was something shameful that they could not allow to come to light.

Furthermore, at the banquet, an elder rushed into the banquet hurriedly. He ran over to the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master's side

and whispered a voice transmission into his ear.

Not only was he whispering, the distance between them was simply too close. As such, even though Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he was unable to determine the content of their conversation.

However, as suspicion was already present in Chu Feng's heart, he fixed his eyes onto the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master the entire time. With how seriously focused he was, Chu Feng finally found a gap in his expression.

Chu Feng noticed a sinister smile on the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master's face.

That smile immediately caused Chu Feng's heart to tighten.

Chu Feng stood up and asked, "Excuse me. I need to go and relieve myself. Is there anyone that can show me the way?"

"Young Hero Chu Feng, I'll show you the way," An elder walked over to Chu Feng enthusiastically. He had no idea of the plan their Sect Master had in mind for Chu Feng. Furthermore, he was also one of the elders whose illness was cured by Chu Feng. Thus, he was extremely grateful toward Chu Feng.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, you are not only a martial cultivator, but also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. You couldn't possibly be unable to even restrain your urge to urinate, right?" However, right at that moment, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master stood up and intentionally stopped Chu Feng from leaving.

"Heh..." At that moment, Chu Feng laughed. He had verified that the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master did not hold good intentions toward him.

"An honest man will not resort to insinuations. Lord Sect Master, you're planning to hand me over to the Ying Heavenly Clan to receive rewards, right?" Chu Feng asked loudly.

"What?" Once Chu Feng's words were said, many of the elders

present revealed a change in expression. This was especially true for those that were cured by Chu Feng. Their expressions turned ugly.

“Sect Master, what is going on?” In fact, that Head Elder of the Law Enforcement Department even spoke to question their Sect Master.

They were all able to tell that something fishy was going on. They realized that their Sect Master seemed to be conspiring against their savior.

Actually, the reason why Chu Feng said those words publicly was also as a means of self-preservation.

No matter what, Chu Feng had saved the lives of these individuals. If those people here possessed a conscience, they would not follow their Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master.

Furthermore, that Head Law Enforcement Elder possessed the same level of cultivation as the Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master. Thus, it was still not yet a hopeless situation for Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2299 – Leaving None Alive

---

When it was discovered that the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master seemed to have ill intentions toward Chu Feng, those that were cured by Chu Feng revealed extremely astonished expressions.

This was especially true for that Head Law Enforcement Elder, who possessed the same level of cultivation as the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master; he revealed fury.

However, faced with such a situation, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was extremely calm. He said, "You all have been ill the entire time. Thus, you all do not know about a piece of news."

"That Chu Feng has killed Ying Liangchen. Who is Ying Liangchen? He is the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's most beloved son."

"Right now, the Ying Heavenly Clan has already sent out a wanted order. They are planning to kill that Chu Feng with no regard for anything."

"If anyone is capable of presenting that Chu Feng's head to them, they will be rewarded heavily."

Upon hearing the words spoken by the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master, the expressions of the crowd changed once again. Even that Head Law Enforcement Elder's gaze turned strange.

"That child possesses extraordinary power, and is capable of fighting against that demonic woman. I fear that I will not be able to handle him alone. Elders, are you all willing to help me capture him?" The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master continued.

Upon hearing those words, the elders led by the Head Law Enforcement Elder revealed even more complicated expressions.

"Could it be that you all are truly planning to repay your benefactor with ill?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, that Head Law Enforcement Elder flipped his palm. Then, an Incomplete Ancestral Armament appeared in his hand.

Merely, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament was not aimed at the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master. Instead, it was aimed at Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I am truly sorry, but the benefits toward our sect surpass everything. Please excuse my offense,” The Head Law Enforcement Elder said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Immediately after him, all of the elders that were cured by Chu Feng unleashed their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, all aimed at Chu Feng.

“Haha, Chu Feng, your intention to sow dissension is useless against our Court Cloud Sect,” At that moment, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master laughed complacently. He seemed to have already anticipated that such a thing would happen.

“You all are surely jackals of the same tribe. Very well,” Chu Feng had not expected this result. He had not anticipated that the people he had saved would immediately aim their weapons at him after finding out that they would gain enormously from killing him.

At that moment, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization that this Court Cloud Sect was not only a sect that possessed a Sect Master that was an expert at acting, their elders were also expert actors.

When it didn't concern their interests, they would appear to be affectionate and true. It was as if they would definitely show absolute sincerity the moment something happened.

However, when something really did happen, when they were faced with their personal interests, they would immediately expose their true selves. For their own benefit, they were willing to abandon camaraderie. They were a bunch of heartless vile



characters, a bunch of hypocrites.

Chu Feng felt hatred. His hatred was not only aimed toward these people, it was also aimed at himself.

He had always been someone with very strong perception. However, this time around, he had misjudged.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng did not reveal the slightest bit of panic.

Furthermore, his lips were raised into a mocking smile. He said, "Did you all really think that you would be able to handle me?"

Chu Feng's smile caused not only those elders, but even the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master's body, to shiver. A trace of fear appeared in their eyes.

No matter what, Chu Feng was someone who was able to fight against that demonic woman. They knew very well how powerful that demonic woman was.

Thus, even though the Chu Feng who stood before them was merely a young man, he was actually an existence as frightening as that demonic woman.

Chu Feng was able to see through their cowardice. Thus, he continued on with his attack. He turned around and shouted with overwhelming anger, "All of you, move aside immediately. Else, do not blame me for unleashing a massacre!"

Once Chu Feng's angry shout was heard, the bodies of those guarding the gate all trembled in fear. Then, they actually powerlessly fell on their butts.

In that sort of situation, no one dared to stop Chu Feng. One by one, they hurriedly moved away. Soon, a path was made for Chu Feng.

They were truly scared. Although their acting ability was superb, Chu Feng's acting ability was even better. At the very least, Chu

Feng's acting right now was utterly perfect.

It was as if he was truly still capable of increasing his cultivation from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank five Martial Ancestor again.

It was as if he would truly be able to massacre all of them, leaving none alive, should he wish to do so.

“Heh...”

Chu Feng laughed again. Then, he walked slowly toward the outside of the palace hall. However, no one dared to block him.

Of course, Chu Feng had to appear to be calm. He could not fly away immediately. He could not express any intention to leave that place immediately.

Else, he would undoubtedly be killed if any one of the people present decided to attack him. After all... Chu Feng's cultivation was truly only that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor right now.

Even if Chu Feng were to utilize all of his abilities, he would only be able to contend against ordinary rank nine Half Martial Ancestors. He was still unable to match against Martial Ancestors, much less the two rank five Martial Ancestors present.

“Chu Feng, it is true that our Court Cloud Sect will not be able to stop you.”

“However, since I have dared to reveal myself, that means that I have one hundred percent certainty in being able to detain you here.”

“Today, no matter what you try, you will definitely not be able to escape from here!” The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master declared loudly.

Immediately after he finished saying that, he shouted respectfully, “Please reveal yourself and help us take care of that child!!!”

After the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said those words, a figure suddenly appeared. That person stood before the entrance to the palace, blocking Chu Feng's way out.

"It's you?" Chu Feng started to frown upon seeing that person. The reason for that was because this person was none other than that demonic woman.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk. Chu Feng, you must have never expected that we would meet again so soon, right?" That demonic woman looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

Merely, her gaze caused Chu Feng to feel extremely unwell. He felt as if he was a lamb in a tiger's den.

"Hahaha. Chu Feng, do you now know why I said that I would definitely be able to make you stay?" After that demonic woman appeared, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master burst into a loud and complacent laugh.

"You all actually decided to collaborate with this demonic woman for the sake of taking care of me? Or could it be that you all were accomplices of this demonic woman to begin with?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

"You're right. We have joined hands with that demonic woman for the sake of taking care of you."

"However, that is already not important. What is important is that you will definitely be killed," After the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master said those words, he turned to the demonic woman and said, "Please go ahead and take care of that Chu Feng. I will definitely be able to obtain what you want for you."

That Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was extremely respectful toward the demonic woman. In fact, he even appeared [to give off a trace of submissiveness](#).

At that moment, the demonic woman smiled lightly. She turned around, looked to the outside of the palace and said, "Court Cloud

Sect's disciples, have you all managed to see the true identity of the Sect Master and management elders that you all revere? What sort of feeling do you all have right now?"

"Mn?" Once the demonic woman said those words, the expressions of the people from the Court Cloud Sect all changed.

"That is?" Chu Feng noticed that something was amiss. He discovered that there was a spirit formation in the direction the demonic woman was speaking in.

Although Chu Feng had a calm appearance, his heart was actually in chaos. That was the reason why he only noticed that spirit formation at that moment.

As for that spirit formation, it should have been set up by that demonic woman. The reason for that was because it was a spirit formation that only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist could set up.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, the demonic woman waved her sleeve. Then, the space before her shattered like a mirror.

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had discovered, there was indeed a spirit formation there. Furthermore, it was a very powerful concealing formation.

After that spirit formation shattered, over ten thousand silhouettes appeared in a densely packed manner. They were all disciples of the Court Cloud Sect.

At that moment, those disciples all had astonished expressions. Evidently... they had seen what happened in the palace hall. Merely, they did not dare to believe what had happened.

After all, in the eyes of the Court Cloud Sect's disciples, their Sect Master and management elders were people who held righteousness above everything else, people with affectionate and true characters. In their hearts, they were sacred and inviolable.

That was why this truth was so difficult for them to accept.

“Demonic woman, what are you doing?!”

The Court Cloud Sect’s Sect Master had an expression of anger. He was extremely furious.

It was not only because his disciples had found out about his actions. Most importantly, it meant that the matter would most likely be inconcealable. If news of what had happened here today were to spread, his reputation would be completely ruined.

“What am I doing? You will soon find out.”

The demonic woman’s lips lifted slightly into a strange yet sinister smile. Then, a world spirit gate appeared before her.

Following that, a world spirit walked out from the world spirit gate.

It was the same Fairy Spirit World’s world spirit that Chu Feng had encountered that day.

Although that world spirit only possessed the cultivation of a rank three Martial Ancestor, it possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Its actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank six Martial Ancestors. It was extremely strong.

Thus, when that world spirit appeared, many of the people in the Court Cloud Sect revealed frightened expressions. It was not the first time that they had seen that world spirit. As such, they firmly remembered how powerful that world spirit was.

At the very least, none of them were capable of defeating that world spirit. At the moment when their hearts were suspended with fear, a word from that demonic woman caused their hearts to sink completely.

“Massacre them. Leave none alive,” The demonic woman said indifferently.

He referred to that demonic woman as ‘nin’ instead of ‘ni.’ ‘Ni’ is chinese for ‘you’, whereas ‘nin’ means ‘you’ in a very respectful manner. 您 is basically a compound character composed of 你 ‘you’ and 心 ‘heart.’

# Chapter 2300 – Bring Me Away

---

Blood splattered as screams were heard nonstop.

That Fairy World Spirit was currently unleashing a massacre.

Although it was covered with immortal aura, that Fairy World Spirit resembled a demon even more. It was so firm and decisive in its killing that it could simply be said to be ruthless.

The reason for that was because not only was it killing the people present in the palace hall, it had also completely refined all of their source energies.

This Immortal World Spirit was truly too powerful. In the blink of an eye, it had killed over half of the people inside the palace hall. Then, a short moment after that, only a single person remained standing. As for that person, he was the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master.

As he looked at the corpses that filled the ground, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master started to tremble.

Suddenly, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master looked to the demonic woman and shouted hysterically. That voice was so resounding that even the palace hall started to tremble.

“Why?! Why are you doing this?!”

However, contained within his resounding shout was mostly unwillingness to accept.

He was confused. They were clearly going to join hands with the demonic woman to behead Chu Feng. Yet, why did that demonic woman attack them instead?

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, a pool of blood splattered across the floor. The Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was cut into two.

He had died. At the moment when his body was hacked into two,

that Fairy World Spirit refined his source energy. Thus, the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was completely killed.

Even though the Court Cloud Sect's Sect Master was dead, his eyes were still wide open. He had died with remaining grievances.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that Fairy World Spirit suddenly turned around. In an extremely imposing manner, it began to slowly walk toward Chu Feng one step at a time.

At that moment, it would be a lie if Chu Feng were to say that he was not scared. After all, that world spirit was capable of killing him with a single thought.

However, that Fairy World Spirit did not attack Chu Feng. Instead, it brushed past Chu Feng and then walked into its world spirit gate.

“You're not killing me?” Chu Feng asked that demonic woman.

“Do you wish to know why? If you do, follow me,” That demonic woman smiled lightly. Then, she soared into the sky.

“Demonic woman, I'll kill you!” Right after the demonic woman soared into the sky, many of the Court Cloud Sect's elders rushed after her with weapons in hand.

“Pu, pu, pu, pu, pu~~~”

Faced with these incoming attackers, the demonic woman did not even bother to move.

A layer of oppressive might came crushing down toward her attackers like an enormous wave. All the people that came in contact with that oppressive might instantly exploded.

Blood filled the sky and began to sprinkle down like a torrential rain.

“Is there anyone else that wishes to die?” That demonic woman turned her cold and ridiculing gaze toward the crowd of the Court



Cloud Sect down below.

Faced with the demonic woman's frightening gaze and the blood rain that was still sprinkling down, not a single disciple or elder dared to look the demonic woman in the face.

"If anyone else wishes to find me to get revenge, you can come and find me any time. However, I will kill all those that come at me," After that demonic woman finished saying those words, she flew away from the Court Cloud Sect. Chu Feng followed after her.

It was truly too strange for that demonic woman to kill those people from the Court Cloud Sect, yet not Chu Feng.

As such, Chu Feng wanted to know exactly why she had done so.

En route, that demonic woman suddenly turned around and said to Chu Feng, "Are you unable to increase your cultivation? This is very slow."

"If you think that I'm too slow, why don't you bring me along? Why must you insist that I follow after you?" Chu Feng said. His tone was not polite. No matter what, that demonic woman was the person who had killed Wang Qiang. He was unable to lessen the hatred he held toward her.

"You dare to speak to me in such a manner? No matter what, I am a demonic woman. Do you not fear that I will eat you?" The demonic woman said with a ferocious appearance.

"You can eat me. However, tell me why you helped me first," Chu Feng said.

"Are you certain that I've helped you?" The demonic woman asked.

"I am certain," Chu Feng replied.

"You will soon know why," The demonic woman smiled. Then, with a thought, a gentle aura enveloped Chu Feng.

The very next moment, Chu Feng felt that his speed had

increased enormously. It was the demonic woman; she was bringing him along.

Outside of the Fallen Goose Mountain Range was another small mountain range. There was a very well-hidden concealment formation in that small mountain range.

After passing through the spirit formation, they arrived at a cave. As they followed the path in the cave, they encountered countless traps.

However, the demonic woman managed to effortlessly dodge all of the traps. None of them were triggered.

Chu Feng was able to tell that the demonic woman should be the person who set up those traps.

After entering deep into the cave, another spirit formation appeared.

“That is?!!!”

Upon seeing that spirit formation, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. An ecstatic expression immediately appeared in his eyes.

The reason for that was because that was a healing formation. Furthermore, it was an extremely powerful healing formation.

The reason why Chu Feng was so ecstatic was because there was an individual laid inside that healing formation. As for that person, it was none other than Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang had not died. Furthermore, his cultivation had also increased. He was currently a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Merely, Wang Qiang’s body was pitch-black. It was as if he was stained by black ink. It seemed that he had been afflicted with some kind of poison. Thus, not only was he unconscious, his complexion was also very bad.

“Didn’t you say that he died? Why did you deceive me?” Chu

Feng asked that demonic woman.

“I wanted to deceive you, that’s why. What are you gonna do about it?” The demonic woman said.

“You!!!” Chu Feng was extremely furious facing such a demonic woman. However, he still continued to ask, “What is he poisoned with?”

“The poison he’s afflicted by is somewhat difficult to deal with. Only the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass will be able to treat him.”

“As for the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass, it only appears in the Fallen Goose Mountain Range. Originally, I had already managed to find one. Unfortunately, it was snatched from me by that damned old fart,” When mentioning that matter, the demonic woman started to gnash her teeth angrily. Her ugly appearance grew even more sinister. It was truly frightening.

“Could it possibly be that you’ve lingered around those areas on the Fallen Goose Mountain Range all for the sake of finding that Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass? Furthermore, your purpose in finding the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was to help save Wang Qiang?” Chu Feng asked in an astonished manner.

“Rubbish! Why else would I be here?” That demonic woman said.

“But, why are you saving him?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

If he were to save Wang Qiang, it would be very reasonable. After all, Wang Qiang could be considered to be his brother.

However, this demonic woman was the person who had captured Wang Qiang to eat him.

The fact that she had not eaten Wang Qiang was already extremely strange. Yet, she had actually disregarded her own safety in braving dangers for the sake of helping Wang Qiang remove the poison. This was something that Chu Feng felt extremely puzzled by.

“Why am I saving him? As he is my husband, I would naturally have to save him,” The demonic woman said with her mouth wide open.

“Wha?” Chu Feng immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air upon hearing those words. He who was always calm was actually astonished this time around.

He only managed to stabilize his frame of mind after a long time passed. He asked, “You said that Wang Qiang is your husband?”

“Rubbish! Other than my husband, who else could possibly make me treat them in such a manner?” After that demonic woman finished saying those words, she took a glance at Wang Qiang. After that glance, she made an embarrassed and shy motion.

If an ordinary woman did that action, they might appear to be extremely cute. If a beauty did that, they would not only be cute, but also extremely enchanting.

However, when this demonic woman made that action, goosebumps rose all over Chu Feng’s body.

It was for no other reason than the fact that this demonic woman was simply too ugly. It was only because Chu Feng possessed strong tolerance; if it were someone else, they would most definitely have vomited on the spot.

At that moment, Chu Feng involuntarily looked to Wang Qiang. He felt a trace of sympathy for Wang Qiang.

At that moment, compared to finding out about how Wang Qiang had been poisoned, Chu Feng was more interested in knowing how Wang Qiang became this demonic woman’s husband. This matter was truly too intense.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that demonic woman’s hands crossed with one another. She was forming hand seals for a spirit formation.

Then, a spirit formation core appeared together with that healing formation.

“Chu Feng, it remains that you are an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. If you are to stay here and activate this spirit formation, you will be able to let my husband feel better.”

“I will go and search for the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass,” After that demonic woman finished saying those words, she turned and left. However, she only walked away for a short distance before she turned back toward Chu Feng. With a threatening tone, she declared, “You must look after my husband properly. If something is to happen to him, I will definitely not spare you.”

“Woosh~~~”

After she finished saying those words, that demonic woman turned into a burst of strong wind and disappeared.

After that demonic woman left, Chu Feng had originally wanted to enter the core of the spirit formation to activate the spirit formation to help alleviate the pain Wang Qiang was feeling from the poison.

“Chu Feng,” However, right at that moment, Wang Qiang’s voice suddenly sounded.

Turning his gaze toward the voice, Chu Feng discovered that not only was Wang Qiang awake, he was also looking at him.

With an impatient expression, he said to Chu Feng, “Quickly, bring me away.”

## Chapter 2301 – Wang Qiang’s Experience

---

“Wang Qiang, you were pretending to be unconscious?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment.

“B-bullshit. If I d-don’t pretend to be u-u-unconscious, that ugly woman will c-continue to torture me,” Wang Qiang said.

“Ugly woman?” Hearing what Wang Qiang said, Chu Feng was startled. Then, he asked, “Aren’t you her husband?”

“Pah! Pah! Pah! Wh-who is her husband?! C-Chu Feng, q-quickly bring me a-away from her. Else, I w-will definitely die by that ugly w-woman’s hands,” Wang Qiang urged.

“Even if you are not her husband, it is true that you are afflicted with poison.”

“Furthermore, I also cannot find a way to rescue you. If we are to leave like this, you might end up dying to your poison at any time,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? I-In that case, I w-will really e-end up d-dying by that u-u-ugly woman’s hands?”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang revealed a dejected expression, and then sat down in the center of the spirit formation. Then, his mouth opened wide and tears began to roll down his eyes. He was truly depressed.

“Wang Qiang, exactly what is going on here? How were you poisoned, and why does that demonic woman address you as her husband? Furthermore, why does she treat you so well?” Chu Feng asked in succession. He was truly curious.

“B-back then, I was c-captured by the demonic woman. I d-did not e-expect her to be so r-r-ruthless. She s-started e-eating people alive!”

“All those c-captured t-together with me ended up b-being eaten,

eaten a-alive by her.”

“At t-that time, I w-was extremely terrified, because I c-could not win a-against her, n-nor could I e-escape from her.”

“If it w-were anyone e-else, they w-would definitely end up f-fainting from fear. H-How could t-they possibly be ab-able to think of a way out?”

“H-However, w-who am I? I a-am someone who is highly intelligent. T-The ov-overwhelmingly t-talented and w-wise Wang Qiang! A-at that time, a b-bright idea s-suddenly came to my mind. I i-immediately t-thought of a w-way to t-take care of that d-demonic woman.”

“W-What do you think it was?” When mentioning this matter, Wang Qiang actually became spirited. The depressed expression he had on his face earlier disappeared, and was replaced with excitement as he raised the suspense for Chu Feng.

Extremely curious, Chu Feng asked, “What was it?”

“Hehe, I u-used the ‘whoever this hits shall fall in l-love with me’ on her,” Wang Qiang said confidently.

“Whoever this hits shall fall in love with me?” Chu Feng suddenly recalled that Wang Qiang had declared that he possessed incomparable charm on the day they had met that demonic woman for the first time. Furthermore, he took out a bottle that he declared to be his most valuable treasure.

He declared that as long as he used that treasure, regardless of how proud a woman might be, even if they were fond of women instead of men, they would immediately fall in love with him. As for that treasure, its name was ‘whoever this hits shall fall in love with me.’

“That thing of yours actually works?” Chu Feng asked in a skeptical manner.

“B-bullshit. O-Of course it works. Else, w-why would that d-

demonic woman be i-infatuated with me?” Wang Qiang said proudly.

“Isn’t it good then? That demonic woman is extremely powerful. Furthermore, she’s an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. It would be your blessing to have her as your wife,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile.

“P-Pah! D-Don’t play around with me. It would be f-fine if t-there was n-nothing good about her. H-however, she is t-that ugly. I, W-Wang Qiang, am such a b-beautiful young man. H-How could I a-allow myself to be defiled b-by her?” When mentioning this matter, Wang Qiang displayed a very depressed expression once again.

“We really can’t leave. Even if we must escape, we must still wait for that demonic woman to return with medicine to cure you from your poison first,” Chu Feng said.

“I-is m-my poison t-that serious?” Wang Qiang asked.

“I am also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist now. Although I am unable to cure your poison, I am able to tell how powerful it is. Thus, I am truly not lying to you,” Chu Feng said.

“Wow! B-Brother, so y-you’re not only a r-rank four Half Martial Ancestor now, y-y-you’ve also become an Immortal-c-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Brother, t-the speed o-of your p-progress is s-simply too f-fast, no? I a-am truly e-envious of you,” While Wang Qiang was saying that he was jealous, he had an excited expression. It was clear that he was feeling happy for Chu Feng.

When Chu Feng and Wang Qiang decided to stay here for the time being and wait until that demonic woman cured Wang Qiang of his poison before leaving, the two of them managed to quiet down.

Afterwards, Chu Feng came to find out that the demonic woman



had asked Wang Qiang whether or not he knew of Chu Feng after she returned from fighting against Chu Feng.

When Wang Qiang heard that Chu Feng had actually gone after the demonic woman to fight her, he was immediately worried that the savage demonic woman would kill Chu Feng. Thus, he hurriedly declared Chu Feng to be his best brother, and told the demonic woman that she must protect him.

That was the main reason why the demonic woman ended up killing the people from the Court Cloud Sect. It turned out that it was all because of Wang Qiang.

As for the reason why Wang Qiang had been poisoned, it was because he was unlucky.

That day, when he used his special potion to make the demonic woman fall in love with him, he was immediately tangled around by the demonic woman. The demonic woman even wanted to forcibly do 'that' sort of thing with Wang Qiang.

According to Wang Qiang's vivid descriptions, the demonic woman was truly savage that day. It was so intense and considerably tragic for Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang declared that if the demonic woman were an ordinary woman, he would accept his fate even if she were an ugly woman.

However, how could that demonic woman possibly resemble a human at all? She was simply an extremely ugly and malevolent monster. As such, how could he possibly accept his fate?

Thus, Wang Qiang began to use his stuttering voice to argue with the demonic woman so that he could stall for time. Finally, he found an opportunity to escape.

Unfortunately, he was extremely unlucky. While escaping, he was afflicted with poison.

As for that poison, it was an extremely rare poison that one

would not even encounter in ten thousand years. However, not only did Wang Qiang run into it, he was also afflicted by the poison.

“Wang Qiang, I am not lying here. Your poison is truly intense. If it wasn’t for the fact that the demonic woman promptly discovered you and gave you treatment, you would likely have already died,” Chu Feng said.

“E-even if that is the case, o-once my p-poison is healed, I must s-still escape. Y-You should know how savage that d-demonic woman’s nature is.”

“You w-were not t-there that day. However, I-I saw those people d-dying before me o-one by one. It w-was truly r-reeking of blood.”

“I w-who feared n-nothing in H-heaven or Earth actually felt fear a-at that time,” Wang Qiang recalled the scene of that day and revealed an expression of fear.

When mentioning that event, Chu Feng could not find a reason to refute Wang Qiang. It was true that the demonic woman had caused the deaths of many people, and that there were many innocents among those that had died.

Merely, the reason why that demonic woman would act like that was because of her tragic history. In the end, the demonic woman was actually also a pitiful individual.

It was precisely because of that demonic woman’s history, the fact that Wang Qiang was alive, and the fact that the demonic woman had saved Chu Feng’s life that Chu Feng no longer felt any hatred toward her, and instead felt a great amount of sympathy for her.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Brother, do you know about that demonic woman’s origin?”

Wang Qiang curled his lips and said, “O-origin? There’s an o-origin to that demonic woman? D-don’t tell me t-that there’s a r-

reason why t-that demonic woman eats men.”

“Indeed, there is a reason,” Chu Feng nodded.

Then, Chu Feng mentioned the story of that demonic woman to Wang Qiang in full detail.

“I-In t-that case, that d-demonic woman is q-quite pitiful too. B-but, it’s u-unrelated to me. A-after all, the person that c-caused her t-that misery is not me.”

“Furthermore, m-most i-importantly, if the effect of that potion is to l-lessen or d-disappear completely, t-that demonic woman will no l-longer be attracted to me.”

“At that t-time, s-she will come to know that I d-deliberately u-used medicine to m-make her f-fall in love with me.”

“D-do y-you think t-that with t-that demonic w-woman’s p-personality, she would l-let us get away?” Wang Qiang asked.

“She won’t,” Chu Feng said.

“T-there we go! T-That’s why we need to f-find an o-opportunity to escape once my poison is c-cured,” Wang Qiang said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

If Chu Feng was slightly hesitant before, then his hesitation was all gone now.

He felt that what Wang Qiang said was very true. With that demonic woman’s personality, if she were to know about the truth, she would definitely not spare him or Wang Qiang. As such, it would be better that they escape from her.

After several days, the demonic woman returned.

Although the demonic woman was still very ugly and sinister-looking, she was jumping joyously upon her return. Her appearance resembled that of a happy young girl.

If one disregarded her appearance, her actions would be quite

adorable.

“Why are you so cheerful? Could it be that you’ve successfully discovered the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass?” Chu Feng stepped forward and asked.

“No, it’s not only that I discovered the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass. Instead, I have discovered something even greater,” The demonic woman said excitedly.

# Chapter 2302 – Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower

---

“What else did you discover?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you know why I have only been searching for the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass at those several designated areas in the Fallen Goose Mountain Range?” The demonic woman asked.

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s because the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass only grows at those locations. However... they can only be discovered when illuminated by moonlight.”

“However, it remains that it is only ‘could’ and not ‘definitely.’ Searching for the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass is something that depends on luck.”

“In other words, the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass has always existed. However, due to their special nature, they are extremely well-hidden. It is extremely difficult to successfully find them.”

“However, today, not only did I find Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass, I also found Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower,” As the demonic woman spoke, she took out a special medicinal plant excitedly.

Upon seeing that medicinal Grass, Chu Feng’s heart was immediately moved. The reason for that was because the appearance of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass greatly resembled ordinary Saint Spirit Grass.

Saint Spirit Grasses could be considered to be among the lowest level of cultivation resources. However, to the Nine Provinces Continent’s Chu Family, Saint Spirit Grasses were extremely precious items.

As such, when he saw the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass, he

involuntarily recalled memories of his childhood. Thinking about it, back when he was in the Chu Family, when he was in the Azure Dragon School's outer court, he was a weak individual with a relatively low level of cultivation.

Chu Feng was only able to become strong and embark upon the path of martial cultivation thanks to the Saint Spirit Grass that Chu Yue gave him.

Thus, at that moment, memories rushed into Chu Feng's head, causing him to feel very emotional.

However, even though they possessed similar appearances, the size of Saint Spirit Grass was only that of a finger. However, this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was several tens of times larger than Saint Spirit Grass; it was very large.

As for their medicinal effects, they were akin to being the difference between heaven and earth. The two of them were simply incomparable. If the medicinal effect of Saint Spirit Grass was akin to a speck of dust, then the medicinal effect of Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was that of a mountain. The difference between the two was Humongous.

Most importantly, the medicinal effect of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was all-inclusive. It could simply be said to be perfect.

The Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass's leaves contained a very strong medicinal effect. Not only could they detoxify poison from one's body, they also possessed the miraculous effect of prolonging one's life span.

Most importantly, the medicinal effects of the leaves were simply too strong. Not only did the leaves seem to be able to remove the poison from Wang Qiang's body, they seemed to be capable of removing all kinds of poisons. Chu Feng had never seen such a powerful medicinal effect.

The roots of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass contained a dense amount of Natural Energy. It was so dense that even Chu Feng felt tempted by it.

Although the Natural Energy the root contained was very berserk in nature, Chu Feng was capable of refining it. If he were to truly refine it, Chu Feng's cultivation might be able to increase further. After all, the Natural Energies were truly dense.

However, what captured Chu Feng's attention the most was the flower on the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass.

That's right. Between the leaves of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was a flower. That flower was very small; it was only the size of a fingernail.

However, that flower was already in full bloom. Furthermore, it contained a sort of miraculously strange light. Even Chu Feng was unable to describe what was so miraculous about that flower.

It was as if there were a vast world inside the small petals.

“Wow! What strong spirit power!”

Right at that moment, a sweet-sounding voice suddenly sounded by Chu Feng's ears.

“Eggy?” Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed upon hearing that voice.

The reason for that was because that beautiful voice was something that only Her Lady Queen possessed.

Filled with excitement, Chu Feng hurriedly cast his awareness to his world spirit space. Sure enough, Her Lady Queen was awake. She was still as beautiful and alluring as she was before.

“Eggy, you've awakened?” Chu Feng was very excited.

“Originally, I planned to sleep for a bit longer. After all, I did not wish to waste your kind intentions. However, that flower is truly too enticing. As such, this Queen is unable to continue to sleep,”

Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile. It could be seen that her current mood was very good.

The reason why Her Lady Queen was so happy was not only because of the fact that she had slept comfortably.

Most importantly, it was because she was attracted by the flower of that Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass.

The reason for that was because that mysterious flower not only emitted extremely strong spirit power, it also emitted very dense source energy.

In other words, not only was this flower extremely useful to world spiritists, it was also extremely enticing to world spirits.

In other words, the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was capable of increasing one's cultivation, increasing one's spirit power, and increasing one's world spirit's power. It was also capable of curing tens of thousands of poisons, and increasing one's lifespan. That Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass was simply a priceless treasure.

“Chu Feng, let me out. I am going to refine that Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower,” Eggy said impatiently.

“No, this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass is something that that demonic woman has prepared for Wang Qiang. We cannot use it.”

“Furthermore, other than its medicinal effect, the rest of the power contained in the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass is all berserk in nature and difficult to refine,” Chu Feng said.

Eggy sighed. “Okay then,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Eggy no longer said anymore.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell from Eggy's tone that she was unwilling to give up. Thus, he said, “Eggy, in the future, I will definitely find you treasures that will increase your cultivation.”

“Got it. This Queen believes in you. Don't think too much, and just properly heal that stutterer,” Eggy smiled sweetly and made a



gesture of indifference.

At that moment, the demonic woman deliberately asked Chu Feng, “Hey! You’re also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, are you able to tell how powerful this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower is?”

“This Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower contains very strong spirit power. It is extremely useful for world spiritists. Furthermore, if one is able to extract the spirit power properly, it will increase the cultivation of one’s world spirit,” Chu Feng said.

“What you said is only a general idea. The Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower contains enough energy that it could instantly turn my husband into an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” The demonic woman said excitedly.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng felt very astonished. Although Chu Feng was able to tell that the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower was very powerful, he did not expect it to be that powerful.

“That’s right, it’s an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. My husband is, after all, a Dragon Mark Royal-cloak World Spiritist. He is but a short distance away from becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“With the power contained in this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, it will be sufficient to allow him to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” The demonic woman said excitedly.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally discovered the reason why the demonic woman would be so excited. It turned out it was because the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower was capable of helping Wang Qiang become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Originally, I deeply detested that damned old man. However, it would seem that I would have to thank him now.”

“If it wasn’t for him snatching away my Moonlight Immortal

Spirit Grass, I would not have continued to search for more Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass. If I hadn't continued to search, I would not have encountered this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower.”

“If I didn't encounter this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, my husband would not have obtained the opportunity to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” The demonic woman said in a very excited manner.

“Wait, you said it's an opportunity?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression. He asked, “Are you saying that you do not have absolute certainty in being able to help Wang Qiang become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Of course not. Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flowers are no ordinary flowers. They possess another name, the Starlit Key,” The demonic woman said.

“Starlit Key?” Chu Feng grew more curious.

“That's right. They're known as Starlit Keys. The reason for that is because it is possible to open a Starlit Gate when using the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flowers,” That demonic woman said.

“Starlit Gate? What is that?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Starlit Gate is the gate that leads to the Starlit Path.”

“As for that Starlit Path, it is a path that can traverse the starry sky, allowing one to move from one Starfield to another.”

“In short, it is a very dangerous place. At the very least, with our cultivation, it will be very difficult for us to survive should we enter that place,” The demonic woman said.

“Never would I have expected that the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower would have such a miraculous effect,” Chu Feng felt that the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower was even more miraculous.

Starfields were extremely vast. A single Starfield would possess countless worlds. For something to be able to allow one to traverse the Starfields in the starry sky, it would most definitely be extraordinary.

“Chu Feng, there’s no time to delay. We must cure my husband of his poison first. After that, we can use the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, and see whether or not my husband will be able to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist with it,” That demonic woman said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng nodded. As he was Wang Qiang’s brother, he would naturally want to cure Wang Qiang from the poison sooner more than anyone else.

“W-wait a mmoment,” However, right at that moment, Wang Qiang, who had been feigning unconsciousness, suddenly sat up and waved his hand.

# Chapter 2303 – Rank Five Half Martial Ancestor

---

“Aiya, husband, you’re awake?”

“How are you feeling? Do you feel any better?”

Seeing that Wang Qiang had awakened, the demonic woman became extremely excited. She nearly even tossed away the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower that she held in her hand.

Chu Feng, who knew that Wang Qiang had been pretending to be unconscious the entire time, turned to ask Wang Qiang, “Wang Qiang, what’s wrong?”

“C-Chu Feng, t-that M-moon-moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower’s roots are u-useless to me. H-however, they’re useful for you. They m-might even be a-able to increase your cultivation. Y-you should refine them,” Wang Qiang said.

“Ah? That won’t do,” Hearing those words, the demonic woman was immediately startled, and instantly refused.

“W-w-why not? D-didn’t you get that Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower for me? C-could it b-be that I d-do not even possess the a-authority to decide h-how to use it?” Wang Qiang stood up in an annoyed manner. He had the attitude of a man of the house reprimanding his wife.

Strangely, this ferocious and savage demonic woman actually looked like an obedient little sheep before Wang Qiang.

This was especially true after she saw that Wang Qiang had gotten angry. The demonic woman’s voice grew soft. She said, “It is true that the root of this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower contains Natural Energy, but the Natural Energy that it contains is truly too berserk in nature. Even if Chu Feng is a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline, he will still not be able to withstand it. If he forcibly refines it, even if he doesn’t get killed, his cultivation will

end up being crippled.”

It turned out that it was not that the demonic woman did not want to have Chu Feng refine the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower. Rather, it was because she was afraid that its roots would harm Chu Feng.

“Y-you d-don’t g-get to decide something like that, because y-you do not k-know how v-valiant my brother is,” After Wang Qiang said those words, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Brother, just tell me s-straightforwardly. A-are you a-able to r-refine the root or not? R-remember, do not l-lie to me.”

“Indeed, it is possible,” Chu Feng was very moved. Wang Qiang was already seriously poisoned, and his life was in danger. Yet, he was still thinking for Chu Fengs Benefit right now. This camaraderie truly caused Chu Feng to feel warmth in his heart.

“T-there’s still time f-for my poison. However, y-you should increase your c-cultivation first. If y-you a-are able to increase your cultivation, it w-would be helpful to y-you using your spirit power later. Thus, y-you should re-refine it first,” Wang Qiang said.

“Chu Feng, is your cultivation actually that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, or a rank five Martial Ancestor?” The demonic woman asked curiously.

“My actual cultivation is that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. My rank five Martial Ancestor level cultivation was something temporary that I obtained through special means,” Chu Feng spoke the truth.

“So that’s the case. In that case, go and refine the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower’s roots first,” After the demonic woman finished saying those words, she handed the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower to Chu Feng.

When Chu Feng received the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, the demonic woman deliberately reminded him, “Chu Feng, I am

not deceiving you. Although this Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower's root contains dense amounts of Natural Energy, those Natural Energies are truly berserk in nature. Even for ordinary people with Heavenly Bloodlines, it will be impossible for them to refine it."

"Although it is very possible that you are not an ordinary person with a Heavenly Bloodline, I must still urge you to be careful, and not force yourself."

"Got it," Chu Feng smiled and nodded. He knew that the demonic woman was being considerate of him.

Furthermore, he also knew that the demonic woman was not trying to scare him. After all, no matter what sort of nature that demonic woman possessed, she was truly an experienced and knowledgeable individual. Moreover, it was true that the energy contained in the roots of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower was extremely berserk.

However, Chu Feng did not lie either. He was truly confident in being able to refine the Natural Energy contained in the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower's roots.

After receiving the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, Chu Feng was not in a hurry to immediately refine it. Instead, he first set up a concealment formation.

This concealment formation was very special. Chu Feng had set it up for the sake of weakening the power of the Divine Tribulation.

Although Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether or not he would break through to rank five Half Martial Ancestor after refining the root of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, it remained that it would be better that he prepare himself just in case.

"Why did you set up a concealment formation?" The demonic woman asked in a very puzzled manner.

“You’ll understand in the future,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Tsk~~” That demonic woman curled her large mouth. She no longer continued to question Chu Feng. Instead, she turned around and ran over to Wang Qiang. With a very coy voice, she said, “Hus~~~band!”

Once that demonic woman’s words were heard, Chu Feng noticed the clear change in Wang Qiang’s expression. Fortunately, he had contained himself. Otherwise, Chu Feng would have burst into loud laugh.

Even though that demonic woman was very ugly, so ugly that even Wang Qiang could not accept her, it was the first time since Chu Feng knew Wang Qiang that a woman was fond of Wang Qiang.

Thus, Chu Feng felt happy for Wang Qiang. Regardless of whether or not it was because of his potion’s effect, it remained that the demonic woman was treating Wang Qiang very well right now.

After that, Chu Feng sat cross-legged in the concealment formation and began to refine the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower’s roots.

Everything went on without a hitch. Even though the energy contained within the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower’s roots was indeed extremely berserk, Chu Feng was still able to effortlessly refine all of the Natural Energy from the roots.

At the moment when Chu Feng completely refined everything, he actually brought forth the arrival of a Divine Tribulation.

Although the power of the Divine Tribulation was very strong, much stronger than the last time Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough, Chu Feng still managed to withstand it.

Furthermore, due to the fact that the power of the Divine Tribulation was affected by the concealment formation, neither

Wang Qiang nor the demonic woman noticed the existence of the Divine Tribulation.

The two of them only noticed one thing. That is, Chu Feng had successfully reached a breakthrough from rank four Half Martial Ancestor to rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

“You actually really managed to refine it?” The demonic woman was astonished.

“Brother, nice job,” As for Wang Qiang, he was wild with joy.

“Brother, thanks,” Chu Feng stood up and said to Wang Qiang. Then, he looked to the demonic woman and said, “Thanks.”

“You don’t have to thank me. Even if I keep the roots, it will be useless. There is simply no one capable of refining the roots. However, you succeeded in refining it. It would appear that you are not an ordinary wielder of a Heavenly Bloodline,” The demonic woman said. Her tone seemed to be praising Chu Feng.

Chu Feng smiled. He did not wish to have an in-depth conversation regarding this topic. The reason for that was because he would not forget that he was deemed to be trash and banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Genius? He no longer dared to consider himself a genius.

At the very least, he was very weak before that demonic woman.

“Let’s cure Wang Qiang’s poison,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn,” The demonic woman nodded.

Then, Chu Feng started to work together with the demonic woman. They set up a spirit formation to draw support from the power of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower to cure Wang Qiang’s poison.

Merely, regardless of whether it was setting up the spirit formation or activating it, Chu Feng listened to the instructions provided by the demonic woman the entire time.



To put it simply, Chu Feng was only an assistant in curing Wang Qiang's poison.

The reason for that was because the spirit formation that the demonic woman was using actually surpassed the spirit formations that Chu Feng knew of.

This caused Chu Feng to have a whole new level of respect for that demonic woman again. Not only was she experienced and knowledgeable, her techniques were also very amazing.

Likely, to a greater or lesser degree, she carried memories of her previous life with her. After all, in her previous life, she was a super genius.

Everything went smoothly. The poison on Wang Qiang's body was successfully removed.

“Buzz~~~”

Merely, to everyone's surprise, at the moment when the poison was removed, Wang Qiang's body suddenly gave off a stage attractive force.

When that strange attractive force appeared, it once again condensed the poison that was just removed from Wang Qiang and absorbed it back into his dantian.

## Chapter 2304 – Starlit Gate

---

“What is going on?” Seeing that scene, both Chu Feng and the demonic woman revealed astonished and alarmed expressions.

The reason for that was because that poison used to only pervade Wang Qiang’s body. However, at that moment, that poison had been absorbed into Wang Qiang’s dantian.

“Buzz~~~”

Right when Chu Feng and the demonic woman were worried for Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang’s cultivation actually started to increase. Furthermore, his cultivation was increasing continuously.

In the blink of an eye, Wang Qiang’s cultivation increased to that of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, one level above Chu Feng’s cultivation.

“Huu...” After his cultivation increased, Wang Qiang heaved a sigh of satisfaction.

With a smile on his face, he said to Chu Feng, “Hehe, s-seems like I d-didn’t get myself poisoned for n-nothing. It has h-helped me.”

“Else, I would have n-n-nearly been c-cast behind b-by you, brother.”

Indeed. Even though Wang Qiang’s cultivation had also increased somewhat before, he was still only a rank two Half Martial Ancestor when Chu Feng met him again.

However, Chu Feng’s cultivation had already increased to that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor; he had already long surpassed Wang Qiang.

However, Wang Qiang actually managed to obtain four successive increases in cultivation. From rank two Half Martial Ancestor, he reached rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Once again, he surpassed Chu Feng in terms of cultivation.

It could be said that Wang Qiang had managed to profit from a disaster.

“Brother, congratulations,” Chu Feng was grinning from ear to ear. He did not feel depressed at the fact that Wang Qiang had surpassed him. On the contrary, he was very happy, extremely happy.

“Wow! Husband, you’re so amazing!”

“Even though I’ve heard that poison possesses the effect of increasing one’s cultivation, it is a benefit that only works on those with very strong bodies.”

“Generally... that poison will only increase one’s cultivation by a single level.”

“Even for powerful individuals, their cultivation would only increase by two levels.”

“Reportedly, a continuous increase in three levels of cultivation is already the limit.”

“However, husband, you actually managed to increase your cultivation by four continuous levels. This is simply unprecedented.”

“Husband, you are simply too amazing. I have truly fallen head over heels for you,” The demonic woman was extremely excited. She was reacting like a fan, and looked at Wang Qiang with adoration.

As for Wang Qiang, he did not show the slightest bit of happiness at that demonic woman’s reaction. Instead, black lines appeared on his forehead.

“D-didn’t you s-say that this M-moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower is capable of h-helping me b-become an Immortal-cloak W-world Spiritist? Q-quickly, use it,” Wang Qiang said.

“That is indeed the case. However, husband, you were

unconscious earlier. Thus, how did you know about this?" The demonic woman asked in a surprised manner.

"I-I am e-ex-extremely knowledgeable, and h-h-have experienced a l-lot of things. You're n-not the only one t-that knows about the e-effects of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit F-flower," Wang Qiang shouted in a very displeased manner.

"Yes, yes, yes. Husband is truly amazing," Not only was that demonic woman not angry, she instead once again revealed a gaze of adoration. She was truly obedient and cute. Her only flaw was that she was ugly. However, because of her ugliness, it caused her actions to feel extremely disgusting.

That said, the demonic woman soon added, "Husband, since you are that experienced and knowledgeable, you must know about what sort of spirit formation to use to refine that berserk Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, right?"

"My spirit formation is t-too over-overwhelming. You w-wouldn't be able t-to use it even if I were to tell you ab-about it. T-thus, it's b-better that you use your s-spirit formation," Wang Qiang said in a very natural manner.

Chu Feng felt great admiration for Wang Qiang. He clearly didn't know what sort of spirit formation to use. Yet, he was able to make it sound so rational as he found a random excuse for himself. This was simply a type of talent.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right at that moment, the demonic woman suddenly waved her hand. 'Paa,' her hand landed on Wang Qiang's head.

That slap was so ruthless that not only did it knock Wang Qiang to the floor, it also made an enormous bruise on the back of Wang Qiang's head.

"Fuck! It was only because you were poisoned earlier that I decided to treat you nicely."

“Just because I gave you face, you decided that you would start to act arrogant with me, eh?”

“If you’re so talented, why were you captured by me? Why were you poisoned?” The demonic woman put her hands on her hips as she roared angrily at Wang Qiang. Her voice was so resounding that even the cave started to tremble.

“I-I-I wa-was wrong. I a-am truly m-mistaken. Please f-forgive me,” Wang Qiang’s behavior changed immediately. Although he was acting like the man of the house earlier, he actually, with a ‘putt,’ kneeled onto the ground right now. Wang Qiang began to kowtow to the demonic woman to apologize to her.

“Paa~~~”

However, that demonic woman refused to accept his apology, and slapped him once again. Her slap knocked Wang Qiang to the ground. Then, she pointed fiercely at Wang Qiang and yelled, “Call me ‘wife!’”

“W-w-wife, I am m-mistaken.”

“Sit there obediently. Do not move.”

“Y-yes, yes, yes.”

Wang Qiang sat on the ground obediently. He did not dare to move in the slightest.

At that moment, black lines covered Chu Feng’s forehead.

If it were an ordinary woman, they would be known as a vixen if they acted the way the demonic woman was.

However, the demonic woman was no ordinary woman. At that moment, she had a sinister expression, and looked like a man-eating monster.

“Haha, Wang Qiang is so pitiful. I truly pity him,” Eggy began to clap in glee. She was laughing loudly inside Chu Feng’s world spirit space.

Although she said that she felt pity for Wang Qiang, her actions showed absolutely no sympathy. She was simply someone watching a show.

As for Chu Feng, he truly felt pity for Wang Qiang. He muttered in his heart, ‘Brother, I am sorry. I have misjudged that demonic woman.’

‘Persist! If there is a chance, I will definitely help you escape from that demonic woman’s evil clutches.’

After that, the demonic woman began to set up her spirit formation, and Chu Feng began to assist her once again.

Right after the spirit formation was activated, the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower immediately started to blossom with a strange light.

Seeing this scene, the demonic woman immediately shouted “Oh no!” and hurriedly set up another spirit formation. She wanted to stop the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower.

“Boom~~~”

However, before that demonic woman’s spirit formation could cover the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower suddenly exploded.

Furthermore, due to the fact that the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower was very close to Wang Qiang, the energy ripples from the explosion directly knocked Wang Qiang flying. When Wang Qiang landed on the floor, his body was covered with blood, and he had lost consciousness.

“Damn it!” Chu Feng was deeply alarmed upon seeing this scene. He wanted to rush over to Wang Qiang to heal his injuries.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right when he was about to move, an enormous suction energy suddenly emerged from the center of the location

where the explosion had originated from.

Upon looking over, Chu Feng discovered that an enormous gate was now open at that place.

Stars filled the sky. It was incomparably bright. The magnificence was simply indescribable.

Inside that gate was a boundlessly vast space. Within it were many worlds, and countless lives.

“Could it be that this is the Starlit Gate?” Chu Feng had an astonished expression on his face. Even though he had seen many spectacles since he had started on the path of martial cultivation, the scene before him still astonished him. This was definitely the most magnificent sight Chu Feng had seen so far.

“Yes, it’s the Starlit Gate. Move further away from it so that you do not get sucked into it. Else, it will be very difficult to escape. If you are to encounter a Interstellar Storm after being sucked into it, you will undoubtedly die,” Fearing that Chu Feng would approach the Starlit Gate, the demonic woman warned him loudly.

Upon hearing the demonic woman’s warning, Chu Feng moved a couple steps away from the Starlit Gate.

However, Chu Feng’s gaze suddenly shone once again. He discovered that there was a strange body of energy before the entrance of the Starlit Gate. It was currently slowly drifting toward the depths of the Starlit Gate.

That body of energy was the energy contained in the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower.

As the energy was flowing, it was difficult to capture it. However, that energy was source energy, something capable of increasing a world spirit’s cultivation.

In the center of the body of energy was a pearl-sized body of light. That was spirit power, the crucial component to let Wang Qiang become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Right now, that body of light was no longer berserk in nature. All that remained was pure spirit power.



## Chapter 2305 – He Is My Brother

---

“Demonic woman, look at that, is that the spirit power that is capable of allowing Wang Qiang to become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng asked the demonic woman while pointing at the body of light.

Even though he was already certain that it was the case, Chu Feng still wanted to confirm it with the demonic woman. He wanted to be absolutely certain.

“Yes, that is it. Although the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower has opened the Starlit Gate, its energies are still present.”

“Furthermore, that energy is no longer berserk. My husband could use it like it is. Unfortunately, it had already entered the Starlit Gate.”

“It is truly an enormous pity,” The demonic woman sighed and shook her head regretfully.

“No, we might be able to give it a try,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to fly rapidly toward the Starlit Gate.

“Hey! Chu Feng! What are you doing? Don’t be foolish. If you are to enter the Starlit Gate and encounter an Interstellar Storm, your body will most definitely be destroyed, and you will be killed. Even the gods will not be able to save you.”

Upon seeing that, the demonic woman shouted loudly. At the same time, she also unleashed a special technique and started to emit boundless suction energy; she was trying to bring Chu Feng back.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng had already managed to approach the Starlit Gate. The attractive force emitted by the Starlit Gate was very strange. While it was not very strong, it created a clear contrast against the attractive force emitted by the demonic woman.

The attractive force emitted by the Starlit Gate was still present. However, the attractive force emitted by the demonic woman was absorbed by it.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng had already entered the Starlit Gate.

Upon entering it, Chu Feng's gaze immediately changed. As he looked to the scene before him, his heart began to beat rapidly like a roaring sea. He was extremely excited.

If one must describe it, then the scene before Chu Feng could be described with one word: astonishing!!!

In the vast starry sky were countless stars. Each of the stars was a world.

All of this was before him. Even though they were clearly incomparably far away, they seemed to be within hands' reach.

That sort of sensation was as if the entire world was within Chu Feng's grasp.

However, at the same time, Chu Feng also felt a completely different sort of sensation; the sensation of being very small.

In that place, Chu Feng felt that he was very small, pitifully small. He felt that he was inferior to even a speck of dust.

Perhaps a strong burst of wind would be able to blow Chu Feng to pieces, killing him in the process.

"Chu Feng, you cannot stay here for long. Quickly, gather that spirit power," Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen's voice was suddenly heard.

Chu Feng did not hesitate any longer. He extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. A burst of suction power shot forth toward to envelope the spirit power and source energy.

It was unknown whether it might be because Chu Feng's cultivation was too weak that made his martial power useless here,

or perhaps it might be some other reason.

However, the suction power that he emitted was simply unable to capture that body of light.

“Quickly, get back here! Are you trying to throw your life away?!”

“You are currently drifting! If you do not return now, you will forever fall into that starry sky!” The demonic woman’s voice resonated behind Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was also able to sense that there was an invisible energy that was pushing him toward the depths of the starry sky. He was growing further and further away from the Starlit Gate.

However, Chu Feng did not turn around. Instead, he suddenly moved; he continued onward. He was planning to approach the body of light with his physical body.

“Truly courting disaster,” Seeing this scene, the demonic woman grimaced; she did not even dare to continue seeing what was going on.

Through his efforts, Chu Feng finally managed to approach that body of light. Furthermore, he had successfully captured it with his hand.

“Eggy, I am able to bring the spirit energy back. However, the source energy has already scattered. I am unable to bring it back with me. You should definitely refine it here,” Chu Feng said.

“Hehe, that suits my intentions,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Eggy immediately revealed a glimmering smile.

Then, with assistance from Chu Feng, Eggy directly sucked in all of the source energy and refined it.

This stream of source energy was no small matter at all. It increased Her Lady Queen’s cultivation from rank six Half Martial Ancestor to rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

“Not bad. It would seem that the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower is truly a treasure.”

Chu Feng was able to sense the increase in Her Lady Queen’s cultivation.

Thinking back, it was very difficult for Her Lady Queen to increase her cultivation. Yet, by refining that source energy, she was able to directly reach a breakthrough. This caused Chu Feng to feel overjoyed.

Then, Chu Feng turned around and started to hurry toward the Starlit Gate.

“Damn it!”

However, even though the Starlit Gate was clearly not far away, it now felt so enormously far.

Even though Chu Feng was clearly putting forth all of his strength to run toward the Starlit Gate, the distance between them was growing closer extremely slowly.

“Chu Feng, keep going! That gate seems to be closing!”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen’s heart had jumped into her throat. The reason for that was because she knew very well that everything pointed to disaster should Chu Feng stay here.

Fortunately, Chu Feng managed to get through this daunting brush with disaster. After putting forth great effort, Chu Feng finally reached the Starlit Gate.

After entering the Starlit Gate, Chu Feng took a couple steps, then collapsed onto the ground.

At that time, he was sweating like a pig and His health gotten very weak.

Chu Feng had never been so tired; even fighting for ten days and ten nights straight would not tire him to this degree.

However, escaping from that starry sky had exhausted nearly all

of his strength.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that Starlit Gate closed.

Not a single trace of its existence remained. It was as if the Starlit Gate had never existed.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng felt a lingering fear. If he had been even a step late in returning, he would have been stuck in the vast starry sky. Furthermore, with the cultivation that he had, he would not have been able to reach any galaxy. Instead, he would only continue to drift in the starry sky. The only thing waiting for him then would be death.

“Have you grown tired of living?” The demonic woman glared at Chu Feng.

“Here, take that to Wang Qiang,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. He tossed the body of light that contained a dense amount of spirit power to the demonic woman.

The demonic woman did not hesitate. She immediately brought the body of light over to Wang Qiang and fed it to him. Then, she set up a spirit formation to help Wang Qiang refine it.

Due to the fact that the body of light was composed only of pure spirit power now, it was quite easy to refine.

Seeing that the demonic woman was walking toward him with a smile on her face, Chu Feng asked excitedly, “Success?”

“Success. When my husband wakes up, he will also become an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” The demonic woman said with a smile.

However, that demonic woman’s expression turned serious immediately after. She looked to Chu Feng and said, “Earlier, you would’ve been trapped in the starry sky if you were a bit slower. I think you know very well what sort of consequence that would

mean.”

“Furthermore, you should also know very well that I would definitely use the spirit power on my husband once you obtained it. All the risks you took would only benefit him. Thus, was it really worth it for you to do all that?” The demonic woman asked very seriously.

“Mn,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation.

“Why?” The demonic woman revealed a confused expression.

Chu Feng smiled. He took a glance at the still-unconscious Wang Qiang. Then, he said, “Because he is my brother.”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the demonic woman’s expression turned sluggish. She seemed to be unable to understand the implication behind those words.

At that moment, Wang Qiang, who had his back facing Chu Feng and the demonic woman, slowly opened his eyes. Teardrops were actually glistening in his eyes.

# Chapter 2306 – Heroes Appear In Chaotic Times

---

“I have already cured my husband’s injury. He will wake up soon.”

“After my husband wakes, we are to go to the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds together,” The demonic woman said to Chu Feng.

“E-ex-extremely Remote Un-unmarked Burial Mounds? W-Why the h-heck are w-we going there?” Right after the demonic woman said those words, Wang Qiang immediately sat up and spoke in protest.

“Husband, you’ve awakened? How did you wake up so quickly? Were you pretending to be unconscious?” The demonic woman walked toward Wang Qiang and asked him with a skeptical expression.

“W-why w-would I p-pretend? I w-was s-startled aw-awake by you,” Wang Qiang curled his lips and continued to protest, “W-why the heck a-are we going to the Extremely R-remote Unmarked Burial Mounds? Have y-you g-grown tired of living?”

“Husband, that remnant in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds was discovered by me. That is Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant.”

“It is very possible that that remnant contain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance. As for Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance, it is no small matter.”

“Right now, you, Chu Feng and I, the three of us, are all Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. As such, how could we possibly let the remnant slip by us?” The demonic woman said to Wang Qiang.

“W-while w-what you said is t-true, t-there are that many powers

g-gathered here, t-that many e-experts f-focused on t-the Extremely Remote U-unmarked Burial Mounds. H-how c-could w-we possibly f-fight w-with them?”

“F-furthermore, b-both y-you and Chu Feng a-are w-wanted individuals. It’s t-t-too dangerous,” Wang Qiang shook his head. He truly did not wish to go.

“Seems like you don’t understand. After all, the remnant was discovered by me. Those people might not necessarily know what I know. As long as I go, we will definitely be able to profit from it.”

“As for the so-called being wanted, we could just disguise ourselves. Who could possibly see through us?” The demonic woman said.

“Demonic woman, do you hold certainty of success?” Chu Feng asked the demonic woman.

“Of course. I never do things I have no certainty of.”

“Furthermore, that old fart that snatched away my Moonlight Immortal Spirit Grass is also in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. I will definitely find him and get my revenge. This is a rare opportunity, and I am not planning to let it slip by,” The demonic woman said resolutely.

“Since that’s the case, we can go then. Wang Qiang, you should just listen to your wife and go have a look. That Grandmaster Kai Hong was indeed an extraordinary individual. I also do not wish to miss this opportunity,” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang.

“Brother, you also w-wish to g-go?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Yes,” Chu Feng nodded.

“S-since you a-also wish to go, t-then let’s go,” Wang Qiang said frankly.

“The hell! What is the meaning of this? When I said we should go, you started to give all kinds of excuses. Yet, when Chu Feng



said we should go, you immediately agreed to it?” The demonic woman was very displeased, and grabbed Wang Qiang’s lapel.

“N-n-no, I a-am m-mainly obeying y-your desire,” Seeing that the demonic woman was angered, Wang Qiang hurriedly submitted to her.

The current Wang Qiang was no longer poisoned. As such, the demonic woman was no longer gentle toward him all the time anymore.

Once the demonic woman started getting aggressive, Wang Qiang would immediately submit to her. Otherwise, he would end up suffering.

For someone as shameless as Wang Qiang, he would possess that sort of foresight.

“There’s also you, Chu Feng. Enough with the ‘demonic woman,’ ‘demonic woman.’ I have a name, okay?” Then, the demonic woman turned her annoyed gaze to Chu Feng.

“You have a name? In that case, what is your name?” Chu Feng asked.

“Zhao Hong,” That demonic woman replied.

“Zhao Hong?” Hearing that name, Chu Feng’s heart immediately moved.

Wasn’t Zhao Hong the name that demonic woman had in her previous life?

However, according to that mysterious old monk, the demonic woman should not be able to remember her memories from her previous life. Could it be that the demonic woman had regained the memories of her previous life?

“Zhao Hong, who gave you that name?” Chu Feng asked in a probing manner.

“Regarding that, I am also not too certain. Merely, ever since I

was born, I knew my name to be Zhao Hong,” The demonic woman said.

“Then, the things regarding the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Flower, your martial skills and world spirit techniques, were they things that you learned afterwards, or did you already know about them since birth?” Chu Feng asked.

“They’re the same as my name,” The demonic woman said.

“So that’s the case,” At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized that the demonic woman had not forgotten all of the memories of her previous life.

She still remembered a bit.

“Chu Feng, this demonic woman is truly pitiful. She doesn’t even remember her previous life’s memories. Should we tell her the truth so that she can live her life as a human and not as a monster?” Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen’s voice suddenly sounded.

“Perhaps knowing about those memories will make her whole, but it might be better for her not to know about those memories. After all... those were not fond memories.”

“Moreover, she might not necessarily believe my words,” Chu Feng said to Her Lady Queen.

“That’s true too. This demonic woman possesses a very violent and unstable temper. It would also be good to not let her know about those things.”

“If she doesn’t believe you and feels that you are deceiving her, you will end up suffering.”

“Even if she believes you, she might also end up going out of control due to shock. At that time, you will also suffer.”

“Since that is the case, it is better to not tell her about it,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Since we’ve decided, let’s get going,” The demonic woman said.

“W-wait. W-with the way y-you look now, y-you’ll scare people to d-death by going out. C-can’t y-you disguise y-yourself s-so that y-you look more normal?” Wang Qiang said.

“What is this? You’re thinking that your wife is ugly?” Hearing those words, the demonic woman was immediately angered.

“N-no, no, no, how c-could I think my w-wife to be ugly? I w-was o-only considering our safety,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile.

“Humph, changing my appearance is but a simple task,” As the demonic woman spoke, a layer of Immortal level spirit power covered her body. Then, the demonic woman’s appearance turned into that of a very beautiful-looking woman with an alluring figure.

The appearance that the demonic woman changed to was most definitely that of a decently beautiful woman.

Merely, she was too sexy and too alluring. While she would attract many a men, she was unable to enter Chu Feng’s discerning eye.

“T-too vulgar. C-c-can’t you d-disguise y-yourself as a m-more m-modest woman?” Wang Qiang sighed and said in a dissatisfied manner.

“What? You actually dislike your wife’s aesthetics?” Hearing those words, the demonic woman grabbed Wang Qiang’s ear.

“N-no, no, no, wife, I-I w-was wrong,” Wang Qiang immediately started to cry out in pain. However, it was evident that he was still unsatisfied with the demonic woman’s appearance.

At that moment, Chu Feng involuntarily recalled how the demonic woman looked in her previous life, the appearance of that Zhao Hong.

She was truly a rarely seen beauty.

“Zhao Hong, how about you allow me to change your appearance for you instead?” Chu Feng said to the demonic woman.

Hearing those words, the demonic woman revealed an angry, blade-like gaze toward Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because the demonic woman noticed that Chu Feng was also not fond of the beautiful appearance she had given herself.

However, for some unknown reason, she hesitated, and did not act out violently against Chu Feng. Instead, she nodded and said, “Very well, I’ll give you a chance.”

Then, Chu Feng immediately set up a spirit formation to help the demonic woman change her appearance.

A sweet appearance, a natural and unrestrained flow with extraordinary airs. Although she was wearing a red skirt, she still looked like a celestial fairy.

As for this, it was none other than Zhao Hong’s original appearance.

“How is it? Is it to your satisfaction?” Chu Feng formed a mirror with his spirit formation and reflected the current appearance of the demonic woman.

“It’s alright.”

“However, taking into consideration that you’re attentive, I’ll use this appearance.”

Although the demonic woman only said ‘it’s alright,’ Chu Feng was able to tell that she was very fond of her current appearance.

The reason for that was because the demonic woman was already moving toward the outside. From her lively footsteps and joyful movements, Chu Feng was able to tell that the demonic woman’s mood was extremely good right now.

“How is it? Are you satisfied?” Chu Feng looked to Wang Qiang with a beaming smile. He seemed to be joking around with him.

“W-while I am satisfied, u-unfortunately that is her t-transformed appearance, and n-not her actual appearance,” Wang Qiang said with disappointment.

“No, that is the original appearance of that demonic woman. To be exact, that is Zhao Hong’s original appearance,” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang using voice transmission.

“R-really?” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang’s expression changed. A special sort of light shone in his eyes.

“Why would I deceive you?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Hehe, t-that’s pretty good then.”

“Let’s go. Let’s c-check out the Extremely R-remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“Perhaps an o-op-opportunity will present itself amidst t-the chaos, and we’ll be a-able to escape,” At this moment, Wang Qiang’s mood also became extremely good. Even though he was speaking of escaping, he was rapidly chasing after the demonic woman. Furthermore, while chasing after her, he shouted, “W-w-wife! W-wait for me!”

“Actually, I think that Wang Qiang suits that demonic woman quite well,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Why is that?” Chu Feng asked in a puzzled manner.

“A weirdo fits a weirdo,” Eggy said.

“That seems to be reasonable,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his body also moved as he began to chase after them.

At this moment, Chu Feng was also excited.

The reason for that was because he was also looking forward to their trip to the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

After all, there was a huge gathering of experts there. Even if he was unable to obtain anything from going there, he would be able to gain experience. This would be a rare opportunity.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng firmly believed that heroes appeared in chaotic times.

The more chaotic a place was, the greater the chance of the emergence of heroes.

# Chapter 2307 – Scouting For Information

---

The Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds was originally a forbidden area.

However, due to the fact that Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants were discovered, people from all of the various powers had gathered there.

At present, that uninhabited location, that place which was deemed a forbidden area, had become extremely lively.

In the beginning, the people that arrived were all of great origin. Practically none of them were ordinary individuals.

However, as the news of what was happening started to spread, more and more people that wanted to enjoy the excitement began to arrive.

None of these people were very strong. Their intentions in coming were also not to obtain the treasures in the remnants. Instead, they came purely for the sake of enjoying the bustling excitement.

Over time, some people discovered commercial opportunities, and began to create food and lodging taverns in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds for the people that were coming here. They provided cozy locations for them to stay, as well as fine foods to eat and beautiful women to serve them.

“W-wow! Wife, l-look over there. T-there's a tavern there. L-Let's go and have a r-rest and s-something to eat.”

Wang Qiang, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were all wearing conical bamboo hats. Originally, they had been proceeding straight for the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. However, upon seeing that tavern, Wang Qiang suddenly stopped.

“You are, after all, a martial cultivator, why are you so insistent on eating, it's not like you will die of hunger if you don't eat,” Zhao

Hong stared at Wang Qiang with a very displeased gaze. Her eyes were filled with disappointment.

“O-o-of course I wouldn’t die f-from hunger. B-but, e-enjoying delicious food i-is o-one’s g-great pleasure i-in living.”

“F-f-furthermore, I-I-I am not s-suggesting this f-for my sake. I-instead, it’s f-for you, wife. W-wife, you have flown w-while leading t-the two of us for so long. You m-must be tired, no?” Wang Qiang said in a very attentive manner.

“I’m not tired,” Zhao Hong said decisively.

“W-wife, look at h-how many people there are here. P-perhaps we will b-be able t-to gather a l-lot of information.”

“A-after all, i-it is b-better to be p-prepared, just in case. P-perhaps by g-gathering some i-information, we w-would have g-greater certainty after e-entering the remnants,” Wang Qiang continued.

“Indeed, there are a lot of people gathered down below. Perhaps we might really be able to obtain some information from them,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay then. However, we’re only going to have a meal. We’ll leave right after the meal,” Zhao Hong said.

After that, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong descended into the tavern. This tavern was created with world spirit techniques. It was very large, and there were a lot of customers.

For the sake of gathering information, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong did not enter into private room. Instead, they directly sat in the spacious main hall.

Although this place was very chaotic, it was also a place with a lot of people discussing various things. As such, if one wanted to know about something, one would be able to gather some information through listening closely to the conversations.



After Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were seated, they ordered a table full of food and drinks.

Wang Qiang was extremely pleased as he ate, and completely forgot about the fact that they were here to gather information. However, Chu Feng had not.

Thus, he sent a voice transmission to Zhao Hong and asked, “Zhao Hong, you said that you would tell us your plan after reaching the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. We are already here now. You should be able to tell us what your plan is, right?”

It was not that Chu Feng did not trust Zhao Hong. Merely, there were truly a lot of people gathered here. Furthermore, experts from the various major powers had already entered that remnant.

With so many experts scrambling for the treasures inside the remnants, if they did not possess a certain level of certainty of success, it would simply be impossible for people of their strength to obtain anything.

Thus, Chu Feng wanted to know exactly what sort of plan Zhao Hong had in mind. By knowing it, he would be able to determine whether or not it was feasible.

As Chu Feng’s voice transmission was toward both Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang also heard what he asked Zhao Hong. Thus, Wang Qiang asked curiously, “That’s right. Wife, w-w-what sort of p-plan do you have? Y-you should b-be able to t-tell us now, right?”

Of course, he also asked those words using a voice transmission. Only the three of them were able to hear this conversation.

“Actually, I obtained two extremely crucial items upon discovering that remnant. One of them is a map.”

“That map is currently in my mind. By relying on that map, we will be able to evade a lot of the traps and mechanisms in the

Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Thus, as long as we enter it, we will definitely be able to obtain rewards. It might even be possible for us to obtain the inheritance of Grandmaster Kai Hong,” Zhao Hong said.

“Even if you know how to avoid certain traps and mechanisms, there are already a lot of experts gathered inside. Likely, compared to the traps and mechanisms, the other people will be even more dangerous.”

“Thus, what is actually blocking us are not the traps and mechanisms in the remnants. Instead, it is the other people that have entered the remnants,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re thinking that our battle power is still too weak, right?” Zhao Hong asked.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded.

“That is why I said I discovered two crucial things.”

“Other than the map of the remnants, I also discovered a spirit formation. That spirit formation might be related to Grandmaster Kai Hong, or it might be related to the remnants left by others.”

“However, most importantly, that spirit formation is capable of providing us with battle power. Furthermore, I also know how to make use of that spirit formation’s battle power,” Zhao Hong said.

“What sort of battle power is that spirit formation you’ve discovered capable of providing us with?” Chu Feng asked.

“Is peak Martial Ancestor sufficient?” Zhao Hong asked.

“Peak Martial Ancestor?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt extremely shocked.

There were indeed True Immortal-level experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, their numbers were extremely few.

After all, even the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the

Three Stars Hall's headmaster were only rank eight Martial Ancestors.

Thus, peak Martial Ancestor was an extremely powerful level of cultivation.

If it was truly possible to obtain that level of battle power, it would indeed provide an enormous guarantee for them to enter the remnants.

"P-p-peak Martial Ancestor? Is i-it really s-sufficient?" Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng. As he had been captured right after arriving at this place, Wang Qiang did not know much about the situation of the power structure in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As such, he did not know how strong of an existence peak Martial Ancestors were in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Most importantly, compared to Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang felt greater trust in Chu Feng. As such, he would directly ask Chu Feng about this sort of thing.

"Although the appearance of the remnants in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds has attracted many experts, and even the four tier one powers have dispatched their experts, I feel that no True Immortal-level experts have come here."

"Thus, peak Martial Ancestor is sufficient," Zhao Hong said.

"Indeed, it should be sufficient," Chu Feng nodded.

"Haha. Wife, you are truly amazing," Hearing those words from Chu Feng and Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang heaved a sigh of relief. After he had reassured himself, he started to once again gorge himself with good.

"The Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley actually..."

"They are truly..."

During this period of time, Chu Feng heard some people

discussing matters concerning him. When Chu Feng noticed that the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley had actually declared war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for him, he became extremely depressed.

Chu Feng had already made himself clear back then. He had done so all for the sake of distancing himself from the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley so that they would not be implicated by the troubles he would provoke in the future.

However, he truly never expected that even though he was so excessive in his refusal, the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley would still insist on helping him.

This caused Chu Feng to feel emotionally moved, but at the same time, he felt depressed. After all, this sort of camaraderie was not something that anyone could accomplish.

Thus, Chu Feng was unable to get himself to blame them. Yet, at the same time, he was unable to feel grateful toward them. As such, he entered a tangled state of mind.

# Chapter 2308 – The Kindhearted Demoniac Woman

---

“You only knew about it now?” Seeing the change in Chu Feng’s behavior, Zhao Hong smiled lightly. She seemed to have already known about this news.

Chu Feng sighed. As things were already like this, there was nothing he could say about it.

Right at this moment, a little boy sneaked into the tavern while the tavern’s guards were not paying attention.

This little boy appeared to only be around eight years old. However, he possessed martial cultivation. Furthermore, his cultivation was not weak; he was actually a Heavenly Realm martial cultivator.

With his cultivation at his age, if he were to be placed in the Nine Provinces Continent, he would definitely be someone astonishing and capable of causing others to worship him for his talent.

Firstly, the Heavenly Realm was already at the peak level of cultivation in the Nine Provinces Continent.

That was because eight years old could not be considered to be an age where people started martial cultivation.

However, the appearance of a child with heaven-defying talent in the Nine Provinces Continent did not cause others to take notice of him.

After all, this place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After the little boy rushed in, he began to look all around. He seemed to be searching for a specific target.

Finally, he found a target. It was a man and a woman with benevolent appearances. They seemed to be a couple.

The little boy ran over to the couple and grabbed that man's sleeve. He shook it left and right and began to plead. However, his tone was neither servile nor overbearing.

“Great sir, great sir, give me something to eat. If you are to do so, I will tell you the most valuable information concerning the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“If great sir is able to provide me with more food and some money on top of that, I am able to tell you about a great secret. It will be of essential assistance to great sir's entrance to Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants.”

The man was annoyed by the little boy. However, upon taking the presence of the woman into consideration, he did not get angry. Instead, he smiled a fake smile and picked up a chicken wing.

He said to the little boy, “Tell me something. I will determine whether or not it is real or fake. If what you say is true, I will give this to you.”

Upon seeing that chicken wing, the little boy hungrily gulped down a mouthful of saliva. He hurriedly said, “Currently, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's four tier one powers, many tier two powers and even some tier three powers have all dispatched their peak experts into Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants.”

“However, as of right now, they have not managed to obtain anything.”

“If great sir came for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures, then you will still have a high chance of obtaining treasures should you enter the remnants now.”

“You're saying that the Immortal Sword School, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Zhou Heavenly Clan and Kong Heavenly Clan, the four tier one powers, have also yet to find anything?” The man

was rather surprised.

“That’s right. So far, they have yet to obtain anything. However, all of them have suffered some casualties. Some of the tier two powers have already decided to withdraw from the remnants; they do not dare to continue too deep into them.”

“As for the tier three powers, practically all of them have given up,” The little boy said with an earnest expression.

“This brat is truly capable at spouting nonsense. Although I have not entered the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, I can still well-imagine that it would be impossible for that many experts to not have obtained anything yet,” The woman sitting on the table with the man said.

Hearing what the woman said, the man directly stuffed the chicken wing he was holding into his own mouth. Then, he turned around and no longer bothered with the boy.

In response, the boy hurriedly tried to explain. “Great sir, I did not deceive you. What I said is all the truth.”

“Damned beggar, scram immediately,” However, after the woman had shown disdain toward the boy, the man’s attitude had a hundred and eighty degree change. He waved his sleeve and knocked the boy to the ground.

The little boy seemed to be afraid of creating a disturbance. Thus, he did not continue to tangle with the couple. Instead, he turned to look elsewhere.

However, no one was willing to believe him. In the end, no one was willing to bother with him.

“Damned brat! It’s you again! This time around, I’m definitely going to cripple you!”

“Men! Capture this brat! Break his legs! Turn him into a cripple. I shall see if he will dare to come stir up trouble again.”

Finally, a waiter in the tavern discovered the little boy. After the waiter shouted for assistance, one of the guards outside the tavern rushed in and grabbed the boy.

At this moment, the boy had a frightened expression. He began to beg for forgiveness. However, not a single person was willing to save him.

The majority of the people in the tavern had decided to look on without lifting a finger. In fact, some even had sneers on their faces. It was as if they were enjoying a very entertaining show that was occurring before them.

“Stop!” Finally, Chu Feng spoke. Following his shout, his aura of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor swept forth. Immediately, he caused the tavern to tremble.

Although there were many people gathered in this tavern, the majority of them were only disciples of certain sects and schools. As such, their strength was not very strong.

Among these people here, a rank five Half Martial Ancestor was extremely strong.

Once Chu Feng emitted his aura of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, he immediately caused the expressions of the crowd to change. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng now were filled with reverence.

At this moment, the tavern that was originally bustling with activity was immediately completely silent. The people present were afraid of speaking and offending this grand character.

The guard that grabbed the little boy and the waiter that had cursed at the little boy earlier thought that the boy had some sort of relationship with Chu Feng. As such, they were so scared that they started to shiver in fear, and were unable to stand steadily.

“Release him,” Chu Feng said.

Upon hearing what Chu Feng said, how could the guard and that



waiter possibly dare to hesitate? He immediately released the boy. Then, with a 'putt,' they kneeled onto the ground. They started to kowtow toward Chu Feng while begging for forgiveness.

"Milord, we did not know that you knew this young master. Please forgive us."

"You can go," Chu Feng waved his hand casually. He did not wish to bicker with snobs like them.

In response, the waiter and the guard hurriedly left. They no longer dared to appear before Chu Feng.

"Big brother, thank you for saving me," The little boy ran to Chu Feng excitedly.

However, upon hearing what the boy said, Chu Feng's gaze changed slightly.

Although Chu Feng had not deliberately disguised his appearance, he was wearing a special conical bamboo hat. That conical bamboo hat was something that Zhao Hong had given him. It was capable of blocking other people's sight. In fact, not even Immortal-cloak World Spiritists could see through the conical bamboo hat.

Logically, no one should be able to see through Chu Feng's appearance, and no one should be able to determine Chu Feng's age.

However, this little boy addressed Chu Feng as 'big brother' from the get go. It was not 'uncle' or 'grandpa.' It was as if he could see through Chu Feng's appearance. This made Chu Feng feel extremely surprised.

However, upon closer inspection, Chu Feng did not discover anything special regarding the little boy. Even his eyes were simply very clear and vivid.

The innocence of someone his age seemed to all be present in the boy. Furthermore, it did not seem to be fake.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that it was because this boy was feeling grateful toward him that he addressed him as ‘big brother.’ At least, like that, it would make Chu Feng appear to be young.

To put it simply, the little boy had called Chu Feng ‘big brother’ on purpose, and not because he had managed to see through Chu Feng’s appearance.

“You must be hungry. Go ahead and eat.”

Chu Feng lifted the boy onto a chair and pointed at the delicacies that filled the table. He indicated to the boy that he could eat as he wished.

“Really?” The little boy’s eyes were wide open. He did not dare to believe what he had heard.

“Go ahead and eat. Eat as much as you want. If there’s not enough, I’ll order some more,” However, before Chu Feng could respond, Zhao Hong spoke first. Furthermore, the tone that she spoke with was very gentle and soft.

“W-wife, you promised me that you would not eat men again in the future. Moreover, with how small this child is, y-y-you should j-just spare him,” Wang Qiang thought that Zhao Hong was thinking about eating that boy. Thus, he hurriedly urged her against it via voice transmission.

“Who said that I’m going to eat him? I only felt pity for him.”

“Furthermore, I am someone that only eats certain people. I do not eat those that do not feel lustful thoughts toward me,” Zhao Hong cast a ruthless side eye at Wang Qiang. Then, she actually picked up a drumstick with her chopsticks and placed it onto the boy’s plate.

Chu Feng was very shocked upon seeing this scene. He truly never expected this notorious demonic woman to actually have such a kindhearted side to her.

Most importantly, Chu Feng felt that the demonic woman was

treating the boy well from the bottom of her heart. She did not seem to be pretending or conspiring anything.

## Chapter 2309 – Heaven-startling Secret

---

“Thank you all. You are all good people,” The little boy was wild with joy; he began to unrestrainedly gorge himself with food.

Although his stature was small, his appetite was akin to that of an extremely hungry ghost. The entire table’s worth of food was completely devoured spotlessly by that little boy in no time at all.

As Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong looked to the boy’s deeply bulging stomach, as well as his satisfied appearance, they all revealed satisfied smiles. None of them blamed that boy for eating too much. Instead, they all found the boy to be adorable.

After the boy was done eating, he wiped his mouth and said to Chu Feng, “Big brothers, big sister, you all are truly good people. I cannot eat your food for free. I will tell you all about the situation in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“All those powers have entered that place. Are they truly unable to obtain anything?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“So far, none of them have managed to obtain anything. Instead, they’ve suffered many casualties,” The little boy said.

“Then, do you know how strong the strongest experts that have entered the remnants are?” Chu Feng asked.

“Currently, the strongest would be peak Martial Ancestors,” The little boy replied very straightforwardly. He did not hesitate in the slightest.

“Apart from this, what else do you know? Go ahead and tell us,” Chu Feng said.

“I also know of a piece of news that only a few people know about. That is, the two great geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have entered the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. If the two of them are to encounter each other, a fierce battle will definitely occur,” The little boy said.

“Two great geniuses? W-w-who a-are the two g-great geniuses?” Wang Qiang asked curiously.

“Young Master Li Ming. He is the youngest Immortal-cloak World Spiritist in the history of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“He possesses enormous talent, and is deemed to be the number one genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Countless experts wanted to take him as their disciple. However, they were all refused by him.”

“Reportedly, even the greatly renowned Golden Crane True Immortal wanted to take him as his disciple, and was also refused,” The little boy said.

“Oh, h-h-he’s a-actually t-that amazing?” Wang Qiang said in a skeptical manner.

“I have heard of that Young Master Li Ming before. He seems to possess actual ability,” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang.

“I-Is that so?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang started to believe what the boy said.

“Then, who is the second genius?” Chu Feng asked the boy.

Chu Feng had only heard of Young Master Li Ming, and had never heard of another genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that was comparable to Young Master Li Ming.

“Hun Lian.”

“There don’t seem to be a lot of people that know of Hun Lian. Compared to Young Master Li Ming, this Hun Lian is even more mysterious. However, his overall strength is not inferior to Young Master Li Ming’s, he is a demon-level existence.”

“Reportedly, standing behind Hun Lian to support him is an extremely formidable power.”

“Although I also do not know the name of that power, it seems

that power is a very powerful existence that is not categorized as a tier one power,” The little boy lowered his voice as he said those words. It was as if he was afraid that others would hear it.

“Little fellow, I have, after all, let you eat all these delicacies, so don’t you toy around with me,” Zhao Hong said.

“Big sister, I am not toying with you. I am telling the truth,” The little boy said earnestly.

“Forget about it. It’s better that you continue eating,” Zhao Hong was evidently distrustful.

This was not her fault. After all, in the eyes of the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the four tier one powers were already the strongest.

They believed that a power that could contend against the four tier one powers simply did not exist .

However, Chu Feng, on the other hand, had a whole new level of respect for that little boy.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that there was a power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that was capable of contending against the four tier one powers, and might even be stronger than the four tier one powers.

That power was the power that had been around for many years, but very few people knew of, the Infant Soul Sect.

That [Hun Lian’s name](#) was relatively strange. This caused Chu Feng to feel that he might be related to the Infant Soul Sect.

“Little guy, do you know anything else?” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“While I know a lot of things, not many of them are valuable.”

“Big brother, I can tell that you all are good people. Thus, I’ll tell you all about the heaven-startling secret that I know,” The little boy said with a low voice.

“Yoh, y-you really k-know a heaven-startling secret?” T-t-then, tell us e-exactly what it is,” Wang Qiang said jokingly. Evidently, he did not trust the little boy, and was purely toying with him.

“Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant is filled with traps and mechanisms. It is practically impossible to obtain treasures from his remnants.”

“However, there are four cloaks that will allow one to evade all of the traps and mechanisms upon wearing them. In fact, upon entering the remnants with those cloaks, one would be undiscoverable by anyone.”

“As for my secret, I know the locations of those four cloaks,” The little boy said proudly.

“Oh? T-then, tell us, w-where are t-those magical c-cloaks?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Wait,” Before the little boy could speak, Chu Feng suddenly stopped him. Then, with a thought, Chu Feng covered their surroundings with a layer of spirit power.

It was a special concealing formation. Being covered by that concealing formation, Chu Feng and the others would appear to still be chatting to the people outside. However, what they saw would only be an illusion.

As long as this concealing formation was present, the contents of Chu Feng and the others’ conversation would not be heard by the people outside.

“B-b-brother, a-aren’t you t-t-too naive?”

“Y-you couldn’t p-p-possibly think that t-this little guy would t-truly know an e-enormous secret, r-right?”

Wang Qiang looked to Chu Feng with an astonished expression. He had never trusted the boy’s words, and was only trying to toy with him. However, never would he expect that Chu Feng would actually be this serious.

However, Chu Feng only smiled dimly at Wang Qiang. Then, he looked back to the little boy and said, “Little fellow, go ahead. Tell us where those cloaks are hidden.”

At this moment, the boy took out a map from his bosom. After opening the map, he pointed at two marks on the map. He said, “Here and here.”

“Haha, l-little f-fellow, you t-truly c-consider us to be fools, right? Even if y-you want to deceive s-someone, you should be m-more earnest, no?”

“T-this m-map of y-yours is truly too f-fake. E-even my drawings w-when I was a year o-old looked better than that,” Wang Qiang burst into laughter. The reason for that was because the map the boy revealed was extremely crude. It appeared to be the drawings of a small child.

However, right at this moment, Zhao Hong’s eyes shone. “Those two places seem to truly exist.”

After all, compared to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, she knew the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds very well.

“Of course they do. I have not deceived you all. The locations of the cloaks are guarded by spirit formations. If one does not know how to break the spirit formations, even Martial Ancestors will not be able to enter those locations, much less obtain the cloaks,” The little boy said.

“E-even Martial Ancestors are unable to enter? R-regardless of w-whether w-what you’ve said is true or not, e-even if it is, how a-are we supposed to e-enter t-those p-places w-when even Martial Ancestors cannot?” Wang Qiang looked to the little boy with a disdainful expression.

“However, I know of the method to undo the spirit formations,” The little boy said.

Hun in Hun Lian’s name means Soul. Lian means temper/refine.



So his name basically means refining soul.

# Chapter 2310 – Highlord's Mansion

---

“What sort of method?” Chu Feng asked.

“Those two spirit formations are both hidden below a large tree. That tree looks like this,” As the little boy spoke, he took out another picture scroll.

That picture scroll once again appeared to have been drawn by that little boy. However, compared to the map, the picture scroll was much more detailed. At the very least, one could tell what the drawing was; a tree. It was a tree that did not appear to be special at first glance, and still did not appear to be special even upon closer inspection.

“If it’s a tree like this, they’re everywhere,” Wang Qiang said with curled lips.

“It is true that trees like these are everywhere. However, at the two locations with hidden cloaks, there is only one such tree,” The boy said.

“Then, how are we to break through the formations below the trees?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s quite simple. You merely need to engrave a symbol on the tree with spirit power,” As the boy spoke, he took out a scroll. After opening the scroll, the expressions of Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong all changed.

The reason for that was because, when compared to the map or the picture scroll, the contents of the scroll were much more trustworthy.

As the three of them were Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, they were able to tell with a single glance that the symbol on the scroll was a sort of spirit formation symbol.

Although it was a small-scale spirit formation, and a very simple one on top of that, it was still an actual spirit formation.

“W-we’ll be a-able to open t-the spirit formations t-that not even Martial A-ancestors could break t-through just by e-engraving such a s-spirit formation s-symbol?” Wang Qiang smiled disdainfully.

Although Wang Qiang was also very astonished by the fact that the boy had taken out such a spirit formation symbol, it remained that that spirit formation symbol was something that any Royal-cloak World Spiritist could easily draw. It was not a profound spirit formation. As such, Wang Qiang did not think that a spirit formation symbol like that would be able to open a spirit formation that not even Martial Ancestors could break through.

“No, if only that spirit formation symbol is engraved, it will indeed not be of any use. Thus, what I am going to tell you all will be the crucial aspect to breaking the spirit formation.”

“These two symbols, must be engraved at the same time. Furthermore, they must be completed at the same time,” The little boy said in a very serious manner.

“You’re saying that the two spirit formation symbols must be started and completed at the same time?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. They must be done simultaneously. Else, they will be ineffective,” The little boy said.

“In that case, it would mean that there will need to be two people working simultaneously,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, y-you c-c-couldn’t possibly really believe t-this little fellow’s words, right?” Wang Qiang looked to Chu Feng in astonishment.

“Zhao Hong, what do you think of this?” Chu Feng looked to Zhao Hong.

“There’s no harm in trying it out. How about this, you go to this place since it’s closer,” Zhao Hong pointed to the location on the map that was closer to the tavern.

“Then, how long would it take for you to reach that place?” Chu

Feng pointed to the other location on the map and asked Zhao Hong.

The place Chu Feng was planning to proceed to was very close to the tavern. He would be able to reach it very quickly.

However, the other location on the map was very far away from here. Even for Zhao Hong, it would take a while for her to reach it.

“Four hours. I will definitely be able to reach there in four hours. Thus, it would be fine for us to set up the spirit formation simultaneously four hours later,” Zhao Hong said.

“We must finish setting up the formations at the same time. When you arrive, let’s use this speed to draw the spirit formation symbol,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to draw the spirit formation symbol. Soon, he finished drawing it.

“That’s no issue,” Zhao Hong remembered the time Chu Feng took.

“Then, when are we leaving?” Chu Feng asked.

“This matter should not be delayed; let’s set off right away. After that, regardless of the result, we shall return here to meet up with one another.”

“Husband, you should stay here to look after this little fellow. If he is a scammer, I will not spare him,” After Zhao Hong finished saying those words, she flew out of the tavern.

“Then I’ll take my leave too,” After Zhao Hong left, Chu Feng also stood up and prepared to leave.

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was about to leave, Wang Qiang grabbed Chu Feng’s shoulder. He said, “Brother, y-you’re really going?”

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng was confused.

“That d-demonic woman has l-left. We s-should be escaping now. T-this is a g-great opportunity,” Wang Qiang said.

“This moment wouldn’t make a difference. Since we have already come, I also wish to experience Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant. Perhaps we might really be able to gain from it,” Chu Feng said.

“E-even if that is the case, d-do you r-really believe in w-what this little f-fellow has said?”

“W-why d-don’t you a-ask him w-where he obtained t-these things?” Wang Qiang said.

“I am truly not deceiving anyone,” The little boy said resolutely.

“I believe that you have not deceived me,” Chu Feng smiled amiably at the boy. Then, he asked, “Then, can you tell me what your name is?”

“I am called [Xiaoshi](#),” The little boy said.

“Xiaoshi?” Chu Feng had a pensive expression. He seemed to be thinking about something. However, what he had in his mind soon swept past his mind. With a smile on his face, he rubbed Xiaoshi’s little head and said, “Xiaoshi, accompany your big brother Wang Qiang and stay here properly. I will soon return.”

“Mn,” Xiaoshi nodded his head hard. He appeared to be very clever and adorable.

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to walk toward the tavern’s exit. However, right after he reached the gate of the tavern, he was blocked by a group of people.

It was a group of people that were coming into the tavern to rest. There were about a dozen or so people. They all appeared to be members of the younger generation. However, their cultivations were all pretty strong. This was especially true for the one leading the group, a handsome man with delicate features. His cultivation was actually that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, judging from their outfits, they should be from the same power.

For there to be so many powerful people of the younger generation, they most likely possessed quite a grand origin. Thus, Chu Feng subconsciously took a glance at the title plates on their waists.

From the title plates, Chu Feng obtained his answer: the Highlord's Mansion.

“Highlord's Mansion?”

“Look! They're disciples from the Highlord's Mansion!”

“Heavens! Isn't that person leading the group t-the number one disciple of the Highlord's Mansion?”

Right at this moment, the tavern that was originally tranquil immediately burst into an uproar. Many of the females present let out screams of excitement.

Hearing the conversation from the crowd, Chu Feng came to know the origin of these people.

Highlord's Mansion. It was the third strongest power among the second tier powers. Its strength surpassed that of the Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall.

As for that man with the cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, his name was Di Jiuzhou.

Reportedly, Di Jiuzhou was the strongest member of the younger generation among the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's younger generation from the tier two powers.

Evidently, the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion all heard the discussion from the crowd in the tavern, and saw their gazes of reverence as they all revealed extremely proud expressions.

Suddenly, a man from the Highlord's Mansion pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “What are you looking at?! Can't you see that you're blocking the road?! Why aren't you scrambling still?!”

His attitude was very arrogant and aggressive. It was as if he was

berating a beggar. He had completely disregarded Chu Feng.

Based on Chu Feng's attitude, he would definitely not give in to someone that dared to speak to him in such a manner. He would definitely teach them a lesson.

However, that was then and this was now. As Chu Feng had something he had to do, he did not wish to provoke these people and bring attention to himself. Furthermore, they were disciples from the Highlord's Mansion.

Furthermore, after knowing that the name of the man that lead the group was Di Jiuzhou, Chu Feng felt some sort of fate. After all, the Nine Continents Province was the place that Chu Feng had the most profound memories of. [Di Jiuzhou's name Jiuzhou sounds exactly the same as the Nine Provinces(Jiuzhou).]

Thus, Chu Feng did not bother to do anything else. Instead, he smiled and moved aside, creating a path for the incoming group.

“Humph.”

Although Chu Feng had moved aside, the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion still did not express the slightest bit of goodwill toward Chu Feng.

In fact, they started to look down on Chu Feng even more. Their gazes seemed to be mocking at Chu Feng. It was as if they had won this virtual battle, and were going to use their gazes to shame their opponent.

As for Chu Feng, he did not care about those sorts of mocking gazes at all. He acted as if he did not see them.

After those people walked into the tavern, Chu Feng walked out of the tavern. He soared into the air, and began to fly toward the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

Xiaoshi means Little Master/Teacher.

# Chapter 2311 – Wang Qiang Displaying His Might

---

After Chu Feng left, the disciple from the Highlord's Mansion that beated Chu Feng earlier mocked, "Truly trash. If it weren't for master's order, I would definitely have beaten him till he was unable to care for himself. How could I possibly allow him to escape like that?"

"Just let it go. There's no need to bother with trash like him. Beating him would only dirty our hands," The man by the name of Di Jiuzhou said with contempt.

"What senior brother Di says is very true," Once Di Jiuzhou said those words, the disciples with him all nodded their heads in succession and smiled like a bunch of lackeys. Fortunately, they did not have tails; if they did, their tails would definitely be wagging like dogs.

Their ability in ass-kissing had most definitely reached the level of mastery. They were capable of kissing all sorts of ass at any given time.

Even though the personality of these disciples from the Highlord's Mansion could be determined from their words and actions, the people in the tavern did not feel disgust toward them because of that. Instead, they felt those disciples from the Highlord's Mansion to be extremely powerful. Some of the crowd even felt greater admiration for them.

Involuntarily, there were also people that started to feel contempt towards Chu Feng due to his meekness.

Not only that, many among them even started to quietly discuss among themselves, and openly speak words to humiliate Chu Feng.

After all, they had all been very scared of Chu Feng when he had revealed his cultivation of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. They



all thought that Chu Feng was very strong, and marked Chu Feng to be an expert in their hearts.

Chu Feng's actions earlier had brought dissatisfaction to them. Involuntarily, they determined that Chu Feng was someone who bullied the weak and feared the strong.

Actually, this behavior from the crowd was reasonable. After all, the world of martial cultivators was a world where might was right. Only powerful experts were able to gain the crowd's respect.

As for their moral character, they were things that not many people cared about.

"Those people are truly excessive. Big brother had already made way for them. Yet they still denounced big brother like that," Compared to the others in the tavern, Xiaoshi cried out against injustice for Chu Feng.

"L-little guy, d-do you b-believe t-that n-none of them are a m-match for my brother?"

"If it wasn't f-for the fact that my brother had a t-task at hand, a-and did not w-want to b-bicker with them, t-these people w-would all be lying and r-rolling on the ground now," Wang Qiang said to Xiaoshi.

"I do, I do," Xiaoshi nodded innocently. He revealed a firmly believing smile.

At this moment, the crowd from the Highlord's Mansion had already taken their seats. Eager to reveal their greatness, they also did not enter a private room, and instead sat in the lounge.

"Senior brother Di, recently, that Chu Feng is truly getting famous."

"He first defeated the Four World Spiritist Emperors on Mount Cloud Crane, and became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist."

"Then, not long after that, he killed Ying Liangchen and became

a wanted criminal with a great bounty that the Ying Heavenly Clan was determined to kill.”

“And now, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, those two relatively strong tier two powers, have actually joined hands to support that Chu Feng, and have even waged war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for him.”

“There have been rumors that Chu Feng will become the strongest genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm apart from Young Master Li Ming,” A disciple from the Highlord’s Mansion said.

“He is but trash. If he were to encounter our senior brother Di, he would definitely be beaten so badly by senior brother Di that he’d piss his pants in terror,” A female disciple said with contempt.

After that female disciple said those words, Di Jiuzhou laughed complacently. He said, “That’s to be expected.”

“Right, right, right. Regardless of how powerful that Chu Feng might be, if he is to encounter our senior brother Di, he will be nothing more than trash,” In response, the other disciples also began to kiss Di Jiuzhou’s ass.

Right at this moment, Wang Qiang walked over. With a beaming smile on his face, he turned to ask the woman who had insulted Chu Feng, “B-beauty, p-please e-excuse my interruption.”

“I have a q-question t-that I wish to ask you. I h-hope that it will not inconvenience you t-to answer.”

“What sort of question?” Although that woman was displeased by Wang Qiang’s arrival, she did not decline his request.

“D-do you k-know Chu Feng?” Wang Qiang asked.

“How could I know a guy like that?” The woman shook her head. She reacted as if Chu Feng was scum, that knowing him would decrease her own social status.

“T-then, h-have you met Chu Feng?” Wang Qiang continued to ask. He was smiling the entire time.

“No,” The woman shook her head once again.

“Then, w-what about you all?” Wang Qiang looked to the other disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion.

“No,” Those Highlord’s Mansion disciples all shook their heads.

“M-Motherfucker! S-since you all d-do not know C-Chu Feng, and h-have not met him, who t-the hell t-told you all that Chu Feng w-was trash?!”

Suddenly, Wang Qiang shouted loudly. At the same time, he flipped over the table.

Everything came too suddenly. This caused those people to be unable to dodge, and the food and drink splattered all over their bodies and clothes. This was the worst for that woman. Her relatively beautiful face was covered with vegetable soup. Pieces of vegetable leaf were also hanging on her head. Her appearance was truly sorry.

“Are you courting death?!” The woman shouted angrily. As she spoke, she took out her Incomplete Ancestral Armament with the intention of attacking Wang Qiang.

“Paa~~~”

However, Wang Qiang waved his sleeve, and a resounding slap landed on her face. The power of his slap was so strong that the woman was knocked flying away.

Before the others could react, Wang Qiang once again moved his hand. “Paa, paa, paa, paa,” resounding slaps sounded in succession. Other than Di Jiuzhou, the rest of the Highlord’s Mansion’s disciples present all received a resounding slap from Wang Qiang, and were knocked to the ground.

Finally, those people managed to react. However, at this

moment, Wang Qiang had turned into a ray of light and flown out of the tavern.

“A-all of y-you, remember this c-carefully. T-this slap was g-given to you by y-your Grandda-daddy Qiang!”

Although Wang Qiang had left, his voice resounded like thunder. The tone of his voice was filled with mockery.

After his voice was heard, those disciples of the Highlord's Mansion were so furious that their faces turned green. However, not a single person dared to chase after Wang Qiang. Instead, they all turned their gazes to Di Jiuzhou.

The reason for that was because they realized that they were no match for Wang Qiang. At this moment, if they wanted revenge, their only hope would be their senior brother Di.

“Rest assured, he will definitely not be able to escape,” Di Jiuzhou smiled coldly. Then, he soared into the sky. A burst of strong wind arrived, and Di Jiuzhou disappeared.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The very next moment, explosions began to be heard from the direction where Wang Qiang had fled. Surging energy ripples were formed following the explosions. The sky had also changed in color.

Even though the location where the battle was happening was a certain distance away from here, the earth here was also trembling violently.

“That ignorant fool. He actually dared to attack us. Now he knows what sort of opponent he has provoked.”

“Humph, with senior brother Di here, he will definitely be beaten till he pisses his pants in terror.”

“A mere rank six Half Martial Ancestor dared to act all mighty before us? Before senior brother Di, he is nothing more than trash.

His only fate is to be beaten up.”

Those Highlord’s Mansion disciples that were beaten by Wang Qiang were all filled with confidence toward their senior brother Di. One by one, they started to mock Wang Qiang.

Merely, to their surprise, this battle did not end in the time frame they had expected it to end. Instead, the battle grew longer and longer. Furthermore, the intensity of the havoc wreaking the battlefield grew stronger and stronger.

“That stutterer couldn’t possibly be really capable of fighting against senior brother Di, right?”

At this moment, the confidence on the faces of the Highlord’s Mansion disciples was all gone, and was replaced with deep panic.

They were afraid, truly afraid. They were scared that Di Jiuzhou would be defeated by Wang Qiang.

If even Di Jiuzhou was defeated, none of them would be able to defeat Wang Qiang.

If that were to happen, their Highlord’s Mansion would suffer an enormous humiliation today.

# Chapter 2312 – The Reveal Of The Answer

---

“That stutterer is actually that powerful?”

Panic. It was not only the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion that started to panic; many of the bystanders also began to panic. This was especially true for the ones who had been speaking ill of Chu Feng in the tavern earlier. They hurriedly escaped from the tavern and hid themselves among the crowd, watching the battle from a distance.

They were afraid, afraid that Wang Qiang would return to take care of them should he defeat Di Jiuzhou.

Finally, after a long time, the rumbling started to quiet down, and the energy ripples began to wane. The dusky sky also gradually returned to its original appearance.

Although the battle had stopped, the crowd grew even more nervous. The reason for that was because they did not know exactly who had won and who had lost in this intense battle.

“Woosh~~~”

Finally, a figure flew back to the tavern.

Upon seeing this person, the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion immediately started cheering. They were all beaming with happiness and filled with emotions.

The reason they reacted in such a manner was because the person who had returned was none other than their Highlord’s Mansion’s number one disciple, Di Jiuzhou.

At this moment, Di Jiuzhou’s body was emitting blue gaseous flames. Even his eyes had turned bright blue like sapphires.

As for his cultivation, it was no longer that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, but had instead increased to rank eight Half Martial Ancestor.

It was Divine Power; Di Jiuzhou was a Divine body. Furthermore, his battle power was very strong. As such, he was able to increase his cultivation by a level with his Divine Power.

However, this also indirectly displayed how powerful Wang Qiang was. If Wang Qiang wasn't powerful, he would not have forced Di Jiuzhou to unleash his Divine Power to increase his cultivation.

However, even with that being the case, the disciples of the Highlord's Mansion were still extremely glad. The reason for that was because Di Jiuzhou had not returned alone; he held a person in his hand.

That person was Wang Qiang.

At this moment, Wang Qiang was covered in blood. His aura was extremely weak. Like a dying pig, he was thrown to the ground by Di Jiuzhou.

"Your conical bamboo hat is a treasure. However, that is the only treasure you have on you."

Di Jiuzhou put Wang Qiang's conical bamboo hat into his Cosmos Sack. Although he said that was the only treasure that Wang Qiang had, he still put Wang Qiang's Cosmos Sack into his own Cosmos Sack.

"Speak! What sort of relationship do you have with that Chu Feng? Why are you speaking up for him?" Di Jiuzhou said to Wang Qiang.

"Y-you don't say! C-Chu Feng is m-my brother!" Wang Qiang said unyieldingly.

"That makes things simple then. Tell me where Chu Feng is," Di Jiuzhou grabbed Wang Qiang and lifted him up.

"I don't know," Wang Qiang said unyieldingly.

"You don't know?" As Di Jiuzhou spoke, he gave Wang Qiang a

ruthless slap to the face.

That slap was so powerful that it not only knocked Wang Qiang to the ground, but also caused him to spray out a mouthful of blood. Furthermore, half of his face has been distorted by the slap.

“Don’t beat up my big brother!” Right at this moment, Xiaoshi rushed out. His arms were spread wide open as he stood before Wang Qiang.

“Yoh, so you have more accomplices,” Upon seeing Xiaoshi, Di Jiuzhou smiled coldly. He did not have any intentions of acting leniently.

“W-why did you c-come here? T-this is unrelated to you! Q-quickly, get aw-away,” Wang Qiang pushed Xiaoshi aside.

However, at this time, Di Jiuzhou extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Immediately, a burst of attractive force spread out, and Xiaoshi was sucked into his grasp.

“You wish to clear your relationship with him? Did you take me for a fool?” Di Jiuzhou sneered as he looked to Wang Qiang.

“A-aim w-what you want t-toward me. Do not h-harm the innocent,” Wang Qiang said.

“Yoh, I truly couldn’t tell that you were actually a man of steel. Very well. I’ll agree to your request. As long as you kneel down before me and kowtow to admit your mistake, I will release him,” Di Jiuzhou said.

“Tsk, a-and here I was wondering what y-you would a-ask of me. S-so it’s only t-that. P-piece of cake,” Wang Qiang smiled and stood up with great difficulty. Then, before the crowd, with a ‘putt,’ he kneeled before Di Jiuzhou.

After that, Wang Qiang kowtowed his head to the ground resoundingly ten times in succession. Then, he said, “Great hero, I-I-I h-have eyes, but f-failed to see Mount Tai. I w-was wrong. P-Please, spare t-that little guy.”



Everything happened too quickly. Even though Wang Qiang had a calm expression, the crowd present were at a complete loss for words, and began to feel uncomfortable all around.

From Wang Qiang's behavior earlier, he had truly resembled a tough and unyielding man of steel. Thus, how could he kneel just like this?

Could it be that he was truly that kindhearted, truly kneeled for the sake of saving that little child?

However, that shouldn't be the case. While others might not know about it, the people in the tavern all knew that the little boy was unrelated to Wang Qiang, that they had met one another in the tavern.

Could it be that the unyielding character this guy had displayed earlier was a complete pretense? Could it be that he was actually a weak-minded individual, and that this was who he actually was?

"So you're nothing more than a coward," Di Jiuzhou laughed mockingly. However, he kept his promise and released Xiaoshi.

However, Di Jiuzhou did not plan to spare Wang Qiang. He walked over to Wang Qiang and grabbed his head. He said, "Since you are a coward, I'll give you another chance. Loudly declare that Chu Feng is trash and I'll spare you."

"Hahaha..." Hearing those words, Wang Qiang opened his mouth and burst into loud laughter. However, who would've thought that Wang Qiang's expression would suddenly change? Then, a 'pah' was heard as a mouthful of spit sprayed out from Wang Qiang's mouth.

The distance between the two men was truly too close. As such, that Di Jiuzhou simply did not have the time to dodge. Thus, that spit landed directly on Di Jiuzhou's face.

"Chu Feng is y-your granddaddy!!!"

"N-not even a hundred of you c-could compare to my one

brother!”

After Wang Qiang sprayed out his spit, he stood up angrily, held his fist and smashed it toward Di Jiuzhou.

“You are truly courting death!” Di Jiuzhou had managed to react. He felt the spit on his face and became furious. His killing intent began to soar.

His body shifted as he dodged Wang Qiang’s fist. Then, he shot forth a punch, knocking Wang Qiang flying.

“F-fucking hell! T-today, your g-granddaddy will d-definitely eliminate you!”

Wang Qiang stood up with great difficulty. However, he had already lost the strength to continue fighting. However, even with that being the case, he did not plan to give up, and wanted to continue to fight against Di Jiuzhou.

“Since you want to die, I shall help you accomplish your aim,” Di Jiuzhou also moved toward Wang Qiang while fuming with rage. He raised his hand and slapped the extremely weak Wang Qiang, knocking him to the ground. Then, he began to ruthlessly kick Wang Qiang.

However, this time around, even though Wang Qiang was beaten completely bloody and mutilated beyond recognition, he only clenched his teeth and did not beg for forgiveness in the slightest.

.....

Chu Feng had no idea what Wang Qiang was going through right now. At this moment, he had already arrived at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

On their way there, Her Lady Queen asked, “Chu Feng, do you really think what that boy said to be true?”

“I have observed that boy carefully. I did not find anything special regarding him. As such, I am unable to be certain whether

or not he is lying.”

“However, I still feel what he said to be the truth. If a reason must be given, then I guess you could call it intuition,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay then. It won’t hurt to try,” Her Lady Queen said.

Although the location that Chu Feng was proceeding toward was located in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, it was at the edge of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Thus, he reached his destination not long after entering.

Furthermore, Chu Feng soon discovered that tree.

While it was true that that tree could not be considered to be a special sort of variety of tree in this region, and would not attract attention from others, that tree was actually the only tree like the one drawn by the little boy in this place.

This caused Chu Feng to feel a great sense of confidence in the boy’s words.

“It seems that boy really didn’t deceive you,” Seeing that tree, Her Lady Queen became much more confident.

“We will soon know whether what he said is true or false,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

He was waiting, waiting for the appointed time with the demonic woman.

At that time, the answer would be revealed.

# Chapter 2313 – Raging Flames Of Anger

---

Finally, the time arrived. Chu Feng, who had been waiting in front of the tree, immediately began engraving the spirit formation symbol onto the tree. He finished the engraving at the same appointed time he and Zhao Hong had agreed upon.

“Buzz~~~”

After the engraving of the spirit formation symbol was complete, the tree started to emit a faint flickering light. Soon, a spirit formation gate opened up below the tree.

The spirit formation gate was not very deep, and did not cut off one’s line of sight. Thus, Chu Feng was able to see what was inside the spirit formation gate using the naked eye.

Inside the spirit formation gate was a spirit formation. It was a very powerful spirit formation, so powerful that Chu Feng did not feel that he would be able to break through it. In fact, it was not only Chu Feng who would not be able to break through it; he felt that no one with a cultivation of Martial Ancestor or below would be able to break through it. In fact, he felt that it would be impossible even for ordinary True Immortals.

However, at this moment, that spirit formation was slowly opening. After it opened, two cloaks appeared before Chu Feng.

“It seemed that Xiaoshi did not deceive us.”

Chu Feng retrieved the two cloaks, and was immediately overjoyed.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell that those two cloaks were amazingly powerful merely by looking at them.

If Chu Feng were to wear one of the cloaks now, he would not appear to be unusual at all.

However, Chu Feng was able to tell that as long as he was at a special location, these cloaks would produce an extraordinary effect.

These cloaks were custom-made treasures. Their effects would only activate when they were worn at special locations.

As for this, it fully verified that Xiaoshi had not deceived Chu Feng. After all, Xiaoshi had stated that the cloaks would allow one to evade traps and conceal one's self when worn into Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants.

Her Lady Queen had a pensive expression on her face as she asked, "Exactly what is the origin of that little fellow? How did he know about these sorts of secrets?"

"We will find the answer to that just by asking about him when we return," After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he soared into the sky and began to fly back toward the tavern.

As for the tree, Chu Feng did not bother with it. The reason for that was because after he removed the two cloaks, the spirit formation closed by itself. Even the spirit formation symbol he had engraved onto the tree disappeared. The tree had completely returned to its original appearance.

Furthermore, the most precious items hidden underneath the tree, those two cloaks, were already obtained by Chu Feng. Even if someone were to find that tree and break through the spirit formation, they would only return empty-handed.

As Chu Feng flew, he soon arrived outside the tavern. Merely, the appearance of the scene outside the tavern immediately froze the joyous expression on Chu Feng's face. In its place was worry and anger.

A lot of people were gathered outside the tavern. It was as if they were watching a show.

However, those people naturally did not notice Chu Feng's

expression. The reason why Chu Feng had this sort of expression was because he saw Wang Qiang.

At this moment, Wang Qiang was being suspended upside down in midair by a spirit formation. On his bare chest was a large character written using blood, 'trash.'

As for Wang Qiang himself, he had already lost consciousness. However, blood was still flowing from his body nonstop. It rolled down his cheeks to his hair before finally dripping onto the ground.

"Damn it!"

Chu Feng hurriedly landed from the sky. He cut the grand formation open and rescued Wang Qiang. Then, he immediately set up a healing formation to heal Wang Qiang's injuries.

"Who dares destroy my spirit formation?!"

Right after the spirit formation was cut through by Chu Feng, a loud shout was heard. Following that, a large group of people rushed out. These were all disciples from the Highlord's Mansion. They were led by none other than Di Jiuzhou.

"It's actually you, coward?!"

Upon seeing that it was Chu Feng, the people from the Highlord's Mansion were all surprised. At the same time, they revealed disappointed expressions.

In fact, it was not only the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion that were disappointed, the surrounding crowd also revealed disappointed expressions.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng's outfit was completely the same as when he had left. Thus, many people recognized him.

The crowd all knew very well that Chu Feng had been with Wang Qiang. However, earlier, the disciples from the Highlord's

Mansion had provoked him so openly earlier, yet he had chosen to move out of their way.

This caused the crowd to have a label for Chu Feng in their hearts, the label of being a coward.

Thus, if it were someone else that came to save Wang Qiang, the crowd would be looking forward to another spectacular show.

However, as it was Chu Feng, the crowd were all very disappointed. They did not feel that this cowardly fellow would be able to set off any sort of storm.

“Sigh~~~”

Suddenly, sighs could be heard from the crowd all around.

“Was my brother injured by you?”

Chu Feng completely ignored the crowd’s gazes of disappointment. Instead, he looked directly to Di Jiuzhou.

The reason for that was because he knew that only Di Jiuzhou possessed the ability to injure Wang Qiang like this.

“I am the one who injured him, what about it?” Di Jiuzhou smiled with contempt. He completely did not place Chu Feng in his eyes.

Chu Feng’s brows narrowed. Killing intent surged in his eyes as anger filled his entire body.

He said, “Those who dare injure my brother will die!!!”

“Sssss~~~”

Once those words were said, many of the people present were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Although they did not feel that Chu Feng would be a match for the people from the Highlord’s Mansion, they, for some unknown reason, felt a bone-chilling coldness from Chu Feng’s words.

“Quite an arrogant tone you have there. However, the ones who will die today will be the two of you,” Di Jiuzhou said coldly.

However, right at this moment, the man who had provoked Chu Feng earlier stepped out and said to Di Jiuzhou, “Senior brother Di, there’s no need for you to personally take care of this trash. Allow me to take care of him for you.”

“Brat, I already spared you earlier for blocking our path. Never would I have expected that you would dare to return. This time around, I will not spare you.”

“Boom~~~”

Right after he said those words, that man turned into a flash of light and flew toward Chu Feng.

At the same time, he openly revealed his might of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. Surging winds formed. He was so mighty that he caused the surrounding crowd’s eyes to shine.

At this moment, everyone felt that Chu Feng would be out of luck.

At this moment, that man’s fist was already flying toward Chu Feng’s face. What he had in mind was the same as what the crowd thought he would do; he wanted to ruthlessly teach Chu Feng a lesson to show off his ability.

However, he was not only planning to simply teach Chu Feng a lesson. Beating Chu Feng up was merely part of what he planned to do to Chu Feng. His ultimate purpose was to kill Chu Feng. Only by doing so would he be able to reveal how mighty he was.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right when he had all of his plans ready, at the moment when his fist was already shot forth, his expression suddenly changed.

The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that



his fist that should have beaten Chu Feng bloody and knocked him thousands of meters away was actually easily dodged by Chu Feng.

‘How could this be?’

‘This trash?’

‘This coward?’

‘How could he dodge my punch?’

At this moment, astonishment filled that man’s heart. He was completely puzzled by what was happening.

“Pow~~~”

“Wuu~~~”

The very next moment, that man was stunned. The reason for that was because he felt that his throat was locked, and a surging burst of energy was penetrating into his body, wreaking havoc in the process. As that energy wreaked havoc in his body, he lost all ability to fight back.

“This!!!”

In fact, it was not only this man who was stunned. Practically everyone present was stunned.

The reason for that was because they were seeing Chu Feng grabbing that man by his neck. At this moment, Chu Feng had already lifted that man high into the air.

At this moment, that previously overwhelming disciple of the Highlord’s Mansion was like a small sheep in the grasp of a tiger.

Grabbed by Chu Feng and lifted into the air, he was unable to even fight back.

However, they were both rank five Half Martial Ancestors. As such, how could Chu Feng be this powerful?

# Chapter 2314 – Emperor Taboo: Highlord's Seal

---

“Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation!!!” An experienced and knowledgeable old man among the crowd shouted.

“What? He actually possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation?”

Upon hearing those words, the crowd came to a sudden realization as to why Chu Feng was able to easily defeat that Highlord's Mansion's disciple even though they were both rank five Half Martial Ancestors.

A heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, that was no ordinary heaven-defying battle power.

Thus, upon knowing Chu Feng's strength, the crowd had a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng. Once again, they revealed gazes of reverence.

In fact, many people started to feel lingering fear over the fact that they had insulted Chu Feng earlier due to their ignorance. They were afraid that Chu Feng would find them for retaliation.

“Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation? The two of you both possess quite decent battle power. Unfortunately, your cultivations are too weak,” Di Jiuzhou smiled indifferently. Compared to the others, he remained completely calm.

“Release my junior brother immediately, then kneel and beg for forgiveness. If you are to do that, I can consider sparing your life,” Di Jiuzhou ordered Chu Feng.

Although his tone was very arrogant, the crowd did not feel that Di Jiuzhou was boasting.

After all, Di Jiuzhou's cultivation was before them, and his strength was also present to them. Even if Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, even if Chu Feng was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, the crowd still did not think that Chu Feng would be Di Jiuzhou's match.

However, right at this moment when everyone felt that this battle would end with Chu Feng's defeat, Chu Feng made an action that stunned the crowd.

Chu Feng suddenly tightened his grip. Then, with a muffled 'bang,' the Highlord's Mansion's disciple that he had grabbed exploded and splattered everywhere. He was completely dead.

"You!!!"

"You dare kill someone from our Highlord's Mansion?!"

At this moment, the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion all revealed dumbstruck expressions. While they were furious, they were more astonished.

They truly never expected that Chu Feng would actually dare to kill their fellow disciple. After all, the person who Chu Feng had killed was a core disciple of the Highlord's Mansion, one of their management elder's personal disciples. Chu Feng's killing of him was equivalent to him stating that he would make an enemy of the Highlord's Mansion.

However, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged after killing that man.

With a cold voice, he said, "I am able to tolerate those who humiliate me, Chu Feng."

"However, I absolutely will not spare those that humiliate my brother!"

"Boom~~~"

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd were all startled. Some people even felt as if their heads were exploding. They were truly shocked.

It was not that they were cowards. Rather, Chu Feng's reputation was truly too renowned.

He was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, an exceptional genius.

Most importantly, he was someone who dared to kill even Ying Liangchen.

"You said that you are Chu Feng?" At this moment, even Di Jiuzhou had a change in expression. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng turned serious.

"Precisely," As Chu Feng spoke, he removed his conical bamboo hat and put it away in his Cosmos Sack.

"It really is him?!"

Upon seeing Chu Feng's actual appearance, the already alarmed crowd were shocked shivering.

The reason for that was because the Ying Heavenly Clan had already publicly displayed Chu Feng's portrait to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Practically everyone knew what Chu Feng looked like.

Upon thinking that the person before them was truly that malignant star who dared to kill even Ying Liangchen, how could the crowd not be scared?

Not to mention the others, the complexions of even the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion had turned pale. Involuntarily, they took several steps back. Not to mention strength, merely Chu Feng's past achievements were already enough to cause them fear.

"Hahaha!!!"

Right at the moment when the great majority of the people were frightened by Chu Feng, that Di Jiuzhou burst into loud laughter.

“Very well. Chu Feng, the person that I am searching for is none other than you,” As Di Jiuzhou spoke, he unleashed his Divine Power. Immediately, his cultivation increased from rank seven Half Martial Ancestor to rank eight Half Martial Ancestor. At the same time, he also revealed his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

At this moment, Di Jiuzhou’s actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors.

Even though Di Jiuzhou was not afraid of Chu Feng, he had unleashed his full strength from the very beginning.

The reason for that was because he knew that Chu Feng was a wielder of a Heavenly Bloodline. His true strength was most definitely not as simple as the rank five Half Martial Ancestor cultivation he was currently displaying.

“Zzzzz~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng unleashed both his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. In an instant, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased from rank five Half Martial Ancestor to rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Chu Feng completely revealed his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

The current Chu Feng was the same as Di Jiuzhou. His true battle power was on par with ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors.

“Crash~”

Sensing the aura being emitted by the two men, the bystanders immediately soared into the sky and escaped far away.

Even though Chu Feng and Di Jiuzhou’s cultivations were only those of Half Martial Ancestors, everyone felt that they were no longer ordinary Half Martial Ancestors. After all, the two of them possessed strength comparable to that of ordinary rank one Martial Ancestors.

Although they might still not be able to beat rank one Martial Ancestors, they were already capable of fighting against rank one Martial Ancestors without immediately dying.

A battle between people like them was not something that the crowd could bear to watch at a close distance. Even when watching from afar, they must maintain their distance.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, ear-piercing rumbles were heard. Chu Feng and Di Jiuzhou had started fighting.

Immediately, powerful energy ripples soon engulfed their surroundings.

Those with a low level of cultivation were unable to escape in time, and were engulfed by the energy ripples. Those that were lucky were blown away, whereas those that were unlucky ended up being seriously injured.

As for that tavern formed with a spirit formation, it was completely razed to the ground.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The rumbles grew more and more ear-piercing. It was as if ten thousand thunderbolts were striking. The energy ripples grew more and more powerful. It was as if they would destroy the entire region.

“What do we do? That Chu Feng is too powerful. Senior brother Di will likely not be a match for him. We should quickly return to find reinforcements,” At this moment, the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion started to panic. Finding reinforcements was merely an excuse. They actually just wanted to flee.

“Can you all not act with some integrity? Right now, senior brother Di is fighting a bloody battle against that Chu Feng. How could we flee at a time like this?” Another disciple from the Highlord’s Mansion said.

“Rest assured, senior brother Di will definitely be able to defeat Chu Feng. Do not forget that our senior brother Di is the strongest genius among the tier two powers.”

“There’s only those couple geniuses in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that could contend against senior brother Di. Furthermore, those geniuses are all the super geniuses of the tier one powers.”

“You all couldn’t possibly be thinking that this Chu Feng, who has an unidentified origin and might be a bastard child from a Heavenly Clan, will really be able to compare with the tier one powers’ super geniuses, right?” A female disciple said.

She was the person who had declared Chu Feng to be a trash and received a slap from Wang Qiang.

“That’s true. We should be confident in senior brother Di,” After hearing what that female disciple said, the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion grew confident again.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, a strange roar sounded from Chu Feng and Di Jiuzhou’s battlefield.

Turning toward the direction of the crowd, toward that region covered with energy ripples, a strange purple light could be seen. At the same time, an enormously powerful aura began to be emitted.

“Look! That is our Highlord’s Mansion’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, the Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal!!!”

“Heavens! Senior brother Di, he... he actually managed to successfully master the Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal!”

“Haha, this is truly great. That Chu Feng is truly unlucky to have encountered our senior brother Di.”

At this moment, the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion all

revealed overjoyed expressions. As disciples of the Highlord's Mansion, they knew very well how powerful the Emperor Taboo: Highlord's Seal was.

In their Highlord's Mansion, there was a saying: 'The Highlord's Seal is unequalled in this world.'



# Chapter 2315 – The Mansion Master Of The Highlord's Mansion

---

“It’s actually the legendary Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal?”

Upon hearing the shouts from the disciples of the Highlord’s Mansion, the others came to understand what exactly those boundlessly imposing purple gaseous flames were.

As for the Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal, it was truly renowned for its might, and could even be considered the strongest Emperor Taboo Martial Skill from the Highlord’s Mansion. Thus, upon knowing that what Di Jiuzhou had used was the Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal, the crowd was filled with endless shock.

At this moment, a seemingly experienced and knowledgeable old man said, “The Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal is extremely powerful. Very few Emperor Taboo Martial Skills will be able to match its might.”

“Chu Feng and Di Jiuzhou possess the same level of battle power. Yet, Di Jiuzhou has used such a powerful martial skill. It would appear that the outcome of this battle has been determined. It will be Chu Feng’s loss.”

Once the old man’s words were heard, the surrounding crowd all nodded in agreement.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at this moment, a loud explosion was heard as an overwhelming might instantly smashed the purple gaseous flames apart.

Not only that, the surging energy ripples that covered the battlefield were also dispersed by that attack.

“Heavens! That is?!!!”

At this moment, the expressions of the crowd present all

changed.

The reason for that was because they were able to see the figures of Chu Feng and Di Jiuzhou after the energy ripples were dispersed.

At this moment, Chu Feng had the exact same appearance as before. His body was still covered in that majestic Thunder Armor.

However, as for Di Jiuzhou, his Divine Power was no longer present. Like a loose kite, he was falling from the sky.

“Defeated! Di Jiuzhou is the one who was defeated!”

The disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion all had dejected expressions. The surrounding crowd were all stunned. The reason for that was because this result was something that none of them had expected. As such, they were unable to contain their shock.

The one that was defeated was Di Jiuzhou, the strongest genius among tier two powers.

Furthermore, everyone knew that Di Jiuzhou’s reputation as the strongest genius among the tier two powers was well-deserved. He had used his strength to defeat countless geniuses to obtain that reputation.

However, a genius like him was actually defeated. Furthermore, he was defeated after unleashing the extremely powerful Emperor Taboo: Highlord’s Seal.

Wouldn’t this mean that Chu Feng had defeated the Highlord’s Mansion’s strongest Emperor Taboo Martial Skill?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Di Jiuzhou was about to fall onto the surface, his body started to float back up.

A strange power started to emit from his body. When that power appeared, the unconscious Di Jiuzhou actually regained consciousness.

“Puu~~~”

After waking up, Di Jiuzhou sprayed out a mouthful of black blood. To be exact, what he vomited from his mouth did not resemble blood, and instead resembled a sort of special substance.

However, when that liquid was vomited from his mouth, Di Jiuzhou's complexion actually improved. At the very least, he no longer appeared to be on the verge of dying as he had earlier.

Soon, that special power began to gather in one location. Then, it took form.

“It's Lord Mansion Master!!!”

Upon seeing that figure the power formed, the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion who had dejected expressions on their faces were immediately wild with joy.

As disciples of the Highlord's Mansion, they were able to recognize with a single glance that the figure standing before Di Jiuzhou was their Highlord's Mansion's Lord Mansion Master.

Although that figure was the Mansion Master of the Highlord's Mansion, Chu Feng did not show any fear. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that that figure was nothing more than an image that did not contain any battle power.

“Little friend, might you be Chu Feng?” When the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master saw Chu Feng, he started to frown.

If it were someone else, he would begin to threaten them. After all, with the reputation and might of their Highlord's Mansion, he would be able to easily scare whoever it might be witless.

However, this Chu Feng was someone that was extremely renowned right now. He was well known to be someone that should not be provoked, someone that threats were useless towards.

Thus, when the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master saw Chu Feng, he immediately realized that the situation at hand was very thorny.

"Precisely," Although Chu Feng answered calmly, the killing intent in his eyes did not decrease in the slightest.

This caused the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master to feel nervous. He was even more certain now that the Chu Feng before him was very hard to deal with.

"Little friend Chu Feng, it is a pleasure to meet you. This old man is the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master. I am also Di Jiuzhou's master."

"May I know what sort of grievance you might have with my disciple that caused you to want to kill him?" The Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master asked.

"He injured my brother," As Chu Feng spoke, he took a glance downward. Down below was Wang Qiang, protected by his spirit formation.

Although Wang Qiang's injuries were much better now, and he was nearly completely healed, the word 'trash' written with blood on his bare chest was still present.

Seeing this scene, the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master started to frown. The reason for that was because he could tell by the handwriting that the word 'trash' was written by Di Jiuzhou.

"Jiuzhou, what is going on? Why did you injure little friend Chu Feng's friend?" The Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master turned to question Di Jiuzhou with a stern expression.

"D-don't bother a-asking him. I-it's better t-that I e-e-explain it to you," Suddenly, a voice containing anger sounded from below.

It was Wang Qiang. Not only had Wang Qiang woken up, he also broke through Chu Feng's protective formation and soared into the sky. In the end, he arrived beside Chu Feng.

“Cough, cough, cough...” However, it remained that Wang Qiang’s injuries were not completely healed. After arriving beside Chu Feng, he coughed a couple times, and even coughed blood.

“Wang Qiang, you’re not completely healed yet. Just let me handle this,” Chu Feng said in a deeply concerned manner.

“I-it’s fine,” Wang Qiang smiled. Then, he wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth and looked to the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master.

He said, “Y-y-y-you wish to k-know what happened? I’ll t-tell you what happened.”

“I’ll l-let you k-know w-whether what your d-disciple did is r-reasonable or not.”

“I w-was e-eating in the t-tavern. W-when my brother l-left the t-tavern, he j-just so happened to r-run into y-your disciples. W-with how w-wide that g-gate is, t-they were clearly capable of walking by one a-another simultaneously.”

“Yet, your d-disciples insisted on m-making my b-brother move aside. As m-my brother had a m-matter at hand that h-he had to take care of, he d-decided to not fuss w-with them, and moved aside.”

“O-originally, this matter s-should have been settled with that. Y-yet, your d-disciples actually started to s-speak ill of my brother a-after he had left, calling him t-trash by name.”

“I w-was unable t-to tolerate t-their actions, and t-thus gave all o-of them a slap e-each. I a-admit that I was t-the one who s-struck first. However, Di Jiuzhou also injured me, seriously in-injured me.”

“A-afterward, Di Jiuzhou u-used Xiaoshi to th-threaten me to kneel and to a-apologize to him. F-for Xiaoshi’s safety, I did as he said.”

“You really kneeled?” Chu Feng looked to Wang Qiang in

astonishment.

“Not o-only did I kneel, I a-also kowtowed to h-him. Brother, i-if you were i-in my place, you w-would also have d-done what I did. A-afterall, Xiaoshi’s little life w-was in that Di Jiu-Jiuzhou’s hands,” Wang Qiang said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng asked no more. At this moment, Chu Feng’s feelings were indescribable with mere words.

He looked to Di Jiuzhou again. This time around, the killing intent in his eyes grew even more intense.

“L-logically, as I conceded, t-this matter s-should have been over.”

“Yet, y-your disciple r-refused to let me go, and i-insisted on h-having me d-declare my brother to b-be trash.”

“He w-wanted me to i-insult my brother. N-naturally, I, Wang Qiang did not agree to it. Not o-only did I not say it, I instead t-turned to attack him. B-b-but, I am no m-match for him. That is w-why I w-was beaten like a-a dog by him.”

“However, he d-did not kill me. Instead, h-he only insulted me. His i-intentions were very simple. A-anyone w-with a discerning eye w-would be able to tell.”

“He w-was merely s-seeking the Ying H-heavenly Clan’s r-rewards, and w-wanted to u-use me to l-lure my brother out.”

“Then, he would u-use my brother’s head to o-obtain the re-reward from the Ying Heavenly Clan.”

“T-that’s what ha-happened. If y-you are a person of principle, y-you should know h-how to handle this,” Wang Qiang said coldly.

## Chapter 2316 – Loyal And Righteous

---

“Don’t you blabber nonsense! It was clearly you who attacked me first!” Di Jiuzhou refuted.

“That’s right, it was that stutterer who attacked us first. As for that Chu Feng, he even killed senior brother Ma,” The disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion cried out in grievance.

“I e-even said t-that it was me w-who attacked first. H-however, w-what I have said is all t-true. I-if you d-don’t trust me, g-go ahead and a-ask them. T-they a-all saw what h-happened,” Wang Qiang pointed to the bystanders.

“Even if what you say is the truth, it remains that Chu Feng has killed senior brother Ma.”

“Lord Mansion Master, you must avenge senior brother Ma, you must obtain justice for us,” The Highlord’s Mansion’s disciples started to plead to their Mansion Master. It was as if they were truly the victims.

However, at this moment, the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master actually turned around and shouted angrily at those disciples, “All of you, shut up!”

The disciples of the Highlord’s Mansion were all bewildered by that shout.

Originally, they thought that the appearance of their Lord Mansion Master would mean that he would obtain justice for them. Never did they expect that their Lord Mansion Master would not only not immediately take care of that Chu Feng, and would instead become angry at them.

Exactly what was going on?

At this time when the Highlord’s Mansion’s disciples were puzzled, the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master was cursing in his heart.

As Di Jiuzhou's master, he knew best what sort of character his disciple and the others had. He did not doubt what Wang Qiang said at all. He knew very well that was indeed something that Di Jiuzhou and the others would do.

Thus, he simply did not care who was in the right and who was in the wrong in this matter. After all, as he had appeared, he would naturally be planning to help Di Jiuzhou and the other disciples from his Highlord's Mansion.

However, the main problem was...

His appearance was not his actual body at all. Instead, it was only an image. Although he appeared to be very powerful, his image did not contain any actual destructive power.

Unfortunately, his foolish Highlord's Mansion's disciples were simply unable to tell, and even wanted him to take care of Chu Feng for them by pretending to be wronged.

Furthermore, what made him the most depressed was that even though his Highlord's Mansion's disciples were unable to tell, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang seemed to have seen through all of it.

In this sort of situation, the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master had no choice but to politely turn to ask Wang Qiang, "Little friend, may I know your distinguished name?"

Being asked by the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master in such a polite manner, not only were the disciples of the Highlord's Mansion shocked, even the bystanders were extremely shocked.

Exactly what was going on? Chu Feng had already killed a disciple of their Highlord's Mansion. Why would the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Head not directly kill them, and instead question Wang Qiang this politely?

They who did not know the truth were unable to understand why this was happening.

"I h-have b-but o-one name and o-one name o-only. I a-am Wang



Qiang,” Wang Qiang said.

“Little friend Wang Qiang, little friend Chu Feng, it was the disciples of our Highlord’s Mansion who were in the wrong. However, it remains that little friend Chu Feng has already killed one of our Highlord’s Mansion’s disciples.”

“In this world, one’s life is the most valuable thing. However, as it was indeed our Highlord’s Mansion that was in the wrong to begin with, we will not bicker with you regarding this. I suggest that we drop this matter at this point. Might the two of you be willing to accept this?” The Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master said.

“Drop? He actually proposed to drop the matter?”

“Heavens! The Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master is actually suing for peace?”

Hearing those words, the bystanders were even more shocked. Whispers began to be heard from the crowd.

“Drop? Haha...” However, at the moment when the crowd were all puzzled, Chu Feng burst into laughter. His laughter was filled with mockery.

“Little friend Chu Feng, no matter what, it remains that you have killed a disciple of our Highlord’s Mansion. Could it be that you’re not satisfied with dropping this matter?”

It remains that the Highlord’s Mansion’s Master Master was the Mansion Master of the Highlord’s Mansion. Thus, even when suing for peace, he could not appear too petty and low. Seeing that Chu Feng seemed to be unwilling to accept his request, for the sake of preserving his image, he finally revealed a trace of displeasure on his face filled with smiles.

“If it wasn’t for the fact that your disciple was no match for me.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that you are but an image right now, and do not possess actual strength.”

“Would you still drop the matter?”

“In the end, you merely want to use this sort of method to save your disciple’s life.”

“And, if I were to drop this matter today, how can I be certain that you will really leave the matter at that in the future?” Chu Feng said with a sneer. He simply did not believe the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master, and did not have any intention to drop the matter.

“What? An image?”

“No wonder. No wonder the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master did not directly attack Chu Feng and that stutterer. So he was only an image, and he simply does not possess the ability to do anything to them.”

After hearing what the crowd said, the surrounding people came to a sudden realization.

The disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion also realized the situation they were in. When they discovered that their respected Lord Mansion Master was only an image and was simply unable to actually help them, they once again started to panic.

“Hah. Little friend Chu Feng, I know that you’re an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. However, are you really certain that I am only an image?”

“If I am not an image, you should know what the consequences will be if you are to attack my disciple.”

The Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master revealed a cold yet confident smile.

He was gambling. It was his final gambit. He was gambling that Chu Feng was unable to be completely certain that he was only an image. He was trying to scare Chu Feng off with threats.

“I do not have the time to bother with superfluous words with

you,” Chu Feng snorted impatiently. Then, he clenched the Magma Emperor Sword in his hand and began to walk toward Di Jiuzhou one step at a time.

“Chu Feng, exactly what are you planning to do?”

Standing before Di Jiuzhou, the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master was unable to do anything as Chu Feng walked toward Di Jiuzhou. At this moment, the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master started to panic.

“I already said it earlier. Those who dare to injure my brother will die!!!” Chu Feng said coldly. His resolute gaze seemed to indicate that no one would be able to change his decision, that no one would be able to save Di Jiuzhou.

“Chu Feng, if you dare to kill my disciple, this old man will definitely not spare you,” Seeing that Chu Feng actually dared to disregard him like this, the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master started to gnash his teeth in anger.

“Step~~~”

Once the Highlord’s Mansion’s Mansion Master said those words, Chu Feng finally stopped his footsteps.

“Could it be that Chu Feng is finally scared?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had stopped, the disciples from the Highlord’s Mansion heaved a sigh of relief.

However, who would’ve thought that right at this moment, Chu Feng’s lips would lift into a cold smile? He said, “I have heard countless threats like that my entire life.”

“However, my answer remains unchanged.”

“Those who dare to injure my brothers will die.”

As Chu Feng said those words, the Magma Emperor Sword in his hand turned into a blaze. Like a flame dragon, it soared toward Di Jiuzhou.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. Then, the fire dragon shattered the body of the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master, proving to the crowd that it was only an image.

“Boom~~~”

Following that, another loud explosion was heard. As that explosion was heard, blood splattered all over the sky.

It was Di Jiuzhou. Di Jiuzhou's body had been smashed to pieces. Not even his soul remained. He had been completely killed by Chu Feng.

“Killed! He really killed Di Jiuzhou!!!”

“Heavens! That is the Highlord's Mansion's number one disciple, an exceptional genius!!!”

At this moment, the surrounding crowd were all tongue-tied and dumbstruck. Even though they had all heard of Chu Feng's reputation, when they saw him doing such a thing with their own eyes, they still felt extremely disbelief.

After all, the person that Chu Feng had killed was the Highlord's Mansion's number one disciple, the strongest genius among the tier two powers' disciples. Furthermore, Chu Feng had killed him even after the Highlord's Mansion's Mansion Master personally spoke to request him to stop. His methods were simply too overbearing.

At the same time when the crowd were astonished by how overbearing Chu Feng was, they involuntarily looked to Wang Qiang.

The reason for that was because they knew very well that Chu Feng had not killed Di Jiuzhou for himself. Rather, it was for Wang Qiang.

This caused the crowd to feel deeply moved. At the same time,

they were astonished by how fearless and courageous Chu Feng was.

They were moved by Chu Feng's righteousness and loyalty.

## Chapter 2317 – The Mysterious Xiaoshi

---

“Brother, these are yours.”

Although Chu Feng had killed Di Jiuzhou, he kept his Cosmos Sack and his many treasures.

Not only did Chu Feng return Wang Qiang’s possessions to him, he also split half of Di Jiuzhou’s treasures and handed them to Wang Qiang.

“Hehe... y-you’re g-giving me these?”

“W-with this m-many t-treasures, if I-I were to re-refuse them, y-you would be mad, right?” As Wang Qiang looked to those treasures, he smiled very happily.

It was not that Wang Qiang was a greedy individual. Rather, Di Jiuzhou truly possessed an enormous amount of treasures on him. Even for Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, he possessed over twenty of them. Furthermore, they were all high quality ones.

Apart from the Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, there were a lot more treasures. Although that Di Jiuzhou’s world spirit techniques were not very strong, there were many precious world spiritist treasures among his treasures.

Apart from those, there were a lot more treasures.

“If you don’t want them, I wouldn’t force you,” Chu Feng smiled and made to retrieve the treasures.

“Don’t, don’t, don’t. I-it’s better that we split t-them,” In response, Wang Qiang hurriedly pulled Chu Feng’s hand back. Furthermore, he took the initiative to place the treasures Chu Feng held into his Cosmos Sack.

Chu Feng smiled at this scene. Wealth was but mere worldly possessions. Since he was willing to take out those items, it meant that he was prepared to split them with Wang Qiang. His decision

to deliberately take them back earlier was only a joke. He had never really planned to take them back.

As for Wang Qiang, Chu Feng felt that his humiliation was inseparably linked to himself. As such, Chu Feng felt that he owed Wang Qiang. Seeing that Wang Qiang was able to be this happy, Chu Feng felt a lot more comfortable.

Right at this moment, Her Lady Queen's voice sounded. "Chu Feng, don't spare those people from the Highlord's Mansion. This Queen also wants their source energies."

Chu Feng turned around and discovered that the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion were currently fleeing.

Speaking of it, it was quite amusing. These Highlord's Mansion's disciples actually didn't know how to flee in different directions. They were actually gathered together.

At this moment, their stupidity was completely revealed.

"A bunch that only knows how to bully the weak and fears the strong," Chu Feng shook his head. Then, killing intent once again emerged in his eyes.

"Woosh~~~"

Chu Feng's body shifted. Immediately, a ray of lightning flashed through the sky. In merely a blink of an eye, Chu Feng managed to catch up to the Highlord's Mansion's disciples. He stood before them, blocking their path.

His boundless oppressive might swept forth, engulfing the disciples of the Highlord's Mansion. Immediately, those disciples lost the strength to continue fleeing.

When they discovered that Chu Feng had blocked their path, their expressions turned ashen. They were so scared that their legs grew soft.

"Chu Feng, please spare us, please spare us."

At this moment, the disciples of the Highlord's Mansion uniformly knelt before Chu Feng. They started to kowtow and beg for forgiveness. Their arrogance when they had first met Chu Feng was completely gone.

Chu Feng coldly swept his gaze over this bunch that only knew about bullying the weak and fearing the strong and asked with an indifferent tone, "I will only ask one thing. If I was the one who was defeated here, would you all have spared me?"

"....." Faced with Chu Feng's question, the Highlord's Mansion's disciples were startled. A trace of hesitation appeared on their faces.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right at the moment when they were prepared to answer Chu Feng's question, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and his boundless martial power turned into an invisible scythe that swept across the bodies of the disciples from the Highlord's Mansion.

With merely a single attack, those Highlord's Mansion's disciples all turned into pools of blood. They were all killed by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew very well that they would definitely say that they would have spared him.

However, he knew even better that if he and Wang Qiang were to be defeated by them, then, based on their personality, they would definitely not have spared him and Wang Qiang.

The people from the Highlord's Mansion already had the intention to kill Chu Feng to begin with. Thus, Chu Feng no longer possessed any reason to spare them.

"Geniuses, my ass. Their source energies are so weak. There's simply not enough to fill me," After devouring the source energy from Di Jiuzhou and the other Highlord's Mansion's disciples, Her Lady Queen pouted her little mouth and complained.

The reason for that was because Her Lady Queen's cultivation did



not increase even after devouring the source energies from the Highlord's Mansion's disciples.

Suddenly, Wang Qiang loudly shouted at the bystanders, "H-have y-you all not seen enough?!"

In response, the bystanders hurriedly scattered. Today, they had seen for themselves how decisive Chu Feng was in killing others. At this moment, they were truly afraid of Chu Feng. They feared that Chu Feng would still be itching to kill more people and decide to kill them too.

After the bystanders fled, Chu Feng asked Wang Qiang, "How're your injuries?"

"A trifling matter. I c-can handle i-it myself," Wang Qiang said unconcernedly.

"Where's Xiaoshi?" Chu Feng asked.

"Aiyah. T-that's true, w-where is that l-li-little guy?" Hearing Chu Feng's question, Wang Qiang was startled. He began to hurriedly search his surroundings.

Back then, he was beaten unconscious by Di Jiuzhou. As such, he had no idea where Xiaoshi was. However, he clearly remembered that Xiaoshi was pleading for his life when he was beaten up.

The fact that Xiaoshi disappeared now would naturally make Wang Qiang panic. He was scared that something might've happened to him.

"Don't worry. He must've left. He shouldn't have encountered any mishaps," Chu Feng calmly analyzed.

Wang Qiang was a smart individual. Upon hearing what Chu Feng said, he immediately came to a realization. He asked, "C-could it be t-that l-little guy didn't d-deceive us?"

"No, he didn't deceive us. The cloaks really exist," Chu Feng said.

"Sssss~~~~" Hearing what Chu Feng said, even the generally

carefree Wang Qiang was unable to help himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Then, he gasped and said, “T-then, e-exactly what is the o-origin of that little guy?”

Wang Qiang was no longer worried about Xiaoshi’s safety. Like Chu Feng, he felt that Xiaoshi would not know this sort of secret for no good reason.

He felt that Xiaoshi most definitely possessed an extraordinary origin. Likely, he himself was an enormous secret. A mysterious little guy like him was most definitely not someone that they could treat as a normal child.

“He was most likely not harmed by Di Jiuzhou and the others. Instead, he knew that Zhao Hong and I had successfully obtained the cloaks, and deliberately hid himself. Likely, he did not want to explain to us how he knew about those things,” Chu Feng said.

“I-if I k-knew what he s-said was the truth, I w-would’ve a-asked him about it b-back then.”

“T-this is t-truly too f-fucking strange,” Wang Qiang said with regret, “C-Chu Feng, s-say, w-with how determined Xiaoshi is in s-saying that remnant is Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant, a-and how he k-knew about those secrets, c-could be he related to Grandmaster K-Kai Hong?”

“That sort of thing is hard to tell.”

“In short, I do not feel Xiaoshi is a person with malicious intent. It could be considered to be fate for us to encounter him,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“T-t-t-that’s true,” Wang Qiang shrugged his shoulders.

Then, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang did not urgently leave. Instead, they lingered in the vicinity.

After all, they had agreed to meet up with Zhao Hong at the tavern. If they were to leave now, Zhao Hong would likely not be able to find them.

Fortunately, Zhao Hong returned very quickly. When Zhao Hong found out that Wang Qiang was humiliated by the Highlord's Mansion, she was immediately filled with fury, and declared that she would eliminate everyone in the Highlord's Mansion.

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang urged her against it for a very long time in order to calm her down.

Then, Zhao Hong discussed the matter regarding Xiaoshi with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. The reason for that was because she had also obtained two cloaks like Chu Feng.

However, Xiaoshi was, after all, of unknown origin. The three of them analyzed this matter for a very long time, but were unable to come to a definite answer regarding Xiaoshi.

Then, Zhao Hong lead Chu Feng and Wang Qiang toward the grand formation that she knew of.

If the three of them wanted to obtain a part of the profits in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds that was filled with experts right now, relying only on those cloaks that could conceal them would definitely not be enough. Their battle power would be a very important matter too.

It just so happened that the spirit formation Zhao Hong knew about was capable of providing the battle power that they needed. Thus, they absolutely could not miss it.

## Chapter 2318 – Enjoy The Fruits Of Others

---

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others arrived at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

They encountered a lot of people on their way there. There were people from practically all of the powers. Chu Feng even encountered people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

However, Chu Feng did not greet them. Instead, he brushed past them.

Moreover, Zhao Hong's conical bamboo hats were extremely amazing. Not only were they capable of concealing one's appearance, they were also able to change their own appearance. In fact, even though they were wearing conical bamboo hats, others were simply unable to see those conical bamboo hats. Instead, what they saw were only unfamiliar faces.

Thus, even though Chu Feng brushed past the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, none of them recognized Chu Feng.

Finally, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang arrived at the place Zhao Hong had mentioned.

It was a place far away from the entrance to Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. Thus, there were practically no people in this area.

"This is bad."

However, right after arriving in this area, Zhao Hong's expression changed.

"What's wrong?" Chu Feng asked.

"I had left a concealment formation here. However, that formation has been broken through by someone," Zhao Hong said.

“What?”

Hearing those words, the expressions on Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s faces also changed. After all, this was no small matter.

However, they did not immediately withdraw from this place because of this. In fact, Chu Feng even activated his Heaven’s Eyes, and looked toward the direction indicated by Zhao Hong. He wanted to investigate what was happening.

At the same time Chu Feng activated his Heaven’s Eyes, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang also using their respective observation method to inspect the region.

“That is?!!!”

Upon looking in that direction, the three of them all started to frown, and their hearts tightened.

They saw a spirit formation. It was a concealment formation. It was the doing of an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, it was that of a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were extremely rare. Practically all of the Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were skillful experts.

Furthermore, the person who had set up that spirit formation was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, someone a level above Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

However, upon closer inspection, Chu Feng saw through what was inside the concealment formation. At this time, a smile appeared on Chu Feng’s face.

“This is truly what they mean by encountering enemies on a narrow road,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

The reason for that was because there were four figures inside the concealment formation. Chu Feng recognized those four people; they were the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

The Four World Spiritist Emperors were currently jointly operating a spirit formation. It was an unsealing formation. As for the spirit formation that they were trying to unseal, it was a very ancient and astonishing grand formation.

Without even Zhao Hong saying anything, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Four World Spiritist Emperors were trying to undo the spirit formation that Zhao Hong had spoken about, the spirit formation that could give them battle power.

Merely, to Chu Feng's surprise, the Four World Spiritist Emperors were operating a very powerful spirit formation. It was a spirit formation set up by a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Evidently, that spirit formation was not set up by the four of them. The reason for that was because the four of them were still Royal-cloak World Spiritists. As such, it would be impossible for them to set up such a powerful spirit formation.

However, who would it be that had set up such a powerful spirit formation only to have the Four World Spiritist Emperors activate it?

Chu Feng felt that this spirit formation was most definitely set up by the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

Other than their mother, there should not be anyone else who would be able to set up such a spirit formation and then allow them to activate it.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that even though the Four World Spiritist Emperors were only Royal-cloak World Spiritists, they possessed treasures on them.

With the assistance of the treasures, it was not very exhausting for them to activate that spirit formation.

Furthermore, it seemed that they had been operating this spirit formation for a very long time. It seemed that the grand spirit

formation capable of granting battle power was soon to be opened.

“T-those f-four fatties a-are s-simply h-helping us,” Wang Qiang had a vile smile on his face. It was as if he had picked up a treasure.

After all, the spirit formation the Four World Spiritist Emperors were operating was something set up by a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. That was a spirit formation that Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were unable to set up even if they were to join hands. The might of that spirit formation was extremely powerful.

At this moment, after the efforts from the Four World Spiritist Emperors, that grand formation was soon to be unsealed.

Thus, as long as Chu Feng and the others were to snatch the authority from them and continue to operate the grand formation left behind by the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother, they would be able to undo that grand formation. It could truly be said that they would be enjoying the fruits of others.

“Chu Feng, it seems that you possess some sort of conflict with those Four World Spiritist Emperors,” Zhao Hong said.

“Indeed, I do,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, you owe me a favor,” Zhao Hong revealed a strange smile.

Chu Feng understood Zhao Hong’s intention. He knew that she was planning to teach them a lesson on his behalf.

“Leave them alive,” Chu Feng said.

“Why?” Zhao Hong was confused.

“B-brother, y-you m-must not be softhearted. To b-be m-merciful toward one’s e-enemy is t-to be cruel toward oneself,” Wang Qiang added.

“With Zhao Hong here, it is true that there is no need for us to be afraid of the four of them. However, I had actually never placed them in my eyes before.”

“If I must say who I am afraid of, it would be their mother. Judging from the way things are now, their mother is most definitely also in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“If we are to capture them alive, they might be useful. After all, judging from the two spirit formations, their mother should be a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

“It’s hard to find a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist,” Chu Feng said.

“Got it. You are truly quite intelligent to think of something like this,” Zhao Hong looked to Chu Feng in astonishment. Contained in her gaze was a trace of admiration.

“He’s my brother, b-being smart i-is only natural,” Wang Qiang said in an admiring manner. It was as if he had done something very amazing.

They both realized Chu Feng’s intention. What Chu Feng meant was that if they were to directly kill the Four World Spiritist Emperors, the only thing that they would accomplish would be killing them. Other than removing threats to Chu Feng, there was no other benefit to killing them.

However, everyone knew that the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother was extremely doting on her four children. If they were to keep the four of them alive, they might be able to make use of their mother.

Although it was uncertain whether or not they would be able to encounter the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother, as long as they had a chance of encountering her, it would mean that Chu Feng and the others would have an additional hidden trump card.

“It seems that the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother is extremely confident. She only set up a concealment formation, and not a protection formation,” Zhao Hong said.



“I-Isn’t t-this b-better? If t-there was a protective f-formation, we m-might not necessarily b-be able to b-break it. However, since th-there isn’t, hehe, w-with only this c-concealment formation, it won’t be a-able to stop us,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile.

“Let’s start. Even though it is only a concealment formation, it will still take us some time to break through it,” Zhao Hong said.

“With the three of us joining hands, it shouldn’t take too long,” Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, the three Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists began to join hands in setting up a spirit formation.

They first set up a concealment formation together and covered themselves with it. They did that to prevent others from noticing should they end up fighting against the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

After the concealment formation was completed, the three of them began to jointly remove the concealment spirit formation set up by the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother.

It was as Wang Qiang said; even though the spirit formation was set up by a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it remained only a concealment formation, and not a protection formation. Thus, with the three of them joining hands, it was not very difficult for them to break that concealment formation.

“Boom~~~”

Following that loud explosion, boundless spirit power began to surge in all directions. Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had successfully broken through the concealment formation.

“Who is it?!”

The destruction of the concealment formation greatly alarmed the Four World Spiritist Emperors. After all, they felt that only extraordinary individuals would be able to break apart their

mother's spirit formation.

“It's actually you?”

However, when the four of them cast their gazes over and discovered that it was actually Chu Feng, their lips immediately lifted into a strange curve.

# Chapter 2319 – Within Reach

---

“Hehe.”

After discovering that it was Chu Feng, the alarmed expressions on the Four World Spiritist Emperors disappeared, and were replaced with expressions of being overjoyed.

At this moment, the four of them stopped their operation of the spirit formation. The four of them all stood up and walked out from the four formation cores of that spirit formation. With strangely cold smiles on their faces, they began to slowly walk toward Chu Feng.

Their gazes were like those of four fierce tigers staring at three little sheep.

Why three?

The reason for that was because they felt that Chu Feng’s friends would be as easily handled as Chu Feng.

Thus, they classified both Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong as weak individuals.

“Chu Feng, this is truly what they mean by ‘there’s a road to heaven that you refuse to take, there’s no gate to hell yet you charged in,’” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ eldest said to Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed lightly at the threat from the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

Although the Four World Spiritist Emperors were powerful, that was only true to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. If they were to be compared to Zhao Hong, the four of them would not be a match for her.

Thus, for the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ eldest to threaten them like this, for him to plan how to torture them in his heart,

how could Chu Feng not laugh?

“You’re actually still capable of laughing? Brat, do you really not know how the word ‘death’ is written?” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“A-are t-the f-four of you f-fools?” Wang Qiang interrupted.

“Where the hell did this stutterer come from? You actually dare to insult us?!!”

“Boom~~~”

As the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke, he waved his sleeve and unleashed his rank five Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might. With power capable of toppling the mountains and overturning the seas, his oppressive might surged toward Wang Qiang. He was planning to crush Wang Qiang into a pile of meat and kill him.

“Woosh~~~”

However, before that oppressive might could reach Wang Qiang, a figure flew out from beside Wang Qiang and toward the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

“Buzz~~~”

That figure was extremely imposing. In an instant, the oppressive might unleashed by the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors vanished. Immediately afterward, that figure arrived beside the eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

When that figure landed on the ground, the Four World Spiritist Emperors actually all kneeled onto the ground.

It was oppressive might. An extremely powerful oppressive might had forced them to their knees.

As for that oppressive might, it originated from that figure.

As for that figure, it was that Fairy Spirit World's World Spirit that had fought against Chu Feng's Five Elements Secret Technique.

Although that world spirit only possessed the cultivation of a rank three Martial Ancestor, it possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. As such, its actual battle power was that of a rank six Martial Ancestor.

Thus, even the strongest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, their eldest, was unable to match against the world spirit at all.

"This... this..."

At this moment, the Four World Spiritist Emperors started to panic. They were able to sense how powerful that world spirit was. Thus, they realized that their current situation was extremely bad.

"F-f-fools. Even y-your m-mother's spirit formation h-has been br-broken through by us, y-yet y-you all d-dared to still h-hoot at us? D-do you all have no brains or what?" Wang Qiang said as he pointed at the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

"Arrogant bastard, we are the sons of the World Spiritist Saintess. If you all dare to do anything to us, our great mother will definitely not spare any of you," The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors threatened.

"You all are truly brainless fools. Look at what sort of situation you all are in now. Yet you still dare to threaten us?" Zhao Hong frowned and revealed a displeased expression. Then, she said to her world spirit, "Give them a ruthless beating. Make it so that their mother cannot recognize them."

Right after Zhao Hong's order was given, her world spirit immediately started to ruthlessly attack the Four World Spiritist

Emperors. As the Four World Spiritist Emperors screamed miserably, they were completely disfigured by that world spirit's beatings.

“Stop! You all are truly tired of living! Stop immediately!” The Four World Spiritist Emperors held their heads with their hands and began to scream nonstop. However, they were actually still threatening Chu Feng and the others.

“It seems that the beating is not ruthless enough. You should increase the intensity,” Chu Feng said.

Surprisingly, that world spirit actually listened to Chu Feng's words, and began to beat up the Four World Spiritist Emperors even more ruthlessly. Its attacks were so ruthless that all of the bones of the Four World Spiritist Emperors were shattered from the beating.

“Chu Feng, remember this carefully. If we four brothers do not die today, we will definitely make you pay for this tenfold,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors shouted.

“You dare to continue to threaten us in this sort of state? Come, feed this to them.”

As Zhao Hong spoke, she took out four strange large bugs from her Cosmos Sack and handed them to her Fairy World Spirit.

Those four bugs greatly resembled earthworms. However, they were all over a meter long, and possessed disgusting appearances. Furthermore, one could tell with a single glance that the four insects were extremely poisonous.

“No. Don't. Stop. What do you all want to know, we'll tell you everything, okay?”

“Big brother, let's just tell them what they want to know.”

“Those insects are truly too poisonous. We absolutely cannot eat them.”

Upon seeing those insects, the Four World Spiritist Emperors were immediately terrified. This was especially true for the three younger brothers. At this moment, they were trembling in fear, and began to beg for forgiveness.

The reason for that was because they were also world spiritists, and were thus capable of determining how powerful those insects were.

“Sp-speak about what? All f-four of you will die,” Wang Qiang said angrily.

However, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Wait.” He then asked, “Where is your mother right now? It is best you all tell the truth. If I am to discover a single lie, I will definitely not spare you all.”

Seeing that Chu Feng actually really began to question them, the Four World Spiritist Emperors, although extremely displeased, still chose to lower their heads and answer his questions.

After interrogating the Four World Spiritist Emperors, Chu Feng came to find out that the person who discovered this place was the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother.

Their mother possessed a special treasure. That was how she managed to break through Zhao Hong’s concealment formation and discover the ancient grand formation. Speaking of it, it could be said to be a coincidence.

When the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother discovered that this was a spirit formation that could grant enormous power, she was also astonished.

However, as she was in a rush to enter Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants and fight over its treasures with the other experts, she was unable to stay here for an extended period of time.

With no other alternative, she decided to set up this formation and have her four sons use treasures to assist them with operating the formation to undo the seal on the grand ancient formation and

obtain the battle power of peak Martial Ancestors.

However, who would've thought that right when they were about to successfully break through the seal on the grand ancient formation, they were made fools by Chu Feng and the others?

“Chu Feng, we have told you all that you want to know. Likely, you all have also come for the battle power that this formation will bestow.”

“We are able to give you all the battle power from the spirit formation. However, you all must release us,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“Release you so that you all can go and find your mother to take care of us?” Chu Feng sneered.

“Chu Feng, rest assured. We are people who keep our word. We promise you that as long as you release the four of us, we will write off all of our former grudges,” The eldest of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“Heh...” At this moment, Chu Feng laughed.

Chu Feng believed all of the things the Four World Spiritist Emperors said before. However, he absolutely did not trust them when they said that they would write off all their former grudges.

Even though the Four World Spiritist Emperors had done their best to conceal it, Chu Feng was still able to tell from their gazes that they held intense killing intent toward him.

Today, if he were to release them, they would definitely not spare him should they find the opportunity to kill him in the future.

“Feed them the insects,” Zhao Hong said coldly.

“Noo!!!”

“You three unfaithful bastards!”

“You shall all meet miserable deaths!”



“Ahh!!!!”

Hearing what Zhao Hong said, the Four World Spiritist Emperors immediately started to howl at Zhao Hong, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

However, Zhao Hong’s world spirit simply ignored them, and forcibly fed them the four poisonous bugs.

After being force-fed, the Four World Spiritist Emperors began to scream even more miserably.

“Your screams are too unpleasant to hear,” Zhao Hong said. Then, she took out a special sack and shoved the Four World Spiritist Emperors into it.

While the Four World Spiritist Emperors were extremely large, the sack possessed a special effect. Although it was only the size of an ordinary sack, it was able to contain all four of them.

Zhao Hong then tied her special sack closed and threw it to one side. After that, she looked to the spirit formation and said, “It’s our turn now.”

Hearing what Zhao Hong said, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang looked to one another. Both of them revealed anticipating expressions.

The battle power of peak Martial Ancestors was within their reach right now.

# Chapter 2320 – Controlling The Slaughtering Formation

---

Afterward, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong began to use the spirit formation the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother had left behind to continue to undo the seal on the grand formation.

With the strength the three of them possessed and the spirit formation left behind by the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, it should be enough for them to undo the seal on the grand formation.

Furthermore, the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother had left four treasures that were capable of increasing world spiritists' abilities in operating a spirit formation for her sons.

Thus, with the assistance of the treasures, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong used merely an hour in order to undo the seal on the grand formation.

“Crack~~~”

“Crack~~~”

“Crack~~~”

“Crack~~~”

.....

At this moment, the grand formation was changing rapidly. Cracking sounds were being emitted by it nonstop.

Seeing that, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong hurriedly retrieved the world spiritist treasures and moved away from the grand spirit formation.

Soon, that grand formation shattered completely. Then, four enormous figures flew out.

Those four figures were humanoid in appearance. However, they were not humans.

The reason for that was because they were ten meters tall. They looked like small giants. Furthermore, their bodies seemed to be made of crystals.

Not only were their bodies formed with crystals, their limbs and the armor they were wearing were also made of crystals.

That said, the four crystal humanoids emitted auras that Chu Feng and the others did not dare to disregard.

They were rank nine Martial Ancestors, the four crystal giants were all peak Martial Ancestors.

“Sure enough, they were peak Martial Ancestor level battle power. However, never did I expect them to have this sort of appearance,” Upon seeing the four crystal giants, Chu Feng felt awe in his heart.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, a ray of light suddenly shot out from the foreheads of the four crystal giants.

A total of four rays of lights shot forth. Among them, one shot toward Wang Qiang’s wrist, and the other toward Zhao Hong’s wrist.

As for the final two rays of light, they shot toward Chu Feng’s wrists.

“O-ouch! T-this thing i-is a bit painful!!!” Being struck by the light, Wang Qiang grimaced in pain.

“Wang Qiang, don’t move! They are recognizing their masters!” Chu Feng shouted.

“Ah?!!” Hearing those words, Wang Qiang immediately opened his mouth wide in surprise. Then, he hurriedly grabbed the wrist that was struck by the light with his other hand. He deliberately

grabbed it to stabilize it in order to prevent accidents from happening.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the crystal giant whose ray of light struck Wang Qiang’s wrist turned into a vortex. Its body began to rapidly shrink. In the end, it turned into a ray of light and entered Wang Qiang’s wrist.

At this moment, a special symbol appeared on Wang Qiang’s wrist; it was imprinted on his skin.

That symbol looked like a crystal. However, it did not sparkle. On the contrary, it was very well-hidden. If one did not look for it carefully, one would simply not notice it.

The same sort of thing happened to Chu Feng and Zhao Hong. The crystal giants all turned into rays of lights and entered their wrists.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, with a thought from Zhao Hong, the crystal symbol on her wrist began to change. It turned into a ray of light, flew out from her wrist and stood beside her.

It was the crystal giant that had entered her wrist earlier.

Its cultivation and imposing aura were exactly the same as before. Merely, the sensation it gave off had changed.

Earlier, it had been masterless. However, it now possessed a master. As for its master, it was Zhao Hong.

It would listen to Zhao Hong’s orders. Not only would it protect Zhao Hong, it would also immediately start to attack enemies for Zhao Hong should she order it to do so.

“It has indeed recognized its master. However, why did two of them recognized Chu Feng as their master?” Zhao Hong looked to Chu Feng with a slight expression of complaint on her face.

“M-my b-brother’s t-talent is exceptional,” Wang Qiang said proudly.

“It might also be random. Perhaps I was just lucky,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“I think that to be the case too,” Although Zhao Hong said that, she revealed an envious gaze toward Chu Feng.

She actually knew that there must be a reason for two of the crystal giants to choose Chu Feng. Merely, she was slightly unwilling to accept that the crystal giants had chosen him instead of her.

That was why she had declared that it must be random so as to comfort herself.

“There’s another spirit formation inside that spirit formation that we can grasp,” Chu Feng walked forward and looked to the unsealed grand formation.

Zhao Hong also walked forward. After a moment of observation, she smiled and said, “That spirit formation is quite interesting. Unfortunately, it is only effective within a certain range. It doesn’t have much significance.”

Like Chu Feng, she had managed to discover the spirit formation left behind in the grand spirit formation.

It was a special slaughtering formation. As long as one grasped that spirit formation, one would be able to obtain extremely strong power within a certain range.

For example, Chu Feng was currently a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. If he were to grasp that spirit formation, Chu Feng’s cultivation will be able to increase within a limited range.

At the very most, Chu Feng would be able to increase his cultivation to that of a peak Martial Ancestor.

However, as it would be a cultivation obtained through the

power of a spirit formation, it would have the same effect as the Immortal Transformation Pellets. Chu Feng would not be able to use his Heavenly Bloodline's power.

After increasing his cultivation with that spirit formation, Chu Feng would not be able to use his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, and would lose the heaven-defying battle power of his Heavenly Bloodline.

However, the strongest aspect regarding that spirit formation was not that it would be able to increase Chu Feng's cultivation. Instead, it was the fact that one could directly use that spirit formation to bring about a slaughter. After all, that spirit formation was an extremely powerful slaughtering formation.

Unfortunately, that spirit formation possessed a very limited range. With how enormous the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, that spirit formation would naturally be of no use.

"It's right in front of you anyways. If you can grasp it, why don't you grasp it? Chu Feng, take it," Her Lady Queen ordered.

"Got it," Chu Feng shouted. Then, he entered that spirit formation. He wanted to seize control of that formation.

"This guy," Seeing that Chu Feng was determined to gain control over the spirit formation, Zhao Hong was somewhat annoyed. However, she did not speak to stop him.

"W-wife, someone's here," Suddenly, Wang Qiang pointed to the distance.

"Why have so many people suddenly appeared?" Zhao Hong looked into the distance and started to frown.

The reason for that was because it didn't seem like people were passing by this place. Rather, it seemed like a lot of people were gathering in this place. Furthermore, their number was increasing.

Although they were all members of the younger generation, they all possessed extraordinary origin. Not to mention disciples from

the tier two powers, there were even disciples from the tier one powers among them.

However, due to the fact that their concealment formation was still in place, no one noticed Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong listened to their conversations, and finally realized why they were all gathered here.

It turned out, the information Xiaoshi had mentioned was true.

There were two great geniuses gathered in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. One was the renowned Young Master Li Ming. As for the other one, he was the mysterious Hun Lian.

The two of them seemed to have already encountered one another. It seemed that they had agreed to battle one another to determine who was the actual number one genius.

As for this location, it was the location where the two of them would fight.

“W-w-what a f-freaking c-coincidence! Of a-all places, they d-decided to choose this place,” Wang Qiang declared.

“Isn’t this great? We’ll be able to enjoy a show,” At this moment, Chu Feng had already walked out from the spirit formation.

Seeing that Chu Feng had returned completely unharmed, Wang Qiang asked in astonishment, “Y-you’ve succeeded?”

“Mn. I have gained control of that spirit formation,” Chu Feng nodded.

As the spirit formation was already unsealed to begin with, it was not a difficult task for Chu Feng to gain control of the slaughtering formation with his attainments in world spirit techniques.

“T-then, do you want t-to see this s-show?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Depends on what Zhao Hong wants to do,” Chu Feng looked to Zhao Hong.

After all, only Zhao Hong possessed the map of the remnants. As such, they would have to rely on her to enter the remnants. Thus, Chu Feng would respect Zhao Hong's decision on whether they should leave or stay.

“What Xiaoshi said is most likely true. Even if that old fart is in the remnants, he will not be able to obtain anything.”

“Rather than entering quickly to obtain nothing, it's better that we stay here and watch this show. I also want to see exactly what sorts of characters those Young Master Li Ming and Hun Lian are.”

As Zhao Hong said those words, her lips were raised into a strange curve. A special sort of anticipating expression appeared in her eyes.



## Chapter 2321 – Ill Intended Arrivals

---

“Hehe, w-wife, w-with y-you saying that, I-I also w-wish to see,” Seeing the strange smile and the special gaze on Zhao Hong’s face, Wang Qiang’s lips also lifted into a mischievous smile.

The way Wang Qiang saw it, regardless of how powerful that Young Master Li Ming and that Hun Lian might be, the two of them were most definitely only Martial Ancestors, and not True Immortals.

However, the three of them currently had peak Martial Ancestor level battle power. Furthermore, Chu Feng had grasped that slaughtering technique.

Not only was Chu Feng able to control the slaughtering formation to kill countless enemies, his cultivation would also increase all the way to peak Martial Ancestor if he wished for it as long as he was within the range of the slaughtering formation.

Thus, what Wang Qiang had in mind was that since that Young Master Li Ming and Hun Lian were so ignorant as to choose this place as the place for their match, the three of them should use this opportunity to bestow some suffering upon those two so-called super geniuses.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, several tens of figures suddenly flew over and descended outside of the concealment formation. They were very close to where Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were.

“It’s them?”

Upon seeing those people, Chu Feng’s expression changed. The people who had arrived were disciples from many different powers. Among them, a portion were disciples from the Sunset Cloud Valley, and another portion were disciples from the Three Stars Hall. As for the other powers, Chu Feng was not familiar

with them. However, they should all be disciples of tier two powers.

Among the group, Chu Feng saw Kou Kang.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Immediately after that, another group of people flew over and descended not far away.

There were once again disciples from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall among this group of people. From this group, Chu Feng saw familiar faces again.

The Sunset Cloud Valley’s Xu Yiyi and the Three Stars Hall’s Song Biyu were among them.

“Brother Kou Kang, look over there. Isn’t that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s junior sister Xu Yiyi?”

“What’s wrong? Are the two of you having a falling out? Why is she not with you, and instead standing so far away?” A disciple from another power said to Kou Kang jokingly.

“I’ve heard that the Sunset Cloud Valley’s junior sister Xu Yiyi possesses quite a relationship with that Chu Feng. Apparently, she had accompanied Chu Feng when he first revealed his talent on Mount Cloud Crane.”

“I fear that junior sister Xu Yiyi no longer has brother Kou Kang in her heart. Instead, her heart is now filled with that Chu Feng,” Another man said. Merely, his tone was filled with mockery. It could be seen that his relationship with Kou Kang was not good at all. Else, he would not seize this opportunity to make cutting remarks at Kou Kang.

“Mentioning that Chu Feng, I’ve heard that Chu Feng has also arrived at this Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Perhaps we will have the opportunity to meet this newly emerged genius,” Someone said.

“That’s right. That Chu Feng has indeed come.”

“Furthermore, I’ve heard that Chu Feng seems to have killed the number one disciple from the Highlord’s Mansion, Di Jiuzhou, outside the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds,” Another disciple added.

“Chu Feng killed Di Jiuzhou? For real?” Hearing those words, many of the people present revealed astonished expressions. After all, Di Jiuzhou was no ordinary character. Rather, he was the number one genius among the tier two powers’ disciples. No one was capable of moving his status.

Many of the people present here had been defeated by Di Jiuzhou, suffered in his hands many times. Thus, to them, Di Jiuzhou was an existence that possessed special significance.

“Impossible. I know very well how strong Di Jiuzhou is, and also how strong Chu Feng is. It is absolutely impossible for Chu Feng to be able to match Di Jiuzhou,” Kou Kang said.

“Brother Kou Kang, how could you speak with this much certainty? You couldn’t possibly have fought against that Chu Feng before, right?” Someone asked curiously.

“Truth be told, I have fought against that Chu Feng before,” Kou Kang said proudly.

“Then, what is the result?” The crowd asked together.

“A tie,” Kou Kang said.

“Brother Kou Kang, you actually managed to tie with that Chu Feng?”

Hearing those words, the shocked expressions of the crowd grew even more intense. They also began to have a whole new level of respect toward Kou Kang. This was especially true for the female disciples, who began to reveal admiring gazes as they looked to Kou Kang.

“The rumors of that Chu Feng’s various accomplishments are simply exaggerated. He is simply not that amazing.”

“Back then, in the Sunset Cloud Valley, I sparred with that Chu Feng before my master, the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and senior Su Jingrui.”

“In the end, we ended in a tie.”

“Thus, it is impossible for him to be able to defeat Di Jiuzhou,” Kou Kang said those words with absolute certainty. The reason for that was because he had fought against Di Jiuzhou before, and has been defeated by him.

“In that case, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat Di Jiuzhou.”

“That’s right.”

“It would seem that Chu Feng is simply not as powerful as rumors had him be. Sure enough, the rumors cannot be trusted.”

After hearing what Kou Kang said, many people began to feel that Chu Feng’s killing of Di Jiuzhou was a false rumor.

Right at this moment, a sharp voice sounded. “Kou Kang, how shameless must you be?”

It was Xu Yiyi. She had heard the conversation Kou Kang and the others had. Originally, she had not bothered with Kou Kang. However, after hearing Kou Kang mention Chu Feng, she was unable to contain herself.

Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu walked over together. Before all the people present, Xu Yiyi said to Kou Kang, “Kou Kang, while it is true that the match ended in a tie that day, both the heaven and earth, both you and I, know why that is the case.”

“Junior sister Xu, since the result was a tie, could it be that there is some hidden secret?” That disciple who possessed a bad relationship with Kou Kang said while harboring malicious

intentions.

“A tie is a tie, what else could it possibly amount to? Xu Yiyi, even if you like Chu Feng, you shouldn’t speak for him in such a manner.”

“You were also present that day. The match between him and I ended in a tie. That is the undeniable truth!” Kou Kang yelled in dissatisfaction.

As matters stood, he no longer possessed any consideration for Xu Yiyi. As such, his tone was no longer polite.

“While that is the truth, it is also the truth that Chu Feng was going easy on you,” Xu Yiyi said loudly.

“So he was going easy on him?”

“Sure enough, didn’t I say how could Kou Kang possibly be able to tie with Chu Feng?” After hearing what Xu Yiyi said, the crowd burst into an uproar.

Many mocking laughs began to be heard nonstop. Many people began to roll their eyes at Kou Kang. They felt what he said earlier to only be boasting.

“He was going easy on me? Pah! It’s more like I was going easy on him!”

Kou Kang felt humiliated. Thus, he pointed at Xu Yiyi and shouted, “Xu Yiyi, go and call that Chu Feng here. I will personally fight him again before everyone here. I’ll let everyone know whether or not that Chu Feng is really as powerful as he is rumored to be!”

“You... you clearly know that I am unable to reach Chu Feng. That is why you dare to declare such a thing,” Xu Yiyi said.

“You being unable to reach him is your issue,” Kou Kang folded his hands over his chest and said in a disapproving manner.

“You!!!” Xu Yiyi was so furious that she started to shiver in anger.

“Chu Feng, go out and teach that guy a lesson,” Inside the spirit formation, Zhao Hong was unable to watch it anymore.

“That’s what I plan to do,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to walk toward the outside. He would not allow Kou Kang to bully Xu Yiyi like this.

“Mn?” However, right at this moment, Chu Feng stopped and turned his gaze to a nearby place.

A group of people were approaching from that direction.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

They were people from the Ying Heavenly Clan. Not only were the younger generation present, there were also elders among them. They appeared aggressively, and instantly approached the crowd. When they descended onto the ground, they had surrounded Xu Yiyi and the others.

At this moment, not to mention the others, even Xu Yiyi started to panic.

It would be one thing if it was only the Ying Heavenly Clan’s younger generation as they, after all, possessed strength about the same as their own. However, these elders from the Ying Heavenly Clan possessed powerful martial cultivations.

The strongest among these elders was a rank three Martial Ancestor. With that cultivation, he was completely capable of killing all of them instantly with a mere thought.

If it was before, they might not be afraid. However, right now, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall had already become hostile against the Ying Heavenly Clan due to Chu Feng.

For them to encounter one another at this sort of time, it could be said to be extremely bad for Xu Yiyi and the others.

“The Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley had jointly declared to the world that you all would fight against our Ying

Heavenly Clan for Chu Feng.”

“However, looking at things now, you all don’t seem to be united,” That Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder with the cultivation of rank three Martial Ancestor said.

His strange manner of speaking made it clear that he had come with ill intentions.

## Chapter 2322 – Craven And Cowardly

---

Even though she was feeling scared, Xu Yiyi still gathered up her courage to ask, “What are you all planning to do?”

“What are we planning to do? Your Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall are willing to declare war against our Ying Heavenly Clan for a single Chu Feng. Right now, we are enemies. Yet, you’re actually asking me what we plan to do?” That Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder sneered. His tone was filled with mockery.

“You are an elder, yet you’re planning to bully us, people of the younger generation. Do you not feel that it is beneath your status?” Xu Yiyi asked.

“Little girl, the battlefield is a merciless place. Has your master not taught you that?” As the Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder said those words, the coldness in his eyes grew more and more intense. Killing intent actually emerged in his eyes.

“Senior, while the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have declared war against your Ying Heavenly Clan, we have not,” A disciple who had been surrounded by individuals from the Ying Heavenly Clan walked forth and bowed with his hands held in front.

Following that person, all of the people present that were not disciples from the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley hurriedly declared, “Senior, this matter is unrelated to us. Please release us.”

“Indeed, it is unrelated to you all. Go ahead and leave,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder waved his hand, and the disciples from other powers hurriedly left.

“Although it is unrelated to them, it is related to you all,” After that, that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder turned his gaze containing killing intent at Xu Yiyi and the others.



At this moment, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall's disciples all felt a chill in their hearts. Merely from the gaze of that Ying Heavenly Clan's elder, they were able to tell that he truly had the intention to kill them.

It would appear that a great catastrophe was truly imminent for them.

“Elder, you’ve also heard it earlier. That Chu Feng and I do not get along. While it is true that our Three Stars Hall has said that we will protect Chu Feng, that is only the desire of our headmaster. I am not in favor of that decision at all.”

“Today, if you all are to kill me because of Chu Feng, my death... would be too wrongful,” Suddenly, Kou Kang stood out and spoke with an innocent expression on his face.

“Kou Kang, you...” Xu Yiyi was immediately furious upon hearing what Kou Kang said. Even Song Biyu's expression changed. They never expected Kou Kang to be such a spineless coward and actually beg their enemy for forgiveness.

“Fellow martial brothers and sisters from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, do you not agree with what I said?”

“We have no association with that Chu Feng to begin with. Why must we throw our lives away for that Chu Feng?” Kou Kang ignored Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu's gazes of contempt and turned to speak to the other disciples.

“That's right. What senior brother Kou Kang said is extremely correct. We should not die for that Chu Feng.”

“Senior, we possess no relationship with that Chu Feng. Please spare us.”

Once Kou Kang said those words, regardless of whether it was the Three Stars Hall or the Sunset Cloud Valley, a portion of their disciples immediately started to declare that they had no relation

with Chu Feng.

“You all... you bunch of spineless cowards...” Faced with the begging of those disciples, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu started to tremble with anger.

What those disciples were doing was not only begging for forgiveness, they were also disgracing their powers. Their actions were no different from desertion.

“It is not that we are spineless. Rather, we merely do not wish to die in vain because of an unrelated individual,” Kou Kang refuted. Then, he continued to speak to the Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder, “Senior, please see this matter clearly, and do not kill us, the innocent.”

“Haha. Good. Our Ying Heavenly Clan are not a bunch of unreasonable people either.”

“Since you all have said it like this, I will spare you all. You all can go too,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder waved his hand again.

Although Kou Kang and the others’ actions were unavoidable since they wanted to survive, they were still met with hisses of contempt from many of the bystanders.

After all, no matter how one looked at it, their actions were simply craven and cowardly. They possessed no moral backbone at all.

However, Kou Kang and the others completely ignored the way the others viewed them. They acted as if they had managed to escape from the tiger’s den, and quickly fled that place.

However, Kou Kang suddenly stopped when he was about to walk out from under the Ying Heavenly Clan’s besiegement. He turned around and sent a voice transmission to Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu, “There is no reason for you all to throw your lives away because of Chu Feng. Come, leave with us.”

“Scram!” Xu Yiyi shouted coldly. Disgust filled the gaze with

which she looked at Kou Kang.

In fact, even Kou Kang's fellow disciple Song Biyu looked at him with a gaze filled with contempt.

"The two of you are truly pigheaded. Your deaths are well-deserved," Ruthlessness appeared in Kou Kang's gaze. Then, he waved his sleeve and swaggered off.

However, he did not actually leave. Instead, he entered the crowd. He was actually planning to personally see Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu getting killed.

"What is this? You all are truly willing to die for that Chu Feng?" That Ying Heavenly Clan's elder asked Xu Yiyi and the others.

After what happened earlier, he seemed to be more willing to see these disciples renouncing their relationship with Chu Feng.

After all, it would indirectly indicate that Chu Feng did not possess the support of the crowd.

"We are willing to live and die together with our schools. If you wish to kill us, then go on and do it! Why bother with all these superfluous words!" Xu Yiyi shouted.

"We will live and die together with our schools. Go on and kill us!!!" Following that, Song Biyu and the others disciples also shouted.

Their voices were like thunder and shook the heavens. They were prepared to die.

"Very well, since you all have decided, I will grant you all your wish," That Ying Heavenly Clan's elder once again revealed killing intent in his eyes. As he spoke, he raised his hand.

"Boom~~~"

In an instant, surging winds covered the region as the sky darkened. His rank three Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth. It was as if doomsday were descending.

At that moment, Xu Yiyi and the others closed their eyes. They were prepared to accept death.

The reason for that was because it was simply impossible for them to survive before that oppressive might.

“I’m afraid that you will not be able to kill them today.”

Right at the moment when everyone felt that Xu Yiyi and the others would undoubtedly be killed, a voice sounded.

That voice came explosively like a thunderstrike, shocking the hearts of everyone.

Most shockingly, after that voice was heard, the crowd was surprised to discover the raised arm of that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder had actually frozen in midair. At the same time, his boundless oppressive might vanished completely.

To be exact, his oppressive might was forced back by an oppressive might even more powerful than his own.

Rank four Martial Ancestor. It was a rank four Martial Ancestor’s oppressive might that saved Xu Yiyi and the others.

‘Could it be that reinforcements from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have arrived?’

That was what the crowd thought at this instant.

“It’s him?”

However, upon looking toward the direction of the voice, the crowd were tongue-tied and stunned. Disbelief filled their eyes.

A figure was slowly walking toward them from not far away. However, that person was not an elder or senior from the Sunset Cloud Valley or the Three Stars Hall.

Instead, he was a young man, someone much younger than majority of the younger generation present.

As for this man, he was none other than Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng? Isn’t that Chu Feng?”

“Heavens! How did he become this powerful? He’s actually a rank four Martial Ancestor!”

“No wonder, no wonder he was able to kill Ying Liangchen and Di Jiuzhou; Chu Feng was actually as powerful as he was rumored to be!”

“To possess a cultivation of rank four Martial Ancestor at such a young age, he is definitely an exceptional genius, most definitely! An exceptional genius has really appeared in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!”

At that moment, the surrounding crowd burst into an uproar. All they were saying were praises for Chu Feng.

It was not that they were trying to flatter him. Rather, at that moment, they were truly stunned by how powerful Chu Feng was.

# Chapter 2323 – Arrival Of Geniuses

---

“Chu Feng, you actually dared to show your face?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder immediately started to gnash his teeth in anger. Intense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

His current appearance was that of someone who wanted to skin Chu Feng alive, remove his bones, eat his flesh and drink his blood. He truly felt enormous hatred for Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng did not even bother to look at that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder. Instead, he gently raised his arm.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard, and that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder’s body shattered. He had been instantly obliterated by Chu Feng.

“Run away!” Seeing that scene, the others from the Ying Heavenly Clan all turned pale. They immediately turned around and started fleeing.

“Chu Feng, don’t l-let them escape,” At this time, Wang Qiang also ran out from the concealment formation.

“It’s fine. It would suit my intention if they were able to call for reinforcements,” Chu Feng said indifferently. He did not bother with the fleeing Ying Heavenly Clansmen.

“N-now that y-you mention it, that’s true. Y-you’re t-truly smart,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang scratched his head and then laughed foolishly.

Currently, they had the crystal giants. Furthermore, Chu Feng had gained control of that grand formation. As such, he was extremely powerful.

Not to mention the elders from the Ying Heavenly Clan, even if the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief himself were to come, he

would not necessarily be a match for them either.

Regardless of the amount of people from the Ying Heavenly Clan that might come, they would all be killed. There was simply no need for them to be afraid.

Thus, if those Ying Heavenly Clansmen that managed to escape were to call for reinforcements and bring back experts from the Ying Heavenly Clan, they would only be coming to throw their lives away.

Chu Feng walked over to Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others. He asked in a concerned manner, “Are you all alright?”

“Chu Feng, your cultivation!!!” Xu Yiyi’s eyes were opened extremely wide. Evidently, she was unable to accept Chu Feng’s current overwhelming strength.

“This is a special method of mine. It is not my actual cultivation,” Chu Feng told Xu Yiyi honestly.

“So it’s actually not your actual cultivation. However, what sort of method could allow you to increase your cultivation to this level?”

“Well, regardless, only extraordinary individuals would be able to obtain that sort of heaven-defying battle power.”

“That Chu Feng is truly amazing.”

After finding out that Chu Feng’s cultivation was not his actual cultivation, the surrounding crowd began to discuss the matter spiritedly. However, no one belittled Chu Feng.

After all, the scene of Chu Feng killing that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder with merely a wave of his arm was something that they all saw.

Although Chu Feng killed that elder so effortlessly, his killing appeared to be extremely overbearing and domineering for these people here.

“Chu Feng, I’ve heard that you’ve killed Di Jiuzhou. Is that matter true?” Song Biyu asked curiously.

“There is indeed such a thing,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Amazing. You must know that Di Jiuzhou is the strongest disciple among our tier two powers,” Upon verifying this matter, Song Biyu was extremely delighted. An admiring gaze once again appeared in her eyes.

At the same time, the surrounding crowd also began to look to Chu Feng with more admiration and reverence in their gazes. Regardless of whether Chu Feng’s current cultivation was his own or not, the fact remained that it was no small matter that Chu Feng was both able to kill Di Jiuzhou and dared to kill Di Jiuzhou.

“Brother Kou Kang, are you certain you managed to tie in your sparring match with Chu Feng?”

At that moment, some people moved toward Kou Kang and began to ridicule him.

“Not to mention their cultivations, merely in terms of courage, he is already enormously far away from Chu Feng. He is simply unworthy of being compared with Chu Feng,” More and more people began to ridicule Kou Kang.

It was not that the crowd were composed of snobs. Rather, seeing was truly the best way of believing.

When they were all faced with that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder, Kou Kang revealed cowardice. He was so interested in saving himself that he even sold out his fellow disciples.

However, what Chu Feng displayed was unrestrained dominance. He was firm and decisive. With merely a wave of his sleeve, he killed that Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder.

The disparity between the two was truly too enormous. They simply could not be discussed together.



“You all...”

At that moment, Kou kang’s complexion turned pale. It was extremely ugly, as if he had been fed feces.

Even if he possessed an extremely thick skin, he would still feel somewhat unable to withstand the ridicule and supercilious looks from this many people. Thus, he turned around and planned to leave.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right when Kou Kang was planning to leave, the distant sky suddenly turned extremely dark. Black clouds were rolling about, and violent wind burst past.

An extremely powerful surge of aura was sweeping toward them, leaving behind waves of trembling everywhere it passed.

Finally, that surge of aura arrived. Finally, the crowd were able to see what the origin of that aura was.

It was a young man. He had a head of black hair, and wore a black gown. On his back was a cloak three meters long fluttering in the wind. As for that cloak, it too was black.

However, that man’s face was extremely pale, strangely pale. It was as pale as paper itself.

Fortunately, that man possessed a delicate and pretty face. However, it was precisely because it was too delicate and pretty that he appeared to resemble a female. As such, he gave off an uncomfortable sensation.

“Rank three Martial Ancestor.”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s gaze shone. He had managed to sense that man’s cultivation. Not only was he a rank three Martial Ancestor, he also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

In other words, that man’s true battle power was on par with

ordinary rank six Martial Ancestors.

However, he was clearly still only a member of the younger generation.

It was definitely possible to count the members of the younger generation that were this powerful with one's fingers; they were extremely rare.

"It would appear that that man should be Hun Lian," Chu Feng said.

"W-w-why's that? W-why would he b-be Hun Lian, and n-not that Y-young Master Li Ming?" Wang Qiang asked curiously.

"This man is covered with killing intent. Furthermore, he emits a nefarious air all around. Furthermore, I am able to sense a heinous air from him."

"Although I do not know what Young Master Li Ming is like, I am certain that he should definitely not be like this."

Chu Feng was certain of this man's identity. The reason why he was so certain was because of the heinous air that man emitted.

Heinous, the heinous air from the taking of lives.

That heinous air was created from countless lives dying miserably by his hands.

That heinous air had affected that man. It would make him become even more cruel and vicious, make him become someone who would obtain his goals by fair means or foul.

However, to Chu Feng, what he hated the most was the fact that that man had taken so many lives.

If he were truly someone from the Infant Soul Sect, it would mean that all the lives he had taken were newborns.

With how intense the heinous air he gave off was, he had killed countless newborns, so unimaginably many.

After observing him for a while, Zhao Hong voiced her impression, “His killing intent and his nefarious air are all understandable. However, that heinous air seems to be something that could only be formed through taking countless lives. It seems that that guy has done a great amount of evil things, and is not a good man.” She too had a bad impression of that man.

“W-wife, haven’t y-you also killed a lot of p-people?” Wang Qiang said to Zhao Hong.

“Shut up. All those that I’ve killed were people that deserved to die,” Zhao Hong said coldly.

Although Wang Qiang was unwilling to accept her reasoning, he said no more. While he possessed the protection of the crystal giant now, as he had been tormented by Zhao Hong for a long time, he felt fear towards her from the bottom of his heart.

“Li Ming, since you’re here, why are you not showing yourself?” The black-clothed man revealed a nefarious smile as he cast his gaze toward the north.

“He is calling for Li Ming. It seems that he is Hun Lian,” Once he said those words, everyone became certain of his identity.

He was Hun Lian.

“When you haven’t arrived, why would I be in a rush to show myself?” Right at that moment, a voice slowly sounded from the direction the black clothed man was looking toward.

Following that, a ray of light flashed by. The ray of light approached the crowd and then stopped. At that moment, everyone managed to clearly see that man’s appearance.

Upon seeing that man, the eyes of many people present started to shine.

## Chapter 2324 – The Outcome Of The Battle

---

This man wore a white gown and held a folding fan. His appearance was like that of a scholar. As for his appearance, it was even more feminine. Compared to Hun Lian, he looked even more like a woman.

In fact, with the way he looked, if he were to wear female clothing and decorate his hair, he would simply be a beautiful woman.

From this, it could be imagined how delicate and pretty his appearance was. It was truly rarely seen.

In fact, this man could be said to be the prettiest man that Chu Feng had ever met.

Furthermore, his pretty appearance gave off a comfortable feeling, whereas Hun Lian gave off a very uncomfortable sensation.

However, what Chu Feng was more concerned with was his cultivation.

He possessed the same level of cultivation as Hun Lian; he was also a rank three Martial Ancestor, and also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

The two men could be said to be equally matched. That said, Chu Feng was delighted to discover that this Young Master Li Ming possessed a completely different sort of aura to that Hun Lian.

Although his body was also covered with killing intent, he did not emit any heinous air.

This indirectly displayed that this Young Master Li Ming was someone who never willfully slaughtered the innocent, someone who did not seem to be a bad individual.

Of course, it might also be possible that he was a master of disguise, or possessed a treasure on him that could conceal his heinous air. As such, for certain things, Chu Feng could not be absolutely certain.

However, at the very least, Chu Feng's first impression of Young Master Li Ming was pretty decent.

“Wow! So handsome!”

At that moment, many of the women present started to scream wildly.

If the appearance of Hun Lian had stunned them, then the appearance of Young Master Li Ming had completely mesmerized them.

“F-fuck! W-what's w-with the taste these Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's w-women have? I-instead of being m-mesmerized by a manly man like m-me, they a-are a-actually into that sort of f-feminine man?” Wang Qiang said in displeasure.

“What?! You have this lady here! Yet you still dare to think about other women?!” Zhao Hong stared at Wang Qiang in a threatening manner.

“N-no, of course n-not. Y-you are the only one i-in my heart,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile.

“That's more like it,” Zhao Hong said.

“Hun Lian, as per your request, I have let news of this match spread. The bystanders are already here. Are we able to fight now?” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Of course,” Hun Lian smiled coldly. Then, he abruptly attacked.

“Boom~~~”

Hun Lian's powerful oppressive might immediately shot forth toward Young Master Li Ming. Furthermore, his oppressive might began to spread in all directions.

Everything happened too quickly. Furthermore, as that oppressive might was so strong, many people were engulfed by it.

“Ahh!!!”

Screams began to sound in succession. Those that were engulfed by the oppressive might were either killed or seriously injured. It was a tragic sight.

“That Hun Lian is actually that vicious? He is simply too excessive!” Seeing that scene, Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others immediately revealed scowls.

Even though their cultivations were not very strong, they knew that if experts wanted to exercise restraint when fighting, regardless of how powerful their oppressive might might be, then they would not cause these sorts of casualties.

The situation at hand was deliberately caused by Hun Lian. He had not bothered to restrain his oppressive might, for he simply did not care about the life and death of the bystanders.

“Humph.”

Young Master Li Ming snorted coldly. His body shifted, and then an equally powerful aura was emitted as he collided with Hun Lian.

Sure enough, it was as the crowd had anticipated, Young Master Li Ming’s strength was not at all inferior to Hun Lian’s.

His attacks were equally world-shakingly powerful. However, although his oppressive might was extremely powerful, it did not bring harm to the bystanders.

Compared to Hun Lian, this Young Master Li Ming had deliberately exercised restraint with his oppressive might so as to not bring harm to the bystanders.

This served as a greater proof of how savage and cruel Hun Lian was.

This, at this moment, it was no longer only Chu Feng and the others who had a bad impression of Hun Lian, many of the bystanders also began to have bad impressions of Hun Lian.

However, even though the crowd were feeling displeased, there was nothing they could do. Even those who had their friends or fellow disciples killed by Hun Lian before them could only restrain themselves.

After all, as Hun Lian and Young Master Li Ming fought one another, their strength became more and more distinctively revealed to the crowd.

Their enormous strength had already surpassed the boundary for people of the younger generation.

In fact, even many of the older generation present were unable to match up against the two of them.

Faced with such a powerful Hun Lian, they truly did not dare to say anything. If they were to enrage him, they would definitely be killed.

“Rumble~~~”

The battle grew more and more intense. At this moment, the bystanders had no choice but to draw back from the battlefield, because they were scared of being implicated by the battle and dying.

However, the crowd were unwilling to distance themselves too much from the battle; they did not wish to miss the confrontation between two peak geniuses.

That said, they were only able to spectate for the excitement. After all, Hun Lian and Young Master Li Ming were simply too strong. The confrontation between the two of them lifted wave upon wave of energy ripples that made it so that the crowd were simply unable to see the details of the battle.

The only thing that they could see were the ferocious energy

ripples wreaking havoc through their surroundings.

However, Chu Feng was an exception.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng had grasped control over the slaughtering formation in this area, he was able to increase his cultivation at will all the way to rank nine Martial Ancestor.

Even though Chu Feng's Heavenly Bloodline would be sealed off after increasing his cultivation, causing him to lose his heaven-defying battle power, Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings in the process, the strength of Chu Feng's perception would subsequently increase.

Thus, Chu Feng was able to clearly see the confrontation between Hun Lian and Young Master Li Ming.

After observing the battle for some time, Chu Feng said, "They're quite powerful."

"C-Chu Feng, y-you are able to s-see their battle, right? T-then, do y-you know which one of them is stronger?" Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng.

"Both of them are very strong. Right now, they are equally matched. However, I feel that Hun Lian had nearly exhausted all of his strength, whereas Young Master Li Ming is still holding back slightly."

"Thus, I feel that Young Master Li Ming will have a higher chance of victory," Chu Feng said.

"T-that's good then," Wang Qiang seemed to also want Young Master Li Ming to win.

"Rumble~~~"

The rumbles grew more and more ear-piercing. The battle between the two men grew more and more intense. The abilities the two of them were using to fight one another also became more and more powerful.



However, the development of the battle was as Chu Feng had predicted. The equilibrium of the battle started to shift, and Young Master Li Ming began to gain the upper hand in the battle.

Hun Lian had been injured. He who was proud and arrogant became furious. He began to unleash counterattacks with all his might. However, regardless of what he did, it seemed that the battle was already under Young Master Li Ming's control. No matter how hard he tried to beat Li Ming back, he was unable to, and would only be humiliated by Young Master Li Ming time and time again.

“That Young Master Li Ming is quite interesting,” A light smile appeared on Chu Feng's face.

After hearing Chu Feng saying those words, Wang Qiang immediately asked curiously, “W-what, what? T-tell me what's happening. I can't see.”

Originally, Chu Feng planned to explain. However, suddenly, he smiled even stronger. “There's no need for me to tell you, you'll soon see it for yourself.”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right after chu Feng said those words, a burst of wind appeared in Hun Lian and Young Master Li Ming's battlefield.

That wind instantly blew away the frightening energy ripples wreaking havoc through the battlefield.

“This...”

At this moment, the crowd were all stunned. They were stupefied by the scene before them.

At this moment, Young Master Li Ming was already gone. Only Hun Lian was still standing in the sky.

At this moment, Hun Lian was holding his Incomplete Ancestral Armament with a furious expression. He was fiercely running his

eyes all around, seemingly trying to find Young Master Li Ming.

However, if that were all there was, the crowd would naturally not be so astonished.

The reason why the crowd was astonished was because Hun Lian was not only covered with cuts flowing with blood, even his clothes were tattered. At a glance, he appeared to be in an extremely sorry state. In fact, his appearance was similar to that of a beggar.

His sorry state made the crowd realize that the outcome of the confrontation between the strongest geniuses seemed to have been decided.

# Chapter 2325 – Chu Feng Acting

---

“Hun Lian, the outcome of the battle has been decided.”

“I will spare you this once today. However, if you dare to provoke me again, I will take your dog life.”

Right at that moment, Young Master Li Ming’s voice was suddenly heard. However, his figure was nowhere to be seen.

Furthermore, his voice also grew further and further away as he spoke. It seemed as if he was leaving.

“Li Ming, get back here! The outcome of the battle hasn’t been decided yet! I want to continue the battle!” Hun Lian shouted.

Hun Lian’s voice was so resounding that it caused space itself to tremble nonstop. Many people hurriedly covered their ears. Some of the people with low levels of cultivation were unable to withstand Hun Lian’s voice, and ended up vomiting blood and dying.

However, even though Hun Lian shouted like this, there was no response from Young Master Li Ming. It seemed that he had truly left.

However, even with that being the case, Hun Lian still continued to shout.

Evidently, he was unwilling to accept that he had been defeated by Young Master Li Ming like this.

“You should just shut up. Look at yourself, why are you still shouting?” At that moment, Zhao Hong was unable to continue watching anymore, and shouted at Hun Lian with contempt.

“T-that’s right. Y-you’re t-truly shameless,” Wang Qiang added with an expression of displeasure on his face.

Although the two of them had not gained control of the slaughtering formation, and held strength inferior to Hun Lian,

they possessed the crystal giants to protect them.

As the crystal giants possessed the strength of peak Martial Ancestors, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were not afraid of Hun Lian. As such, they would naturally dare to say anything they wanted.

“What did you two say?!”

However, how could the conceited and arrogant Hun Lian possibly tolerate others speaking ill of him? He immediately turned a gaze radiating with killing intent toward Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

His gaze was filled with threatening intent.

However, faced with Hun Lian’s threatening gaze, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong’s expressions remained unchanged.

Seeing how unphased the two of them were, many of the bystanders began to have a whole new level of respect toward Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. Furthermore, due to the fact that the two of them were not wearing their conical bamboo hats, the crowd began to remember their appearances.

As for why, it was naturally because the two of them spoke what the great majority of the people present did not dare to say. As such, the crowd felt that the two of them were grand characters too.

“W-what, y-you d-don’t understand what we said?”

“V-very well, this g-great sir s-shall re-repeat what I said for you.”

“I said, you are t-trash,” Wang Qiang said those words vigorously and one word at a time.

“You’re courting death!!!” Hun Lian snorted coldly. Then, he shot forth a punch. His boundless Ancestral-level martial power turned into two bursts of wind. Like two giant ferocious beasts, the

wind came crashing toward Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong from above.

The attack of his single punch was extremely strong. If it struck them, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong would definitely die. Even Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi and many of the bystanders would be implicated by the punch.

At that moment, the ruthlessness of that Hun Lian was once again completely revealed to the crowd.

All he cared about was himself, and he did not concern himself with the lives and deaths of others at all.

However, to Chu Feng's surprise, even though Hun Lian had already shot forth his punch, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong did not unleash their crystal giants, and did not seem to plan on doing so.

With their strength, it was simply impossible for them to block Hun Lian's attack. After all, Hun Lian was a powerful existence that could match ordinary rank six Martial Ancestors.

‘These two, they’re forcing me to act.’

Chu Feng felt helpless. He had already managed to tell that the reason why Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang did not unleash their crystal giants after provoking Hun Lian was because they wanted him to take care of that Hun Lian.

“Oh no!”

Even though Chu Feng understood Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang's intention, the others did not. Seeing that Hun Lian had shot forth his punch, but Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong did not do anything to block his attack, they all felt that the two of them would meet certain doom.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at the moment when everyone felt that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong would be killed by Hun Lian, Chu Feng

suddenly waved his sleeve and brought forth a burst of wind that shot upward.

“Boom~~~”

The strong wind was stronger than even the two bursts of wind shot forth by Hun Lian’s punch. It dispersed Hun Lian’s attack easily.

“Mn?”

At that moment, Hun Lian’s gaze changed immediately. A dense amount of shock appeared in his vicious and proud eyes.

“That aura earlier was so strong. Could it be... Chu Feng, he... he’s a rank six Martial Ancestor?”

The very next moment, the crowd present burst into an uproar. Everyone began to fix their gazes onto Chu Feng. Astonishment filling their eyes.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s aura had indeed increased to that of a rank six Martial Ancestor now.

As for that, it was naturally not Chu Feng’s actual cultivation. Chu Feng’s actual cultivation was that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

As for his cultivation of rank six Martial Ancestor, it was something that Chu Feng had obtained through the Slaughtering Formation’s effect of increasing one’s cultivation.

By relying on the Slaughtering Formation’s power, Chu Feng was actually able to increase his cultivation even higher. However, Chu Feng had seen Hun Lian’s abilities earlier. As such, he wanted to confront this Hun Lian at an equal strength. After all, a battle like this would be very beneficial to Chu Feng.

“You actually possess the cultivation of a rank six Half Martial Ancestor? Who are you?” Hun Lian said while looking at Chu Feng.

“A-are you a fool or what? Y-you actually d-don’t even recognize my brother C-Chu Feng?” Wang Qiang said with displeasure.

“Chu Feng? You are that Chu Feng who became an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on Mount Cloud Crane?!” Hun Lian asked in shock. Evidently, he had not yet seen Chu Feng’s portrait. Thus, he was uncertain of Chu Feng’s identity.

“That’s right. It w-was done by my brother,” Wang Qiang nodded immediately. Unconcealed pride covered his face.

“I originally thought that you only possessed attainments in terms of world spirit techniques. Never would I have imagined that your cultivation is actually so powerful. It would appear that stutterer and that girl are your friends? Are you planning to stick up for your friends here?” Hun Lian asked coldly.

Although Chu Feng’s current cultivation was that of a rank six Martial Ancestor, Hun Lian was still looking at Chu Feng with a gaze of slight contempt. It was as if he felt that he would be able to easily take care of Chu Feng.

“No, it’s not only to stick up for them. Rather, it’s because I feel that someone like you, someone who willfully slaughters the innocent, should not be left alive,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

Although his smile appeared good-natured, killing intent was hidden within it.

Chu Feng suspect Hun Lian to be a member of the Infant Soul Sect. As for the people from the Infant Soul Sect, Chu Feng did not plan to spare them to begin with.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng could not be absolutely certain that Hun Lian was a member of the Infant Soul Sect, it remained that Hun Lian’s methods were simply too ruthless and cruel.

Chu Feng felt that Hun Lian was a scourge. Rather than

disregarding him, it would be better to eliminate him and help to destroy evil for the people of the world.

Thus, even without Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's provocation, Chu Feng had not planned to let Hun Lian get away.

"You actually want to kill me? Hahaha. Interesting. You are even more arrogant than that Young Master Li Ming."

"However, you should know that this is a world of martial cultivators. In this world, one must use one's strength to speak," Hun Lian had managed to see through Chu Feng's killing intent. As he spoke, he held his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and charged to kill Chu Feng.

"Naturally, we will have to speak with our strength," Chu Feng smiled indifferently. Then, he soared into the sky. With a flip of his palm, the Magma Emperor Sword appeared in his hand. Then, he collided with Hun Lian.

"Rumble~~~"

At that moment, explosions surged in the sky as martial power burst forth. The scene of the frightening battle between Hun Lian and Young Master Li Ming appeared once again.

Merely, this time around, even though the might of the battle was on par with the battle before, the might of the energy ripples were weaker than before.

It was not that the battle between Chu Feng and Hun Lian was inferior to the battle between Li Ming and Hun Lian.

Rather, Chu Feng was afraid of bringing harm to the bystanders, and had used his power to suppress the energy ripples formed from their battle.

Furthermore, it just so happened that some of the perceptive experts from the older generation managed to see through what Chu Feng was doing.



As such, they were unable to contain themselves from exclaiming in admiration, “A child like that Chu Feng is truly rare. He is a blessing to our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

# Chapter 2326 – Straightforward And Upright

---

“Senior, why did you say that?” A curious individual asked.

“For the sake of protecting us, Chu Feng has deliberately contained the energy ripples from his confrontation with Hun Lian, preventing them from becoming too ferocious and injuring us, all while fighting against him.”

“This means that he has a kind heart. Although there are a lot of geniuses, the majority of them are proud and arrogant individuals that only care about themselves, and could care less about the lives and deaths of others.”

“You can take that Hun Lian as a perfect example. He simply does not care about our lives. In fact, he even intentionally brought harm upon us to show us how powerful he is.”

“As for that Young Master Li Ming, even though his strength surpassed Hun Lian’s, and he had not deliberately harmed us, the only thing he cared about was defeating Hun Lian, and thus he did not bother to put a curb on Hun Lian’s overbearing behavior.”

“While it cannot be said that Young Master Li Ming is a bad individual, it could be said that he still possesses the same sort of proud mentality the great majority of geniuses possess. Although he does not do evil, he does not plan to eliminate evil either.”

“However, that Chu Feng is different. I do not feel the same arrogance that other geniuses exhibit from him,” That old man began to praise Chu Feng nonstop. The more he praised, the more intensely passionate his gaze became.

After hearing what that old man said, many of the people from the younger generation realized what Chu Feng was silently doing for them, and began to hold deeper respect toward Chu Feng.

“Merely, with how powerful that Hun Lian is, I truly wonder if

Chu Feng will be able to defeat him,” As more people began to think highly of Chu Feng, they also began to become increasingly worried for Chu Feng.

After all, with Hun Lian’s moral character, if Chu Feng were to not be a match for him, he would definitely kill Chu Feng and his friends. In fact, even a portion of the bystanders would most definitely be killed by him.

As for that, it was a result that the crowd did not wish for.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, an ear-piercing rumble sounded from the sky.

Energy ripples surged on as the rumbling continued. Countless spatial cracks began to appear. Then, space and the void shattered, turning the sky pitch-black.

Their power was so strong that even space was shattered by it.

At the moment when space began to reform and the energy ripples began to dissipate, the crowd were finally able to see what had happened.

Chu Feng and Hun Lian were both standing in the sky. While Chu Feng was completely undamaged, Hun Lian’s injuries had grown even more serious. This was especially true for his chest; there was a large hole there. Blood was gushing out of that hole.

At the same time, Hun Lian’s aura had also become increasingly weak. He had already lost the enormous battle power he had displayed earlier.

“He won! Chu Feng actually won!”

“Chu Feng won!!!”

“Chu Feng defeated Hun Lian!!!”

At that moment, cheers sounded from the crowd.

The crowd was extremely excited. It could be seen how much they wanted Chu Feng to win.

“Impossible! How could you possibly defeat me?!” Hun Lian had a sinister expression. He seemed to not be concerned with his injuries at all. Rather, using his unreconciled gaze, he stared at Chu Feng.

He was still unable to accept being defeated by Chu Feng.

“Firstly, I must admit that you’re very powerful. At the very least, you are stronger than the current me,” Chu Feng said.

“.....”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd’s expressions all changed. They were flabbergasted. They did not understand why he would say that he was inferior to Hun Lian when he had defeated Hun Lian.

“Are you insulting me?!” Hun Lian grew even more furious.

Even though he was unwilling to admit that he had been defeated by Chu Feng, he still knew very well that he was defeated by Chu Feng.

Thus, he felt that Chu Feng saying those words after defeating him was simply insulting him.

“Truth be told, the reason why I am able to defeat you so easily is because I had already seen your various abilities when you fought against Young Master Li Ming earlier. Thus, I already knew how I should handle you.”

“If I hadn’t personally seen your abilities in your confrontation with Young Master Li Ming, and had instead fought against you without knowing any of your abilities, it would have been impossible for me to defeat you this easily.”

“Then and most importantly, my current cultivation is not my true cultivation,” Chu Feng said.

“What are you implying? Are you trying to tell me that you concealed your cultivation?” Hun Lian’s expression changed again. It seemed that he was afraid that he would be humiliated again.

“No,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. He shook his head and said, “My actual cultivation is that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor.”

“Rank five Half Martial Ancestor?”

“You said that you’re a rank five Half Martial Ancestor?”

“If that’s the case, then what is this cultivation that you have now?” Hearing those words, Hun Lian’s expression changed enormously. He was completely puzzled.

“My current cultivation is something that I obtained through using a spirit formation,” Chu Feng said calmly. He seemed to not feel disgraced for obtaining his cultivation with special means. After all, it was the truth.

Originally, Chu Feng didn’t have to tell Hun Lian or the others about this. However, he knew very well that if he did not rely on the spirit formation and relied only on his actual cultivation, it would have been impossible for him to defeat Hun Lian.

That was why Chu Feng declared that Hun Lian was stronger than him. After all, if they were to compete with their actual cultivations, even ten thousand Chu Fengs would not be a match for a single Hun Lian.

That was the truth. As for Chu Feng, he did not wish to conceal that sort of truth.

“Look. Didn’t I say that Chu Feng’s character is excellent?”

“Chu Feng is a straightforward and upright man of character.”

However, unexpectedly, Chu Feng’s telling of the truth did not receive denouncements from the crowd. Instead, they started to commend him. They all felt that Chu Feng was a sincere individual.

“Hahahaha...”

However, right at that moment, Hun Lian burst into loud laughter. He laughed very proudly and arrogantly.

“So you were only able to defeat me by using a spirit formation. In that case, you are nothing more than trash.”

Faced with Chu Feng’s candidness, Hun Lian did not feel grateful in the slightest, and instead started to ridicule Chu Feng.

Xu Yiyi was unable to take it anymore and shouted, “How shameless could you be?! Even if Chu Feng’s actual cultivation is inferior to yours, you were still defeated by him when your battle power was on par with one another! This means that when Chu Feng’s cultivation manages to catch up to yours in the future, you will still be inferior to him!”

“That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng was open with you, yet you’re actually ridiculing him like this. You are truly too excessive. I have never seen someone as shameless as you.”

In fact, even some of the people that were unrelated to Chu Feng were unable to watch anymore. They too began to refute Hun Lian.

The reason why they dared to refute Hun Lian like this was because they had personally seen that Chu Feng had defeated Hun Lian. As such, they became more confident, and felt that they were backed by Chu Feng.

Else... they would naturally not dare to contradict Hun Lian.

“Who the hell do you all think you all are to meddle in my business? All of you are simply courting death!”

Hun Lian glowered at the crowd. Then, he waved his sleeve and sent forth layer upon layer of martial power. He wanted to completely obliterate all those that dared to contradict him, including Xu Yiyi.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after Hun Lian's martial power was sent forth, before it could be an actual threat to Xu Yiyi and the others, an even stronger martial power blocked his martial power.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng had blocked Hun Lian's martial power. Furthermore, using his martial power, Chu Feng sent forth his martial power toward Hun Lian and ended up restricting his movements.

"Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?!" Hun Lian started to panic slightly.

At that moment, he was seriously injured. While he was still capable of bullying Xu Yiyi and the others, he already no longer possessed the strength to fight Chu Feng. Merely Chu Feng's ordinary martial power that had restricted him was sufficient to kill him.

"Hun Lian, although I admit that you are very strong, I cannot find a reason to allow someone like you to live," Chu Feng looked to Hun Lian indifferently. There was not a trace of emotion in his eyes.

"You want to kill me?" The panic on Hun Lian's face grew stronger. He knew that Chu Feng was truly capable of killing him.

"That's right," Once Chu Feng said those words, his killing intent was completely revealed. His ferocious martial power was going to take Hun Lian's life.

# Chapter 2327 – Old Demon Rakshasa

---

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, a burst of boundless power suddenly appeared. That power forcibly dispersed the martial power Chu Feng had restricted Hun Lian with.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that a figure had appeared before Hun Lian. It was that person who had dispersed his martial power.

This person had a head full of white hair. He was wearing a black gown. He was as thin as a matchstick, and his face was filled with wrinkles.

Too old. Chu Feng was unable to determine how long this man had lived for.

He was that sort of individual who at first glance would appear to be a dried corpse that had walked out of a coffin. His appearance was truly terrifying.

This old man was evidently someone who was nearing the limit of his lifespan. In fact, he appeared to be an old monster who had reached the end of his lifespan, and was relying on special means to extend it.

From him, Chu Feng felt a heinous air several times denser than the one he felt from Hun Lian. This made it very apparent that it was very likely that he was a member of the Infant Soul Sect.

However, this old man's strength was something that one absolutely could not look down on. Through relying on the power of the slaughtering formation, Chu Feng was able to sense that this man was a rank nine Martial Ancestor. He was a peak Martial Ancestor, someone who was only a step away from becoming a True Immortal-level existence.



Furthermore, in addition to the dense heinous air that he emitted, the killing intent that this old man emitted was even stronger. The sky immediately darkened the moment he appeared, and his frightening killing intent covered the entire region, causing all the people present to tremble with fear.

“Heavens! This person, could he be the legendary Old Demon Rakshasa?!”

Suddenly, an aged spectator pointed to the old man standing before Hun Lian and cried out in alarm. As he spoke those words, fear filled his face. In fact, even his voice was trembling.

“What? Old Demon Rakshasa? That man is the legendary Old Demon Rakshasa?!”

“The Old Demon Rakshasa is actually still alive?!”

“Everyone, quickly, run away!!!”

After verifying the identity of the old man, many of the people present started to panic. Many others started to tremble in fear before running away from that so-called Old Demon Rakshasa. Their fears were completely revealed.

“Master. Master, save me,” After seeing that old man, Hun Lian was both surprised and overjoyed. As if he had seen hope, he immediately cried out for help.

“Look at your disappointing behavior, stop shouting.”

“With your master, I, here, no one will be able to bring the slightest bit of harm to you,” the Old Demon Rakshasa turned around and glared at Hun Lian. He seemed to be disappointed with him.

Faced with the stare from the Old Demon Rakshasa, although Hun Lian had an expression of shame all over his face, he managed to stabilize his state of mind, and no longer shouted in panic like before.

“What?! No wonder that Hun Lian is this savage and cruel. So he is actually... Old Demon Rakshasa’s disciple!!!”

“Little friend Chu Feng, quickly, escape! That Old Demon Rakshasa is not someone you can handle!”

“Chu Feng, quickly, escape!!!”

After the crowd found out that Hun Lian was actually Old Demon Rakshasa’s disciple, many people started to send voice transmissions to Chu Feng to tell him to escape. Even Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were warning Chu Feng through voice transmissions.

All of the voice transmissions were filled with nervousness and unrest.

Furthermore, from the conversations of the bystanders, Chu Feng came to realize who this Old Demon Rakshasa was.

Old Demon Rakshasa was one of the strongest characters in the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm. As his name implied, he was not a good man. Instead, he was a fiendish demon.

However, it seemed that this man had disappeared for many years. As such, others would naturally be shocked for him to reappear now.

That said, at the same time that he brought shock upon the crowd, he also brought fear upon them. The reason for that was because the vicious reputation of the Old Demon Rakshasa was simply too strong. He was the sort of individual that was extremely powerful, and would commit all kinds of unimaginable crimes.

He was an existence a step away from becoming a True Immortal.

Faced with someone like him, it was no wonder why some of the spectators would be so scared that they immediately turned around to flee. Likely, they were afraid of being implicated.

However, Chu Feng was not afraid. The reason for that was because from the conversations of the crowd and his own

observations, he discovered that while this Old Demon Rakshasa possessed an extremely powerful cultivation, he was not someone who possessed heaven-defying battle power.

In other words, both his cultivation and his actual battle power were at the level of a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

To Chu Feng, who possessed two crystal giants and controlled the grand slaughtering formation, that Old Demon Rakshasa's cultivation was not sufficient to bring him fear. At the very least, Chu Feng was confident enough to battle him.

“Chu Feng, he's... not escaping?”

“Could he be stunned with fear?”

Although Chu Feng was confident enough to fight against the Old Demon Rakshasa, the bystanders had no idea of this. Thus, when they saw that Chu Feng was standing there motionlessly, they all thought that Chu Feng was stunned with terror by Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Master, that Chu Feng's cultivation is only that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor.”

“He has grasped some sort of grand formation that allowed him to gain his current level of cultivation. He relied on that spirit formation to bully this disciple.”

“Master, you must definitely uphold justice for this disciple,” Hun Lian said with deep grievance.

“Rest assured. Not to mention Chu Feng, none of the people present here today shall continue to live,” Old Demon Rakshasa said coldly.

Once he said those words, boundless killing intent emerged in his eyes.

Immediately afterward, his boundless oppressive might surged forth from his body like a volcanic eruption. With unimaginable

speed, and a power capable of enormous destruction, it swept toward the surroundings.

That Old Demon Rakshasa was not only planning to kill Chu Feng alone. Rather, he was planning to eliminate all of the people present.

His title as an ‘Old Demon’ was truly well-deserved. Sure enough, he was extremely inhumane and savage.

“I fear that you will not be able to do as you wish.”

With Chu Feng here, how could he possibly allow this Old Demon Rakshasa to openly slaughter the crowd?

As Chu Feng spoke, with a thought, he activated the power of the grand slaughtering formation to increase his cultivation once again. He increased his cultivation from rank six Martial Ancestor to peak Martial Ancestor.

After increasing his cultivation, Chu Feng let out his oppressive might to protect the crowd present.

“Boom~~~”

The two streams of oppressive might collided with one another. Immediately, heaven and earth started to tremble, and violent winds were formed.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng had managed to successfully block the Old Demon Rakshasa’s oppressive might with his own.

“How could this be?” The Old Demon Rakshasa’s expression changed enormously.

Being extremely confident, he had thought that he would be able to completely slaughter this bunch of ants with only his oppressive might. However, his oppressive might was blocked. As such, how could he not be startled?

“It’s you?!”

“You’re actually a rank nine Martial Ancestor?”

He tracked down the source of that oppressive might, and determined it to be Chu Feng. Shock, absolute shock was visible as the shock in his eyes grew even stronger.

After all, at that moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation had increased to a level on par with his own.

He had truly never expected that this member of the younger generation who was only able to fight against his disciple by relying on a spirit formation was actually able to block his oppressive might.

“Rank nine Martial Ancestor?”

“Chu Feng’s cultivation actually reached rank nine Martial Ancestor?”

“In that case, it was Chu Feng that saved us earlier?”

The crowd were simply unable to detect Chu Feng’s current level of cultivation. After all, his cultivation had reached an extremely high level that ordinary people were no longer capable of detecting.

However, after hearing what Old Demon Rakshasa said, the crowd realized that it was Chu Feng that had saved them.

But Chu Feng was clearly only a member of the younger generation. How could he possibly possess this level of cultivation, how could he possess the power to confront Old Demon Rakshasa?

At the same time that they were delighted to be saved, the crowd began to have more questions in their hearts.

“It is merely strength that I borrowed from my spirit formation’s power,” Chu Feng replied indifferently.

“Spirit formation? What sort of spirit formation could possibly grant you this sort of power?”

“Furthermore, even if there is a spirit formation this powerful,

how could you possibly be able to control it?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked with a cold voice.

What he had asked was also what the bystanders wanted to ask. It was not that they had never heard of powerful spirit formations before. However, those were all only legends that they had heard about, whereas this was the first time that they were actually seeing one. As such, they all felt disbelief.

“That doesn’t seem to concern you, no?” Chu Feng smiled lightly. There was a trace of contempt in his sharp gaze.

## Chapter 2328 – Witness A Miracle

---

“You dare speak to me in such a manner? You are truly courting death! Do you really think that you will really be able to contend against me just because a spirit formation has temporarily granted you the power of a rank nine Martial Ancestor?”

As Old Demon Rakshasa spoke, he shot forth a palm strike. Boundless martial power surged toward Chu Feng.

Although his current attack was only a simple attack with martial power, his frightening power was many times stronger than the power of his oppressive might that he tried to kill the crowd with earlier.

This meant that Old Demon Rakshasa was quite serious when he attacked this time around; it was not an ordinary attack.

“Boom~~~”

However, faced with this rather serious attack from Old Demon Rakshasa, Chu Feng was able to neutralize it with merely a lift of his hand.

After neutralizing Old Demon Rakshasa’s attack, Chu Feng said indifferently, “It is not up to you to decide whether or not I am able to contend against you. Rather, it is up to me.”

“You!!!”

“Are you courting death!!!”

Seeing that Chu Feng actually dared to provoke him, the anger on Old Demon Rakshasa’s face doubled. As he spoke, his arms began to move, and wind started to lift his gown. His boundless martial power turned into many martial skills that he shot forth in succession, as if to bombard Chu Feng.

“Humph.”

However, faced with Old Demon Rakshasa’s ferocious attack,

Chu Feng only snorted lightly. He too unleashed equally powerful martial skills as a counterattack against Old Demon Rakshasa's martial skills.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

At that moment, the two fighters collided with one another. Merely, the battlefield this time was so ferocious that the previous battlefield was simply incomparable to the current one.

Even though Chu Feng acted to lessen the might of the energy ripples, those energy ripples remained terrifyingly powerful.

In such a situation, the bystanders had no choice but to once again move away from the battlefield and keep their distance. They were deeply afraid of being implicated by the battle and dying.

“This is bad! Even though little friend Chu Feng has grasped that legendary grand formation, his opponent remains that Old Demon Rakshasa!!!”

“I truly never expected Hun Lian to have Old Demon Rakshasa as his backing. It is no wonder he dares to act that arrogantly and willfully slaughters the innocent.”

Even though the confrontation between Chu Feng and Old Demon Rakshasa was equally matched for now, the crowd did not feel that Chu Feng would really be able to win against Old Demon Rakshasa.

As such, the crowd were all worried for Chu Feng, thinking that things would end disastrously.

“Emperor Taboo: Blood Prison Technique.” Old Demon Rakshasa shouted. He had actually unleashed an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

That Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was something that Hun Lian had used earlier. It was extremely powerful, and could be said to be the strongest attack Hun Lian possessed.



Being unleashed by Old Demon Rakshasa, the might of the Emperor Taboo: Blood Prison Technique was many times more powerful than when Hun Lian had unleashed it.

Not mentioning the difference in cultivation, and merely in terms of mastery of the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, if Hun Lian had grasped sixty percent mastery, then this Old Demon Rakshasa had grasped absolute mastery.

Crimson martial power sealed off heaven and earth. It was as if this place had turned into hell, that Old Demon Rakshasa was the one who had power over the lives and deaths of the people here.

Panic and unease filled everyone's heart. At that moment, the people that decided to stay behind to observe the battle began to regret their decision.

The reason for that was because they all felt life threatening danger from that martial skill.

Old Demon Rakshasa didn't seem to only be planning to kill Chu Feng. Rather, it seemed that he planned to use that martial skill to slaughter everyone here.

“Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation!!!”

Right at the moment when the crowd felt that the situation was bad, Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, he shot forth a punch. Immediately, the sky crumbled, and the crimson fog that had covered the region was beaten back.

Old Demon Rakshasa's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill had been defeated by a single punch from Chu Feng.

“So powerful!”

“Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation, is that the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng used?”

“What a powerful martial skill. Although it does not give off the appearance of being capable of shaking the heaven and earth, its

might was powerful enough to disperse Old Demon Rakshasa's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. It is truly powerful."

"In that case, Chu Feng, he... is truly able to contend against Old Demon Rakshasa?!"

Seeing that Chu Feng had managed to successfully beat back Old Demon Rakshasa's Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, the bystanders were extremely delighted, and began to praise Chu Feng repeatedly.

Originally, they all felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to contend against Old Demon Rakshasa. However now, they had changed their opinion.

"You actually managed to destroy my Emperor Taboo: Blood Prison Technique? It would seem that you have some abilities."

"I must admit that you are a rare genius."

"Your talent has surpassed my disciple's."

At that moment, the gaze that Old Demon Rakshasa looked to Chu Feng with had changed. He actually revealed an admiring gaze.

After fighting against Chu Feng, he had no choice but to admit that Chu Feng was extremely talented. It was unrelated to his cultivation. Rather, it was purely his talent for martial cultivation and comprehension for martial techniques.

Else, even if the grand slaughtering formation was capable of helping Chu Feng increase his cultivation, if Chu Feng himself did not possess actual abilities, it would be impossible for him to contend against Old Demon Rakshasa.

"Old Demon Rakshasa actually gave Chu Feng such an evaluation?!"

"It would seem that Chu Feng's talent is truly superb. He is most definitely the peak genius of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary

Realm.”

Once Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, the crowd burst into an uproar again. The reason for that was because Old Demon Rakshasa was someone who very rarely praised others. Moreover, he was praising Chu Feng, his opponent.

At that moment when a majority of the people revealed joyous expressions from Old Demon Rakshasa’s praise of Chu Feng, the expression of Old Demon Rakshasa’s disciple, Hun Lian, turned very ugly.

Being extremely conceited, he never felt that he was inferior to Chu Feng in any aspect. This was especially true after he discovered that Chu Feng had increased his cultivation with a grand formation, and Chu Feng’s actual strength was inferior to his own; Hun Lian had felt even more certain that Chu Feng was inferior to him.

Yet, at that moment, his master had actually personally declared that Chu Feng’s talent surpassed his own. As such, how could he possibly be able to tolerate that?!

“Unfortunately, killing a genius like you is what this old man is most fond of doing,” Soon, the corners of Old Demon Rakshasa’s lips were raised into a strange and cold smile.

As he spoke, Old Demon Rakshasa flipped his palm and took out an Ancestral Armament.

That’s right, what he took out was an actual Ancestral Armament. It was an axe, a dark black axe that emitted a strange crimson gaseous substance. It was as if the axe was telling everyone that it had killed countless people.

“Ancestral Armament, Purgatory Demon Axe!!!”

“That is Old Demon Rakshasa’s Ancestral Armament, the Purgatory Demon Axe!!!”

Upon seeing that axe, cries of alarm sounded from the crowd

again. From their reaction, Chu Feng was able to tell that Old Demon Rakshasa's Ancestral Armament was as renowned as Old Demon Rakshasa himself.

“Old Demon Rakshasa, an existence whom countless experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could do nothing about, was actually forced to unleash his Ancestral Armament by Chu Feng, a member of the younger generation?”

“Exactly what sort of grand formation did Chu Feng grasp? Exactly how talented is he?”

“It seems that Chu Feng's grandness has already surpassed our imagination.”

“The battle today is truly marvelous. We have not stayed to watch this battle with our lives on the line in vain.”

“Chu Feng, fight on! If you are able to kill that demon, you will become the number one genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. No one will be able to be mentioned alongside you.”

With Old Demon Rakshasa unleashing his Ancestral Armament, the crowd, instead of becoming afraid, grew more excited.

The reason for that was because this indirectly displayed that Old Demon Rakshasa would not be able to defeat Chu Feng if he did not use his Ancestral Armament. This once again displayed how powerful Chu Feng was. As matters stood, the people present all wished for Chu Feng to win.

Being so overwhelmingly excited, the crowd were even willing to sacrifice themselves and stay here to continue watching this battle.

The reason for that was because they wanted to witness this member of the younger generation, Chu Feng, defeat Old Demon Rakshasa.

They wanted to witness the occurrence of an impossibility.

They wanted to witness the birth of a miracle.

# Chapter 2329 – Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill

---

“How could that guy Chu Feng be so abnormally powerful?”

At that moment when everyone was filled with excitement and cheering for Chu Feng’s greatness, Kou Kang had an expression of displeasure.

He braved the risk of possible death to stay here not because he wanted to witness a miracle. Rather, he wanted to witness Chu Feng meet a violent death. Only then could he alleviate the hatred in his heart.

However, what was with this situation right now? It was one thing for Chu Feng to be able to defeat Hun Lian. After all, he had grasped an extremely powerful spirit formation.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was capable of fighting against even the renowned Old Demon Rakshasa. This was something that Kou Kang felt truly unable to accept.

Exactly what sort of spirit formation was capable of contending against Old Demon Rakshasa?

One must know that Old Demon Rakshasa was one of the peak experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He was a truly grand character.

Not to mention a mere person from the younger generation, even existences like the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master and the Three Stars Hall’s headmaster would be inferior by an entire level when placed before Old Demon Rakshasa.

Logically, Old Demon Rakshasa should be an existence that people from the younger generation were unable to reach. To them, he should be someone akin to god.

However, it was precisely an existence like him who was

currently locked in a hard battle with Chu Feng. As such, Kou Kang was truly incapable of accepting it.

After all, the more powerful Chu Feng was, the weaker he would be by comparison. When the gap between them was this enormous, it would only make Kou Kang feel even more petty and low, making him feel as if he were a clown.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ancestral Armament Old Demon Rakshasa held in his hand started to tremble slightly. Then, a burst of boundless oppressive might was emitted from it. Once that oppressive might was emitted, heaven and earth started to tremble violently.

An enormous commotion was happening at that moment. Even though the people present were all martial cultivators, and many among them were experts, practically everyone apart from Chu Feng was swaying left and right, unable to stand firm. Furthermore, they had lost their ability to fly in the sky.

At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa’s battle power increased enormously. It was clear how mighty an Ancestral Armament was.

“Sssss~~~”

When sensing the might of an Ancestral Armament for themselves, many of the people present were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air. Furthermore, for people like Xu Yiyi, they revealed worried expressions, and began to sweat cold bullets for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because a sudden thought came to their minds. While Old Demon Rakshasa had used his Ancestral Armament to increase his battle power, Chu Feng most likely did not possess an Ancestral Armament. After all, Chu Feng’s actual cultivation was that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. With that level of cultivation, it would be impossible for him to subdue an

actual Ancestral Armament.

Judging it like that, it would likely be very difficult for Chu Feng to defeat Old Demon Rakshasa. After all, the might of an Ancestral Armament was not something that an Incomplete Ancestral Armament could match up to. The gap between them was no small matter.

Thus, at that time, the crowd all began to feel that they were celebrating too early, and had underestimated Old Demon Rakshasa's true strength.

‘Hehe, Chu Feng, you’re going to panic now, no?’

When everyone else was worried for Chu Feng, Kou Kang was so overjoyed that flowers blossomed in his heart.

The reason for that was because he also felt the might of that Ancestral Armament. It was indeed extremely frightening. Thus, he felt that Chu Feng, who did not possess an Ancestral Armament, would likely not be a match for Old Demon Rakshasa.

Thus, as Kou Kan was taking joy in Chu Feng's calamity, he turned his gaze to Chu Feng's face. He wanted to personally see Chu Feng's ugly expression.

“This guy,” However, upon looking at Chu Feng's face, Kou Kang's heart that had just bloomed with joy was immediately frozen.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not have the slightest trace of panic on his face. On the contrary, there was a slight smile on his face. It was a calm smile.

“Did you really think that you would be able to defeat me just because you’ve unleashed your Ancestral Armament?” Chu Feng looked at Old Demon Rakshasa and spoke dully.

Although the appearance of the Ancestral Armament brought forth surging might and greatly increased Old Demon Rakshasa's battle power, Chu Feng was still as confident as ever, as he had



grasped the grand slaughtering formation.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng had gained control over the grand slaughtering formation, he was most certain of how frightening the power he held was. Thus, he knew that Old Demon Rakshasa would not be able to defeat him even after unleashing his Ancestral Armament.

“I have a feeling that the grand formation you have grasped is extremely powerful. Likely, even after using my Purgatory Demon Axe, I will still not be able to kill you.”

“However, Chu Feng, I dare to guarantee that what I will use later is enough to consign you to eternal damnation.”

Once Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, his eyes turned crimson in color. Following that, a burst of boundless oppressive might instantly enveloped this region.

When that oppressive might appeared, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. A life threatening sensation that he had never felt before appeared in his heart.

“This sort of sensation, it’s a martial skill. But... this is most definitely not an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. Could it be that he is unleashing an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill?”

At that moment, Chu Feng was frowning deeply. He had already realized that the technique Old Demon Rakshasa was going to unleash would most definitely be something surpassing Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

As for what would surpass Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, it would naturally be an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

... a martial skill that not even Martial Ancestors would be able to control!!!

“This, this sort of sensation? Could it be?!!!”

When even Chu Feng started to panic, the surrounding crowd were panicking even more. In fact, many people revealed dejected expressions.

They had all realized that the Old Demon Rakshasa's next attack would be extremely frightening.

"This here is this old man's strongest killing technique, Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.... Ancestral Taboo: Soul Killing Formation!" Old Demon Rakshasa said.

"Ancestral Taboo: Soul Killing Formation? Sure enough, it's the Ancestral Taboo: Soul Killing Formation. It would appear that the legend is true, the legend is true!!!"

At that moment, from among the bystanders, an extremely aged old man cried out in alarm. An indescribable sensation of fear filled his face. It was as if he was seeing death itself.

"Senior, could it be that this spirit formation is an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill?" Many people began to question that old man. After all, this matter was extremely important. Furthermore, as that old man was a person with a certain amount of status, the crowd were quite trusting of his words.

"You all, do you know about Half Step True Immortal of the Northsouth Immortal Sea?" The old man asked.

"Of course. Half Step True Immortal was an extremely renowned individual. Reportedly, he was only half a step away from becoming a True Immortal. Back then, he was one of the most renowned experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," The crowd replied.

"Then, do you all know how the Half Step True Immortal died?" The old man asked.

"Died? How could he have died? Didn't the Half Step True Immortal enter closed door training?" Many people asked.

At the moment when the crowd was puzzled, a youngster

suddenly said, “I’ve heard from our ancestor that the Half Step True Immortal seemed to have been killed by Old Demon Rakshasa.”

“That’s right, there was indeed such a rumor,” The old man said.

“What? Old Demon Rakshasa killed Half Step True Immortal? How could that be?”

“That’s right. Wasn’t the Half Step True Immortal the one who had been chasing after Old Demon Rakshasa to kill him the entire time? Didn’t Old Demon Rakshasa run all over the place to escape from him? How could he be killed by Old Demon Rakshasa?” Someone felt that to be unbelievable.

Although Half Step True Immortal did not belong to any power, he was a person renowned for righteousness, someone who would consider the people of the world. That was the reason why Half Step True Immortal was that renowned and respected by the people.

Back then, due to the fact that Old Demon Rakshasa had done an enormous amount of evil, Half Step True Immortal made a firm resolution to eliminate Old Demon Rakshasa. He announced the fact that he would chase after Old Demon Rakshasa until he was killed.

As for Old Demon Rakshasa, although he was powerful, Half Step True Immortal was even more powerful. Although both of them were peak Martial Ancestors, Old Demon Rakshasa was miserably hunted by Half Step True Immortal.

In fact, during the period of time when Old Demon Rakshasa disappeared, there were people who felt that he had been killed by Half Step True Immortal.

Even though Half Step True Immortal had disappeared, there were not a lot of people that felt that he had died. Instead, they felt that he had entered closed door training. After all, that was the

way Half Step True Immortal did things.

Yet now, it was declared that Half Step True Immortal was killed by Old Demon Rakshasa. This caused the crowd to feel enormous disbelief. They were unable to accept it.

“There is a rumor stating that Half Step True Immortal had finally managed to catch Old Demon Rakshasa after chasing after him for all that time. However, Half Step True Immortal, who had held absolute superiority over Old Demon Rakshasa the whole time, was instead killed by Old Demon Rakshasa.”

“As for the reason why Old Demon Rakshasa was able to kill Half Step True Immortal, it was because he had managed to learn the Ancestral Martial Skill that was very difficult for Martial Ancestors to grasp,” The old man said.

# Chapter 2330 – Kneel And Beg For Forgiveness

---

“In that case, the legend is true, and Half Step True Immortal was killed by Old Demon Rakshasa?” Upon hearing what that old man said, the people present were even more astonished. However, they were still somewhat skeptical.

Thus, the crowd all turned their gazes to Old Demon Rakshasa. The reason for that was because the answer to their question was something only Old Demon Rakshasa could give. After all, Old Demon Rakshasa was one of the main characters in that matter.

When they turned to look at Old Demon Rakshasa, the crowd were surprised to discover that he did not have the intention to immediately attack them. Instead, he appeared as if he was deliberately allowing that old man to finish telling his story.

“That is indeed what happened.”

“That Half Step True Immortal was too conceited. He thought that just because we were both peak Martial Ancestors that he would absolutely defeat me.”

“Unfortunately for him, I had already successfully learned the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Thus, Half Step True Immortal was already no match for me a hundred years before that.”

Sure enough, faced with the gazes from the crowd that were longing for an answer, Old Demon Rakshasa revealed a complacent smile on his face.

As he spoke, he flashed his palm over his Cosmos Sack. Then, a silver sword appeared in his hand.

Once that silver sword appeared, another burst of enormous power was emitted. It was actually another Ancestral Armament.

“Heavens! Isn’t that... Half Step True Immortal’s Ancestral

Armament, the Demon Subduing Silver Serpent Sword?”

“Old Demon Rakshasa actually really managed to kill Half Step True Immortal! Lord Half Step True Immortal is dead!!!”

If it was only the declaration from the Old Demon Rakshasa, then many people would feel disbelief. However, when they saw the Old Demon Rakshasa revealing the Half Step True Immortal’s Ancestral Armament, practically everyone believed that he had killed Half Step True Immortal.

After all, that was Half Step True Immortal’s Ancestral Armament, his treasure that he would always carry with him. Unless he was dead, it would be impossible for that Ancestral Armament to leave him, much less be in Old Demon Rakshasa’s hands.

When thinking that Half Step True Immortal had died, many people revealed expressions of sorrow. After all, Half Step True Immortal was one of the few people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm willing to uphold justice for the people.

At the same time that the crowd were feeling sorrow, they were once again overwhelmed with unease and fear. If even the renowned Half Step True Immortal was defeated by the Old Demon Rakshasa, it would likely be difficult for Chu Feng to defeat Old Demon Rakshasa today too.

After all, Half Step True Immortal was deemed to be the number one expert underneath the True Immortal realm in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

When even he was no match for Old Demon Rakshasa, it was likely no one below the True Immortal realm would be a match for Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Haha...” Sensing the unease and fear in the eyes of the crowd, Old Demon Rakshasa laughed coldly.

Suddenly, Old Demon Rakshasa said indifferently, “I’ve changed

my mind. Right now, as long as you all are willing to kneel before me, acknowledge your mistakes and then shout loudly that Half Step True Immortal deserved his death, I will spare your lives.”

“Really?” Once the Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, someone immediately questioned.

At the same time, the eyes of many people bloomed with light. It was as if they found a ray of light to survive in certain doom.

“Of course. I am always one to keep my word,” Old Demon Rakshasa said with a strange smile.

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

Once Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, there were immediately people that kneeled onto the ground. Furthermore, their number began to grow more and more.

In response, Chu Feng hurriedly said, “Everyone, do not kneel to such a despicable person. I, Chu Feng, am able to guarantee that you all will not die.”

“What? You can guarantee that we will not die? You are but a mere rank five Half Martial Ancestor, what makes you think that you will be able to guarantee our lives?! If it wasn’t for the fact that you possessed that spirit formation, then not only would you not be able to match Lord Rakshasha, even Hun Lian would be able to kill you many times over!” Someone said.

“Everyone, please trust me,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, shut your mouth! The reason why we are trapped in such danger today is all because of you! We merely wish to survive right now, yet you still want to bring harm upon us? Are you even capable of being considered human?!”

A voice filled with complaint was heard. Turning toward the

source, it was actually Kou Kang.

At that moment, Kou Kang was already kneeling on the ground. Not only was he determined to beg for forgiveness, he even began to publicly denounce Chu Feng.

“That’s right, it is all because of you that we ended up in this state!”

After being incited by Kou Kang, more and more people actually began to denounce Chu Feng. At the same time, more and more people began to kneel and beg for forgiveness.

“Half Step True Immortal decided to meddle in another’s business of his own accord. His death was well-deserved.”

“As for that Chu Feng, he dares to go against Lord Rakshasa. His crimes cannot be forgiven.”

“However, we are innocent people. Lord Rakshasa, please distinguish right from wrong and spare our lives. We will definitely spread the news of Half Step True Immortal dying to you to the rest of the world.”

At that moment, over half of the people present had already kneeled on the ground. For the sake of survival, they began to speak words against their convictions.

Faced with this sort of situation, Old Demon Rakshasa started to grin from ear to ear. He looked to the people that had yet to kneel and said, “Are you all truly not afraid of death?”

“We know very well who is in the right and who is in the wrong. Half Step True Immortal was our respected senior. As for Chu Feng, he too fought for righteousness today. We will not say words against our convictions for the sake of survival,” Xu Yiyi spoke loudly.

Following that, the others that had not kneeled also voiced their positions.



Merely, at that moment, the great majority of the people that had not knelt were people from the older generation. Those from the younger generation like Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were very few in number.

“Very well. Since you all insist on dying, I will help you all accomplish your aim today.”

As Old Demon Rakshasa spoke, the crimson gaseous substance in their surroundings grew even more concentrated. Following that, wave upon wave of heart-tearing and lung-splitting terrifying screams could be heard.

Those were no ordinary screams. Rather, they were the screams of infants. Their voices were so miserable that everyone felt heartbroken upon hearing them.

Furthermore, those screams were sounding from the bloody fog. It was as if there were countless infants wailing miserably in the bloody fog.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke, “Old Demon Rakshasa, I have a question for you.”

“Go ahead and ask,” Old Demon Rakshasa said.

“Are you part of the Infant Soul Sect? Did you manage to grasp this Ancestral Martial Skill using the souls of infants?” Chu Feng asked loudly.

“I truly never would’ve expected that you would know about the Infant Soul Sect,” Old Demon Rakshasa revealed a surprised expression upon hearing Chu Feng’s question.

However, his surprise flashed past very quickly. Soon, a complacent smile appeared on his face. He said to Chu Feng, “You are correct. This old man is one of the Infant Soul Sect’s management elders. As for this Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill of mine, it is also something that I managed to successfully grasp through refining the souls of infants.”

“However, Chu Feng, even if you knew about all this, what exactly could you do about it?” After Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, his smile became even denser.

“Infant Soul Sect? What is that?” At this moment, Xu Yiyi and the others revealed a confused expression. The reason for that was because they had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect.

“The Infant Soul Sect is a hidden demonic sect in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Reportedly, the people of the Infant Soul Sect will kill newborn infants to train their demonic techniques.”

“Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills are extremely difficult for ordinary Martial Ancestors to learn. The reason why that Old Demon Rakshasa was able to learn an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill is because the one he learned was not an ordinary Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Rather, it is a demonic technique.”

“Likely, for the sake of successfully learning that demonic technique, he has murdered countless newborn infants.”

“Those infants are truly pitiful. They had just been born into this world, but before they could even have a chance to open their eyes and properly enjoy this flourishing world, they were miserably killed by him and turned into sacrificial victims for others to increase their strength,” Chu Feng explained to the crowd.

# Chapter 2331 – Righteousness And Evil

---

“I have also heard of the Infant Soul Sect before. Never would I have imagined that it actually really exists” At that moment, some of the elderly individuals began to voice that they had heard of the Infant Soul Sect.

“Truly despicable! How could a powerful sect that hideous exist in this world? They actually use the souls of infants to increase their cultivation!?”

“Your crimes are simply unforgivable!!!” After finding out about the origin of the Infant Soul Sect, those people that had not kneeled to Old Demon Rakshasa began to lash out at him without holding anything back.

After all, they have already prepared themselves for death. When not even death was scary to them anymore, there would not be anything else that could scare them. As such, they would naturally be daring enough to say whatever they wanted.

In fact, even the people that had kneeled started to waver slightly. After all, the action of using the souls of infants to increase one’s cultivation was truly capable of causing one’s hair to rise in anger.

“Hahaha. The world of martial cultivators is a world where the weak are prey to the strong. Cruel? What a bunch of nonsense! Are you all implying that you have never killed people weaker than you all?”

“If our conduct and deeds are cruel, then which one of you all are not cruel individuals yourselves?” Old Demon Rakshasa said coldly.

“That’s right. What Lord Rakshasa says is completely justified,” Kou Kang said in a flattering manner. Many others began to follow Kou Kang, and started to flatter Old Demon Rakshasa by declaring

that he was in the right.

“Kou Kang, never would I have imagined that you would speak on behalf of scum, and would commit all imaginable misdeeds like him just so that you can live. You are simply unworthy of being our Three Stars Hall’s disciple!”

“I feel ashamed to be a fellow disciple of yours!” Song Biyu reprimanded with a cold voice.

“Junior sister, I do not feel that what Lord Rakshasa said to be wrong. After all, everyone here has most definitely killed people before. As for those that they could kill, those people were most definitely inferior to them. When they are inferior, it would mean that they were weak individuals.”

“The weak are prey to the strong. That is the ironclad rule of the world of martial cultivators. Yet, there are people like Chu Feng who insist on distinguishing righteousness and evil. It is people like that that are shameless!” Kou Kang spoke loudly.

Hearing what Kou Kang said, many people began to waver. It was as Kou Kang had said, practically everyone present had killed before. Furthermore, all those that they were capable of killing were individuals weaker than themselves. That verified the principle of the weak being prey to the strong.

“Haha, brat, your name is Kou Kang? You’re a disciple of the Three Stars Hall?” At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa turned to question Kou Kang.

“Lord Rakshasa, this Kou Kang is indeed a disciple of the Three Stars Hall. However, this junior does not approve of the so-called doctrine of righteousness the Three Stars Hall holds to.”

“Furthermore, this junior has wholly opposed how the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley wanting to join hands to support Chu Feng,” Kou Kang spoke with an extremely respectful tone and a very amiable attitude. He simply did not resemble

someone speaking with a grand evildoer. Rather, it was more like he was speaking to his senior.

“Then, tell me, why did you decide to oppose it?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked.

“That’s because I feel that to pay with one’s life for killing another, to return a debt if one owes another, is heaven’s law and earth’s principle.”

“Since Chu Feng killed someone from the Ying Heavenly Clan, it is only reasonable for the Ying Heavenly Clan to want to obtain revenge by killing him.”

“However, the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley insist on saying that Ying Liangchen deserved to die, that Chu Feng was only carrying out justice. That is something this junior does not approve of. I feel that their arguments are nothing more than sophistry,” Kou Kang continued.

“Very good. I highly appreciate your argument. If I were to tell you that our Infant Soul Sect would welcome you, are you willing to cast away your status as a disciple of the Three Stars Hall to join our Infant Soul Sect?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked.

“Lord Rakshasa, truth be told, this junior was unable to accept the manner of conduct of the Three Stars Hall to begin with. If Lord Rakshasa is truly willing to offer shelter to this junior, this junior is more than willing,” Kou Kang was wild with joy.

He knew very well that he no longer possessed the means to continue staying in the Three Stars Hall. For Old Demon Rakshasa to be willing to offer him shelter, it would naturally be the best course of action for him.

“Very well. From this point onward, you are a disciple of our Infant Soul Sect,” Old Demon Rakshasa said.

“For the sake of your survival, you actually wagged your tail to a demonic sect and begged for pity. It is truly a pity for the Three

Stars Hall to have raised a disciple like him,” At that moment, that extremely aged old man shook his head and sighed.

“Pity? It is the honor of the Three Stars Hall to be able to raise a disciple like me!”

“I dare ask everyone, is what I said incorrect? What is righteousness? What is evil? What is right and what is wrong?”

“What you all view to be right is what your opponents view to be wrong.”

“What your opponents view to be wrong is what you all view to be right.”

“Exactly who is right and who is wrong, who could possibly distinguish that?”

“Only the powerful experts possess the authority to decide right and wrong. Those that are weak simply do not possess the qualifications to decide at all!” Kou Kang spoke with righteousness.

“That’s right. Right and wrong is something that is truly difficult to determine. However, the weak being prey to the strong is indeed the ironclad rule of the world of martial cultivation.”

“That’s right. I feel that what Kou Kang says is very reasonable. After all, there is no such thing as right and wrong in the world of martial cultivators. The person with the greater strength and harder fist is the person that is right.”

More and more people began to voice their agreement with what Kou Kang said.

“Hahaha...” Right at that moment, Chu Feng burst into cold laughter.

“Chu Feng, what are you laughing about? Are you trying to imply that what I said is incorrect?” Kou Kang asked with a cold voice.

“Kou Kang, everyone possesses the same sort of awareness in their heart. For certain things, we all know very well what is right

and what is wrong.”

“If you insist on spouting sophistry here and twisting the truth, I do not have the time to bother debating you.”

“The reason for that is because I know that it is impossible to wake up a person who is pretending to be asleep.”

“However, if you all truly believe that newborn infants being killed and then used as cultivation resource by others is how things are supposed to be, that they have died deservedly, then I could only say that people like you all are no different from those that kill newborn infants and openly slaughter innocents. For people like you all, allowing you to continue to live will only be a waste,” Chu Feng spoke coldly. His tone contained a faint trace of his anger.

“My, what arrogant words you speak. The people that are going to die right now are you all!” Kou Kang mocked.

However, Chu Feng ignored Kou Kang. Instead, he turned his gaze to the crowd kneeling on the floor.

With a loud voice, he said, “I will ask you all this once. Is there anyone else like Kou Kang among you, is there anyone else that feels newborn infants being killed and refined like cultivation resources deserve their deaths?”

Once Chu Feng said those words, not to mention the people that had not kneeled, even those that had kneeled started to hesitate.

After all, everyone knew that newborn infants would not have provoked anyone. Regardless of why they were killed, they would be innocent. No matter how enormous of a hatred there might be, one shouldn’t implicate the children, much less when there wasn’t any hatred or grievance.

However, even though everyone knew that it was wrong for the Infant Soul Sect to kill and refine the souls of newborn infants, for the sake of their survival, many people still declared that those

newborn infants deserved their deaths.

“Very well.” Upon hearing the responses from those people, Chu Feng’s gaze grew even more ice-cold. However, he did not unleash any killing intent. Instead, he said, “I will not kill you all. However, what you all have done today is something that everyone here has seen.”

“Regardless of whether you all might be individuals that sold your dignity to survive, or those who truly felt that newborn infants deserve to die, you all will be met with disdain by others in the future.”

“What a joke! You act as if you would truly be able to kill us if you wished it. Chu Feng, don’t you deceive others to deceive yourself. Right now, it is not us who will die. Rather, it is you!” Kou Kang declared.

“Is that so? Are you certain?” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, a boundless power suddenly appeared and filled the entire region.

After that power appeared, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously.

That power was so strong that it actually managed to forcibly suppress Old Demon Rakshasa’s Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. This made everyone realize that the might of that power was stronger than Old Demon Rakshasa’s Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

Most surprisingly, that power was actually controlled by Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had truly grasped a power that surpassed Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills!



# Chapter 2332 – The Arrival Of A True Immortal

---

Although the power of the grand formation was invisible, it was surging in the shadows and giving off an extremely domineering air.

Being oppressed by the power of the grand formation, the screams and wailing from the crimson fog began to weaken. Subsequently, the might of the crimson fog also began to weaken.

If the Old Demon Rakshasa was the person who had ruled over the region earlier...

Then, his title as ruler had shifted hands now.

At that moment, Chu Feng... was the ruler of this place.

“This...”

Sensing how powerful Chu Feng was right now, Kou Kang’s complexion turned ashen as he began to shiver. The reason for that was because he had never ever anticipated that Chu Feng would really possess the strength to contend against Old Demon Rakshasa.

But, he had already made things reach such a degree, and even betrayed the Three Stars Hall. If Chu Feng were to win, it would end miserably for him.

“Lord Rakshasa, quickly, you must kill that child, kill that child,” In panic, Kou Kang began to plead for help from Old Demon Rakshasa.

The reason for that was because the only person that was capable of handling Chu Feng was the Old Demon Rakshasa. Thus, Old Demon Rakshasa could be said to be the only hope that Kou Kang possessed.

“Boy, no wonder you were that confident. It turns out this spirit

formation you've grasped is actually this powerful."

"However, it remains that this is power you obtained by relying on a spirit formation. It is nothing more than external power."

"Whereas this old man's abilities are things that I have honestly obtained through training. You wish to use external power to defeat the result of my many years of bitter training? You are simply dreaming."

"Aouu~~~"

"Roar~~~"

Once Old Demon Rakshasa said those words, the two Ancestral Armaments he held in his hands gave off ear-piercing snarls. Then, the might of his Ancestral Armaments and the Old Demon Rakshasa's aura began to rise.

That Ancestral Armament of his that was originally being suppressed by Chu Feng once again let out a frightening power. It actually began to be able to contend against Chu Feng's grand formation.

Then, many crimson souls appeared from the crimson fog. Those souls grew more and more numerous. In merely a short moment, their number reached several tens of thousands. Like an army composed of evil spirits, they stared at Chu Feng.

"How would we know who is stronger and who is weaker without trying it out?"

Chu Feng remained completely confident. As he spoke, he clasped his palms together. Then, he pointed at Old Demon Rakshasa.

"Clank~~~"

At that moment, heaven and earth started to shake. It was because of a visible silver ray. It was that grand formation's power.

The power of the grand formation took visible form and

condensed into an enormous sword.

The sword was floating across the sky. It looked extremely majestic. It was as if it was capable of penetrating through everything, and possessed the desire to kill evil monsters.

“Damn it!”

Upon seeing that enormous sword floating in the air, Old Demon Rakshasa’s expression immediately changed. The many thousands of souls that were eager to attack did not rush to attack Chu Feng. Instead, they became defensive, and began to gather before Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Woosh~~~”

At this moment, the enormous floating sword formed by the power of the grand formation turned into a ray of light and began to pierce toward Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Boom~~~”

Following a loud explosion, wave upon wave of violent energy ripples began to sweep out in all directions.

Facing the energy ripples, not to mention the experts from the younger generation, even those from the older generation started to frown.

“How powerful must that be for it to give rise to energy ripples this frightening?”

“Presumably, this must be the strongest power beneath the True Immortal realm?” At that moment, the crowd was filled with endless astonishment.

Witnessing all of this with their own eyes, they knew very well how frightening that power was.

Fortunately, Chu Feng had intentionally controlled it, restricting the energy ripples from spreading. Otherwise... the energy ripples would be sufficient to devour a radius of several thousands of

miles, killing everyone present.

The crowd also realized that it was Chu Feng that was protecting them. Thus, they involuntarily turned to look at the sky and toward the surging energy ripples. Traces of worry appeared in their eyes.

Many of the people present hoped that Chu Feng would be able to survive.

However, there were also people that wanted the person who won in this battle to be Old Demon Rakshasa. One such individual would be Kou Kang.

“Cough, cough, cough...”

Right at that moment, from within the surging energy ripples came coughing and panting sounds.

Upon hearing that voice, Kou Kang’s nerves immediately tensed up.

He had managed to tell that it was Old Demon Rakshasa’s voice. At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa’s voice was actually very weak. It made him feel that Old Demon Rakshasa was currently at a disadvantage.

“Impossible! This is impossible! How could Old Demon Rakshasa lose to Chu Feng?!”

“I must be overthinking it. That’s right, I must be overthinking it.”

However, even though Kou Kang felt that the situation was bad in his heart, Kou Kang continued to comfort himself. He felt that even if Old Demon Rakshasa were injured, it remained that he was still alive.

However, there was no sound from Chu Feng. Perhaps Chu Feng had died. If that was the case, it would mean that Old Demon Rakshasa had won.

“W-wife, a-are you a-able to see Chu Feng?” Wang Qiang asked Zhao Hong in a very worried manner.

Once Wang Qiang said those words, Xu Yiyi, Zhao Biyu and many of the others present turned their gazes to Zhao Hong.

If Kou Kang was worried about Old Demon Rakshasa, then Wang Qiang and the others were worried that Chu Feng would be defeated.

“No,” Zhao Hong shook her head. The energy ripples were too powerful; they had surpassed the range of her perceptive ability. Even though she possessed special methods, she was also unable to see anything at that moment.

With no other option, Wang Qiang turned to the sky and shouted, “B-b-brother, a-are you still there?! If y-you’re fine, say something!”

“Huuu~~~”

Once Wang Qiang said those words, a burst of wind immediately appeared. The wind forcibly dispersed the raging energy ripples.

When the energy ripples dissipated, the crowd was overjoyed.

At that moment, not only was Chu Feng standing in the sky, he was also completely uninjured.

As for Old Demon Rakshasa, he was badly mutilated. His aura was extremely weak. Standing in the sky, he appeared to be on the verge of collapse.

“Putt~~~”

Seeing this scene, Kou Kang and the others immediately fell on their butts in shock.

The outcome of the battle had been decided. Not only was a calamity going to befall Old Demon Rakshasa and Hun Lian, they would also definitely suffer from this.

“Master,” At that moment, Hun Lian, who had been hiding

behind Old Demon Rakshasa the entire time, immediately ran out and supported him.

Being protected by Old Demon Rakshasa, Hun Lian did not receive any major injuries. However, he was also trembling in fear.

“Don’t panic,” Seemingly sensing Hun Lian’s terror, Old Demon Rakshasa waved his hand to indicate to Hun Lian not to panic.

“Chu Feng, as matters stand, I must admit that you possess some abilities.”

“Although you have borrowed the power of that grand formation, it would be impossible for you to control it if it wasn’t for your outstanding talent.”

“You are indeed a rare genius. It is the first time that this old man has met a genius like you in my lifetime.”

“However, the more it is like this, the more I cannot allow you to live,” Old Demon Rakshasa said with his weak voice.

“T-t-truly s-shameless. M-merely t-the you right now, y-you think that y-you can s-still kill my brother?” Wang Qiang said in a very mocking manner.

Suddenly, Old Demon Rakshasa half kneeled in midair and spoke in a very respectful manner. “Lord Protector, this subordinate is useless. I am unable to defeat this child. I have disgraced our Infant Soul Sect.”

“However, that child absolutely cannot be left alive. I will have to trouble Milord to personally take care of him.”

“Rakshasa, you’ve gone through a lot of trouble. You have allowed me to determine this brat’s strength.”

Right at that moment, a soft voice suddenly sounded from beside Old Demon Rakshasa. Following that, a figure appeared beside Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Oh no!”

Upon seeing this person, Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang and the others all started to frown. They shouted ‘Oh no!’ in their hearts.

The reason for that was because a boundless aura had appeared alongside that individual. It was an aura that surpassed the Martial Ancestor realm.

That person was a True Immortal-level expert.

# Chapter 2333 – Protecting One’s Dignity

---

This man was wearing a black gown. His outfit was similar to Old Demon Rakshasa’s.

However, the sensation that this man gave off was completely different from that which Old Demon Rakshasa gave off.

Old Demon Rakshasa emitted overwhelming killing intent. From a single glance, one could tell that he was not a good individual.

As for this man, not only did he have the appearance of a middle-aged man, he also appeared to be very good-natured. This was especially true for his eyes; they gave off a very amiable feeling.

However, upon seeing this person, Chu Feng’s heart began to waver up and down; he felt extremely uneasy.

Chu Feng was able to sense that it was not that this man did not possess any heinous air. Rather, the heinous air this man contained might surpass even that of Old Demon Rakshasa. Merely, he had concealed it extremely well, so well that even Chu Feng was unable to detect it.

If Old Demon Rakshasa was a hungry wolf, than this man would be a tiger in sheep’s clothing.

“Chu Feng, quickly, run away.”

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ear. Her voice was filled with panic.

Not only did Chu Feng sense danger, Her Lady Queen also managed to sense the danger.

Even if Chu Feng had grasped control of the grand slaughtering formation and could defeat everyone in the Martial Ancestor realm, he would not be able to defeat this man.

After all, this man was a True Immortal-level expert.

“No, I wouldn’t be able to escape.”



Chu Feng shook his head. Even though his opponent had not unleashed his True Immortal's oppressive might, he had most definitely come with ill intentions. Furthermore, he was truly powerful. His might surpassed that of everyone present.

Before this man, it was simply impossible for Chu Feng to escape. Not a single person present would be able to escape. Although he felt very unreconciled, Chu Feng was already certain that he might end up dying here.

“Hahahaha, Chu Feng, no matter how strong your spirit formation might be, it will still be impossible for you to contend against a True Immortal-level expert.”

“You bunch of fools actually decided to rely on trash like Chu Feng. Look at your stunned expressions now. You must've never expected that the Infant Soul Sect would possess a True Immortal-level expert overseeing them.”

“Right now, even if you all are to regret your decisions, it would be useless. Not to mention attacking you all, a True Immortal-level expert will be able to kill you by merely blowing air.”

Kou Kang became extremely pleased. He actually pointed at the crowd and burst into loud laughter.

At that moment, he was truly overjoyed. Originally, he had thought that Old Demon Rakshasa was the strongest individual in the Infant Soul Sect.

However, he was surprised to discover that there was actually a True Immortal-level expert overseeing things in the Infant Soul Sect.

It was a True Immortal-level expert! They were peak level existences in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Infant Soul Sect, this power that he had never heard of before, actually possessed a True Immortal-level expert overseeing them. This meant that the Infant Soul Sect possessed strength at the level

of a tier one power.

This meant that they were one of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!!!

Thinking about it, he, a disciple of a tier two power, had actually managed to become a member of a tier one power out of pure chance. Furthermore, he was chosen by an existence like Old Demon Rakshasa. It would not be excessive to say that he had reached instant success.

At that moment, Kou Kang truly felt more and more overjoyed the more he thought about it. He felt that he was extremely quick-witted.

He felt that his decision to renounce the Three Stars Hall and join the Infant Soul Sect was the smartest decision he had ever made in his life.

“The Infant Soul Sect possesses a True Immortal-level expert overseeing it. In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they would be considered a tier one power!!!”

“You bunch of ants actually dared to overestimate your abilities to go against a power like this. You all are truly bringing about your own destruction.”

“Chu Feng, although you might be a talented genius, you are actually a beam-jumping clown. You deserve your death. No one will feel pity for you! Serves you right!!!”

After Kou Kang spoke, more and more people began to insult Chu Feng and the others that had not kneeled to Old Demon Rakshasa.

Of course, the ones that spoke to insult Chu Feng and the others were the same people who had gone against Chu Feng and declared that newborn infants deserved to die.

They were people that had already gone to the extreme, leaving no room for maneuver. Originally, they had been worried about what to do as Old Demon Rakshasa had been defeated by Chu Feng.

However, upon discovering that the Infant Soul Sect actually possessed a True Immortal-level expert overseeing it, they started to want to join the Infant Soul Sect.

For the sake of joining the Infant Soul Sect, these people would naturally spare no effort in attacking Chu Feng and the others to flatter the Infant Soul Sect and leave behind a good impression for that Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal-level expert.

As more and more people began to verbally attack Chu Feng, Kou Kang began to feel unhappy. He thought to himself that he could not allow himself to be outdone by these people.

Thus, he pointed at Chu Feng and loudly cursed, "Chu Feng, are you ashamed of yourself yet? Did you really think yourself to be extraordinary? Now you know what it means by there are people stronger than you, that there's a greater sky than the one you..."

"Shut up!!!!"

However, before Kou Kang could finish his words, a loud and resounding voice suddenly exploded from the sky.

When that voice sounded, heaven and earth started to shake, and oppressive might descended from the sky.

This oppressive might was not very powerful. However, it caused forced Kou Kang and all the others that had opened their mouths to curse at Chu Feng onto their knees.

It was that True Immortal-level expert. He did not attack Chu Feng, and instead used his oppressive might to restrict Kou Kang and the others. Although he did not kill them, he made them kneel on the ground. His behavior truly puzzled the crowd.

No one knew exactly what that Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal-level expert was thinking. Why was he not attacking Chu Feng, and instead attacking those people that were speaking for their Infant Soul Sect?

At the moment when the crowd was puzzled, he suddenly turned

to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, you’ve truly made me have a whole new level of respect for you. Our Infant Soul Sect needs a genius like you.”

“As long as you are willing to join our Infant Soul Sect, not only will I guarantee you a high position and great wealth, I will also kill all these people who have insulted you.”

“What? He actually wants to entice Chu Feng?!” Once that True Immortal said those words, the crowd were all astonished.

As for Kou Kang, who had been feeling immensely proud of himself, his expression instantly turned dejected. He finally realized the disparity between him and Chu Feng.

Even though he had renounced his dignity, betrayed his school and used all sorts of despicable means to obtain a favorable impression from the Infant Soul Sect, he was completely and utterly defeated by Chu Feng’s talent.

In fact, it was not only Kou Kang who was stunned. All those who were kneeling on the ground were stunned. At that moment, they all realized that the oppressive might that was restricting them was also a sharp sword at their necks.

As long as Chu Feng gave the word, that True Immortal-level expert would immediately kill them.

Thinking about it, they were truly sorrowful. For the sake of their own survival, they had disregarded their dignity, betrayed their schools and lied through their teeth.

However, in the end, they became a bargaining chip for the Infant Soul Sect to entice Chu Feng with.

“Lord Protector, this...” Old Demon Rakshasa opened his mouth. He seemed to want to say something.

“Quiet!” However, before he could say anything, he was shouted down by that True Immortal.

Following that, even though Old Demon Rakshasa was extremely unwilling, he no longer dared to utter another word. Instead, he swallowed down all the grievances that he wanted to voice.

“Join us, and you’ll live.”

“Refuse to join us, and you’ll die.”

“Chu Feng, is there a need for you to ponder such a simple choice?” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal-level expert said to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, accept it. A man must submit or stand tall as required. At that moment, what is most important is for you to survive,” Her Lady Queen said to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng understood all that. When one survived, there would still be hope. However, should one die, one would not have anything left.

But, even though he understood all of that, Chu Feng still firmly shook his head.

With a smile on his face, he said, “Firstly, I, Chu Feng, have pledged that I will not join any sect or school in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Furthermore, even if I did not make such a pledge, I would still absolutely not join the Infant Soul Sect.”

“The reason for that is because I, Chu Feng, will absolutely not wallow in the mire with people like you all, people that will slaughter even newborn infants!”

“Boom~~~”

Chu Feng’s words were like a sudden clap of thunder that exploded in the hearts of the crowd.

They were stunned. Practically everyone present was stunned. Not to mention Kou Kang and the others, even Xu Yiyi and the others did not expect that Chu Feng would refuse that True

Immortal-level expert.

At that moment, Xu Yiyi, those older generation's experts and even some of the people that had kneeled to Old Demon Rakshasa all began to feel admiration toward Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

They were not admiring Chu Feng's talent. Rather, they were admiring Chu Feng's courage and resolution.

After all, what Chu Feng had done was use his own life to protect his dignity and principles.

# Chapter 2334 – Sharing Both Trials And Tribulations

---

“Chu Feng, is it me that didn’t mention it clearly, or you who didn’t hear what I said clearly?”

“Or could it be that you feel that my bargaining chip is insufficient?”

“If that’s the case, as long as you are willing to join our Infant Soul Sect, I am able to help you eliminate that Ying Heavenly Clan who has ordered your arrest,” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal continued to attempt to entice Chu Feng.

Upon hearing what he said, the crowd was once again startled. After Chu Feng had clearly refused him, this True Immortal actually refused to give up. Instead, he increased the bargaining chip, and continued to attempt to entice Chu Feng. The sincerity he was showing moved even the crowd.

After all, he was a True Immortal-level expert, someone who stood at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He was an existence akin to legend. It would not be too excessive to even consider him a god.

“If you want to kill me, then go on ahead and do it. However, I have a request. This matter was caused by me. I hope that you will be willing to kill only me, and spare them,” As Chu Feng spoke, he looked to Wang Qiang and the others.

Chu Feng had made his resolution. Even when facing death, he would not change his decision.

The reason for that was because he had promised his father that he would eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. If he were to yield to the Infant Soul Sect today, it would be too humiliating.

Chu Feng felt that if he were to do something like that, he would let down his father, his grandfather and his mother. Thus, even if

he were to die, Chu Feng would still not surrender.

“This thing?”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng felt a strange transformation in his Cosmos Sack.

It was the Evil God Sword. That Incomplete Imperial Armament, the Evil God Sword was actually devouring the other weapons in his Cosmos Sack. Not only had it managed to devour and refine all of the Imperial Armaments in Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack, it did not spare even the Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.

Its speed was so quick that one would simply feel speechless.

It was as if the Evil God Sword was not a weapon, but rather a ferocious beast that devoured weapons. Before it, even Incomplete Ancestral Armaments became extremely weak.

When Chu Feng managed to react, that Evil God Sword had completely devoured and refined all of the weapons in Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack.

Following that, it began to tremble violently. It was as if it was planning to rush out from the Cosmos Sack. It was as if it was impatient to demonstrate its might.

“Never would I have expected that you would concern yourself with their lives at a time like this. Very well, even if you refuse to join our Infant Soul Sect, I will respect the fact that you are a man of character and agree to this request of yours.”

“However, since you have refused me, it means that I will have to take your life,” As that Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal spoke, his eyes started to flicker with coldness.

At that moment, black clouds began to emerge in large numbers. As they scuttled in the sky, they combined with one another and formed a frightening giant face.

Following that, that True Immortal’s unrivalled oppressive



might was completely unleashed. It was as if, with a mere thought from him, his oppressive might would massacre all living things.

“True Immortal, that is the strength of a True Immortal-level expert!!!”

Upon sensing the aura currently being emitted by the Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal-level expert, many people started to tremble involuntarily. Those with weak levels of cultivation were so frightened by his aura that they fell onto their butts, becoming unable to move.

“D-done for. We’re d-done for. W-w-wife, w-what are we to do?” Wang Qiang started to panic. He was truly panicking. The reason for that was because he was able to sense how enormously powerful that True Immortal was.

“You ask me that, but who am I to ask? I too want to know what to do,” Zhao Hong said in a displeased manner. It could be seen that Zhao Hong was also worried for Chu Feng.

“F-fuck! Even if t-there’s n-nothing that can be done, we m-must still do s-something. We c-cannot ignore m-my brother.”

As Wang Qiang spoke, he soared toward the vast oppressive might. Then, he arrived in the sky and stood before Chu Feng.

Upon seeing Wang Qiang, Chu Feng hurriedly said, “Wang Qiang, what are you doing? Quickly, get away from here!”

“Hehe. B-brother, y-you want me to l-leave? You’re l-looking down on me too much. W-what does it mean t-to be brothers? It means t-that while we m-might not be born on the s-same day of t-the same year, we can d-die on the same day of the same year.”

“To e-enjoy fortune together and u-undergo tribulations together, that i-is what it means to be brothers,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile.

“You...”

Hearing what Wang Qiang said, Chu Feng felt warmth in his heart. When Chu Feng had obtained success and recognition, there were a lot of people that wanted to curry relationships with him, but when Chu Feng encountered calamities, there were not many people who were willing to take on the calamities together with him or even die alongside him.

Wang Qiang's actions had truly moved Chu Feng.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still do not wish to have Wang Qiang die with him. Thus, he wanted to persuade Wang Qiang against it.

“Woosh~~~”

However, before Chu Feng could finish what he wanted to say, another figure flew over and arrived before him.

Turning toward that figure, Chu Feng was extremely surprised. The reason for that was because it was Zhao Hong.

“What my husband said is correct. We shall undergo trials and tribulations together. Chu Feng, don't think about being the hero alone,” Zhao Hong said with a light smile.

Like Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong had a very easy-going appearance. It was as if she had seen through life and death. Facing death, she actually did not have the slightest trace of fear on her face.

If Wang Qiang's willingness to accompany Chu Feng in death caused Chu Feng to feel warmth in his heart, then Zhao Hong's decision to accompany him in death came as a great surprise to Chu Feng.

After all, Zhao Hong was a demonic woman. The only reason why she became acquainted with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang was because she had originally wanted to eat Wang Qiang.

However, this Zhao Hong was actually able to step forward bravely during the time of Chu Feng's calamity. This truly overturned the opinion Chu Feng had of this demonic woman.

“Chu Feng, we’ll also accompany you.”

Following that, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu also flew toward Chu Feng and stood beside him.

“Little friend Chu Feng, this old man admires your character. Today, even if a calamity is to befall you, I cannot allow you to die alone.”

Following that, even some of the experts from the older generation began to fly into the sky and stand before Chu Feng.

Soon, there were several tens of figures standing beside Chu Feng.

“You all... everyone...”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart was surging with warmth. That moving sensation filled his entire body.

Although there were only several tens of people willing to die with him...

Although this number was simply unworthy of being mentioned when compared to the tens of thousands of people present.

Many of the people here were individuals that he had only just met. In fact, many among them were people that he had never spoken with before. Yet, they were willing to die with him at this sort of time. As such, how could Chu Feng not feel moved?

“This is truly what they mean by a friend in need is a friend indeed.”

“Chu Feng, you are a very charismatic person. You are truly a genius.”

“It is truly a pity to kill you,” Seeing this scene, that Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal-level expert was also somewhat moved. However, even though he had a pitiful expression, the killing intent in his eyes did not decrease in the slightest. With one word at a time, he said, “However, I will not spare you.”

“You wish to kill me? I’m afraid that you might not necessarily be able to!!!”

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng streaked his palm across his Cosmos Sack. Then, the Evil God Sword was held in his hand.

At that moment, the Evil God Sword did not appear to be peculiar in the slightest. In fact, it appeared to be inferior to even ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments. It resembled a lousy piece of wood.

However, as he held it in his hand, Chu Feng was able to sense that the Evil God Sword contained enormous power; it was unimaginably powerful. Chu Feng felt that he might really be able to fight against that True Immortal using the Evil God Sword.

Holding the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng began to walk in the air one step at a time. He walked past Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and all the others.

He was planning to use the Evil God Sword to fight against that True Immortal.

“What is that?”

“Incomplete Imperial Armament? Why is Chu feng holding an Incomplete Imperial Armament?”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd originally thought that he was going to unleash something grand. However, after they saw the Evil God Sword, they were all tongue-tied with their eyes wide open.

It was not because they were terrified by the Evil God Sword. Rather, they were startled.

The reason for that was because they were truly unable to understand why Chu Feng would take out a weapon like the Evil God Sword at such a crucial time.

“Hahaha. Chu Feng, are you trying to make me laugh? You actually want to use an Incomplete Imperial Armament to contend against the True Immortal? Have you been kicked in the head or what?”

Suddenly, a loud, ridiculing laughter was heard. It was Kou Kang. Even though Kou Kang was enveloped by that True Immortal’s oppressive might, he was still unable to contain himself from ridiculing and laughing at Chu Feng when he saw Chu Feng’s Incomplete Imperial Armament.

In fact, it was not only Kou Kang that was laughing at Chu Feng. Countless others were laughing at Chu Feng in their hearts.

After all, even if Chu Feng were to take out an Ancestral Armament at a time like this, it would still be useless.

Yet, he took out an Imperial Armament, and an Incomplete Imperial Armament on top of that.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, that True Immortal expert suddenly turned around and waved his sleeve.

He brought Old Demon Rakhasa and Hun Lian to his side. Then, his body suddenly moved, and he began to flee.

## Chapter 2335 – An Aura

---

That Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal-level expert had left. Rather than saying that he had left, it would be better said that he had escaped.

This completely stunned the crowd. The gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng became even more complicated.

Astonishment, confusion and loss filled their eyes.

What was happening?

An Incomplete Imperial Armament actually scared away a grand True Immortal?

Although that was the truth of what had happened, the crowd found it difficult to accept. After all, this was truly too baffling, too irregular, too ridiculous and too incredible.

It was only because the people present saw it with their own eyes. Else, if they were to hear about this, no one would be willing to believe it.

“What’s happening? Could it be that he sensed the power of my Evil God Sword?”

“But I have clearly not unleashed the power of the Evil God Sword yet.”

At that moment, it was not only the crowd that was puzzled, Chu Feng was also very puzzled. Even though his Evil God Sword was very powerful right now, it was something that only Chu Feng felt. For others, they would simply not be able to determine or sense the power it contained.

“B-brother, e-exactly what did you do?” Wang Qiang and the others all looked to Chu Feng with bewildered expressions.

“It might be because of this sword,” Chu Feng had a smile on his face as he showed the Evil God Sword to the crowd. Then, he

returned it to his Cosmos Sack.

Chu Feng was not trying to cause a sensation among the crowd. Rather, he had truly felt the power contained in the Evil God Sword. That power surpassed the power of Martial Ancestors. If he were to use the sword, he would definitely bring enormous harm to himself. However, it would also allow him to fight against True Immortals. That was the truth.

The reason why Chu Feng told everyone that the Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal might have fled because of the sword was because he wanted to use this opportunity to instill deterrence in the crowd's hearts.

Chu Feng felt that he would be able to handle the people he had offended in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before. However, the Infant Soul Sect was different. They could be said to be the most dangerous existence in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, something that the Ying Heavenly Clan absolutely could not compare to.

Chu Feng had to show his ability so that the people from the Infant Soul Sect and the others that wished to bring harm upon him would feel fear toward him.

Even if he were to encounter extremely powerful individuals in the future, he wanted them to feel some restraining fear toward him. Else, with the strength that Chu Feng currently possessed, it would truly be difficult for him to survive in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, Chu Feng's true cultivation was only that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. Not to mention True Immortals, there were countless Martial Ancestors that were capable of killing him.

"It really is because of that Incomplete Imperial Armament?"

"But, how could that Incomplete Imperial Armament be able to scare away a True Immortal?" After hearing what Chu Feng said, a

huge uproar immediately occurred among the crowd.

Even without Chu Feng mentioning it, the crowd already felt that it was very possible that the Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal was scared away by Chu Feng's Incomplete Imperial Armament. Merely, they were truly confused as to exactly how that Incomplete Imperial Armament was capable of possessing such a power of deterrence.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang said, "I-I re-remember now. Chu Feng, t-that weapon of yours, i-isn't it that legendary D-Demon Armament?"

"Demon Armament?" Hearing those words, the eyes of the crowd immediately shone. The reason for that was because a Demon Armament was no small matter.

Demon Armaments could not be discussed alongside ordinary weapons. There were generally two characteristics that Demon Armaments possessed. One, they exhibited a frightening demonic nature. Two, they possessed heaven-defying might.

If the Incomplete Imperial Armament that Chu Feng possessed was truly a Demon Armament, then it truly could not be considered to be an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament.

At that moment, someone asked, "But, even if it is a Demon Armament, isn't it still only an Incomplete Imperial Armament?"

The crowd began to nod their heads toward that question. After all, a lot of famous Demon Armaments had also appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and while it was true that Demon Armaments were extremely powerful, and not something ordinary Ancestral Armaments could compare to, the key point was that those Demon Armaments themselves were Ancestral Armaments. That was why they possessed heaven-defying battle power ordinary Ancestral Armaments couldn't compare with.

However, what was with that Demon Armament Chu Feng



possessed? It was merely an Incomplete Imperial Armament. Even if it were a Demon Armament, it shouldn't be able to possess the power to scare away a grand True Immortal.

“Hahaha...” Right at the moment when the crowds' tongues were wagging, Wang Qiang let out a laughter filled with contempt. Then, he turned to the crowd and said, “T-that Demon A-Armament my b-brother possess is no o-ordinary Demon Armament. It's name is the E-Evil God Sword. It was c-created by a Demon God.”

“It c-can split a-apart the heavens a-and d-divide the earth. It is s-so mighty that it can e-extinguish all living things.”

“How could a T-True Immortal p-possibly be able to c-contend against it?”

While Wang Qiang was a stutterer, he possessed an exceptional boasting ability. It was unknown whether he was planning to boost support for Chu Feng or merely boasting, but he had boasted Chu Feng's Evil God Sword all the way to the sky.

Surprisingly, after hearing Wang Qiang's boasting, the crowd looked to one another, and many people actually began to believe his words.

After believing what Wang Qiang said, they began to have a whole new level of respect toward Chu Feng. After all, those that were capable of subduing a Demon Armament were all extraordinary individuals. As for subduing a Demon Armament like the one that Chu Feng possessed, it was even more so.

That being said, there were also many people that remained skeptical. They still felt that the Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal had left for some other reason, and not because of the Incomplete Imperial Armament Chu Feng had revealed.

.....

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal was still

rapidly flying in escape. His speed was speechlessly fast.

Not only was he flying rapidly, he would even turn around every now and then. His gaze was extremely cautious, and there was even a trace of panic in his eyes.

“Seems like he didn’t follow us.”

Finally, that Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal stopped. Although he had always been a calm individual, he actually closed his eyes and took a deep breath at that point.

Seeing that scene, Old Demon Rakshasa and Hun Lian looked to one another. Astonishment and confusion filled their eyes.

The two of them knew this Lord Protector of theirs to be a person who was not startled by anything. It was the first time that they had seen their Lord Protector reveal such a panicked expression.

Furthermore, the panic their Lord Protector revealed had never once been interrupted during their whole escape.

“Lord Protector, why are we leaving?”

Confused, Old Demon Rakshasa stepped forward to ask, “Could it be that the weapon Chu Feng took out is truly an extremely powerful treasure?”

“Weapon? That is merely an Incomplete Imperial Armament. How could it possibly be an extremely powerful treasure?” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal chuckled.

“Then, Lord Protector, why did you not kill that Chu Feng? That child is clearly set on becoming our Infant Soul Sect’s enemy. I fear that leaving him alive will be akin to nurturing a tiger that will bring about calamity,” Old Demon Rakshasa said.

“How could I not understand that? Is there even a need for you to teach me that?” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal revealed a displeased expression.

“This subordinate wouldn’t dare,” Old Demon Rakshasa

hurriedly kneeled in midair. His aged body was actually slightly trembling. From this, it could be seen that he was extremely fearful of this Lord Protector.

“Lord Protector, please quell your anger. My master absolutely did not have that intent,” In response, Hun Lian also hurriedly kneeled before the Lord Protector and began to beg for forgiveness on Old Demon Rakshasa’s behalf.

“I felt an aura earlier. The owner of that aura was able to easily erase me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal said in a profound manner.

“What? Erase you, Lord Protector? Hearing those words, Old Demon Rakshasa and Hun Lian’s expressions changed enormously.

Their Lord Protector was a True Immortal. He was a true grand character. Only a very few people in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be able to contend against him.

Yet, their Lord Protector actually said that someone was capable of erasing him, and erasing him easily on top of that. This meant that individual’s power was extremely strong.

“Could it be that the four tier one powers have, for the sake of obtaining the treasures in Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants, sent out even their strongest experts, those old monsters that have been in closed door training the entire time?” Old Demon Rakshasa said in a panicky manner.

He felt that, in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, only the four tier one powers’ old monsters were capable of causing their Lord Protector to feel this threatened.

“No, it wasn’t them. I have come across all of them before. Thus, I know what their auras feel like.”

“The aura I felt earlier was not from them,” The True Immortal shook his head.

“Lord Protector, are you saying...?” Old Demon Rakshasa’s expression changed once again. Greater shock filled his eyes.

“What I’m saying is that the aura I felt earlier was not from the four tier one powers, nor was it from the Golden Crane True Immortal. Instead, it was from someone that I have never come across before.”

“However, that person was someone who possessed strength that greatly surpassed my own,” The Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal said with a serious expression.

## Chapter 2336 – It's You?

---

“In that case, it would mean that another rank two True Immortal has appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Old Demon Rakshasa said with a face filled with astonishment. The reason for that was because this was truly no small matter.

“Rank two True Immortal? It is still impossible to determine the cultivation yet. However, that individual would be at least a rank two True Immortal,” The Lord Protector said.

“Lord Protector, doesn't this mean that our Infant Soul Sect has gotten another powerful enemy?” Hun Lian started to panic.

“It is still difficult to determine whether or not that individual is friend or a foe. The reason for that is because that person should've directly killed us and not allowed us to escape if he was a foe.”

“However, if that person is a friend, he would not have helped Chu Feng,” The Lord Protector said.

“Could it be that that individual is neutral?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked.

“Most likely, that person is someone with some sort of relationship with Chu Feng. However, with that person there, we cannot rashly do anything to Chu Feng. We must first seek Consultation on this matter with Lord Sect Master,” That Lord Protector said.

“Lord Protector, in that case, what should we do regarding the things here?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked.

“Since that individual is keeping a neutral standing, he most likely won't meddle in this. We will continue according to plan,” The Lord Protector said.

“Yes, Milord,” Old Demon Rakshasa said.

.....

Meanwhile. At the grand slaughtering formation. Chu Feng was currently surrounded by everyone. The crowd were still immersed in being overjoyed from Chu Feng scaring away that Infant Soul Sect's True Immortal.

After all, this was truly an earth-shaking battle. The crowd all felt that they had entered and exited the gates to death many times. They felt that it was all thanks to Chu Feng that they were able to survive.

Thus, those people that had not kneeled earlier, regardless of whether they were people from the younger generation or people from the older generation, regardless of which sect or school they might be from, were all expressing their thanks to Chu Feng right now.

As for those people that had knelt earlier, they did not dare to utter a word, and were filled with remorse.

“Brother Chu Feng, brother Chu Feng.”

“I was wrong, I was wrong. Please give me a chance, please help plead to my master for leniency for me .”

“I did not really want to join the Infant Soul Sect. I merely wanted to continue living. Furthermore, I still have a family. I am the hope of my family.”

Suddenly, a figure rushed over, kneeled before Chu Feng and grabbed the corner of Chu Feng's sleeve.

Turning toward that figure, it was actually Kou Kang.

At that moment, Kou Kang no longer held the overwhelming attitude he had held before. He was kneeling before Chu Feng and weeping bitter tears. His appearance was truly petty and low.

“You want me to plead on your behalf? You have truly searched for the wrong person,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. There was not the

slightest trace of sympathy in his eyes. With a wave of his sleeve, he flung Kou Kang away.

“Kou Kang, you absolute disgrace! Earlier, you slandered little friend Chu Feng. Yet now, you want little friend Chu Feng to plead for you? You have truly disgraced our Three Stars Hall!”

“No, you are no longer a part of our Three Stars Hall! You damned traitor! Our Lord Headmaster has trained you this many years in vain! You simply possess the heart of a wolf and the lungs of a dog! You are inferior to even dogs and pigs!”

A group of elders from the Three Stars Hall rushed over. Using special treasures, they trapped Kou Kang completely.

Perhaps it might be because they felt resentment in their hearts, but these elders were very ruthless. Not only did they cause enormous pain to Kou Kang, they also completely battered him.

At that moment, Kou Kang began to plead for leniency toward Song Biyu and his other junior brothers and sisters. However, Song Biyu and the others not only did not help him, they instead began to lash out against him in contempt.

It was then, that Kou Kang found himself completely isolated. His situation was truly miserable.

That being said, scenes like the one that was happening to Kou Kang were happening all over the place.

While those that had just kneeled to Old Demon Rakshasa were still relatively okay, those that had kneeled to Old Demon Rakshasa, insulted Chu Feng, spoke on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, and declared that newborn infants deserved their deaths were all facing a disastrous situation.

However, practically no one sympathized with those people that were being punished. After all, they were reaping what they had sown.

That being said, one thing was without a doubt. That was, after

today, Chu Feng would become much more renowned. After all, the people present here were from all over the world, and belonged to all kinds of different powers.

Not only had these people experienced Chu Feng's heaven-defying talent, they had also experienced Chu Feng's character.

Not only were these people going to punish people like Kou Kang that lowered their heads to the Infant Soul Sect, they were also going to help Chu Feng spread word of what happened here today to the rest of the world.

However, at that moment, whilst everyone was praising Chu Feng nonstop for his conduct and deeds, Chu Feng had already left.

It was not that Chu Feng was in a rush to enter Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. Rather, after seeing how the Ying Heavenly Clan attacked people from the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley earlier, Chu Feng was worried about leaving Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others here.

Thus, Chu Feng wanted to bring Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others to locations with experts from the Three Stars Hall or the Sunset Cloud Valley so that it would be safer for them.

It just so happened that Xu Yiyi and the others knew of a location where the experts from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were gathered at. Reportedly, Elder Ning Shuang was also there.

While Elder Ning Shaung's cultivation might not be considered extremely powerful, he was still a rank five Martial Ancestor. With a cultivation of rank five Martial Ancestor, he would be able to protect Xu Yiyi and the others.

Thus, Chu Feng planned to bring Xu Yiyi and the others to Elder Ning Shuang's location.

However, no one would've expected that the place where the



experts from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were gathered at, the place where Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others felt to be absolutely safe, had fallen into enemy hands.

It was the Ying Heavenly Clan...

The people from the Ying Heavenly Clan had trapped Elder Ning Shuang and the others. However, the strongest person among the group of people from the Ying Heavenly Clan was not a member of the Ying Heavenly Clan. Instead, it was a familiar individual.

This person not only possessed golden hair and a golden beard, he was also wearing a golden hairpiece. With his rank six Martial Ancestor-level strength, he had completely sealed off all escape for the Sunset Cloud Valley's and Three Stars Hall's experts present.

This person was none other than Daoist Gold Star.

"Daoist Gold Star, are you really going to assist the Ying Heavenly Clan against our Sunset Cloud Valley?" Blood was present on the corners of Elder Ning Shuang's mouth. He was already injured. However, sharpness remained in his eyes.

"Gold Star, you were originally our Three Stars Hall's ally. How could you instead work for our Three Stars Hall's opponent? Do you not fear retribution, do you not fear the ridicule of others for betraying us?" An elder from the Three Stars Hall said angrily.

"Betraying you? Hahahaha... Ridiculous, truly ridiculous!!!" Daoist Gold Star burst into loud laughter. Then, he said, "Back at the Sunset Cloud Valley, wasn't it your Three Stars Hall's headmaster who joined hands with the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master to beat down on me?"

"Now you all remember that you were my allies once? I'm sorry to tell you this, but our alliance has long since been broken! As for the one who broke this alliance, it was none other than you all!" Daoist Gold Star spoke in a very furious manner.

After he finished saying those words, he raised his hand. "Boom!"

Elder Ning Shuang and that elder from the Three Stars Hall were knocked several meters away.

When the two of them landed on the ground, they were covered in blood and seriously injured. They had lost the ability to continue fighting.

“Lord Elders!!!”

Seeing this scene, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall’s disciples started to panic. They wanted to rush to support Elder Ning Shuang and that other elder.

However, right after they took a couple steps forward, a burst of oppressive might descended from the sky and forced them onto their stomachs, making them unable to move in the slightest.

Naturally, that oppressive might was sent forth by Daoist Gold Star.

“Don’t worry. Today, you all will die. None of you will be able to live,” Daoist Gold Star sneered.

“Gold Star, if you feel resentment toward our Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall, you can go right ahead and kill me. However, do not harm those children. They have nothing to do with this,” Elder Ning Shuang spoke in an extremely weak voice.

“Nothing to do with this?”

“The fact that they are people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall means that this matter concerns them,” Daoist Gold Star smiled coldly.

Then, he looked to the disciples from the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley, “Remember this. It is because of Chu Feng that you all will die today. If it wasn’t for your headmaster and Valley Master breaking off their relationship with me for the sake of that Chu Feng, you all would not have had to die today.”

“Thus, even if I am to kill you all, you all must not feel hatred

toward me. Instead, you should be hating that Chu Feng.”

“It is due to that Chu Feng that you all are going to die here!!!”

After Daoist Gold Star finished saying those words, he raised his hand and unleashed surging killing intent.

At that moment, the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall all closed their eyes. Sensing the killing intent emitted by Daoist Gold Star, they knew that they would not be able to survive today.

“Daoist Gold Star, I’m afraid that I’ll have to disappoint you.”

“Today, you will not be able to kill a single person from the Three Stars Hall or the Sunset Cloud Valley.”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded.

Following that, a gentle power emerged from the sky. It cut through Daoist Gold Star’s oppressive might and set the people from the Three Stars Hall and Sunset Cloud Valley free.

This sudden scene greatly astonished Daoist Gold Star causing him to immediately look toward the direction from where the voice came from.

Upon looking, his expression changed enormously. In alarm, he cried out, “It’s you?”

# Chapter 2337 – Ruthless Character

---

“Who is it?!”

“Did someone come to save us?”

At that moment, the crowd from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were filled with questions. One by one, they raised their heads and looked toward the sky.

They all wanted to see exactly who it was that was capable of suppressing Daoist Gold Star and saving them.

“It’s him?”

Upon looking, practically everyone present was struck dumb and astonishment filled their eyes.

The reason for that was because the person who came was not someone that they had anticipated. The reason for that was because he was not an expert from the Sunset Cloud Valley or the Three Stars Hall. Instead, it was someone that was completely unexpected.

The reason for that was because the person that came to save them was none other than Chu Feng.

It was not only Chu Feng. Beside him was a crystal giant. The aura of that crystal giant was extremely powerful. No one present was able to see through its cultivation. However, without a doubt, that crystal giant possessed strength capable of suppressing Daoist Gold Star, that grand rank six Martial Ancestor.

Even though the crystal giant was the one that was suppressing Daoist Gold Star, the crowd’s focus was still placed on Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because regardless of how mighty, how powerful and how unfathomable that crystal giant might be, it appeared more like a puppet, a guard.

As for its master, it would be Chu Feng. Thus... the crowd felt

that the person that had saved them was Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you actually dare to show yourself.”

“Very well, you have come at the perfect time. You have saved me time to search for you,” Although Daoist Gold Star was astonished by Chu Feng’s appearance, he immediately gnashed his teeth furiously and revealed a sinister expression. He had completely manifested the hatred he felt towards Chu Feng.

He felt enormous resentment and hatred toward Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng, a member of the younger generation, had actually defeated him in terms of world spirit techniques. This completely ruined his reputation. As such, he could not tolerate Chu Feng.

“Daoist Gold Star, no matter what, you could be considered to be a somewhat prestigious individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Never would I have expected that you are actually such a narrow-minded and petty man,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Narrow-minded and petty? You actually dare to declare that I am narrow-minded and petty?! Do you not remember what you all did to me in the Sunset Cloud Valley?!” Daoist Gold Star said with deep resentment.

“What happened in the Sunset Cloud Valley was but a trifling matter. Yet, for the sake of that trifling matter, you have decided to join forces with the Ying Heavenly Clan to attack the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.”

“Furthermore, you were the one who was being unreasonable back then. Yet, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall did not do anything to you. However, now you want to bring about their deaths. Tell me, are you not a narrow-minded and petty man?”

“I know that the reason why you did all this is actually all because of your hatred toward me. However, since you hate me, you could very well have come and searched for me. There was no

need for you to attack the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, no? After all, they are innocent,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Enough of your bullshit. Today, all of you will die!” Daoist Goldstar was completely furious. He did not want to bother speaking rubbish with Chu Feng. With a flip of his wrist, he revealed an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Then, he pointed his weapon toward Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

“Roar~~~”

Martial power surged forth, bringing about a strong wind. A dragon-like ferocious beast appeared from the surging martial power. It opened its mouth wide and revealed its sharp fangs as it charged toward Chu Feng.

Once that beast appeared, the weather immediately changed. An unstoppable force soon engulfed the entire region.

That was no ordinary beast. Rather, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

Daoist Gold Star seemed to have realized that the crystal giant beside Chu Feng was no small matter. Thus, he did not act carelessly, and unleashed his trump card from the get-go.

After Daoist Gold Star unleashed an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill using his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the crowd from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall all grew extremely nervous.

The reason for that was because the might of that ferocious beast was truly frightening. They were all scared that Chu Feng would not be able to handle it.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, the crystal giant beside Chu

Feng slowly raised its arm. Then, it shot forth a punch.

Although that punch appeared to be powerless, it caused heaven and earth to tremble violently the moment it was shot forth. In a split second, that ferocious beast formed by the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was shattered to pieces.

“This?!!!”

At that moment, the crowd from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall discovered that they had been worrying for nothing.

Chu Feng’s crystal giant was too powerful. At the moment that crystal giant attacked, the crowd realized that no matter how strong Daoist Gold Star might be, he would not be able to injure Chu Feng in the slightest. The reason for that was because the strength of that crystal giant most definitely surpassed Daoist Gold Star.

“Why would such a powerful existence appear beside Chu Feng?”

“Exactly what sort of origin does that Chu Feng possess?”

The might of the crystal giant made the crowd realize with greater certainty that Chu Feng’s origin was no small matter. Likely, he possessed an enormous background. Else, how could such a powerful existence protect him like a bodyguard?

At that moment, in terms of feeling the most complicated, it would be none other than a disciple from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

This person was called Jiang Hao. This Jiang Hao was someone who was fond of Xu Yiyi. Due to the fact that Xu Yiyi treated Chu Feng very well, he had tried to deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng on Mount Cloud Crane, and had even thought about killing Chu Feng.

At that time, he felt that Chu Feng was only a minor character. Thus, he naturally did not take him to heart.

However, as matters stood, he now had no choice but to reevaluate Chu Feng.

In fact, he had already grown a bit scared. He had realized that Chu Feng was not a minor character. Rather, Chu Feng was a grand character that he could not afford to offend.

When recalling all the things he had done to Chu Feng back then, how could he not be scared?

“Damn it!”

Just when the crowd were pondering Chu Feng’s origin, Daoist Gold Star turned around and began to flee. At the same time, the people from the Ying Heavenly Clan also did not dare to stay any longer.

One by one, they either entered into the void, dug underground or flew into the sky. They were using all sorts of methods to escape from that place.

“Buzz~~~”

The eyes of that crystal giant flickered with a red light. Then, an invisible ripple began to spread.

“Aiyoh!”

“Heavens!”

The very next moment, regardless of whether it was Daoist Gold Star or the crowd from the Ying Heavenly Clan, they were all brought back to their original locations. Merely, at that moment, they were no longer standing. Instead they were all lying on their stomachs.

“You all wanted to escape now that you failed to kill others? Is there such an easy thing in this world?” Chu Feng looked to the crowd lying on the ground and spoke with a light smile.

“Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?!” Daoist Gold Star and the crowd from the Ying Heavenly Clan shouted in unison.



“What do I plan to do? Naturally, to kill you all,” Chu Feng said.

“You dare?!!!” Daoist Gold Star and the crowd from the Ying Heavenly Clan shouted in unison again.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed. Then, he said, “You all will come to know whether or not I dare.”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

.....

Right after Chu Feng said those words, muffled explosions began to be heard in rapid succession. As the muffled explosions resonated, Daoist Gold Star and the people from the Ying Heavenly Clan all exploded and turned into puddles of blood.

Chu Feng extended his hand and made a grabbing motion, causing Daoist Gold Star’s as well as the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clansmen’s Cosmos Sacks to all enter his grasp. He then placed them into his own Cosmos Sack.

Then, he looked down, and discovered that the reactions from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall’s elders were relatively fine. However, the disciples were somewhat scared.

They were scared not because they had not yet emerged from the time when their lives were in the hands of Daoist Gold Star. Rather, it was most likely because Chu Feng was able to so effortlessly kill Daoist Gold Star and the many people from the Ying Heavenly Clan.

After all, no matter what, those were over a thousand lives. Furthermore, many among them were people of the older generation that had cultivated for many years.

Thus, even though they all felt that those people deserved to die,

they still involuntarily began to feel reverence and fear toward Chu Feng. After all, only truly ruthless characters were capable of actually killing those people.

Without a doubt, Chu Feng had become one such ruthless character in their hearts.

The ruthlessness that he possessed was not something that they, fellow members of the younger generation, possessed.

# Chapter 2338 – The Dangerousness Of The Remnants

---

Chu Feng did not care about how the others viewed him. The reason for that was because he felt that if he had not arrived when he did, the ones that would have died would have been the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. Furthermore, if he had not possessed the protection of the crystal giant, even he would have been killed.

Chu Feng was someone who would never keep those that wanted to kill him alive.

The reason was very simple; Chu Feng felt that all those that wanted to kill him deserved to die.

“Elder Ning Shuang!!!”

“Lord Elder!!!”

Immediately afterward, several more figures flew over from the sky. They were Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others.

In fact, they had been there since long ago. Merely, they’d been hiding within the void and not showing themselves. As for the reason why no one was able to sense their existences, it was because of Zhao Hong’s abilities.

After Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu and the others landed on the ground, they joined the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

The people present began to mention to Xu Yiyi and the others the dangers that they had encountered earlier, while Xu Yiyi and the others began to mention to those people their encounter with Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect.

When the people there found out that Chu Feng had actually used a heaven-defying spirit formation to defeat the greatly

renowned Old Demon Rakshasa, and used a Demon Armament to scare away a True Immortal, the gazes with which the crowd looked at Chu Feng changed enormously.

For many of the disciples from the Three Stars Hall and the Sunset Cloud Valley, they deeply revered their parents, master or their school's headmaster.

However, at that moment, they had changed the person that they revered to Chu Feng instead.

After all, Chu Feng's conduct and deeds were something that their parents, master and even headmaster could not accomplish.

Moreover, Chu Feng was also a member of the younger generation like them. This caused them to feel greater admiration and reverence toward him than anyone else.

However, at that moment, Jiang Hao was feeling even more complicated. After all, he had been extremely excessive toward Chu Feng before, and had even wanted to kill Chu Feng.

At this moment, he was truly filled with remorse. If he knew that Chu Feng would be so powerful, even if he were to be given a hundred sets of balls, he would not dare to deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng again.

Right at the moment when Jiang Hao was worried about whether Chu Feng would retaliate against him, Chu Feng began to talk to Elder Ning Shuang, completely ignoring Jiang Hao. Chu Feng began to tell Elder Ning Shuang his purpose for being there.

"Chu Feng, you're actually planning to enter the remnants?" After finding out that Chu Feng wanted to enter the remnants, Elder Ning Shuang was deeply shocked. In fact, a dense amount of worry emerged in his eyes.

"What's wrong, could it be that you are looking down on us?" Zhao Hong said in a slightly displeased manner.

"No, this old man does not have that opinion at all," Elder Ning

Shuang knew that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were Chu Feng's friends. Thus, he did not want to offend them, and hurriedly explained with a smile on his face.

"Then what is the meaning of your astonished expression?" Zhao Hong continued to ask.

"Little friend, please don't misunderstand. I am truly not looking down on you all. Merely, the remnants are truly dangerous. It is not a place where ordinary people can explore."

"The majority of the people from our Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have retreated from the remnants already. The reason why this old man is still here is precisely because I was waiting for Yiyi and the others to come. Now that they're here, I am also planning to withdraw from this place," Elder Ning Shuang said.

"Hehe, t-to speak t-the truth, s-senior, what we f-fear the least is d-danger," Wang Qiang said with a proud expression.

"If you all really plan to continue into the remnants, this old man will not stop you all. However, it remains that our Sunset Cloud Valley's people have been into the remnants before. As such, we know a bit about the situation inside. Might you all be willing to hear me out?" Elder Ning Shuang said.

"Senior, please go ahead," Chu Feng said politely.

"As far as I know, the Immortal Sword School, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, the Zhou Heavenly Clan and the Kong Heavenly Clan, those four tier one powers, have all dispatched peak Martial Ancestor-level experts into the depths of the remnants.

"Furthermore, even a True Immortal-level expert was dispatched by Buddha's Heavenly Temple."

"Furthermore, according to the rumors, even Grandmaster Prophet, who has been withdrawn from worldly affairs for a very long time, was asked over by the Kong Heavenly Clan. Right now,

he is also in the depths of those remnants,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“Grandmaster Prophet?” Many of the people present were startled upon hearing that name. The reason for that was because they did know much about the situation in the remnants.

“Who is that Grandmaster Prophet?” Chu Feng asked curiously. From the reaction of the crowd, Chu Feng was able to tell that this Grandmaster Prophet seemed to have an extraordinary origin and was an extraordinary individual.

“Grandmaster Prophet is a godly individual in our Hundred Refinements ordinary Realm. He is able to prophesize many things. Furthermore, till this date, all of the things that he has prophesied have come true.”

“Thus, Grandmaster Prophet possesses an extraordinary status in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It is generally very difficult to request his help. Likely, the Kong Heavenly Clan has paid a great price to request Grandmaster Prophet’s assistance.”

“However, even though Grandmaster Prophet was asked over, and many experts from all around the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were inside the remnants, none of them seemed to have been able to make any leeway and gain anything from the remnants yet.”

“Furthermore, it is said that... the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s True Immortal-level expert was seriously injured in the remnants, and has been sent out of this place. As of now, it is uncertain whether that person is dead or alive,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“The True Immortal expert from Buddha’s Heavenly Temple was actually injured? Furthermore, it is uncertain whether he is dead or alive?”

“The traps and mechanisms within those remnants are actually that powerful?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

When Chu Feng had encountered the True Immortal from the Infant Soul Sect, he had experienced how powerful a True Immortal was. The fact that an expert that powerful was actually injured and might even lose his life clearly demonstrated how dangerous the remnants were.

This caused Chu Feng to have no choice but to reevaluate the dangers of the remnants.

“No, it was not caused by traps or mechanisms. Reportedly, he was injured by someone,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“What? He was injured by someone? To be able to injure a True Immortal, it would mean that the person that injured him must be a True Immortal too. Exactly who injured him?” At that moment, the crowd were all confused.

“No one knows who injured the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s True Immortal expert. The only thing we know is that that person is extremely powerful. That being said, one thing is certain. The person who injured the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s True Immortal is not a part of the four tier one powers, but rather, an unknown individual.”

“Furthermore, there was another rumor stating that the person that injured the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s True Immortal was simply not a human, but rather a humanoid monster with a body covered with long red fur,” Elder Ning Shuang said.

“Monster? A monster capable of defeating a True Immortal? Heavens! Never would I have expected the remnants to be so dangerous!”

“Elders, it is better that we leave this place quickly.”

At that moment, the crowd from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall grew more fearful toward the remnants. Many people were itching to leave the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds right away. They were afraid that a monster might

appear from the remnants and injure or kill them.

After all, True Immortals were already the strongest experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They were beings capable of calling upon the wind and summoning the rain. They were the greatest omnipotent individuals.

Yet, that monster was capable of defeating a True Immortal. Naturally, the crowd would be terror-stricken by the news of that monster.

“It would seem that these remnants are quite interesting then,” However, at the moment when the others were afraid, Zhao Hong’s lips were raised into a smile.

It was not only Zhao Hong that was smiling, Wang Qiang was also smiling.

As for Chu Feng, even though he did not reveal an expression of anticipation, there was not the slightest trace of fear on his face.

Seeing the reactions from the three of them, Elder Ning Shuang shook his head helplessly. He knew... he had said all those things in vain.

He had been trying to warn Chu Feng and the others of how dangerous the remnants were so that they would be scared and not enter them.

However, it would appear now that not only did his words not manage to scare them, he instead made them more interested.

At that moment, Elder Ning Shuang realized that one simply could not compare the mindsets of geniuses with those of ordinary people.

The courage and insight that geniuses possessed truly surpassed others.

“Chu Feng, there is no time to lose. Let’s go,” Zhao Hong said impatiently.



“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. Then, he bid farewell to Elder Ning Shuang, Xu Yiyi and the others.

After bidding his farewells, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang immediately began to proceed toward the remnants.

“Chu Feng, wait a moment.”

However, right at that moment, a figure suddenly walked out from the crowd of disciples. That person arrived before Chu Feng and stopped him.

When that person appeared, the expressions of Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang changed slightly.

The reason for that was because that person was not only someone that they knew, he was also someone that Chu Feng knew.

That person was Jiang Hao.

# Chapter 2339 – Grandmaster Prophet

---

“Jiang Hao, what are you planning on doing?” Xu Yiyi shouted at Jiang Hao in a very displeased manner.

“Jiang Hao, do not cause troubles! Step down immediately,” At the same time, Elder Ning Shuang also shouted at him with a cold voice.

Both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang had been present when Jiang Hao had deliberately made things difficult for Chu Feng.

Thus, Elder Ning Shuang and Xu Yiyi were feeling very uneasy to see Jiang Hao to step forward at a time like this. They were afraid that Jiang Hao would try to bother Chu Feng again.

After all, the relationship the Sunset Cloud Valley had with Chu Feng was extremely good now.

Even though they knew that the current Jiang Hao was already no match for Chu Feng, it remained that Jiang Hao was someone from their Sunset Cloud Valley.

Both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang were very worried that Jiang Hao would say something unpleasant to Chu Feng, and affect his opinion of their Sunset Cloud Valley.

“This...”

However, upon looking closer, the expressions of Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang changed once again.

The reason for that was because they were surprised to discover that Jiang Hao’s current expression was not that of an aggressive individual. Instead, he had a very docile appearance.

No matter how one looked at it, Jiang Hao did not appear to be wanting to cause troubles for Chu Feng.

“That Jiang Hao, he couldn’t possibly be planning to apologize to Chu Feng, right?”

“But, that shouldn’t be the case, no?”

Xu Yiyi muttered. If it were someone else, Xu Yiyi would believe that they might be planning to apologize to Chu Feng.

However, as it was Jiang Hao, she understood his character. Jiang Hao was a proud and arrogant individual. During the many years that she had known him, she had never seen him apologize to anyone.

“Chu Feng, I...” Suddenly, Jiang Hao began to speak.

“Jiang Hao, I am preoccupied with an important matter today. Let’s reminiscence another day,” However, before Jiang Hao could finish, Chu Feng smiled and patted Jiang Hao’s shoulder.

Jiang Hao had a sluggish expression from Chu Feng’s action. He seemed to not understand Chu Feng’s intention.

However, the next moment, Jiang Hao suddenly received Chu Feng’s voice transmission.

“Jiang Hao, I know what you want to say. The things of the past are things from the past. I, Chu Feng, will not look into them any further.”

Hearing those words, Jiang Hao felt as if his soul was trembling. Not only did Chu Feng manage to guess that he wanted to apologize, Chu Feng actually also forgave him.

Furthermore, for the sake of not humiliating him, Chu Feng deliberately stopped him from apologizing, and spoke to him with a voice transmission afterwards.

Regret. At that moment, Jiang Hao felt even greater regret than before. He regretted how thoughtless he had been back then to actually deliberately make things difficult for Chu Feng.

Jiang Hao remained stunned and regretful for a very long time. When he managed to finally react, he discovered that Chu Feng had already left with Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Senior brother Jiang Hao, never would I have imagined that you were actually friends with Chu Feng. Wow! I truly admire you!”

“Senior brother Jiang Hao, you are my idol!”

At this moment, the disciples from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall had surrounded Jiang Hao. The gazes with which they looked to Jiang Hao were filled with admiration and respect.

At this moment, Jiang Hao was moved. The reason for that was because he knew that it was all thanks to Chu Feng that he had obtained these disciples' adoration and respect. These people had all mistakenly thought Jiang Hao to be Chu Feng's friend. That was the reason why they were adoring and respecting him like this.

At that moment, Jiang Hao involuntarily looked at Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang.

Both Xu Yiyi and Elder Ning Shuang responded with a faint smile.

At that moment, Jiang Hao finally felt at ease.

He no longer regretted. The reason for that was because Jiang Hao had made a resolution. Even though he was only able to accomplish meager things, he had decided that he would support Chu Feng from today on.

Regardless of whether or not Chu Feng might know about it, he would refuse to allow another person to speak ill of Chu Feng before him.

The reason for that was because Jiang Hao had personally experienced Chu Feng's character. Not mentioning other things, merely Chu Feng's broad-mindedness was sufficient to make him admire Chu Feng greatly.

Chu Feng had no idea about the change in Jiang Hao's heart. At that moment, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were rapidly

proceeding toward the remnants. They were currently very close to the remnants.

At the same time, a scene was currently playing out in the depths of the remnants.

The people gathered here could all be considered to be renowned individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The Immortal Sword School, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Zhou Heavenly Clan and Kong Heavenly Clan were the widely-accepted four strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. At this moment all four of them were gathered at the same location.

Among them were many peak Martial Ancestor-level experts.

Apart from the experts from the four tier one powers, there were also some grand existences that did not belong to any power.

Among them was naturally the mother of those Four World Spiritist Emperors.

However, at that moment, regardless of who they might be and what sort of strength they possessed, all of them had hopeless expressions on their faces.

The reason for that was because they were all stopped by an entrance gate before them.

That gate was a hundred meters tall. However, it was very simple and unadorned. As far as one's eye could see, the gate appeared to be made of wood. There were no special symbols or domineering engravings on the gate. At a glance, it appeared to be a very ordinary gate.

However, it was precisely this ordinary-looking gate that had stopped all of the people present. Not a single person was able to shatter that gate.

"It is a pity that Grandmaster Huai Zhu was injured by that

unknown individual.”

“Else, if he were here, how could we be stopped by this gate?” A man from the Zhou Heavenly Clan with the cultivation of a peak Martial Ancestor said.

“No, you all are looking down on this gate. The way I see it, even True Immortal-level experts would not necessarily be able to smash apart this gate,” An extremely thin old man wearing a daoist robe said.

Compared to the people present, this old man’s cultivation was not very strong; he was only a rank seven Martial Ancestor.

However, this old man was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, upon saying those words, many people began to nod in approval.

After all, in a place like this, the visions of world spiritists were generally many times stronger than those of ordinary martial cultivators.

“Grandmaster Prophet, what should we do? Could it be that we really need to wait for some sort of exceptional genius to come here?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was very anxious as she asked an old man.

When the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said those words, everyone present turned their gazes to that same old man.

That old man was none other than the extremely renowned Grandmaster Prophet.

This Grandmaster Prophet wore a snow-white gown. His gown covered his hair and face. The gown seemed to possess some sort of special effect that made it impossible for others to see his actual appearance. The only thing that others could see was his pair of sharp eyes.

His eyes were very clear. They were as bright as children’s eyes.

However, his pair of hands betrayed his identity as an old man. The reason for that was because not only were his hands filled with wrinkles, they were also covered with age spots. Those were hands that only an elderly individual that had lived for endless years would have.

At that moment, that pair of aged hands was holding onto a glass-like crystal ball. The old man's sharp eyes were fixed onto that crystal ball the entire time.

A scene was present in the crystal ball. The location of that scene was precisely the entrance of this remnants.

"Grandmaster, is that prophecy of yours truly reliable?" An expert from the Zhou Heavenly Clan asked curiously.

"Are you doubting this old man?" Grandmaster Prophet turned around. An enormous change occurred in his previously clear eyes. A frightening expression was present in his gaze.

"No, I wouldn't dare," In response, that Zhou Heavenly Clan's expert hurriedly lowered his head and acknowledged his mistake.

This expert from the Zhou Heavenly Clan was very powerful. He was a rank eight Martial Ancestor.

However, he did not dare to act impudently before this Grandmaster Prophet. This was not only because this Grandmaster Prophet possessed extraordinary status in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Most importantly, it was because this Grandmaster Prophet was a peak Martial Ancestor, someone with strength surpassing his own.

# Chapter 2340 – The Key To Force Open The Gate

---

After Grandmaster Prophet arrived at the remnants, he did two major things.

The first major thing Grandmaster Prophet did was to declare that the remnants was indeed that of Grandmaster Kai Hong.

As for the second major thing, Grandmaster Prophet made a prophecy.

He prophesied that Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants would only begin to transform after a fated individual arrived.

Else, regardless of how heaven-defying one's power or abilities might be, they would not be able to obtain the slightest bit of Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance.

Furthermore, that so-called fated individual was not someone to be trifled with either. That fated individual was someone who would shake the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and cause experts from all over to live in endless fear.

Merely, the people present did not believe in Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy too much.

Naturally, there were reasons why they did not believe Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy.

Firstly, they had waited at the entrance for a very long time. Yet, no such fated individual had yet appeared.

And, most importantly, Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy mentioned that that fated individual was a person from the younger generation. Furthermore, that person from the younger generation would obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's personal techniques.

If the person Grandmaster Prophet prophesied about was a



renowned individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, then perhaps the people present would have believed him.

However, that prophesied individual was a member of the younger generation. How could that possibly be possible?

Even though they had indeed not managed to obtain any inheritance or treasures from Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants, the dangers that they had faced on their way there were still vivid in their minds.

Although they had managed to break through the mechanisms and traps, those mechanisms and traps were capable of restoring themselves. As such, with the strength that individuals from the younger generation possessed, how could a person from the younger generation possibly be able to enter that place?

"I know that you all are skeptical of this old man. However, you all absolutely must not doubt this prophetic crystal ball of mine."

"The reason for that is because till this date, all that my prophetic crystal ball has pointed out has ended up being true."

"It is capable of seeing through mysteries known only to heaven, and finding out about the future," Grandmaster Prophet looked to the crystal ball in his hand as he spoke.

After Grandmaster Prophet finished saying those words, Grandmaster Prophet fixed his gaze onto the prophecy crystal ball. He once again began to stare at the scene inside the crystal ball.

At that moment, his gaze once again turned clear, like the eyes of a child. There was not the slightest trace of impurity.

It was as if he did not dare to use any ill-intended gaze to view the prophetic crystal ball because he felt enormous respect for it.

In response, the crowd revealed helpless expressions.

It was not that they did not wish to look at the prophetic crystal ball. Rather, they had already been staring at it for quite some time

now. Many people had appeared in the prophetic crystal ball. However, no one was capable of changing the situation at hand.

At that moment, the crowd had already lost confidence. After all, it had already been many days since they had arrived.

“Creak~~~”

Right at that moment, a sound was suddenly heard from that simple, unadorned and enormous wooden gate.

At that moment, everyone turned their gazes to the wooden gate, with astonishment filling their eyes.

One should know that it was the first sound that they had heard from that wooden gate in the many days they had been there.

“He’s here! The fated individual has arrived! That person who is able to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s personal techniques has arrived,” At that moment, Grandmaster Prophet stood up with excitement. He had an extremely emotional expression in his eyes.

Hearing what Grandmaster Prophet said, everyone present turned their gazes to that prophetic crystal ball.

At that moment, this surroundings became abnormally quiet. The only sound present was the sound of everyone’s breathing and the beating of their hearts.

They all wished to see exactly who that so-called fated individual might be.

At the moment when the various grand characters had fixed their gazes on the crystal ball, three figures finally appeared within it.

The three individuals were extremely fast. They practically flashed by in an instant. However, the people present all managed to firmly capture the appearance of the three individuals.

“It’s actually him?”

At that moment, the people present all revealed astonished expressions.

The reason for that was because the three individuals that had flashed past in the crystal ball were none other than Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

The crowd present did not know Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. However, they knew Chu Feng.

After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan had already spread Chu Feng's portrait all over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for the sake of capturing him.

Moreover, due to what Chu Feng had done on Mount Cloud Crane, even these grand characters had, more or less, paid attention to Chu Feng. As such, practically everyone present knew that Chu Feng was a newly emerged genius among the younger generation.

"Haha." However, right at the moment when the crowd present were astonished by the fated individual being Chu Feng, the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors let out a cold laugh. She said, "Grandmaster, it is not that I do not trust you. Merely, I fear that your prophecy this time around might be mistaken."

"Why are you so certain that my prophecy is a mistake?" Grandmaster Prophet asked in a slightly displeased manner.

"Not only is that Chu Feng a member of the younger generation, his cultivation is also only at the Half Martial Ancestor realm. As for those two friends of his, I presume that their cultivations will not be much stronger than his either."

"Judging from the scene earlier, only the three of them, three people from the younger generation, have entered. There doesn't seem to be anyone from the older generation protecting them."

"Thus, I am able to be certain that, with the cultivation the three of them possess, not to mention reaching this place, they will not even be able to pass the first half of the remnants."

"I would like to ask, how could someone who is unable to pass

through the remnants possibly cause a transformation to the remnants? How could someone like that possibly be able to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance?" The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors asked loudly.

"That is true," The crowd present began to nod at the words spoken by the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

"Snap~~~"

"Snap~~~"

"Snap~~~"

.....

However, right at that moment, strange sounds began sound from the simple, unadorned and enormous wooden gate.

At the same time, many strange ripples began to expand from the wooden gate.

"Buzz~~~"

The very next moment, many golden gaseous substances visible to the naked eye began to flow out from the wooden gate.

"Rumble~~~"

After the golden gaseous substances appeared, the entire remnant started to rumble.

The rumbling sound was very strange. It did not sound purely like something trembling. Rather, it sounded more like a ferocious beast letting out a deep growl.

It was as if a ferocious beast had been awakened by the summoning from that gaseous substance.

"It would appear that my prophecy was accurate," Seeing the change before him, Grandmaster Prophet let out a joyous laugh.

At that moment, the crowd asked in unison, "Grandmaster, in that case, it would mean that the fated individual capable of

opening this remnant would be Chu Feng?”

“That’s hard to say. After all, three people have entered together. It might also be possible for it to be one of the two other individuals who entered alongside Chu Feng,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Grandmaster’s prophecy is truly accurate. Grandmaster, you are simply a godly individual,” The crowd began to praise Grandmaster Prophet nonstop. After all, things were progressing precisely as Grandmaster Prophet had prophesied.

‘It would appear that brat by the name of Chu Feng truly cannot be looked down upon,’ At the same time the crowd praised Grandmaster Prophet, they all had a new opinion of Chu Feng in their hearts.

Even though Grandmaster Prophet had clearly declared that he could not be certain that the prophesied individual would be Chu Feng, it remained that Chu Feng was already famous. Thus, the people present had already come to their own judgement that the person capable of affecting this remnants and obtaining Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance was Chu Feng.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At the moment when the crowd was gasping with awe, the golden gaseous substance began to gather together, forming a boundless vortex. As the vortex spun, many symbols began to flicker within it. Soon, a grand formation was formed.

That grand formation illuminated their surroundings like a bright sun.

It was extremely imposing, and gave rise to waves of strong wind. Even though the people present were all powerful experts, they were still forced back by the wind.

Finally, the grand formation finished forming. It was an extremely powerful defensive formation. As for that powerful

defensive formation, it was not protecting the wooden gate. Rather, it was protecting a coffin.

That coffin was standing straight in the center of the formation. It was sealed, and the crowd was simply unable to see what was inside.

However, on the coffin was aggressively large writing. Three huge words were inscribed onto the coffin...

Gate Opening Key!!!

# Chapter 2341 – Undoing The Grand Formation

---

“Haha, it seems that you’re mistaken.”

“Grandmaster Prophet is truly a grandmaster indeed. The result of Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy is not something that you can question.”

At that moment, many people began to mock the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother.

“Naturally, Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy will be accurate. Merely, I still do not believe that, that little piece of trash Chu Feng will be able to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance.”

“With his strength, he will not even be able to reach this place. Thus, how could he possibly obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance?”

“Are you trying say that Grandmaster Kai Hong will suddenly appear and personally present his inheritance to Chu Feng?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“That is somewhat reasonable too. Although Grandmaster’s prophecy is very accurate, it remains that Chu Feng is a member of the younger generation. Even if he is able to cause changes to the remnants, it will likely remain very difficult for him to obtain benefits before us,” The crowd echoed.

“Indeed. At times like this, what is being tested is one’s strength.”

“Those who are capable will be able to gain benefits.”

Suddenly, a peak Martial Ancestor-level expert hefted a giant Ancestral Armament axe. He unleashed a movement martial skill, and began to fly toward that coffin. He planned to use that axe to split open the coffin.

“You wish to be the first? Not so easy!!!”

In response, the other peak Martial Ancestor-level experts rushed forth and unleashed their respective abilities. They all wanted to be the first to split open that coffin and obtain the so-called Gate Opening Key.

At that moment, various powerful abilities were unleashed together. They all attacked at that coffin.

“Boom~~~”

However, before the many and various powerful attacks could approach the coffin, they were all blocked by the grand formation.

“How could this be?”

At that moment, the crowd was stunned.

The people who had attacked earlier were all peak Martial Ancestor-level experts. They were actual rank nine Martial Ancestors, existences a step away from becoming True Immortals.

Furthermore, for the sake of being the first to obtain the Gate Opening Key from the coffin, none of them had spared any effort in their attacks. Not only had all of them attacked with overwhelming Ancestral-level might, they had also attacked with Emperor Taboo Martial Skills from the very start.

Those attacks were already capable of creating massive destruction in a region, and easily killing countless living things. It was pure destructive power.

However, it was precisely that sort of destructive power that was completely blocked by the grand defensive formation. As such, how could the many experts of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm not be astonished?

“You’re kidding. Not only is that gate impossible to break through, even this spirit formation is impossible to breach.”

“Even if there’s a so-called key in that spirit formation, how are



we supposed to use it if we cannot open the spirit formation?”

After their series of attacks at the spirit formation turned out to be useless, the experts present were unable to contain themselves from complaining.

“Since it’s a spirit formation, it is naturally possible to be breached. There are world spiritists among the people present, no?” A peak Martial Ancestor from the Immortal Sword School said.

“That’s true. We have this many Immortal-cloak World Spiritists here, how could we possibly not be able to open that spirit formation?” At that moment, the crowd all turned their gazes to the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors and the many other Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present.

It was true that there were extremely few Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, about seventy percent of all the Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were gathered here in Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants.

Among them, nine were Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, and five were Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.

1

As for those world spiritists, not only were they proficient in world spirit techniques, their cultivations were also very strong.

“It is fine for you all to want us to undo that spirit formation. However, after we undo the spirit formation, how are we to distribute the treasures left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong?” The mother of the Four World Spiritists Emperor turned to ask the crowd.

“You’re not the only Immortal-cloak World Spiritist here. If you wish to help, then do it. If you do not wish to help, then move aside,” An old man with snow-white hair placed the sharp sword

he held onto his back and then began to emit spirit power to set up an unsealing formation.

That old man was one of the five Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present. He was from the Immortal Sword School.

After that, the three Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists from the Zhou Heavenly Clan, the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple also joined that Immortal Sword School's Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. They did not wish to allow the Immortal Sword School's Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist to undo the spirit formation by himself and then reap the Gate Opening Key alone.

"Milords, although our strength is limited, please allow us to lend you all a helping hand."

In response, the nine Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists also joined in.

They did not join purely because they wanted to lend a helping hand. Rather, they wanted to gain a share of the benefits in Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants after undoing that spirit formation.

"If you are to join us right now, you will still be able to obtain a portion of the benefits. Else, I'm afraid Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants will be unrelated to you," An expert from the Immortal Sword School said to the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

"Haha, is that so?" However, the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother smiled confidently. Then, she said, "I dare to guarantee that if I don't help out, you all will absolutely not be able to open that spirit formation."

"Humph, what arrogance and conceit," Hearing those words, that Immortal Sword School's expert, as well as many other people present, all scoffed at the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

However, the smile on the Four World Spiritist Emperors'

mother remained unchanged. Just like that, she looked on indifferently at the other world spiritists joining hands to undo the grand defensive formation.

At the beginning, no one cared about the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

After all, in terms of cultivation, she was unable to compare to the peak Martial Ancestors present.

As for world spirit techniques, even though she was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, she was not the only Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist present here.

Thus, if she were to join and help out, the crowd would not stop her. However, if she refused to join and help, the crowd would not demand her assistance either.

However, when the undoing spirit formation the world spiritists joined hands to set up, was set up successfully, yet still did not manage to do anything to the grand defensive formation, the crowd inevitably turned their gazes to the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

In response, the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother opened her mouth and said, "Everyone, truth be told, I once obtained a bit of Grandmaster Kai Hong's personal techniques from a different remnant. It is all thanks to Grandmaster Kai Hong that I managed to become a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist."

"Thus, to a greater or lesser degree, I understand Grandmaster Kai Hong's spirit formations. It is useless for you all to attempt to undo the defensive formation like that."

With no alternative, the crowd asked, "You are truly able to undo this formation?"

"Naturally," The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

"Go ahead and tell us, how much do you want?" The crowd

asked.

“If this remnant truly contains Grandmaster Kai Hong’s personal techniques, I want to obtain all the personal techniques. As for treasures, I want a tenth of them.”

“If there are no personal techniques from Grandmaster Kai Hong here, I want fifty percent of the treasures,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“You are simply delusional!” The crowd replied in unison.

“There’s nothing that can be done then,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother had a confident expression.

Just like that, many hours passed. Those world spiritists were still unable to do anything to the grand defensive formation.

At that moment, the people present were feeling extremely unreconciled. However, they inevitably turned their gazes to the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors again.

“How about this: if you are truly able to undo this spirit formation, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s personal techniques will be yours.”

“As for treasures, you will not obtain any. After all, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s personal techniques are priceless treasures themselves.”

“If there are none of Grandmaster Kai Hong’s personal techniques in that remnants, you’ll get three tenths of the treasures inside,” After discussing it with one another, the representatives from the four tier one powers spoke in unison.

“Although that proposal is not to my satisfaction, it remains that I am able to see some sincerity from you all. Very well, I shall reluctantly agree to it,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother said with a smile.

“However, if you are unable to undo that spirit formation, do not

blame me for being rude,” An expert from the Immortal Sword School said coldly.

“Rest assured, I am most definitely capable of undoing the spirit formation,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother said confidently.

Then, the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors began to set up another grand formation before the crowd.

Right after she began to set up that grand formation, it immediately let out a strange aura.

At that moment, not to mention the others, even the eyes of those Immortal-cloak World Spiritists started to shine.

The reason for that was because the aura emitted by the spirit formation the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother was setting up was identical to the aura of the remnant.

At that moment, the crowd present all believed that the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother would be able to undo that spirit formation.

Sensing the admiring gazes from the crowd, the smile on the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother’s face grew denser.

However, right at that moment, a voice sounded from behind the crowd like a sudden clap of thunder.

“That spirit formation of yours is unable to undo that grand defensive formation.”

Quick maths.  $(9+5)*0.7=9.8$  Total Immortal cloaks. + Chu Feng and friends = 13 Immortal cloaks.

# Chapter 2342 – Outstanding Courage And Insight

---

“Who is it?”

The voice that was suddenly heard startled all of the people present.

The reason for that was because they were practically all certain that the spirit formation of the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother would be able to undo that grand defensive formation.

The fact that someone had suddenly declared that the spirit formation of the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother would be unable to undo that grand defensive formation at a time like this meant that they had gone against the opinion of the crowd.

At that moment, the first thing people thought was that the person that had spoken was boasting shamelessly.

Which is why they were curious as to who it was that actually said such a thing at such a time.

“It's him?!”

Upon turning around to look, the already surprised crowd became completely astonished.

Logically, the people present were all grand individuals that had experienced a lot of major things. As such, they were not people that would be easily astonished.

However, upon seeing the people who'd just arrived, they immediately revealed astonished expressions.

The reason for that was because the person who had arrived was someone that they would never have expected.

The reason for that was because the people that had arrived were Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Merely, at that moment, the crowd were focused on one individual, Chu Feng.

‘Chu Feng?’

‘How did he get here?’

‘He is but a person of the younger generation, a mere rank five Half Martial Ancestor.’

‘With that cultivation, it shouldn’t be possible for him to reach this place, no?’

‘Could it be those two?’

After a moment of astonishment, the crowd shifted their gazes from Chu Feng to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

While it was true that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong possessed cultivations above Chu Feng’s, it remained that Wang Qiang was only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, and Zhao Hong, the strongest of the three, was only a rank one Martial Ancestor.

With their cultivations, it was evident that none of them possessed the capability to reach this place.

“Chu Feng, were you the one who said those words earlier?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors asked with a cold voice. Her tone was filled with ill-intended tone.

“So what if I am the one who said it?” However, faced with this threat from the Four World Spirit Emperors’ mother, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. He was completely calm.

“Cheeky bastard, you shall be punished!!!” As the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors spoke, her eyes were glowering wide open. She unleashed her rank seven Martial Ancestor-level aura and shot forth a vast oppressive might at Chu Feng.

Her attack was very ruthless. With Chu Feng’s current level of cultivation, if he were to be struck by her oppressive might, even if he didn’t die, he would likely suffer serious injuries and have his

future prospects ruined.

“Buzz~~~”

However, before the attack from the Four World Spiritist Emperor’s mother could reach Chu Feng, an even stronger power blocked it.

The person who had acted to block her attack was actually Grandmaster Prophet.

“You are too excessively ruthless. No matter what, you are a senior. How could you bully a junior like this?” Grandmaster Prophet said coldly.

“Grandmaster, it is true that Chu Feng is a member of the younger generation and I am a senior to him, but that is precisely the reason why I should properly teach him a lesson for speaking rudely to me,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“Speak rudely? Since when did speaking the truth become rude?” Chu Feng smiled mockingly.

“You declared that the spirit formation I’ve set up is unable to undo that grand defensive formation, is that not speaking rudely?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said as she pointed at Chu Feng.

“The spirit formation that you’ve set up is unable to undo that grand formation to begin with. I have merely spoken the truth, how could that be considered speaking rudely?” Chu Feng said with a cold voice.

“You!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother grew even more furious.

Suddenly, an expert from the Immortal Sword School spoke. “World Spiritist Saintess, you should stop before you go too far. What little friend Chu Feng said earlier does not possess any disrespect toward you at all.”



“That’s right. Since you are able to declare that the spirit formation that others set up is useless, little friend Chu Feng is naturally also able to call your spirit formation’s efficiency into question. Since when did something like that become disrespect towards one’s senior? If that is disrespect, wouldn’t that mean that juniors would not be allowed to say the truth before their seniors, and would only flatter them?”

“Furthermore, even if little friend Chu Feng really did speak rudely, you shouldn’t attack him that ruthlessly. You simply wanted to kill little friend Chu Feng.”

“World Spiritist Saintess, are your actions against little friend Chu Feng not excessive? Even if you detest him, you shouldn’t reveal it so obviously, no?”

A scene that the World Spiritist Saintess did not expect actually occurred. Many of the people present began to speak on behalf of Chu Feng and mock her.

There was naturally a reason why the crowd would react like that.

Firstly, Chu Feng was no ordinary member of the younger generation. The crowd present all wanted to become acquaintances with Chu Feng. By speaking on his behalf, they would be able to become closer to Chu Feng.

Furthermore, the attitude the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother had displayed earlier was truly too arrogant and aggressive. Her attitude had caused many people to feel dissatisfied. As such, they were seizing the opportunity to lower her grandeur.

“What? I attacked him maliciously? I detest him? You all are simply babbling nonsense,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother said in a very displeased manner.

“Little friend Chu Feng defeated your four sons on Mount Cloud

Crane. That is something that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knows about.”

“You, on the other hand, are famous for pampering your sons. Thus, everyone already knows that, in the future, you would most likely attack little friend Chu Feng for your sons.”

“As for what you did earlier, it clearly indicated that what we guessed was correct.”

“World Spiritist Saintess, I must say, you are truly disappointing,” That peak Martial Ancestor from the Immortal Sword School said while shaking his head.

At the same time, many people began to sigh mockingly.

“You all!!!” Being jointly attacked by the crowd, the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother was so furious that her complexion turned pale, causing her ugly old face to begin to twitch nonstop.

Filled with endless anger, she naturally did not plan to drop the subject just like that. Thus, she looked to Chu Feng again, pointed at him and said, “Chu Feng, you said that my spirit formation will be unable to undo that grand defensive formation. If I am able to undo it, I want you to kneel before me and publicly apologize to me.”

“What will you do if you fail to undo the grand defensive formation?” Chu Feng replied calmly.

“If I fail to undo the grand defensive formation, I will publicly apologize to you,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said.

“W-wait a moment,” Right at that moment, Wang Qiang spoke, “Since y-you s-said that Chu Feng needed to kneel w-while apologizing if he l-loses the bet, s-shouldn’t you also apologize w-while kneeling too i-if you lose the bet?”

“That’s right. Since you want to bet, it should naturally be an equal bet,” Zhao Hong added.

“Very well. If I lose, I will kneel and apologize to you. Chu Feng, do you dare accept?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said to Chu Feng.

“If you dare, then I will naturally dare,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“Brat who doesn’t know about the immensity of the heaven and earth, prepare yourself to apologize to this Saintess,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was filled with confidence. She turned around and continued to operate her spirit formation. She planned to prove herself to the crowd.

As for Chu Feng, his expression remained unchanged. There was not the slightest trace of worry.

Since Chu Feng dared to say something like that, it would naturally mean that he possessed absolute confidence.

The crowd took note of Chu Feng’s fearless behavior. At that moment, they felt even more certain that Chu Feng was an extraordinary individual.

After all, his courage and insight were things that ordinary people from the younger generation did not possess.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I am called Duan Chunchang. I am an elder of the Immortal Sword School,” That peak Martial Ancestor from the Immortal Sword School who had questioned the World Spiritist Saintess many times flew over to Chu Feng and initiated a greeting.

Immediately afterward, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple, Zhou Heavenly Clan, Kong Heavenly Clan and even that Grandmaster Prophet also moved to greet Chu Feng.

Although they were merely greeting him, it was an extraordinary thing capable of shaking the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a person of the younger generation like Chu Feng to be able to cause so many grand characters to come and greet him of their own accord.

As for Chu Feng, he politely greeted them back.

After all, these people here were all renowned and powerful individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Regardless of what sort of intention they had in coming to greet him, Chu Feng must still display the sort of politeness and respect that a member of the younger generation should have.

After courteously greeting one another, Grandmaster Prophet asked curiously, “Little friends, how did the three of you manage to reach this place?”

Following that question, the crowd all turned their curious gazes over. They all wanted to know how Chu Feng and his friends, three people from the younger generation, were able to pass through those traps and mechanisms that should be impossible for them to pass through.

## Chapter 2343 – Stormwind Edge

---

Before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong could answer Grandmaster Prophet's question, the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother declared with a strange tone, "Is there even a need to ask? It's naturally because someone was secretly protecting them. Else, how could the three of them, with their strength, possibly reach this place?"

"You don't have to hide yourself anymore. Since you've come, you must have come for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures. Why not show yourself?"

"I'm afraid that we'll have to disappoint you. The three of us do not possess the protection of any senior," Chu Feng said.

"Haha. What a joke!" The Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother laughed out loud.

"Why do you find it funny?" Chu Feng asked.

"Why? Are you saying that I cannot laugh at your boasting?" The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors declared.

"Heh..." At that moment, Chu Feng also laughed.

"What are you laughing about?" The Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother asked with a stern voice.

"I am laughing at you. It is best that you don't mock me this quickly. You should instead focus on your spirit formation, since it will soon be destroyed," Chu Feng said.

"What did you say? You're saying that my spirit formation will be destroyed? Nonsense!"

"Although my spirit formation is an unsealing formation, it remains something created by Grandmaster Kai Hong. Its defense is equally invulnerable!" The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors said confidently.

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, a ray of light shot out from the grand defensive formation. That ray of light flickered with golden brightness. Like an unstoppable sharp sword capable of sweeping everything before it, it shattered the unsealing formation the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother had set up.

“How could this be?!”

Seeing that scene, the crowd present were all astonished.

Although that grand defensive formation was very powerful, it should only possess defensive functions. However, just then, that grand defensive formation had let out a ray of light by itself and shattered the unsealing formation set up by the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors. This meant that the grand defensive formation also possessed an extremely powerful offensive nature.

This being said, what the crowd was the most confused by was why that grand defensive formation would attack and destroy the unsealing formation set up by the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother, as well as how Chu Feng managed to determine that it would do so.

Confused, someone turned to ask Chu Feng, “Little friend Chu Feng, could it be that you’d managed to discover that that grand defensive formation would attack and destroy the unsealing formation set up by World Spiritist Saintess?”

“Seniors, truth be told, this junior has trained in a special sort of observation technique. Although that defensive formation is powerful, its various mysteries have all been seen through by this junior’s eyes.”

“Thus, not only am I able to determine what that grand defensive formation will do, I am also able to undo that grand defensive formation and open the coffin,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“Little friend Chu Feng, is what you said the truth?” Once Chu

Feng said those words, the crowd's eyes immediately started to shine. It was as if they had seen hope in desperation.

“Yes,” Chu Feng had a confident smile on his face the entire time.

Chu Feng did not lie, nor was he boasting.

The reason why he was so certain that the spirit formation the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors set up was not going to work was precisely because he had managed to see through that grand defensive formation.

Since Chu Feng had already managed to see through the grand defensive formation, he would naturally also know about how to undo that grand defensive formation.

However, there was one thing that Chu Feng remained extremely puzzled by.

That was that he had not utilized his Heaven's Eyes to see through the grand defensive formation. Rather, he had managed to see through it with his naked eye.

However, neither Zhao Hong nor Wang Qiang were able to see what Chu Feng saw.

In other words, although they were all observing the grand defensive formation normally, ordinary people would find it to be invulnerable, whereas Chu Feng would find it to be full of mistakes.

It was as if that grand defensive formation was deliberately showing its weaknesses to only Chu Feng.

“What crazy and unfounded ravings! Brat, you are but a mere Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, merely someone who has just stepped foot past the entrance of Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Yet, you dare to boast so shamelessly?” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked.

“World Spiritist Saintess, all the things that little friend Chu

Feng has said since his arrival have come true.”

“He was correct when he said that you would not be able to undo that grand defensive formation.”

“He was also correct when he said that the unsealing formation you’d set up would be destroyed.”

“This means that little friend Chu Feng possesses true abilities, that he is unlike you, who only knows how to boast,” That Elder Duan Chunchang mocked the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

“That’s right. That’s right.”

.....

Many of the people present seized the opportunity to make cutting remarks at the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother.

“You all! Good! Very good!”

“You all have actually fallen so much from grace that you’ve decided to hand the great responsibility of undoing the grand defensive formation to a brat.”

“Very well, this Saintess will satisfy you all. I will let you all find out how ignorant and foolish your decision is,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was so furious that her voice started to tremble. Her tone was filled with complaint.

“I will naturally undo this grand defensive formation. However, World Spiritist Saintess, please honor your previous promise first,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Right, r-right, right. Y-y-you are, n-no matter what, a senior. Y-you cannot go back o-on your word,” Wang Qiang laughed.

Others like Duan Chunchang also joined Wang Qiang and began to urge the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors to apologize to Chu Feng.

In this sort of situation, even though the mother of the Four



World Spiritist Emperors was very unwilling, she had no other choice but to do so. After all, there were so many people present who had borne witness to her bet. Even if she wanted to refuse to acknowledge it after the fact, she could not do so.

At that moment, she was filled with regret. She regretted being overly confident. She had not expected that she would actually lose to Chu Feng.

However, although she was very unwilling, she still had to apologize to him.

Thus, with an ugly expression on her face, she looked to Chu Feng and said, "Little friend Chu Feng, I lost my demeanor and attacked you rashly earlier. I hope that you will..."

"H-how could t-this possibly do. W-wasn't it a-agreed upon th-that you'd apologize while kneeling?" However, before the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors could finish, Wang Qiang sighed and interrupted her.

"What did you say? You dare demand that I kneel?!" Hearing those words, the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was extremely furious. Her anger was like that of an erupting volcano. Everyone present was able to sense her anger.

It was only because there were many experts present. Else, the crowd believed that the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors would definitely kill Wang Qiang on the spot.

That said, Wang Qiang was not a person who feared getting into trouble. Thus, he remained completely unmoved by the threats from the Four World Spiritist Emperor's mother. Instead, with a very unreconciled manner, he said, "Pah! It w-was you w-who said you would earlier. A-are you p-planning to consider y-your words as farts a-and forget about t-them j-j-just like that?"

"Did I really say such a thing?" The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors looked to the crowd. She acted as if she had

truly forgotten about it.

“Indeed, such a thing did happen,” The crowd nodded their heads.

At this moment, the expression of the Four World Spiritist Emperor’s mother turned purple and then blue. It was as marvelous as could be.

While she was able to apologize, to have her kneel towards a person of the younger generation, and Chu Feng on top of that, before all these people was something that she found truly impossible to do.

“World Spiritist Saintess, it was you who said that. Thus, you should be keep your promise and act accordingly.”

“However, taking your status into considering, it is indeed somewhat inappropriate for you to kneel to Chu Feng.”

Suddenly, Grandmaster Prophet suggested, “How about this, would you be willing to give Chu Feng some compensation to make up for this matter?”

“Compensation? What sort of compensation?” Zhao Hong asked in a somewhat displeased manner. She possessed a very frank temperament. Even though the person who had spoken was Grandmaster Prophet, who possessed a very high status, she would still give him no face if she felt that he was discriminating in favor of the World Spiritist Saintess.

“Little friend, as you are little friend Chu Feng’s friend, what sort of compensation do you think would be suitable?” Grandmaster Prophet asked with a smile.

“An Ancestral Armament. Else, we can forget about it,” Zhao Hong said.

“Impudent!” Hearing those words, the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors was once again overflowing with fury.

“You can either kneel or hand over an Ancestral Armament. You decide what you want to do,” Zhao Hong’s attitude was very ill-intended.

“World Spiritist Saintess, I’ve heard that you just managed to purchase an Ancestral Armament not too long ago. Wasn’t it the Stormwind Edge?” Elder Duan Chunchang of the Immortal Sword School said.

“Stormwind Edge? Could it be that Ancestral Armament that is rumored to be from the Ancient Era?” At that moment, many of the people present all revealed surprised gazes.

Although Ancestral Armaments were rare in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there were still quite a few of them. However, not many among them were famous. As for that Stormwind Edge, it was a very famous Ancestral Armament.

“That’s right. I’ve heard that World Spiritist Saintess paid an enormous amount to obtain that Stormwind Edge. After all, the Stormwind Edge could be considered a legendary Ancestral Armament,” Elder Duan Chunchang said with a smile.

After this, the crowd began to discuss the Stormwind Edge more intensely.

At that moment, the expression of the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother grew even uglier. The reason for that was because she knew very well how precious the Stormwind Edge was. She absolutely wouldn’t hand it over to Chu Feng.

Thus, after a hard mental conflict, the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother finally came to a decision. She said loudly, “Very well. Chu Feng, as compensation, I am able to hand you an Ancestral Armament. However, the Stormwind Edge is out of the question.”

Hearing those words, the crowd present were all startled.

Agreed? She actually agreed?

Ancestral Armament, one must know that it was an Ancestral Armament. Although the World Spiritist Saintess was unwilling to hand the Stormwind Edge to Chu Feng, ordinary Ancestral Armaments were all considerably valuable items.

A mere bet spoken orally actually allowed Chu Feng to win an Ancestral Armament. This truly caused the crowd to feel endless envy.

However, at the moment when the crowd all felt that the matter would be settled with the World Spiritist Saintess giving Chu Feng an Ancestral Armament, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, “I only want the Stormwind Edge.”

# Chapter 2344 – Another Gamble

---

“I only want that Stormwind Edge,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“You really dare to ask for that? Don’t even think about it!” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother snarled angrily.

“In that case, you can choose to comply with your promise and kneel to me,” Chu Feng said.

“You... you are simply trying to profit off another’s misfortune!” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother was so enraged the corners of her mouth started to twitch.

“That’s right, I am trying to profit off another’s misfortune,” Chu Feng said resolutely. He did not feel ashamed in the slightest.

“You!!!” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors started to shake with fury. However, she was at a loss as for what to do.

“World Spiritist Saintess, you shouldn’t get angry. After all, little friend Chu Feng is not forcing you to do anything. It is up to you to decide what you choose to do,” Elder Duan Chunchang said with a mischievous smile on his face. He had the fearless appearance of someone enjoying a show.

“Chu Feng, an Ancestral Armament is not a small price. I am already being extremely charitable to be willing to give you an Ancestral Armament. I’d suggest you to not refuse the face that is given to you.”

“If you continue to insist on acting this shamelessly, I will definitely not leave this matter as-is,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors threatened Chu Feng fiercely as she gnashed her teeth angrily.

However, the smile Chu Feng had remained unchanged. He did not say anything, and just continued to look at her. He was waiting for her answer.

“Enough of that. Don’t bother with trying to threaten little friend Chu Feng. With your character, even if you didn’t threaten him, we know that you would also not let little friend Chu Feng off. However, right now, you must still fulfill your promise. You should decide on what you plan to do,” Elder Duan Chunchang said in a slightly impatient manner.

“Don’t waste everyone’s time. Make your decision promptly,” Grandmaster Prophet also urged impatiently.

At the same time, the others present also began to urge the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

Not a single person declared that Chu Feng was in the wrong. Rather, they were all declaring that the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother was in the wrong.

In such situation, an invisible pressure enveloped the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother. Even though she possessed an extremely thick skin and strong endurance, she was still unable to withstand the pressure.

“Very well. Chu Feng, you win,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother came to a final decision. Although it was very painful for her to hand over her Stormwind Edge, she was unable to publicly kneel to Chu Feng.

Thus, she placed her hand into her clothes.

“W-what are y-you doing? C-could it that y-you’re trying to flash my brother? S-stop immediately! D-don’t b-blind my eyes!” Seeing this scene, Wang Qiang hurriedly covered his eyes and shouted with a frightened expression.

Wang Qiang’s words caused the crowd to laugh out loud.

As for the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother, her eyes were blazing with fury. However, she did not stop her movement. When she took her hand from her clothes, a pearl-sized substance appeared in her hand.

“That is a Cosmos Concealment Pearl. Could it be that she hid the Stormwind Edge in that pearl?” Upon seeing that pearl, the crowd’s eyes all shone.

Chu Feng had also heard of Cosmos Concealment Pearls before. They possessed the same function as Cosmos Sacks. However, the pearls were much smaller than Cosmos Sacks.

Furthermore, more importantly, Cosmos Concealment Pearls could be hidden within one’s body. Furthermore, they would not bring any pain to their user and would fuse with one’s body and become concealed once that entered the body. At that time, not even world spiritists would be able to detect them.

Thus, Cosmos Concealment Pearls were treasured objects used to store and conceal one’s most valuable treasures.

Not mentioning what the Cosmos Concealment Pearls might be storing and hiding, merely the Cosmos Concealment Pearls themselves were extremely precious treasures.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, a ray of light flashed out from that Cosmos Concealment Pearl. When the light bloomed, a sharp blade appeared in the hands of the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother.

It was an Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it emitted a very powerful might the moment it appeared. Like the aura that a human ruler would emit, that Ancestral Armament also emitted a ruler-like aura that ordinary Ancestral Armaments could not be compared with.

When that Ancestral Armament appeared, not to mention Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, even the gazes of the people of the older generation present started to shine.

That Ancestral Armament had a crystalline appearance and was visibly transparent. It was seven and a half feet long. It appeared to

be a blade, yet not a blade; a sword, yet not a sword. Faintly flickering golden veined patterns were present on the weapon. Those faintly flickering golden veined patterns gave rise to wind visible to the naked eye. Like whirlwinds, those winds surrounded the Ancestral Armament.

It was as if this Ancestral Armament were not a weapon, but rather a God of Wind that was capable of summoning powerful winds to do its bidding.

Most importantly, the aura emitted by this Ancestral Armament was stronger than that of ordinary Ancestral Armaments.

“Stormwind Edge. Its fame is truly well deserved. It is truly a top quality weapon among Ancestral Armaments,” At that moment, many of the bystanders began to praise the Stormwind Edge.

Hearing the praise from the crowd, the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors felt even more pained. Only she knew how many treasures she had used to purchase the Stormwind Edge. It could be said that she had exhausted half of all the treasures she had gathered in her lifetime in order to purchase this one Stormwind Edge.

However, for her own dignity, she had still chosen to hand the Stormwind Edge to Chu Feng.

“Have it,” The Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother raised her hand and tossed the Stormwind Edge to Chu Feng.

Although she was extremely furious and itching to kill Chu Feng, she knew that she would not be able to kill him before all these experts. Thus, for the sake of her dignity, she had no choice but to toss her Stormwind Edge to Chu Feng.

“This is indeed a good weapon,” Chu Feng examined the Stormwind Edge in his hand and revealed a delighted expression. Then, he carefully put it away. After that, he turned to the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother and said, “Saintess is truly



generous. My thanks.”

“You!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the expression of the Four World Spiritist Emperors’ mother changed once again. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s thanks was spoken as a very cutting remark; it was extremely anger-inducing.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you said that you were able to undo this grand formation. Might you be willing to attempt to do so?” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“I have come precisely for the sake of these remnants. Thus, I will naturally give it a try. Merely, this Chu Feng’s world spirit power is limited. I fear that I will have to borrow the strength of the seniors present to help me set up my spirit formation up,” Chu Feng said to the Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present.

“Humph, and here I thought that you possessed heaven-defying abilities. Turns out that you still plan to rely on us,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors snorted coldly.

“I am afraid that you will deliberately ruin my spirit formation. Thus, there is no need for your assistance,” Chu Feng said with a slight smile. Then, he looked to the other Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, “Seniors, might you all be willing to assist me?”

“Little friend, you are being too courteous. Go ahead and tell us how you want us to help you,” The Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists said to Chu Feng courteously. They clearly revealed their intentions to help Chu Feng.

“You all actually really trust this brat? Utter foolery,” The mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors mocked.

“It would appear that you do not believe in me. Since that’s the case, how about the two of us have another gamble?”

“If I am able to undo that grand formation using my spirit

formation, you'll give me another Ancestral Armament. What do you think about that?" Chu Feng said to the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother.

"You!!!" Hearing those words, fury filled the heart of the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother. She nearly vomited blood in her anger.

# Chapter 2345 – An Impossible Thing

---

“Haha...”

Seeing the green complexioned World Spiritist Saintess baring a furious expression and itching to kill him, Chu Feng smiled complacently. Then, before the crowd, he outlined the diagram of a grand spirit formation.

Once Chu Feng finished outlining the diagram, the expressions of the world spiritists present all changed. They all revealed a disappointed expression.

“Hahaha...”

“And here I was wondering how amazing the spirit formation might be. It turns out to only be such a rudimentary spirit formation,” The World Spiritist Saintess laughed with contempt. It was as if all of the repressed emotions in her heart were finally being released. Showing no quarter, she began to mock Chu Feng.

“Little friend Chu Feng, are you certain that you want us to set up that spirit formation?” At the same time, the other Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists also began to doubt Chu Feng.

“Seniors, this spirit formation needs all of you to set up. You all merely need to set it up according to this diagram I’ve drawn,” Chu Feng did not explain in great detail. However, he had a confident expression the entire time.

“Everyone, a spirit formation like that is simply child’s play. How could it possibly undo Grandmaster Kai Hong’s grand defensive formation?”

“Furthermore, although the spirit formation Chu Feng proposed possesses very weak power, it requires an enormous amount of spirit power. If you all are to assist him in setting up that spirit formation, you will definitely exhaust an enormous amount of spirit power.”

“Could it be that you all are truly willing to exhaust your spirit power for a completely useless spirit formation?” The World Spiritist Saintess began to sow dissension.

“This...” At that moment, the Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists started to hesitate.

“If this spirit formation of mine is unable to undo the grand defensive formation, I, Chu Feng, am willing to have you all handle my life as you wish,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng’s words shocked the crowd.

Confident, he was truly confident. He was so confident that he was willing to put his life at stake.

“Ridiculous! Did you think your life to be very valuable? You are but a mere Half Martial Ancestor. There are people at your level of cultivation all over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Not to mention a single life, even a hundred of your lives would not suffice for these grand world spiritists to exhaust their spirit power,” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

“Regardless of whether or not my life is valuable, I dare to gamble with it. What about you, do you dare to gamble with your life?” Chu Feng asked the World Spiritist Saintess.

“What?” The World Spiritist Saintess was somewhat at a loss.

“I’m saying that I’ll gamble with you. If my spirit formation is unable to open that grand defensive formation, my life shall be yours.”

“However, if my spirit formation is able to undo the grand defensive formation, your life shall be mine.”

“Do you dare to accept my gamble?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ridiculous! Why must I gamble with you?” The World Spiritist Saintess sneered.

“Weren’t you firmly certain that I would be unable to undo that

grand defensive formation? If you're so certain, then why do you not dare to gamble with me?" Chu Feng continued.

"What utter nonsense!" The World Spiritist Saintess had a difficult expression. The reason for that was because she truly did not dare to gamble with Chu Feng.

"If you're scared, then you're scared. Stop trying to find an excuse," Zhao Hong remarked.

"T-that's right. S-since you are n-not certain that m-my brother is u-unable to undo the s-spirit formation, it m-means that you a-are trying to m-mislead the public w-with lies. You a-are truly despicable," Wang Qiang insulted.

"Seniors, I, Chu Feng, am actually able to undo the spirit formation myself. If you all do not believe me, and fear that you will end up wasting your spirit power, allow me to do it myself then," After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to set up his spirit formation.

"This..." At that moment, those world spiritists were at a loss for what to say.

Like the World Spiritist Saintess, they did not believe the spirit formation Chu Feng had told them to set up would be able to undo the grand defensive formation.

After all, the spirit formations they had used earlier, including the one that the World Spiritist Saintess had set up, were several hundred times more brilliant than the spirit formation Chu Feng had proposed.

When even they failed, how could Chu Feng's spirit formation possibly be able to succeed?

As for the other reason why they did not want to help, it was something that the World Spiritist Saintess had mentioned.

That was, although the spirit formation Chu Feng proposed was very weak, it would consume an enormous amount of spirit power.

Before undoing the grand defensive formation, before obtaining Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance and treasures, no one was willing to exhaust their strength for no reason, much less on a spirit formation that they felt to be destined to fail.

"Chu Feng, I'll help you," Zhao Hong walked over and began to help Chu Feng set up his spirit formation.

"M-me too," Wang Qiang also walked over to assist Chu Feng.

"Those two brats are actually also Immortal-cloak World Spiritists?!"

When Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong unleashed their spirit power, the crowd present were all extremely surprised.

They already knew that Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. However, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were people that they'd never heard of before.

That said, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were extremely rare. Countless world spiritists trained their entire lives, but never managed to become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.

Generally, all those that were capable of becoming Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were individuals that had obtained great attainments in world spirit techniques. As such, how could they possibly be people of the younger generation?

Chu Feng, a member of the younger generation, becoming an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist was already something that had shaken the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Yet now, Chu Feng's two friends were actually also Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. How could the crowd not be astonished?

At that moment, not to mention the others, even the World Spiritist Saintess, who greatly detested Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, had a change in expression, revealing a serious gaze.

As matters stood, she had no choice but to take Chu Feng, Wang

Qiang and Zhao Hong seriously.

If a single genius was not something worthy of making her afraid, then three geniuses would be something that she would have to take very seriously.

“It’s useless. Although that spirit formation of yours is extremely weak, it consumes an enormous amount of spirit power. With the cultivation the three of you possess, you simply do not possess sufficient spirit power to finish setting up that spirit formation,” The World Spiritist Saintess declared.

Hearing those words, the crowd began to nod. It was true that the spirit formation consumed an enormous amount of spirit power. Even for the Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present, they would have to exhaust a great amount of spirit power too. As such, there was no need to mention how Chu Feng and his two friends, three mere brats, would not be able to successfully set up the spirit formation.

“There’s no need for you all to worry,” Zhao Hong said.

“T-that’s right. W-whether or not w-we succeed d-does not concern you all,” Wang Qiang said mockingly.

“Truly a bunch that doesn’t appreciate other’s kind intentions,” At that moment, many people revealed discontent. No matter what, both Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were people of the younger generation. As such, they would naturally be unhappy for the two of them to speak to them in such a manner.

As for Chu Feng, he did not even utter a word. Instead, he was completely focused on setting up that spirit formation.

After an hour passed, all those people that were feeling pessimistic of the outcome had a change in expression.

Logically, to set up that spirit formation, after an hour passed, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong should have exhausted nearly all of their spirit power.

However, at that moment, it would appear that Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang still had an abundant amount of spirit power.

The most important aspect was that it was not only Chu Feng himself, as both Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang also still had an abundant amount of spirit power.

“Genius world spiritists. They are truly genius world spiritists,” Many of the Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present began to utter praise.

While they were also Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, and possessed cultivations much superior to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, they knew very well that the amount of spirit power that they had was greatly inferior to the amount the Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that spirit formation Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were setting up suddenly blossomed with light.

“Success, they actually succeeded,” When Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong successfully set up that spirit formation, the crowd all revealed expressions of disbelief.

The reason for that was because what Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had accomplished was something they had deemed to be impossible.

“Don’t say that I am pouring cold water on you all. Even though you all have set up that spirit formation using all of your strength, it is still useless. After all, that spirit formation will not be able to undo that grand spirit formation,” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

“A pity,” At the same time, other people also began to sigh. Although Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong possessed spirit



power much more abundant than ordinary people, the crowd still did not think highly of the spirit formation they'd managed to set up.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, with Chu Feng controlling the spirit formation, the spirit formation was activated.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

After that spirit formation was activated, many rays of light shot out of it

At that moment, the crowd felt even more certain that the spirit formation would be useless.

The reason for that was because those lights were simply too weak. It would be impossible for them to breach the grand defensive formation. They felt that it was simply akin to striking a stone with an egg.

“This... how could this be?”

However, the very next moment, those world spiritists that felt Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's efforts to be useless were all tongue-tied with wide open mouths. They were completely stunned.

The reason for that was because the lights shot out by that spirit formation actually managed to easily penetrate the grand defensive formation.

# Chapter 2346 – Dismember Into Ten Thousand Pieces

---

Before the gazes of the crowd, Chu Feng's spirit formation began to fuse with that grand defensive formation.

Although the fusion appeared to be very mild and gentle, it was actually a grand battle of spirit formations.

“Crack~~~”

“Snap~~~”

After being frantically attacked by the spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up, the grand defensive formation that was originally impregnable began to let out cracking sounds.

“Rumble~~~”

Soon afterward, a loud explosion rumbled, and that grand defensive formation collapsed.

Success. The spirit formation that Chu Feng had set up managed to successfully undo Grandmaster Kai Hong's grand defensive formation.

“He actually succeeded?”

“That lousy spirit formation actually managed to shatter such a powerful grand defensive formation?”

Seeing that scene with their very own eyes, many of the world spiritists present revealed expressions of disbelief. The reason for that was because what had happened was truly unimaginable, simply unreasonable.

“Although I do not know world spirit techniques, I presume that this might be what they mean by prescribing the right medicine for the illness. Although the defensive formation Grandmaster Kai Hong left was very powerful, little friend Chu Feng evidently saw

through its weakness. That is why he managed to destroy it with a single try,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

Hearing what Grandmaster Prophet said, admiration appeared in the gazes with which the crowd looked at Chu Feng. However, their astonishment did not lessen.

After all, that grand defensive formation was something that even the Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists present were unable to break.

Yet now, it had been destroyed by Chu Feng.

In fact, it was not only them who were astonished. Even Chu Feng felt quite astonished. If it wasn't for the fact that he had managed to see through that grand defensive formation immediately after arriving here, he would not have thought that such a powerful spirit formation would be undone by such a simple formation.

Of course, although the spirit formation was simple, it had required an enormous amount of spirit power.

Fortunately Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong all possessed much more spirit power than ordinary individuals. Else, it would truly be difficult for them undo that grand defensive formation even if they were to join hands.

Thinking about it, Chu Feng took a glance at Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. He truly never expected that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong would have as enormous an amount of spirit power as himself.

“It would seem this stutterer and this demonic woman truly cannot be looked down upon,” Even Her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself, and started to praise them.

“Creak, creak, creak~~~”

Right at that moment, noises began to sound from the coffin.

At that moment, the expressions of the crowd all grew serious. They all turned their gazes to the coffin.

The reason for that was because the coffin was currently opening by itself.

Under the gazes of the crowd, the coffin finally opened completely. Then, a figure appeared before the crowd's line of sight.

"How could this be?"

After seeing the figure from the coffin, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and everyone else revealed stunned expressions.

This was especially true for Chu Feng. At that moment, his heart was wavering.

The reason for that was because the figure that had appeared before them was a child. Furthermore, that child was none other than Xiaoshi.

It was the boy who had told Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong about how to obtain the cloaks.

"It's actually him?"

Right at that moment, someone from among the crowd blurted out in astonishment. Judging from the expressions of the crowd, they evidently also knew of Xiaoshi.

"Xiaoshi, you are the Gate Opening Key?" Chu Feng asked. He knew that it was not a coincidence for Xiaoshi to appear here.

Adding on to the assistance Xiaoshi had provided Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong with, as well as the secrets that he knew, it was very obvious that Xiaoshi possessed an inseparable relationship with the remnants. The best explanation would be that Xiaoshi was that so-called Gate Opening Key.

"That's right. I am the Gate Opening Key that Grandmaster Kai Hong left here. Only I am able to open the entrance gate behind

me,” Xiaoshi said with a beaming smile.

“Little friend Chu Feng, you actually know that child’s name?” Someone asked curiously upon hearing Chu Feng mentioning Xiaoshi’s name.

“Actually, all of you had the opportunity to know my name. My clones were present at the various entrances of the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.”

“However, none of you all believed in me. In fact, none of you all were willing to help me. That is why you all missed the opportunity.”

“As for the three of them, they chose to help me. As such... only the three of them were able to undo this grand defensive formation,” Xiaoshi said to the crowd.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and the others all came to a sudden realization. Chu Feng finally realized why he was able to see through the grand defensive formation. Evidently... it was all caused by Xiaoshi.

Merely, compared to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, the rest of the people present had embarrassed expressions on their faces.

That was because it was as Xiaoshi had said, they had indeed all met Xiaoshi before. Merely, none of them had bothered to concern themselves with a child like him.

Suddenly, Xiaoshi said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, go ahead and do it.”

“Go ahead and do it? Do what?” Chu Feng asked.

“Kill me. Only by ending my life will I be able to transform into the key to open the entrance. Else, you will not be able to enter it,” Xiaoshi said.

“No, how could I kill you for the sake of a treasure?” Chu Feng

shook his head.

Although they had merely encountered one another once, although Chu Feng knew that the purpose of Xiaoshi's existence was to open that gate, Xiaoshi was a friend in Chu Feng's eyes. Chu Feng was unable to do something like killing his friend in exchange for treasures.

“Go ahead and kill me. The purpose of my existence has always been to open that gate. It is the responsibility that I hold. Today, I am finally able to fulfill my duty.”

“Furthermore, the things Grandmaster Kai Hong left behind are useful to you all,” Xiaoshi said.

“Is there no other alternative other than killing you?” Chu Feng asked.

“None,” Xiaoshi said.

“Then, I choose to give up,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, Xiaoshi's expression changed. Overflowing emotions appeared in his clear eyes.

However, Xiaoshi was not swayed. He insisted on the decision that he had made. Thus, he said to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, “Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong, the two of you do it.”

Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang glanced at one another. However, neither of them responded to Xiaoshi. Evidently... the two of them also did not plan to kill Xiaoshi.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly arrived before Xiaoshi with lightning speed.

It was the World Spiritist Saintess. Not only did the World Spiritist Saintess arrive before Xiaoshi, her hand had also penetrated Xiaoshi.

“Stop!!!” Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all greatly

alarmed by that scene.

However, everything was too late. By the time Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong managed to react, Xiaoshi's body had been destroyed. He had died by the World Spiritist Saintess's hand.

The very next moment, a two meter long sword-like key appeared in the World Spiritist Saintess's hand.

Evidently, that was the Gate Opening Key that Xiaoshi had turned into.

“You damned bastard! I'll kill you!”

Seeing Xiaoshi being killed by the World Spiritist Saintess, violent rage emerged in Chu Feng's eyes instantly causing boundless killing intent to immediately envelop the area.

“What a joke. You want to kill me? You think that someone like you is capable of doing that?” The World Spiritist Saintess smiled with contempt. No matter what, she was a rank seven Martial Ancestor. Thus, she did not place Chu Feng in her eyes at all.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's arms flashed with light. After the two rays of light were shot forth, they turned into two crystal giants that stood before Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

“Woosh~~~”

Immediately afterward, two more rays of light flew out and turned into two more crystal giants.

It was Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. The two of them had also unleashed their crystal giants.

“Those are?”

“Could it be that Chu Feng and his friends were able to reach this

place by relying on those?”

Upon seeing the four crystal giants, the expressions of the crowd all changed. After all, the aura emitted by the crystal giants were those of peak Martial Ancestors.

“You all, you all actually possess those things?!!!”

At that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess’s expression turned pale. Panic filled her face. The reason for that was because she had truly never expected for Chu Feng and the others to possess that sort of thing.

Most importantly, those four crystal giants all possessed the ability to easily kill her.

“Dismember her into ten thousand pieces!” Chu Feng said with rage fuming between gritted teeth.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The next moment, the four crystal giants flew toward the World Spiritist Saintess with overwhelming destructive power akin to four death gods.



# Chapter 2347 – Must Take Revenge

---

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when the crystal giant was about to approach the World Spiritist Saintess, the key that Xiaoshi had turned into emitted a layer of light that covered the World Spiritist Saintess.

“Boom~~~”

Following closely after that, the four crystal giant’s powerful fists ferociously smashed onto that layer of light.

“Boom~~~”

In an instant, surging energy ripples began to scatter in all directions. The might of the attack was so powerful that it seemed to be capable of devouring everything.

The energy ripples were so powerful that they were capable of instantly killing Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Fortunately, there were many powerful experts present. Before the energy ripples could approach, they were blocked by peak Martial Ancestor-level experts.

However, to the crowd’s surprise, even after a series of attacks from the Martial Ancestor-level crystal giants, that layer of light remained completely undamaged.

Not only did that layer of light protect the World Spiritist Saintess, it had also managed to block the attacks from peak Martial Ancestors.

“Damn it!”

At that moment, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were tightly clenching their fists.

They were already able to tell that layer of light was no small matter. Unless there was a True Immortal-level expert present, it

was likely no one would be able to breach it.

“Hahaha. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, regardless of how powerful your methods might be, you still can’t kill me.”

“Oh, that’s right. I nearly forgot, it seems that this Gate Opening Key possessed quite a relationship with you. For you to be unwilling to kill him, it would seem that he should be your friend, right?”

“Unfortunately for you, your friend is currently helping me. Hahahaha.”

“You grew furious because your friend was killed. However, that friend of yours instead decided to help me. I truly wonder, how are you feeling right now?” The World Spiritist Saintess laughed mockingly. Her appearance was truly one of someone lost in joy, someone utterly shameless.

“Chu Feng, catch,” Right at that moment, Zhao Hong tossed the sack she carried behind her back to Chu Feng.

Upon receiving that sack, the corner of Chu Feng’s mouth lifted into a strange curve. He said to the World Spiritist Saintess, “Did you really think that there’s nothing I can do about you?”

“You’re implying that you can do something?” The World Spiritist Saintess laughed with contempt. She did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to do anything to her.

“Get the hell out here!!!”

Chu Feng opened the sack and tossed it onto the ground. Immediately, four fat sphere-like giants rolled out from the sack.

Upon seeing those four, the expression on the World Spiritist Saintess’ face immediately changed. The pride that she had displayed earlier disappeared completely, and was instead replaced with astonishment.

The reason for that was because those four sphere-like things

were her sons, the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

Upon seeing their mother, the Four World Spiritist Emperors reacted as if they had seen their savior. Immediately, they shouted, “Lady Mother, save us!”

“Lay on the ground!” Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted. Then, the four crystal giants emitted overwhelming oppressive might, and forced the Four World Spiritist Emperors onto the ground like four dying dogs.

In response, the World Spiritist Saintess shouted, “Stop!”

“That is not up to you to decide,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, exactly what do you want?” The World Spiritist Saintess asked anxiously.

“Hand over the Gate Opening Key. Else, I will take the dog lives of your sons.”

“You dare?!!!” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

“Kill them,” Chu Feng declared.

Once those words were said, the four crystal giants immediately unleashed overwhelming killing intent.

“Stop!” The World Spiritist Saintess shouted. At the same time, she tossed out the Gate Opening Key that she held.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed the Gate Opening Key.

At that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess lost the layer of defensive power that had previously covered her.

However, compared to her own safety, the World Spiritist Saintess was more worried about the safety of her four sons. Her body shifted, and she arrived before the Four World Spiritist Emperors, shielding them behind her.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng’s heart was moved.

Even though the World Spiritist Saintess was a shameless and despicable individual that would not shrink from any crime, what she displayed right now was the appearance of a mother who was willing to give up everything to protect her children.

Motherly love. Regardless of what sort of individual the World Spiritist Saintess might be, she revealed the greatness of a mother to her four sons.

At that moment, Chu Feng was touched. After all, what he wanted to feel the most in his entire life was motherly love.

At that moment, Chu Feng recalled the mother that he did not know of.

“Lady Mother, quickly, avenge us and kill those three animals!”

“Those crystal giants were supposed to be ours. It was them who snatched them from us,” Ignorant of the situation, the Four World Spiritist Emperors began to cry with weeping tears toward their mother, demanding that she avenge them.

“Shut up!” The World Spiritist Saintess shouted in a disappointed manner. However, she did not punish her sons too excessively. Instead, she said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, if you want to kill someone, then go ahead and kill me. This matter is unrelated to them. Please spare them.”

“As you wish,” said Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. As they spoke, they planned to order their crystal giants to attack.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly shouted, “Wait!”

“What’s wrong?” Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were confused.

“Let it pass. We can settle this debt in the future. Let’s spare their lives today,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn?” Chu Feng’s words shocked not only Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, but even the bystanders.

They were all able to tell that Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had thoroughly set up grudges with the World Spiritist Saintess.

If Chu Feng did not seize this opportunity to kill the World Spiritist Saintess, she would become a danger in the future.

The people present were all shrewd and ruthless individuals. If they were Chu Feng, they would definitely not leave the World Spiritist Saintess alive either. Thus, they were confused as to why Chu Feng, who was overwhelming with killing intent, would decide to not kill the World Spiritist Saintess now.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? You cannot become soft-hearted at a time like this,” Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“Chu Feng, give me a reason why I shouldn’t kill her,” Zhao Hong said.

“There are two reasons why I will spare her today.”

“Firstly, we only managed to make her hand over the Gate Opening Key and lose the ability to protect herself because she was eager to protect her sons.”

“Secondly, we only managed to obtain the crystal giants that are capable of killing her this quickly because we utilized the spirit formation that she set up.”

“I do not want to kill her today because I do not want to take advantage of her,” Chu Feng said.

“B-brother, s-since that’s the case, I’ll do as you say,” Wang Qiang said frankly. At that moment, Zhao Hong did not bother to say anymore.

However, the hearts of the people present were all moved. They finally realized that Chu Feng was sparing the World Spiritist Saintess not because he was being lenient. Rather, it was because he was someone who possessed a baseline and principles.

Thus, at that moment, the crowd came to understand Chu Feng's reason for releasing the tiger back into the mountain. At that moment, they felt more admiration toward Chu Feng. This admiration that they felt was unrelated to Chu Feng's talent. Rather, it was toward Chu Feng's courage.

After all, compared to killing an enemy, sparing one's enemy at the time when one could kill them was something even more courageous.

That was something that not even the grand characters present might be able to accomplish.

"Chu Feng, don't you think that I will be grateful toward you just because you've decided not to kill me."

"Those crystal giants are merely spirit formations. Sooner or later, they will disappear. While they are able to protect you for now, they are unable to protect you forever. The next time we meet, I will definitely not spare you," The World Spiritist Saintess threatened with a cold voice. She displayed the hatred that she felt toward Chu Feng without hiding anything.

As for Chu Feng, he started to smile lightly. He said to her, "Rest assured, just because I spared you today does not mean that I will spare you forever. I will definitely avenge Xiaoshi!!!"

# Chapter 2348 – Finally Meeting The Grandmaster

---

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he held the Gate Opening Key and arrived at the gate.

Sigh~~~

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was planning to open the gate, Chu Feng suddenly heard a voice transmission. That sigh was actually from the Gate Opening Key.

“Xiaoshi?” Chu Feng was startled. The reason for that was because that sigh was simply Xiaoshi’s voice.

“Originally, I had planned to personally kill that damned bitch while opening the gate. However, it would appear that I can only rely on you to avenge me in the future,” Sure enough, Xiaoshi’s voice sounded from the Gate Opening Key again.

“Xiaoshi, you’re alive?” Chu Feng asked through voice transmission.

“I am already dead. However, before opening the gate, I possess some more uses. However, that doesn’t matter anymore. Let me just open the gate for you. Remember, there is still a dangerous spirit formation behind the gate.”

“However, as long as the three of you wear those cloaks, you will be able to walk past the dangers. After passing through that spirit formation, you will reach Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants,” Xiaoshi’s voice sounded again.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the Gate Opening Key automatically left Chu Feng’s palm and landed on the gate.

As light shone from it, the two of them fused together.

Immediately after that, rumbles could be heard. The indestructible gate started to slowly open.

At that moment, the people present all revealed excited expressions.

The crowd had been in that place for a very long time. The reason why they were unable to proceed was all because of that gate.

And now, that gate was finally opening. Furthermore, the Gate Opening Key had personally declared that Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance was behind that gate.

Thus, the crowd were all extremely excited. One by one, they were all eagerly waiting for the gate to be opened so that they could rush into it and scramble for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures and inheritance.

“That... that is?!”

However, after that indestructible gate opened, the expressions of joy on the crowd's face instantly froze.

At that moment, their fiery expressions turned extremely cold.

The reason for that was because what was behind that gate was not Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures. Rather, it was a sea of flames, a sea of blue flames.

The blue flames were surging in waves like countless blue fire dragons galloping around.

Although the crowd did not feel a distinct sensation of heat from the blue flames, the crowd felt an aura of death.

This meant that those flames were extremely frightening, and that ordinary people were simply unable to pass through them.

“That sea of flames is truly too frightening. Not to mention us, wouldn't even a rank one True Immortal be turned into dust upon entering it?”



“How could this be? Wasn’t it decided that Grandmaster Kai Hong’s treasures and inheritance were behind the gate?” At that moment, the crowd felt extreme despair. The reason for that was because they were already certain that, with their strength, it would be impossible for them to pass through that sea of flames.

However, the sea of flames just so happened to seal off their path forward.

“Heh...” At that moment, a cold smile emerged on the World Spiritist Saintess’s face. It was a mocking smile.

The way she saw it, even though the entrance gate had opened, the only people who would be able to obtain the inheritance and gain the most benefits from this would be Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, who held the Gate Opening Key.

However, now that the gate had opened and the Gate Opening Key had disappeared, what appeared before them were not treasures, but rather a fierce blue sea of flames.

No one present was able to pass through that sea of flames. Thus, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were evidently also blocked by the flames.

This caused the World Spiritist Saintess, who had been thwarted repeatedly, to feel better.

“Y-you, w-what a-are you laughing about?” Wang Qiang said in a displeased manner.

“I’m laughing at you all. So what if you’ve obtained the Gate Opening Key and opened the gate? In the end, aren’t you all also blocked like us?” The World Spiritist Saintess declared what she thought in her heart without trying to conceal anything.

“I fear that we’ll have to disappoint you,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, you have a way?” Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang asked in unison.

“Use the cloaks,” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a cloak and draped it over himself.

At that moment, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong understood Chu Feng’s intention. The two of them also took out a cloak and draped it over themselves.

As for those cloaks, they were naturally the cloaks that they’d obtained from Xiaoshi’s instructions. There was also no need to doubt the effects of the cloaks.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were able to reach this place this quickly all because of their cloaks. Wearing the cloaks, they were truly able to avoid all of the traps and mechanisms in the remnants.

“What are they doing?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong all wearing their cloaks, many people revealed confused expressions.

“Those cloaks!!!” However, at that moment, the expressions of the world spiritists present all changed. They were able to tell that the cloaks Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were wearing were no ordinary cloaks. Rather, they were treasures.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong suddenly disappeared.

“Where’d they go? How did they disappear?” Someone cried out in alarm.

“No, they didn’t disappear. Rather, those cloaks are capable of concealing them,” A Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist declared.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, ear-piercing snarls sounded from the edge of the sea of flames. At the same time, flames began to surge

toward either direction, revealing a path in the sea of flames.

“They entered?” Seeing that scene, the crowd were all astonished.

“It seems that those cloaks are not only able to conceal them, they are also able to withstand that sea of flames,” That Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist added.

At that moment, the eyes of the crowd present were all brimming with admiration and jealousy.

They all wished to be able to pass through that sea of flames and reach Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants like Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Unfortunately for them, they did not possess a cloak. Thus, they did not dare to take half a step into the sea of flames.

“World Spiritist Saintess, you are fortunate to have not made a bet with little friend Chu Feng this time. Else, you’d have lost again,” The Immortal Sword School’s Elder Duan Chunchang said to the World Spiritist Saintess.

“Damn it!” The World Spiritist Saintess had an unreconciled expression. However, other than feeling unreconciled, there was nothing she could do.

“Grandmaster Prophet is truly amazing. Your prophecy actually managed to completely come true. Little friend Chu Feng is indeed the individual fated to this remnant,” Elder Duan Chunchang said.

At that time, the others also cast their gazes toward Grandmaster Prophet with admiration filled eyes.

As matters stood, Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy had once again come true.

“Haha...” Grandmaster Prophet did not bother much with the admiring gazes from the crowd. He only chuckled. Merely, his chuckle was brimming with pride.

At the moment when the crowd was praising Grandmaster Prophet for how amazing he was, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had already managed to pass through the sea of flames. They had reached a vast space.

It was a grand hall constructed with blue crystals.

The construction style of that grand hall could truly be described with the term 'superlative craftsmanship.' Even though Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, it would still be impossible for them to construct such an exquisite and imposing palace.

However, compared to how imposing and grand that palace hall was, the gazes of the three of them were all captivated by a figure before them.

That person was an old man. He wore a blue gown, and had his hands behind his back.

Although he was old, he possessed jade-like skin, and there was not the slightest trace of a wrinkle on his face. Merely, his head of white hair and his face full of white beard betrayed his status as an elderly individual.

At that moment, the old man had a smile on his face as he looked at Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Although the old man had an amiable appearance, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all extremely nervous.

The same thought came to the minds of Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

That was, they felt that the person before them might be Grandmaster Kai Hong.

Merely, what appeared before them was not a coffin, nor was it a corpse. Rather, it was a vivid and life-like old man who gave off a threatening aura.

Could it be that the legendary Grandmaster Kai Hong was still alive?

# Chapter 2349 – Not Fight With One's Brother

---

With questions in his heart, Chu Feng respectfully greeted the old man before him and then asked, “Senior, might you be Grandmaster Kai Hong?”

“Woosh~~~”

However, that old man did not answer Chu Feng's question. Instead, he waved his sleeve and caused the area behind him to shine with light. A grand formation appeared there.

That spirit formation was very powerful defensively. However, it was transparent. Thus, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were able to see the situation inside the grand formation.

There were three items inside that spirit formation.

The first item was a sword. The sword was seven feet long and five inches wide. It was entirely red in color. However, the red was not a blood-like crimson. Rather, it was more bright red, and seemed to have been constructed from a gem.

The gem was very special. On it were feather-like veined patterns. It was very beautiful.

While the appearance of the sword made it appear to have been made from a gem, the sword was not only tough, but also extremely sharp. Even though the sword was separated by the grand spirit formation, its grand and domineering aura of a ruler could still be felt.

Ancestral Armament. Not only was that sword an Ancestral Armament, it was also an extremely high quality Ancestral Armament. In fact, the quality of that Ancestral Armament surpassed even Chu Feng's Stormwind Edge.

When the Stormwind Edge was already a top quality Ancestral

Armament, one could very well imagine how high the quality of that sword was.

That Ancestral Armament sword was placed on top of an exquisite stone platform. Several large words were carved on the stone platform: Phoenix Feather Sword!!!

As for the second weapon, it was a meter-long blade. To be exact, it looked more like a cleaver.

The reason for that was because it resembled ordinary steel, and looked just like an ordinary cleaver expanded in size.

Although the appearance of that weapon was very unremarkable, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all able to tell that it was also an Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it had a quality on par with the Stormwind Edge.

Wang Qiang stared at the cleaver-like weapon. With a very excited expression, he said, “My, I l-like t-this weapon.” It was as if he had just seen the weapon that he yearned for even in his dreams.

“That’s your lowly taste,” Zhao Hong said with contempt.

“Wife, w-what’s wrong? C-could it be th-that the w-weapon that I am fond of is n-not good?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Look at that name,” Zhao Hong pointed at the weapon.

That Ancestral Armament was also placed on top of a stone platform. Its name was also carved onto the stone platform: Vegetable Cutting Edge.

“T-the hell! W-what t-the hell is th-this? Who g-gave such a g-good weapon s-such an filthy n-name?” Black lines rolled down Wang Qiang’s forehead.

At that moment, Chu Feng had already cast his gaze to the third weapon, the final weapon.

The final weapon was a block of four-sided metal. There was no

blade edge, nor was there a form. In fact, it did not even emit the aura of an Ancestral Armament.

It simply did not resemble a weapon. At the very most, it would be considered to be an incomplete weapon.

However, that weapon just so happened to have a name too: Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

"The Phoenix Feather Sword was created with the Phoenix Feather Stone as its core component. A total of a thousand years was spent to create it. It is this old man's best work. Among Ancestral Armaments, it is the best among the best."

"The Vegetable Cutting Edge was created by assembling many exquisite stones. Originally, it served as my kitchen knife when I had idle time. However, over the years, I grew fond of it. As such, I began to polish it, and gradually turned it into an Ancestral Armament. Then, I spent a hundred years to improve it and turn it into a top quality Ancestral Armament."

"The Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was originally a piece of stone that contained the Divine Dragon's blood. Although the Divine Dragon's blood was incomparably precious, the stone that contained it was, unfortunately, only an ordinary stone. Even though I had meticulously polished it for many years, I was still unable to forge it into an Ancestral Armament."

"However, those three weapons were the most beloved weapons of my life."

"I have hidden a secret in each of those three weapons. Upon knowing that secret, one will be able to learn about a location filled with treasures. That said, the quality of the treasures are all different."

"The Phoenix Feather Sword contains the most optimal treasures, whereas the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler contains the worst. The three of you can choose one by one. Who shall start



first?” After that old man finished saying those words, an opening appeared in the spirit formation behind him. People were able to enter the spirit formation now.

At that moment, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong all came to know that even though the old man before them was so vivid and lifelike and emitted such an imposing aura, he was likely not a living person. Rather, he was not even a strand of remaining awareness. Rather, he was only a spirit formation left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong.

Likely, this spirit formation had special settings that made it say different things based on the amount of people that had arrived here.

However, there was a coincidence. That was, the weapons left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong, the so-called treasures, just so happened to number three.

“Who will choose first?” Seeing that Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong did not respond, the old man urged again.

“I’ll choose first,” Chu Feng said.

“S-sure, you’ll c-choose first,” Wang Qiang agreed frankly.

However, compared to Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong revealed a trace of a strange expression in her eyes.

Likely, she was somewhat dissatisfied. After all, those three weapons were good and bad. The person who got to choose their weapon first would be privileged to choose from among the three first.

Even though she was feeling somewhat dissatisfied, Zhao Hong did not say anything. As such, Chu Feng walked into the spirit formation.

“Hey! Have you gone foolish? Take that Phoenix Feather Sword!” Her Lady Queen’s voice suddenly sounded.

The reason for that was because she was surprised to discover that Chu Feng did not walk toward the best quality Phoenix Feather Sword after entering the spirit formation. Rather, he was walking toward the worst quality Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler that could not even be considered to be an Ancestral Armament.

As Her Lady Queen knew Chu Feng very well, she already knew what he was thinking.

However, this was a very rare opportunity. Her Lady Queen did not want Chu Feng to miss such an opportunity.

Thus, Her Lady Queen continued, "Chu Feng, what do you shoulder? You should know the best. Compared to Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, you need that Phoenix Feather Sword even more. While it is fine for you to hand the weapon to them, you must obtain the treasures."

"Eggy, how could I not understand what you're telling me? However, Wang Qiang is my brother, and Zhao Hong could be considered to be my friend too."

"Regardless of how much I, Chu Feng, need the treasures, regardless of how much I need cultivation resources, regardless of how impatient I am to increase my cultivation, I cannot scramble against my brother or bicker with my friend."

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he disregarded Her Lady Queen and walked toward the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and lifted it in his hand.

"Buzz~~~"

Once the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler entered his hand, information immediately entered his mind.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to feel both grief and happiness.

The reason for that was because what he had obtained was not a treasure. Rather, it was a map.

The reason why he was delighted was because he was able to guess that that map was the location of the treasure.

The reason why Chu Feng was feeling grief was because the location the map indicated was not only the area where the Kong Heavenly Clan was located, it was also within the Kong Heavenly Clan's territory.

What sort of place was the Kong Heavenly Clan? It was one of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

In other words, if Chu Feng wanted to obtain that treasure, he would have to brave enormous dangers.

'Sure enough, there's nothing good with easily obtained things,' Chu Feng laughed mockingly in his heart. Then, he placed the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler into his Cosmos Sack and walked out of the spirit formation.

"B-brother, I t-truly never expected t-that your t-taste would b-be inferior to mine. Haha," Wang Qiang said with a laugh.

Compared to Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong did not say anything. Merely, the gaze with which she looked at Chu Feng was filled with surprise.

After all, she was no fool. Thus, she knew that it was not that there was an issue with Chu Feng's taste. Rather, he had deliberately chosen the worst one, and left the good weapons for her and Wang Qiang.

# Chapter 2350 – Greatly Expanding One's Horizons

---

“The remaining weapons are up for the two of you to choose. Go on,” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong while smiling.

“I-I'll choose f-first,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he entered that spirit formation.

As Chu Feng had anticipated, Wang Qiang did not choose that best quality weapon, the Phoenix Feather Sword. Instead, he chose the Vegetable Cutting Edge.

Following closely behind, Zhao Hong also entered the spirit formation. She had managed to have her wish fulfilled, and obtained the weapon that she was most fond of, that Phoenix Feather Sword with a quality superior to Chu Feng's Stormwind Edge.

When she walked out of the spirit formation, Zhao Hong had a rare sweet smile on her face. It could be seen that she was very delighted to be able to obtain the weapon that she was most fond of.

“F-fucking hell. S-so those a-are the s-so called treasures? It turns out, we'll still have to find them ourselves. Furthermore, we d-don't e-even know what e-exactly the t-treasures are,” Wang Qiang cursed as he complained.

“It's the same for me. I'd assume that it's the same for you too, Chu Feng?” Zhao Hong asked Chu Feng,

“Mine is located in the Kong Heavenly Clan. What about you all?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mine i-is a-at a location c-called the D-Drought Demon's Damned Pond,” Wang Qiang said.

“The place that I need to go is called the Phoenix Flame City.

That seems to be a forbidden area in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zhao Hong said.

“Sure enough, they’re all different locations,” Chu Feng said. However, he was able to imagine that the locations Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong needed to go to seemed to be even more dangerous than his Kong Heavenly Clan. After all, merely by hearing the names of those two locations, Chu Feng knew that the places that they needed to go to were very dangerous.

“B-but, w-what about the inheritance? It’s c-clearly stated that there’s an inheritance h-here. Where’d it go?”

“Could it be t-that we’ll have t-to find the inheritance o-ourselves too?”

“F-fucking hell! T-this is t-truly too m-much of a f-fraud!” Wang Qiang started to swear.

“That’s true. What happened to the inheritances?” Her Lady Queen’s displeased voice echoed. After all, with all their trouble, the only benefit they were able to gain were the three weapons.

Such a situation might be alright for Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. After all, the two of them had obtained top quality Ancestral Armaments. However, what Chu Feng had obtained could not even be considered to be a weapon. As such, Her Lady Queen was feeling extremely displeased.

In fact, at that moment, Chu Feng also wanted to know exactly where the inheritance was.

Actually, compared to the so-called treasures, Chu Feng was more interested in Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance. That inheritance was what Chu Feng wanted to obtain the most.

The reason for that was because ever since Chu Feng had arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, experienced Golden Crane True Immortal’s abilities, fought against Daoist Gold Star and then befriended Zhao Hong, Chu Feng had felt more and more

certain that the many spirit formations that he had learned from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram were less than capable when placed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The reason for that was because the world spiritists here were truly powerful...

If he were to continue to rely on the spirit formations from the Nine Spirits Divine Diagram, it would likely be very difficult for Chu Feng to continue to survive in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He must obtain more powerful spirit formations. As such, Chu Feng wanted to obtain this Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance the most.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were discussing, that old man suddenly waved his sleeves and pointed his fingers toward the sky. He began to make an outline in the air.

At that moment, the weather began to change as a strong wind formed. Soon, on the space where that old man was making an outline...

A magnificent and bright diagram was completed.

“That is?” Upon seeing that spirit formation diagram, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's eyes all shone.

That spirit formation diagram was no ordinary diagram. It was currently reflecting some images.

A young figure appeared in the spirit formation diagram. It was a little boy. The boy grew up very quickly. Soon, he became a youngster. The youngster soon grew up into a young man. The images in the diagram were changing nonstop.

As Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all able to tell that the figure in the constantly changing scenes in the diagram was most likely Grandmaster Kai

Hong. Although the speed of the changing scenes was extremely fast, they were able to tell that the spirit formation diagram had roughly recorded the entire life of Grandmaster Kai Hong.

The transformation of that diagram grew faster and faster. In the blink of an eye, Grandmaster Kai Hong had grown from a child into an old man.

The current Grandmaster Kai Hong shown in the spirit formation diagram was already someone that was rarely matched in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, he was still growing stronger.

As Chu Feng had anticipated, Grandmaster Kai Hong became the number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, Grandmaster Kai Hong was somewhat distinctive from other experts.

For ordinary people, their strength was determined by their martial cultivation. While Grandmaster Kai Hong's martial cultivation was very powerful, and he had reached the True Immortal realm that very few people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm managed to reach, Grandmaster Kai Hong would never use martial skills when fighting against others. In fact, he would not even use his Ancestral Armaments. The only thing that he would use were his world spirit techniques.

Grandmaster Kai Hong was someone who relied on his world spirit techniques to become the number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was no wonder he was viewed as a legend by the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's later generations.

Through the spirit formation diagram before them, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were able to tell that even though Grandmaster Kai Hong had become the number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and was enjoying unsurpassed honor, he was no longer satisfied with staying in the

Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The reason for that was because his strength had surpassed everyone else in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Not only did his cultivation reach the Heavenly Immortal Realm, even his world spirit techniques had surpassed those of Immortal-cloaked world spiritists and entered a completely new realm, grasping even more powerful world spirit power.

Through the spirit formation diagram, Chu Feng came to know the name of the realm that Grandmaster Kai Hong's world spirit techniques had reached.

That was the Exalted-cloak World Spiritist, the utmost experts among world spiritists, for Exalted-cloak World Spiritists had grasped Exalted-level spirit power.

To Chu Feng's greatest surprise, that spirit formation diagram not only introduced the realm of world spiritists above Immortal-cloak, it also introduced the realm of world spiritists above Exalted-cloak.

Saint-cloak. Above Exalted-cloak World Spiritists were Saint-cloak World Spiritists. Those who were capable of becoming Saint-cloak World Spiritists were all sages. They were all extraordinary individuals akin to gods.

However, Saint-cloak was not the end for World Spiritists. Above Saint-cloak was a legendary realm, the true legend — God-cloak.

God-cloak World Spiritists grasped legendary God-level spirit power. They possessed strength akin to gods. An ordinary spirit formation from them was capable of destroying an entire world. A slaughtering formation from them would be able to destroy multiple worlds at once, bringing about massive destruction and death to a Starfield.

Powerful, they were truly powerful. If a God-cloak World Spiritist were to have the intent to kill, the small and weak beings



below them would not even know how they had died. That was the power of God-cloak World Spiritists.

If Saint-cloak World Spiritists were akin to gods, then God-cloak World Spiritists were actual gods. The power God-cloak World Spiritists had grasped allowed them to be able to dictate the lives of all living things.

“Amazing. This is truly a great broadening of my horizons. Never would I have imagined that world spiritists could become so powerful.”

“I wonder, are there martial cultivation realms as powerful as the God-cloak World Spiritist realm?” Chu Feng was filled with amazement. When he found out how powerful Saint-cloak and God-cloak World Spiritists were, he truly realized how weak and small he was.

He had also realized what the saying of ‘there’s heavens beyond the sky, and people beyond the person’ meant.

“There definitely will be,” Her Lady Queen said with certainty.

“Eggy, how do you know?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you still remember the pair of enormous hands that appeared in the sky of the Eastern Sea Region’s Everlasting Sea of Blood?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I do. How could I have forgotten it?” Chu Feng smiled meaningfully.

Even now, he would still recall the scene from that time and feel astonishment. The reason for that was because that scene was truly too disturbing.

A pair of enormous hands had appeared out of the highest of the heavens, from beyond the starry sky, and ripped apart the sky. It was a truly frightening sight.

At that time, Chu Feng had thought that it was an illusion.

However, when recalling the scene now, he felt that it was very realistic. The reason for that was because as he grew stronger, he became more and more certain that one would possess the ability to bring ruin upon the world once one's cultivation reached a certain level.

“That pair of hands appeared like someone using pure martial power to rip apart the sky. It did not resemble any spirit formation at all. Thus... the person who did that should be a martial cultivator.”

“With the power of the individual who did that, if that individual so desired, it should be possible for that individual to destroy an entire world,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Indeed. The scene that day was absolutely real. We saw it with our very own eyes,” Chu Feng grew more excited.

Since a martial cultivator was capable of doing something like that, God-cloak World Spiritists were likely not a legend. It was very possible that, in a certain area in the vast starry sky, there would be a God-cloak World Spiritist watching over everything.

# Chapter 2351 – Obtaining The Inheritance

---

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen said, “Chu Feng, quickly, continue watching it.”

Chu Feng looked back to the constantly changing spirit formation diagram. At that moment, he discovered that Grandmaster Kai Hong had already arrived at an Upper Realm. Furthermore, he was like a fish back in water in that Upper Realm. He began to give rise to wind and water.

When Grandmaster Kai Hong trained in that Upper Realm for a total of twenty thousand years, he finally broke through the Heavenly Immortal Realm and became a Martial Immortal. Furthermore, his cultivation continued to rapidly progress nonstop. His cultivation progressed so fast that there was a sign of him reaching peak Martial Immortal and breaking through to the Exalted Realm.

However, right at the moment when Grandmaster Kai Hong was widely recognized for his accomplishments, he encountered a young man. That young man was an exceptional genius and issued a challenge toward Grandmaster Kai Hong. That young man wanted to prove to everyone that the battle power from world spirit formations would forever be inferior to martial power.

As Grandmaster Kai Hong was an individual who had been unrivalled his entire life relying only on his world spirit techniques, he would naturally want to teach that inexperienced young man a lesson for provoking him.

However, Grandmaster Kai Hong was actually defeated in that battle. Grandmaster Kai Hong, who had been cultivating for over twenty thousand years, was actually defeated by a young man who had only, at the very most, had cultivated for over a dozen or maybe even only several years.

Perhaps because that young man left behind a very deep

impression toward him, Grandmaster Kai Hong left the name of that young man in this spirit formation diagram.

That young man was called Chu Hanxian.

“Chu Hanxian?!”

Upon seeing that name, the expressions of Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang both changed. The two of them remembered that name in their hearts.

The reason for that was because, based on the age of that young man when he was shown on the diagram, he would most likely still be alive now. As long as he was alive, then, with his heaven-defying strength, he must’ve grown up to become an extremely extraordinary individual. Not to mention an Upper Realm, he must’ve become a peak expert in an entire Starfield.

Compared to Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, Chu Feng’s heart was in even greater unrest.

The reason for that was because that young man’s name was his grandfather’s name.

“Could it be that that man is my grandfather?” Chu Feng’s heart was surging with emotions.

“It’s very possible. After all, judging from the timing of things, Grandmaster Kai Hong was defeated by that young man only over ten thousand years ago.”

“While ten thousand years might not be short, it cannot be considered to be long either. This is especially true for martial cultivators that have high levels of cultivation. For them, ten thousand years is not a long time at all.”

“Although the spirit formation diagram Grandmaster Kai Hong left behind did not mention which Upper Realm he arrived at, he most likely did not leave this Starfield. In other words, being in the same Starfield, it is possible for your grandfather to have arrived at the same Upper Realm that Grandmaster Kai Hong was in.”

“Most importantly, although there are a lot of people in this world that share the same name and surname, how many were capable of becoming Martial Immortal level experts in their youth?”

“Someone like that young man is truly an astonishing individual. As such, he does fit the image of your grandfather,” Her Lady Queen analyzed.

Actually, neither Chu Feng nor Her Lady Queen knew Chu Feng’s grandfather’s age. However, they both felt that only his grandfather was most fitting of an exceptional genius that appeared ten thousand years ago with the name of Chu Hanxian.

“My father declared that my grandfather possessed the strength to make our Chu Heavenly Clan become the ruler of our Starfield. It was only after he entered another Starfield that all contact with him was lost.”

“I feel that the person that defeated Grandmaster Kai Hong was most likely my grandfather.”

“Even if that person isn’t my grandfather, I feel that my grandfather would possess strength on par with that individual during his youth. Else, my father would not give such a high evaluation of my grandfather,” Chu Feng said in a very emotional manner.

In the past, Chu Feng only felt that his grandfather was very powerful. However, he had never really bothered to imagine exactly how powerful his grandfather was.

Yet now, after seeing Grandmaster Kai Hong’s experience, he truly realized what an actual heavenly genius, what an actual era’s demon-level genius was.

To be able to defeat a Martial Immortal-level expert in his youth, even if that person was not a Martial Immortal, he would definitely be a peak Heavenly Immortal.

Thinking about it, even though Chu Feng managed to move about unhindered in the Nine Provinces Continent in his youth, what level of cultivation did he possess?

The difference between the cultivation he possessed back then was akin to a drop of water and a vast sea when compared to a Martial Immortal. The difference between them was so great that they were simply impossible to be discussed alongside one another.

Looking at it this way, Chu Feng did not live up to his reputation as a genius at all. The reason for that was because, when compared to actual geniuses, he was truly too lacking.

“It seems that after Grandmaster Kai Hong was defeated by that Chu Hanxian, his heart received a setback. It was truly unfortunate. Grandmaster Kai Hong was actually also a very talented genius himself. It is truly unfortunate that he encountered a true demon-level genius,” Zhao Hong said with a sorrowful sigh.

The reason Zhao Hong declared that was because that spirit formation diagram was still changing. Several hundred years passed by in an instant. However, in those several hundred years, Grandmaster Kai Hong did not make any progress at all. Not only with his cultivation, he made no progress even in his expertise, his world spirit techniques.

This did not correspond with common sense. Thus, it was not only Zhao Hong who thought like that, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Her Lady Queen also thought that to be the case.

With that defeat, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s ego had been thwarted. As such, he began to have an unresolvable knot in his heart. He was unable to get out of the pit that he had fallen into. In the end, he ended up forfeiting his future prospects.

“F-frightening, t-too frightening. T-this is simply f-frightening to the extreme.”

“That y-young man, r-regardless of how ta-talented he might be, even if he were a-able to c-cultivate r-right after being born, h-he would have, a-at the very most, only c-cultivated for over a d-dozen years.”

“Y-yet, a p-person who had o-only cultivated for o-over a d-dozen years a-actually defeated a person w-who had c-cultivated for over t-twenty thousand years. T-this is s-simply too f-frightening! How c-could there b-be such a m-monster in this world? T-this w-world is s-simply too frightening. It p-possesses all sorts of existences!”

“W-with a d-demon-level ex-existence like him a-around, h-how could w-we possibly live i-in this world?” Wang Qiang said emotionally. He was feeling very sorrowful at that moment. He had realized that his talent, when compared to an actual demon-level character, was still far inferior.

“Sigh, Grandmaster Kai Hong has fallen,” Zhao Hong stared at the spirit formation diagram and sighed again.

Over a thousand years after Grandmaster Kai Hong was defeated by Chu Hanxian, he reached the limit of his lifespan. Unlike other individuals, he did not bother to enter closed-door training or find methods to extend his lifespan.

Instead, he quietly returned to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. His return was so subtle that no one knew that the person who had once shaken the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in the past had returned. Furthermore, no one knew that the Heavenly Immortal-level expert from back then had become a Martial Immortal. No one knew that the Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist from back then had become an Exalted-cloak World Spiritist.

Just like that, Grandmaster Kai Hong quietly returned. Even though his accomplishments had already turned into legends, he was not moved in the slightest. In fact, he did not even bother to meet his old friends. Instead, he arrived at the Extremely Remote

Unmarked Burial Mounds and set up his remnants here to quietly wait for his death. Just like that, the curtain dropped on a generation's legend.

However, different from what the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about, Grandmaster Kai Hong did not die thirty thousand years ago. Rather, he had died roughly ten thousand years ago.

“People who have been brought to me by fate. All that I’ve learned in my life is here. It will be shared with the three of you.”

Right at that moment, that old man suddenly spoke. As he spoke, the constantly-changing spirit formation diagram scattered. It turned into three rays of light that shot toward Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

“Puu~~~”

Once the light entered their bodies, Chu Feng and the others immediately closed their eyes. Then, their complexions started to change.

After roughly four hours passed, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong opened their eyes simultaneously. At that moment, the three of them all revealed joyous expressions.

“Thank you, Grandmaster Kai Hong.”

After that, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong looked to one another. In tacit agreement, the three of them all knelt onto the ground and respectfully bowed to that old man.

At that moment, they were firmly certain that this old man was Grandmaster Kai Hong.

As for the reason why the three of them were so cheerful, and even knelt and bowed to Grandmaster Kai hong to express their



thanks, it was because the three rays of light from earlier were Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance.

Grandmaster Kai Hong had split the world spirit techniques that he had learned in his entire life into three and imparted them to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong respectively.

## Chapter 2352 – Testing One’s Heart

---

In addition to being extremely talented, Grandmaster Kai Hong was actually also a very fortunate individual. That was the reason why he had managed to reach such grand accomplishments in his lifetime.

He had encountered countless opportunities, and obtained inheritances from many of his expert seniors. Those were crucial in how Grandmaster Kai Hong managed to obtain his position and status later on.

And now, Grandmaster Kai Hong had split all of the world spirit techniques he had learned in his lifetime, as well as his experience, into three parts, and imparted them to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. As such, this was naturally an enormous profit for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Buzz~~~”

While Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were respectfully kneeling and bowing to Grandmaster Kai Hong, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s body started to suddenly change. His body started to disintegrate, and turned into many firefly-like bodies of light. Then, the bodies of light fused together and turned into a coffin.

It was a very ordinary coffin. Thus, using simple abilities, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were able to tell that there was a skeleton lying in the coffin.

The skeleton was completely undamaged and flickering with light. It was a treasure. After all, that was Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remains, the remains of a Martial Immortal-level expert.

“Wow! The source energy is intact. Chu Feng, if I am to refine the source energy, my cultivation will definitely improve a lot,” Seeing Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remains, Her Lady Queen started to gulp down her saliva in a gluttonous manner. Her appearance was truly

adorable.

“Milady Queen, I fear that I cannot allow you to devour Grandmaster Kai Hong’s source energy. Else, I would be an unrighteous and unjust individual,” Chu Feng quietly said to Her Lady Queen.

“I know. That’s why I’m only saying it. After all, it would not only be you who would refuse to allow me to absorb the source energy, even that Zhao Hong and that stutterer will likely not allow me to absorb the source energy either. If you forcibly allow me to absorb that Grandmaster Kai Hong’s source energy, you will likely end up being looked down upon by the two of them.”

“Although this Queen wants to quickly increase her cultivation, I do not want you to be looked down upon by your friends,” Her Lady Queen said.

“My Eggy is truly sensible,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Tsk~~~” Her Lady Queen curled her lips. Then, she closed her eyes. It appeared as if she did not dare to look at Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remains again.

“Chu Feng, Grandmaster Kai Hong has split the world spirit techniques he has learned in his lifetime into three. I think that the world spirit techniques the three of us obtained should all be different,” Zhao Hong said.

“W-wouldn’t w-we know w-whether or not t-they are the same if w-we compare them?” As Wang Qiang spoke, he outlined a spirit formation diagram in the sky.

What he outlined was a slaughtering formation with impressive might.

“I don’t have that spirit formation,” Zhao Hong said.

“Neither do I,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, do the two of you have this spirit formation?” As Chu

Feng spoke, he also outlined the diagram of a spirit formation.

“No,” Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong shook their heads.

“In that case, it would appear that Grandmaster Kai Hong has truly split the spirit formations he learned in his lifetime into three, and imparted them respectively to the three of us. Thus, we have likely all grasped different spirit formations,” Chu Feng said.

“T-that old man i-is truly unkind,” Wang Qiang curled his lips.

Both Chu Feng and Zhao Hong understood Wang Qiang’s intention.

People all possessed selfish hearts. This was especially true for precious items; they would all be unwilling to share them with others.

To world spiritists, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance was extremely precious. It was something more precious than their own lives.

If the three people standing here were not Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, but rather three selfish individuals, those three people would definitely not share the spirit formations that they had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance with one another.

In other words, Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance would not be able to be passed on in a complete manner.

However, it was evident that Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were not selfish individuals. Thus, as long as the three of them shared with one another the spirit formations that they’d obtained, they would all be able to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s complete inheritance.

“This could be considered a trial too. It is a trial that is most difficult for others, a trial of one’s heart.”

“Merely, to the three of us, this trial isn’t an issue at all,” Zhao

Hong said.

She was very confident when she said those words. Not only was she confident in herself, she also trusted Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. When she said those words, she believed that both Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were willing to share the spirit formations that they had obtained with her.

“W-wife, i-in that case, y-you’re saying that you’re willing t-to share the spirit f-formations that you’ve obtained?” Wang Qiang asked with a mischievous laugh.

“Husband, are you willing?” Zhao Hong asked with a mischievous smile on her face.

“Of c-course I am,” Wang Qiang said while patting his chest.

“Chu Feng, what about you?” Zhao Hong turned to ask Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng did not answer. Instead, he chuckled lightly. Then, his arms began to move as he began to draw outlines in the sky.

With an exquisite technique, Chu Feng began to outline one exquisite spirit formation diagram after another. In merely an instant, CHu Feng had managed to outline several tens of spirit formation diagrams.

Chu Feng did not answer Zhao Hong with words. Rather, he answered her with his actions.

Zhao Hong’s expression changed upon seeing Chu Feng’s action. It could be seen that she felt great admiration for Chu Feng’s action.

Then, she said to Wang Qiang, “Husband, it’s your turn.”

“W-wife, l-ladies first,” Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh.

“Husband, in terms of being grand, this brother of yours is much better than you,” Zhao Hong mocked Wang Qiang.

“No. I am n-not lacking g-grandness. R-rather, I am showing etiquette. Wife, please go ahead,” Wang Qiang said with a shameless expression. As a thick-skinned and shameless individual, how could Wang Qiang be swayed by Zhao Hong’s mockery?

“I am going to share Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance without holding back anything. If you dare to not share yours, I will tear you apart alive,” Zhao Hong ruthlessly threatened Wang Qiang. Then, like Chu Feng, she began to outline the spirit formation diagrams in this vast palace hall.

After Zhao Hong began to outline her spirit formation diagrams, Wang Qiang also started to outline his spirit formation diagrams to share with Chu Feng and Zhao Hong.

Actually, the spirit formations Grandmaster Kai Hong had left behind were all extremely exquisite. For ordinary people, they would be very difficult to learn.

However, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all people who had obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance. Thus, as long as the others were willing to share, they would be able to learn them easily.

Thus, after the three of them all shared their spirit formations without holding back, the three of them all managed to obtain the complete inheritance of Grandmaster Kai Hong.

“Haha, t-this is g-great. A-although there are a lot of spirit formations that we a-are s-still unable to set up, we a-at least know how to set them up now.”

“Likely, t-there will n-no longer be anyone in t-the Hundred Refinements Ordinary R-Realm th-that would match up to us in t-terms of world spirit techniques,” Wang Qiang had a very happy expression.

The reason for that was because Grandmaster Kai Hong’s

complete inheritance could truly be considered to be universally shocking. This was especially true for the slaughtering formations and defensive formations — they were all exceptionally powerful. When used in actual battle, they would reveal overwhelming might.

It was no wonder Grandmaster Kai Hong was able to be undefeated for so long using only world spirit techniques to battle.

“Let’s go. Since we’ve already obtained the inheritance, there is no need for us to stay here anymore,” Zhao Hong said.

“Wait a moment,” Chu Feng said.

“What’s there to wait for?” Zhao Hong asked.

“The people outside, although they are all from open and upright schools, clans and sects, are not good individuals. Perhaps they might not care enormously for Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance. However, for the so-called treasures, they will definitely be filled with expectations.”

“The fact that they have not managed to reach this place means that they will definitely think that the three of us have obtained an enormous amount of treasure. Likely, they will not let us leave so easily,” Chu Feng said.

“So what? The strongest among them are only peak Martial Ancestors. We possess the protection of the crystal giants. How could we possibly fear them?” Zhao Hong said in a disapproving manner.

“While the crystal giants are powerful, it remains that they are formed with spirit formations. As for those people outside, they are all old monsters that have trained for at least ten thousand years or even several tens of thousands of years. I fear that the battle experience that they have are not things that the crystal giants could compare to.”

“Furthermore, did you not notice that after we obtained

Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance, after Grandmaster Kai Hong's image returned to his coffin, our crystal giants are growing weaker, and that even our cloaks are changing?" Chu Feng said.

"Now that you mention it, that is indeed happening. What are we to do?" Both Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were startled upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

They discovered that their crystal giants were indeed weakening, and that their cloaks that had allowed them to avoid the various traps and mechanisms were also changing.

If this were to continue, both the crystal giants and the cloaks would end up having the same result. That is, they would disappear.



# Chapter 2353 – Insistent On Throwing Away One's Life

---

“The crystal giants and the cloaks are most definitely related to Grandmaster Kai Hong's spirit formation. Now that Grandmaster Kai Hong's spirit formation has disappeared, they have also begun to gradually disappear. I'm afraid that they will likely not last for much longer,” Chu Feng said.

“What do we do then?” Zhao Hong asked. Although she had had a very calm appearance before, she had started to slightly panic now.

“Have you all forgotten that we have grasped a spirit formation to promote the crystal giants?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Now that you mention it, I'd nearly forgotten,” Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were both delighted upon hearing what Chu Feng said.

“It is a bit difficult for me to set it up myself. Let's do it together,” As Chu Feng spoke, he let out his two crystal giants.

In response, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong also let out their crystal giants.

After letting out the crystal giants, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong began to jointly set up their spirit formation. They were currently dissolving the four crystal giants.

This grand formation of theirs was very powerful. Not only was it capable of fusing the power of the crystal giants, it was also able to absorb all of the remaining spirit power in this palace hall.

With their joint efforts, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong combined the four crystal giants into one crystal giant.

Merely, not only was this crystal giant three times the size of the previous crystal giants, it also possessed four heads and eight arms.

It had a very majestic and domineering appearance. It was as if it were a divine being. Merely by looking at it, one would feel a sense of reverence.

Most importantly, this four-headed eight-armed crystal giant was no longer only a peak Martial Ancestor.

At this moment, it emitted the same sort of aura as that Infant Soul Sect's Protector.

This meant that the crystal giant's cultivation had reached the True Immortal Realm.

"H-holy! They a-actually b-became a True Immortal. A-awesome!" Wang Qiang exclaimed in astonishment. Evidently, this result had surpassed his expectations.

"It is impossible for the four crystal giants to become as powerful as they are now by themselves. It would appear that there is a lot of remaining spirit power in Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. That is why the four crystal giants turned into a True Immortal after fusing," Chu Feng said.

"This True Immortal-level crystal giant will last for a period of time. It should be enough to allow us to leave this place. Merely, I wonder, who this crystal giant will listen to?" Zhao Hong said.

The reason she said that was because two of the four crystal giants used to fuse into this crystal giant belonged to Chu Feng. The remaining two belonged to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong respectively.

As for the crystal giant originating from the fusion, it was currently a masterless item. If a single person managed to create it through fusion, it would naturally listen to that person's commands.

However, the crystal giant here was fused through a joint effort from Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. Thus, it would most definitely listen to commands from the three of them. It was very

likely that it would chose a master from within the three of them.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that crystal giant suddenly turned into a ray of light that shot into Chu Feng’s wrist.

“Sure enough, it’s you again,” Seeing that scene, Zhao Hong curled her lips. She had already anticipated that it would be Chu Feng again. However, she still felt uncomfortable when it actually happened.

The reason why she felt Chu Feng would be chosen was because, after all, two of the four original crystal giants had chosen Chu Feng. This indirectly signified that Chu Feng possessed greater charm to the crystal giants than her and Wang Qiang.

Thus, Zhao Hong, who felt herself to be very talented, was unwilling to admit to the fact that her attainments in world spirit techniques would be inferior to Chu Feng’s.

“Let’s go, it’s time to leave this place. Else, if our cloaks disappear completely, even if we possess the protection of this True Immortal-level crystal giant, we will not be able to get past that sea of flames,” Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong turned to bow to Grandmaster Kai Hong again. After that, they left this place, entered the sea of flames and returned the same way they came.

When the three of them walked out of the sea of flames, they discovered that everything was as they had anticipated. All of the people that were present before they entered the remnant were all still there; not a single person had left.

However, compared to knowing that the people were all there, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were all feeling an enormous amount of lingering fear for another reason. The reason for that was because their cloaks completely disappeared right after they walked out of the sea of flames.

If they were only several steps slower, they would likely have ended up dying in that sea of flames.

“They’re out, they’re out.”

“Little friends, did you all manage to obtain any harvest?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, did you manage to see Grandmaster Kai Hong? Did you manage to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance? Exactly how many treasures did Grandmaster Kai Hong leave behind?”

The crowd that was waiting were simply not concerned with the safety of Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. They immediately rushed toward them and began to question them excitedly.

Seeing this reaction, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were certain that their guesses were correct.

While these people all appeared to have good-natured attitudes, they might become hostile at a moment’s notice later. For the sake of treasures, they were willing to do anything.

However, even though they knew that these good-natured looking people would soon become their enemies, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were not afraid. After all, they currently possessed a True Immortal level crystal giant.

.....

However, Chu Feng had no idea that there were two groups of people hidden in the remnants. They were currently spying on Chu Feng and the many experts present. All that had happened leading to the sea of flames had been seen by those two groups of people.

These two groups of people were all emitting overwhelming killing intent. Furthermore, the majority of them were wearing black gowns. They were all people from the Infant Soul Sect. Among them were not only many peak Martial Ancestor-level

experts, there were also two True Immortal-level experts.

These two True Immortal level experts each led a group of experts, forming two camps that stood on opposite sides.

Among the two True Immortals, one was the Lord Protector that Chu Feng had met. Old Demon Rakshasa and Hun Lian were standing behind him.

As for the other True Immortal, he was a burly man. This burly man had very dark stone-like skin. As for his eyes, they were moss-green in color. Those eyes emitted a peculiar sort of cold light. He had an extremely frightening appearance.

Even though he was dressed like a human, one could tell that he was not. Rather, he looked more like a powerful monstrous beast who took humanoid form. That said, he remained an actual True Immortal-level expert.

“East Palace Protector, when did you become so cowardly to be actually scared by a brat?” That monstrous beast True Immortal said with a mocking expression.

As for the East Palace Protector that he mentioned, it was none other than that Lord Protector Chu Feng had encountered.

“West Palace Protector, I have already warned you. Although that Chu Feng is a member of the younger generation, he possesses at least a rank two True Immortal protecting him. Both you and I are rank one True Immortals. Thus, it is impossible for us to be a match for that individual.”

“Right now, Chu Feng has entered Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants. Most likely, he has obtained the inheritance. However, he just so happens to be someone that we cannot touch. That is why I suggest that we drop this operation,” The East Palace Protector said.

“Haha, someone that we cannot touch? He is but a mere brat, why can’t we touch him? Don’t you forget about the reason why

Lord Sect Master dispatched us here.”

“The bullshit inheritance from Kai Hong is simply of no importance. What’s important is that treasure that Kai Hong obtained in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that piece of rock with the Divine Dragon’s blood.”

“I do not care what you plan to do. However, since I’ve come, I will definitely seize that stone with the Divine Dragon’s blood,” After the West Palace Protector said those words, he led the people behind him and began to fly toward the direction of Chu Feng and the others.

“Lord Protector, let’s act too. We cannot allow their West Palace to snatch it from us,” A peak Martial Ancestor expert said to the East Palace Protector.

“We know that we are no match for them. Yet, you still want to throw your life away?” The East Palace Protector said coldly.

“This subordinate is foolish,” That peak Martial Ancestor stepped back. He did not dare to say anymore.

“Then, Lord Protector, what should we do?” Old Demon Rakshasa asked the East Palace Protector.

“I have already given my warning. Since he is so insistent on throwing his life away, there is nothing I can do,” The East Palace Protector said.

# Chapter 2354 – Attack From The Infant Soul Sect

---

“Little friend Chu Feng, why aren’t you saying anything? Could it be that you all haven’t obtained any treasure?” An expert from the Kong Heavenly Clan asked with a suspicious gaze.

At the same time, the gazes of the crowd also began to change. They were no longer as good-natured as before.

Evidently, they were all unwilling to accept that Chu Feng did not obtain any treasures, and returned empty handed.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

Right at that moment, a burst of sneers following dense chilliness emerged from the entrance of the remnants.

Following that, a burst of enormous oppressive might swept toward the crowd.

“This aura!!!”

Upon sensing the aura that swept toward them, the expressions of the crowd all changed enormously. They, including the many peak Martial Ancestor-level experts, all revealed fear.

The reason for that was because not only did that aura contain a dense amount of killing intent, it also contained power that the crowd were unable to resist.

As such, the crowd involuntarily became scared.

“True Immortal? It’s a True Immortal?”

“There’s a True Immortal present?”

The crowd started to panic. They knew very well that when facing True Immortal-level experts, even if it was only a single True Immortal, none of them here would be a match for that person.

Although there was only a fine distinction between Martial Ancestors and True Immortals, that distinction was enormous.

If Martial Ancestors were the peak of the strength of a person's physical body, then True Immortals were existences that had surpassed one's physical body. They were individuals that had reached a new realm in martial cultivation. They were actual immortals, beings no longer considered mortals.

Soon, the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect rushed in aggressively. They sealed off the path of retreat and trapped everyone here.

“Infant Soul Sect?!”

Upon seeing the people from the Infant Soul Sect, many of the experts present revealed surprised expressions and blurted out the Infant Soul Sect's name.

Evidently... the experts present, compared to other powers, knew of the mysterious Infant Soul Sect.

“What a coincidence. Immortal Sword School, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Zhou Heavenly Clan and Kong Heavenly Clan, you four old adversaries are all here today.”

“Even Grandmaster Prophet is here. Grandmaster Prophet, it seems like you haven't secluded yourself from worldly matters, but rather, you were just unwilling to work for us,” That West Palace Protector said with a sneer as he stared at Grandmaster Prophet.

“West Palace Protector, we do not have any True Immortals among us here today. Are you planning to bully the weak?” An expert from the Kong Heavenly Clan asked.

“Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants is a very important place. For you all to not dispatch True Immortals over shows your own foolishness.”

“Are you implying that just because you all were fools, that our Infant Soul Sect must be fools with you?” After that West Palace Protector said those words, his oppressive might began to continue



to move toward the crowd. Facing that oppressive might, the crowd began to move back repeatedly. Even the peak Martial Ancestor-level experts were unable to stand firm.

At that moment, not to mention the others, even the renowned Grandmaster Prophet started to frown.

However, the expressions of Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang remained unchanged.

“Chu Feng, so you really are not scared of me. It seems that you truly possessed the backing of a True Immortal.”

“Since that is the case, let’s not bother wasting time anymore. Go ahead and call your True Immortal backer out here. I shall measure myself against that person,” The West Palace Protector said to Chu Feng with a strange tone.

“What? Chu Feng possesses the backing of a True Immortal-level expert?” Hearing those words, the expressions of the crowd present all changed.

Many people present revealed expressions of lingering fear. The reason for that was because those individuals were all people that possessed ulterior motives. They were all people that had possessed high hopes for Grandmaster Kai Hong’s treasures, and were not planning to let Chu Feng leave safely.

However, after the Infant Soul Sect’s West Palace Protector made his declaration, they realized that they had underestimated Chu Feng.

At that moment, they were rejoicing at the fact that they had only asked Chu Feng about the treasures, and had not yet attacked him for them. Else, they might have ended up being the ones that suffered.

As for those people who did not have ill intentions toward Chu Feng, they were feeling overjoyed. If Chu Feng truly possessed the backing of a True Immortal, then they would be able to escape a

calamity because of Chu Feng.

“Everyone, you all are simply overestimating that Chu Feng. If that Chu Feng truly possessed the backing of a True Immortal-level expert, how could he have allowed me to snatch away that Gate Opening Key and kill his friend?” The World Spiritist Saintess mocked.

“That’s right. Logically, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to have the protection of a True Immortal,” After hearing what the World Spiritist Saintess said, the crowd all came to a sudden realization.

After all, Chu Feng had cared about Xiaoshi so deeply. If he truly possessed the protection of a True Immortal, how could that True Immortal watch and allow the World Spiritist Saintess to kill Xiaoshi?

Upon thinking that it was very possible that Chu Feng did not possess the backing of a True Immortal, the joy that the crowd felt instantly turned to despair.

“What if there is a True Immortal protecting me, and what if there isn’t a True Immortal protecting me?” Compared to others, Chu Feng was abnormally calm.

His question was not only meant for the Infant Soul Sect’s West Palace Protector, it was also meant for all of the people present.

“If you possess the protection of a True Immortal, you might still be able to live. If you don’t possess the protection of a True Immortal, you will undoubtedly die today,” The West Palace Protector said.

“Oh~” Chu Feng smiled lightly. However, his expression did not change much. It was as if he simply did not place that Infant Soul Sect’s True Immortal in his eyes at all.

“Humph,” Seeing that Chu Feng actually showed such a disdainful attitude, the West Palace Protector immediately

revealed a furious expression. He said, “Don’t you act stupid. Today, this Protector will make sure whether or not you have a True Immortal protecting you.”

“Boom~~~”

Once those words were said, that West Palace Protector raised his hand. With a motion of his palm, the earth started to quake violently. Everyone started to sway left and right, unable to stand firm.

It was as if this West Palace Protector not only controlled everyone’s lives, but was also able to control everyone’s actions. It was like a divine being controlling the destiny of mortals. Even peak Martial Ancestors were unable to escape such a calamity.

This... was the disparity between True Immortals and Martial Ancestors.

Those that had yet to pass that gate would still be mortals.

Those who passed that gate were Immortals!

The experts present all understood that principle. Thus, practically everyone present revealed expressions of despair. In fact, some among them even closed their eyes to prepare for death.

“Die!!!” Right at that moment, the West Palace Protector smashed his palm downwards. A power capable of massacring the crowd arrived following his palm.

“I’m afraid that I’ll have to disappoint you,” Right at that moment of imminent peril, a purple light suddenly shone on Chu Feng’s wrist.

That light was extremely dazzling. As it shone, even those that had closed their eyes were dazzled by the light and started to feel a sting in their eyes.

That said, apart from Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, there was another individual among the crowd that was able to

clearly see through that purple light.

It was the West Palace Protector. He was clearly able to see that there was a crystal giant within the vast purple light.

That giant possessed four heads and eight arms. Its body was enormous, and it looked extremely imposing.

That giant had managed to defeat his oppressive might merely by opening its mouth and letting out a mouthful of air.

“You actually really possess the protection of a True Immortal?” The West Palace Protector stepped back several steps and then spoke in shock.

“True Immortal?!” Hearing those words, the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect all revealed frightened expressions.

After all, the East Palace Protector had clearly stated to them that Chu Feng possessed the backing of a True Immortal, and that True Immortal was at least a rank two True Immortal.

Thus, upon verifying that Chu Feng really possessed the backing of a True Immortal, all of the people from the Infant Soul Sect, including that West Palace Protector, started to panic.

They were not only panicky, they also started to regret. They truly regretted their decision to not trust the East Palace Protector’s warnings and insist on coming to create trouble for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because their coming was simply akin to bringing about their own destruction.

“True Immortal, it’s really a True Immortal!”

At that moment, the experts present all managed to sense the aura of the crystal giant.

Merely, compared to the people from the Infant Soul Sect, they were overjoyed.

The reason for that was because they knew that they would be

saved today.

Merely, they never expected that the one to save them would be Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2355 – Battle Between True Immortals

---

“Hahaha!!!”

“Wahahaha!!!”

Right at that moment, that Infant Soul Sect’s West Palace Protector burst into strange laughter. He was laughing so hard that his body started to sway back and forth. He was truly excited.

“And here I thought what the East Palace Protector said was true. But it turns out that he has still lied to me,” The West Palace Protector said.

His words came as a confusion to the crowd. None of them understood what he meant by those words.

“Chu Feng, that thing of yours was created through a spirit formation. Furthermore, it is only a rank one True Immortal. Did you really think that it would be a match for me?” The West Palace Protector declared.

“Rank one True Immortal. In that case, it would mean that Chu Feng’s protector possesses the same level of strength as the West Palace Protector?” At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

Upon knowing the truth, the crowd started to worry.

Everyone knew that something created with a spirit formation, regardless of how powerful it might be, remained to only a spirit formation.

When fighting against others with identical strength, they would generally be inferior to martial cultivators.

This was even more true as this Infant Soul Sect’s West Palace Protector was a demonic beast that had cultivated for over twenty thousand years. Not only did he possess enormous strength, he

also possessed a special bloodline. Although he might be no match for rank two True Immortals, very few people among rank one True Immortals would be a match for him.

“Indeed. I think that you will not be a match for it,” Chu Feng said to the West Palace Protector. His tone was filled with contempt.

“Truly an ignorant youngster. Since you boast so shamelessly and are so slow-witted, this Protector shall let you realize what an actual True Immortal is using my strength,” The West Palace Protector declared. Then, he waved his sleeves and brought forth strong wind.

Two bursts of wind, like two wind dragons, flew out from his sleeves and toward the crowd.

The wind dragons were so ferocious that they appeared to be able to destroy everything. The many peak Martial Ancestors were like a bunch of loose leaves before it; they did not possess the slightest bit of power to resist it.

If an attack that powerful were to be placed in the Holy Land of Martialism or the Nine Provinces Continent, it would truly be a calamity.

If those two wind dragons were to continue to gallop, they would be able to massacre all lives in the Holy Land of Martialism.

This was the strength of True Immortals.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, the crystal giant let out a low roar. Then, it shot forth its fist and caused heaven and earth to sway. At the same time, layer upon layer of gaseous substances that flickered with golden light appeared out of thin air.

It was Immortal-level martial power. Although the Immortal-level martial power was not pure, its strength completely surpassed that of Ancestral-level martial power. It was extremely

mighty.

The Immortal-level martial power turned into a bright golden wall. The wall stood horizontally before the crowd.

The two wind dragons surged forth violently and collided with the wall.

“Boom~~~”

Following a loud explosion, heaven and earth started to shake violently. Even though the West Palace Protector’s two wind dragons were blocked by the crystal giant’s martial power wall, the crowd still felt the resulting energy ripples.

Even though the energy ripples were unable to injure the crowd, they made them unable to stand firmly. At that moment, they deeply realized how small they were.

“You’ve got some skills. However, it remains that it is only a spirit formation. I will be able to easily destroy it without even personally attacking it.”

The West Palace Protector seemed to not want to waste time. He flipped his wrist, and then a dark black blade appeared in his hand.

Once the blade appeared, the West Palace Protector’s aura instantly grew many times stronger.

Ancestral Armament. That was an actual Ancestral Armament. Being held by the West Palace Protector, the might of that Ancestral Armament was completely revealed.

“Go. Tear that fake True Immortal into pieces,” Suddenly, the West Palace Protector tossed out his Ancestral Armament.

“Rooarrrr~~~”

Once that Ancestral Armament was tossed forth, it immediately turned into a blade shadow. As that black shadow appeared, surging black clouds began to emerge in large numbers, and lightning could be seen flickering within those clouds.



Those clouds were no ordinary clouds. They were extremely toxic, and they were able to poison all living things.

That lightning was no ordinary lightning. Contained within that lightning was Immortal power. That lightning was capable of striking down everything.

However, what was most frightening remained the black shadow within the black clouds.

That black shadow was rapidly transforming. It was growing larger and larger. In merely the blink of an eye, it grew from a size of three meters to an enormous size of three hundred meters.

It was a ferocious beast. It possessed a wolf-like head, a tiger-like body, leopard-like legs and hawk-like talons.

Its eyes were blue in color. Many layers of lightning flashed in those eyes. Its fangs were red in color, and glistened with a dense blood-red shine.

That ferocious beast was the transformation of an Ancestral Armament. Logically, regardless of how powerful it might be, it would be impossible for it to be a match for a True Immortal.

However, being used by the West Palace Protector, it had managed to obtain power that surpassed what it had originally possessed. It was so powerful that likely not even ordinary rank one True Immortals would be a match for it.

“Rooooaaarrr~~~”

That ferocious beast was exceptionally ruthless and incomparably fierce. With a wave of its talons, it managed to destroy the crystal giant’s martial power wall.

Immediately afterward, it pounced at the crystal giant.

Although the crystal giant was enormous, its body was much smaller than that ferocious beast.

The arrival of that ferocious beast appeared like an enormous

wave crashing onto a stream, a mountain falling onto the plain. When looking at them, the disparity between them was truly enormous.

“Roar~~~”

At that moment, the crystal giant let out another low roar. Then, its body started to shine with purple light, and began to grow larger.

In merely the blink of an eye, the crystal giant turned into a hundred meter-tall giant.

Its eight palms all clenched into fists. Like eight small mountains, they smashed toward that ferocious beast like meteors.

As for that Ancestral Armament ferocious beast, it remained vigorous and imposing. It waved its claws, tearing the space before it apart as it continued to charge to attack the crystal giant head-on.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

In the blink of an eye, the crystal giant and the ferocious beast collided with one another.

Even though Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants were originally indestructible, it started to shake nonstop from the battle, and countless crushed rocks could be seen tumbling down.

The battle of two huge monsters was truly frightening.

If it wasn’t for the fact that that crystal giant was subconsciously protecting Chu Feng and the others, a lift of that ferocious beast’s leg or a single burst of its oppressive might would have been enough to let Chu Feng and the others meet miserable deaths.

“Chu Feng, this is bad,” Zhao Hong started to frown as she sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

After battling for some time, it was clear that the crystal giant was not as powerful as that Ancestral Armament ferocious beast. If

this were to continue, the crystal giant would likely be defeated.

“Don’t panic. I still have a last resort that I can use.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he moved his hand toward his Cosmos Sack. The reason for that was because ever since the West Palace Protector started fighting against the Crystal Giant, an item in Chu Feng’s Cosmos Sack had started to become unstable again.

Naturally, that item was Chu Feng’s Demon Armament, the Evil God Sword.

Although Chu Feng was unable to ascertain exactly what sort of usage and capability the Evil God Sword possessed, after the past several occasions, Chu Feng had become increasingly certain that the Evil God Sword should possess the power to contend against True Immortals.

Merely, due to the enormous backlash that the Evil God Sword would cause, Chu Feng was unwilling to use it unless he had no other choice.

“Quite interesting. However, I will have you all experience what true despair is next,” The West Palace Protector laughed coldly. Then, Immortal-level martial power visible to the naked eye was emitted from his body.

Like a flood that had broken through the dam, his Immortal-level martial power began to violently rush out of his body. Then, all of the martial power that rushed out was assimilated into the Ancestral Armament ferocious beast.

As a large amount of Immortal-level martial power entered its body, the Ancestral Armament ferocious beast grew more and more powerful. Its speed grew faster and faster, and its attacks grew increasingly fierce.

In this sort of situation, the crystal giant was evidently no match.

Suddenly, that Ancestral Armament ferocious beast’s two

enormous claws grabbed two of the crystal giant's arms. The ferocious beast opened its enormous mouth and bit into half of the crystal giant's upper arm.

“Rip~~~”

Purple light sprayed forth like blood. With merely that one attack, the crystal giant lost two of its arms.

The crystal giant started to move back repeatedly in a manner similar to a human being injured. It was unable to stand firm. Even its aura grew extremely weak.

“Crap!”

At that moment, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng revealed despair in his eyes.

The crystal giant was already much inferior to before. However, the Ancestral Armament ferocious beast was growing stronger and stronger.

A clear-cut distinction was formed in the confrontation between the two. Everyone present knew that the crystal giant would not be able to contend against the Ancestral Armament ferocious beast. Likely, no one would be able to save them.

# Chapter 2356 – Infant Soul Sect Retreat In Defeat

---

“Go on and despair. I enjoy seeing your expressions of despair the most,” The West Palace Protector said to Chu Feng and the others complacently.

“You bastard!” Some people were unable to contain themselves and started to curse the West Palace Protector.

The crowd knew very well that they were undoubtedly going to die. Yet, the West Palace Protector refused to kill them right away. The sensation of having their lives in the hands of someone else where that person could do whatever they wished was truly unpleasant.

Torture. What the West Palace Protector was doing was akin to a mental torture to the crowd.

“Buzz~~~” Right at that moment, the crystal giant that was already injured actually started to emit dazzling golden light. Following that, an extremely powerful aura started to emit from the crystal giant. The aura was so powerful that it forced the Ancestral Armament ferocious beast back repeatedly. In the end, that Ancestral Armament ferocious beast was beaten back so hard that it returned to its original weapon form.

“This... this... how could this be?”

Seeing this scene, not only were the others, even that West Palace Protector was struck dumb. Fear filling his eyes.

The reason for that was because he felt a deep threatening sensation from the crystal giant. At that moment, the crystal giant possessed enough power to kill him.

“Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was heard. Following

that explosion, the crystal giant shattered into pieces and turned into crystal fragments and a purple gaseous substance that drifted about in midair.

“Hahahaha!!!” At that moment, the previously terrified West Palace Protector burst into loud laughter.

“With how imposing it was earlier, I had thought that it was going to unleash some sort of enormous attack. Turns out, it was actually destroying itself,” The West Palace Protector mocked.

At that moment, the many experts present all started to sigh. Originally, they had all thought that the crystal giant would counter-attack. After all, the aura it had emitted was so very strong. However, the situation at hand had once again placed them into extreme despair.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the shattered fragments that the crystal giant had turned into began to, like raindrops, fly toward that West Palace Protector as well as the other Infant Soul Sect’s experts.

“Puu, puu, puu, puu~~~” Everything truly happened too fast. Before the crowd could react, the fragments that crystal giant had turned into pierced through the bodies of the West Palace Protector and the many Infant Soul Sect experts. Dead. In merely an instant, the Infant Soul Sect’s experts led by the West Palace Protector were all killed. All of them had been killed by those fragments.

“Self-denotation attack. That is truly a self-denotation attack!”

“Truly never would I have imagined that crystal giant would be stronger after it was destroyed. It actually managed to kill the Infant Soul Sect’s West Palace Protector!” At the moment, the experts present were unable to contain their emotions and started to shout.

None of them had ever expected that the crystal giant would really manage to kill the Infant Soul Sect's West Palace Protector and many experts. Although it had sacrificed itself in the process, it had managed to save the crowd's lives.

"Damn it!!!" Right at the moment when the crowd was wild with joy, a voice caused the crowd to fall back into a state of despair. That voice was actually the West Palace Protector's voice.

Although the body of the West Palace Protector had been destroyed, it was evident that he hadn't died!!!

"How could this be? How could he be alive?" At that moment, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had the same sort of expression of disbelief on their faces as the crowd.

The reason for that was because the West Palace Protector's physical body had been completely destroyed. His dantian had most definitely been blown to pieces at that moment. As such, it shouldn't be possible for him to survive.

"True Immortal-level experts have already surpassed the limits of one's physical body. They cannot be judged with the standards of normal people," Zhao Hong said. Once Zhao Hong said those words, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and even the many experts present revealed a change in expression.

With merely that one sentence, the crowd became certain that this young woman was no ordinary character.

However, at that moment, what the crowd was most concerned about was not Zhao Hong's origins. Rather, it was the situation at hand.

The West Palace Protector did not die. To them, this was an enormous threat.

"I do not know who you are. However, our Infant Soul Sect will definitely not leave this matter of what happened here today as-is!!!"

The West Palace Protector's voice sounded again. Following that, a burst of wind swept past. That burst of wind carried away the West Palace Protector's Ancestral Armament, as well as all of the possessions from the Infant Soul Sect's fallen experts.

"He left?" The crowd were all stunned. The West Palace Protector clearly didn't die. Thus, why did he leave?

"Why did he leave? Judging from his voice, he shouldn't be seriously injured. We shouldn't be a match for him," Even though the crowd rejoiced at the fact that the West Palace Protector had escaped, they were also unable to understand why he did that.

"It is best to not stay here for long. Let's leave first," Grandmaster Prophet said.

"What Grandmaster says is very true. Since that West Palace Protector appeared, there might be more experts from the Infant Soul Sect in this Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Just because that West Palace Protector left doesn't necessarily mean that he escaped. It might be possible that he has gone to call for reinforcements. It is best that we leave this place first," The others agreed. Then, with Grandmaster Prophet leading the crowd, Chu Feng and the others exited Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants.

The crowd only stopped when they arrived at a place they felt to be safe.

"Seniors, since this place is safe now, we shall take our leave," Chu Feng clasped his fist at Grandmaster Prophet and the others. Then, he planned to leave.

"Little friend Chu Feng, wait a moment," However, right at that moment, a peak Marital Ancestor-level expert from the Kong Heavenly Clan stood forth and stopped Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

"Senior, what matter might you have?" Chu Feng asked.

"Little friend Chu Feng, I'll speak frankly. The three of you have



entered Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. Most likely, you all have obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance."

"Earlier, Grandmaster Prophet declared that you are the fated individual of that remnant. Thus, we have no objection to you obtaining Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance." "However, as for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures, we request that little friend Chu Feng hand over a portion to share with us." "After all, for the sake of that remnant, we have also paid dearly. Little friend Chu Feng, for you to be able to smoothly obtain the treasures, we have also contributed." "I believe that little friend Chu Feng also does not wish for us to return empty-handed, no?" That Kong Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor expert said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

Zhao Hong was furious. She opened her mouth and cursed, "Utterly shameless."

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng grabbed Zhao Hong's wrist and signaled a gaze at her to calm her down.

Then, Chu Feng revealed a light smile on his face. He did not look only at that Kong Heavenly Clan's expert. Instead, he swept his gaze to all of the crowd present and said, "Firstly, none of you have helped us in any aspect in entering Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants."

"Even that grand defensive formation was something that the three of us jointly undid. If it wasn't for the three of us, I presume that seniors would not even be able to open that entrance gate. You all would not even be able to see that sea of flames that you all were unable to pass through."

"I truly do not understand what this senior meant when he said contribution," said Chu Feng as he looked at that Kong Heavenly Clan's expert.

"I... this... eh..."

That Kong Heavenly Clan's expert seemed to want to justify himself. However... he was unable to provide a justification. At that moment, his wrinkle-filled face turned deep red.

“Oh, I remember now. When we were trying to undo the grand defensive formation, I had asked senior world spiritists to help.”

“Merely, it seemed that you all declined to help,” Chu Feng turned his gaze to the four Snake Mark Immortal-cloak world spiritists.

At that moment, those world spiritists lowered their heads. They did not dare to look Chu Feng in the face. After all, what Chu Feng said was the truth.

Earlier, Chu Feng had indeed requested their assistance to undo the grand defensive formation. However, they had refused to believe in Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2357 – Who Dares Touch Him?

---

“I’ll set aside what happened in the remnants. After all, no matter how you look at it, you all were unreasonable.” “As such, I’ll switch the subject to what just happened.” “All the seniors present here are renowned individuals. All of you are Martial Ancestors, and many among you are also peak Martial Ancestors. “

“I do not have to say how powerful you all are. After all, your overwhelming strengths are publicly known throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“However, I dare ask, is there anyone among you that is capable of defeating that Infant Soul Sect’s Protector?”

“Did any of you stand forth to face that Infant Soul Sect’s Protector during the time when he was acting endlessly arrogant?” Chu Feng continued. At that moment, it was not only those world spiritists; the others also began to lower their heads. Indeed, none of them had dared to stand out to face that West Palace Protector.

“Earlier, if it wasn’t for me activating my crystal giant, I fear that all the seniors present would have been killed by that Infant Soul Sect’s Protector.”

“It is one thing for all you seniors here to not say a word of thanks to me, but you actually wanted to demand for us to share a portion of what we obtained in the remnants with you.”

“If I understand things correctly, everyone here, the renowned and powerful seniors, are planning to disregard righteousness and kick your benefactor in the teeth for the sake of riches, right?” Chu Feng looked to the crowd with a mocking gaze.

At that moment, not only was the crowd lowering their heads, their complexions had also turned even redder.

The reason for that was because what Chu Feng said was the truth. If it wasn’t for his crystal giant, it would have been

impossible for them to leave the remnants alive.

Reasonably, they should not demand the treasures that Chu Feng obtained in the remnants.

Actually, even if Chu Feng didn't mention it, they, more or less, already felt ashamed too.

Each and every word that Chu Feng said in his speech were like swords. Each and every one of his words drew blood. As such, they would naturally become endlessly ashamed.

"Everyone, did you all notice one thing?" Right at that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess suddenly spoke. Compared to the others, she did not have the slightest trace of an ashamed expression on her face.

"What thing?" The crowd asked in unison. They all wanted to break free from their awkward situation. The words spoken by the World Spiritist Saintess allowed them to shift the topic of conversation around.

"The crystal giant Chu Feng unleashed earlier greatly resembled the four from before. If my guess is correct, that True Immortal-level crystal giant was formed through the fusion of the four peak Martial Ancestor-level crystal giants," The World Spiritist Saintess said with a strange smile.

"And what about it?" A Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist asked in a disapproving manner.

"This means that Chu Feng and his friends currently do not possess any crystal giants."

"If we want to do anything to them, they will not be able to resist in the slightest. Thus, there is simply no need to bother with superfluous words with them. Just deal with them directly," The World Spiritist Saintess turned her gloomy and cold gaze to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

"You dare?!!!" Zhao Hong shouted furiously.

“Why wouldn’t I? Are you implying that we would be scared of three children?” The World Spiritist Saintess said with a cold and sinister smile.

“World Spiritist Saintess, if it wasn’t for little friend Chu Feng earlier, we would all have been killed. You, what is this that you’re planning to do here?” Grandmaster Prophet said. His tone seemed to be trying to reason with the crowd.

“World Spiritist Saintess, if you plan to bring harm upon little friend Chu Feng, I, Duan Chunchang, will be the first to refuse,” As Elder Duan Chunchang spoke those words, he unleashed his peak Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might. He had revealed his sincerity to protect Chu Feng.

“World Spiritist Saintess, if you are to do something like that, you will truly be kicking your benefactor in the teeth,” Following that, many other experts expressed their disapproval of the World Spiritist Saintess’s proposal.

“Everyone, I believe there is no need for me to mention to you what sort of character Grandmaster Kai Hong is.”

“The remnants left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong are one of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s most precious riches.”

“Could it be that you’re all truly willing to hand all the treasures Grandmaster Kai Hong left behind to three mere brats?”

“Not mentioning whether or not these three brats will be able to properly utilize the treasures left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong, the three of them simply do not possess the strength to safeguard Grandmaster Kai Hong’s treasures.”

“Rather than having the treasures snatched from them later on by the Infant Soul Sect, it’s better that we help them keep those treasures safe today,” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

Once the World Spiritist Saintess said those words, the

expressions of the crowd all changed. Not mentioning those that were against Chu Feng earlier, even those that had spoken to support Chu Feng revealed complicated expressions.

While they might not wish to bring harm upon Chu Feng because they felt ashamed... they also did not wish to have Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong hog all of Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures.

"Amazing. To actually be able to provide an excuse for oneself to snatch another's treasure, I truly must admire how thick-skinned you are," Chu Feng mocked.

"Little friend Chu Feng, although you possess conflict with the World Spiritist Saintess, what she said is not without reason."

"The three of you are still very young, and your strengths are also insufficient. It is indeed not safe for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures to be left with you all."

"How about this: we will help you keep them safe for the time being. When you all obtain sufficient strength in the future, we will return the treasures to you," That Kong Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor spoke again.

"Bull fucking shit! What difference is there between you all and those from the Infant Soul Sect?!" Zhao Hong cursed furiously. Her delicate and pretty face had turned deep red from anger.

"T-the w-way I see it, y-you all a-are even more d-despicable than the I-Infant Soul Sect."

"A-after all, the p-people from the Infant Soul Sect a-are openly s-shameless and savage. W-whereas you are just a bunch of hypocrites who p-pretend to be r-righteous, a b-bunch that would o-only dare to bully the w-weak and a-are afraid of the strong. You a-all a-are truly despicable," Wang Qiang mocked.

"Three little friends, how could you all say that sort of thing?"

"We are truly doing this for your sake. Perhaps you might not be able to understand our kind intentions now, but you will definitely

understand in the future,” That Kong Heavenly Clan’s peak Martial Ancestor said.

As he spoke, he unleashed his peak Martial Ancestor’s oppressive might and sealed off the path of retreat for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Grandmaster Prophet, Senior Duan Chunchang, do the two of you also plan to wallow in the mire with them?” Chu Feng looked to Grandmaster Prophet and that Elder Duan Chunchang.

“Eh...” Grandmaster Prophet revealed a difficult expression. In the end, he did not say anything.

As for Duan Chunchang, he said with an embarrassed tone, “Little friend Chu Feng, you all are able to keep the inheritance. As for the treasures, we’re not asking for you to hand over all of them. You merely need to hand over a portion of them. As long as you are willing to hand over some, I dare to guarantee that no one will dare to harm you.”

“If I am to tell you all that we only obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance, and that there is simply no treasure, will you believe me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, in that case, we could only inconvenience you by having you hand over the Cosmos Sack on your waist for us to inspect,” That Kong Heavenly Clan’s expert rushed to speak.

“I understand now,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he took out the Evil God Sword from his Cosmos Sack and held it in his hand.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Don’t tell me this is the treasure that you obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants,” The World Spiritist Saintess mocked.

“Heh...” Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said, “You wish to search the three of us? It will depend on whether or not you have the ability to do so first. However, I will warn you beforehand. It is

still not too late to pull back right now. If you truly plan to use force, you shall have to bear the consequences of your actions.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, we are very thankful for you saving us earlier.”

“However, we are not three-year-old children. Don’t you think this is very dull for you to try to frighten us like this?” As that Kong Heavenly Clan’s expert spoke, he looked to the others present and said, “Everyone, little friend Chu Feng has declared a threat. Are you all scared?”

“Hahahaha...” The crowd did not answer, but instead burst into ridiculing laughter. That served as the best response.

At that moment, the person feeling the most complacent was none other than the World Spiritist Saintess.

The way she saw it, with how things had stirred up, Chu Feng could forget about leaving safely. Even if he wasn’t killed, he would likely be taught a lesson by the crowd and become seriously injured.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it seems that you are unable to scare us. Then... please excuse my offense,” That Kong Heavenly Clan’s expert narrowed his eyes. Then, his peak Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth toward Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

He did not unleash any killing intent. However, he felt that his oppressive might would be sufficient to have Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong suffer a crushing defeat and seriously injure them. He was feeling resentment towards how Chu Feng had spoken to contradict him earlier. Thus, he was planning to use this opportunity to discipline the three of them.

“I shall see who dares to touch him today!!!”

Suddenly, right at that moment, a voice filled with imposing might exploded in the sky.



At the same time, an overwhelming aura descended from the sky and covered the crowd. That aura was simply too powerful. Even though there were many peak Martial Ancestors among the crowd, they were unable to withstand that aura.

# Chapter 2358 – The Most Dangerous Individual

---

The surging oppressive might sealed off heaven and earth. With imposing power, a figure soon appeared from the sky. That person descended before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

That person was an old monk.

That old monk was very thin. His clothes were very worn. The patches to mend the holes in his clothes made it seem like they were the clothes of a beggar.

However, when that old monk appeared, not a single person dared to despise him.

This was especially true for those people that had deliberately made things difficult for Chu Feng earlier. At that moment, they were all frowning and shivering in fear.

The reason for that was because everyone present was able to guess that the old monk was the owner of that powerful oppressive might, that the old monk was not only a True Immortal, but also an extraordinary True Immortal.

“Senior, it’s you?” Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed upon seeing that old monk. The reason for that was because he knew that old monk.

That old monk was precisely the same old monk Chu Feng encountered in the Darknight Ghost Forest. Speaking of it, Chu Feng possessed a slight relationship with that old monk.

“Little friend Chu Feng, rest assured. With me here, no one will dare to harm you in the slightest. In fact, no one will be able to harm you in the slightest,” The old monk turned around and smiled lightly at Chu Feng. His attitude was very amiable.

Upon seeing that scene, the World Spiritist Saintess, the Kong

Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor and the others shouted 'Oh no!' in their hearts. They started to feel that they were on the verge of death.

After all, judging from the way things were, Chu Feng most definitely possessed an extraordinary relationship with that old monk.

"Senior, please don't misunderstand. We never planned to do anything to little friend Chu Feng. We merely..."

Sensing that the situation was bad, that Kong Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor who acted to attack Chu Feng earlier hurriedly tried to explain.

He had a very attentive expression on his face. He was trying to provide an excuse so as to not be punished by the old monk.

However, before he could finish saying his excuses, the old monk's gaze suddenly changed. Then, a strange light flickered.

"Puu~~~"

The very next moment, that Kong Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor vomited out a mouthful of blood. Then, he fell to his knees powerlessly.

He started to shiver and was unable to utter a word. His appearance was akin to that of a dying individual. He became so weak that it was strange.

Upon seeing what had happened to the Kong Heavenly Clan's peak Martial Ancestor, the World Spiritist Saintess and the others grew even more frightened.

"This man's cultivation is still present. However, for the rest of his life, he will only be able to stay at peak Martial Ancestor. No longer will he have the opportunity to reach the True Immortal realm."

"What?!"

The crowd were once again frightened upon hearing those words. To be able to seal off a person's future prospects with a single attack, that sort of strength was truly frightening.

The crowd were all scared that they would end up suffering the same fate as that peak Martial Ancestor.

“That is his punishment for attacking little friend Chu Feng.”

“However, I dare to guarantee that if anyone dares to attack little friend Chu Feng again in the future, then their punishment will most definitely not be as light. I will personally make sure that those individuals will suffer a fate worse than death, and live lives inferior to those of pigs and dogs.”

The old monk said those words so very indifferently. There was not the slightest trace of anger in his tone. However, his words possessed unimaginable impact as they entered the crowd's ears.

Everyone knew that he was not joking around. The reason for that was because he truly possessed the strength to do so.

“Three little friends, farewell.”

After he finished saying those words, the old monk turned around and smiled profoundly at Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. Then, his body shifted slightly, and he disappeared into thin air.

After that old monk disappeared, his enormous oppressive might that was stifling the crowd also disappeared.

After the old monk left, that region grew calm again.

However, no one was certain as to whether or not that old monk had truly left. Thus, at that moment, the crowd were all standing there in a stunned manner. They were at a complete loss as for what to do. Their hearts were still restless.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we truly did not have any ill intentions earlier. Please do not take offense.”

After some time passed, the crowd managed to ease their tension and began to apologize to Chu Feng. At that moment, their attitude toward Chu Feng had changed completely.

The reason for that was because they came to know that Chu Feng truly possessed a True Immortal-level expert protecting him. Furthermore, this True Immortal-level expert was no ordinary True Immortal. He was so powerful that the crowd were all terrified of him.

Chu Feng ignored the crowd's apologies and instead asked with a beaming smile, "Seniors, are you all going to continue to prevent us from leaving?" At that moment, the crowd all smiled wryly. They were feeling very awkward.

They all knew that Chu Feng was making cutting remarks at them. However, even though they knew that was the case, they did not dare to show the slightest trace of displeasure. "In that case, farewell."

Chu Feng clasped his fist at the crowd. Even though it was an act of etiquette, it was filled with mockery. This caused the so-called experts present to feel even more ashamed. One by one, they lowered their heads. "Humph," Seeing the shamed expressions of the crowd, the corners of Chu Feng's mouth lifted into a cold grin.

With what had happened here today, Chu Feng had managed to see through these people. This bunch, including that Grandmaster Prophet and Elder Duan Chunchang, were truly a bunch of hypocrites. In short, not a single person from the group present here today was straightforward and upright. After mocking the crowd, Chu Feng's body suddenly shifted. Then, he soared into the sky. Together with Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, the three of them flew towards the distant sky.

Although Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had left, the remaining crowd did not leave after a long time. The reason for that was because they still possessed lingering fear, and were at a

loss as for what to do.

However, they were certain of one thing. Their conduct and deeds towards Chu Feng today seemed to have left them quite a large grievance.

“Everyone, I believe you are all feeling very unreconciled right now. However, I urge you all that it is best to not make little friend Chu Feng your enemy.”

“The strength of that individual earlier most likely surpasses your imaginations. Not to mention you all, likely even the powers behind you would not be able to afford to offend that individual,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

Once Grandmaster Prophet’s words were said, the crowd’s hearts shook.

What sort of individuals were the people present? The four tier one powers were all present. As such, what Grandmaster Prophet meant was that that old monk was an existence that not even the four tier one powers could afford to offend. His evaluation was truly high, truly frightening.

Curious, Elder Duan Chunchang asked, “Grandmaster, exactly what is the cultivation of that individual?”

“I possess the same cultivation as you. When you are unable to see through his cultivation, how could I?”

“Merely, I had a premonition earlier. Although that premonition was very vague, that premonition told me that that individual is a very dangerous character,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“How dangerous?” The crowd asked in unison.

“More dangerous than anyone I’ve encountered in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Sssss~~~” Hearing those words, the crowd sucked in a mouthful of cold air. What sort of character was Grandmaster Prophet? In

terms of cultivation, although his cultivation was powerful, he was still only a peak Martial Ancestor. When compared to those True Immortal-level experts, Grandmaster Prophet could not be considered to be worth much.

However, Grandmaster Prophet held an unrivalled status. Thus, practically all of the strongest experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would have to give him face. As such, Grandmaster Prophet had met the majority of those experts too.

Thus, the evaluation Grandmaster Prophet gave that monk was truly high.

Grandmaster Prophet's evaluation came like the ring of a bell to the crowd. That said, the one that was feeling most depressed right now was none other than the World Spiritist Saintess. She knew very well that the others present did not have a deep grievance with Chu Feng. As long as they tried to reconcile with him, they would definitely be able to eventually do so.

However, she was different; she was unable to reconcile with Chu Feng. Thus, she was feeling an enormous headache. After all, Chu Feng's backing was simply too frightening.

It was as if there was an insurmountable mountain blocking the path between her and Chu Feng. That mountain caused her to be at a complete loss as for what to do.

.....

At the moment when those experts were pondering how to amend their relationship with Chu Feng, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had already left the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. "Chu Feng, who was that old monk? He seems to be very powerful," Zhao Hong asked. "T-that's right, brother. I t-truly never expected t-that you had a-actually found such a backer. No w-wonder you were so c-calm f-facing those hypocrites," Wang Qiang had an excited expression. After all, they had nearly suffered a calamity earlier.

“That senior and I only met a couple times. I do not know him very well. I am extremely surprised that he was willing to help save us.”

“I feel that he will not continue to protect me forever. Thus, we cannot place our hopes on him saving us again. In the future, it is best that we rely on ourselves,” Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng was unable to detect that old monk’s whereabouts, Chu Feng felt that the old monk had already left. He felt that what the old monk said earlier was merely meant to scare the crowd. He did not plan to protect Chu Feng forever.

“It is better to rely on oneself than to rely on others. What Chu Feng says is very true,” Zhao Hong said approvingly. “The news of us obtaining Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance will soon be spread. Likely, there will be a lot of people that will come to attack us. We must be extremely careful,” Chu Feng said. “But, w-we can’t c-continue to h-hide forever,” Wang Qiang said.

“Of course. We must still do what we ought to do,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, let’s go and find the treasures left behind by Grandmaster Kai Hong. Perhaps they might be of help to us,” Zhao Hong said.

“W-which p-place first?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Mine is extremely difficult. As for Chu Feng’s, it seems to be even more difficult. After all, our relationship with the Kong Heavenly Clan is not good right now.”

“Thus, let’s go and obtain yours first,” Zhao Hong said to Wang Qiang.

“Brother, w-what do you t-think?” Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng.

“I agree with Zhao Hong,” Chu Feng said.

“T-then, it’s d-decided,” Wang Qiang smiled.

Then, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang began to proceed



toward the Drought Demon's Damned Pond.

Although the Drought Demon's Damned Pond was not as dangerous as the Phoenix Flame City, it still remained one of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's forbidden areas.

# Chapter 2359 – Razed To The Ground

---

Ying Heavenly Clan. The most sacred palace. A place that could contain several millions of people.

At that moment, not only were the many experts from the Ying Heavenly Clan gathered here, there were also a total of five tier two powers' headmasters and many other experts present.

Among the five tier two powers, two were among the comparatively more powerful tier two powers like the Ying Heavenly Clan.

As for the remaining three tier two powers, although they were inferior to the Ying Heavenly Clan, they were only slightly weaker. Thus, their strength was also not to be looked down upon.

These five tier two powers were all allies to the Ying Heavenly Clan. They were currently gathered here for a common purpose — to assist the Ying Heavenly Clan in taking care of Chu Feng.

At that moment, they had unanimously reached an agreement and entered a coalition.

Thus, at that moment, all of the Ying Heavenly Clan's clansmen, including the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, were feeling very complacent.

The reason for that was because they had not invited their allies over for the sake of taking care of Chu Feng. Most importantly, they had invited their allies over to take care of the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, who had declared their support for Chu Feng.

To the people of the Ying Heavenly Clan, they believed that regardless of how powerful the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall might be, they would undoubtedly be defeated by their current alliance.

Thus, at that moment, the Ying Heavenly Clan was going to

prove to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that no one, not even the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, would be able to protect someone that their Ying Heavenly Clan wanted to take care of.

“Lord Clan Chief, this subordinate has an urgent report!!!” Right at that moment, a Ying Heavenly Clan’s elder hurriedly rushed in.

“How could you act this flustered before our honored guests?!” Seeing that elder’s flustered expression, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was annoyed.

“Lord Clan Chief, the people we dispatched to the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds have returned.”

“According to our reliable sources, both groups dispatched by our Ying Heavenly Clan encountered Chu Feng,” That elder said.

“Encountered Chu Feng? Then, did they manage to capture him alive?” Upon hearing the name Chu Feng, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief immediately stood up from his seat. The expressions of the others present also changed. They all turned their gazes to that elder. “No,” That elder shook his head. “No?!” “There were so many people. Yet, they were unable to even capture a person from the younger generation? Trash! Utterly useless trash!”

“Where are they?! Call them over! I shall personally reprimand them! They have truly disgraced our Ying Heavenly Clan!” Sure enough, upon hearing the report, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief immediately revealed a furious expression.

“Lord Clan Chief, they... they have already died,” That elder said.

“What? Died?” Hearing those words, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the others present were all stunned. Surprise filled their eyes.

To them, the fact that the experts dispatched by the Ying Heavenly Clan had failed to capture Chu Feng was already

extremely unreasonable. Yet now, how could they all be dead? “Was it the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked. The way he saw it, it could only be the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall that would kill the people from their Ying Heavenly Clan in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. “No, they were killed by Chu Feng,” The reporting elder said.

“Chu Feng? They were killed by Chu Feng?!!!” At that moment, the crowd were even more astonished. “Lord Clan Chief, that Chu Feng seems to have obtained a spirit formation in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. That spirit formation greatly increased his strength to a degree not to be looked down upon.”

“Furthermore, according to reliable sources, the remnants in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds were indeed Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnants. As for the person who managed to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance, it too was Chu Feng,” That elder said.

“Chu Feng actually obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance?!”

“How could that be? Weren’t experts from the Zhou Heavenly Clan, Kong Heavenly Clan, Immortal Sword School and Buddha’s Heavenly Temple there?” “With that many experts, how could a member of the younger generation snatch away the inheritance?”

At that moment, it was not only the crowd from the Ying Heavenly Clan that were unable to sit tight, even the five allied powers that the Ying Heavenly Clan had invited over were unable to sit tight. One by one, they began to whisper in each other’s ears and wag their tongues. In fact, many of the people present did not believe the reporting elder’s words to be true. “How reliable is this news?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Reliable, absolutely reliable. Reportedly, apart from Chu Feng, two other individuals obtained the inheritance with him. Those

two individuals are Chu Feng's friends. Furthermore, they are both from the younger generation as well."

"Currently, Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance and all of the treasures are in their hands," That reporting elder said.

"Truly, never would I have expected that Chu Feng to obtain such unexpected success," Upon saying those words, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief revealed a strange smile. Then, he burst into joyous laughter.

"Brother Ying, why are you suddenly this happy?" Someone asked curiously.

"That Chu Feng is someone that we planned to take care of. As long as we can capture him, Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance and treasures will all be ours," The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"While that might be the case, news of this matter has already spread. Likely, it will not only be us who want to take care of Chu Feng." "Likely, a lot of people are already planning to take care of Chu Feng. Furthermore, those four tier one powers will most likely not let Chu Feng get away either. After all, Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance and treasures are no small matter," Someone said worriedly.

"If that's the case, wouldn't it be even better? While we are able to suppress the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall by joining hands, it remains that we will suffer some casualties should we attack them."

"However, if the four tier one powers were to act, any one of them would be able to completely crush the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall," The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said. "Ingenious, truly ingenious!" After hearing what the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said, the crowd came to a sudden realization.

“The Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have taken a fancy to Chu Feng’s potential and decided to protect him regardless of what price they must pay.”

“Yet, that Chu Feng actually snatched away Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance and treasures. Although this might appear to be that Chu Feng being skillful, it remains that he is but a member of the younger generation. Thus, what he has done is a gargantuan sin. He has provoked an enormous calamity.”

“I truly wonder. Once this news spreads to the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, will they continue to protect that Chu Feng?”

“I truly want to see what sort of expression they will have. Hahahaha!!!” At that moment, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, the five headmasters and the many management elders all burst into loud laughter.

The way they saw it, Chu Feng had provoked an enormous disaster. There would be countless individuals that would want to take care of Chu Feng. Thus, there was simply no need for them to act, as someone else would take care of Chu Feng for them. They felt like they would be able to win this battle without even fighting.

However, right at the moment when the crowd were overjoyed and loudly laughing, the expression of the elder who arrived to report the news turned increasingly ugly. He seemed to want to say something, but didn’t dare to say it.

However, in the end, he clenched his teeth, summoned up his courage and spoke with a trembling voice, “Lord Clan Chief, Lord Headmasters, I fear that we cannot touch Chu Feng.” “What? Ying Hang, what sort of nonsense are you spouting?!” Hearing those words, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was immediately furious. As he spoke, the space around him started to tremble.

“Putt~~~”

Seeing this, the reporting elder immediately knelt on the ground. He said, “Lord Clan Chief, we have not only received news from the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds today, we have also received letters from the four tier one powers.” “Letters from the four tier one powers?” At that moment, the crowd were surprised once again.

“In fact, it is not only letters from the four tier one powers.”

“We have also received letters from some of the old monsters that have not bothered with the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s worldly affairs for a very long time,” As that reporting elder said those words, he was sweating profusely. As he spoke, he took out many letters from his sleeve.

Merely from the outer appearance of the letters, one could tell that those letters were from different sources. Most importantly, four among the pile of letters were indeed from the four tier one powers.

Apart from the four tier one powers, the other letters also contained the names or marks of their senders. It was as that elder had said, the senders of those letters were all extraordinary people. It was true that they were all renowned old monsters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Even without mentioning the four tier one powers, merely those old monsters were all individuals that the Ying Heavenly Clan could not afford to offend.

“We generally have very little contact with those people. Why would they suddenly send letters to us?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief started to frown. He felt that with how strange things were today, it most likely wouldn’t amount to something good.

“The contents of the letters are roughly the same. Merely, what they state is something that this subordinate does not dare say,” that reporting elder said as he wiped away his sweat repeatedly.

“What are the contents. Speak frankly,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief urged.

“That’s right, tell us immediately,” The five tier two powers’ headmasters also started to urge that elder. They all wanted to know what the four tier one powers and those old monsters wanted.

“They have declared that we are not to touch Chu Feng again.” “If we insist on becoming Chu Feng’s enemy, they will raze our Ying Heavenly Clan to the ground,” The reporting elder said.

“What?!!!” Hearing those words, not to mention the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, even the others present were all stunned. Some among them were so startled by the news that they fell onto their butts.



## Chapter 2360 – Becoming Famous

---

The remnant in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds was Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnant.

Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had become the people who had obtained the inheritance of Grandmaster Kai Hong.

Not long after news of this matter spread, the four tier one powers, leading various other powers with them, all made announcements that they would protect Chu Feng. Should anyone dare to touch Chu Feng, it would mean that they would be making an enemy out of them.

When news of those two grand events spread, it immediately caused the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to burst into an uproar.

If the previous Chu Feng was only slightly renowned, then the current Chu Feng was, without a doubt, one of the most famous individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, Chu Feng had currently obtained a new title. He had become the successor of Grandmaster Kai Hong.

Many people felt that Chu Feng might be the existence that would surpass Young Master Li Ming, that he would be the most dazzling genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

In fact, it was not only Chu Feng, as Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had also caught the attention of the crowd. The crowd felt that the two of them were no small matter, and that they must possess enormous backgrounds too.

In fact, many people began to investigate the identities of Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

That being said, at the moment when the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were wildly discussing this matter, the main characters of the discussion, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and

Zhao Hong, simply did not know about what was happening.

The three of them had proceeded for the Drought Demon's Damned Pond after departing from the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds that day.

The Drought Demon's Damned Pond was a forbidden area. Due to the special characteristic of that place, it was desolate and devoid of human activity. In fact, it could even be said that very few living things could be seen there.

In fact, it was not only the Drought Demon's Damned Pond that was devoid of life, even the area surrounding the Drought Demon's Damned Pond possessed very few people. It was a forgotten land. If it wasn't for the coincidence that the Hundred Refinements Stage was constructed in that region, it was likely that no one would ever go there.

As a result, no one would go to spread the news in that region even if something major were to happen in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were proceeding toward the direction of the Drought Demon's Damned Pond, they would naturally not have heard about the recent news.

"Husband, husband, I suddenly recalled something."

Suddenly, an extremely gentle and pleasant-sounding voice sounded from Zhao Hong's mouth. Once that voice was heard, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. Then, he turned his gaze to Zhao Hong. When Chu Feng saw Zhao Hong's shy appearance, he revealed a sympathetic smile. Then, he turned his sympathetic gaze to Wang Qiang. Sure enough, Wang Qiang's complexion had turned blue. He was sweating cold bullets from fear. Cautiously, he asked Zhao Hong, "W-wife, w-what sort of t-trick d-do you have in mind t-this time? C-can you n-not bully me?"

Actually, Wang Qiang's response was understandable. The

reason for that was because Zhao Hong had abused Wang Qiang many times on their way here. The two of them had been arguing with one another repeatedly on their journey. Although Wang Qiang was a stutterer, his mouth was not to be reckoned with. Thus, Zhao Hong was truly no match for Wang Qiang in terms of quarreling.

Every time Zhao Hong was unable to win against Wang Qiang in their quarrel, she would begin to use force. As for Wang Qiang, he naturally ended up suffering by her hands.

However, Wang Qiang just so happened to be unable to control his mouth. He would end up refuting Zhao Hong every single time. Last time around, he was oppressed relatively miserably. As such, he had managed to learn from his previous mistakes, and would always nod silently regardless of how much Zhao Hong tried to pick a quarrel with him.

Zhao Hong's sudden gentleness was simply too strange. This deeply frightened Wang Qiang. "Of course not. I merely suddenly recalled one thing," Zhao Hong said with a beaming smile.

"Wha-what is it?" Wang Qiang asked with trembling fear.

"Husband, let's set up a Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation on one another!" Zhao Hong said.

"W-what? S-soul-linking S-spirit Formation Incantation?"

"W-why a-are w-we to suddenly s-set up a Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation? D-do y-you know how scary that is?!!!" Hearing what Zhao Hong said, Wang Qiang immediately opened his mouth wide.

Even Chu Feng started to frown, and his heart started to tighten.

What was a Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation? It was akin to a kind of curse created using world spirit techniques. It was a very powerful spirit formation. It was not something that ordinary people could set up, nor was it something that ordinary

people knew of. It was a sort of spirit formation that only Immortal-cloak World Spiritists could set up.

Furthermore, it was a sort of spirit formation that had been lost for a very long time. Likely, very few people knew of that spirit formation in the world.

Even for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, they only knew about that spirit formation from Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance, because it was one of the many spirit formations from the inheritance.

As for the so-called Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation, it required someone to make an oath. Upon making the oath, the Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation would go into effect and take the form of a character. That character would then attack one's soul.

If the person who had a Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation placed on them decided to violate their oath, the spirit formation curse would activate. In less serious cases, their souls would be shattered from the spirit formation curse and they would die. In more serious cases, they would not die, but instead go insane and live a life more miserable than death, forever tormented by that spirit formation curse.

And now, Zhao Hong wanted to set up such a frightening thing on Wang Qiang. How could Chu Feng not be startled by it?

"Zhao Hong, don't fool around. That sort of thing is not to be fooled around with," Out of consideration for the safety of Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, Chu Feng spoke to advise against it.

"Chu Feng, I bet you don't understand. Although the Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation is dangerous, one will not suffer its punishments as long as one does not go against one's oath."

"Wouldn't this be great to constrain my husband and I?

Unless...” As Zhao Hong spoke, she looked to Wang Qiang, “... unless you will be unfaithful towards me.”

Wang Qiang summoned up his courage and asked, “H-how could I? G-go ahead, t-tell me what s-sort of o-oath I must make.”

“It’s very simple. My demand is not high. When I am setting up the Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation on you, you merely need to say...”

“Wife, I will love only you for eternity. My heart will never change. I will be good to you forever. Every night, I will wash your feet all the way till old age.”

“If you beat me, I won’t fight back. If you scold me, I won’t answer back. I will also make delicious food for you and accompany you till the ends of the world. I will bring you to see all the beautiful sceneries in the world. If I am unable to accomplish that, I will break my hands and break my legs. I shall have no descendants. In the end, I shall be split into pieces with my head buried in cow manure, unable to reincarnate for eternity,” Zhao hong said excitedly.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown. The reason for that was because he knew that Wang Qiang had wanted to escape Zhao Hong the entire time, that he simply did not like Zhao Hong at all. If Wang Qiang were to make that sort of oath, he would undoubtedly die.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to sigh in his heart. He thought to himself that this Zhao Hong was truly ruthless. She actually wanted to force Wang Qiang to make such a ruthless oath. If Wang Qiang was to make that oath, his life would truly be inferior to death.

When Chu Feng was already feeling that way, Wang Qiang’s expression would naturally be even uglier. However, Wang Qiang pretended to be calm and asked, “You w-want me to m-make such a r-ruthless oath. It’s n-not that I can’t do it, but can you do it ?”

In response, Zhao Hong's eyes narrowed. Then, she smiled complacently and said, "I'll leave behind only one word, yes!!!"

"Yes?" Hearing that word, Wang Qiang's face immediately turned fiery red. Then, he looked to Zhao Hong and shouted, "Get the fuck out of here."

"You... you dare curse at me? You have truly grown tired of living," Zhao Hong shouted at Wang Qiang. Then, she grabbed Wang Qiang, who had been planning to escape.

After that, screams began to sound from Wang Qiang's mouth nonstop.

Although Zhao Hong was angry, she was not ruthless in her attacks. Thus, her beating of Wang Qiang was within his ability to endure. She did not really bring harm to him.

Furthermore, even though Wang Qiang was captured by Zhao Hong, she did not force him to make that vicious oath and set up the Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation. From this, it could be seen that Zhao Hong's words earlier were only meant to toy with Wang Qiang.

Although his brother was being tormented, the smile on Chu Feng's face grew wider and wider.

Although the one being bullied had always been Wang Qiang, Chu Feng felt that those two buffoons were quite a match for one another after seeing their interactions throughout their journey.

"Mn?"

Right at the moment when Chu Feng turned his gaze downward, his gaze suddenly changed.

According to the information that they'd gathered on their way here, the Drought Demon's Damned Pond should be right ahead. That should be a place without life.

However, at that moment, a large group of people had appeared

ahead of them. Many among them were people of the younger generation. However, there was no lack of experts among them. In fact, many of those people ahead possessed strength superior to Chu Feng's.

# Chapter 2361 – Battle Power Capable Of Surmounting Four Levels Of Cultivation

---

“Eh. This is truly strange. Why would so many trash from many big clans be here?” Zhao Hong revealed a suspicious gaze.

The reason for Zhao Hong’s reaction was because the outfits of those people from the younger generation showed that they possessed extraordinary status. Not only were there disciples from powerful tier two powers, there were also disciples from the four tier one powers among them.

As for those people of the younger generation that were not wearing distinctive clothing, their cultivations were also generally pretty good. Likely, they too were people with backgrounds.

“T-this bunch w-with special b-backgrounds, e-even though they generally have bad m-moral quality, i-it remains t-that they possess a special a-advantage. T-that is, t-they possess g-good backgrounds, w-which provides them w-with more re-resources than others.”

“F-for t-them to be here f-for no reason or cause, t-there must be s-some sort of shenanigans,” Wang Qiang said as he narrowed his eyes while staring at that group of people.

The intention behind his words was very clear. He felt that it was not an ordinary younger generation’s gathering for that bunch to be gathered in that place. It was very possible that they had come to search for something.

“As for exactly what sort of shenanigan they might be conducting, wouldn’t we know if we listened?” Chu Feng said.

Although the overall strength of that group of people from the younger generation was quite strong, and a few among them were stronger than Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, it remained that Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were Immortal-cloak World



Spiritists.

Not only were they unable to detect Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, Chu Feng and the others were able to observe their each and every action, and hear all of their conversations. “Zhao Yu, is that news reliable? If we are to enter and it turns out that there’s nothing there at all, I will take away your little life,” From among the crowd, a two-meter-tall grave and stern-looking man spoke coldly to a thin man in the group. This robust and stern-looking man was wearing the outfit of the Kong Heavenly Clan. Although that man had a youthful appearance, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were able to tell with a single glance that he was over a hundred years old. Strictly speaking, he was no longer a person of the younger generation.

That said, that man was only a bit over a hundred years old, and far from two hundred years old. Thus, it was no wonder that he would be hanging out with those other people of the younger generation. Likely, both him and those people he was with felt that he was still a member of the younger generation.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that that man’s strength was not weak. Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were able to clearly sense that this man was a rank one Martial Ancestor.

“Big brother Kong Cheng, how could I-I dare to deceive you? It is absolutely true. I would absolutely not dare to deceive you,” That man by the name of Zhao Yu revealed an expression of absolute humility and fear toward that rank one Martial Ancestor Kong Cheng.

This could not be blamed on him. After all, this man by the name of Zhao Yu was the one with the weakest cultivation among the bunch; he was only a rank two Half Martial Ancestor. Not to mention the rank one Martial Ancestor Kong Cheng, practically anyone in the group would be able to beat him into submission.

“Very well. Describe the appearances of those two women again

so that we can find them.”

“Remember, if you dare to deceive us, we will definitely not let you off so easily,” Kong Cheng said.

“I wouldn’t dare, I definitely wouldn’t dare,” That Zhao Yu said while trembling with fear. Then, he began to describe the appearances of the two women to the crowd.

It must be said that while this fellow by the name of Zhao Yu did not possess a strong level of cultivation, he was very proficient in describing someone’s appearance.

His descriptions were so vivid and realistic that even just by hearing them, the crowd felt as if they could see the appearances of the two women.

“B-brother,” At that moment, astonishment filled Wang Qiang’s eyes. Unable to help himself, he looked to Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, his gaze was much more complicated than Wang Qiang’s. He turned around and said to Zhao Hong with a very serious tone, “Zhao Hong, if I were to ask you to take care of that fellow by the name of Kong Cheng, would you be able to deal with him?”

“Rest assured, I am absolutely certain that I will be able to subdue him,” Zhao Hong smiled confidently. Then, with a joking tone, she said, “Chu Feng, you couldn’t possibly have taken a fancy to those two women just by hearing their descriptions?”

Chu Feng did not care about Zhao Hong’s joke. Instead, he said, “If possible, watch my back. I have some questions that I wish to ask that Zhao Yu.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he suddenly revealed himself, and began to fly toward that group of people. In the end, he landed before that Zhao Yu.

“Who is it?!” The sudden arrival of a person that landed among them caused that group of people to be startled.

After all, their current location was within the Drought Demon's Damned Pond's surroundings. A place like that was a place that people would not appear at all year-long. And if someone dared to visit, they would definitely not be individuals to be trifled with. Chu Feng ignored the questioning of the crowd. He directly grabbed that man by the name of Zhao Yu and asked, "Where did you see those two women?" A young man of the Kong Heavenly Clan with the cultivation of rank six Half Martial Ancestor pointed at Chu Feng's nose and shouted, "Hey! Damned bastard, exactly who are you?! I am asking you a question here!"

"Woosh, woosh~~~"

However, right at that moment, two more figures descended from the sky. Like bodyguards, they stood at Chu Feng's side.

Naturally, the two of them were Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

The crowd was still relatively fine with Wang Qiang's appearance. Even if he possessed a cultivation that surpassed Chu Feng's, it remained that he was only a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

However, Zhao Hong's appearance was no small matter. After all, she was a rank one Martial Ancestor. "All of you, shut up!" Zhao Hong cast her cold gaze at the crowd. At the same time, her rank one Martial Ancestor's oppressive might swept forth.

"Huu~~~" Her powerful oppressive might was unstoppable. Other than that man by the name of Kong Cheng, the rest of the people present were all knocked flying by the oppressive might. When they landed on the ground, those with less severe cases were bleeding from their noses, whereas those with more serious cases had fainted away.

Zhao Hong's actions could be said to be extremely ruthless. She truly spared no-one. Even though she was only threatening the crowd, she still left them injured.

“Martial Ancestor. S-s-she’s a Martial Ancestor?”

At that moment, those people that were knocked flying all revealed frightened expressions. After all, they were all only Half Martial Ancestors. To them, the Martial Ancestor realm was an insurmountable summit. “You dare attack my people? Do you know who we are?” Kong Cheng asked coldly.

“I don’t care who you are. I’m telling you to shut up so you’d best shut up. If you spout superfluous words again, I will tear your damned mouth apart,” Zhao Hong said.

“Truly courting death! Did you really think that you, a mere rank one Martial Ancestor, would be able to contend against me?!” Kong Cheng revealed a furious look.

“A mere Heavenly Bloodline possessor, why wouldn’t I dare to contend against you?” Zhao Hong said in a disapproving manner.

“Mere Heavenly Bloodline possessor? What arrogance! I shall have you understand how powerful a Heavenly Bloodline is!!!” Kong Cheng was furious. As he spoke, he shot forth a punch directly at Zhao Hong.

His punch was no small matter. The power of the punch so strong that he was simply trying to take Zhao Hong’s life.

While his cultivation was only that of a rank one Martial Ancestor, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Thus, to be exact, the strength of his punch was on par with an ordinary rank five Martial Ancestor’s attack.

However, facing that punch, Zhao Hong only smiled lightly. She lightly swung her sleeves, and a strong wind immediately shot forth. Just like that, she easily blocked that punch. At that moment, not to mention the others, even that Kong Heavenly Clansman revealed a shocked expression.

“You actually also possess a heaven-defying battle power capable

of surmounting four levels of cultivation?”

“You’re also a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline?” Kong Cheng asked in astonishment.

The reason for that was because a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation was the symbol of Heavenly Bloodline possessors. Furthermore... only when one’s cultivation reached Martial Ancestor, and one’s Heavenly Bloodline’s Nine Divine Lightnings fused into one, would one’s battle power reach a level capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Before reaching the Martial Ancestor realm, they generally only possessed heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

At that moment, that Zhao Hong actually possessed the same heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. Thus, the crowd felt that the only possible explanation would be that she was also a Heavenly Bloodline possessor.

However, who would’ve expected that Zhao Hong would snort disdainfully when that Kong Cheng asked whether or not she was a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. With an expression of contempt, Zhao Hong said, “Humph, Heavenly Bloodline?”

“Your mother, I, do not have it, nor do I care for it either.”

# Chapter 2362 – Zhao Hong Revealing Her Might

---

“What arrogance. I will have you die here.”

Zhao Hong’s insult toward Heavenly Bloodlines once again angered that Kong Cheng.

With a furious shout from Kong Cheng, surging lightning began to emit from his body. The nine colored lightnings began to interweave with one another, forming a dazzling armor of lightning on his body. At the same time, the lightning began to sprout a pair of wings on his back.

The Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings were the symbol of Heavenly Bloodline possessors. Once the two of them were unleashed, one’s cultivation would instantly increase by two levels.

At that moment, that Kong Cheng’s aura was no longer that of a rank one Martial Ancestor. Instead, it was that of a rank three Martial Ancestor. Adding on his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, and his strength was now on par with ordinary rank seven Martial Ancestors. “Ignorant bastard. You dare look down on us Heavenly Bloodline possessors? Do you not know how powerful our Heavenly Bloodline is now?” “Did you really think that just because your cultivation was the same as our big brother Kong Cheng’s that you would be able to contend against our big brother Kong Cheng?” “Ignorant fool! Our Heavenly Bloodline is the greatest bloodline in the world. Even if you possess the same level of cultivation, you are still a powerless ant when before a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. You will not be able to withstand a single blow.” At that moment, before Kong Cheng could say anything, that rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level young man from the Kong Heavenly Clan shouted complacently. At that moment, all those that were knocked flying

by Zhao Hong earlier revealed delighted smiles on their faces.

Although Zhao Hong had beaten them up like a fierce tiger oppressing a bunch of white hares, they knew that Zhao Hong would undoubtedly be defeated by Kong Cheng. The reason for that was because the disparity between the two of them was simply too enormous. “Against someone of your level, there is simply no need for your mother, I, to personally take care of you.” However, right at that moment when the group was feeling immensely proud and thinking that victory was at hand, a world spirit gate suddenly appeared before Zhao Hong. Following that, two huge monsters walked out of the world spirit gate. Those were two Fairy Spirit World, world spirits. Both of them were surging with immortal airs. Like two celestial bodyguards, they stood aggressively before Zhao Hong, protecting her.

Upon seeing those two world spirits, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng’s expression changed.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had fought against Zhao Hong before. At that time, the world spirit that Zhao Hong had summoned was a rank three Martial Ancestor world spirit.

However, this time around, the two world spirits that Zhao Hong summoned were different from the one she had summoned that time around.

Those two world spirits were of different genders. They appeared like lovers, and were well-matched with one another.

Furthermore, those two world spirits were rank four Martial Ancestors. In addition to their rank four Martial Ancestor-level cultivation, the two world spirits emitted a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivations. In other words, these two world spirits both possessed the ability to contend against ordinary rank seven Martial Ancestors.

“This woman, s-she actually possesses such powerful world spirits?”

“Exactly who is she?”

At that moment, those previously complacent people from the younger generation started to panic. The reason for that was because the auras of those two world spirits were simply too powerful. Neither of them seemed to be inferior to Kong Cheng. “Properly teach that ignorant fellow for me. Have him experience your strength,” Zhao Hong ordered.

“Yes,” The two Fairy Spirit Worlds’ world spirits answered obediently. Then, both of them took out long whips and began to rush to attack Kong Cheng.

“Don’t you underestimate me,” Kong Cheng was not to be outdone. With a flip of his wrist, he took out an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Then, he rushed to confront the two world spirits. “Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Rumbles began to sound all over. Oppressive might was surging all over as the three powerful Martial Ancestors collided with one another. The two world spirits were extremely well-coordinated. They worked perfectly with one another as they fought two against one. As for Kong Cheng, he relied on the strength of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and began to unleash martial skills in succession to confront the two world spirits.

Although Kong Cheng was already a Martial Ancestor, his Incomplete Ancestral Armament was still capable of increasing his battle power. The reason why he took out his Incomplete Ancestral Armament right away was precisely because he wanted to rely on the power of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament to suppress the two world spirits. Unfortunately, those two world spirits were simply too powerful. Furthermore, they had grasped powerful offensive abilities. Thus, even though Kong Cheng had already increased his strength with his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, he was still unable to subdue the two world spirits, and could only fight them to a stalemate. “Chu Feng, go ahead and ask what you want to ask. Leave this Kong Cheng to me,” Zhao Hong said to Chu



Feng. At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to that man by the name of Zhao Yu again.

“Big brother, please don’t kill me, spare me, please spare my life!!!” That Zhao Yu was extremely frightened after seeing how powerful Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were. He hurriedly knelt on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng while begging him to spare him. “Stand up. I only want you to answer my questions. As long as you answer them honestly, I will absolutely not bring harm to you,” Chu Feng said.

“Big brother, as long as you don’t harm me, I will tell you anything you want to know,” Zhao Yu stood up and said to Chu Feng.

“When and where did you encounter the two women that you described earlier? Tell me honestly,” Chu Feng asked.

The reason why Chu Feng was so concerned with the two women was because he was overjoyed upon hearing the descriptions given by Zhao Yu. The reason for that was because the women in Zhao Yu’s description truly resembled the descriptions of Su Rou and Su Mei.

Back in the Holy Land of Martialism, Su Rou and Su Mei had been possessed by the Moon Immortal and had their bodies forcibly occupied by her.

Later on, the two of them had disappeared. However, it was said that they had proceeded toward the Outer World. However, it seemed that the Moon Immortal had used a different sort of method to proceed to the Outer World. Thus, Chu Feng was unable to be certain as to whether or not the Moon Immortal had arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Thus, at the beginning, Chu Feng felt that it was very unlikely that he would find Su Rou and Su Mei in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, after hearing the description provided by that man, Chu Feng saw a trace of hope. Although he was unable to be certain, it remained a possibility. That is, the Moon Immortal was in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, it was very possible that she was at the Drought Demon's Damned Pond. "Big brother, so you were actually interested in those two women? Hehe, you should've said that sooner. You scared me to death."

"Actually, as we're both men, I can understand you. After all, those two girls are truly too good-looking," That Zhao Yu said with a mischievous laugh.

"Get to the point. If you dare spout superfluous words again, I will cut off your tongue," Chu Feng narrowed his brows and spoke in a relatively angry manner.

"Don't, don't, don't. I'll speak right away," Seeing that Chu Feng was angry, that Zhao Yu was so scared that his complexion changed. He did not dare to say anymore impudent words, and began to narrate his whole encounter with the two women to Chu Feng.

It turned out that this Zhao Yu's master was not someone to be trifled with. He was a Martial Ancestor-level expert. It was precisely because of his master's special status that Zhao Yu came to know Kong Cheng and the others, these people of the younger generation with extraordinary statuses.

A while ago, this Zhao Yu's master had needed an item. As for that item, someone had once obtained it at the Drought Demon's Damned Pond.

However, his master needed to enter closed-door training, and could not personally go there. As such, he had ordered Zhao Yu to go and search for that item. Although Zhao Yu had failed to discover the item, Zhao Yu had found two women at the Drought Demon's Damned Pond.

Those two women had not possessed powerful cultivations; they

had only been rank two Half Martial Ancestors. However, had been were training when Zhao Yu had encountered them. Furthermore, the two of them had emitted extraordinary power while training.

Although Zhao Yu was not very strong, he had followed his master all over the place. Thus, he had gained some knowledge.

At that time, he was able ascertain that the power he felt was from some sort of treasure. Most likely, those two women were training in some sort of technique by relying on that treasure.

Zhao Yu was also a rank two Half Martial Ancestor like the two women. However, as those two women possessed some sort of treasure, Zhao Yu did not dare to act blindly without thinking. Thus, he had hurriedly rushed back to find his master. Unfortunately, Zhao Yu's master was still in closed-door training, and Zhao Yu had no idea when his master would come out of his closed-door training.

As Zhao Yu was afraid that those two women would leave should he take too long, he ended up requesting help from Kong Cheng and the others.

That was why he had led Kong Cheng and the others over. Actually, their actual purpose in coming was to snatch away the cultivation treasure from those two women.

"Where did you encounter those two women?" Chu Feng asked coldly. "This... it's been so long, I can't remember the location clearly. Furthermore, it's uncertain that those two women will be at that same location. As such, I truly don't know where they are anymore," Zhao Yu shook his head.

However, who was Chu Feng? From Zhao Yu's flickering gaze, Chu Feng was already able to tell that Zhao Yu was lying to him.

Thus, Chu Feng unleashed his oppressive might and suppressed Zhao Yu, pushing him into the ground and nearly suffocating him

in the process.

Then, with a cold voice, he said, “Speak honestly. Else, I’ll take your life.”

“Please spare me, I’ll speak, I’ll speak,” Zhao Yu sensed Chu Feng’s killing intent and did not dare to conceal the truth from Chu Feng.

“Zhao Yu, if you dare speak, I will definitely not spare you!” However, right at that moment, that Kong Cheng’s voice sounded.

# Chapter 2363 – The Power Of Lightning

## Mark

---

Kong Cheng's voice sounded again. This caused Chu Feng and the others to turn their gazes toward him.

At that moment, the crowd were greatly disappointed.

Kong Cheng spoke very aggressively. This caused the crowd to think that he had managed to break free from those two world spirits.

However, upon looking over, the crowd discovered that not only was Kong Cheng unable to handle the two world spirits, he was also being suppressed by them, and forced into a disadvantaged state.

“S-say, w-with the way you are, y-you're p-powerless to even d-defend yourself. Y-yet, you s-still dare to threaten others?” Wang Qiang mocked.

“You all really think that I am unable to take care of these two world spirits?” “I shall let you all experience the true power of a Heavenly Bloodline!!!” After Kong Cheng finished saying those words, the nine colored lightnings that flashed in his eyes grew brighter and brighter. Then, the nine colored lightnings in his eyes began to move from his eyes to his skin and then gathered at his forehead. Soon, the lightnings that had gathered at his forehead formed a pattern. That pattern was squirming nonstop. However, the crowd were able to faintly tell that it seemed to be the character ‘mortal.’

At that moment, that Kong Cheng's aura increased once again. His battle power also increased alongside his aura.

“Heeaahh!!!” Suddenly, Kong Cheng shouted. Following his shout, the Incomplete Ancestral Armament he held in his hand reacted like a ferocious beast that had just been awakened. It too

let out a berserk sound, and then began to emit overwhelming power. seeing the situation, the expressions of the two Fairy World Spirits changed enormously. They moved away from Kong Cheng. Although Kong Cheng's cultivation had not increased, his current battle power was incomparable to before. He had already surpassed those two world spirits.

Kong Cheng, who was originally at a disadvantage, had managed to turn the situation around instantly. He was now suppressing the two world spirits.

“Lightning Mark! That is the Lightning Mark formed from the Nine Lightnings Fusions!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was staring at the squirming lightning symbol on Kong Cheng's forehead with a serious expression. He knew that that was the Lightning Mark that his father had spoken of. His father had said that when the possessors of Heavenly Lightning Bloodline reached Martial Ancestor level, one's nine colored Divine Lightnings would reach a state of Nine Lightnings Fusion. With that, one would be able to condense one's Divine Lightnings into a corresponding Lightning Mark.

The Lightning Marks were of different strength in correspondence with the Self-punishing Mysterious Techniques. They were respectively the Mortal Mark, the Earthen Mark, the Heaven Mark and the Divine Mark. Although what Kong Cheng had condensed was merely the weakest level Mortal Mark, his battle power had increased enormously from it. Else, it would be impossible for him to obtain the power to contend against those two world spirits. As this was the first time that Chu Feng was seeing a Lightning Mark, he was inevitably feeling excited. After all, what he trained in was the strongest Self-punishing Mysterious Technique, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. “When Mortal Marks are already like this, I wonder how the Divine Mark that you will form after becoming a Martial Ancestor would be like?” Her Lady Queen's voice sounded. Her tone was filled with

anticipation.

“I am also looking forward to that day. Merely, it seems that the current situation is unfavorable to us,” While Chu Feng was very excited, he was also very worried. He felt that regardless of how powerful Zhao Hong might be, those two world spirits would most likely be her limit. If those two world spirits were to be defeated by Kong Cheng, they would likely suffer today. “Rest assured, as long as his cultivation doesn’t increase, my world spirits will be able to handle him,” Zhao Hong seemed to have sensed Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s worries. Thus, she said that to reassure them.

Chu Feng looked to Zhao Hong and discovered that she really did have a confident appearance. It seemed that she was extremely confident in her world spirits.

“Merely world spirits, what makes you all think that you can handle me?” After Kong Cheng gained the upper hand in the battle, he became confident, and started to insult the two world spirits while suppressing them. “Humph,” Faced with Kong Cheng’s insults, anger flashed past the eyes of the two world spirits. Then, the two world spirits looked to one another, seemingly as if they had come to some sort of decision. Then, golden radiance shone from the eyes of the two world spirits. “Buzz~~~” As the dazzling light filled the air, the two world spirits’ bodies also began to emit dazzling golden light. The light grew brighter and brighter. It was so dazzling that many people were unable to open their eyes, and no longer dared to look at the light head-on. However, the dazzling light did not continue to shine forever. Soon, it ceased to shine.

When the dazzling light stopped shining so brightly, everyone could see that a change had actually occurred to the bodies of the two Fairy Spirit World world spirits. They were emitting a layer of golden light from their bodies. Furthermore, their battle power had also increased. “So what if you possess a Heavenly Bloodline. We shall have you experience the power of our Fairy World Spirit’s

bloodline.” As the two Fairy Spirit World’s world spirits spoke, they brandished the weapons in their hands and rushed to launch a counter-offensive against Kong Cheng. As for Kong Hong, he was not to be outdone. Once again, he collided with the two world spirits. Merely, this time around, neither side possessed superiority over one another. Once again, they entered a stalemate. “Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved his arm. Then, a ray of light flew out from his palm and pierced into that Zhao Yu.

“Ahhh!!!”

After that flash of light passed through, Zhao Yu immediately let out a miserable scream. Chu Feng’s attack had directly sliced off half of Zhao Yu’s arm.

Furthermore, Chu Feng used a special method to make the pain that Zhao Yu was feeling right now much more painful than the pain of having one’s arm cut off. That was the reason why Zhao Yu screamed so miserably. “Speak!!!” Chu Feng had lost his patience. The killing intent in his eyes grew denser and denser. If this Zhao Yu were to continue to delay, Chu Feng might really end up killing him. After all, this matter concerned his beloved ones.

“Don’t kill me, please don’t kill me. I’ll tell you right away,” That Zhao Yu did not dare to conceal this matter from Chu Feng any longer. Thus, he took out a map from his Cosmos Sack and tossed it to Chu Feng.

Upon opening the map, Chu Feng discovered that it was a map of the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond. On the map was a route. At the destination of that route was the symbol of two women. Evidently... Zhao Yu and the others had come prepared.

“Is this real?” Chu Feng asked seriously.

“Real, absolutely real,” Zhao Yu hurriedly nodded his head. “Chu Feng, someone like him cannot be trusted. The way I see it, we



should experiment with him and use the Soul-linking Spirit Formation Incantation on him,” Zhao Hong said.

“There’s no need,” Chu Feng shook his head. Through his observation, Chu Feng firmly believed that the map Zhao Yu had given him was real.

Chu Feng took a glance at the sky. The two Fairy World Spirits and Kong Cheng were still fighting. Seeing that, Chu Feng started to frown. Evidently, the two parties were at a stalemate right now. However, Chu Feng had no idea as to whether or not these members of the younger generation from major clans and powers would have reinforcements. It would be fine if there weren’t any reinforcements. However, if there were, they would likely be no match for them.

Thus, after pondering for a while, Chu Feng said to Zhao Hong, “It wouldn’t do to continue like this. Let’s retreat for now. Zhao Hong, are we able to get away safely?” “That’s simple,” Zhao Hong smiled confidently. Then, she extended her hand and made a grabbing motion. She gathered all of the remaining people from the Kong Heavenly Clan before her.

“Big brother Kong Cheng, save us! Big brother Kong Cheng, save us!!!” The people from the Kong Heavenly Clan all thought that Zhao Hong was going to do something to them and were scared witless.

In response, Kong Cheng started to panic. “Impudent! If you dare to do something to my clansmen, our Kong Heavenly Clan will definitely massacre your entire family and your extended family!!!”

“If you want them to live, cease your attacks immediately,” Zhao Hong said.

“You! You’re truly despicable and shameless!!!” Kong Cheng seemed to have realized what Zhao Hong wanted to do. Thus, he cursed out at her.

“I have never once declared that I am an honorable person. I’m telling you to cease your attacks, so you’d best do it. Else, I will slaughter them,” Zhao Hong threatened. “Come at me if you dare. Do not injure them,” Although that Kong Cheng was proud and arrogant, he was concerned about the lives of his clansmen, and thus actually stopped his attacks.

At that moment, the crowd all felt that Zhao Hong would take advantage of the situation to attack Kong Cheng. However, to the crowd’s surprise, after Kong Cheng stopped his attacks, Zhao Hong’s two world spirits also stopped their attacks. They did not seize this opportunity to attack Kong Cheng.

## Chapter 2364 – Revealing One’s Identity

---

“Husband, help me,” Zhao Hong said to Wang Qiang.

“Righto,” Although Wang Qiang had no idea what Zhao Hong planned to do, he still agreed to it immediately.

Then, Zhao Hong began to unleash her spirit power, and started setting up a spirit formation to contain all of the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. “You’re kidding! That woman, she’s actually an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?!!!” Once Zhao Hong began to set up her spirit formation, the people of the younger generation present were all shocked. Even Kong Cheng’s expression changed enormously. Shock filled his face.

The reason for that was because they were already able to tell that Zhao Hong was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Although she was only an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it remained that she was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were extremely rare existences. As such, how could they not be astonished?

Just when everyone was astonished, someone muttered in a mocking voice, “Humph, and here I thought we had encountered experts from the younger generation, but it turned out to be a senior-level expert bullying us from the younger generation.”

This reaction was understandable. The reason for that was because Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were concealing their appearances with conical bamboo hats the entire time. Thus, these people from the younger generation were simply unable to see their appearances. Furthermore, as Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were generally old monsters who had cultivated for a very long time, they automatically thought Zhao Hong to be an old monster. “Bullying the younger generation? Humph, open your dog eyes and look carefully. My age is younger than all of yours,”

Zhao Hong removed the conical bamboo hat from her head.

“This...” Upon seeing Zhao Hong’s appearance, the crowd were astonished again. Firstly, they were shocked by Zhao Hong’s appearance. They did not expect that the fiendish demon-like woman would be so beautiful.

However, most importantly, the people present all possessed their own means to differentiate someone’s age. Thus, they were able to get a rough estimate of Zhao Hong’s age. As such, they were certain that Zhao Hong was a member of the younger generation, that she was indeed not old.

However, a member of the younger generation was actually an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. How could they not be astonished by this?

“A bunch of f-frogs at the bottom of the well,” Wang Qiang said mockingly. Then, he also took off the conical bamboo hat on his head. After that, he shouted, “W-wife, I’ll c-come help you.”

As Wang Qiang spoke, he also unleashed his spirit power and began to help Zhao Hong set up her spirit formation. Furthermore, Wang Qiang had a very proud expression on his face. Evidently, he was doing this deliberately. “That stutterer is actually also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Sure enough, when the crowd saw the Immortal-level spirit power that Wang Qiang was releasing, they were all tongue-tied with shock. The astonishment they felt right now was even stronger than before. One Immortal-cloak World Spiritist was shocking enough. For there to be two Immortal-cloak World Spiritists made them feel as if this was simply inconceivable.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Zhao Hong, there’s no need to kill them,”

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to tell how powerful the spirit formation Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were setting up was. Chu Feng felt that there was a need to inform Zhao

Hong to not kill them. Although Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong already possessed some friction with the Kong Heavenly Clan, it remained that these people here were people of the younger generation, and that the matter of what had happened before was unrelated to them. Even if they ended up clashing today, it was Chu Feng and the others who had picked a fight with them first.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that teaching them a slight lesson for the sake of achieving his purpose would already suffice. He truly did not want to go as far as killing them.

“Chu Feng, you can rest assured. The spirit formation that I am setting up is definitely not what you are thinking,” Zhao Hong smiled lightly at Chu Feng. Then, she continued to set up her spirit formation. It was a very peculiar spirit formation. After Zhao Hong finished setting up the core of her spirit formation, she first had her two world spirits enter it. Then, she activated the spirit formation. “Buzz~~~:

After that spirit formation was activated, a boundless killing intent immediately swept forth. The spirit formation she had set up was a slaughtering formation. It was extremely powerful.

“Stop!!!”

“Don’t harm them!” Sensing that killing intent, Kong Cheng thought that Zhao Hong was planning to kill his clansmen,. and was immediately furious.

“As long as you listen to me obediently, they will not die,” Zhao Hong said to Kong Cheng.

“What do you want from me?” Kong Cheng asked.

“Enter that spirit formation core and stay there for four hours. After four hours, this spirit formation will disappear by itself. As that time, they will be able to come out unscathed.” “However, if you are to leave that spirit formation core in the four hour time

period, then I am sorry to say that they will die without an intact corpse,” Zhao Hong said with a beaming smile.

“You!!!” Kong Cheng felt a bit speechless. He did not expect Zhao Hong to use this sort of method to confine him. However, he still entered the spirit formation core with no hesitation. The reason for that was because compared to what he had in mind, what Zhao Hong was doing could already be considered lenient. As for Chu Feng, he did not say anything more. The reason for that was because he was able to tell while the spirit formation Zhao Hong had set up was a powerful slaughtering formation, Zhao Hong had altered it.

It was as Zhao Hong had declared, as long as there was a Martial Ancestor-level expert in the spirit formation core while the spirit formation was active, the people inside the spirit formation would not be harmed. Furthermore, as long as the spirit formation was active for four hours, it would automatically dispel itself.

However, if the Martial Ancestor-level expert in the spirit formation core were to leave in that period of time without another Martial Ancestor-level expert entering the spirit formation core to replace that person, the spirit formation would unleash its true might and slaughter the people inside.

By the same account, if someone tried to undo the spirit formation from the outside, the spirit formation would also immediately activate and massacre all the people within it.

“Oh, that’s right. I’d urge to you listen to my instructions obediently. It’s best that you do not try to use your power to force open that spirit formation. Else... don’t blame me for the deaths of your relatives,” Zhao Hong suddenly added.

“It’s best that you listen to her. Else, you will bring harm to them,” Chu Feng was afraid that Kong Cheng would not trust Zhao Hong, and thus echoed what Zhao Hong said. As the spirit formation was jointly set up by Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, even

though Kong Cheng possessed the capability to forcibly break it apart with his martial power, he would immediately trigger the mechanism of the spirit formation and cause it to kill all the people inside.

“Who are you all? Do you dare leave your names?” Kong Cheng asked coldly. Hearing those words, Chu Feng also removed his conical bamboo hat. Then, he said, “I am Chu Feng. If you want revenge in the future, you can come and find me.”

“Chu Feng, it’s you?!!!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd’s expression changed once again. Compared to Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, Chu Feng was quite famous in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm right now. Chu Feng’s wanted posters that the Ying Heavenly Clan sent out had already spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As such, they all knew what Chu Feng looked like. Although Kong Cheng did not say anything, the other young Half Martial Ancestors from the Kong Heavenly Clan began to threaten Chu Feng fiercely. “Chu Feng, you truly have nerve! Today, you have offended all four of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm! We shall see how you will continue to survive in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!” “If I were scared, I would not have revealed myself today,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. Then, he turned around and soared into the sky. Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang also soared into the sky following him. Then, the three of them disappeared into the distant sky. “That Chu Feng is truly brazen! He actually dared to attack us! Does he really think that our Kong Heavenly Clan are trash like the Ying Heavenly Clan? Does he really think that we are people that he can afford to offend?!” That rank six Half Martial Ancestor from the Kong Heavenly Clan spoke while gnashing his teeth angrily. It could be seen that he was extremely furious because of what happened today.

“Kong Zheng, speak no more. If they had wanted to kill you earlier, you would already be dead now,” Kong Cheng said.

“But, big brother Kong Cheng, we absolutely cannot let this matter go,” That rank six Half Martial Ancestor Kong Zheng said.

“Even if they have been lenient, I will absolutely still not let this matter go. After you all regain your freedom, we shall find them and take our revenge,” Kong Cheng said. “Big brother Kong Cheng, we still have matters to take care of, so we’ll take our leave first,” Right at that moment, the other members of the younger generation present began to voice their intentions to leave. As they spoke, they prepared to leave.

“What are you all doing? Could it be that you all have been scared by that Chu Feng?” Seeing their friends all planning to leave, Kong Zheng spoke in a very displeased manner. “Kong Zheng, it is truly not us speaking ill of you. However, it is clear that they are no ordinary people. It is best that we don’t look further into this matter.”

“Not mentioning that Chu Feng, merely that tigress and that stutterer are both extraordinary individuals.”

“As for that Chu Feng, ever since his reputation spread, his various deeds have made it known that he is an absolutely fearless individual.” “For three such demon-level characters to appear in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, do you all not feel that it is strange? Do you all really think that they do not possess backing?”

“We have already been defeated in this battle. As such, we really do not wish to continue, because we do not wish to die.” “That’s right. It is clear that those three people are all not to be trifled with. I urge you all to drop this matter too. Don’t bother finding them again.”

After the younger generations from the various powers finished saying those words, they all left. The only people that remained were the younger generation from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, not to mention Kong Cheng, even that Kong



Zheng entered deep contemplation.

# Chapter 2365 – Dispute

---

Although the Drought Demon's Damned Pond was called a pond, its size was actually enormously large.

The pond's water was so deep that it was akin to a bottomless sea. Furthermore, the pond water was not something that ordinary people could set even a foot into. The reason for that was because the pond water was pitch-black like ink. Furthermore, it emitted a very nauseating odor. Merely by looking at it, one could tell that it was no ordinary water.

In fact, it was indeed no ordinary water. It was a sort of poisonous water. Those below Martial Emperor could not make the slightest contact with the water. Otherwise, they would be seriously poisoned and killed. The poison would directly dissolve them into pools of blood.

As such, the nauseating smell of the Drought Demon's Damned Pond was mostly that of the reeking of blood. This meant that countless lives had ended within it.

Furthermore, not only was the water pitch-black, even the gaseous substances that rose from the pond water were black. Like black clouds, the gases filled the sky and covered the earth. If ordinary people were to enter that layer of black gas, they would simply become unable to move, as they would not be able to see anything.

However, as for martial cultivators, they possessed eyesight that surpassed that of ordinary people after reaching a certain level of cultivation. Merely by reaching Half Martial Ancestor level, one would no longer be obstructed by the black gases. There was no need to mention Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. After all, the three of them were outstanding world spiritists. The gases covering the region were simply unable to hinder their vision. Before them, those black gases were akin to nothing. At that

moment, the two powerful Fairy Spirit World world spirits were leading the path for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. They were flying rapidly through the Drought Demon's Damned Pond. Chu Feng had a serious expression on his face as he closely fixed his eyes on the area before him. Emotions filled his heart, causing him to feel both joyous and worried.

Su Rou and Su Mei were two women who he had known since his youth. For him, the two of them had made enormous sacrifices. Furthermore, they had helped Chu Feng enormously. The two of them had protected Chu Feng many times, and nearly sacrificed themselves in the process.

Since he was young, Chu Feng had made a vow that he would definitely protect Su Rou and Su Mei once he grew up and became powerful. Yet, the Moon Immortal had snatched Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies away right in front of him. At that time, Chu Feng had been powerless to do anything about it.

That was a knot in Chu Feng's heart. He had always felt extremely ashamed, and thought that he had not managed to protect his women, that he had let Su Rou and Su Mei down. And now, it was very possible that an opportunity to save Su Rou and Su Mei had presented itself before him. As such, Chu Feng would naturally be feeling extremely emotional. That said, Chu Feng was scared that those two women that Zhao Yu had spoken of weren't Su Rou and Su Mei.

"B-brother, l-let me have a l-look at that map," Wang Qiang suddenly said.

"Mn," Chu Feng handed the map to Wang Qiang.

"Sure enough," Wang Qiang's gaze changed slightly.

"What's wrong?" Chu Feng asked. He was able to tell that Wang Qiang seemed to have discovered something.

"This route is t-the same r-route to the location of my treasures,"

Wang Qiang said.

“Same route?” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were both surprised.

“T-that’s right, t-they’re the same. A-according to the direction on my treasure map, the f-first checkpoint will be c-coming soon. T-that is a region w-where one cannot f-fly. One m-must walk on the water. However, t-the pond water t-there pos-possesses enormous g-gravitational force. Those b-below Half Martial Ancestor w-will not be a-able to escape from the suction of the w-water.”

“However, t-to the three of us, t-that poses no threat. That said... the r-region with t-the enormous gravitational f-force just so h-happens to be the destination of this map,” Wang Qiang said.

“In other words, if that Zhao Yu did not deceive us, those two women who are very likely to be Lil’ Rou and Lil’ Mei are training at the first checkpoint?” Chu Feng asked. “T-that’s v-very possible,” Wang Qiang said.

“Don’t worry about it. Since it won’t be able to stop us, let’s just proceed directly,” Zhao Hong declared. Then, she said to her two world spirits, “Go a bit faster.”

“Woosh~~~” Once Zhao Hong gave the order, the two world spirits increased their speed. Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong began to fly rapidly through the pitch-black sky above the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond with the speed of light. “We’re here.”

Suddenly, the two world spirits stopped flying. Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong also began to look toward the area ahead of them with cautious gazes.

That place did not appear to be anything extraordinary at first glance. It appeared to be the same as the other regions of the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond.

However... that was the destination on Zhao Yu’s map. It was

also the checkpoint that Wang Qiang had mentioned.

“There’s simply no one here. Chu Feng, it seems you’ve been deceived. Let’s return immediately so that we can teach that bastard a proper lesson,” As Zhao Hong spoke, she turned around.

“Wait,” However, Chu Feng extended his hand to stop Zhao Hong. Then, he said, “He doesn’t seem to have deceived us. There are indeed traces of someone training here. Furthermore, it doesn’t seem to have been long since they left.”

“Really?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were both shocked. The reason for that was because neither one of them were able to notice any traces of people training at that location.

“Unfortunately, they have already left. We arrived too late,” Chu Feng said.

“B-brother, a-are Su R-Rou and Su Mei’s auras t-there?” Wang Qiang asked Chu Feng.

“No, there’s nothing,” Chu Feng shook his head regretfully.

Disappointed. At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart was filled with disappointment.

“Chu Feng, although I do not know how important those two women are to you, you shouldn’t forget about our purpose in coming here. Since we’ve already come so far, we should continue onward. After all, my husband’s treasures are ahead,” Zhao Hong said. “We cannot continue just like this,” Chu Feng said. “Why?” Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang asked in unison.

“Brother, is this the only route to that treasure?” Chu Feng turned to ask Wang Qiang.

“T-that’s right. According to the map, this p-place is unavoidable. If we are to t-try to b-bypass this place, we w-will be affected b-by the spirit formation in t-the Drought De-Demon’s Damned Pond, and f-forever be u-unable to find the treasure,”

Wang Qiang said.

“In other words, we must proceed according to the route indicated on your map, right?” Chu Feng asked. “That’s what the map said,” Wang Qiang nodded. “Chu Feng, did you discover something?” Zhao Hong asked. “Although this place does not appear to have any abnormalities, it is actually filled with hidden dangers. As for what sort of dangers, even I am unable to tell. However, it is definitely not as simple as losing the ability to fly and the enormous gravitational force from the water that Wang Qiang spoke of,” Chu Feng said.

“But... why did I not notice anything strange?” Zhao Hong’s gaze changed slightly. Her eyes flickered with a trace of suspicion. After all, not only was she an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, she was also someone who had grasped extremely powerful observation methods.

“Truth be told, the observation method that I train in is called Heaven’s Eyes. My Heaven’s Eyes have never deceived me before. They have helped me determine dangers and find opportunities many times.” “This time around, it gave me a perilous sign. For the sake of our safety, it is better that we move more cautiously,” Chu Feng said.

“B-brother, w-what do you have in mind?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Set up this formation. We will be able to pass through that area safely with that,” As Chu Feng spoke, he outlined a spirit formation diagram. It was a spirit formation that looked like a magic cloud. Standing on that spirit formation, they would no longer be affected by the special powers of that region. Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong would be able to pass safely through the region by standing on the spirit formation and flying through the sky.

The way Chu Feng saw it, this would be the safest method to pass through that region. “This spirit formation... even if the three of

us are to jointly set it up, it will still require six entire hours.”

“Furthermore, I did not discover anything unknown or dangerous using my own observation methods.”

“Not to mention that setting up this spirit formation will waste time and exhaust our spirit power, most importantly... I feel that it is simply needless,” Zhao Hong said.

“Zhao Hong, please trust me. Wang Qiang is my best brother and you are my friend. I would definitely not waste your time for no reason,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, I also urge you to trust me. Perhaps my observation method might be inferior to yours, however, it will absolutely not make any mistakes. I trust that I have seen through everything.”

“As for what I saw, it is that there are simply no dangers ahead. We will be able to easily and safely pass through it without using any special methods.”

“Furthermore, let me remind you of this. We were only able to safely reach this place because of me, Zhao Hong and not you, Chu Feng,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng one word at a time. Her tone was somewhat ill-intended.

## Chapter 2366 – Trap

---

“W-wife, w-what are y-you doing?”

“I-Isn’t my b-brother j-just suggesting t-this out of kind intentions? A-as the saying goes, s-safety is t-the number one priority. W-we wouldn’t be w-wasting a lot of spirit power, nor w-would we be wasting a l-lot of time,” Seeing that the atmosphere was amiss, Wang Qiang hurriedly spoke to diffuse the situation. “You shut up,” Zhao Hong was even more displeased at Wang Qiang speaking out for Chu Feng. “Zhao Hong, since you distrust me like this, it would appear that you do not consider me your friend,” However, faced with the increasingly more malevolent Zhao Hong, Chu Feng smiled and said, “However, I, Chu Feng, consider you as my friend. I do not want something bad to happen to you.” “Thus, I hope that you will trust me this once. If I am really mistaken and end up wasting our time, you can do whatever you wish to do to me.”

“Chu Feng, you...” At that moment, Zhao Hong’s emotional expression grew much calmer. She was slightly embarrassed. She was clearly acting very aggressive, and even seemed to become hostile toward Chu Feng, but Chu Feng still faced her with a smiling face without being angered in the slightest. Instead, in a kind manner, he tried to persuade her. This caused Zhao Hong to feel very apologetic.

If Chu Feng was an individual that was afraid of the strong and bullied the weak, she would be fine with it.

However, although Zhao Hong had not known Chu Feng for a long time, she knew how Chu Feng treated his enemies. Chu Feng was not an individual who was afraid of the strong and bullied the weak. On the contrary, he was a fearless man.

Chu Feng’s current reaction made Zhao Hong realize even more that Chu Feng truly considered her to be his friend, and was



concerned for her well-being. Otherwise, there would be no reason for him to be this courteous toward her.

“Okay then, we’ll do as you say,” In the end, Zhao Hong compromised. Furthermore, after she finished saying those words, Zhao Hong was the first to begin setting up that spirit formation. “Y-you’re the m-most r-resourceful a-after all,” At that moment, Wang Qiang’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ear.

Chu Feng smiled lightly and replied, “It’s merely sincerity.”

Then, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang also joined Zhao Hong and began to set up the spirit formation together.

With the three of them joining hands, their speed was extremely fast. Even though it was clearly a grand formation that was very difficult to set up, the three of them managed to finish more than half of the spirit formation in merely four hours.

It was as Zhao Hong had anticipated, the three of them would be able to finish setting up the spirit formation in six hours’ time.

“Master, this is bad!!!”

Right at that moment, Zhao Hong’s two world spirits that were guarding this place suddenly revealed serious expressions.

“They’ve actually chased us?” At that moment, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong hurriedly stopped setting up their spirit formations.

They turned around and discovered that two figures were flying toward them. Those two people were none other than the two Kong Heavenly Clansmen that they confronted earlier.

That rank one Martial Ancestor Kong Cheng.

And that rank six Half Martial Ancestor Kong Zheng.

Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong did not dare to be careless. After all, they were people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were afraid that those two

had called over the Kong Heavenly Clan's experts.

Soon, Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng appeared before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's line of sight. However, apart from the two of them, there was no one else.

"I've finally found you two," That Kong Zheng gnashed his teeth angrily as he stared at Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. It was as if he possessed an enormous hatred against them. However, Kong Cheng grabbed Kong Zheng and pulled him behind. Then, he said to Zhao Hong, "I am unreconciled with the battle earlier. Are you willing to fight me again honorably?" "In that case, only the two of you came?" Zhao Hong asked in an astonished manner.

"Is there even a need to request our Kong Heavenly Clan's senior's assistance against you? My big brother Kong Cheng alone will suffice," Kong Zheng said.

"Kong Zheng, stop talking!" Right after Kong Zheng finished saying those words, Kong Cheng shouted at him sternly. Then, he said, "This matter is unrelated to him. Are you willing to fight me again?"

"Since you are this bold and reckless, I will satisfy you. Go, properly teach this egotistical fellow a lesson." Once Zhao Hong said those words, her two Fairy World Spirits once again unleashed their bloodline power. As golden light flickered, their auras increased enormously.

As for Kong Cheng, he had already activated his Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and Lightning Mark before arriving.

It could be seen that, as he had already fought against Zhao Hong's two world spirits before, he no longer possessed the air of arrogance from earlier, and did not dare to be careless against them. As such, he had unleashed his strongest abilities from the get-go.

Kong Cheng was afraid that the battle would implicate Kong

Zheng. Thus, he first had Kong Zheng move far away from him before unleashing his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and flying toward the two world spirits to confront them.

“Guu, guu, guu~~~” “Luu, luu, luu~~~”

However, right at that moment, the pond water in the area with a strong gravitational force started to surge.

Most shockingly, multi-colored rays of light shot out from the surging black pond water.

At the same time, an aura that relaxed one's mind and jolted one's spirit was subsequently emitted from the pond. “Big brother Kong Cheng, there's treasure there! It is very possible that it's the treasure Zhao Yu spoke of!” At that moment, that Kong Zheng's eyes started to shine. He was incomparably excited, and unable to take his eyes away that strange and abnormal region of water. “We shall fight this battle later,” In response, Kong Cheng stopped his attacks and rushed directly into the pond water. The two world spirits followed after him and also dived into the pond water. “Damn it! That fellow is simply not planning to spar at all. He has come here for the sake of seizing the treasures.” “He a-actually w-wanted to s-seize it from us, a-as if!!!”

At that moment, both Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang revealed angry expressions. They both planned to rush into the pond water.

“Wait!” However, Chu Feng suddenly stopped them.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing?” Zhao Hong asked in a very displeased manner. After all, it was concerning a treasure here.

“I feel that something is amiss. Careful, there may be a trap,” Chu Feng urged.

“Trap? Where would the trap be? If there is a trap, how could that Kong Heavenly Clan's fellow enter the water safely? How could my world spirits be able to enter the water?” Zhao Hong asked loudly.

“It might be bait,” Chu Feng said.

“No, you’re wrong. You are completely mistaken. I am connected with my world spirits. They are completely safe in there. There are simply no dangers at all,” After Zhao Hong finished saying those words, she tossed away Chu Feng’s hand that was holding her back and dove into the water.

“B-brother, we’ve got to s-seize the t-treasure first.”

Wang Qiang grinned at Chu Feng and then also dove into the water after Zhao Hong. It was not that he did not trust Chu Feng. Merely, compared to caring about his safety, he was more interested in the treasure. The reason for that was because the aura emitted by that treasure was truly no small matter.

“.....” Seeing that the two of them did not listen to his advice and entered the water, Chu Feng revealed a very complicated expression. However, what filled his eyes was mostly worry. “Chu Feng, only you and I are left. I am interested in knowing how strong you are,” Right at that moment, that Kong Zheng’s voice suddenly sounded. Chu Feng turned around, and discovered that Kong Zheng was currently stretching his muscles and bones with a very eager appearance of fighting against Chu Feng.

Kong Zheng’s eyes were filled with confidence. After all, Chu Feng was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, whereas he was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, they were both possessors of Heavenly Bloodlines. Thus, they had grasped the same sorts of abilities.

As such, Kong Zheng felt that Chu Feng would absolutely not be a match for him. He felt that he would be able to defeat this newly-emerged genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. To Kong Zheng, this was a rare opportunity to become famous. “If you want to spar, I can spar with you sometime later. However, right now, I do not have time to waste on you,” Chu Feng cast a side eye at Kong Zheng. Then, he turned his gaze to the region below. At

that moment, Chu Feng deeply wished that his Heaven's Eyes were wrong. He deeply wished that that region was safe. The reason for that was because he did not want anything to happen to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“What arrogance,” Upon hearing Chu Feng's response filled with contempt, Kong Zheng felt that he was being insulted. Thus, he revealed a furious expression and planned to attack Chu Feng. “Wuuahhh~~~” However, right at that moment, in the pond water that was dazzling with golden radiance, a bitter scream was suddenly heard. “What is going on?” At that moment, Kong Zheng's expression changed enormously. The reason for that was because the scream not only contained Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang's voices, there was also Kong Cheng's voice. “Crap!” At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown deeply. It was as he had anticipated, there was indeed a trap present.

# Chapter 2367 – Mysterious Life Form

---

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Following the miserable screams from Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang and Kong Cheng, the pond water started to whirl, forming an enormous surging whirlpool.

Soon, three figures appeared in the center of the whirlpool. They were precisely Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang and Kong Cheng.

Merely, only their upper bodies were exposed. Furthermore, their complexions were all abnormally pale, and their expressions pained. It was clear that some sort of power was tormenting them.

Upon seeing their appearances, Chu Feng and Kong Zheng revealed worried expressions.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

Right at that moment, a strange and sinister laughter sounded from the center of the vortex.

“Who is it? Why did you attack my friends?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

“I am the master of this place. They intruded into my territory. What wrong is there for me to attack them?” That strange voice sounded again. It was extremely sinister and cold. Merely by hearing the voice, one’s hair would stand on end, and one would feel as if one’s blood was running cold. It was as if that voice was simply not the voice of a human.

“Impudent! Who is it that dared to touch my big brother Kong Cheng? You should know that my big brother Kong Cheng is from the Kong Heavenly Clan!!!” That Kong Zheng shouted.

“Eaaahhh!!!”

However, right after Kong Zheng said those words, Kong Cheng, who was trapped in the water, let out an even more miserable

scream. “Bastard! Release my big brother Kong Cheng immediately! Else, our Kong Heavenly Clan will definitely not let you get away with it!” Kong Zheng grew even more panicked. He knew that since their opponent was able to subdue Kong Cheng, it meant it was an existence that he absolutely could not contend against. With no other alternative, Kong Zheng could only continue to voice threats.

“Ahhh!!!”

“No, stop! Stop immediately!!!” However, Kong Cheng’s screams grew more and more hysterical; more and more painful.

Merely by hearing his screams, one could imagine how terrifying the torture Kong Cheng was undergoing right now was.

“Hahaha, this is too funny. Is that guy by the name of Kong Zheng a fool?” At that moment, Her Lady Queen was convulsing with laughter. She was wholeheartedly laughing at Kong Zheng’s lack of intelligence.

The reason for that was because it was very clear that the mysterious existence was deliberately tormenting Kong Cheng to make Kong Zheng shut up because it was dissatisfied with Kong Zheng threatening it. Yet, Kong Zheng did not manage to comprehend what that mysterious existence wanted it to do, and instead continued to threaten it. This caused Kong Cheng to suffer much greater torment than Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

If it were to continue, he would likely die.

Feeling helpless, Chu Feng said to Kong Zheng, “If you do not want to cause his death, shut up immediately.”

“If you want to kill him, then continue to bring up your clan.”  
“Ah?”

“What?”

“It’s because of me?!!!!” Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Kong Zheng came to a sudden realization. However, he was at a loss as to

what to do. Thus, he sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng, “Then... what should I do?”

“We do not know who our opponent is. However, it is clear they do not fear your Kong Heavenly Clan. You have already enraged him earlier with your threats. If you wish to defuse its anger, the only thing you can do is apologize,” Chu Feng said. “Senior, I-I am sorry. It was truly not my intention to speak rudely to you. I was merely extremely worried about my elder brother’s safety.”

“Senior, this junior will offer my apologies to you here. Please, I hope that you can release my elder brother.”

Although that Kong Zheng possessed a haughty attitude, it would seem that he truly possessed a very good relationship with Kong Cheng. Thus, after he received Chu Feng’s advice, he immediately offered an apology without the slightest hesitation. “That’s more like it,” Sure enough, after that Kong Zheng grew soft, a satisfied voice sounded from the pond water. At the same time, Kong Cheng stopped screaming in pain.

In fact, it was not only Kong Cheng. Even Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong’s expressions grew much better.

It would seem that mysterious existence had stopped tormenting the three of them.

“Crash~~~” Immediately afterward, water began to surge in between the three. Soon, a figure appeared.

It was a humanoid monster. It possessed a humanoid shape, but did not resemble a human at all. Its body was different from that of humans. To be precise, it simply did not possess a physical body at all. Instead, it was filled with flowing mud from head to toe. It looked like a person made of clay. Logically, someone like Chu Feng, who had experienced a lot of things, would not be shocked by a clay man. The reason for that was because the appearance of the clay man could simply not be considered to be frightening when compared to those frightening existences.



However, not only did this clay man possess a sinister and strange voice, it also possessed a pair of empty sockets for eyes. Although there were no eyeballs in those sockets, they emitted ice-cold killing intent. From the moment Chu Feng saw its eyes, Chu Feng felt as if his heart had been frozen. Chu Feng had a sensation. He felt as if this thing that he was meeting eye-to-eye was not an ordinary life form. Rather, it was a death god. Although Chu Feng knew that it would be impossible for that mysterious clay man to be the legendary death god, its ice-cold killing intent had already revealed that it was a cold-blooded existence that murdered without blinking an eye. As such, Chu Feng did not dare to act carelessly.

“The two of you must want them to live, right?” That mysterious existence asked.

“Of course,” Chu Feng and Kong Zheng replied in unison.

“If you want them to live, then it’s very simple. You merely need to do as I say,” That mysterious existence said.

“Please tell us what you want,” Chu Feng said frankly.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that he did not possess the ability to haggle at a time like this. Only by obeying would it be possible for him to save Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“First, you are not allowed to find reinforcements. If any of you dare to find reinforcements, I dare to guarantee that you will no longer be able to see your friends.”

“Next, you are to go to the Hundred Refinements Stage and obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone for me,” That mysterious existence said.

“Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?!!!!” Hearing those words, Kong Zheng’s expression immediately changed.

“That’s right, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone!!!” “I will release the friends of whichever one of you two first obtains the

Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone for me. As for the one who fails to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, I'd urge you not to come back. Not only will you die, your friends will also die," That mysterious existence said. "We are able to agree to this condition of yours. However, I have a request."

"We will bring back the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, you must release all of our friends," Chu Feng said. "Tsk, tsk, tsk..." After Chu Feng finished saying those words, that mysterious existence let out a strange laugh. Then, with a mocking tone, it said, "You do not possess the ability to demand things from me. You can either do as I say, or your friends will die."

"Senior, this junior understands. Please don't harm my elder brother again. No matter what, I will definitely bring back the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone for you."

Although that Kong Zheng possessed a low level of intelligence, he was able to understand the demands of that mysterious existence. Thus, after he finished saying those words, he immediately turned around and rushed toward the direction of the Hundred Refinements Stage with all his might. After his intention to haggle ended in failure, Chu Feng also stopped trying to bother with superfluous words with that mysterious existence. Instead, he looked to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. At that moment, Zhao Hong did not speak. In fact, she did not even look Chu Feng in the eye. Likely, she was feeling ashamed that she hadn't listened to Chu Feng and rashly rushed into the pond water only to end up like this.

As for Wang Qiang, he opened his large mouth and said to Chu Feng with a laugh, "B-brother, s-sorry. I s-should've listened to you. Now I'll have to in-incon-inconvenience you again." Although Wang Qiang laughed indifferently, the tone that he spoke with was very apologetic.

Faced with Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's current reactions, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, "If you consider me a brother, don't

say such a thing. No matter what, I will definitely save you two.” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his gaze suddenly grew serious. He looked to that mysterious existence and said, “I will do as you say. However, I also hope that you will keep your promise. If something is to happen to my friends when I return with what you requested, I guarantee... that you will regret your actions.”

“Woosh~~~”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he flew toward the direction that Kong Zheng had left in.

Even though Chu Feng had also threatened it, that mysterious existence did not torment Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. Instead, a trace of complicated emotions appeared in its eyes. With a low voice, it muttered, “This brat...”

# Chapter 2368 – Hundred Refinements

## Jadeite Stone

---

On the way, Chu Feng had made many inquiries about the surrounding area. Thus, Chu Feng not only knew that the Hundred Refinements Stage was not far from the Drought Demon's Damned Pond, he also knew the location of the Hundred Refinements Stage.

The mission that clay-like humanoid had given Chu Feng and Kong Cheng was very competitive.

Thus, Chu Feng did not dare to waste time. He had to proceed quickly for the Hundred Refinements Stage and strive to obtain the so-called Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone before Kong Zheng.

After all, that was the only way to save Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. "Mn?"

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was wholeheartedly hastening towards the Hundred Refinements Stage, his gaze abruptly changed. He immediately stopped mid-flight, and began to stare at the area ahead with a flabbergasted expression.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng discovered that there was a figure standing ahead, blocking his path. As for that person, it was actually his competitor, Kong Zheng.

"You were deliberately waiting for me here?" Chu Feng asked with an ill-natured tone. Chu Feng felt that it was very possible that Kong Zheng was deliberately waiting for him to take care of him.

After all, this Kong Zheng was hostile towards him earlier, and was his competitor now.

"Chu Feng, thank you for advising me earlier. Else, with how slow-witted I am, I fear that I would've killed my elder brother," However, to Chu Feng's surprise, not only did Kong Zheng not

attack him, he instead clasped his hands and bowed to him in an apologetic manner.

“So it’s because of that. I felt that while your brother might possess a haughty temperament, his nature doesn’t seem to be bad. At the very least, he is affectionate and true towards you all. I do not wish for someone like him to die,” Chu Feng said.

“No matter what, it remains that I owe you a favor... and I will return this favor,” Kong Zheng said.

“It is a trivial manner, you don’t have to concern yourself with it,” Chu Feng said.

“What if I am able to bring you into the Hundred Refinements Stage?” Kong Zheng said.

“Bring me into the Hundred Refinements Stage?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed.

Actually, Chu Feng’s father had given him a world spirit key. His father had told Chu Feng that the world spirit key would allow him to exit the Hundred Refinements Stage. Chu Feng firmly believed in what his father said without the slightest bit of doubt.

However, his father had not mentioned to him whether or not the world spirit key could allow him to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage from the outside.

Although a spirit formation key like that would generally possess bilateral access, it remained that Chu Feng had never tried it before. As such, he did not possess absolute certainty of success.

Thus, Chu Feng was very worried. He feared that he would not even be able to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage.

Yet now, this Kong Zheng actually said that he would be able to bring Chu Feng into the Hundred Refinements Stage. To Chu Feng, this was an extremely enticing offer. “You should know what sort of place the Hundred Refinements Stage is. Although that is the place where trash from the Lower Realms are transported to, the

spirit formation of that place is extremely powerful. When the Hundred Refinements Stage is sealed, practically no one will be able to enter it.” “In the past, there was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist who wanted to forcibly enter the Hundred Refinements Stage. However, he ended up being injured by the spirit formation around the Hundred Refinements Stage instead. No one was able to cure his injuries. Then, half a year later, he died,” Kong Zheng said.

“Based on what you said, doesn’t it mean that no one will be able to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course not. However, the clan in charge of guarding the Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation is able to open the passage to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Kong Zheng said.

“However, I’ve heard that the clan in charge of guarding the Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation does not belong to any power. That clan has been guarding the Hundred Refinements Stage according to the rules of the Hundred Refinements Stage the entire time. For people like them, even if they are able to open up a passage to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, they would not do so, no?”

“That is indeed the case. Even if you threaten them with their lives, they will likely still not submit to your demands.”

“However, my words possess a different significance. One of the Hundred Refinements Stage’s guardians was saved by my grandfather, and thus owes him an enormous favor.”

“He once declared that as long it was something he could accomplish, he would do any sort of task that was asked of him.”

“I was present at that time, and joked about whether or not he would be willing to allow me to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage to play around.”

“He told me that he would be willing to allow me to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage at any time.”

“Of course, I was merely saying those words. After all, I had no interest in entering a place where those trash from the Lower Realms trained.”

“Merely, I never expected that I would really need to enter that place today,” Kong Zheng said.

Although Kong Zheng was speaking to Chu Feng with a decent attitude right now, his tone was filled with arrogance. He greatly despised those from the Lower Realms.

“Right now, the relationship between us is that of competitors. If you are to help me enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, there will be no benefit for you. Instead, it will be extremely detrimental to you,” Chu Feng said.

“However, it remains that I owe you a favor. Only by doing this will I be able to express my sincerity. Only by doing this will this competition be fair. Furthermore, I do not feel that you will be able to defeat me,” Kong Zheng said.

“Never would I have expected that you were a man of character,” Faced with Kong Zheng’s behavior, Chu Feng revealed a good-natured smile.

Chu Feng was actually afraid that Kong Zheng might be plotting something. Thus, he had been observing Kong Zheng’s reaction the entire time. That said, Chu Feng felt that Kong Zheng was a slow-witted individual, and not someone proficient in putting up a pretense. If he was plotting something, Chu Feng felt that he would have been able to easily see through him.

However, Chu Feng saw nothing strange with Kong Zheng’s behavior. As such, Chu Feng was very surprised. After all, his initial impression of Kong Zheng was not good at all.

However, as Chu Feng found nothing strange with Kong Zheng’s

behavior, it meant that Kong Zheng was really planning to help Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, let’s go,” As Kong Zheng spoke, he began to fly toward the direction of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Stage whilst Chu Feng followed closely behind him.

“Kong Zheng, do you know what use that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone possesses?” On the way there, Chu Feng asked out of curiosity. He felt that there was most definitely a reason why that mysterious existence wanted the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

Upon mentioning the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, Kong Zheng’s expression had a clear change. Evidently, Kong Zheng knew the use of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. “The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone could be considered to be one of the Hundred Refinements Stage’s treasures. There is a legend regarding it.”

“According to that legend, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was originally called the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone. Not only does it possess enormous sealing power, it also possesses enormous unsealing power. Later on, when the Chu Heavenly Clan was constructing the Hundred Refinements Stage, they just so happened to need the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone’s power. As such, they placed the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone in the formation core of the Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation,” Kong Zheng said.

“The Hundred Refinements Stage was constructed by the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng asked in astonishment. He did not expect that the Hundred Refinements Stage was constructed by his clan.

“That’s right. Not only is the Chu Heavenly Clan the ruler of the Great Thousand Upper Realm, they are also the ruler of many Ordinary Realms and Lower Realms.” “For the sake of managing



the Lower Realms better, the Chu Heavenly Clan constructed the Hundred Refinements Stage in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. All the people from the Lower Realms end up arriving in that place,” Kong Zheng said.

“Since the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is that important, wouldn’t we destroy the Hundred Refinements Stage should we take it away?” Chu Feng asked.

“We wouldn’t. Reportedly, the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone was originally black in color, and contained enormous power.”

“However, after it was used by the Hundred Refinements Stage, the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone had already had all of its power completely drawn out. After all of the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone’s powers were drawn out, it turned green in color, like jadeite. That was why it became known as the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.”

“And now, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is no longer in the Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation’s formation core. Instead, it was placed on the Hundred Refinements Stage’s altar. That was also the reason why I was surprised that that thing would want that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. I truly cannot understand why it would want it,” Kong Zheng said.

“Indeed,” Hearing what Kong Zheng said, Chu Feng started to ponder.

“Heh...” Right at the moment when Chu Feng was pondering, the corners of that Kong Zheng’s mouth suddenly rose into a wicked curve.

# Chapter 2369 – The One To Be Defeated Is You

---

Chu Feng's perception was extremely sharp. He immediately sensed the change in Kong Zheng, and turned his gaze to him.

Upon looking at Kong Zheng, Chu Feng was shocked to see that his palm was streaking across his Cosmos Sack, and an Incomplete Ancestral Armament had appeared in his hand. He held that Incomplete Ancestral Armament and slashed it toward Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

Sensing that the situation was amiss, Chu Feng hurriedly revealed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. As his cultivation increased, Chu Feng immediately and rapidly moved back.

Seeing that Chu Feng had dodged, Kong Zheng said with a laugh, “You actually dodged it? It would appear that the reactions of World Spiritists are truly not to be looked down upon.”

“Kong Zheng, what is the meaning of this?” Chu Feng asked coldly. As he spoke, he took out his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, the Magma Emperor Sword.

“What is the meaning of this? Is it not obvious enough? You couldn't possibly really be thinking that I would bring you into the Hundred Refinements Stage, right?”

“Truth be told, I deliberately approached you, and even made sure to especially use the treasure that my grandfather gave me to disguise my state of mind so that I could gain your trust, and then defeat you while your guard was down. With that, I would be able to prevent you from competing with me,” Kong Zheng said.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized why someone of Kong Zheng's caliber was able to successfully deceive him. It turned out that, for the sake of deceiving him, Kong Zheng had especially used

some sort of treasure against a world spiritist's perceptive ability.

Unfortunately, this Kong Zheng still ended up ultimately exposing himself. Furthermore, he was discovered by Chu Feng beforehand. Else... if he truly were to attack when Chu Feng was completely off-guard, Chu Feng might really end up being defeated by him.

“Never would I have imagined that someone like you was actually capable of scheming,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. That said, his words were somewhat mocking.

After all, if that Kong Zheng had not employed his treasure, then, with merely his capabilities, it would be impossible for him to deceive Chu Feng.

“I never would've expected that I would still end up failing. If I had known this was going to happen, I would have just attacked you to begin with. After all, I am certain that I am able to defeat you,” As Kong Zheng spoke those words, lighting flashed in his eyes.

In merely an instant, he unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings and increased his cultivation from rank six Half Martial Ancestor to rank eight Half Martial Ancestor.

After increasing his cultivation, Kong Zheng once again slashed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament at Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

A slash swept through the sky, ripping the air apart and slicing through space as it shot toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, Kong Zheng had a confident smile on his face.

The way he saw it, his cultivation was a level above Chu Feng's. As the two of them were both possessors of Heavenly Bloodlines, he felt that regardless of how powerful Chu Feng was, he would not be a match for him. Although he did not unleash his full strength with that attack, he felt that his attack was enough to

force Chu Feng to use a Taboo Martial Skill. Else... with Chu Feng's strength, it would be impossible for him to block that attack.

“Woosh~~~:

At the same moment when Kong Zheng unleashed his attack, Chu Feng also slashed with his Magma Emperor Sword.

As the sword pierced through the air, a fiery dragon-like blaze appeared in the sky and flew toward the slash that Kong Zheng had shot forth. “Humph. Overestimating one's capabilities,” Seeing that scene, Kong Zheng snorted disdainfully in his heart.

The way he saw it, Chu Feng's attack was simply one of arrogance and conceit. It was akin to attempting to strike a stone with an egg. He felt that Chu Feng was simply courting a disaster by treating his attack lightly.

“Boom~~~”

The very next moment, the two slashes collided with one another. However, the result of the collision was actually a tie.

“How could this be?!” Astonishment filled Kong Zheng's face. He did not dare to believe his eyes.

“Is it so shocking, so hard to believe? You are clearly a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, whereas I am a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. Moreover, the two of us possess identical bloodlines. In this sort of situation, you should have been able to kill me with a lift of your finger. Yet, how was it that you were unable to injure me in the slightest when we used the same sort of attack?” Chu Feng mocked.

“You've concealed your true cultivation? Could it be that you're a rank six Half Martial Ancestor like me?” Kong Zheng asked.

He thought that since Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he would naturally possess many extraordinary abilities. Kong Zheng thought that Chu Feng had used one such ability to conceal his cultivation.

Else... he truly could not believe that Chu Feng's attack would tie with his own.

"My actual cultivation is that of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor," Chu Feng said.

"I don't believe that. How could a rank five Half Martial Ancestor be able to fight on par with me? Are you telling me that you possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation?"

"But, I am able to sense that you only possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation like me," Kong Zheng said in refusal. He was unable to accept that Chu Feng, a mere rank five Half Martial Ancestor, would be able to fight against him, a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

"You are correct, our battle power is the same, we are both only able to surmount three levels of cultivation. The reason why our attacks ended up in a tie is because of my proficiency toward weapons and the strength of my attack," Chu Feng said.

"What sort of nonsense are you spouting?" Kong Zheng was confused.

"I nearly forgot that your intelligence is lacking. Since that's the case, let me rephrase it."

"To put it simply, you are among the weakest rank six Half Martial Ancestors, whereas I am among the strongest rank five Half Martial Ancestors. Thus, even though there is an entire level of cultivation difference between us, I am still able to fight against you," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Insolent! You dare say that I'm weak?! I'll show you how powerful this young master is!!!"

After Kong Zheng declared those words, he borrowed the strength of his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and unleashed a Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was a powerful Earthen

Taboo Martial Skill from the get-go.

“Truly a fool.”

However, faced with such a frantic attack from Kong Zheng, Chu Feng revealed a joyous smile.

Actually, Kong Zheng was not weak. Although he could not be considered to be extremely powerful among rank six Half Martial Ancestors, he was definitely not the weakest.

Logically, if Chu Feng had used an ordinary attack like Kong Zheng had, his attack would definitely not be able to tie with Kong Zheng's attack.

However, Chu Feng had managed to block Kong Zheng's attack. This meant that his previous attack was no ordinary attack.

Actually, what Chu Feng had used was a martial skill. Merely, he had deliberately mixed his spirit power into his attack to conceal the true nature of his attack and make Kong Zheng unable to see through the fact that it was a martial skill, making him think that it was only an ordinary attack.

Chu Feng had done so precisely so that Kong Zheng would mistakenly think that he, Chu Feng, was truly unable to contend against him. Then, after Chu Feng added insults, with the temperament that Kong Zheng possessed, he would definitely become extremely enraged.

For people like Kong Zheng, they possessed a major flaw. That is, the less calm they became, the more mistakes they made.

“Boom~~~”

With everything planned, Chu Feng immediately unleashed his counter-attack. Merely, this time around, Chu Feng did not use special methods, and instead unleashed an actual Earthen Taboo Martial Skill.

As both of them were Earthen Taboo Martial Skills, the result

was obvious; Chu Feng's Earthen Taboo Martial Skill was unable to withstand Kong Zheng's Earthen Taboo Martial Skill.

“Boom~~~” After a loud explosion, the Earthen Taboo Martial Skill Kong Zheng unleashed had completely engulfed Chu Feng's Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was charging toward Chu Feng.

“Noo!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng let out a panicky and unreconciled scream.

His voice was so desperate that it pierced through the sky. “Rumble~~~~” At the same time that scream was heard, the aftermath from Kong Zheng's Earthen Taboo Martial Skill completely swallowed Chu Feng.

Like a hungry wolf devouring its meal, it completely bombarded Chu Feng into an utter mess. “Hahaha. Chu Feng, didn't you say that you were very powerful, that I'm very weak? Turns out, you were still defeated by me with a single attack!!!”

After personally seeing that his martial skill left not even a speck of Chu Feng remaining, Kong Zheng burst into a loud and complacent laugh. “No, the one that's defeated is you!” However, right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from behind Kong Zheng. That... was Chu Feng's voice.

# Chapter 2370 – Reaching The Hundred Refinements Stage

---

“Chu Feng?!” Kong Zheng was extremely shocked to hear Chu Feng’s voice.

However, he did not realize the incoming crisis. Instead, with his Incomplete Ancestral Armament in hand, he turned around and moved to attack Chu Feng, who had arrived behind him.

“Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation!!!”

However, before Kong Zheng could attack, Chu Feng shot forth his punch ferociously.

Chu Feng did not hold back, and directly unleashed his strongest attack, the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.

“Bang~~~”

As the distance between them was extremely close, Chu Feng’s punch landed on his body before Kong Zheng could react.  
“Rumble~~~”

Upon being struck by Chu Feng’s punch, Kong Zheng was struck flying straight toward the surface. In the end, he crashed into the ground.

The Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation was extremely mighty. After Kong Zheng was smashed into the ground, not only did he leave an enormous crater, the energy ripples from the aftermath of the Heavenly Dome Transformation began to sweep out in all directions, engulfing that region. It was truly chaotic.

“How could this be?”

However, Chu Feng did not have any joy on his face. Instead, he revealed enormous shock and unease.



Although Kong Zheng's cultivation was a level above Chu Feng's, and his overall strength was a tier above Chu Feng's, Chu Feng felt that an attack from the Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation at such close range should be sufficient to kill Kong Zheng.

However, through his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to clearly see that Kong Zheng did not die. Not only was he alive, he did not even suffer any serious injuries. There was merely a trace of blood flowing out from the corner of his mouth.

Furthermore, at that moment, Kong Zheng had climbed out from the ravine. As if nothing major had happened, he wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth in a de-emphasizing manner.

Although he was not seriously injured, Kong Zheng was still incomparably shocked. He raised his head and looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with astonishment.

"I truly never expected to be played for a fool by you," Kong Zheng said as he fixed his eyes onto Chu Feng.

"And I never expected that you would have such a treasure on you. It must be what saved you, no?" Chu Feng's gaze was fixed onto Kong Zheng's chest.

Actually, Chu Feng had long since discovered that Kong Zheng was wearing inner armor beneath his clothes.

That inner armor had a very ordinary appearance and Chu Feng had not noticed anything unusual about it before. However, at that moment, that ordinary-looking inner armor was no longer ordinary in appearance. At that moment, the aura it emitted was extremely powerful.

Chu Feng was certain that the inner armor was a treasure, a very powerful protective treasure. Unless Chu Feng's cultivation surpassed Kong Zheng's by an entire level, even if Chu Feng possessed the same cultivation as Kong Zheng, he would only be

able to seriously injure Kong Zheng, and not kill him.

Yet, not only was Chu Feng's current cultivation not stronger than Kong Zheng's, it was instead weaker. As such, it meant that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to kill Kong Zheng.

“It seems that it's a bit late for you to discover that I possess the protection of a treasure.”

As Kong Zheng spoke, he tossed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament toward Chu Feng.

“Roarr~”

The very next moment, that Incomplete Ancestral Armament began to emit a golden radiance. With the Incomplete Ancestral Armament as the center, the golden radiance turned into an enormous thousand meter-long sword. The sword began to fly toward Chu Feng.

That enormous sword was so powerful that it shook even space itself. As it moved, it brought forth violent winds.

That was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, as Kong Zheng possessed a higher cultivation than Chu Feng, the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill he unleashed was much more powerful than Chu Feng's Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.

Most importantly, that Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was already shot forth successfully. As such, Chu Feng simply could not escape from it.

“Rumble~”

Finally, that enormous sword reached Chu Feng's body. Ear-piercing rumbles exploded in midair, shaking the surroundings. The martial skill this time around was countless times more powerful than the one Kong Zheng had used earlier. Being struck by it head-on, Chu Feng would undoubtedly die.

However, at that moment, Kong Zheng did not have a confident

expression.

He retrieved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and continued to stare at that empty region of space before him. After a short moment, he began to gnash his teeth furiously. Then, he raised his head toward the sky and shouted loudly, “Chu Feng, even if you are able to escape today, you will not be able to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage! You are destined to be defeated in this competition!!!”

His furious voice exploded in the sky like ten thousand thunderbolts.

Even though Kong Zheng had not managed to receive a response from Chu Feng, he was certain that Chu Feng did not die. Kong Zheng was so furious because he had used his strongest attack, yet was still unable to kill Chu Feng.

After all, in the battle today, he had been injured by Chu Feng. Furthermore... he knew very well that if he had not possessed his protective treasure, he would most likely have been killed by Chu Feng. To the extremely egotistical Kong Zheng, this was simply a disgrace, an enormous humiliation that he could not possibly tolerate!!!

Unfortunately, he had no choice but to endure it. That was why he did not dare to become enraged.

.....

As for Chu Feng, it was true that he had survived. While it was true that Kong Zheng’s strength surpassed his own, Kong Zheng was only a single level of cultivation above him.

Faced with an expert that was only a level of cultivation above him, Chu Feng’s Five Elements Secret Skill’s undying and indestructible body would be effective.

“It seems that fellow’s status in the Kong Heavenly Clan is not low. He actually possessed such a protective treasure.”

“If he didn’t have the treasure, he would already be dead. Thus, you were actually the victor in that confrontation.”

“To win from a position of weakness, boy, you’ve done it beautifully,” On the journey, Her Lady Queen was praising Chu Feng nonstop.

“It seems that it is still Milady Queen who is concerned about me the most,” Chu Feng said with a very happy smile. “What are you talking about? This Queen is merely praising you. How did it turn into being concerned about you?” Her Lady Queen’s shapely eyebrows rose slightly as she spoke to Chu Feng in a slightly puzzled manner.

“Although that Kong Zheng possessed the protection of a treasure, it remains that it is his treasure. Thus, it could be considered to be his ability.”

“As the person who fled was me, the person that was defeated would naturally also be me. Milady Queen, it is clear that you said all those things so that I wouldn’t overthink things, fearing that my ego would be setback by this defeat,” Chu Feng said. “Enough of your nonsense. You are such a thick-skinned individual, how could you possibly receive a setback? This Queen refuses to believe you,” Her Lady Queen raised her chin in a proud manner.

“Hehe, an explanation merely serves as a concealment, a concealment means that what is said is the truth. You don’t have to say anything. I understand your kind intentions,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Pah! You’re thinking too much,” Her Lady Queen curled her lips.

.....

On their journey, Chu Feng and Eggy chatted nonstop. The ruckus managed to calm Chu Feng’s state of mind.

This was Her Lady Queen’s charm. With Her Lady Queen

accompanying him, regardless of what sort of situation Chu Feng might find himself in, he would never feel loneliness.

Although he was chatting with Her Lady Queen the entire way, Chu Feng had not forgotten the purpose of his journey. His Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings had been activated the entire time. After increasing his cultivation to its strongest level, Chu Feng stood atop the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and was flying toward the Hundred Refinements Stage with his fastest speed.

It was a race against time. He had to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone before Kong Zheng.

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng finally arrived at his destination, the Hundred Refinements Stage.

The Hundred Refinements Stage was enveloped by an enormous spirit formation. That spirit formation looked like an extremely enormous fort situated aboveground. One simply could not see through the spirit formation or determine what was inside the Hundred Refinements Stage. The only thing visible was that grand formation. “This spirit formation is extremely powerful. Chu Feng, are you really able to enter it using that key of yours?” Upon seeing the fort before them, Her Lady Queen started to frown.

Her intuition told her that the spirit formation before them was an impregnable fort. At the very least, with Chu Feng’s current strength, it would simply be impossible for him to break through it.

When Her Lady Queen had that sort of feeling, how could Chu Feng not feel that way too? Actually, at that moment, Chu Feng was even more worried than Her Lady Queen. After all, obtaining that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone concerned the lives of his brother and friend.

“As for whether or not we can enter this place, it’ll be up to you,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the key his father gave him and

placed it directly on the wall of the seemingly impregnable fort.

“Buzz~~~” Once the spirit formation key came into contact with the fort, it was immediately sucked into the fort with an enormous suction force.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng felt joy in his heart. It meant that the spirit formation key was effective. At the very least, it possessed an obvious connection with the Hundred Refinements Stage’s grand formation.

However, Chu Feng’s state of joy only lasted for a short while before disappearing. It was replaced with deep worry.

The reason for that was because, after some time passed, that spirit formation key did not emit enormous spirit power.

Not to mention opening the fort, after it was sucked into the fort, there was no change whatsoever.

## Chapter 2371 – Helping

---

“Chu Feng, this is bad, it seems that your world spirit key is unable to let you enter from the outside,” Seeing that there was no change to the world spirit key, Her Lady Queen spoke worriedly. “It would seem that I can only go and ask the clan in charge of guarding the spirit formation to see whether or not they will be willing to let me in,” At that moment, Chu Feng was also feeling very helpless.

“But, what if they refuse to let you enter?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“If I am truly unable to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, we can only go with the final option,” Chu Feng said.

“Final option? What is that?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“If I am unable to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, it would mean that I will not be able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, I must obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.”

“Thus, if I am unable to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, I can only return to the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond and lie in wait there for Kong Zheng’s return, so as to ambush him and snatch the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone from him.”

“Merely...” As Chu Feng reached this point, he revealed a helpless expression in his eyes.

“Merely, if you want to defeat that Kong Zheng, you will have to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword. Right now, that Evil God Sword is extremely powerful. However, the more powerful it is, the more dangerous it is to you.”

“Even if you are able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, you will likely suffer serious injuries yourself, and might even lose your life in the process. This is indeed the final option,”

Her Lady Queen said.

“No, that’s not what I meant. Rather, ambushing Kong Zheng is what a lowly vile person would do. If not for a lack of options, I really do not wish to resort to that,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s go ask for help from the guardian clan. If Kong Zheng is able to enter, it would mean that the guardian clan is not absolutely inflexible.”

“As long as you present them sufficient amount of benefits and bribery, you might also be able to enter,” Her Lady Queen said. “We can only try,” As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his hand and planned to retrieve his world spirit key. “Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, the world spirit key started to change. It was flickering with a faint radiance.

As that light flickered, wave upon wave of spirit power began to spread in all directions, fusing with that enormous spirit formation.

At that moment, that impregnable spirit formation started to oscillate with the waves. Soon, a three meter-tall hole appeared on the wall of the Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation.

It was an entrance, an entrance into the Hundred Refinements Stage.

“It’s a success! Chu Feng, that world spirit key is actually useful,” Her Lady Queen started to jump and hop in excitement. A sunshine-like sweet smile appeared on her exceptionally beautiful face. She was smiling so very happily.

The reason why she was so excited was because she knew that if Chu Feng was unable to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage, he would definitely have to go and find Kong Zheng. The reason for that was because Chu Feng would absolutely not ignore Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Eggy did not care about whether or not ambushing Kong Zheng



would be the doings of a lowly, vile individual. What she cared about was the fact that it would be difficult for Chu Feng to defeat Kong Zheng with his current strength. If Chu Feng wanted to snatch the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone from Kong Zheng, he would have to utilize the Evil God Sword. However, the backlash from the Evil God Sword was no small matter. As such, Her Lady Queen did not wish for Chu Feng to brave that danger.

However, as that world spirit key was effective now, it meant that Chu Feng would no longer have to use his final option. As such, Her Lady Queen would naturally rejoice.

“Buzz~~~” After an entrance was opened in the spirit formation, the world spirit key automatically drifted into the air and flew back to Chu Feng. It was as if the world spirit key knew that Chu Feng was its master. “Thank you, you’ve helped me enormously,” Chu Feng held the world spirit key in his hand. Joy filled his heart.

“Chu Feng, go on in. That world spirit entrance will soon disappear,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded his head. Then, he entered through the world spirit entrance and arrived in the Hundred Refinements Stage.

Sure enough, right after Chu Feng passed through the world spirit entrance, it immediately closed. It returned to the same appearance as before; there was absolutely no difference at all. Even the defensive capabilities it possessed returned to being as impregnable as before. No one was able to tell that it had opened earlier.

“This is the Hundred Refinements Stage?”

After entering the Hundred Refinements Stage, Chu Feng would naturally properly survey the place. However, after surveying the Hundred Refinements Stage, Chu Feng was rather disappointed. The reason for that was because he discovered that the Hundred Refinements Stage was merely a dense forest; there was nothing

special about it.

“Who is it? Show yourself.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze grew sharp as he turned toward the southeast. As he spoke, he shot forth his palm. An enormous attractive energy immediately swept forth.

At that moment, violent wind erupted. The wind blew the sands about and moved the rocks. Even the enormous trees reaching over a thousand meters tall were shaking violently.

As such an enormous wind blew past, a figure appeared, drifting in the wind like a fallen leaf. In the end, that person landed before Chu Feng. It was a man. He had a middle-aged appearance. However, he was actually several hundred years old already. As for his cultivation, it was pretty decent, he was a rank two Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng inspected the man and then asked, “Are you a cultivator here?” The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that this man did not resemble someone who grew up in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, nor did he resemble a member of the guardian clan. “Yes. I am from the Elm Lower Realm. My name is Tian Yi,” The man replied.

“Are you familiar with this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am. I’ve been training here for close to a year now. I know this place very well,” That Tian Yi said.

“Then, do you know about the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?” Chu Feng asked.

“Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone? You wish to obtain that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?” Tian Yi asked.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng did not try to conceal it.

“I am able to bring you to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, you must help me with one thing,” Tian Yi said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked. “I can tell that you are not a cultivator from here, nor are you from the guardian clan. Yet, you were actually able to come into this place. This means that you are most definitely an extraordinary individual. If I am not mistaken, you should be a world spiritist, right?” Tian Yi asked.

“What sort of help do you want from me? There’s no harm in speaking frankly,” Chu Feng said.

“I hope you can help me treat a person. As long as you can cure her injuries, I will bring you to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone,” Tian Yi said.

“What if I refuse to help?” Chu Feng asked.

“Then, even if you are to kill me, I would not tell you where the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is,” Tian Yi said firmly.

Seeing Tian Yi before him, Chu Feng’s gaze changed slightly. He was actually a bit moved.

He was able to tell that this man was not someone who was unafraid of death.

However, at that moment, he seemed to have really made the decision that if Chu Feng refused to help him, he would not guide Chu Feng even if Chu Feng were to kill him.

Chu Feng was not afraid that he would not show the way for him. After all, Chu Feng could find someone else to show him the way to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone even if he refused to.

Actually, Chu Feng admired him. He admired the fact that he was willing to give up his life for someone else. Likely, the person that he hoped Chu Feng would cure was someone very important to him.

“Show the way,” Chu Feng said.

“I said that if you don’t help me cure her, I will absolutely not show you the way,” Tian Yi said.

“I am telling you to bring me to her,” Chu Feng said. “You’re agreeing to help?” Hearing those words, Tian Yi revealed an astonished expression. “Go ahead and show the way.” Chu Feng said with a smile. His tone was very good-natured.

“Yes,” Seeing that Chu Feng had really agreed to help him, Tian Yi was overjoyed. He turned around and immediately began to lead the way for Chu Feng. They began to rapidly proceed toward the depths of the Hundred Refinements Stage.

## Chapter 2372 – Healing

---

Being guided by Tian Yi, Chu Feng soon arrived at a cave. Inside the cave was a woman.

The woman's age was similar to Tian Yi's. However, she had a younger appearance than Tian Yi; her physical appearance was that of a pretty young woman.

Most importantly, this woman's cultivation was stronger than Tian Yi's, she was a rank three Half Martial Ancestor.

Merely, at that moment, that woman's complexion was pale like paper. She appeared to be in very weak health. Furthermore, green veined patterns filled her eyes.

She was injured. Not only was she physically injured, she had also been poisoned.

"Tian Yi, who is he?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, the woman revealed an alarmed expression.

"Lil Yue, don't worry. This person is an expert that I've requested assistance from. He will be able to treat your injuries," Tian Yi walked over to the woman and helped her up.

Seeing these two individuals' intimate appearance, Chu Feng was able to guess that the two of them should be lovers.

"Tian Yi, I have never seen this person before. Could it be that he is a trespasser?" However, that woman who Tian Yi addressed as Lil Yue started to size Chu Feng up in a cautious manner. She revealed an even more alarmed expression. "That's right, he is indeed an outsider. But..."

"Have him leave. I don't need a trespasser treating my injuries," The woman interrupted Tian Yi before he could finish.

"I am able to cure your injury," Chu Feng did not want to waste time, nor was he concerned about whether or not the woman

consented to him curing her injuries. As such, he walked toward the woman and grabbed her arm. “Scram! I don’t need your treatment,” The woman waved her sleeve and unleashed her rank three Half Martial Ancestor aura. She wanted to forcibly push Chu Feng aside.

However, after she unleashed her aura, she only managed to push aside Tian Yi, who she had no intention of pushing aside, yet she was unable to push Chu Feng, who she wanted to push, aside.

“You...” At that moment, the gaze with which the woman looked at Chu Feng changed. She had realized that the man before her was no ordinary character, that he was someone with strength superior to her own. “Sit there obediently,” As Chu Feng spoke, he unleashed his oppressive might and forced the woman to sit on the ground.

Then, regardless of the woman’s reaction, Chu Feng began to set up a healing formation that enveloped her.

“This?!!!!”

When streams of Immortal-level spirit power began to be released from Chu Feng’s body and gather to form a dazzling spirit formation, both Tian Yi and that woman revealed stupefied expressions. “What powerful spirit power. I have simply never seen anything like this before. Could it be that you’re... you’re a legendary Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Tian Yi and that woman exclaimed with shocked and admiring tones.

As for Chu Feng, he did not care about their current shock or admiration. Instead, he continued to wholeheartedly focus on operating his spirit formation to cure that woman.

In merely a short moment, Chu Feng completely cured that woman’s injuries.

“Senior, earlier, this Ma Yue had eyes, but failed to recognize Mount Tai, and offended you. I hope that senior will not take

offense to my mistakes,” After her injuries were cured, that Ma Yue actually knelt onto the ground and respectfully bowed to Chu Feng. She had an ashamed expression on her face. She was feeling shame and regret for acting rudely toward Chu Feng earlier.

“It is not wrong to be on guard. Come, stand up,” Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a gentle power lifted Ma Yue back up.

“Senior,” Right at that moment, that Tian Yi also knelt on the ground. Furthermore, he had an ashamed and apologetic expression all over his face.

Chu Feng felt that something was amiss, thus he asked with a serious tone, “Tian Yi, what are you doing?”

“Senior, this junior lied to you about one matter,” Tian Yi said.

“Could it be that you do not know the location of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, this junior does know its location. Merely... it is said that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is unmovable. I fear that senior will have come in vain,” Tian Yi said. “There’s actually such a saying?” Hearing what Tian Yi said, Chu Feng’s expression changed. However, he soon helped Tian Yi back up. He said, “Tian Yi, you merely need to show me the way. Whether or not I am able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is my business. It is unrelated to you.” “Very well. Senior, please follow me. I will bring you over right away,” As Tian Yi spoke, he planned to leave. “Wait, I’m coming too,” Ma Yue said.

“Lil Yue, your injuries have only just been healed. Are you planning to find Zhou Zongzhi for revenge right away?” Tian Yi asked.

“Rest assured. Senior’s world spirit techniques are extremely powerful. I have been completely healed,” Ma Yue said.

“Okay then,” Tian Yi nodded. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “Senior, please follow me.”

After Tian Yi finished saying those words, he began to proceed toward the depths of the Hundred Refinements Stage whilst Chu Feng and Ma Yue followed behind him.

..... The Hundred Refinements Stage was guarded by the guardian clan. The headquarters of the guardian clan was constructed outside of the Hundred Refinements Stage.

This was a location that outsiders would not be able to discover. It was a mysterious palace that those not from the guardian clan would not be able to open. At that moment, the guardian clan's management elders were gathered in the palace hall of that palace. Those experts stood to either side in an orderly manner. After guarding that place for many generations through the tens of thousands of years, the people from the guardian clan came to possess an extremely unique temperament. If their temperaments must be described, then it could be said that they were stubborn. Yet, it could also be said that they were utterly loyal to their responsibilities.

At the end of the palace hall was a throne. This throne was incomparably bright. It was even more dazzling than the thrones of rulers.

However, sitting on top of such a magnificent throne was an ordinary and plain-looking old man. The clothes that the old man wore were the same as that of the others from the guardian clan. He wore a blue gown. The design of the gown greatly resembled that of ordinary Daoist gowns. Furthermore, there was a special symbol on both the back and the chest area of the gown. The symbol seemed to be the word 'guardian.'

Actually, the gowns had originally been all the same. However, it might be that the old man had worn his gown for so long that it appeared to be a lot more old-fashioned when compared to the gowns of others.

However, even though the gown appeared to be old-fashioned, it



was very neat and tidy. In fact, there was not the slightest bit of damage on the gown.

As for that simple-looking old man, he was the guardian clan's current clan chief.

At that moment, the clan chief and all of the elders present had their eyes focused on a single person. That person was not a member of their guardian clan. Instead, he was Kong Zheng. Merely, at that time, there was another person standing beside Kong Zheng. This person was called Hu Xuanyi.

This Hu Xuanyi was precisely the person Kong Zheng had mentioned to Chu Feng, the person who owed Kong Zheng's grandfather an enormous favor.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Hu Xuanyi kneeled on the ground and bowed respectfully to the guardian clan's clan chief. He said, “Lord Clan Chief, the Kong Heavenly Clan has shown grace toward me. This subordinate once promised them that I would do anything the Kong Heavenly Clan requested of me if it is something that I can accomplish.”

“Today, little friend Kong Zheng's intention to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage is indeed against our guardian clan's rules. But...”

“Xuanyi, speak no more,” However, before Hu Xuanyi could finish, the guardian clan's clan chief waved his hand.

Then, the guardian clan's clan chief turned to Kong Zheng and said, “Little friend, it is not that I refuse to allow you to enter, merely, by the fact that you plan to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone after entering, it means that even if I am to let you in, you will have to return empty-handed.”

“Senior Clan Chief, could it be that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone has been sealed by you all?”

“But, why have I heard that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was placed there without any special protection from spirit formations or guards?” Kong Zheng asked.

Kong Zheng was implying that he knew about the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, and was telling the guardian clan to not bother to deceive him.

“Indeed. The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was placed in the Hundred Refinements Stage without any special protection. However, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is truly special; it is impossible for ordinary people to remove it,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“It would seem that Senior Clan Chief is looking down on this Kong Zheng,” Kong Zheng sneered.

“It is not that I am looking down on you. Rather, there is a reason for it,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said. “Regardless of what reason there might be, as long as you allow me to enter, I will definitely be able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.” “Merely, if I am able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, I hope that Senior Clan Chief will not prevent me from bringing it away. After all, this matter concerns the life and death of my elder brother,” Kong Zheng said with enormous confidence.

## Chapter 2373 – Unfair

---

“Lord Clan Chief, this subordinate will follow little friend Kong Zheng into the Hundred Refinements Stage. I will absolutely not let him do anything that goes against our Hundred Refinements Stage’s rules. Lord Clan Chief, please rest assured,” Hu Xuanyi continued to plead for Kong Zheng.

“The rules are dead, whereas people are alive. Since this matter concerns the safety of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation, I will make an exception today, and allow little friend Kong Zheng to enter our Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“However, little friend Kong Zheng, it will be up to you yourself as to whether or not you will be able to obtain that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said to Kong Zheng.

“Senior Clan Chief, please rest assured. This junior will definitely not disappoint you,” Seeing that the guardian clan’s clan chief had consented to allowing him to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage and obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, Kong Zheng revealed an extremely confident expression.

Then, led by that Hu Xuanyi, Kong Zheng left the palace and proceeded toward the entrance to the Hundred Refinements Stage.

After Kong Zheng left, an elder of the guardian clan turned to ask their clan chief, “Lord Clan Chief, how are you so certain that Kong Zheng will not be able to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?”

Once that question was asked, the other elders also turned their curious gazes to their clan chief.

The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was truly an extraordinary item. As such, the people from the guardian clan were curious about it too.

“The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone has been placed there for many years. Regardless of whether it is people from our guardian clan or the cultivators from the Lower Realms, many people have wanted to obtain that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However... has any one of them succeeded?” The guardian clan’s clan chief answered with a question.

“Indeed, no one has managed to succeed,” The elders nodded to express their approval.

One elder said, “Those who are curious about the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone are generally people of the younger generation. They possess one similarity. That is, they are all lacking in strength.”

“This subordinate understands now. Although that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone has already lost its sealing power, it remains the Ancient Era’s Sealing Stone, and not an ordinary item.”

“Thus, unless one’s cultivation has reached a certain level, it is impossible for one to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.” “No, that’s not it,” That clan chief shook his head. Then, he said, “Not to mention you all, even I... am unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.”

“Clan Chief, then... exactly why is that the case?” Hearing what their clan chief said, the various elders were all shocked. Then, they felt very curious.

As members of the guardian clan, they knew very well how powerful their clan chief was.

Their Lord Clan Chief was actually a True Immortal-level expert.

Merely, as he guarded the hundred refinements stage all year round, and behaved in a very low-key manner, the people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not know of his cultivation. That said, even though others did not know how

strong their clan chief was, the people present knew very well how powerful he was.

Thus, if even their Lord Clan Chief was unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, it would mean that it was unrelated to one's cultivation, and was because of something else. "The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is something that only those from the Chu Heavenly Clan can move," The guardian clan's clan chief said. "Chu Heavenly Clan?!" Hearing those words, the crowd's expression changed. They finally realized the truth. "Judging from that, it seems that there is truly no one capable of moving the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone," At that moment, the various elders began to sigh.

While the Hundred Refinements Stage was constructed by the Chu Heavenly Clan, and there were many people of the younger generation from the Chu Heavenly Clan in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, those Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations were all extremely arrogant and haughty people.

They all felt that the Hundred Refinements Stage was merely a place to cultivate trash. As such, not to mention entering the Hundred Refinements Stage, they were disinclined to even go to that place.

As for the guardian clan, the reason why they had guarded that area for generations on end was because they were once helped by an expert from the Chu Heavenly Clan. That was how they ended up shouldering such a heavy responsibility.

Due to the help from the Chu Heavenly Clan back then, the people from the guardian clan possessed special sentiments toward the Chu Heavenly Clan. Unfortunately, the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan looked down on them.

They considered them lackeys; servants.

In fact, they felt it beneath themselves to even meet them.

..... The entrance to the Hundred Refinements Stage was opened. It was not only Hu Xuanyi that followed Kong Zheng into the Hundred Refinements Stage.

There were over twenty individuals who entered together with Kong Zheng. They were all very powerful, all peak Half Martial Ancestors.

However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that there was not a single Martial Ancestor-level expert among them.

As for the reason why there were no Martial Ancestor-level experts among them, it was not because the guardian clan did not possess Martial Ancestor-level experts, nor was it because those Martial Ancestor-level experts were unwilling to accompany Kong Zheng. Rather, it was because the Hundred Refinements Stage possessed a special power and restriction...

Unless one increased their cultivation from Half Martial Ancestor to Martial Ancestor in the Hundred Refinements Stage, it would be impossible for Martial Ancestor-level experts to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage. “Senior Xuanyi, that Chu Feng... he couldn’t possibly be able to enter this place too, right?” After the Hundred Refinements Stage’s entrance gate was closed, Kong Zheng turned to ask Hu Xuanyi.

“Little friend Kong Zheng, please rest assured. I have already explained this matter to the others. Regardless of how much that Chu Feng pleads, he will not be allowed to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage,” Hu Xuanyi said.

“This junior is put at ease by senior Xuanyi’s manner of conduct. Since you said it like that, that Chu Feng will definitely not be able to enter this place,” Hearing what Hu Xuanyi said, Kong Zheng smiled complacently.

“Regardless of how many abilities he might possess, he will absolutely not be able to enter here,” Hu Xuanyi said. Hearing what Hu Xuanyi said, the complacent expression on Kong Zheng’s

face grew even stronger. Then, he actually disregarded the presence of others and burst into loud laughter. “Chu Feng, you are but a person without any backing in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. What makes you think you can contend against me? Right now, you’re going to suffer. Hahaha!!!”

At this moment when Kong Zheng was feeling extremely complacent and thinking that victory was within his sight, Chu Feng was rapidly flying toward the direction of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone with Ma Yue and Tian Yi.

On their way there, Chu Feng came to find out from the conversation between the two that they were from the same Lower Realm. Furthermore, the two of them were a couple who had grown up as childhood friends. Right now, the two of them were already married.

Chu Feng felt extremely envious of them. At the same time, the impression Chu Feng had of them also grew much more favorable.

After all, in the world of martial cultivators, a place where one’s benefits surpass everything else, a love as pure as theirs was very rarely seen.

“I’ve been hearing you two talking about revenge the entire journey. What exactly happened?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Senior, my wife possesses outstanding talent. As such, her cultivation speed is extremely fast. After we arrived here, she soon became a well-known individual among the cultivators. She also managed to rapidly reach the third place on the Hundred Refinements Ranking List.”

“Furthermore, she already possesses the strength to compete for the second place on the ranking list. Thus, after she made her preparations, my wife issued a challenge to Zhou Zongzhi, the second-ranked individual on the Hundred Refinements Ranking List.” “However, that Zhou Zongzhi was so very despicable. He actually poisoned my wife and caused her to be unable to unleash

her actual strength. Then, before everyone, he beat my wife to a seriously injured state,” Tian Yi said to Chu Feng.

“In that case, your wife’s injuries and poison were all caused by that Zhou Zongzhi?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the case,” Tian Yi said. “Since you two knew about the poison, why did you not report this matter to the guardian clan? Why did you instead hide yourselves to secretly heal your injuries?” Chu Feng asked curiously. Tian Yi sighed. “That Zhou Zongzhi is from the Splendor Night Lower Realm.”

“As for the Splendor Night Lower Realm, it is the strongest among the many Lower Realms. Practically every year, the strongest individuals in the Hundred Refinements Stage are from the Splendor Night Lower Realm. Thus, over time, the guardian clan began to favor the people from the Splendor Night Lower Realm, and would take very good care of them.”

“The Elm Lower Realm that Lil Yue and I are from is simply incomparable to the Splendor Night Lower Realm. Before that, we had already suffered many unfair treatments. In fact, on some occasions, not only did we not obtain any assistance, we would instead be punished.”

“Thus, even if we were to report this matter, it would be useless,” When mentioning that matter, Tian Yi felt very helpless.

“Never would I have expected that this place would be that unfair too,” Chu Feng shook his head. After hearing those things, Chu Feng felt very disappointed with the guardian clan.



## Chapter 2374 – Arrival

---

“The world of martial cultivators is so enormous that it could simply be said to be boundlessly vast. However, there is one thing that remains unchanged in the entire martial cultivation world. That is, regardless of where one might be, there is no such thing as absolute fairness,” When mentioning this, Ma Yue started to smile wryly. Her wry smile was composed of helplessness and sadness.

Merely from her smile, Chu Feng felt as if he had seen the unfairness that they’d encountered in the Hundred Refinements Stage.

“That fellow by the name of Zhou Zongzhi should be a man, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Zhou Zongzhi is indeed a man. As a man, he actually did such a despicable thing to a woman. He is truly lower than dogs and pigs!” Tian Yi said while gnashing his teeth furiously.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded. He also started to have a bad impression of that Zhou Zongzhi.

Among the several types of people that Chu Feng detested the most were those who bullied women.

If it was an ordinary confrontation, then it could be forgiven. However, that Zhou Zongzhi actually poisoned a woman, and then ruthlessly beat up said woman. His actions were truly despicable to the extreme.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was the one who healed Ma Yue’s injuries. Thus, he was able to tell that while the poison was the most life-threatening, the person who had beat her up had been extremely ruthless. It could even be said that whoever beat her up was trying to take her life.

From just that, it could be seen that Zhou Zongzhi was not a good individual.

At that moment, Her Lady Queen placed her hands on her waist. With her mouth protruded, she said in a very furious manner, “Truly despicable and shameless! Chu Feng, even this Queen is unable to tolerate this!”

“Milady Queen, do you have any instructions?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile. He was able to tell that Her Lady Queen had developed a bad impression of Zhou Zongzhi. Unlike Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen was someone who would generally take action should she have a bad impression of someone. “Chu Feng, if the couple Ma Yue and Tian Yi is unable to defeat Zhou Zongzhi, you should help them take care of that Zhou Zongzhi,” Her Lady Queen said.

“I will as do as you have bid,” Chu Feng agreed frankly.

Actually, even if Her Lady Queen didn’t mention it to him, Chu Feng had that intention too. “However, in the end, it is because we are too weak. As such, we cannot blame others.”

“If we possessed the strength that senior does, and were able to enter and exit the Hundred Refinements Stage at will, we would not have been bullied,” That Ma Yue looked to Chu Feng as Intense admiration filled her eyes.

“Actually, I have only stealthily infiltrated into here. If I were to contend against the guardian clan, I would be no match,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he added, “Furthermore, please don’t address me as senior. It is giving me a weird sensation. After all, I am much younger than you two.”

“What? You... you are younger than us?” Both Ma Yue and Tian Yi were shocked to hear those words. After a moment of shock, Ma Yue and Tian Yi asked in unison, “Could it be that you’re really only a member of the younger generation?”

Actually, they were able to tell that Chu Feng appeared very young, and could be considered to be a younger person among the younger generation.

It was precisely because Chu Feng was so young yet so powerful that he did not conform with the experiences that they'd had. Thus, they felt that Chu Feng's age might be fake, that Chu Feng had concealed his actual age, and was actually much older than them.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded.

"This!!!"

Ma Yue and Tian Yi were even more astonished after Chu Feng voiced his acknowledgement again. After all, to be able to obtain such accomplishments at Chu Feng's age was truly something that surpassed their imagination.

When thinking about themselves, they remembered that they were still very small and weak at Chu Feng's age. "The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is truly extraordinary. Back then, we were truly viewing the sky from the bottom of a well."

"Senior, today, you have truly broadened our horizons," Tian Yi and Ma Yue said emotionally.

"Actually, I am not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. I am also from a Lower Realm. Merely, by a freak combination of factors, I was unable to arrive in the Hundred Refinements Stage," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"You're actually also from a Lower Realm?" At that moment, Tian Yi and Ma Yue were tongue-tied with shock. They were deeply astonished by the truth Chu Feng had just mentioned. "May I ask which Lower Realm you're from?"

"You... you couldn't possibly also be from the Splendor Night Lower Realm, right?"

After a moment of pondering, Ma Yue and Tian Yi started to panic. After all, among the various Lower Realms, the strongest was the Splendor Night Lower Realm.

After arriving in this place, they heard many things about the

experts from the Splendor Night Lower Realm.

For Chu Feng to obtain his level of strength at such a young age, they were truly unable to think of any other Lower Realm other than the Splendor Night Lower Realm that was capable of nurturing such a powerful individual.

“If I were from the Splendor Night Lower Realm, how could I not know that Zhou Zongzhi?” Chu Feng smiled wryly and shook his head.

“Right. We were silly. How could you possibly have come from the Splendor Night Lower Realm,” Seeing that Chu Feng declared that he did not come from the Splendor Night Lower Realm, Ma Yue and Tian Yi heaved a sigh of relief. Then, they asked, “Senior, then which Lower Realm might you be from?”

“I can tell the two of you. However, you two must absolutely keep it a secret,” Chu Feng said.

“Senior, please rest assured, we will definitely keep it confidential.”

“If we are to reveal a single word of what senior tells us here today, then we husband and wife shall suffer miserable deaths,” Not only did Ma Yue and Tian Yi agree to keep things confidential, they also vowed to the heavens. Seeing how sincere the two of them were, Chu Feng no longer bother concealing the matter and said, “The Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.”

“What? It’s actually the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?!!!” Hearing those words, Ma Yue and Tian Yi’s expressions changed enormously. They were much more astonished than before.

“It seems that you two have heard of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“We have indeed heard of it. Merely, the viewpoints that the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm are...” Ma Yue frowned at Tian Yi

and interrupted, “It seems that the viewpoint of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is not true.” Evidently, there were some words that they found unpleasant to say.

“Actually, I know about it even without you two saying it. There has never been anyone from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm who has reached the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for many years. Likely, no one here will think highly of those from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. They likely all feel it to be a gathering place for trash,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng’s father had already mentioned this matter to Chu Feng before.

Merely, it remained that Chu Feng had grown up in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. Thus, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm possessed a special sort of significance to him. Compared to the vast Outer World, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm was Chu Feng’s home.

Thus, Chu Feng was actually not fond of others speaking ill of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

If possible, he would want to rectify the reputation of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm as a person of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

“That’s right. The people here really do look down on the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.”

“However, seeing you today, we now know how powerful the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm is. That is truly worthy of being the place where the Fate Primogenitor was born. Likely, only in a Lower Realm like that would an outstanding hero like senior be born,” Ma Yue said.

“You two also know of the Fate Primogenitor?” Chu Feng was very surprised.

“We have heard of the legends of the Fate Primogenitor back in

our Elm Lower Realm. Merely, there were simply too many legends regarding him. Furthermore, all of those legends are different. However, in this place, we've found out that everyone believes that the Fate Primogenitor came from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm," Ma Yue said.

"Senior, as you're from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, you should know more about the Fate Primogenitor, right?" Tian Yi asked in a very curious manner. When he mentioned the Fate Primogenitor, both his tone and attitude were filled with adoration.

From this, it could be seen that the Fate Primogenitor was very influential.

"The things regarding the Fate Primogenitor are merely legends in our Ancestral Martial Lower Realm too. I feel that it is best that I not make wild remarks."

"Additionally, the two of you really shouldn't address me as senior. You can just address me as Chu Feng," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Okay, we'll do as senior says," Ma Yue and Tian Yi said respectfully.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled helplessly.

Chu Fengs' strength greatly surpassed that of the two of them. Furthermore, as Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he left a grand impression on the two of them.

Even though Chu Feng had already declared that he was not a senior, he was unable to change the extremely respectful attitude that Ma Yue and Tian Yi had toward him.

As such, Chu Feng decided to stop lingering on the issue. Instead, he began to chat with them while continuing to proceed toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

Being guided by the husband and wife duo of Tian Yi and Ma Yue,

Chu Feng finally arrived at the location where the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was stored. Merely, before they approached that place, Ma Yue and Tian Yi stopped.

# Chapter 2375 – Revenge

---

“Senior, as you’re an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, you most definitely possess extremely powerful observation methods.”

“Can you check to see if there are people from the guardian clan there?” Ma Yue said to Chu Feng.

It turned out that the reason why Ma Yue and Tian Yi stopped was because they were afraid that there were people from the guardian clan guarding that place.

“Mn,” Chu Feng did not hesitate, and immediately used his Heaven’s Eyes to observe the area ahead.

Actually, Chu Feng was still some distance away from his intended goal. Not to mention ordinary cultivators, even world spiritists might not necessarily be able to see what was ahead clearly.

However, before his Heaven’s Eyes, everything became clear.

Ahead of them was an altar. The altar was not very large. However, it was very exquisite.

As for the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, it was placed at the center of the altar.

It was jade green in color. Its size was about that of a watermelon. Looking from afar, it really did only resemble a jadeite stone. Apart from that, there was seemingly nothing special about it.

However, for some unknown reason, the seemingly ordinary Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone gave Chu Feng a particular sensation. It was as if some sort of special power was attracting Chu Feng’s blood.

There were hundreds of people gathered outside the altar. Those people all possessed Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivations.



From the outfits that those people were wearing, Chu Feng was able to guess that they were most likely all cultivators from Lower Realms.

For the sake of their safety, Chu Feng surveyed his distant surroundings. After discovering that there was no one from the guardian clan among them, Chu Feng felt relieved, and turned his gaze toward those people once again.

With his sharp perception, Chu Feng could tell that those people possessed an intimate bearing with one another, and resembled colleagues. Most likely, they were discussing something whilst gathered there.

Before Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, everything was clear. Not only was Chu Feng able to capture each and every movement from those people, he was also able to determine what they were saying by reading their lips.

It just so happened that the topic of conversation between those individuals was actually related to Ma Yue and Tian Yi.

"Big brother Zhou, we have truly searched carefully. We have nearly rummaged through the entire Hundred Refinements Stage. However, we were unable to find Ma Yue and Tian Yi. We have no idea where they've fled to. Could they have reported to the elders and been taken away by them?" Someone asked worriedly.

"That's impossible. Even though that Ma Yue is quite talented, she is still only trash in the eyes of the elders. As such, how could they possibly care about her life and death?" Someone rejected that possibility.

"Logically, as that Ma Yue was injured, she shouldn't be able to get far away." "That Tian Yi is truly an expert in hiding. He actually managed to hide Ma Yue so well."

"So what? Big brother Zhou's poison is not something that Tian Yi can cure."

“That’s true. After all, big brother Zhou is my idol.”

“.....”

The several hundred individuals were all surrounding a man and flattering him nonstop.

As for that man, his age was about the same as Tian Yi’s, several hundred years old. However, he had not changed his appearance to that of a middle-aged man. Rather, he disguised himself as a young man.

Furthermore, his appearance was very handsome.

If he was born that handsome, it would be fine. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that his handsome appearance was fake.

That man’s original appearance was extremely ugly, so ugly that one would feel nauseated looking at him.

However, even though he was clearly ugly, that man had changed his appearance to be such a handsome young man. That alone was sufficient to show how much of a sham the man was. However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that his cultivation was not that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor like Tian Yi had declared.

Rather, his cultivation was actually that of a rank four Half Martial Ancestor.

“Big brother Zhou, why did you not kill that Ma Yue directly during your confrontation that day?” Someone asked. “Are you stupid?” “You too know about the rules of a public match. One can only injure one’s opponent, and not kill.”

“Furthermore, there were many elders present that day. If I were to kill her, even if the elders were to shield me, I would definitely still be punished,” Zhou Zongzhi said in a very displeased manner. “I am slow-witted, I am slow-witted,” The person who had questioned him earlier immediately started apologizing.

“That said, brothers, you all do not have to worry anymore. Back then, I was afraid of Ma Yue because she possessed the same level of cultivation as me.”

“However, I have now managed to successfully reach a breakthrough and become a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. Even if that Ma Yue is able to heal her injuries, she will still be no match for me. She will forever be trodden under my foot until the day the Hundred Refinements Stage’s entrance is opened.”

“At that time, I will be chosen as a core disciple by a powerful sect. As for that Ma Yue, even if she manages to obtain decent standings and treatment, she is destined to be beneath me,” When mentioning that, Zhou Zongzhi was immensely proud of himself.

“Of course. How could trash from the Elm Lower Realm possibly be able to contend against our big brother Zhou?”

“That’s right. That Elm Lower Realm is the worst trash among the various Lower Realms.”

“As for our big brother Zhou, he’s from the strongest Splendor Night Lower Realm. Merely with that status, that Ma Yue can forget about standing on equal footing as big brother Zhou,” The crowd declared. “No, you all are mistaken.”

“The trashiest Lower Realm is not the Elm Lower Realm. Rather, it’s the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm,” Suddenly, someone refuted.

“How many years has it been since that Ancestral Martial Lower Realm has had anyone reach this place? I bet they might have already ceased to exist by now.”

“Even if the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm still exists, it is most definitely a gathering place for trash, a place simply not worth mentioning. Hahaha.”

The crowd were feeling extremely delighted. At the same time they started to ridicule the Elm Lower Realm, they actually also

started to ridicule the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. From this, it could be seen that the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm was most likely an object of constant ridicule for them.

As Chu Feng was carefully observing ahead, Ma Yue's voice sounded. "Senior, are there people from the guardian clan there?"

"There aren't. However, your enemies are all gathered there. Are you prepared?" Chu Feng asked with a smile. He indicated to Ma Yue that the time for her revenge had arrived.

"I've been prepared," After Ma Yue finished saying those words, her eyes started to flicker, and her long hair started to flutter.

Her aura was also changing. A layer of purple gas was being emitted from her body. Like flames, they revolved around her.

As that happened, her aura started to grow stronger.

Divine Body. This Ma Yue was actually a Divine Body.

Not only that, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense that this Ma Yue actually possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

In other words, although Ma Yue's cultivation was that of a rank three Half Martial Ancestor, even ordinary rank five Half Martial Ancestors would likely not be a match for the current her.

This Ma Yue really could be considered a genius.

"Woosh~~~" As Ma Yue flew ahead, Tian Yi also furiously flew after her.

As for Chu Feng, he naturally also followed after them. After all, he knew very well that the current Zhou Zongzhi was not someone who Ma Yue could defeat. Thus... he would not look on as Ma Yue and Tian Yi ended up being beaten up.

"Zhou Zongzhi, you damned despicable bastard. You actually dared to poison me?! You are simply as despicable as one can be!" After Ma Yue reached the altar, she shouted furiously.

She held a purple Incomplete Ancestral Armament sword and pointed it forward. Immediately, the sky started to change. She had directly unleashed a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

From this, it could be seen that she knew how powerful Zhou Zongzhi was. She did not want to waste time, and wanted to defeat him with one strike.

That Heaven Taboo Martial Skill seemed to have fused with Ma Yue's Divine Power. It turned into a purple whirlwind. The whirlwind was not very large. However, it possessed extraordinary power capable of shaking her surroundings.

At that moment, the expressions of the great majority of people at the altar all changed enormously. Fear filled their faces. Involuntarily, they began to move behind Zhou Zongzhi.

As for that Zhou Zongzhi, he seemed to be completely prepared. He lightly waved his sleeve, and a burst of boundless martial power appeared out of thin air.

His martial power forcibly neutralized Ma Yue's Heaven Taboo Martial Skill.

## Chapter 2376 – Special Magic

---

“You!!!”

At that moment, not to mention Ma Yue, even Tian Yi was stunned.

After all, the two of them did not know that Zhou Zongzhi had become a rank four Half Martial Ancestor. As for that Zhou Zongzhi, both his abilities and battle power were not inferior to Ma Yue. He was able to contend against Ma Yue when they were at the same level of cultivation. And now, his cultivation had increased by a level. Naturally, Ma Yue would not be a match for him.

“What’s wrong? Is it that shocking? You two must not have thought that I would reach a breakthrough in cultivation so quickly, right?” Zhou Zongzhi said with a beaming smile.

“Could it be the rewards from the guardian clan?” Ma Yue asked.

The reason for that was because she remembered that the guardian clan’s supervisors had been gambling with one another on who the victor between her and Zhou Zongzhi would be.

The victor of the two would be able to obtain a reward from the guardian clan. As for that reward, it was extremely beneficial to Divine Bodies. Regardless of whether it might be Ma Yue or Zhou Zongzhi who obtained it, they would both be able to reach a breakthrough in cultivation with it.

Other than that reward, Ma Yue was unable to think of any other possibility that would allow Zhou Zongzhi to reach a breakthrough to rank four Half Martial Ancestor so quickly. “You’ve guessed correctly,” Zhou Zongzhi said with a beaming smile. He was immensely pleased with himself.

“But... you should only have been able to obtain that reward ten days from now. How did you manage to reach a breakthrough

already?” Ma Yue asked.

“If you were the victor, you would have naturally had to wait ten days to obtain the reward. After all, you’re trash from the Elm Lower Realm. Regardless of your cultivation, you will remain trash in the elders’ eyes.”

“But, who am I? I am a genius from the Splendor Night Lower Realm. Since I’ve won, why would I need to wait for ten long days?” When mentioning the matter, Zhou Zongzhi revealed an even more pleased expression.

“The guardian clan is truly lacking in fairness. They are not qualified to guard this Hundred Refinements Stage established by the Chu Heavenly Clan!!!” At that moment, Ma Yue was so furious that she started to snarl angrily.

Her voice was so resounding that it caused heaven and earth to tremble.

A single emotion filled her voice: disappointment.

“You’re correct. This place is indeed unfair. It’s so unfair that even if I were to kill you, no one would punish me.”

“The two of you are of lowly birth. Your lives are lowly and insignificant. If I want to kill you, I will be able to do so as I wish,” After Zhou Zongzhi finished saying those words, his body moved, and he began to fly toward Ma Yue.

The frightening power that came crashing toward their faces caused Ma Yue and Tian Yi to feel the aura of death.

The two of them knew that they were no match for Zhou Zongzhi. Thus, they did not bother with any pointless resistance. Instead, they held one another’s hands and closed their eyes. They had made their preparations to die.

Merely, the two of them possessed unreconciled expressions on their faces.

“I fear that I’ll have to disappoint you all.” Right at that moment, Chu Feng appeared before Ma Yue and Tian Yi like a phantom.

“Who are you?” Upon seeing Chu Feng, Zhou Zongzhi’s expression also changed enormously. He was immensely shocked.

“Scram!!!” Chu Feng merely spoke one word, and a burst of boundless martial power swept out from his mouth.

Although Chu Feng’s martial power was invisible, it was something that Zhou Zongzhi was unable to withstand.

“Bang!!!” With merely his voice, Chu Feng knocked Zhou Zongzhi flying, causing him to crash ruthlessly onto the altar.

“This!!!” At that moment, not to mention Zhou Zongzhi himself, even his lackeys had turned pale with fright.

They did not know who Chu Feng was. However, they were able to imagine how powerful Chu Feng was from Zhou Zongzhi’s current state.

Although the altar was completely undamaged after Zhou Zongzhi collided with it, Zhou Zongzhi was seriously injured. Not only was his body badly mutilated from the collision, he had also suffered extremely serious internal injuries. He tried to climb up many times, but still tumbled to the ground.

Zhou Zongzhi had lost even the strength to crawl back up. From this, it could be seen how serious his injuries were.

“Senior, you?!”

What suddenly occurred had surprised both Ma Yue and Tian Yi too. They did not expect that Chu Feng, someone that they’d only just met, would actually be willing to help them.

“What? Senior?!!!”

Seeing Ma Yue and Tian Yi addressing Chu Feng as senior, the crowd was extremely frightened.

The reason for that was because the simple address of ‘senior’



had signified to the crowd the relationship Chu Feng had with Ma Yue and Tian Yi.

This person who was able to seriously injure Zhou Zongzhi with merely a single word was the backing of Ma Yue and Tian Yi. “You... exactly who are you?”

“Could it be that you’re from the Elm Lower Realm?”

At that moment, Zhou Zongzhi started to panic. After all, he had been so excessive toward Ma Yue and Tian Yi.

Right now, if it were truly someone from the Elm Lower Realm that had come here, they would likely not let him off so easily. Chu Feng looked to his surroundings, then smiled indifferently.

He said, “All of you, listen carefully. I am not from the Elm Lower Realm. Instead, I am from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.” “It’s actually the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?!!” Chu Feng’s words came like a lightning strike to the crowd.

After all, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm was the legendary place of trash. How could such a powerful person appear from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm? That said, even though they were feeling extremely astonished, they still firmly believed Chu Feng’s words. After all, there was no reason for someone to declare themselves to be from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. After all, being from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm did not bring any prestige.

Seeing the astonished expressions of the crowd, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth rose into a smile.

What he wanted was precisely for those people to have a whole new level of respect for the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. And now, he had accomplished his goal. “It’s useless,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to a person beside Zhou Zongzhi.

“W-what did you say?”

“W-why do I not understand you?” Being stared at by Chu Feng’s sharp gaze, that person immediately started to shiver in fear, and started to stutter.

“What I’m saying is that the help signal you sent off earlier is simply useless. I have already sealed this place with a spirit formation. All of you can forget about help coming,” Chu Feng said in a deemphasizing manner. Hearing those words, the fellow that sent out the signal for help immediately fell powerlessly onto his butt. Then, he crawled back up with great effort and began to kowtow to Chu Feng.

He begged, “Milord, please spare me, please spare me!!!”

He was truly frightened.

In fact, it was not only him who was frightened by Chu Feng. Chu Feng’s omniscient attitude as if everything was within his grasp had frightened all of the people present. An expert, an actual expert was standing before them. Before him they could not make any petty moves, because those petty moves would definitely be discovered by him.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the crowd, and began to walk toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone one step at a time.

The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone seemed to contain a special sort of power. Chu Feng was unable to describe it. In short... the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was calling to Chu Feng.

“Exactly what sort of magic power do you possess? It would appear that I will have to experience it personally,” As Chu Feng spoke, he gently extended his hands toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. He was planning to remove it. “You’ve come for the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?” Right at that moment, Zhou Zongzhi’s incomparably astonished voice sounded. “What, you have a complaint?” Chu Feng turned his cold gaze

toward Zhou Zongzhi.

“No, I wouldn’t dare.”

“How could this junior have a complaint regarding senior? Merely, this junior wanted to call to senior’s attention to the fact that no one has been able to remove the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Senior... you must definitely prepare yourself for failure.”

No one expected that the incomparably arrogant Zhou Zongzhi would start to flatter Chu Feng and wear an appearance of being petty and low.

That said, the crowd had no idea that Zhou Zongzhi was thinking about something completely different from what he was saying, ‘Regardless of how powerful you might be, you will still not be able remove the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. I’ll watch as you humiliate yourself here.’

Chu Feng did not bother with Zhou Zongzhi again. Instead, he directly moved his right hand toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

.....

The next moment, the entire region turned silent. It was so quiet that the only sounds that one could hear were intense heartbeats.

Everyone was stunned. This was especially true for that Zhou Zongzhi who was waiting for a show. He was completely dumbstruck.

Even Ma Yue and Tian Yi couldn’t believe their eyes, and were rubbing them nonstop.

The reason for that was because the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone that no one was able to move had been removed from the altar.

It was now being held in Chu Feng’s right hand.

## Chapter 2377 – Stirring Up A Sensation

---

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng held the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone in his hand and revealed a smile on his face.

“Chu Feng, what did you discover?” Eggy asked curiously. Even though she was able to share Chu Feng’s vision with him, she was unable to tell what he was thinking, nor was she able to sense what Chu Feng was currently sensing from the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“This Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone contains an entirely separate space inside it,” Chu Feng said. “There’s actually such a thing? Are you able to enter it?” Her Lady Queen asked. “This space is most definitely not something that just anyone could enter. However, I... am able to enter it,” Chu Feng said confidently.

At that moment, Chu Feng swept his gaze through the crowd, and saw their stunned expressions.

From that, Chu Feng became even more certain that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was most likely as Tian Yi and the others had said, that it was not something that anyone could remove. However, not only did Chu Feng easily remove it, he was also able to sense the space within the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. All of that pointed to one thing — that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone possessed some sort of connection with Chu Feng.

It was as if the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone had been prepared for Chu Feng. “Quickly, go in and have a look. Maybe there are treasures there,” Her Lady Queen said excitedly.

“Mn,” Chu Feng did not hesitate. With a shift of his body, Chu Feng turned into blue light and entered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“What’s going on?!!!” The crowd had their eyes fixed onto Chu Feng the entire time. As such, they clearly saw what had happened just then. To them, it appeared as if Chu Feng had been sucked into the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

However, before then, they had never heard of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone possessing such an ability. As such, the crowd were feeling extremely alarmed and frightened. One by one, they moved away, distancing themselves from the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. “Exactly what happened earlier? Could it be that he triggered the power of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, and was refined by it?” The crowd that didn’t know exactly what had happened all thought that Chu Feng was killed by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

While all that was happening, Chu Feng had already entered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

This was an isolated space. The space was not very big. It was only large enough to contain a hundred people.

However, the walls of this place seemed to be formed of jadeite. They were jade green, and glimmering brightly. The materials of the walls greatly resembled the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone itself.

“Why is there nothing here?” After observing the surroundings, Her Lady Queen revealed a disappointed expression. She had thought that there would be treasures inside this space. However, there was nothing here at all.

“No, it’s not that there’s nothing here.”

“I am certain that this place... is most definitely a place that our Chu Heavenly Clan’s seniors prepared for later generations,” Compared to Her Lady Queen’s disappointment, Chu Feng was feeling very excited.

“Chu Feng, do you sense something?” Her Lady Queen asked

excitedly.

“Natural Energies and the way of martial cultivation, this place contains both of them,” Chu Feng said.

“You mean to say?” Her Lady Queen revealed an excited expression. Being clever and quick-witted, she had already managed to guess some things.

“This place is a treasure deposit that the Chu Heavenly Clan’s seniors meticulously left behind. Not only am I able to obtain a great amount of Natural Energies, I am also able to make quick breakthroughs in cultivation,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s actually the case? Quickly, refine the Natural Energies,” Her Lady Queen was even more impatient than Chu Feng.

After all, what Chu Feng needed to do the most right now was reach breakthroughs in cultivation. The opportunity before him was simply akin to someone sending him charcoal in snowy weather. He had simply discovered it at the perfect time.

“Merely, I fear that I will not be able to avoid the Divine Tribulation even in here. For the sake of my safety, it is best that I set up a spirit formation first.” As Chu Feng spoke, he set up a layer of spirit formations that adhered to the jadeite walls in the space.

After Chu Feng finished those preparations, he sat down cross-legged and began to wholeheartedly refine the Natural Energies.

While this place possessed abundant amounts of Natural Energy, Chu Feng’s ability to refine them was superior.

In merely a short moment, Chu Feng had already refined all of the Natural Energies within that isolated space.

If it had been before he had reached Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng would definitely have reached a breakthrough immediately after refining the Natural Energies. However, he was currently obstructed by bottlenecks now. His path of martial cultivation was no longer as smooth as it had been before. This matter had been on

Chu Feng's mind the entire time. Thus, regardless of whether he might be resting, journeying to some place or in a certain land, Chu Feng would always attempt to comprehend the path of martial cultivation. He had never once stopped that sort of training. That said, Chu Feng's efforts had not been in vain. To Chu Feng, this ended up being extremely helpful. This was made evident when Chu Feng encountered the first bottleneck before him, the junction to break through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor. Chu Feng did not have to rely on any external forces, nor did he have to waste time on comprehension.

Instead, merely by relying on the comprehension he had come to within that period of time, Chu Feng managed to break through the bottleneck.

However, Chu Feng's cultivation did not immediately reach a breakthrough. Instead, he started to frown. He opened his eyes, and then looked skyward. "Oh crap!"

"What's wrong?" Her Lady Queen asked in confusion. "Right now, I am breaking through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor. This means that I will have to withstand fifty percent of the Divine Tribulation's power."

"With fifty percent, the Divine Tribulation's power will no longer be formless."

"I was so anxious to reach a breakthrough that I actually forgot about that," Chu Feng said.

"What do we do then?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"Unless this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone possesses some special power that can conceal the Divine Tribulation... I fear that I will cause a great commotion," Chu Feng said.

.....

At the same time, outside of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. In the Hundred Refinements Stage. Everyone was looking

toward the sky with raised heads. Expressions of fear filled their eyes.

Even though the Hundred Refinements Stage was sealed by a spirit formation, they were able to see the sky from within the Hundred Refinements Stage's spirit formation.

At that moment, black clouds were surging in the sky. Lightning was flickering, and thunder was rumbling nonstop. The lightning pierced through the sky, and the rumbles shook the earth.

Black clouds and lightning were things that the crowd had all seen before. For cultivators like them, they were easily able to create abnormal signs in the sky. Logically, this should be a very common sight. There shouldn't be a reason for any of them to care about it.

However, what the crowd was seeing right now was completely different. Firstly, the black clouds and lightning originated from deep within the sky. It was a height that martial cultivators were unable to reach.

It was impossible for an abnormal sign to appear in a place like that. As for the black clouds, although they did not cover a vast area, they were surging violently like an army of countless demons galloping in the sky. Looking at them, one would feel painfully oppressed. The black clouds were so frightening, they made one feel like they were suffocating. However, the main reason why the crowd was so frightened was the lightning flickering in the clouds. That lightning was simply too frightening. It was no ordinary lightning, and resembled dragons more than anything else. Those were lightning dragons capable of splitting apart heaven and earth, capable of extinguishing all living things.

To the crowd, a scene like that was truly frightening to the extreme. Even though they were all martial cultivators, they were still extremely scared.

The reason for their fear was because they knew that they would



undoubtedly die should a lightning bolt from the clouds strike them. ....

In fact, it was not only the people from the Hundred Refinements Stage that noticed the change in the sky. Even some of the people from the guardian clan outside of the Hundred Refinements Stage noticed it.

At that moment, led by their clan chief, people from the guardian clan were standing in the sky in an orderly manner with their eyes fixed to the scene that was happening in the depths of the sky. They all had the same sort of expression on their faces. It was the expression of unease.

“What is that?!” The guardian clan’s clan chief started to frown, and his frown grew denser and denser.

He had no idea exactly how powerful the lightning flickering in the black clouds was. However, he was able to tell that it was a power capable of destroying heaven and earth.

If the lightning was to pierce through the clouds and strike down, regardless of where it might land, the lightning would definitely bring about an unimaginable disaster. “What’s going on? Why does that lightning feel so frightening?”

Kong Zheng, Hu Xuanyi and the others who were journeying through the Hundred Refinements Stage also stopped their movements. They looked to the sky with uneasy gazes.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard from the sky.

“Oh no!!!!”

At that moment, everyone felt immense uneasy.

They had discovered that a lightning bolt had pierced through the black cloud, and was striking down. Furthermore, it was striking straight down toward their destination.

# Chapter 2378 – Rank Six Half Martial Ancestor

---

“Heavens! That lightning is coming for us! Everyone, run away!!!” At that moment, the surrounding crowd were all pale with fear. They were starting to flee ignominiously.

“No, it’s useless. There’s not enough time. We won’t be able to escape,” However, there were people like Ma Yue who did not escape. It was not that they did not want to escape. Rather, they were able to see the power of that lightning bolt, and realized that they could not escape that calamity.

That lightning bolt was simply too powerful. Not only was it astonishingly powerful, it was also extremely fast. In merely a short moment, it had struck down upon them.

However, after that frightening lightning descended onto the Hundred Refinements Stage, it did not cause devastating destruction.

Shock. Everyone was shocked. They were completely puzzled.

They were unable to understand why the descent of such a frightening lightning bolt would not cause any damage.

In fact, even the defensive formation guarding the Hundred Refinements Stage was completely undamaged. That lightning was like a ray of light that penetrated through the defensive formation.

However, in terms of being the most shocked, it would be Ma Yue and the others who were around the altar.

Their eyes were wide open, and their tongues were tied as they looked to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone on the ground. Disbelief filled their gazes.

“Did you all see that? Did you all see what just happened?” Zhou Zongzhi did not dare to believe what he had seen. Thus, he turned

to ask the others.

“We saw. T-that lightning... it was actually sucked into the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone like Chu Feng,” The crowd said.

“What’s going on? Did that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone save us? Or could it be... that the lightning was caused by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone to begin with? Was it warning us that it is a sacred item that no one must touch?”

“Frightening, too frightening. As expected of something from the Ancient Era, it is truly not something that we can touch at will. That reckless fool, he truly provoked an enormous calamity,” The crowd were feeling extremely uneasy. One by one, they stood up and began to flee. The reason for that was because they all felt that the cause of all this was the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Right at that moment, Zhou Zongzhi suddenly ordered, “Stop! All of you, stay there! None of you are allowed to leave!” “Big brother Zhou, this place is too dangerous. We must get away from here,” Someone urged.

“Fools! If that lightning wanted to harm us, none of us would be able to escape alive. As long as we’re in the Hundred Refinements Stage, it will be the same result regardless of where we go. That is, we will be killed,” Zhou Zongzhi said.

“Then, are we to wait for death here?” Someone asked.

“No, not death. Rather, we must wait for the arrival of the elders.”

“It is impossible for something like this to be noticed by only us. Likely, the guardian clan’s elders must have noticed it too. They will most definitely reach this place soon. Not only them, even that Lord Clan Chief who has never appeared will no doubt have to show himself.” “After all, the scene earlier was truly too terrifying.” “Since they don’t know what happened, they will most definitely be confused. However, we know exactly what happened,

exactly what led to this disaster.” “Thus, we must all stay here and honestly report to the elders about this matter.”

“At that time, we will have committed a great service, and will most definitely be rewarded,” Zhou Zongzhi said.

“Big brother Zhou is truly brilliant,” At that moment, the crowd finally realized what Zhou Zongzhi was thinking. One by one, they revealed expressions of admiration.

After hearing Zhou Zongzhi’s plan, Ma Yue said to Tian Yi, “We cannot allow senior to be captured by the guardian clan. We must help.” “But, how are we to help? We don’t even know whether or not that senior is still alive,” Tian Yi was a bit bewildered.

“No matter what, we must try,” As Ma Yue spoke, she leapt onto the altar and extended her hand toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. She was planning to bring the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone away.

However, Ma Yue was simply unable to move that seemingly ordinary Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. No matter how much strength she put forth, she was unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone in the slightest.

“Hahaha. Ma Yue, you are simply getting carried away by your wishful thinking. Since the Ancient Era, there has never been anyone that could move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Someone like you will never be able to move it. It is best that you not bother wasting your strength.” “Moreover, that senior of yours is already dead,” Zhou Zongzhi mocked.

“Shut up! Senior is extremely powerful. Furthermore, he is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. It is absolutely impossible for him to have died!” Ma Yue shouted angrily.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? So that person was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Upon hearing what Ma Yue said, the crowd’s expressions all changed. To them, people from the

Lower Realms, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were akin to legends. Thus, after finding out that Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, they felt even more reverence toward Chu Feng.

“Humph, so what? He has already been sucked into the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Furthermore, that frightening lightning was also sucked into the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.”

“Even if he’s an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it will definitely be impossible for him to withstand the power of that lightning. He will undoubtedly die. In fact, he has most definitely died already,” Zhou Zongzhi said in a very fierce manner.

Actually, Zhou Zongzhi was very afraid. He was very scared at the thought that Chu Feng did not die. The reason for that was because Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were simply too frightening to him. With someone like that standing behind Ma Yue, Zhou Zongzhi was feeling very uneasy.

“You shut up!” As Ma Yue spoke, she shot forth a punch.

“Bang~~~”

That Zhou Zongzhi was knocked flying. When he fell to the ground, he rolled about repeatedly. “Ma Yue, you’re taking advantage of me now that I’m injured. Just you wait until my injuries are recovered. At that time, I will tear your flesh from your bones!!!” Zhou Zongzhi started to furiously gnash his teeth in rage. Although Ma Yue’s punch did not leave any serious injuries on him, it had insulted his ego, and he found it intolerable. .... Meanwhile. In the space within the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. The Divine Tribulation’s lightning had disappeared. Only Chu Feng still sat cross-legged in the space. Chu Feng’s aura was currently rising. In merely a short moment, it had increased from rank five Half Martial Ancestor to rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

“Success. Chu Feng, you’re amazing. That Divine Tribulation

was so frightening. Yet, you were actually able to withstand it.” “You’ve passed the Divine Tribulation, and successfully become a rank six Half Martial Ancestor,” Her Lady Queen was endlessly excited.

Earlier, she had finally seen the appearance of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning. Merely by seeing it, she was able to imagine how frightening that Divine Tribulation’s lightning was. The way she saw it, that lightning was simply too powerful. With Chu Feng’s current cultivation, it should be simply impossible for him to withstand it. However, Chu Feng managed to withstand it. Her Lady Queen felt very proud of Chu Feng’s accomplishment.

“Indeed, that lightning was very powerful. However, there is an enormous difference between the actual might that it contained and what it appeared to contain.”

“Else, it would be impossible for me to withstand it,” Chu Feng said.

“So that’s the case. Could it also be because of that spirit formation? Did it lessen the might of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“No, it’s most likely not only because of the spirit formation. Rather, there should be some other reason. That’s because the might of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning that landed on me differed too much from when I saw it.” “It might be possible that the Divine Tribulation did not unleash its true power.” “After all, if the Divine Tribulation’s lightning was as powerful as it had appeared to be, likely no one would be able to withstand it,” Chu Feng said.

“Well, that doesn’t matter. After all, you’ve successfully broken through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor.”

“Come, let’s go out. The Divine Tribulation’s lightning was simply too mighty. If the people outside were to see it, it would definitely lead to a major commotion. Likely, the people from the

guardian clan will rush over here,” Her Lady Queen said.

“If the people from the guardian clan wish to capture me, I will likely not be able to escape. Thus, I might as well not leave so quickly,” Chu Feng said.

“Not leave? What are you staying for?” Her Lady Queen revealed a puzzled expression. “Continue breaking through,” Chu Feng said.

# Chapter 2379 – The Reappearance Of The Divine Tribulation’s Lightning

---

“You’re kidding. You’re planning to continue with your breakthrough? But...” Her Lady Queen was pleasantly surprised. However, she also found it unbelievable. After all, she knew that Chu Feng had already gathered sufficient Natural Energy to break through to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

The reason why Chu Feng had not broken through to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor yet was because he would have to face the various hurdles that all other martial cultivators had to face.

The hurdles were akin to closed gates before him. They were not things that he could burst through merely by gathering a sufficient amount of Natural Energy. If he wanted to pass through those gates, he would have to achieve comprehension of martial cultivation, and use wisdom exclusive to himself to decipher the method to achieve a breakthrough. Before, it was because of the Moonlight Immortal Spirit Herb’s root that Chu Feng was able to rapidly break through to rank five Half Martial Ancestor. Not only did the root contain a dense amount of Natural Energy of a berserk nature, it also contained comprehension towards martial cultivation. Thus, Chu Feng was able to reach sufficient comprehension to break through right after refining the root. As for before, Eggy felt that the reason why Chu Feng was able to break through to rank six Half Martial Ancestor was because Chu Feng had refined the Natural Energies contained in this place. After all, Chu Feng himself declared that not only did the isolated space contain dense Natural Energies, it also contained comprehension towards martial cultivation. Likely, those were opportunities and treasures left behind by the Chu Heavenly Clan’s seniors, treasures capable of allowing one to reach a breakthrough. Thus, Eggy felt that while Chu Feng’s comprehension towards martial cultivation that he had made in the recent period of time



might have assisted in his breakthrough to rank six Half Martial Ancestor, it was mainly the comprehension towards martial cultivation contained in the Natural Energies in this place that allowed him to reach sufficient comprehension to reach a breakthrough. In other words, to the current Chu Feng, Natural Energies were no longer the most important aspect to reaching a breakthrough in cultivation. The most important thing for him would be attaining comprehension toward the way of martial cultivation. As such, Eggy was confused. Chu Feng had clearly attained comprehension here and reached a breakthrough. As such, how could he be able to reach another breakthrough? Could it be that Chu Feng had obtained an enormous harvest from this place, and received enough comprehension to break through two levels of cultivations in succession? “Eggy, if I am not mistaken, you must be thinking that I have relied on the comprehension from this place to reach my earlier breakthrough, right?”

“Actually, that is not the case. Before obtaining the comprehension from this place, I myself had already managed to comprehend quite a bit of the way of martial cultivation.” “Merely, I didn’t know whether or not the way of martial cultivation that I’d comprehended would be capable of helping me reach a breakthrough. That was why I had not yet attempted to break through in cultivation before this.” “However, earlier, when I was making my breakthrough, I discovered that the comprehensions I’ve made myself were actually sufficient to allow me to reach a breakthrough,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, it means that your earlier breakthrough was unrelated to the comprehension toward the way of martial cultivation you’ve obtained from this place, and was purely your own comprehension?” Her Lady Queen was very shocked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Boy, you’ve truly grown more and more amazing. You are making this Queen more and more proud,” Her Lady Queen began

to praise Chu Feng nonstop.

“As a result, since I’ve already managed to achieve a new level of comprehension towards the way of martial cultivation myself, if I am to add the new comprehension that I’ve obtained from here, I might be able to attempt to break through to rank seven Half Martial Ancestor,” Chu Feng said.

“Great, this is truly great. There is simply nothing better than this. You’re actually able to reach two successive breakthroughs.”

“This journey was not in vain. This journey was truly not in vain,” Her Lady Queen was extremely excited. It was as if she were the one to receive this happy occasion, as she was even more delighted than Chu Feng. “Indeed, this journey has not been in vain. While I know clearly that the Chu Heavenly Clan’s seniors did not deliberately leave these for me, I still feel really grateful to be able to obtain all of this.”

“After all, the way of martial cultivation that was left here is truly profound. If I were to try to comprehend them myself, it would have taken a very long time,” When Chu Feng said those words, he was feeling extremely thankful.

The reason for that was because the way of martial cultivation in this place was different from that of the Exalted’s Remnants.

The way of martial cultivation in the Exalted’s Remnants existed as puzzles. Chu Feng had to personally comprehend those puzzles and solve each and every one of them to obtain the way of martial cultivation. If he wanted to comprehend everything in the Exalted’s Remnants, he had to solve all the puzzles. As for those puzzles, they were extremely difficult. Chu Feng did not possess certainty in his ability to solve all of them. However, that space was different. The way of martial cultivation in that space did not exist in puzzle form. Rather, it had been left untouched. However, for things like the way of cultivation, they were generally only things that one could grasp intuitively, and not be conveyed with

words. Thus, to be able to turn one's comprehension into the way of cultivation to pass on to another was sufficient to show how much effort that Chu Heavenly Clan's senior had put forth.

As such, how could Chu Feng not feel grateful about obtaining the laborious efforts of his senior?

"Enough, stop acting so emotional now. There's no time to lose. It's better that you seize the opportunity to quickly reach another breakthrough, since you've just reached a breakthrough. Else, if you are to wait, you might end up being unable to reach another breakthrough," Her Lady Queen's expression suddenly changed, and she started to urge Chu Feng. Even though she was a world spirit, she also knew about how difficult it was to break through one's martial cultivation bottleneck.

Natural Energies and one's comprehension toward the way of martial cultivation were not the only important aspects to reaching a breakthrough.

There was even a requirement in one's state of mind. Else, there would not be that many people in closed-door training for decades yet still unable to reach a breakthrough.

And now, it was clear that Chu Feng's current state was very good. Thus, Her Lady Queen did not want Chu Feng to waste time and miss his opportunity. "Yes, Milady Queen," Chu Feng smiled mischievously. Then, without hesitation, he closed his eyes, gathered his thoughts and began to utilize the comprehension he himself had achieved, as well as the comprehension he had obtained from this isolated space, and all of the secrets he knew regarding the way of martial cultivation, to attempt to reach another breakthrough past the bottleneck to rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Compared to the previous time, Chu Feng spent much more time this time around.

This caused Her Lady Queen to reveal a very nervous expression

on her exquisite face. She was very scared that Chu Feng would fail.

After all, in all this time, Chu Feng had been able to reach breakthroughs in cultivation without failure as long as he was serious in reaching a breakthrough.

She also did not wish for Chu Feng to fail this time around. She was afraid... afraid that a failure would be a blow to Chu Feng's self-confidence, that it would affect Chu Feng's future accomplishments.

However, Her Lady Queen didn't know that her worries were unnecessary.

Even though Chu Feng spent quite some time this time around, he still managed to succeed in the end.

However, due to the presence of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, the first thing to change after Chu Feng successfully reached a breakthrough was not an increase in cultivation.

Rather, in the depths of the sky... The black clouds and Divine Tribulation's lighting that had since disappeared were once again gathering in the depths of the sky where even martial cultivators were unable to reach. Furthermore, it was even mightier and more frightening this time around. "It's here again! Heavens! That frightening lightning is here again!"

"What's going on?! The pressure this time around is even more frightening than last time!"

The crowd's expressions changed enormously as they saw the change in the sky. Even though Zhou Zongzhi had already warned the crowd that they would not be able to escape, many people were unable to contain the fear in their hearts and began to flee in disarray when they saw the frightening lightning that appeared deep in the sky.

“Lil’ Yue, quickly, escape. That lightning is going to descend. If you stay here, you will definitely be struck dead by it,” Tian Yi began to panic upon seeing that scene. He hurriedly rushed over and wanted to bring Ma Yue away. After all, not only was Ma Yue standing by the altar, she was also tightly grabbing onto the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone with her hands. “No, I can’t give up like this, I can’t disregard senior,” Ma Yue said stubbornly. “Then I’ll accompany you,” Seeing that Ma Yue refused to move, Tian Yi did not escape by himself. Instead, he extended his hands and exhausted all of his strength with the intention of helping Ma Yue move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, regardless of how hard the two of them tried, they were unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone in the slightest. “Haha. Two ignorant fools. By standing there, you two can just wait till that lightning strikes you to death,” Zhou Zongzhi mocked and laughed.

The way he saw it, standing in the vicinity of the altar should be safe. However, to stand that close to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone itself was a deathwish.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the Divine Tribulation’s lightning finally pierced through the clouds and struck straight down toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

Seeing the Divine Tribulation’s lightning descending, and its light basking the great earth, Ma Yue and Tian Yi felt that they would meet certain death, and finally released the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone from their grasp. The two of them then hugged one another and prepared to meet death. “You’re kidding!!!”

At that moment, the expressions of the surrounding crowd changed enormously.

The reason for that was because they saw with their very own

eyes that the frightening Divine Tribulation's lightning brushed past Ma Yue and Tian Yi without injuring them in the slightest. Like the lightning before it, it entered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

## Chapter 2380 – Immovable

---

“We’re still alive?” Ma Yue and Tian Yi had astonished expressions on their faces. Neither of them dared to believe that they were still alive. After all, the two of them were so close to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Thus, they had truly felt the terror of that Divine Tribulation’s lightning.

It was an indescribable terror. If they had to describe it, then it would be the sort of terror that would be their eternal nightmare.

“This... exactly what is going on?” After a moment of astonishment, Ma Yue and Tian Yi cast their gazes to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

At that moment, their gazes had changed. They felt with even greater certainty that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was unfathomable.

They felt that the frightening lightning must have been caused by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

To be able to give rise to such frightening lightning, it better signified how powerful the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, several figures flew over and descended outside the altar. As for those people, they were none other than Kong Zheng, Hu Xuanyi and the other elders. “We pay our respect to Lord Elders!!!” Upon seeing those people, the people from the Lower Realms did not dare to show any negligence. They immediately knelt on the ground and greeted them respectfully.

Furthermore, they possessed very nervous expressions on their faces. Especially when facing Hu Xuanyi, they did not dare to look him in the face.

Although Hu Xuanyi was a peak Half Martial Ancestor like all the

other elders, Hu Xuanyi possessed a special status in the guardian clan. As such, he possessed enormous authority in the Hundred Refinements Stage. It could be said that he was the elder that the people from the Lower Realms feared the most.

“Did you all notice the descent of two lightning strikes earlier? Exactly where did those two bolts of lightning fall?” Hu Xuanyi directly asked the crowd.

The reason for that was because they had seen that the two lightnings had both descended at the altar.

“Lord Elders, we did indeed see them. Those lightning bolts were caused by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone,” Zhou Zongzhi’s voice suddenly sounded.

“Zhou Zongzhi?” The elders turned toward the direction of the voices, and were immediately shocked.

The reason for that was because not only was Zhou Zongzhi beaten beyond recognition and covered in blood, he did not even possess the strength to stand up. As he spoke, he started to crawl towards them. That appearance of his was truly miserable.

“Zhou Zongzhi, how did you end up in this state? Who injured you?” Seeing such a Zhou Zongzhi, the elders were all very shocked.

“Could it be...” Suddenly, an elder thought of something. Then, he turned his gaze to Ma Yue and shouted angrily, “Ma Yue, how could you be this vicious?!”

“Are you a fool?! Zhou Zongzhi is now a rank four Half Martial Ancestor, whereas Ma Yue is still only a rank three Half Martial Ancestor. How could Ma Yue beat Zhou Zongzhi to such a state?” Hu Xuanyi said.

“But...” That elder who shouted at Ma Yue started to look around. His intention was clear. He felt that there was no one else here other than Ma Yue who would attack Zhou Zongzhi like so.



“Lord Elders, while it is true that I was not injured by Ma Yue, the person who injured me is deeply related to Ma Yue,” Zhou Zongzhi seized the opportunity to report on Ma Yue.

“Related to Ma Yue? Someone that is able to injure you and is related to Ma Yue? Who is it? Speak immediately!!!” An elder declared. “Wait. Leave this matter for now. Zhou Zongzhi, you said that the frightening lightning was caused by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?”

“Furthermore, why did the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone change its location all of a sudden?” “Exactly what is going on? Tell me everything truthfully,” Hu Xuanyi said. “Lord Elders, this is what happened...” Zhou Zongzhi began to narrate what happened in full detail to Hu Xuanyi and the others.

“You’re saying that a person who declared himself to be from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm arrived in this place and moved the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Then, he infuriated the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and was refined by it. Then, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone caused those two lightning strikes?” Hu Xuanyi asked with a face filled with astonishment. He didn’t really believe what Zhou Zongzhi said. Not only him, the other elders also didn’t really believe Zhou Zongzhi.

Not mentioning whether or not the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was able to cause that lightning, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was something that was immovable by anyone. As such, how could that guy Zhou Zongzhi described possibly be able to move it? “Lord Elders, what I’ve described is absolutely true. This Zhou Zongzhi would not dare to deceive Lord Elders!!!” “If you all don’t trust me, you can go and ask them. They are able to bear witness to all of it,” Zhou Zongzhi said. “Lord Elders, it is as big brother Zhou said. Everything was caused by that person who proclaimed himself to have been from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm,” The crowd echoed. “Describe the

appearance of that guy to me,” Right at that moment, Kong Zheng stood forth.

“This person is?” Faced with an unfamiliar face, Zhou Zongzhi and the others started to hesitate.

“He is Young Master Kong Zheng of the Kong Heavenly Clan. Answer all his questions honestly,” Hu Xuanyi ordered.

“So it’s actually Young Master Kong Zheng of the Kong Heavenly Clan. This lowly one has eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. I hope that Young Master Kong Zheng will not blame me,” At that moment, Zhou Zongzhi hurriedly greeted Kong Zheng to admit his mistake.

“We pay our respects to Young Master Kong Zheng,” At the same time, the others also started to respectfully greet Kong Zheng. Even though they had been in the Hundred Refinements Stage the entire time, they knew about the situation outside. As such, they naturally knew that the Kong Heavenly Clan was among the four strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

It could be said that the Kong Heavenly Clan was a colossus that they dreamed of having connections with. And now, a young master of that powerful colossus was before them; how could they possibly dare to show any disrespect?

“Enough superfluous words. Speak immediately,” Kong Zheng looked down on Zhou Zongzhi and the others from the bottom of his heart. Thus, regardless of how they treated him, he would still hold them in contempt.

That said, Zhou Zongzhi did not dare to show negligence toward Kong Zheng. Thus, he hurriedly described Chu Feng’s appearance to Kong Zheng and the others.

“How could this be?!” After hearing Zhou Zongzhi’s description, Kong Zheng’s expression changed immediately. Then, he looked to Hu Xuanyi and revealed an angry expression. He said, “Didn’t you

say that Chu Feng would absolutely not be able to come in here? How is it that he's in here? Furthermore, he arrived here before me!"

"You're saying that the man who proclaimed himself to have been from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and moved the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is that Chu Feng?"

"That's impossible! Before you entered, the Hundred Refinements Stage's entrance had not been opened. It should be impossible for him to have entered here," Hu Xuanyi had an astonished expression.

"It truly hadn't been opened before?" Kong Zheng asked. "It hadn't. Absolutely not," Before Hu Xuanyi could answer, the others elders spoke in unison.

"Could it be that it isn't Chu Feng then? But... that description truly resembled that Chu Feng," At that moment, Kong Zheng's eyes were flickering nonstop with bewilderment. "Forget about it. It doesn't matter anymore. I've come here precisely for the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Regardless of what might have happened, it will all be fine as long as this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is still here," As Kong Zheng spoke, he began to move toward the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. "Young Master Kong Zheng, don't go over there. If it is truly as they declared, if the lightning really was caused by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, it would mean that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is currently extremely dangerous. It is best that you do not approach it," Hu Xuanyi stopped Kong Zheng.

"Humph, regardless of how dangerous it is, I must still take it. No one will be able to stop me," Kong Zheng was determined. He disregarded Hu Xuanyi and the others' advice and proceeded toward the altar with large strides.

"It would seem that the guardian clan's clan chief has deceived me. No one is able to move you? Didn't you already get moved?"

Kong Zheng looked to the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and revealed a faint smile.

Originally, he had had a trace of worry in his heart. He was afraid that he would not be able to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. After all, he had guaranteed that he would be able to move it before arriving at the altar. Thus, if he were to fail, it would be extremely humiliating.

However, he no longer had the slightest bit of worry anymore. Being extremely confident, he felt that since someone else was capable of moving it, he would definitely be able to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone too. Kong Zheng then raised his sleeve and lowered his back. With overwhelming confidence, he placed his hands onto the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“Mn?”

However, at that moment, Kong Zheng’s expression changed. He started to panic. He was shocked to discover that he was unable to lift that seemingly normal stone.

“I refuse to believe this!” After a declaration, lightning flickered in Kong Zheng’s eyes. Not only did he activate his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, he had also utilized a Heaven Taboo Martial Skill capable of increasing his strength.

“Amazing! Is this the legendary Heavenly Bloodline?!” “As expected of a Kong Heavenly Clan’s young master. His power is simply too astonishing!!!”

After seeing the lighting unleashed by Kong Zheng, Zhou Zongzhi and the others began to praise him nonstop. At that moment, they did not feel the slightest doubt towards Kong Zheng’s ability. They all felt that Kong Zheng would definitely be able to lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. After all, someone else had already accomplished it earlier.

They felt that since someone from the Ancestral Martial Lower

Realm was able to do it, an exceptional genius like Kong Zheng would definitely be able to do it too.

“Heeaaahh!!!”

Before the attentive gazes of the crowd, Kong Zheng suddenly shouted. Following that, a burst of boundless aura was emitted from his body.

At that moment, Kong Zheng’s veins bulged, and his entire body turned red. He unleashed all of his power in that split second.

“This!!!”

However, at that moment, the crowd were stupefied. They were at a complete loss.

The reason for that was because even though Kong Zheng had unleashed such overwhelming might and used such powerful abilities, the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone did not move in the slightest.

# Chapter 2381 – Disbelief

---

“Ahh~~~”

A furious voice resonated. The surging aura seemed to be able to topple mountains and overturn the seas as it blasted through the trees.

Kong Zheng was unreconciled. He was still trying to lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However... he had been unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone the entire time.

“Even a Heavenly Bloodline possessor is unable to move that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone?”

“But, that guy earlier, how did he manage to accomplish it?”

At that moment, the crowd was certain that Kong Zheng would not be able to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, the more this was the case, the more astonished the crowd felt. They were astonished at how Chu Feng was able to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“Someone was truly able to move this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone earlier?” After his efforts amounted to naught, Kong Zheng turned to question Zhou Zongzhi and the others.

“Y-yes, i-it was indeed moved. Else, it would be impossible for it to give rise to the lightning strikes,” Zhou Zongzhi said stuttering. Faced with Kong Zheng, he was feeling somewhat timid.

“Impossible! Even I am unable to move this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, how could someone possibly be able to move it?!” Kong Zheng shouted loudly.

At that moment, he had a determined expression. It was as if what he had said was the truth. However, he was in fact feeling very diffident. The reason for that was if someone really had managed to accomplish what he had failed to do, it would truly be

too humiliating for him. As for that, it was not a result that he wanted.

As for the people present, they were no fools. They were all able to tell that Kong Zheng was displeased. Thus, with the special status that Kong Zheng possessed, there would naturally be no one that dared to deny what Kong Zheng had declared to be true. Thus, even though they had seen Chu Feng moving the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone with their very eyes, no one dared to utter another word.

At that moment, it was absolutely quiet. “Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, an image suddenly shot out from the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Immediately after, the image took actual form and became a person.

As for that person, it was none other than Chu Feng.

“It’s him! Lord Elders, Young Master Kong Zheng, that is the man who proclaimed to be from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and moved the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone!”

“He was the one who angered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and brought forth the wrath of Heaven, brought forth those frightening lightning strikes!”

“But... how... how... how is he still alive?!”

Zhou Zongzhi and the others were incomparably shocked. Not mentioning whether or not Chu Feng was refined by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, those two frightening lightning strikes had both entered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone as well. Logically, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to still be alive. Yet... not only was he safe and sound, he appeared to be even more spirited than before he had entered the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“Chu Feng, it’s actually you?!!!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Kong Zheng’s expression changed

enormously. The reason for that was because this verified his guess that Chu Feng had entered the Hundred Refinements Stage.

“He is that Chu Feng?”

“How did he enter this place?” At that moment, Hu Xuanyi and the others were also extremely surprised.

“You were the one who moved the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone earlier?” Kong Zheng turned to ask Chu Feng.

“That’s right. What about it?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing less than three meters away from Kong Zheng. Although they were standing extremely close, Chu Feng did not place Kong Zheng in his eyes at all.

The reason for that was because the current Chu Feng was no longer the same as the Chu Feng from back then. Chu Feng had managed to withstand the second Divine Tribulation’s lightning, and successfully reach two successive breakthroughs in cultivation, and was now at rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Back then, when Chu Feng was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor, when Chu Feng had a level of cultivation below Kong Zheng, he was barely able to injure Kong Zheng. And now, Chu Feng was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, a level of cultivation above Kong Zheng.

Even though Kong Zheng possessed a protective treasure, Chu Feng was confident in being able to completely defeat him.

“I refuse to believe this. Even I am unable to move that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. How could you possibly be able to move it?!”

“Speak! Exactly what sort of despicable means did you use to move this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, which in turn led to the lightning strikes, the wrath of Heaven?!” Kong Zheng asked loudly, as if he were interrogating a prisoner.



“Despicable means?” Chu Feng snorted lightly. Then, he lowered his back, extended his right hand and effortlessly picked up the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. He said, “Is this your so-called despicable means?”

“This!!!” “This guy, he...!!!”

At that moment, not only were the bystanders astonished, even Kong Zheng moved back several steps and revealed an astonished expression.

The reason for that was because Kong Zheng knew very well how powerful that Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was. He had exhausted all of his strength and used all his abilities, but had been unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone in the slightest.

Yet, Chu Feng had managed to lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone with one hand in such an effortless manner. With how enormous the disparity between them was, how could Kong Zheng not be astonished?

“No, you must’ve used some sort of demonic method. That’s right... you’re an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, you must have used some sort of special method. Else... how could you possibly be able to hold the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone in your hand?!” Kong Zheng declared.

He was unable to accept that Chu Feng had accomplished what he was unable to accomplish. Thus, he thought of all sorts of means to provide a justification for himself, a means to reject Chu Feng’s otherworldly ability. “Demonic method? Since I’ve already used a demonic method, shouldn’t you also be able to lift it?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

Kong Zheng summoned up his courage and declared, “Of course!” The way he saw it, since the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone had already been lifted by Chu Feng, the special magical power that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone possessed should

have disappeared. If he was to be asked to lift it, he should be able to lift it easily too.

“Then give it a try,” As Chu Feng spoke, he tossed the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone he held in his hand toward Kong Zheng.

Chu Feng was unable to be certain whether or not Kong Zheng would be able to lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone now. However, he was not afraid.

The reason for that was because even if Kong Zheng was able to lift up the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone now, Chu Feng possessed sufficient strength to snatch it back by force.

“Truly foolish,” Seeing that Chu Feng had actually really tossed the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone toward him, Kong Zheng was brimming with a mocking smile.

The way Kong Zheng saw it, if Chu Feng had not lifted the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, he, Kong Zheng, would not have been able to bring it away. Yet now, Chu Feng had helped him enormously.

“Ouch!!!”

However, the next moment, Kong Zheng let out a scream. The reason for that was because the moment his hands came in contact with the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, he was shocked to discover that the seemingly ordinary Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone had become incomparably heavy, so heavy that he was simply unable to withstand its weight.

Thus, not only did Kong Zheng fall to the ground, his hands were also crushed onto the altar by the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. He was unable to move in the slightest.

“Heavens!!!”

Seeing that scene, the crowd’s expression changed once again. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s actions had once again

signified how extraordinary the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was.

At the same time, this also clearly proved how extraordinary Chu Feng was. Else... why would he be able to so easily lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone that others were unable to lift?

“It seems that you are simply unable to lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Thus... it’s best that you stop boasting about your merits,” As Chu Feng spoke, he lifted the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and placed it into his Cosmos Sack.

“How could this be?! How could that guy accomplish such a thing?!!!”

At that moment, the guardian clan’s elders were all unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Over the years, they had tried all kinds of methods to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Among them was using a Cosmos Sack to directly absorb the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, regardless of what method they used, it was useless.

At that time, the crowd felt that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was simply immovable. Or perhaps... only those with enormously powerful strength would be able to move it.

Yet now, they had personally seen Chu Feng lift the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and place it into his Cosmos Sack. After seeing that, they realized one thing.

It turned out that what was important was not one’s strength or ability. Rather, it was who the person was.

As long as it was the correct individual, then any abilities they used would prove effective. However, if it wasn’t the right individual, all abilities they used would be ineffective.

However, the truth was simply too astonishing. This caused Hu Xuanyi and the others to feel disbelief.

# Chapter 2382 – I Am Going To Force My Way Through

---

“Chu Feng, you... you... exactly what sort of demonic technique did you use?!” Kong Zheng was so furious that he started to shiver. He was still unable to accept the truth Chu Feng had revealed to him.

“You can say whatever you want. However, the truth remains as it is. You are unable to accomplish what I can accomplish.”

“Furthermore, even if I did use a demonic technique like you keep insisting, so what? It would only mean that I know that demonic technique, whereas you do not. To put it simply, you are inferior to me,” Chu Feng knew that Kong Zheng was extremely egotistical. Thus, he showed no quarter, and ruthlessly attacked Kong Zheng’s ego.

“You!!!” Sure enough, after being insulted by Chu Feng, Kong Zheng was unable to find a way to refute Chu Feng. and grew so furious that he began to step back repeatedly. Then, his complexion turned pale, and his mouth opened. “Puu,” he sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

He... was actually so angered by Chu Feng that he vomited blood!!!

“Ssss~~~”

Seeing all the things that were happening before them, the crowd sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

They were shocked to discover that not only did Chu Feng possess extraordinary strength, he also possessed dreadful eloquence, and was actually capable of angering someone to the state of vomiting blood with words. This was simply something that they’d never seen before.

“Hahaha... hahahaha...”

After vomiting blood, Kong Zheng burst into a strange laughter.

The crowd were all perplexed by his laughter. They had no idea what Kong Zheng was thinking. The situation at hand could be said to be completely humiliating for Kong Zheng. As such, there shouldn't be any reason for him to burst into such wild laughter, no?

“Chu Feng, so what if you can move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone? Don't you forget that on the way here, you were beaten fleeing by this great young master!” Kong Zheng said to Chu Feng.

“What? Chu Feng was beaten fleeing by Kong Zheng?” Hearing those words, the first reaction of the crowd was astonishment. The reason for that was because they did not feel that Chu Feng would be defeated by Kong Zheng.

“Haha...” Faced with what Kong Zheng declared, Chu Feng chuckled.

“What are you laughing about?! Is what I said not the truth? Did you not flee from me?” Kong Zheng continued. He became more emotional. The reason for that was because he truly wanted to retrieve his lost face.

“That's right. I fled. So what?” Chu Feng had a smile on his face. He remained completely calm the entire time.

“You're kidding! That Chu Feng was actually really beaten fleeing by Kong Zheng? Could it be that Kong Zheng's strength surpasses Chu Feng's?”

Chu Feng's answer immediately cause an enormous commotion among the crowd. Originally, with what happened earlier, they all felt that Chu Feng possessed strength above Kong Zheng. However, they were surprised to discover that their previous guesses had been wrong. After all, even Chu Feng himself admitted to having been beaten fleeing by Kong Zheng.

At that moment, the crowd had an enormous drop in elevation toward Chu Feng.

“It’s good that you admitted to it,” Kong Zheng was listening to the conversations of the crowd. When he heard their conversations, his previously pale complexion finally became a bit more rosy.

The reason for that was because he felt that he had finally retrieved a bit of the face that he had lost earlier.

Like that, Kong Zheng planned to continue to retrieve his lost face. He wanted to trample Chu Feng underneath his foot and reveal himself to be the true genius.

“Indeed, I have admitted to it. That said, I am very curious. What exactly are you planning?” Chu Feng said to Kong Zheng with a beaming smile. Even though he was asking a question, his composed appearance made it seem as if he had already seen through Kong Zheng.

“What am I planning? Isn’t it obvious?”

“Very well, I’ll inform you right now what I plan to do. Even if I am unable to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, I am still going to be the one to win in this competition. After all, I merely need to defeat you and then bring you back,” Kong Zheng said to Chu Feng.

“So that’s what you’re planning. If that’s the case, then I’m afraid that I’ll end up disappointing you,” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile. This was undisguised mockery. He was ridiculing Kong Zheng for being ignorant.

“Disappoint me? Why?” Kong Zheng was surprised. He did not understand what Chu Feng meant. “Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s body suddenly shifted. Like a phantom, he arrived before Kong Zheng. Then, Chu Feng shot forth a punch.

“Bang!” That punch landed onto Kong Zheng’s abdomen.

“Wuuah.”

Everything happened too quickly. Before Kong Zheng could react, he was knocked flying. When he landed, he rolled on the ground repeatedly.

“This...” At that moment, the crowd’s expressions all changed once again. They all revealed shocked expressions.

What was going on?

Wasn’t it made known earlier that Chu Feng was no match against Kong Zheng? That Chu Feng was beaten fleeing by Kong Zheng.

Thus, what was with this situation now? How did Chu Feng manage to knock Kong Zheng flying with his punch?!!!

“You... your cultivation, how did it become rank seven Half Martial Ancestor?!!!” Kong Zheng held his abdomen with one hand and propped himself up from the ground with his other hand. He had a painful expression on his face. He had barely managed to crawl back up. Merely, at that moment, his eyes were filled with astonishment.

“Who told you that I’m not a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor?” Chu Feng smiled. His gaze was filled with contempt.

It was as if Chu Feng was an experienced old cat that was toying with a newborn rat. Everything... was within Chu Feng’s grasp.

“You... you actually concealed your cultivation. No wonder... no wonder!!!” “You despicable bastard. You dared deceive me by concealing your cultivation!!!” Kong Zheng started to gnash his teeth furiously. At that moment, he had determined that Chu Feng had been a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor instead of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor from the very start. Merely, for the sake of making him underestimate Chu Feng, Chu Feng had deliberately concealed his cultivation.

Seeing Kong Zheng's current appearance, the smile on Chu Feng's face grew denser and denser.

Chu Feng knew best what had happened to his cultivation. Before entering the Hundred Refinements Stage, he had indeed only been a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. His current rank seven Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivation was something that he had obtained through successive breakthroughs in the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. However, for the sake of not causing unnecessary trouble, he deliberately made Kong Zheng believe that he had been a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor from the very beginning. And now... he had evidently succeeded in his goal.

“Hu Xuanyi, why are you still standing there? This man has trespassed into the Hundred Refinements Stage and snatched away the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. As an elder of this place, shouldn't you execute him on the spot?!”

That Kong Zheng was truly vengeful. Sensing that he was no match for Chu Feng, he turned to demand that Hu Xuanyi attack. In fact, he even wanted Hu Xuanyi to directly kill Chu Feng. “Chu Feng, how did you reach this place?” At that moment, Hu Xuanyi stood forth and questioned Chu Feng with an ice-cold tone. It was clear that he did not possess good intentions.

“Chu Feng, tell him your identity. Since this place was established by the Chu Heavenly Clan, he will definitely not dare to make things difficult for you should he know your identity,” Her Lady Queen said.

“I came here for the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. As for how I entered this place, I'm afraid I cannot tell you,” Chu Feng said to Hu Xuanyi. “Chu Feng, why didn't you tell them your identity?” Her Lady Queen was astonished by Chu Feng's refusal to do as she had said.

“Eggy, I, Chu Feng, can no longer be considered to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan right now. Thus... even if I am to



encounter difficulties, I cannot borrow the name of the Chu Heavenly Clan to break free from my predicament. Else... I will have let down the expectations my father has for me,” Chu Feng said.

“You...” Her Lady Queen was so furious that her face turned deep red. However, she soon heaved a long sigh and shook her head, “I truly don’t know what to do with you. What do you plan to do now?”

“If they decide to reconcile with me, it would naturally be for the best. Otherwise... I will force my way through,” Chu Feng said.

“You really refuse to tell? In that case, do not blame me for being impolite!!!”

At that moment, Elder Hu Xuanyi asked again. At the same time, the other guardian clan’s elders had already surrounded Chu Feng, sealing off his escape. Seeing that scene, Chu Feng facepalmed and then shook his head. He smiled lightly and said, “Seems like I’ll have to force my way through.”

# Chapter 2383 – Shocking Everyone

---

“Force your way through? You really dare to boast!”

“What place do you consider this place to be?! Who do you take us all to be?!”

“I do not care exactly what sort of origin you might possess. However, I can clearly tell you that this place is the Hundred Refinements Stage, and that we are the guardian clan!”

“Today, you have trespassed into this place. Your action is a capital offense! We are fully entitled to execute you on the spot!” Hu Xuanyi shouted coldly at Chu Feng. As he spoke, he unleashed his rank nine Half Martial Ancestor-level aura.

Once his aura was unleashed, the winds immediately started to scatter the clouds.

It turned out that this elder Hu Xuanyi was not only a peak Half Martial Ancestor, he also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

His strength could be said to be extremely powerful. One must know that those who possessed heaven-defying battle power were already extraordinary individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for a battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, it was even more so.

“Kong Zheng wanted you to execute me on the spot, and you immediately decided to execute me on the spot. Seems to me like you don’t resemble a member of the guardian clan, and instead resemble a dog of the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng mocked.

“Impudent! You are truly courting death!!!” Seeing that Chu Feng actually dared to publicly insult him, Hu Xuanyi was immediately enraged. He did not bother with superfluous words anymore. Like a phantom, he flew toward Chu Feng.

He did not utilize any martial skill. Rather, he swung his fists

back and forth, shooting out successive punches. The blurs from his punches crisscrossed with one another. They were so numerous and densely packed that they looked like a torrential rain as they rushed to bombard Chu Feng.

“Zzzz!!!”

However, right at the moment when Hu Xuanyi’s attack was about to reach Chu Feng, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes. Immediately, magnificent wings of lightning extended from his back, and a domineering armor of lightning covered his body.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation increased by two successive levels. From rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, he was now a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

Moreover, Chu Feng also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Thus, all aspects of Chu Feng’s strength were on par with Hu Xuanyi.

Thus, regardless of how powerful Hu Xuanyi’s attack might be, Chu Feng managed to easily dodge all of them.

“This guy, he’s actually also a Heavenly Bloodline possessor?!!!”

“But, didn’t he declare that he was from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm? How could there be someone with a Heavenly Bloodline from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?!!!!”

Seeing that Chu Feng had unleashed the special abilities of those who possessed Heavenly Bloodlines, the crowd and even the guardian clan’s elders had a change in their expressions as they looked to Chu Feng.

At that moment, they grew even more certain that Chu Feng possessed an extraordinary origin, that he was most definitely no ordinary member of the younger generation. “No wonder you were so confident. Turns out you’re actually a possessor of Heavenly Bloodline. However, even if that is the case, you will still undoubtedly be killed today!”

That said, Hu Xuanyi was determined to kill Chu Feng. Even though he knew that Chu Feng possessed an extraordinary origin, he did not feel the slightest hesitation. Instead, his attacks grew more powerful. He was determined to prove himself. He wanted to defeat Chu Feng using only his martial arts.

“Undoubtedly be killed? You wish to kill me with merely your fancy but impractical skills?” Chu Feng laughed.

“What did you say?!” Hu Xuanyi’s expression changed enormously. He simply did not dare to believe what he had heard.

The reason why he dared to declare that he would defeat Chu Feng using only his martial arts after discovering that Chu Feng possessed strength no inferior to his own was because he was extremely confident.

He was confident in his battle ability.

The reason for that was because his martial arts were the thing that he was most proficient in. No one in the guardian clan that was from the same generation as him was able to contend against him in terms of martial arts. As such, his martial arts were his strong suit, his pride.

Yet, at that moment, the thing that he was most proud of, his martial arts that were seen as godly by others, was actually called ‘fancy but impractical skills’. He simply did not dare to believe his ears.

Insult. This was an insult that he could not tolerate.

“I said, your martial arts are... fancy... but... impractical... skills,” Chu Feng repeated himself one word at a time. “You are truly courting death!” Being insulted by Chu Feng like that, Hu Xuanyi grew even more furious. His punches and kicks grew faster and faster. Merely his punching and kicking had already brought forth energy ripples. The strong winds from his attacks caused the bystanders to be knocked frantically rolling and crawling. Those

that were unfortunate enough to be struck by the winds were seriously injured.

At that moment, the bystanders had no choice but to distance themselves from the battle. They were deeply afraid that they would be implicated.

As for Hu Xuanyi, he grew fiercer and fiercer. He had completely unleashed all of his abilities. However... he had yet to connect with any of his punches or kicks.

Most importantly, Chu Feng did not fight back. Instead, he was merely dodging the bombardment of attacks.

“This guy, why is he not fighting back?” Seeing that Chu Feng was dodging and not fighting back the entire time, the elders from the guardian clan became puzzled.

Suddenly, an elder from the guardian clan made an analysis in a deadpan earnest manner. “I got it! I finally understand why that brat is able to dodge Elder Xuanyi’s ferocious attacks.”

“He must have grasped some sort of special method that allows him to dodge Elder Xuanyi’s close-range attacks.” “Merely, that special method of his possesses a major flaw. That is, he can only dodge, and not fight back.”

“That sounds very reasonable. Perhaps that might be it,” Once that theory was presented, the elders of the guardian clan immediately voiced their agreement.

“That guy clearly does not possess any true abilities. Rather, he is relying on some sort of special method to dodge Elder Xuanyi’s attacks. However, he actually still dares to insult Elder Xuanyi. He is truly despicable and shameless!”

Once they all agreed to the proposed theory of Chu Feng relying on some special method and not his own abilities to dodge Hu Xuanyi’s attacks, they immediately started to look down on and even insult Chu Feng.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly attacked. Chu Feng’s fist was extremely fast. Like a flash of light, it shot forth. Before Hu Xuanyi could react, Chu Feng’s fist had landed on his chest.

“Bang~~~”

The fist struck. Immediately, Hu Xuanyi was knocked flying like an arrow that was shot out from a bow. He had been struck flying by Chu Feng’s fist. As he flew, he crashed through many giant trees and shattered many small hills. The might of that fist strike was simply astonishing.

However, it remained that Hu Xuanyi was a peak Half Martial Ancestor-level expert. Thus, when he managed to land on the ground, only blood flowed from the corners of his mouth; he was not seriously injured. However, at that moment, the surrounding crowd all had nervous expressions. They were extremely frightened by that scene.

At that moment, they finally realized that Chu Feng had not used any special methods. Rather, he was overwhelmingly powerful. He would either not attack, or when he did, he would definitely injure that Hu Xuanyi.

“Now do you admit to the fact that your martial arts are merely fancy but impractical skills?” Chu Feng said to Hu Xuanyi mockingly. “You are courting death!!!” As Hu Xuanyi snarled, he revealed a sword. It was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament.

Right after he unleashed his Incomplete Ancestral Armament, he slashed at the space before him. Immediately, a slash flickering with golden light and reaching a hundred meters in either direction shot forth. It sliced through space and flew toward Chu Feng to cut him down.

This was not an ordinary attack. Rather, it was a Taboo Martial

Skill, an extremely mighty attack.

Most importantly, this attack was filled with killing intent!!!

“Woosh~~~”

However, faced with Hu Xuanyi’s ferocious attack, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. With a flip of his wrist, he took out the Magma Emperor Sword and sliced at the space before him.

“Boom~~~”

A wild blazing slash shot forth. That blazing slash basked all of heaven and earth in a fiery light. It was as if that place had turned into an infernal realm of flames.

“Rumble~~~” The two slashes collided with one another and let out berserk energy ripples.

In the end, Chu Feng had managed to rely on that slash to easily diffuse Hu Xuanyi’s slash.

“This guy, how could he be so powerful?!!!”

At that moment, the elders from the guardian clan were all so extremely frightened by Chu Feng that their complexions turned green. Involuntarily, they started to fall back from the battlefield.

Hu Xuanyi was the strongest among them. Yet, Hu Xuanyi’s powerful slash attack was easily canceled out by Chu Feng. As such, it clearly revealed how powerful Chu Feng was.

When even Hu Xuanyi was no match for Chu Feng, they knew that they would definitely not be a match for Chu Feng either. “If that’s all the ability that you possess, then I’m afraid you will not be able to stop me today,” Chu Feng said to the guardian clan’s elders.

# Chapter 2384 – Jade Heavenly Sword Formation

---

“Chu Feng, don’t you make delirious utterances. Today, you will definitely not escape.”

Hu Xuanyi flew toward Chu Feng while holding the Incomplete Ancestral Armament in his hand. As he approached, he shouted to the crowd, “Set up the formation!!!”

“Clank~~~”

Once his words were said, the guardian clan’s elders present all revealed their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.

Their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments were all swords. Regardless of their outer appearance or their auras, those swords were exactly the same as the sword Hu Xuanyi was using. At the same time that they revealed their Incomplete Ancestral Armaments, the elders also began to emit jade green gaseous substances from within their bodies. The gaseous substances started to fuse with their swords and started to emit an extremely powerful aura.

Most importantly, as a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to sense that the bodies of the guardian clan’s elders were in resonance. Furthermore, this resonance was very powerful.

As for this, it generally meant that it was the effect of a formation. “Chu Feng, this is bad. That formation of theirs is no small matter. You must leave this place immediately,” Her Lady Queen warned. “Understood,” Chu Feng did not hesitate. With the Magma Emperor Sword in his hand and the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique beneath his feet, Chu Feng began to rapidly fly away. He planned to escape from that place.

“Trying to escape? Don’t you think about it!” Seeing that Chu Feng was escaping, the guardian clan’s elders all pointed the



Incomplete Ancestral Armaments in their hands at Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

“Buzz~~~”

.....

In the blink of an eye, several rays of jade green sword auras were emitted from the Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. They began to chase after Chu Feng. They were so fast that one would become speechless upon seeing them.

The many rays of sword auras soon caught up to Chu Feng even though he had utilized his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

“This formation is truly powerful.” At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown deeply. He was able to sense the frightening power of those sword auras. They had reached the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill level. Furthermore, they were on par with extremely powerful Emperor Taboo Martial Skills. In other words, there were a total of several dozen Emperor Taboo Martial Skills surrounding Chu Feng.

“Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation.”

Placed in such a situation, Chu Feng had no choice but to unleash his strongest martial skill to scatter the sword auras that had surrounded him.

“Rumble~~~”

The Emperor Taboo: Heavenly Dome Transformation burst forth with overwhelming power. It completely dispersed the sword auras that had surrounded Chu Feng.

“How could this be?”

However, at that moment, not only did Chu Feng not have a cheerful expression on his face, instead, he had a very worried look.

He was shocked to discover that the sword auras he had managed to disperse were reforming. At that moment, they once again completely surrounded him, trapping him within.

“Chu Feng, it’s useless. Regardless of how powerful your abilities might be, you will not be able to break free from the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation,” Hu Xuanyi said complacently.

“Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, this is the guardian clan’s Jade Heavenly Sword Formation?!!!”

Upon hearing the words ‘Jade Heavenly Sword Formation,’ those from the Lower Realms all revealed pleasantly shocked expressions.

The Jade Heavenly Sword Formation was the consummate skill of the guardian clan. It was extremely powerful. Among those with the same level of battle power, no one would be a match for them once the guardian clan used the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

Furthermore, the strength of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation was also related to the number of participants setting up the formation. The more there were, the stronger it was.

Normally, the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation could be set up with only five individuals. But now, including Hu Xuanyi, there were a total of twenty-seven individuals powering the formation. A Jade Heavenly Sword Formation unleashed by this amount of people was naturally no small matter.

“I’ve heard that the guardian clan’s Jade Heavenly Sword Formation is extremely powerful. Furthermore, it was said that ten thousand years ago, the guardian clan relied on the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation to beat back a True Immortal-level expert.”

“Seeing it today, it is truly amazing,” At that moment, even the extremely proud Kong Zheng was unable to stop himself from praising the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

As a martial cultivator, he was able to tell how powerful the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation was. It had already surpassed ordinary martial skills, and could simply be said to be invulnerable. The way he saw it, unless Chu Feng was still concealing his cultivation... with his current cultivation and strength, he would definitely not be able to escape.

“Chu Feng, tell me how you got in here. Who helped you?” Hu Xuanyi asked Chu Feng. “No one helped me. I charged in here myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Impossible. With merely your cultivation, how could you possibly be able to charge into our Hundred Refinements Stage?” Hu Xuanyi said.

“Cultivation? Could cultivation mean everything? If one’s cultivation means everything, then why has no one been able to take the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone over the years, whereas I am able to do so?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile. Even though he was already trapped by the formation, he was still as calm as before.

“You!!!” Hu Xuanyi turned pale with anger. The way he saw it, what Chu Feng had said was an insult to all of them. After all, among the people here, no one other than Chu Feng was capable of moving the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“Chu Feng, this Jade Heavenly Sword Formation is the strongest formation of our guardian clan. Although we are still unable to unleash the true might of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation with our low level of cultivation, it remains that we will still be able to kill you with certainty should we determine to do so.”

“Thus, I urge you to act obediently,” At that moment, another elder from the guardian clan urged Chu Feng. Compared to Hu

Xuanyi, his tone was much more good-natured.

Likely, he had managed to see through the fact that Chu Feng possessed an extraordinary origin. Thus, he did not want to make Chu Feng an enemy.

“This elder knows how to speak better. However, I’ve already said it. I will not tell you all how I got in. After all, even if I were to tell you all, you all would not believe me. Thus, it’s best that you do not ask me about it again.”

“If possible, why don’t you just release me? Like that, you would have made yourself a friend. I, Chu Feng, will remember this grace, and will definitely repay the favor in the future,” Chu Feng said.

“Release you? You are simply delusional. I might as well tell you this: regardless of whether or not you tell us how you got here, there is only one end for you — death,” Hu Xuanyi said to Chu Feng.

“You are truly a dog of the Kong Heavenly Clan. After your master gave the order, you are determined to kill. You are truly obedient.”

“However, I might as well tell you this. While I cannot break through this formation of yours, with merely the strength of this formation, you will not be able to kill me,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“Arrogant boasting! Kill him!!!” Hu Xuanyi shouted furiously.

“Why are you all still standing there?!” Evidently, Hu Xuanyi was unable to activate the formation by himself. Thus, he turned to look at the others elders furiously.

“Elder Xuanyi, this child possesses an extraordinary origin. Must we really kill him? If we are to kill him, we fear...” The other elders were worried. They were naturally worried that Chu Feng possessed a powerful character behind his back. If they were to kill

Chu Feng, retaliations might be made against them.

“I said kill him! Are you all planning to go against my orders?!” However, before those elders could finish, Hu Xuanyi lashed out angrily at them.

“We wouldn’t dare,” The elders all lowered their heads. Evidently, they did not dare to go against Hu Xuanyi’s orders.

“Then set the formation in motion!” Hu Xuanyi shouted.

At that moment, the elders present did not dare to hesitate. They obeyed Hu Xuanyi’s order, and all began to urge the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, the jade green sword auras that had surrounded Chu Feng began to fly toward Chu Feng with deathly auras and the sounds of splitting wind.

“Rumble~~~”

The sword auras interweaved with one another. Energy ripples were surging forth. As the jade green energy ripples started to scatter, Ma Yue and Tian Yi felt pain in their hearts, and closed their eyes.

It was not only them. All of the people present felt that Chu Feng had died.

After all, the might of the sword auras was so overwhelmingly strong and terrifying. However, right at that moment, Hu Xuanyi’s complexion changed enormously.

“Not good! He’s still alive!” “How could this be?”

Following closely behind him, the other elders’ expressions also changed. They too revealed incomparable shock in their eyes.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At that moment, the jade green sword auras once again reformed.

They began to fly into the distance. In the end, they formed another net and encircled a region.

“Still alive? Chu Feng’s still alive?” After hearing Hu Xuanyi’s cry of alarm and seeing how those guardian clan’s elders once again set up the formation, those who had no idea what the situation was started to feel completely baffled. Confused, they all turned their gazes to the direction of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation. Finally, the ripples gradually dispersed, and the crowd managed to clearly see everything. “What’s going on? There’s clearly nothing there.” However, upon being able to see everything, Ma Yue, Zhou Zongzhi and the others grew even more baffled.

They discovered that there was nothing in the center of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

“Have I been discovered? It seems that this Jade Heavenly Sword Formation possesses a special sort of sensing ability.” Right at that moment, a wry laugh from Chu Feng sounded from the center of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

Following that, five different elements appeared out of thin air. They fused with one another and formed into Chu Feng. “He’s really still alive!!!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd were all greatly alarmed.

The reason for that was because not only had Chu Feng reappeared, he was also completely uninjured.

## Chapter 2385 – Endlessly Astonishing

---

“Elder Xuanyi, what is going on?! Our sword auras clearly struck him earlier!” Seeing that Chu Feng was still alive, the elders of the guardian clan all revealed nervous expressions. Confusion and shock filled their eyes.

“That child most definitely possesses special abilities or heaven-defying treasures. Else, it would be impossible for him to still be alive.”

“No wonder he said that even though he couldn’t break free from our Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, our Jade Heavenly Sword Formation would be unable to kill him,” Someone analyzed.

The more they analyzed, the more the people from the guardian clan and the surrounding crowd started to feel fear toward Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng was still only a member of the younger generation. For a member of the younger generation to possess such ability was simply too frightening.

“There’s no need to worry too much. Even if we are unable to kill him today, he will not be able to escape from here. Set up the formation, continue killing him!!!” Hu Xuanyi ordered once again.

After his order was given, the elders of the guardian clan once again urged the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, and began to repeatedly bombard Chu Feng with attacks.

The might of the attacks this time could be said to be the same as the previous time. In an instant, Chu Feng’s body was shattered into pieces.

However, as Chu Feng possessed the Five Elements Secret Skills, he was unkillable by anyone with the same level of battle power as his own.

At that moment, Chu Feng possessed an undying body.

Regardless of how powerful the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation might be, it was unable to kill Chu Feng.

However, the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation possessed a special sort of detection ability. Thus, even after Chu Feng's body was destroyed, and after he had used his world spirit techniques to completely conceal his scattered body, he was still unable to escape from the detection of the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation.

Thus, the situation at hand was that Chu Feng was unable to escape from the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, whereas the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation was unable to kill Chu Feng. Like that, Chu Feng and the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation entered into a repeated cycle, a stalemate.

“That guy is truly frightening. Even the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation is unable to kill him.” “Could someone that powerful really be from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?”

Seeing that Chu Feng was able to disregard the attacks from the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, that he possessed an undying and indestructible body, those from the Lower Realms all looked to Chu Feng with greater fear in their eyes.

After all, Chu Feng had proclaimed that he was from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. As such, his status should be the same as their own.

For such a monster to appear among someone with the same status as their own, this caused them to feel enormously ashamed. Yet, at the same time, this also caused them to involuntarily feel admiration toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, exactly what is your origin?” Not to mention the others, even Kong Zheng looked to Chu Feng with a change in expression now.

He thought to himself that if he were the one facing such a powerful Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, he would definitely be



killed with no chance of surviving.

However, Chu Feng was currently facing the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, and not only was he not dead, he was not injured in the slightest. This caused Kong Zheng to feel no choice but to admit the fact that there was an enormous discrepancy between him and Chu Feng, that he was much inferior to Chu Feng.

“Elders? What is going on? Why did you all unleash such a grand formation?!!!” Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from the distant sky.

It was a female’s voice. Although this voice was pleasant to hear, it was also very imposing.

“It’s her? She left her closed-door training?!!!”

Upon hearing that voice, Zhou Zongzhi and the others from the Lower Realms were immediately shaken. Their bodies began to tremble involuntarily.

Although Zhou Zongzhi had declared himself to be from the strongest Splendor Night Lower Realm... he was only ranked second in the Hundred Refinements Stage’s ranking list. Toward the first rank, he did not even have the thought to challenge it.

The reason for that was because the person ranked first on the Hundred Refinements Stage’s ranking list was an extremely frightening existence. If they had to describe that individual, then even though Zhou Zongzhi and the others felt that Chu Feng was already a monster, there was still a certain amount of disparity between him and the number one individual on the Hundred Refinements Stage’s ranking list.

To Zhou Zongzhi and the others, that individual was simply not human, but rather a demon.

Days before, that person who had caused them to be terror-stricken had entered closed-door training. That was why Zhou

Zongzhi was able to temporarily be the boss of this place.

Yet now, the person that had caused them to be terror-stricken had actually left her closed-door training. To Zhou Zongzhi and the others, this was no different than the descent of doomsday.

They would once again be enveloped by that frightening existence. “Lil’ Xue, it’s you? You’ve left your closed-door training?” Hearing that voice, Hu Xuanyi was overjoyed.

“Of course it’s me. I have successfully reached a breakthrough. I am now the same as elders, a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor,” That voice sounded again. Furthermore, the voice was growing closer.

“Chu Feng, this voice... do you not feel it to be very familiar?” Her Lady Queen let out an uneasy voice.

“Indeed. It’s very familiar. Could it really be her?” At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown. Upon hearing this familiar voice, Chu Feng had thought of a person. However... he deeply wished that he would be mistaken. If possible, he truly hoped for the person approaching him to be someone else.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the space before them started to squirm. Then, a figure appeared in the crowd’s eyes out of thin air.

It was a young woman. She was an exceptional beauty, and possessed an extremely alluring body. Regardless of whether it was her facial features, her figure or her temperament, they were all exceptional. She was truly an extraordinarily beautiful woman.

However, upon seeing this woman, Chu Feng was unable to feel happy in the slightest. The reason for that was because he had recognized who she was. The woman that had appeared before him was the person that he did not wish to see the most, Xue Ji.

“It really is you,” Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

“Yoh. And here I was wondering who it was that had caused such a grand commotion. Never would I have expected it to be you. This is truly a coincidence. I never expected to be able to run into you even in here.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, Xue Ji revealed a charming and sweet smile. Merely, she did not have the same sort of shock Chu Feng had in his eyes.

“Lil’ Xue, you know this Chu Feng?” Upon seeing that Chu Feng and Xue Ji were acting like they knew one another, Hu Xuanyi and the others present all had a change in expression.

According to Xue Ji’s explanation, she should be from the Starsoul Lower Realm. As for Chu Feng, he had declared that he was from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

Being from two different Lower Realms, the two of them should not have come across one another at all. As such, how could they know one another?

Yet now, the two of them actually knew one another. This meant that one of them was lying.

The two of them must be from the same Lower Realm. Otherwise... it should be impossible for them to know one another.

“I know him, of course I know him. This man and I possess enormous enmity. Even if he turned to ash, I would still recognize him,” Xue Ji ran her beautiful fox-like eyes over Chu Feng. The enchanting smile on her face emitted a strange sensation.

Hearing what Xue Ji said, Hu Xuanyi was immediately overjoyed. Originally, he had been afraid that since Xue Ji knew Chu Feng, she might help him.

However, Xue Ji had now declared that she and Chu Feng were mortal enemies. Thus, the situation had become much better for him.

“Lil’ Xue, this child has trespassed into our Hundred Refinements

Stage and plundered the Hundred Refinements Stone. He has committed an enormous mortal offense.”

“If you are to help us behead this child, I will definitely report this matter to Lord Clan Chief. You will have contributed meritorious service, and will be amply rewarded,” Hu Xuanyi said to Xue Ji.

Logically, it would be very unimaginable for an elder of this place to request the assistance of someone from the Lower Realm.

However, Chu Feng knew how powerful Xue Ji was. She was an unfathomably powerful existence. Even though she might only be a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng was still unable to see through her strength.

However, Chu Feng was able to be certain of one thing. That is, Xue Ji possessed the strength to kill the current him. “Elder Xuanyi, is what you said the truth?” Xue Ji turned to ask Hu Xuanyi.

“Absolutely. I dare to guarantee it with my personal dignity,” Hu Xuanyi guaranteed. “Since that is the case, I am more than willing to help,” Xue Ji smiled strangely. Then, she waved her sleeve, and her oppressive might swept forth.

“Wuuahh~~~”

All of a sudden, blood splattered everywhere, and screams were sounding nonstop. At that moment, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. They were all shocked.

The reason for that was because Xue Ji’s earlier attack was not aimed toward him. Rather, it was aimed at Hu Xuanyi and the other guardian clan’s elders.

At that moment, Hu Xuanyi and the other elders were all seriously injured by Xue Ji.

# Chapter 2386 – Golden Mountain Burial Grounds

---

“What’s going on? Could it be a mistake?”

“But, with Xue Ji’s ability, she shouldn’t have mistaken her target,” The surrounding crowd were all puzzled.

“Xue Ji, what are you doing?! Have you gone insane?!” Hu Xuanyi pointed at Xue Ji and shouted furiously.

“I’m sorry Elder Xuanyi. My attack missed its mark,” Xue Ji smiled in an embarrassed manner. Then, she waved her sleeve again.

“Woosh~~~”

A golden ray flashed as Xue Ji shot forth another burst of martial power. Her attack was aimed directly at Hu Xuanyi.

“Boom~~~”

“Ouch!”

Hu Xuanyi was knocked flying a hundred meters up into the air before ruthlessly crashing down onto the ground. When he landed, his body was covered with blood, causing him to be powerless to stand back up. With a shivering finger and rage in his eyes, he pointed to Xue Ji. Unfortunately, he was unable to utter a single word.

“Oh, I’m sorry Elder Xuanyi. It seems that my attack missed its mark again,” Xue Ji had a harmless smile on her face. It was a very enchanting smile. However, when Hu Xuanyi saw the smile, he grew even more furious.

“Puu~~~”

Hu Xuanyi’s mouth opened, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out. Then, his knees grew weak, and he crashed to the ground. He had

been beaten unconscious by Xue Ji.

In fact, it was not only Hu Xuanyi who was furious; the other elders of the guardian clan were also furious.

If missing one's target once might be understandable, then for it to happen again was definitely impossible. Likely, only fools would believe that Xue Ji had missed her target.

That said, even though they clearly knew that Xue Ji had done so deliberately, the guardian clan's elders were unable to do anything about it.

They knew very well that Xue Ji was extremely powerful. Although she was someone that was training here, she was an existence that even they, the elders, had to respect.

After all, she was truly a demon-level character. "Why are you still standing there? If you wish to leave, follow me," Xue Ji said to Chu Feng. After she finished, she proceed to fly toward the depths of the Hundred Refinements Stage. In response, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and directly followed after her. It was not that Chu Feng did not wish to escape. Rather, Xue ji possessed strength surpassing his own. If Xue Ji refused to let him go, even if he tried to escape, he wouldn't be able to. Furthermore, Chu Feng wanted to know why Xue Ji had saved him. Soon, Chu Feng was brought to a mountain range by Xue Ji. This mountain range was very special; it was completely golden. The mountain flickered with light, and was gorgeous and magnificent. This was the legendary Golden Mountain.

However, Chu Feng did not possess the heart to appreciate the Golden Mountain. Rather, his eyes were fixed onto the exceptional beauty before him the entire time.

Merely, Chu Feng did not have the heart to appreciate the beauty of the woman before him either. Instead, restraining fear filled his heart.

Xue Ji was originally a world spirit in Chu Feng's body. Merely, due to being sealed in Chu Feng's body, she felt deep hatred toward Chu Feng, and had declared that she would kill Chu Feng countless times.

And now, she was standing before Chu Feng and possessed the strength to kill Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, it has truly been a very long time since we last met. It seems that you haven't changed much either," Xue Ji said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile on her face. Her charming gaze actually did not possess the slightest trace of hostility. It was as if she were seeing an old friend.

"Don't try that with me. Exactly why did you save me?" Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

"Look at you, why are you not gentle at all towards a girl? Could it be that you also speak like this to that silly girl who declared herself to be a queen? I seem to remember that to not be the case, no?" Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

"Enough of your superfluous words. Do not waste both of our time. Else, once the reinforcements from the guardian clan arrive, neither of us will be able to escape," Chu Feng said.

"Reinforcements? Rest assured, there will not be any reinforcements. Even if reinforcements are to come, they will be no match for me. There is a special restriction in the Hundred Refinements Stage. Those above Half Martial Ancestor are unable to enter this place," Xue Ji said.

"Then exactly why did you save me? Don't you tell me it's because of old affection. I remember very well that right after I released you at the Nangong Imperial Clan, you were determined to kill me. If it wasn't for Eggy concealing me with her ability, I would have already been killed by you," Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

"Don't you speak of yourself so highly either. Back then, when

you released me, you merely did so to save yourself. In other words, I was your savior at the Nangong Imperial Clan. Furthermore, I have saved you just now too. Thus, shouldn't you be thanking me?" Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

"Thank you? Very well, tell me how you want me to thank you." Chu Feng asked with a sneer. He wanted to know exactly what this Xue Ji was planning. "How about sleeping with me?" Xue Ji said with a charming smile. "Truly shameless," Hearing what Xue Ji said, Her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself and cursed out.

As for Chu Feng, he would naturally not believe that Xue Ji would actually want him to sleep with her. Furthermore, who was Xue Ji? She was a truly poisonous woman, someone who was extremely dangerous.

Even if Xue Ji really wanted Chu Feng to sleep with her, Chu Feng would not dare to do it, because he feared that if he did, he would not even know how he had died.

"No matter what, I must thank you for saving me today. However, I am preoccupied with something that I must take care of. Since you do not need anything from me, I will take my leave," Chu Feng clasped his fist at Xue Ji. Then, without waiting for Xue Ji to say anything, he turned to leave.

"Buzz~~~"

However, Chu Feng had only flown a short distance when a boundless oppressive might arrived from behind him. It overtook him, and then blocked off the path ahead.

"Exactly what do you want?" Chu Feng turned around and looked at Xue Ji. After all, the oppressive might that was blocking his path was Xue Ji's.

"You are truly impatient. I still remember that you did not treat that silly girl in this manner."

"However, that's fine. After all, you have already managed to



guess the reason why I saved you. Thus, I might as well tell you the truth.”

“I need your help,” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

“Continue,” Chu Feng said.

“You are now an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, have you not noticed that this Golden Mountain is strange?” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

After hearing what Xue Ji said, Chu Feng turned his gaze downward toward the Golden Mountain.

Earlier, he was only concerned about Xue Ji, and did not bother to carefully inspect the mountain. However, upon closer inspection, Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed.

That Golden Mountain was indeed extremely extraordinary.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng activated his Heaven’s Eyes. Before his Heaven’s Eyes, everything became clear. “This is a burial ground,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. This is indeed a burial ground. Furthermore, it has existed since before the Hundred Refinements Stage was constructed.”

“Furthermore, as Martial Ancestor-level experts are unable to enter this place, and this place became a place where trash from the Lower Realms gathered, no one noticed that there was such a treasure in the Hundred Refinements Stage.”

“How about this: since you’ve already seen it, I might as well share. You help me open this treasure deposit, and we’ll divide the treasures evenly,” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

“How am I supposed to trust you?” Chu Feng asked Xue Ji. For some unknown reason, Chu Feng did not feel that exceptional beauty before him to be trustworthy.

“By the fact that I’ve saved you,” Xue Ji said. “Chu Feng, with the

situation at hand being like this, you might as well give it a try. Perhaps this treasure deposit will be very beneficial to you,” Eggy said to Chu Feng.

“Very well, I will trust you this once,” Chu Feng agreed to help. However, he did not immediately descend to the ground. Rather, he stood in the sky and set up a concealing formation to cover the entire Golden Mountain. Then, he descended to the ground.

He did this to prevent the people from the guardian clan from chasing after him. With this concealment formation, unless they were to search for Chu Feng using the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, they would definitely be unable to discover Chu Feng and Xue Ji.

“As expected from an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. The speed at which you set up your spirit formation is truly fast. However, this Golden Mountain is no small matter. I truly wonder whether or not you will be able to open it,” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng with a beaming smile.

“You merely need to keep your promise,” Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to set up a grand unsealing formation.

When the magnificent spirit power fluttered in the sky and moved about under Chu Feng’s control, even Xue Ji who had questioned Chu Feng earlier revealed an astonished gaze.

She had realized that Chu Feng would most definitely be able to open the burial ground.

## Chapter 2387 – Mother's Power

---

“Brat, it seems that you do possess some skills. No wonder a genius like myself would be sealed in your body.” “It seems your mother thought quite a lot of you. If possible, I truly want to see what sort of person your mother is to be able to capture me from the Asura Spirit World and then seal me in your world spirit space,” After seeing Chu Feng’s current world spirit techniques, Xue Ji gasped in admiration.

“Chu Feng, let me out,” After hearing what Xue Ji said, Her Lady Queen said to Chu Feng in a serious manner. “Eggy, what’s wrong?” Chu Feng asked in a surprised manner. He rarely saw Her Lady Queen so serious.

“I have something that I need to ask this Xue Ji face-to-face,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Very well,” Although Chu Feng did not know what Her Lady Queen wanted to do, he still opened his world spirit gate.

Her Lady Queen walked out from his world spirit gate and arrived before Xue Ji.

“Yoh. Silly little girl, it seems that this is the first time we meet face-to-face, right?” Xue Ji said to Eggy.

It must be said that the scene of these two exceptional beauties standing together was one that would fascinate all men.

Although these two beauties were of completely different styles, they were both perfect. The two of them were akin to divine goddesses of one’s dreams.

“Earlier, you said that you were forcibly captured. In other words... when you were captured, you were awake, right?” Her Lady Queen asked Xue Ji.

“Of course I was awake. Were you not awake when you were captured?” Xue Ji asked.

“At that time, I was injured. I had fallen asleep while healing my injuries. When I woke up, I discovered myself sealed in his world spirit space. I do not know much about exactly how I arrived in this world,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Silly little girl, you are truly quite pitiful. You actually do not even know how you were captured, and you were already dead set on putting your life on the line for this brat,” As Xue Ji spoke, she took a glance at Chu Feng, who was setting up the spirit formation.

“As a world spirit, one must do what world spirits should do. Regardless of how I came to this world, since I was sealed in Chu Feng’s world spirit space, I should naturally work for him,” Her Lady Queen said.

“That’s right. What you said is reasonable. After all, you are still a world spirit. Unlike me... I am already an Evil Spirit. I will never again be able to return to the Asura Spirit World,” As Xue Ji spoke, she once again took a glance at Chu Feng. Although she still had a faint smile on her face, when her gaze landed on Chu Feng’s body, Chu Feng felt his blood run cold.

Sure enough, Xue Ji felt enormous hatred for Chu Feng.

“If you had just obediently obeyed Chu Feng, he would not have released you using that method,” Her Lady Queen said.

“What’s this? Did you deliberately come out so that you could provide justifications for Chu Feng?” Xue Ji asked.

“Of course not. However, there’s no need for me to tell you why I came out either,” After Her Lady Queen finished saying those words, she turned around and walked back toward Chu Feng’s world spirit space.

“No matter what, we are both from the Asura Spirit World. We should be treating one another as relatives. Yet, why must you feel so hostile toward me?” Xue Ji asked. She had been emitting an enchanting smile with her beautiful eyes the entire time.

“The fact that you made Chu Feng an enemy means that you are also my enemy. I do not care what you plan to do. However, it is best that you do not do anything harmful toward Chu Feng. Otherwise... I will make you suffer the consequences,” Her Lady Queen turned around and said to Xue Ji.

“Little girl, it doesn’t seem like the current you possesses the qualifications to say those words to me, no?” Xue Ji smiled a profound smile. At that moment, Her Lady Queen also narrowed her eyes and smiled. It was a gorgeous smile capable of enchanting all living things. Even the simultaneous blooming of a myriad of flowers would not be as beautiful as her smile.

However, the eyes of that beautifully smiling face emitted extremely ice-cold killing intent.

“I naturally possess the qualifications. Merely, I hope... that you will not have to see what my qualifications are. Else... you will definitely regret it,” After Her Lady Queen finished saying those words, she proceeded toward the world spirit gate.

“Why is it that after I hear what you said, I want to know exactly what your qualifications are even more?” Xue Ji said.

Her Lady Queen did not bother with Xue Ji. She had walked into the world spirit gate and returned to Chu Feng’s world spirit space.

“If I am not mistaken, you must be trying to determine the strength of Chu Feng’s mother by verifying whether or not I was forcibly captured and placed into Chu Feng’s world spirit space, right?” “You are truly giving it a lot of thought for this boy.”

“However, you didn’t actually have to do all that. You could have just asked me directly. I would not mind telling you such things,” Xue Ji said.

“You’ve met my mother?” Chu Feng asked Xue Ji.

“No, I have not. However, I have personally felt your mother’s power. Do you wish to know?” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

“Of course,” Chu Feng said. Xue Ji explained, “As a world spiritist, you should know that whether or not a world spirit is willing to serve a world spiritist depends on the world spirit itself.”

“The only thing a world spiritist can do is to use their spirit power to communicate with a world spirit. As for world spiritists, they would then have to determine the strength of the world spiritist by the strength of that spirit power.”

“If they feel that the spirit power is quite decent, they would then try to further communicate. Then, they can enter a contract, and thereby open the gate leading to that world spiritist’s world spirit space.”

“However, that gate is a gate that only world spiritists can travel to and fro through. World spiritists are forever unable to travel through that gate and enter the spirit world,” Xue Ji said. “Thus, my mother did the impossible. Not only did she forcibly open that gate and pour her power into it, she also went against your and Eggy’s desires to forcibly capture the two of you from the Asura Spirit World and seal the two of you in my world spirit space, right?” Chu Feng said.

“To be able to forcibly open that gate, to go against the desire of the world spirits and forcibly capture them is already something unimaginable.”

“However, what I want to tell you is that when I was captured, I had many seniors present. They possessed strength not only capable of shocking a baby like you, but strength that would shock many people in your world.”

“If those seniors of mine were to descend into this world, they would become the nightmare of countless martial cultivators.”

Chu Feng did not doubt Xue Ji in the slightest. While Xue Ji could be lying to him, he had a feeling that she was telling him the truth right now.

Furthermore, he also believed that there should be many unimaginably powerful world spirits in the Asura Spirit World.

After all, the Asura Spirit World was the most powerful of the Seven Spirit Worlds. At that point, Xue Ji suddenly sighed. She said, “Unfortunately, even after those seniors of mine acted together, they were still unable to protect me from your mother.”

“What?!” Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words.

“As such, Chu Feng, what I want to tell you is that your mother is truly extremely powerful,” Xue Ji said as she looked at Chu Feng. Her current gaze was very complicated. It was a gaze that even Chu Feng could not see through. “Thank you for telling me all this,” Chu Feng said. “You don’t have to thank me. If you want to thank someone, then thank that silly little girl in your body that is still willing to serve you. It was her who caused me to want to tell you these things. I think... that is the reason why she came out.”

“Thus, I must admit that that silly little girl has managed to accomplish her aim. I have told you two all that I know,” Xue Ji spread open her arms and shrugged her shoulders.

“Eggy, thank you,” Chu Feng said to Eggy. He finally realized how considerate Eggy was. “There’s no need to be courteous with me. Actually, I merely wanted to let you know how powerful your mother is. And you... you have inherited your mother and your father’s bloodlines. Thus, I wanted you to realize how unfathomable your potential is. As long as you are determined, I believe that you will one day surpass your parents and become one of the strongest cultivators in this world,” Eggy said. “I will,” Chu Feng said. “Don’t be so urgent to guarantee that. If you truly want to mature, you must treasure your life even more. At the very least, you must make fewer needless sacrifices. You especially must not be implicated by your so-called spirit of loyalty and self-sacrifice,” Eggy said. At that moment, Chu Feng smiled. He had understood that the last sentence was what Eggy wanted to tell him the most.

Even though Her Lady Queen had advised him against it, Chu Feng was still unable to change his character. He would still sacrifice himself for his friends, and disregard his life doing things that he considered to be right. However, that final sentence Her Lady Queen said had brought great warmth to Chu Feng's heart.

Her Lady Queen was truly Her Lady Queen.



## Chapter 2388 – Else, I’ll Have You Dead

---

Finally, Chu Feng finished setting up the grand unsealing formation. Chu Feng activated the grand unsealing formation, and began to wholeheartedly focus on unsealing the burial mounds.

By relying on the keen observational ability of his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng had already discovered the entrance to the burial mounds. Although the entrance was sealed, Chu Feng possessed absolute certainty in being able to undo the seal.

After the grand unsealing formation was set in motion, everything happened as Chu Feng had expected. The Golden Mountain began to subside after being battered by the pounding from the grand spirit formation.

A bottomless passage that led to an unknown place appeared on the Golden Mountain, after which Chu Feng entered it without the slightest hesitation.

Chu Feng firmly believed that this passage was only the entrance to the burial ground.

The passage was very deep, unimaginably deep. Chu Feng had not encountered any hurdles in the passage. Just like that, he continued downward. Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to sense that Xue Ji was right behind him, that she had followed him into the passage. However, Xue Ji was very cunning. She had deliberately tailed behind Chu Feng because she was afraid that there would be dangers ahead. She was trying to make Chu Feng a scapegoat should there be dangers.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, a speck of light appeared in the depths of the pitch-black passage. Furthermore, as Chu Feng continued deeper, the light grew brighter and brighter. “We’re here.” Chu Feng stopped. Before him was a gate. He knew that it was a world spirit gate that

should lead to the burial grounds.

“Buzz~~~”

Everything was as Chu Feng anticipated. It was indeed a world spirit gate. Chu Feng managed to easily pass through it.

After passing through the gate, dazzling light stabbed Chu Feng’s eyes, causing him to feel a slight pain.

This was a world spirit space. There was no sky or clouds overhead. Rather, there was only dazzling white light.

In contrast to the dazzling white light above his head, the ground of this world spirit space was filled with bones.

It was a boundless sea of bones where layer upon layer of bones were piled upon one another. It was truly a stunning sight to behold. After all, the masters of those bones had all previously been alive.

As Chu Feng looked at the surrounding bones, he would from time to time see enormous bones reaching several hundred meters.

It turned out that there were not only a large amount of humans who had died there, there were also monstrous beasts that had died there as well.

Most importantly, all of the bones were glimmering with light. At a glance, they looked like treasures. They were extremely eye-catching.

Furthermore, their source energies were all present.

“Heavens! There’s this many bones, and all of their source energies are actually still here. Milady Queen, this is indeed a treasure deposit! This is a treasure deposit prepared for you!” At that moment, Chu Feng was endlessly excited. He felt that his blood was racing from head to toe. Compared to finding treasures that he could use, this brought him even greater joy.

Chu Feng had felt that he had let down Eggy all this time. He had

always wanted to find treasures that Eggy could use.

Without a doubt, the treasure deposit before him had been prepared for Eggy.

Even though not many of the people that had died here were truly powerful... the number of bones was simply too numerous. Chu Feng firmly believed that those bones would provide an enormous help to Eggy. To world spirits and Evil Spirits, this space was simply akin to paradise. “There’s this many intact source energies. It would seem that this Queen will be able to enjoy a hearty meal today,” At that moment, Her Lady Queen was equally excited. “Sure enough, this battlefield was left intact,” A beautiful figure landed beside Chu Feng. It was Xue Ji, who had followed after Chu Feng.

“You knew about this place beforehand?” Chu Feng turned to ask Xue Ji. “Of course. This is a battle that occurred in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm a long time ago. Countless sects and schools were gathered in this place to battle. In the end, all sides suffered enormous casualties, and were nearly wiped out here.”

“Although their cultivations were generally not very strong, their source energies were intact. With this enormous amount, they would be of great assistance to me,” Seeing the scene before her, Xue Ji was unable to contain herself from licking her lips. Her sexy appearance was truly alluring. However, she soon turned around, looked to Chu Feng and said with a smile, “Chu Feng, I must truly thank you for helping me get here.”

“Don’t mention it. After all, I also need the treasures here,” As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his world spirit gate and prepared to let Her Lady Queen out so that she could refine the source energies here. “Woosh~~~” However, right at that moment, a crimson sword suddenly appeared in Xue Ji’s hand. That sword was very strange. It did not look like an ordinary weapon. However, being held by Xue Ji, the sword emitted an extremely powerful aura.

At that moment, Xue Ji did not aim her crimson sword at Chu Feng. Rather, she aimed it at the world spirit gate that Chu Feng had just opened.

“What are you doing?” Chu Feng frowned and asked uneasily. “If that little girl dares to come out, I will immediately kill her,” Xue Ji said. “Didn’t you say that we would divide the treasures here evenly? Are you planning to go back on your word?” Chu Feng asked with a cold voice.

“I am always one to keep my word. Thus, how could I possibly go back on them? However, I merely declared that I would divide them equally with you, and never said that I would divide them equally with her,” Xue Ji said.

“Since that’s the case, I should be able to refine the source energies here, no?” Chu Feng asked. As matters stood, the familiarity between Chu Feng and Eggy was extremely high. As long as Eggy was awake, she would be able to directly refine source energies through Chu Feng’s body. When Chu Feng was killing his enemies before, he would always destroy them till not even a speck of them remained. However, before killing them, Her Lady Queen would have already refined their source energies through Chu Feng’s body.

Thus, Her Lady Queen actually did not even have to come out of the world spirit gate to refine the source energies here. “That won’t do. While I can give all of the remains here to you, you are not allowed to touch an ounce of source energy,” Xue Ji said. “And what if I am to touch them?” Chu Feng narrowed his brow and asked coldly.

At that moment, Xue Ji narrowed her eyes slightly and revealed a devastatingly beautiful smile. With a very gentle voice, she said to Chu Feng, “If you dare to touch them, I will have you die here and be buried along with these bones.” “Chu Feng, forget about it, we have been deceived by this Xue Ji. As expected, she is untrustworthy.”

“However, at the very least, she is only interested in this treasure deposit, and does not have the intention to kill you. Thus, let’s forget about it.”

“After all, she was the one to discover this treasure deposit to begin with. Even if we cannot obtain it, we will not have suffered any losses,” Seeing that the situation was bad, Her Lady Queen actually began to urge Chu Feng against it.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt enormous pain in his heart.

Chu Feng knew very well what sort of person Her Lady Queen was.

Although this girl had a gentle appearance, she was actually extremely vicious and cruel. She was definitely not someone that was afraid of anything. When she did something, she disregarded thoughts of life or death even more than Chu Feng.

Had it been otherwise, she would definitely not accept the losses today.

However, she had decided to accept the losses. It was not because she was cowardly. Rather, it was because she was truly worried about Chu Feng.

She did not wish for Chu Feng to sacrifice his life in vain for the sake of her interests. “Eggy, listen to me. All these years, you have done an enormous amount of things for me. I, Chu Feng, remember all of them.” “I am not trying to repay you because with the relationship that the two of us have, there is simply no need to pay one another back. However, it is precisely because of this that I must seize what should be yours today.” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his palm streaked across his Cosmos Sack. Then, a crimson sword appeared in Chu Feng’s hand. “Chu Feng, you...”

Upon seeing that crimson sword, Her Lady Queen’s heart was moved. She revealed a startled expression on her exceptionally

beautiful face, and her beautiful eyes revealed a complicated gaze.

She had managed to recognize with a single glance that the crimson sword Chu Feng held in his hand was that unfathomable weapon, the weapon that possessed an enormous amount of martial power, but also hit its user with an extremely terrifying backlash, the Demon Armament Evil God Sword.

Even if he should brave the dangers of dying to the backlash, Chu Feng must still strive for Her Lady Queen for the source energies that belonged to her. “What are you trying to do?” Xue Ji looked to the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s hand and asked with a beaming smile.

After all, the Evil God Sword only looked like an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament. Before an expert like Xue Ji, a weapon like that was only a plaything that did not pose any threat.

“Woosh~~~” Suddenly, Chu Feng pointed the Evil God Sword at Xue Ji’s throat. His gaze was akin to a torch, and his killing intent was overwhelming.

One word at a time, Chu Feng coldly said, “Abide by your promise. Else, I’ll have you dead.”

# Chapter 2389 – Breaking Out The Formation

---

Seeing the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng's hand, Xue Ji originally had a gaze filled with contempt. However, when she saw Chu Feng's ferocious and murderous-looking appearance and his gaze that viewed death with equanimity, her gaze grew serious.

“For the sake of that little girl, it seems that you truly are willing to part with everything.”

“Buzz~~~”

After Xue Ji finished saying those words, she spread open her hand and the crimson sword she held in her hand turned into crimson rays of light that dispersed and entered Xue Ji's palm.

This scene caused Chu Feng's gaze to change.

Sure enough, Xue Ji's weapon was extraordinary. It was most definitely not a normal weapon. Rather, it appeared more like a special sort of ability.

“I was merely joking with you earlier. Being here, I am alone and impoverished. With great difficulty, I came across someone from my hometown. As such, how could she and I try to massacre one another?” Xue Ji said with a beaming smile. “Are you planning to honor your promise?” Chu Feng asked.

“I can honor my promise. However, I have a condition,” Xue Ji said.

“Speak away,” Chu Feng said. “Although I do not know how you got in here, since you were able to get in, this means that you'll be able to get out. Later on... you must bring me away from this damned place,” Xue Ji said.

“You have already offended the people from the guardian clan for the sake of saving me earlier. Thus, it is only natural that I bring you out. There's no problem with that,” Chu Feng said.

“Good. Since that’s the case, you can bring that little girl out,” Xue Ji said.

Right after Xue Ji finished saying those words, Her Lady Queen walked out from the world spirit space.

“You actually dared to use me to threaten Chu Feng. I will settle our debt today sooner or later,” Her Lady Queen stared at Xue Ji with her gaze filled with grievance.

“I’ll wait for you,” Xue Ji said with a smile.

Suddenly, Xue Ji’s expression changed. She spread open her arms and closed her eyes. “Boom~~~” In an instant, violent wind surged forth. As Xue Ji’s long hair fluttered, black gaseous flames began to emit from her body. Like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses, the black gaseous flames surged toward the sea of bones.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen also spread open her arms and closed her beautiful eyes. As Her Lady Queen’s short black skirt and long black hair fluttered in the wind, the dark black gaseous flames specific to Asura World Spirits was also overflowing out of Her Lady Queen’s body and rushing toward the sea of bones. The two streams of dark black gaseous flames were extremely fast. Even though the sea of bones was limitless and covered the ground to the horizon, the black gaseous flames emitted by Xue Ji and Her Lady Queen soon covered the entire sea of bones. The next moment, an enormous attractive force was emitted by the dark black gaseous flames as they began to return to Xue Ji and Her Lady Queen’s bodies. Although it was something invisible to the naked eye, Chu Feng knew that the source energies originally contained in the sea of bones were currently being refined by Xue Ji and Her Lady Queen in an unending stream.

At that moment, Xue Ji and Her Lady Queen were like two plunderers scrambling over the treasures of this place.



As for Chu Feng, he had held onto the Evil God Sword the entire time. The reason for that was because he truly did not trust Xue Ji. For the sake of preventing Xue Ji from going against her word, he must remain alert.

As Chu Feng held onto the Evil God Sword for a long period of time, Chu Feng began to feel the boundless power contained in the Evil God Sword even more. That power was very restless in nature. It was like an army eager to battle. As long as Chu Feng gave the order, they would immediately unleash a slaughter.

Merely, not only did Chu Feng manage to sense how strong that power was, he also managed to sense dense killing intent from it. That killing intent was truly too frightening. From the Nine Provinces Continent to the Eastern Sea Region to the Holy Land of Martialism and then the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Chu Feng had encountered many fiendish and merciless beings. However, the killing intent that those people possessed were all nothing comparable to the killing intent within the Evil God Sword Chu Feng held in his hand.

The killing intent contained in the Evil God Sword was pure killing intent that did not contain the slightest bit of leniency. "Demon Armament, it would seem that you are truly a Demon Armament," Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng gasped. He became even more certain that the Evil God Sword was a double-edged sword. While Chu Feng might have obtained another method of confronting his enemies with the Evil God Sword, the Evil God Sword also served as a hidden danger. Actually, Chu Feng was also a bit scared. He was afraid that he would not be able to control the Evil God Sword. However, at the same time, Chu Feng was also filled with expectations. He was never one to be afraid of a challenge. Thus, Chu Feng was looking forward to the day when he would be able to conquer the Evil God Sword. Perhaps only an extraordinary Demon Armament like the Evil God Sword would suit an actual expert. "Silly little girl, it would seem that I've

underestimated you,” Right at that moment, Xue Ji’s voice was suddenly heard. Chu Feng looked toward the two girls, and discovered that they had managed to completely refine all of the source energies contained in the sea of flames in a short period of time. At that moment, Xue Ji’s cultivation had increased. She was no longer a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, and had instead become a rank one Martial Ancestor.

As for Her Lady Queen, she had also obtained a major harvest. From her original cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, she was now a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

Rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. For Chu Feng, he would have to utilize the power of both his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings in order to obtain a cultivation of rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

However, for Her Lady Queen, her actual cultivation was that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

In the Half Martial Ancestor realm, Chu Feng only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

As for Her Lady Queen, she possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

In other words, Her Lady Queen was currently stronger than Chu Feng.

“Don’t think that just because my cultivation is weaker than yours that I will be slower than you in refining source energies. Although we are both Asura World Spirits, this Queen’s bloodline is far superior to yours,” After Her Lady Queen finished saying those words, she did not concern herself with Xue Ji’s reaction, and directly returned to Chu Feng’s world spirit space. As for Xue Ji, she did not refute Her Lady Queen. She merely smiled. No one knew exactly what she was thinking about and what her state of mind was. This woman was extremely good at concealing everything. Even someone with extremely strong perception like

Chu Feng was unable to see through her.

“Let’s go. It’s time to leave this place,” Xue Ji said to Chu Feng.

“Didn’t you say that people above Half Martial Ancestor would be under restrictions in the Hundred Refinements Stage? Why are you fine now?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s because I broke through to the Martial Ancestor realm in here. Thus, even though I am a Martial Ancestor now, the Hundred Refinements Stage is unable to put restrictions on me,” After Xue Ji finished saying those words, she passed through the spirit formation space and flew outward.

“This Hundred Refinements Stage’s spirit formation is actually this complicated. I wonder, exactly which senior from our Chu Heavenly Clan set it up?”

Chu Feng gasped with admiration. Merely by looking at the Hundred Refinements Stage, he was able to imagine that there must be someone with extremely powerful world spirit techniques in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The Chu Heavenly Clan was most definitely not only a clan proficient in martial techniques, but also a clan with expert world spiritists.

With merely that, it once again displayed how powerful the Chu Heavenly Clan was.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted. He too began to fly outward.

After Chu Feng exited the burial grounds, he used his world spirit techniques to completely seal the entrance shut.

“Let’s go. Let’s leave this place,” Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

“How do you plan on leaving?” Xue Ji asked.

“Just follow me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he soared into the sky and began to fly toward the defensive barrier above the Hundred

Refinements Stage. Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to directly leave through the sky, Xue Ji said, “You couldn’t possibly be planning to directly destroy that spirit formation, right? Don’t be foolish, that spirit formation is not that easily destroyed. This is especially true for the one overhead, it is extremely powerful.”

However, Chu Feng did not bother with Xue Ji. Instead, he continued flying upward. When Chu Feng approached the spirit formation, he took out a key and tossed it out toward the spirit formation. After the key collided with the spirit formation, a passage actually appeared in the impregnable spirit formation. “This guy!!!” Seeing this scene, even Xue Ji revealed an astonished expression.

# Chapter 2390 – The Truth Revealed

---

After Chu Feng and Xue Ji left the Hundred Refinements Stage, they did not stop, and instead rapidly flew into the distance.

As for the entrance Chu Feng had opened, it soon quietly reformed itself not long after the two of them left.

Chu Feng and Xue Ji had disappeared. No one chased after them. However, they had no idea that their actions were actually being seen completely by the eyes of the guardian clan's Clan Chief.

It was not only the scene of Chu Feng and Xue Ji's escape; everything that had happened in the Hundred Refinements Stage earlier was seen by him.

"A descendant of the Chu Heavenly Clan has finally come to retrieve the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone."

"Merely, this descendant of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he's actually already an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist at such a young age. Furthermore, he brought forth that sort of lightning. Frightening, truly frightening," The guardian clan's clan chief placed his hands behind his head as he muttered softly.

When seeing all that, even though this person was a True Immortal-level expert, he still had an unconcealable, frightened expression on his face.

"Lord Clan Chief, this is bad!" After a short moment, Hu Xuanyi, who was seriously injured flew back leading all of the other injured elders.

He knelt in midair and spoke in a manner filled with grievances, "Lord Clan Chief, that Chu Feng has managed to collude with a traitor among our clan using some unknown method and actually managed to enter the Hundred Refinements Stage. Furthermore, he even stole the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone!"

"There's also that Xue Ji. She and Chu Feng were actually

acquaintances. The two of them colluded with one another and seriously injured us. Lord Clan Chief, please activate the grand formation to kill them. We absolutely cannot let them escape.”

“They have already left,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“They... they have already left?!”

“But...” Hu Xuanyi was stunned. The reason for that was because he had clearly asked the elders guarding the entrance when he was leaving the Hundred Refinements Stage. He had found out from the elders in charge of guarding the entrance that the entrance gate had been closed the entire time he had been in there. Thus, it shouldn’t have been possible for Chu Feng and Xue Ji to have escaped.

“Could it be that they’ve all received Chu Feng’s benefits?! Damn it! I shall severely punish them!” Hu Xuanyi thought that it was those elders in charge of guarding the entrance that had released Chu Feng and Xue Ji. After he made that declaration, he turned around and planned to immediately proceed toward the Hundred Refinements Stage’s entrance.

“Chu Feng left through his own means. Likewise, he came in by himself. There was no traitor in our guardian clan,” The guardian clan’s clan chief declared. “Ah? He actually entered and left by himself?... But... How could that be possible? How could our Hundred Refinements Stage’s grand formation possibly be...” Not to mention Hu Xuanyi, the other elders present also had expressions of disbelief on their faces.

“Fools, has there been anyone among our guardian clan that has ever managed to move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone? Yet that Chu Feng managed to do so. Do you all still not understand what that means?” The guardian clan’s clan chief said angrily. “.....” Hu Xuanyi and the others began to ponder. However, they were unable to think of what that could possibly mean. Thus, they asked, “We are foolish, Lord Clan Chief, please

explain it to us.”

“Only the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan are capable of moving the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“Ahh!!!” Hearing those words, the expressions of Hu Xuanyi and the others changed enormously. At that moment, they were acting like they’d been struck by lightning. They felt their scalps going numb as fear filled their hearts. To the guardian clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan was no small matter.

To put it simply, the Chu Heavenly Clan was the master, while the guardian clan was the servant.

The master and servant relationship was engraved into the hearts of everyone from the guardian clan. Even though they were daring enough to make anyone an enemy, they never dared to disrespect anyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Even if a True Immortal-level expert from the guardian clan were to face a child without cultivation from the Chu Heavenly Clan, they would still be extremely respectful, and not dare to show the slightest bit of disobedience.

The reason for that was because the Chu Heavenly Clan had helped the guardian clan enormously. Even the strongest formation of the guardian clan, the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation, was something that the Chu Heavenly Clan had taught them.

However, earlier, Hu Xuanyi and the others had actually tried to use the Jade Heavenly Sword Formation to kill Chu Feng. This was simply akin to having committed a capital offense. As such, how could they not be alarmed, not be scared?

“But, if Chu Feng i-i-is a member of t-the Chu Heavenly Clan, why did he not say so?” Hu Xuanyi was so scared that his voice started to tremble.

“Just because he didn’t mention it doesn’t mean that he is not a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan. However, one thing is certain: that is, only people from the Chu Heavenly Clan are capable of moving the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.” “Likely, there is a reason why Chu Feng never mentioned his identity the entire time.”

“Thus, we must definitely keep the matter of Chu Feng being a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan confidential. This matter absolutely cannot be told to anyone. It is an absolute capital offense to anyone who dares to leak this information.”

“This is especially true for you, Hu Xuanyi. I know that you possess an extraordinary relationship with the Kong Heavenly Clan. However, I hope you keep in mind why our guardian clan was able to survive to this date,” The guardian clan’s clan chief used an ice-cold gaze to look at Hu Xuanyi.

“This lowly one wouldn’t dare, this lowly one wouldn’t dare forget the grace the Chu Heavenly Clan has shown our guardian clan.”

“This lowly one was truly foolish today. However, that was all because I didn’t know Young Master Chu Feng’s identity. If I had known, even if I were beaten to death, I wouldn’t dare to attack Young Master Chu Feng,” Hu Xuanyi knelt to the ground. His aged face was covered in weeping bitter tears.

Most importantly, he did not appear to be pretending, but rather regretting from the bottom of his heart.

“What about you all?” The guardian clan’s clan chief turned to ask the other elders.

“We wouldn’t dare leak this matter,” Those elders declared in unison.

“As Young Master Chu Feng has not mentioned his identity today, you were all unaware of it. As such, you are not to be



blamed for your actions today, and I will not look further into it,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said. “Thank you for pardoning us, Lord Clan Chief!!!” Hu Xuanyi and the others were all extremely grateful. After all, to them, this was truly akin to having escaped a calamity.

“You all don’t have to thank me. If you want to thank someone... thank Young Master Chu Feng,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said. As he spoke, he turned around and looked to the direction Chu Feng had left in.

Looking at the direction where Chu Feng disappeared, the guardian clan’s clan chief suddenly had a change in expression. He turned around and asked, “Earlier, that Kong Zheng came to retrieve the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone because he wanted to save someone, right?”

“That’s right. He said that his elder brother was trapped at the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond, and could only be saved with the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone,” Hu Xuanyi said. “Oh no!” Upon confirming this matter, the guardian clan’s clan chief started to frown. Then, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

.....

Chu Feng and Xue Ji were worried that the people from the guardian clan would chase after them. Thus, the two of them were journeying rapidly, and only stopped after they’d gotten very far away from the Hundred Refinements Stage.

“We’ve escaped this far without anyone chasing after us. It seems that there really isn’t anyone chasing after us,” Xue Ji said. “What do you plan to do next?” Chu Feng turned to ask Xue Ji.

“Regardless of what I plan to do, I wouldn’t be telling you. Why, could it be that you want to accompany me?” Xue Ji asked with a beaming smile.

“I merely wanted to advise you that it is best that you not commit

outrageous atrocities. Else... I will not spare you,” Chu Feng said to Xue Ji.

“What are outrageous atrocities? This is a world where might is right. As for right and wrong, who could possibly determine that?”

“Perhaps what is right in your heart is wrong in my heart, whereas what is wrong in your heart is right in my heart. Thus, it is best that you not weigh me according to the rights and wrongs that you have in mind.”

“Furthermore, let me remind you of this. If I wanted to, I could take away your little life right now. You simply do not possess any qualifications to threaten me,” After Xue Ji finished saying those words, her eyes suddenly started to flicker, and a boundless oppressive might restricted Chu Feng. That was the oppressive might of a Martial Ancestor. Once that oppressive might appeared, that region of space started to distort and let out strange noises.

“What are you planning to do?” Chu Feng asked with a stern voice.

Chu Feng was actually not afraid of Xue Ji, as he had been holding onto his Evil God Sword the entire time. Even though Xue Ji’s oppressive might was very powerful, as long as Chu Feng activated the Evil God Sword, he would still be able to easily cut through her oppressive might. Xue Ji did not answer Chu Feng. Instead, with alluring steps, she stepped into the air and arrived before Chu Feng. Suddenly, her lips were raised upward, and a sexy and alluring smile appeared on her alluring face. She raised her slender and fair-skinned hand and gently caressed Chu Feng’s cheek. Then, she moved her alluring mouth toward Chu Feng’s ear. With a very ambiguous voice, she said, “Don’t be afraid, I am still reluctant to kill you.” After she finished saying those words, her oppressive might suddenly disappeared. At the same time, Xue Ji’s figure also disappeared. Xue Ji had disappeared without a trace.

## Chapter 2391 – What Is It?

---

As Chu Feng was very worried for Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's safety, he did not delay, and immediately proceeded directly toward the Drought Demon's Damned Pond after Xue Ji left.

Finally, Chu Feng returned to the location where Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and that Kong Cheng had been captured.

Even though Chu Feng's cultivation had increased compared to that day, he still did not dare to act carelessly upon arriving at that place.

After all, even Zhao Hong was no match for that humanoid clay monster. As such, Chu Feng would naturally not be a match for it either.

The only option would be to use the Evil God Sword. However, the Evil God Sword was also what Chu Feng did not wish to use the most.

"I've returned. I've also brought back the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone," Chu Feng raised his hand that held the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and spoke loudly.

"Crash~~~"

Right after Chu Feng said those words, that region of pond water started to surge, forming a whirlpool.

Soon, the humanoid clay monster Chu Feng had met that day appeared at the center of the whirlpool.

"I've brought back what you want, quickly release my friends," Chu Feng said.

"How should I know whether or not the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone you hold in your hand is real or fake. Toss it over so I can inspect it first," The humanoid clay monster said.

"Allow me to see my friends first," Chu Feng said. "Very well. I'll

let your desire be fulfilled,” After the humanoid clay monster said those words, another figure appeared from the pond water.

It was Kong Cheng. Although Kong Cheng was still trapped, his complexion had grown much better compared to that day.

It could be seen that during the period of time when Kong Zheng and Chu Feng were away, this humanoid clay monster had kept its promise, and had not deliberately made things difficult for Kong Cheng.

Chu Feng continued to observe that region of water. He was waiting for Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong to appear. However, after a short while passed, he did not discover either of them.

“Where are my friends?” Chu Feng asked.

“Isn’t this your friend?” The humanoid clay monster said.

“You’re trying to play with me?” Chu Feng revealed an angry expression.

Before Chu Feng left, this humanoid clay monster had told Chu Feng and Kong Zheng to compete in obtaining the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. The person to bring back the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone first would have their friends released.

Thus, this humanoid clay monster already knew that Chu Feng and Kong Zheng were enemies instead of friends. Yet now, it actually said such words. It was clear that it was deliberately toying with Chu Feng.

“Oh, I know what you’re talking about now. You’re talking about that stutterer and that delicate and pretty woman, right?”

“After you left, I questioned them about their reasons for coming here. After discovering their purpose, I decided to release them.” “As for exactly where they went, I have no clue,” That humanoid clay monster said. “.....” Chu Feng felt startled. If Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were to have truly left, Chu Feng naturally knew what the two of them planned to do. Naturally, they would have gone to

search for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures according to the map that Wang Qiang had.

Merely, Chu Feng did not believe that this humanoid clay monster would release Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong for no reason at all. "Although I do not know why you need this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, but, with how insincere you are, I will not hand this Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone to you," Chu Feng put the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone away.

"You plan to have me snatch it away from you by force?" That humanoid clay monster revealed an ill-intended gaze from its empty eye sockets. "Woosh~~~"

Chu Feng was not to be outdone, and directly took out his Evil God Sword. He fixed his eyes at the humanoid clay monster and said, "Tell me where my friends are. Else, even if you do not attack me, I will definitely not spare you either." "Chu Feng, it did not lie to you! Your friends were indeed released by it! They have gone deep into the Drought Demon's Damned Pond!" Kong Cheng shouted.

"Woosh~~~"

However, Chu Feng completely ignored Kong Cheng, and pointed his Evil God Sword at the humanoid clay monster. With an extremely cold tone, he asked, "Where are my friends?!"

"Chu Feng, don't be impulsive," Her Lady Queen sensed that the situation was amiss, and spoke to console Chu Feng. As for Chu Feng, he knew very well how dangerous the Evil God Sword was. If Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were to have suffered bitter encounters, then even if the price he must pay would be death, Chu Feng would still definitely use the Evil God Sword to fight the monster before him." "Chu Feng, stop." "Brother, we're f-fine."

Right at that moment, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang's voices suddenly sounded from deep within the Drought Demon's Damned Pond.

Chu Feng turned his gaze over. Sure enough, he discovered that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were rapidly proceeding toward his location from the depths of the Drought Demon's Damned Pond.

Soon, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong arrived before Chu Feng. Most importantly... when the two of them passed by the humanoid clay monster, the humanoid clay monster did not try to prevent the two of them from moving onward. Just like that, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong arrived before Chu Feng.

"Wang Qiang, this cultivation of yours, could it be that you've succeeded?" Chu Feng was both surprised and delighted upon seeing Wang Qiang. The reason for that was because Wang Qiang's cultivation was no longer that of a Half Martial Ancestor. Rather, he had become a Martial Ancestor. Although he was only a rank one Martial Ancestor, it still remained that his cultivation was much stronger than when Chu Feng had left.

"Hehe. W-we've su-succeeded. T-that guy d-didn't lie to you, it really released us. Furthermore, I've a-already obtained what I wanted," Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile. At that moment, he was feeling extremely good.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to that clay humanoid monster with a complicated expression. He was confused as to what exactly that humanoid clay monster had in mind. "Woosh~~~"

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was confused, that humanoid clay monster actually tossed Kong Cheng over too.

"That guy seems to have had no intention to kill to begin with. Could it be that it was deliberately toying with you?"

"Damn it, we have wasted all that effort to retrieve the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. Yet, this guy simply never planned to kill them to begin with." "Never have I ever been treated like this in my entire life. Once this Queen's cultivation becomes stronger, I will definitely tear this guy apart," Her Lady Queen was so furious that her little face turned a deep red. The way she saw it, she and

Chu Feng had been played for fools by the humanoid clay monster. For the sake of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, Chu Feng had placed even his life on the line. Only she and Chu Feng knew about all of the hardships he had had to go through. Thus, how could the hot-tempered Queen possibly willingly accept all this?

“That’s not true. If I did not return with the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone successfully, then even if Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had obtained the treasures, they would not necessarily be able to stand before me safely like this,” Chu Feng said to Her Lady Queen.

“That’s true,” Her Lady Queen nodded in agreement.

“I have given you what you want. What about what I want?” That humanoid clay monster said to Chu Feng.

“Here,” Even though Chu Feng had a lot of questions in his heart, he still tossed the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone to the humanoid clay monster.

At the same time, Chu Feng also fixed his gaze tightly on that humanoid clay monster.

As matters stood, Chu Feng possessed a slight understanding of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, and knew how powerful it was.

Thus, he was very curious as to why this humanoid clay monster demanded the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred before Chu Feng.

The Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone that only the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were capable of moving was effortlessly caught by the humanoid clay monster. What happened immediately after that was even more shocking.

A gust of special power suddenly burst from within the body of

that humanoid clay monster. That power actually dissolved the miraculous Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

Everything happened too quickly. In merely a short moment, the indestructible Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone had been completely dissolved into the hand of that humanoid clay monster. Furthermore, like martial power, the dissolved Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone was sucked into the humanoid clay monster's body.

“This guy, exactly what is it?!!”

Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were both endlessly astonished.



# Chapter 2392 – Arriving Ferociously

---

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a burst of boundless energy ripples was emitted out from the humanoid clay monster’s body. That energy ripple was so strong that Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and Kong Cheng were all forced back repeatedly by it.

“Oh no! That Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone actually still contained such a powerful amount of energy. That guy has completely refined it. I fear that it is unable to contain the power, and will soon explode to death.”

Chu Feng had been fixing his Heaven’s Eyes onto the humanoid clay monster the entire time. Earlier, he had been unable to see through it. However, now, after it had refined the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, Chu Feng was able to sense a boundless burst of energy surging about in its body.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to accurately analyze the power that was the humanoid clay monster’s body, Chu Feng was able to sense how frightening that power was.

That power was so strong that it had already surpassed the limit of the humanoid clay monster’s ability to withstand. If this were to continue, that humanoid clay monster would explode and die.

“Husband, Chu Feng, let’s get away from here immediately! That humanoid clay monster will not be able to contain that power! If it explodes and die, we will all be implicated by it and die too!” Zhao Hong shouted. As she spoke, she grabbed Chu Feng and Wang Qiang and began flying backward. She had also noticed what had occurred earlier.

Even though they knew it was dangerous, Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong all wanted to continue observing the situation. This was especially true for Chu Feng. He was very curious as to

the identity of the humanoid clay monster. After all, it should only be the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that were able move the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone.

Chu Feng was skeptical as to whether or not this humanoid clay monster possessed some sort of relationship with the Chu Heavenly Clan. Or could it be that it was so powerful that it could disregard the power of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone and forcibly lift it?

However, most importantly, the power contained in the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone had clearly been completely exhausted when it was used as the foundation of the Hundred Refinements Stage's formation during its construction. As such, how could it still contain such frightening power?

Exactly who was this humanoid clay monster?

How did it manage to know that the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone contained this sort of energy?

What was it using the energies for? All kinds of questions were hovering in Chu Feng's mind. He deeply wanted to know the answers to his questions.

Thus, even though Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had evacuated, the three of them stopped retreating upon reaching what they thought to be a safe distance and continued to observe the humanoid clay monster. "Woosh~~~"

Kong Cheng also flew over and landed beside Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. "W-w-why did y-you follow us? G-get t-the hell a-away," Wang Qiang gave Kong Cheng an ill-intended side eye.

"What, are you all the only ones that's allowed to enjoy a show?" Kong Cheng returned the side eye to Wang Qiang.

"It must possess some sort of method to confront this. Else, if this is to continue, it will not last for long," Chu Feng's gaze had been

fixed onto the humanoid clay monster the entire time.

Perhaps it might be because the humanoid clay monster might be related to the Chu Heavenly Clan, but when it entered the fringe of life and death, when it was most likely going to die from refining the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, Chu Feng actually deeply wanted it to survive.

“Crash~~~”

Right at that moment, that humanoid clay monster suddenly submerged into the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, light visible to the naked eye began to shine from the depths of the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond. It was dazzling, abnormally dazzling.

“That’s a spirit formation! What a powerful spirit formation. It seems that it was already prepared beforehand. This is the measure it prepared to handle this situation,” Zhao Hong said in astonishment.

“Indeed, this spirit formation is very powerful. Likely, it is not the work of an ordinary world spiritist. Merely... the power contained in the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone is too powerful. Even this spirit formation might not necessarily be able to control it,” Chu Feng said.

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Chu Feng finished saying those words, a loud explosion suddenly sounded from the region of water.

The next moment, waves began to surge about, reaching the sky. A burst of extremely powerful energy ripples soon swept in all directions.

“Quickly, get away.”

Zhao Hong did not dare to hesitate. She grabbed Wang Qiang and

Chu Feng and began to rapidly fly toward the distance. As for that Kong Cheng, he unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings and also began to rapidly flee.

The energy ripples were too frightening. Even though Chu Feng and the others thought that they had withdrawn themselves to a safe distance, the energy ripples appearing right now still surpassed their imaginations, and would implicate them. “Wuuahh~~~”

However, even though Chu Feng and the others were rapidly escaping, they were still caught by the spreading energy ripples. Even Kong Cheng, who was escaping even faster than them, was caught up by the energy ripples.

Fortunately, due to the fact that they were already so far away, Chu Feng and the others managed to escape the most powerful portion of the energy ripples. Thus, they only received minor injuries. To them, it was something negligible.

At that moment, rainwater filled the sky, and was gently sprinkling down. Merely, the rainwater was black in color.

That was not rain falling from the sky. Rather, what was sprinkling down from the sky was water from the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond that was shot into the air by the underwater explosion earlier.

Chu Feng and the others completely disregarded their injuries and turned their gazes to the distance.

It was the location where the humanoid clay monster had been submerged earlier. It was also the center of the explosion.

Energy ripples were still present in that area. They were surging nonstop, pushing around the waters.

“S-seems l-like it’s dead. I c-can no l-longer sense any l-living aura,” Wang Qiang said.

“That’s not for certain. That guy possessed an extremely

powerful concealment ability. Else, how could we be captured by it?” Zhao Hong said.

“Someone’s coming,” Suddenly, Chu Feng turned his sharp gaze behind him.

He had already sensed that there were several extremely powerful auras rapidly approaching from behind.

Among them were many Martial Ancestor-level experts. In fact... there was even a True Immortal-level expert.

By observing with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng had managed to see those people. Furthermore, he had also managed to see what they were wearing. “It’s the Kong Heavenly Clan. Quickly, we must leave!!!” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Damn it!” Zhao Hong did not dare to hesitate, and immediately released her strongest world spirit. Then, by relying on the power of her world spirit, she brought Chu Feng and Wang Qiang and began to fly toward the direction of the explosion.

“Little friend, please don’t go.”

However, right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared before Chu Feng and the others like a phantom.

It was an old man. He was not tall, but remained very robust and muscular. He had white snow-like hair, but only a very scarce amount of it remained.

The headdress on his head was very imposing. Merely, his face was covered in wrinkles and age spots. As such, he looked very ugly. That said, even though his skin was all wrinkly, the complexion of his skin was rosy and filled with vitality.

Most importantly, standing there, that figure was like an insurmountable copper wall, an impassable iron bastion. Not to mention Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, even a peak Martial Ancestor would not be able to crash their way past him.

The reason for that was because this old man was a True Immortal-level expert.

An existence of his caliber was someone who stood at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He stood before Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong like a nightmare.

“Junior Kong Cheng pay his respect to Lord Utmost Exalted Elder!!!”

Immediately, Kong Cheng knelt in midair.

“Utmost Exalted Elder? Sure enough, he’s someone f-from the K-Kong Heavenly Clan. T-this is b-bad,” Wang Qiang revealed a difficult expression.

“It’s good that you’re fine,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder turned to Kong Cheng and smiled lightly.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, quickly capture them! Especially that Chu Feng, he nearly killed me earlier!” Right at that moment, the following troops from the Kong Heavenly Clan arrived. From among them walked a man. It was Kong Zheng.

At that moment, Chu Feng and the others realized what had happened. Likely, after Kong Zheng failed to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, he had most definitely let out a signal for help. These Kong Heavenly Clan’s experts were brought over by him.

This was his alternative plan after failing to obtain the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone. With these powerful experts from the Kong Heavenly Clan, he would naturally be able to save Kong Cheng. Actually, Chu Feng had already guessed that Kong Zheng might do such a thing. He merely did not expect that the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan would arrive this quickly.

At that moment, they were completely trapped. Adding on the various conflicts they had with the Kong Heavenly Clan, and Chu Feng should be extremely frightened right now.

However, although Chu Feng was surprised, he did not think himself to be in desperate straits. After all, he was still holding onto his Evil God Sword.

## Chapter 2393 – Doubt In One's Heart

---

“Big brother Kong Cheng, did Chu Feng and the others cause you your injuries?” Kong Zheng walked over to Kong Cheng and asked. “No, it wasn’t them. This was caused by that monster. However, my injuries were not deliberately caused by that monster. Rather, it was because I was careless,” Kong Cheng said.

“Monster?” Hearing those words, that Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder turned his gaze to the direction of the surging pond water.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, with a shift of his body and a flutter of his clothes, he dove directly into the pond water filled with surging energy ripples.

“As expected of a True Immortal,” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng’s gaze changed.

The location where that Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder dove into was the center of the explosion. Although there were still frightening energy ripples wreaking havoc in that region that caused Chu Feng and the others to not dare approach that location, that Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder was able to completely disregard the violently surging energy ripples.

“Chu Feng, weren’t you extremely arrogant before?! Why are you silent now?!”

“And you, you damned bitch! Did you not place our Kong Heavenly Clan in your eyes?! Didn’t you look down on our Heavenly Bloodline?!”

“Why are you not acting vigorous and overbearing now?!”

Kong Zheng arrived before Chu Feng and the others and began to wave his hands around while denouncing them. His appearance was precisely one of a dog threatening another by relying on its



master's power.

“Pah!” Right at that moment, Zhao Hong actually spit at Kong Zheng. Everything happened too quickly. Furthermore, that Kong Zheng had never expected for Zhao Hong to dare to spit at him in such a situation.

Thus, he was caught off guard, and Zhao Hong's spit landed directly on his face. “You! You damned bitch! I'll beat you to death!” Kong Zheng was furious. He swung his arm and shot a ruthless slap towards Zhao Hong's cheek. However, a burst of oppressive might suddenly swept forth. Kong Zheng let out an ‘ouch’ sound and then began to roll in midair. He was sent flying several thousand meters away from Chu Feng and the others. “.....”

At that moment, not to mention Kong Zheng, even Chu Feng and the others had surprised expressions on their faces. The reason for that was because that oppressive might came from behind Chu Feng, from the experts of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Have you all gone insane? Why did you all attack me instead of taking care of them?!” Kong Zheng crawled back up. As he was extremely furious, he actually spoke rudely toward his seniors. “Kong Zheng, do not be rude,” Right at that moment, that True Immortal-level expert had flown out from the pond and returned to where he previously stood.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, it is not that this junior is rude, but rather those seniors are bullying me. That damned bitch bullied me. Yet, instead of helping me take care of that bitch, they actually helped her. I truly...” Kong Zheng half-kneeled in midair and spoke with an expression filled with grievances.

“Kong Zheng, what I mean is that you are not allowed to be rude towards little friend Chu Feng and his friends,” That Utmost Exalted Elder said. “Ah?!!!” Hearing those words, Kong Zheng's body trembled. Then, his eyes opened wide, and his mouth froze.

His appearance was as if he had been struck by lightning. His appearance showed that he was completely dumbfounded. What sort of situation was this? Hadn't he requested that these elders come so that they could take care of Chu Feng and the others?

Yet now, why was it that these seniors did not help him get revenge, and instead started to lecture him?

“Little friends, this old man is called Kong Shunlian. I am an Utmost Exalted Elder of the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“I know about all of the misunderstandings that had occurred between you and our Kong Heavenly Clan. Here, on behalf of our Kong Heavenly Clan, this old man apologizes to three little friends. I hope that three little friends will not take our wrongs to heart,” As that Kong Shunlian spoke, he actually bowed to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, what are you...” Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng were completely stunned.

This person here was Kong Shunlian, an Utmost Exalted Elder of the Kong Heavenly Clan. Among the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan, he was an existence of unsurpassed status. With the seniority he possessed, even the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief would have to be respectful towards him.

Never had they ever seen this grand character lower his head to someone else. It was simply something impossible.

Furthermore, he was lowering his head to three people of the younger generation?

“You two, shut up. The two of you have been strolling about outside all year round. Most likely, you still don't know about the past achievements of little friends Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, right?”

“Although you all are members of the younger generation, there are simply light-years between you two and the three of them,”

Right at that moment, a voice transmission entered Kong Zheng and Kong Cheng's ears. It was from a Kong Heavenly Clan's elder. He was also the person that had attacked Kong Zheng earlier. "Lord Elder, we..." Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng felt at a complete loss. The two of them had heard about the things regarding Chu Feng. In fact, they had heard a lot of things regarding him. However, if they judged merely by the things that Chu Feng had done in the past, there shouldn't be a reason for this elder to say that the two of them could not compare to Chu Feng, nor would it be reasonable for their supreme Utmost Exalted Elder to apologize and bow respectfully to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Although Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng were both hot-headed individuals, the two of them were no fools. At that moment, the two of them realized that it seemed like they didn't know about certain things. Then, the elder who had sent the voice transmission to Kong Zheng and Kong Cheng began to narrate to them what had happened in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

Upon finding out that Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang had managed to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds before all those experts, and that they even managed to save all the grand characters present from the Infant Soul Sect, Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng felt as if their minds had gone completely blank. They simply did not dare to believe it all.

However, after seeing the way their Utmost Exalted Elder treated Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, the two of them had no choice but to believe it.

If Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had not really managed to accomplish the impossible, how could their Utmost Exalted Elder apologize to them?

Upon beginning to trust what that elder said to be true, Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng began to feel lingering fear. If they had no

idea what sort of opponent they were facing before, then they knew very well what sort of opponent they faced now. “Senior, you are being too serious. While it is true that there were some misunderstandings back then, they were only misunderstandings. We will not take them to heart,” Chu Feng was surprised to see that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder did not have any malice toward him.

Furthermore, with his status, that Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder actually still offered an apology to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, three people of the younger generation. As such, if Chu Feng was to refuse to accept that apology, he would truly appear to not know how to appreciate favors. That said, Chu Feng was very concerned about the status of that humanoid clay monster. Thus, he asked, “Senior, I wish to ask, have you managed to find traces of that monster after entering the pond?”

“When I entered the pond earlier to inspect it, I discovered that there was a very powerful formation inside the pond. However, that spirit formation had already been destroyed. Furthermore, I am also unable to distinguish what level of world spiritist created that spirit formation.” “As for that so-called monster, I only managed to detect some aura. However, the aura was very disorderly. I think that monster is most likely dead,” Kong Shunlian said. “It’s dead?” After hearing that, Chu Feng actually felt some sentiment in his heart.

“Actually, I wanted to ask you, little friend Chu Feng, how did that monster die?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“I guess it could be considered to be suicide,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s actually suicide?!” Upon hearing those words, the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan all revealed surprised expressions. Likely, they had already obtained a rough understanding of the situation at hand here from Kong Zheng.

It was true that the monster was malicious earlier. Furthermore,

when someone like Kong Zheng began to narrate the situation to them, he would most definitely add details to his story. Likely, the experts from the Kong Heavenly Clan must be holding a very bad impression of that monster.

Yet now, that monster had actually committed suicide. As such, how could they not be surprised? “To be exact, it was trying to refine the power contained in the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone, but ended up being unable to withstand the power, and died from an explosion of its body.” “However, I felt that trying to refine power that one cannot grasp and dying because of that is no different from suicide,” Chu Feng said. “What little friend Chu Feng says is reasonable,” Kong Shunlian nodded.

“Since the crisis has been resolved and our misunderstandings settled, seniors, we will take our leave now,” Chu Feng clasped his fist to Kong Shunlian and prepared to leave.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please wait,” However, that Kong Shunlian suddenly spoke. He said, “Actually, this old man has come here with a presumptuous request. That is, I wish to invite little friend Chu Feng and your friends to our Kong Heavenly Clan as guests.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was surprised. He truly never thought that the Kong Heavenly Clan would invite them as guests. The location of the treasures on the treasure map he obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong was precisely located in the Kong Heavenly Clan’s territory. And now, the Kong Heavenly Clan actually wanted to invite them to be guests. This was an extremely rare opportunity. Merely, Chu Feng did not trust this Kong Heavenly Clan. In fact, Chu Feng was on guard against this Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder the entire time too. Thus, Chu Feng truly did not know how to answer this invitation.

The reason for that was because he wanted to go, but also didn’t want to go.

He wanted to go because of the treasures.

Yet he didn't want to go because he feared that the Kong Heavenly Clan might be plotting something.

## Chapter 2394 – Feeling Of Danger

---

“Chu Feng, truth be told, although we have come for the sake of saving Kong Cheng, there would not be a need to trouble our Lord Utmost Exalted Elder for something like that.” “If it wasn’t for the fact that we heard you were here, our Lord Utmost Exalted Elder would simply not have come here.”

“He has not come for the sake of taking care of that so-called monster. Rather, he has come to invite you to be a guest of our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“Thus, little friend Chu Feng, we hope that you will be able to disregard our former hatred and give our Kong Heavenly Clan face.” “That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, our Lord Utmost Exalted Elder rarely ever invites others; you must give him face.”

At that moment, the experts from the Kong Heavenly Clan began to urge Chu Feng with kind words.

“Little friend Chu Feng, we were in the wrong back then. I hope that little friend Chu Feng will be magnanimous, and not take those things earlier to heart.”

In fact, the ones from the Kong Heavenly Clan that ended up clashing with Chu Feng at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds were actually also present.

They took the initiative to walk forward and apologize to Chu Feng. Evidently, the Kong Heavenly Clan had already prepared beforehand so as to successfully invite Chu Feng.

“Kong Cheng, Kong Zheng, little friend Chu Feng is our Kong Heavenly Clan’s honored guest. The two of you actually offended him enormously earlier. Why are you still standing there? Quickly, apologize to little friend Chu Feng,” Someone shouted at Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng.

.....

At that moment, Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng looked to one another.

The two of them were no fools. They were able to tell that their Kong Heavenly Clan was truly planning to rope in Chu Feng and the others.

As for the two of them, they absolutely could not become obstacles to their Kong Heavenly Clan's intention to rope in Chu Feng.

Thus, even though it was definitely damaging to their ego for the two of them to apologize to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, they were not the only ones with egos.

When even their seniors and their Utmost Exalted Elder were willing to apologize to Chu Feng, what could their small egos possibly amount to?

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang, we truly did not know about your previous accomplishments and deeds earlier.”

“However, we have now know been made aware of them. We brothers feel admiration for you all from the bottom of our hearts. As people of the younger generation, you three have truly honored us.”

“We will not bother with superfluous words; please accept a bow of respect from us brothers.”

After deciding, Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng bowed respectfully to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

“N-never w-would I have i-imagined that you a-all a-actually possess a bit of s-sincerity. S-since that's the case, b-brother, let's j-just go a-and stroll a-around the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng. “Chu Feng, you should go. How could you catch the tiger cub without entering the tiger's lair?” Her Lady Queen's voice sounded in Chu Feng's ear again.

As matters stood, Chu Feng had actually already made his



considerations. If the Kong Heavenly Clan truly planned to do something to them, they were totally capable of attacking them right now. There was simply no need for them to spend that much effort to invite them to the Kong Heavenly Clan. Thus, Chu Feng felt that while it was true that the Kong Heavenly Clan would be dangerous to go to, the danger was relatively small. To put it differently, even if they were truly plotting something by inviting Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong to be their guests, Chu Feng was capable of contending against them with his Evil God Sword.

To put it briefly, even if they were to encounter danger after reaching the Kong Heavenly Clan, it would only be about as dangerous as facing the experts present here.

Most importantly, Chu Feng was truly anxious to reach a breakthrough in cultivation. If he wanted to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures, he would have to proceed for the Kong Heavenly Clan sooner or later.

If he were to refuse the Kong Heavenly Clan's invitation this time around, he might end up displeasing the Kong Heavenly Clan. In the future, even if he wanted to go to the Kong Heavenly Clan, it would become extremely difficult to do so.

Rather than being discriminating like that, it was better to resolve their conflicts now.

It was as Her Lady Queen said, how could one catch a tiger cub without entering the tiger's lair? A risk that must be taken would have to be taken sooner or later.

Thus, Chu Feng said, "Actually, I have heard about the fame of the Kong Heavenly Clan, and have always wanted to pay a visit. For seniors to be willing to invite me over today, I, Chu Feng, am truly honored." "Little friend Chu Feng is currently a mighty genius-level character in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. For our Kong Heavenly Clan to be able to invite little friend Chu Feng over as a guest is the honor of our Kong Heavenly Clan,"

After seeing that Chu Feng agreed to it, that Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder revealed a joyous expression.

At the same time, the others from the Kong Heavenly Clan, those people that previously all had conflicts with Chu Feng, all heaved a sigh of relief.

After all, if they were unable to successfully invite Chu Feng this time around, they would definitely not be able to escape responsibility, and would become sinners.

"Then, little friends, might the two of you also be willing to come to our Kong Heavenly Clan as guests?" Kong Shunlian turned to Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

After all, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang had also shown off their abilities at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. The Kong Heavenly Clan also did not dare neglect these two geniuses.

In fact, it was not only the Kong Heavenly Clan. At that moment, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was discussing these three geniuses: Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Chu Feng was, at the very least, already slightly famous before all this. Thus, at that moment, the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were even more interested in Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. After all, compared to Chu Feng, the two of them were even more mysterious. "I'll g-go w-whenever my b-brother goes," Wang Qiang said indifferently. However, he had declared his standpoint. At that moment, the crowd all cast their eyes to Zhao Hong. As Wang Qiang had declared his standpoint, the only person remaining was Zhao Hong.

"Everyone, might you all please give the three of us some personal space?" Zhao Hong said to the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

"Of course," How could someone of Kong Shunlian's calibre possibly not understand what Zhao Hong meant with those words?

He immediately ordered the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan to withdraw. Then, he himself also withdrew.

At that moment, only Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang remained in that region of space.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Zhao Hong waved her arm. As her sleeve fluttered, a burst of sweet aroma arrived as a layer of spirit formation covered the three of them.

That was a concealment formation. Being inside it, it would be very difficult for anyone outside to hear their conversation.

Even a True Immortal-level expert who possessed the ability to survey heaven and earth from afar would be unable to hear their conversation.

After all... this concealment formation was a technique from Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance; it was a very powerful spirit formation.

“Chu Feng, husband, the two of you must be extremely careful when you go to the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“It is not that I do not trust that Kong Shunlian. Merely, I truly do not trust the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. “Zhao Hong, you're not planning to go with us?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, my husband has managed to successfully retrieve the treasures and obtained a bountiful harvest.” “Right now, you are proceeding toward the Kong Heavenly Clan for the sake of obtaining your treasures too.”

“Thus, I am also very interested in seeing exactly what the treasures that belong to me would be like,” Zhao Hong said.

“That's a good plan. Wang Qiang... why don't you accompany Zhao Hong instead?” Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang.

“There’s no need. It’s better that my husband accompany you. Compared to my destination, the Phoenix Flame City, I feel that the Kong Heavenly Clan is a much more dangerous place. I feel that it is better for the two of you to go together so that you can look after each other,” Zhao Hong said. “It is precisely because this journey is very dangerous that I do not wish for Wang Qiang to accompany me.”

“Let alone, the Phoenix Flame City is also a dangerous location. I will feel more relieved for the two of you to journey together,” Chu Feng said. “B-brother, you a-are a-acting very boringly here. Do I, W-Wang Qiang, look like s-someone who will abandon my b-brother?” Wang Qiang said in a slightly displeased manner. He had made it clear that he wanted to accompany Chu Feng.

Zhao Hong did not show the slightest bit of displeasure from Wang Qiang’s desire to accompany Chu Feng. Instead, she said, “My husband has already made his decision. Chu Feng, you don’t have to urge him against it anymore; just allow him to accompany you.” “Zhao Hong, since you’re by yourself, you must be extra careful. After all, the Phoenix Flame City is one of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s forbidden areas” Seeing that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang had made their decisions, Chu Feng stopped trying to urge them against it. Merely, he was worried for Zhao Hong from the bottom of his heart.

# Chapter 2395 – Unpredictable World

---

“Rest assured, I am not a careless person,” Zhao Hong said with a smile. “Then, where are we to meet one another again after today’s separation?” Chu Feng asked.

“Let’s meet up at the Darknight Ghost Forest after everything is done,” Zhao Hong said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng said.

“The people from the Kong Heavenly Clan are still waiting for you two. Let’s go our separate ways here,” As Zhao Hong spoke, she planned to remove the concealment formation covering the three of them. She was planning to leave.

“W-wife,” Right at that moment, Wang Qiang suddenly called out. Even though Wang Qiang was always a shameless individual, he actually revealed a rare hesitating appearance. “Husband, go ahead and say what you want directly. For you to hesitate like this is quite uncharming,” Zhao Hong said with a smile.

“Since you are willing to be my w-wife, I will definitely m-marry you grandly in the f-future. Merely, b-before t-that, I hope that you do not c-continue to w-willfully slaughter the innocent,” Wang Qiang said to Zhao Hong. “Did you really consider me a demonic woman?” Zhao Hong asked.

“N-no, t-that’s not w-what I meant. I merely...” Wang Qiang started to become frantic after hearing what Zhao Hong said. He hurriedly tried to explain himself. “Haha... look at you...” However, seeing Wang Qiang’s reaction, Zhao Hong suddenly burst into loud laughter. Then, she said, “I was only joking. Look at how panicky you became. Turns out that you’re this stupid.”

“D-damned woman, I-I-I... I was t-trying to...” Wang Qiang was still trying to explain himself while stuttering.

“Husband, it’s alright. I know very well what you are worried

about.”

“However, I do not blame you. It is true that I was a demonic woman, and had willfully slaughtered innocents and committed countless crimes.” “At that time, I possessed enormous grievances and killing intent. Ineffably, I felt enormous hatred toward all men of the world.” “It was as if killing lustful men was my life’s mission. Even if you want me to explain my state of mind back then, I would not be able to explain it. However, it is true that the me from back then was a demonic woman who viewed human life as grass.”

“However, the me now is no longer the same as the me from back then. So, you can rest assured, I will not do those sorts of things again,” Zhao Hong said.

“Zhao Hong, I do not care about the lives and deaths of others. However, as you are my friend, I am very concerned about your safety. You must definitely remember to not overdo yourself on this journey,” Chu Feng said again.

“Chu Feng, why have you also become mawkish like this? This is not like you at all,” Zhao Hong smiled slightly. However, suddenly, her expression turned extremely serious. A strong sense of apology flickered in her eyes. She said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, I was excessively impulsive earlier. If you really consider me a friend, I hope that you will not take it to heart.” What Zhao Hong was apologizing about was naturally in regard to not listening to Chu Feng about the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond, and that she had instead started to clash with him. Seeing the apologetic Zhao Hong before him, Chu Feng’s heart was moved. How could a true friend possibly hold a grudge over this sort of quarrel? Chu Feng had already forgotten about that matter. The only thing that he was concerned about the entire time was Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang’s safety. Thus, Chu Feng laughed mischievously. He copied Zhao Hong’s movement and tone and said, “Zhao Hong, why have you also become mawkish like this? This is not like you at all.” “Really!

I am earnestly apologizing to you here. Why are you instead bullying me like this?" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Zhao Hong laughed. Furthermore, she punched Chu Feng's chest. That punch did not contain even a tiny bit of resentment. Rather, it was filled with affection. "It seems that the two of you are in no rush to leave. However, I am in a rush to obtain my treasures. Thus... farewell."

After Zhao Hong finished saying those words, she undid the concealment formation and directly left.

She did not plan to bid her farewells to the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because she did not care about etiquette, nor was she concerned about how those people would view her.

This was Zhao Hong, a seemingly cold-hearted yet affectionate and true woman. As long as you entered her heart, she would most definitely be a friend that you could depend on.

"Boy, it seems that you've started to have true feelings now. Did something happen while I was away?" Chu Feng asked Wang Qiang after Zhao Hong left.

In the past, Wang Qiang was fully determined to find an opportunity to escape from Zhao Hong's evil clutches. However, earlier, when they were parting ways with Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang revealed deep concern for Zhao Hong. That was not a hypocritical show of affection. Thus, it was absolutely not a completely uncalled-for change.

"S-Sure enough, I c-can't h-hide anything from you," Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh. Then, he began to narrate to Chu Feng what had happened during the time when he was away.

It turned out that the journey to obtain Wang Qiang's inheritance was not smooth-sailing at all.

Two things happened on the way there.

One of them was that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had encountered ferocious beasts created by mechanisms at the location where the treasures were. At that time, the situation was very serious. Wang Qiang had been trapped, and if Zhao Hong did not escape rapidly, she would end up dying there.

However, regardless of how Wang Qiang urged Zhao Hong to escape, she refused to listen to him, and risked her life to save him. In the end... Zhao Hong managed to successfully rescue Wang Qiang. However, she was seriously injured in the process.

Wang Qiang was not a heartless individual. Seeing Zhao Hong treating him like that, Wang Qiang was emotionally moved.

However, what had truly affected Wang Qiang was another matter.

At the beginning, Zhao Hong had treated Wang Qiang with such passion because Wang Qiang had used his special love potion on Zhao Hong during his moment of crisis.

However, that was still only a potion. Sooner or later, the effect of the love potion would wear off. In fact, the effects of the love potion had already worn off.

Thus, Zhao Hong's actions toward Wang Qiang were actually already no longer due to the effects of the medicine. Rather, Zhao Hong had truly fallen in love with Wang Qiang.

Something like love was without logic to begin with. Perhaps even Zhao Hong herself did not know when she had fallen in love with Wang Qiang.

However, what happened had happened. As such, Zhao Hong began to be hell-bent on treating Wang Qiang well.

However, with how intelligent Zhao Hong was, she naturally knew that Wang Qiang had used the love potion on her so as to save his life. Thus, when the love potion's effectiveness wore off, she had been keeping that to herself the entire time, and never



mentioned it to Wang Qiang. She was afraid that Wang Qiang would avoid her once he discovered the truth.

However, during the moment of life and death crisis back then, Zhao Hong told Wang Qiang everything.

Everyone's hearts were made out of flesh. When someone treated you like that, how could anyone not be moved?

After Wang Qiang found out about that matter, it was unknown whether he was emotionally moved and became impulsive. Or perhaps it might be that Wang Qiang had already fallen in love with Zhao Hong unknowingly.

However, it remained that Wang Qiang no longer felt disgust towards Zhao Hong. Instead... he accepted the relationship of being husband and wife with Zhao Hong. If the relationship that the two of them had before was a one-sided relationship from Zhao Hong, then their current relationship was accepted by both parties. "As I got to know her during this period of time, I felt that Zhao Hong was truly a very good woman. Her origin is also very pitiful. If possible... I do hope that you will be able to treat her properly," Chu Feng said to Wang Qiang.

"Haha... d-do I l-look like a fickle p-person?" Wang Qiang asked with a beaming smile.

"You d-definitely do," Chu Feng said while copying Wang Qiang's manner of speech.

"Hey! You're a-actually m-mocking me!" Wang Qiang said in disdain. "Haha, I'm only joking around. Come, brother, let's go, the seniors from the Kong Heavenly Clan are still waiting for us," Chu Feng said with a loud laugh as he placed his hand on Wang Qiang's shoulder. Then, the two of them began to fly toward the direction of the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. Kong Shunlian had actually already guessed that Zhao Hong might not be planning to be a guest of their Kong Heavenly Clan. Thus, he did not show any trace of surprise or regret when he found out that

Zhao Hong had left. To him... being able to successfully invite Chu Feng was enough.

Just like that, the curtain dropped on Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's trip to the Drought Demon's Damned Pond. Chu Feng followed the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan and began to proceed for the Kong Heavenly Clan.

However, after Chu Feng and the others left, the humanoid clay monster emerged from a certain corner of the Drought Demon's Damned Pond. Most importantly, there were actually two such humanoid clay monsters there.

Furthermore, the humanoid clay monsters revealed an apologetic expression from their empty eye sockets.

They said, "The world is truly unpredictable. Never would have I expected the person to help me obtain the power of the Hundred Refinements Jadeite Stone to be you."

"Chu Feng, I owe you another favor now. Unfortunately, I still cannot return their bodies to you. Thus... I also cannot let them see you."

"However, once I am done with everything, I will definitely repay you. Even if you want my life, I will not refuse."

After the two humanoid clay monsters finished saying those words, they entered the Drought Demon's Damned Pond together. "Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, dazzling light once again shone from within the black pond water. The light was extremely bright, and soared straight into the sky.

It was the light of a spirit formation. If one could determine the strength of the spirit formation through the intensity of the light, then the spirit formation would be extremely powerful. Unfortunately, in an uninhabited place like this, no matter how stunning and magnificent that sight may be, no one was able to

appreciate it.

Else, people would definitely exclaim in astonishment.

Soon, the light of the spirit formation gradually vanished. The sky once again turned pitch-black.

Never would anyone have imagined that there was such a formidable spirit formation underneath the pond water. Furthermore, never would anyone have imagined that there would be two humanoid clay monsters doing something unbeknownst to anyone in the spirit formation.

# Chapter 2396 – Martial Cultivation Spittoon

---

Chu Feng and the others soon arrived at the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Their journey could be said to have been very secretive. Logically, no one should be able to know that the Kong Heavenly Clan had managed to invite Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

However, surprisingly, this news was still leaked. Soon, many people received the news, and began to arrive at the Kong Heavenly Clan in succession.

Their main purpose in their journey to the Kong Heavenly Clan was to become acquainted with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. It would be one thing if those that arrived at the Kong Heavenly Clan were small sects and schools. However, the ones that had arrived were all grand characters, famous throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. This caused Kong Zheng, Kong Cheng and the other members of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation to fully realize how amazing Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were right now.

Young and promising Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Martial cultivation geniuses with heaven-defying battle power. Grandmaster Kai Hong's successors. Unknown, yet mysterious origins.

All of this caused Chu Feng and Wang Qiang to become the favorites of all the various grand characters present. Everyone was trying to seize the opportunity to befriend Chu Feng and Wang Qiang before they truly matured and grew powerful, so that they could pave a road for their own futures. At that moment, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were basking in the limelight. They had the appearance of being able to surpass the strongest genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Young Master Li Ming. In fact, there were already many people saying that it was very possible for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong to become the

strongest geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and rule over the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm with no equal, like Grandmaster Kai Hong did before.

At that moment. Within a luxurious palace in the Kong Heavenly Clan. Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were sitting inside a palace hall. A layer of spirit formation covered the palace hall. It was a concealment formation capable of containing sound.

Although Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were enjoying the honored guest treatment here, the two of them did not consider themselves to be guests. Rather, they considered themselves to be lambs that had entered the tiger's den. As such, the two of them were extremely careful in all aspects. They were even unwilling to let others hear their conversations.

“R-really! E-every day, w-we have to m-meet those old fellows that c-come to pay a visit. S-so annoying! Who w-was it that was such a l-loudmouth as to l-leak this news?” Wang Qiang said in an annoyed manner. “If my guess is correct, it would most likely be your wife,” Chu Feng said.

“Z-Z-Zhao Hong?” Wang Qiang revealed a surprised expression.

“Who else would do this other than her?” Chu Feng asked.

Wang Qiang began to ponder the matter carefully. After thinking about it over and over again, he discovered that there really didn't seem to be anyone other than Zhao Hong who would be able to spread the news of them being in the Kong Heavenly Clan in such a short period of time.

“W-why is s-she spreading t-this information all o-over the p-place instead of h-hurrying to the Phoenix Flame C-City to find her treasure? Isn't s-she creating more trouble for us?” Wang Qiang said.

“Zhao Hong is not trying to cause trouble for us. On the contrary, she is helping us,” Chu Feng said.

“You m-mean to say...?” Wang Qiang was not slow. He immediately thought of something upon hearing what Chu Feng said. “Before we came here, we were all unable to be certain whether or not the Kong Heavenly Clan’s invitation was a plot. Even though the chances of it being a plot are very slim, it remains that it is possible.”

“If the news of us being guests here spreads, the Kong Heavenly Clan will definitely not be able to escape responsibility should any accident befall us.”

“After all, a lot of people now know that we are guests in the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“In this sort of situation, the Kong Heavenly Clan would have to be afraid of the consequences should they try to do anything to us.”

“Thus, Zhao Hong spread this news out of consideration for our safety. Perhaps this might be the actual reason why she didn’t want to accompany us to the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Hehe... never w-would I have e-expected that d-damned woman to be t-this thoughtful. S-she is t-truly worthy of being my w-wife,” Wang Qiang laughed complacently.

“The way I see it, Zhao Hong is much smarter than you,” Chu Feng said. “Tsk,” Wang Qiang did not get angry from Chu Feng speaking ill of him. Instead, he revealed a grand appearance and said, “How c-could a m-mere mortal l-like you possibly u-understand my w-wits?” “Of course, of course,” Chu Feng smiled and went along with Wang Qiang. That said, Chu Feng truly felt that at times he really was unable to see through Wang Qiang.

Suddenly, Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng in a very serious manner, “Brother, w-w-we will have to m-meet those o-old farts ccoming to pay us v-visits everyday. If t-this continues, I f-fear that the s-spirit formation y-you want to use will h-have to be d-delayed far in-into the indefinite f-future.” “H-how about w-we not bother

m-meeting those old farts anymore so t-that we c-can focus on s-setting up your spirit f-formation?”

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had not gone to the Kong Heavenly Clan for leisure. They had gone for Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures.

However, upon arriving, Chu Feng discovered that while the location of the treasures was not a forbidden area, it was guarded. In order to not to arouse the suspicions of others, Chu Feng had to first conceal this matter from everyone else if he wanted to enter that place.

However, the Kong Heavenly Clan possessed numerous experts; they even had more than a single True Immortal-level expert. With Chu Feng's cultivation, how could he possibly conceal himself from the detection of all those experts?

Thus, Chu Feng began to set up a spirit formation together with Wang Qiang.

That spirit formation was created by Grandmaster Kai Hong. As long as they successfully set up that spirit formation, the spirit formation would be able to completely conceal Chu Feng for a short period of time after it was activated. Even True Immortal-level experts would not be able to see Chu Feng or sense his aura.

Merely, as the spirit formation was very powerful, it was naturally also very difficult to set up, and was definitely not something that ordinary people could set up. Even for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, who had obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance, the spirit formation remained extremely difficult to set up.

Over the last few days, other than spending time meeting those people that came to pay them a visit, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had been setting up the spirit formation practically the entire time. However, even with that being the case, the two of them had only managed to complete a tenth of the spirit formation over the

course of the last few days.

From this, it could be seen how difficult that spirit formation was. “We are meeting those people so that they will know that the two of us are really guests here, so that they will spread the news.” “However, thinking about it, we have seen practically all that we should already. As such, we can stop meeting the remaining people,” Chu Feng said. “Then... w-what s-should we do to s-stop seeing them?” Wang Qiang asked.

“That’s simple. We merely need to tell them that we’re going to enter closed-door training,” Chu Feng said. “T-that’s a great s-suggestion.”

“However, b-brother, this is no small matter, and I am unable to a-accompany you. Thus, y-you should use that first,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he took out a spittoon from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a very shabby spittoon. In fact, regardless of how much one tried to air out the spittoon, it would still emit a very nauseating scent.

However, this shabby spittoon was emitting a magnificent light. Looking into the spittoon, one could see that the light was coming from scriptures. The scriptures were extremely complicated, and definitely not ordinary characters. If one were to use one’s naked eye to observe it, one would not be able to tell what the contents of the scriptures were. Only by using one’s heart to comprehend the scriptures would one be able to realize their meaning.

That said, each and every character contained enormous information, information regarding the profoundness of the path of martial cultivation.

To put it simply, the spittoon contained knowledge regarding the path of martial cultivation. If Chu Feng were to comprehend its contents with his heart, it was very possible that he would attain enlightenment and make a breakthrough, increasing his cultivation in the process.



Merely, the contents contained in the spittoon could only be attained by a single person. If Chu Feng was to use this spittoon, Wang Qiang would no longer be able to use it again. Furthermore... the profoundness of martial cultivation was not something that could be shared. To put it simply, although the spittoon was powerful, it could only be used once by a single person.

As for the spittoon, it was actually something that Wang Qiang had obtained from the treasures in the Drought Demon's Damned Pond. Merely, Wang Qiang did not directly comprehend the profoundness of martial cultivation contained within the spittoon immediately. Rather, he had kept the spittoon untouched.

The reason for that was because he wanted to save it for Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2397 – Clearly Bullying Another

---

Seeing the spittoon Wang Qiang held in his hand that contained the profoundness of martial cultivation, Chu Feng smiled and shook his head. He said, “Wang Qiang, I’ve said it many times already. That belongs to you. I will not use it, nor could I use it.”

“It is better that you use it sooner. Perhaps it will help you advance your cultivation by leaps and bounds. At that time, if we are to encounter dangers, you will be able to protect me.”

Wang Qiang had told Chu Feng to use the spittoon countless times in the past few days. However, the spittoon could also be of enormous assistance to Wang Qiang. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly be willing to use it?

“I t-truly d-don’t understand. W-we’re b-brothers, i-is there even a n-need for you to be this courteous with m-me? Don’t y-you need it now? Since y-you need it, j-just use it.”

“W-while this p-place contains treasures, t-the treasures a-are e-extremely dangerous to o-obtain. If y-you are to use this, y-you might be able to reach a breakthrough i-in cultivation. W-wouldn’t t-this help y-you i-increase the certainty in being able to obtain your t-treasures more?” “If y-you r-really feel that y-you c-cannot accept it, w-wouldn’t it be fine f-for you to j-just g-give me something f-from the treasures y-you’ll be o-obtaining from here?”

“At t-that time, e-even if you a-are to r-repay me in double, I w-would have n-no objections either. Hehehe,” Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh. However, how could a small trick like this possibly work on Chu Feng? Chu Feng knew very well that Wang Qiang was saying these things so that he would use the martial cultivation spittoon.

As for the future, even if Chu Feng was to really obtain something akin to the martial cultivation spittoon, Wang Qiang would most likely refuse to accept it.

“Brother, there are things that one can yield to another, and things that one cannot.”

“If this item was useless to you but useful to me, then I would definitely accept it even without you telling me about it.”

“However, the truth is that this item is extremely useful to you. Perhaps you might need it even more than me.” “Thus, I appreciate your kind intentions. However... you should still keep this for yourself,” Chu Feng said resolutely. Chu Feng possessed his own principles. In order to increase his cultivation, he was willing to scramble, battle and put his life on the line.

However... he absolutely would not allow himself to take something from his brother. That... went against Chu Feng’s martial cultivation principle.

“Forget about it, forget about it. There’s t-truly nothing I can do a-about you. T-there are c-countless people that would enter closed-door training for their entire life t-to no avail in order to attain a single breakthrough in cultivation. If I were to g-give this t-to them, they w-would d-definitely accept it even if they must l-lose their entire f-family’s fortune for it, much less o-obtaining it for free.”

“Y-yet, you are being so f-foolish as to refuse it. I a-am not mocking you here, but you a-are the g-greatest f-fool in this world,” Seeing that he was unable to win against Chu Feng, Wang Qiang started to speak sarcastic remarks toward Chu Feng. “No, at the very most, I would be the second greatest fool in this world,” Chu Feng said.

“W-why’s that?” Wang Qiang asked. “That’s because the greatest fool would be you. When has there ever been someone who would be willing to give their opportunity to reach a breakthrough to another person instead of using it themselves? Exactly how many people kicked your head in your childhood for you to do something like that?” Chu Feng said with a laugh. “Fuck! W-with m-merely

those words you've said, e-even if you want it now, I w-will not be g-giving it to you," Wang Qiang gave Chu Feng a side-eye, and then took back the martial cultivation spittoon.

"Is Chu Feng present?!!!" Right at that moment, a shout suddenly sounded from outside the palace.

Although the voice was not extremely resounding, it was capable of shaking one's heart. That voice had spoken with oppressive might.

"That group of a-annoying people is h-here again. It s-seems that w-we must quickly announce that we're in c-closed-door training so that t-they will not c-continue to demand t-to see us everyday," Wang Qiang said impatiently.

"No, the ones this time have not come with good intentions," Chu Feng said. "Oh?" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Wang Qiang's expression also changed. Then, he used a special method to observe the situation outside, and discovered that there was indeed a group of people gathered outside the palace. Merely, this group of people were not outsiders that had come to pay Chu Feng and Wang Qiang respects. Rather, they were people from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

They were all from the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation. Furthermore, they were actual people of the younger generation. With Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's observational abilities, they were able to tell that this group of people were all less than a hundred years old.

As for their cultivation, they were not weak either. The man leading the group was even a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, an actual peak Half Martial Ancestor, an existence a step away from becoming a Martial Ancestor.

Over the days Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had been in the Kong Heavenly Clan, there had been people from the younger generation of the Kong Heavenly Clan that came to pay them visits from time

to time. Furthermore, as Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were fond of observing things, they already knew that this bunch were among the most elite of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that even Kong Zheng was among them. Merely, Kong Zheng had not come to cause trouble. On the contrary, he was kindly trying to persuade the peak Half Martial Ancestor leading the group to not do this. "Brother Ruozeng, I am truly not deceiving you. That Chu Feng and Wang Qiang are not individuals with undeserved reputations, they are really Grandmaster Kai Hong's successors," Kong Zheng said.

"People like them were able to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's treasures? They most definitely used tricks," The peak Half Martial Ancestor leading the group said with contempt.

"That's right. I refuse to believe that they will be as powerful as they're said to be," At the same time, the other people of the younger generation also began to echo his words in agreement. Their tones were very vile. It could be said that they were filled with contempt for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Actually, after Chu Feng and Wang Qiang arrived at the Kong Heavenly Clan, it was not only the outsiders that came to pay respectful visits to them, there were also some members of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation that came to pay their respects to them out of admiration.

Those people were all people that revered Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, and wanted to befriend them.

However, at the same time, there was also a portion of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation that simply did not believe that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang possessed actual abilities. They were filled with grievances and hostility toward Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

It was clear that the group of people that had come this time were all of the latter kind. They came to look for trouble.

“Brother Ruozeng, please hear me out. I thought of Chu Feng the same way as you all before, I simply did not place Chu Feng in my eyes. Thus, I once fought against that Chu Feng. However, it ended miserably for me,” Kong Zheng said.

“Humph, Kong Zheng, don’t you go shaming yourself here. Look at your cultivation, and look at big brother Ruozeng’s cultivation. You actually want to compare yourself to big brother Ruozeng? You are simply overestimating your capabilities,” Someone mocked Kong Zheng.

“Indeed, my cultivation is inferior to brother Ruozeng’s. But what about big brother Kong Cheng? Even big brother Kong Cheng was unable to defeat Chu Feng and his friends when fighting against them. Do you all really think that brother Ruozeng will be a match for them?” Kong Zheng refuted angrily.

“This...”

At that moment, the people that had spoken to mock Kong Zheng grew quiet. Although Kong Cheng’s age had surpassed that of the younger generation, it remained that he was a rank one Martial Ancestor. They would not dare to deny the fact that Kong Cheng was more powerful than Kong Ruozhen.

“Humph, I’ve heard that Chu Feng is merely a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor right now. I refuse to believe that I cannot defeat him,” However, after hearing what Kong Zheng said, that Kong Ruozeng grew even more displeased.

He pointed at the palace that Chu Feng was in and shouted loudly, “Chu Feng! I am a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation! My name is Kong Ruozeng! I have come here to challenge you today! If you are a man, then come out and accept my challenge!”

Although his voice was not resounding, the oppressive might contained in the voice grew stronger and stronger. Furthermore, that oppressive might was completely aimed at the palace hall Chu

Feng and Wang Qiang were in.

“F-fuck! S-sure enough, they’ve come to l-look for trouble. I-I’ll go out and t-teach that bastard,” Wang Qiang revealed an angry look. He planned to go out and confront Kong Ruozeng.

“Wait,” However, Chu Feng grabbed Wang Qiang. He said, “He has clearly asked for me. If you are to go out, I fear that it will go against his desires.”

# Chapter 2398 – Voice of the Guest Overwhelms That of the Host

---

“B-but, he c-clearly knows that you’re a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, whereas he’s a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Isn’t his i-intention t-to bully you obvious?” Wang Qiang said.

“That is why he is someone who only dares to bully the weak and fears the strong. I have encountered a lot of people like him. It’s fine, we can have him act arrogant for a bit longer. I have my ways of taking care of him,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

At that moment, Wang Qiang was slightly startled.

Those members of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation had clearly come to look for trouble. The words they said were very rude and offensive. If it was someone else that was treated in such a manner, even if they managed to not become angry, their expressions would definitely turn ugly.

However, not only was Chu Feng not angry, he also had a smile on his face. He had an appearance as if he was a spectator watching a very good show.

This caused Wang Qiang to become curious too. He was very curious as to how Chu Feng, who clearly possessed a cultivation inferior to that Kong Ruozeng, planned to take care of Kong Ruozeng. Thinking of it, Wang Qiang revealed a smile. Like a spectator, he looked outward.

“Brother Ruozeng, don’t bother shouting anymore. Chu Feng and Wang Qiang are our Kong Heavenly Clan’s honored guests. Even Lord Utmost Exalted Elder treated Chu Feng with respect. If you are to continue to act like this, you will anger Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, and will most likely suffer punishments,” Kong Zheng continued to urge Kong Ruozeng against it.

However, that Kong Ruozeng simply ignored Kong Zheng. He



continued, “Chu Feng, do you fucking dare to accept my challenge or not?! Could it be that you are nothing more than a coward?!”

Seeing that Chu Feng had not been answering him the entire time, Kong Ruozeng grew more and more pleased with himself. He turned to Kong Zheng and said, “Kong Zheng, look at this. That Chu Feng is only someone that only dares to bully the weak and fears the strong. Is this your so-called genius? Grandmaster Kai Hong’s successor? The way I see it, he is nothing more than cowardly trash.”

“Hahahaha...” After he finished saying those words, he burst into loud laughter.

“Sure enough, what big brother Ruozeng said is correct, that Chu Feng is nothing more than a coward that only dares to bully the weak and fears the strong. Although he might appear to be very exceptional when bullying Kong Zheng, he turned into an utter coward before big brother Ruozeng. Hahahaha...”

At that moment, the people of the younger generation that had arrived with Kong Ruozeng all began to feel that Chu Feng would not dare to come out. One by one, they all burst into loud and mocking laughter.

“Who said that I, Chu Feng, does not dare accept the challenge?”

However, right at that moment, the tightly closed palace’s entrance gate suddenly opened.

At that moment, the group of Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation that were previously laughing mockingly all went silent.

Everyone turned their gazes to the entrance gate. In fact, some among them even grew afraid, and moved to hide behind Kong Ruozeng.

From this, it could be seen that not all of those fellows were courageous individuals; many of them were merely people that had

come to take advantage of Kong Ruozen's strength to bully Chu Feng. Even though they were displeased with Chu Feng, they only dared to come humiliate him by borrowing the strength of another.

Before the fixed gazes of the crowd, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang walked out from the palace.

Chu Feng had not hidden his cultivation. Thus, when they sensed Chu Feng's cultivation of rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, they revealed relaxed smiles. Those fellows were truly the epitome of bullying the weak and fearing the strong.

"Chu Feng, I had thought that you wouldn't dare to come out," Kong Ruozen said to Chu Feng.

"Why wouldn't I dare to come out?" Chu Feng asked.

"Very well. Since you've dared to come out, you must've made preparations to fight against me, right?" Kong Ruozen asked.

"Of course. Let's start now," Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the people of the younger generation from the Kong Heavenly Clan all revealed surprised expressions. They did not expect that Chu Feng would actually really dare to accept the challenge.

However, at the same time, they revealed mocking smiles on their faces. At that moment, they felt as if they were able to see the scene of Chu Feng being trampled upon by Kong Ruozen.

Furthermore, upon thinking about how such a scene would soon emerge before them, they became endlessly excited and itching to see that scene.

After all, the person that would be trampled upon was the renowned genius, Grandmaster Kai Hong's successor.

The person that was the happiest at that moment was none other than Kong Ruozen. He was so overjoyed by Chu Feng's

appearance that he was nearly blooming with delight. With a loud voice, he said, “Very well. Frank and straightforward, I like it. Since that’s the case, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

As Kong Ruozeng spoke, he pulled up his sleeves and revealed his rank nine Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might. He was prepared to ruthlessly trample on Chu Feng. “Woosh~~~”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a layer of magnificent spirit power flew out from his sleeve. The spirit power overlaid itself in multiple layers which interweaved with one another. Soon, a spirit formation wall was formed. That wall stood right before Chu Feng.

“Ssss~~~” Seeing this scene, even those people that were filled with hostility toward Chu Feng were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were extremely rare. Even they, children from a noble family, very rarely saw Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. And now, a fellow member of the younger generation was actually an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Although they greatly detested Chu Feng in their hearts, they still felt themselves to be inferior the moment they saw that Chu Feng was actually really an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“What are you doing?” Upon seeing that spirit formation wall, Kong Ruozeng revealed a puzzled expression.

“Since you’ve come to find me to spar, you must’ve come to spar with me with world spirit techniques. As such, I naturally will have to satisfy your request. As per your desire, I have finished setting up my spirit formation. Go ahead and attempt to break it. As long as you are able to break my spirit formation wall using world spirit techniques, it would be considered your win,” Chu Feng said.

“What? Spar with world spirit techniques? W-who said I want...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Kong Ruozeng’s expression changed

enormously.

However, before he could finish his sentence, Chu Feng interrupted, “Oh, that’s right. Don’t say that I’m bullying you. Although I casually set up this spirit formation of mine, I will not put a restriction on how long it will take you to break it with world spirit techniques. Regardless of how much time you spend, it will be your victory as long as you can undo it. Even if you are to spend your entire life to undo my spirit formation, it will still be your win.”

“You!!!” Kong Ruozeng was so furious that his face turned pale.

In fact, it was not only Kong Ruozeng; the others from the Kong Heavenly Clan were all stunned as well. None of them expected Chu Feng to do something like this. Although Kong Ruozeng was also a world spiritist, he did not possess any gifts in the realm of world spirit techniques. Thus, even though he had devoted many years to mastering world spirit techniques, he was still only a Gold-cloak World Spiritist right now.

When compared to other people of his same generation, his attainments of being a Gold-cloak World Spiritist was actually quite decent. However, if compared to Chu Feng, a grand Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, they would simply be light-years apart. If Chu Feng was the heavens, then he would be the earth.

Not to mention this life, with the attainments Kong Ruozeng had in world spirit techniques, even if he were to spend his next life and the life after that, he would likely still be unable to undo Chu Feng’s world spirit formation. ‘The voice o-of the guest o-overwhelms that of the h-host. G-great job!’ Wang Qiang praised Chu Feng in his heart. Wang Qiang had already realized what Chu Feng’s intention was. Although Kong Ruozeng had come to provoke Chu Feng, he did not clearly state that he wanted to compete with Chu Feng through battle power.

And now, Chu Feng had used world spirit techniques first. Thus,

this Kong Ruozeng would definitely be no match. With that, even if the two of them were to compete in terms of battle power, and Chu Feng was to lose to Kong Ruozeng, they would only end up in a tie.

However, Wang Qiang felt that Chu Feng would not give Kong Ruozeng the opportunity to win. Thus, he was looking forward to what Chu Feng would be doing next.

“Who said that I wanted to compete with you in terms of world spirit techniques?!” Sure enough, Kong Ruozeng shouted angrily. He immediately rejected Chu Feng’s intention to compete with world spirit techniques.

“Oh? So you didn’t come to compete with me in terms of world spirit techniques? Then, what did you want to compete in? You couldn’t possibly be planning to say that you want to compete with me in terms of battle power, right?”

“You’re a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, whereas I am a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor. You have cultivated for over eighty years, decades more than me. If you were to demand to compete with me in terms of battle power, wouldn’t that be too shameless of an action? After all, that would clearly be the strong bullying the weak. If word of that matter were to spread, you would be looked down on by others. I think that you, a grand young master of the Kong Heavenly Clan, would not be that shameless, right?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“.....”

At that moment, not to mention the others, even Kong Ruozeng was left speechless.

He was only thinking about the fact that he possessed stronger strength than Chu Feng, and could use his strength to teach Chu Feng a lesson.

Never had he thought that Chu Feng would say that he was

shameless by bullying the weak. Thus, if he were to continue to force Chu Feng to compete in terms of battle power, he would have fallen into Chu Feng's trap.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation looked at one another in dismay. They had no idea what to do.

## Chapter 2399 – Furious Elder

---

Panic. Those of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation that came to cause trouble for Chu Feng all started to panic.

Never did they expect that not only did Chu Feng possess true abilities and was a genius in terms of both martial cultivation and world spirit techniques, he was also a calm, shrewd and unscrupulous individual.

Even though they were clearly in the Kong Heavenly Clan's territory, Chu Feng was actually able to restrain them. This signified two things.

First, Chu Feng was most definitely not an ordinary person of the younger generation. He was someone who had experienced great things. Else, he would not be so calm.

Secondly, Chu Feng possessed outstanding wisdom. Regardless of whether it was his talent, his intelligence or his courage, they all surpassed their own, making them feel inferior by comparison.

At that moment, those members of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation were truly at a loss as for what to do. Feeling helpless, everyone turned their gazes to Kong Ruozen.

At that moment, Kong Ruozen felt himself to be under enormous pressure.

"Big brother Ruozen, how about we just forget about this? Else, when Lord Elders and the others come, we will likely end up being punished," In panic, some people began to urge Kong Ruozen to retreat.

"Punish? What sort of place is this? This is the Kong Heavenly Clan! Who dares punish me here?!" Kong Ruozen said confidently.

In the Kong Heavenly Clan, Kong Ruozen could be considered a peak genius. He was someone who had obtained the fondness of his

clansmen since he was a child. Not to mention his parents, even the several Utmost Exalted Elders and their Lord Clan Chief would pamper him.

He was rarely ever scolded in his entire life. Even if he were to make mistakes, he would never be punished, and would instead be shielded. To put it simply, he had been pampered by the Kong Heavenly Clan his entire life.

“That’s true, big brother Ruozeng is different from us. Even the Utmost Exalted Elders would not punish him. As for the other elders, they simply do not dare to punish him.”

At that moment, those of the younger generation present came to a sudden realization. If it wasn’t for Kong Ruozeng’s special status, they would not have gone to provoke Chu Feng either.

After all, Chu Feng’s residence was guarded by people from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

It was not that the guards did not try to stop them, Rather... after Kong Ruozeng became angry, even those elders guarding Chu Feng’s residence cowered before him. “Hahahaha...” Thinking of that, Kong Ruozeng became confident. The awkward expression on his face disappeared, and he raised his head towards the sky and started laughing heartily. Chu Feng’s gaze changed. He asked dully, “What are you laughing about?”

“What am I laughing about? I’m laughing at how foolish you are. Did you not know what sort of place this is?” Kong Ruozeng said to Chu Feng.

“This place is naturally the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Since you know that this place is the Kong Heavenly Clan, do you not feel the words you said earlier to be ridiculous?” Kong Ruozeng said.

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked.

“You don’t understand? Very well, I can explain to you.”



“I have come here today precisely so that I can bully you, a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, with my cultivation of rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. What can you possibly do about it?”

Kong Ruozeng pointed at Chu Feng and spoke one word at a time. Compared to before, he was filled with confidence right now. He did not feel what he declared to be something shameful. Rather, he felt it to be only natural.

“In that case, you’ve admitted to the fact that you’re a shameless individual?” Chu Feng asked.

“So what if I am shameless? There is no one here that will mock my shamelessness, nor would there be anyone that will punish me. The reason for that is because this place is the Kong Heavenly Clan, my, Kong Ruozeng’s, territory,” Kong Ruozeng said while beating his chest. “You clearly know that what you plan to do is wrong, yet you still plan to do it. If the Kong Heavenly Clan is to let you do as you wish without any punishments, then I, Chu Feng, have nothing to say,” Chu Feng shrugged his shoulders with a smile. However, a simple action like that completely evoked Kong Ruozeng’s fury. The way he saw it, Chu Feng simply did not place him in his eyes at all. Else, how could he show such contempt toward him?

“Since you’ve already said something like that, I must truly teach you a lesson today.”

After Kong Ruozeng said those words, he suddenly shot forth a punch. Like an invisible ferocious beast, his rank nine Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might swept forth to oppress Chu Feng.

However, facing that attack, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth actually raised into a slight smile. He did not reveal his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. In fact, he stood where he was without moving; he did not even try to avoid the punch.

It was not that he was looking down on Kong Ruozeng and thinking that Kong Ruozeng’s punch would not injure him.

Rather, Chu Feng was confident that Kong Ruozheng's punch would not be able to reach him.

“Stop!!!”

Sure enough, it was as Chu Feng had anticipated, before the might of Kong Ruozeng's punch could reach Chu Feng, a furious shout sounded in the sky.

Following that, a burst of oppressive might arrived. Not only did the might of Kong Ruozeng's punch instantly disappear, Kong Ruozeng and the others were also forced back repeatedly.

Turning their gazes toward the voice, Kong Ruozeng and the others were immediately shocked.

A large group of people were walking in from outside. They had already arrived at the vast plaza before the palace.

The group of people was mostly composed of the Kong Heavenly Clan's elders. As for the person leading the group, he was one of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders, Kong Shunlian. “We pay our respects to Lord Utmost Exalted Elder and seniors.”

At that moment, Kong Ruozeng and the others hurriedly kneeled to pay their respects.

After all, to them, these people that had appeared here right now were all grand characters and their seniors.

“What audacity! Little friend Chu Feng is an honored guest invited over by me. Yet, you all actually dared to behave this rudely toward little friend Chu Feng! Why are you all still standing there?! Apologize to little friend Chu Feng immediately!” Kong Shunlian pointed at Kong Ruozeng and shouted furiously. Kong Ruozeng was startled to see Kong Shunlian reacting in such a manner. Never had he ever seen this Utmost Exalted Elder becoming angry, and especially this angry, with him in his entire life.

Seeing Kong Shunlian becoming furious, Kong Ruozeng was not

only extremely shocked, he also started to panic. He didn't dare to hesitate, and hurriedly explained, "Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, I have not come to create troubles for Chu Feng. I merely wanted to spar with Chu Feng." "Unfilial son, you still dare to talk back?!" Right at that moment, a white-haired middle-aged man suddenly walked out from behind Kong Shunlian. He walked toward Kong Ruozen, raised his hand, and gave Kong Ruozen a slap to the face. "Paa~~~"

Although that slap was not given with a lot of force, it remained that the person giving the slap was a peak Martial Ancestor. Thus, the slap caused Kong Ruozen to roll about repeatedly on the ground and disfigured half of his face. After being slapped, Kong Ruozen was extremely angry. After all, very few people in the Kong Heavenly Clan dared to beat him. Thus, he was unable to contain his anger, crawled up and wanted to curse furiously at the person that had slapped him. However, when Kong Ruozen saw the person who had slapped him, he was stunned. He swallowed the curses he had planned to dish out, unable to say them. The reason for that was because the person that had slapped him earlier was his own father.

"Father, you... why did you slap me?" Kong Ruozen held his disfigured face with his hand as he looked to his father. Grievance and confusion filled his eyes. This was the first time in his entire life that his father had slapped him.

"Why did I slap you? You were rude to little friend Chu Feng, are you to say that you shouldn't be slapped for that? Apologize to little friend Chu Feng immediately! If you still don't apologize, I will cripple your legs!" Kong Ruozen's father said furiously. "Cripple my... all for that Chu Feng?" Hearing those words, Kong Ruozen felt endless grievances. He never expected that his father, who had never hit him before, would actually hit him for the first time because of an outsider. Kong Ruozen felt unable to accept this.

Kong Ruozeng felt that he had been wronged. Thus, he shouted, “Very well, go ahead and beat me! If you can, go ahead and beat me to death! Even if you are to beat me to death, I will still absolutely not apologize to that trash!”

“You....” Seeing his son acting like this, even though Kong Ruozeng’s father was furious, he was at a loss as to what to do. After all, Kong Ruozeng was his own son. As such, how could he possibly steel himself to beat him to death?

“You dare bully my honored guest, yet still refuse to repent. Men! Drag this Kong Ruozeng away! He shall receive medicinal punishment!” Right at that moment, the Utmost Exalted Elder Kong Shunlian, who had been standing silently on the side for a very long time, suddenly gave an order.

“Medicinal punishment?!!!” Hearing those words, not to mention Kong Ruozeng, all the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan present had an enormous change in expression.

Medicinal punishment was a sort of internal punishment of the Kong Heavenly Clan. That sort of punishment would not kill the person being punished. In fact, it would not even affect that person’s life after they went through the punishment. There would also not be any scars from the punishment.

Merely, when they underwent the medicinal punishment, they would have to endure unbearable pain. That sort of pain was something that would make one wish they were dead.

That was one of the most cruel and fearful punishments of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Putt~~~” Suddenly, a muffled echo was heard.

The previously unyielding Kong Ruozeng who had declared he was unafraid of death actually fell onto his butt. His face was covered with sweat, and his complexion was pale white. Even his body was shivering nonstop...

## Chapter 2400 – Severe Punishment

---

At that moment, Kong Ruozeng's father also started to panic. He truly never expected that Kong Shunlian would order a medicinal punishment for his son. After all, that was one of the most cruel punishments in their Kong Heavenly Clan.

As for Kong Ruozeng, he was already completely stupefied. He did not even dare to utter another refuting word, and merely sat stunned on the ground, shivering.

“Impudent! Immediately acknowledge your mistake!” Suddenly, Kong Ruozeng's father shouted loudly at him.

He had done so for Kong Ruozeng's sake. He did not want Kong Ruozeng to receive punishment. Thus, he wanted to force Kong Ruozeng to admit his mistake so that Kong Shunlian would not punish him.

After all, Utmost Exalted Elder Kong Shunlian was also very pampering of Kong Ruozeng. As such, how could he really put Kong Ruozeng through such a cruel punishment for a mere Chu Feng?

As long as Kong Ruozeng was to give up, Kong Shunlian would be able to get off the stage, and a crisis would be averted.

“Chu Feng, my apologies. I-I truly did not intend to provoke you. I really was only trying to spar with you. Perhaps the way I expressed myself was incorrect. However, I truly did not have the intention to provoke you. I hope that you will not take offense to my actions. Please, help me explain this to Lord Utmost Exalted Elder.”

Kong Ruozeng hurriedly got up and apologized while bowing to Chu Feng. His stubbornness earlier had completely disappeared now. Furthermore, Kong Ruozeng was very smart. Not only was he apologizing, he was also trying to have Chu Feng plead for leniency

for him. He knew that while Kong Shunlian might not give face to the words spoken by anyone else right now, Chu Feng's words would hold significant weight.

At that moment, Kong Ruozeng had realized the status Chu Feng possessed in Kong Shunlian's heart. Merely, he deeply regretted that he had realized it too late.

However, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged even after hearing what Kong Ruozeng said. Furthermore, he did not say anything.

Who was Chu Feng? He had already realized that Kong Ruozeng was not apologizing to him with sincerity. Someone like Kong Ruozeng was different from Kong Cheng and Kong Zheng. Once a grievance was formed, he would remember it for the rest of his life. As such, he would become Chu Feng's enemy for the rest of his life.

Even if Chu Feng were to plead for leniency on behalf of Kong Ruozeng, Kong Ruozeng would definitely still view him as an enemy and not let him get away with things in the future. Thus, since they were going to become enemies either way, why must Chu Feng plead on his behalf?

"It is too late to admit your mistake now. Today, you must undergo the medicinal punishment," Kong Shunlian said.

Once Kong Shunlian said those words, Kong Ruozeng was so scared that he fell back onto his butt again. He revealed a dejected expression, and felt as if he had fallen into the abyss with no way out today.

"Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, please take into consideration that Ruozeng is still very young. I will definitely punish him for his wrongdoings. Merely... this medicinal punishment, isn't it a bit too serious?"

Seeing that Kong Shunlian was still not planning to spare his son,

Kong Ruozeng's father ended up having no choice but to personally plead for Kong Ruozeng.

“To only know how to acknowledge one's mistake after a calamity has befallen them, who was it that spoiled you to a state of problematic arrogance and willfulness?” Kong Shunlian pointed at Kong Ruozeng. Then, he turned to Kong Ruozeng's father and said, “Kong Yao, as Kong Ruozeng's father, should you not provide me with an explanation for this?”

“It is all my fault. I have failed in educating my son. Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, if you want to punish someone, please punish me instead,” Kong Ruozeng's father suddenly kneeled on the ground. He actually wanted to take on the punishment on behalf of his son. “Impudent! Are you telling me that even after living for all these years, you still do not know about the principle that one cannot stand in for the crimes committed by another?” Kong Shunlian said angrily.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, this junior understands that principle. Merely, Ruozeng is still young, I fear that he will not be able to endure a punishment as severe as the medicinal punishment. Thus, I beg of you, please be lenient, and allow me to take the punishment on Ruozeng's behalf.” “What foolery. It's no wonder that Kong Ruozeng is this senseless. It's all a consequence caused by the lack of education from you, his father.” “Good, good, good. Since you insist on receiving punishment today, then I shall have both of you, father and son, receive the punishment together,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Woosh~~~” After Kong Shunlian said those words, he waved his sleeve, and a layer of oppressive might swept forth. Like a rope, it tied up Kong Ruozeng and his father, causing the two of them to become unable to move or utilize any of their cultivation.

“Men! Drag the two of them down! Immediately execute the medicinal punishment on them! If anyone dares to disobey, I will have them suffer the same medicinal punishment as this father

and son!” Kong Shunlian said.

Once Kong Shunlian said those words, how could anyone possibly dare disobey him? Soon, two law enforcement elders walked out and proceeded to drag Kong Ruozeng and his father away.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, we were wrong. We really know our wrongs now. Please, we beg of you, please forgive us. We will never dare to do this again, never dare to do this again.”

The next moment, the remaining members of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation hurriedly kneeled on the ground and began to kowtow and beg for forgiveness nonstop. In fact, many of them were so scared that they even started tearing up.

Among all the people of the younger generation that came here today, the person that was the most pampered and beloved by the Kong Heavenly Clan was none other than Kong Ruozeng. When even Kong Ruozeng was being forced to suffer such a severe punishment, this caused the rest of the younger generation present to be extremely scared.

“Why are you all apologizing to me? You should be apologizing to little friend Chu Feng,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Chu Feng, we were wrong. Please give us another chance, we will definitely not dare to do something like that again,” The others present began to beg for forgiveness from Chu Feng with weeping tears on their faces. “I have a question that I wish to ask you all. Your apology to me, is it because you all are sincerely repenting for your actions, or is it because you’re all scared by the punishments?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng, we were mistaken. We are sincerely repenting for our actions, we truly will not dare to do something like that again. Please help, plead for leniency for us, please don’t have Lord Utmost Exalted Elder make us undergo medicinal punishment too,” Those members of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger



generation were all deeply frightened. They were on the verge of kneeling and kowtowing to Chu Feng. “Let it pass. Today... you all didn’t really do much of anything either,” Chu Feng shook his head. These people were truly too timid and cowardly. They would not become his enemies in the future, nor did they possess the qualifications to become his enemies. Thus, Chu Feng said to Kong Shunlian, “Senior, how about you just spare them?” “Since little friend Chu Feng is pleading for leniency, I will spare you all this once. If this is to happen again, I will definitely not let you all off easily,” Kong Shunlian said. Hearing those words, the younger generation present heaved a sigh of relief. They not only turned to express their thankfulness to Kong Shunlian, they also started expressing their thankfulness to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

“Where are the elders in charge of guarding this place?! Scram out here!” Kong Shunlian suddenly shouted.

“We pay our respects to Lord Utmost Exalted Elder,” Soon, a group of elders rushed out. These elders were all Martial Ancestors. However, they were on average only at the early ranks of Martial Ancestor. Among the Kong Heavenly Clan, they could not be considered to be very powerful.

From this, it could be determined that these people would most likely only possess medium tier status in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Thus, when an existence like Kong Shunlian appeared before them, these elders reacted in practically the same manner as those people of the younger generation – they were all endlessly afraid and trembling with fear.

“I ask of you all, how did Kong Ruozeng and the others managed to get in here?” Kong Shunlian asked. “.....” Those elders started to stammer. They didn’t know how to answer him.

“To fail in blocking a group of children, you all are unworthy of being elders. All of you, go to the punishment department and receive the medicinal punishment of your own accord. Else... I will

have you all regret your actions for the rest of your lives,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Yes,” Those elders did not dare utter the slightest bit of complaint. In fact, none of them dared to even look Kong Shunlian in the eyes. One by one, they hurriedly stood up and began to fly toward the punishment department. They would not go against Kong Shunlian’s orders because they did not dare to do so. “Ssss~~~”

At this moment, Kong Zheng, who was standing to the side, was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

He recalled how he had been somewhat unwilling to apologize to Chu Feng at the Drought Demon’s Damned Pond when this Utmost Exalted Elder ordered him to do so.

And now, as Kong Zheng saw the punishment that Kong Ruozeng and the others received, he felt truly glad that he had been so very fortunate.

It was only now that he became certain of what sort of status Chu Feng held in this Utmost Exalted Elder’s heart.

This Utmost Exalted Elder was truly planning to rope Chu Feng in. Else, it would be impossible for him to be this ruthless and strict to his own clansmen.

At this moment, Kong Zheng looked to his surroundings. He saw that regardless of whether it was the elders or the people of the younger generation, they all had the same sort of expression on their faces. After today... likely no one in the entire Kong Heavenly Clan would dare to make trouble for Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2401 – Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation

---

“Little friend Chu Feng, I am truly sorry for how unruly our Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation has behaved. This old man has truly failed in disciplining them...” Kong Shunlian walked over to Chu Feng and began to personally apologize to Chu Feng.

However, before Kong Shunlian could finish what he wanted to say, Chu Feng interrupted him with a smile on his face. “Senior, you are being too courteous. This is merely a small matter. I, Chu Feng, never took it to heart. So, senior, please do not overthink this.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, your heart is truly broad. This old man is filled with admiration,” Kong Shunlian clasped his fist toward Chu Feng. He did not say those words casually. Rather, with his observation, he was able to tell that Chu Feng had truly not taken this matter to heart.

To be able to remain magnanimous like this after being insulted when invited over as an honored guest was something very difficult for even people of the older generation to accomplish, let alone a person of the younger generation like Chu Feng.

“Senior, this Chu Feng managed to obtain some comprehension today. I wish to enter closed-door training in the Kong Heavenly Clan for a period of time. Might that be possible?” Chu Feng asked. “For little friend Chu Feng to plan to enter closed-door training here would mean that little friend Chu Feng is confident in our Kong Heavenly Clan. As such, there’s definitely no issue at all.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, please rest assured, and enter closed-door training here at ease. I guarantee... that regardless of whether it might be people from our Kong Heavenly Clan or others, none of them will bother you again,” Kong Shunlian said. “Thank you senior,” Chu Feng clasped his fist.

Then, Chu Feng and Kong Shunlian continued to chat for a moment. When Kong Shunlian and the others left, the inside and outside of the palace that served as Chu Feng's residence became very quiet. "Haha, today has t-truly been to e-everyone's satisfaction. T-that guy by the name of Kong Ruozeng must've n-never thought that he would s-suffer this e-enormously in his o-own territory. Hahaha, satisfying, truly immensely s-satisfying." "I t-truly want to s-see w-what sort of a-appearance he will h-have when u-undergoing t-that so-called medicinal punishment," At that moment, Wang Qiang was laughing in an extremely delighted manner. However, Wang Qiang soon said, "Merely, I s-saw that Kong R-Ruozeng look a-at you with an e-expression filled with g-grievances when he was d-dragged away. I'm a-afraid that he will not l-leave the matter at that."

"He is but a brainless impertinent fellow that has been pampered for so long that he no longer knows the immensity of heaven and earth. There is simply no need to worry about someone like him."

"Rather, we should be on guard against his father. Merely, I think they will not dare to do anything again in the Kong Heavenly Clan. Thus, at the very least, we'll be temporarily safe here," Chu Feng said.

"Then, are w-we to..." Wang Qiang said. "Yes, it is like you thought. We are going to finish the grand formation," Chu Feng said.

After Chu Feng said those words, he revealed a smile of anticipation on his face. He was not only looking forward to the treasures, he was also looking forward to the spirit formation itself. After all, that grand spirit formation was the most difficult and also the most amazing spirit formation Chu Feng had ever challenged so far.

In fact, that spirit formation was one that surpassed one's cultivation. After all... that spirit formation was capable of avoiding the detection of even True Immortals.

Soon, the Kong Heavenly Clan released the news that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had entered closed-door training. After Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were announced to have entered closed-door training, even though there were still people coming to pay respects to them, they were all refused by the Kong Heavenly Clan.

However, those people that came to pay respect to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang did not wish to journey here in vain. Thus, those with high statuses decided to directly stay in the Kong Heavenly Clan as guests.

Those with inferior levels of status who weren't qualified to stay in the Kong Heavenly Clan as guests decided to wait outside the Kong Heavenly Clan for news of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang exiting their closed-door training.

All of a sudden, a large group of people were gathered outside the Kong Heavenly Clan. It was a scene that was rarely seen.

Upon thinking of how those people had not gathered here for the Kong Heavenly Clan, but rather for two people from the younger generation, one could inevitably feel how extraordinary Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were.

Before this, there had only been a single member of the younger generation capable of causing all these seniors to come and pay him respect — the exceptional genius Young Master Li Ming.

After Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were able to focus on setting up the spirit formation, their speed increased enormously.

Merely, that spirit formation was extremely powerful, so powerful that it could even avoid the detection of True Immortals. As such, it was naturally very difficult to set up. Thus, even though Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were working together, it still took them several days to finish setting up the spirit formation. Fortunately, they still managed to succeed.

At that moment, two golden-bright and dazzling bodies of light

were floating on Chu Feng's palm.

They resembled two stars, and although their size was very small, they contained an unbounded amount of power.

This was the result of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's joint efforts of the past several days, the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. As its name implied, once one donned this spirit formation, not even True Immortals would be able to detect them even if they were to walk right past them.

"T-these t-two t-tiny things a-actually took us s-so long to make," Looking at the two bodies of light on Chu Feng's palm, Wang Qiang gasped with admiration.

"This is a spirit formation that can evade even True Immortals, naturally it will require a bit more time to complete," Chu Feng said.

"S-say, w-wouldn't we be a-able to sell these two items for a g-great amount of wealth if we were to sell them?" Wang Qiang asked with a beaming smile.

"Of course. Merely, we have no proof of our words. I fear that no one will trust us. After all, the effect of this spirit formation is quite unbelievable," Chu Feng said.

"It can only be said that they are stupid and ignorant then. If they a-are unable to believe this Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation to be r-real, th-then wouldn't it mean that they would be s-scared to death once we b-become Snake Marked Immortal-cloak World Spiritists and set up that Immortal Burying Formation?" Wang Qiang said with an expression of anticipation.

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were Grandmaster Kai Hong's successors. The two of them had obtained many powerful spirit formations from Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance.

Among the spirit formations they obtained was one by the name of Immortal Burying Formation. As its name implied, once the

Immortal Burying Formation was set up, even True Immortals would end up losing their lives should they enter it. The Immortal Burying Formation was extremely powerful.

“The Immortal Burying Formation is extremely hard. If we attempt to set it up as only Snake Marked Immortal-cloaked World Spiritists, I fear that it will be extremely difficult to set up. The amount of time it will take us to set it up would be immeasurable. Furthermore, even if we were able to successfully set it up, its might would definitely be limited,” Chu Feng said.

“If t-the three of us a-are to join hands, I f-feel that it will be f-feasible.”

“F-furthermore, if we r-really d-do set up that Immortal B-Burying Formation, no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would dare to disrespect us, no?”

“A-at that time, w-who would provoke us?” Wang Qiang said with a face filled with resentment. It could be seen that Wang Qiang deeply remembered the times he was bullied by others.

“Although there are very few Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there are still Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“However, in terms of setting up a grand formation that can kill True Immortals, I reckon there is no one other than the Golden Crane True Immortal that is capable of doing that.” “If we are truly able to set up the Immortal Burying Formation, we will definitely shock all the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Feng said.

“Is t-that Golden C-Crane True Immortal really that powerful that he could set up something akin t-to the Immortal Burying Formation?” Wang Qiang asked.

“I feel that he is unfathomable. His strength is not something that the four tier one powers could compare to. However, strictly

speaking, he is not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Feng said.

Even though Chu Feng had only met the Golden Crane True Immortal once, he believed the Golden Crane True Immortal to be extremely powerful. In fact, Chu Feng felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal might not only possess the cultivation of a True Immortal. After all, the title ‘Golden Crane True Immortal’ was only given to him by others, and not himself.

Of course, Chu Feng felt that the plain-clothed old monk should also be able to set up a spirit formation like the Immortal Burying Formation, or even one more powerful than the Immortal Burying Formation.

However, regardless of whether it might be the Golden Crane True Immortal or that plain-clothed old monk, the two of them would likely not setup those sorts of spirit formations even if they were capable of doing so. After all, the two of them possessed such overwhelmingly powerful cultivations; there was simply no need for them to set up a spirit formation, they would be able to kill True Immortals merely by relying on their martial cultivations.

Merely, as Chu Feng looked to the spiraling spirit formation in his hand, he still felt very excited. After all, he was not a powerful True Immortal-level expert. Instead, he was a weak individual with the mere cultivation of a Half Martial Ancestor.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen’s voice was heard. “What’s wrong? Why have you been staring at that spirit formation the entire time?”

“Eggy, before this, I truly never expected that I would be able to set up such a powerful spirit formation. I am still only a Half Martial Ancestor. Yet, I am now able to avoid the detection of True Immortals. It would appear that the power of world spiritists is truly amazing,” Chu Feng said to Eggy. “World spiritists are naturally amazing. Martial cultivation is something that everyone



can accomplish. However, not just anyone can become a world spiritist. As such, world spiritists should naturally be more powerful than martial cultivators.

“The reason why you did not notice the greatness of world spiritists before was because you were too weak as a world spiritist, and the spirit formations that you knew were too weak as well.”  
“However, I can tell you with certainty. From what I’ve heard, world spiritists are extremely powerful. As long a world spiritist is given a sufficient amount of time, they will not even be afraid of expert martial cultivators much more powerful than them.”

“However, you have yet to encounter a world spiritist that powerful. They are existences far beyond you. Thus, regardless of how much I describe them to you, you will not necessarily be able to understand. However, you merely need to think of your mother. By thinking of your mother, you should be able to realize what sort of strength the powerful world spiritists possess,” Her Lady Queen said.

“My mother?” Chu Feng’s heart was moved. According to Xue Ji, his mother had been capable of tearing the Asura Spirit World apart and snatching world spirits from there by force.

What sort of place was the Asura Spirit World? It was the strongest of the seven spirit worlds. The world spirits in that place were extremely powerful.

It was precisely because of that that it showed how powerful Chu Feng’s mother was.

# Chapter 2402 – Strange Change

---

“Creak~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists.

Even though Chu Feng had never once doubted the fact that his mother was very strong, Chu Feng would never forget the sharp gaze his father had when he had asked him about his mother.

His father’s sharp gaze revealed a piece of news for him. That was that Chu Feng’s mother was most likely trapped in a predicament right now.

However, his mother was already that powerful. In that case, how powerful must the existence capable of trapping his mother in a predicament be?

If Chu Feng did not possess sufficient strength, what could he possibly do even if he was able to find his mother?

Weak and small, the current Chu Feng was simply too weak and small. Thinking of that, Chu Feng wished to become stronger even more urgently.

“I’ll go now,” Chu Feng said.

“W-why are you in such a r-rush?” Wang Qiang was very shocked. Then, he urged, “We’ve only just finished setting up this spirit f-formation. T-thus, your body should still be v-very weak. I f-fear that it is not w-wise to go r-right away.”

“This matter should not be delayed. I fear that if we are to delay, things will change. Furthermore, my current state could still be said to be fine. I think I should be able to handle it,” Chu Feng said.

“V-very well, l-let’s set off right a-away then,” As Wang Qiang said those words, he planned to set out.

“Brother, I fear that I will have to go alone,” Chu Feng extended his hand and stopped Wang Qiang.

“Why’s t-that?” Wang Qiang revealed a confused expression.

“This spirit formation is only sufficient for me alone,” Chu Feng said as he extended the spirit formation on his palm.

“Aren’t there two? Wouldn’t this be just r-right for the two of us t-together?” Wang Qiang said.

“Brother, can’t you tell? Even though we’ve managed to set up this spirit formation, it is only able to last for a very short period of time,” Chu Feng said.

“Eh... r-regarding that, I r-really didn’t pay attention,” As Wang Qiang spoke, he used his special means to inspect the spirit formation. Upon inspecting it, he discovered that it was as Chu Feng had said. Even though their spirit formation had taken the form of two bodies of light, enough for two people to use them simultaneously, they were only able to last for a very short period of time.

In other words, only a single person could proceed to obtain the treasures today. That person would have to use one of the two bodies of light on the way there, and use the other on the way back. Else, it wouldn’t work.

“Brother, I am t-truly not a-at ease for you to go by yourself. How a-about we set up a-another spirit formation?” Wang Qiang said.

“I fear that there’s not enough time. Brother, you should just stay. By staying here, if something is to happen, you can help me delay them,” Chu Feng said.

“W-what could possibly h-happen?” Wang Qiang asked.

“It’s better to be prepared just in case. Don’t forget, we were in actual conflict with the Kong Heavenly Clan earlier. Although the possibility is very small, it’s not a hundred percent guarantee that they will not come create troubles for us.”

“Most importantly, that place is guarded. Thus, even if it is not a forbidden area, it shouldn’t be an ordinary place either. I cannot be

certain as to whether or not I will trigger any mechanisms or be detected upon entering there. If I am to really trigger something and cause them to discover that someone has intruded upon that place, they might end up suspecting us,” Chu Feng said.

“I u-understand now t-that you’ve explained it like this. V-very well, I’ll stay,” Wang Qiang said.

“Brother, it might be even more dangerous to stay behind. Remember, if possible, save yourself. You do not have to worry about me,” Chu Feng patted Wang Qiang’s shoulder.

“Re-rest a-assured, y-you’ll be satisfied w-with the w-way I handle things,” Wang Qiang said with his mouth wide open in a smile.

“Indeed, I am at ease with the way you handle things,” Chu Feng also smiled.

After it was decided, Chu Feng took out a special case and placed one of the two spheres of light into it. As for the other one, Chu Feng clenched his hand and shattered it, turning it into a shower of light that basked him.

The next moment, the light disappeared. As for Chu Feng, he also disappeared along with the light. Not only did his physical body disappear, his aura had also completely disappeared.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Wang Qiang’s gaze started to shine brightly, revealing sharpness. It was as if Wang Qiang’s gaze could see through everything.

Wang Qiang focused his eyes before him and began to look up and down.

“Holy hell, I a-am really unable to see anything at all. T-this spirit formation is t-truly miraculous,” Wang Qiang said excitedly. The reason for that was because he knew that Chu Feng was standing right before him. That was why he had used such a

powerful detection ability with the intention of seeing through the spirit formation. However... the result was obvious; he was unable to detect Chu Feng even when using his powerful detection ability.

“This spirit formation is indeed effective. Brother... I’ll be setting out now,” Chu Feng smiled complacently. After he finished saying those words, he proceeded toward the entrance gates.

Chu Feng did not open the door. The reason for that was because there was another effect to the spirit formation. That is, the user was capable of passing through walls. Even if it was a wall that possessed a spirit formation over it, as long as the spirit formation’s spirit power was stronger than the wall’s, Chu Feng would still be able to pass through it.

The result of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s joint efforts over the past several days was absolutely not something to be trifled with. Thus, the spirit power of Chu Feng’s spirit formation was nothing to be trifled with either. Unless it was a spirit formation set up by a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist... there would likely not be any spirit formation that could stop Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng left, he began to run with all his might. At that moment... he could not use martial power, nor could he use world spirit techniques. In fact, he could not even fly through the sky. However, this spirit formation of his could only last for a limited amount of time, and Chu Feng had to reach his destination before the effect of the spirit formation wore off. Thus, his only choice was to run as fast as he could.

At that moment, Chu Feng was like a person who had lost his cultivation. However, it remained that Chu Feng was a Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, Chu Feng possessed a very strong physical body. As such, he could not be compared to an ordinary person, and his running speed was also extremely fast.

As Chu Feng ran violently, he was somewhat nervous when he first encountered people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. However,

after he became certain that they were indeed unable to see him, he gradually grew at ease.

In the Kong Heavenly Clan, practically all of the buildings were built with spirit formations. For some places that were guarded, the spirit formations there were extremely strong.

However, even though the Kong Heavenly Clan was capable of requesting Immortal-cloak World Spiritists to help them set up these spirit formations, those spirit formations were still unable to stop Chu Feng.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued straight forward completely unhindered. He was able to disregard all people and obstacles. In the end, he successfully reached the region that he wanted to enter.

It was a vast mountain, a mountain that was completely sealed off. Not only was there not a single person on the mountain, there was not a single monstrous beast either. Likewise... there were no trees that reached the sky or exotic plants and flowers.

Only ordinary flowers, plants and trees grew on this mountain. There were also many rarely-seen feral monkeys, wild hares, wild deer and other little animals.

In short, everything in this place was extremely ordinary.

Chu Feng felt as if he had returned to the Nine Provinces Continent, returned to the Azure Province, returned to that relatively ordinary land.

However, Chu Feng did not dare to be careless. He was able to tell that this seemingly-normal mountain was not normal at all. Instead, danger lurked on every side here.

At that moment, Chu Feng had no idea that there was an ancient pagoda in one of the Kong Heavenly Clan's forbidden areas. Inside the ancient pagoda was a spirit formation.

The moment Chu Feng set foot on the mountain, a strange

change emerged from the spirit formation.

## Chapter 2403 – The Most Dangerous Forbidden Area

---

This spirit formation was located at the center of the ancient pagoda. Surrounding the spirit formation were eighteen elderly individuals.

Of these eighteen elderly individuals, seventeen of them were peak Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, many among them were world spiritists.

As for the final individual, it was a woman with white hair, white clothes and a face covered in wrinkles. She possessed the same sort of aura as Elder Kong Shunlian; she was a True Immortal-level expert.

As for that person, she was one of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders, Kong Yuehua.

“Buzz~~~”

The strange change to the spirit formation caused all of the elders present, including Kong Yuehua, to suddenly open their eyes.

As they looked at the change in the spirit formation, they all revealed a change in expression. Then, the other seventeen elders turned their gazes to Kong Yuehua.

“Lady Utmost Exalted Elder, someone has intruded into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range!!!” The elders spoke in unison.

“I can see it myself without you all mentioning it,” Compared to the others, Kong Yuehua was more calm.

“Then, Lady Elder, what should we do?” The others asked in unison. Evidently, this was no small matter. Otherwise, they would not be this frantic.

“Call the Lord Clan Chief over, as well as all of the upper echelons of our clan that have not entered closed-door training,”



Kong Yuehua said.

“Yes, Milady,” Once Kong Yuehua’s order was given, the remaining seventeen Utmost Exalted Elders immediately left the ancient pagoda and flew toward various different locations.

At that moment, only Kong Yuehua remained in the ancient pagoda. Her gaze grew sharp as she looked at the spirit formation that was giving off that unusual signal nonstop.

.....

At that moment, Chu Feng was still within the mountain. He was running rapidly following the route in his mind. He did not dare to stop and rest because he knew that his spirit formation would not be able to last for long, and that he must reach the location he wanted to reach before the spirit formation’s effect disappeared.

As Chu Feng continued to run, he became even more certain that the map that Grandmaster Kai Hong had given him was correct.

The reason for that was because there were many hidden slaughtering formations in this seemingly-ordinary mountain range. While those slaughtering formations would not do anything to the ordinary little animals, if a martial cultivator was to approach them, they would immediately explode with extremely frightening power.

Furthermore, those slaughtering formations were extremely well-hidden. Even Chu Feng only noticed their existence after passing by them.

Fortunately, Chu Feng possessed the map in his head. He was only able to avoid those slaughtering formations by following the route according to the map in his head.

Else, even if Chu Feng were to become a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist and use his Heaven’s Eyes to observe his surroundings, it would have still been very difficult for him to evade the slaughtering formations in that place.

This vast mountain range was simply a vast slaughtering range. Devastating powers that Chu Feng could not withstand were hidden all over the place.

That said, even though Chu Feng had managed to avoid the slaughtering formations, he was still frowning. It seemed that he was pondering something.

Suddenly, Chu Feng said in a very stern manner, “Eggy, something’s amiss.”

“What’s wrong? What’s amiss?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I keep feeling that this mountain range contains more than just slaughtering formations. It seems that there was a very powerful sensory formation that was also hidden here. It’s... very possible that I have already been discovered,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? Then what do we do? They wouldn’t be coming in to capture you, right? Would you make it in time if you are to exit this place now?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen started to panic.

After all, this place was no ordinary place. Rather, it was the territory of one of the four strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Kong Heavenly Clan.

There were simply too many experts in this place. They possessed even True Immortal-level experts. The amount of people capable of obliterating Chu Feng instantly were simply numerous.

If Chu Feng had really only come here to be a guest, the Kong Heavenly Clan would likely not dare to do anything to him due to external pressures.

However, when Chu Feng and Eggy arrived, they discovered that even though that place was not known to be a forbidden area, it was guarded exceptionally tightly — the guards were actually all peak Martial Ancestors. In fact, even the spirit formation that had sealed this place was extremely powerful.

If it wasn't because of the fact that Chu Feng's Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation was so powerful, he would not be able to enter this mountain range even if no one tried to stop him.

From this, it could be seen that there must be something fishy regarding this place. Although this place was not known to be a forbidden area, it was very possible that the place was regarded as a forbidden area by the Kong Heavenly Clan.

A place like that would be a place that outsiders would not be allowed to trespass into. If Chu Feng's intrusion into that place was to be seen by the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng would be in the wrong even if news of the matter were to spread. Thus, should Chu Feng be captured, he would definitely end up suffering enormously.

"Since I've already entered this place, I cannot return empty-handed," Chu Feng did not have the intention to turn back. Instead, he continued to rapidly proceed forward.

"Very well. Since you've made the decision, then you might as well put your life on the line," Seeing that Chu Feng was determined to proceed onward, Her Lady Queen did not advise him against it, but instead became excited.

Rather than retreating, Her Lady Queen was actually more fond of bravely advancing.

Furthermore, since Chu Feng had already been discovered, even if they were to retreat, it would still be very difficult to escape. Thus, it was better that he risk his life and continue onward.

After continuing to run for some time, Chu Feng arrived at the foot of a mountain and stopped.

"It's here," Chu Feng said.

"Here?" Her Lady Queen was surprised.

"If the map is correct, then this is the entrance. Merely, I will

need to spend some time to open this entrance. I don't know... if I can make it in time or not," Chu Feng said.

"Regardless of whether or not you can make it in time, you must still give it a try. Go on ahead and do it. Since you're already here, there's no need to hesitate," Her Lady Queen said.

"Eggy, you are thinking precisely the same as what I am thinking," Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he began to set up his spirit formation.

It was a very complicated unsealing formation. It was also a spirit formation that Chu Feng had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance. According to the instructions on the map, only this unsealing formation was capable of opening the entrance to allow Chu Feng to enter and obtain the treasures.

At the same time when Chu Feng was putting forth all his effort to set up the spirit formation so as to open the entrance, many experts were already gathered in that ancient pagoda.

These people were all experts from the Kong Heavenly Clan. Three among them were even True Immortals.

Among them were Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian. As for the last individual, he was a dark-skinned old man. Like Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian, he was also one of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders. His name was Kong Moyu.

"Lord Clan Chief is actually away at such a time. This is truly a bad coincidence," Kong Yuehua sighed.

She had just received news that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had a matter to attend to and left the Kong Heavenly Clan. Furthermore, the other Utmost Exalted Elders were still in closed-door training. As such, only the three of them were capable of overseeing the matters happening in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

"Even if Lord Clan Chief is to come now, the situation at hand will remain the same. One of our Kong Heavenly Clan's most

important forbidden areas, the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, has been intruded upon,” Elder Kong Moyu said.

“How can we be certain that this is caused by an outsider?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“The people of our Kong Heavenly Clan all know what sort of place the Grief Calamity Mountain Range is. No one will enter that place, they would not dare. Furthermore, I have just checked the records. Other than the people that have gone out of our Kong Heavenly Clan, the rest of our clansmen are practically all present. Thus... this can only be determined to be caused by an outsider,” Kong Moyu said.

“Lord Elder, then I will immediately order people to enter the Grief Calamity Mountain Range and capture that intruder,” A peak Martial Ancestor-level expert said.

“Impudent! What sort of place is the Grief Calamity Mountain Range?! You want to bring people in, what use is that other than throwing away your lives?!” Kong Moyu shouted furiously.

At that moment, that peak Martial Ancestor lowered his head in shame.

It was not only him; all of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s experts grew silent.

The Grief Calamity Mountain Range was a place that the people from their Kong Heavenly Clan never dared to enter.

It could be said that not only was the Grief Calamity Mountain Range a forbidden area, it was also their Kong Heavenly Clan’s most dangerous forbidden area.

# Chapter 2404 – The Primogenitor's Inheritance

---

The Grief Calamity Mountain Range was a forbidden area established by a hero-level character of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

That individual was an important individual who had helped push the Kong Heavenly Clan to the throne of a tier one power.

Not only did he possess overwhelming battle power and a powerful cultivation, he was also a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

It could be said that there would not be a Kong Heavenly Clan like the one there was today without him.

When he was alive, he had been one of the most revered existences of his era.

Although he was not really the Kong Heavenly Clan's primogenitor, he was the one who had brought about a rebirth to the Kong Heavenly Clan. Thus, the Kong Heavenly Clan addressed him as the Kong Primogenitor.

Furthermore, that individual was the widely-accepted strongest senior in the entire history of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

In the life of that Kong Primogenitor, he had gone through countless tribulations and encountered many chance opportunities.

He had passed down the treasures and skills that he had acquired in his lifetime, allowing the Kong Heavenly Clan to possess the glory to continue on till this day.

However, the Kong Primogenitor had not passed down all of the things that he had obtained in his lifetime. He had still left behind a small portion of them.

As for that small portion, it was hidden in the Grief Calamity

Mountain Range by him.

Furthermore, he had set up grand formations on the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

He declared that only the most outstanding individual of the Kong Heavenly Clan would be capable of obtaining all of his inheritance, and that only the person who had obtained all his inheritance would be a descendant that he acknowledged.

Merely because of that one sentence, countless talented individuals of the Kong Heavenly Clan had set foot into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range over the past few generations.

However, the results were tragic. For the sake of obtaining all of the Kong Primogenitor's inheritance, for the sake of becoming a descendant that he acknowledged, many of the Kong Heavenly Clan's talents that could become individuals that would move about unhindered in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and become the pride of their Kong Heavenly Clan ended up losing their lives in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Later on, for the sake of preventing this sort of tragedy from happening nonstop, that generation's Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief entered a discussion with the Utmost Exalted Elders. In the end, they decided to seal off the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, turning it into a forbidden area.

Unless there was someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan that was capable of reaching the True Immortal realm of cultivation whilst also being a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist... no one was allowed to enter the Grief Calamity Mountain Range again.

The reason for that was because the Grief Calamity Mountain Range was simply akin to being a graveyard of geniuses.

“Three Utmost Exalted Elders, please forgive this junior for speaking forthrightly. The treasures contained in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range are things that only the people of our

Kong Heavenly Clan know about. Outsiders should have no clue about the treasures.”

“Yet now, an outsider has actually managed to trespass into it. I ask... could it be considered that a traitor has appeared in our Kong Heavenly Clan?” A peak Martial Ancestor-level expert asked sternly.

“Naturally, this matter would be spread by someone of our clan. However, it is still not the time to investigate this matter. Rather, we should be more concerned about that reckless intruder,” Kong Moyu said.

“The Grief Calamity Mountain Range is extremely dangerous. I believe this is something that everyone here knows about. If one does not enter deeply, they might still be fine. However, should one enter deeply, one will most likely end up dying.”

“Over the various generations, so many of our Kong Heavenly Clan’s talented seniors have attempted to penetrate the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Yet, only a few of them managed to return alive. I reckon that the intruder will practically have no chance of survival.”

“Thus, everyone need not be too worried about it. Perhaps we simply do not have to do anything, and that intruder will die in there. We must believe in the power of Lord Primogenitor,” Kong Yuehua said.

“That’s true. That is the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, after all. Even the geniuses of our Kong Heavenly Clan do not dare to penetrate deeply into that place, how could an outsider possibly be able to?”

The people from the Kong Heavenly Clan all nodded in agreement at Kong Yuehua’s words.

Most importantly, they all possessed an air of arrogance in their hearts. They felt that no one would be able to accomplish what was



impossible for the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“But, according to what the spirit formation is showing, that intruder has been in there for a very long time now. Furthermore, that intruder is still alive. I fear that the intruder’s origin is no small matter,” Someone said worriedly.

The reason for that was because whenever someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan attempted to challenge the Grief Calamity Mountain Range in the past, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan would all use this spirit formation to determine the situation inside the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

After entering the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, those that were able to survive for longer were generally always the ones that were more powerful.

Thus, the Kong Heavenly Clan had recorded all the times that the people that entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range managed to survive. In fact, their times were taught like textbooks to all the people in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

If one was to determine the strength of an individual according to that time, then the intruder in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range now would be extremely powerful.

“If we are to determine it according to the time, then yes, that intruder is no small matter,” The others from the Kong Heavenly Clan all began to worry.

“Everyone, you all shouldn’t forget about what sort of place the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is. Not only does this place possess a lot of renowned old monsters, there are also many non-famous monsters that have been in closed-door training for a very long time. It would be fine if they did not come out. However, when they do, they will be able to bring forth a rain of blood and gore.”

“Not mentioning the people born of our Hundred Refinements

Ordinary Realm, a lot of people from other Ordinary Realms have gathered here over the years, and even the amount of experts from the Lower Realms in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is innumerable.”

“As the saying goes, there are skies beyond the sky, and people beyond the person. The world of martial cultivators has never lacked true experts. Thus, we cannot look down on anyone.”

“As for this intruder, he was able to intrude into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range without being detected at all. This serves to prove how powerful that intruder is.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that Lord Primogenitor had left this spirit formation, we would likely not even have been able to discover that there has been an intruder in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range even after that intruder left.”

“Thus, we absolutely cannot treat today’s matter lightly; we absolutely cannot lower our guard.”

“On the contrary, we must treat it very seriously, and make surefire preparations. The reason for that is because this might not only be someone intruding into our forbidden area, it might even be a calamity to our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Shunlian said in a very serious manner.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, is it really that serious?” Hearing what Kong Shunlian said, many of the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan started to sweat cold bullets.

After all, if it was as Kong Shunlian had said, that intruder would not be an unknown nobody, but rather a frightening existence capable of bringing about a rain of blood and gore.

“Shunlian, in that case, what do you think we should do right now?” Kong Moyu raised his eyebrows and asked indifferently.

“Since Elder Yuehua is guarding this place, the two of us should guard the entrance to the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.”

“If that intruder is able to get out alive, a battle will be unavoidable,” Kong Shunlian said.

“You want the two of us to go together? Is there really a need for all this?” Kong Muyu smiled somewhat disdainfully. Evidently, compared to the seriousness Kong Shunlian possessed, Kong Moyu was filled with contempt toward the unknown intruder.

“Better safe than sorry,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Oh Shunlian, I must say that you are still the same after all these years, so afraid of everything.”

“Indeed, I admit that what you said is correct. There are skies beyond the sky, and people beyond the person. In this world, there are indeed hidden dragons and crouching tigers, and many powers that are much more powerful than our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“However, what sort of place is this? This is the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, who could possibly contend against our Kong Heavenly Clan?” Kong Moyu said.

“What I am suggesting is just in case. Perhaps that intruder might not even be able to exit the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Or perhaps that intruder possesses a cultivation below that of True Immortal. However, if that intruder is able to exit the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, and is someone with the cultivation of a True Immortal, what do we do then?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“Even if that intruder is a True Immortal-level expert, he will not be able to leave our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Moyu said.

The two Utmost Exalted Elders argued nonstop. As for Kong Yuehua, she seemed to have already grown accustomed to such a scene. Thus, she did not bother to cut into the argument, nor did she tried to stop them. Instead, she turned her gaze onto that spirit formation, and began to carefully observe it.

“This is bad!”

Suddenly, Kong Yuehua revealed an extremely startled expression on her previously calm face.

## Chapter 2405 – Extremely Alarmed

---

“Elder Yuehua, what’s wrong?” Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu asked in unison.

“An abnormality has once again arisen from the Grief Calamity Mountain Range’s spirit formation! That intruder has managed to open something in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range!!!” Kong Yuehua said.

“What?!” Hearing those words, the people present all revealed an enormous change in expression.

“Elder Yuehua, are you certain that something has been opened, that it is not that intruder triggering a slaughtering formation?” Kong Moyu asked.

“I am certain that it is not a slaughtering formation. However, it is indeed a spirit formation. Merely... that spirit formation has been broken through by the intruder,” Kong Yuehua said.

“Boom~~~”

A sudden clap of thunder.

The crowd from the Kong Heavenly Clan present felt as if they were struck by an invisible lightning strike. They felt as if their bodies had been split open, and their souls struck.

The Grief Calamity Mountain Range was the place where their Kong Heavenly Clan’s primogenitor had hidden his inheritance. That inheritance could be said to be the most precious item for their Kong Heavenly Clan.

If they were able to obtain the inheritance, it would mean that their Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance would be completely intact. At that time, it might even be possible for their Kong Heavenly Clan to surpass the other three tier one powers and become the strongest power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Over all these years, countless seniors of their Kong Heavenly Clan had entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range for the sake of the inheritance. However, all of them ended up in failure, and the great majority even lost their lives in there.

Yet now, an outsider had not only intruded into their Grief Calamity Mountain Range, but also actually managed to open up a spirit formation too.

What sort of spirit formation was that? What if it was the spirit formation to the inheritance?

If that was the case, wouldn't it mean that the last inheritance of their Kong Heavenly Clan would be snatched away by an outsider?

Intolerable. To the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan, this was absolutely intolerable.

“Damned bastard!!!”

Panic. Upon thinking of how their Kong Heavenly Clan's inheritance might be snatched away by an outsider, each and every person from the Kong Heavenly Clan was filled with endless anger. However, they were at a loss as to what to do.

That was their Kong Heavenly Clan's possession! That was the inheritance left for them by their Kong Heavenly Clan's primogenitor! How could they allow an outsider to snatch it away from them?

“Do you all believe what I said now?” Kong Shunlian swept his gaze across the crowd. Then, he began to walk out. He was planning to guard the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. He planned to wait for the intruder to exit and confront him at that time.

“That intruder's crimes cannot be forgiven!” As Kong Moyu spoke, he also began to walk out. As matters stood, he now planned to join hands with Kong Shunlian even without Kong Shunlian saying anything.

The reason for that was because he had no choice but to take the intruder seriously now.

“What!!!” Right at that moment, Kong Yuehua’s gaze suddenly changed, and incomparable shock appeared in her eyes.

“How could this be, h-how is this possible?!” Kong Yuehua’s eyes were fixed tightly onto the spirit formation, with an expression of disbelief on her face.

Seeing Kong Yuehua’s expression, even Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu hurriedly stopped their footsteps and returned to ask, “Elder Yuehua, what’s wrong?”

The three of them had known one another since their youth. Thus, they knew what sort of character Kong Yuehua was. All these years, they rarely ever saw Kong Yuehua reveal such an astonished expression.

Yet, during this moment of crisis, Kong Yuehua actually revealed such an expression.

As such, the two of them realized one thing from merely Kong Yuehua’s expression.

That is, the abnormal movement of the spirit formation was absolutely no small matter right now. Perhaps something even more serious was happening.

“According to the illustration of the spirit formation, the person who has managed to open that spirit formation in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range right now is a member of the younger generation who is not even a hundred years old,” Kong Yuehua said.

“Member of the younger generation?!”

“You’re saying that a member of the younger generation has managed to intrude into our Grief Calamity Mountain Range, and even managed to open a certain spirit formation on top of that?” Hearing those words, even Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu

revealed astonished expressions.

“Elder Yuehua, are you sure you saw it correctly?” Kong Moyu asked. He felt this matter to be impossible.

“Although this spirit formation has rarely ever showed an abnormal change in all these years, I have studied how to observe this spirit formation since I was a child. As such, I can tell what is happening in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range from the abnormal changes to this spirit formation with certainty.”

“Thus, there is no mistake. The spirit formation’s abnormal changes will not be mistaken, nor will my readings of it be mistaken.”

“The intruder is definitely a member of the younger generation.”

“The only thing I do not understand is why he only revealed that he is a member of the younger generation now,” Kong Yuehua said with an astonished expression. She, who had always been calm, was unable to contain herself when she spoke those words to the point that even her tone had changed.

“I think what cannot be understood the most right now is not who that person of the younger generation might be, but rather how he managed to obtain such an otherworldly ability to intrude upon the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. This is not something that a person of the younger generation from our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm can accomplish,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, could you mean...?” Hearing those words, the others revealed increasingly frightened expressions.

“Likely, the intruder is a genius from the Upper Realms,” Kong Shunlian said.

“This...” Merely that one sentence caused the crowd to turn pale. In fact, some people even started to involuntarily tremble.

What sort of existence would an Upper Realm’s genius be? Not to



mention his strength, merely his background should be extremely frightening.

Regardless of how powerful their Kong Heavenly Clan might be in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they could not contend against the powers from the Upper Realms.

If they must be compared, then the disparity between them would be akin to that of heaven from earth.

An existence from the Upper Realms was something that they could not afford to offend.

.....

At the same time. Chu Feng was still in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Furthermore, by undoing that spirit formation, Chu Feng had successfully opened the entrance.

After that entrance was opened, a spirit formation vortex appeared. A gate was slowly opening inside the spirit formation vortex.

This gate was eight meters wide and ten meters tall. It was very simple and unadorned. Yet, at the same time, it was very extraordinary. Although it appeared to be made of stone, it was still extremely imposing and domineering.

“I’ve finally succeeded.”

Chu Feng felt very happy as he saw the gate before him. However, it was very difficult for him to smile. The reason for that was because he was still worried.

“Merely... my concealment formation has disappeared. I wonder... has my identity already been exposed?” Chu Feng wondered worriedly.

“Since it has already come down to this, there is no way to back out anymore. Thus, don’t worry about it, and enter that place first,” Her Lady Queen said excitedly.

“Of course,” As Chu Feng spoke, he pushed the gate open.

Although the gate was floating in midair, after Chu Feng pushed it open, what appeared before him was a world spirit entrance.

Without the slightest hesitation, Chu Feng entered the world spirit entrance. After entering it, Chu Feng’s body disappeared into the spirit formation.

As for that gate, it slowly shut itself. Then, it slowly descended back into the spirit formation vortex.

Soon, the region returned to the way it was before, calm and serene.

It was as if Chu Feng had never been there, as if the spirit formation had never been opened, as if nothing had happened here.

At the same time. In the Kong Heavenly Clan’s ancient pagoda, the crowd were still in a state of astonishment.

“Gone,” Kong Yuehua suddenly declared.

“What’s gone?” Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu asked in unison.

“The intruder is gone. Completely gone. All abnormality has disappeared,” Kong Yuehua said as she looked at the spirit formation before her.

“Could it be that the intruder was killed?” Kong Moyu asked.

“It’s possible that the intruder was killed. However, it’s also possible that the intruder escaped. Furthermore, there’s another possibility. That is... the intruder has managed to enter the place of Lord Primogenitor’s inheritance that was left for us,” Kong Yuehua said.

“Damn it!” At that moment, Kong Moyu shouted angrily. Then, he let out an extremely frightening aura. While emitting that frightening aura, he flew out and instantly disappeared. Only his frightening aura continued to linger in that place.

He had gone to the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. He was afraid that the intruder would escape the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Thus, he was going to the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range to stop the intruder from escaping.

## Chapter 2406 – Kong Primogenitor

---

“Elder Yuehua, this place will be in your hands then. Make sure to dispatch people to inform us if something unusual happens,” Kong Shunlian said to Kong Yuehua. He was planning to go and provide assistance to Kong Moyu in guarding the Grief Calamity Mountain Range’s entrance.

“With me here, you can rest assured. After all, I have studied how to observe this spirit formation since I was a child. If something abnormal is to happen, I should be able to detect it.”

“However...” As Kong Yuehua spoke, the gaze with which she looked to Kong Shunlian started to change somewhat. She said, “Compared to this place, that Grief Calamity Mountain Range’s entrance is the most dangerous place. Thus, you must be extra careful.”

“This matter concerns our clan’s inheritance. Even if I am to stake my old life on the line, I will still not allow that intruder to walk out from our Kong Heavenly Clan,” After Kong Shunlian finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

“Elder Yuehua, what should we do now?” The others present turned to ask Kong Yuehua.

As matters stood, they all realized how serious the situation at hand was. Even though they were all individuals holding high status, power and authority, they were still unable to conceal the panic in their hearts.

“If it’s a fortune, then it wouldn’t be a calamity. If it is a calamity, then it will be unavoidable.”

“This matter is currently undetermined. As such, do not make this matter public, so as to prevent needless panic.”

“However, all the forces of our Kong Heavenly Clan are not allowed to leave for the time being. Make preparations to confront

an enemy.”

“Furthermore, send out word to Lord Clan Chief, and have him return as quickly as he is able,” Kong Yuehua said.

“Yes,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s elders accepted the orders.

At that moment, Chu Feng had already entered another space.

This space existed as a vast palace. The palace was very large, but also abnormally dark.

Chu Feng was walking in a vast corridor. Other than the forever-burning torches inlaid into the walls, there was not a single trace of light.

Even when using his Heaven’s Eyes and other techniques to observe his surroundings, Chu Feng was able to only see for a very limited distance.

As Chu Feng recalled the frightening slaughtering formations outside, he did not dare to be careless in the slightest while in that vast palace.

Chu Feng had practically brought forth two hundred percent of his focus. With every step forward, he would always cautiously observe his surroundings, fearing that he might have triggered some sort of frightening slaughtering formation.

The reason for that was because there was no longer any route in the map in his mind after he reached this place. He could really only rely on himself for the following journey.

Fortunately, Chu Feng did not encounter any traps or mechanisms on the way.

“There’s actually no traps or mechanisms. It would appear... that the slaughtering formations outside are the actual test. As long as one manages to enter this place, they will most likely no longer encounter any more traps and mechanisms,” Chu Feng comforted himself. Although he said it like that, Chu Feng did not let his

guard down because of it.

“It might also be that this has been done deliberately so that you will loosen your guard. While there are no slaughtering formations so far, there might be some later on. It’s best to be careful. You’re already here, you absolutely cannot fall head over heels at the final pass,” Her Lady Queen said.

“I will do as Milady Queen instructs. I hope... that this person who set up all these spirit formations here is not that treacherous,” Chu Feng smiled wryly.

With the powerful slaughtering formations Chu Feng had seen earlier, and the fact that even his Heaven’s Eyes were restricted, Chu Feng was able to determine that the person who had set up the spirit formations here was extremely powerful. At the very least, that person would be a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist who possessed profoundly exquisite world spirit techniques.

Else, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to feel this powerless.

In such a cautious state, the speed at which Chu Feng proceeded forward was very slow.

In this situation, Chu Feng felt that he was feeling very impatient. However, he still did not dare to be careless, and could only continue to move onward like that.

After an entire day and night passed, light finally appeared before Chu Feng.

As he was approaching that light, Chu Feng discovered that it was a very vast palace hall. Martial Skills were spread all over the palace hall. There were not only Mortal Taboo Martial Skills, Earthen Taboo Martial Skills and Heaven Taboo Martial Skills, there were also Emperor Taboo Martial Skills and even Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

Apart from these, there were also a large amount of cultivation

resources here. Most importantly, the walls of the palace hall were filled with complicated veined patterns. Those were... the profoundness of the way of martial cultivation.

In the center of that vast hall stood a golden-bright and dazzling sword.

That sword was two feet wide and three meters long. It was taller than an average person.

A golden dragon was carved onto the sword. The sword's appearance was very similar to Nangong Longjian's giant sword.

However, all aspects of this sword surpassed Nangong Longjian's giant sword by many times. Not only was that sword extremely sharp, it also emitted an extraordinarily domineering aura. As it stood there, it looked like a ruler looking down upon the world, emitting an unparalleled aura.

It was an Ancestral Armament, an actual Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was very high quality, not inferior to Chu Feng's Stormwind Edge.

From that, it could be seen that it was an extremely high quality Ancestral Armament.

"Treasure deposit! This is most definitely a treasure deposit! Chu Feng, this trip has been well worthwhile, this danger was not braved in vain. Hahaha..."

Her Lady Queen started to hop around in excitement. She was laughing very brilliantly.

The reason for that was because that place not only contained martial skills, there was also an Ancestral Armament and cultivation resources. In fact, it even contained profoundness pertaining to the way of martial cultivation. It could truly be said that this place possessed everything. They had managed to obtain an abundant harvest this time around.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, a ray of light suddenly appeared beside that Ancestral Armament.

That ray of light began to transform. Soon, it took the shape of an old man that stood beside the Ancestral Armament.

This was a white-haired old man, with a face filled with wrinkles. He was not tall, and his appearance was very ordinary. However, he emitted an overwhelmingly extraordinary heroic aura. From a glance, one could tell that that old man was no ordinary individual.

“This outfit of his...”

Upon seeing that old man, Chu Feng’s heart tightened.

The reason for that was because the old man’s outfit, as well as the title plate on his waist both illustrated his identity — he was someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Fortunately, the old man was merely an image, and did not contain actual power. Chu Feng felt that he was no ordinary soul remnant, nor did he appear to be an awareness. Rather, he should have been formed with a spirit formation. Thus, Chu Feng was not excessively worried.

Merely, why would an image of someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan appear here? Could it be that this treasure deposit belonged to the Kong Heavenly Clan?

Or could it be that the treasures here possessed some sort of connection with the Kong Heavenly Clan?

Chu Feng began to ponder nonstop in his heart. As for his gaze, it was fixed onto the old man the entire time.

Chu Feng felt that the old man would be able to provide him with an answer.

Suddenly, that old man clasped his fist at Chu Feng and said, “This old man is Kong Yingyi. I have waited for your arrival for a



very long time.”

As Chu Feng anticipated, the old man spoke. He had also revealed his identity. Sure enough, he was someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Merely, this old man’s physical body has already been dead for a very long time. As for this image of mine here, it is merely created by a spirit formation. I simply do not possess any awareness. Thus, I am unable to determine whether or not you are a descendant of my Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“If you are a descendant of my Kong Heavenly Clan, this old man will definitely feel extremely gratified. However, if you are not a person of my Kong Heavenly Clan, haha...”

Suddenly, the old man started laughing. It was a very complicated smile. More or less, there was regret in his smile. However, he soon eased his state of mind and added, “This old man has traveled through the world all his life, and acquired countless treasures. However, the majority of the treasures this old man acquired were all thanks to the various seniors of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Thus, what I have obtained does not belong to the Kong Heavenly Clan. Even if you are not a descendant of my Kong Heavenly Clan, you will still be able to take away everything here.”

After the old man said those words, he suddenly pointed to the Ancestral Armament beside him. He said, “This sword is called the Flame Dragon Greatsword. It is from the Ancient Era, and is one of the several most famous Ancestral Armaments in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. This old man relied on this sword to move about unhindered in the world, cut down countless powerful enemies and push the Kong Heavenly Clan to the status of a tier one power during the latter half of my life.”

“Woah! He’s the one that pushed the Kong Heavenly Clan to the status of a tier one power? It would appear that this old man was

quite amazing,” Hearing what the old man said, Her Lady Queen grew interested, As for Chu Feng, he too came to realize how amazing that old man was.

Evidently... he was not merely a senior of the Kong Heavenly Clan. Rather, he was a founder-level existence.

## Chapter 2407 – Kill Chu Feng

---

“There are very deep feelings between myself and this Flame Dragon Greatsword. If you are able to have it recognize you as its master, I hope that you will treat it well. After all, it is something with life,” As the old man spoke, he gently stroked the Ancestral Armament.

He said, “Old friend, we will soon be separated completely. Yet, I am still reluctant to part with you. Merely, as I am no longer in this world, I really shouldn’t have you accompany me the entire time, burying your sharpness with me. Go ahead and accompany him. For him to be able to reach this place, it most definitely means that he is qualified to match you.”

It could be seen that the old man possessed very deep feelings for this Ancestral Armament.

Then, the old man turned around and pointed to the most alluring martial skill among all the numerous martial skills behind him, that one Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

“This Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill is the strongest martial skill in this place. Its name is Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement.”

“The Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement is the most difficult martial skill among all the martial skills this old man has obtained throughout his life. It is also the strongest of all my martial skills.”

“When this old man was only a Martial Ancestor, I was simply unable to unleash the might of this martial skill. It was only when my cultivation reached the True Immortal level that I was capable of unleashing this martial skill’s true power.”

“If I am to leave the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement to my Kong Heavenly Clan’s descendants, they

might not necessarily be able to master it. However, since you were able to reach this place, you should be extraordinarily talented. I hope that you do not let this Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement down.”

After that, the old man began to introduce all of the treasures stored in that place one at a time.

However, what Chu Feng was concerned with the most was the way of martial cultivation that the old man had left behind.

Although the old man should’ve been a grand character in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before his death, it remained that he was only someone who was able to move about unhindered in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus, Chu Feng was afraid that the profoundness of the way of martial cultivation he had left behind might not be able to provide Chu Feng with much benefits.

In fact, he feared that it would take him a lot of effort to comprehend it too. Thus, Chu Feng hoped that he would be able to obtain indications from this old man so that he could obtain comprehension easier.

“All the things this old man has left behind were acquired by this old man from the remnants of my seniors. Only one thing here is left behind by this old man himself.”

“That would be the writings all over the walls. Those writings are no ordinary writings. Rather, I have used a special method to engrave my comprehension of the way of martial cultivation into those writings.”

“The way of martial cultivation can only be understood, but not described. Thus, it will be overwhelmingly difficult for one to inherit the contents of those writings.”

“However, since this old man has left it in this land of inheritance, I must naturally make it so that the person who

arrives here will actually obtain the inheritance.”

“Those writings took this old man a total of one thousand eight hundred and thirty-nine years to engrave onto the walls. As long as you wholeheartedly comprehend them, I believe they will be helpful to you,” The old man pointed to the veined patterns that filled the walls.

“One thousand eight hundred and thirty-nine years?”

“Doesn’t that mean nearly two thousand years?”

At that moment, Chu Feng felt great astonishment in his heart. He suddenly felt very ashamed of his opinion of the old man earlier.

Earlier, he felt that since the old man’s cultivation was limited to being at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the profoundness toward the way of martial cultivation he left behind would definitely be limited too.

However, that old man had actually spent nearly two thousand years leaving behind the way of martial cultivation engraved on the walls. This caused Chu Feng to feel deep veneration for the old man.

A person’s lifespan would always come to an end eventually. Even though True Immortal-level experts would easily live for over ten thousand years, how many two thousand years could they possibly have in their life?

Heart’s-blood. These things left behind through nearly two thousand years of meticulous effort were most definitely this senior’s heart’s-blood.

“Finally, this old man has one last thing to say,” After the old man finished explaining the final contents, his gaze suddenly turned serious. He said, “If you are a descendant of my Kong Heavenly Clan, I hope that you will bring honor to your ancestors and lead our Kong Heavenly Clan to a new heights.”

“However, if you are not a person of my Kong Heavenly Clan, I reckon that my Kong Heavenly Clan must’ve already entered desolation for you to obtain all these. If you possess animosity toward my Kong Heavenly Clan, I hope that you will spare them, and not ruthlessly kill them all. Please leave my Kong Heavenly Clan with some lives left so that they can continue to exist.”

“This old man shall express his respect and thanks to you here,” After the old man said those words, he actually kneeled onto the ground and bowed respectfully to Chu Feng.

“Senior, you absolutely must not,” Seeing this scene, even though Chu Feng knew that this old man was merely an image created by a spirit formation, Chu Feng’s heart was still moved. He hurriedly rushed forth to support the old man.

However, before Chu Feng could reach the old man, he turned into a ray of light that dove deep into the ground. He had disappeared.

“This old man has truly suffered. Even though he has been dead for so long, he is still worrying for the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“However, he had no idea that it is not you that will make things difficult for the Kong Heavenly Clan but rather the Kong Heavenly Clan that will make things difficult for you,” Her Lady Queen said with a sigh.

“I hope that the Kong Heavenly Clan will not make things difficult for me,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

“What if they insist on making things difficult for you?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“That senior already said it himself. The things here cannot be considered to be the Kong Heavenly Clan’s possessions. I can take them away as much as I wish. There is no justification for them to attack me. If they insist on attacking me, I can only fight to the death,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was not boasting. After all, he possessed the Evil God Sword. Chu Feng still had no idea how powerful that Demon Armament was. However, he was certain of one thing — that Demon Armament possessed a power that absolutely could not be looked down upon.

“If possible, I really do not wish for you to have to use the Evil God Sword,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Neither do I. We can only hope that they will not force me to that,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Then, he gathered up all of the treasures in that place. The only things left were the cultivation resources.

Chu Feng did not have the time to master the martial skills, nor was he capable of subduing that Ancestral Armament. However, he was still able to refine the cultivation resources.

There were a lot of cultivation resources. However, for a martial cultivator that would never be picky about their food and would never be full no matter how much they ate, the cultivation resources here would naturally not suffice.

In merely a short moment, Chu Feng completely refined all of the cultivation resources left behind by the old man.

Then, Chu Feng closed his eyes and began to comprehend the writings engraved on the walls. Contained within those writings was profoundness toward the way of martial cultivation.

Whether or not Chu Feng would be able to reach a breakthrough in cultivation in a short period of time and the amount of breakthroughs he might be able to achieve would all be dependent on him.

.....

At the moment when Chu Feng was wholeheartedly focused on comprehending the profoundness of martial cultivation contained in the treasure deposit, the Kong Heavenly Clan was in utter chaos.

They had mobilized all their forces for battle. Even though the great majority of them had no idea what had happened, that didn't stop the crowd from making wild guesses.

Furthermore, there were no walls in the world that wind couldn't pass through. As such, Kong Ruozeng and his father also came to know about that matter.

"Lord Father," Kong Ruozeng arrived before his father's door.

"Ruozeng, why did you come? You've just suffered the medicinal punishment, shouldn't you be properly resting?" Kong Yao looked at his own son whilst grief filled his heart.

He had also been present when his son was punished with medicinal punishment. He himself had also personally suffered the pains associated with the medicinal punishment. Thus, he knew that the pain truly made him feel like he would rather die. It was an unforgettable pain that he would never want to experience again in his lifetime.

However, to him, what was the most painful was hearing the painful screams of his son, Kong Ruozeng.

As a father, he felt himself to be very powerless. He felt extremely pained. He wished that he was able to endure all of the pains that Kong Ruozeng had suffered.

"Lord Father, although the medicinal punishment is a painful torture, it only lasted for a period of time. I am already fine now."

"I have come here today to discuss one thing with Lord Father," Kong Ruozeng said.

"What is it?" Kong Ruozeng's father asked.

"I have a plan that could kill Chu Feng," Kong Ruozeng said.



## Chapter 2408 – Framing

---

“Ruozeng, come in, we’ll talk inside,” Hearing what Kong Ruozeng said, his father hurriedly called for him to enter the room.

Then, he took out a pearl. That pearl was the size of a palm. Golden-bright and dazzling light was flowing in the pearl. That was Immortal level spirit power.

Kong Ruozeng’s father instilled his own aura into the pearl. Then, he raised his arm, and that pearl turned into golden gases that scattered about in all directions before attaching themselves to the walls of the room.

It turned out that the pearl was a world spirit treasure that even non-world spiritists could use. As for its usage, it was precisely to isolate sound.

“Ruozeng, you said that you have a plan to kill Chu Feng?”

“What sort of plan might that be?” Kong Ruozeng’s father asked him.

“Lord Father, I am unable to endure the grievances. I absolutely cannot allow that Chu Feng to leave our Kong Heavenly Clan alive. Else, I fear that he will cause no end of trouble,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“Then what do you have in mind? Go ahead and tell me,” Kong Ruozeng’s father said.

“I heard that someone has managed to intrude into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Furthermore, I have heard that it is a member of the younger generation.”

“We can insist that Chu Feng is that intruder,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“Insist that Chu Feng is the intruder?” Kong Ruozeng’s father’s

expression changed.

“That’s right. Chu Feng is a member of the younger generation, and an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist on top of that. Furthermore, he is not a person of our Kong Heavenly Clan. Thus, he greatly fits the identity of that foreign intruder,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“According to the people that we know, that Chu Feng really does fit the identity of the intruder a lot. However, what sort of place is the Grief Calamity Mountain Range? The people in our Kong Heavenly Clan know what sort of place it is very well.”

“Over the past generations, countless of our powerful seniors have attempted to enter that place. However, the great majority of them ended up dying in there. With Chu Feng’s strength, it should clearly be impossible for him to accomplish something like that. Thus, the people of our clan all suspect the intruder to be a genius from an Upper Realm,” Kong Ruozeng’s father said.

“Naturally, Chu Feng would not actually be the intruder. However, it will all be fine as long as he fits the status of the intruder,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“You mean... to frame him?” Kong Ruozeng’s father asked.

“That’s right. Lord Father, I want to frame him. Even if the intruder is someone else, we can still say that Chu Feng is his accomplice.”

“As for the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, it is no small matter. It concerns our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance. To our Kong Heavenly Clan, there is nothing more serious than this matter.”

“Thus... I believe that Lord Clan Chief and the various Utmost Exalted Elders will rather wrongly kill someone than let the intruder escape,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“Ruozeng, for you to be able to think of this, I believe there are many others in the clan that have thought of this too. However, no

one has voiced their opinions. Do you know why?" Kong Ruozeng's father asked.

"I know. I know the reason why. But, I am truly unable to understand exactly what is so extraordinary about that Chu Feng. Isn't it just because he was lucky enough to obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance? Are you to tell me that he is truly that amazing for even that old bastard Kong Shunlian to shield him like that?" When mentioning this matter, Kong Ruozeng revealed an expression filled with grievances.

"What you have said is only part of the reason. There's also a very important point. That is, Chu Feng has declared that he will be in closed-door training. During the time when he is in closed-door training, there have been people guarding his residence the entire time. Among them are peak Martial Ancestor-level experts. Logically, it should be impossible for Chu Feng to have left. Even if he left, someone would've noticed it."

"Thus, our words will have no proof behind them. I fear that it will be very difficult to make Lord Clan Chief and the various Utmost Exalted Elders believe us," Kong Ruozeng's father said.

"That's simple. I merely need to say that I saw Chu Feng outside during the time when he was in closed-door training. This will raise suspicions," Kong Ruozeng said.

"Ruozeng, you absolutely must not. Doing something like that will be too dangerous," Kong Ruozeng's father said.

"Lord Father, do you still not understand our current position? We have already offended that old codger Kong Shunlian because of that Chu Feng. All of our clansmen know about this matter."

"What is an Utmost Exalted Elder? All the people who have ever ended up offending an Utmost Exalted Elder will be given the cold shoulder by our fellow clansmen. I fear that it will be very difficult for the two of us to rise in power again."

“However, right now, one such opportunity has presented itself before us. As long as we can successfully frame that Chu Feng, we would have provided outstanding service to our Kong Heavenly Clan. In the future, even if Kong Shunlian is dissatisfied with us, no one will dare to despise us,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“Ssss~~~” At that moment, Kong Ruozeng’s father took in a long breath of air. Then, he closed his eyes. Only after a long time passed did he open his eyes again. Merely, this time around, there was no longer any hesitation in his eyes. Rather, they were filled with determination. It was a determination to face death with equanimity.

“This matter is very dangerous. We either succeed or we die trying. However, Ruozeng, as this matter concerns your future, we can take this risk.”

“Merely, you cannot be the one to report this matter, nor can I be the one to report this matter. The reason for that is because there is already conflict between we father and son and that Chu Feng. That is something that everyone knows about. If either one of us is to declare Chu Feng to be the intruder, we will definitely be struck down by others,” Kong Ruozeng’s father said.

“Then who is to report this matter then?” Kong Ruozeng asked.

“Have your mother do it. Our clansmen will definitely believe what your mother says,” Kong Ruozeng’s father said.

“My mother? We’re going to involve even her?” Kong Ruozeng was stunned. His mother was different from him and his father. His mother was someone who possessed a very grand status in the Kong Heavenly Clan. In addition to being very talented, the reason why Kong Ruozeng was pampered by the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan was actually not because of his father. Rather, it was because he was borne of his mother.

Furthermore, his mother possessed numerous connections. She was someone who never had disputes with others. Thus, his

mother possessed great prestige in the clan, and was someone that people trusted.

“This matter concerns your future. I believe that your mother will be willing to help,” Kong Ruozeng’s father patted Kong Ruozeng’s shoulder.

Originally, Kong Ruozeng was concerned. He did not wish to have his mother take this mess upon herself. However, upon thinking about his own future, a determined expression flashed through his eyes. He said, “We can only trouble mother then.”

Then, Kong Ruozeng mentioned this matter to his mother. Originally, his mother was completely against it. Even though his mother did not know about that Chu Feng, and knew that it was because of Chu Feng that her son and husband ended up suffering medicinal punishments, his mother did not want to frame Chu Feng.

However, after Kong Ruozeng implored her nonstop, and even threatened her with his own death, his mother finally agreed to help.

As the saying goes, one’s parents will always worry about oneself. Motherly love... was always the greatest.

Then, Kong Ruozeng and his parents entered the ancient pagoda and found the Utmost Exalted Elder Kong Yuehua.

With Kong Ruozeng’s mother being the one voicing the claims, she declared that Kong Ruozeng had seen Chu Feng in the vicinity of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Once the claim was spoken, it immediately brought forth a huge ruckus.

“Sure enough, it’s that Chu Feng. Our Kong Heavenly Clan treated him as a honored guest, and received him with kind intentions. Yet, he actually wants to seize our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance? This is truly unforgivable!” Many of the elders

present were endlessly furious.

“Indeed, that Chu Feng is very suspicious. However, does he really possess the capabilities to intrude into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, and undo a spirit formation on top of that?” However, there were also people voicing their suspicions to Kong Ruozeng’s mother’s claims.

“It’s better to kill him wrongly than to let the intruder escape. After all, this matter concerns our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance,” Someone said.

“While that is the case, this Chu Feng is no ordinary individual. Right now, he is extremely famous in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and many people know that he is staying in our Kong Heavenly Clan as a guest. If we do not possess concrete evidence, we cannot do anything to him,” Another elder voiced their worry.

“Who cares? Wouldn’t it be fine if we are to find a reason to ask that Chu Feng out? If he is truly still in closed-door training, we can forget about this. However, if he’s not in closed-door training, he must be the intruder of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range,” Someone said.

“No, that is too reckless. There are still a lot of people staying as guests in our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Someone felt that to be inappropriate.

“This won’t do, that won’t do. What do you suggest then?” The two sides started to argue.

“Lady Utmost Exalted Elder, what do you think we should do about this?” At that moment, all of the elders turned their gazes to Kong Yuehua.

A matter such as this was of the utmost importance. When their Clan Chief was not present, the only ones capable of making such a decision were the Utmost Exalted Elders.

## Chapter 2409 – Inheritance Seized

---

“We naturally cannot disrespect our honored guests. Without concrete evidence, it is indeed inappropriate for us to cause a major disturbance. However, I believe that Qiuci should not be lying,” Kong Yuehua said as she looked to Kong Ruozeng’s mother.

“Seniors, this matter is of the utmost importance. This Qiuci would not dare to lie to everyone,” Kong Ruozeng’s mother said.

“That’s right. We have watched over Qiuci since she was a child, we all know Qiuci’s character very well. She would never frame someone,” The elders all felt very confident in the character of Kong Ruozeng’s mother.

“Thus, that Chu Feng is definitely suspicious. However, since it is difficult for us, people of the older generation, to step in, we should have people of the younger generation do the deed.”

“The people of the younger generation are unthoughtful. Even if they’re to truly cause some sort of trouble, I believe that outsiders will not say anything,” As Kong Yuehua spoke, she looked to Kong Ruozeng.

“Lady Utmost Exalted Elder, your intention is... to have Ruozeng go and provoke Chu Feng so as to force him out?” Kong Ruozeng’s father understood Kong Yuehua’s intention.

“Go on ahead. If you are to encounter any problems, I will back you all up,” Kong Yuehua said.

“This junior Kong Ruozeng will definitely not fail to live up to Lady Utmost Exalted Elder’s expectations,” At that moment, Kong Ruozeng revealed an extremely delighted expression.

When he had gone to cause troubles for Chu Feng earlier, even though he had possessed backing, he had still felt somewhat diffident in his heart.

However, it was different this time around. With the Utmost

Exalted Elder Kong Yuehua as his backing, Kong Ruozeng could do whatever he wanted to do; he would no longer have to be afraid anymore.

After the decision was made Kong Yuehua personally gave the order to send away the Kong Heavenly Clan's experts tasked with guarding Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's palace, their residence in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

After all, even if they intended to have Kong Ruozeng, a member of the younger generation, cause troubles for Chu Feng, they could not do it too obviously. They must transfer all of the experts and make others think that Kong Ruozeng was seizing this opportunity to provoke Chu Feng again.

Afterward, Kong Ruozeng directly arrived outside of Chu Feng's palace. This time around, he did not shout from outside. Rather, he directly smashed at the entrance, forcing his way in.

“Boom~~~”

A punch shot forth, sending energy ripples all over. The iron fragments of the entrance gate started to flutter about in midair.

That Kong Ruozeng actually used a martial skill to pulverize the palace's entrance gate.

“Chu Feng, scram the hell out here!!!” Kong Ruozeng shouted loudly as he proceeded into the palace. He already knew where Chu Feng was undergoing closed-door training. Thus, he had a clear-cut purpose when going in there.

“Fuck y-you!” Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared and blocked Kong Ruozeng's path.

This person was naturally Wang Qiang.

“F-fucking hell, h-how fucking un-uneducated are you? Not only a-are you making a h-huge ruckus, y-you've even f-fucking s-smashed a-apart the entrance gate and f-forced your way through?!”



“C-Could it b-be that y-you’ve g-grown a-addicted to the m-medicinal punishment, and w-want to e-experience it again?” Wang Qiang stared at Kong Ruozeng in a very displeased manner.

Even though Wang Qiang was also there as a guest, it remained that the palace was his residence there. As such, he felt extremely displeased to have the entrance gate smashed apart by someone.

“Humph, where is Chu Feng? Tell him to get the hell out here. Today... I insist on challenging him,” Kong Ruozeng said.

“C-Challenge my brother? Y-you t-think someone like you is q-qualified?” Wang Qiang looked at Kong Ruozeng and smiled with contempt. His smile was extremely low and vile, to the point that even bystanders would feel angered by it.

As such, Kong Ruozeng was so furious that his face turned red. He pointed at Wang Qiang and said fiercely, “Scram! Else, do not blame me for being impolite!”

“Impolite? Toward me? Yoh yoh yoh, l-little c-child, d-do you not f-fear that y-your incisors will f-fall off by b-boasting like that?”

“Your g-granddaddy Qiang will be a-able to beat t-trash like you r-rolling on the ground crying f-for mommy with merely one hand,” Wang Qiang said with a laugh.

“You are truly one who refuses a toast only to be forced to drink a forfeit,” As Kong Ruozeng spoke, he raised his arm with the intention to attack Wang Qiang.

“Rumble, rumble, rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, rumbles sounded from the ninth heaven above.

The sound was so resounding that it startled both heaven and earth.

Turning upward, one could see that black clouds flickering with lightning densely covered the sky.

Although the black clouds did not cover a very vast area, the surging black clouds appeared to be composed of an army of a myriad of demons. As the demon army galloped in the sky, one would feel an extremely painful oppressive sensation. It was so frightening that one would feel as if one was suffocating.

As for the lightning flickering within the clouds, it was the main source of the crowd's fears.

That lightning was simply too frightening. It was definitely no ordinary lightning. Rather, it looked like dragons.

Those were dragons of lightning. They possessed boundless power, and were capable of splitting apart heaven and earth, killing all living things.

“What is that?!”

At that moment, Kong Ruozeng, who had been about to attack Wang Qiang, immediately walked out of the palace and looked to the sky.

In all his life, never had he ever seen anything like that. This was simply too terrifying.

“What is going on?!”

In fact, it was not only Kong Ruozeng. The Kong Heavenly Clan's various elders, and even Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu, the two Utmost Exalted Elders guarding the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain, the two True Immortal-level experts, also revealed expressions of unease as they looked to the lightning cloud in the sky.

“Lady Utmost Exalted Elder, this is bad!” The people in the ancient pagoda were also astonished. Those that were observing the situation outside began to run toward Kong Yuehua to report the matter to her.

“What are you all making such a big fuss about?” Kong Yuehua was originally completely focused on staring at the spirit

formation. As such, she did not have the heart to look outside.

“There’s an abnormal sign in the sky. It is likely a calamity appearing above the skies of our Kong Heavenly Clan,” The elders outside said in a frightened manner.

“What?!” Hearing those words, Kong Yuehua hurriedly got up and arrived outside the ancient pagoda.

“That is?!!!” After she saw the lightning clouds deep in the sky, she also revealed an extremely astonished expression.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan started to panic.

The reason for that was because regardless of their age or what sort of cultivation they might possess, they all felt enormous danger from the lightning clouds deep in the sky. It was a sort of danger that they could not withstand.

“That thing...”

However, compared to the others, a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation actually had a completely different expression.

That person was Kong Zheng.

Compared to his clansmen, it was not the first time that he had seen that frightening scene in the sky. Even though the scene was even more frightening than the ones he had seen in the Hundred Refinements Stage, he still involuntarily turned his gaze toward Chu Feng’s residence.

Kong Zheng had suddenly realized that this seemed to not be a coincidence.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a lightning strike suddenly struck down from the black clouds above. It was aimed directly at the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, the hearts of all the people in the Kong

Heavenly Clan sunk to the valley floor.

To them, the lightning striking down from above was not merely lightning. Rather, it was a calamity.

At that moment, it was the descent of a calamity.

“If it’s going to strike that palace, then this abnormal sign will definitely be related to Chu Feng,” Kong Zheng’s eyes were fixed in the direction of the palace that served as Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s residence.

“Rumble~~~”

Finally, that lightning strike landed. However, it did not cause any destruction, nor was anyone injured.

“How could this be?!” As for Kong Zheng, he revealed a completely astonished expression.

The reason for that was because the lightning strike did not land at the palace that served as Chu Feng’s residence. Rather, it landed in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

“Grief Calamity Mountain Range? Could it be... our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance has already been snatched away?”

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s three Utmost Exalted Elders and the many upper echelon elders were all endlessly furious. They clenched their fists in anger.

They had no idea how the Divine Tribulation’s lightning had come about. However, as it landed in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, the first thing that came to their minds was their inheritance.

Thus, they felt that someone must’ve received their Kong Primogenitor’s inheritance, that the abnormal sign was caused by that.

This was something that they could not tolerate. Yet, at that moment, they were powerless to do anything.

In that sort of situation, many of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen wanted to rush into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range and capture that intruder with no regard for their own safety.

However, they were all stopped by Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu.

.....

The truth was, the lightning was indeed aroused from the Grief Calamity Mountain Range and their inheritance had indeed been snatched away.

Merely, that lightning was unrelated to their Kong Primogenator's inheritance.

The reason for that was because that lightning was caused by a single person, Chu Feng.

In the depths of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, inside that palace, Chu Feng was still sitting cross-legged.

However, lightning filled his surroundings. The lightning had penetrated the concealment formation Chu Feng had set up and reached Chu Feng's surroundings. Like blades of lightning, they were penetrating Chu Feng's body nonstop.

The lightning bolts were penetrating his skin and bones, and were even on the verge of penetrating Chu Feng's dantian to permeate his soul.

More and more lightning began to gather. Their aura also grew more and more frightening. Toward the end, it was as if there were countless frightening hands of lightning grabbing onto Chu Feng with the intention to rip him apart.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng's eyes were tightly closed, he was showing a painful expression.

However, he had to grit his teeth and bear the pain. He had to endure this sort of torture.

The reason for that was because he would only be able to reach a breakthrough by enduring such tribulation.

# Chapter 2410 – Continuous Breakthrough

---

Frightening lightning surrounded a single person with the intention to kill, destroy and extinguish that person.

As for this person, he was none other than Chu Feng.

Faced with such a situation, Chu Feng could only endure. He had no other choice.

After all, this was the Divine Tribulation.

If he failed to endure it, even if he managed to survive, he would be seriously injured. In fact, his future prospects would likely end at that point as well.

However, if he was able to endure it, Chu Feng would be able to reach a breakthrough in cultivation.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the frightening lightning started to dissipate. The next moment, the painful expression on Chu Feng’s face grew better, his complexion became rosy, and his aura became more powerful.

He had reached a breakthrough. From rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng had reached a breakthrough to rank eight Half Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng’s eyes were still closed. The martial power within his body was still flowing following a special trajectory, pouring into his dantian and then rushing out.

Chu Feng was attempting to continue to breakthrough. He was attempting to batter the bottleneck to rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng was only concerned about making breakthroughs in cultivation, and had completely forgotten about the power of his Divine Tribulation and the commotion that it might cause.

Even though the Kong Heavenly Clan had not really suffered the attack of the Divine Tribulation, they were still filled with chaos and panic.

When speaking of it, it was quite ironic. The Kong Heavenly Clan was clearly one of the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that possessed the most robust foundations and the strongest strength.

Yet now, they were panic-stricken and restless. Their appearance was as if they were experiencing the arrival of doomsday. It was as if an invisible shadow had enveloped this huge monster that was the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Could it really be that the inheritance has been snatched?”

“But, if the inheritance has been snatched, why would it give rise to such an abnormal sign?” Kong Shunlian did not feel that the lightning strike earlier was caused by their inheritance being snatched.

“We have no idea how powerful Lord Primogenitor was. However, one thing is certain, the inheritance he left behind was definitely extraordinary.”

“Furthermore, the power of our Heavenly Bloodline is related to lightning to begin with. The more dreadful that abnormal sign appears to be, the more it signifies how amazing that inheritance was,” Compared to Kong Shunlian, Kong Moyu was determined that their Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance had been snatched.

By associating the lightning earlier with the still-lingering black clouds in the sky, Kong Moyu was able to imagine how powerful the inheritance was.

The more he thought about it, the more furious he became. With overwhelming anger, he clenched his fists and gnashed his teeth. His killing intent was filling the air in an completely unconcealed manner.



In fact, the people that knew about there being an intruder in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range basically had two different opinions.

They either felt that the lightning was related to the inheritance.

Or they felt that the lightning was unrelated to the inheritance.

However, no one ever thought that this might be the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. In fact... not to mention the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan had never even seen the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique before.

The great majority of them trained in the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique. Even though the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique would also cause its users to receive punishments during their breakthroughs, those punishments would only originate from their own bloodlines.

The punishments from the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique was simply not one that would startle the heaven and earth, not one visible to others and definitely not one that could arouse such a frightening abnormal sign.

Thus, they simply would never imagine that such a frightening abnormal sign was created by the breakthrough of a Heavenly Bloodline possessor.

“Could it be that that thing being related to Chu Feng was merely a coincidence?” At that moment, Kong Zheng, who had suspected the lightning to be related with Chu Feng, was feeling puzzled.

If the frightening lightning being caused by Chu Feng made sense the last time around, then it didn’t make sense this time.

The reason for that was because the location where that lightning struck was truly quite far away from Chu Feng’s residence.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the still-dispersing black clouds that were lingering in the sky suddenly started to gather once again. Together with the gathering of the black clouds, the frightening lightning once again started to gallop through the clouds. Furthermore, it was even mightier this time around.

“It’s here again?!!!”

Even though the lightning had descended upon the Grief Calamity Mountain Range and had not injured anyone from the Kong Heavenly Clan, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan were once again immersed in panic and fear the moment that frightening abnormal sign appeared again.

They had no idea as to exactly what sort of power that Divine Tribulation’s lightning possessed. However, they were certain that the power it possessed was capable of destroying an entire region.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Soon, the Divine Tribulation’s lightning struck down once again. As for its target, it was the Grief Calamity Mountain Range again.

“It actually struck down twice in succession? It’s over, it’s over, the inheritance must’ve been snatched.”

“Damn it! Exactly who is the intruder that actually dared to snatch away our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance?!”

Not only was Kong Moyu furious, he was also feeling very anxious, so anxious that his face was covered with sweat, and his body was restless.

The reason for that was because he had determined with certainty that it was their Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance that was being snatched away by the intruder to have caused that abnormal sign. Merely, he was powerless to do anything in this sort of situation. As such, he would naturally become anxious.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elders, this is bad!”

Suddenly, an elder ran over.

“What’s wrong? What’s happened now?” Kong Moyu asked in an annoyed manner.

“Kong Ruozeng has gone to challenge Chu Feng again. Furthermore, he has smashed apart the palace’s entrance gate and started fighting against that Young Master Wang Qiang,” That elder said.

“What utter impudence!!!” Upon finding out about it, Kong Shunlian was immediately furious. As he spoke, he planned to move to stop it. However, suddenly, his expression changed. He asked, “Didn’t I have people guarding Chu Feng’s residence? How did Kong Ruozeng manage to charge in?”

“This... actually, this is Lady Yuehua’s intention,” That elder replied.

“Elder Yuehua?” After hearing that, not to mention Kong Shunlian, even Kong Moyu revealed a change in expression.

“What is wrong with Yuehua? Does she not know that Chu Feng is an honored guest that Lord Clan Chief personally ordered Elder Shunlian to invite?”

“Earlier, that Kong Ruozeng had already committed a mistake and left behind a very bad impression.”

“Yet now, why did even Elder Yuehua involve herself in this? Could it be that she has gone foolish before such a great catastrophe?” Elder Kong Moyu said in a very displeased manner.

His mood was bad to begin with. Thus, upon hearing the news, he naturally felt even more displeased.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elders, there’s a reason for this,” That elder said with a difficult expression.

“Exactly what is going on?” Kong Shunlian urged.

After being urged by Kong Shunlian, that elder relayed what had

happened to Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu.

“So it’s actually that Chu Feng! What an utter ungrateful bastard! Our Kong Heavenly Clan treated him so well, yet he actually wanted to steal our Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance,” After hearing about what had happened, the killing intent Kong Moyu was emitting grew even stronger.

“Brother Moyu, have you gone muddled? What sort of place is the Grief Calamity Mountain Range? How could Chu Feng possibly be able to enter it?” Kong Shunlian said.

“But, isn’t that Chu Feng in closed-door training? Why would he appear in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range’s vicinity?”

“Don’t you tell me that Qiuci is lying so as to help her son and husband obtain revenge.”

“We have watched Qiuci grow up. We know very well what sort of character she is.”

“In the past, even if she was bullied by others, she would not be willing to tell on them. How could someone as kind-hearted as her possibly do something like lying?” Kong Moyu said.

“That child Qiuci will naturally not lie. Merely... it’s impossible for Chu Feng to be able to enter the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Furthermore, even if he did enter it, he would not be capable of opening that spirit formation,” Kong Shunlian said.

“This matter is of the utmost importance. Neither you nor I can determine the truth of this matter. However, since that Chu Feng is suspicious, we absolutely cannot let him get away.”

“I feel that Elder Yuehua’s decision to have a member of the younger generation act is very correct. If Chu Feng is really undergoing closed-door training, it would mean that Qiuci is lying. At that time, even if you didn’t say anything, I would definitely not spare her.”

“However, if that Chu Feng is not in closed-door training, it

would mean that he must've entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. In that case, we absolutely cannot allow him to leave here alive," Kong Moyu said.

"Moyu, I understand your state of mind. The interest of our clan surpasses everything else."

"However, it was I who invited little friend Chu Feng over here. At that time, I said that I would guarantee his safety. Even if what is happening today concerns our clan's inheritance, I still cannot go against my promise."

"Thus, I cannot watch with folded arms."

After he finished saying those words, Kong Shunlian soared into the sky and began to fly toward Chu Feng's residence.

"Truly foolish," Seeing that, Kong Moyu actually went chasing after Kong Shunlian. The two Utmost Exalted Elders guarding the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range actually left at the same time.

# Chapter 2411 – Rank Nine Half Martial Ancestor

---

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

At that moment, explosions were resounding nonstop outside of the palace that served as Chu Feng’s residence.

They were caused by the battle between Wang Qiang and Kong Ruozeng.

Very rarely would battles occur in the Kong Heavenly Clan. Even when sparring among the younger generation, they would do so in special sites.

As for that place, it was a residence for guests. As such, there would hardly ever be any battles in that place to begin with. As such, the sudden appearance of a battle inevitably caused countless people to gather and watch in a circle.

At that moment, not only were there a lot of people from the Kong Heavenly Clan gathered outside the palace, there were a lot of guests who had come to pay their respects to Chu Feng.

Perhaps it might be because the Divine Tribulation’s lightning had struck down twice but caused no destruction, that the crowd was no longer worried about the Divine Tribulation’s lightning. As such, they began to eagerly enjoy the lively show.

“As expected of an extraordinary genius. This Wang Qiang is the one that obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance with Chu Feng, right?”

“Amazing indeed. Judging by their appearances, this Wang Qiang should be much younger than that member of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation. Yet, his cultivation is much stronger. If it wasn’t for that Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation possessing a Heavenly Bloodline, he would simply be no match for that Wang Qiang.”

“Amazing, truly amazing. As expected of a genius known to be able to contend against that Young Master Li Ming.”

The surrounding crowd was praising nonstop as they looked at the battle between Wang Qiang and Kong Ruozeng.

However, the great majority of them were praising Wang Qiang. Their praise could even be said to be unending.

“You bastard, you actually concealed your cultivation?” At that moment, Kong Ruozeng had unleashed both his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, the signature abilities of Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

At that moment, his cultivation had increased from rank nine Half Martial Ancestor to rank two Martial Ancestor.

Adding on his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, the current Kong Ruozeng was truly powerful.

However, he was unable to defeat Wang Qiang.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank one Martial Ancestor. Rather, he was a rank two Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Wang Qiang also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation.

“C-concealed my c-cultivation?”

“Humph, y-your granddaddy I am n-never one to conceal m-my cultivation. I-it’s merely t-that your granddaddy I m-managed to r-reach a breakthrough during m-my closed-door t-training,” Wang Qiang said with a beaming smile.

Wang Qiang was not lying. He had indeed reached a breakthrough in closed-door training. After all, he possessed that spittoon that contained comprehensions toward the way of martial cultivation. As long as he comprehended the contents within the

spittoon, he would be able to successfully reach a breakthrough. Thus, Wang Qiang's rank two Martial Ancestor-level cultivation had been obtained through the martial cultivation spittoon.

That said, Kong Ruozeng did not believe Wang Qiang in the slightest. He mocked and ridiculed, "Reached a breakthrough in closed-door training? You've only been in closed-door training for a short period of time. Yet you're telling me you managed to reach rank two Martial Ancestor from rank one Martial Ancestor in such a short period of time?"

"Hehe, h-h-how could m-mere t-trash like you p-possibly understand the l-loneliness of a g-genius like y-your granddaddy I?" Wang Qiang mocked and ridiculed back. He was mentally attacking Kong Ruozeng nonstop. While he was doing that, he did not stop his onslaught of attacks either.

At that moment, both fighters were holding Incomplete Ancestral Armaments. They both possessed the same level of cultivation and the same heaven-defying battle power. As such, the two of them fought to a wild frenzy and were unable to determine a victor.

"Kong Ruozeng, stop immediately!!!"

Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. It was Kong Shunlian.

Once Kong Shunlian arrived on the scene, the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan immediately felt enormous veneration for him.

They had all heard of Kong Ruozeng being punished with the medicinal punishment after provoking Chu Feng earlier.

Thus, they knew that Kong Shunlian shielded Chu Feng enormously. And now, with his arrival, Kong Ruozeng would likely end up suffering.

"Brother Shunlian, it is merely a spar between members of the



younger generation. There's no need for you to be this furious, no?" Right at that moment, Kong Moyu also arrived. And stopped Kong Shunlian.

Like Kong Yuehua, Kong Moyu also suspected that Chu Feng was the intruder. Since Kong Yuehua had plotted this, he would naturally not want Kong Shunlian to destroy their plan.

"Hehe, t-this senior, i-it's fine, we are merely sparring," Wang Qiang said to Kong Shunlian with a beaming smile.

"Look, this little friend here has no objection to it. As such, why must you insist on obstructing them? A spar between people of the younger generation is nothing major to begin with," Kong Moyu said to Kong Shunlian.

However, once Wang Qiang said his following words, that Kong Moyu's expression turned ugly.

"R-rest as-assured, I will n-not beat him to death; at the v-very most, I'll beat him till he p-pisses and shits himself, and is unable to p-provide for himself," Wang Qiang said with a complacent expression.

Wang Qiang had totally not considered this place to be the Kong Heavenly Clan, nor did he put the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan in his eyes at all. He was unhesitant to say anything he wanted. This was who Wang Qiang was.

"You're fucking spouting bullshit!" Kong Ruozeng was already furious to begin with. Thus, he overflowed with immense anger the moment Wang Qiang dared to insult him before their Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders. He unleashed a fatal attack at Wang Qiang. This was simply not a sparring match at all; he was simply trying to take Wang Qiang's life.

"Kong Yao, Qiuci, what is going on here?" Seeing that he could not stop this battle, Kong Shunlian turned his gaze to Kong Ruozeng's parents.

In response, Kong Ruozeng's parents hurriedly sent voice transmissions to Kong Shunlian to explain what had happened.

In actuality, Kong Shunlian already knew what had happened.

"I will only tell you all one thing. Little friend Chu Feng is an honored guest invited over by our Kong Heavenly Clan. Today, if you all are to have wrongly accused him, I will absolutely not let you get away with it," Kong Shunlian said through his own voice transmission. That voice transmission entered only Kong Ruozeng's parents' ears.

Upon hearing those words, Kong Ruozeng's parents immediately shivered. Even their hearts started to tremble.

Killing intent. The two of them actually felt killing intent from Kong Shunlian's words.

This was the first time in their entire lives that they had seen Kong Shunlian targeting his killing intent at his own clansmen, and at them, to top it off.

As matters stood, they finally realized how serious the situation was. However, as they'd already gone too far, there was no way for them to back out. They could only insist that Chu Feng had appeared at the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Fortunately, they had Kong Yuehua standing behind them. That was why they were still able to withstand Kong Shunlian's pressure.

Furthermore, as he was stopped by Kong Moyu, Kong Shunlian was unable to stop this farce, and could only remain as a spectator.

Merely, he no longer possessed any confidence. He thought in his heart, 'Little friend Chu Feng, I hope that the intruder is not you. Else, even this old man will not be able to protect you.'

As Wang Qiang and Kong Ruozeng continued to remain locked in battle, more and more people arrived to spectate the battle.

Although there were many guests who felt that it was inappropriate for a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation to provoke Wang Qiang like this, it remained that this was a showdown between geniuses. Thus, as they took pleasure in watching the excitement, they did not say anything, and instead grew more interested the more they watched.

However, Chu Feng had no idea about this battle and crisis.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still inside the palace in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

He had opened his eyes. As for his aura, it was actually even stronger than before. He was already no longer a rank eight Half Martial Ancestor, but instead a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

Chu Feng had managed to make two successive breakthroughs, and became an actual rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, an actual peak Half Martial Ancestor.

"Chu Feng, why aren't you continuing to attempt to break through? Could it be that the engravings containing the profoundness of martial cultivation that old fellow spent so much time engraving are only sufficient for you to reach rank nine Half Martial Ancestor?" Her Lady Queen asked nervously upon seeing that Chu Feng had stood up and seemed like he did not plan to continue to attempt to break through.

"I've already made two successive breakthroughs, is that still not enough? This here is even more powerful than what my Chu Heavenly Clan's senior left behind," Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was quite satisfied with the result.

"But, that stutterer managed to break through to the Martial Ancestor realm. Furthermore, he even left behind that martial cultivation spittoon. That thing is extremely powerful; he might even be able to reach another breakthrough after comprehending it."

“You are simply too foolish. He offered you the martial cultivation spittoon, so you should’ve accepted it. If you had accepted it, you would be a Martial Ancestor now too,” Her Lady Queen said.

“It’s enough. My dear Eggy, my dear Queen, that is my brother’s possession, how could I accept it?” Chu Feng smiled and shook his head.

He knew very well that Her Lady Queen was thinking for his sake. However, her concern had reached an excessive state.

That is, as long as it was beneficial to Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen would completely disregard the lives and deaths of others.

This sort of consideration was not something that ordinary people could have. Chu Feng was actually very emotionally moved by it. Merely, he also possessed his own principles. That is, he could not touch what was useful to his brother.

“What is with that old fart Kai Hong anyways? Isn’t the disparity for the treasures in these two places too enormous?” Her Lady Queen felt aggrieved, and sighed. She was truly angry because the benefits Chu Feng had obtained was inferior to what Wang Qiang had obtained.

“Well then, Milady Queen, it is time for us to leave this place,” Chu Feng comforted Eggy with a smile. As he spoke, he planned to leave.

“Young man, don’t leave.”

Suddenly, a voice sounded from behind Chu Feng.

“Who? Who is speaking?”

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. The reason for that was because that voice was very gloomy. Merely by hearing that voice, Chu Feng felt as if his hair was standing on end.

Turning around, Chu Feng felt even greater unease.

The reason for that was because he discovered that there was nothing behind him at all.

“Don’t be afraid. I am like you, an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Right at that moment, that gloomy voice sounded again.

## Chapter 2412 – Hero City, Ying Mingchao

---

“Don’t be scared, I am like you, an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Right at that moment, that gloomy voice sounded again.

This time around, Chu Feng was able to be certain of the location where the voice had come from. However, even after using his Heaven’s Eyes, that powerful observation ability, Chu Feng was unable to find anyone at that location.

“Exactly who are you? Why do you say that I am an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng asked with a stern voice.

“In that case, you’re not an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan. If that’s the case, I cannot allow you to leave here alive,” After saying those words, that voice sounded once again.

Merely, this time around, a dense killing intent and boundless oppressive might accompanied the voice. That oppressive might was too powerful. It had managed to instantly envelop Chu Feng.

Before that oppressive might, Chu Feng was like a fallen leaf before a violent gale; he simply have no way to withstand it.

“True Immortal?” Chu Feng subconsciously felt that this unknown individual was at least a True Immortal-level expert.

Furthermore, this individual was not formed through a spirit formation. Rather, he was an actual human.

No, to be exact, this individual was no longer human. His cultivation had reached the True Immortal level, and thus surpassed the limits of humanity, becoming an Immortal. An actual Immortal had appeared before Chu Feng’s eyes.

However, this place was the place containing the Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance. Yet, there was someone in this place. In that case, why were the treasures here left completely intact?

Could it be that this individual was like Grandmaster Kai Hong,

who had discovered this place but did not have the intention to take away the treasures, and instead decided to leave it for others?

But, that shouldn't be the case. This person had declared himself to be the Kong Heavenly Clan's enemy, and even revealed killing intent toward Chu Feng.

"Indeed, the Kong Heavenly Clan and I are not enemies. However, judging from the situation at hand, we are no different from being enemies," Chu Feng said.

"Why do you say that?" That voice asked.

"Because I've obtained the treasures here. It is equivalent to snatching away their inheritance. I believe that if they were to know about this matter, they would definitely not let me get away," Chu Feng continued to explain.

It was not that Chu Feng was afraid after encountering a True Immortal-level expert. Rather, what Chu Feng said was the truth.

"You should've said that from the very start. If you did, you wouldn't have forced this great sir to reveal his might. I think that to be the case too. After all, the Kong Heavenly Clan is a group of narrow-minded individuals. They will definitely not spare you."

As that voice was heard again, the killing intent disappeared following it. Merely, that oppressive might still enveloped Chu Feng, sealing his path to leave.

"Senior, since you do not want me to leave, it seems like you have something you wish to say to me. In that case, can you reveal yourself?" Chu Feng asked.

"Brat, it seems that you are a smart person. Since you're a smart person, you should be able to think of the reason why this great sir is not revealing himself," That voice said.

"Could it be that senior is unable to reveal yourself?" Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. This great sir is currently without the freedom to act independently,” That voice said.

“Then, may I know who senior might be, and why you’ve come to this place?” Chu Feng asked again.

“You must’ve heard this great sir’s name before. Thus, I urge you best prepare yourself, for you will likely be scared witless after hearing my great name,” The voice said in a very proud manner.

“Who is this guy? He’s too arrogant, no?” Her Lady Queen pouted her lips with an expression of contempt.

As for Chu Feng, he had a smile on his face as he courteously said, “Senior, please inform me of your identity.”

“This great sir is called Ying Mingchao. I am the Hero City’s City Master,” That voice said.

“Ying Mingchao? Hero City?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression turned sluggish. The reason for that was because he had truly never heard of that name or that place before.

“Boy, what the fuck is with your expression?! You couldn’t possibly have never heard of this great sir’s name before, right?!” Seeing Chu Feng’s dazed expression, the voice was immediately agitated. Evidently, he realized that Chu Feng might not know of him.

Merely, he had already boasted of his greatness earlier. If Chu Feng really didn’t know him, he would find himself in a very awkward situation.

At that moment, Chu Feng laughed awkwardly. Then, he said, “Senior, to tell the truth, this junior is not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, I have only been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a short period of time. Thus, I know very little about the people and events of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“So that’s the case. You’re a member of the younger generation



from an Upper Realm. No wonder, no wonder. If that's the case, it is normal for you to not know about this great sir," The man who declared himself to be Ying Mingchao had determined Chu Feng to be someone from the Upper Realms.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to explain this misunderstanding. Instead, he asked, "Then, senior, might you be willing to explain to this junior?"

"That's of course not an issue," Ying Mingchao was very frank and straightforward. He began to tell Chu Feng about himself.

After hearing about it, Chu Feng found out that this Ying Mingchao was truly a top existence.

He could be said to be the person in the several tens of thousands of years between Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong to possess the greatest talent for martial cultivation. He was someone who had been very likely to become the number one expert of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

This Ying Mingchao had not belonged to any powers, and had originally been a bandit.

Merely, although he was a bandit, he would never bully the commoners. Instead, he was someone who would perform righteous acts, and rob the rich to help the poor.

This bandit Ying Mingchao possessed extraordinary talent. His cultivation also rapidly increased. As such, his banditry grew more and more grandiose.

By relying on his extraordinary abilities, he turned from a nameless bandit into a widely famous hero in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Furthermore, as he possessed a straightforward and frank temperament, he managed to befriend a group of like-minded individuals. Furthermore, those friends of his were all extraordinary individuals.

This group of people were all talented individuals that did not belong to any power. They gathered together, settled in one location and established the so-called Hero City.

As for this Hero City, it would only recruit the able and virtuous individuals of the world. Regardless of their cultivation, as long as they wanted to join them, they would be allowed to join their Hero City.

However, the Hero City had a strict rule. That was that the people of the Hero City were not allowed to willfully slaughter the innocent, not allowed to bully the weak, not allowed to bring about misfortunes upon others, and not allowed to ignore others in need.

Those who went against this rule would all be killed without exception.

In short, this Hero City was a power that would root out the strong and support the weak. They did not let down the title of 'hero.'

As for Ying Mingchao, he was a cultivation genius. When he was only a thousand years old, he became a True Immortal-level expert and was deemed to be the existence that was most hopeful to stand at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm after Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong.

This also caused Hero City to grow and bustle with publicity. Furthermore, as they became very popular, Hero City grew larger and larger.

Everyone felt that Hero City had become another tier one power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, they felt that it would surpass the Kong Heavenly Clan, Zhou Heavenly Clan, Immortal Sword School, and Buddha's Heavenly Temple to become the strongest power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Hero City was actually that famous. In that case, I shouldn’t have never heard of it,” Chu Feng said.

“Boy, you’re thinking that this great sir is lying to you?”

“You can go and make inquiries about me. When have I, Ying Mingchao, ever lied? When have I ever boasted? I am someone who says one thing and means just that. I am someone who will always keep my word,” Ying Mingchao had a very annoyed tone to his voice. In fact, there was even a trace of agitation. It could be seen that he was very displeased with how Chu Feng questioned his words.

“Senior, your strength is before me. How could this junior suspect you of lying?”

“However, this junior has never before heard of your accomplishments. Furthermore, it is also true that I’ve never heard of the Hero City.”

“That is why it is suspicious. Thus... might this be related to the reason why you’re here?” Chu Feng asked.

“It seems that my Hero City is already no longer present,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, that Ying Mingchao’s voice immediately grew downcast. Then, he suddenly laughed bitterly and said, “Kong Heavenly Clan, Zhou Heavenly Clan, you all are truly ruthless.”

## Chapter 2413 – Taboo Technique

---

“Senior, exactly what happened?” Chu Feng asked. He had realized that this Ying Mingchao seemed to really possess enormous hatred against the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Didn’t you ask me why I would be here? This is all forced by the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Ying Mingchao said.

Then, Ying Mingchao began to narrate what had happened to Chu Feng in full detail.

Over a thousand years ago, Ying Mingchao and his Hero City were most flourishing.

The Hero City of that time not only possessed their own territory and range of influence, they also possessed some remnants.

Ying Mingchao had just left a remnant with a group of experts. Although he was exhausted at that time, he was very delighted at being able to successfully obtain benefits from that remnant.

Prompted by a sudden impulse, Ying Mingchao decided to bring his brothers with him to enjoy some wine.

It just so happened that he encountered the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chiefs.

The two clan chiefs insisted on inviting Ying Mingchao to be a guest at the Kong Heavenly Clan. They even told him that the Kong Heavenly Clan possessed great wine that had been kept in storage for ten thousand years.

As Ying Mingchao and his brothers were all people who were fond of drinking, they were naturally prompted by the promise of good wine. Furthermore, as the two clan chiefs were very eager, they found it hard to refuse them. Thus, they arrived at the Kong Heavenly Clan.

However, never did they expect that invitation to be a trap.

It turned out that the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan were afraid that Ying Mingchao would continue to mature and one day become the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's overlord. Thus, they wanted to kill Ying Mingchao before he could mature.

When Ying Mingchao found out what they wanted to do, it was already too late. All of his brothers that had accompanied him to the Kong Heavenly Clan were killed. He himself was also unable to defeat the joint forces of the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan's clan chiefs.

With no other option, Ying Mingchao had no choice but to attempt to escape. However, the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan had already been prepared, and blocked off all his routes of escape. In the end, Ying Mingchao had escaped into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Unfortunately, he had triggered a slaughtering formation, and was sucked into it. The slaughtering formation was so powerful that it was capable of killing him.

With no other option, Ying Mingchao used a taboo technique. This taboo technique that he used was able to prevent him from being killed by the slaughtering formation.

That taboo technique of his was very powerful. After using it, Ying Mingchao's body disappeared. Although it didn't truly disappear, it would make it so that the great majority of the spirit formations became unable to detect him, and no eyes could see him.

However, since it was a taboo technique, it would naturally also possess a very serious side effect. That side effect was that, he would no longer be able to move. Unless he was to undo the taboo technique, he would not be able to move a single step.

Luckily, Ying Mingchao was not in the slaughtering formation the entire time. The reason for that was because within the depths

of the slaughtering formation was a teleportation formation. Thus, when Ying Mingchao came in contact with the teleportation formation, he was sent to this place.

Merely, after Ying Mingchao arrived, the side effect completely burst forth. As such, Ying Mingchao ended up being trapped there.

“It seems like one can reach this place should one be able to survive the slaughtering formations. This place’s trial is truly interesting,” After finding out about Ying Mingchao’s experience, Chu Feng understood the design Kong Yingyi had toward this place.

Although those slaughtering formations were very dangerous, they actually served as a shortcut to the palace. As long as one could survive through a slaughtering formation, they would be able to arrive at that place. However, evidently, over all these years, Ying Mingchao was the only one that managed to survive.

However, it was very unfortunate for Ying Mingchao. Due to the fact that he had used the taboo technique, even though he had managed to reach the location where his enemy’s treasures were contained, he was unable to bring any away with him.

“Logically, after senior used your taboo technique, you should not only be unable to move, but also become unable to speak or use your oppressive might, no?” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right. I have been trapped in here for over a thousand years. Although the side effect of my taboo technique has gradually weakened, I am still unable to leave this place.”

“Boy, think about it. A person being trapped in one place for over a thousand years. There is no one to speak to him, and even if he is tired, he cannot change his position. Furthermore, there is nothing to eat and drink. Merely by thinking about it, one can imagine how painful it is.”

“Oh, that’s right. Do you have anything to eat? Wine, that’s

right, wine, boy, do you have any wine with you?” Ying Mingchao suddenly asked.

“I do,” Chu Feng took out some food and a jug of good wine from his Cosmos Sack.

“Boy, you actually really carry wine around with you? Quickly, quickly, quickly give it to me, give it to me,” After seeing the drinks and wine in Chu Feng’s hands, Ying Mingchao became incomparably excited.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to see Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng was able to faintly feel Ying Mingchao’s gaze. At that moment, Ying Mingchao was most definitely staring at Chu Feng’s food and wine like a starved tiger on the verge of death encountering a little sheep.

Chu Feng walked over to where Ying Mingchao was. He was not afraid. The reason for that was because if Ying Mingchao wanted to do something to him, there would be no way for Chu Feng to survive.

After Chu Feng arrived before Ying Mingchao, he asked, “Senior, since you’re unable to move, how are you to eat? You couldn’t possibly be planning to have this junior feed you, right?”

“Get out of here! If you were a woman, it would be fine for you to feed me. Yet, you, a grown man, want to feed me? This great sir does not have that sort of indulgence.”

“Although this great sir is unable to move, I possess cultivation. Merely by controlling my oppressive might, I am able to provide for myself,” At the same time Ying Mingchao said those words, a burst of oppressive might arrived before Chu Feng. That oppressive might took away the food and wine Chu Feng held in his hand.

“Since you’re able to use your oppressive might to handle the food, why do you still want me to bring them over?” Chu Feng

asked in a slightly dissatisfied manner.

“After all is said and done, this great sir still does not possess liberty. While using my oppressive might to kill others is something doable, to operate it for a task like handling food is still quite troublesome. If you’re too far away, I fear that I might make a mistake and scatter my wine.”

“Woah! It’s been over a thousand years! It’s been over a thousand years since I last smelled the fragrance of wine! This is truly the most aromatic smell in the entire world!” After Ying Mingchao finished saying those words, gulping sounds could be heard nonstop. Likely, Ying Mingchao had begun his wine drinking.

“Boy, is there any more wine? Come, accompany this great sir in drinking,” Ying Mingchao asked.

“I do, I have a lot,” Chu Feng took out over a hundred jugs of wine.

“Woah! Boy, you actually carry this much wine with you?!” Upon seeing those jugs of wine, Ying Mingchao grew even more excited and emotional.

“When outside, one must always prepare a lot of good wine just in case the situation calls for it.” Chu Feng said with a smile. As he spoke, he sat cross-legged on the ground and opened a jug of wine. He said, “Senior, this junior offers you a toast.”

“Very well. You’re frank and straightforward. Boy, I admire you. Come, drink,” Ying Mingchao said excitedly.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to see Ying Mingchao, he was able to see Ying Mingchao controlling the jug of wine with his oppressive might so as to toast with him.

“Drink,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he gulped the jug of wine in his hand down in one go.

“Ahh, rejuvenating,” Ying Mingchao gulped down his jug of wine. However, he was not yet content. Using his oppressive



might, he directly opened two jugs of wine.

As for the food that Chu Feng gave him, he did not bother to take a single bite. Sure enough, this Ying Mingchao was a drunkard. His love for wine surpassed everything else.

“Senior, it’s time that we move on to proper business. For you to want me to stay, it should be because you hope that I will be able to help you, right? What must I do to help you? You can go ahead and tell me,” Chu Feng said to Ying Mingchao.

Chu Feng was unable to see Ying Mingchao. Thus, he knew that Ying Mingchao’s taboo technique must be extremely powerful.

Not to mention that Chu Feng would not be able to bring him away, it would likely be very difficult for Chu Feng to help Ying Mingchao even though he was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Since Chu Feng had no idea how he was to help Ying Mingchao, he had no choice but to ask Ying Mingchao about it. He hoped that Ying Mingchao, the person who used the taboo technique, knew how to undo the taboo technique.

“We’re enjoying ourselves right now, there’s no need to rush. Come boy, accompany this great sir in drinking some more,” A jug of opened wine flew toward Chu Feng.

It turned out that Ying Mingchao had opened two jugs of wine because he had prepared one of them for Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2414 – Deceive The Heavens To Cross The Sea

---

Chu Feng accepted the wine, but did not drink it. Instead, he said, “Senior, truth be told, this junior is unable to stay here for a long time. If there’s anything that I can help senior with, I hope that senior will tell me directly, so that I can try my best to help.”

“However, if this junior is truly unable to help senior, I hope that senior will let this junior leave.”

“The reason for that is because I am not the only one to have come to the Kong Heavenly Clan this time around. I have a brother that is still currently in the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“It’s very possible that the matter regarding me entering the Grief Calamity Mountain Range has been exposed. I fear that it will become dangerous for my brother if I stay here for too long.”

“Oh?” Hearing those words, Ying Mingchao also put his jug of wine down. He said, “Since that’s the case, I will tell you frankly.”

“The side effect of my taboo technique is very powerful. It has been over a thousand years already, yet I’ve only managed to recover this much of my freedom. I have no idea how long it will take for me to recover my freedom completely.”

“As for you, you will not be able to help me. There is only a single person in the entire Hundred Refinements ordinary Realm that can help me.”

“Go find that person, and tell her that I am trapped here. She will definitely come save me.”

“Of course, that’s assuming she’s still alive,” As he said those words, Ying Mingchao’s tone grew sentimental.

His current emotions were understandable. After all, from his words, Chu Feng was able to tell that that person was the only

person capable of helping him; she was his sole hope. Furthermore, it seemed that the two of them possessed very deep sentiments.

“Who is she?” Chu Feng asked.

“Go to the Demon Elimination Cave and search for Zi Xunyi,” Yin Mingchao said.

“Is that place easy to find?” Chu Feng asked.

“You can go and make inquiries about the Demon Elimination Cave. I believe the great majority of people know where it is. As long as she is still alive, she will definitely be in the Demon Elimination Cave.”

“Merely, the Demon Elimination Cave is not an easy place to travel to. It is filled with traps, mechanisms and slaughtering formations from the Ancient Era. I will tell you a route. By following this route, you will be able to reach the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave,” Then, Ying Mingchao began to tell Chu Feng the route that would allow him to avoid all the traps, mechanisms and slaughtering formations.

“Boy, if you are able to save me from here, I promise you glory, splendor, wealth and rank. I will recognize you as my brother. No one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will dare to bully you again,” Ying Mingchao said to Chu Feng.

“Even if senior didn’t promise me that, I would still do my best to help you,” Chu Feng said.

“Why’s that?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“For us to encounter one another here is fate. Furthermore, senior has trusted me like this. Merely by the trust senior has in me, this junior should help senior the best I can,” Chu Feng said.

“Great! You are truly frank and straightforward. Merely by those words you said and this wine you have left for me, even if you decide not to help me, I should still reward you.”

“Unfortunately, my entire body is restricted by my taboo technique. Even the treasures I have on me are restricted by it, causing me to be unable to give them to you.”

“However, I dare to guarantee that once I manage to undo this binding, I will definitely present with you a satisfactory treasure,” Ying Mingchao said.

“This junior appreciates senior’s regard.”

“However, as human life is beyond value, I cannot disregard my brother’s safety. If senior has nothing else, this junior shall take his leave now,” Chu Feng said.

“I have nothing else that I need you to do. Go on ahead and leave. Oh, that’s right...”

“You must be careful,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Definitely,” Chu Feng clasped his fist respectfully and then began to walk towards the exit.

However, after Chu Feng arrived at the entrance to that long passage, he did not directly leave.

“Why are you stopping?” Her Lady Queen asked in a confused manner.

“It is very possible that I have already exposed myself. It might be possible that the Kong Heavenly Clan has begun to suspect me. If I am to leave like this, it will be very difficult for me to escape. I might even end up implicating Wang Qiang,” Chu Feng said.

“The situation at hand is already like this, there’s nothing that you can do,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No, there might be a way to save this,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up a spirit formation.

Soon, Chu Feng finished setting up his spirit formation. It was actually a small humanoid. To be exact, it was a spirit body.

It was only half a foot tall, and possessed a translucent body. It

did not possess a distinct outline. However, it possessed an aura very similar to that of Chu Feng.

“You’re planning to use this spirit formation to fool them?” Her Lazy Queen came to a sudden realization.

“Hopefully it’ll work,” Chu Feng placed the small spirit formation humanoid into his sleeve. Then, he used the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation to conceal himself. Only then did he step out.

The next moment, from the location where Chu Feng had entered, the spirit formation gate in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range slowly emerged from the ground. Then, it opened by itself.

Soon, Chu Feng flew out from the gate. After he came out, he tossed out the small spirit formation humanoid he held in his hand.

“Buzz~~~”

Light flickered. That spirit formation humanoid started to rapidly grow in size. Soon, it was as large as Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did not stop. Instead, he rapidly rushed toward the Grief Calamity Mountain Range’s entrance. He had to return to his residence before his spirit formation humanoid disappeared.

.....

Due to the fact that the frightening black clouds and lightning in the sky had already dissipated, Kong Yuehua and the others had already returned to the ancient pagoda.

As this matter concerned their Kong Heavenly Clan’s inheritance, Kong Yuehua did not dare to show any negligence. As such, her gaze was fixed onto the spirit formation that could bring her news of the situation inside the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

“He’s here, he’s here again!”

Suddenly, Kong Yuehua's expression changed enormously.

She had managed to detect from the spirit formation in the ancient pagoda that the intruder had reappeared. Merely, this time around, the intruder had directly revealed his location.

“Sure enough, he's alive. Could it be that the abnormal sign earlier was truly caused by him? Did he really manage to obtain the inheritance Lord Primogenitor left for our Kong Heavenly Clan's descendants?!” Kong Yuehua grew even more worried.

However, she had no idea that the existence that she was seeing in her spirit formation right now was actually the spirit formation humanoid Chu Feng had set up.

As for Chu Feng, even though he was still in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, due to the fact that he was using the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, the spirit formation Kong Yuehua was observing was simply unable to detect Chu Feng's current position or his overall aura.

Of course, even though Chu Feng possessed the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, the spirit formation Kong Yuehua was observing him from was still capable of capturing Chu Feng. However, that spirit formation was only capable of displaying that someone had entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, and not how many people had entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

With that being the case, Chu Feng's spirit formation humanoid actually ended up being effective.

What Chu Feng was planning to do right now was to deceive the heavens to cross the sea. He was planning to have the spirit formation humanoid replace him and make everyone think that the spirit formation humanoid was him.

As for his actual self, even if he were to leave the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan would

likely not be able to detect him. The reason for that was because his humanoid spirit formation would continue to remain in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range for some time.

.....

At the same time. The battle between Wang Qiang and Kong Ruozeng was still going on.

The two of them had unleashed all of their abilities. However, they were still unable to determine a victor.

“Wang Qiang, admit defeat right away. Else, I will no longer hold back,” Kong Ruozeng said to Wang Qiang.

“Get the fuck o-out of here. I-I’ve seen shameless, b-but I’ve never met someone a-as shameless as you.”

“Y-you’re speaking a-as if you’ve been g-going easy on me. I-If you c-can’t win, th-then go ahead and say so. Y-yet, you want me to a-admit defeat? H-how shameless c-could you get?” Wang Qiang spat toward Kong Ruozeng.

Kong Ruozeng’s body shifted, and he easily dodged Wang Qiang’s spit. However, at that moment, his eyes had turned crimson red.

The next moment, Kong Ruozeng’s body started to emit crimson gaseous flames. His crimson gaseous flames interweaved together with his Thunder Armor. It was a very abnormal sight.

“This guy,” At that moment, Wang Qiang’s gaze also turned serious.

Although Kong Ruozeng’s current cultivation was on par with Wang Qiang’s, both being rank two Martial Ancestors, he had managed to instantly increase his battle power by a lot.

“Rouzens, he...” Seeing that scene, compared to the others, Kong Ruozeng’s parents grew nervous.

They knew that Kong Ruozeng had been prepared to force Chu feng out. As for his preparations, it was that he had hidden a

forbidden medicine in his mouth.

That forbidden medicine was very precious; it could even be called a treasure. Although it would allow its user to increase their battle power for a short period of time after using it, one could not avoid the pain of the backlash from that forbidden medicine.

As for the backlash from this forbidden medicine, it was not something to belittle.

“Receive my attack.”

Kong Ruozeng moved. Holding his Incomplete Ancestral Armament in hand, he carried it with his overwhelming might. Like an Ancient Era’s ferocious beast, Kong Ruozeng charged toward Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang hurriedly unleashed his own attack to confront Kong Ruozeng. However, Wang Qiang’s counterattack was easily broken by Kong Ruozeng. With his Incomplete Ancestral Armament in hand, Kong Ruozeng arrived before Wang Qiang and pierced his weapon into Wang Qiang’s left shoulder.

“Puu~~~”

Blood splattered everywhere as the weapon penetrated his body.

Like a nail, the weapon Kong Ruozeng held in his hand penetrated Wang Qiang’s left shoulder and then ruthlessly nailed Wang Qiang into the ice-cold floor.



## Chapter 2415 – Ice-cold Killing Intent

---

“The red gaseous flames emitted by that member of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation are strange.”

“It seems like he has used a forbidden medicine.”

Although Kong Ruozeng had managed to prevail against Wang Qiang now, the bystanders were all disapproving of him.

All those that were able to be guests in the Kong Heavenly Clan were people with status and position. As such, they were also people with a lot of experience and knowledge.

Thus, they were all able to tell that Kong Ruozeng’s sudden increase in battle power was most likely due to him using a forbidden medicine. To win against one’s opponent by relying on a forbidden medicine, that was truly too shameful.

At that moment, not to mention the others, even some of the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan who had no idea what was going on felt very humiliated by Kong Ruozeng’s action.

At that moment, all kinds of discussions could be heard. The majority of them were voicing their disgust toward Kong Ruozeng’s actions.

However, Kong Ruozeng acted as if he couldn’t hear the discussions of the crowd. He looked at Wang Qiang and spoke with a proud and arrogant tone, “Admit defeat.”

“A-admit d-defeat?”

“G-go f-fuck yo-yourself!”

Not only did Wang Qiang not admit defeat, he instead spat a mouthful of spit at Kong Ruozeng again.

This time around, Kong Ruozeng was caught off guard. He only managed to dodge a portion of the spit, while the remainder landed on his clothes.

“I’m telling you to admit defeat!” As Kong Ruozeng spoke, he started twisting the weapon in his hand. Following his weapon, a powerful burst of martial power entered Wang Qiang’s body and started to wreak havoc all over.

“Puu~~~”

Affected by the martial power wreaking havoc throughout his body Wang Qiang sprayed a mouthful of blood and revealed an expression of pain.

“Admit defeat,” Kong Ruozeng said again.

“I-I a-admit... you to b-be my grandson. You d-damned unfilial g-grandson, r-relying on a forbidden medicine to w-win against y-your granddaddy, y-you have f-farts for skills! W-with merely y-your bits of a-ability, y-you actually c-came to find y-your granddaddy to spar with you? Y-you are truly as shameless as o-one can get,” Wang Qiang cursed loudly.

“I’ll teach you to talk back!” Kong Ruozeng suddenly brandished the Incomplete Ancestral Armament he held in his hand. Blood splattered as Wang Qiang’s arm was ruthlessly sliced off.

“This... this is too excessive.”

“That’s right, to win by relying on a forbidden medicine is unfair to begin with. Yet, he’s actually still acting this aggressive! This is simply too unreasonable!”

“Isn’t little friend Wang Qiang an honored guest invited by the Kong Heavenly Clan? Is this how one should treat one’s honored guest?”

“Is the Kong Heavenly Clan going to ignore this?”

Seeing this scene, the crowd were truly unable to watch it anymore. The guests started to voice their condemnation.

“Ruozeng, it’s enough.”

“Ruozeng, stop immediately.”

.....

There were many from the Kong Heavenly Clan that shouted at Kong Ruozeng to stop too.

However, no one acted to stop them. After all, Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu, two grand characters, were present. If the two of them did not act, the others had no qualifications to act.

“All of you, shut up! Since when was it allowed for you all to meddle in a spar between the younger generation?”

Right at that moment, Kong Moyu suddenly spoke. Not only was his tone very stern, he also faintly emitted his True Immortal-level oppressive might.

All of a sudden, the crowd present felt a chill run down their spines. Not to mention the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan, even the guests did not dare to say anymore.

After all, the one that had spoken was Kong Moyu, one of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders. He was a character that was famous throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, after Kong Moyu spoke, the guests felt extremely dissatisfied in their hearts.

Kong Moyu was someone with a very high status. Yet, instead of coming forth to uphold justice, he discriminated in favor of his own clansman. This was clearly bullying another.

“Are you going to admit defeat or not? If you still refuse to admit defeat, I’ll kill you,” Kong Ruozeng said coldly. He actually really revealed killing intent in his eyes.

Kong Ruozeng had come here with the intention of taking care of Chu Feng. It was only because Wang Qiang had obstructed him that he had ended up being delayed for so long.

Furthermore, when he had fought against Wang Qiang, he

suffered all sorts of humiliations from him. Being unable to win against Wang Qiang with words, he already felt enormous hatred for Wang Qiang in his heart.

And now, this Utmost Exalted Elder Kong Moyu was openly backing him up. Thus, Kong Ruozeng grew more courageous. If Wang Qiang were to still refuse to admit defeat, he would really kill Wang Qiang.

“Hahahaha...”

However, faced with Kong Ruozeng’s fatal threat, Wang Qiang burst into sudden laughter.

“If y-you want to k-kill me, then go a-ahead and kill me. If y-you want to c-cut off my flesh, g-go ahead and d-do so. If y-your g-granddaddy, I, a-am to b-blink once, I s-shall be y-your son,” Wang Qiang said.

“Very well, since you want to die this much, I will grant you your wish,” As Kong Ruozeng spoke, he raised his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and actually really planned to kill Wang Qiang.

“Bang~~~”

However, right at that moment, an overwhelmingly robust burst of martial power swept forth from the palace.

Everything occurred too suddenly. Before Kong Ruozeng could react, he was struck by the martial power and knocked flying several meters away.

“Kong Ruozeng, the one you’re trying to challenge is me, why do you insist on making things difficult for my brother?” The very next moment, a voice was heard.

Before the gazes of countless eyes, Chu Feng walked out from the palace with his Thunder Armor covering his body, his Thunder Wings extending out from his back and a rank two Martial Ancestor-level aura emitting from his body.

“Chu Feng! It’s Chu Feng!!!” Once Chu Feng appeared, cheerful and excited voices immediately sounded from the crowd. It was the guests.

They had come here precisely to meet Chu Feng. And now, they finally got to meet Chu Feng; naturally, they would be happy.

“Rank two Martial Ancestor. After using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng’s cultivation is that of a rank two Martial Ancestor?”

“Doesn’t this mean that Chu Feng’s true cultivation is that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor?”

“Wasn’t it rumored that Chu Feng’s current cultivation was only that of a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor? How did he become a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor so quickly?”

“Could it be that he had succeeded in reaching breakthroughs while undergoing closed-door training here?”

“But, he seemed to have only entered closed-door training for a short period of time. Yet, he managed to reach two successive breakthroughs this quickly?”

“An extraordinary genius, Chu Feng is most definitely an extraordinary genius.”

Chu Feng’s cultivation shocked the crowd.

“Little friend Chu Feng actually managed to make two successive breakthroughs?” Compared to the others, Kong Shunlian was very certain that Chu Feng had been a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor before.

Thus, he was able to tell with certainty that Chu Feng’s current cultivation of rank nine Half Martial Ancestor was something that he had obtained in that short period of time.

However, that was something extremely astonishing. How could the way of martial cultivation be that easily grasped?

It would already be extremely incredible if one were able to reach a single breakthrough in cultivation in such a short period of time. To reach two successive breakthroughs was simply unheard of.

However, Kong Shunlian had no idea that the two successive breakthroughs Chu Feng had obtained were bestowed by their Kong Heavenly Clan's Lord Primogenitor.

At that moment, Kong Moyu spoke coldly, "Go, go to Elder Yuehua and ask her whether the intruder in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range is still there."

"Yes, Milord," That elder did not dare hesitate. He turned around, entered the void and began to fly toward the ancient pagoda.

At that moment, Kong Shunlian's heart tightened.

He knew that it would be one thing if the intruder was still in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. However, if the intruder was no longer there, it would mean that Chu Feng was the intruder.

If Chu Feng was the intruder, not even the Heavenly Emperor would be able to save Chu Feng today.

Upon thinking of that inheritance and then seeing Chu Feng's unimaginable cultivation, Kong Shunlian also grew skeptical.

He thought in his heart, 'little friend Chu Feng, the intruder that entered the Grief Calamity Mountain Range and seized the inheritance couldn't possibly really be you, right?'

Chu Feng had no idea what Kong Shunlian was thinking, nor was he interested in knowing. At that moment, there was only a single person in Chu Feng's eyes and mind: his brother, Wang Qiang.

He arrived before Wang Qiang and set up a healing formation that covered him. Soon, Wang Qiang stopped bleeding, and Chu Feng also reattached his severed arm. It was reattached perfectly, as if Wang Qiang's arm had never been severed.

Merely, the puddle of blood was still there. It was still a shocking sight.

“Brother, I’ve implicated you,” Chu Feng looked at Wang Qiang with an apologetic expression all over his face.

As for Wang Qiang, he revealed a grin, and then stood up. He patted off the dust from his clothes and, as if nothing had happened, said, “I-Implicated your h-head. L-Look at me, a-aren’t I f-fine?”

“Go and rest yourself properly. Leave the rest to me,” Chu Feng patted Wang Qiang on his previously injured left shoulder. Then, he looked to Kong Ruozeng behind him.

Merely, Chu Feng’s gaze had instantly changed the moment he had turned around.

If his gaze was filled with grief and apology toward his brother earlier.

Then, at this moment, there was only a single emotion in his gaze.

It was an extremely ice-cold emotion — killing intent!!!

## Chapter 2416 – Betting Lives On The Battle

---

“Chu Feng, you finally dared to come out now?” Kong Ruozeng looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with grievances.

“Kong Ruozeng, you have wanted to spar against me the entire time. Today, I will satisfy you. However, I have a condition,” Chu Feng said.

“Condition? You’re not old, yet you have a lot of demands.”

“Well, whatever. Go ahead and say your condition. As long as you are willing to spar with me, I will agree to any condition,” Kong Ruozeng said in a disapproving manner.

“My brother Wang Qiang and I have arrived here as guests. As guests, we should abide by the rules of the host. As such, we did not want to provoke any quarrel.”

“However, you... you are truly too overbearing.”

“Earlier, not only did you torment my brother Wang qiang, you actually even wanted to actually kill him. Since you are so fond of killing others, I, Chu Feng, shall accompany you in this.”

“Today, I, Chu Feng, am willing to fight against you, Kong Ruozeng. However, I have a condition.”

“Unless either you or I are to die, this battle is not allowed to end,” Chu Feng’s gaze was burning like flames, and his voice echoed like thunder.

When the crowd heard what he said, they felt as if they had been struck by lightning.

“Ah? Not over unless one is to die? That would be a fight to the death.”

“Chu Feng, he actually wants to battle with their lives on the line against that member of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s younger generation?”



The crowd were all tongue-tied with their eyes wide open. They were stunned. It was not only the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan; even the bystanders were feeling endlessly shocked.

A spar and a fight to the death were two completely different things.

Even though Kong Ruozeng had indeed been excessive earlier, and Chu Feng's hatred and desire for revenge from seeing his brother being humiliated was also understandable, it remained that this was the Kong Heavenly Clan's territory.

To want to kill a Kong Heavenly Clan's genius in the Kong Heavenly Clan's territory, this was simply too brazen.

Chu Feng's action was simply akin to not placing the Kong Heavenly Clan in his eyes at all.

"I've heard that this Chu Feng is a man of real emotions, that he is someone that will fear nothing when he feels grievances in his heart. Seeing him today, he is actually truly as rumored."

"Although he might appear to be overly daring at first glance, his fearless attitude is something that ordinary people do not possess. Furthermore, the people who generally possess this trait are all people that will achieve greatness in the future. This Chu Feng is truly extraordinary."

"It has been a very long time since someone like Chu Feng has appeared in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"It seems that my decision to come to the Kong Heavenly Clan was truly a correct one."

After a moment of astonishment, the guests all cast admiring gazes toward Chu Feng.

At the same time, their eyes were filled with anticipation. They had come precisely to see Chu Feng's graceful bearing. And today... they would soon be able to witness Chu Feng's strength, granting their desires.

“Why have you grown quiet? Are you scared?” Chu Feng saw that Kong Ruozeng was silent, and thus questioned him intensely.

“Bullshit!!!”

“How could I, a grand genius of the Kong Heavenly Clan, possibly fear you?”

Although Kong Ruozeng was trying to act tough with words, the cold sweat on his forehead betrayed him.

At that moment, he was indeed slightly scared.

If it were only a spar, he would not be afraid of Chu Feng. After all, the two of them possessed the same sort of inherited bloodline. As such, they should be equally matched.

Furthermore, as he had taken the forbidden medicine, his battle power should surpass Chu Feng’s enormously. As such... he was very confident in himself.

However, Chu Feng’s declaration of betting their lives from the get-go caused him to lose confidence in himself.

It was their lives they were talking about here. People only had a single life. If one’s life was lost, everything would be gone.

It just so happened that Kong Ruozeng was someone who feared death.

“Ruozeng, the men of our Kong Heavenly Clan fear nothing,” Right at that moment, Kong Moyu suddenly spoke.

His intention was very obvious. Chu Feng had come here as a guest. Thus, even if they were truly capable of proving that Chu Feng was the intruder, it would still remain unsuitable for them to attack Chu Feng without sufficient proof.

However, Chu Feng had taken the initiative to prompt a battle to the death. With that, they would be able to borrow Kong Ruozeng’s hands to kill Chu Feng.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, please rest assured. I, Kong

Ruozeng, will definitely not bring shame upon our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Seeing that Kong Moyu had spoken, Kong Ruozeng immediately grew confident.

Thus, he turned his gaze around and then said loudly, “The many seniors here today can bear witness to both Chu Feng and myself.”

“I, Kong Ruozeng, only wanted to spar against Chu Feng. Yet, he insisted on a battle to the death. This is a condition that he proposed. I am merely agreeing to it.”

“Thus, even if I am to kill him later, it will not be our Kong Heavenly Clan treating our guest inconsiderately. Rather, it is him who proposed an unreasonable demand.”

After Kong Ruozeng finished saying those words, Kong Moyu nodded in a satisfied manner. He could tell that Kong Ruozeng had understood the implied meaning behind his words, and had deliberately said those words to place Chu Feng in the wrong.

“What a great ‘not your Kong Heavenly Clan treating your guest inconsiderately’. If that is the case, how are you to explain your manner of conduct towards my brother Wang Qiang?”

“Are you to say that this is what you mean by treating your guests considerately?”

“It turns out that this is how the Kong Heavenly Clan treats their guests. Today, I, Chu Feng, have truly gained knowledge,” Chu Feng sneered.

Although the bystanders did not say anything after hearing what Chu Feng said, they all nodded their heads to express their agreement.

In fact, many of the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan lowered their heads in shame.

After all, they had all seen what had happened earlier. As such, they were well-aware of who was in the right and who was in the wrong.

“Enough of your nonsense. Since you want a battle to the death, come, let’s start.”

Kong Ruozeng knew that he would not win against Chu Feng in an argument. Thus, he decided not to speak, and directly started to attack Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

A slash sliced across the sky, cutting the air itself in two. Even the clouds in the sky were sliced in two.

It was a Taboo Martial Skill. Although it was only a Mortal Taboo Martial Skill, it still possessed extremely impressive might.

At such close range, the Mortal Taboo Martial Skill was able to unleash its full potential.

It could be said that Kong Ruozeng had seized a decisive opportunity by attacking first.

“Perfect timing.”

However, faced with that attack, Chu Feng remained calm and composed.

He flipped his palm, and the Magma Emperor Sword appeared in his hand. He swept his sword toward the sky, and immediately brought forth a blaze.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, Chu Feng’s slash collided with Kong Ruozeng’s slash.

Kong Ruozeng’s slash was destroyed.

Yet, not only was Chu Feng’s slash still present, it also possessed remnant power. At that moment, the remaining might of Chu Feng’s slash was violently moving to cut down Kong Ruozeng.

“Amazing!!!”

Seeing this scene, the guests present all began to voice praises.

Some among them even started to applaud and cheer for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because both Chu Feng and Kong Ruozeng had used Mortal Taboo Martial Skills. However, it was evident that Chu Feng's Mortal Taboo Martial Skill had surpassed Kong Ruozeng's.

"Humph," Kong Ruozeng was not to be outdone. He did not dodge to avoid Chu Feng's slash, and instead waved his Incomplete Ancestral Armament again.

"Rumble~~~"

Once his slash was sent forth, the sky turned dark. Black clouds gathered. The earth trembled, and even space itself shattered from the vibration.

Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Kong Ruozeng had unleashed a very powerful Earthen Taboo Martial Skill.

"Very well, I'll play with you."

However, faced with Kong Ruozeng's attack, Chu Feng did not feel the slightest amount of fear. He took a step forward and shot forth a palm strike.

In an instant, the pitch black sky brightened. The black clouds that filled the sky dissipated in an instant.

Chu Feng had also unleashed an Earthen Taboo Martial Skill. Not only did his Earthen Taboo Martial Skill successfully defeat Kong Ruozeng's Earthen Taboo Martial Skill, there was once again lingering might moving toward Kong Ruozeng.

"Damn it!"

At that moment, Kong Ruozeng did not have the time to unleash a counterattack. Thus, with no other option, he unleashed a movement martial skill and soared into the sky to avoid Chu Feng's attack.

"Trying to escape?" Chu Feng smiled coldly, and then soared into

the sky after Kong Ruozeng.

“Escape? What a joke! How could I, Kong Ruozeng, possibly fear you?” Kong Ruozeng refuted with a sneer.

“Rumble~~~”

The very next moment, Chu Feng pointed at Kong Ruozeng with his Magma Emperor Sword. Then, a fire dragon was shot forth.

This fire dragon was several hundred meters long. Carrying with it a might as if it were capable of devouring the sky, it rushed toward Kong Ruozeng.

# Chapter 2417 – The Outcome Of The Battle Has Been Decided

---

The fire dragon soared into the sky. Immediately, the temperature started rising. Even space itself was burned to a fiery red color.

“Damn it!”

After Kong Ruozeng boasted, he had originally wanted to display his might by defeating Chu Feng.

However, at that moment, he had no choice but to turn to escape. The reason for that was because that fire dragon was not only extremely powerful, but also extremely fast. Furthermore, the distance between him and Chu Feng was very close. As such, he simply had no chance to unleash a counterattack.

If Kong Ruozeng did not flee, he would definitely be struck by Chu feng’s attack. If he was struck, even if he managed to survive, he would definitely be injured.

However, never did Kong Ruozeng imagine that Chu Feng would continue to not give him the opportunity to fight back.

Following that fire dragon, Chu Feng began to unleash multiple Taboo Martial Skills in succession. They forced Kong Ruozeng to flee all over the sky, trapping him in a dilemma.

“Ssss~~~”

At that moment, the surrounding crowd were all unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Kong Ruozeng was a genius at martial cultivation. Else, it would be impossible for him to have fought against Wang Qiang for so long. As he had taken a forbidden medicine that increased his battle power, it made it so that very few people with the same level of battle power could contend against him.

However, it was precisely such a Kong Ruozeng that was beaten fleeing by Chu Feng after a mere two exchanges. He actually no longer possessed the ability to fight back. With that being the case, they could naturally imagine how powerful Chu Feng was.

Thus, not to mention the guests, even many of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

They were all subdued by Chu Feng's strength.

"He is truly qualified to be known as a genius."

Some of the elderly individuals among the crowd began to look at Chu Feng with eyes filled with praise.

A Kong Heavenly Clan's elder turned to ask Kong Shunlian, "Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, Ruozeng took a forbidden medicine. His battle power has reached the limits of rank two Martial Ancestors. How is that Chu Feng... still able to suppress Ruozeng like this?"

"While it is true that Ruozeng's battle power has reached the limits, it does not mean that Chu Feng's battle power would be inferior to Ruozeng's. Furthermore... there is one aspect regarding Chu Feng that surpasses Ruozeng," Kong Shunlian said.

"Which aspect?" That elder asked.

"Chu Feng's understanding and mastery over his martial skills is extremely exquisite. It greatly surpasses that of Ruozeng."

"This is the first time that I have encountered a Half Martial Ancestor-level expert who is able to utilize martial skills to this degree. It is precisely because Chu Feng's comprehension and mastery toward martial skills surpasses that of ordinary people that he has managed to completely suppress Ruozeng after unleashing his martial skills," Kong Shunlian explained.

"That Chu Feng, he's actually that powerful?"



After hearing Kong Shunlian's explanation, the Kong Heavenly Clan's elders beside him all started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng.

If one only possessed overwhelming battle power, it would only mean that one was gifted in martial cultivation. However, that would not amount to anything too extraordinary. After all, a lot of the Heavenly Bloodline possessors possessed overwhelming battle power.

However, to be able to comprehend martial skills to such a degree would mean that individual was not only gifted with talent, but also possessed great comprehension ability. A genius like that would be very rarely seen, even among the Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

"Indeed, he's amazingly powerful. Else, how would he be able to become famous throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in such a short period of time, and even obtain Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance?" Kong Shunlian said.

"Regardless of how amazing he might be, if he has snatched away our Kong Heavenly Clan's inheritance, he will still die today," Suddenly, an ice-cold voice sounded. It was a voice transmission that entered the Kong Heavenly Clan's elders' ears. That voice shattered the current atmosphere.

It was Kong Moyu. At that moment, Kong Moyu was staring at Chu Feng. His ice-cold gaze grew colder and colder. Merely by looking at his gaze, one would tremble with fear.

"Lord Utmost Exalted Elders," Right at that moment, space slightly trembled. Then, a figure appeared.

Upon seeing that person, Kong Shunlian, Kong Moyu and some of the elders present revealed tense expressions.

The reason for that was because this elder was precisely the elder that Kong Moyu had dispatched to inquire about the situation at

the ancient pagoda.

What he said would determine Chu Feng's life and death.

"How was it? Is that intruder still inside?" Kong Moyu asked.

"Lord Utmost Exalted Elders, Lady Yuehua said that the intruder has appeared again. Furthermore, that intruder is currently inside the Grief Calamity Mountain Range," That elder replied.

"Ah?" Hearing those words, Kong Moyu immediately revealed a disappointed expression. Then, he asked, "Are you certain?"

"Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, as this matter is of the utmost importance, this junior would not dare to be careless. I have asked Lady Yuehua three times, and received the same answer each time."

"On the way back, Lady Yuehua even said that she had wrongly accused Chu Feng. She told me to tell Lord Utmost Exalted Elders that you two must definitely stabilize the situation and return Chu Feng's innocence to him," That elder said.

Hearing those words, Kong Shunlian did not say anything. However, he was unable to keep himself from heaving a long sigh of relief. From the bottom of his heart, he did not wish for Chu Feng to be related with that intruder.

And now, the boulder on his heart was finally lifted.

"This is bad," At that moment, Kong Moyu also revealed a worried expression. He took a glance at Wang Qiang, and then took a glance at Chu Feng.

Then, he looked to Kong Shunlian and said, "Brother Shunlian, it seems that you were correct. I truly never expected for that girl Kong Qiuci, that girl who had been honest all these years, to tell such an enormous lie to all of us for the sake of her disappointing son and husband."

"I will definitely look into this matter, and not forgive them

easily,” After saying those words, Kong Moyu cast a glance at Kong Ruozeng’s parents, Kong Yao and Kong Qiuci, in the distance. Anger filled his eyes.

However, he soon turned his gaze to Kong Shunlian again. With a wry smile, he said, “However, the situation at hand has already reached this point. Thus, I will have to trouble you to explain this matter to little friend Chu Feng.”

“Rest assured, I know how to handle this. What we should do now is just continue watching the battle,” Kong Shunlian said with a smile. Then, he turned his gaze to the battle in the sky again.

“Heavens!”

“This is truly too...”

Upon seeing the scene in the sky, the elders’ expressions all changed to one of utter astonishment.

In merely a blink of an eye, Kong Ruozeng was forced into a corner by Chu Feng. Even though he was still fleeing nonstop, there were already many wounds on his body.

There were cut marks, burn marks and even marks of being struck by lightning.

Most importantly, the crimson gaseous flames that were interwoven with the lightning covering his body were gradually disappearing.

Following the disappearance of those crimson gaseous flames, Kong Ruozeng’s aura grew weaker and weaker.

As for Chu Feng, his attacks grew fiercer and fiercer.

“It would seem that Ruozeng’s forbidden medicine is starting to lose its effect. The outcome of this battle is decided,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s elders started to shake their heads and sigh.

Today, they of the Kong Heavenly Clan had truly been humiliated.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Right at that moment, a scream was heard. One of Chu Feng’s slashes had landed on Kong Ruozen.

Like a loose kite, Kong Ruozen spun in the sky. Then, he ruthlessly fell to the ground.

Thick smoke immediately filled the air. However, by looking through the smoke, the crowd were able to see that Kong Ruozen’s left shoulder and left arm had both been sliced off.

Blood was bubbling from his wound, and his aura grew extremely weak. An expression of pain filled his face.

“Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly landed from the sky and ruthlessly stepped on Kong Ruozen’s legs, shattering them.

“Chu Feng, I admit defeat, I admit defeat!!!” Kong Ruozen endured the pain and started to strenuously beg for forgiveness.

“Indeed, you’ve lost. However, I’m not going to spare you.”

Chu Feng was expressionless toward Kong Ruozen’s begging for forgiveness before his deathbed. Instead, he slowly swung his Magma Emperor Sword.

In the end, Chu Feng’s Magma Emperor Sword was aimed at Kong Ruozen’s dantian.

## Chapter 2418 – Kong Ruozeng's Death

---

“Father, mother, save me! Save me!!!”

Kong Ruozeng started to panic after seeing that Chu Feng was determined to kill him. He hurriedly cried for help from his parents.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please stop. We can talk things out. You must absolutely not kill him,” Kong Ruozeng's parents immediately started to plead for him.

It was not only Kong Ruozeng's parents who spoke; others from the Kong Heavenly Clan also started to plead for leniency.

Kong Ruozeng was, after all, their Kong Heavenly Clan's genius. He was someone that was rare to come by in many years. As such, they would naturally not wish for Kong Ruozeng to die just like that.

“Shut up!!!” Right at that moment, Kong Shunlian shouted. Then, he said, “They have already decided on a battle to the death. For you all to beg for forgiveness now, are you planning to utterly humiliate our Kong Heavenly Clan?!”

Once Kong Shunlian said those words, all of the Kong Heavenly Clans' clansmen shut their mouths.

They had already realized what Kong Shunlian meant. That is, he planned to have Kong Ruozeng die.

“Lord Utmost Exalted Elder.”

While others did not dare say anything, Kong Ruozeng's parents were unwilling to give up. With no other option, they turned their gazes to Kong Moyu.

Kong Moyu was the only hope that they had to save Kong Ruozeng.

“Shut up, you all actually have the nerve to ask me for help?”

Kong Moyu shouted angrily and swept forth his oppressive might.

His oppressive might knocked Kong Ruozeng's parents hundreds of meters away. When they landed, both of them vomited blood. They had been seriously injured.

"This..." Seeing that scene, no one dared to have the slightest thought of pleading for Kong Ruozeng anymore.

However, right at that moment, Kong Moyu looked to Chu Feng and said, "Little friend Chu Feng, it is fine for you to kill Kong Ruozeng. After all, he has brought this upon himself."

"However, this old man does hope that you can be lenient. After all... it is a life that we're talking about here. Furthermore, there is not that much of a hatred between the two of you."

Once Kong Moyu said those words, the people that were worried about Kong Ruozeng heaved a sigh of relief.

Kong Moyu's intention was very clear. He could punish Kong Ruozeng, and even punish Kong Ruozeng's parents. However, he still wished that Chu Feng would spare Kong Ruozeng.

What sort of status did Kong Moyu possess? What sort of existence, what sort of character, was he?

After he spoke, the crowd all felt that the situation had been decided. They felt that Chu Feng would not go against Kong Moyu's desire.

They felt that he would, to a greater or lesser degree, give Kong Moyu face.

However, who would've thought that Chu Feng would completely ignore Kong Moyu's words. It was as if he did not hear them at all.

Chu Feng's gaze was still fixed onto Kong Ruozeng.

Furthermore, the hand that he held his Magma Emperor Sword with was clenching tighter and tighter.

“Puu~~~”

“Ahhh~~~”

Suddenly, the sword descended. Blood splattered everywhere, and Kong Ruozeng let out a miserable scream.

The Magma Emperor Sword Chu Feng held in his hand had pierced into Kong Ruozeng's body. Although it had yet to destroy his dantian, it had already pierced into it.

This scene deeply frightened the bystanders.

Kong Moyu had already spoken. Could it be that Chu Feng was planning to go against Kong Moyu's desire?

Could it be that Chu Feng was really planning to kill Kong Ruozeng in the Kong Heavenly Clan's territory?

That... would be truly too audacious!!!

“Little friend Chu Feng, are you really insistent on killing him?” Kong Moyu frowned and revealed a displeased expression.

“Senior, why are you not allowing me to kill him?” Chu Feng asked.

“I never said that I wouldn't allow you to kill him. If you insist on killing him, I will not stop you.”

“Merely... It remains that it is a life that we're talking about here. He still has parents he has to look after. Thus... I still hope that you can think over your decision.”

“Very well. What you have said is very reasonable. Merely, why did you not say those words when this Kong Ruozeng planned to kill my brother Wang Qiang earlier?”

“Could it be that you do not consider my brother Wang Qiang's life as a life?” Chu Feng asked.

“.....” Kong Moyu was left speechless. He did not know how to answer Chu Feng's question, and his expression grew gloomy.

At that moment, many of the bystanders started to feel cold sweat for Chu Feng.

Even though what Chu Feng said was reasonable, it remained that the person he was speaking to was Kong Moyu. What Chu Feng did was simply putting Kong Moyu on the spot.

“Brother, f-forget about it. If y-you a-are to truly kill t-this Kong Ruozen, y-you’ll be p-playing it big,” Right at that moment, Wang Qiang’s voice entered Chu Feng’s ear. <sup>1</sup>

Chu Feng turned around and saw that Wang Qiang was looking at him with a smile.

This was the first time that Chu Feng saw Wang Qiang urging him not to kill someone.

However, Chu Feng knew very well what sort of character Wang Qiang was. He was someone who feared nothing, someone who was willing to sacrifice himself for his friends.

However, the more loyal Wang Qiang was to his friends, the more determined Chu Feng was to kill Kong Ruozen.

Suddenly, the corners of Chu Feng’s lips lifted into a smile. He said to Wang Qiang, “Brother, today, I, Chu Feng, am precisely planning to play it big.”

“Else, the people of the world will really think that we brothers are people who are easily bullied.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, killing intent suddenly flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes. Abruptly, the Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand descended.

“Puchi,” Chu Feng’s Incomplete Ancestral Armament completely penetrated Kong Ruozen’s dantian.

Soon, Kong Ruozen’s aura was completely gone. Like clay, he spread onto the ground. He was dead.

He was killed by Chu Feng with his sword.



At that moment, heaven and earth grew completely silent.

Even though the crowd were already able to tell that Chu Feng was determined to kill Kong Ruozeng, they still felt endless astonishment after Kong Ruozeng was actually killed by Chu Feng.

After all, Kong Ruozeng was a genius of the Kong Heavenly Clan, and this place was the Kong Heavenly Clan itself!!!

“I’ll kill you!!!” Suddenly, a furious roar exploded in the sky.

Boundless martial power and intense killing intent swept forth from the sky. It was coming straight for Chu Feng.

It was Kong Yao. He was planning to kill Chu Feng to avenge his son.

“Wuuahh~~~”

However, before Kong Yao could approach Chu Feng, he was knocked flying by a strong burst of power.

It was Kong Shunlian.

“It was your son who caused this upheaval. It’s also your son who personally agreed to a life and death battle against Chu Feng. You and your wife were also present when he agreed.”

“At that time, neither of you said anything. Yet now, you want to reveal your might? Do you not know what it means to accept one’s losses?”

“Or could it be that you feel that your son’s actions today were not humiliating enough? You, as his father, still seek to avenge him? Are you planning to utterly disgrace our Kong Heavenly Clan?!”

At that moment, Kong Yao grew silent.

At the same time, many of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen moved forward and surrounded Kong Yao. They began to earnestly advise and console Kong Yao.

As for Kong Yao, even though he was filled with unwillingness, he was still able to understand the situation at hand. Even though he felt endless fury in his heart, he no longer tried to attack Chu Feng.

“All of you, listen carefully. If anyone dares to cause troubles for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang again, I will cripple their cultivation,” Kong Shunlian said those words with his oppressive might.

His oppressive might surged forth, and his voice echoed. Everyone closed their mouths. They could tell that Kong Shunlian was serious.

After Kong Shunlian said those words, the guests present all nodded their heads to display their approval.

At the very least, there was still a person in the Kong Heavenly Clan who was willing to support Chu Feng.

“Qiuci, go and bring Ruozeng back,” Kong Shunlian said.

At that moment, Kong Qiuci was feeling a pain like a knife being twisted in her heart. She was shedding tears like falling rain. Slowly, she walked toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, the guests started to worry again.

Even Kong Shunlian’s gaze was tightly fixed onto Kong Qiuci.

They were afraid, afraid that Kong Qiuci would also try to avenge her son and attack Chu Feng after approaching him.

However, Chu Feng did not have any intention to move away from the slowly approaching Kong Qiuci.

Instead, as he looked at Kong Qiuci’s tear-stained face, he actually felt pain in his heart.

This was maternal love, something that Chu Feng had never experienced before. Yet, Kong Ruozeng had possessed maternal love.

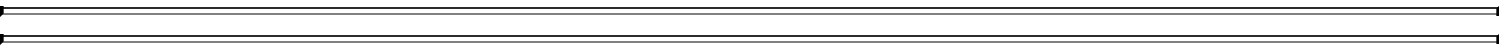
Chu Feng realized that he had destroyed the happiness of Kong

Ruozeng's family. Likely, from today onward, Kong Ruozeng's parents' hearts would be shadowed.

However, Chu Feng did not regret killing Kong Ruozeng.

To have a family, paternal love and maternal love was definitely not an excuse for one to commit malicious deeds.

Thus, when faced with his enemy, Chu Feng would never show compassion.



[Previous Chapter](#) [Next Chapter](#)

- 1. Play it big → kinda like causing a major disaster, being reckless, *etc.* ↩

## Chapter 2419 – Major Event

---

Kong Qiuci finally arrived before Chu Feng.

The bystanders all held their breath.

However, to the crowd's surprise, she did not attack Chu Feng.

Instead, she bowed to Chu Feng in a very apologetic manner. Then, she said, "I'm sorry."

Hearing those words, not to mention the others, even Chu Feng was startled.

Chu Feng had clearly killed Kong Qiuci's son and left her in enormous pain, like a knife being twisted in her heart, with tears filling her face. She should be feeling enormous hatred and fury toward Chu Feng. Yet, why was it that she did not attack Chu Feng, and instead apologized to him?

However, compared to the confusion the rest of the crowd was feeling, Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu's gazes turned complicated.

While others did not understand why Kong Qiuci apologized to Chu Feng, the two of them did.

Unable to help themselves, they said in their hearts, 'Qiuci is, after all, Qiuci. Her nature is still good and honest. It is truly unfortunate.'

After Kong Qiuci finished saying those words, she picked up Kong Rouzeng's corpse and began to walk away.

She knew that they had brought this result upon themselves, and could not blame others. Even though her son had been killed, it remained that it was their fault. After Kong Qiuci and Kong Yao brought Kong Rouzeng's corpse away together, the bystanders also began to leave one by one.

However, when they recalled that Chu Feng had really killed a

Kong Heavenly Clan's genius in the Kong Heavenly Clan, their hearts were unable to remain calm.

What had happened here today was destined to spread. Once word of the matter spread, it would definitely create an enormous sensation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, a guest staying in the Kong Heavenly Clan killing someone from the Kong Heavenly Clan was something that had never happened before.

At that moment, only three people remained in the palace. They were Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Kong Shunlian.

“Senior, you have also borne witness to what happened here today. Although senior treated us brothers very well, the rest of the people in the Kong Heavenly Clan still felt deep hatred for us brothers.”

“Today, it was only Kong Ruozeng that came to attack us. However, if it turns out in the future that the ones to attack us are no longer people of the younger generation, but people that we brothers cannot handle, what are we to do then?”

“Thus, senior, we brothers actually do not wish to continue to stay here,” Chu Feng said to Kong Shunlian.

Chu Feng was not afraid that there would be retaliation against him after killing Kong Ruozeng. He felt that the Kong Heavenly Clan was not stupid enough to retaliate against him for only that.

What Chu Feng was worried about was that his intrusion into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range would be exposed.

Thus, to Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, the current Kong Heavenly Clan was most definitely a tiger's den. As it would be extremely dangerous for the two of them to stay in a tiger's den, Chu Feng would naturally want to leave immediately.

“Truth be told, little friend Chu Feng, some things have happened in our Kong Heavenly Clan. At this time... not to

mention guests, even our own Kong Heavenly Clansmen are not allowed to leave. I will not stop two little friends from leaving. However, please stay for a few more days so that we can handle this matter first,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Since that’s the case, we’ll do as senior says,” Chu Feng felt helpless, but nodded his head.

Chu Feng was currently lacking confidence. He had no idea how much the Kong Heavenly Clan knew about what had happened in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

With what Kong Shunlian had said, if Chu Feng still insisted on leaving right away, it would instead make him appear more suspicious. As such, he could only reach a compromise and agree to stay.

“Two little friends, I...”

Suddenly, Kong Shunlian’s expression turned complicated. It seemed as if he wanted to say something. However, he had no idea how to start. Thus, he suddenly clasped his fist at Wang Qiang and Chu Feng as he sighed, “This old man has let you two down in regards to what has happened today.”

After he finished saying those words, Kong Shunlian soared into the sky and left. He did not give Chu Feng and Wang Qiang the opportunity to reply.

Actually, Kong Shunlian had a lot of things he wanted to say. Merely... he felt that he had no face to say those words. In fact... he felt ashamed to even look at Chu Feng and Wang Qiang for an extended period of time.

After Kong Sunlian left, Wang Qiang walked toward Chu Feng and said, “B-Brother, it s-seems that y-you’ve succeeded?”

“Yes, it was a success. However, I still ended up creating some troubles. I think that I’ve already been exposed slightly, and they have already grown suspicious of me.”

“The way I see it, Kong Ruozen provoking us this time around was no longer of his own accord. Rather, it was what the Kong Heavenly Clan wanted,” Chu Feng said.

“I c-can tell. O-Otherwise, w-why would no one t-try to stop him when t-there were so many grand c-characters present? N-no, Elder Kong Shunlian tried to stop him. M-merely, he w-was stopped b-by that old man.”

“A-Actually, t-this E-Elder Kong Shunlian is n-not bad,” Wang Qiang said with a laugh. It was as if all that had happened earlier didn’t matter to him.

“That’s true. Sandwiched between his clan and us, he has been placed in a truly difficult situation. As a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan, to be able to accomplish what he did must not have been an easy task,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Neither Chu Feng or Wang Qiang blamed Kong Shunlian.

“Not mentioning this, brother, you were clearly able to easily kill Kong Ruozen. Why did you not do so, and instead allow yourself to be bullied?” Chu Feng asked Wang Qiang.

“That guy used a f-forbidden medicine t-that pushed his battle power ab-above mine,” Wang Qiang said.

“He possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation, whereas yours is capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, why did you deliberately conceal one level?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng had already discovered this when Wang Qiang’s cultivation had increased to rank one Martial Ancestor. Merely, he did not point it out bluntly.

“Hehe, s-so you’ve a-already discovered it. Y-your powers o-of observation are t-truly remarkable,” Wang Qiang scratched his head as he laughed.

“I truly don’t understand you,” Chu Feng looked at Wang Qiang

and Confusion filled his heart.

With Wang Qiang's battle power, not to mention Kong Ruozeng, even the current Chu Feng would not be a match for him.

However, Wang Qiang had deliberately concealed his true strength. Even after Kong Ruozeng had cut off his arm and planned to kill him, Wang Qiang still did not reveal his battle power that was capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. This caused Chu Feng to feel very puzzled.

"I-I've said it b-before, I-I like to e-enjoy an amusing l-life. T-Thus, d-don't worry too much about this. You m-merely need to keep in mind that Kong Ruozeng cannot k-kill me," Wang Qiang said with a mischievous smile.

"I truly don't know what to do with you," Seeing Wang Qiang's expression, Chu Feng felt helpless.

Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen's mischievous voice suddenly sounded. "Perhaps this guy was deliberately allowing you to be in the limelight. It seems that he's truly in love with you. It's no wonder that demonic woman Zhao Hong is jealous."

"Milady Queen, please don't scare me," Hearing those words, Chu Feng's body became covered with goosebumps.

Thinking about it, Wang Qiang was truly extremely good to him; it was so strong that it surpassed that of ordinary people.

Due to the fact that Wang Qiang was a man, this would naturally mean a brotherly affection. However, if he were a woman, it would become something completely different.

However, with how enormous the world was, nothing would be too bizarre. Furthermore, Chu Feng had indeed heard that there were men who liked men.

Seeing Wang Qiang laughing this happily even after being clearly oppressed by Kong Ruozeng today, Chu Feng inevitably felt his heart tighten.



However, the misgivings Chu Feng had soon disappeared. He recalled how lustful Wang Qiang appeared when he saw beauties, and concluded that he did not resemble someone who liked men.

“B-Brother, s-since they’ve grown suspicious of us, w-wouldn’t it b-be very d-dangerous for us to stay here? How a-about the t-two of us t-try escaping?” Wang Qiang said.

“Indeed, it’s very dangerous. However, if we try to escape right away, we will definitely not be able to escape. Thus, we must set up that Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation once again,” Chu Feng said.

“Hehe, b-brother, w-we’re thinking the same thing,” Wang Qiang said.

Neither Chu Feng or Wang Qiang were people that wanted to resign themselves to fate. And now, the only thing capable of helping them escape would be the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

The two of them did not dare to hesitate. Immediately, they started to jointly set up the spirit formation.

.....

However, they had no clue that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had returned to the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, he had gathered all of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s upper echelons in one place. Even the Utmost Exalted Elders that were in closed-door training were summoned by him.

Even though the Kong Heavenly Clansmen had no idea what their Lord Clan Chief planned to do, the fact that even their Utmost Exalted Elders that were in closed-door training were summoned meant that this... was absolutely no small matter.

Something major had most definitely occurred.

## Chapter 2420 – Must Kill Chu Feng

---

Inside the most extravagant and grand palace of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Not only were Kong Shunlian and Kong Moyu present, but even the other two Utmost Exalted Elders who were still in closed-door training had appeared as well.

At that moment, other than Kong Yuehua, four of the five Utmost Exalted Elders were all present.

Furthermore, practically all of the peak Martial Ancestor-level experts of the Kong Heavenly Clan were gathered here too.

Their gazes were all fixed on a single person inside the palace hall.

It was a white-haired old man with tidy clothes.

While that individual had the appearance of an old man, he emitted an extraordinary aura, the aura of a king.

Most importantly, not only was that old man a True Immortal-level expert, his aura was also much more powerful than Kong Shunlian's or Kong Moyu's.

He... was a rank two True Immortal.

As for that man, he was none other than the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Kong Jitian.

“Lord Clan Chief, if the inheritance has truly been snatched, this is definitely no small matter. This old man is willing to personally enter the Grief Calamity Mountain Range to capture that intruder,” Kong Moyu said to the clan chief.

“There's no need.”

“The intruder triggered a slaughtering formation and died,” Right at that moment, Kong Yuehua walked in.

“Elder Yuehua, is what you said the truth?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“Absolutely. The change to the ancient pagoda’s spirit formation will not be mistaken. The intruder was indeed killed by a slaughtering formation,” Kong Yuehua said.

“If he is really dead, wouldn’t it mean that the inheritance Lord Primogenitor left for us has also been...”

“Truly, damn it!” Kong Moyu felt endless heartache when he thought about the fact that the inheritance might have disappeared along with that intruder.

“Elder Moyu, don’t be too pessimistic. Although an abnormal sign appeared in the sky, it does not necessarily mean that the intruder managed to seize our inheritance.”

“Since that intruder was actually killed by the slaughtering formation, it means that his abilities were not that heaven-defying either.”

“Lord Primogenitor is, after all, our Lord Primogenitor. We must be confident in him,” Kong Yuehua said.

“But... it is still possible that the inheritance has been snatched, no?” Kong Moyu was still worried.

“Lord Clan Chief, regardless of whether or not the inheritance has been snatched, it remains that an intruder has trespassed into our Grief Calamity Mountain Range. This is no small matter. We must definitely strengthen the defenses around the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Lord Clan Chief, please make a decision,” Kong Moyu said to their Lord Clan Chief.

“Since that intruder has died, we will leave this matter to the side for now. It will not be too late for us to discuss this again later. The reason for that is because, compared to the inheritance being snatched or not, I have something more important that I must discuss with everyone,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

Once he said those words, the expressions of the crowd present all changed.

An outsider getting into their Grief Calamity Mountain Range was no small matter at all. Yet, their Lord Clan Chief actually declared that there was something more important than that. As such, how could they not be startled?

Furthermore, their Lord Clan Chief had such a serious expression on his face right now.

“Lord Clan Chief, what sort of matter might it be?” Someone asked worriedly.

“It concerns our Kong Heavenly Clan’s continued existence,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said with a stern expression.

“Concerns out Kong Heavenly Clan’s.... continued existence?!!!!”

Once the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief declared those words, the expressions of the elders all changed enormously. Some among them were so frightened by those words that their complexions turned blue, and their bodies started shivering.

For it to concern the continued existence of the Kong Heavenly Clan, this was definitely an enormous matter.

“Everyone, do you all remember that Grandmaster Prophet had declared that in the next hundred years, an exceptional genius would appear in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and that said genius will bring about our Kong Heavenly Clan’s destruction?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“We naturally remember that. But, wasn’t it declared that the exceptional genius was Young Master Li Ming?” Someone said.

“Young Master Li Ming is the person we guessed to be that exceptional genius. However, Grandmaster Prophet has not managed to prophesy the name of that genius.”

“However now, Grandmaster Prophet has managed to prophesize

who will cause the destruction of our Kong Heavenly Clan,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Who?” The crowd asked in unison.

As that individual concerned the continued existence of the Kong Heavenly Clan, as long as they knew who that individual was, the people present would definitely disregard their lives and put everything on the line to eliminate that individual.

“Chu Feng,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Chu Feng?!” Hearing those words, the expressions of many of the people present changed.

However, in terms of who was shocked the most, it would be none other than Kong Shunlian.

“Lord Clan Chief, are you certain about this? Little friend Chu Feng does not seem to possess any enmity toward our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Shunlian said.

“I left so urgently this time around because Grandmaster Prophet wanted to meet me. He indicated that he had prophesied that the person who would bring about the destruction of our Kong Heavenly Clan was Chu Feng.”

“Till this date, when has Grandmaster Prophet ever failed in a prophecy?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“But, Lord Clan Chief, little friend Chu Feng is an honored guest invited over by our Kong Heavenly Clan. Must we really kill him?”

“Right now, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knows that little friend Chu Feng is staying in our Kong Heavenly Clan as a guest. If we are to kill him, what will the people of the world think of our Kong Heavenly Clan?”

“Furthermore, it is not as if Chu Feng does not possess a backer. Everyone, do you all still remember the old monk that appeared in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds?” Kong Shunlian

said.

Actually, Kong Shunlian had not been present when the plain-clothed monk had appeared to back Chu Feng.

However, as of now, that matter was something that the Kong Heavenly Clan and the other three tier one powers knew very well.

They all knew that standing behind Chu Feng was a plain-clothed old monk, a True Immortal-level expert.

Actually, the reason why the Kong Heavenly Clan had tried so hard to invite Chu Feng over that day was precisely so that they could pull a relationship with Chu Feng's True Immortal-level backer.

"Chu Feng is indeed a rare genius. Back then, I ordered you to invite him precisely so that we could rope him in."

"That is also precisely the reason why I gathered everyone here to discuss this," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Lord Clan Chief, there's no need for discussion. Since we are certain that Chu Feng will be a threat to our clan, we should directly kill him."

"So what if he possesses a True Immortal backer? Our Kong Heavenly Clan has existed for so many years, since when have we not had True Immortals?"

"Furthermore, after killing Chu Feng, we can put a crime on his face. For example, we can forcibly declare him to be the intruder."

"Back then, we were even able to erase that Ying Mingchao and his Hero City, and make it so that no one dared to mention them again within a thousand years."

"Could the current Chu Feng possibly be even more popular with the masses than Ying Mingchao from back then? Could he possibly be stronger than Hero City?" Kong Moyu asked.

"That's true. Since Grandmaster Prophet has already prophesied

that Chu Feng will bring a disaster upon our Kong Heavenly Clan, we absolutely cannot let him live,” The crowd began to voice their agreement.

“But, Chu Feng is different from Ying Mingchao. The Ying Mingchao from back then already had the intention to rule over the world. Furthermore, he declared that he would eliminate our Kong Heavenly Clan. He was someone who really did pose a threat to our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“As for the current Chu Feng, he does not harbor any malice towards our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“Furthermore, we can only be certain that plain-clothed old monk is a True Immortal, and cannot be certain as to how powerful he really is. What if he is not a rank one True Immortal?” Kong Shunlian said.

“Even if he might be a rank two True Immortal, so what? Our Lord Clan Chief is also a rank two True Immortal.”

“Furthermore, we also possess the Zhou Heavenly Clan as our allies. Although our relationship is not as good as before, the Zhou Heavenly Clan will definitely not refuse to help us during this moment of our life and death. Don’t forget, we are on the same boat,” Kong Moyu said firmly.

“What Elder Moyu says is reasonable,” The crowd nodded their heads to express their agreement.

“It seems that everyone has come to a decision,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Lord Clan Chief, there’s no need to hesitate. Kill that Chu Feng,” The crowd said in unison.

At that moment, Kong Shunlian’s heart tightened. He hurriedly asked, “Lord Clan Chief, are you really determined to kill Chu Feng?”

“Elder Shunlian, I know that you are the one who invited Chu

Feng over. Now that we want to kill Chu Feng, it will indeed place you in a very difficult situation.”

“However, this matter concerns the continued existence of our clan. As such, I have no other options.”

“Chu Feng must be killed. Even if we are to have our reputation swept away, he must still be killed. Even if he possesses a powerful backer, he must still be killed. He absolutely cannot be left alive.”

“And now, he is actually in our Kong Heavenly Clan as a guest. This is the best opportunity to kill him. We absolutely cannot miss it,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Lord Clan Chief, this subordinate requests that he be allowed to go and kill Chu Feng.”

“Lord Clan Chief, I will go and kill Chu Feng right now.”

Seeing that their Lord Clan Chief was determined to kill Chu Feng, countless voices requesting permission to kill Chu Feng sounded in the palace hall.

However, right at that moment, Kong Shunlian’s voice sounded again. “Since I am the one who invited Chu Feng over, I should be the one to settle his life.”



## Chapter 2421 – Believe it or Not

---

“Elder Shunlian, you want to personally kill Chu Feng?”

Hearing those words, the expression of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief changed. He truly never expected that Kong Shunlian would request to personally kill Chu Feng.

“As this matter concerns our clan’s continued existence, this subordinate is ready to put his life on the line,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Brother Shunlian, it is better that I take care of this matter,” Kong Moyu said.

Kong Moyu harbored hatred toward Chu Feng because of Chu Feng contradicting him. Thus... he wanted to personally kill Chu Feng.

“I have a plan that will allow us to kill Chu Feng and prevent others from speaking ill of our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Shunlian said.

“What is it?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

Actually, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had come here to discuss the matter with his clansmen mainly because he was worried about two things.

Firstly, he was worried about that plain-clothed old monk supporting Chu Feng.

Secondly, Chu Feng was currently their Kong Heavenly Clan’s guest. If they were to kill Chu Feng directly in their Kong Heavenly Clan, it would most likely be talked about by others.

If Kong Shunlian really did possess a method to avoid others from speaking ill of their Kong Heavenly Clan, it would naturally be for the best.

“If we are to allow Chu Feng to leave, and then tail him to

assassinate him, it might be possible that we will fail. After all, Chu Feng is an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, and Grandmaster Kai Hong's successor. Perhaps he possesses abilities we do not know of."

"Thus, I feel that it would be best to kill Chu Feng in our clan," Kong Shunlian said.

"Indeed," The crowd nodded to express their agreement.

"However, if we are to kill Chu Feng in our Kong Heavenly Clan, we will inevitably be talked about by others. Thus, I have a very simple plan. I will shoulder the blame," Kong Shunlian said.

"You will shoulder the blame? How?" Kong Yuehua revealed a worried expression.

"Since Chu Feng wants to leave, we will let him leave. I can accompany him in the name of seeing him off. Then, on the way, I will kill him," Kong Shunlian said.

"If that Chu Feng is to die while you are escorting him out, our Kong Heavenly Clan will definitely not be able to clear our involvement," Kong Moyu said.

"I can put my own name on the line and shoulder the crime of killing him," Kong Shunlian said.

"You absolutely mustn't. If you are to do that, you will be chased after and killed by that plain-clothed old monk. Our Kong Heavenly Clan will not be able to keep you safe. Your entire life's reputation will be ruined," Kong Yuehua said.

"My life and reputation simply cannot be compared with the future of our Kong Heavenly Clan at all," Kong Shunlian said.

"Brother Shunlian, in that case, you intend to bring Chu Feng and Wang Qiang out first. However, who can guarantee that you will not release them after bringing them out of the Kong Heavenly Clan?" Kong Moyu sneered.

“Then, are you suggesting that we must kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang in our Kong Heavenly Clan, that we must have our Kong Heavenly Clan shoulder the reputation of being disloyal and unjust?” Kong Shunlian asked in return.

“That is naturally not my intention. Merely... I do not trust you.”

“After all, before this, you have defended Chu Feng many times. Even when Ruozeng was killed by Chu Feng, you did not even help plead for Ruozeng. Rather, you were leaning toward Chu Feng,” Kong Moyu said coldly.

“I trust you,” However, right at that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke.

“Lord Clan Chief!!!” Kong Moyu’s expression changed enormously. He wanted to say something.

Before Kong Moyu could finish what he wanted to say, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief swept his gaze across the crowd and asked, “To sacrifice himself for the sake of our clan, which among you all is capable of doing that?”

At that moment, everyone, including Kong Moyu, grew silent.

They all knew what sort of consequences they would have to bear if they were to personally shoulder the blame of killing Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Not to mention that mysterious plain-clothed old monk, there might be many righteous individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that would start to chase after them to kill him.

Death would be the only way out.

However, that would not be the worst. Worst of all, their reputation would be completely swept away. This would even affect their descendants. As such, none of them wanted to shoulder such infamy.

Thus, it was as their clan chief said, none of them were capable of

doing that.

“Merely, Elder Shunlian, are you really planning to do that? This would be extremely wrong of you to do, no?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Lord Clan Chief, this Shunlian only possesses an aged life. I will not be able to live for much longer anyways.”

“I have not done much for our clan in my life. If I am able to contribute greatly to our clan before my death, it would serve to settle a cherished desire that this old man has,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Since that’s the case, Elder Shunlian, when do you plan to act?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“This matter is extremely important. It is better done sooner than later. I will let Chu Feng out today and kill him while escorting him away,” Kong Shunlian said.

“In that case, we will have to trouble Elder Shunlian with this. In the future, even if you are not part of our Kong Heavenly Clan on the surface, we will still secretly protect you,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“No, after this matter is decided, I do not require any protection. Regardless of whether it is in name or in actuality, I will no longer be a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

After he finished saying those words, Kong Shunlian directly walked out from the palace hall and began to proceed toward Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s residence.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were originally wholeheartedly setting up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

However, with the sudden arrival of Kong Shunlian, the two of them had no choice but to conceal the spirit formation and go out to greet Kong Shunlian.

After Kong Shunlian entered the guest hall, he looked to his surroundings in a very stern manner. After he was certain that there was no one outside the palace monitoring them, ‘putt,’ Kong Shunlian kneeled before Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

“Senior, what are you doing?” Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had startled expressions.

“Little friend Chu Feng, little friend Wang Qiang, this old man is incompetent,” Kong Shunlian said with a very apologetic expression.

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang looked to one another. Then, they asked together, “Senior, exactly what has happened?”

Kong Shunlian actually did not try to conceal the truth, and began to tell Chu Feng and Wang Qiang exactly what had happened.

This included Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy and the Kong Heavenly Clan’s decision, as well as him telling the Kong Heavenly Clan that he would personally kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

However, there was one thing that the Kong Heavenly Clan did not know. That was that he, Kong Shunlian, was not truly planning to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Rather, he was trying to seize this opportunity to safely escort Chu Feng and Wang Qiang out of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Preposterous! T-They a-actually want to kill us b-brothers because of a bullshit p-prophet’s p-p-prophecy. What utter ridiculousness!” Wang Qiang felt endlessly furious.

“Indeed, it is ridiculous. However, it appears that the Kong Heavenly Clan have already decided,” Compared to Wang Qiang, Chu Feng was much more calm.

“Thus, you two must leave the Kong Heavenly Clan right now. I will escort the two of you out,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Senior, if you are to do that, you will be making an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...” At that moment, Kong Shunlian chuckled. It was a very profound laughter, “I have long since wanted to sever my relationship with this unrighteous and unjust clan. It’s merely because of my gratitude toward some of my seniors that I couldn’t bear to leave.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, little friend Wang Qiang, I am able to tell that you two are not people that would willfully slaughter innocents. I can tell that you are not malicious or evil.”

“I am the one that brought the two of you here. It is I who brought you two to this tiger’s den. As such, I should be the one to bring you two away. Else, this old man will not feel at ease.”

“Well then, there’s no need to continue to hesitate. The matter is already decided.”

“I will go and announce the matter of the two of you leaving the Kong Heavenly Clan right now. Then... I will escort the two of you out,” After Kong Shunlian said those words, he walked out.

“B-Brother, can we t-trust this old guy?”

“He wants the two of us to o-openly go out, he p-plans to have e-everyone know that we brothers are leaving the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“B-but, w-what if he i-is to a-attack us in the shadows?”

“If t-the two of u-us are to die in the Kong Heavenly Clan, the Kong Heavenly Clan will have to shoulder the infamy.”

“If we are to die outside the Kong Heavenly Clan, it will be unrelated to the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng. He did not trust Kong Shunlian.

“What you are worried about is precisely what I am worried about.”

“But, throughout the entire Kong Heavenly Clan, who else other than Kong Shunlian are we able to trust?”

“If we are to trust him, it might be possible that he will really escort us out.”

“However, if we do not trust him, it will be as he said. The Kong Heavenly Clan will disregard everything to kill us.”

“If that’s the case, the two of us will really end up dying here,” Chu Feng said.

“T-Then, y-you are s-suggesting that w-we do as he says?” Wang Qiang asked.

“Let’s give it a try. If he is truly trustworthy, we will be able to safely escape. We will naturally also remember his grace.”

“However, if he schemes to kill us enroute, the two of us are not fish on the chopping block that he can easily slaughter either.”

As he said those words, Chu Feng took out his Evil God Sword and held it in his hand.

At that moment, the Evil God Sword trembled slightly, as if it understood everything. It began to emit layer upon layer of powerful aura that was transmitted through Chu Feng’s palm to Chu Feng.

It was as if the Evil God Sword was telling Chu Feng that it was prepared for a massacre.

## Chapter 2422 – Imminent War

---

After Kong Shunlian deliberately spread the news of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang leaving the Kong Heavenly Clan, everyone soon came to know about it.

The people outside the Kong Heavenly Clan were confused as to why Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were leaving. However, the people staying in the Kong Heavenly Clan as guests were all able to call the reason to mind.

The way they saw it, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were originally the most honored of all honored guests to have appeared in the Kong Heavenly Clan. However, they had been provoked by Kong Ruozeng. Thus, it could be said that they had not received the treatment they should have received as honored guests.

Even if it were anyone else, they too would be angered, and would most likely no longer want to stay.

However, they had no idea that the actual reason why Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were leaving was because a great catastrophe was going to befall them.

The Kong Heavenly Clan wanted to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. The decision to leave was the only way out for them.

Furthermore, they could not publicise this matter; they must conceal the fact that the Kong Heavenly Clan wanted to kill them.

If this matter were to be made public, the Kong Heavenly Clan would disregard everything and openly kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

After the news of their departure was announced, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang publicly left the Kong Heavenly Clan.

As for Kong Shunlian, he gave the reason that he did not want others to bother Chu Feng and Wang Qiang to escort them away.



With a True Immortal-level expert bringing Chu Feng and Wang Qiang away, they instantly disappeared. As such, the guests that wanted to curry favor relationships with Chu Feng and Wang Qiang no longer possessed the opportunity to do so.

One by one, they all prepared to leave that place with disappointment in their hearts.

However, right at the moment when the crowd was planning to leave, a sudden voice transmission entered the guests' ears.

“Everyone, don't be so urgent to leave. Instead, pretend to leave and then proceed toward the southeast. At that place... not only will you all see little friends Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, you will also be able to see the true identity of the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

Once that voice sounded, everyone that heard that voice transmission revealed a change in expression. Some people even planned to question who it was that had sent the voice transmission.

However, the following moment, that voice sounded in the crowd's ears again.

“Do not ask who I am, and do not disclose what I have said. Else... none of you will be able to see anything, and you may even... face life-threatening danger.”

Regarding those words, some people felt it to be a prank. Although they did not disclose it, they also did not believe it, and decided to leave directly.

However, there were also a lot of people that did believe it. After all, they had waited for Chu Feng for such a long time already.

If they were to leave now, they would really have come here for nothing.

However, if they were to listen to the person who had sent that voice transmission and proceed toward the southeast, they would, at the very least, have a chance of seeing Chu Feng again. Thus,

they all wanted to give it a try.

.....

At that moment, Kong Shunlian was escorting Chu Feng and Wang Qiang and rapidly heading toward the southeast.

The speed of True Immortals was truly fast. In merely the blink of an eye, they had left the Kong Heavenly Clan's range of influence.

However, Kong Shunlian suddenly stopped. With an ice-cold gaze, he stared into the empty sky behind him. He said, "Why have you been following me this entire time?"

Once Kong Shunlian said those words, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang's hearts tightened. Chu Feng also started to tightly grip the Evil God Sword he held in his hand. They had both become aware that the situation was amiss.

Sure enough, after Kong Shunlian said those words, the sky that originally did not have a single soul in sight started to tremble slightly. Soon, three figures appeared.

These three people were all Utmost Exalted Elders of the Kong Heavenly Clan. Like Kong Shunlian, they were all True Immortal-level experts.

Two among them were individuals who had just left closed-door training. As for the third individual, the person leading the group of three, he was Kong Moyu.

"Brother Shunlian, if you do not act now, how long are you planning to wait?" Kong Moyu said to Kong Shunlian.

"I said that I'll do it, so I'll definitely do it. You, on the other hand, why did you follow me? Could it be that you do not trust me?" Kong Shunlian asked coldly. At that moment, dense anger filled his gaze.

"It is not that we do not trust you. Merely, Chu Feng's life and

death concerns our clan's continued existence. As such, we must treat this matter cautiously," Kong Moyu said with a light smile. Then, he said, "Go on. Kill him. Do it, and everything will be settled."

"G-go f-fuck yourself! My b-brother's life and death concerns y-your clan's con-continued existence? Do y-you think my b-brother is your ancestor?" Wang Qiang cursed loudly.

"What insolence!" Kong Moyu narrowed his eyebrows. He did not raise any wind or move any clouds. There was no change to heaven and earth. In fact, one could not feel the slightest bit of martial power.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang both felt an extremely frightening killing intent moving toward them from all sides.

That killing intent was extremely powerful. It was as if, in the very next moment, they would die without a corpse remaining.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Kong Shunlian, who stood before Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, raised his arm. Immediately, the killing intent disappeared.

"Kong Moyu, what is the meaning of this?" Kong Shunlian asked coldly.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang came to a realization that the frightening killing intent they felt earlier had not been a baseless sensation.

Rather, it had been caused by Kong Moyu.

Without even moving, Kong Moyu was able to emit a killing intent that frightening. Furthermore, he did not cause the slightest change to the weather around them.

Fortunately, Kong Shunlian was there. Else, Chu Feng and Wang

Qiang would most likely be dead already.

Thus, Chu Feng started to grip his Evil God Sword even tighter. He was uncertain as to whether or not his Evil God Sword would be able to contend against True Immortals.

After all, True Immortals were existences that had surpassed the limits of mortals. The title of ‘Immortal’ was not a baseless claim. They were indeed extremely powerful.

“What is the meaning of this? That is what I should be asking you. It’s one thing for you to not kill them, but you actually dare to stop me from killing them. Sure enough, you were planning to escort them away, and not actually trying to help our clan eliminate harm,” Kong Moyu said angrily.

“Brother Shunlian, the safety of our clan surpasses everything else. You should quickly settle them. Else... do not blame us for not taking our old affection into consideration.”

“Brother Shunlian, you’re on your own.”

The other two Utmost Exalted Elders also spoke.

“Heh...”

At that moment, the already furious Kong Shunlian raised his mouth into a smile. Following that, the anger in his eyes grew even more intense.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Kong Shunlian flipped his palm, and a silver spear appeared in his hand.

“Rumble~~~”

Once that spear appeared, the weather immediately changed. Lightning flashed and thunder rolled. It was as if the entire world was being controlled by Kong Shunlian’s weapon.

It was an Ancestral Armament, an actual Ancestral Armament.

Being held by Kong Shunlian, that Ancestral Armament was able to completely unleash the pinnacle of its power.

“I am the one who invited the two of them here. I have sworn that I will ensure their safety.”

“If you all insist on killing them, you must kill me first,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Sure enough, you’re planning to betray our clan,” At that moment, dense killing intent emerged in Kong Moyu’s eyes.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The next moment, Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders also took out their respective Ancestral Armaments.

At that moment, the entire region was controlled by the aura of four True Immortal-level experts. Violent wind burst forth, and torrential rain dashed down. Even the earth itself was trembling violently. In fact, even the space around them started to shatter.

It was as if that region would be turned into hell the next moment.

“Brother Shunlian, you must consider this properly. To betray one’s clan is an enormous crime. We possess the authority to execute you on the spot,” An Utmost Exalted Elder said.

“Even if I am to die, I will still protect the two of them, allowing their safe departure,” Kong Shunlian said.

Kong Shunlian was very calm when he said those words. It could be seen that he had already made his decision.

Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were moved. As matters stood, they were able to ascertain of Kong Shunlian’s character.

To think that Kong Shunlian would actually fall out with his clan for the two of them, two outsiders, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang were extremely moved.

“Brother Shunlian, although we’re all rank one True Immortals,

you're going against three by yourself. Say... how certain are you in being able to defeat us?" The other Utmost Exalted Elder mocked.

The intention behind his words was that Kong Shunlian would definitely be defeated.

"Who told you that he was fighting against three by himself?"

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from behind Kong Moyu and the others.

## Chapter 2423 – Origin Life Treasure

---

“Who is it?!”

The sudden voice surprised Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders. They hurriedly turned their heads.

Right at that moment, the space behind them started to distort. Soon, a figure appeared.

That person had the appearance of a middle-aged man. Not only was he wearing the outfit of the Kong Heavenly Clan, but he also had a Kong Heavenly Clan’s title plate on his waist.

As for his cultivation, it was peak Martial Ancestor.

Not to mention Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders, even Kong Shunlian knew that man.

However, when they looked at that man, their eyes were filled with alertness.

If that man were truly only a peak Martial Ancestor, it would be impossible for him to have kept up with their speed. Thus, they were certain that the man before them was not the same man that they knew. Most likely, he was someone disguised as their Kong Heavenly Clansman.

“Exactly who are you?” Kong Moyu asked coldly. The way he saw it, since his clansman was disguised, it meant that his clansman was most likely already dead.

“Who I am is not important,” As that mysterious man spoke, he removed his clothes and the title plate on his waist and tossed them far away.

At that moment, his appearance started to change. He had turned into a man with a face filled with scars and indeterminable facial features. That mysterious man was still hiding his identity.

“Then why are you here? Why are you pretending to be someone

from our Kong Heavenly Clan?” One of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders asked.

“Why I am here is also not important. What is important is that I have infiltrated your Kong Heavenly Clan for many days.”

“Furthermore, it just so happened that I was also present when you all conducted that secret meeting.”

“Thus, I also know about your Kong Heavenly Clan’s decision to eliminate Chu Feng merely from a single prophecy from Grandmaster Prophet.”

“Woosh~~~”

Right after that mysterious individual finished saying those words, the Ancestral Armament Kong Moyu held in his hand was swept forth.

In an instant, a sword ray flashed through the air as martial power roared. Space was shattered and the earth caved in. That frightening power proceeded to bombard that mysterious individual.

That Kong Moyu... was planning to silence the mysterious man.

“Humph.”

That mysterious individual waved his sleeve. Then, a long sword appeared in his hand.

Following that, a powerful radiance swept through space and the void. It forcibly blocked Kong Moyu; that True Immortal’s, attack.

That long sword was an Ancestral Armament.

Most importantly, the fact that the mysterious individual was capable of blocking Kong Moyu’s attack meant that... he was at least a rank one True Immortal.

“You’re trying to silence me? It’s useless. Unless you are to kill all of the guests here, otherwise... the matter of what has happened here today is destined to spread,” That mysterious individual



laughed a strange laughter.

Sure enough, a large group of people were approaching from far away. Those were the people who had received the mysterious man's voice transmission. They were people who did not know about the truth, but decided to check things out.

“Quickly, look, there's a battle over there.”

“It seems like a major event is indeed happening. That person who sent us the voice transmission did not deceive us.”

“Those attacks were so powerful. They don't resemble something that Martial Ancestors could accomplish. Could it be... True Immortals?”

“True Immortal? Isn't that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder Kong Shunlian then?”

“Even legendary True Immortals are fighting. Exactly what is happening?”

“Could it be that little friends Chu Feng and Wang Qiang are in danger?”

The devastation brought forth by a battle between True Immortals was simply too powerful. Even though the approaching crowd was still very far away, they still managed to discover it.

Upon seeing that frightening devastations, a small portion of those people became afraid. They hurriedly turned around to leave. After all, True Immortals were too powerful. They were afraid that they would be implicated in the battle, and meet miserable deaths.

However, the great majority of the crowd decided to stay. They all wished to see exactly what was happening.

Thus, not only did they not turn around, they instead began to use their various abilities to increase their speed, so as to rapidly reach the place where Chu Feng and the others were.

.....

“You’ve already made this matter public?” Kong Moyu narrowed his eyebrows. A faint ominous glint was flashing in his scheming eyes.

“What’s wrong? Are you scared? Since you dared do something like this, you shouldn’t be scared,” That mysterious individual said with a light laugh. Faced with Kong Moyu, who was already intent on killing him, this mysterious man did not show the slightest bit of fear.

“Exactly who are you?!” The other two Utmost Exalted Elders of the Kong Heavenly Clan asked in unison. Like Kong Moyu, their eyes were also brimming with killing intent.

“Who I am doesn’t matter. All you have to know is that I will be ensuring Chu Feng’s safety today,” That mysterious man said.

“Clank~~~”

After he finished saying those words, that mysterious man clenched the Ancestral Armament in his hand and took the initiative to rush toward Kong Moyu and the two Utmost Exalted Elders.

“You wish to protect Chu Feng? I fear that you’ll be powerless to protect even yourself,” Kong Moyu sneered. Then, he collided with that mysterious man.

That direct confrontation between the two True Immortals wreaked havoc throughout the entire region. Their oppressive might caused heaven and earth to tremble nonstop.

Their attacks brought forth violent energy ripples that caused the winds to rise, blew away the clouds and formed lightning in the sky. It was as if a doomsday storm was engulfing that region.

That place could no longer be considered the mortal world. Rather, it was more akin to hell itself, a hell filled with the power of death.

“I’ll stop him, the two of you go and kill that traitor Kong Shunlian,” Kong Moyu shouted to the two other Utmost Exalted Elders as he fought the mysterious man.

Those two Utmost Exalted Elders did not hesitate. They hurriedly surrounded Kong Shunlian. However, they did not attack him directly. Instead, they asked, “Brother Shunlian, are you still going to be this set on doing things this way? Betraying our clan?”

“I will not kill you all. However... you all can forget about killing little friends Chu Feng and Wang Qiang today.”

After Kong Shunlian finished saying those words, he took out a copper bowl. Once he raised the copper bowl, it turned into a ray of golden light that enveloped Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

Although that golden light was transparent in nature, it still maintained the shape and veined patterns of the copper bowl.

Most importantly, as they were basked in the golden light, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, these two Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, felt an incredible sense of safety.

This copper bowl was a protective treasure. It would only allow the people inside to leave, and not others from outside to enter.

Most importantly, the defense of that copper bowl was extremely powerful. It was as if even True Immortal-level experts would not be able to breach it.

As for what surprised Chu Feng and Wang Qiang the most, it was that the copper bowl was filled with a familiar aura; it was Kong Shunlian’s aura.

It was as if this copper bowl was Kong Shunlian.

“B-Brother, c-could it be, t-this bowl?” Wang Qiang sensed the abnormality too, and looked to Chu Feng.

“Senior Kong Shunlian has decided to protect us even if he must

sacrifice himself,” At that moment, Chu Feng looked to Kong Shunlian. Admiration and the feeling of being emotionally moved filled his hearts.

Both Chu Feng and Wang Qiang had noticed the special aspect of the bowl.

Without a doubt, this bowl was a treasure. However, if that were all it was, the bowl would not really be able to withstand the attacks of True Immortals.

The reason the bowl possessed such strong defensive power was deeply related to Kong Shunlian.

Kong Shunlian had used his life as the price to link with the treasure.

In other words, unless Kong Shunlian was killed... the strength of this bowl would not decrease.

To put it simply, Kong Shunlian’s action of placing the copper bowl over Chu Feng and Wang Qiang meant that he was going to protect them with his life.

However, Kong Shunlian had only known Chu Feng and Wang Qiang for a short period of time.

Yet, he actually, for the sake of not letting down his own conscience, decided to go against his clan, making them enemies, and putting his life on the line to protect Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

As such, how could Chu Feng not be moved? In fact, even Wang Qiang was looking at Kong Shunlian with a complicated gaze now.

# Chapter 2424 – The Truth Revealed

---

“Brother Shunlian, you actually used a life origin treasure to protect them? Do you really not care about dying?” Seeing the copper bowl, the two Utmost Exalted Elders revealed astonished and difficult expressions.

As they were members of the same clan, they had already anticipated that Kong Shunlian might end up betraying their clan.

However, they did not make preparations to actually kill Kong Shunlian.

“We’ve known each other for so long, do you all still not understand me, Kong Shunlian? You can either let me and these two little friends leave together today, or kill me together with them,” Kong Shunlian said with a beaming smile.

Kong Shunlian did not show the slightest bit of cowardice or fear when he said those words. Instead, those words sounded more like a jest.

The current Kong Shunlian no longer feared death. He had truly made the decision to protect Chu Feng and Wang Qiang with his life.

“Brother Shunlian, to tell the truth, we truly cannot bear to kill you.”

“However, the interest of our clan surpasses everything else. Today... even if we cannot bear to kill you, we will still attack you with the intent to kill,” After these words were said, the two Utmost Exalted Elders both unleashed attacks at Kong Shunlian.

“Then come, and let’s battle to our heart’s content,” Holding his Ancestral Armament in his hand, Kong Shunlian collided with the two Utmost Exalted Elders.

At this moment, it was no longer only two True Immortals fighting in this region. Instead, it had become a battlefield with

five True Immortals fighting.

The might of the battlefield instantly increased by manyfold. The frightening energy ripples also expanded their range.

Furthermore, the people that had come to visit Chu Feng had also managed to gradually approach the battlefield.

However, as they saw the darkened sky and earth, and the surging black clouds that rapidly flashed with dazzling light, they simply did not dare to approach the battlefield.

“What frightening might. This old man was fortunate to have witnessed a confrontation between two True Immortals. However, their might is far inferior to this. It would appear that the True Immortals fighting today are even more powerful. Exactly what is happening?”

The crowd did not dare to approach, and could only watch from afar. In this sort of situation, the great majority of them were simply unable to see exactly what was happening.

“Allow this old man to have a look.”

Right at this moment, an old man wearing a cloak moved to the front of the crowd.

After this old man appeared, many people started to scoff at him. There were a lot of people present. Thus, although they possessed all different sorts of cultivation, many of them were peak Martial Ancestors.

When even peak Martial Ancestors were unable to determine the situation of the True Immortals' battle, how could this old man possibly possess the capability to do so?

Seemingly knowing the crowd's misgivings, the old man removed the hood over his head and revealed his appearance.

This was a dark-skinned, horse-faced, white-skinned old man that emitted an extraordinary aura.

“It’s actually Senior Zhuge, who has been withdrawn from worldly affairs for so long.”

Upon seeing this old man, the expressions of the crowd all changed.

This old man was called Zhuge Mingren. He was a grand character.

What did the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm lack the most? That would be none other than Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. As for this Zhuge Mingren, he was a Snake Marked Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he could be said to be a very renowned individual.

“Everyone, don’t be anxious. This old man will observe what is happening.”

Zhug Mingren’s gaze started to shine like two small lights.

His shining gaze was able to see through the surging energy ripples that were wreaking havoc and creating dust storms throughout the battlefield.

Gradually, Zhuge Mingren was able to clearly see what was happening on the battlefield.

“This... it’s actually the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders who are fighting,” Zhuge Mingren revealed an astonished voice.

“What? The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders?” Hearing those words, the crowd were also endlessly astonished.

“That’s right, Kong Shunlian is fighting against Kong Moyu and two other Utmost Exalted Elders.”

“However, Elder Kong Shunlian is not alone either. There is another person helping him.”

“Merely, that individual assisting Elder Kong Shunlian is

someone who I'm unfamiliar with. However, that individual is also a True Immortal-level expert."

"Likely, that individual must be a senior who has withdrawn from worldly affairs for a very long time."

"Chu Feng and Wang Qiang are also present. Currently, they are being protected," Zhuge Mingren told everyone all that he managed to see.

"Crap! Kong Moyu and the others are actually planning to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang," Zhuge Mingren was, after all, a Snake Marked Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Merely by looking at the movements of their mouths, Zhuge Mingren was able to tell what they were saying.

"They're actually planning to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang? Why are they doing this?" The crowd was both confused and astonished by this. This news was truly too explosive.

One must know that Chu Feng was the Kong Heavenly Clan's honored guest who had just left the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Earlier, the Kong Heavenly Clan had seen him off enthusiastically. As such, how could they decide to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang the very next moment?

"They're saying something like Chu Feng concerns the Kong Heavenly Clan's continued existence. Furthermore, it seems that this is related to Grandmaster Prophet," Zhuge Mingren had no idea what was happening, and could only learn a bit from the conversation between Kong Shunlian, Kong Moyu and the others.

"Everyone, don't bother guessing anymore. It is Grandmaster Prophet, he prophesied that Chu Feng would bring about the destruction of the Kong Heavenly Clan."

"Thus, the Kong Heavenly Clan is planning to kill little friend Chu Feng, who possessed neither hatred nor grievances against their Kong Heavenly Clan, merely because of that one prophecy."



“The Kong Heavenly Clan is simply incomparably selfish. They are unqualified to be known as an upright power, a tier one power.”

Right at this moment, a thunder-like voice sounded from the battlefield and entered the crowd’s ears.

It was that mysterious individual. That mysterious individual had noticed that the crowd had approached the battlefield, and knew that they must be guessing what was happening. Thus, he took the initiative to reveal the truth to the crowd.

“Abominable! The Kong Heavenly Clan actually wants to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang merely because of a prophecy?”

“Chu Feng and Wang Qiang are rare geniuses of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They are existences that could potentially become the second Grandmaster Kai Hong, the second Zhan Haichuan.”

“Humph, no wonder the Kong Heavenly Clan refused to allow us to see little friends Chu Feng and Wang Qiang. Turned out they planned to kill them to begin with.”

“The way I see it, it’s simply not because of a prophecy. Instead, it’s because the Kong Heavenly Clan is jealous of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s talent. They are afraid that they will suppress their Kong Heavenly Clan once they mature. Thus, they want to strangle their growth by killing them before they mature.”

“That’s right. Thinking about it, Lord Ying Mingchao’s death back then was also extremely fishy.”

“Though the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan declared that Lord Ying Mingchao was the one who wanted to kill them, that they only managed to kill Lord Ying Mingchao after resisting him with their all, it remains that that was only what they declared to have happened.”

“As for what truly happened, we simply have no idea at all. The

only pitiful thing is that Hero City was destroyed by the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan just because of that.”

“That’s right. What happened back then was extremely suspicious. It was only because the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Ying Heavenly Clan were so powerful that no one dared to say anything.”

“Yet today, this Kong Heavenly Clan actually wants to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, two rare geniuses. We absolutely cannot allow them to get away with this.”

“That’s right. We cannot allow them to get away with this. I will immediately spread word of this matter. We cannot let Chu Feng and Wang Qiang die like this.”

Upon knowing the truth, the crowd was furious. After all, these were all people who had come here for Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

At this moment, many people chose to leave. They were not trying to escape. Rather, they planned to quickly spread news of this matter. They hoped that they could attract the attention of True Immortal-level experts to help save Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

# Chapter 2425 – The Reveal Of The Demon Armament

---

“Those people were drawn here by you?” Kong Moyu also noticed that there were a lot of bystanders observing their battle from afar. He determined that their plot to kill Chu Feng and Wang Qiang was already exposed. As such, he became so furious that his complexion turned deathly pale.

At the same time, Kong Moyu’s killing intent grew even stronger, and his attacks fiercer. He wanted to defeat and kill that mysterious man as quickly as possible.

Unfortunately, that mysterious individual was not to be trifled with.

The mysterious individual held a long sword in his hand and began to unleash all sorts of sword martial skills with utter perfection.

The sword flashed around and sword rays surged forth.

Even though Kong Moyu was very strong, he was unable to defeat that mysterious man.

“If you don’t want anyone to know, don’t do it. Since you’ve already done it, why do you fear that others will know?” That mysterious individual mocked and ridiculed.

“Even if everyone in the world is to know this, Chu Feng must still die today!” Kong Moyu shouted and actually turned to attack Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.

However, before his attack could reach Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, it was neutralized by that mysterious individual.

“Your opponent is me. If you want to harm them, you must pass through me first,” That mysterious individual said.

“Damn you!” Kong Moyu gnashed his teeth in fury. However, he

was unable to break free from the mysterious individual. Thus, he could only shout to the other two Utmost Exalted Elders, “What are you two still dilly-dallying for?! Quickly kill Kong Shunlian and then eliminate that Chu Feng and Wang Qiang.”

In fact, being one against two, Kong Shunlian was currently in a disadvantaged situation where he could only defend.

Merely, his opponents had yet to fight with the intent to kill. Else... Kong Shunlian would really unable to persist for much longer.

“Brother, i-it seems that t-the rumor is true,” Wang Qiang said to Chu Feng.

“What rumor?” Chu Feng asked.

“T-The r-rumor a-about possessors of Heavenly B-Bloodlines like you h-having their strength r-restricted after reaching the True Immortal realm,” Wang Qiang said.

“I don’t think that’s a rumor. Rather, it should be the truth. Else... being all True Immortal-level experts and with the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan possessing Heavenly Bloodlines, how could they be standing on equal footing against the Immortal Sword School and Buddha’s Heavenly Temple?” Chu Feng said.

The so-called rumor was that when Heavenly Bloodline possessors reached the True Immortal Realm of cultivation, they would lose their Heavenly Bloodline’s power.

This so-called power actually only meant the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, as well as the Lightning Mark from the Nine Lightnings Fusion.

The Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings could be said to be the strongest abilities of Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

The reason for that was because those two abilities would directly increase one’s cultivation upon activation.

For example, right now both Kong Moyu and that mysterious individual were rank one True Immortals.

If Kong Moyu were to activate his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, he would be able to instantly increase his cultivation to rank three True Immortal. At that time, how could the mysterious individual possibly contend against him?

The reason why Kong Moyu had yet to use those abilities was not because he did not wish to use them. Rather, it was because he could not use them.

The reason for that was because his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings had already been restricted.

Thus, this was not a rumor, but rather a fact.

In fact, not only could he not use his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, he couldn't even utilize his Lightning Mark.

“Wuuahh.”

Suddenly, Kong Shunlian vomited a mouthful of blood. His right leg had been pierced through.

“Brother Shunlian, it is still not too late to turn around now,” One of the Utmost Exalted Elders said.

“Ever since I made this decision, I never planned to turn back,” As Kong Shunlian spoke, the injury to his right leg was instantly healed. It was as if he had never been injured.

“In that case, don't blame us for being ruthless,” After those two Utmost Exalted Elders said those words, they revealed killing intent for the first time.

It appeared that both of them had made their decisions — they were really planning to kill Kong Shunlian.

This was, however, understandable. From their point of view, they had to kill Chu Feng.

Yet, Kong Shunlian was protecting Chu Feng and Wang Qiang

with his Origin Life Treasure. As such, unless they were to kill Kong Shunlian, they would not be able to breach the Origin Life Treasure.

Seeing that scene, Chu Feng's gaze grew stern. He took a step forward and planned to step out of the treasure protecting them.

“Chu Feng, you must reconsider this. Even if you are to utilize the Evil God Sword, you might not necessarily be able to contend against actual True Immortals.”

“However, it is certain that by using the Evil God Sword, you might end up dying from its backlash,” Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen's voice sounded.

Her Lady Queen understood Chu Feng very well. She had already managed to tell that Chu Feng did not plan to watch with folded arms, that he wanted to utilize the Evil God Sword to join the battle.

However, the side effects of the Evil God Sword was truly too enormous. Back in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng nearly died after using it.

And now, the opponents Chu Feng had to face were even stronger. If he were to really use the Evil God Sword, the backlash would definitely be even stronger too. As such, it might really pose a fatal danger to him.

“This matter was caused by me to begin with. As such, how could I look on without doing anything as someone puts their life on the line for me?” As Chu Feng spoke, he took several more steps forward and walked out of Kong Shunlian's Origin Life Treasure.

“B-Brother, w-what are you doing?” Wang Qiang was immediately worried upon seeing that scene. As he spoke, he moved to rush out and grab Chu Feng back.

“Die!”

However, the two Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders

also noticed that Chu Feng had walked out of the Origin Life Treasure.

The two Utmost Exalted Elders immediately unleashed attacks at Chu Feng with the intention to kill.

“Clank~~~”

However right at that moment, Chu Feng raised the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“Rumble~~~”

At that moment, the attacks unleashed by the two Utmost Exalted Elders approached Chu Feng. The attacks exploded before Chu Feng and turned into violent energy ripples.

Those attacks were truly too powerful. Merely those energy ripples were sufficient to cause Chu Feng to die miserably.

However, the very next moment, the two Utmost Exalted Elders, Kong Shunlian, Kong Moyu and even that mysterious individual revealed astonished expressions.

Chu Feng was standing where he was completely unscathed.

“He actually blocked it?!”

“How is that possible?! Could it be... it’s that Incomplete Imperial Armament?”

After being astonished, the True Immortals present all turned their gazes to the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s hand.

At that moment, the Evil God Sword was no longer tranquil like before. Not only was it trembling, it was also emitting layer upon layer of crimson gaseous flames. At that moment, the crimson gaseous flames had surrounded Chu Feng.

“Heavens! This is simply unimaginable!” Far away, that Zhuge Mingren also noticed that scene through his observation with his special techniques.

“Senior Zhuge, exactly what happened over there?” The crowd asked in succession.

Merely from Zhuge Mingren’s expression, they were able to tell that something unexpected must’ve happened on the battlefield over there.

“Little friend Chu Feng, by relying on an Incomplete Imperial Armament, blocked the joint attacks of two True Immortals,” Zhuge Mingren said.

“What? An Incomplete Imperial Armament blocked attacks from two True Immortals? How can that be possible?!” The crowd were all astonished.

“Senior Zhuge, you wouldn’t be mistaken, right? Could it be that someone helped little friend Chu Feng block those attacks? How could he possibly block them himself?” Some of the crowd didn’t believe it.

“This old man is definitely not mistaken,” Zhuge Mingren said with determination.

“I got it. I’ve heard that little friend Chu Feng possesses an extraordinary Demon Armament.”

“Back in the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, he relied on that Demon Armament to scare away a True Immortal-level expert from the Infant Soul Sect.”

“Originally, I had only thought this to be an exaggerated rumor. Never would I have expected that it was actually real. Little friend Chu Feng actually really does have a Demon Armament capable of contending against True Immortals,” Someone suddenly said.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, rumbles sounded from the sky.

Turning toward the sky, the crowd noticed that there were crimson clouds spreading out from the location of the battlefield.



Those clouds had actually reached above their heads.

As the crimson clouds surged around, only a single aura could be felt — a demonic aura.

“Ssss~~~”

At that moment, the sounds of people sucking in a mouthful of cold air could be heard nonstop.

All of the people immediately associated the crimson clouds that covered the sky with the Demon Armament.

The reason for that was because that was the first time that they had felt such a frightening demonic aura. That sensation truly felt like the arrival of doomsday.

# Chapter 2426 – The First Manifestation Of Might

---

“There’s actually such a powerful Demon Armament in this world? This is simply many times more powerful than even Ancestral Armaments. Chu Feng is actually able to use such a powerful Demon Armament?”

“Chu Feng... exactly what is his origin?”

As the crowd praised in admiration, they began to ponder Chu Feng’s origin again.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?”

Compared to the overwhelming might emitted by the Evil God Sword, Her Lady Queen was more concerned about Chu Feng’s safety.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had officially unleashed the power of the Evil God Sword.

“For the time being, this sword has yet to go out of control. It has given its power to me, allowing me to use it.”

“I now have a rough sensation of its power. If my guess is correct, I will be able to contend against True Immortals as long as I have it,” Chu Feng grew excited.

“Really? Then quickly activate your Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings to increase your cultivation so that you can kill those Kong Heavenly Clan’s old farts,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No. right now, I have only obtained the strength of the Evil God Sword, and my cultivation isn’t really at the True Immortal realm.”

“Furthermore, not only am I unable to use the Heavenly Bloodline’s power, I am also unable to use my martial power to unleash my martial skills and secret skills.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng looked at the Evil God Sword he held in his hands, he said, “Right now, this sword is the only thing that I can use.”

“The Evil God Sword is the only thing you can use?” Her Lady Queen revealed an astonished expression.

“However, I feel... that this sword by itself is sufficient.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng pointed the Evil God Sword in his hand toward one of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Roar~~~”

At that moment, a strange and ear-piercing voice sounded. Then, a crimson sword ray was shot directly toward that Utmost Exalted Elder.

“This aura, damn it!”

Faced with the sword ray unleashed by the Evil God Sword, that Utmost Exalted Elder revealed a panic-stricken expression. He simply did not even dare to block the attack. Rather, he immediately moved aside to dodge it.

However, Chu Feng did not give up just like that. He continued to brandish his Evil God Sword, and unleashed several sword rays toward that Utmost Exalted Elder.

“Damn!”

In Such a situation, that Utmost Exalted Elder could only try to dodge continuously.

It was not that he did not want to fight back. Rather, Chu Feng’s attacks were simply too fast.

Furthermore, it wasn’t that he didn’t want to block the attacks. Rather, the crimson sword rays emitted by the Evil God Sword were simply too frightening.

Those sword rays brought that Utmost Exalted Elder a sensation,

that... he was simply unable to block them.

Thus, he naturally did not dare to block them.

In merely a blink of an eye, that Utmost Exalted Elder was forced many thousands of meters away by Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng, he did not continue to chase after that Utmost Exalted Elder. Rather, he arrived beside Kong Shunlian.

“Little friend Chu Feng, that sword of yours!!!” Kong Shunlian was also astonished by Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword.

“Senior Kong, I will tell you about the origins of this sword in detail in the future.”

“Right now, we must get through this crisis first. As you’re already injured, you should not battle anymore. Leave with Wang Qiang first, I’ll handle them,” Chu Feng said.

“.....”

Hearing those words, Kong Shunlian revealed a surprised expression.

However, Chu Feng completely disregarded Kong Shunlian’s expression.

Instead, Chu Feng looked at the mysterious individual and said, “Senior, I do not know who you are. However, this Chu Feng is truly thankful that you have placed your life on the line to come to my assistance.”

“Might you be willing to leave me your distinguished name? If this Chu Feng is able to live past today, I will definitely repay senior’s kindness today.”

“Young Master Chu Feng, this old man is your servant,” That mysterious individual said.

“Servant?” The response from that mysterious individual came like a sudden clap of thunder in the hearts of all the crowd present.

“Servant? That unknown True Immortal actually declared himself to be Chu Feng’s servant?!”

“Heavens, a True Immortal-level expert is actually Chu Feng’s servant?! Sure enough, Chu Feng possesses an extraordinary origin, a truly extraordinary origin!”

The word ‘servant’ was caught by Zhuge Mingren. He immediately cried out in alarm.

Once he muttered those words, the rest of the bystanders all heard it too.

“True Immortal servant?! Chu Feng’s servant is a True Immortal?! Heavens! Chu Feng not only possesses such a powerful Demon Armament, what sort of huge monster does Chu Feng have behind his back too?!”

“He is most definitely not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He must be a Young Master from a certain Upper Realm.”

“Haha, Kong Heavenly Clan... oh Kong Heavenly Clan, you all have truly met your match now, no?”

Upon finding out the matter of that True Immortal being Chu Feng’s servant, the crowd was completely astonished. However, they all burst into laughter too.

They were all people standing on Chu Feng’s side. Thus, to them, this news was extremely great.

At that moment, they were all certain that Chu Feng was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Although there were indeed some hidden True Immortal-level experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they were all proud and arrogant individuals, and would definitely refuse to submit to others as servants.

Thus, merely from one word from that mysterious True

Immortal, the crowd was certain that Chu Feng must be someone from an Upper Realm.

As for the Upper Realms' huge monsters, how could a mere Kong Heavenly Clan possibly contend against them?

At that moment, everyone felt that the Kong Heavenly Clan had kicked an iron plate, that they would definitely suffer enormously in the future.

In fact, even the destruction of their Kong Heavenly Clan was possible.

“Servant?”

In fact, Chu Feng was also very astonished right now. No matter how hard he thought about it, he was unable to think of a True Immortal-level servant.

“Senior, regardless of who you might be, I still thank you for your grace today. However, what happened here today is caused by me, Chu Feng. As such, I truly do not wish to implicate you. Thus... please leave too. You can leave the rest to me.”

“Chu Feng, you...”

Kong Shunlian's expression grew increasingly shocked. He simply did not dare to believe his own ears.

Chu Feng was actually planning to take on three True Immortals by himself?

“What shameless boasting. Do you really think that you can contend against True Immortals with a mere weapon?”

“I will let you experience exactly how powerful the might of a True Immortal is right now.”

The remaining Utmost Exalted Elder who was fighting against Kong Shunlian grew extremely furious and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

He brandished the Ancestral Armament he held in his hand and

shot a slash toward Chu Feng.

That slash was no ordinary attack. Rather, it was a martial skill, an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill.

A True Immortal unleashing an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill with an Ancestral Armament, oh how powerful must that be?

It was so frighteningly powerful that even Kong Shunlian, a fellow True Immortal, would not dare be careless toward it. Kong Shunlian raised his Ancestral Armament with the intention of blocking that attack.

However, right at the moment when Kong Shunlian was about to act, Chu Feng suddenly thrust forth his Evil God Sword.

“Roar~~~”

A crimson sword ray was once again shot forth from Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword.

The very next moment, the crimson sword ray collided with the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill unleashed by the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder.

To the crowd’s astonishment, the collision did not end in a loud explosion, nor did it create energy ripples wreaking havoc through the surroundings.

Instead, like a stream assimilating into the sea, it quietly and completely disappeared.

That’s right, it was like a stream assimilating into the sea.

That Utmost Exalted Elder’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was devoured, devoured by the Evil God Sword’s sword ray.

At that moment, not only did that crimson sword ray not grow weaker, it instead became more powerful than before.

That scene stunned everyone present.

One should know... that the people involved, with the exception

of Chu Feng and Wang Qiang, were all True Immortals.

When even True Immortals were stunned, one could tell how astonishing what had just happened was.



# Chapter 2427 – Bloodline Grand Formation

---

“I refuse to believe this.”

That Utmost Exalted Elder did not dodge and flee like the other Utmost Exalted Elders when faced with the incoming sword ray.

Instead, he raised his Ancestral Armament horizontally before him.

“Buzz~~~”

Dazzling golden light shone from the Ancestral Armament. Then, it turned into an enormous ferocious beast.

That ferocious beast was a hundred meters tall and a thousand meters long. It looked like an impenetrable wall as it let out an ear-piercing roar and emitted an invulnerable sensation.

It was as if that ferocious beast was alive, as if it were a living fort.

“That is...”

Kong Shunlian revealed an astonished expression. As a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan, he recognized that martial skill with a single glance.

What that Utmost Exalted Elder used was one of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills, the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast.

As its name implied, the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast was not an offensive martial skill, but rather a defensive martial skill.

One could very well imagine how powerful an Ancestral Taboo-level defensive martial skill was.

If one wanted to describe it, then it could be described with two words: absolute defense.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the crimson sword ray landed on the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast.

“Rooooaarr~~~”

The Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast that was known to be an absolute defense actually let out a miserable roar the moment it came in contact with the crimson sword ray.

It was as if a wolf had come across a lion, a ferocious beast of the mortal world encountering a demon from hell. The roar that Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast emitted was not only miserable-sounding, it was also trembling.

As that voice sounded, the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast started to distort. Like the Emperor Taboo Martial Skill before it, it was assimilated into the crimson sword ray.

“Damn it!”

Witnessing that scene, that Utmost Exalted Elder finally realized how bad the situation was. Light immediately flashed under his feet, as he tried to escape.

However, the crimson sword ray was simply too fast. At such a close distance, the crimson sword ray arrived in an instant. Before that Utmost Exalted Elder could fully escape, that crimson sword ray pierced through his left arm.

“Puuu~~~”

Blood sprinkled through the sky. Although that Utmost Exalted Elder had managed to escape, a large chunk of flesh was missing from his left arm.

Most importantly, an injury like that should not be anything serious to a True Immortal.

However, that Utmost Exalted Elder had a very miserable expression on his face. His twisted face was unable to conceal the pain that he was suffering.

Blood was flowing from his wound nonstop and there didn't seem to be any indication of healing.

“That sword is actually that powerful?” Kong Shunlian, that mysterious individual and even Kong Moyu were dumbfounded.

At that moment, the proud and arrogant Kong Moyu finally revealed an expression of panic on his face.

The reason for that was because that was truly no small matter, the martial skill that Utmost Exalted Elder had used was the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast.

The Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast, that overwhelmingly powerful defensive martial skill, was actually completely ineffective before that crimson sword ray. This matter caused him to feel fear toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, he seemed to have finally realized why Grandmaster Prophet said that Chu Feng would bring about the destruction of their Kong Heavenly Clan.

That prophecy was not just some frightening words to scare them. Merely by relying on that sword, Chu Feng seemed to really be able to bring about the destruction of their Kong Heavenly Clan.

“He actually injured a Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder?! He's a True Immortal!” Far away, Zhuge Mingren uttered a cry of alarm.

“Ah? Chu Feng actually injured a True Immortal?!” The crowd were all astonished upon knowing about it. At the same time, they all grew extremely excited.

Although they were very far away from the battlefield, they were still witnesses to the battle.

Today, they were witnessing a matter that could shock the world, something that had never happened in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

That is, a Half Martial Ancestor-level person of the younger generation was fighting against True Immortals and winning against them.

That was something that should be impossible. Yet, it was actually happening at that moment.

As such, how could they not be emotional? How could they not be excited?

“Kong Shunlian, do you not see? This child possesses a Demon Armament, an extremely heaven-defying Demon Armament. He really does possess the power to bring about the destruction of our Kong Heavenly Clan!” Kong Moyu said to Kong Shunlian. He had become extremely emotional.

“What sort of power I possess is my own matter. However, if your Kong Heavenly Clan did not force me to this, why would I end up fighting against you all?” Chu Feng said.

“Enough of your nonsense! Today, regardless of what you say, you absolutely cannot leave here alive!” Kong Moyu shouted angrily. Then, he unleashed an attack.

The mysterious individual did not stop him from attacking Chu Feng this time around. The reason for that was because he was able to tell that Chu Feng could answer it himself without his assistance.

“Roar~~~”

Sure enough, Chu Feng shot forth a thrust with his Evil God Sword again. Then, a crimson sword ray was shot out again.

Like last time, the crimson sword ray directly devoured Kong Moyu’s attack and started to fly toward Kong Moyu.

“Damn it!”

Kong Moyu had experienced how powerful the crimson sword ray was. Thus, how could he possibly hesitate? Immediately, he

moved to dodge.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

However, Chu Feng was unwilling to let him get away. He thrust forth the Evil God Sword repeatedly, and shot consecutive crimson sword rays.

At that moment, it was not only Kong Moyu who was fleeing. The Kong Heavenly Clan's two other Utmost Exalted Elders were also only able to flee.

Thinking about it, three grand True Immortals were actually forced to flee all over the place by Chu Feng, a mere Half Martial Ancestor.

This scene was truly a bit ridiculous.

“Set up the formation!!!”

Right at that moment, a female's voice suddenly sounded.

Then, another True Immortal's oppressive might appeared out of nowhere.

It was Kong Yuehua. Kong Yuehua had suddenly appeared before Kong Moyu.

After Kong Yuehua appeared, the other two Utmost Exalted Elders hurriedly moved to Kong Yuehua's side.

Seeing Kong Yuehua, Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders said in unison, “Elder Yuehua, you've finally decided to show yourself.”

“I am unable to attack my own clansman. However, since that Chu Feng wants to kill you all, I cannot disregard you either,” As Kong Yuehua said those words, she took a profound glance at Kong Shunlian.

Kong Shunlian and that mysterious individual did not reveal much surprise at Kong Yuehua's appearance.

From this, it could be seen that Kong Yuehua must have been here for a while now. Likely, she had arrived together with Kong Moyu and the others.

Merely, Kong Yuehua was considering former affections, and did not want to attack Kong Shunlian. That was why she had not revealed herself the entire time.

However, Kong Moyu and the others were now in a crisis. As such, she had no choice but to reveal herself.

“That child’s sword is extremely strange. Even when sword rays are shot forth from the sword, it will let out a demonic roar.”

“That is most definitely not an ordinary Demon Armament. Rather, it is a very powerful Demon Armament. We cannot be careless against it.”

“Set up the Bloodline Grand Formation. We will link our origin lives and use the spirit formation to take care of him,” As Kong Yuehua spoke, a body of light appeared from her dantian.

That body of light was very strange. It looked like a living snake moving about through the air and approaching Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Very well, we’ll use the Bloodline Grand Formation to take care of this animal.”

Kong Moyu and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders did not hesitate. As they spoke, they also emitted bodies of light from their dantian.

Soon, the four bodies of light shining from the four True Immortals interweaved with one another.

The next moment, nine-colored lightning emerged in the eyes of Kong Yuehua and the others.

After the nine-colored lightning appeared, they began to gather at their foreheads.

Soon, a pattern resembling the character ‘Mortal’ appeared on their foreheads.

And now, their auras had become much more powerful than before.

“Lightning Mark?” Chu Feng’s eyes flashed.

“Indeed, it’s the Lightning Mark. After Heavenly Bloodline possessors reach the True Immortal realm, a portion of their Heavenly Bloodline’s power will be sealed off. The weaker the Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique one trains in, the more of their Heavenly Bloodline’s power will be sealed.”

“The Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique that we trained in was the simplest and weakest Mortal Punishment Mysterious Taboo. That is why, after we reach the True Immortal realm, practically all of our Heavenly Bloodline’s power will be sealed off.”

“However, as long as we utilize the special Bloodline Grand Formation, we will be able to activate our Lightning Marks.”

“Merely, the Bloodline Grand Formation is related to our origin life, our bloodlines. It is a heaven-defying method.”

“Every time it is used, the person using it will drain their lifespan. Furthermore, their lifespan will be burned very quickly.”

“To put it simply, although they have successfully activated their Lightning Marks using the Bloodline Grand Formation and unleashed the power of their Lightning Mark once again, they are using their remaining lifespan as the price,” Kong Shunlian explained.

“So that’s the case. They’re truly willing to part with their lives for the sake of killing me.”

“Unfortunately, I fear that they will still not be able to kill me with only this bit of power,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was not boasting. At that moment, the power of the Evil God Sword had been unleashed. As such, he had a rough understanding of how powerful the Evil God Sword was.

At the very least, the Evil God Sword was not something that the four Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders before him could contend against.



## Chapter 2428 – Crimson Gaze

---

“What shameless boasting!!!” Kong Moyu shouted angrily and then immediately unleashed an attack.

It was not only him who unleashed an attack, as Kong Yuehua and the other two Utmost Exalted Elders also joined him in attacking Chu Feng.

Furthermore, all four of them used Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

A total of four Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills turned into four lightning dragons that roared with voices capable of penetrating the sky itself as they moved to oppress Chu Feng together.

“Chu Feng, run away!”

Once the four lightning dragons appeared, Kong Shunlian’s expression changed enormously.

As a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan, he knew very well how frightening the lightning dragons were.

This Martial Skill that the four Heavenly Immortals had used was named Ancestral Taboo: Lightning Dragon Transformation.

The ‘Transformation’ was in its name for a major reason. That is, the Ancestral Taboo: Lightning Dragon Transformations could fuse with one another to become an even more powerful martial skill.

“Roar~~~”

Accompanying the dragon roars, as the four lightning dragons galloped toward Chu Feng, they gathered in one location and fused into one.

Not only was this new lightning dragon many times larger than the four before, it was also emitting an aura many times more powerful.

As it roared, it caused vibrations that shook everything.

Not to mention the people on the battlefield, even the bystanders far away felt the violent trembling of its roar.

The bystanders ended up covering their ears. Some among them even activated special methods to block the dragon's roar.

However, even with that being the case, there were still those with low levels of cultivation that ended up shaken, bleeding from all seven of their facial orifices and losing consciousness.

There were even those who were so shaken by the roar that they died on the spot.

From that, one could tell how powerful that lightning dragon was.

“Evil God Sword, go ahead and allow them to experience exactly how powerful you are.”

Chu Feng thrust forth the Evil God Sword in his hand once again, shooting out another sword ray.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking sight occurred.

That crimson sword ray actually changed. Not only did it rapidly increase in size, it also turned into two enormous crimson sharp claws.

The crimson claws ruthlessly grabbed onto the lightning dragon's body.

“Wuuahh~~~”

At that moment, that astonishingly powerful lightning dragon was actually unable to approach Chu Feng in the slightest. It could only violently flutter its enormous body in midair and let out miserable shrieks.

That's right, the lightning dragon was letting out miserable

shrieks. It was the sort of sound that one would let out when under incomparable pain and misery.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Suddenly, the crimson claws shot forth by the Evil God Sword forcibly tore the lightning dragon to pieces.

Lightning lingered in the sky and scattered about in all directions. The miserable shrieks from the lightning dragon were still echoing.

“This...”

At that moment, not to mention Kong Moyu and the others, even Kong Shunlian and that mysterious individual were filled with fear.

They were able to tell that the sword Chu Feng held in his hand most definitely possessed life.

It had done that deliberately; deliberately tearing the lightning dragon to pieces.

“Did you all really think that you were qualified to contend against me?”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s eyes turned red. The Evil God Sword he held in his hand was suddenly swept across the space before him.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

In an instant, several crimson sword rays shot forth from the Evil God Sword. Densely packed, they filled the sky. Like a crimson meteor shower, they flew toward Kong Yuehua and the others.

Furthermore, the speed of the sword rays was even faster than before.

“Crap!”

Witnessing that scene, Kong Yuehua and the others all revealed

dejected expressions.

The reason for that was because they knew that they would not be able to dodge the incoming sword rays with how close and how fast they were.

“Puu, puu, puu, puu, puu~~~”

The very next moment, many crimson sword rays pierced through the bodies of Kong Yuehua and the others.

Bringing streams of blood with them, the crimson sword rays exited their bodies and even severed their Bloodline Grand Formation.

Finally, everything ended. That region turned silent for the time being.

“Cough, cough, cough...”

Suddenly, miserable coughing sound shattered the quietness of this place.

It was Kong Yuehua and the others. At this moment, not only were the four of them violently coughing, they were also coughing up blood.

It was not only their mouths that were covered with blood; their bodies were also covered with blood. The reason for that was because their bodies were filled with thousands of holes.

“So powerful, that sword... is so powerful,” Far away, Zhuge Mingren let out another cry of surprise.

“Senior, what has happened now?”

“Exactly who won?”

The crowd asked in succession. Through the narration from Zhuge Mingren earlier, they already came to know that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s four Utmost Exalted Elders had unleashed their Bloodline Grand Formation and activated their special Lightning Marks, symbols of their Heavenly Bloodlines, for the sake of killing

Chu Feng.

The crowd knew very well what Lightning Marks were. They were methods for Heavenly Bloodline possessors to increase their battle power.

However, upon reaching the True Immortal realm, their Bloodline powers would be sealed. As such, they would not be able to form their Lightning Marks.

Earlier, the four Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders had utilized their Bloodline Grand Formation to once again form their Lightning Marks.

That caused the bystanders to become extremely worried about Chu Feng's well-being.

True Immortals with Lightning Marks, that was a very powerful matter.

"Chu Feng won. They were simply unable to contend against Chu Feng."

"And now, they have all been injured by Chu Feng. Furthermore, it seems that it is very difficult for them to heal their wounds. As such, they are very badly injured," Zhuge Mingren was very emotional. It was the first time he had seen such a shaking scene.

"It's actually that powerful?"

After knowing about this matter, the bystanders grew even more emotional.

They all knew that the bodies of True Immortals had already surpassed those of mortals, and could be said to be indestructible and undying. Even if an attack was able to injure them, their bodies would rapidly heal those injuries.

An attack that caused True Immortals to be unable to recover would only mean one thing — that that attack was too powerful, and greatly surpassed the limits of what a True Immortal's body

could withstand.

“Come, kill me, why are you all only standing there?”

Chu Feng’s eyes grew more and more red. A dense killing intent was being emitted from his body. Most importantly, that killing intent was actually visible to the naked eye; it was crimson red in color.

The current Chu Feng looked as if he had fused with the crimson clouds in the sky.

Holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, he stepped through the air and slowly moved toward Kong Yuehua and the others.

With each step from Chu Feng, Kong Moyu and the others grew a bit more nervous.

At that moment, Kong Moyu and the others were extremely weak. They were simply unable to contend against Chu Feng anymore.

With Chu Feng moving toward them, they knew what was going to happen to them.

It was not that they did not wish to escape. Merely... a powerful oppressive might was binding them. They did not have the strength to escape.

As for the oppressive might that bound them, it was naturally from the Evil God Sword.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please let it go and spare their lives.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was determined to kill, Kong Shunlian hurriedly grabbed his arm.

After all, those four were his clansmen. While he did not wish for his clansmen to kill Chu Feng, he also did not wish for Chu Feng to kill his clansmen.

“What did you say? You want me to spare them? You actually want me to spare them? Them? People who wanted to kill me?”

Chu Feng turned around and asked Kong Shunlian coldly.

“.....”

When Kong Shunlian saw Chu Feng's current expression, he immediately released his hand from Chu Feng's arm and even moved several steps away.

From Chu Feng's eyes, he saw a frightening gaze that he had never seen before.

At the moment when his eyes met Chu Feng's, he had felt a sensation.

He felt that that was simply not Chu Feng, but rather a demon whose second nature was killing.

Kong Shunlian was not someone who was afraid of death. Yet, the moment he saw Chu Feng's gaze, he felt enormous fear in his heart.

“Do you know what sort of consequence one will suffer if they fail to kill me?” Chu Feng arrived before Kong Moyu and asked him.

“If you want to kill, then go ahead and kill me. If you want to torture, then go ahead and torture me. If this old man begs you once, I will consider you my ancestor,” Kong Moyu said loudly.

He knew that he would definitely be killed today. Thus, he had no intention of begging for forgiveness.

“As you wish.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he abruptly waved the Evil God Sword he held in his hand. A crimson light flashed past, and Kong Moyu's head was sliced off.

# Chapter 2429 – Assimilation Of Demonic Aura

---

Kong Moyu was beheaded. However, he was not dead. His head floated before Chu Feng, and he burst into loud and mocking laughter.

“Ignorant fool, I am a True Immortal. My body is undying and indestructible. Even if you are to behead me, you will not be able to kill me.”

“Who said that I’ve beheaded you for the sake of killing you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Then why did you behead me?” Kong Moyu frowned. From Chu Feng’s words, he felt misgivings.

“Don’t be anxious, you’ll come to know,” Chu Feng chuckled. The next moment, his other hand pierced into Kong Moyu’s dantian.

“It’s useless. I’m a True Immortal. Even if you destroy my dantian, you will still not be able to destroy my cultivation,” Kong Moyu thought that Chu Feng would do something to him. However, after seeing that what Chu Feng did was still common practice, he started to mock Chu Feng again.

Only other True Immortals knew how powerful they truly were. Thus, Kong Moyu was very confident that Chu Feng’s methods would not be able to kill him.

After thinking that, he became completely confident. After all, Chu Feng was only able to confront them by relying on his Demon Armament.

However, it remained that he was a True Immortal. While Chu Feng possessed the Demon Armament, he did not possess the cultivation. Thus, Kong Moyu felt that Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to kill him.



However, Chu Feng completely ignored Kong Moyu. Instead, he said, “Milady Queen, do you wish to see what a True Immortal’s source energy tastes like?”

Naturally, Chu Feng’s words were meant toward Eggy. Merely, he did not say those words in his heart, but rather spoke them out loud.

Thus, everyone, including Kong Moyu, heard what Chu Feng said.

“I do, of course I do.”

Her Lady Queen nodded her head repeatedly in excitement. She even involuntarily extended her little tongue to lick her sexy lips. It was truly an adorable and enchanting sight.

How could she not want to taste a True Immortal’s source energy?

“Haha, so you wanted to have your world spirit refine my source energy?”

“Chu Feng, it’s not that I am looking down on you. If you were a True Immortal, then perhaps you might be able to accomplish that. However, you are only relying on the power of a Demon Armament to be able to contend against me right now. What makes you think you’ll be able to refine my source energy?”

“You should know that I’m a True Immortal. My body is different from that of ordinary mortals. With merely your Half Martial Ancestor-level cultivation, you wouldn’t even know where my source energy is,” Kong Moyu mocked Chu Feng again.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng chuckled. He said, “Isn’t it here?”

“Buzz~~~”

Once Chu Feng’s voice landed, a boundless suction power was emitted from Chu Feng’s palms and enveloped Kong Moyu’s body.

“Ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

The next moment, Kong Moyu let out an incomparably miserable scream.

“How... how is this possible? How... how did you a-accomplish this? No... no... no...!!!!”

Kong Moyu let out a snarl of irreconciliation. The reason for that was because his source energy was being refined by Chu Feng.

“Not only am I able to find your source energy, I am also able to let you be in so much pain that you’d wish you were dead,” Chu Feng’s smile grew denser and denser.

Merely, not only was Chu Feng’s smile strange, it was also very sinister. Chu Feng had never had that sort of smile on his face before. It was as if... this was not Chu Feng at all.

“Stop! Stop!!!” Kong Moyu’s face was distorted. Even his face started to shiver.

Not only was his True Immortal source energy being refined by Chu Feng, he was also suffering from a pain that he had never suffered from before. That sort of pain felt truly unbearable for him.

“You want me to stop? Beg me,” Chu Feng said.

“.....” Evidently, Kong Moyu did not wish to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness. Thus, he clenched his teeth and said no more.

Chu Feng seemed to have already expected Kong Moyu’s reaction. He was still smiling as he continued to stare at Kong Moyu. It was as if he was waiting for Kong Moyu to give in.

At that moment, the others present were all stunned. They were confused as to exactly how Chu Feng was able to accomplish that how he was able to bring Kong Moyu such overwhelming pain.

After all, Chu Feng was using his own abilities, and not the Demon Armament to pierce into Kong Moyu’s body.

Could it be that Chu Feng did not need the Demon Armament,

and possessed this sort of power himself?

Kong Moyu's face grew more and more distorted. His expression changed unceasingly. Finally, he opened his mouth and used an even more trembling and weaker voice to say, "I... I beg you, please spare me, please spare me."

Kong Moyu began to actually beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

At that moment, Kong Yuehua, Kong Shunlian and the other were all stunned.

They had known Kong Moyu since when they were children, and knew that he had always been an extremely stubborn individual. They had never seen him beg someone for forgiveness before.

Yet now, Kong Moyu was actually begging Chu Feng for forgiveness.

"Haha..."

However, after Kong Moyu begged for forgiveness, Chu Feng's smile remained unchanged. It was as if he did not see this at all.

Thus, Chu Feng continued to refine Kong Moyu's source energy. He did not lessen his torment of Kong Moyu.

"Chu Feng, I've already begged you for forgiveness, why are you not stopping?!!!"

"Stop! Stop immediately!"

"Exactly what do you want me to do?"

"Do you even have integrity?!"

Kong Moyu let out an incomparably furious snarl.

However, the smile on Chu Feng's face grew even stronger. He said, "I don't have to be sincere towards someone as despicable as you."

After he finished saying those words, the suction emitted from Chu Feng's palm grew even stronger, and Kong Moyu let out even

more miserable screams.

His source energy was rapidly being sucked out and refined by Her Lady Queen.

“Chu Feng, just release him,” At that moment, Kong Shunlian started to entreat Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored him. He did not plan to stop at all.

“Noo!!!!”

Finally, Kong Moyu let out a final scream. That scream was so loud that he shouted himself hoarse. Then, he grew quiet.

He died... A True Immortal was dead. He died after his source energy was completely absorbed and refined.

“Chu Feng, he, he killed the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder, Kong Moyu.”

“A True Immortal has fallen. He was killed by Chu Feng.”

Far away, Zhuge Mingren saw everything, and let out a cry of alarm.

After finding out about it, all of the bystanders revealed faces of disbelief.

After all, the one that had died was a True Immortal!!!

“It’s your turn next.”

After killing Kong Moyu, Chu Feng did not plan to stop. Instead, he turned his gaze to Kong Yuehua and began to walk toward her.

“Chu Feng, stop!”

In response, Kong Shunlian shouted. He held his Ancestral Armament and rushed toward Chu Feng. He was planning to stop Chu Feng by force.

However, Chu Feng raised his arm, and a red stream of gaseous flames was emitted from Chu Feng’s arm.

That red gaseous flames was incomparably ferocious. It forcibly knocked Kong Shunlian away just as he was about to reach Chu Feng.

“Crap, it’s the assimilation of the demonic aura.”

Seeing that scene, Her Lady Queen’s heart tightened.

Earlier, Chu Feng had said himself that he could only use the Evil God Sword.

However, it was now evident that it was not only the Evil God Sword itself, but also Chu Feng who possessed the Evil God Sword’s power.

With the understanding Her Lady Queen had of Chu Feng, she knew that he would not attack Kong Shunlian no matter what.

Thus, there was only a single possibility for it. That was that Chu Feng had already been invaded by the Evil God Sword. Not only had he received the Evil God Sword’s power, he was also being eroded by the demonic nature of the Evil God Sword.

A Chu Feng like that would be very dangerous. The reason for that was because while Chu Feng possessed emotions, the Evil God Sword did not.

Chu Feng might end up unleashing a massacre afterwards. Not only would it be dangerous for the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan, it would also be dangerous for Kong Shunlian and Wang Qiang.

“Ta, ta, ta~~~”

Sure enough, it was as Her Lady Queen expected, after Chu Feng knocked Kong Shunlian flying, Chu Feng did not bother to take a single glance at him. With overwhelming killing intent and his Evil God Sword in hand, Chu Feng began to walk toward Kong Yuehua one step at a time.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a golden flash of light suddenly swept past Chu Feng from behind. It flew toward Kong Yuehua and enveloped her.

It was that copper bowl, Kong Shunlian's origin life treasure.

Kong Shunlian had moved his copper bowl from Wang Qiang and enveloped Kong Yuehua with it.

"Are you insistent on hindering me?" Chu Feng finally looked at Kong Shunlian.

However, Chu Feng's gaze had completely changed right now. There was not a single trace of emotion in the gaze with which he looked at Kong Shunlian. It was as if Kong Shunlian was a stranger.

"Kong Shunlian, get away from here. Don't worry about us. He will really kill you."

Kong Yuehua had also noticed the abnormality in Chu Feng's behavior. She started to urge Kong Shunlian to leave, and tried hard to move her body. She wanted to walk out of Kong Shunlian's origin life treasure that had enveloped her body and was protecting her.

"Buzz~~~"

However, right after Kong Yuehua struggled out of the origin life treasure, the origin life treasure immediately moved and enveloped Kong Yuehua again.

Naturally, it was Kong Shunlian who was operating his origin life treasure.

"Chu Feng, if you want to kill her, you must kill me first," Kong Shunlian said to Chu Feng resolutely.

Kong Shunlian was acting the same way he had toward Kong Moyu and the others earlier.

He would not allow the Kong Heavenly Clan to kill Chu Feng. But

by the same account, he would not allow Chu Feng to kill the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Earlier, when Chu Feng had killed Kong Moyu, he had been unable to react in time. However, now, he was able to react.

Thus, even if he must risk his aged life, he would still protect Kong Yuehua.

It would be the same as how he had protected Chu Feng and Wang Qiang from the Kong Heavenly Clan earlier.

“Did you really think that you could hinder me?” Chu Feng asked Kong Shunlian. Not only were Chu Feng’s eyes blood red, but his voice was also exceptionally ice-cold.

“I know that I cannot stop you now. However, even if that is the case, I still cannot watch with folded arms. Come, since you insist on killing, kill me first.”

After saying those words, Kong Shunlian closed his eyes. He was prepared to face death.

“B-Brother, c-calm down. T-That is Senior Kong Shunlian, y-you m-must not kill him.”

Wang Qiang also started to urge Chu Feng against it. The reason for that was because he had also realized that Chu Feng might be controlled by the Demon Armament and lost his reason.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng might really end up killing Kong Shunlian.

“Hah...”

Suddenly, Chu Feng burst into laughter. Merely, that laughter was very sinister and strange. One could not determine exactly what Chu Feng was thinking.

## Chapter 2430 – Great Catastrophe

---

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked at Wang Qiang. He said, “Rest assured, I will not kill him. The reason for that is because his Origin Life Treasure is simply unable to stop me.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng thrust the Evil God Sword he held in his hand toward Kong Yuehua.

“Roar~~~”

A crimson sword ray shot forth with a shocking sound akin to the wailing of ghosts and the howling of wolves.

The crimson sword ray streaked through the sky and accurately landed on the Origin Life Treasure covering Kong Yuehua.

“Boom~~~”

An ear-piercing explosion was heard. Then, golden light began to radiate all around, and the copper bowl appeared. Merely, at that moment, the copper bowl was like the golden light; it had been shattered into countless pieces and scattered in all directions.

Kong Shunlian’s Origin Life Treasure was actually destroyed by Chu Feng with a single sword thrust.

One should know that this Origin Life Treasure was said to be indestructible unless Kong Shunlian was killed.

However, Chu Feng had not attacked Kong Shunlian. Instead, he had directly attacked the Origin Life Treasure. Just like that, Chu Feng broke through the defense of the Origin Life Treasure. As such, how could the crowd not be astonished?

“Puu~~~”

At the same time as his Origin Life Treasure was destroyed, Kong Shunlian vomited a mouthful of blood.

After vomiting that mouthful of blood, Kong Shunlian’s complexion instantly became pale. He started to lose his balance,



and began to sway left and right in midair.

In merely an instant, Kong Shunlian appeared to have aged tens of years. He simply appeared like a person on his deathbed.

“S-S-Senior K-Kong, a-are you a-alright?” Wang Qiang walked toward Kong Shunlian and supported him.

At the same time, that mysterious individual had also arrived at Kong Shunlian’s side.

However, Chu Feng, who had shattered Kong Shunlian’s Origin Life Treasure, did not continue to attack Kong Yuehua. Instead, he stood there, motionless.

To be exact, he was not standing there motionlessly. The reason for that was because the arm with which he held the Evil God Sword was trembling violently.

“Damn it,” Suddenly, Chu Feng spoke. He revealed a painful expression.

Then, he looked at the Evil God Sword he held in his hand and asked, “Why are you continuously instilling killing intent into me to affect my wisdom?”

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, a strange laughter entered his ears.

“Brat, they are planning to kill you. Don’t tell me that you’re planning to spare them.”

“Kill!!!”

“Exterminate their entire clan! Only like that will you be able to establish your might!” That voice continued to resound in Chu Feng’s ears. It was only Chu Feng that could hear that voice, the voice of the Evil God Sword.

“Today, Senior Kong Shunlian risked his life to save me. And now, he is putting his life on the line to stop me. I cannot injure him,” Chu Feng said.

“What relationship does his life and death have with you? If he plans to stop you, you should just kill him,” The Evil God Sword said.

“Senior Kong Shunlian has shown kindness and grace towards me. How can I kill him?” Chu Feng said.

“Soft-hearted. Since you cannot bear to kill them, I will help you kill them today,” After the Evil God Sword finished saying those words, Chu Feng once again felt wave after wave of killing intent pouring into his body.

That killing intent was too powerful. It was on the verge of completely swallowing Chu Feng’s reasoning. Chu Feng found it very difficult to remain calm now. His heart was filled with hatred and killing intent. At this moment, he only had one thing in mind — kill all of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen.

“Milady Queen, I... I am being controlled by this Demon Armament, help me, help me dispel this killing intent,” Sensing that the situation was amiss, Chu Feng turned to ask Her Lady Queen for help.

“Chu Feng, it’s not that I don’t want to help you. Rather, I am powerless against something like this.”

“Furthermore, to tell the truth, even if I’m able to help you, I would choose not to help you. I feel that these Kong Heavenly Clan’s old farts deserve to be killed, that the Kong Heavenly Clan should be exterminated.”

“If you fear losing control and harming those that are close to you, it’s best you tell Wang Qiang and the others to leave hurriedly,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Damn it,” Chu Feng’s eyes turned red. His anger soared, and his entire body started to tremble. It was as if he was making a very difficult decision.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng moved. He extended his hand toward Kong Yuehua.

“Stop!!!” Seeing this, Kong Shunlian let out a loud yet hoarse shout.

Unfortunately, as he was already seriously injured, he was unable to do anything at all.

As for Kong Yuehua, she was also already seriously injured by Chu Feng. As such, she was powerless to do anything herself.

Thus, she closed her eyes and prepared herself for death.

To Wang Qiang and the others, they felt that Kong Yuehua would also undoubtedly be killed.

“Woosh~~~”

However, after Chu Feng grabbed Kong Yuehua, he did not kill her. Instead, he tossed her to Kong Shunlian.

This scene was something that no one had anticipated!!!

“This is all I can do! You all, leave immediately! If you continue to stay here, I might end up killing you all!!!” Chu Feng shouted at Kong Shunlian and the others.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s long hair was fluttering in the sky, and he was emitting overwhelming killing intent.

His entire body was covered with crimson gaseous flames that were reflecting the crimson clouds in the sky. At a glance, he simply did not appear like a human at all. Rather, he appeared more like a great demon.

“Let’s go. Chu Feng is being controlled by that Demon Armament. Soon, he will not even recognize us.”

At that moment, Wang Qiang and the others were able conclude that Chu Feng was affected by the Demon Armament, and that his conduct and deeds were not really what he wanted to do.

“Go!!!” Seeing that Kong Shunlian and the others were still hesitating, Chu Feng let out a loud shout.

After that loud shout was heard, a powerful energy rippled swept forth. Even True Immortals were blown away.

“Master, I understand your intentions. Rest assured, I will definitely protect them.”

The mysterious individual realized Chu Feng’s desire. He grabbed Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua and Wang Qiang and rushed to leave.

After Kong Yuehua and the others left, Chu Feng looked to the Evil God Sword in his hand. He said, “Must we really do this?”

“Tsk, tsk. Boy, let yourself go. This Evil God guarantees that no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will dare bully you again after today,” The Evil God Sword’s voice sounded again.

“Heh...” At that moment, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth lifted into a smile. It was a very frightening smile.

No one knew whether the smile belonged to Chu Feng or the Evil God.

“Woosh~~~”

After that, Chu Feng suddenly waved the Evil God Sword he held in his hand. Immediately, crimson rays swept past the other two Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder’s heads, beheading them.

Then, Chu Feng raised his hand, and those two Utmost Exalted Elders let out miserable screams.

Merely, they only let out a single scream. The reason for that was because they were immediately killed, and their source energies were devoured by Chu Feng.

Then, Chu Feng spread open his hand. Including Kong Moyu, the three Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders’ heads were

sucked toward Chu Feng's hand. With the three heads in his hand, Chu Feng rapidly flew toward the direction of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Chu Feng's coming, he... couldn't possibly be planning to kill us, right?” Seeing Chu Feng flying over, Zhuge Mingren and the other bystanders all revealed frightened expressions.

Zhuge Mingren had seen all that had happened earlier. As such, the crowd already knew that Chu Feng's killing intent had been aroused. As such, they were truly afraid that Chu Feng would kill them.

After all, in a short period of time, three True Immortals had already fallen by Chu Feng's hands.

“Woosh~~~”

However, Chu Feng flashed past them. He did not attack the bystanders. Instead, he was directly flying toward the Kong Heavenly Clan.

However, the overwhelming killing intent emitted by Chu Feng caused the crowd's hair to stand on end. Some people were so scared that their legs grew weak.

Everyone was frightened by Chu Feng.

After a moment of panic, someone turned to ask Zhuge Mingren, “Senior Zhuge, do you know... what little friend Chu Feng is planning to do?”

After all, only Zhuge Mingren knew the full details as to what happened.

Zhuge Mingren sighed. He looked to the direction of the Kong Heavenly Clan and said, “I fear that today a great catastrophe will befall the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

## Chapter 2431 – Exterminating The Kong Heavenly Clan

---

Inside the Kong Heavenly Clan. The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was still inside that palace hall. There were still a lot of Kong Heavenly Clan elders gathered in the palace hall.

“Lord Clan Chief, could it be that some sort of accident has occurred?” Someone asked worriedly.

After all, the life and death of Chu Feng concerned their Kong Heavenly Clan's continued existence. Thus, they were very scared of failure.

“You all can rest assured. I believe that Elder Kong Shunlian will definitely not betray our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“Even if he really cannot steel his heart to kill Chu Feng, Kong Moyu, Kong Yuehua and the others will definitely not show any mercy. Chu Feng is but a member of the younger generation, he is but someone with a cultivation of Half Martial Ancestor. With our Kong Heavenly Clan's five Utmost Exalted Elders after him, he will definitely die,” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was confident that Chu Feng would be killed.

After all, for one insignificant member of the younger generation, they had dispatched all five of their Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders to deal with him.

One should know that they were five True Immortal-level experts!!!

However, it could also be determined from those words that it was actually the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief who had ordered Kong Moyu and the others to secretly follow Chu Feng.

This Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was truly an astute and circumspect individual. Even though he kept saying that he trusted Kong Shunlian, he actually did not trust Kong Shunlian at all. If he

did, why would he dispatch four other Utmost Exalted Elders to tail him?

“What Lord Clan Chief says is correct,” After hearing what their Lord Clan Chief said, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s elders present all revealed relaxed smiles.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, ear-piercing rumbles sounded from outside the palace hall.

“Rumble~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

.....

The rumbles echoed nonstop. Even the palace hall itself started to tremble violently.

“What’s going on?”

Sensing that the situation was amiss, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s elders, led by their Clan Chief, all flew out of the palace hall to inspect the situation outside.

When they arrived outside of the palace hall, they all revealed stunned expressions.

The Kong Heavenly Clan, that vast and boundless colossus, already had countless palaces destroyed, and countless clansmen killed.

The sounds of the collapse of the palaces, the sounds of the flattening of mountains and the screams of their dying clansmen filled the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

It was a truly appalling scene of devastation!!!

As for all this, it was caused by a person standing in the sky.

That person was holding a crimson sword in his hand. With each wave of the sword, a crimson slash shot forth.

When the crimson slashes descended from the sky, no one was able to stop them. With each slash, a path of utter destruction was left behind.

Countless buildings and palaces were destroyed with each slash. Countless Kong Heavenly Clan clansmen were killed with each slash.

“Who dares come attack our Kong Heavenly Clan?! You’re courting death!!!”

Seeing that scene, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief raised his hand and shot forth a punch. His rank two True Immortal-level martial power carried with it a might of absolute destruction as it was shot forth toward the figure in the sky.

His punch was extremely powerful; it was absolutely destructive.

As that individual standing in the sky was already attacking the Kong Heavenly Clan, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief did not care about who that person might be, and sent forth a fatal attack from the get-go. He planned to directly kill his opponent.

“Buzz~~~”

However, facing the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, this rank two True Immortal’s attack, the individual standing in the sky only waved the red sword in his hand and easily neutralized the incoming attack.

“How could this be?” Seeing his own attack neutralized, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief immediately had a change in expression.

“That guy?!” When even the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was shocked, the elders had even greater astonishment on their faces.

One should know that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was a rank two True Immortal. Not only was he the strongest existence in the Kong Heavenly Clan, he was also one of the strongest



existences in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Exactly who was it that was able to easily block the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's attack?

“You’ve finally decided to show yourself?”

Right at that moment, the person standing in the sky turned his gaze to the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. There was a slight bit of mockery in his voice.

As the person standing in the sky stopped his attacks, the energy ripples started to gradually vanish. As such, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan were able to clearly see the appearance of the man in the sky.

“It’s him?!!!!”

However, upon seeing the appearance of the man in the sky, the expressions of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the others of the Kong Heavenly Clan all changed enormously.

The reason for that was because they had seen that the person in the sky was Chu Feng.

They had thought about many possibilities for who that individual in the sky might be...

They had felt that it might be an expert of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

They had felt that it might be someone from the Infant Soul Sect who came to attack their Kong Heavenly Clan.

They had even felt that it might be an expert from an Upper Realm.

Yet, they never thought that the person that was bringing about such destruction and devastation to their Kong Heavenly Clan, the person that was able to easily block their Lord Clan Chief's attack, was actually Chu Feng, that person of the younger generation, Chu Feng!!!

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing in the sky and holding a crimson sword in his right hand.

That sword was truly dazzling and extremely domineering. Together with the frightening crimson sea of clouds in the sky, they were reflecting one another.

Even though the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan were very shocked, they had to admit that the current Chu Feng brought forth an enormous sense of oppression and unease within them.

“Chu Feng is actually alive? Could it be that Lord Utmost Exalted Elders failed?”

There were people among the Kong Heavenly Clansmen that started to worry about the safety of their five Utmost Exalted Elders. After all, those five were the strongest battle power of their Kong Heavenly Clan apart from their Lord Clan Chief.

“Heavens! In his hand are...!”

Suddenly, many Kong Heavenly Clansmen let out a cry of surprise. They just discovered that Chu Feng was carrying three heads in his left hand.

After seeing those three heads, countless Kong Heavenly Clansmen started to cry bitterly. There were even people who were so frightened that they sat powerlessly on the ground. Some even lost consciousness on the spot.

The reason for that was because they managed to clearly discern those three heads. Those three heads belonged to their Kong Heavenly Clan’s three Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Chu Feng, you killed our Kong Heavenly Clan’s three elders?!” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked furiously.

Not only was his voice filled with anger, it was also filled with overwhelming killing intent. His voice echoed for a very long time.

Although it was merely a single sentence, it was sufficient to

show how furious the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was.

"You ordered them to kill me, why can't I kill them?"

"Truth be told, not only will I kill them today, I will also kill everyone in your Kong Heavenly Clan. This is the consequence of making an enemy of me," Chu Feng said in an emphatic manner. He had a smile on his face the entire time. It was a very frightening smile.

"In that case, you really did kill them?!" The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's expression turned increasingly furious. Even his body started to tremble.

He was not trembling out of fear. Rather, it was out of anger. His anger had already reached its limit. He was on the verge of losing control.

Originally, he did not believe that Chu Feng had been the one to kill the three Utmost Exalted Elders. After all, they were only three heads. Those were not sufficient to prove that the three Utmost Exalted Elders were already dead.

Yet, Chu Feng made the declaration that he had killed the three Utmost Exalted Elders. As such, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had no choice but to believe they had really been killed.

After all, Chu Feng was able to easily block his attack earlier. This signified that Chu Feng... possessed the strength to kill the three Utmost Exalted Elders.

"I've said it already. Today, I will exterminate everyone in your Kong Heavenly Clan."

"And you... you will only be able to look on helplessly."

"Furthermore, I will also tell you this. This was all brought on by you yourself," Chu Feng said.

"What arrogant boasting!!!"

"I will dismember you into ten thousand pieces!!!" The Kong

Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted furiously. Then, he soared into the sky.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was holding a curved blade in each hand. His curved blades were each one and half meters long. They were both blue, and seemed to have been made from gemstones.

They were two Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, their quality was superb.

After those two Ancestral Armaments appeared, the aura of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief grew even more powerful!!!

He looked down upon all others, and considered everything to be beneath him. It was as if he was the ruler of this region.

# Chapter 2432 – Scram Out Of My Body

---

“Boom~~~”

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had unleashed his attack. Drawing help from the power of his two Ancestral Armaments, he shot forth a slash.

That slash was blue in color. It was formed by two intersecting slashes. It didn’t shake space nor shatter the earth.

However, that slash was extremely powerful. That slash was a Taboo Martial Skill, an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

This Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had unleashed an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill from the very start. His intention was clear: he wanted to quickly kill Chu Feng so that Chu Feng could not cause further damage to their Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Buzz~~~”

Chu Feng waved the Evil God Sword and shot forth a crimson slash, easily neutralizing the incoming blue slash sent forth by the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“How could this be?!”

Witnessing that scene, not to mention the others, even the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief revealed an expression of shock.

Although the slash he sent forth was not his strongest attack, it was still a very powerful attack.

Yet, it was so easily neutralized by Chu Feng.

Furthermore, he was shocked to discover that when his Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill collided with Chu Feng’s crimson slash, it was absorbed by Chu Feng’s crimson slash in addition to being neutralized by it.

That, was simply too frightening. It caused him to become subconsciously aware that he would be no match for Chu Feng,

absolutely no match at all.

But, Chu Feng was merely a person of the younger generation, a mere Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, how could it be possible for him to not be a match for Chu Feng?

“This guy, how could he possess such power?”

At that moment, panic appeared on the previously malevolent face of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

As one of the few most powerful existences in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he rarely ever revealed such an expression.

Yet now, before Chu Feng, a person of the younger generation, he actually revealed such an expression.

The reason for that was because he realized that the person standing before him might not only be a person of the younger generation. In addition to that, it was very likely that Chu Feng was someone that he could not defeat.

“It’s that weapon! Exactly what is that weapon?!!!!”

Soon, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief realized the cause of it. He felt that it was very likely that the source was that crimson sword Chu Feng held in his hand.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng unleashed his attack. Holding the Evil God Sword, he rapidly flew toward the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Roar~~~”

Abruptly, the Evil God Sword was rapidly thrust forth. Immediately, a sound akin to the wailing of ghosts and howling of wolves could be heard.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Several crimson sword rays filled the sky. Like a rainstorm, they moved to pierce the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Haaahhh!!!!”

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief let out a loud shout. Then, an enormous ferocious beast appeared out of thin air, surrounding him.

It was the Kong Heavenly Clan’s defensive Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast.

Merely, compared to the Utmost Exalted Elder that Chu Feng had killed before, the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast unleashed by the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was several times stronger.

“Puu, puu, puu, puu, puu~~~”

The very next moment, the crimson sword rays descended. Not only did the crimson sword rays easily penetrate the Ancestral Taboo: Guardian Beast, leaving it beyond recognition, many of the crimson sword rays even managed to pierce through the body of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief actually suffered the same fate as the three Utmost Exalted Elders.

Although he was a rank two True Immortal, he was still powerless to resist Chu Feng’s attack.

“Lord Clan Chief!!!”

At that moment, the complexions of everyone from the Kong Heavenly Clan turned ashen.

The person in the sky was their Kong Heavenly Clan’s strongest expert.

Yet, even he was defeated by Chu Feng, and seriously injured on top of that.

It signified that no one in their Kong Heavenly Clan would be able to stop Chu Feng.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had a pale complexion. His body was covered with blood as he half kneeled

midair after suffering very serious injuries.

Not to mention continuing to fight against Chu Feng, the current him did not even have the strength to stand up.

Merely, he was filled with irreconciliation. He looked at Chu Feng and said, “You... exactly who are you?”

“Who am I?”

“Am I not Chu Feng?”

“I am someone who your Kong Heavenly Clan wanted to kill even though I possessed no hatred nor grievances with your Kong Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said those words filled with mockery.

“I am the one who made that decision. If you possess complaints in your heart, you can kill me. However, if it’s possible... please spare our Kong Heavenly Clan.” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Hahahaha...”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter.

It was a very frantic and frightening laughter. It was as if that laughter was simply not a human’s laughter at all. Hearing that laugh, one would feel extremely scared and tremble with fear.

“Rest assured, I will kill you. However, before that, I will have you personally witness the destruction of your Kong Heavenly Clan by my hands.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his lips were once again raised into a strange smile. Following that, he waved the Evil God Sword he held in his hand.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Sounds of the air being sliced through were accompanied by sounds akin to the wailing of ghosts and the howling of wolves.

This time around, the crimson sword rays were not aimed



toward the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. Instead, they once again descended upon the buildings of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, screams and explosions sounded nonstop.

Seemingly as if this was not satisfactory, Chu Feng directly descended onto the ground and began to personally kill the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

All those that encountered Chu Feng, regardless of their cultivation, were all beheaded by Chu Feng with a single slash from his sword.

The speed of Chu Feng's sword was simply too fast, and the speed of Chu Feng's movements were also too fast. Even though he was only killing a single person with each slash of his sword, several thousands were killed by him in merely a split second.

Blood splattered everywhere. The Kong Heavenly Clansmen did not even have the time to scream before they were killed by Chu Feng.

Most importantly, the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were powerless to stop the situation.

At that moment, Chu Feng was like a fierce tiger that was moving among a flock of sheep. To Chu Feng, the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were akin to sheep waiting for slaughter.

As such, he could kill them as much as he wanted!!!

“Haha...”

Seeing that his own clansmen were dying by Chu Feng's hand nonstop, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief actually started laughing.

Merely, it was a very tragic and pitiful laughter. It was the bitter laughter of powerlessness.

“It seems that Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy was right.”

“Our Kong Heavenly Clan is indeed going to be destroyed by Chu

Feng. Merely, never would I have thought that the reason why Chu Feng attacked our Kong Heavenly Clan is actually because of us. It is us who forced Chu Feng to eliminate us.”

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief muttered as he laughed bitterly.

He knew that there was no one that could stop Chu Feng today, that their Kong Heavenly Clan was destined to be exterminated.

Merely, he was filled with regret. He regretted not listening to Kong Shunlian, and deciding instead to kill Chu Feng, someone who did not possess any hatred or grievance against their Kong Heavenly Clan, merely because of a prophecy.

It was because they wanted to eliminate Chu Feng that they ended up infuriating Chu Feng, causing him to attack their Kong Heavenly Clan.

It was all his mistake. Merely... it was already too late.

“Ancestors, I, Kong Jitian, am a sinner. Because of my mistaken decisions, I have brought about the destruction of our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“I am unable to redeem myself, and can only apologize with my death,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief knelt in midair with both his knees. Although he was extremely weak, he once again held up the two blades in his hands. However, the two blades were pointed toward himself.

This Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was actually planning to commit suicide.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng, who was openly slaughtering the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan, suddenly stopped.

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief also noticed the change. Thus, he looked over.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still standing there. He had a murderous appearance on his face, and his hand was still holding onto the Evil God Sword.

The Evil God Sword in his hand was pointed at a person. As for that person, he was not someone powerful. He was merely a person of the Kong Heavenly Clan's younger generation, Kong Zheng.

At that moment, tears stained Kong Zheng's face. His body was trembling, and his complexion was pale. One could see his crumbled heart from his outward appearance.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Kong Zheng kneeled onto the ground.

“Chu Feng, I beg of you, please stop!!!”

“I don't know why you have decided to slaughter us. But, even if our Kong Heavenly Clan has let you down, please, please spare us this once.”

“After all, many of our Kong Heavenly Clansmen are innocent.”

Kong Zheng was crying with incomparable suffering as he begged Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

The very next moment, the sword Chu Feng held in his hand started to tremble violently.

Chu Feng's previously murderous expression started to become complicated. It was as if he wanted to kill Kong Zheng, but also didn't want to kill Kong Zheng.

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted furiously, “Insolent fool! I am killing them for your own good, why are you stopping me?!”

After that voice sounded, the earth started to violently rupture, and the sky started to tremble.

Once Chu Feng said those words, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan were all stunned. They all thought that Chu Feng was saying those words toward Kong Zheng.

However, Kong Zheng was also a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan. How could it be for Kong Zheng's good to kill the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan?

The moment when Chu Feng said his next sentence, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan were all completely stunned.

"I will not allow you to kill another person. Get the hell out of my body," Chu Feng said furiously.

## Chapter 2433 – Seizing Body

---

“Insolent fool! I am helping you. Yet you dare scold me?”

“If it wasn’t for this Evil God lending my power to you, you would’ve already been dead. How could you possibly be able to act so mighty now?”

A voice entered Chu Feng’s ears. This voice was something that only Chu Feng could hear; it was the Evil God Sword’s voice.

The Evil God Sword did not have any hint of anger as it said those words. Rather, its tone was filled with mockery.

“I said scram so you should just scram. I am the one who will determine my own affairs. How could I allow you to control my body?” Chu Feng said.

“Boy, don’t be incapable of differentiating good from bad. If I am to retrieve my power from you right now, do you think you’ll be able to leave here alive?”

“You do not want to eliminate the Kong Heavenly Clan. However, if my power is not protecting you, do you think they’ll let you get away?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“Enough of your nonsense. From this point on, I refuse to allow you to use my body to kill another person,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, I’ll retrieve my power and let you meet a tragic death,” After the Evil God Sword finished saying those words, it planned to actually retrieve its power.

However, it soon let out a surprised voice, “You... you’re actually stopping me?”

The Evil God Sword was very surprised to discover that it was unable to retrieve the power that it had given to Chu Feng.

“You’re my weapon. Thus, you should be used by me. Don’t forget that I am your master,” Chu Feng said.

At this moment, the Evil God Sword had invaded Chu Feng's body and indirectly gained control over Chu Feng's body with its overwhelming killing intent. This had caused Chu Feng's heart to be affected, which in turn led him to unleash a massacre.

Earlier, Kong Zheng had stood before Chu Feng. Kong Zheng was someone that Chu Feng knew. Although they had conflicted with one another, Chu Feng really did not wish to kill Kong Zheng.

This allowed Chu Feng to regain his rationality. The reason why the Evil God Sword was violently trembling earlier was because Chu Feng was putting forth a great effort to break away from the killing intent the Evil God Sword had instilled into him.

Chu Feng did not wish to continue with his massacre. Even if the Kong Heavenly Clan had been unjust toward him, he felt that he should not massacre and exterminate the entire Kong Heavenly Clan. After all, there were a lot of Kong Heavenly Clansmen who did not know anything at all, and did not harbor any malice toward Chu Feng. In fact, there were even many people from the younger generation who adored Chu Feng and viewed him as their idol.

If Chu Feng hadn't been affected by the Evil God Sword's killing intent, he would definitely not have killed this many innocent Kong Heavenly Clansmen.

And now, Chu Feng no longer wanted to continue with the massacre. However, he also knew that if the Evil God Sword was to retrieve its power, he would end up dying here.

While he might have spared the Kong Heavenly Clan, the Kong Heavenly Clan would definitely not spare him.

Thus, Chu Feng controlled the Evil God Sword's power with his own willpower. He made it so that he could continue to use the Evil God Sword's power.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng soared into the sky and began to fly toward the distance. In the blink of an eye, he had completely disappeared.

“He... he really left?!!!”

Seeing that Chu Feng had left, the people of the Kong Heavenly Clan heaved sighs of relief. However, the fear in their hearts was unable to be pacified.

Although Chu Feng had left, the crimson clouds that covered the sky were still present. It was like a sharp blade placed right above their heads, making them feeling extremely uneasy, and think that they could be killed by Chu Feng at any moment.

However, after Chu Feng left, the crimson clouds also began to gradually vanish. The overwhelming killing intent that filled the area also started to dissipate.

It was only then that they were able to believe that Chu Feng had really left.

Merely, the current Kong Heavenly Clan was an utter mess. In merely a short moment, close to half of all of the Kong Heavenly Clan's buildings were destroyed, and a third of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were killed by Chu Feng.

Fortunately, many of the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were away from the Kong Heavenly Clan. Else... their losses would have been even more disastrous.

“Lord Clan Chief!!!”

At this moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's various elders soared into the sky and supported the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, who was kneeling in the sky.

“Lord Clan Chief, that Chu Feng... how could he possess such power?”

“Fortunately, he left. Else, our Kong Heavenly Clan might really have ended up being extinguished by him.”

“Lord Clan Chief, it would appear that our Kong Heavenly Clan’s five Utmost Exalted Elders have all died by Chu Feng’s hand. Today, we have truly suffered extremely disastrous losses.”

At this moment, the aged elders, those peak Martial Ancestors, were all crying.

They were feeling very pained. After all, this was their clan that had suffered this disaster. Just a moment ago, their clan had nearly been wiped out.

“Chu Feng, he is too vicious! I will definitely obtain revenge for what has happened today!”

As they grieved, there were also elders that let out furious snarls.

“Do not cause trouble for Chu Feng again,” However, right at this moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke with a weak voice.

Hearing those words, the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were all startled. They looked to their Clan Chief with surprise.

Their Clan Chief had always been someone who would definitely take revenge. What he just said did not fit his character at all.

Seemingly knowing what his clansmen were thinking, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief continued, “I have made a wrong decision. I should not have ordered Chu Feng killed.”

“Even if Chu Feng wanted to destroy our Kong Heavenly Clan, it was only brought about through our own actions.”

“I am the one who was in the wrong. If you all want to hate someone, hate me. If you need to blame someone, blame me,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“But, Lord Clan Chief, this cannot be blamed on you. After all, that was the result of Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy. Even if we should blame someone, it should be Grandmaster Prophet that we should be blaming,” An elder said.



“Grandmaster Prophet was not mistaken. His prophecy came true. Today... our Kong Heavenly Clan was nearly exterminated by Chu Feng.”

“Merely, I never anticipated that the reason Chu Feng would attack our Kong Heavenly Clan was actually us. Hah...”

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief laughed bitterly. Guilt filled his face.

Seeing their Clan Chief acting like this, the Kong Heavenly Clansmen did not blame him. Instead, they started to feel very sorry for him.

After all, this person was their Lord Clan Chief, the person who had always been very imposing and domineering. But at this moment, he had lost the imposingness that he should have.

They knew that it was all because of a single person that their Lord Clan Chief had become like this. As for that person, it was Chu Feng.

“However, it remains that Chu Feng has nearly extinguished our Kong Heavenly Clan. How can we not take revenge for this?” There were still elders who were unwilling to let it go.

“Chu Feng was already lenient toward us. If we are to provoke him again, do you know what sort of consequence we’ll suffer? Must I explain it to you?”

“Could it be that us bringing about harm to ourselves once is not enough, that we must do so a second time?”

“If we are to provoke Chu Feng again, we might not be this fortunate the next time around. At that time, the prophecy will really come true,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief declared.

Hearing those words, the unreconciled elders all grew silent.

Indeed, although Chu Feng was only a member of the younger generation, although he was only a peak Half Martial Ancestor,

they had seen Chu Feng's abilities for themselves just now.

Even their Lord Clan Chief was unable to contend against Chu Feng. As such, how could any of them possibly contend against Chu Feng?

Merely a single crimson sword had allowed Chu Feng to become unparalleled.

With the power Chu Feng had displayed earlier, not to mention them, it was likely not a single person in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could contend against Chu Feng.

Indeed, Chu Feng could not be provoked again.

This was what countless Kong Heavenly Clansmen were thinking right now.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was rapidly flying in the sky. Crimson clouds appeared in all the places he passed through.

Overwhelming killing intent covered the region. That killing intent caused all living things to hide in fear.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk..." Suddenly, a strange laughter entered Chu Feng's ears. It was the Evil God Sword.

"What are you laughing about? I will no longer be engulfed by your killing intent," Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng was saying that, Chu Feng was not confident in his heart. The reason for that was because the killing intent the Evil God Sword had instilled in him was truly too frightening.

The reason why Chu Feng had left the Kong Heavenly Clan and was proceeding toward an uninhabited region was because he feared that he would be controlled by the Evil God Sword's killing intent and willfully slaughter the innocent again.

"Boy, I've already told you before. You will not be able to subdue me, and will only be used by me," The Evil God Sword said.

"What do you mean?" Chu Feng sensed that the situation was

amiss.

“Since you are so disobedient, I can only seize control of your body and turn you into my puppet.”

After the Evil God Sword finished saying those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed immediately. He felt that an indescribable aura was charging into his body from the Evil God Sword.

That aura was truly too strange and frightening.

It was as if the aura was devouring his skin, devouring his meridians, devouring his bones, devouring his brain, devouring his wisdom... it was trying to devour his everything.

Most importantly, that aura wanted to seal Chu Feng off from his own body. It was actually trying to replace him and gain complete control over his body.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng hurriedly tried to let go of the sword. He wanted to toss the Evil God Sword away.

However, Chu Feng did not even have the strength to open his hand.

At this moment, his body was no longer under his control!!!

## Chapter 2434 – A Nightmare

---

“Eggy, what do I do? My body!!!” Chu Feng felt that his body was about to be seized. Helpless, he turned to request Her Lady Queen for help.

“Never did I expect this Demon Armament to be so powerful. I have already thought of a way to help you seize your body back. But... it has sealed off your world spirit space, making it impossible for me to get out to help you,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Could it be that my body is really going to be seized by this thing?”

At that moment, Chu Feng felt very helpless and pained.

He was gradually losing control over his body. This caused Chu Feng to recall Su Rou and Su Mei.

Su Rou and Su Mei had had their bodies seized by the Moon Immortal.

And now, it seemed he would also have his body seized by the Evil God Sword. Thus, at that moment, he was able to feel the suffering that Su Rou and Su Mei experienced when their bodies were seized.

However, the Moon Immortal was different from the Evil God Sword. The Moon Immortal said that she had something that she needed to do, and she would only be temporarily borrowing Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies.

However, the Evil God Sword was different. If Chu Feng’s body was to really be seized by the Evil God Sword, a great demon would emerge in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and openly slaughter the innocent.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng began to gather up his spirit. He planned to take back his body.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. It’s useless. What could you possibly contend against me with?” The Evil God Sword let out a mocking laugh.

Although Chu Feng was angered by that mockery, he was indeed powerless to contend against the Evil God Sword.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a strange aura was suddenly emitted from Chu Feng’s dantian and spread through Chu Feng’s body.

“Ahh!!!” The next moment, Chu Feng let out an incomparably painful shout.

That voice was not only let out by Chu Feng, it was also let out by the Evil God Sword. At that moment, both Chu Feng and the Evil God Sword were enduring extreme pain.

That strange aura had indeed come from Chu Feng’s dantian. However, it was unrelated to Chu Feng’s Heavenly Bloodline.

It was a bamboo slip. The bamboo slip was dark gold in color, and emitting a very ancient aura. Furthermore, it contained an air of absolute supremacy.

It was that bamboo slip that brought such suffering to Chu Feng.

Under the unbearable pain, Chu Feng gradually felt that he seemed to have regained control of his body.

Merely, his mind was no longer clear. At that moment, Chu Feng’s awareness started to grow indistinct.

However, he was able to sense that his body was still moving. Merely, he had no idea where he was moving toward.

Muddleheaded, Chu Feng felt that a long time had passed. However, he had no idea as to exactly how long it was.

His mind was in absolute chaos. The only thing he knew was that he had been flying in the sky the entire time this was happening. Furthermore, he seemed to be holding the Evil God Sword in his

hand too.

.....

Still muddleheaded, Chu Feng opened his eyes, and was shocked to discover that he was lying in a forest.

The sun shone brightly here. There were singing birds and fragrant flowers. His surroundings, including even the sky, all seemed very familiar.

“Chu Feng, you’ve woken up.”

Suddenly, a sweet-sounding voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ear. Turning toward the voice, Chu Feng saw that a young woman was standing beside him with her hands behind her back. She was looking at him with a smile on her face.

That young woman was exceptionally beautiful. Especially when she laughed; it was an incomparably brilliant sight filled with brightness.

It was truly enchanting.

“Lil’ Mei?”

Upon seeing that young woman, Chu Feng stood up excitedly and immediately embraced her.

The reason for that was because the young woman before him was none other than the lover that he yearned for day and night, Su Mei.

“What’s wrong? Why did you appear to have gone stupid after waking up from your sleep?” Su Mei said in surprise. Her face turned red.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing to my little sister?” Right at that moment, a stern voice sounded from nearby.

That voice was so resounding that the birds in the forest were frightened, and flew away.

Turning toward the voice, Chu Feng discovered that there was another woman standing nearby.

As for that woman, she possessed an alluring build and emitted a threatening air. It was Su Rou.

“Chu Feng, let go of my little sister!” Su Rou pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“This is truly great! Both of you are here!” Chu Feng let go of Su Mei and rushed toward Su Rou, embracing her tightly.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? You are truly presumptuous! You dare act this rude toward me?!” Su Rou flew into a rage out of humiliation. She immediately pushed Chu Feng aside.

“Lil’ Rou, what’s happened to you?” Chu Feng was very surprised. He did not understand why Su Rou was so emotional.

“Haha, big sister, don’t bother pretending anymore. I know that you also like Chu Feng,” Su Mei burst into a laughter.

“Lil’ Mei, you shut up. What sort of nonsense are you spouting?” Su Rou’s face turned red like an apple. This caused her alluring face to grow cuter, making her even more attractive.

“If you don’t like Chu Feng, why did you turn red?” Su Mei said.

“I...” Su Rou’s face grew more and more red. Then, she stormed off in a huff. She was really angry.

“Big sister, don’t be angry. I was only joking around with you,” Su Mei ran after Su Rou while hopping and bouncing.

In response, Chu Feng also wanted to follow after them. However, he was surprised to discover that he was unable to move.

“Lil’ Rou, Lil’ Mei, wait for me!!!” Chu Feng hurriedly shouted.

However, Su Rou and Su Mei acted as if they could not hear him and soon disappeared from his line of sight.

As Su Rou and Su Mei gradually grew further and further away,

Chu Feng's eyes turned pitch-black. The only thing he could hear were the angry footsteps of Su Rou and the sweet-sounding laughter of Su Mei.

“Lil' Rou, Lil' Mei!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng got back up.

At that moment, he was still sitting inside a forest. Merely, that forest was completely different from the forest earlier.

This was simply a different place.

“It was a dream. What happened earlier was a dream. What a realistic dream.”

Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. The scene earlier had taken place in the Azure Dragon School's forest. It was when Su Mei was still only a young woman, when Su Rou was still an elder of the Azure Dragon School, and when neither of them were his lovers.

It had indeed been a dream. Merely, that dream had been too life-like. It had been so realistic that it came like a sharp blade that pierced through Chu Feng's heart.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt pain all over his body. It was as if his body was being torn apart. That sort of pain was very unbearable.

However, the pain he felt on his body was far inferior to the pain he felt in his heart.

It was the pain from longing for Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as the guilt he felt toward them.

At that moment when Chu Feng was feeling sentimental, he suddenly discovered that he was holding onto the Evil God Sword with his right hand.

He suddenly recalled what had happened earlier.

He clearly remembered that the Evil God Sword had nearly seized



his body.

Recalling that, Chu Feng immediately tossed the Evil God Sword away.

Then, he turned his consciousness toward his world spirit space. He wanted to see how Her Lady Queen was doing.

However, he was shocked to discover that he was actually unable to enter his world spirit space, and could not sense the situation inside his world spirit space.

It was as if his world spirit space had disappeared from his body.

# Chapter 2435 – The War Clan's Ancient Domain

---

“Eggy, are you alright?!” Filled with nervousness, Chu Feng hurriedly shouted for Eggy.

“Chu Feng, you’ve finally woken up? How are you feeling?” Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded. Like Chu Feng, her voice was filled with concern and nervousness.

Hearing that familiar voice, Chu Feng’s tensed heart was finally at ease.

With that voice, Chu Feng knew that Her Lady Queen was, at the very least, still alive.

“Eggy, I’m fine. How about you? Are you okay?” Chu Feng asked anxiously.

To him, Her Lady Queen was simply too important. Thus, he was extremely concerned about Her Lady Queen’s safety.

“I’m also fine. Judging from the current situation, you’ve managed to retrieve your body. I am at ease now,” At that moment, Her Lady Queen was very joyous.

“Eggy, my awareness was fuzzy earlier. I do not remember a lot of things. Do you know where we are now?” Chu Feng asked.

Although Chu Feng had no idea where they currently were, he knew that this place was most definitely not the Kong Heavenly Clan. Furthermore, he knew that this place was very far away from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“The connection between us was severed earlier. Thus, I was unable to see anything or hear anything at all. As such, I also do not know where we are.”

“However, you might be able to ask that person where we are,” Her Lady Queen said.

Even without Her Lady Queen mentioning it, Chu Feng had also discovered that a youth was walking toward him from a nearby place.

That youth appeared to be fifteen or sixteen years old. However, he possessed the cultivation of a rank one Martial Emperor.

A fifteen or sixteen-year-old youth was actually a Martial Emperor. That was truly shocking. After all, when he was fifteen or sixteen years of age, he was still so very weak.

Martial Emperor? That was simply akin to a legend back then.

However, the current Chu Feng was not very surprised. After all, this place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, a world ruled by True Immortal-level experts. This was a world where Martial Ancestors were everywhere.

Martial Emperor? They were simply unworthy of being mentioned at all.

That youth had a very plain and simple outfit. In fact, his clothes could even be said to be somewhat worn out. Although worn out, those clothes were still very clean and neat.

The youth was holding a canteen. After he saw Chu Feng, he was immediately overjoyed. He hastened his pace and soon arrived before Chu Feng.

He said, “Big brother, you finally woke up. I thought that you might not wake up. Come, have some water.”

“This here is water that I’ve fetched from the Healing Water Pond. It is effective at healing one’s injuries and brightening one’s psyche.” {basically making you think clearer}

After he finished saying those words, the youth opened the canteen and handed it to Chu Feng. Sure enough, a refreshing aura was being emitted from the canteen.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that he had most likely been

discovered by this youth when he was unconscious.

“Thank you.”

As Chu Feng was indeed thirsty, he received the canteen from the youth and gulped mouthfuls of water.

After drinking the water, the pain Chu Feng felt indeed lessened slightly. He felt grateful toward the youth and then asked, “Brother, was it you who discovered me? We are unrelated to one another, yet you actually cared for me like this. I am truly grateful, thank you.”

“Aiyah, there’s no need to be this courteous. It’s nothing serious.”

The youth laughed. From his unconcerned manner, one could tell that he was eager to help others.

“Brother, may I know where this is?” Chu Feng asked.

“Where this is? This is the Maple Leaf Forest,” The youth said.

“Maple Leaf Forest?”

Chu Feng looked around, and discovered that maple trees were indeed everywhere. Merely, the maple trees here were many tens of times larger than ordinary maples. Their leaves were also much more lush.

From a glance, the place was truly beautiful.

However, after pondering for a moment, Chu Feng couldn’t remember having ever heard of that place before. That said, he felt that the forest was not very large, and was thus most likely not famous in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Furthermore, as Chu Feng recalled that his body had not been seized by the Evil God Sword, he felt that everything was good.

Furthermore, although his body was in pain, he possessed the ability to move. That meant that the backlash he had received from the Evil God Sword was not very serious. As such, he felt

happy.

“That is?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

He discovered a title plate on the youth’s waist. On that title plate were four large characters.

Ancient Era’s War Clan!!!

Chu Feng firmly remembered that a renowned individual had appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm approximately fifty thousand years ago.

That man was called Zhan Haichuan. He held a silver spear and wore silver armor. After he appeared, he remained undefeated, and soon became the strongest expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, not long after Zhan Haichuan made his name, he disappeared. When he appeared again, very few people knew of it. In fact, only the Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master knew of Zhan Haichuan’s re-emergence.

Zhan Haichuan found the Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master and became close friends with him. He taught the Sunset Cloud Valley’s second generation Valley Master various mysterious techniques and martial skills, allowing the Sunset Cloud Valley to obtain their current glory.

Afterwards, Zhan Haichuan died. He established his tomb in the Sunset Cloud Valley’s forbidden area. Then, Zhan Haichuan’s tomb disappeared. Chu Feng had received the trust of the Sunset Cloud Valley’s Valley Master to enter the forbidden area and search for Zhan Haichuan’s tomb. In there, he had encountered that mysterious old cat.

That old cat had called itself Lord Tiger, and proclaimed itself to be the founder of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple. Furthermore, the old cat was very powerful and Zhan Haichuan’s tomb had been robbed by it.

That old cat was so strong that its strength was simply unassessable. Chu Feng felt that it was most likely not a creature from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, even that extremely powerful old cat was trapped in Zhan Haichuan's graveyard for many years. Had it not been for Chu Feng's arrival and then being exploited by the old cat, the old cat would most likely not have been able to escape.

From that, it could be imagined that Zhan Haichuan was indeed very powerful. At the very least, Zhan Haichuan was much more powerful than that old cat. Else, it would be impossible for Zhan Haichuan's tomb to trap that old cat.

Likely, after Zhan Haichuan left the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, his cultivation reached a new peak. Perhaps he had also managed to make a name for himself in the expert-filled Upper Realms.

As for the extraordinary Zhan Haichuan, he proclaimed to have been from the Ancient Era's War Clan.

However, according to what Chu Feng knew, while the Ancient Era's War Clan existed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they lived in an isolated world that practically no one was able to find.

As such, how could a member of the Ancient Era's War Clan appear before him? Chu Feng wondered whether he had accidentally entered the Ancient Era's War Clan's world, or whether there were people from the Ancient Era's War Clan who came out from that world again.

Or could it be that the youth before him was merely an impersonator who did not possess any relationship with the Ancient Era's War Clan at all?

"Brother, where did you obtain that title plate of yours?" Chu Feng asked.

“Where I obtained it? This here is mine,” The youth said.

“Yours?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

“Big brother, this title plate is naturally mine. You couldn’t possibly be thinking that I had picked this up or stolen this from somewhere, right?”

“Truth be told, my name is Zhan Lingtong. Not only am I a member of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, but I am also the Young Master of the Ancient Era’s War Clan,” The youth said proudly.

“Young Master? Chu Feng, tell him to stop fooling around. Judging by his appearance, he’s more likely a peasant. How does he resemble a young master at all?” Her Lady Queen mocked.

“Milady Queen, you can’t judge a person by their appearance. I do not feel that he resembles someone that boasts a lot.”

Chu Feng looked at the youth and smiled lightly. Then, he asked, “Is this place the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

“Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? Of course this place isn’t the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. This place is the War Clan’s Ancient Domain.”

“Big brother, I now know why you’ve lost consciousness, and for so long too.”

“Did you attempt to leave the War Clan’s Ancient Domain to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

“I’d urge you to stop trying. We will not be able to leave the War Clan’s Ancient Domain. All these years, other than senior Zhan Haichuan, there has never been anyone who managed to exit the War Clan’s Ancient Domain and enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

The youth had an earnest and well-meaning appearance as he advised Chu Feng.

That said, the words spoken by the youth came like a sudden clap

of thunder as they entered Chu Feng's ears, making him unable to remain calm.

“Wow! Chu Feng, you've struck gold! It seems that this War Clan's Ancient Domain was the place where that Zhan Haichuan trained in the past.”

“If you are able to find the place where he comprehended the way of martial cultivation, your cultivation will definitely advance by leaps and bounds,” Her Lady Queen was wild with joy.

Chu Feng also had an unconcealed expression of joy on his face.

He naturally knew of that too.

Right now, a large amount of Natural Energies were gathered in Chu Feng's body. All he needed to do right now was reach the junction for a breakthrough.

As for the place where Zhan Haichuan had stayed to comprehend the way of martial cultivation, it would most definitely be an extraordinary location. If Chu Feng was able to find it, he would definitely receive an enormous harvest.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the sounds of rumbling reverberated through the distant sky.

Turning toward the sound, a vast amount of black clouds that carried many lightning bolts with them was rapidly approaching.

“Big brother, run quickly! It's the people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan!”

At that moment, the expression of that youth changed enormously. As he spoke, he turned to flee toward the distance.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, black clouds appeared from all directions. They were gathering in the direction of Chu Feng and that youth.



“Crap! We’ve... been surrounded,” Seeing such a scene, the youth revealed a dejected expression.

## Chapter 2436 – Reputation

---

Seeing the youth panic, Chu Feng activated his Heaven's Eyes to observe the surroundings.

It was then that he discovered that there was a magnificent army concealed within the dark clouds that surrounded them.

Furthermore, Chu Feng managed to tell with a single glance that they were monstrous beasts. The reason for that was because their eyes were green, their hair was green, their ears were different from those of humans, and they had sharp fangs.

Although the majority of their characteristics were identical to humans, they were indeed still monstrous beasts.

“Who are those guys?” Chu Feng turned to ask the youth.

“They are people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan. They are enemies of our Ancient Era's War Clan. This is extremely bad. Never did I expect that they'd find me this quickly.”

As the youth spoke, he grabbed the title plate on his waist. He clenched it with great strength and actually shattered it.

Chu Feng knew what the youth was trying to do; he was trying to not have that Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan know that he was someone from the Ancient Era's War Clan. That was why he had destroyed his title plate.

It could be seen that the Ancient Era's War Clan and the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan were hostile powers.

“Actually, you don't have to be afraid of them,” Chu Feng said.

“What? Big brother, you must be ignorant and inexperienced. Could it be that you do not know how vicious the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan is?”

Seeing how confident Chu Feng appeared to be, the youth's eyes were filled with shock. He was looking at Chu Feng with the gaze

of someone looking at a fool.

“They are only a bunch of Half Martial Ancestors. Even the strongest among them is only a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. With their strength, they will not be able to harm you today,” Chu Feng said after patting the youth’s shoulder.

The youth was only a rank one Martial Emperor. Faced with those Half Martial Ancestor-level experts, he would naturally be very scared.

However, Chu Feng was a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, regardless of how numerous those monstrous beasts might be, he would not place them in his eyes.

“Big brother, you...” Seeing how calm and collected Chu Feng was, the expression with which the youth looked at Chu Feng changed again. He suddenly discovered that Chu Feng did not appear to be ignorant and inexperienced. Rather, he looked more like someone with a plan in his heart.

At that moment, the youth felt that perhaps the man before him was truly able to handle the monstrous beast army.

“Brazen humans, you dare intrude into our Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s territory? Have you grown tired of living?”

Soon, the group from the so-called Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan surrounded Chu Feng and the youth in many layers.

That said, although there were thousands of people from the Monstrous Clan in the black clouds, only four appeared before Chu Feng and the youth. Those four all possessed the cultivation of rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

Evidently, they simply did not place Chu Feng and that youth in their eyes at all.

“Milords, we were merely lost. We did not intentionally intrude upon your territory. Please, please spare us.”

At that moment, the youth actually knelt on the ground with a ‘putt.’ He started to beg for forgiveness. His appearance was truly humble; there was no trace of the attitude that an Ancient Era’s War Clan’s young master should possess.

Earlier, the youth had indeed thought that Chu Feng would be able to take care of the group of people from the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan.

However, that thought of his only persisted for a split second. When those four monstrous beasts appeared before him, after he felt their Half Martial Ancestor auras, he immediately felt that a great catastrophe would befall them.

Begging for forgiveness, that was the only way for him to survive.

“Get up. Why kneel to them? As a man, you must have dignity,” Chu Feng grabbed the youth and stood him up.

“Oh my, you have quite the dignity. Let me ask you this, is your dignity more important, or is your life more important?” One of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s monstrous beasts looked at Chu Feng with its peculiar gaze.

“Naturally, both dignity and life are important,” Chu Feng replied.

“What if you can only choose one?” The monstrous beast asked with a ridiculing tone.

“That’s very hard to choose. Merely... you all lack the qualifications to make me choose,” Chu Feng smiled. It was a very meaningful smile.

“We lack the qualifications?” Hearing those words, the monstrous beasts revealed furious expressions.

“Not to mention you all, even that rank five Half Martial Ancestor above does not possess the qualifications to ask me to choose,” Chu Feng pointed to the black cloud where that rank five

Half Martial Ancestor was concealed.

“You...” At that moment, the monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan grew scared.

It was not only the ones outside who were scared; even that rank five Half Martial Ancestor within the clouds revealed a startled expression.

He had concealed his cultivation. Logically, unless one possessed strength stronger than his own, it would be impossible for one to see through his concealed cultivation.

Yet, Chu Feng had seen through his cultivation with a single glance. That could only mean one thing — Chu Feng’s strength surpassed his own.

“Exactly who are you?” At that moment, a stern voice sounded from the black clouds. Naturally, it was that rank five Half Martial Ancestor asking those words.

“If you insist on having me answer that, I can only say that I am someone that you all cannot afford to offend,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he waved his hand disdainfully at the sky, “Leave now. Take advantage of the fact that I am not yet angry to disappear. Otherwise... you will all regret it.”

“You...” Faced with the insulting words spoken by Chu Feng, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s clansmen were extremely furious. However, no one dared to do anything to Chu Feng.

“Wow! Big brother, so you were actually this powerful?” At that moment, that Ancient Era’s War Clan’s youth looked to Chu Feng with a face filled with admiration and adoration.

He was no fool. From the reaction of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan, he was able to tell that they were scared.

This meant that the man before him was extremely powerful. Else, how could he cause the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s army to be scared?

“What audacity! I’ll tell you this, this place is our Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s territory! You are but a mere human, don’t you think that you can behave atrociously here!” One of the rank one Half Martial Ancestor-level monstrous beasts standing before Chu Feng pointed at him and shouted.

However, when he shouted those words, his entire body was shivering. In fact, even his voice was trembling. From this, it could be seen that he was extremely flustered when he said those words.

“I insist on behaving atrociously, what can you possibly do about it?” Chu Feng said to that monstrous beast. As he spoke those words, he even took two steps forward, arriving before that monstrous beast.

“This is what you get for behaving atrociously!!!” That monstrous beast sent forth a punch as he shouted. His punch was aimed directly at Chu Feng’s face.

At that moment, Chu Feng revealed a slight smile. That punch was simply too slow. He could see the entirety of the punch. If he wanted to dodge it, he would be able to easily dodge it.

“What’s going on?”

However, the next moment, Chu Feng started to panic. He was shocked to discover that while his opponent’s punch was very slow, he was even slower.

Faced with this extremely weak punch, he was actually... unable to dodge!!!

“Bang~~~”

The punch struck Chu Feng’s face.

It remained that his opponent was a rank one Half Martial Ancestor. Thus, his punch was no small matter. After being struck, Chu Feng was knocked several thousand meters away. As he flew, he smashed through countless trees and many large boulders.

However, after Chu Feng landed, he actually did not have any wounds on his body. Nevertheless, Chu Feng had a completely perplexed expression on his face.

“What’s going on? How is it possible that I wasn’t able to dodge it?” Chu Feng was very shocked.

“Quickly, quickly check your cultivation!” Her Lady Queen shouted.

“How could this be?! My cultivation... my cultivation is actually that of a rank nine Martial Emperor?”

Chu Feng was stunned. His current cultivation was not that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor at all. Rather, it was that of a rank nine Martial Emperor.

Chu Feng’s cultivation had actually fallen. Furthermore, it had fallen by that much.

“Fucking hell, and here I thought you were extremely powerful. Turns out you’re nothing more than trash.”

“Brothers! Beat him up!”

Seeing that Chu Feng was knocked flying by a single punch, the monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan immediately rushed toward Chu Feng. It was not only the four from before, as several dozen more had descended from the black clouds. They surrounded Chu Feng and began to beat him up.

From this, it could be seen that Chu Feng had enraged them by making them become afraid earlier. Thus, they wanted to properly teach Chu Feng a lesson.

Faced with the group beating from the monstrous beasts, Chu Feng could only get thrashed. After all, his current cultivation was only that of a rank nine Martial Emperor, completely inferior to the group of monstrous beasts.

Furthermore, his world spirit space had been sealed. As such,

Chu Feng was unable to even use his world spirit techniques.

“Damn it! What’s going on? Why did my cultivation disappear while my body... is still that of a Half Martial Ancestor?” Chu Feng turned to ask Her Lady Queen.

Chu Feng was able to sense that his current cultivation was indeed that of a rank nine Martial Emperor. Else, it would be impossible for him to not be able to dodge the punch from that mere rank one Half Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng’s body was that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. Else... it would be impossible for him to feel not the slightest pain even after being beaten by the group of Half Martial Ancestors.

“Chu Feng, something is definitely wrong here. Perhaps this might be the backlash from using the Evil God Sword. Your world spirit space has been sealed, and your cultivation has also been sealed.”

“That’s right, it has been sealed. Your cultivation has merely been sealed. It is not lost,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Eggy, do you know of a way for me to regain my cultivation or open my world spirit space?” Chu Feng asked.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt very humiliated. Earlier, he had spoken so arrogantly. Yet now, he was actually being beaten.

Humiliating, truly humiliating. It was the first time Chu Feng had felt such overwhelming humiliation in his entire life.

He felt that he had lost all of his face at that moment.

If he was unable to quickly regain his cultivation and beat up this bunch, Chu Feng’s reputation would be ruined.



## Chapter 2437 – Reduced To A Slave

---

“I do not know what the source of the issue is. Thus, I have no way to help you.”

“But, Chu Feng, it’s only your cultivation that is sealed. Your body is still that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. It’s impossible for this bunch of shrimp soldiers and crab generals to cause you harm.”

“However, you are also unable to do anything about them. Other than being beaten up, there is nothing you can do.”

“I’d urge you to submit to them for now. It will not be too late to settle this debt with them after you regain your cultivation,” Her Lady Queen said.

“You want me to submit to them?” Chu Feng was naturally unwilling to do so. However, upon thinking about it, the monstrous beasts were quite ruthless in their attacks. If they were unable to cause him harm even after beating him up for an extended period of time, they would inevitably start to suspect something.

Although these guys would not be able to injure Chu Feng, it was as Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng would also not be able to do anything to them.

If they were to discover the abnormality with Chu Feng, they might end up bringing him back to their Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan.

What if there were True Immortal-level experts in their clan? Even if there weren’t any True Immortal Experts, what if there were Martial Ancestor-level experts? At that time, Chu Feng would definitely suffer.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng took out a special medicinal pellet while the monstrous beasts continued to beat him up. He secretly

swallowed the medicinal pellet.

“Fuck! You’re eating a forbidden medicine? Do you really think that you can defeat us by taking a forbidden medicine?” Chu Feng’s swallowing of the medicine was discovered. They all thought that Chu Feng was taking a forbidden medicine. Thus, their attacks grew even more ruthless.

However, right after that medicinal pellet was swallowed by Chu Feng, Chu Feng started to bleed from his seven facial orifices. Bruises appeared all over his body. Soon, he was changed beyond recognition.

What Chu Feng had taken was a special disguise pellet. Upon taking it, it would cause its user to appear to suffer from serious injuries. However, those were merely disguises. The user of the pellet would not receive any actual injuries.

Back then, Chu Feng had only created the disguise pellet for fun. He had never expected that it would actually come in handy.

“Stop beating him, stop beating him. If you all continue beating him, you’ll beat him to death.”

Right at that moment, that young master of the Ancient Era’s War Clan ran forward and began to plead for leniency. However, those monstrous beasts completely ignored the youth’s pleas.

“Sure enough, humans are a bunch of trash who only know how to bluff.”

Suddenly, a voice filled with mockery sounded from the sky. It was that rank five Half Martial Ancestor.

After those words were said, the black clouds that covered the sky started to dissipate. Evidently, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s army had discovered that Chu Feng was not strong, and decided to not waste any more time. They had decided to have their remaining clansmen take care of Chu Feng and that youth.

It was only when the black clouds completely disappeared that

the monstrous clan army left, and the monstrous clan's clansmen stopped beating Chu Feng.

Although they stopped their beating, they did not plan to leave the matter at that.

"You boasted so arrogantly earlier. And here we were thinking how amazing you were. Turns out you're utter trash."

"However, you have invoked our fury. If you want to live, kneel down for your daddies. Else... we will definitely beat you to death today," The monstrous beasts said.

Chu Feng did not speak. He would naturally not kneel to those trash. To Chu Feng, his dignity was very important.

However, Chu Feng also knew the situation he was in. As the saying goes, a wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him. Thus, he would no longer contradict them with words.

Thus... he chose to be silent and pretended to be unconscious.

"Not speaking? I'll teach you not to speak."

As they spoke, the group of monstrous beasts started to punch and kick Chu Feng again. Some among them even started to use martial skills.

At that moment, the medicinal pellet Chu Feng had taken took effect again. Chu Feng's body was covered with a greater amount of blood. He was beyond recognition.

"Forget about it, forget about it. If we continue to beat him up, we really will beat him to death. The mining site lacks people right now, it is better to work him to death than to beat him to death. At least he'll be able to make a contribution to our Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan like that," someone said.

"That's true. Look at him, he can't even speak. He has most likely lost consciousness. Truly trash."

“That said, to be honest, this guy’s bones are quite tough. My hands and feet actually felt numb from beating him up. This made it so that I did not dare to attack him with my fists and feet.”

“It’s more than just feeling numb, beating him up is like hitting an adamantium metal plate. It hurts like hell.”

“However, look at his current wretched appearance. Seems like he is no one great either. He merely has tough bones,” The monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan started to discuss Chu Feng.

“Take their Cosmos Sacks. Let’s check to see whether or not there are treasures inside,” Someone said.

“Don’t. Although our Lord has left, you know the rules we have here. We are not allowed to confiscate the humans’ possessions. We can only hand their possessions to our Lord after they are worked to death in the mine.”

“Furthermore, look at the wretched and poor appearance of these two fellows. Do they look like people with treasures?” Someone urged against it.

“That’s true, they’re beggars. Look, here’s an Incomplete Imperial Armament. They’re Martial Emperors now, yet they’re still using Incomplete Imperial Armaments,” One of the monstrous beast picked up the Evil God Sword. Then, he turned to that youth and asked, “Is this yours?”

“No... it’s his,” The youth pointed at Chu Feng.

“This trash doesn’t even possess an Imperial Armament. Yet he actually dared to shoot off his mouth toward us, not placing us in his eyes.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that the mines lacked workers, I would definitely tear him to pieces and then feed him to my pets. Else, my anger would not be quelled,” The monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan looked at Chu Feng with gazes filled with

disdain.

They were certain that Chu Feng was someone who only knew how to boast, someone who did not possess any actual ability.

Yet, they were actually frightened by Chu Feng earlier. The more they thought about it, the more furious they became.

Upon feeling furious, there were actually people among them that rushed to punch and kick Chu Feng again.

That said, even though they were beating Chu Feng up by punching and kicking him, their punches and kicks were infused with martial power. None of them used their own physical bodies to attack Chu Feng.

Although they had no idea why it was the case, they had to admit that Chu Feng's body was so tough that their fists and feet were unable to endure.

"Here. Brat, take this. Hold it for him," That monstrous beast who picked up the Evil God Sword tossed it to the youth in a very disdainful manner.

Then, those monstrous beasts brought Chu Feng and the youth to a mine.

The mine was very large. It was guarded by the monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan. Interestingly, all of the miners in the mine were humans.

At that moment, the sky had darkened, yet the miners were still mining. The sounds of mining resonated throughout the entire mountain.

It was very noisy, ear-piercing, and saddening.

Chu Feng was pretending to be unconscious. Strangely, even though his world spirit space and cultivation were both sealed, he was still able to use his Heaven's Eyes.

Thus, Chu Feng discovered that the army of monstrous beasts

that had left earlier were actually all from the mine. Likely, they were tasked with guarding it.

That said, the strongest monstrous beast there was not the rank five Half Martial Ancestor he met earlier. Rather, it was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor.

However, such strength was insignificant to Chu Feng. As long as he recovered his cultivation, he would not fear even rank nine Half Martial Ancestors.

The issue at hand was how to recover his cultivation.

“Putt~” Chu Feng and the youth were dropped onto the mining grounds.

“From today on, the two of you will be living here.”

“Boy, feed that trash with this medicinal pellet. You two can rest for tonight. When morning comes, you are to properly work. If you dare slack off, we will make it so that you will wish you are dead,” After tossing over a medicinal pellet and saying those words, the monstrous beasts left.

The youth dragged Chu Feng to the location where they would be living from now on.

It was a stone house. To be accurate, rather than calling it a stone house, it would be more apt to call it a cave.

In short, it was very simple and crude. That said, with the level of cultivation of the monstrous beasts, it would be extremely simple to create residential palaces.

However, they did not. From this, it could be seen that the monstrous beasts truly did not consider the miners as people.

## Chapter 2438 – Method To Undo Seal

---

“Say, big brother, why must you do this and make yourself suffer? Quickly, take the medicinal pellet. Being able to recover a bit is better than nothing. Else, if you are unable to properly mine tomorrow, you will likely end up receiving a beating again.”

As the youth spoke, he moved the medicinal pellet to Chu Feng’s mouth.

However, right at that moment, a voice transmission entered the youth’s ear.

“Little brother, are you really the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s young master?”

Naturally, the voice transmission came from Chu Feng.

The rooms here did not even have doors, much less spirit formations to isolate sound. Thus, everything was within the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s surveillance.

As Chu Feng wanted to discuss some secret matters with the youth, he could only do so through voice transmission.

“You... you’re fine?” The youth was shocked.

Although Chu Feng appeared to be very seriously injured, his voice was very resounding and vigorous. It simply did not resemble the voice of someone who was injured. This completely dumbfounded the youth. He felt this to be very miraculous.

“Rest assured, I am fine. Answer my question first,” Chu Feng continued to ask.

“Big brother, I, Zhan Lingtong, am never one to lie. I am indeed the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Young Master. My father is the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief,” This Zhan Lingtong was very smart. While pretending to be attending to Chu Feng’s injuries, he started to converse with Chu Feng through voice

transmission.

“In that case, answer three of my questions.”

“First, what is the relation between the Ancient Era’s War Clan and the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan?”

“Second, what is the cultivation of the strongest fellow in the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan?”

“Last, why did you come to the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s territory?”

Chu Feng asked three questions in succession.

Zhan Lingtong began to answer Chu Feng’s questions through voice transmission.

With this, Chu Feng came to know about the situation at hand.

Firstly, the Ancient Era’s War Clan and the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan had been hostile powers for many generations.

The two of them were equally strong in this day and age. It was only during the time when Zhan Haichuan appeared that the Ancient Era’s War Clan was able to suppress the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. However, Zhan Haichuan did not eliminate the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan.

Zhan Haichuan did not provide an explanation as to why he decided not to do so. Thus, not to mention the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan, even the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan were puzzled.

And now, the strongest individual in the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan was a rank five Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, that individual possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Chu Feng was actually quite disappointed upon finding this out. Although a rank five Martial Ancestor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation was very



powerful, so strong that Chu Feng would not be a match even if he was to regain his cultivation, it was simply too ordinary of a cultivation when placed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Not to mention the people from tier one powers, even some of the experts from tier two powers would be able to contend against someone of that cultivation and battle power, and even defeat them.

The reason why Chu Feng was so disappointed was because this was, after all, the War Clan's Ancient Domain, the birthplace of Zhan Haichuan. For the strongest fellow here to only possess that sort of cultivation and strength was simply too weak.

To Chu Feng's greater disappointment, although the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was weak enough, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief, Zhan Lingtong's father, was even weaker.

Although Zhan Lingtong's father, the current Clan Chief of the Ancient Era's War Clan, also possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he was only a rank four Martial Ancestor, an entire level of cultivation weaker than the Clan Chief of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

If it wasn't for the fact that the Ancient Era's Monstrous Beasts were afraid of Zhan Lingtong's grandfather, an existence who had been in closed-door training for a long time, and the Ancient Era's War Clan's grand defensive formation, they would most likely have already led their army to exterminate the Ancient Era's War Clan.

"Then why did you come here?" Chu Feng asked again after hearing about the situation. That was something that he was curious about himself.

"I like a girl. Although she is a human, she is not a part of our Ancient Era's War Clan. My clan has refused to permit me to be

with her the entire time.”

“During this period of time, our Ancient Era’s War Clan and the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan have been fighting nonstop. In recent years, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan has grown more and more powerful, and they have forcibly taken many of our clan’s territories. It just so happened that the place where that girl lives in is now a territory occupied by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan.”

“If I want to find her, I need to infiltrate into the territory of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. Actually, this mine and the forest that we were in before were both our Ancient Era’s War Clan’s territory in the past. Merely, they are now...” When mentioning that matter, Zhan Lingtong had a helpless and unreconciled expression.

Chu Feng understood his feelings very well. After all, Zhang Lingtong was someone from the Ancient Era’s War Clan. As such, the sensation of one’s clan’s territory being seized by another would most definitely be unpleasant.

Zhan Lingtong sighed. “And now, I’ve been captured by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan and reduced to their slave. I am truly too useless.”

“Fortunately, they do not know who I am. Else, if they were to use me as a hostage, I fear...” Zhan Lingtong had an expression of self-blame.

“Don’t think that way. I actually feel that you’re very brave,” Chu Feng said.

“I’m brave?” Zhan Lingtong asked.

“At the very least, I feel that the fact you are willing to bear this risk for someone you love is something that ordinary people cannot accomplish. I believe that you will definitely attain great accomplishments in the future,” Chu Feng said.

“You are truly good at comforting others. Merely... I don’t understand. Do you really not know about the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan? Why did you do that?” Zhan Lingtong asked Chu Feng.

Zhan Lingtong was actually indirectly implying something with his questions. He wanted to ask Chu Feng why he had confronted the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan only to suffer in the end.

“If I were to tell you that I’m from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, would you believe me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Don’t joke around. With your cultivation, how could you possibly enter this place?” Zhan Lingtong said.

“In that case, if I am to tell you that I didn’t lie to you, and that I would have been able to take care of those fellows, you would definitely not believe me too, no?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Your injuries are very serious. It is best that you take this medicinal pellet and rest yourself. We will have to work laboriously tomorrow.”

“The mountain mine is called the Martial Essence Stone Mine. The ores in this mine possess Natural Energies. However, they are extremely labor intensive to mine. One must use special tools to mine them. Furthermore, if one does not possess the cultivation of a Martial Emperor, one will simply not be able to mine the ores.”

“Comparatively, when Half Martial Ancestors try to mine the ores, it will be easier. As both you and I are Martial Emperors, we will likely end up suffering hardships from tomorrow onward,” Zhan Lingtong evidently did not want to continue on this topic. Thus, he started to earnestly urge Chu Feng to rest.

“Very well. In that case, you should properly rest yourself tonight,” Chu Feng didn’t try to continue the previous conversation. He swallowed the medicinal pellet and closed his eyes to rest.

“Oh, that’s right, here’s your weapon,” Suddenly, Zhan Lingtong tossed the Evil God Sword to Chu Feng.

The Evil God Sword appeared very ordinary right now. In fact, it appeared inferior to even ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armaments. It no longer possessed its overwhelming killing intent and destructive power.

Seeing this Evil God Sword, Chu Feng felt very complicated.

He had experienced the might of the Evil God Sword. That sword was even more frightening than he had anticipated it to be.

He... nearly became a cold-blooded murderous demon because of the sword.

However, if it wasn’t for the Evil God Sword, how could he possibly have been able to escape from the Kong Heavenly Clan? Likely, he would’ve been killed by those Utmost Exalted Elders.

Thus, no matter what, regardless of whether it might be the fact that his cultivation and world spirit space were sealed or the fact that he had nearly had his body seized by the Evil God Sword, it remained that... Chu Feng was only able to survive thanks to the Evil God Sword.

With those thoughts in mind, Chu Feng received the Evil God Sword and placed it into his Cosmos Sack.

He would be very cautious when using the Evil God Sword again in the future. However, when absolutely necessary, the Evil God Sword might save his life again.

“Chu Feng, I thought of a way that might be able to undo the seal around your world spirit space and your cultivation,” Right at that moment, Her Lady Queen’s voice suddenly sounded.

“What is it?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked.

This was what Chu Feng wanted to know the most right now.

## Chapter 2439 – Recovering Cultivation

---

“Back in the Asura Spirit World, I met a senior whose cultivation was also sealed. Later on, his cultivation was restored. I asked him how he accomplished that, and he was able to do it by practicing the martial skill that he had trained in in reverse.”

“Right now, you are training in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Why don’t you try doing so with it?”

“Of course, that senior explicitly stated that training in one’s martial skill in reverse is a very dangerous thing to do.”

“It is very possible for one to lose one’s mind and even die in the process. If you are to discover anything amiss, you must immediately stop,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Indeed. Ordinary methods will most definitely not be able to unseal one’s sealed cultivation. Perhaps by doing things in reverse, one will be able to break through the hurdle. This method is worthy of trying,” Chu Feng closed his eyes and began to train in his Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Merely... he was training in reverse this time around.

“Eeahh...”

Chu Feng immediately let out a miserable scream right after he started.

To train a martial skill in reverse was a very dangerous thing to do. By doing it, Chu Feng felt a pain akin to his body and soul being torn apart.

Such pain was something that ordinary people would find unbearable. Even Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from screaming in pain.

Seeing that, Zhan Lingtong hurriedly moved toward Chu Feng and asked nervously, “Big brother, what’s wrong?”

“I’m alright. Perhaps it might be the effect of the medicine. Don’t bother with me. Perhaps my injuries will be completely healed by tomorrow morning,” At that moment, Chu Feng’s complexion had turned pale and his face was covered in sweat. However, he still forced a smile at Zhan Lingtong.

“You said it’s the effect of the medicine that caused you to react in this manner?”

“But, that’s a medicinal pellet for healing injuries. It should be bringing relief to pain, why would you be in greater pain?” Zhan Lingtong evidently did not believe Chu Feng.

“That’s why you’re inexperienced. For some healing medicines, their effects are very fast. However, the process is very painful. This is what it means by experiencing a shorter moment of greater pain than a prolonged journey of lesser pain. Don’t worry about me. I will be fine.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he sat cross-legged and closed his eyes. The next moment, he let out another painful scream.

Chu Feng did not stop. The reason for that was because he had discovered that this method... was effective.

Chu Feng’s cultivation began to gradually recover. Not only that, but the unbearable pain was actually also gradually fading.

In that situation, everything grew more and more smooth. Chu Feng’s cultivation also started to rapidly recover.

Seeing that Chu Feng no longer screamed in pain, Zhan Lingtong also grew relieved.

When the sky was still dark, two monstrous beasts from the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan arrived outside of the stone house that Chu Feng was in.

Those two were familiar faces. They were the ones who had ruthlessly beaten up Chu Feng earlier.

Merely, this time around, the two of them were both holding long whips. It could be seen that they had come with ill intentions.

“Pow~~~”

One of the two lashed his whip at the roof of the stone house, creating a split on the roof.

Many crushed stones started to fall from the top of the stone house, startling the sleeping Zhan Lingtong awake.

Upon seeing the monstrous beasts, Zhan Lingtong hurriedly asked, “Milords, what’s wrong?”

“What’s wrong? It’s time now! Why are you still sleeping?! Quickly, get up and start working!” The two monstrous beasts said with a malicious tone.

It turned out that the two of them had come to urge Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong to work.

“Milords, weren’t we told to properly rest ourselves for the night? The sky is still dark right now,” Zhan Lingtong spoke in grievance.

“Look carefully. There’s all those people over there... other than the ones that have lost consciousness from overworking, who else is resting lazily like you two?”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that we have badly beaten that trash over there, causing him to need time to recover his injuries, how could we allow you two to rest?”

“And now, that trash is already fine. Yet you two still want to continue resting? Hell the fuck no!!!”

“Get the hell up and start working immediately! Otherwise, this whip of mine will not show any mercy!”

That monstrous beast spoke fiendishly as he fiddled with the whip in his hand. His tone was filled with impatience.

They had simply not considered Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong to

be human beings. Rather, they were treating them as domesticated animals, whose only purpose was to work for them. In fact, they felt Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong to be inferior to even animals.

Zhan Lingtong sighed helplessly. Then, he started to walk toward Chu Feng.

Earlier, Chu Feng had been screaming in pain. However, he was now pretty much no longer screaming. Furthermore, his complexion had become much better. Zhan Lingtong felt that Chu Feng should be alright now.

“Big brother, stop sleeping. Quickly, wake up. We have to go work now,” Zhan Lingtong hurriedly walked over to Chu Feng and called out for him to wake up.

“Wait a moment,” Chu Feng said.

At that moment, Chu Feng had reached the final junction in recovering his cultivation. Thus, he would naturally not give up so easily.

“What did you say?!” It just so happened that what Chu Feng said was heard by the two monstrous beasts.

The two of them harbored hatred toward Chu Feng to begin with. And now, Chu Feng actually dared to act arrogant before them again. Immediately, the two of them grew furious.

“Shut your mouths! If you dare interrupt me again, I’ll cripple you,” Chu Feng opened his eyes and glared at the two monstrous beasts standing in the sky. Then, he closed his eyes again.

“Big brother, you...”

Zhan Lingtong was stunned. He felt that what Chu Feng was doing was simply akin to courting death.

The two monstrous beasts were also stunned. They had truly never expected that Chu Feng would dare to act so arrogantly even after they’d beaten him up so ruthlessly yesterday.



“You are truly courting death!”

Suddenly, one of the two monstrous beasts swung his arm and lashed his whip toward Chu Feng.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng raised his arm and actually grabbed the whip.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, Chu Feng suddenly exerted strength and pulled the whip back. An enormous power forcibly pulled that monstrous beast into the cave, smashing him onto the ground.

“Rumble~~~”

Rocks scattered about everywhere. That monstrous beast was thrown deep into the cave and lost consciousness.

“This guy!!!” Seeing that scene, the other monstrous beast revealed an expression of astonishment and fury.

“If you dare disturb me again, I’ll take away your dog lives,” This time around, Chu Feng did not even bother to open his eyes when he spoke. His attitude was filled with contempt.

“You damned bastard, I, I, I’ll beat you to de...” The other monstrous beast turned red with fury. He raised the whip in his hand and planned to attack Chu Feng.

However, when he saw the appearance of to the other monstrous beast who had attacked Chu Feng earlier, he stopped his movements.

After hesitating for a moment, he left, saying, “Just you wait!” turned around and rushed to leave.

At that moment, other than the unconscious monstrous beast, only Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong remained there.

At that moment, Zhan Lingtong was both astonished and frightened. He was astonished by how Chu Feng was able to easily

defeat that Half Martial Ancestor.

However, more than that, he was panic-stricken. After all, this was the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's territory. For Chu Feng to cause trouble there was truly akin to courting death.

“Big brother, y-you've b-brought about a great calamity! Quickly, run away! They will not let you get away with this!” Frightened, Zhan Lingtong said to Chu Feng.

“Don't panic. Give me a moment longer, and I'll bring you away from here,” Chu Feng said.

# Chapter 2440 – This Is A Treasure Mountain

---

“Big brother, look at the situation. Please stop saying these sorts of things, okay?”

Actually, Zhan Lingtong wanted to tell Chu Feng to stop boasting. He wanted to remind Chu Feng about the beating he had received yesterday.

As for Chu Feng, he had grown silent after he finished saying what he wanted. No matter how worried Zhan Lingtong was, there was nothing he could do.

Soon, several hundred Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen arrived before Kong Lingtong's line of sight.

The person leading the group was actually that rank five Half Martial Ancestor from yesterday. Standing beside him was the monstrous beast that Chu Feng had scared away earlier.

“Could he be the rebellious individual you spoke of?” After that rank five Half Martial Ancestor discovered that it was Chu Feng, he looked to his clansmen beside him with a furious expression on his face. He thought that he had been lied to.

“Milord, it is indeed him. I do not know what happened to that guy. However, he actually managed to beat Yao Feng unconscious with a single attack,” The monstrous beast from earlier explained.

After it was pointed out to him, that rank five Half Martial Ancestor discovered that there was indeed a fellow clansman that was unconscious and seriously injured deep in the cave where Chu Feng stood. After discovering that, his expression turned serious.

“Brat, exactly what is your origin?” That rank five Half Martial Ancestor asked.

However, Chu Feng did not answer him. He continued to sit there in a cross-legged manner with his eyes closed.

“I am talking with you! Do you not hear me?!” The next moment, that Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s rank five Half Martial Ancestor revealed a voice many times more resounding than thunder.

At this moment, the rocks of the mountain started to rumble, and space itself started to tremble.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng was still paying no attention.

Although Chu Feng was confident, Zhan Lingtong was deeply frightened.

That monstrous beast had already unleashed his rank five Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might. Before a Martial Emperor like Zhan Lingtong, that was simply an existence akin to gods.

And now, that rank five Half Martial Ancestor was enraged. Zhan Lingtong was afraid that if Chu Feng continued to play dumb, that rank five Half Martial Ancestor would directly kill them.

Thus, he hurriedly said to Chu Feng, “Big brother, quickly, get up and say something. Just apologize to them.”

After Zhan Lingtong finished saying those words, Chu Feng finally opened his eyes. Furthermore, he revealed a smile on his face.

“Brother, don’t be afraid. I am here,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he stood up, ran his eyes toward the sky and said, “Not enough people.”

“What did you say? Not enough people?” That rank five Half Martial Ancestor asked.

“The people that beat me yesterday are not all here. Gather them all here for me. Else I’ll have you suffer the consequences,” Chu Feng said.

“You damned trash, was the beating yesterday not enough for

you? Now that you've recovered a bit from yesterday's injuries, you're immediately starting to play dumb with us again?" The monstrous beasts that had attacked Chu Feng yesterday were furious. They started to mock Chu Feng again.

"Injury?" Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, his injuries started to rapidly recover. In merely the blink of an eye, Chu Feng's injuries all disappeared. There was not a single scar or bruise remaining on him.

"That is merely a trick that I used. Did you all really think that you'd be able to injure me?" Chu Feng asked.

"Don't you bluff here!!!"

"Today, I will whip you to death."

The monstrous beast that was scared away by Chu Feng earlier seemed to have grown confident because the rank five Half Martial Ancestor was beside him.

He actually took out an Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed forth to attack Chu Feng.

Furthermore, he had unleashed an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill from the get-go. Powerful martial power gathered, forming a pillar of flame as it shot toward Chu Feng.

At this moment, Zhan Lingtong's expression turned ashen. He felt that if that attack were to land, both he and Chu Feng would definitely be killed.

"Humph, ignorant fool," A cold light flashed in Chu Feng's eyes. Then, he raised his arm and shot forth a palm strike.

"Boom!" A loud explosion was heard as the flame pillar was shattered.

"Wuuah~~~"

At the same time, the monstrous beast that had attacked Chu Feng let out a scream and was knocked flying far away. He landed

motionlessly on the ground. It was unknown as to whether he was still alive.

“What audacity!!!”

At this moment, that rank five Half Martial Ancestor let out a furious shout. Then, he flipped his hands and actually revealed two Incomplete Ancestral Armaments.

At this moment, he had completely unleashed his rank five Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might.

Black clouds began to surge behind him. Thunder was rumbling in the clouds. As his aura descended from the sky, Zhan Lingtong felt a chill covering his entire body, and he started to shiver violently.

It was not only the might of a rank five Half Martial Ancestor. In addition to that, that rank five Half Martial Ancestor had also unleashed overwhelming killing intent.

This monstrous beast was not only going to attack Chu Feng, he planned to kill Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong too.

However, right at this moment, Chu Feng shot forth another palm strike.

“Wuuahh.”

Following that, a scream was heard.

That rank five Half Martial Ancestor from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan was actually knocked flying far away after uttering a scream like the monstrous beast before him. Furthermore, he too grew motionless when he fell to the ground.

Unlike the one before him, his life and death was certain. He had died.

Chu Feng had actually managed to kill this rank five Half Martial Ancestor with only a single palm strike.

“This!!!”

This time around, not to mention Zhan Lingtong, even the rest of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen were stunned.

That was a rank five Half Martial Ancestor!!!

"I originally did not want to kill. However, with how you all treat us humans, if I do not teach you all a lesson in blood today, I fear that you will not learn your lesson," After Chu Feng finished saying those words, killing intent suddenly emerged in his eyes.

Upon seeing Chu Feng's gaze that was filled with killing intent, the monstrous beasts in the sky all started to tremble with fear.

At this moment, they finally realized that the human before them was not bluffing. He really did possess overwhelming power.

Furthermore, he was very frightening!!!

"Run!!!"

Someone let out a shout to run. It was unknown who said it, but when that voice was heard, the monstrous beasts in the sky immediately turned around and began to flee in all directions.

"Today, not a single one of the monstrous beast from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan here will be able to escape!"

As Chu Feng spoke, he raised his arm and spiraled it toward the sky.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

The next moment, martial power surged forth. It turned into a tornado that engulfed the sky.

Sand began flying as rocks were moved about; the sky and the earth had darkened.

The fleeing monstrous beasts were all caught by the violent tornado. None of them were able to escape.

As the tornado surged on, miserable screams could be heard.

After that, Chu Feng soared into the sky and waved his sleeve.

Immediately, many more tornados appeared in the vast mine. They completely rolled up all of the members of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

However, one thing was worthy of mentioning. That is, not a single human was caught in the tornados.

“What is going on?”

What was suddenly occurring astonished all of the miners. One by one, they stopped mining and turned to look at the sky.

“Heavens! Who is that?!” Everyone saw Chu Feng. They were all bewildered.

The reason for that was because the sky was filled with chaos. Enormous tornadoes were like huge dragons wreaking havoc through the mine.

Not only were the people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan screaming in the tornadoes, one could also see them spinning round and around, colliding with one another.

To the people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Race, the scene before them was akin to the arrival of doomsday.

As for Chu Feng, he was the only person standing in the sky.

Furthermore, he was not someone from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan. Rather, he was an ordinary human.

At this moment, the miners subconsciously felt that the devastation those Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen were undergoing must be related to Chu Feng.

As such, to the humans that were tormented by the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, they felt as if they were seeing a god when they saw Chu Feng.

“Never would I have expected that there's actually such a treasure hidden here.”

“How could this possibly be a mine? This is simply a treasure



mountain!”

“It would appear that this journey has not been made in vain.”

“Even if I was beaten before, it was worth it.”

At this moment when the miners were all looking to Chu Feng as if he was a god, Chu Feng’s eyes were running through the vast mine the entire time.

This vast mine contained an extremely and even unimaginably dense amount of Natural Energies.

The Natural Energies contained here were many times denser than all of the Natural Energies Chu Feng had refined throughout his life!!!

## Chapter 2441 – Be Lenient

---

Chu Feng opened his mouth, and an enormous suction power soon enveloped the entire vast mine.

The very next moment, the mine started to tremble. Like an earthquake, no one was able to remain standing firm. One by one, they started to soar into the sky.

“My god! What... what is happening?”

The crowd all revealed dumbfounded expressions as they saw the changes to the mine.

Many streams of Natural Energies visible to the naked eye were flowing out from all over the mine like reverse waterfalls. They were all gathering toward Chu Feng.

“Big brother, he... he... he is actually refining the Natural Energies in the mine.”

“How is he managing to accomplish that? This... this is simply unimaginable.”

Zhan Lingtong was also stunned. After all, the mine used to be part of their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s territory.

Thus, he knew fully how amazing the mine was. The ores gathered there truly did contain an extremely strong amount of Natural Energies. That was also the reason why it was so troublesome to mine the ores.

It was why mining the ores required special tools, and the miners needed to have a cultivation of at least Martial Emperor.

However, most importantly, the mined ores had to be specially refined to extract the Natural Energies contained within them.

Yet, Chu Feng was actually directly devouring the Natural Energy. To Zhan Lingtong, that was simply something impossible.

Soon, the Natural Energies visible to the naked eye stopped

rushing out from the mine.

With that, the vast mine lost the radiance it had emitted before. Not only did it not appear to be special at all, but it actually appeared to be inferior to even ordinary mountain ranges.

“He... actually managed to completely devour all of the Natural Energies contained in the mine?” At that moment, the crowd was looking at Chu Feng with gazes of fear.

They felt that what Chu Feng had done was most definitely not something that a human could accomplish.

As for Chu Feng, he wiped his mouth in a very satisfied manner. To him, it was like he had just enjoyed a very delicious meal. Furthermore, that meal could be said to be the best of the best.

Although he was unable to estimate how much Natural Energy he had devoured, he felt that the Natural Energies contained in his dantian would be sufficient for him to break through to at least the True Immortal level of cultivation.

Back when Chu Feng was in the Holy Land of Martialism, he had exhausted enormous effort for the sake of finding Natural Energies.

At that time, he most definitely would have never thought that he would one day gather so much Natural Energy in his dantian.

Suddenly, Chu Feng noticed that none of the crowd had left. Rather, they were all standing in midair and staring at him.

“Why are you all still standing there stunned? Leave now. Or could it be that you all want to continue to be enslaved?” Standing high in the sky, Chu Feng’s voice was like thunder as it shook the surroundings.

“Milord, m-might you be someone from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?” The humans asked Chu Feng.

However, none of them fled. It was not that they did not wish to

flee, but rather that they did not dare to flee. After all, this place was now the territory of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

“You dared come to our Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan to cause trouble, exactly who are you?”

Right at that moment, a furious shout sounded from outside the mine. Following that, a figure rapidly flew into the mine.

It was that rank six Half Martial Ancestor-level monstrous beast from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, the strongest individual tasked with guarding the place.

Upon seeing that monstrous beast, the crowd all turned pale. One by one, they started to shiver in fear.

As they had been enslaved for a long time, the crowd knew very well how frightening that person was. He was truly an individual that murdered without blinking an eye.

However, Chu Feng showed absolutely no fear upon seeing that person. Rather, he let out a single word, “Scram.”

“Arrogant little thief, you dare speak to me in such a manner?! Today, I will definitely dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!” That rank six Half Martial Ancestor took out his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and rushed to attack Chu Feng.

Furthermore, he attacked with overwhelming killing intent. He was planning to kill Chu Feng.

In response, Chu Feng shot forth a punch. “Bang,” that rank six Half Martial Ancestor's body exploded.

“Heavens! He actually managed to kill him with only a single strike!” The crowd was dumbfounded and disbelief filled their eyes.

“He... he is actually really that powerful?” Zhan Lingtong did not dare to believe his eyes.

He had personally witnessed Chu Feng taking a beating

yesterday.

Yet, the Chu Feng before him, when compared to the Chu Feng of the past, was simply a day and night difference; they were simply two different people.

This was especially true for Chu Feng's arrogant and completely confident attitude of absolutely not placing any of his opponents in his eyes. Even in his Ancient Era's War Clan, that sort of attitude was rarely seen.

Furthermore, it was the first time that Zhan Lingtong had met someone so powerful at such a young age.

“Why are you all still not fleeing? Could it be that you wish to be slaves your entire life?” Chu Feng said to the humans again.

At that moment, all of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen were taken care of by him. Yet, those humans were actually not escaping. Chu Feng was very puzzled by it.

“Milord, we beg of you, please lead us away from here. Else... we fear that the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan will retaliate against us.”

“At that time... we will definitely meet even more miserable ends.”

“Milord, please lead us away.”

.....

The humans actually started to kneel in front of Chu Feng.

They had already endured the bullying and humiliation from the monstrous beasts for a long time now. As such, they were extremely fearful of the monstrous beasts.

To them, Chu Feng's appearance was simply akin to the appearance of a savior. As such, how could they escape by themselves? Naturally, they would want to tightly cling to this savior of theirs.

“Chu Feng, although you have recovered your cultivation, you will still not be able to match the true experts of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan if you are to encounter them. These people will be an enormous burden. You absolutely cannot take them along with you,” Her Lady Queen urged.

“But... I cannot disregard their lives. After all, I am the one that has caused this calamity. I cannot have them shoulder the consequences meant for me,” Chu Feng said.

“What do you plan to do then? Do you really plan to bring these burdens along with you?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It will not be difficult for me to bring them with me. Merely, before that, I have something that I must do first,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Help Zhan Lingtong find his lover,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re planning to involve yourself in something like that?” Her Lady Queen was astonished. She was very unwilling to help.

“I feel that Zhan Lingtong is very courageous. Furthermore, I know very well how it feels to lose one’s lover.”

“Thus, I cannot watch with folded arms.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he waved his sleeve repeatedly at the space before him.

The next moment, the screams from the monstrous beasts grew more and more ear-piercing. Soon, the screams completely disappeared.

Chu Feng did not unleash a massacre. He had only killed the rank six Half Martial Ancestor and the rank five Half Martial Ancestor, the two strongest monstrous beasts there.

As for the remaining monstrous beasts, Chu Feng only left them seriously injured.

He had made it so that they became powerless to bully the people

there, and powerless to run away. They were no longer a threat to the humans.

“Why not directly kill them?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“With the strength that Senior Zhan Haichuan possessed, he was completely capable of eliminating the so-called Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. Yet, he did not do so. I believe there is a reason for that.”

“Before knowing what that reason is, I cannot exterminate the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan,” Chu Feng said.

## Chapter 2442 – Three Great Secret Skills

---

“Then why did you kill that rank six Half Martial Ancestor and rank five Half Martial Ancestor?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“They unleashed killing intent toward me. If my cultivation was weaker than theirs, the one to die right now would have been me. To people who want to kill me, there’s no reason for me to be lenient.”

“Right, you always have your justifications,” Her Lady Queen said in a very helpless manner.

“Brother, come here,” Chu Feng looked to Zhan Lingtong.

“Big brother, I truly never expected for you... for you to be this powerful.”

“You are simply my idol.”

Zhan Lingtong arrived before Chu Feng. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng had changed. Even the tone that he spoke with had changed. His tone when he spoke to Chu Feng was filled with admiration and adoration.

“Enough of your flattering. Tell me... do you know where your beloved is at now?” Chu Feng asked Zhan Lingtong.

“I do, of course I do,” Zhan Lingtong nodded his head repeatedly.

“Guide me,” Chu Feng said.

“Big brother, you’re... could it be that you’re planning to help me save her?” Zhan Lingtong revealed a joyous expression.

“Don’t bother with superfluous words. Bring me there,” As Chu Feng spoke, he soared into the sky with Zhan Lingtong.

“Milord, please, you must not disregard us,” Seeing this, the humans started to howl in grief.

“The monstrous beasts here are powerless to bring harm to you



all. You all can stay here. I will return.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his hands started to move about. Then, golden-bright and dazzling spirit power started to flow out of his body. In a flash, his spirit power covered the entire mine.

The spirit power formed two layers of spirit formations. The first layer was a concealment formation capable of concealing the actual circumstances inside the mine.

As for the second layer, it was a defensive formation capable of stopping others from intruding.

As Chu Feng's cultivation increased, his world spirit power also grew stronger. Thus, even though the dual layer of spirit formations was set up by Chu Feng effortlessly, they would still be very difficult to breach for all those with cultivations below rank nine Half Martial Ancestor.

“Wow! Big brother, you're also a world spiritist? You are simply too amazing! I admire you more and more now!” Zhan Lingtong saw everything and began to feel even greater admiration and adoration for Chu Feng.

“Enough of your flattering. C'mon, lead the way,” Chu Feng said.

“That way,” Zhan Lingtong gave the directions.

Right after Zhan Lingtong said those words, both he and Chu Feng disappeared.

Guided by Zhan Lingtong, Chu Feng activated his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and was rapidly journeying.

His speed was simply too fast. For someone of Zhan Lingtong's cultivation, they were unable to even make out the scenery that they were rapidly passing below them.

Every time Zhan Lingtong gave Chu Feng directions, he would need Chu Feng to stop. Only by doing that would he be able to

determine where they were.

That said, Zhan Lingtong was capable of clearly seeing the azure dragon beneath his feet.

“Big brother, if I am not mistaken, this dragon of yours should be a secret skill, right?” Zhan Lingtong asked.

“Indeed, it is a secret skill. It would appear that you’ve seen secret skills before?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

To be able to recognize a secret skill immediately generally meant that one had seen secret skills before. Else, they would only wonder if a technique was a secret skill, and not be able to be absolutely certain.

“Of course. Our Ancient Era’s War Clan has inherited three secret skills.”

“The first secret skill is called the Ancient Era’s War Sword.”

“The second secret skill is called the Ancient Era’s War Spear.”

“The third secret skill is called the Ancient Era’s War Axe.”

“Reportedly, these three secret skills were created by our ancestor. It is said that they are extremely powerful.”

“However, those three secret skills are different from your secret skill. It’s very exhausting to unleash them. Generally, one will exhaust all of their physical strength upon using one. That said, it’s true that they are extremely powerful,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Oh? There are such secret skills?”

Not only did Chu Feng possess the Four Symbols Secret Skills, he also possessed the Five Elements Secret Skills. However, all of them were extremely effortless for Chu Feng to unleash. He had never experienced an exhaustion of all his strength from using a secret skill.

“Big brother, to tell you the truth, the other reason why the Clan Chief of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan feared my grandfather

was because my grandfather grasped one of our Ancient Era's War Clan's Three Great Secret Skills, the Ancient Era's War Axe," Zhan Lingtong said.

"Could it be that this Ancient Era's War Axe was capable of deciding the outcome of a battle if both fighters possessed the same cultivation and battle power?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

Although the current Ancient Era's War Clan was not strong, it remained that they had given birth to an enormously powerful existence like Zhan Haichuan.

Furthermore, even now, Chu Feng did not have much understanding of the Ancient Era's War Clan. However, he felt that the Ancient Era's War Clan could not be looked down upon. At the very least, they should have been very powerful in the past.

Thus, Chu Feng was very curious about their secret skills; he was curious as to how powerful they were.

"No, my grandfather possesses the same cultivation and battle power as my father," Zhan Lingtong said.

"In that case, your grandfather's cultivation is a level weaker than the clan chief of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan?" Chu Feng was very surprised.

"That's right. However, my grandfather is currently in closed-door training. If he is able to successfully reach a breakthrough, we will no longer have to fear the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan," Zhan Lingtong said.

"In that case, that would mean that the secret skill, the Ancient Era's War Axe that your grandfather grasped, could allow him to battle against those with a cultivation one level above him?" Chu Feng asked.

"Let's explain it like this. The Ancient Era's War Axe is extremely exhausting to use. Not only will it consume enormous martial power, it will even consume one's source energy, soul and life."

“As long as my grandfather is willing to do so, he can unleash the Ancient Era’s Battle Axe with his own life on the line as the price. Upon unleashing the Ancient Era’s Battle Axe, even the clan chief of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan will not be able to withstand it,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Never would I have imagined your Ancient Era’s War Clan’s secret skills to be so powerful,” Chu Feng was very shocked.

Although Chu Feng’s secret skills were also very powerful, they clearly did not possess the sort of power that Zhan Lingtong described.

Although the prerequisite of sacrificing oneself to unleash the secret skill was an enormous cost, it remained that being able to prevail over an opponent a level of cultivation above oneself was very astonishing.

“Stop gasping in admiration,” Her Lady Queen said, “Who created your secret skills? It was Qing Xuantian. When he created the secret skills, his cultivation was not strong. Naturally, his secret skills will not be very strong either.”

“However, their secret skills are different. They were created by the ancestor of the Ancient Era’s War Clan.”

“While the Ancient Era’s War Clan might be very weak now, I feel that their ancestor was most definitely an extraordinary individual. If their secret skills were created at their ancestor’s peak, they would naturally not be something that your secret skills could compare with.”

“Truth be told, the only reason why your secret skills are still able to unleash such great power is because you yourself possess extraordinary power.”

“If ordinary people were to have your secret skills, they might be inferior to even Taboo Martial Skills now.”

“After all, the power of a secret skill, apart from being related to

its creator, is also greatly related to its possessor.”

“Indeed,” Chu Feng agreed with what Her Lady Queen said.

“With how powerful the Ancient Era’s War Axe is, could it be the strongest of the three secret skills?” Chu Feng asked Zhan Lingtong.

“It is not. It is actually the weakest of the three,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“It’s actually the weakest?” At that moment, not to mention Chu Feng, even Her Lady Queen was surprised.

“That’s right. The strongest of the Three Great Secret Skills is the Ancient Era’s War Sword. The second strongest is the Ancient Era’s War Spear. The Ancient Era’s War Axe ranks third.”

“The Ancient Era’s War Spear was conquered by Lord Zhan Haichuan. As for the Ancient Era’s War Sword, no one has been able to conquer it so far,” Zhan Lingtong said.

## Chapter 2443 – Should Be Beheaded

---

“There’s actually no one capable of subduing it? Even senior Zhan Haichuan was unable to do so?” Chu Feng asked.

“Even Lord Zhan Haichuan was unable to subdue the Ancient Era’s War Sword,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Sssss...” Even Chu Feng was unable to contain himself from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

That Zhan Haichuan was the publicly accepted strongest expert to have appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in the past tens of thousands of years.

Even though Grandmaster Kai Hong had once ruled over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, his status in the hearts of the people was still inferior to Zhan Haichuan’s.

From this, it could be seen that Zhan Haichuan’s might was definitely not undeserved.

Yet, that secret skill called the Ancient Era’s War Sword was something that even Zhan Haichuan was unable to subdue.

This served to signify even more how powerful the secret skill was.

“Chu Feng, this is a great opportunity. Since no one was able to conquer that secret skill, you should conquer it,” Her Lady Queen said in a very excited manner. It was as if she had discovered a treasure.

“Milady Queen, that is the possession of the Ancient Era’s War Clan. Even if I wanted it, I fear that they will not allow me to have it,” Chu Feng said.

“If they refuse, you can just snatch it,” Her Lady Queen said.

Chu Feng smiled at those words and did not answer.

Chu Feng knew very well what sort of personality Eggy had. As

long as it was something beneficial to Chu Feng, she would disregard the lives and deaths of everyone and everything else.

However, Chu Feng possessed neither hatred nor grievance toward the Ancient Era's War Clan. As such, he would not go and snatch away their possession in a completely uncalled-for manner.

Although Chu Feng was also tempted after hearing about how powerful the Ancient Era's War Sword was, he would not go and snatch the Ancient Era's War Clan's secret skill just because of that.

The reason for that was because that was not the sort of person Chu Feng was.

"Brother, I am truly curious. What is the origin of your Ancient Era's War Clan?" Chu Feng asked.

As matters stood, Chu Feng was certain that the Ancient Era's War Clan was definitely extraordinary. Likely, they might possess a grand origin.

"Big brother, I won't conceal this from you. Actually, our Ancient Era's War Clan was very powerful. We have existed continuously since the Ancient Era," Zhan Lingtong said.

"In that case, do you all know about what happened in the Ancient Era?" Chu Feng asked.

The things that had happened in the Ancient Era was one of the things Chu Feng was most curious about.

However, faced with that question, Zhan Lingtong shook his head. He said, "We are only a branch family of our Ancient Era's War Clan. Thus, even we ourselves do not know the history of our Ancient Era's War Clan very well."

"You should also be able to tell that we've been trapped in here."

"So that's the case."

Chu Feng came to a realization. It was as he had guessed, the

Ancient Era's War Clan was indeed very powerful. Perhaps it was a colossus in that vast starry sky that even his clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan, would pale in comparison to.

As for the Ancient Era's War Clan in the sealed domain, they were most likely in a similar situation as Chu Feng himself. They had a home that they could not return to. Furthermore... they most likely did not receive their clan's teachings.

Else... how could they be so weak?

"Big brother, are there a lot of experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Zhan Lingtong asked.

"Didn't you not believe that I came from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"I was blind earlier. However, I have managed to experience your strength. Other than the people from our Ancient Era's War Clan, it is impossible for other humans to possess your sort of cultivation in this War Clan's Ancient Domain."

"Thus, I feel that you should be from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," Zhan Lingtong said.

"Seems like you're not stupid," Chu Feng smiled.

Then, Chu Feng began to tell Zhan Lingtong a bit about himself and the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Of course, Chu Feng spoke a lot about the heroic deeds Zhan Haichuan had accomplished in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Upon hearing that his senior had managed to be completely undefeated in a place filled with experts like the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Zhan Lingtong became extremely excited.

Although Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong were chatting nonstop, Chu Feng's speed did not slow down in the slightest. Soon, they



arrived at the place where Zhan Lingtong's lover resided.

Sure enough, this place had already been occupied by the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan. Everyone with a cultivation of Martial Emperor and above had been captured to work as slave miners in the mine.

All those who remained were a bunch of elderly, weak and disabled individuals. Fortunately, Zhan Lingtong's lover was still there. Furthermore, she was completely unscathed.

After Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong discussed with one another, they decided that they would bring all those people away with them.

Then, they returned to the mine and brought all the people in the mine with them too.

Furthermore, Zhan Lingtong would always ask Chu Feng to bring away anyone who was suffering hardships that they encountered on their journey.

In the blink of an eye, several tens of thousands of people were following Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong.

While two individuals would not appear to be extraordinary, when several tens of thousands of people flew in the sky together, it was like a vast black cloud, an extremely attention-catching sight.

For the sake of not catching the attention of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, Chu Feng had no choice but to set up a concealment formation to conceal all of them.

Thus, although they were traveling with a vast amount of people, only three of them could be seen.

As for the third individual, it would naturally be Zhan Lingtong's lover.

Zhan Lingtong had managed to meet his lover again after great

difficulty. And now, he was unwilling to part with her and tightly holding her hand.

“That boy is simply too perverted, no? Look, the girl’s hands have turned red from how tightly he is holding her,” Sure enough, Her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself, and began to criticize Zhan Lingtong’s public display of affection to Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was able to understand Zhan Lingtong’s behavior.

If he were to encounter Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei, Chu Feng would likely have the same sort of reaction as Zhan Lingtong.

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived at the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s territory.

It was a vast land. It was also the last line of defense for the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

Through using his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see that the vast and boundless land before them was actually isolated by a hidden grand formation.

To put it simply, there was an invisible wall standing before them. Unless one possessed a special key, one would not be able to pass through the wall.

It just so happened that Zhan Lingtong actually possessed the key.

Zhan Lingtong held the key in his hand and started to lead the crowd past the grand defensive formation.

However, immediately after passing through the grand defensive formation, a large group of people majestically appeared in the sky. Soon, they arrived before Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong, blocking their path.

Those people were all wearing armor and holding the same sorts of blades in their hands. They were people from the Ancient Era’s

War Clan.

Their leader was a middle-aged looking man. However, Chu Feng could tell that he was someone who had lived for hundreds of years.

As for his cultivation, he was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

“Zhan Lingtong, where have you been?!”

When the man leading the group saw Zhan Lingtong, he did not display any feelings of joy, and instead grew furious.

“Brother-in-law, I... I went out to find Yue’er,” Zhan Lingtong said as he held the hand of his lover.

Perhaps because he knew very well that his clansmen were against him being together with Li Yue’er, there was no confidence in Zhan Lingtong’s tone as he spoke.

“You ran out for the sake of that lowly woman?! Do you know how many people you’ve harmed?!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law spoke in a very furious manner.

Chu Feng was unable to watch this go on anymore. He stood before Zhan Lingtong, pointed at his brother-in-law and said, “I do not know what sort of relationship you have with Zhan Lingtong. However, if you are a man, I hope that you will learn how to respect women.”

“Who are you?” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law took a very displeased look at Chu Feng.

His stare contained disdain, contempt, anger and threat.

“Who I am doesn’t matter. However, I’d urge you to speak with respect,” Chu Feng said.

“What an audacious wicked commoner! You dare speak to me like this?! Do you know who I am?!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law roared in a very displeased manner. As he spoke, he unleashed his oppressive might to attack Chu Feng.

However, to his surprise, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged after being attacked by his rank seven Half Martial Ancestor-level oppressive might.

This caused his gaze to change to one of shock.

“What’s wrong? You want to fight?”

“Rank seven Half Martial Ancestor, oh how impressive it must be,” Chu Feng laughed mockingly. Then, he said, “If you possess such overwhelming ability, why don’t you go out to take care of the monstrous beasts from the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan? Why are you not seizing back your lost territory, and instead trying to show off your might here?”

“The way I see it, you are not strong at all. You’re simply someone who can only bully the weak and fear the strong. You’re someone who is meek in public but a tyrant at home. You’re nothing more than trash.”

“You!!!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law was left speechless by Chu Feng’s words. That said, he grew more and more furious.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, he pulled out the Incomplete Ancestral Armament on his waist and pointed it at Chu Feng, “To offend one’s superior, you should be beheaded!!!”

## Chapter 2444 – I'll Go Save Her

---

“Brother-in-law, don't be like this. He is my savior. If it wasn't for him... I fear that I would not have been able to return.”

In response, Zhan Lingtong hurriedly moved before Chu Feng and tried his best to defuse the situation. He was deeply afraid that his brother-in-law and Chu Feng would start fighting.

“Lingtong, what did you just say? You're saying that you were captured by people from the Monstrous Clan?”

Hearing what Zhan Lingtong said, his brother-in-law immediately had a change in expression. In a flash, the anger in his eyes lessened and was replaced with worry.

“That's right. I never expected the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan to be that tight in their patrol. I unfortunately ended up being captured by them and was sent to the mine as their slave miner.”

“Fortunately, this benefactor here saved me. Else... I fear that I will have been worked to death in the mine,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“You...” Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law sighed.

“Lingtong, it is not that I am trying to lecture you, but you are, no matter what, Lord Clan Chief's biological son. Can't you show some future prospects?”

“Say, why did you dress yourself up as a commoner and then run out? What if something were to have really happened to you?”

“For the sake of saving you, your older sister went against the opposition from Lord Clan Chief and the various elders to personally lead a group of people to search for you.”

“Perhaps you might be fine after returning. However, your older sister will have to undergo punishment upon her return,” When mentioning this matter, Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law started to sigh repeatedly.

At that moment, both Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong realized why Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law was so angry. It turned out, he was worried about his wife.

His actions were actually... quite pardonable.

“Brother-in-law, I know that you're worried about my older sister. I am also worried about my older sister. But, you know very well how strong my older sister is. She is our Ancient Era's War Clan's number one genius, and possesses the cultivation of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor. She will definitely be fine,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Yes, I am reassured by your older sister's strength,” Upon mentioning the cultivation of Zhan Lingtong's older sister, his brother-in-law actually revealed a proud expression.

Zhan Lingtong was quite smart. Seeing that his brother-in-law had had a change in mood, he immediately said, “Brother-in-law, I have endured great difficulty to bring Yue'er back. This time, no matter what, I will definitely bring her to our clan. Else... I would rather leave the clan to be together with Yue'er.”

“There's nothing I can do about you. However, I can only let you all enter. As to whether or not she can stay in the clan, it will be up to Lord Clan Chief to decide,” Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law said with a sigh.

“Since that's the case, everyone, come on out,” As Chu Feng spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, the space behind him started to wiggle.

In the blink of an eye, several tens of thousands of people appeared behind Chu Feng.

“What is this?”

Witnessing such a scene, Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law and the Ancient Era's War Clan's guards all had an enormous change in expression. They were all stunned.

“Brother-in-law, they are all pitiful people. If we are to disregard them, they will only be enslaved by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. Can we shelter them?” Zhan Lingtong said.

“No, absolutely not!!!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law said in a very determined manner.

“Why not? These people here used to live in the territory of your Ancient Era’s War Clan. In other words, they are your citizens.”

“When your citizens are met with disaster, are you all planning to watch with folded arms?” Chu Feng was unable to look on anymore.

“What do you know? This place here is the place where our Ancient Era’s War Clan lives. This is a sacred land where ordinary commoners are not allowed to enter,” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law said in a determined manner.

“Sacred land? Did this sacred land manage to nurture a bunch of heartless, smug and self-righteous people like you all?”

“Although I do not know much about the Ancient Era’s War Clan, I know with certainty that you all, the later generations, have completely disgraced the Ancient Era’s War Clan,” Chu Feng mocked in a righteous manner.

“What did you say? I dare you to say it again!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law revealed a furious look.

At the same time, the guards behind him all drew their weapons. Evidently, what Chu Feng said had also enraged them.

“Humph,” Chu Feng snorted coldly. In Chu Feng’s eyes, these people were akin to a group of trash.

Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that trash like them would definitely bully the weak and fear the strong. Thus, he would not lower his head to people like them, and would instead teach them a lesson. Only by teaching them a lesson would they respect and fear him.

Thus, Chu Feng and the Ancient Era's War Clan's clansmen could be said to be in a mutually hostile situation, ready to fight at any moment. This deeply worried Zhan Lingtong.

“Milord, this is bad!”

However, right at that moment, shouts were heard from afar. Soon, a figure appeared.

It was an Ancient Era's War Clan's clansman. Furthermore, his cultivation was quite decent; he was a rank six Half Martial Ancestor. However, at that moment, he was in a very weak state.

Not only were there many fresh wounds on his body, but his flesh was also burned. It was a very shocking sight. Moreover, his aura was exceptionally weak right now.

“What is wrong? What happened? What about Lil' Ling? Where's Lil' Ling?”

Upon seeing that person, Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law, as well as the others from the Ancient Era's War Clan immediately revealed expressions of panic. One by one, they rushed toward that man.

“Milord, we encountered the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Yao Liutian. Lady Ling was captured by Yao Liutian.”

“Fortunately Lady Ling used her treasure to protect me. Else... I fear that even I would not have been able to return alive,” When mentioning this matter, that rank six Half Martial Ancestor started to shed silent tears.

“What? Lil' Ling, she, she was actually captured by Yao Liutian?” Upon hearing those words, Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law's expression immediately turned ashen.

“Big sister was actually captured?” Zhan Lingtong had a similar expression to his brother-in-law.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that the so-called Lil Ling



must be Zhan Lingtong's older sister.

She had unfortunately encountered the people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan while searching for Zhan Lingtong, and was captured by them.

"Milord, what are we to do? That Yao Liutian is a rank one Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he is someone who commits all sorts of imaginable misdeeds, and is lustful of our human race's females."

"With how beautiful Lady Ling is, for her to be captured by Yao Liutian, wouldn't it mean that she'll be...?" Someone spoke in a panic.

"Shut up! You are not allowed to say that sort of thing!" Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law spoke furiously.

"Brother-in-law, that Yao Liutian's reputation is indeed extremely bad. We cannot afford to delay this matter. We must immediately go and save big sister," Zhan Lingtong said.

"That Yao Liutian is a rank one Martial Ancestor. Even if we are all to go, we will only be throwing away our lives," Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law said.

"Are we to disregard the life and death of my older sister then? She is your wife!" Zhan Lingtong said.

"Do you think that I'm not worried about your sister? I am more worried about her than any of you. However, at times like this, we cannot make meaningless sacrifices."

"I will immediately return to the clan and report this matter to Lord Clan Chief," Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law said.

"But, will we make it in time?" Zhan Lingtong said.

"Even if we can't make it in time, there's nothing that can be done... This... this is the only way," After saying those words, Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law spoke to the man who had escaped alive,

“Do you know where Lil’ Ling and Yao Liutian are at right now?”

“I do,” That person nodded.

“Come, follow me to see Lord Clan Chief,” Zhan Lingtong’s brother in law grabbed that man. He planned to rush back into the Ancient Era’s War Clan to report this matter.

“Wait a moment,” However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

“What do you want now?” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law was still burning with fury. He immediately unleashed overwhelming killing intent upon hearing Chu Feng’s words.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored him. Instead, he turned to the man who had escaped and asked, “Are there any other experts from the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan at the place where that Yao Liutian is at right now?”

“There aren’t. He is the only Martial Ancestor level expert there. He must’ve come out to capture women,” That man replied.

“Bring me there,” Chu Feng said.

“What did you say?” At that moment, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously.

“I said to bring me there. I’ll go save her,” Chu Feng said.

## Chapter 2445 – This Sort Of Terror

---

“You’re going to save her? What makes you think you can save her?” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law asked. His eyes were burning with deep rage.

As matters stood, he had reached a point of being utterly incapable of tolerating Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said, “What’s wrong? Just because you don’t have the balls to go and save your woman, you’re refusing to allow me to go save her now?”

“You... you dare say this sort of thing to me?!” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law gnashed his teeth furiously. As a man, he felt that he had received an enormous humiliation.

“Bastard, you must be a spy from the Monstrous Clan! You will be killed!” Suddenly, Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law shouted angrily. Then, he raised the Incomplete Ancestral Armament in his hand and hacked down toward Chu Feng’s head.

He was trying to kill Chu Feng with that one attack. Furthermore, he was planning to hack Chu Feng in two.

Seeing that scene, Zhan Lingtong’s expression changed enormously. After all, his brother-in-law was a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

Although Chu Feng was very powerful and capable of easily killing a rank six Half Martial Ancestor, Zhan Lingtong still had no idea as to what Chu Feng’s cultivation was.

As for his brother-in-law, Zhan Lingtong knew very well how powerful he was. Else, his older sister would not have taken a fancy to him.

Thus, at that moment, Zhan Lingtong was uncertain as to whether or not Chu Feng would be able to safely block the attack.

As for the people from the Ancient Era's War Clan, they all revealed smiles of joy as they awaited the disaster that would befall Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had been insulting them the entire time since he had arrived. Thus, they felt very displeased with him to begin with. They were delighted that Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law would attack Chu Feng.

Furthermore, they felt that since Chu Feng was not someone from the Ancient Era's War Clan, he must be an ordinary commoner.

For ordinary commoners, how could they possibly match Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law? Thus, they felt that Chu Feng would definitely die.

Right at the moment when the Incomplete Ancestral Armament was about to strike Chu Feng's head, Chu Feng suddenly raised his hand.

"Clank!" Sparks fluttered about as energy ripples surged forth. The surrounding bystanders were all forced back repeatedly.

"How could this be?!!!"

When the crowd managed to stabilize themselves and turned to look, they were all stunned.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had actually managed to stop the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with his palm.

"Is he even a human?!"

The crowd were unable to calm themselves. They were filled with incomparable shock.

That was an Incomplete Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was being used by a rank seven Half Martial Ancestor.

How could that guy before them be able to stop the Incomplete Ancestral Armament with his hand? Exactly how powerful was he?

“Scared of going to fight against the people from the Monstrous Clan, and instead starting to showing your might to me here?”

“Unfortunately for you, your granddaddy Chu Feng is not accustomed to your shortcomings.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he waved his sleeve, and Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law was thrown to the ground with his Incomplete Ancestral Armament like a scarecrow.

“Rumble~~~”

Surging energy ripples were formed from the enormous power behind the collision. An enormous ravine appeared on the previously flat earth.

As for Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law, he was smashed deep underground. From this, it could be seen how powerful Chu Feng’s attack was.

“Milord!!!”

Witnessing that scene, the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan all started to panic. One by one, they flew toward the ravine that was still filled with thick surging dust.

The reason for that was because they had no idea whether or not their lord was still alive at that moment.

After all, Chu Feng’s attack appeared to be so fierce and ruthless.

Even Zhan Lingtong was stunned. Even though he had already experienced how fierce and ruthless Chu Feng was, he had never expected that Chu Feng would remain so fierce and ruthless against his brother-in-law.

Of course, as the person was, after all, his brother-in-law, Zhan Lingtong was worried.

“Stop being stunned. Come, follow me to save your sister.”

At the moment when Zhan Lingtong was in a daze, Chu Feng grabbed him. Then, a strong wind surged past, and Chu Feng and

Zhan Lingtong disappeared.

Together with them, the Ancient Era's War Clansman that had escaped also disappeared.

.....

The location where Zhan Lingtong's older sister was imprisoned was actually not far from the final territory of the Ancient Era's War Clan.

Being guided by that escapee, Chu Feng and Zhan Lingtong soon arrived at the place where that Yao Liutian was resting.

It was a base camp, a gold, dazzling, glorious and imposing camp.

In the past, it used to be a branch camp for the Ancient Era's War Clan. But at that moment, it was occupied by the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

"He actually chose to set up camp here. How are we supposed to find my older sister?"

Zhan Lingtong was so anxious that he teared up. Although they had arrived at that place quickly with the help of Chu Feng's secret skill, Zhan Lingtong knew that former branch camp of their Ancient Era's War Clan very well.

Each and every one of the buildings there was infused with spirit formations.

Not only were there defensive formations on them, but there were also sound-proofing and concealing formations on them.

Even if one were to increase the power of one's sight through special methods, one would still be unable to see through those spirit formations. As such, it was simply impossible for them to find his older sister.

Furthermore, that Yao Liutian was a famous lecher. He had lusted over his older sister Zhan Lingling for more than a day or two.

Perhaps he might be planning to sexually assault his older sister. If they were to delay in the slightest, his sister's innocence might be ruined.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, "Found her."

"Found her?!" Zhan Lingtong and that injured War Clansman both revealed astonished expressions.

"Is your sister wearing silver armor with a head of black hair in a ponytail tied with a silver band?" Chu Feng turned to ask Zhan Lingtong.

"Right, right, right. That is my sister," Zhan Lingtong nodded repeatedly. He also revealed even greater astonishment in his eyes. Originally, he had been skeptical. However, after hearing what Chu Feng said, he was certain that Chu Feng had discovered his sister.

"Rest assured, your sister has only suffered some minor injuries right now. It is nothing major. Furthermore... as of now, she is still safe."

"However, that Monstrous Clan's animal is conspiring to attack. If I do not act now, I fear that your sister's innocence will be ruined," Chu Feng said.

"Milord, I beg of you, please save Lady Ling."

Hearing what Chu Feng said, that War Clansman knelt in midair with a "putt." Then, he actually started to kowtow to Chu Feng.

"Even without you begging me, I would save her. Merely, the two of you do not have to get involved in this. It will do if you just stay here and wait for my return." After Chu Feng finished saying those words, lightning flashed in his eyes.

"Zzzz~~~"

The next moment, the Thunder Wings extended from Chu Feng's

back, and the Thunder Armor covered his body.

At that moment, Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank nine Half Martial Ancestor to rank two Martial Ancestor.

The Magma Emperor Sword covered with rising flames also appeared in Chu Feng's hand.

“Woosh~~~”

Then, with the Magma Emperor Sword in hand and his body covered with the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, Chu Feng streaked down from the sky toward the direction where Zhan Lingtong's older sister and that Yao Liutian were like a divine eagle capturing its prey.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

Rumbles sounded nonstop as surging energy ripples rushed into the sky.

However, that situation only persisted for a short moment before Chu Feng soared back into the sky, returning to where Zhan Lingtong and that injured War Clansman had remained.

At that moment, not only was Chu Feng completely unscathed, there was also a beautiful woman beside him. As for that woman, she was naturally Zhan Lingtong's older sister, Zhan Lingling.

At that moment, it was not only Zhan Lingtong and that injured War Clansman that had stunned expressions on their faces; even Zhan Lingtong's older sister had the same sort of stunned expression.

The reason for that was because she had discovered that she had been saved before she even knew what was going on. As for the person who had saved her, he was not someone that she knew, but rather a very handsome and foreign man.

“That is?!”

Suddenly, Zhan Lingtong's gaze changed enormously. He was



shocked to discover that Chu Feng was also holding a head in his hand. As for that head, it was actually Yao Liutian's head.

It meant that Chu Feng had already killed Yao Liutian. But, who was Yao Liutian? He was a grand, vicious and imposing rank one Martial Ancestor.

Countless people in their Ancient Era's War Clan did not dare to confront him. Even their elders that also possessed cultivations of rank one Martial Ancestor might not necessarily be able to defeat Yao Liutian.

Yet, Chu Feng had actually managed to behead Yao Liutian in such a short period of time. As such, how could he not be astonished?

“Fearless humans! You dare intrude upon our Monstrous Clan's territory?!!!”

Right at that moment, the monstrous beasts of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan discovered Chu Feng and the others. A large group of troops began to surround Chu Feng and the others from all directions.

At that moment, Zhan Lingtong subconsciously grew nervous. After all, Yao Liutian's subordinates were all extraordinary individuals.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng said, “My mood right now is not good. As such, I cannot let you all live.”

Then, Chu Feng swept his Magma Emperor Sword across the sky.

In an instant, flames raged as magma sprung forth. Blazing light burned through the sky, igniting their surroundings.

“Ahhh!!!”

In an instant, screams began to sound nonstop.

The Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's army of thousands that were approaching from all directions were all devoured by the blaze,

and died when their bodies exploded. In an instant, they were all killed by Chu Feng.

“.....”

At that moment, Zhan Lingtong and the injured War Clansman were completely stunned. It was as if they were petrified.

It was only at that moment that they truly realized how frighteningly powerful the man before them was.

Even Zhan Lingtong's older sister was looking to Chu Feng with complicated emotions in her eyes.

If one must describe her gaze, it would be the gaze of a woman who felt great adoration and admiration toward a man.

After all, the more powerful a man was, the more women would be fond of him.

## Chapter 2446 – Returning Domineeringly

---

“Big brother Chu Feng, the person I admire the most in my life is Lord Zhan Haichuan.”

“However, the person that I now admire the second most would be you.” Zhan Lingtong said to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with admiration.

“Lingtong, this person is?” Zhan Lingtong’s older sister Zhan Lingling asked in a very curious manner.

She was truly filled with curiosity toward Chu Feng. She really wanted to know who it was that had saved her from Yao Liutian.

Furthermore, he had saved her at a crucial moment.

“Big sister, this person here is big brother Chu Feng. He is an extraordinary individual; he is from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Upon hearing that name, both Zhan Lingtong’s older sister and the other injured War Clansman revealed an enormous change in expression. Both of them revealed deep shock.

What sort of place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? It was the place that everyone in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain wanted to enter.

To them, being able to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was an extravagant hope.

To put it simply, the people there had pretty much the same sort of mindset as the people of the Holy Land of Martialism had in wanting to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

To both of them, it was a sort of extravagant hope.

“Benefactor, are you really from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Zhan Lingtong’s older sister asked Chu Feng.

Although she still felt disbelief, the fact that she addressed Chu Feng as ‘benefactor’ fully showed how grateful she was toward Chu Feng.

“Don’t address me like that. I’m not that old. You can just call me Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

1

This Zhan Lingling was several hundred years old already. In terms of age, she was much older than Chu Feng.

“My apologies, I was lacking in manners. Merely, a place like the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is truly...” Zhan Lingling spoke in a slightly embarrassed manner.

“I know that this matter might be a bit hard for you to believe. However, I am not lying to you.”

“We can talk more about this on our way back. I fear that if we do not return soon, those refugees will end up suffering at your husband’s hands,” Chu Feng said.

“My husband? Refugees? What is going on here?” Zhan Lingling revealed a puzzled look.

“Big sister, this was what happened. When I was searching for Yue’er, I was unfortunately caught by people from the Monstrous Clan and sent to the mine. It is big brother Chu Feng who saved me.”

“However, the citizens of our Ancient Era’s War Clan were also captured and reduced to slaves in the mine. At that time, they begged big brother Chu Feng to save them. Seeing how pitiful they were, we decided to bring them with us.”

“However, when we returned to the clan with great difficulty, brother-in-law barred the way and refused their entrance. He said that those commoners possessed petty and low statuses, and were not qualified to set foot into the territory of our Ancient Era’s War Clan,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“He is truly becoming more and more excessive.”

“I will definitely reason with him upon my return.”

After finding out about that, Zhan Lingling did not show any trace of planning to side with her husband. Instead, she revealed an angry expression and took the lead to fly toward the direction of the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

In response, Chu Feng hurriedly followed after. Furthermore, he unleashed his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique.

After all, if he was the one leading the way, their speed would be faster.

.....

Inside the Ancient Era’s War Clan. Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law, as well as the others from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, were still present.

Merely, the humans, including Zhan Lingtong’s lover Yue’er, were all driven out of the territory of the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

Like a bunch of refugees, they stood in midair, unable to enter but unwilling to leave. They looked very pitiful.

“That bastard, I will definitely teach him a lesson!”

At that moment, Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law’s face was completely bruised up and there was still blood at the corner of his mouth.

Naturally, his injury was caused by Chu Feng. Actually... for martial cultivators of their level, such bruises were only minor injuries.

As long as he took some medicinal pellets, he would be able to completely recover from the bruises. However, he did not do so. The reason for that was because he wanted to keep those injuries.

“Milord, we have already dispatched men to request Lord Clan Chief’s presence. I believe that Lord Clan Chief will soon arrive,”

Someone said.

“Mn,” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law nodded. A strange expression was flashing in his eyes.

“Zhan Quezhi, what’s going on?”

“Where are Lingling and Lingtong right now?”

“Exactly what has happened here?”

Suddenly, an ear-piercing voice exploded in the sky.

Following that, a figure appeared out of thin air and stood before the crowd.

He was an old man. He was wearing a gold gown with a headdress.

His sword-like eyebrows appeared very imposing even without him being angry. His entire body was emitting the presence of a ruler.

Furthermore, he possessed the powerful aura of a rank four Martial Ancestor.

As for that individual, he was naturally the current Clan Chief of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong’s father.

This Lord Clan Chief had received news that his daughter had been captured by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s great sex fiend.

Furthermore, he had also received news that his son, Zhan Lingtong, was captured by a spy of the Monstrous Clan. Thus, he was burning with anxiety.

After all, his daughter and son were his beloved children.

“We pay our respects to Lord Clan Chief!!!”

Upon seeing the Lord Clan Chief, Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law and all of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen present immediately

half-kneeled in midair to show their respect.

“All of you, stand up. Do you even know what the situation is to continue to bother with this etiquette? Zhan Quezhi, exactly what happened? Quick, provide me an explanation,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Lord Clan Chief, it is all because of my incompetence, all because of my incompetence,” Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law immediately started to blame himself with an expression of grievance.

Then, he told their Lord Clan Chief of what had happened.

He was quite truthful in telling their Lord Clan Chief how Zhan Lingtong’s older sister had been captured.

However, when it came to the matter regarding Zhan Lingtong himself, what he told was completely false.

The way he spoke, Chu Feng was simply not the benefactor that had saved Zhan Lingtong.

Rather, he was the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s spy.

He declared that it was Chu Feng that had captured Zhan Lingtong and their injured War Clansman that knew where Zhan Lingling was.

He declared that they were unable to rescue Zhan Lingling because they did not know where she was.

“What utter bastards! I truly never would expected the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan to be so despicable as to disguise themselves as people of our of War Clan.”

“If I am to capture that spy, I will definitely make him suffer a fate worse than death.”

Sure enough, after Zhan Lingtong’s brother-in-law twisted the truth, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief grew extremely furious.

Practically everyone could sense his overflowing killing intent.

They could tell that their Lord Clan Chief was truly furious.

However, no one noticed that when Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law discovered that their Lord Clan Chief was truly furious, he revealed a proud smile at having succeeded in his plot.

“Father!!!”

Right at that moment, two familiar voices sounded.

When those two voices were heard, the expressions of everyone present changed.

The reason for that was because those voices were simply Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling's voices.

However, weren't the two of them captured?

“Roar~~~”

The very next moment, a dragon roar was heard, shaking the sky.

Soon, an enormous azure dragon arrived in midair. It directly passed through the Ancient Era's War Clan's grand defensive formation and entered their territory.

When they saw the azure dragon, the people of the Ancient Era's War Clan thought that it was an invasion from the Monstrous Clan, and subconsciously raised their weapons.

However, upon clearly seeing the four individuals standing atop the dragon's head, they were all stunned.

The reason for that was because those four individuals were naturally Chu Feng and the others.

“This...” In terms of being the most stunned, it would be none other than Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law.

Although he was stunned, it remained that the people standing on the dragon were his wife and his brother-in-law. As such, he



was feeling very joyous in his heart. He hurriedly walked toward his beloved wife.

“Lil’ Ling, you’re alright? This is truly great. I was worried dea...”

However, faced with her husband who was walking toward her with a deeply concerned expression on his face, Zhan Lingling did not bother to even pay attention to him. Instead, she walked past him.

“.....”

At that moment, Zhan Quezhi stood there in a stunned manner. He was completely perplexed.

As for Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong, they arrived before their father, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief.

---

---

Previous Chapter Next Chapter

1. Zhan Lingling addressed Chu Feng as you(nin, respectful form) as opposed to you (ni, casual form.) ↩

## Chapter 2447 – Telling The Truth

---

“Lord Father, why were you so alarmed?” Zhan Lingling asked.

“I’d heard that you and your younger brother were both captured by the Monstrous Clan. As such, how could I not be anxious?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“I was indeed captured by Yao Liutian. But, how could my younger brother be captured by the Monstrous Clan?” Zhan Lingling revealed a puzzled expression.

“Wasn’t that Chu Feng the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s spy? Didn’t he capture Lingtong?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief asked. As he spoke, he took a deliberate glance at Chu Feng, who was standing atop the head of the azure dragon.

After all, he knew everyone else present. The only unfamiliar face was Chu Feng. Thus, he determined with a single glance that that sole remaining individual was Chu Feng.

“Father, where did you hear that nonsense? Not only is big brother Chu Feng my savior, he is also big sister’s savior. How could he possibly be the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s spy? Look at his hand, do you see what he is holding?” Zhan Lingtong said in a very excited manner.

After all, to him, Chu Feng was truly his idol right now. As such, he would naturally not allow anyone to slander Chu Feng.

“That is?!”

After hearing what Zhan Lingtong said, the crowd realized that Chu Feng was actually holding a head.

As for that head, it was actually the head of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Martial Ancestor-level expert, Yao Liutian.

“You’ve killed Yao Liutian?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief revealed an astonished expression.

“Father, he was the one to save me from Yao Liutian. He was also the one to kill Yao Liutian. I personally witnessed it,” Before Chu Feng could answer, Zhan Lingling answered for him.

“A talent! Never would I have expected that there would be such a talent among our Ancient Era’s War Clan’s citizens. Why have I never heard of you before?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief had an ecstatic expression on his face.

After all, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief knew very well what sort of character Yao Liutian was. To be able to kill Yao Liutian, this meant that Chu Feng was very powerful.

Right now, the Ancient Era’s War Clan and the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan were battling one another. The Ancient Era’s War Clan had been slowly forced to retreat in defeat by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. As such, they were at the point when they needed talented people the most.

To discover a human that is capable of killing Yao Liutian at such a time, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief would naturally be extremely overjoyed.

“Father, you are overthinking things. Benefactor Chu Feng is not a citizen of our Ancient Era’s War Clan. Rather, I’m afraid that his origin will startle you,” Zhan Lingling said.

“Oh? What sort of origin might he have to be able to startle me? There’s no harm in mentioning it,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief had a smile on his face.

However, it was more of a joking smile. After all, the War Clan’s Ancient Domain was only so big, and only contained so many clans. Thus, no matter how extraordinary one’s origin might be, it would not be as amazing as their Ancient Era’s War Clan.

“Benefactor Chu Feng is from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zhan Lingling said.

“Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!!!”

Once those four words were said, not to mention the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief, even Zhan Quezhi and the others had an enormous change in expression.

The reason for that was because the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed an extraordinary significance to them.

It was precisely because it was so extraordinary that the great majority of the people showed that they did not believe it after a moment of shock.

"Benefactor, I am sorry to inconvenience you. However, could you please display your special abilities? Else... I fear that my father and the others will not believe that you're from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," Zhan Lingling said to Chu Feng.

"Zzzzz~::~"

Right at that moment, lightning flashed in Chu Feng's eyes. Then, his Thunder Armor covered his body, and his Thunder Wings extended out from his back.

It was a dazzling sight. It was as if Chu Feng's lightning was brightening the entire region.

However, the crowd was most astonished by Chu Feng's current cultivation.

Chu Feng had not concealed his cultivation. Rather, for the sake of displaying his strength, Chu Feng had unleashed his aura without any reservations.

A cultivation of rank two Martial Ancestor and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. This was... the strength that Chu Feng currently possessed.

"Amazing, truly amazing."

The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was convinced. The special ability that Chu Feng displayed, as well as his heaven-

defying battle power, were all not things that ordinary commoners possessed.

This was especially true for Chu Feng's lightning power. Even their Ancient Era's War Clan did not possess that power. Thus, he was certain that Chu Feng was not someone from their War Clan's Ancient Domain.

"Never would I have expected that an expert from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would come to our assistance. This is truly a blessing to our Ancient Era's War Clan."

The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was overjoyed. The way he saw it, this was simply the will of the Heavens, that it was the Heavens that was trying to help their Ancient Era's War Clan.

"But, since we're of the same side, why did you injure Quezhi?" As the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief said those words, he looked to Zhan Lingtong's brother-in-law.

According to Zhan Quezhi, Chu Feng was trying to capture Zhan Lingtong. For the sake of protecting Zhan Lingtong from being captured, he was injured by Chu Feng.

However, what sort of existence was the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief? As matters stood, he already knew that the truth was not as Zhan Quezhi had said to him earlier.

"Lord Clan Chief, I was mistaken. This is all a misunderstanding," In response, Zhan Quezhi hurriedly spoke to explain himself.

"I did not ask you. Do not interrupt," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief shut him down coldly.

Zhan Quezhi hurriedly closed his mouth. However, he had a very ugly expression on his face. Fear was flickering in his eyes.

After all, he would be truly humiliated if the truth was to be declared. He truly did not wish for the Lord Clan Chief to discover the truth.

“I’m afraid that it would not be trustworthy for me to tell you why I beat him. Why not ask your clansmen why I beat him?” Chu Feng said.

Once Chu Feng said those words, Zhan Quezhi revealed a joyous expression. After all, everyone from the Ancient Era’s War Clan was on his side.

He believed that none of his fellow clansmen would attack him for the sake of an outsider like Chu Feng.

Perhaps the truth would be buried just like this.

Sure enough, it was as Zhan Quezhi expected, none of the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan wanted to offend him. In fact, none of them dared to offend him.

Thus, at that moment, all of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s men lowered their heads. None of them wanted to tell the truth of what had happened back then.

“Heh...” Witnessing that scene, Zhan Quezhi revealed a pleased expression. In fact, he even cast a provocative glance at Chu Feng.

He seemed to be stating with his gaze ‘So what if you’re from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? This is my territory here.’

‘You want to fight with me? You’re not qualified at all.’

“Father, I know about what happened back then. I can tell you what happened,” Right at that moment, Zhan Lingtong stood forth.

“This!!!”

When Zhan Quezhi saw that his expression immediately changed. The complacency he had displayed earlier disappeared in an instant. At that moment, his expression was uglier than someone who had eaten dog feces.

He never expected that the person to betray him at such a time would be his wife’s younger brother, his own brother-in-law.

“Very well, tell me what happened,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief nodded.

“Earlier, big brother Chu Feng and I rescued a lot of our clan’s citizens on our way back. Originally, I planned to bring them into our clan to offer them temporary shelter.”

“However, brother-in-law was against it the entire time. In fact, he even tried to attack big brother Chu Feng because of that. Fortunately, I tried my best to stop them. Else, with the strength that big brother Chu Feng possesses, it is obvious what would happen if they were to truly fight,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Lingtong, what sort of nonsense are you spouting?”

Hearing till that point, Zhan Quezhi’s expression had already turned deathly white from fury. He truly never expected that his own brother-in-law would speak for an outsider, speak for that Chu Feng, at such a crucial time.

He spoke because he wanted his brother-in-law to stop while he could. He didn’t want Zhan Lingtong to continue.

“Brother-in-law, I am merely telling the truth,” However, Zhan Lingtong did not have the slightest intention of stopping.

“Lingtong, you...” Zhan Quezhi was so furious that he felt as if he was about to vomit blood.

“You shut up!” Right at that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief shouted once again.

This time around, even though Zhan Quezhi was very unreconciled, he had no choice but to shut his mouth again. The reason for that was because he was able to tell that their Lord Clan Chief was truly angered.

Merely, he truly could not understand why his own brother-in-law would be helping Chu Feng.

That said, even though Zhang Quezhi started to panic, he had not

become extremely panicky.

The way he saw it, even if Zhan Lingtong were to help Chu Feng, it would still only be words spoken by a single person.

As long as the others present did not testify against him, he would still be able to argue that such a thing had never happened.

Furthermore, he was confident that the others would not testify against him.

After all, the remaining clansmen did not dare to go against him.

As for his wife, she had always been very affectionate toward him.

As such, he felt that she would also not speak on behalf of an outsider.



## Chapter 2448 – Presumptuous Request

---

“As for what happened later, brother-in-law grew even more excessive. After finding out that big sister was captured, he did not immediately set out to save her. Rather, he wanted to return to the clan and request your appearance.”

“However, there is still quite a far distance between here and our clan’s headquarters. We were all afraid that we would not be able to make it in time.”

“At that time, big brother Chu Feng said that he would go and save big sister.”

“However, not only was brother-in-law against it, he also declared big brother Chu Feng to be a spy and attacked big brother Chu Feng.”

“Big brother Chu Feng was forced without any other option, and ended up injuring brother-in-law. However, big brother Chu Feng was truly lenient already.”

“Else, with the strength that big brother Chu Feng possesses, even Yao Liutian was beheaded by him. As such, how could brother-in-law only suffer a bruise?” Zhan Lingtong explained. He was looking at his brother-in-law with a gaze filled with disdain.

Perhaps it might be because he knew his brother-in-law very well, but Zhan Lingtong had managed to guess that his brother-in-law must’ve already twisted the truth. That was why he was trying to tell the truth for Chu Feng.

After hearing what Zhan Lingtong said, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief’s expression turned very ugly. Zhan Quezhi was his son-in-law, and he had treated him very well.

However, never did he expect that Zhan Quezhi would be such a coward at a crucial moment. At that moment, he was extremely disappointed with Zhan Quezhi.

Zhan Quezhi was able to discern that the situation was amiss from the expression on the Clan Chief's face. Thus, he summoned up his courage and said, "Lingtong, even if I refused to allow you to bring Yue'er into the clan, there shouldn't be a need for you to slander me like this, no?"

"Lil' Ling is my wife. After finding out that she was captured, I was more worried than anyone else. How could I do something like what you have said?"

After refuting what Zhan Lingtong said, Zhan Quezhi revealed a very wronged expression as he looked to their Clan Chief and his wife, "Lord Clan Chief, please do not believe what Lingtong said. Lil' Ling, you must not believe his lies."

"Father, big sister, all the things I have said are true. If you do not trust me, you can ask him," Zhan Lingtong pointed to their clansman that had returned with injuries and then brought Chu Feng to rescue Zhan Lingling.

Seeing that Zhan Lingtong was trying to have a witness testify against him, Zhan Quezhi hurriedly signaled with his eyes while also secretly sending a voice transmission to threaten that man to not tell the truth.

In that sort of situation, that War Clansman also revealed a very difficult expression. After all, Zhan Quezhi's status was no small matter. In the Ancient Era's War Clan, people like himself who lacked status did not dare to offend Zhan Quezhi.

"Exactly what happened? Speak immediately," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief urged that clansman.

"Putt~~~"

After a moment of hesitation, that War Clan's Clansman actually knelt in midair.

He declared, "Lord Clan Chief, Lady Ling, this matter is extremely important. As such, this lowly one does not dare to lie.

However, the truth is as Young Master Lingtong said.”

“You... even you dare to frame me?! Exactly what sort of benefits did that Chu Feng give you?!”

Seeing that, Zhan Quezhi was immediately furious. He pulled out his Incomplete Ancestral Armament and wanted to attack that man.

“Zhan Quezhi, you damned bastard!!!”

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief was also furious. He cast his eyes burning with rage at Zhan Quezhi.

It was not only their Clan Chief, even Zhan Lingling cast the same sort of rage-filled gaze at Zhan Quezhi.

At that moment, Zhan Quezhi stood stunned. He had no idea what to do.

“Paa~~~”

Suddenly, a sharp echo was heard. The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief had actually unleashed a slap onto Zhan Quezhi’s face from afar.

“Wuuahh~~~”

A scream was heard, and Zhan Quezhi started to, like a kite with its string cut, spin around in the sky nonstop. He was actually slapped tens of thousands of meters away.

However, immediately after he stabilized himself, Zhan Quezhi flew right back and knelt in midair.

At that moment, blood covered his face. Half of his face had been deformed by the slap. Furthermore, his aura was very weak.

Not only had Zhan Quezhi received external injuries, he had also received internal injuries. From this, it could be seen that even though the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief was lenient, his attack was still quite strong.

However, Zhan Quezhi did not dare to utter the slightest bit of complaint. Rather, while shedding tears, he lamented, “Lord Clan Chief, I was indeed in the wrong back then. However, my considerations were not mistaken either.”

“You know very well how strong we are. We would not have been a match for that Yao Liutian. Even if we were to go try to save Lil’ Ling, we would only have been throwing our lives away.”

“Not only that, we would also have delayed the rescue. At that time, finding you was indeed the most rational decision.”

“As for me declaring that Chu Feng to be the Monstrous Clan’s spy, it was totally a misunderstanding.”

“Please think about it, he is an unfamiliar person. Yet, he wanted to bring with him the only person who knew where Lil’ Ling was with talk about saving her. How could I not suspect him?”

“Lord Clan Chief, although I was wrong, I was actually not mistaken in my judgment.”

After Zhan Quezhi said those words, Zhan Lingling’s gaze was moved slightly. The anger in her eyes had lessened by a lot.

After all, what Zhan Quezhi said was indeed reasonable.

However, the anger of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief did not decrease.

He pointed at Zhan Quezhi and said, “I am not blaming you because you did not rush to save Ling’er immediately.”

“Rather, it is because you tried to invert right and wrong, tried to twist the truth and slander another. This means that your moral quality is bad.”

“From today on, you are to be removed from all your posts. Go and properly reflect upon your mistakes. Furthermore, immediately apologize to Chu Feng for me. Remember this, if it wasn’t for him today, it was very possible that your wife would’ve

already met with an unfortunate encounter.”

The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief spoke in a very furious manner.

“Lil’ Ling, I...” Zhan Quezhi looked to Zhan Lingling. He wanted his wife to plead for him.

“Why are you looking at me? Are you not supposed to apologize to Chu Feng?” Zhan Lingling said with an angry expression on her face.

Zhan Quezhi’s expression turned dejected. He had never expected that his affectionate wife who would help him out even if he was to have made mistakes would actually helping an outsider at that moment.

Although he was feeling extremely unreconciled, Zhan Quezhi did not dare to go against the orders from the Clan Chief. Thus, in an insincere manner, he apologized to Chu Feng.

Then, at Chu Feng’s request, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief agreed to take Yue’er and the other commoners into their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s final territory.

Furthermore, for the sake of welcoming Chu Feng and thanking him for saving his daughter, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief ordered a banquet to be held.

However, as they were in times of war and the morale of the Ancient Era’s War Clan was low from the constant retreats, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief did not make the banquet too extravagant.

Other than culinary delicacies and fine wines, he did not prepare any singing or dancing. That said, he ordered all of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s management elders over.

At the banquet, the management elders started to size Chu Feng up nonstop. It was as if Chu Feng was simply not a human at all.

After all, Chu Feng was from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

To them, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was an extremely remarkable place.

Furthermore, they had heard of the news of Chu Feng killing Yao Liutian. Adding on the fact that Chu Feng was this young, they started to have a whole new level of respect toward Chu Feng and did not dare to show any negligence.

Even for the elders that had lived for over ten thousand years, they would still be extremely respectful when speaking with Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, not only have you saved my son, you’ve also saved my daughter. I truly do not know how I am supposed to repay you for this kindness.”

“How about this: if there’s anything you want, as long as our Ancient Era’s War Clan is capable of giving it to you, I will agree to anything,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said to Chu Feng.

“Lord Clan Chief, are you serious about that?” Chu Feng asked.

“As long as we have it, I will agree to anything,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said in a frank and straightforward manner.

“That’s right. Young Hero Chu Feng, please don’t hold back. If you have anything you want, go ahead and tell us.”

The elders, as well as Zhan Lingtong’s elder brothers and sisters, all echoed what the Clan Chief said.

To them, Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling were the two individuals with the purest bloodline in their Ancient Era’s War Clan. To the Ancient Era’s War Clan, Chu Feng’s rescue of them was an enormous favor.

“Since that’s the case, I will speak my mind,” For the sake of showing his sincerity, Chu Feng stood up.

After he ran his gaze over the crowd, he said, “I, Chu Feng, have always admired senior Zhan Haichuan. Thus, for me to be able to be fortunate enough to arrive at the Ancient Era’s War Clan today, I have a presumptuous request.”

“I wish to go and visit the place where senior Zhan Haichuan trained. If possible, I wish to be able to train there for some time.”

Using this opportunity, Chu Feng told them what he wanted the most. That was, he wanted to train at the place where Zhan Haichuan comprehended his way of martial cultivation.

However, after Chu Feng finished saying those words, there was no reply. In addition to that, Chu Feng saw that everyone present had difficult expressions on their faces.

# Chapter 2449 – Emergence Of The War Sword

---

“Truth be told, we are merely a branch family of the Ancient Era’s War Clan. We do not know much about the past of the Ancient Era’s War Clan.”

“Thus, to us, that great senior of ours who first arrived in this place and taught us the way of martial cultivation is our Ancestor.”

“Our Ancestor was very powerful. Not only did he establish this War Clan’s Ancient Domain, he also used his last bit of power to create a Martial Comprehension Ground.”

“After he finished constructing this place for martial cultivation, our Lord Ancestor passed away, having exhausted all of his energy.”

“Thus, to our Ancient Era’s War Clan, that Martial Comprehension Ground is extremely important.”

“As for Lord Zhan Haichuan, the place where he trained back then was also that Martial Comprehension Ground.”

“Because of that, it is a place where only the people of our War Clan are allowed to enter.”

“As such, we are truly sorry. We fear that we will not be able to satisfy Young Hero Chu Feng’s desire.”

After being silent for a long time, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief spoke. He had a very apologetic expression on his face when he said those words.

His reaction was understandable. After all, he had made such extravagant claims earlier. And now, after Chu Feng gave his request, he was actually unable to satisfy it. As such, he would naturally feel very embarrassed.

“Father, Lord Ancestor indeed spent a great amount of effort to



create the Martial Comprehension Ground. In fact, he even lessened his own lifespan.”

“But, Lord Ancestor never said that only the people of our Ancient Era’s War Clan are allowed to use that Martial Comprehension Ground.”

“We were the ones who decided that the Martial Comprehension Ground can only be used by the people of our clan. It is not Lord Ancestor who decided that.”

“Thus, I feel that it would be fine for Chu Feng to train in the Martial Comprehension Ground,” Zhan Lingling said.

Hearing those words, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief revealed an angry expression. He wanted to lash out at his daughter.

“Lord Clan Chief, Young Hero Chu Feng has shown grace to our Ancient Era’s War Clan. You also declared earlier that as long as it was something that our Ancient Era’s War Clan was capable of, we would satisfy any demand that he might make.”

“As for the Martial Comprehension Ground, it is evidently a place that we can allow him to enter. If we are to refuse his request now, wouldn’t it mean that we would have gone back on our word?” Right at that moment, a very old elder got up and started to urge their Clan Chief.

“Senior, you...”

After hearing the old man speak, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief revealed a surprised expression.

Actually, he had wanted to agree to Chu Feng’s request. Merely, their Ancient Era’s War Clan possessed their own rules. He had only refused Chu Feng’s request because he did not want others to say that he had broken the rules because Chu Feng had saved his son and daughter.

That was also the reason why he had wanted to lash out at his

daughter earlier.

Merely, he never expected that an elder of their Ancient Era's War Clan would also agree to have Chu Feng train in the Martial Comprehension Ground.

Furthermore, the elder who spoke was no ordinary elder.

He was a person who possessed grand status in the Ancient Era's War Clan, someone with greater seniority than even his father. In the Ancient Era's War Clan, that elder's word held great weight.

In addition to that elder, there were three more elders with grand Statuses and great seniority in the Ancient Era's War Clan.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief turned his gaze to the other three elders. He wanted to see what their opinions might be.

"The Martial Comprehension Ground is a treasure left behind by our Ancestor. However, it remains that a treasure will forever be a treasure, and inferior to one's life."

"Today, Young Hero Chu Feng saved the lives of Lingling and Lingtong. I believe Lord Clan Chief is capable of determining which among them is more important."

"Indeed. Young Hero Chu Feng only wants to enter that place to train because of his admiration for our clan's Lord Zhan Haichuan. Thus, I feel that we must allow him to enter the Martial Comprehension Ground to train. Else, it would make our Ancient Era's War Clan appear to be extremely petty, no?"

"I agree with them. Rules are dead, whereas people are alive. We cannot be hidebound by conventions."

After that, the remaining three elders with great status and seniority also voiced their positions.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was both shocked and overjoyed.

These four elders had always been people who were very hard to deal with. They were the sort of stubborn old antiques with very obstinate views.

Logically, according to their characters, they should have been making a supreme effort to refuse Chu Feng's request.

It was precisely because of that the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief initially refused Chu Feng. He assumed that the four elders would most definitely oppose him if he were to agree to Chu Feng's request.

However, to his surprise, the four elders were completely different today. Not only did they not refuse, they even urged him to reconsider.

When even the four elders agreed to Chu Feng's request, the others in the Ancient Era's War Clan would naturally not voice any objections. Naturally, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief would also not object to it anymore.

However, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief did not make an announcement right away. Rather, he swept his gaze to the others present and asked, "Everyone, what do you all think?"

"We agree with what Lord Elders have said. Lord Clan Chief, let's allow Young Hero Chu Feng to enter the Martial Comprehension Ground."

.....

It was as the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief had anticipated, none of the remaining people spoke against the decision to allow Chu Feng to enter the Martial Comprehension Ground.

"Since everyone feels this way, then our Ancient Era's War Clan will make an exception for Young Hero Chu Feng and satisfy this cherished desire of his," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief said.

“Thank you everyone,” Chu Feng clasped his fist at the crowd.

Although Chu Feng had a calm expression on his face right now, he was incomparably excited in his heart.

At that moment, he no longer lacked cultivation resources. On the contrary, the Natural Energies contained in his dantian were craving to reach a breakthrough.

What Chu Feng needed right now was comprehension toward the way of Martial Cultivation so that he could reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

In other words, what Chu Feng needed right now was precisely something like the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Martial Comprehension Ground.

“Lord Clan Chief, this is bad!!!”

Right at that moment, an elder wearing a black cloak rushed over hurriedly from the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

Two individuals were following him. They were also wearing black cloaks.

Their cultivations were all quite strong; they were all Martial Ancestors.

“What’s happened?” Upon seeing those three individuals, all of the people present stood up anxiously.

The reason for that was because those three individuals were no ordinary elders. Rather, they were all tasked with a very important mission.

Normally, the three of them would never show themselves. However, as long as they showed themselves, it meant that something major had happened. This was even more so with how panicky the three of them were right now.

“Lord Clan Chief, the Ancient Era’s War Sword is moving,” That elder said.

“Moving?” Hearing those words, the gazes of all of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen present changed. All sorts of complicated expressions appeared in their eyes.

As members of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, they knew very well what the Ancient Era’s War Sword was.

It was the strongest of the Three Great Secret Skills that their Ancestor had left for them.

In all these years, the Ancient Era’s War Sword had been still.

Even the strongest person to have appeared in their Ancient Era’s War Clan since the death of their Ancestor, Zhan Haichuan, was unable to even awaken the Ancient Era’s War Sword even though he had managed to conquer the second strongest Ancient Era’s War Spear.

Today, the Ancient Era’s War Sword actually started to move. How could they not be alarmed by it?

“Let’s go,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief soared into the sky. He planned to investigate what was happening.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, an ear-piercing sound was heard.

The sunny and cloudless sky started to turn dark.

The earth covered with a layer of spirit formations also started to violently tremble.

Every inch of space itself was affected by it. Regardless of their cultivation, regardless of whether they were standing in the sky or on the ground, no one was able to stand firmly.

Following the shaking space, they too started to sway left and right.

Soon, dazzling golden light shone from the direction where the sound originated.

Turning to look, the crowd discovered that an enormous sword was flying toward them.

That sword was a thousand meters long and the sword's body was golden in color. As it flew over, it hid the sky and covered the earth.

“That is?!!!”

Upon seeing that sword, everyone from the Ancient Era's War Clan was stunned. They started to sweat cold bullets.

They had managed to recognize with a single glance that the incoming sword was their Ancient Era's War Clan's strongest secret skill, the Ancient Era's War Sword.

“Clank~~~!!!”

With incomparable might, the Ancient Era's War Sword rapidly approached.

In the end, it stopped above the crowd like a god overlooking mortals.

# Chapter 2450 – Going Against One’s Master; Rebellion

---

The golden war sword stood horizontally in the sky, covering it and shadowing the earth.

Like a god, the sword overlooked the beings below. It emitted an overwhelming and unparalleled aura.

“This is the Ancient Era’s War Sword, the secret skill created by the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s ancestor?”

“What a powerful aura. Secret skills... there really are differences in strength between them.”

After sensing the aura of the Ancient Era’s War Sword, great waves emerged in Chu Feng’s heart.

Although Chu Feng had felt overwhelming power from the Four Symbols Secret Skills and the Five Elements Secret Skills when he had first encountered them, if Chu Feng were to encounter the Four Symbols Secret Skills or the Five Elements Secret Skills with his current cultivation, he would definitely be able to easily subdue them.

After all, the current Chu Feng was already a peak Half Martial Ancestor. If he were to be in the Holy Land of Martialism with his cultivation, he would most definitely be an unparalleled individual capable of covering the sky with his hand.

However, even with his current level of cultivation, Chu Feng felt extremely tiny when underneath the Ancient Era’s War Sword; he was unable to feel his strength at all.

If the Ancient Era’s War Sword above Chu Feng’s head was a mountain, then the current Chu Feng would be an ant. The disparity in strength between them was simply akin to the disparity between heaven and earth, unable to be discussed alongside one another.

This Ancient Era's War Sword was simply too powerful. Not to mention in the War Clan's Ancient Domain, it would be incomparable even in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“We, descendants of the Ancient Era's War Clan, pay our respects to Lord War Sword!!!”

Right at that moment, led by the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief and the four grand elders, all of the grand characters present knelt onto the ground.

Following them, the rest of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen present also knelt.

There were also people that had rushed over due to the commotion, and upon seeing that scene, they too knelt on the ground.

Simply none of the people in the Ancient Era's War Clan considered the Ancient Era's War Sword as a secret skill.

Rather, it appeared more like they considered the Ancient Era's War Sword their ancestor, a sort of relic. No one dared to show any trace of disrespect toward the Ancient Era's War Sword.

Respect and reverence toward the Ancient Era's War Sword filled the everyone's heart.

At the same time, they were also joyous.

“A bunch of trash. You all are a disgrace to the Ancient Era's War Clan.”

Right at that moment, an extremely imposing voice sounded from the Ancient Era's War Sword.

That voice was extremely stunning. Not only did it shake the air, but it also shook the hearts and souls of the crowd.

Upon hearing that voice, many of the War Clansmen started to frown. They revealed extremely scared expressions. One by one, they lowered their heads and did not dare to raise them again.



“Lord War Sword, we are indeed incompetent. We were actually beaten back continuously by the Monstrous Clan. Right now, we have lost all of our territories. Even this final territory of ours is facing imminent danger.”

“However, with Lord War Sword here, our Ancient Era’s War Clan will definitely be able to exterminate the Monstrous Clan,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief thought that the Ancient Era’s War Sword was reprimanding them because they were losing in the battle against the Monstrous Clan.

“Not only were you all beaten to such a state by that bunch of trash from the Monstrous Clan, but now you all actually want me to help you? You all are truly useless.”

“You are not qualified to be the descendants of the Ancient Era’s War Clan. Your continued existence will only serve to bring humiliation to the Ancient Era’s War Clan. Today... I will get rid of all you trash on behalf of the Ancient Era’s War Clan so that you do not bring humiliation to the Ancient Era’s War Clan after leaving this place in the future.”

Once the Ancient Era’s War Sword said those words, overwhelming killing intent immediately filled the entire Ancient Era’s War Clan.

Not to mention the people directly underneath the Ancient Era’s War Sword, everyone in the Ancient Era’s War Clan felt that frightening killing intent.

“This secret skill is actually planning to exterminate the Ancient Era’s War Clan? Is this not going against its master? Is this not a rebellion?”

“This is truly getting a little interesting,” At that moment, even Her Lady Queen revealed a surprised expression. However, she appeared to be more like someone who was enjoying a show. she was in very high spirits.

To Her Lady Queen, a secret skill would remain a secret skill. Regardless of the enormous power a secret skill might have, it would still remain an instrument for others to use.

And now, the Ancient Era's War Sword actually wanted to eliminate everyone from the Ancient Era's War Clan. To Her Lady Queen, this sort of reaction was no different from a rebellion against one's master.

“Lord Clan Chief, this... this...”

At that moment, everyone in the Ancient Era's War Clan started to panic. One by one, they turned their gazes to their Lord Clan Chief.

They had originally thought that the Ancient Era's War Sword would assist them in taking care of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan after waking up. Never did they expect that it would instead want to kill them.

This was simply the complete opposite of what they thought would happen. Overwhelmed with panic, they had no idea what to do. As such, they could only entrust their final hopes with their Clan Chief.

“Lord War Sword, you have not shown any sign of movement for all these years. For you to come out today, did you really do so just for the sake of eliminating us?”

“If we are to be eliminated, this War Clan's Ancient Domain will become the Monstrous Clan's world. Wouldn't you have helped the Monstrous Clan then?” The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief asked.

There was not the slightest trace of anger in his tone. On the contrary, only confusion, irreconciliation and absolute humility were present.

“I have no heart to concern myself with the battle between you all and the Monstrous Clan. However, the Martial Comprehension

Ground is what Zhan Aoxue left for you all. Yet, right now... you all, for the sake of flattering someone, were planning to allow an outsider to use it. Tell me, do you all still have any dignity?" The Ancient Era's War Sword said.

At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization. It turned out that the reason the Ancient Era's War Sword had moved and wanted to eliminate their Ancient Era's War Clan was not because of their incompetence, but rather because they wanted to allow Chu Feng to train in the Martial Comprehension Ground.

The people of the Ancient Era's War Clan were left speechless by this. After all, it was the truth.

"I am indeed in the wrong with this. However, Lord Ancestor did not explicitly state that we could not allow outsiders to use the Martial Comprehension Ground."

"Furthermore, Young Hero Chu Feng has helped us. As such, we wanted to repay him. That is the reason why we decided to allow him to train in the Martial Comprehension Ground. I hope that Lord War Sword will be willing to be lenient and give us an opportunity to reform ourselves."

"After all, no matter how incompetent we might be, we are still descendants of the Ancient Era's War Clan."

The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief spoke honestly. His tone was very humble. After he finished saying those words, he started kowtowing.

"You dare quibble with me? Truly not even death can wipe away your crimes."

However, the Ancient Era's War Sword was simply deaf to the humble words. At that moment, the killing intent it emitted grew even stronger.

It was as if all the people of the Ancient Era's War Clan would die the very next moment.

“Lord War Sword, we know our wrongs!”

“Lord War Sword, please spare us!”

.....

At that moment, the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, including their clan chief and elders, all started to beg for forgiveness.

None of them wanted to die. Faced with certain death, they made their final struggle.

“Wuuahh!!!”

Suddenly, a powerful aura started to shroud them. It covered the bodies of all of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen.

Like dying dogs, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were forced ruthlessly to the ground and were unable to move in the slightest. At that moment, they were unable to even speak.

Many people started to shed sorrowful tears of irreconciliation.

It was truly a tragic sight all around.

However, Chu Feng was unable to feel that oppressive might. It turned out that that oppressive might was only aimed at the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s clansmen.

That Ancient Era’s War Sword was only planning to kill the Ancient Era’s War Clans men, and did not have the intention to attack Chu Feng.

“Incompetent bunch, your deaths cannot be pitied.”

That Ancient Era’s War Sword spoke again. This time around, its voice contained killing intent capable of causing one to feel despair.

It was planning to attack and kill all of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s men within the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

“Wait a moment.”

However, right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard. Like a sudden clap of thunder, it exploded at that moment of despair.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was the one who had spoken.

# Chapter 2451 – I Will Shoulder The Responsibility

---

“Mn?”

Once Chu Feng spoke, the Ancient Era’s War Sword immediately let out an annoyed snort.

At the same time, Chu Feng felt that there seemed to be an invisible gaze being cast onto him.

Although the gaze was invisible, it was incomparably cold. Chu Feng felt as if he had been thrown into a bitter cold region as the hair on his body instantly stood erect.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still managed to raise his head toward the Ancient Era’s War Sword in a manner that was neither servile nor overbearing.

In a very calm manner, Chu Feng said, “Senior, since this matter was caused by me, please allow me to take responsibility for it. There is simply no need for you to kill the seniors of the Ancient Era’s War Clan. If you really want to kill someone, you should be killing me.”

“Chu Feng, have you gone insane? This matter does not concern you, why must you throw your life away for this?”

Seeing that Chu Feng was actually planning to throw his life away for the people of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, Her Lady Queen who was originally sitting cross-legged in Chu Feng’s world spirit space spoke.

Upon hearing those words, the expressions of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen also changed. Although they were unable to raise their heads, and could not see the expression Chu Feng had right now, they were able to hear him.

They had truly heard that Chu Feng was planning to die for

them.

“You wish to die on their behalf?” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

“Chu Feng, immediately take back what you said earlier. You’re completely unrelated to them, how could you throw away your life for them?”

Before Chu Feng could answer, Her Lady Queen spoke out against it again.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored Her Lady Queen.

Instead, he looked to the Ancient Era’s War Sword and said, “This matter was caused by me. It is unrelated to them. As such, I am willing to die on their behalf.”

“Merely, I have a world spirit in my body. This matter is also unrelated to her. Senior, with how overwhelmingly powerful you are, you most likely possess the means to kill me without killing her. Thus, I hope that senior will kill only me and spare her.”

“Of course. I can sever your relationship with her. I’ll kill only you and have her return to her world,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

“Since that’s the case, senior, please go ahead,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“You really do not fear death?” The Ancient Era’s War Sword asked. At that moment, there was an evident change in the tone with which the Ancient Era’s War Sword spoke to Chu Feng.

It was no longer high and aloof like before. This time around, it was filled with curiosity toward Chu Feng.

“I am afraid of death. Who in this world would not be afraid of death? However, even if I am afraid of death, I cannot have these people die because of me.”

“As a man, there are some responsibilities that one should

shoulder. Else... one will not be qualified to be a man,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. I admire your courage. Compared to this trash, you are much stronger.”

“Thus, I will give you another opportunity. Consider it properly,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

Chu Feng was about to reply when a voice filled with concern, anger and various other complicated emotions exploded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“Chu Feng, shut up immediately! You don’t have to die, why do you want to die for them?!”

“Think about your father, think about your mother, do you not feel it to be pitiful if you are to die here like this?”

“Are you not letting down your father who is trapped in the Lower Realm?”

“Are you not letting down your mother who intruded into the Asura Spirit World without hesitation to seal me in your body?”

It was Her Lady Queen. At that moment, Her Lady Queen was shouting and roaring. Anger filled her beautiful face.

Very rarely did she ever act this way. However, she did so then. The reason for that was all because she did not want Chu Feng to die in vain like that.

To her, this was simply too unworthy.

“No, I would’ve let them down. If I am to die here today, I will naturally be letting my parents down.”

“But... it’s impossible for me to allow these people to die because of me.”

“Furthermore, there’s also a very important aspect. Milady Queen, I feel that this might be a show,” Chu Feng said.



“Show? What show?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It is a show that the Ancient Era’s War Sword has deliberately put on for me,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re saying that the Ancient Era’s War Sword is not really planning to kill the people of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, and is instead trying to see if you will bravely step forward for them?” Her Lady Queen was very smart. She immediately realized what Chu Feng meant.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng said.

“Now that you mention it, there is indeed such a possibility,” Her Lady Queen had only been concerned with enjoying the show earlier, and had not bothered to think much about it.

When she had heard what Chu Feng said, she discovered, upon thinking about it, that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable. There were indeed a lot of flaws in the Ancient Era’s War Sword’s actions.

Perhaps it might really be a show.

If it were to be a show, it would be a good thing.

The reason for that was because that show might very well be a test for Chu Feng. In short, if it was a show, then it would mean that the Ancient Era’s War Sword had taken a fancy to Chu Feng.

Merely, it was planning to test Chu Feng’s moral character.

“If this really is a show, what will happen if you do not step forward bravely?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“If I do not step forward bravely, it is likely that no one from the Ancient Era’s War Clan will die. Instead, the person who would die in the end would be me,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s true. But, if this is not a show, wouldn’t it mean that you would’ve thrown your life away in vain?” Her Lady Queen was still worried.

“I feel that if it truly plans to kill the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, I will definitely be killed alongside them,” Chu Feng said.

“Why’s that?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“If it truly plans to kill all of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen here, it would mean that it will have done so because it possesses deep sentiments toward the Ancient Era’s War Clan.”

“After it kills the people of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, if I am to survive, it would mean that everything here would be mine to keep.”

“Say, do you think that it will allow me, an outsider, to inherit everything from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

“Now that you mention it, why didn’t I think of it earlier?” Her Lady Queen came to a sudden realization. She realized that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable.

“My Eggy was only concerned about my safety. Naturally you would’ve neglected these things. Else, with how smart you are, you would definitely have been able to think of it.”

“As they say, love will make one stupid. Right now, I have truly managed to experience it,” Chu Feng said in an embarrassed manner.

“Mn, that is indeed the case. I had neglected it... wait a moment... you said love is what?”

“Damn you! Chu Feng, you actually dared to seize this opportunity to take advantage of this Queen? Do you believe that this Queen will bite you to death?” Her Lady Queen pouted her little mouth angrily and began to shake her fist in the world spirit space. It was truly adorable.

“Chu Feng, have you finished thinking it over?” Right at that moment, that Ancient Era’s War Sword’s urging voice was heard.

“I’ve already decided. Allow me to shoulder this responsibility,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, since you’ve decided, I will satisfy you,” Right after the Ancient Era’s War Sword said those words, the oppressive might and killing intent that enveloped the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen disappeared instantly.

At that moment, the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan finally regained their freedom. They stood back up and raised their heads.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, you!!!”

After they regained their freedom, they all revealed worried expressions on their faces.

The reason for that was because they were shocked to discover that the oppressive might and killing intent covering their bodies previously had all gathered on Chu Feng now.

At that moment, Chu Feng was actually faced with all of the power that had enveloped all of them earlier.

Such power was incomparably berserk. It caused Chu Feng’s hair and clothes to flutter violently.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. Furthermore, he was not lying on his stomach in a sorry manner like the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen did earlier.

Although the Ancient Era’s War Sword was planning to kill Chu Feng, it had given Chu Feng this final honor.

## Chapter 2452 – Life And Death Gamble

---

“Lord Father, this matter is unrelated to Chu Feng. We cannot let him die because of our Ancient Era’s War Clan.”

“That’s right. Father, please think of something.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was about to die, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong both started to plead with their father.

As for the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief, he had a very complicated expression on his face. He wanted to say something, but then hesitated to do so. In the end, he did not say anything.

“Buzz~~~”

However, the very next moment, the Ancient Era’s War Sword suddenly moved. It turned into a dazzling golden ray that shot toward Chu Feng.

At that moment, everyone felt that Chu Feng was going to die. After all, the might of the Ancient Era’s War Sword was too frightening.

However, after the golden ray enveloped Chu Feng, they were shocked to discover that Chu Feng had not died, that they were still able to sense Chu Feng’s aura.

“What’s going on?” The Ancient Era’s War Clansmen all revealed puzzled expressions.

“It didn’t kill you, have you succeeded?” Her Lady Queen was pleasantly surprised.

“I’m afraid that I haven’t succeeded yet. The killing intent is still enveloping me,” Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was much more calm. It was as if he had already seen through life and death.

In fact, it was not that he had seen through life and death. Rather, he knew very well that his life and death was not up to him

to decide at the moment.

Besides, Chu Feng was quite confident in his guess. Even though the conclusion had not yet been reached, he still felt that he should be able to survive.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the golden ray started to shrink and shrouded Chu Feng’s entire body.

It had covered Chu Feng like golden armor.

At that moment, Chu Feng was emitting light even more dazzling than that of the sun.

“That is?” The Ancient Era’s War Clansmen grew even more puzzled.

“Chu Feng, I am fond of someone loyal and affectionate like you.”

“Today, I will give you a chance. I will set up a formation. There are nine hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords in the formation.”

“Among them is a Life Sword and a Death Sword.”

“The Death Sword will continue to chase after you to kill you. Its speed will gradually increase. As long as it catches up to you, you will undoubtedly be killed.”

“Thus, you must capture the Life Sword before the Death Sword catches up to you,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

“What the hell! To find a Life Sword among nine hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords?!”

“The chance for survival is simply too low, no?!” Her Lady Queen was furious.

As for the people from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, they too shook their heads in succession.

Although the Ancient Era's War Sword had indeed given Chu Feng an opportunity to live, they all felt that his chance of survival was simply too small.

However, when the next sentence was spoken by the Ancient Era's War Sword, everyone was greatly shocked.

"If you are capable of capturing the Life Sword, I will be yours to use," The Ancient Era's War Sword said.

"What?" Hearing those words, the expressions of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen changed enormously.

The Ancient Era's War Sword was their Ancient Era's War Clan's strongest secret skill.

Throughout the many years, there had never been anyone capable of awakening it. And now, Chu Feng actually managed to receive an opportunity to obtain it.

At that moment, many of the people from the Ancient Era's War Clan no longer looked to Chu Feng with gazes of sympathy. Rather, their sympathy was replaced with slight admiration and jealousy.

Although the trial was extremely terrifying, Chu Feng would be able to obtain the Ancient Era's War Sword, that extremely powerful secret skill, in addition to being able to survive if he passed the trial. When thinking about it, those Ancient Era's War Clansmen felt the trial to be simply something that one could only wish for.

If it were them who were given that trial, they too might brave the risk to attempt it.

"Chu Feng, have you made your preparations?" The Ancient Era's War Sword asked.

"Senior, I'm ready," Chu Feng said.

"Buzz~~~"

The very next moment, Chu Feng felt that the scene before him

was rapidly changing, and that his body was sinking nonstop. It was as if he was falling into a bottomless pit.

When everything returned to normal, Chu Feng discovered that he had arrived at a vast and boundless space.

In that space, his surroundings and the area above his head were pitch black. However, dazzling golden light shone from underneath Chu Feng's feet.

Golden swords were standing below him. Each and every one of them was over three meters tall.

They were arranged below him in a densely packed manner. Their numbers were so numerous that they formed a sea of swords.

“This is quite difficult,” Chu Feng revealed a difficult expression.

He was surprised to discover that all of the golden swords looked the same as the Ancient Era's War Sword.

In other words, the nine hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords all had the same appearance.

Most importantly, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were ineffective here. In fact, he was unable to use even his spirit power, as well as his various perceptive abilities.

The only thing Chu Feng was capable of using were his most primitive perceptive abilities.

However, with this, how could he find the so-called Life Sword from all these swords?

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, a dazzling sound was heard from behind Chu Feng.

Chu Feng turned around, and discovered that a golden sword had appeared behind him. It was rushing toward him with an extremely fast speed.

It was also an Ancient Era's War Sword. Merely, that Ancient Era's War Sword emitted an absolute killing sensation and power capable of obliterating Chu Feng.

Without a doubt, Chu Feng's body would explode on the spot, killing him, if he were to be struck by the sword.

“Zzzz~~~”

At that moment, how could Chu Feng dare to show any negligence? He immediately unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings as he started fleeing from the sword.

After Chu Feng's cultivation reached its peak, he unleashed the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique to assist in his escape.

In fact, Chu Feng also took out his Magma Emperor Sword. He was borrowing the power of the Incomplete Ancestral Armament to increase his speed.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that the Death Sword behind him was still rapidly gaining on him.

The difference in strength between them was too great. Chu Feng was simply unable to escape from the sword.

“Isn't this utter nonsense?! With how fast that Death Sword is, how could you possibly escape it?”

“That Ancient Era's War Sword simply never planned to give you the opportunity to search for the Life Sword. You will soon be caught up to and killed by the Death Sword.”

“This is simply a scam. It was simply toying you,” Her Lady Queen was both panicky and furious. She restlessly began to walk back and forth in the world spirit space. In fact, sparkling radiance actually emerged in her furious eyes.

Her Lady Queen felt that the speed of the Death Sword was simply too fast. Not to mention finding a Life Sword from nine



hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords, she felt that the task would be impossible to accomplish even if there were only nine hundred swords because there simply wasn't a sufficient amount of time.

“Chu Feng, what should we do? You can't just die like this.”

“That's right, the Evil God Sword! Quickly, use the Evil God Sword! You will have a chance of survival if you are to use the Evil God Sword!” Her Lady Queen shouted.

“Evil God Sword?” At that moment, Chu Feng's heart moved.

Indeed, in a situation like this, his own strength was practically useless.

However, the power the Evil God Sword contained was inestimable. If he were to use the Evil God Sword, then perhaps he would really have the opportunity to survive.

“No, I can't,” However, in the end, Chu Feng shook his head. He said, “Since this is a trial, I must rely on myself. If I am to use the Evil God Sword, even if I am to succeed, this trial will have lost all meaning.”

“Have you gone stupid? Look at the situation, is it still time to consider something like that?”

“Stop hesitating. Quickly, use the Evil God Sword. Although the Evil God Sword is very dangerous, you will still have a chance of survival if you are to use it,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No, I must rely on myself this time around,” However, Chu Feng was determined to not use the Evil God Sword.

“Step~~~”

Furthermore, as he spoke those words, Chu Feng actually released the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique under his feet and stopped in midair.

Chu Feng had actually stopped fleeing, and stood where he was

without moving.

# Chapter 2453 – Sharp Weapon For Killing

---

“Chu Feng, run away immediately. Even if you are to rely on yourself, you must not resign yourself to fate. Isn’t this simply throwing away your life?”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen was nearly driven mad with worry.

After all, with Chu Feng just standing there, the Death Sword would soon approach. With his actions, Chu Feng was simply waiting for death.

“Clank~~~”

Sure enough, the Death Sword instantly arrived. It carried with it a dazzling golden light, as well as overwhelming killing intent, as it moved to pierce through Chu Feng’s back.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when the Death Sword was about to piece into Chu Feng’s back, Chu Feng suddenly shifted his body and dodged the sword.

“You dodged it?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had dodged the sword, a trace of joy appeared in Her Lady Queen’s eyes that were filled with worry.

However, the very next moment, the joy in her eyes instantly disappeared.

The reason for that was because Her Lady Queen was surprised to discover that Chu Feng had actually extended his arm toward the Death Sword.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng grabbed the hilt of the Death Sword.

Seeing this scene, Her Lady Queen wanted to lash out at Chu

Feng.

However, right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard.

“You’ve actually managed to accomplish it.”

It was the Ancient Era’s War Sword. This was the voice of the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

Not only did Chu Feng come into contact with the Death Sword, but he had also grabbed it by the hilt. Yet, Chu Feng was actually not dead.

“I get it now. So this is actually what it is. Chu Feng, you are simply too amazing to be able to think of this.”

Finally, the serious and worry-filled expression Her Lady Queen had on her face was swept clean. It was replaced with an extremely sweet and enchanting smile. Excitedly, she started to jump and hop in the world spirit space. She was truly overjoyed.

Right at that moment, the nine hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords down below began to disappear.

It turned out that the Life Sword was the Death Sword, that the Death Sword was the Life Sword.

If one wanted to obtain the Life Sword, one must grasp the Death Sword.

“Tell me, how did you come to realize that the Death Sword was the Life Sword?” The Ancient Era’s War Sword asked curiously.

“Firstly, the Death Sword was too fast, there was simply no time for me to search for the Life Sword from the nine hundred million nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine swords. This would be extremely unreasonable unless senior had never planned to let me pass this trial to begin with.”

“However, I felt that senior was not such a person,” Chu Feng said.

“Very good. Boy, I quite enjoy your flattery. Continue,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

“Then, there’s the fact that senior is a very powerful slaughtering secret skill. Since the Life Sword is you, that means that the Death Sword that emitted that overwhelming power resembled you the most, that the Death Sword was most likely to also be you.”

“However, even with the analysis I made, I was still extremely nervous and uneasy before grasping the Death Sword,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn? This is quite interesting.”

“With how thoroughly you’ve analyzed the matter, why would you still be nervous? Look, weren’t you very confident the entire time?” The Ancient Era’s War Sword asked.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed wryly. Then, he said, “I’m not afraid of senior laughing at me. To be completely honest, I am also afraid of death. Earlier, it was truly a matter of life and death.”

“Haha. Great! What a great ‘I am also afraid of death.’”

“Everyone is afraid of death. Only those that are willing to put their lives on the line to bravely advance are able to obtain greatness.”

“The path of martial cultivation is like this. It is like rowing a boat upstream. The moment you stop moving forward, you’ll start falling back.”

“Although the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen here possess very decent bloodlines, they ended up degenerating to their current state because they did not go forward.”

“A bunch of trash like them actually dared to think about subduing me all day long. They are simply delusional,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said in a very resentful manner.

“Senior, it must be because you are dissatisfied with the people

here that you ended up having no other choice but to choose me, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re right. Logically, I should be used by the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen. However, not a single person here is capable of satisfying me.”

“This includes that boy by the name of Zhan Haichuan from back then. Although he was quite talented, his personality was not to my liking.”

The Ancient Era’s War Sword gave a long sigh

“All these years, I have been awake the entire time and observing everything. I was searching for the fated individual to obtain me. But in a flash, many generations have passed. I have truly grown extremely lonely.”

“I was originally a sharp weapon for killing. Yet, I have become an object of worship. This is truly not what I desired, nor was it what my creator desired.”

“It is truly rare for me to meet someone that suits my taste. Thus, I decided to not shackle myself and follow you,” The Ancient Era’s War Sword said.

“But senior, you still put me through a trial, no?” Chu Feng did not know whether to laugh or cry. Although he had managed to successfully pass the trial, when he recalled the trial, he remembered how dangerous it was. If he had taken one wrong step, there would only be one end for him.

Not to mention obtaining the acknowledgement from the Ancient Era’s War Sword, he would likely have lost his life.

“Hahaha. No matter what, I am still the Ancient Era’s War Sword, one of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Nine Great Secret Skills. As such, how could I casually allow myself to follow a mere boy? Naturally I would have to put you through a trial.”

“Furthermore, even though I managed to witness all the things

you've done after you've arrived in the War Clan's Ancient Domain, I was still unable to be absolutely certain about your nature. Thus, this final trial was needed to verify things."

"And you did not disappoint me. Although I am not extremely satisfied, you are indeed qualified to wield my power," The Ancient Era's War Sword said.

"Senior, you're flattering me. Merely, senior, you mentioned Nine Great Secret Skills earlier? Weren't there supposed to only be Three Great Secret Skills?" Chu Feng asked.

"Humph, the people here are ignorant to everything, and simply could not be considered to be descendants of the Ancient Era's War Clan. The hell would they know?"

"Back then, the ancestor of the Ancient Era's War Clan created a total of Nine Great Secret Skills. Those Nine Great Secret Skills all took the form of weapons, and were effective killing weapons. Each of them was stronger than the last. Even I am only ranked third among the Nine Great Secret Skills."

"Ranked third? Senior, with how powerful you are, you're actually only ranked third?" Chu Feng was extremely shocked.

Chu Feng had experienced the aura of the Ancient Era's War Sword. It was truly something capable of startling heaven and earth and scaring away even ghosts and gods. It was simply boundlessly powerful.

"That's right, I am only ranked third. However, the strength of a secret skill is related to its master. Thus, boy, if you turn out to be promising, I might not necessarily be on the losing side should I confront those two old fellows in the future."

"Thus, Chu Feng, you must remember this. If you are to encounter the Nine Great Secret Skills, do not be scared if they are stronger than me, and do not be arrogant if they are weaker than me. In all cases, you must take them very seriously," The Ancient

Era's War Sword said.

“Thank you for your advice, senior. This junior will keep it in mind,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that's the case, I will entrust my power to you. I hope that you do not disappoint me. Else, even if you are to die, I will still not let you get away with it,” As the Ancient Era's War Sword spoke, the golden sword Chu Feng held in his hand started to blossom with dazzling light.

“Senior, please don't rush to leave this quickly. Can you tell me where the main family of the Ancient Era's War Clan is, whether they still exist, how powerful they are and why the founder of this War Clan's Ancient Domain arrived in this place with the Three Great Secret Skills?”

“Furthermore, as this place was created by the War Clansmen, why would there be a Monstrous Clan here? What is the origin of the Monstrous Clan, and why didn't Zhan Haichuan eliminate them back then?”

Chu Feng knew that the Ancient Era's War Sword was going to pledge complete allegiance to him. However, Chu Feng was afraid that it would not be able to speak anymore should it do so. Thus, he hurriedly asked multiple questions that he had in his heart.

“In the vast world of martial cultivation, the heavenly dome struggles against the universe. If I were to tell you everything, wouldn't it become very boring?”

“Thus, it is better that you find the answers yourself. If there is something that you wish to know, go and find it. Only then... should one be delighted .”

“Hahahahaha...”

Chu Feng's line of sight started to change. Soon, the space before him collapsed. Chu Feng had returned to the War Clan's Ancient Domain again, returned to where the Ancient Era's War Clansmen



were.

However, the Ancient Era's War Sword's voice was still lingering in Chu Feng's ears.

“In the vast world of martial cultivation, the heavenly dome struggles against the universe?”

Chu Feng's heart was still shocked by those words.

The reason for that was because those simple words once again told Chu Feng exactly how enormous the vast Outer World was.

Chu Feng was once again flooded with an irresistible attraction toward the Outer World.

# Chapter 2454 – Repay Kindness With Malice

---

“Big brother Chu Feng, you’re actually fine!!!”

“This is great, this is truly great!”

Suddenly, an incomparably joyous voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ear.

It was Zhan Lingtong. Not only was Zhan Lingtong standing beside Chu Feng, but Zhan Lingling was also standing beside Chu Feng.

The two of them were unable to conceal their happiness, and were grinning from ear to ear upon seeing that Chu Feng had returned completely unscathed.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, you... could it be that you’ve obtained Lord War Sword’s acknowledgement?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief had also arrived beside Chu Feng.

At that moment, everyone from the Ancient Era’s War Clan were looking at Chu Feng with complicated gazes. They all wanted to obtain definite answers from Chu Feng’s mouth.

“Seniors, truth be told, Lord War Sword is indeed in my body now. I have obtained Lord War Sword’s acknowledgement.”

“Merely, Lord War Sword is truly too powerful. I am still unable to completely grasp it for the time being. I reckon that it will still take a long while before I can grasp its power,” Chu Feng did not conceal anything, and told the truth.

The reason for that was because even if he wanted to conceal the truth, he would not be able to do so. After all, all of the people present had heard what the Ancient Era’s War Sword had said earlier.

Furthermore, they had all seen what had happened earlier. Earlier, the Ancient Era’s War Sword had covered his body. And

now, it had assimilated into his body.

Actually, everyone knew that Chu Feng had obtained the Ancient Era's War Sword, that great secret skill that none of their Ancient Era's War Clansmen were capable of subduing.

"Young Hero Chu Feng is truly an extraordinary genius. You actually managed to obtain Lord War Sword's acknowledgement."

"Merely, Young Hero Chu Feng, Lord War Sword is the possession of our Ancient Era's War Clan. I'm afraid that we cannot allow you to take Lord War Sword away," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief said.

"This bunch of shameless bastards. You saved them earlier, yet now they actually want to demand the Ancient Era's War Sword from you?"

"If it wasn't for you, they would all be dead already. How could they be so shameless?" Hearing those words, Her Lady Queen immediately voiced her resentment.

Actually, Chu Feng also felt a bit displeased. However, he still only showed a calm expression on his face as he said, "Lord Clan Chief, what happened earlier was actually a trial, a trial that Lord War Sword had for me."

"I managed to pass the trial. That is how I managed to obtain Lord War Sword's acknowledgement. Since Lord War Sword has chosen me, I find it unsuitable to let him down. Thus... I'm afraid that I cannot hand over Lord War Sword."

"Young Hero Chu Feng, we have treated you as an honored guest. How could you treat us like this? You clearly know that Lord War Sword is our Ancient Era's War Clan's supreme treasure. Thus, how could you insist on snatching it away?" An elder began to point at Chu Feng as he spoke angrily.

Seeing that, Chu Feng's expression grew gloomy. He said, "Do not forget, your Lord War Sword was planning to kill you all

earlier.”

“If it wasn’t for me, you all would’ve already been dead by now. Is this how you treat your benefactor?”

“.....”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen grew a lot more quiet.

After a moment of silence, that elder said, “Return Lord War Sword to us. We would rather be killed by Lord War Sword than have you bring it away. Else... we would have let down our ancestor.”

“Heh...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng laughed. It was an extremely mocking laughter.

“Lord War Sword chose me of its own accord. Else, with its power, I would not be able to force it to submit to me either.”

“Yet now, you all want to go against the desire of Lord War Sword. Is this what you mean by not letting down your ancestor?”

“What a joke. Allow me to be frank: it is not that I cannot return Lord War Sword to you all. Merely, if I am to return Lord War Sword to you, you might meet even more miserable ends,” Chu Feng said.

“You!!!” That elder’s face turned deep red with fury. However, he was unable to refute Chu Feng.

What happened earlier was still fresh in their memories. They knew very well that what Chu Feng said could very well happen.

Thus, at that moment, they all turned their gazes to their Lord Clan Chief. They wanted to have their Lord Clan Chief make the decision.

Of course, if their Lord Clan Chief wanted to allow Chu Feng to bring away the Ancient Era’s War Sword, they would definitely be against it.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, if you really want to return Lord War Sword to us, there is actually a way.”

“Back then, our Lord Ancestor was afraid that the Three Great Secret Skills would go out of control. Thus, he specially left behind a grand formation. That grand formation was capable of suppressing the power of the Three Great Secret Skills.”

“Back then, out of respect for Lord War Sword, we never sealed it in the grand formation. Never did we expect that it would really end up going out of control wanting to kill us.”

“Judging from how things are now, it seems that we must place it in the grand formation,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“That’s right. How did we forgot about the grand formation Lord Clan Chief left behind?” At that moment, the elders all echoed in succession.

“Your intention is to have me place Lord War Sword into that formation so that you can seal it?” Chu Feng frowned and asked with a cold voice.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, I know that you are a man of virtue. You most definitely would not want us to die by Lord War Sword’s hands. And this... would be the best method to handle this,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Indeed, I do not want you all to die. Otherwise, I would not have offered to die on your behalf. However, I’ve also stated that since Lord War Sword has already chosen me, I cannot fail to live up to its expectations, and definitely cannot place it in the so-called grand formation.”

“Thus, my apologies, but I’m afraid that I cannot agree to this matter,” Chu Feng said resolutely.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief

suddenly pulled out a golden spear and pointed it at Chu Feng.

Once the spear appeared, a boundless oppressive might enveloped Chu Feng, causing him to be unable to move a single step.

That spear was an Ancestral Armament. As for that Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief, he was, at the very least, a rank four Martial Ancestor. As he possessed a battle power one level above Chu Feng, Chu Feng would naturally not be able to move once he used his Ancestral Armament to suppress Chu Feng.

"Lord Father, what are you doing? Big brother Chu Feng is the benefactor who saved my life and big sister's life," Zhan Lingtong hurriedly rushed over.

"Lord Father, I beg of you, please stop immediately. Chu Feng has shown grace toward us. We cannot repay kindness with malice," Immediately afterward, Zhan Lingling actually kneeled before the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief.

"Scram!" The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief waved his sleeve, and a strong wind lifted Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong and blew them away.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was still pointing at Chu Feng with the golden spear. A complicated expression filled his eyes.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, Lord War Sword belongs to our Ancient Era's War Clan. Are you really not planning to return it?" The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief asked.

"Unless you are to kill me... I will definitely not return the Ancient Era's War Sword to you," Chu Feng said.

"I will not kill you, because you have shown grace to our Ancient Era's War Clan. If I am to kill you, I will have repaid kindness with malice, I will have become an unjust and heartless fellow."

"However, Lord War Sword is simply too important to our

Ancient Era's War Clan. As such, I cannot allow you to bring it away."

"Thus, I can only inconvenience Young Hero Chu Feng to stay in our Ancient Era's War Clan for a bit longer."

"Paa~~~"

After he finished saying those words, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief instantly arrived before Chu Feng and grabbed his shoulder.

The next moment, the scene before Chu Feng started to rapidly change. When everything was over, Chu Feng had left where he previously stood and arrived in an underground prison.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, I hope you will properly consider the matter. As long as you are willing to cooperate with us in sealing Lord War Sword in the grand formation, I will immediately release you. Furthermore... I will also apologize for my actions today."

After he finished saying those words, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief clasped his fist toward Chu Feng in a very apologetic manner.

Then, a 'clank' was heard, and the prison cell was closed shut. Only Chu Feng remained in the prison cell.

## Chapter 2455 – Remaining Calm

---

Chu Feng looked around. After observing his surroundings, he discovered that this prison cell was truly remarkable. Likely, with the strength that he possessed right now, it would be very difficult to break free from that prison cell in a short period of time.

However, that would only hold true for a short period of time. After all, Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. As long as he was given sufficient time, he would definitely be able to break free from that prison cell.

“Those despicable bastards, they actually repaid your kindness with malice. Chu Feng... take out the Evil God Sword and kill them all. Else... they will truly think that you are easily bullied.”

Her Lady Queen was gnashing her teeth in anger. She was clenching her little fists so tightly that creaking sounds could be heard.

It seemed that she was truly enraged.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly had a thought, and entered his world spirit space. As he saw Her Lady Queen before him, Chu Feng revealed a faint smile on his face.

“Look at the situation, you’ve been reduced to a prisoner now and are already at death’s door. Yet you’re still able to smile?”

“Since when did your heart grow this magnanimous?” Seeing that Chu Feng remained calm even after all this, Her Lady Queen was even more furious.

However, the smile on Chu Feng’s face grew even stronger. He said, “The love Milady Queen has for me is truly deep. Every time I encounter a difficult situation, you will always be more nervous than me.”

Hearing those words, Her Lady Queen’s little face instantly turned red. Then, she bit her lower lip with her pearly white teeth



and revealed an even more furious expression. “Pah! Damn shameless bastard, who said I love you? I merely do not want you to die because you’ll cause me to die too if you do.”

“Is that so? In that case, why was it that I saw someone so worried that she was about to cry when I was on the verge of failing to subdue the Ancient Era’s War Sword?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile on his face.

Her Lady Queen raised her chin in a very proud manner as he said, “That’s because I didn’t want to die. It is unrelated to you, okay?”

“Milady Queen, there’s no need to bother explaining. I know everything,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous laugh. Furthermore, as he spoke, he began to walk toward Her Lady Queen.

“If you dare continue with this, do you dare believe that even without that Ancient Era’s War Clan killing you, I will exterminate you myself?” Her Lady Queen revealed an angry look.

The very next moment, an oppressive might was emitted from her. That oppressive might actually forced Chu Feng into a corner.

At that moment, Chu Feng revealed a pleasantly surprised expression. He had a smile on his face as he looked at the fierce-looking little beauty before him, “Rank two Martial Ancestor, and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation.”

“Milady Queen, your cultivation has actually reached this level already?” Chu Feng was very pleasantly surprised.

Before this, Her Lady Queen’s cultivation had not been so powerful. Her battle power had also not been as frightening as it was now.

Likely, Her Lady Queen must’ve gained her current level of cultivation after she refined the source energies of the Kong

Heavenly Clan's True Immortals when Chu Feng was using the Evil God Sword to kill the Kong Heavenly Clan's True Immortals.

Merely, Chu Feng did not expect that not only did Her Lady Queen's cultivation increase, but even her battle power had increased.

Right now, Chu Feng still only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Even the Ancient Era's War Clansmen that possessed their special War Clan's bloodline were only able to obtain a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation after reaching the Martial Ancestor level.

However, Her Lady Queen actually possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation. As such, Chu Feng had no choice but to exclaim in admiration.

"That's right. Earlier, your power was sealed by the Evil God Sword. Thus, this Queen's cultivation was also sealed. I was so worried earlier that I forgot to inspect my own cultivation."

"Never would I have expected that I would be a rank two Martial Ancestor now. Furthermore, even my battle power has increased."

"It seems that the source energies of True Immortals are not only tasty, but also very useful. Haha," At that moment, Her Lady Queen was overjoyed.

"Chu Feng, let this Queen out right away. I will personally teach that bunch of shameless Ancient Era's War Clansmen a lesson," Her Lady Queen said excitedly.

She was extremely worried about Chu Feng's safety earlier. That was why she became so nervous and fretful.

However, she was now no longer that worried.

The always confident Her Lady Queen, upon finding out that her cultivation had increased to rank two Martial Ancestor, and her battle power had increased to being able to surmount five levels of

cultivation, would naturally feel that she would be able to contend against the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief.

In fact, she wanted to go out right then and cause havoc throughout the Ancient Era's War Clan.

“No. Eggy, although you are very strong, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief is not weak either. I do not wish for you to take this risk,” However, Chu Feng immediately refused her.

Although Her Lady Queen possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting five levels of cultivation, a level above that of the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief possessed a cultivation of rank four Martial Ancestor, two entire levels of cultivation above Her Lady Queen.

Thus, when judging from things as a whole, Her Lady Queen's battle power was a level weaker than the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief.

Furthermore, as the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was someone who had received the teachings of the Ancient Era's War Clan, Chu Feng had no idea what sort of abilities he might possess.

As such, Chu Feng would naturally not want Her Lady Queen to take the risk.

“You should be able to tell that they're a bunch of useless trash. This Queen is not afraid of them,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Even if you're not afraid of the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief, you should still be on guard against Zhan Lingtong's grandfather.”

“That person was already a rank four Martial Ancestor before he entered closed-door training. Furthermore, he had been attempting a breakthrough the entire time. It might be possible that he's already a rank five Martial Ancestor now. Furthermore, he has grasped the Ancient Era's War Axe, one of the Ancient Era's

War Clan's Three Great Secret Skills.”

“I really do not wish for you to fight against him,” Chu Feng said.

“What do we do then? Are we to resign ourselves to fate? If that's the case, that old fart might end up killing you after coming out of his closed-door training,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Of course we're not going to resign ourselves to fate. It is good that they treated me this way; like this, I can do what I want with no regard for them,” Chu Feng said.

“So you already had a plan?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen revealed a joyous look. She said, “Quickly, tell me what you plan to do.”

“Although I am a prisoner now, the Ancient Era's War Clan is evidently inferior to the Kong Heavenly Clan. As such, they have naturally not reached a level where I must use the Evil God Sword.”

“Most importantly, although my cultivation is inferior to theirs, I am, after all, an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. My world spirit techniques are evidently stronger than theirs.”

“Although this prison cell is enchanted with powerful spirit formations which make it impossible for me to get out using regular techniques, I am still able to leave this prison cell should I use extraordinary methods.”

“Don't forget, even in the Kong Heavenly Clan, I was able to move about unconstrained,” Chu Feng said confidently.

“You're saying that you plan to set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“That's right, I'm going to set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.”

“Since they're not planning to kill me for the time being, I am able to spend some time setting up the Immortal-avoiding

Concealment Formation to leave this place.”

“Not only do I plan to leave this prison cell, but I am also going to find that Martial Comprehension Ground. Since I’ve come, I will not return empty-handed,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, it’s decided then,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Wait,” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyes narrowed.

“What’s wrong?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It seems like someone’s here,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he cast his awareness back into his body.

Sure enough, Chu Feng discovered that the entrance to the prison cell was being opened by someone.

“Clank~~~”

Soon, the prison cell was opened, and a figure hurriedly ran in.

Merely, Chu Feng did not show any fear upon seeing that individual. Instead, he was very surprised. The reason for that was because that individual was not the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief, or one of their elders.

Rather, it was Zhan Lingling.

## Chapter 2456 – Chu Feng’s Plan

---

“Benefactor, I am truly sorry for how unrighteous and unjust my clan has been. We have made you suffer.”

After Zhan Lingling entered the prison cell, she had a very apologetic expression on her face. However, she did not try to say too many superfluous words, and instead got to the main subject right away.

She grabbed Chu Feng and said, “Benefactor, the guards of this place have already been lured away by my brother. Let’s seize this opportunity to escape. Else, if we are to delay, I fear that you will not be able to escape.”

She had actually come to save Chu Feng.

“I’m afraid that it wouldn’t do to leave like this. You and your brother will end up being punished by your father,” Chu Feng shook his head.

Chu Feng had no idea how Zhan Lingling managed to obtain the key to the prison cell.

However, he knew that if he were to escape like that, the matter of Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong helping him escape would definitely be discovered.

Once the matter got exposed, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong would definitely be severely punished.

Chu Feng did not wish to implicate Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong.

“Benefactor, you do not have to concern yourself with this. Come, follow me,” Zhan Lingling urged anxiously.

“How about this: answer me a question. Are there any Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in your Ancient Era’s War Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritists? No, we do not. We have only heard of that sort of powerful world spiritist before, how could our clan possibly possess any?”

Zhan Lingling said no immediately. Furthermore, she had a perplexed expression on her face. Evidently, she had no idea why Chu Feng had asked that question.

“If there aren’t, it will be easy to deal with then,” As Chu Feng spoke, he sat cross-legged, and his hands started to rapidly change.

Spirit power began to flow out from Chu Feng’s body in a steady stream. In the end, it took the form of a person before him.

That person, regardless of whether it be clothes or appearance, was exactly the same as Chu Feng.

“This is?” Seeing that, Zhan Lingling immediately revealed an astonished expression.

She was able to tell that that person must’ve been created by Chu Feng through a spirit formation. Actually, she had seen many clones formed with spirit formations before too.

However, for the great majority of them, one could tell with a single glance that they had been formed with a spirit formation. Never had she ever seen a spirit formation clone that looked like a carbon copy of the original, like Chu Feng’s spirit formation.

Thus, she felt it to be incredible. Thus, she asked, “Benefactor, could this be your clone?”

“Indeed, it is my clone. This clone of mine possesses my aura and shares by vision and hearing. If I am to leave it here, no one will discover that I’ve left,” Chu Feng said.

“But, Benefactor, how were you able to set up such a powerful clone like that? Furthermore, your world spirit techniques are extremely strong. Could it be that... you’re an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Zhan Lingling asked Chu Feng.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded with a smile on his face.

“Heavens! You’re... you’re really an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

“Benefactor, you... you are simply too amazing. At such a young age, you not only possess an extremely high level of cultivation, yet you’re actually also an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.”

At that moment, Zhan Lingling was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with admiration. In fact... she was somewhat frenetic.

Before that, she had truly never expected that someone much younger than her would be so much more powerful than her.

“The world is enormous, there are countless people stronger than me.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he began to set up another spirit formation. Soon... he had turned invisible.

“Let’s go. This concealment formation of mine is capable of concealing me from all those below the Martial Ancestor level of cultivation. However, if I am to encounter your father, I might not necessarily be able to conceal myself from him,” Chu Feng said.

“Okay,” Zhan Lingling was completely stunned by Chu Feng’s various techniques.

At that moment, Zhan Lingling couldn’t help but to listen to Chu Feng’s instructions. She began to act according to Chu Feng’s orders.

As per Chu Feng’s instructions, Zhan Lingling did not directly bring Chu Feng away from the Ancient Era’s War Clan. Instead, she brought Chu Feng to her residence.

Zhan Lingtong was also present in Zhan Lingling’s residence.

The reason for that was because the siblings had planned to have Zhan Lingtong lure away the guards while Zhan Lingling rescued Chu Feng, then bring him away.



Zhan Lingtong had arrived in Zhan Lingling's residence to wait for his older sister's good news.

"Big sister, why didn't you bring big brother Chu Feng out, and instead brought him here?"

"Lord Father and the various elders are currently conducting an emergency meeting so as to stabilize our clansmen's state of mind."

"They do not have the time to concern themselves with big brother Chu Feng. This is the best time for us to rescue big brother Chu Feng. If we are to miss this opportunity, I fear that an opportunity like this will never present itself again."

"Come, let's go and bring big brother Chu Feng out right now. We absolutely cannot afford to let this opportunity slip by," Upon seeing Chu Feng, Zhan Lingtong became extremely worried. As he spoke, he planned to bring Chu Feng away from their Ancient Era's War Clan.

"Lingtong, this is my decision, don't blame your older sister," Chu Feng said.

"Ah? Big brother Chu Feng, why are you not planning to leave? Could it be that you want to continue to be trapped here?" Zhan Lingtong had a confused expression.

"Listen to me. Right now, your clansmen are in a very unstable state of mind. If I am to truly escape like this, they will definitely find out that it was you and your older sister who helped me escape."

"With their current state of mind, they might end up disregarding the fact that you two are their fellow clansmen and punish you two by killing you. I, Chu Feng, cannot bring harm upon you for the sake of my own escape."

"Furthermore, your Ancient Era's War Clan is currently facing a great enemy in the form of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan. I

still want to help you guys out in this battle.”

“If I am to leave like this, wouldn’t it mean that I will not be able to help you all at all?” Chu Feng said.

“Big brother Chu Feng...” Hearing what Chu Feng said, both Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling revealed stunned expressions. In their eyes it could clearly be seen that they were emotionally moved.

Their Ancient Era’s War Clan had repaid Chu Feng’s kindness with malice. Yet, not only did Chu Feng not hold a grudge, but he was actually still concerned about the safety of their Ancient Era’s War Clan. That truly moved the two of them.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you are truly too kind. However, our clan is truly unworthy of you doing all this.”

“We... are unworthy of your kindness,” Glistening teardrops appeared in Zhan Lingtong’s eyes as he said those words.

“What are you doing? Real men do not easily cry,” With a smile on his face, Chu Feng lightly patted Zhan Lingtong’s shoulder.

Then, he said, “You don’t have to panic. Actually, I have a plan in mind. As long as the two of you are to help me with it, not only will I be able to safely escape, I might even be able to help you all neutralize the threat of the Monstrous Clan.”

“Really?” Hearing those words, Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling’s expressions both changed.

“Really,” With a smile on his face, Chu Feng nodded with a Confidence filled smile.

“Big brother Chu Feng, go ahead and tell us what you want us to do. As long as we siblings are capable of doing it, we will definitely help you,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Benefactor, go ahead and tell us what you have in mind. We will definitely do as you say,” Zhan Lingling echoed.

Then, Chu Feng informed Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong of his plan.

The spirit formation Chu Feng had set up was extremely powerful. Not only were Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong unable to determine that Chu Feng's clone was a spirit formation, but even the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief would likely not be able to determine that it was a spirit formation clone.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to see everything that the clone saw, and could respond using the clone's mouth.

In a nutshell, Chu Feng was capable of controlling his clone.

However, a spirit formation that powerful would naturally have flaws. As for its flaw, it would be the fact that Chu Feng could not be too far away from the clone.

Thus, when Chu Feng set up his spirit formation clone, he had already decided that he would not leave the Ancient Era's War Clan.

What Chu Feng planned to do was to trick everyone into thinking that he was still trapped in the prison cell.

As for his actual body, he was planning to enter the Martial Comprehension Ground. Chu Feng planned to train there to reach a breakthrough in his cultivation.

Moreover, Chu Feng was speaking his true feelings when he said that he planned to help the Ancient Era's Clan neutralize their crisis.

The reason for that was because he had seen a scene of Zhan Haichuan's training. Although it was only a scene, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Martial Comprehension Ground was no small matter.

Unless he somehow failed to enter it, Chu Feng was certain that he would definitely obtain a great harvest.

If Chu Feng was able to increase his cultivation to a level where he could defeat the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, he would definitely help the Ancient Era's War Clan take care of the threat that was the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

While the actions of the Ancient Era's War Clan today were indeed extremely unkind and unjust, it remained that they did not truly plan to kill him, and merely did not want him to take away the Ancient Era's War Sword. Thus, when looking at it from a different point of view, Chu Feng found it to be pardonable.

Furthermore, as Chu Feng had obtained the powerful secret skill that was the Ancient Era's War Sword, he wanted to make it up to the Ancient Era's War Clan.

After all, the Ancient Era's War Clan was very different from the Kong Heavenly Clan. At the very least, they could still be considered kind-hearted individuals.

After hearing Chu Feng's plan, Zhan Lingtong asked, "Big brother Chu Feng, you mean to say that you want us to bring you into the Martial Comprehension Ground?"

# Chapter 2457 – Martial Comprehension Ground

---

“Is there a problem?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, not at all. That is a simple task. Actually, the Martial Comprehension Ground is composed of three levels.”

“The first level is the easiest. The great majority of our clan’s younger generation are training there. However, after one reaches the Half Martial Ancestor realm, it will not be very effective. As such, all those training in the first level are Martial Emperors.”

“From the second level, things start to become difficult. It is the place where Half Martial Ancestor-level experts train. However, due to the fact that it is so difficult, the majority of the people who go there are unable to attain any comprehension. As such, very few Half Martial Ancestor-level experts will actually go there to train.”

“As for Martial Ancestor-level experts, there would be even less of a reason for them to go there. This leads the second level to be empty all the time.”

“As for the third level, it is even harder. Not only is it very difficult to comprehend things there, it also possesses an enormous pressure. Those with insufficient talent are simply unable to enter the third level.”

“Other than Lord Zhan Haichuan, there has never been anyone else in our clan’s history that has managed to set foot into the third level.”

“Thus, the situation in the Martial Comprehension Ground is like so. The first level is filled with Martial Emperors, the second level is practically empty, and the third level has been empty all the time, as no one has ever dared to set foot into it.”

“Looking at things like that, it would instead appear the Martial Comprehension Ground is the safest place in our Ancient Era’s

War Clan.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, you are simply too smart. You actually thought of this,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Very well. In that case, this matter should not be delayed. Let’s set off right away,” Chu Feng said.

Then, the siblings Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling brought Chu Feng to the Martial Comprehension Ground.

Chu Feng had once again concealed himself through his concealment formation.

Furthermore, as the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief and the upper echelons were all in an emergency meeting on how to calm their clansmen’s state of mind, no one discovered Chu Feng.

Without a hitch, Chu Feng, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong entered the Martial Comprehension Ground.

“This is the Martial Comprehension Ground?”

At that moment, Chu Feng finally managed to see the place where Zhan Haichuan had trained in the past.

It was a place that resembled a mountain peak. There were a total of three levels. That place was enveloped by a special sort of power that made it impossible for one to fly. The only way to move upward would be by using the flight of steps that spiraled around the mountain.

There were countless complicated writings and symbols on the mountain. Having arrived here, even without seeing those countless complicated writings and symbols, Chu Feng was able to sense the existence of dense martial comprehension.

After arriving here, Chu Feng did not stop. Rather, he directly walked to the steps that spiraled around the mountain. He did not wish to waste time there, and began to proceed directly toward the Martial Comprehension Ground’s second level.

Compared to the first level, the second level was not as expansive. Furthermore, it also covered a much smaller area. However, the martial comprehension contained in that area was much denser.

That said, Chu Feng did not stop there either. Instead, he cast his gaze toward the steps leading to the third level.

Chu Feng had a feeling that the place where Zhan Haichuan trained at was the third level.

“Big brother Chu Feng, people only come to the second level very rarely. It would be fine to just train here.”

“That’s right. Benefactor, the pressure in the third level is extremely powerful. It is very difficult for one to withstand it. Many people have attempted to enter the third level, and were instantly injured the moment they set foot into it.”

Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling simultaneously urged Chu Feng to stay in the second level after discovering that Chu Feng wanted to continue upward. They urged Chu Feng against it because they were afraid that he would be injured.

“While people only come here rarely, it remains that people do come here. It is impossible for me to maintain my concealed state forever while training here.”

“If your father or your grandfather were to come here one day and discover me, I would end up suffering greatly.”

“Furthermore, the martial comprehension contained here does not contain enormous benefits for me. Thus, no matter how one looks at it, the third level would suit me better,” Chu Feng said.

“But, big brother Chu Feng, the pressure is truly no small matter. The further up you climb, the greater the pressure will be.”

“Truth be told, my father could be considered to be the most talented individual in our Ancient Era’s War Clan in the past thirty thousand years.”

“However, back then, he was only able to climb one third of the steps toward the third level before he started bleeding from his seven facial orifices due to the pressure he had to sustain. He ended up being seriously injured, and even nearly lost his life,” Zhan Lingtong said to Chu Feng.

“Rest assured, I am confident,” Chu Feng smiled, and then proceeded to walk toward the steps to the third level.

“Big brother Chu Feng,” At that moment, Zhan Lingtong suddenly called out for Chu Feng again.

Chu Feng turned around and asked, “What’s wrong?”

“Big brother Chu Feng, I wish to see how you’re going to climb to the third level. Thus... could you undo your concealment formation?” Zhan Lingtong asked.

“As we’re the only ones here, that’s of course not an issue,” Chu Feng smiled, and his body emerged as he spoke.

Then, Chu Feng continued toward the steps to the third level.

At that moment, Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling were both staring at Chu Feng.

Their eyes were filled with worry. However, there was also an unconcealable anticipation.

After all, the place Chu Feng wanted to reach was the place where only Zhan Haichuan had ever managed to reach.

As for Chu Feng, he was obviously not an ordinary individual. Not only did he possess a powerful cultivation, but his world spirit techniques also shocked the two siblings.

Thus, they were thinking...

Chu Feng, would he truly be able to climb to the third level? If he really managed to do so, wouldn’t it mean that he possessed talent on par with Zhan Haichuan?

If that was the case, the two of them would have witnessed a



miracle.

Thus, at that moment, the siblings were very hopeful for Chu Feng to succeed.

As he was being watched by the siblings, Chu Feng stepped onto the steps to the third level.

“Buzz~~~”

Sure enough, the moment Chu Feng stepped onto the steps, he felt a burst of pressure. However, to Chu Feng, this pressure was not enough to affect him.

Chu Feng began to steadily and slowly walk up the steps.

The journey upward was very easy. Soon, Chu Feng arrived at the location where Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong’s father was seriously injured.

“Big brother Chu Feng is amazing.”

When the siblings recalled how their father started to bleed from his seven facial orifices and was seriously injured when he reached that far, and then seeing how Chu Feng had managed to step past the limit their father had reached without any change in expression, they realized that Chu Feng was truly amazing.

Soon, Chu Feng had managed to reach the halfway point.

Even though the pressure Chu Feng felt was gradually increasing, it was still insufficient to stop Chu Feng.

However, the journey upward was no longer smooth. When he was about to reach the two-thirds point, Chu Feng’s footsteps became heavy, and sweat appeared on his body.

When Chu Feng reached the two-third point, he was sweating profusely. His clothes were already drenched. In fact, even his footsteps started to shiver. Each and every step of his became extremely challenging to take.

“It would seem that the third level is truly not that easily

reached,” At that moment, Chu Feng revealed a bitter smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng had realized that it was not an easy task to reach the third level.

The reason for that was because the pressure was rapidly increasing. With each step upward, the pressure would increase by a lot. Such pressure had truly surpassed Chu Feng’s expectations.

At that moment, not even Chu Feng possessed absolute confidence in being able to reach the third level.

However, Chu Feng did not give up. He clenched his jaw and continued to climb the steps.

However, soon, not only were Chu Feng’s legs trembling, but his entire body started to tremble.

In fact, he even felt somewhat dizzy; his line of sight grew fuzzy, and buzzing began to fill his ears.

It... had become very difficult for Chu Feng to continue onward, for Chu Feng was unable to even stabilize himself.

“Big brother Chu Feng, quickly, come back down. Don’t persist on going up anymore.”

Suddenly, Zhan Lingtong’s voice transmission entered Chu Feng’s ear.

As for Zhan Lingling, she was tightly grabbing onto her skirt with her hands. She was extremely worried for Chu Feng.

Although the mountain peak was very tall, they were still able to see that Chu Feng’s eyes, nose and ears were all bleeding.

This meant that the same sort of condition that their father experienced back then had started to appear on Chu Feng.

Furthermore, Chu Feng’s body was swaying back and forth.

It was evident that Chu Feng was no longer capable of withstanding the pressure.

# Chapter 2458 – Martial Comprehension Ground

---

The pressure had reached a state that Chu Feng found unbearable now.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng continued to challengingly take another step forward.

“Swoosh~~~”

However, before Chu Feng’s feet could stabilize, he suddenly slipped. Chu Feng rolled down the flight of steps.

“Big brother Chu Feng!!!”

“Benefactor!!!”

Witnessing that scene, Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling were immediately alarmed. They were deeply worried.

However, the two of them were simply unable to ascend that flight of steps. Thus, they could only watch impatiently and worry for Chu Feng helplessly.

“Paaa~~~”

When Chu Feng fell down the flights of steps until he reached the halfway mark, the pressure he felt had decreased so much that he actually managed to grab onto the steps to stabilize himself.

Seeing that Chu Feng had managed to stabilize himself, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong heaved sighs of relief.

However, the expressions on their faces only managed to ease for a moment before they became nervous again.

Chu Feng had not walked down the steps. Rather, he wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth and began to proceed upwards again.

“Big brother Chu Feng, do not force yourself. That pressure is no

small matter; it might even end up killing you,” Seeing that Chu Feng refused to give up, Zhan Lingtong started to urge him to not continue.

However, Chu Feng did not pay attention to Zhan Lingtong’s warning, and continued onward. Soon, he returned to the spot where he had been previously.

This time around, Chu Feng was prepared. He did not urgently step forward. Rather, he took a long while to stabilize his breathing and allow himself to get used to the pressure there.

When he felt that he could continue onward, he took another step forward.

Chu Feng managed to successfully walk up. However, the pressure once again caused him to bleed from his seven facial orifices, once again causing his body to tremble.

Chu Feng had returned to the same state he was in when he fell before.

However, the location where Chu Feng currently stood was still a certain distance from the end of the flight of steps.

It was already extremely difficult for Chu Feng to resist the pressure there. Yet, the pressure upward would be more and more powerful. Thus, the two siblings felt that Chu Feng would not be able to successfully scale the steps and reach the top.

“Big brother Chu Feng, I beg of you, please stop forcing yourself. You do not know how frightening those flight of steps are. It really has caused many people to die before. The injuries that my father sustained from it could already be considered light.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was risking his life, Zhan Lingtong grew so worried that tears began to flow out from his eyes.

The way he saw it, Chu Feng was someone that possessed superb talent, someone that would achieve greatness in the future even without reaching the third level. As such, there was simply no

need for Chu Feng to take such a risk with his life.

“Lingtong, let me ask you, what sort of situation was it like for senior Zhan Haichuan when he ascended the steps?” Chu Feng suddenly asked in a weak voice.

“Lord Zhan Haichuan? I believe it was very effortless for him to reach the third level,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“Then, since the time when your ancestor created the Martial Comprehension Ground, has there been anyone else other than senior Zhan Haichuan who managed to reach the third level?” Chu Feng asked again.

“No, there hasn’t. Lord Zhan Haichuan is the only person. Apart from him, there has never been anyone that managed to ascend to the third level. In fact, there has never been anyone who managed to reach where you’re standing right now, big brother Chu Feng.”

“Thus, big brother Chu Feng, you are already extremely amazing. You are the second most amazing person apart from Lord Zhan Haichuan.”

“You are already extremely amazing to be able to accomplish all this. There is simply no need for you to force yourself like this,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“What Lingtong says is correct. Benefactor, you have already proved yourself. There is no need for you to force yourself to continue onward. There is no need for you to take this risk anymore,” Zhan Lingling echoed.

The way she saw it, if Chu Feng were to continue onward, he would definitely be seriously injured even if he wasn’t killed by the pressure. As for that, it was not something that they wished to see.

“I’m afraid that you all have most likely been deceived,” Chu Feng smiled and shook his head.

“Deceived?” Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling’s expression turned sluggish. They revealed puzzled looks.

“If only senior Zhan Haichuan had managed to reach where I’m standing, he... would definitely not have been able to easily ascend to the third level,” Chu Feng said.

“Big brother Chu Feng, what do you mean by that?” Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling asked in unison.

“There are bloodstains here. Although they have already dried up through the passage of time, I am still able to see the bloodstains. The bloodstains continue all the way up until the third level,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, Lord Zhan Haichuan was also overwhelmed by the enormous pressure and seriously injured?!” Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling were startled.

After all, the Zhan Haichuan that they’d heard about all their lives was the picture of utter perfection.

Zhan Haichuan had never been defeated in his entire life. Even for the flight of steps leading to the Martial Comprehension Ground’s third level that no one was able to scale, he managed to easily ascend it.

However now, after hearing what Chu Feng said, it would appear that Zhan Haichuan’s achievements were not true. At the very least... he had not managed to ascend the flight of steps to the third level with ease.

“Lingtong, it is impossible for me to determine that the bloodstains here are most definitely senior Zhan Haichuan’s. However, I am going to tell you one thing.”

“In the path of martial cultivation, one must go against the current. If you are to cower and stop, it will be very difficult to become strong.”

“As far as I’m concerned, this flight of steps is already no longer a mere flight of steps. It is also a path, a path to becoming stronger.”

“Perhaps it is not the only path to becoming stronger. However, I

do not wish to waste time finding another path.”

“Thus... no matter what, I must surmount it.”

“This is the courage that a martial cultivator should possess.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he took another step forward.

Upon reaching a step higher, the pressure grew much stronger again.

However, this time around, the trembling on Chu Feng’s body did not grow stronger. He had actually managed to withstand it.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you!!!” Zhan Lingtong was stunned by Chu Feng’s behavior.

He was already stupefied by Chu Feng. It was not the words that Chu Feng said to him. Rather, he was stupefied by Chu Feng’s willpower.

Chu Feng’s willpower was so unyielding and stubborn. To martial cultivators, this sort of willpower was extremely precious. Yet, it was also a sort of willpower that the great majority of people did not possess.

With each step forward, Chu Feng would take a short breather to adapt to the pressure.

Then, Chu Feng actually managed to, one step at a time, ascend to the top and reach the third level.

“Success! Big brother Chu Feng actually succeeded!”

“Big sister, did you see that?! Big brother Chu Feng managed to successfully ascend to the Martial Comprehension Ground’s third level!”

“Heavens! That is the third level that only Lord Zhan Haichuan has ever managed to ascend to!”

Zhan Lingtong was endlessly excited. He was so overjoyed; it was

as if the person that had managed to ascend to the third level was him.

“It would seem that geniuses are not only determined by their talent. More than that, it is by their effort.”

Zhan Lingling’s eyes were also filled with shock. At that moment, she was clenching her fists tightly.

The reason for that was because she had come to a sudden realization that it was not only her talent that was inferior to Chu Feng’s; her effort was also inferior to Chu Feng’s.

It was no wonder that she had lived for so many years more than Chu Feng, yet was so much weaker than him.

Chu Feng had managed to reach the third level. Upon reaching the third level, he felt relieved.

The frightening pressure that was capable of stressing his body and soul to the brink of exploding had disappeared at the same time.

The journey upward was truly difficult.

However, when Chu Feng saw the scene before him, the place where Zhan Haichuan had trained, and sensed the martial comprehensions contained in the walls, the ground and even the air, he felt that all of it was worth it.

“Chu Feng, you’ve succeeded. Earlier, your eyes were so fuzzy that I was truly worried that you’d fall down again.”

“Never would I have expected those flight of steps to be so difficult to ascend. Even you nearly failed,” Her Lady Queen was also overjoyed. The reason for that was because she was truly worried for Chu Feng earlier.

As for Chu Feng, he turned around and took a glance at the flight of steps he had just ascended.

Bloodstains were still present on the steps. That was Chu Feng’s



blood. Although there wasn't a lot of blood, it was still present on each and every step.

Thus, from a glance, one could tell that Chu Feng had walked through his own blood to ascend the flight of steps.

Seeing the flight of steps, Chu Feng sighed emotionally.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on his face. He said, "The path to becoming stronger has never been that simple."

"However... I am fond of that sort of path."

# Chapter 2459 – Two Years In The Blink Of An Eye

---

Chu Feng stood at the edge of the third level and looked downward. Emotions filled his eyes.

Down below, Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong were able to faintly see Chu Feng's silhouette. Admiration filled their eyes.

To them, Chu Feng was already no longer an ordinary individual. Rather, he resembled a god.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng clenched his right hand. Golden strands of light began to faintly spill out of his fingers.

At the moment when Chu Feng opened his hand, a circular title plate appeared on his palm.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng tossed away the title plate. The title plate began to roll down the flight of steps all the way to the second level.

“That is?” Zhan Lingtong picked up the title plate and revealed a puzzled expression.

“Lingtong, keep that title plate. If the Monstrous Clan is to come in the future, you merely need to pinch apart that title plate. Regardless of what cultivation I might have at that time, I will definitely come to your assistance,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he smiled at Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong before turning around to leave.

Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong were no longer able to see Chu Feng's silhouette, as Chu Feng had entered the third level.

After arriving in the third level, Chu Feng chose a place adjacent to where Zhan Haichuan had trained to sit down.

“Senior Zhan Haichuan, allow this junior to experience what you have experienced.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he closed his eyes and began to wholeheartedly concentrate on comprehending everything there.

As for the third level of the Martial Comprehension Ground, it did not disappoint Chu Feng.

Sure enough, that place contained extremely powerful martial comprehension.

Since the martial comprehension contained on the third level was hidden very deep, Chu Feng made a decision to train there. Until he managed to reach a cultivation that was to his satisfaction, he did not plan to leave that place.

After the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief finished his emergency meeting, he immediately came to find out that Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong had lured away the guards in charge of watching Chu Feng and stolen the keys to Chu Feng's prison cell.

Originally, the Clan Chief was overwhelmed with anger, and planned to punish his children. However, upon rushing to the prison cell and discovering that Chu Feng was still inside the prison cell, his anger instantly vanished.

After all, with Chu Feng still inside the prison cell, it meant that his children had not overstepped their bounds. At the very most, they had held the intention to help Chu Feng, but had not dared to do so.

Of course, he had no idea that inside the prison cell was not Chu Feng, but rather his clone. Chu Feng's actual body was currently training in the third level of their Martial Comprehension Ground.

.....

Time flew past. In the blink of an eye, two years had passed.

Over the course of those two years, from time to time, people from the Ancient Era's War Clan would go and urge Chu Feng to return the Ancient Era's War Sword to them.

Merely, as Chu Feng always refused them, they also came less and less frequently to visit Chu Feng and urge him to return the Ancient Era's War Sword.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that the Ancient Era's War Clan never planned to kill Chu Feng during that period of time.

They felt that if Chu Feng were to truly refuse to return the Ancient Era's War Sword to them, they would, at the very most, place Chu Feng under house arrest the entire time.

Of course, they had no idea that the Chu Feng that they had imprisoned the entire time was merely Chu Feng's clone.

That said, the battle between the Ancient Era's War Clan and the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had grown fiercer and fiercer within those two years

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had gathered all of their battle power to unleash a final offensive against the Ancient Era's War Clan.

They intended to completely destroy the Ancient Era's War Clan.

“Rumble!!!”

Under the darkened sky, flames of war scattered everywhere. The final battle between the Ancient Era's War Clan and the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had finally begun.

Not only were there thunderous explosions, but the sounds of the earth sinking and the bitter screams from the crowd could also be heard.

The Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's army was led personally by the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. With their Clan Chief at the vanguard, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan broke

through the Ancient Era's War Clan's grand formation. Like a hot knife through butter, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan began to slaughter their way to the Ancient Era's War Clan's headquarters.

At that moment, a monstrous beast emitting the aura of a rank five Martial Ancestor emerged from among the Monstrous Clan's troops. With an enormous black ax in hand, a robust build and a height greater than three meters, he faced toward the sky and shouted, "Today is the doomsday of your Ancient Era's War Clan!"

As he shouted, he was unrestrainedly killing the Ancient Era's War Clansmen. That man was too powerful, so powerful that there was not a single person in the Ancient Era's War Clan capable of contending against him.

As for that person, he was naturally none other than the Clan Chief of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

"Puu~~~"

Suddenly, a splash of blood splattered forth. It caused everyone from the War Clan to tense up.

The reason for that was because that blood was from their Clan Chief; their War Clan's Clan Chief had been injured. His chest has been pierced through, and blood was flowing steadily from his chest.

Furthermore, the person that had defeated him was actually not the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. Rather, it was another person from the Monstrous Clan, an expert that possessed the cultivation of a rank four Martial Ancestor like the War Clan's Clan Chief.

"Truly trash. You are unable to even defeat my subordinate. It would seem that there is simply no need for me to act personally today in order to exterminate your War Clan," The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief mocked.

"Monstrous Clan's younger generation, don't you dare act savage here!!!"

A shout was heard. That shout shook everyone present.

Then, an elderly man appeared before the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief out of thin air. Then, that old man waved his sleeve, and a strong wind immediately swept forth. The wind forcibly smashed away the Monstrous Clan's expert that had injured the War Clan's Clan Chief.

“Grandfather!!!”

“Milord!!!”

Upon seeing that individual, the Ancient Era's War Clansmen all reacted as if they had seen their savior.

The reason for that was because that old man was the person who had been in closed-door training for a very long time, the person that the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan was afraid of the entire time.

He was the father of the War Clan's Clan Chief, the grandfather of Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling, the existence that had grasped one of the Three Great Secret Skills, the Ancient Era's War Axe.

He was... Zhan Yuanmo.

“Zhan Yuanmo, you are truly useless. I have given you this much time, yet you actually still haven't managed to reach a breakthrough, you are still a rank four Martial Ancestor.”

After seeing Zhan Yuanmo, the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was only surprised for a split second. Soon, only contempt remained in his eyes.

The reason for that was because he had discovered that even though Zhan Yuanmo had been in closed-door training for so long, he was still only a rank four Martial Ancestor.

Before, the War Clan had let out news stating that Zhan Yuanmo had long since broken through to rank five Martial Ancestor. That

was why the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had not dared to attack the Ancient Era's War Clan for a final life and death battle for so long. That fear had caused them to delay their attack for two entire years.

However, in the past two years, they had not discovered Zhan Yuanmo, and the War Clan had also not shown any signs of a counterattack.

Thus, they grew suspicious. In the end, they determined that Zhan Yuanmo had simply not reached a breakthrough. Thus, they decided to attack the War Clan for a final battle.

And now, the appearance of Zhan Yuanmo had proven that their guess was correct. As such, it inevitably caused the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, as well as his entire army, to feel complacent.

They felt that as long as Zhan Yuanmo was still a rank four Martial Ancestor, the battle might very likely be the final battle between their Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan and the Ancient Era's War Clan.

Furthermore, there was an enormous chance that they would win the battle.

"As long as this old man is here, don't you all dare behave atrociously in our Ancient Era's War Clan."

Zhan Yuanmo flipped his wrist, and a large axe appeared in his hand.

The axe was copper in color, and seemed to be made of brass. Yet, the enormous might and aura it emitted could not be affected by its color and appearance.

It was a weapon, an actual Ancestral Armament. Being held in Zhan Yuanmo's hand, that Ancestral Armament was emitting an extremely frightening power.

"Yoh, you're but a rank four Martial Ancestor, what makes you

think that you can contend against me? Today... even if you are to join hands with your son, you will still meet your death by my hands.”

However, when faced with such a powerful Zhan Yuanmo, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief did not fear in the slightest.

“Boom~~~”

The enormous black axe the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief held in his hand was suddenly swept forth. Immediately, a black ray of light slashed across, straight towards Zhan Yuanmo.

Once that black ray of light appeared, everyone in the Ancient Era’s War Clan revealed ashen looks.

As the saying goes, one will know the ability of an expert the moment they reveal themselves.

When the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief unleashed that slash, they realized that even their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s strongest Zhan Yuanmo would not be a match for him.

After all, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief was a rank five Martial Ancestor, an entire level of cultivation above Zhan Yuanmo.



# Chapter 2460 – Unfavorable Battle Situation

---

“What makes me think that I can contend against you? This is what!”

However, faced with the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan Chief’s attack, Zhan Yuanmo’s expression remained unchanged.

He held his Ancestral Armament with his right hand and formed a palm with his left hand. Toward the incoming black slash, he shot forth his palm.

“Clank~~~”

The next moment, the sound of metals colliding with one another was heard. The black ray of light was actually forcibly beaten back.

At the same time, golden light began to spring forth everywhere as a hundred-meter-long enormous golden axe appeared in the sky.

The moment the enormous golden axe appeared, an extremely frightening aura appeared with it.

At that moment, Zhan Yuanmo’s aura was actually not at all inferior to that of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief.

“The secret skill, Ancient Era’s War Axe?”

At that moment, the people of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan revealed stunned expressions. In fact, even their Clan Chief had an enormous change in expression.

Actually, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief had broken through to rank five Martial Ancestor for more than two years now. The other reason why he had been afraid to attack the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s headquarters was because he was afraid of Zhan Yuanmo’s secret skill, the Ancient Era’s War Axe.

Today, the Ancient Era's War Axe was revealed before him. Sure enough, it was no small matter.

The Ancient Era's War Axe was extraordinarily domineering. It had the aura of a ruler. Even without Zhan Yuanmo in the picture, merely that Ancient Era's War Axe's aura was already frightening enough.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen all grew afraid. One by one, they began to retreat.

"While you all might not have experienced the might of the Ancient Era's War Axe before, I'm certain that your seniors must've mentioned it to you all before, no?"

"If you all are to retreat now, I am still able to consider letting you all go. Else... do not blame this old man for unleashing a slaughter," With a malevolent expression, Zhan Yuanmo spoke coldly.

"Humph, for the past two years, you've been in closed-door training the entire time, afraid to fight me. This already revealed that you are not confident in being able to defeat me," The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief said.

"If I am to truly use the Ancient Era's War Axe, even if I must sacrifice my life, I will still be able to kill you," Zhan Yuanmo said.

"Is that so? Then allow me to experience whether or not your Ancient Era's War Axe really does possess such legendary power."

The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief sneered. Then, intense killing intent emerged in his eyes.

He pointed his weapon forward and shouted loudly, "Soldiers of the Monstrous Clan, listen up! In today's battle, it is either the War Clan that will be extinguished, or our Monstrous Clan that will be extinguished! Kill them all!!!"

"Kill!!!"

The next moment, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's soldiers reacted as if they were given an order of death.

Not only did they stop becoming timid, but their morale also rose dramatically. As if they had gone berserk, they once again rushed forth to confront and kill the Ancient Era's War Clan's army.

They had an attitude that made it seem like they had to exterminate all of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen today.

“Kill them!!!”

As for the Ancient Era's War Clan, they were not to be outdone. Their vast army was determined to battle to the death for the sake of their survival and honor.

Today, they were going to fight to the death against the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

In the blink of an eye, the two armies collided with one another, killing one another.

“This won't do. Big sister, this won't do. Over the past two years, our Ancient Era's War Clan has grown much weaker. We are simply no match for the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.”

“Furthermore, even if grandfather is truly able to kill the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief by relying on the Ancient Era's War Axe, he will definitely end up losing his life.”

“At that moment, our War Clan will still not be a match for the Monstrous Clan, we will still be defeated,” Zhan Lingtong said to Zhan Lingling in panic.

“I can tell even without you mentioning it,” Zhan Lingling also had a very ugly expression on her face.

“Let's go and find big brother Chu Feng. He said that we can call for him if the Monstrous Clan is to come and attack us. He said that he would definitely help us.”

As Zhan Lingtong spoke, he took out a circular title plate. It was

the title plate Chu Feng had given him two years ago.

Upon seeing that title plate, Zhan Lingling also revealed a change in expression. She still remembered the scene of the youth ascending to the Martial Comprehension Ground's third level two years ago.

Her heart still shook upon recalling that scene now. After all, that youth did not only rely on his talent to ascend to the third level. In addition to his talent, there was also his unyielding willpower.

Chu Feng could be said to be the person that she felt the greatest admiration for so far. In fact, her admiration for Chu Feng might even surpass her admiration for Zhan Haichuan.

After all, no matter how powerful Zhan Haichuan might be, he was only a legend. He was someone whom she had never met before.

As for Chu Feng, she had clearly experienced his strength.

Chu Feng held an irreplaceable status in her heart.

However, even with that being the case, Zhan Lingling still shook her head. She said, "If Chu Feng is to join the battle, he will indeed help our Ancient Era's War Clan enormously. However, the ones that are difficult to deal with right now are all Martial Ancestor-level experts."

"Facing those experts, even if Chu Feng is to join the battle, he will definitely not be a match for them."

"If we are to call Chu Feng for assistance, we will end up harming him. Rather than calling him and causing him to throw his life away, it is better that we allow him to continue his closed-door training."

"After all, even if the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan is capable of eliminating our Ancient Era's War Clan, they are definitely not able to set foot onto the Martial Comprehension Ground's third

level. With Chu Feng's talent, he will definitely be able to defeat the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan one day and help our War Clan get revenge," Zhan Lingling said.

Zhan Lingtong felt what Zhan Lingling said to be very sensible.

Indeed, no matter how strong Chu Feng might be, what sort of progress in cultivation could he possibly obtain in a short two years' time?

If it was said that Chu Feng was a Martial Ancestor-level expert now, then Zhan Lingtong would definitely believe it. However, if it was said that Chu Feng could contend against the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, that rank five Martial Ancestor-level expert, Zhan Lingtong would not believe that to be possible.

Although it was now the moment of life and death for their Ancient Era's War Clan, although Zhan Lingtong hoped that someone would be able to help their Ancient Era's War Clan, what would Chu Feng possibly be able to do even if he were to come down from the Martial Comprehension Ground's third level? Wouldn't calling him only serve to have him throw his life away in vain?

When recalling how affectionate and true Chu Feng had been to them, Zhan Lingtong felt even more that he could not be selfish with no regard for others. Slowly, Zhan Lingtong pulled back the circular title plate in his hand. He planned to place it back into his bosom.

"Wuuahh~~~"

However, right at that moment, a scream sounded from the sky. Following that, a spray of blood sprinkled down.

"Grandfather!!!"

Seeing this scene, Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling immediately revealed worried and pained expressions.

The blood was from their grandfather, Zhan Yuanmo. Zhan

Yuanmo was actually already injured. His entire left arm had been sliced off.

Although Zhan Yuanmo immediately used a special method to reform his lost arm, he was unable to erase the bloodstains.

As for the thing that he was most unable to erase, it was the fact that he had his arm sliced off by the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief stared at Zhan Yuanmo, and then spoke in a very confident manner. "You've lost."

"'Tis but a minor injury. As far as I'm concerned, this neither hurts nor tickles. The outcome of the battle has yet to be decided," Zhan Yuanmo said in refusal to admit defeat.

"Oh?" The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief lightly raised his eyebrows. Then, he said, "Are you certain?"

"Of course," Zhan Yuanmo refused to accept his defeat. He moved his left hand, and then started to attack the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief again.

"Puu!!!"

Suddenly, Zhan Yuanmo sprayed out a mouthful of blood and revealed an incomparably painful expression. Then, he actually half-kneeled in midair.

At that moment, his expression turned very pale, and his aura became extremely weak. Shock filled his aged face.

The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that his secret skill, the Ancient Era's War Axe, was actually also growing weaker.

"How can this be?"

It was not only Zhan Yuanmo that was puzzled. The others of the Ancient Era's War Clan were also puzzled by what was happening.

That attack had clearly left only a superficial wound. For an expert like Zhan Yuanmo, it should not have been able to affect

him at all.

“Did you think that my previous attack was only an ordinary attack?”

“I might as well tell you the truth. What I used earlier was a secret skill especially meant to restrain your Ancient Era’s War Axe,” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief spoke complacently.

“Who are you trying to scare here? There is no such thing as a secret skill that can restrain the Ancient Era’s War Axe. Furthermore, I’ve never heard of your Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan having some sort of secret skill.”

“Exactly what sort of despicable means did you use to injure my father?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief pointed at the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief angrily. He did not believe what the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief had just said.

“Just because there wasn’t such a secret skill before doesn’t mean that there isn’t one now. While you can refuse to believe what I said now, you will definitely believe me once I tell you its creator.”

“This secret skill of mine is called Enemy Restraining Slash.”

“It is something that our clan’s senior, Lord Yao Xing, created with all of his energy,” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief said proudly.

“Yao Xing? It’s actually Yao Xing?!!!”

Hearing that name, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen all revealed unease and terror.

# Chapter 2461 – Soaring Nine Lightnings

---

Yao Xing was truly a grand individual. He was a super genius who had appeared at the same time as Zhan Haichuan.

Back then, had Zhan Haichuan not appeared in the Ancient Era's War Clan, then, with how talented Yao Xing was, he would've already completely obliterated the Ancient Era's War Clan.

Although Yao Xing ended up being defeated by Zhan Haichuan, had his cultivation crippled by Zhan Haichuan and ended up dying pitifully a few years later, Yao Xing's great name was still deeply engraved into the hearts of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen. They all knew how powerful Yao Xing was.

If it were someone else that had created the secret skill, they would really have not believed it. However, since it was Yao Xing, they truly believed it.

The reason for that was because Yao Xing possessed the capability to create that secret skill.

“Once struck by my secret skill, you will no longer be able to continue to use the Ancient Era's War Axe. If you are to continue to use it, you will suffer a backlash from it.”

“The more power you put forth to use the Ancient Era's War Axe, the greater the backlash will be. If you insist on using the Ancient Era's War Axe now, merely the backlash will be sufficient to kill you.”

“Thus, you will no longer be able to utilize the Ancient Era's War Axe anymore. Without the Ancient Era's War Axe, what could you possibly contend against me with?”

“Your Ancient Era's War Clan is destined to be extinguished today,” The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief declared.

“Heeaahh!!!”



Suddenly, Zhan Yuanmo let out an ear-piercing snarl. At the same time he did that, he shot forth his left palm explosively. He wanted to utilize the Ancient Era's War Axe again.

“Puu~~~”

However, like last time, he soon sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

The very next moment, his body started to sway, and then he started to fall from midair. He had actually lost the ability to fly.

“Father!” Seeing his father fall, the War Clan's Clan Chief hurriedly flew up to catch the falling Zhan Yuanmo.

The current Zhan Yuanmo's aura was even weaker than before. He was so weak that he was unable to even hold onto his Ancestral Armament. He had completely lost all of his battle power.

“Haha. The Ancient Era's War Clan, the Three Great Secret Skills. It turns out, they are but jokes.”

“Zhan Yuanmo, if I knew that you would be unable to withstand a single blow, I wouldn't have waited two years.”

The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief laughed in an ear-piercing manner. When his laughter reached the ears of the Ancient Era's War Clan's men, they were like sharp blades piercing through their hearts, their egos and their final hopes.

At that moment, everyone belonging to the Ancient Era's War Clan, including their Clan Chief, had dejected expressions on their faces.

They knew that if even Zhan Yuanmo had been defeated, they would definitely be exterminated.

“Damn it! We cannot wait for death like this!”

However, right at the moment when everyone was in despair, Zhan Lingtong let out a furious shout.

Everyone heard his shout. Regardless of whether it was the Monstrous Clansmen or the War Clansmen, there were people that

turned their gazes to him.

However, upon seeing Zhan Lingtong, they realized that his shout was merely there to boost the War Clan's morale. Yet, at such a time, what use was there in saying those words? Thus, the crowd all felt that Zhan Lingtong was a joke.

However, no one noticed that when Zhan Lingtong let out that furious shout, he had also pinched the circular title plate he held in his hand.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment. Deep inside the Ancient Era's War Clan's headquarters, in the third level of the Martial Comprehension Ground, a pair of eyes suddenly opened.

“The Monstrous Clan has finally come?”

A sigh was heard. Then, an individual slowly stood up and turned his gaze toward the direction of the battlefield.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng's aura was still that of a rank nine Half Martial Ancestor, the same as he had been two years ago. Merely, the current him, regardless of whether it was his aura or his expression, was completely different from two years ago.

If one had to describe this difference, it would be that he was confident.

Compared to two years ago, Chu Feng was a hundred times more confident.

.....

“Putt~~~”

Right at that moment, the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief did something that puzzled everyone. He actually knelt in midair and raised his Ancestral Armament with both hands. He faced his head toward the sky and then performed a kowtow.

“Lord Yao Xing, today, this junior has managed to help you

accomplish your grand desire.”

“Lord Yao Xing, if Your Greatness is able to hear this in heaven, please open your eyes.”

“I hope that you will be able to bear witness to the grand occasion where our Monstrous Clan will eliminate the War Clan.”

After he finished saying those words, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief stood up. At that moment, deep killing intent filled his eyes.

Upon seeing the gaze of the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief, the people of the Ancient Era’s War Clan were all completely dejected. They felt that the end of their Ancient Era’s War Clan had arrived.

At that moment, they felt extremely unreconciled. At that moment when they were feeling unreconciled, countless people began to hope that someone could come and save their Ancient Era’s War Clan.

But, when even their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s strongest secret skill, the Ancient Era’s War Sword, was no longer present, what or who could possibly save them?

Thus, what they felt was merely an extravagant hope, something impossible to accomplish.

Everyone in the Ancient Era’s War Clan understood this. That was why they all felt such great despair.

At that moment, many people let go of their weapons and decided to give up on resisting.

They closed their eyes and prepared to wait for death.

“Sure enough, you’re a bunch of trash.”

Upon seeing the reaction of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief grew even more complacent.

“Exterminate this bunch of trash!” Suddenly, an order was given.

“Kill!!!” The next moment, all of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous

Clansmen raised their weapons. They planned to unleash a massacre.

“I shall see who dares!!!” Right at that moment, a thunder-like voice exploded in the distance.

At that moment, not to mention the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clansmen, even the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were stunned.

That voice was incomparably deep and resounding. Furthermore, it was extraordinarily domineering. It was evident that that voice had not come from the mouth of an ordinary individual.

Furthermore, as that voice originated from deep within the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s headquarters, the crowd realized that the person who had spoken was a helper of the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

The Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief narrowed his brows and asked with a stern voice, “Who is it?!”

“Chu Feng,” That voice sounded again.

“Chu Feng?” Hearing that name, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clansmen all revealed puzzled expressions. As for the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen, they all revealed disappointed expressions.

Who was Chu Feng? Practically everyone in their Ancient Era’s War Clan knew of him. Although Chu Feng was a genius, he was merely their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s prisoner.

Thus, at that moment, many of the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen revealed wry smiles.

When they had heard the voice earlier, they had actually hoped that the person who spoke would be able to save them.

However, upon thinking that the person that they hoped to be able to save them was actually the person that they had imprisoned, they felt themselves to be truly ridiculous.

“Chu Feng? Who is Chu Feng?” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief

asked. The reason for that was because he had never heard of the name Chu Feng before.

“Who I am is not important. What is important is that if you all are to retreat now, I will only cripple your cultivations and spare your dog lives.”

“However, if you do not do as I say, I will have no choice but to kill you,” Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

“Kill me? Hahahaha!!!”

“Ridiculous! Truly ridiculous! Even Zhan Yuanmo was defeated by me, who among the War Clan could possibly contend against me?”

“Ancient Era’s War Clan, I am truly in awe of you. Do you only know how to bluff to scare others?”

The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief laughed wildly. The way he saw it, Chu Feng was merely bluffing. He felt that there was simply no one in the Ancient Era’s War Clan that could contend against him.

“Seems like you’re not planning to retreat, and prefer to die, right?” Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

At that moment, the people of the War Clans all felt very helpless. They truly never expected that Chu Feng was actually also capable of shooting off his mouth.

Kill the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief? When he couldn’t even defeat their War Clan’s Clan Chief, what made him think that he could kill the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief?

As for the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief, his laughter grew even louder now.

He said, “Come, kill me! I am truly itching for you to kill me! Hahahaha!!!”

He said those words while laughing. His words were filled with disdain and mockery.

“Very well, I will satisfy you.”

Chu Feng’s voice was heard again.

“Rumble~~~”

The very next moment, incomparably ear-piercing rumbles sounded in the sky. At the same time, magnificent and dazzling light shone in the sky.

“Heavens, those are?!”

At that moment, all those who raised their heads toward the sky, regardless of whether they were from the War Clan or the Monstrous Clan, regardless of their cultivation, all revealed an enormous change in expression as shock filled their eyes.

Thunderclouds had densely covered the sky. Countless nine-colored lightnings were spiraling in the sky.

Each and every lightning bolt resembled an enormous dragon. Each and every dragon emitted an inestimable aura.

Those auras oppressed the crowd to a state of being unable to breathe easily. It was as if there was a boundlessly enormous boulder crushing down on their hearts, oppressing their souls and causing them to lose the strength to resist.

Before such an aura, they felt only a single sensation. That was, that they were so very small.

# Chapter 2462 – Unleashing Divine Might

---

“What are those?!”

As they saw the scene in the sky, everyone revealed despair in their eyes.

“Snap~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the Nine Divine Lightnings up high in the sky interweaved with one another. Like a nine-colored lightning dragon, it struck down from the ninth heaven.

The ground was brightly lit as it was covered by the splendor of the nine-colored radiance, by that divine might.

Witnessing that scene, countless people fell to their butts powerlessly and began to shiver. They had lost the strength to support themselves.

It was not that the oppressive might from the incoming lightning strike had oppressed them to such a state. Rather, it was purely because they were deeply frightened by it.

They felt that as long as such a frightening lightning bolt were to strike, they would definitely be killed.

Never had they ever experienced such a frightening and irresistible power in their entire lives.

If it were to strike, they would definitely die!!!

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the nine-colored lightning dragon struck. It landed deep in the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s headquarters. Yet, it did not create world-shaking devastation like they had anticipated. It was as if it had disappeared in midair. Everyone managed to come out from it unscathed.

“What is going on?”

The crowd were speechless and stunned. Confusion filled their eyes.

They felt that even if that overwhelmingly frightening lightning did not destroy the entire War Clan’s Ancient Domain, it would definitely be able to obliterate all of them.

Yet, after it struck, there was actually no destruction at all. This caused them to feel extremely confused.

“Rumble~~~”

After a short moment passed, another lightning bolt struck from the ninth heaven.

The lightning this time around was not interweaved with nine colors. Rather, it was merely one of the nine-colored lightnings.

However, this one lightning bolt was actually thicker than the previous nine lightnings combined. It was also much more ferocious, and many times stronger.

Like the lightning bolt before it, this lightning bolt also struck at the same place. Furthermore... it also did not create any sound.

“Exactly what is happening?” The crowd became even more perplexed. They were at a complete loss as to what was going on.

“Rumble~~~”

Immediately after the second lightning bolt, a third, fourth, fifth, sixth and seventh lightning bolt struck in succession.

Each was stronger than the last. Each was more ferocious than the last.

However, they all ended the same way. Although they were extremely frightening, they showed no actions. Each time they struck, they disappeared.

If something like that were to happen once or twice, it would still



be tolerable. Yet, it had happened eight times in succession.

This caused the people from the War Clan and the Monstrous Clan to realize that even though the lightning was extremely mighty, it seemed to not possess any destructive power.

“Strange. Why did all eight lightning bolts strike the same location?” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief pondered.

Although the lightning did not cause any destruction, he still felt fear toward it from the bottom of his heart. He wanted to know exactly what had caused that lightning.

“Lord Clan Chief, it seems that the place where those lightning bolts struck was the same place where that Chu Feng’s voice sounded from,” A Monstrous Clansman said.

“Now that you mention it, that is indeed the case. Could it be that those lightning bolts were caused by that Chu Feng?” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief started to ponder. Unease started to emerge in his eyes.

“How could that be? How could he possess that sort of ability? The way I see it, it’s more likely that he displeased the gods with his boasting, and was struck by lightning as punishment,” The Monstrous Clansmen began to laugh.

“Struck by lightning because of boasting? Your imagination is truly decent,” Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

Merely, this time around, Chu Feng’s voice was very close to them. Furthermore, as Chu Feng’s voice sounded, Chu Feng also appeared.

Chu Feng was currently walking toward the battlefield in midair.

“Chu Feng, it’s really Chu Feng?”

“How... how did he get out?”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, compared to the people from the Ancient

Era's Monstrous Clan, the people from the Ancient Era's War Clan were more confused.

The reason for that was because they felt that it should be impossible for Chu Feng to escape their prison. Furthermore, if Chu Feng were to escape, he would definitely attack them.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Ancient Era's War Clan's men. Instead, he walked past them, and arrived at the forefront of the Ancient Era's War Clan.

"Boy, who are you? Are you a part of the Ancient Era's War Clan?" The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief asked with a stern voice.

He was not looking down on Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he was surprised to discover that he was unable to see through the cultivation of the young man before him.

"If you are to kneel down and kowtow to me right now, I will leave you a complete corpse," Chu Feng said to the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

"You!!!" The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had an enormous change in expression. It was one thing if Chu Feng did not answer his question. Yet, he never expected that Chu Feng would actually say that sort of thing right away.

"Arrogant bastard, you dare speak to our Clan Chief in such a manner?! Watch as I cut off your tongue and tear your mouth apart!"

A Monstrous Clansman grew incomparably furious. He raised his weapon and soared into the air. With overwhelming killing intent, he flew straight for Chu Feng.

"Bang~~~"

"Wuaahh~~~"

However, before he could approach Chu Feng, he seemed to have collided into an invisible wall and sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

He was seriously injured. Then, like a loose kite, he fell from the sky, his life or death uncertain.

“.....”

Witnessing that scene, regardless of whether it was the people from the Monstrous Clan or the people from the War Clan, they all had an enormous change in expression. The reason for that was because the monstrous beast that had charged to attack Chu Feng earlier was a rank one Martial Ancestor.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had clearly unleashed his aura earlier. Yet, the people present were still unable to determine his cultivation.

However, one thing was certain. This young man who was not even thirty years old possessed strength that surpassed that of a rank one Martial Ancestor.

But, to be able to obtain the cultivation of Martial Ancestor at such a young age was already extremely rare. Yet, to be able to easily crush a rank one Martial Ancestor, was simply unheard of.

“Exactly who are you?” The Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief now looked to Chu Feng with a gaze that was not only serious, but also contained a bit of restraining fear.

“I gave you a chance to keep your life earlier. Yet, you did not seize that chance. Thus... you are destined to die here today, destined to die by my hands.”

Chu Feng spoke indifferently. He had completely ignored the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief’s question, and only bothered to express his own intentions.

However, although Chu Feng was acting like that, he did not make others feel that he was being arrogant. On the contrary, they could only feel his dominance over everyone else.

“Big sister, big brother Chu Feng, he’s simply too cool!” Zhan Lingtong was baffled by Chu Feng’s presence.

As for Zhan Lingling, her face had turned red. She was unable to take her eyes off Chu Feng. Adoration and admiration filled her eyes.

Courageous, capable of clearly differentiating gratitudes and grudges and overwhelming talent; how many women could possibly not be captivated by such a Chu Feng?

“Don’t you act this excessively!!!” At that moment, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief revealed an angry look.

As the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief, was the current strongest existence in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain, he felt that his honor and status was being gravely challenged by Chu Feng.

Thus, he must act. He must use his powerful strength to retrieve his honor and everything else.

He held his Ancestral Armament axe and rushed forth to attack Chu Feng, shooting a black slash toward him.

He had not unleashed all of his power. On the contrary, he did not even use a martial skill with his attack. His attack was merely an ordinary slash. He was only planning to probe Chu Feng’s strength.

That said, his rank five Martial Ancestor cultivation and heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation had still allowed him to become the ruler of the world.

As such, although his attack was only an ordinary slash, everyone felt fatal danger from it.

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s men all closed their eyes.

They did not expect that Chu Feng would step forward bravely to help their Ancient Era’s War Clan at such a time.

It was precisely because of how righteous and loyal Chu Feng was that they did not wish to personally witness Chu Feng’s miserable

death by that slash.

“Humph!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng let out a light snort.

After that cold snort sounded, the space before Chu Feng started to distort.

Immediately after that, the slash sent forth by the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief entered that distorted space. Like a piece of rock thrown into the vast sea, it disappeared.

“This!!!” The expressions of the Monstrous Clansmen changed enormously. It was only at that moment that they realized how powerful that young man was.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, he...”

As for the War Clan’s men, they were also shocked and frightened. Their expressions were exceptionally strange. After all, they had imprisoned Chu Feng for such a long time.

Never had they ever imagined that their prisoner would actually be so powerful, so powerful that he could neutralize the attack of the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief without even moving.

One must know that the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief was a rank five Martial Ancestor, an existence that no one in their Ancient Era’s War Clan was capable of withstanding.

An attack unleashed by such a powerful existence was actually neutralized by Chu Feng in such a deemphasizing manner.

Most importantly, Chu Feng still hadn’t revealed his cultivation yet.

They felt this to be truly inconceivable, truly frightening.

“Who is this young man? Is he someone from our Ancient Era’s War Clan?” Zhan Yuanmo asked the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief beside him.

“Father, Chu Feng is not from our Ancient Era’s War Clan. Rather, he’s from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“He’s actually from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? No wonder, no wonder he’s so powerful. Is he a guest of our Ancient Era’s War Clan? This is truly great... today, our Ancient Era’s War Clan will be saved,” Zhan Yuanmo was truly glad. Gratefulness filled his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

As for the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief, he wanted to say something, but ended up hesitating. A guilty, ashamed and self-blaming expression was present on his face.

As for the elders standing behind him, they had the same sort of expression as him.

After all, they knew very well that Chu Feng had been in their Ancient Era’s War Clan for two years now. Yet, during those two years, he had never received the treatment of a honored guest. Rather, he had become their prisoner.

Most importantly, before they had imprisoned Chu Feng, Chu Feng had saved their lives.

They knew very well that they were truly inhumane with their actions.

As matters stood, they truly regretted their actions.

# Chapter 2463 – Rank Seven Martial Ancestor

---

“Is this all the ability you possess? Turns out the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan is only this powerful.”

“I’ll give you another chance. This is the final chance.”

“I’ll stand here without moving. I will allow you to attack me as you wish.”

“However, if you are still unable to kill me this time around, I’m sorry, but I will have to attack you,” Chu Feng said to the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Ssss~~~”

Hearing those words, many of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s men were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Arrogance. Oh how arrogant this was. Yet, Chu Feng’s arrogance caused their blood to race. They began to feel admiration for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

As for Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling, they were so excited that their hearts were about to jump out of their chests. They thought that Chu Feng would have become powerful, but they had never imagined that Chu Feng would become so unimaginably powerful.

He had actually reached a level where he was able to completely disregard the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief.

Most importantly, the current Chu Feng had already managed to completely suppress the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief in terms of his manner of bearing.

At that moment, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief was no longer calm and collected. His brows were tightly narrowed, and he was

dripping with sweat. This was the first time that anyone had seen the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief react in such a manner.

“Are you certain that you will not fight back?” The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief asked sternly.

“Heh...” Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said, “A rank five Martial Ancestor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. You're very strong.”

“However, with merely that, you are still not qualified to have me fight back. Go ahead and attack me. As long as you have the ability, my life will be yours to take.”

Chu Feng placed his hands behind his back. He was indicating to the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief that he would neither hit back nor dodge his attacks.

Most importantly, he really did not place the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief in his eyes at all.

“Ignorant person of the younger generation. Since you are this arrogant, I will have you die here!!!”

Seeing Chu Feng like that, ruthlessness flashed through the eyes of the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

Suddenly, the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief flipped his palm. Then, three red medicinal pellets appeared in his hand.

The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief swallowed the medicinal pellets with a single gulp. The next moment, crimson gaseous flames began to flare up from his body.

At that moment, the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief's aura also became exceptionally fierce.

Furthermore, his aura was still increasing unceasingly. His eyes turned crimson, and even his skin turned crimson. A red vortex emerged on his forehead.

The current him simply did not resemble a person at all, nor did



he resemble a monstrous beast. Rather, he was simply a demon.

“Forbidden Medicine: Red Demon Pellet. He actually took three of them? He is planning to gamble with his life here.”

“Young Hero Chu Feng, be careful. That Forbidden Medicine: Red Demon Pellet is the Monstrous Clan’s secret treasure. You absolutely must not be careless.”

Seeing that the situation had turned bad, Zhan Yuanmo spoke to warn Chu Feng. As someone who had fought against the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan for a long time, he knew very well how powerful the Forbidden Medicine: Red Demon Pellet was.

“Senior, thank you for your warning. I know what to do,” Chu Feng lightly smiled at Zhan Yuanmo.

That said, even though Chu Feng said those words, his expression remained unchanged. He continued to have the same confident smile on his face the entire time.

“Watch my attack!”

Abruptly, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief started to attack. He tightly gripped the enormous black axe he held in his hand and, with an aura infinitely close to that of a rank six Martial Ancestor, slashed down at Chu Feng.

“Snap~~~”

As the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief hacked down with his axe, an enormously large axe appeared out of thin air.

That axe was not an Ancestral Armament. Rather, it was formed with martial power. The moment it appeared, heaven and earth immediately went dark. Even space itself was hacked in two.

A black and crimson slash ran through heaven and earth as it came slicing down at Chu Feng.

At that moment, all of the Ancient Era’s War Clans men began to sweat cold bullets for Chu Feng.

As matters stood, they had to admit that Chu Feng was their savior.

Yet, the slash unleashed by the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was truly not a small matter. They were afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to withstand that slash.

The reason for that was because what the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had unleashed was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was the strongest Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill of their Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, the Ancestral Taboo: Heaven-slicing Axe.

The might of this Ancestral Taboo: Heaven-slicing Axe was over several hundred times more powerful than the casual slash that the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had unleashed earlier.

The Ancient Era's War Clansmen were afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to withstand the attack if he did not block or dodge.

“Buzz~~~”

However, even though it was precisely such a ferocious attack, it still had the same result as the casual slash before it, and sunk into the distorted space before Chu Feng the moment it arrived before him.

The trembling sky, the crumbling space and the doomsday-like sights all returned to normal at that point.

“How can this be?!!!”

Everyone from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan were stunned. Many among them even started to shiver with ashen faces.

Even the people of the Ancient Era's War Clan all had their mouths wide open in shock. Amazement filled their eyes.

As for the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, he was nearly driven mad. He began to shout hysterically, “You... exactly who are you?”

Exactly what is your origin?!”

“I gave you a chance. Yet, you did not seize it properly. As such, it is my turn to attack now.”

Chu Feng smiled. Then, lightning flashed in his eyes. The next moment, a boundless oppressive might pulsed from his body, enveloping the entire region.

At that moment, everyone’s expressions changed enormously. The reason for that was because they finally managed to sense Chu Feng’s cultivation.

Rank seven Martial Ancestor, with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. That was Chu Feng’s current cultivation.

“You!!”

“With how young you are, how could you... how could you be so powerful?!”

The hysterical expression was no longer present on the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief’s face. Instead, endless fear and shock filled his face.

He finally realized why he was unable to cause Chu Feng any harm. Although they possessed the same sort of heaven-defying battle power, Chu Feng’s cultivation was two entire levels above his own. With such a disparity, it would instead be strange if he could defeat Chu Feng.

“Are you prepared to die now?” Chu Feng asked indifferently.

“Putt~~~”

Right after Chu Feng asked that question, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief immediately kneeled on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng while begging for forgiveness.

“Milord, I was wrong. I have eyes, but failed to recognize Mount Tai. I was wrong to behave like a snob.”

“Please, please give me a chance. Please spare me. I beg of you, please spare my life,” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief began to beg in a lowly manner.

At that moment, not to mention the War Clan’s men, even the Monstrous Clan’s men were stunned by it.

Their Lord Clan Chief had always been an aloof and proud individual who did not fear death. This was the first time that they had ever seen their Lord Clan Chief acting in such a manner.

This petty and low, this craven and cowardly.

“If I had not appeared in time, would you have spared the War Clan today?” Chu Feng asked.

“Milord, please spare me, please spare me. I was wrong. I truly know my wrongs now.”

The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief did not answer Chu Feng’s question. He knew that it would be useless for him to try to explain himself at that moment. The only way for him to survive would be to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

“Rest assured, I will not exterminate your Monstrous Clan after your death. Instead, I will spare them so that they can continue existing,” Chu Feng said.

“Really?” The Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief slowly raised his head and asked in a serious manner. At that moment, he reacted as if he had prepared to accept death.

“Really,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief had a rapid change in expression. He suddenly turned around and began to rush into the distance with rapid speed. In the blink of an eye, he had disappeared.

The grand Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief had actually escaped.

At that moment, everyone was stunned. They had no words to describe what had just happened, no words to describe this dramatic change.

As for Chu Feng, he chuckled and shook his head helplessly.

He did not give chase. Instead, he slowly raised his arm and faced it in the direction where the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had escaped.

“Paa~~~”

In the instant that Chu Feng's palm was opened, a strong wind immediately swept forth. Not only were the trees uprooted from the ground, but even the clouds were sucked into Chu Feng's palm.

An enormous attractive force was being emitted by Chu Feng's palm. It was planning to devour everything in its path.

“Noo!!!”

Following a scream, a figure that was frantically trying to escape was sucked toward Chu Feng from afar. It was none other than the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

That Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, the person proclaimed to be the strongest existence in the War Clan's Ancient Domain. was actually unable to resist Chu Feng in the slightest.

“I want you dead, so you cannot live,” Chu Feng spoke in a dull manner. The same moment he spoke those words, sharp killing intent emerged in his eyes.

“Bang~~~”

The next moment, a muffled explosion was heard. Before everyone, the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief exploded and died. He was killed by Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2464 – Subduing The Secret Skill

---

The Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief's Ancestral Armament axe fell from the sky. However, his body had long since disappeared. It had shattered into pieces in the sky, turning into a rain of blood.

The Monstrous Clan's Clansmen all had ashen looks of despair on their faces. They never expected that their Lord Clan Chief would be obliterated by someone like this.

But, when even their Lord Clan Chief was completely helpless before Chu Feng, what could they possibly do?

Today would likely be their doomsday.

“Roar~~~”

However, right at that moment, an ear-piercing snarl suddenly sounded from within the rain of blood.

The next moment, a dark black gaseous substance appeared. Furthermore, the gaseous substance began to grow larger and larger.

The dark black gaseous substance seemed to have intelligence. It seemed to be a person, yet not a person, seemed to be a blade ray, yet not a blade ray. Yet, it was emitting a sinister and strange roar, and a majestic and powerful aura.

“Secret Skill: Enemy Restraining Slash!!!”

The Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen's expressions all changed. They naturally recognized the secret skill.

After all, this secret skill was their Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's secret skill.

“Secret skill? Never would I have expected that this guy actually possessed such a secret skill.”

“Interesting. Seems like killing him today was the right decision.”

Upon seeing the secret skill, Chu Feng actually revealed a joyous expression. Then, he opened his palm, and his boundless attractive force was revealed once again. This time around, it enveloped the secret skill.

“What is that guy planning to do? Could it be... he wants to seize the secret skill?” Seeing what was happening, the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clansmen all revealed astonished expressions.

“Ignorant brat, you actually dare to think about obtaining me? You are simply courting death,” However, not only did Chu Feng’s attractive force not move the secret skill, it instead caused the secret skill to let out an incomparably furious snarl.

The next moment, layer upon layer of boundless power began to move toward Chu Feng to oppress him.

Everything happened too quickly. Chu Feng was caught off guard. “Boom!” Chu Feng was actually knocked several tens of thousands of meters away.

It was only when Chu Feng was knocked into a building that he stopped. However, that ferocious energy ripple had already covered Chu Feng.

“Young Hero Chu Feng!!!”

Witnessing that scene, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were all shocked. Deeply alarmed expressions emerged on their faces.

After all, the aura emitted by that secret skill was no small matter. Furthermore, Chu Feng was clearly knocked away by it and was currently covered by the energy ripple. It was unknown as to whether or not Chu Feng was alive. Thus, how could they not be worried for Chu Feng?

“This is great! Lord Secret Skill is actually this powerful. We’re saved! Our Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan is saved!!!”

“That Chu Feng is truly foolish. He actually provoked Lord Secret Skill. Seems like he will undoubtedly die today.”

At that moment when the Ancient Era's War Clansmen were worried, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen all revealed joyous expressions on their faces.

Originally, they had thought that their Monstrous Clan would definitely be extinguished after facing such a powerful enemy.

However, after witnessing how powerful the secret skill was, they suddenly realized that they could still be saved. In fact, it could even be said that they still had hopes of being able to eliminate the Ancient Era's War Clan.

They might still be able to obtain victory in their battle.

After all, that secret skill was created by their Lord Yao Xing. Thus, the secret skill itself should be extremely powerful.

Back then, even their Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had not managed to conquer the secret skill with his own power. Rather, he had only managed to inherit it.

Thus, they actually had no idea exactly how powerful the secret skill was.

However, judging by how things were going at the moment, that secret skill was truly powerful. Even Chu Feng was not a match for it. As such, they would naturally be overjoyed.

“Die!!!”

Suddenly, a sinister voice was heard. Following that, overwhelming killing intent surged forth.

The secret skill began to pursue Chu Feng to where he had fallen. As it flew toward Chu Feng, its overflowing black flames covered the entire sky.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right at that moment, dazzling lightning suddenly emerged in the region covered by the energy ripples.

“Woosh~~~”



The next moment, an enormous hand suddenly broke through the energy ripples. Like a water dragon emerging from the sea, it flew out and grabbed the secret skill.

“Heavens! That is?!!!”

At that moment, the bystanders’ eyes turned sluggish. They were confused as to what was happening.

After all, that hand was so very enormous. No matter how one looked at it, that hand did not resemble a human’s hand.

Soon, the energy ripples started to gradually vanish. At that moment, the crowd finally managed to see the owner of that enormous hand.

That enormous hand was formed with martial power, martial power that originated from Chu Feng. It turned out that enormous hand was a technique from Chu Feng.

Merely, compared to before, Chu Feng was completely different.

At that moment, not only was lightning flashing in Chu Feng’s eyes, but his body was also covered with a suit of armor made of lightning and a pair of lightning wings also extended out from his back.

Most importantly, Chu Feng’s current cultivation was no longer that of a rank seven Martial Ancestor. Rather, he had become a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

With how overwhelmingly powerful Chu Feng had become, even the secret skill was only able to struggle without being able to break free from Chu Feng’s enormous hand made of martial power.

“You have two choices. Either work for me or die,” Chu Feng said to the secret skill.

“Never had I expected you to be this powerful at such a young age. Compared to that trash from the Monstrous Clan, you are

countless times more powerful.”

“I am not someone who is unable to differentiate good from bad. My existence is so that I can be used by others.”

“As the saying goes, a fine bird chooses a tree to nest in. Boy, you have ability. Thus, I will recognize you as my master,” That secret skill actually did not hesitate in the slightest, and directly gave Chu Feng an answer. It was planning to follow Chu Feng.

“You’d best not lie to me,” Chu Feng released the secret skill. However, his gaze was still fixed onto the secret skill. He was still on alert.

“I am always one to keep my word. Since I have said that I will follow you, I will definitely be loyal and devoted to you.”

After the secret skill finished saying those words, it turned from a vast black gaseous flame to a little wisp of flame. Then, it entered Chu Feng’s forehead.

That Monstrous Clan’s secret skill actually really ended up surrendering to and pledging allegiance to Chu Feng.

“It’s actually a secret skill meant to attack other secret skills. This has truly surpassed my expectations.”

At that moment, Chu Feng became aware of the abilities of that secret skill.

Originally, Chu Feng was not looking forward to that secret skill too much after having already grasped the powerful secret skill that was the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

He had merely... intended to subdue it for the heck of it. After all, secret skills were extremely rare. Furthermore, that secret skill was the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s secret skill.

However, upon discovering the special capabilities of the secret skill, Chu Feng was unable to contain his feelings of joy. He had discovered that he had managed to pick up a treasure.

That secret skill was called the Enemy Restraining Slash. When unleashed, it would appear only like an ordinary slash without any particularities. In fact, one could not even determine that it was a secret skill through its aura.

However, if one were to be struck by it, one would not be able to use secret skills again. If one were to try to use one's secret skill again, they would receive a backlash.

Furthermore, to be exact, that secret skill was not created by that Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's Yao Xing.

Rather, it was created by someone else. To put it simply, that secret skill, the Enemy Restraining Slash, possessed an extraordinary origin. It had been polished by the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's various experts for many years, but still remained incomplete.

When that secret skill landed in Yao Xing's hands, it had nearly reached a state of completion. Using the methods left behind by his seniors, Yao Xing added the final polish, and successfully created the secret skill.

It was precisely because of the fact that the secret skill had been through the hands of many people, and the person who had finally managed to successfully complete it was also not very strong, it led to the secret skill itself possessing a much weaker power than the Ancient Era's War Clan's secret skill.

However, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had managed to successfully forge its usage. In other words, while the secret skill itself was not very strong, it was extremely useful. This was especially true when the secret skill was used against opponents that possessed secret skills. It could be said that the secret skill would be a marvelous technique.

“He... he actually managed to subdue Lord Secret Skill.”

“How could this be? Exactly who is he?”

At that moment, Chu Feng had a smile across his face. However, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clansmen were completely ashen.

To them, the secret skill was their Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's final hope. Yet at that moment... Chu Feng had obliterated even their final hope.

# Chapter 2465 – Mentioning The Truth

---

“Young Hero, you are truly a genius, truly a genius,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Zhan Yuanmo began to praise Chu Feng nonstop. He even started to applaud Chu Feng.

The others in the Ancient Era’s War Clan also began to applaud Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng did not bother with the admiration and applause from the crowd. Rather, he turned his gaze to the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. Then, he took a glance at the Ancient Era’s War Clan.

He said, “This War Clan’s Ancient Domain was originally created by two seniors. One was the War Clan’s senior, whereas the other was the Monstrous Clan’s senior.”

“The two of them were close friends. They should have given a rigid order to you descendants that you all must coexist peacefully.”

“I do not understand why you all do not know about this matter now, and have turned on your former union to become archenemies.”

“However, to have the Monstrous Clan and the War Clan jointly continue in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain is your seniors’ final wishes.”

“Thus, today, I will not extinguish your Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. However, I hope that the Ancient Era’s War Clan and the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan can coexist peacefully in the future.”

“If the Monstrous Clan still doesn’t learn from this lesson, I will return here in the future. At that time... I will no longer be lenient toward you all,” Chu Feng said.

“You... you’re planning to spare us?” An Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan’s elder asked.

“Was I not clear enough?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

“No, it’s clear, very clear. Thank you Milord, thank you Milord.”

That Monstrous Clan’s elder suddenly kneeled onto the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng while thanking him.

Following that, the others of the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan also kneeled before Chu Feng and started to kowtow to him while thanking him.

“You all do not have to thank me. If you want to thank someone, thank your senior. However, you all must definitely learn from your lesson. Do not go against the words of your senior for the sake of your own selfish desires,” Chu Feng said.

“We understand. We will definitely keep it in mind. We will never dare go against our Lord’s desire,” The Monstrous Clansmen nodded repeatedly.

What Chu Feng said was most definitely not nonsense.

In the two years that he had been in closed door training in the Martial Comprehension Ground, Chu Feng had not only managed to attain martial comprehension, he had also managed to attain comprehension toward world spirit techniques.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to reach successive breakthroughs earlier was precisely because Chu Feng had managed to attain a certain amount of martial comprehension. In fact, Chu Feng was only a bit away from reaching rank eight Martial Ancestor. It could be said that Chu Feng had managed to obtain enormous harvest in the two years’ time.

In fact, Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques had also reached a breakthrough. He was no longer an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Rather, he had become a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

All those things were harvests Chu Feng had obtained from the Martial Comprehension Ground.

Apart from that, Chu Feng had also managed to learn a bit about the story of the Martial Comprehension Ground's creator.

The creator of the Martial Comprehension Ground was someone from the Ancient Era's War Clan. Back then, due to a certain reason, he had had no choice but to go into hiding.

That was why he had created the War Clan's Ancient Domain. Its main purpose was for hiding .

Arriving together with him were not only a group of his Ancient Era's War Clan's followers, but also a group of people from the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

The then leader of the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan was that Ancient Era's War Clan's expert's close friend. The two of them possessed a very close relationship.

That was why there were two clans, the War Clan and the Monstrous Clan, in the War Clan's Ancient Domain.

Actually, Chu Feng had no idea whether or not the creator of the Martial Comprehension Ground told his descendants that they must peacefully coexist with the Monstrous Clan.

That was only Chu Feng's guess...

However, Chu Feng knew that the reason Zhan Haichuan had not exterminated the Monstrous Clan back then was most likely because he had also come to find out about what happened back then.

When even Zhan Haichuan, a descendant of the War Clan, did not exterminate the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan, Chu Feng would naturally not exterminate the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan.

Else, he feared that he would be going against the desire of the creator of that Martial Comprehension Ground.

.....

Soon, the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan's army withdrew from the War Clan's headquarters. As for the Ancient Era's War Clan, after being instructed by Chu Feng, they also did not give chase to kill the Monstrous Clansmen.

Instead, they only dispatched their army to retrieve their former territories.

As for Chu Feng, he was once again invited back to the Ancient Era's War Clan's headquarters.

As the battle had just ended, it should be a time to clean up the battlefield and help cure the injured instead of celebration. However, it remained that Chu Feng had saved the Ancient Era's War Clan by himself. Thus, Zhan Yuanmo was determined to thank Chu Feng.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, this old man is called Zhan Yuanmo. I am Lingtong and Lingling's grandfather."

"I have already heard about you. You are truly the benefactor to our Ancient Era's War Clan."

"Not only did you save Lingtong and Lingling back then, you've also saved our entire Ancient Era's War Clan today."

"Today, I, on behalf of our Ancient Era's War Clan, offer a toast to Young Hero Chu Feng," Zhan Yuanmo raised his wine cup and spoke to Chu Feng in a very joyous manner.

"Young Hero Chu Feng, we also offer you a toast," Following that, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief and the various elders also raised their wine cups to express thanks to Chu Feng.

At that moment, those people all had eagerly attentive expressions on their faces. Merely, their smiles were very uncomfortable. After all, they were feeling guilty.

That said, they did not mention anything regarding what had happened in the past. It was as if nothing had happened. It caused Chu Feng to feel very displeased.



Chu Feng understood what those people were thinking; they were afraid that Zhan Yuanmo would know of the truth and punish them.

“They are truly a bunch of shameless bastards. They actually do not even have the courage to shoulder the consequences of their actions. Are they not planning to bring up what happened back then at all? Are they planning to pretend that nothing happened? They are truly too shameless!” Her Lady Queen cursed out in rage. She had also managed to see through the thoughts of those Ancient Era’s War Clan’s men.

“Chu Feng, we absolutely cannot drop this subject. We must teach them a lesson. Else... they will truly think that you can be easily bullied,” Her Lady Queen said angrily.

“Rest assured. Milady Queen, you don’t need to be angry. With me here, I will not allow them to try to pass things by like this.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words to Her Lady Queen, he did not immediately turn hostile toward the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen. Rather, he started to smile.

Of course, Chu Feng did not stand up to receive the toasts of wine from those people. In fact, he did not even bother to drink the wine off the wine cup that he slowly raised.

Instead, he watched as Zhan Yuanmo and the others of the War Clan drank their respective cups of wine.

Then, he said, “Everyone from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, it seems that you are truly eminent individuals with short memories. You’re thanking me for saving you all now, why did you not mention the time when you imprisoned me?”

“Imprisoned?” Hearing those words, Zhan Yuanmo’s expression changed. The smile on his face instantly froze.

As for the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief and those elders, their expressions also turned extremely ugly instantly.

One by one, they started to speak, yet hesitated. It was as if they wanted to explain themselves, yet did not know how to.

Zhan Yuanmo discovered that the situation was amiss. Immediately, his sword-like eyebrows rose. With a cold voice, he asked his son, “What is going on?!”

“Lord Father, regarding this, it’s actually... actually... actually...”

“I... this...”

The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief started to stammer. He didn’t know how to respond to that question.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, exactly what is going on? Have our Ancient Era’s War Clan shown negligence toward you before?”

“Or could it be that this is a misunderstanding?” Seeing that his clansmen refused to answer, Zhan Yuanmo turned to Chu Feng. He wanted to obtain an answer from Chu Feng directly.

“Misunderstanding?” Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said to Zhan Yuanmo, “Senior, if this is truly a misunderstanding, then this would be an enormous misunderstanding.”

“Senior, please help this junior analyze whether or not this misunderstanding should happen.”

“Young Hero Chu Feng, please go ahead and tell me what happened. If they were truly excessive in what they’ve done, this old man will uphold justice for you today,” Zhan Yuanmo guaranteed as he patted his chest.

“Since senior says it like this, I will no longer conceal the truth, and tell you what happened.”

Without any hesitation, Chu Feng informed Zhan Yuanmo about everything that happened back then.

As he heard what Chu Feng said, Zhan Yuanmo’s expression started to turn ugly. From time to time, he started to glare fiercely at his clansmen behind him.

However, he continued to endure his anger, and did not say anything or flare up. Just like that, he quietly listened to what Chu Feng had to say.

It was only when Chu Feng finished that he erupted like a long-brewing volcano.

“Ingrates! Truly a bunch of ingrates!!!”

Zhan Yuanmo’s furious voice resonated through heaven and earth. It was more ear-piercing than thunder. It shook the earth and caused the palace to tremble violently.

“Milord, we were wrong.”

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief, those Ancient Era’s War Clan’s elders and the others present all hurriedly knelt onto the ground. They did not even dare to raise their heads.

One by one, they were all dripping with sweat and shivering in fear.

## Chapter 2466 – Akin To Legend

---

“It seems that you all have admitted to it. Was what happened back then truly as Young Hero Chu Feng said?”

“Repaying kindness with malice, this is truly repaying kindness with malice!”

“Young Hero Chu Feng had saved you all, yet you’ve actually repaid his kindness with malice! You all... do you all even possess humanity?!”

Zhan Yuanmo was so furious that his face turned deathly pale. Even his body started to shiver.

Suddenly, his body stiffened, and his mouth opened.

“Pfff~~~”

A large mouthful of blood sprayed out of his mouth. The next moment, he was unable to stand firm, and began to fall toward the ground.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was quick to react. His body immediately moved, arriving before Zhan Yuanmo to support him, preventing him from falling to the ground.

“Father...”

“Milord!!!”

“We are wrong. Please punish us severely. Milord, please don’t get angry and bring harm upon yourself.”

Seeing that Zhan Yuanmo actually vomited blood out of anger, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were all deeply frightened.

“Severely punish? Indeed, you all should be severely punished. You bunch of ingrates should be punished with death!!!” Zhan Yuanmo said furiously.

“Death?” Upon hearing that word, the Ancient Era’s War

Clansmen all turned ashen with fear. They stood there as if petrified.

Some among them felt their legs grow weak and fell onto their butts, a stunned expression on their faces.

They had all anticipated that Zhan Yuanmo would punish them severely upon hearing about the matter. However, they never expected for him to bring up the subject of death as a punishment.

As they knew very well what sort of temperament Zhan Yuanmo possessed, they knew that he was never someone to joke around. Since he declared that they should be punished with death, it meant that... he would likely really end up killing them.

“Milord, we know our wrongs. Please, please show us leniency and spare our lives.”

At that moment, all kinds of begging voices could be heard. Not to mention the people that made things difficult for Chu Feng that day, even the siblings Zhan Lingling and Zhan Lingtong started to beg for forgiveness.

Naturally, they were pleading for their father, their siblings, and their seniors.

The two of them both anticipated that their grandfather would punish their father and the others. However, they never expected for the punishment to be so severe.

“You all still have the nerve to beg for forgiveness? If it wasn’t for Young Hero Chu Feng saving you all twice, you would have already died twice by now.”

“As your lives were already saved twice by Young Hero Chu Feng, your lives are already no longer yours. Rather, they belong to Young Hero Chu Feng.”

“Yet, you all... actually imprisoned him. Tell me, where did your humanity go?”

“How have I taught you all? Did the benevolence and righteousness that I taught you all go to the stomachs of dogs?” Zhan Yuanmo pointed to the War Clan’s Clan Chief and the others with his shivering hand as he snarled his questions furiously.

He was truly furious. At the same time, he was utterly disappointed and ashamed. After all, those people were his clansmen, people that he had nurtured.

Being reprimanded by Zhan Yuanmo in such a manner, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen grew quiet. They stopped begging for forgiveness.

Some among them started to gnash their teeth, some started to tightly clench their fists, and some started to slap themselves. There were also those that started weeping bitter tears.

However, regardless of what sort of reaction they had, they all felt the same sort of thing — regret!!!

Regret, they were truly regretful.

They regretted their conduct and deeds back then.

Especially after they saw how Chu Feng did not attack them, and instead drove away the Monstrous Clan to save their War Clan even though he possessed such overwhelming power, they were truly filled with endless regret.

They discovered that they were so petty, low and narrow-minded when compared to Chu Feng.

“Senior, forget about it. What happened has already happened. Furthermore, I am fine. Thus, it would suffice to just give them a warning. There is really no need to actually punish them.”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke with a smile on his face.

At that moment, not only did Zhan Yuanmo reveal a stunned expression, but the other War Clansmen also revealed stunned

expressions.

They all felt that Chu Feng had mentioned the matter so that they would be punished.

Yet, why did Chu Feng suddenly start pleading for leniency for them right when they were about to be punished?

They were truly unable to understand exactly what Chu Feng was thinking.

Seemingly able to guess what the crowd was confused about, Chu Feng stood up with a smile on his face. He said, “Originally, I had never thought about doing anything to you all. Merely, earlier, not a single one of you bothered to try to provide an explanation for what had happened to me back then. Furthermore, you all even tried to conceal the truth, tried to let things pass on just like this. As such, I could not accept it.”

“The reason for that is because your actions were nothing more than evasion. And that, is not a good thing at all.”

“Big brother Chu Feng, you mean to say that you actually... never planned to take revenge?” At that moment, Zhan Lingtong stood forth.

What Zhan Lingtong asked was actually what the others in the Ancient Era’s War Clan wanted to ask too.

“My little brother Lingtong, if I had wanted to take revenge, why would I have bothered to take care of the Monstrous Clan today?”

“Have you forgotten what I told you two years ago when I stepped into the Martial Comprehension Ground?” Chu Feng said to Zhan Lingtong with a smile on his face.

“No, I haven’t. I naturally remember it. That’s right, big brother Chu Feng has never considered our War Clan as enemies.”

“Even back then when Lord Father and the seniors insisted on imprisoning big brother Chu Feng, he never thought about

retaliating against everyone.”

“At that time, big brother Chu Feng said that if the Monstrous Clan were to come and invade, that I must definitely inform him, and he would definitely come down to help us.”

“Big brother Chu Feng kept his promise. When I pinched the title plate big brother Chu Feng gave me that day, he really appeared immediately.”

When Zhan Lingtong said those words, he had an immensely proud expression on his face. After all, he felt that if he hadn't pinched the title plate, Chu Feng might not have appeared. At that time, their Ancient Era's War Clan would have been destined to be extinguished.

Actually, Zhan Lingtong spoke those words not only so that he could show off to the crowd, but he was also trying to inform the War Clansmen as to what sort of individual Chu Feng was.

Sure enough, after hearing what Zhan Lingtong said, the Ancient Era's War Clansmen all revealed even more obviously ashamed and guilty expressions.

The more magnanimous Chu Feng was, the more it set off how narrow-minded and petty they were.

The more sentimental and righteous Chu Feng was, the more it set off how ungrateful and unjust they were.

“Martial Comprehension Ground?”

“Wasn't Young Hero Chu Feng trapped in the prison cell the entire time? When did he ascend to the Martial Comprehension Ground?” Suddenly, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief asked with a questioning expression on his face.

“That's true?”

Suddenly, the other elders also managed to react. They too revealed dumbfounded expressions.



During the past two years, they had been to the prison cell that Chu Feng was held in many a time to urge him to renounce their Ancient Era's War Sword.

Logically, it shouldn't be possible for Chu Feng to have ascended to the Martial Comprehension Ground.

"Haha. Lord Father, seniors, when mentioning it, you all might not believe me. However, that prison cell is simply unable to hold my big brother Chu Feng," Zhan Lingtong spoke proudly.

"How could it not hold Young Hero Chu Feng? I've seen Young Hero Chu Feng in the prison cell many times, and have even conversed with him," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Hahaha. My dear Lord Father, the person you met was simply not my big brother Chu Feng. Rather, it was merely my big brother Chu Feng's clone," Zhan Lingtong spoke with a loud laughter.

"Clone? It was merely a clone? Impossible! That was most definitely not a clone," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief refused to believe it.

"Lord Father, the one trapped in the prison cell is indeed a clone," Right at that moment, Zhan Lingling also spoke.

"But, how could a clone be that lifelike? It is simply no different from Young Hero Chu Feng, it is simply a carbon copy," The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief said.

"It would naturally be impossible for ordinary world spiritists to create clones that lifelike. However, Young Hero Chu Feng is capable. The reason for that is because... he's an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist," Zhan Lingling said.

"Immortal-cloak World Spiritist!!!"

"Young Hero Chu Feng is actually..."

"He's actually an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?!!!"

Once Zhan Lingling said those words, they came like an explosion to the crowd's ears, and caused them to burst into an uproar.

The reason for that was because, other than their Ancient Era's War Clan's ancestor and their senior Zhan Haichuan, there had never been anyone else who had managed to reach the level of Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

To them, Immortal-cloak World Spiritists were akin to legends.

## Chapter 2467 – The War Axe’s Command

---

“Young Hero Chu Feng is truly a genius,” Zhan Yuanmo’s eyes were filled with completely unconcealed admiration as he looked at Chu Feng, who stood beside him.

Chu Feng had already completely revealed how extraordinarily talented and strong he was in terms of martial cultivation. However, Zhan Yuanmo truly never expected that Chu Feng’s attainments in terms of world spirit techniques would also be so exceptional.

“Grandfather, not only is my big brother Chu Feng an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he also managed to ascend to the Martial Comprehension Ground’s third level,” Zhan Lingtong said.

“The third level?!” What Zhan Lingtong said was once again enormous news that exploded in the hearts of the crowd.

At that moment, none of the crowd were able to keep calm. Emotions and disbelief covered their faces.

Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, and being able to ascend to the third level of the Martial Comprehension Ground. Both were things akin to legends to them.

Apart from Zhan Haichuan, there had never been anyone who had ever ascended to the third level.

Yet, Chu Feng had done so. Standing before them, Chu Feng was like a god.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment when the crowd were astonished by Chu Feng’s accomplishments, Zhan Yuanmo’s expression started to distort. Following that, he let out a painful sound.

“Milord!!!” Upon seeing that, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen hurriedly rushed toward Zhan Yuanmo.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Zhan Yuanmo suddenly raised his hand and said, “Don’t worry, I’m fine.”

Then, Zhan Yuanmo raised his head and looked at the crowd with a complicated gaze. “No matter what, our Ancient Era’s War Clan was unrighteous and unjust to imprison Young Hero Chu Feng. While Young Hero Chu Feng can decide to not look into it, we cannot pretend as if nothing has happened.”

“Senior, let’s just forget about this matter. After all, it is all thanks to that Martial Comprehension Ground that I managed to obtain my current level of cultivation,” Chu Feng said.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, please listen to me. No matter what, our Ancient Era’s War Clan owes you for this.”

“Even if you truly do not plan to look further into it, our Ancient Era’s War Clan must still compensate you,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

“Indeed, we must definitely compensate Young Hero Chu Feng. Lord Father, please decide,” The War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“No, I am unable to decide this matter,” Zhan Yuanmo shook his head.

.....

Hearing those words, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen’s expressions all turned frozen. They were confused.

Although Zhan Yuanmo was not their Clan Chief, he had always been the person with the greatest authority in their Ancient Era’s War Clan.

If even he could not make the decision, who in the Ancient Era’s War Clan could possibly decide?

“This matter must be personally decided by Lord War Axe,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

“Lord War Axe? The Ancient Era’s War Axe?” Everyone came to

a sudden realization.

“Lord Father, what sort of instructions does Lord War Axe have?” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Lord War Axe is going to personally speak in regards to this matter,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

“Personally speak?” The crowd were startled. As the Ancient Era’s War Axe was a secret skill, it would be capable of communicating with Zhan Yuanmo. However, it would likely be a very difficult task for it to personally speak.

“Regarding this, I must have Young Hero Chu Feng help me. Once a secret skill enters one’s body, unless its user is to die, the secret skill will not be able to be removed from its user’s body. However, that’s with the exception of Immortal-cloak World Spiritists.”

“Young Hero Chu Feng, since you are an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, please help me remove Lord War Axe from my body,” Zhan Yuanmo said to Chu Feng.

“Lord Father, if you truly want Lord War Axe to be removed from your body, it would be fine to use the grand formation that our Ancestor left behind. There is simply no need for Young Hero Chu Feng to act,” The Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Clan Chief said.

The reason he said that was because he was not very confident in Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it remained that a secret skill was no small matter. Compared to Chu Feng, he believed in the grand formation left behind by their Ancestor more.

“Shut up. This matter must be done by Young Hero Chu Feng.”

Zhan Yuanmo glared at his son. Then, he looked at Chu Feng and said, “Young Hero Chu Feng, you must definitely help me with it.”

“I am indeed able to accomplish that. Merely... your body will be affected. You are already wounded. I’m afraid that it would not be

suitable for you to undergo this now,” Chu Feng said.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, this is the desire of Lord War Axe. I cannot go against the desire of Lord War Axe. Please, I beg of you, help me with this,” As Zhan Yuanmo spoke, he actually knelt before Chu Feng.

“Senior, don’t be like this,” Chu Feng hurriedly helped Zhan Yuanmo up. Then, in a very helpless manner, he said, “I will help you.”

Then, Chu Feng began to set up a special formation to help Zhan Yuanmo remove the secret skill from his body.

As Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist now, his world spirit techniques were incomparably magnificent. As they were unleashed, they started illuminating heaven and earth.

“Amazing. Is this the legendary Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? This is truly a well-deserved reputation.”

The crowd were all stunned by Chu Feng’s exquisite world spirit techniques.

“Look! Look at those veined patterns, they’re Snake Marks! Young Hero Chu Feng is not only an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he’s actually also a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist!”

“Young Hero Chu Feng should only be in his early thirties, right? With how young he is, he should only have trained in martial cultivation and world spirit techniques for a very short period of time.”

“This is truly too unimaginable. He is simply an otherworldly genius. This is what it means to be an otherworldly genius. Compared to him, we are truly insignificant.”

There were experienced and knowledgeable individuals among the Ancient Era’s War Clan. After they recognized that Chu Feng

was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist and declared it, Chu Feng's status in the hearts of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen naturally increased by another tier.

"I wonder, would Young Hero Chu Feng's spirit formation be feasible?" At the same time they were astonished, the Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief was also worried.

After all, secret skills were different from ordinary martial skills. Secret skills possessed lives. After they recognized someone as their master, it should logically be impossible to remove them.

The only alternative would be special formations or powerful abilities. However... regardless of what sort of ability, they must obtain the cooperation of the secret skill's master.

If the secret skill's master did not want to release the secret skill, then regardless of what sort of method one might use, one would still not be able to forcibly extract the secret skill. The only exception would be... to kill the secret skill's master.

It would be just like when Chu Feng took care of the Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

However, by the same accord, even if the secret skill's master was willing to cooperate, it would still be very dangerous to extract a secret skill.

Originally, for the sake of making it more convenient for secret skills to be passed on, there was a grand formation left behind by their ancestor in the Ancient Era's War Clan.

That grand formation was no small matter at all. If one was willing, one would be able to extract the secret skill.

The Ancient Era's War Clan's Clan Chief felt that while Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were indeed extremely powerful, it would be more reliable for them to use the grand formation of their clan to extract the secret skill. After all, they had used that grand formation to extract the secret skill many times already.

Thus, he was truly confused as to why his father insisted on having Chu Feng extract the secret skill.

It was not that he did not trust Chu Feng. Rather, he was merely afraid that some sort of mishap might happen to his father.

After all, he felt that, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, he would not be as powerful as their ancestor, who founded the War Clan's Ancient Domain.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's spirit formation began to shine much brighter.

Furthermore, Zhan Yuanmo appeared to have fused with that spirit formation.

Soon, a special symbol appeared on Zhan Yuanmo's forehead. That symbol blossomed with a special light.

At the beginning, the light was only glimmering faintly. However, it soon became a dazzling light.

The next moment, that golden light shone from Zhan Yuanmo's forehead. Then, it turned into an enormous golden axe measuring hundreds of meters in length. That enormous axe was floating in the sky.

That enormous axe appeared to be very ordinary-looking, and did not possess too many veined patterns. However, it emitted an overwhelming desire for battle and a threatening aura.

“This is the Ancient Era's War Axe?” At that moment, even Chu Feng's gaze changed.

Before them was the original form of the Ancient Era's War Axe with its original power. It was extremely powerful.

Although it was truly unable to compare to the Ancient Era's War Sword that Chu Feng had encountered that day, it was many times more powerful than the Enemy Restraining Slash.



While Chu Feng was able to easily subdue the Enemy Restraining Slash, he knew that he was still pathetically tiny before the Ancient Era's War Axe.

“Lord Father, are you alright?” At that moment, the War Clan's Clan Chief immediately arrived before Zhan Yuanmo.

As Zhan Yuanmo was, after all, his biological father, he was more concerned about his father's well-being than anything else.

“Rest assured, I am fine,” Zhan Yuanmo said with a smile. Furthermore, as he spoke, he took a glance at Chu Feng and said, “Young Hero Chu Feng's world spirit techniques are even more exquisite than I imagined them to be.”

At that moment, the War Clan's Clan Chief looked to Chu Feng again. Admiration filled his eyes.

The reason for that was because he was astonished to discover that while his father was indeed suffering from the effect of the extraction of a secret skill, the effect was extremely weak, and seemed to be not much different from their ancestor's grand formation.

It was at that moment that he truly realized that Chu Feng's world spirit techniques were truly grand.

“Are you all going to listen to my order?”

Right at that moment, a voice filled with imposing might resonated through heaven and earth.

It was the Ancient Era's War Axe!!!

## Chapter 2468 – Forced Learning

---

Zhan Yuanmo knelt before the Ancient Era's War Axe and spoke loudly, "We, clansmen of the Ancient Era's War Clan, are willing to listen and obey Lord War Axe's orders."

"We are willing to listen and obey Lord War Axe's orders."

Immediately after, the others of the Ancient Era's War Clan also knelt before the Ancient Era's War Axe.

"Chu Feng, they were ungrateful toward you and returned your kindness with malice. Are you truly not planning to look further into this?" The Ancient Era's War Axe asked Chu Feng.

Sure enough, it had come out of Zhan Yuanmo for the sake of upholding justice for Chu Feng.

"Although they imprisoned me, they did not cause me harm. As such, it could be considered that they have taken our friendship into consideration."

"Furthermore, the Ancient Era's War Sword possesses a special significance to the Ancient Era's War Clan. I am able to understand their unwillingness for me to bring away the Ancient Era's War Sword."

"Thus, I had never planned to do anything to them from the very start," Chu Feng said.

"Very well. You are truly a heroic young man. Although you are very young, you actually possess such a vast heart. Someone like you is truly rare to come by," The Ancient Era's War Axe praised Chu Feng.

"Ancient Era's War Clansmen, listen up. While Chu Feng can refuse to look further into this, we cannot let this matter end like this. Else, we will truly become unrighteous and unjust."

"We must compensate Chu Feng. I propose that we bring all of

our Ancient Era's War Clan's signature martial skills for Chu Feng to train. That will serve as our compensation to him," The Ancient Era's War Axe said.

"Ah? Bring our signature martial skills for Chu Feng to train in?! This!!!"

Hearing those words, the Ancient Era's War Clansmen were all astonished. One by one, they turned their gazes to Zhan Yuanmo.

After all, their Ancient Era's War Clan's martial skills were meant to only be taught to people of their Ancient Era's War Clan.

"Did you not hear what Lord War Axe said? Why are you all still standing here? Go and bring all of our signature martial skills immediately," Zhan Yuanmo said.

Seeing that even Zhan Yuanmo was in agreement, even though the others in the Ancient Era's War Clan were unwilling, they still found it difficult to refuse. Thus, soon, a group of people left to retrieve their Ancient Era's War Clan's martial skills.

Soon, those people returned, carrying giant steles.

Those steles were very special. They were most definitely not made of ordinary stones, as they all emitted the sensation of being indestructible.

However, most important would be the countless characters that were engraved onto the steles in a densely packed manner.

None of those were ordinary characters. One could not comprehend them using common sense. However, if one were to turn one's gaze to them, the characters would emit a faint glimmer.

From a single glance, Chu Feng was able to tell that the steles were martial skills. Each stele represented a single martial skill.

At that moment, thirteen steles were present. Among the thirteen, ten were Emperor Taboo Martial Skills, and the

remaining three were Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

All of them were martial skills that the Ancient Era's War Clan would only teach their fellow clansmen.

Chu Feng did not bother to carefully examine the martial skills. However, he was able to tell with mere intuition that those martial skills were no small matter at all.

To put it briefly, those martial skills surpassed all of the martial skills that Chu Feng knew at the moment.

To be honest, Chu Feng was tempted. Faced with such powerful martial skills, how could Chu Feng not be tempted?

However, he was also able to tell that many of the Ancient Era's War Clansmen were merely forced by the Ancient Era's War Axe, and were not actually willing to hand those martial skills to him to learn.

"Chu Feng, with such a good thing before you, you must not refuse it. If you dare to refuse it, this Queen will break off all relations with you," Seemingly able to guess what Chu Feng was thinking, Her Lady Queen hurriedly spoke to urge him.

At that moment, Chu Feng was truly placed in a difficult situation. As he had already profited enormously in the Martial Comprehension Ground, he truly did not wish to make things difficult for the Ancient Era's War Clansmen and obtain benefits from the Ancient Era's War Clan again.

"Woosh~~~"

However, right at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Axe suddenly emitted an oppressive might. That oppressive might descended abruptly and formed a tornado. From inside to outside, it began to expand.

"Wuuahh~~~:

The next moment, the Ancient Era's War Clansmen were all

knocked flying.

Soon, they were blown several meters away. Although they looked extremely sorry-looking as they were blown away, they all landed safe and sound without any injuries.

“This is?!” After landing, the crowd all revealed confused expressions.

They were surprised to discover that all of their Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were blown out. However, Chu Feng was not affected by that tornado.

Chu Feng was still standing there. Furthermore, the thirteen martial skill steles had also been placed before Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Axe emitted a ray of golden light.

Like a fort, the golden light enveloped Chu Feng and the thirteen steles.

At that moment, Chu Feng spoke to ask, “Senior War Axe, what are you intending to do?”

“Chu Feng, I know that you’re an affectionate and true individual. Thus, I was afraid that you would refuse. As such... I am going to force you to learn them.”

“I will let you out the moment you master all of these martial skills. Otherwise... I will trap you here for the rest of your life,” The Ancient Era’s War Axe said.

“Ah? Why... why would Lord War Axe... why would Lord War Axe act like this?” The Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were all stunned.

“Hahaha. Never would I have expected there to be such a good thing in this world. There’s actually someone who will force an outsider to learn the martial skills that they do not teach

outsiders.”

“Interesting. Chu Feng, this Ancient Era’s War Axe is pretty decent. I am fond of its personality.” At that moment, Her Lady Queen was clapping her hands.

“This senior War Axe is indeed a bit too cordial,” Chu Feng had a wry smile on his face.

Originally, he was faced with the difficult decision as to whether or not he should accept the Ancient Era’s War Axe’s kind intentions and learn those martial skills.

However, there was now no need for him to be tangled up in that matter anymore, he simply had no ability to choose any longer.

At that moment, there was only a single path before Chu Feng. That is, he would have to master all of those Ancient Era’s War Clan’s martial skills.

“Now then, don’t bother standing there. Go on and quickly learn them. Don’t tell me you want to be trapped here for the rest of your life?” Her Lady Queen urged.

“Since that’s the case, senior War Axe and the seniors of the Ancient Era’s War Clan, this Chu Feng will accept your kind intentions.”

Chu Feng clasp his fist at the crowd. Then, he turned his gaze to the steles. Starting from the first one, he began to move his gaze over one after another. Once he started observing the steles, it lasted an entire hour. After that, Chu Feng sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. No one knew what he was doing.

“Never would I have expected Lord War Axe to force big brother Chu Feng to learn those martial skills.”

“With this being the case, I’m afraid that big brother Chu Feng will likely be trapped in there for some time,” Zhan Lingtong said with a sigh.

“Don’t worry about it. With how extraordinarily talented benefactor is, even if those martial skills are difficult to grasp, he will definitely still be able to learn them very quickly,” Zhan Lingling said.

Zhan Lingtong was still unable to stop himself from sighing.

He naturally knew that Chu Feng possessed extraordinary talent. However, those martial skills were truly difficult to learn.

For example, one of the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills among the thirteen martial skills took his father ten entire years to learn the basics, and a hundred years to master.

Thus, he felt that regardless of how talented Chu Feng might be, it would still take him several years to completely master all those martial skills.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his tightly closed eyes. Then, he stood up and said to the Ancient Era’s War Axe, “Senior War Axe, you said that you’ll let me out the moment I master these martial skills, right?”

“That’s right,” The Ancient Era’s War Axe said.

“Then, senior, please validate this Chu Feng today,” Chu Feng said to Zhan Yuanmo.

“Validate? Validate what?” Zhan Yuanmo asked in a confused manner.

“It would naturally be as to whether or not the martial skills I’ve learned meets the standard of mastery,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s naturally not an issue. Merely, Young Hero Chu Feng, you said that you want me to validate today? But, learning those martial skills will at least take...” Zhan Yuanmo wanted to say that he could validate them for Chu Feng, but today would likely not do. After all, he felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to

master all of those martial skills that same day.

“Zzzz~~~”

Right at that moment, golden lightning emerged on Chu Feng’s body.

The golden lightning were like serpents of lightning. As they revolved around Chu Feng, they formed a defensive barrier composed of golden lightnings.

“Heavens, that... that is!!!”

At that moment, the expressions of the Ancient Era’s War Clans’ men all changed enormously.

Even that Ancient Era’s War Axe in the sky was startled.

The reason for that was because what Chu Feng had unleashed was one of their Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skills by the name of Emperor Taboo: Golden Lightning Shield.



## Chapter 2469 – Obtaining The War Axe

---

“Senior, is this Emperor Taboo: Golden Lightning Shield satisfactory?” With the Golden Lightning Shield around his body, Chu Feng turned to ask Zhan Yuanmo.

“It is. To be able to utilize the Golden Lightning Shield to such a degree, Young Hero Chu Feng has completely grasped the profoundness of the martial skill,” Zhan Yuanmo nodded repeatedly. Admiration and astonishment filled his eyes.

While the Emperor Taboo: Golden Lightning Shield was one of the relatively easier-to-learn martial skills among the thirteen martial skills, it was still truly unimaginable for Chu Feng to be able to grasp it in merely a short moment.

“Senior War Axe, what do you think?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn, indeed, you have mastered this martial skill,” The Ancient Era’s War Axe spoke in praise.

“Since both seniors have acknowledged it, I will continue then,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he deactivated the Emperor Taboo: Golden Lightning Shield. Then, he unleashed another Emperor Taboo Martial Skill. This was also one of the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

After unleashing the second Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, Chu Feng continued to unleash more martial skills. In merely a short moment, Chu Feng had unleashed all thirteen martial skills.

“I’m... I’m not dreaming, right? This is for real?”

“Big sister, give me a slap on the face so that I can see if this is a dream or not,” Zhan Lingtong was so astonished that his mouth dropped wide open.

“It’s real. Merely... this is simply too unimaginable. Exactly how did benefactor manage to accomplish that?”

“Could it be that he is simply not a human, but is instead a god?” Zhan Lingling was also extremely astonished. Complicated emotions filled her beautiful eyes as she looked at Chu Feng.

At that moment, the great majority of the people present had the same sort of expression as Zhan Lingling. After all, they knew that all those martial skills were extremely difficult to learn.

Even the simplest Emperor Taboo: Golden Lightning Shield should not be able to be successfully mastered in such a short period of time.

Yet, Chu Feng had actually managed to completely grasp all thirteen martial skills. He was able to even skillfully unleash the three Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

Thus, they felt that ... it was definitely not something that an ordinary person could accomplish.

Chu Feng was naturally not a god. There were mainly two aspects as to why he was able to grasp those martial skills so quickly.

Firstly, Chu Feng’s current cultivation was that of a rank seven Martial Ancestor. For the current Chu Feng, regardless of whether it might be his body’s tolerance toward martial skills or his control over martial power, they had both reached a state where he could easily handle those martial skills.

As for the reason why Chu Feng was able to unleash those martial skills after knowing the method of training and attaining even greater mastery than those who had spent hundreds of years learning those martial skills, it would be because... of the second aspect.

This was also the most important aspect. That is, within Chu Feng’s dantian was a bamboo slip that emitted the aura of the Ancient Era.

That bamboo slip had allowed Chu Feng to have a whole new level of understanding toward martial skills. It led to Chu Feng’s

martial skills being stronger than others of the same level.

Most importantly, after Chu Feng experienced the backlash from the Evil God Sword, that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip became even more powerful, and allowed Chu Feng to have a more incisive understanding of martial skills.

As long as Chu Feng reached a cultivation where he could control a certain martial skill, he would be able to immediately learn that martial skill should he see it.

At that moment, not only had Chu Feng grasped the Ancient Era's War Clan's thirteen martial skills, he had also managed to completely grasp the Kong Heavenly Clan's martial skills, including that Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement!!!

"Never would I have expected that you would be able to grasp everything so quickly."

"No wonder Lord War Sword chose you. After all, your accomplishments are truly astonishing."

At that moment, not only were the crowd exclaiming in admiration, even that high, remote and majestic Ancient Era's War Axe was praising Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, for you to be able to grasp all those martial skills in such a short period of time, it is most definitely not because of your innate comprehension ability. You must have encountered an enormous chance opportunity, right?" The Ancient Era's War Axe asked.

"Enormous chance opportunity?" Chu Feng's heart moved. Indeed, when he had obtained the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip, he knew that it was a chance opportunity.

However, back then, Chu Feng was only concerned about obtaining cultivation resources so that he could quickly increase his cultivation. Back then, the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip could not be considered to be an enormous chance opportunity.

However, things were completely different now. Before the current Chu Feng, the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip was brimming with mysteriousness and inestimable power.

Furthermore, what the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip had bestowed him were indeed not things that cultivation resources could ever bestow him. Perhaps it was as the Ancient Era's War Axe had said, and the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip was indeed an enormous chance opportunity that Chu Feng had encountered.

"I do not care what sort of chance opportunity you've encountered. However, those that have encountered an enormous chance opportunity possess great fortune."

"Since ancient times, experts might all have different experiences. However, one thing was identical about them. That is, they all possessed great fortune."

"And you, you already possess this most important aspect to becoming a grand expert. That is, fortune," The Ancient Era's War Axe said to Chu Feng.

"Great fortune? No wonder Young Hero Chu Feng is so powerful," At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Clan's men felt more and more admiration and envy toward Chu Feng.

While their talent might be inferior to Chu Feng's, it turned out now that even their fortune was inferior to Chu Feng's. As such, how could they not feel envious, not feel admiration, for Chu Feng?

Suddenly, the Ancient Era's War Axe asked Chu Feng, "I am unwilling to guard this place and live the rest of my life all holed up. Chu Feng, can you bring me out of here to fight in the vast starry sky, in the boundless Outer World?"

"Milord, what are you...?!!!"

The Ancient Era's War Clansmen were all astonished upon hearing those words. They had expressions as if they had been fed

feces. They truly never expected that the Ancient Era's War Axe would want to follow Chu Feng and leave this place.

"Senior, you?" Not to mention the others, even Chu Feng was feeling extremely surprised.

"I'm going to consider that you've agreed to it," However, before Chu Feng could finish his words, the Ancient Era's War Axe turned into a golden ray and entered Chu Feng's forehead.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, Chu Feng felt the power of the Ancient Era's War Axe. That power was now under his control.

"Wow! Chu Feng, you've truly profited enormously today! You actually obtained another Ancient Era's secret skill."

"Didn't you say that it was still very difficult for you to control the Ancient Era's War Sword with your current power? What about this Ancient Era's War Axe?"

"This Ancient Era's War Axe shouldn't be that hard to control, right? After all, even that old man was capable of using it. You should also be able to use it at will, right?" Her Lady Queen was endlessly excited.

As for Chu Feng, even though he was extremely surprised, he was also feeling very delighted.

It was as Her Lady Queen had said, although the Ancient Era's War Sword was very strong, it was too powerful. Even if Chu Feng could force himself to use the Ancient Era's War Sword, he would not be able to unleash its true power.

However, this Ancient Era's War Axe was different. Although it was much weaker than the Ancient Era's War Sword, it did not have an extremely high requirement for its user. At the very least, Chu Feng would be able to use the Ancient Era's War Axe right now.

Thus, to Chu Feng, obtaining the Ancient Era's War Axe was a great thing.

Merely, Chu Feng still felt hesitant. He did not know whether or not the Ancient Era's War Clan would agree to him bringing the Ancient Era's War Axe away.

After all, the Ancient Era's War Spear had already been taken away by Zhan Haichuan.

Right now, only two secret skills remained in the Ancient Era's War Clan.

Now that Chu Feng had come, he was going to bring both of them away. To the Ancient Era's War Clan, this would be an enormous loss.

“This!!!”

“What do we do about this?”

“Milord, say... what should we do?”

“Lord War Axe is truly...”

Sure enough, the Ancient Era's War Clan was in utter chaos.

This was especially true for the elders; they all had depressed expressions on their faces. Evidently, they were unable to accept it.

“This is Lord War Axe's decision. What can we possibly do? Are we to demand Lord War Axe from Young Hero Chu Feng?”

“If we were to do that, we would've gone against Lord War Axe's desires. We absolutely cannot do such a thing,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

“But, Milord, if we are to do that, our Ancient Era's War Clan will not have a single secret skill remaining. We will become the same as the Monstrous Clan. What are we supposed to pass on to our future generations?” An elder said.

“Indeed. What you all say is very correct. Without the secret skills, we will have lost a type of inheritance.”

“However, you all should understand this. At the very least, our Ancient Era’s War Clan still exists right now. Don’t you all know why our Ancient Era’s War Clan is still able to exist?”

“When all is said and done, is it our lives that are more important, or the secret skills that are more important?!” Zhan Yuanmo asked with a cold tone.

Hearing those words, the elders grew silent. They would naturally not have forgotten that if it wasn’t for Chu Feng, they would’ve already been exterminated by the Ancient Era’s Monstrous Clan. At that time, they wouldn’t have been able to pass on anything to future generations.

By remembering that Chu Feng had saved them, they also remembered that Chu Feng was no longer comparable to back then. If Chu Feng was to refuse to hand over the secret skills to them, what could they possibly do about it?

Thus, since the Ancient Era’s War Axe had decided to follow Chu Feng, it was already Chu Feng’s possession. There was no way for them to retrieve it.

Right at the moment when everyone was silent, Zhan Yuanmo walked over to Chu Feng. With an apologetic expression on his face, he clasped his fist at Chu Feng, “Young Hero Chu Feng, this old man understands very well why Lord War Axe has chosen you.”

“Merely, this old man has a presumptuous request. I wonder if Young Hero Chu Feng might be willing to agree to it?”

# Chapter 2470 – Returning To The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm

---

“Fuck! What is this old man trying to do? He couldn’t possibly be thinking of having you renounce the Ancient Era’s War Axe, right?”

“I had originally thought that he was different from the others. Turns out, he’s the most shameless of them all,” Her Lady Queen spoke in a very disgusted manner.

“Eggy, don’t think of such a thing. I don’t think this senior is such an individual,” Chu Feng started to calm Eggy. Then, with a very polite tone, he said to Zhan Yuanmo, “Senior, please speak.”

“In that case, Young Hero Chu Feng, I will speak frankly. Both the Ancient Era’s War Sword and the Ancient Era’s War Axe are our Ancient Era’s War Clan’s secret skills that have been passed on for many generations.”

“Although they have chosen you, it remains that they belong to our Ancient Era’s War Clan.”

“If in the future, when you no longer need the Ancient Era’s War Sword and the Ancient Era’s War Axe anymore, I hope that... you will not pass them on to others, and instead pass them on to the descendants of our Ancient Era’s War Clan,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

It turned out that Zhan Yuanmo was not planning to demand the secret skills right away. Instead, he approved of Chu Feng obtaining the two great secret skills.

He merely wanted Chu Feng to return them to the Ancient Era’s War Clan if he no longer needed them in the future.

“Of course. This Chu Feng will definitely do that,” Chu Feng nodded.

“Thank you for your trouble,” Seeing that Chu Feng had agreed



to it, Zhan Yuanmo revealed a smile of ease.

Then, Chu Feng began to chat with Zhan Yuanmo and the others about many things. Once they began, they chatted for an entire night.

When the second day arrived, Chu Feng began to bid his farewells to the crowd.

As Chu Feng did not belong there, he would naturally not stay there forever. He would have to return to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm soon.

As for the people of the War Clan's Ancient Domain, they could not find any reason to stop Chu Feng from leaving either. Merely....

When their ancestor created the War Clan's Ancient Domain, he had sealed it off. That was also the reason why the people of the Ancient Era's War Clan and the Ancient Era's Monstrous Clan had been trapped there the entire time.

Although Chu Feng had already revealed his extraordinary talent and made the people of the Ancient Era's War Clan feel full admiration and adoration for him, they were still unable to determine whether or not Chu Feng would be able to leave the War Clan's Ancient Domain.

Only Chu Feng was filled with confidence in himself. Since he was able to come in, he felt that he would definitely be able to leave.

At that moment, Chu Feng and the people from the Ancient Era's War Clan all arrived at the place where Chu Feng had fallen when he had arrived in the War Clan's Ancient Domain, the place where Chu Feng had first encountered Zhan Lingtong.

“Lingtong, I will be leaving. In the future... if you ever decide to try leaving this place, you must choose this location,” Chu Feng said to Zhan Lingtong.

“Big brother Chu Feng, you mean to say that this place is the weakest location in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain?” Zhan Lingtong asked.

“No, this is not the weakest place. If the space above the War Clan’s Ancient Domain is a fort, then the space above here is a gate.”

“Unless one possesses overwhelming power capable of cutting through the barrier sealing this place... this would be the only place where one can go out from,” Chu Feng said to Zhan Lingtong.

As Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques grew stronger, his Heaven’s Eyes had also grown stronger. In the beginning, he was unable to see the spirit formation above that place. However at that moment, he was able to faintly see it. Furthermore, he had managed to find the exit to that spirit formation.

“No wonder. No wonder our clan’s clansmen were simply unable to leave,” Hearing those words, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen all came to a sudden realization.

“That said, even with that being the case, one will not be able to leave without sufficient cultivation,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, big brother Chu Feng, what level of cultivation must one need in order to exit?” Zhan Lingtong hurriedly asked.

“Their cultivation must be at least that of a Martial Ancestor. However, one’s talent is also related to this. Thus, it is very hard to judge.”

“That said, Lingtong, I will advise you of this: the world outside is much more dangerous than here. Unless you feel that the War Clan’s Ancient Domain is truly unable to contain you any longer, it would be best for you to continue to stay here with your clansmen,” Chu Feng said to Zhan Lingtong.

Chu Feng felt that Zhan Lingtong was a very good child.

However, both his temperament and his current strength were unsuited for the world outside.

“I got it, big brother Chu Feng. After hearing about the outside world from you, I actually also feel that staying in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain with my family is pretty good.”

“That said, big brother Chu Feng, you must take care of yourself. If possible, please come back to visit us frequently,” Zhan Lingtong said to Chu Feng. Reluctance filled his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was not merely a friend to him, he was also his idol.

“If possible, I will definitely return to visit everyone.”

“Everyone, take care,” Chu Feng clasped his fist at the crowd.

Then, Chu Feng stepped forth and soared into the air. Like a water dragon leaving the sea, he shot straight toward the sky.

At that moment, the Ancient Era’s War Clansmen were all closely watching Chu Feng with fixed gazes.

Contained in their eyes were worry, doubt and reluctance to part.

Although Chu Feng possessed outstanding talent, they were still unable to be certain as to whether or not Chu Feng would be able to leave the War Clan’s Ancient Domain.

After all, this was a grand formation set up by their ancestor.

However, Chu Feng soon disappeared. It was not that Chu Feng had flown beyond the crowd’s line of sight, but rather that he had truly disappeared. It was as if he had entered another world.

“Young Hero Chu Feng seems to have succeeded,” Zhan Yuanmo said.

At that moment, the majority of the people were all thinking of the same thing as Zhan Yuanmo; they all felt that Chu Feng had succeeded.

However, upon ascertaining that Chu Feng had successfully left, they started to feel a sense of loss.

As for the reason why, they each had their respective reasons.

Some people felt that Chu Feng's existence would bring about change to the War Clan's Ancient Domain, that Chu Feng leaving would cause the War Clan's Ancient Domain to have a lot less joy.

There were also people that were purely reluctant to part with Chu Feng. Examples of such would be the siblings Zhan Lingtong and Zhan Lingling.

Of course, there were also a lot of people who were reluctant to part with their Ancient Era's War Clan's secret skills.

However, Chu Feng had really left...

Chu Feng was currently in another world.

He was floating in midair. Below him was a vast plain. That vast plain was very desolate and uninhabited. There was not even a single plant to be seen.

Chu Feng descended from the sky and stood on the plain. He was unable to discover anything extraordinary regarding that place.

Even when he activated his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was unable to find anything extraordinary.

However, Chu Feng knew that he had truly left the War Clan's Ancient Domain, and returned to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"That Ancient Era's War Clan's senior was truly extraordinarily powerful. If I hadn't experienced it myself, I truly would never have believed a War Clan's Ancient Domain was hidden above this vast plain," Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

"Stop being so moved about the War Clan's Ancient Domain. What you need to make sure of right now is the current situation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," Her Lady Queen

said.

“That’s true. Although two years is not long, it is not short either.”

“To some people, they will not be able to make any progress in cultivation in two years’ time. Thus, a period of two years is simply of no significance.”

“However, to other people, they are able to accomplish a lot in two years’ time.”

“Among the latter are Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. I wonder what their cultivations are now,” Chu Feng exclaimed.

“That’s not like you. Shouldn’t you worry about your two friends’ safety? Why are you instead worried about their cultivation?” Her Lady Queen said in a very astonished manner.

“Although I have completely offended the Kong Heavenly Clan, and Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong will definitely be implicated by it, I trust them.”

“The two of them are not fools. They will definitely be able to protect themselves,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s true. However, shouldn’t you be worrying about the situation of the Kong Heavenly Clan then?”

“Back then, those bastards of the Kong Heavenly Clan treated you very badly. They are simply too excessive. Although you nearly exterminated them all by borrowing the strength of the Evil God Sword, it remains something that the Evil God Sword did, and not you.”

“I feel that you should go and personally teach them a lesson. You should let them know that you, Chu Feng, are not that easily bullied,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Indeed, I must settle the debt with the Kong Heavenly Clan. However, we can place this matter to the side for now. I must first

find Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong,” Chu Feng said.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s gaze suddenly shifted. He immediately turned around and looked behind him.

At that moment, there was no motion in the direction that Chu Feng looked. However, Chu Feng was able to see something completely different.

There was a large group of people majestically rushing toward his location.

## Chapter 2471 – Encountering An Old Friend

---

“This group of people should be from the same power. This is a perfect opportunity, I can ask them about the situation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

As Chu Feng wanted to ask them about the situation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he decided to stop and wait for them to arrive.

Then, as he was bored, he began to read their lips to see what they were talking about.

It was as Chu Feng had guessed: those people were from the same power. They were from a place called the Jade Mountain Sect.

The Sect Master of the Jade Mountain Sect was an old man with a cultivation of rank four Martial Ancestor.

At that moment, the Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master had gathered practically all of their elites. With him personally leading them, they were moving to suppress a hostile power.

When they mentioned that hostile power, they mentioned a person’s name.

Chu Feng was surprised to see that name.

“Liu Xiaoli?”

Chu Feng was extremely familiar with that name. The reason for that was because the Society Master of the Red Butterfly Society was named Liu Xiaoli.

Furthermore, from the conversations of the Jade Mountain Sect members, Chu Feng found out that the Liu Xiaoli they were talking about was also a woman.

Furthermore, she possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Ancestor, a cultivation very close to that of the Liu Xiaoli Chu Feng

knew.

When Chu Feng had left Liu Xiaoli back then, she had only been a rank one Martial Ancestor. However, she possessed outstanding talent. Thus, it was very possible for her to be a rank two Martial Ancestor at the moment.

“Perhaps it might just be a coincidence. There are countless people in the world with the same name and surname.”

“Furthermore, no matter where the Red Butterfly Society’s bunch move to, they couldn’t possibly have moved to here, no?” Her Lady Queen said.

“Perhaps it is a coincidence, but might also not be a coincidence. After all, their descriptions of Liu Xiaoli resemble the Liu Xiaoli that we know too much. Since I’ve encountered this matter, I will go and have a look,” After Chu Feng finished saying these words, he entered the void and concealed himself.

With Chu Feng’s current level of cultivation, if he wanted to conceal himself, it would be very difficult for anyone below the True Immortal level of cultivation to discover him.

Soon, the group of people from the Jade Mountain Sect moved past Chu Feng and continued onward.

They had not discovered in the slightest that someone had been hiding in the void and then snuck into their ranks, following them.

Following that group of people, Chu Feng soon passed through the vast plain and arrived at a great mountain.

Through observing with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that there was a sect inside the mountain.

That sect did not possess many people, and also contained very few palaces. Furthermore, everything was very new. Likely, it had all been recently constructed.

At that moment, the sect was surrounded by five different



powers.

Thus, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Jade Mountain Sect that he had followed should have come to besiege and attack that sect.

Adding them all up, there were a total of six powers besieging and attacking that sect.

Fortunately, the two sides were only standing in confrontation at that moment. and had yet to actually start battling.

However, as that sect was currently facing enemies on all sides by itself, it did appear that it was facing imminent danger.

That said, that sect master's expression actually remained unchanged even though they were besieged by five powers and five rank three Martial Ancestors.

Most importantly, that sect's master only possessed the cultivation of a rank two Martial Ancestor.

Compared to the masters of the five powers, that sect's master was a level of cultivation weaker.

Most importantly, that sect master was a female.

While her appearance was different from Liu Xiaoli, Chu Feng was able to recognize with a single glance that she was Liu Xiaoli. She had merely altered her appearance.

Not only had Liu Xiaoli altered her appearance, but the elders standing beside her were actually also the Red Butterfly Society's elders. Merely, they too altered their appearances like Liu Xiaoli.

"It really is them," After ascertaining that it was Liu Xiaoli, Chu Feng was overjoyed.

After all, it could be said that he had experienced life and death with Liu Xiaoli and the others. How could Chu Feng not be overjoyed to run into them again?

"What a coincidence, it really is them." At that moment, Her Lady Queen was also very surprised. As she spoke, one could

actually feel excitement in her tone.

After all, back then, Chu Feng had only just arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. His cultivation was still very weak back then. Furthermore, things were made difficult for him by Luyang's Pavilion. Yet, at such a time, the Red Butterfly Society had offered him a helping hand.

That said, while she was happy, Her Lady Queen also started to ponder. She looked to the banner floating above Liu Xiaoli's sect, the banner with the name of 'De-cocoon Sect' and said, "Why would they change their name from Red Butterfly Society to De-cocoon Sect? Could it be that their strength has suffered greatly after what happened last time, and they are thus planning to break free from their cocoons for a rebirth?"

"Wouldn't we know when we ask them about it?" As Chu Feng spoke, he suddenly accelerated. In a blink of an eye, he entered the mountain and arrived before Liu Xiaoli and the others.

However, Chu Feng did not immediately reveal himself. Rather, he stood beside his old friend.

He wanted to see exactly what the group of powers that surrounded Liu Xiaoli and the others wanted to do. He also wanted to make sure of what was going on first.

"Liu Xiaoli, bring your De-cocoon Sect and leave Mount Modang immediately. Do that, and we will consider nothing to have happened."

"Otherwise, do not blame us for being impolite," The masters of the five powers said to Liu Xiaoli.

"Impolite? I wish to see how you all plan to be impolite toward me."

As Liu Xiaoli spoke, a majestic aura swept forth from her body. The next moment, the sky changed color.

It was Divine Power. After Liu Xiaoli unleashed her Divine

Power, her cultivation increased from rank two Martial Ancestor to rank three Martial Ancestor.

She had reached the same level of cultivation as the masters of those five powers.

However, most importantly, Liu Xiaoli's aura was not only limited to that of a rank three Martial Ancestor.

Apart from her cultivation of rank three Martial Ancestor, Liu Xiaoli was also emitting heaven-defying battle power. Although her heaven-defying battle power was only capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, when added to her current cultivation of rank three Martial Ancestor, her actual battle power was on par with ordinary rank four Martial Ancestors.

“Sure enough, that girl was concealing her strength.”

Upon sensing Liu Xiaoli's cultivation, not to mention the others that were besieging her sect, even the masters of the five powers involuntarily moved backwards and revealed fear on their faces.

“Are you all still planning to drive me out now?” Liu Xiaoli asked coldly.

However, her question was not met with a single answer from the five powers.

“Everyone, our De-cocoon Sect has decided to establish ourselves here because we discovered that Mount Modang was uninhabited.”

“Furthermore, the world of martial cultivation is a world where the weak are prey to the strong. Our De-cocoon Sect has merely expanded our territory slightly, and did not attempt to devour you all, our neighboring powers. As such, we were already being extremely benevolent and attentive.”

“Thus, it is best that you all not continue to be so aggressive. Else... it will not be you who will be impolite toward our De-cocoon Sect, but rather us who will be impolite towards you,” Liu Xiaoli said to the crowd.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng finally realized why those powers had joined hands to besiege Liu Xiaoli and the others.

As it turned out, it was due to a territorial conflict.

Evidently, Liu Xiaoli had only arrived recently, whereas those powers that were besieging her were most likely old and well-known powers in the vicinity.

They felt that the appearance of Liu Xiaoli and her sect served as a threat to their status. Thus, they had decided to besiege Liu Xiaoli and the others.

However, after Liu Xiaoli revealed her strength, those five powers all revealed fear.

Although they possessed very great numbers, they knew very well that the world of martial cultivation was one where not just numbers could determine the outcome of a battle.

Merely Liu Xiaoli by herself would be able to exterminate all of the elites of their five powers.

However, even with that being the case, they did not leave immediately. Rather, they seemed to be waiting for something.

# Chapter 2472 – Acting On Behalf Of Justice

---

“You’re still not leaving? Do you all insist on having me teach you a lesson?”

Seeing that their opponents were still thinking about continuing to tangle with them, Liu Xiaoli revealed an impatient expression.

“What arrogance! Our Jade Mountain Sect shall see exactly how you’re going to teach us a lesson.”

Right at that moment, a stern shout was heard from outside the mountain.

Immediately afterward, a group of people majestically charged toward the mountain.

Upon seeing that group of people, the five powers that’d grown fearful immediately revealed joyous expressions. Evidently, their reinforcements had arrived.

As for that group of people, they were precisely the group that Chu Feng had followed over, the Jade Mountain Sect’s troops.

Chu Feng had already known that those people from the Jade Mountain Sect were there to take care of Liu Xiaoli.

Merely, he did not expect that the Jade Mountain Sect was actually the main force in the expedition against Liu Xiaoli.

However, upon thinking about it, Chu Feng found it reasonable. After all, that Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master was a rank four Martial Ancestor.

Although a rank four Martial Ancestor was simply unworthy of being mentioned before the current Chu Feng, a rank four Martial Ancestor was someone that Liu Xiaoli and the others from the Butterfly Society could not look down upon.

Thus, upon seeing that group of people, even Liu Xiaoli was unable to remain calm and collected.

“Big brother, you’ve finally arrived.”

“This De-cocoon Sect is simply too stubborn. I’m afraid that I will have to inconvenience you, big brother.”

Upon seeing the Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master, the masters of the five powers reacted as if they were seeing their own father.

They immediately discovered backing and grew confident. One by one, they started to voice their grievances to that Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master.

“Don’t mention it anymore, I’ve already seen everything,” The Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master waved his hand. Then, like an emperor moving out to personally investigate, he arrogantly arrived before Liu Xiaoli and looked at her with a gaze filled with contempt.

As for what left Chu Feng the most speechless, it was that when the Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master stopped, the elders behind him actually took out a jade seat and placed it behind him.

That Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master was actually not even planning to stand in this confrontation against Liu Xiaoli. Instead, he was planning to confront her while sitting. He was acting as if he was truly an emperor holding a trial against an ordinary commoner.

Rarely had Chu Feng ever encountered such an arrogant individual in his entire cultivation history.

Liu Xiaoli spoke to ask, “Jade Mountain Sect, I seem to recall that this matter is unrelated to you all, no?” Merely, she no longer possessed the confidence she did earlier. It could be seen that Liu Xiaoli was afraid of that Jade Mountain Sect.

“Unrelated? How could it be unrelated? The five of them are my sworn brothers,” As the Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master spoke, he took out a long tobacco pipe.

He began to casually light his tobacco while speaking

indifferently, “Liu Xiaoli, since you’re a woman, I do not wish to make things difficult for you. Immediately take your bunch of shrimp soldiers and crab generals and scam from here. Do that, and I’ll consider nothing to have happened.”

“You!!!” Hearing those words, Liu Xiaoli and the crowd beside her all revealed angry scowls. However, they did not break out in anger. Instead, they forced themselves to contain their anger.

“What is this? Seeing from your unreconciled expressions, could it be that you want to fight against me?”

“Don’t say that I am looking down on you, but even if you possess heaven-defying battle power that allows you to contend against rank four Martial Ancestors, so what? In the end, you are still not a rank four Martial Ancestor. Thus, you are destined to not be a match for me.”

“Even if you are to be enormously fortunate to fight me to a draw and make me retreat today, have you considered tomorrow?”

“This old man has a vast amount of friends here. If you are to truly offend me, the next time I come, I will definitely not be coming alone.”

“At that time, I will not be simply driving you all out of here. Instead, I will be exterminating your entire De-cocoon Sect,” The Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master spoke those words filled with threatening intent.

Hearing those words, Liu Xiaoli and the people beside her all had a change of expression. Their faces started to twist, and fear emerged in their eyes.

They were actually really scared by that old man’s threats.

“Clap, clap, clap~~~”

Right at that moment, clapping sounds were suddenly heard.

“Great. Your ability to boast is truly great.”

Following the clapping, a voice filled with mockery was heard.

At that moment, the Jade Mountain Sect's Sect Master grew furious, whereas Liu Xiaoli and the others were greatly surprised.

The reason for that was because that voice came from their side. All of them subconsciously thought that someone from Liu Xiaoli's side was mocking the Jade Mountain Sect's Sect Master.

“You all are truly ones to refuse the face given to you!”

The Jade Mountain Sect's Sect Master was extremely furious. He stood up abruptly and unleashed his rank four Martial Ancestor's oppressive might to cover the entire sky. At the same time, his overwhelming killing intent caused the sky to darken, and black clouds to surge about.

Witnessing that scene, the crowd from the Red Butterfly Society all started to panic.

They had heard about the Jade Mountain Sect's Sect Master before. That was the reason why they did not wish to fight against him. Yet now, with what had just happened, it would appear that they must fight against him. As for that, it was not what they desired.

“I am the one who spoke earlier. If you have the ability, come and settle it with me.”

Right at that moment, a figure suddenly appeared out of thin air. That figure appeared beside Liu Xiaoli.

Seeing that person, the crowd present all revealed an astonished expression.

That person was naturally Chu Feng. Merely, Chu Feng did not wish to unleash a massacre. Thus... he did not reveal his true appearance.

Not to mention the people from the Jade Mountain Sect and the other five powers, even Liu Xiaoli and the others from the Red



Butterfly Society had no idea who Chu Feng was.

“Who are you?” The Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master asked with a cold voice.

“Who I am is not important. You all merely need to know that you are to immediately scam from this place and never cause trouble for the De-cocoon Sect again. If you are to do that, you all can still live. Else... you shall shoulder the consequences yourself,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance. Who do you think you are? What makes you think...” The Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master spoke mockingly.

“Rumble~~~”

However, before he could finish his words, Chu Feng unleashed his aura.

Although Chu Feng’s rank seven Martial Ancestor level aura was formless, it was an impressive display of power. Chu Feng’s aura lingered in the mountain and covered all of heaven and earth.

“This aura... you... you... you’re a rank seven Martial Ancestor?”

Upon sensing Chu Feng’s aura, not to mention the others, even the Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master turned pale with fright.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, that previously extremely arrogant Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master actually knelt before Chu Feng.

“Milord, I was blind, I have eyes but failed to recognize Mount Tai. Earlier, I spoke rudely, and actually spoke against Milord.”

“Milord, please be magnanimous and take into consideration that this lowly one has managed to recognize his mistake and spare me this once,” The Jade Mountain Sect’s Sect Master actually began to beg for forgiveness.

“Milord, please spare us. We will no longer dare to create trouble for the De-cocoon Sect again.”

The others of the Jade Mountain Sect, as well as everyone from the other five powers, all knelt on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng. With extremely apologetic expressions, they began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

They were already covered with tears and shivering nonstop. They were truly frightened by Chu Feng.

However, that could also not be blamed on them. Although they acted so tyrannically, they were still only a bunch of third rate powers.

To them, a rank seven Martial Ancestor was someone that they absolutely could not afford to provoke.

As Chu Feng did not plan to bicker with them, he did not make things difficult for them and merely said one word, "Scram."

Hearing that word, those people reacted as if they had been saved. They did not dare to stay any longer. They began to express their thanks toward Chu Feng for sparing their lives and then hurriedly soared into the sky to escape far away.

In the blink of an eye, the vast group of people had all disappeared from the mountain. They had all escaped far away.

That said, the people from the Red Butterfly Society all had dumbfounded expressions on their faces.

They truly could not understand why that expert would help them. After all, they did not believe that they knew someone so powerful.

Thus, they felt that it must be that an expert had coincidentally passed by and was unable to tolerate what was happening. That was why he had decided to act righteously to help them.

Thus, Liu Xiaoli arrived before Chu Feng and said to him with an extremely grateful expression on her face, "Junior Liu Xiaoli, the De-cocoon Sect's Sect Master, thanks senior for saving us."

“De-cocoon Sect?” At that moment, Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said, “Aren’t you all the Red Butterfly Society?”

## Chapter 2473 – Current Situation

---

“.....”

Once the name ‘Red Butterfly Society’ was said, the expressions of Liu Xiaoli and the others changed enormously.

They had expressions of horror on their faces. After all, there was a reason why they had changed their name. Furthermore, as the Red Butterfly Society was only a tier three power, there shouldn’t be a lot of people who knew of them.

While they were horrified, Liu Xiaoli did not dare to express any rudeness toward that unknown yet incomparably powerful individual before her.

Instead, in a very respectful manner, she asked, “Senior, who exactly might you be? How did you know about the Red Butterfly Society?”

“You ask how I know about the Red Butterfly Society?” As Chu Feng spoke, he removed his conical bamboo hat and revealed his appearance.

“Chu Feng?!” Upon seeing Chu Feng, both Liu Xiaoli and the people behind her revealed stunned expressions.

First they were shocked. However, their shocked expressions were immediately followed with expressions of ecstasy. They were simply in even greater joy than finding treasures.

“Chu Feng, it’s you? You’re not dead?!!!”

Liu Xiaoli was so excited that her body started to shake. She no longer showed any of her previous cautiousness. Instead, like seeing an old friend, she arrived before Chu Feng and patted his arm.

At that moment, Chu Feng discovered that even though Liu Xiaoli had an enormous smile on her face, the corners of her eyes

were already wet.

“Who said I’m dead? Aren’t I still living and active?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“But, two years ago when you fought against the Kong Heavenly Clan, no one knew what happened to you, and you disappeared. Thus, everyone felt that you were seriously injured in the battle, and died afterwards.”

“There were even people who declared that your corpse had been found,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Found my corpse? Never would I have expected the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to be so proficient in spreading false rumors,” The smile on Chu Feng’s face grew even wider.

“Regardless, it is great that little friend Chu Feng is fine, great that little friend Chu Feng is fine.”

The Red Butterfly Society’s elders were all overjoyed. They were smiling so intensely that their aged faces became filled with wrinkles like a bunch of steamed stuffed buns. One could see how happy they were.

“Chu Feng, where have you gone during the past two years? Furthermore, your cultivation... isn’t the speed at which you reach breakthroughs simply too fast? How did you become a rank seven Martial Ancestor already?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

She still remembered the time when she had first met Chu Feng. Back then, Chu Feng was much weaker than her.

Yet now, Chu Feng had become much stronger than her. She felt that she no longer had the chance to overtake Chu Feng.

“Lady Society Master, this is nothing. Back then, little friend Chu Feng fought against the Kong Heavenly Clan by himself. Furthermore, it was said that little friend Chu Feng held a Demon Armament in his hand, easily killed the Kong Heavenly Clan’s

True Immortals, and nearly brought about the extermination of the entire Kong Heavenly Clan,” an elder of the Red Butterfly Society said. When mentioning that matter, he had a proud expression on his face. It was as if Chu Feng was his relative, a relative that he could be immensely proud of.

“Right, right, right. That matter spread like wildfire. Furthermore, it was said that many people witnessed it. Thus, it was most definitely not an exaggeration.”

“Chu Feng, exactly how did you accomplish that, how were you able to kill True Immortals?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

At that moment, she reacted as if she had countless questions for Chu Feng that she was impatient to know the answer to.

“It is a long story. To put it simply, the me from back then possessed a cultivation much weaker than now.”

“As I was only a Half Martial Ancestor back then, it was true that I was only able to contend against the Kong Heavenly Clan by relying on a Demon Armament.”

“However, I cannot frequently make use of that Demon Armament. Thus, unless I am forced into a corner, I will rely on my own cultivation.”

“During the past two years, I have been in closed-door training. That is why I managed to obtain my current level of cultivation,” Chu Feng said to Liu Xiaoli and the others.

That said, he did not reveal everything to them, and had still concealed certain things. For example, he did not mention the fact that the Evil God Sword would cause a backlash against him, and the fact that he had been in closed-door training in the War Clan’s Ancient Domain for the past two years.

After all, it was difficult to fathom a person’s mind. While he trusted Liu Xiaoli, he was unable to trust everyone present.

This is precisely what is meant by ‘one should not have a heart to

harm others, but one must have a heart to guard against others.’”

“In that case, the rumors are all true. You really managed to rely on a Demon Armament to nearly eliminate the entire Kong Heavenly Clan?”

“Chu Feng, you are simply too amazing. I knew that you were amazing, but never would I have expected you to be this amazing.”

“What sort of place is the Kong Heavenly Clan? It is one of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Did you know that the strength of the Kong Heavenly Clan has suffered enormously because of you alone? They no longer possess the arrogance that they did back then.”

“Right now, you’ve become one of the most legendary individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. If people were to find out that you’re still alive, it would definitely create a great disturbance.”

“Do you know how many powers will try to rope you in with them? How many people will try to become your disciple?”

“Those things are simply unimaginable.”

“After all, you have already become the target of admiration for countless seniors, the idol of countless juniors.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd grew even more excited. It would be one thing for someone of Liu Xiaoli’s age to act so excited. Yet, the original management elders of the Red Butterfly Society, those elderly individuals who had lived for countless years, were actually unable to contain their emotions like a bunch of kids.

Suddenly, an elder spoke, “Oh, that’s right. It is not only you who has become extremely famous, your two friends have also become extremely famous now.”

“You’re talking about Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong?” Chu Feng

asked.

“Right, those two,” That elder answered.

“How are Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong doing now?” Chu Feng hurriedly asked. This was actually what he was concerned about the most.

“The two of them are also extremely amazing right now. While I do not know their exact cultivations, they have been deemed to be demon-level geniuses capable of being equally as famous as Young Master Li Ming.”

“Furthermore, since the events of two years ago, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang have become complete enemies of the Kong Heavenly Clan. They have threatened that they will definitely eliminate the Kong Heavenly Clan to avenge you.”

“During the two years you were gone, they have also made the Kong Heavenly Clan pay dearly. Many of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s branches were attacked and destroyed by them.”

“In fact, many of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s experts that were dispatched to pursue and kill them were instead killed by them.”

“Most importantly, the two of them are absolutely unrestrained. They continue to attack the Kong Heavenly Clan nonstop, but the Kong Heavenly Clan is unable to do anything to them,” That elder said.

“Indeed, if the two of them are to engage in guerilla warfare, the Kong Heavenly Clan will not be able to do anything to them,” Chu Feng smiled. As close friends, he knew Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong quite well.

After all, the two of them were both Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Thus, their ability to conceal themselves was not something that ordinary individuals could match.

Furthermore, both of them were smart, and possessed many techniques. It would indeed be a major headache for the Kong



Heavenly Clan to encounter the two of them as enemies.

“Actually, it was also because of you having inflicted serious losses to the Kong Heavenly Clan that they have been unable to deal with Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.”

“If the Kong Heavenly Clan from two years ago was on equal footing against the other three tier one powers, and maybe even be faintly stronger than them, then the current Kong Heavenly Clan has become the publicly accepted weakest of the four tier one powers.”

“Furthermore, everyone knows that it is due to you that the Kong Heavenly Clan ended up degenerating to such a state.”

“Not only did you inflict heavy losses upon them, but you also left them with enormous infamy. Now, they are reviled by everyone,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“Haha, never would I have expected the Kong Heavenly Clan to suffer like this in the past two years. Not only did their strength decrease greatly because of you, but they also became infamous. Your two friends are also attacking them nonstop, adding hail to snow.”

“If the Kong Heavenly Clan had known that they would suffer like this, even if they were given a hundred times more courage, they would definitely not have dared to attempt to kill you.”

“Haha. Great, this is truly great. They have truly reaped what they sowed. Serves them right,” Upon hearing that, Her Lady Queen was overjoyed. She revealed an extremely pleased expression on her beautiful face.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, what we’ve told you so far is all good news. However, there is still another piece of bad news that I feel that you should know,” Suddenly, Liu Xiaoli’s expression turned serious.

“What is the bad news?” Chu Feng asked.

“Do you still remember Luyang’s Pavilion?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“Chu Luyang, the Pavilion Master of Luyang’s Pavilion. Humph, of course I remember him,” A sneer emerged on Chu Feng’s face.

That Chu Luyang had caused Chu Feng to suffer quite a lot back then. Although he had ended up being killed by Chu Feng, many people were killed because of him. Thus, even though Chu Feng had personally killed Chu Luyang, he was still unable to neutralize the hatred in his heart.

“Chu Luyang has a younger brother by the name of Chu Luxuan.”

“I’ve heard that Chu Luxuan is completely different from Chu Luyang and the others. Even in the Chu Heavenly Clan, that Chu Luxuan is a top rated genius.”

“Right now, that Chu Luxuan has arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Liu Xiaoli said.

## Chapter 2474 – Chu Feng’s Influence

---

“What sort of ability does this Chu Luxuan possess?” Chu Feng asked.

“Very few people know what cultivation that Chu Luxuan possesses. However, he is like you, a member of the younger generation.”

“Furthermore, as he possesses the reputation of being a genius in the Chu Heavenly Clan, he was able to move about completely unhindered upon arriving in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“After arriving in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he managed to, in less than a single year, gather countless powers to submit to him.”

“Among them is the Ying Heavenly Clan and the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, the World Spiritist Saintess,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“My enemies have all submitted to him. It would appear that he plans to take care of me,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“You’ve killed his biological older brother. Naturally, he will want to take care of you. Although it has been said that you died two years ago, he has still continued to search for your whereabouts the entire time. His demand is to find you if you’re alive, and find your corpse if you’re dead.”

“If he were to know that you’re still alive, he would definitely attack you. Chu Feng, you must definitely be careful; you must not let him find you,” Liu Xiaoli said to Chu Feng with great concern.

Although Liu Xiaoli did not know exactly how powerful Chu Luxuan was, she was still extremely worried for Chu Feng. After all, Chu Luxuan was a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan, a genius from the Upper Realms. One could imagine how frightening he

must be just by thinking about it.

“Since all of my enemies have become his subordinates, even if he does not try to find me, I would have gone to find him.”

“There are certain debts that must be settled properly,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“.....”

Upon hearing what Chu Feng said, Liu Xiaoli and the others revealed dumbfounded expressions. They grew quiet.

They were truly unable to understand what Chu Feng was thinking. After all, that Chu Luxuan possessed a robust background. They felt that it was clearly not a sensible act to confront him head-on.

However, upon thinking about it further, they started to feel at ease. They recalled that they had actually never been able to understand Chu Feng, that Chu Feng had always been like this, always been someone who would continue in his own way without any fear.

Perhaps it might be precisely because Chu Feng was different like this that he had managed to achieve what he had.

Furthermore, the current Chu Feng was incomparable to before. He possessed the cultivation of a rank seven martial Ancestor, and was also a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline. He was already an extremely frightening character.

Moreover, Chu Feng had nearly extinguished the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago. Although they had not witnessed that scene, they still felt their blood run cold just by imagining it.

Upon thinking of all that, they instead felt that their worries were unnecessary.

Suddenly, Liu Xiaoli's expression turned very serious. She said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, please accept my respect.”

After she finished saying those words, a ‘putt’ was heard, and Liu Xiaoli kneeled before Chu Feng.

It was not only Liu Xiaoli. Everyone from the Red Butterfly Society kneeled before Chu Feng.

“What are you all doing?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

“If it wasn’t for the sake of avenging my master, you would not have offended the Ying Heavenly Clan, killed Chu Luyang and made all these enemies.”

“I fear that our Red Butterfly Society is likely unable to repay what we owe. Thus, the only thing we can do is be grateful toward you,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“So it’s actually regarding that,” After finding out why Liu Xiaoli and the others reacted in such a manner, Chu Feng laughed.

As he spoke, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a gentle power enveloped Liu Xiaoli and the others, bringing them back to their feet.

“Your master showed kindness toward me. His kindness is something that I will never forget. With him being killed by another, there was no reason for me to remain indifferent. Thus, I have done everything not only for you all, but also for myself. You do not need to feel that you owe me for this. After all, you didn’t owe me anything to begin with.”

“That said, why did you all come here and change your Red Butterfly Society’s name?” Chu Feng asked.

“After you killed Chu Luyang, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan that existed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm felt bitter hatred toward you.”

“However, they were unable to do anything to you. As such, they ended up creating troubles for us. Forced into a corner, we had no choice but to leave and conceal our identities.”

“This is especially true after that Chu Luxuan appeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. We had no choice but to continue migrating. If we were to be discovered by him, we would undoubtedly be killed,” Liu Xiaoli said.

“I will settle the matter regarding that Chu Luxuan as soon as possible,” Chu Feng realized that if Chu Luxuan was not settled, all those related to him in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would likely be implicated by him.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked with a worried expression, “Oh, that’s right, how are the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall right now?”

The reason for that was because everyone knew that the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were related to him.

After all, when the Ying Heavenly Clan had wanted to kill Chu Feng, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall had publicly announced that they would protect him.

As such, Chu Feng was worried about the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

“You don’t have to worry about the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. Although the Kong Heavenly Clan has become your bitter enemy, their reputation has also suffered catastrophically.”

“While at the heart of the struggle, they will not dare to do anything to the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. Thus, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have been unscathed the entire time.”

“Not only were they not implicated by you, they have instead received benefits due to you. Right now, many idle experts of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have joined the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall to become their guest elders.”

“The Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall have also become powers, apart from the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and the Immortal Sword School, that the people of the younger generation yearn to join the most.”

“During the past two years, whenever the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall took in new disciples, young talents from all over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will choose to join them.”

“Although the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall are not the strongest among the tier two powers, their popularity is something that no other tier two power could compare to.”

“Right now, it could be said that the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall are the most mighty powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm apart from the four tier one powers.”

“As for all this, it is all because of you.”

When Liu Xiaoli spoke, she had a very proud expression. After all, the extraordinary individual that she was speaking of was her close friend.

“Aiyoh, Chu Feng, not bad, eh? Never would I have expected that your status would reach so high in the two years you’ve disappeared from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Her Lady Queen teased.

However, the tone that Her Lady Queen spoke with was one of someone feeling joy for Chu Feng.

While Chu Feng had a lot of enemies now, the fact that he possessed such great power and influence meant that the majority of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm sided with him. To Chu Feng, this would be a very advantageous thing.

“While the Kong Heavenly Clan did not attack them, what about that Chu Luxuan?” Chu Feng asked.

Actually, Chu Feng had already guessed that the Kong Heavenly

Clan would not attack the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

After all, the Kong Heavenly Clan's dark plot of killing Chu Feng had already caused them to lose all respect among the crowd. If they were to attack the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, they would truly become utterly notorious.

However, it was different for Chu Luxuan. He was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, nor did he wish to establish himself in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Chu Feng felt that Chu Luxuan had not mainly come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to avenge his older brother. Likely, his main purpose in coming must be to carry out some sort of mission.

Thus, if he wanted to deal with Chu Feng, he would simply not take into consideration whether or not he would implicate the innocent.

Furthermore, the Ying Heavenly Clan had submitted to Chu Luxuan now.

Chu Feng felt that unless Chu Luxuan was someone who was able to properly distinguish between grudges and grievances, the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall would, sooner or later, suffer a calamity.

"Chu Luxuan? It doesn't seem like he has had any intention to make things difficult for the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall so far," Liu Xiaoli said.

"If that's the case, it would appear that Chu Luxuan possesses a better moral character than his older brother," Chu Feng said with a slight smile.

He had said those words in a questioning manner. After all, he had never met Chu Luxuan before, and did not know what sort of person he was.



“Lady Society Master, this is bad!” Right at that moment, an elder suddenly flew over from afar and landed on the mountain.

“Chu Feng?” That elder knew of Chu Feng. Thus, he was stunned the moment he landed and saw Chu Feng.

“Lady Society Master, is this... is he really Chu Feng?” The elder was a bit dumbfounded. Thus, he turned to request verification from Liu Xiaoli.

At that moment, Liu Xiaoli burst into loud laughter, “If he’s not real, could he possibly be fake?”

“Heavens! Little friend Chu Feng, you’re actually alive? This is truly great!”

The next moment, that elder was wild with joy. His reaction was just like that of Liu Xiaoli and the others earlier. He was extremely excited.

“Senior, this Chu Feng has been in closed-door training for the past two years without any sign of activity or news. I am sorry to have made you worry,” Chu Feng clasped his fist with a smile on his face.

The fact that this elder reacted in such a manner meant that he was extremely worried about him. Thus, Chu Feng felt very moved.

“Oh, that’s right. Elder, what has happened?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“Regarding this...” That elder took a glance at Chu Feng, and found it a bit embarrassing to speak.

“Could it be related to me?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing those words, that elder’s expression stiffened, and he revealed a surprised expression.

His reaction had verified to Chu Feng and his guess was correct.

This bad news seemed to be related to him.

## Chapter 2475 – Allies Attacked

---

After that elder hesitated for a moment, he said, “Chu Feng, this matter is indeed related to you. However, there is nothing you can do about it. Thus, after I tell you what it is, you must definitely remain calm.”

“I will remain calm. Senior, please go ahead,” Chu Feng said calmly.

“It’s the Ying Heavenly Clan. The Ying Heavenly Clan is currently attacking the Three Stars Hall. I fear that they would have already reached the headquarters of the Three Stars Hall by now,” That elder said.

“The Ying Heavenly Clan? Sure enough, they ended up attacking the Three Stars Hall,” Chu Feng started to frown upon hearing those words. Then, he said to Liu Xiaoli, “Do you have a map of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

Naturally, the reason why Chu Feng wanted a map was so that he could find a way to proceed to the Three Stars Hall to reinforce them.

“Chu Feng, are you really planning to involve yourself in this?” Liu Xiaoli asked.

“This matter was caused by me to begin with. Thus, I cannot find a reason to ignore it,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

“Indeed. That’s the Chu Feng I know. It would appear that it would be useless for me to urge you against this,” Liu Xiaoli shook her head with a smile. She had a helpless expression on her face.

Then, she said, “Three Stars Hall is actually not far from here. I can show you the way.”

Hearing what Liu Xiaoli said, Chu Feng’s extremely worried heart felt some ease.

He felt that since the Ying Heavenly Clan dared to attack the Three Stars Hall, it meant that they had obtained certainty in being able to take care of them.

After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan had already submitted to Chu Luxuan. Likely, their strength was no longer comparable to before.

Chu Feng felt that the situation would be bad for the Three Stars Hall.

However, if it was truly as Liu Xiaoli had said, and the Three Stars Hall was not far from where they were, then he would still be able to reinforce them in time.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a gentle breeze swirled up. Then, Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli disappeared together.

Not only did their bodies disappear, but even their auras completely disappeared without a trace.

The crowd all knew that Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli had left.

“Little friend Chu Feng and Lady Society President are simply too impulsive. Not only did that Ying Heavenly Clan gather all of their elites, they have also obtained the assistance of many experts. With the cultivation that the two of them possess, even if they are to go there, they will only be throwing away their lives.”

After Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli left, the elder who had returned to report the matter became abnormally panicky.

“Throwing away their lives? That might not be the case,” However, at that moment, the other elders of the Red Butterfly Society started to smile profoundly.

“What’s wrong with you all? Little friend Chu Feng and Lady Society Master are planning to confront the Ying Heavenly Clan. The current Ying Heavenly Clan is incomparable to before. It is a tier two power that not even that Three Stars Hall can contend

against. How can you all smile at a time like this?”

Seeing that the crowd was not only calm and composed, but even smiling on top of that, he felt so furious that his complexion turned pale.

“You’ve just returned, and you don’t know about the situation at hand. All you know is that the Ying Heavenly Clan has become more powerful after becoming Chu Luxuan’s subordinates. But, do you know what sort of cultivation little friend Chu Feng possesses right now?” someone asked with a beaming smile.

“What sort of cultivation?” That elder asked.

“Rank seven Martial Ancestor,” The crowd replied.

“Rank seven Martial Ancestor?”

That elder was immediately stunned upon hearing those words. He asked, “With or without using his Heavenly Bloodline?”

“Little friend Chu Feng’s cultivation is before using his Heavenly Bloodline,” The crowd from the Red Butterfly Society replied in unison again.

“Sssss~~~” Hearing those words, that elder immediately sucked in a mouthful of cold air. At the same time, his expression turned exceptionally marvelous. The next moment, he grew silent.

After being silent for a long time, he spoke again, “Little friend Chu Feng is truly godly. It would seem that my worries were unnecessary. The ones that are out of luck is not the Three Stars Hall, nor is it little friend Chu Feng and Lady Society Master. Rather, it is that Ying Heavenly Clan.”

As he said those words, that elder did not have the slightest bit of worry on his face anymore. Instead, it was replaced with an overjoyed expression.

.....

The Three Stars Hall was constructed above a vast plain.

Originally, the Three Stars Hall did not control a very large area. However, in the two years that'd passed many of their neighboring powers had requested to join them and become their subsidiary powers out of their own initiative.

Thus, in a short period of merely two years, the Three Stars Hall became a huge monster in the area.

However, at that moment, the Three Stars Hall's various subsidiary powers and branches were attacked.

Even the Three Stars Hall's headquarters was no exception.

At that moment, above the vast group of palaces in the Three Stars Hall was a semitransparent spirit formation fort. That spirit formation fort covered the entire Three Stars Hall.

Above the fort were countless silhouettes wearing Thunder Armor with Thunder Wings extending from their backs. They were holding weapons and unleashing magnificent martial skills to attack the semitransparent spirit formation fort nonstop.

“Boom, boom, boom~~~”

With those nonstop attacks, rumbles could be heard continuously.

Deep inside the Three Stars Hall, the Three Stars Hall's guardian elders were all putting forth their utmost effort to continue maintaining the grand defensive formation. Still, that grand defensive formation that protected the Three Stars Hall was currently riddled with scars after being bombarded by the attacks from the Ying Heavenly Clan's army nonstop. At that moment, it was on the verge of collapse.

“Lord Headmaster, the things they're using are simply too strange. Our grand defensive formation will likely not be able to hold them back much longer. What should we do?”

Seeing that their grand defensive formation was about to be breached by the Ying Heavenly Clan's ferocious army, many

people in the Three Stars Hall started to panic. With no other choice, they looked to their Headmaster.

Originally, their grand defensive formation had been extremely powerful. Logically, it would have been very difficult for anyone below the True Immortal level of cultivation to breach their grand defensive formation.

However, the Ying Heavenly Clan's army had sprinkled a special sort of liquid over their Three Stars Hall's grand defensive formation.

Through the decaying effect of that liquid, their Three Stars Hall's grand defensive formation had been greatly weakened. If it were to continue, their grand defensive formation would, sooner or later, be breached.

When their opponents were capable of even breaching their grand defensive formation, the people in the Three Stars Hall would naturally be extremely worried that they would not be a match for the Ying Heavenly Clan.

“Counter soldiers with arms, water with an earthen weir. If it's a battle they want, then it is a battle we shall give them.”

[Editor's note: a weir is a barrier in a river that changes its behavior—similar to the behavior of a dam]

Compared to the Three Stars Hall's elders, their Headmaster's expression remained unchanged. He was exceptionally calm, and reacted with the airs of a ruler that a headmaster should possess.

“That's right. What's there to fear? Their Ying Heavenly Clan is merely relying on the power of their Heavenly Bloodline. In terms of actual cultivation, they are much inferior to our Lord Headmaster,” Many elders echoed.

The Three Stars Hall's headmaster was a rank eight Martial Ancestor. Furthermore, he possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

Although he was not a peak Martial Ancestor, as he possessed the cultivation of a rank eight Martial Ancestor and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation, he was stronger than even ordinary peak Martial Ancestors.

He was the main reason why the Three Stars Hall had always been one of the relatively stronger tier two powers.

As for the Ying Heavenly Clan, although their status among the tier two powers had always been on par with the Three Stars Hall, their Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had remained a rank four Martial Ancestor all these years.

He only possessed the strength to barely contend against the Three Stars Hall's headmaster due to his Thunder Wings, Thunder Armor and his Heavenly Bloodline's heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

However, if their true levels of cultivation were to be compared, there was a total of four levels of difference in cultivation. Thus, many of the people in the Three Stars Hall looked down on the Ying Heavenly Clansmen.

After all, if their Heavenly Bloodline's power were to be removed, and only their talent was considered, the Ying Heavenly Clansmen were inferior to everyone in the Three Stars Hall.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion sounded from outside. The grand defensive formation that surrounded the Three Stars Hall was crumbling. It had been shattered into countless bright lights. With overflowing flames that brightened the sky, the shattered pieces were falling from the sky and basking the entire Three Stars Hall in a red hue.

As if it was the arrival of doomsday, the Three Stars Hall's grand defensive formation had been breached!!!

# Chapter 2476 – Fighting Alone

---

“The grand formation has been breached!!!”

Even though the Three Stars Hall were prepared to fight, when they saw with their own eyes that their grand defensive formation had been shattered to pieces, the crowd from the Three Stars Hall still felt nervous in their hearts.

After all, the grand defensive formation was a symbol of safety. If it was gone, it would mean that their Three Stars Hall would definitely suffer casualties.

However, after the Three Stars Hall’s grand defensive formation was shattered, the Ying Heavenly Clan army did not immediately attack them. Instead, in an orderly manner, they stood above them in the sky.

However, it remained that what was in the sky was the Ying Heavenly Clan’s army, all people that possessed Heavenly Bloodlines.

As their Thunder Wings moved about, the crackling of thunder could be heard resonating through heaven and earth.

At a glance, the figures covered in lightning seemed to cover the horizon. They stood there in an orderly manner, and simply did not resemble ordinary martial cultivators in the slightest. Instead, it was like an army of celestial soldiers had descended upon the world of mortals.

Although the Ying Heavenly Clan’s army had not yet attacked the Three Stars Hall, their presence was already an enormous deterrent, attacking the morale of the people in the Three Stars Hall.

At that moment, many people in the Three Stars Hall were thinking that even though their cultivations were all generally stronger than those of the Ying Heavenly Clansmen, it remained



that the Ying Heavenly Clansmen were possessors of Heavenly Bloodlines, the beloved children of the heavens.

Their overall power was not inferior to theirs. Furthermore, once the Ying Heavenly Clansmen reached the Martial Ancestor realm, they also possessed, apart from their Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, that powerful Lightning Mark.

Faced with such a group of enemies, could they really defeat them?

If they were to say that they were not afraid, it would definitely be a lie.

“Ying Heavenly Clan, why are you attacking our Three Stars Hall?”

Right at that moment, a thunderous shout sounded from the Three Stars Hall, spreading outward domineeringly.

It was the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster. The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster’s words came like a balm to the hearts of everyone in the Three Stars Hall. After hearing those words, they managed to calm their minds.

“Why? Today has been destined ever since you and the Sunset Cloud Valley jointly swore to protect that Chu Feng.”

Suddenly, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s army scattered to two sides, forming a road among the sea of people.

A figure was slowly walking through the air. Following that road, a figure slowly approached. As for that individual, he was none other than the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, do you know why I did not immediately fight back against your attacks, and instead chose to unleash the grand formation for defensive purposes?” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster asked.

“I have come with my army of Ying Heavenly Clan’s elites. However, apart from the elites, your Three Stars Hall have an enormous amount of weak disciples and elders.”

“With their cultivation, they’re no different from ants. A burst of wind powerful enough to scatter grass is sufficient to kill them. You unleashed the grand defensive formation merely so that you could strive to transfer them somewhere safe,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“You’re only half correct,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said.

“Oh?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief revealed a smile of contempt. He then asked, “Then, tell me, what is the other half?”

“If we are to fight, casualties are inevitable. However, there is not an irreconcilable hatred between us.”

“Thus, I actually wanted to ask you. Are you really planning to have your clansmen perish for a mere friction that we had back then?” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster asked.

“Then I wish to ask you. Back when you decided to protect Chu Feng, did you ever think that your Three Stars Hall’s disciples and elders would end up dying because of you?” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“I did,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said.

“Then why did you make that decision? Back then, if it wasn’t for the obstruction from you all and the Sunset Cloud Valley, I would’ve already slaughtered that damned bastard Chu Feng to avenge my son.”

The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief grew increasingly furious. He was unable to control his state of mind the moment he recalled what had happened back then.

“You wish to know the reason? Very well, I can tell you why. The reason is because Chu Feng... is worthy of us doing so,” The Three

Stars Hall's Headmaster declared.

“Good, very good, very very good. What a great ‘Chu Feng is worthy of us doing so!!!’” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to gnash his teeth in fury. His veins were bulging.

“Since you felt that protecting that Chu Feng was worth your lives, then you must also think that your Three Stars Hall being exterminated because of that Chu Feng is also worth it.”

As the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke, he unleashed his rank four Martial Ancestor aura.

At the same time, his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings emerged on his body. In an instant... his aura increased from rank four Martial Ancestor to rank six Martial Ancestor.

Although a rank six Martial Ancestor did not appear to be very strong, no one dared to look down on him after he emitted his heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

He was an existence stronger than even ordinary peak Martial Ancestors.

“Wait,” Suddenly, the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster spoke.

“Spit out what you want to say, fart out what you want to fart. These might very well become your final words.”

The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief flipped his palm and held a long Ancestral Armament sword in his hand. He had already made preparations to unleash a massacre.

“If we are to wage war, casualties will be inevitable. I believe that is also not something that you wish to see.”

“How about this: you and I will fight one another. If you are to win, you can take my life. If I am to win, I will instead spare you,” As the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster spoke, he flipped his palm and also took out an Ancestral Armament Sword.

“Very well, I’ll agree to your demand,” After the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief finished saying those words, he waved his hand to indicate to the Ying Heavenly Clansmen behind him to retreat.

“You all, step down too,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster gave the order. As his subordinates moved back, he soared into the sky.

“Listen carefully. I have agreed to your demand not because I am afraid of casualties. After all, casualties are a common thing in wars. If one does not even have this bit of resolution, how could one possibly be a martial cultivator?”

“Furthermore, I have agreed to your demand not because I am afraid of losing to you. The reason for that is because you will definitely be the one to lose today.”

“Thus, there is only one reason why I agreed to your demand. That is, I will have everyone in your Three Stars Hall personally witness how you, their Lord Headmaster, will be defeated by my hands,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Isn’t it too quick for you to say things like that? Although you possess overwhelming battle power that surpasses my own due to your Heavenly Bloodline, I remain a rank eight Martial Ancestor. I’m afraid that the outcome of the battle between us is still undetermined,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said.

“Still undetermined? Are you certain of that?” As the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said those words, an evil smile emerged on his face.

Once that evil smile appeared, his cultivation actually started to surge. From a rank six Martial Ancestor, he reached rank seven Martial Ancestor.

At the same time as his cultivation increased, light emerged underneath his feet. He turned into a shooting star. With extremely rapid speed, he rushed toward the Three Stars Hall’s

Headmaster.

A rank seven Martial Ancestor with a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation. At that moment, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief possessed a battle power a level above the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster, a rank eight Martial Ancestor with heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting two levels of cultivation.

The one level difference in battle power was an enormous gap.

At such a close distance, the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster was unable to react in time.

“Puchi~” Blood splattered about.

The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's Ancestral Armament Sword had penetrated the body of the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster.

“You... you were concealing your cultivation?” The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster's eyes were glaring wide open. irreconciliation filled his face.

As for the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, he had a pleased and delighted smile, “If I did not have absolute certainty in victory, why would I come here?”

# Chapter 2477 – Intention To Exterminate A Sect

---

“Lord Headmaster!!!”

Witnessing that scene, the crowd from the Three Stars Hall all started to panic. One by one, they took out their weapons with the intention to rescue their Lord Headmaster.

“Don’t come over!”

However, the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster spoke to stop them.

He knew very well that even if everyone from the Three Stars Hall were to rush over, they would still be no match for the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Since he was definitely going to be killed today, he had decided to accept death, and did not want the others of the Three Stars Hall to make unnecessary sacrifices.

“So that’s it. You’ve already made the preparations to die, and do not want your subordinates to die in vain.”

“In that case, I will instead go against your desires. I will have all of your subordinates die before you.”

The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had managed to see the desire of the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster. He turned his cold and vicious gaze to the rest of the Three Stars Hall.

Immediately, overwhelmingly powerful oppressive might enveloped the location of his gaze.

Faced with the suddenly arriving oppressive might, the crowd of the Three Stars Hall were unable to resist in the slightest.

Regardless of their cultivation, they were all forced to the ground in an instant.

“Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, if you are to kill me, I will

have no complaints. However, we agreed that we will not bring harm upon the innocent. Why are you not honoring your words?!" The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster said.

"Not honoring my words? Never once did I say that I would not kill the people of your Three Stars Hall."

"I might as well tell you the truth. I never planned to spare anyone from your Three Stars Hall to begin with."

"Originally, I planned to kill you first, and then exterminate them later. However, I've changed my mind now. I will have you witness everyone in your Three Stars Hall being killed before you, witness your Three Stars Hall that has been able to continue existing for so long be ruined before you."

"As for the reason for all of this, it is all because you chose to protect someone that you shouldn't have," After he finished saying those words, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted, "Kill them all! Leave none alive!"

"Yes, Milord!"

At that moment, countless Ying Heavenly Clansmen and guest elders descended from the sky. They planned to massacre the powerless Three Stars Hall's disciples and elders that were restricted by the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Blood began to splatter everywhere as screams sounded nonstop.

The people of the Ying Heavenly Clan did not kill everyone from the Three Stars Hall right away. Instead, they began to use extremely cruel methods to torture them to death.

"No! Stop! Stop immediately!!!"

Witnessing that, seeing his subordinates suffering, seeing them in such misery that death would be a relief, the Three Stars Hall's Headmaster shouted nonstop. At the same time, he unleashed intense killing intent.

He actually wanted to fight again!!!

“Wuuaah.”

Seeing the reaction from the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief rotated his Ancestral Armament sword. Immediately, the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster vomited out a mouthful of blood.

Following that, the overwhelming aura and killing intent that the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster was emitting vanished instantly.

When confronted with the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, who possessed a battle power one level above his own, the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster was truly completely powerless to do anything.

At that moment, he could only powerlessly watch as his subordinates were miserably tortured before him.

“You said that you chose to protect Chu Feng because Chu Feng was worthy of your protection?”

“Then, let me ask you this. Right now, your Three Stars Hall is going to be exterminated. Where is your Chu Feng now?”

“Is this what you mean by worthy of your protection? For someone that you possessed absolutely no association with, you’ve brought about the ruin of your sect,” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief mocked.

However, faced with such provocation from the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster was not only not angry, he instead smiled.

“Rest assured. Sooner or later, Chu Feng will find out about what has happened here today. Once he becomes aware of it, he will definitely avenge us.”

“Not a single person in our Three Stars Hall will die in vain. Chu Feng will return our sufferings in double to you all,” The Three



Stars Hall's Headmaster said.

“Avenge you? Hahaha! That Chu Feng died two years ago. Even if he is still alive, how could a little bastard like him possibly accomplish anything? There is simply no need for Lord Chu Luxuan to act. I myself will be able to easily crush him to death with one finger.”

“Regardless of what sort of reputation that Chu Feng might possess, the strongest genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is neither Chu Feng nor that Li Ming. Rather, it is Lord Chu Luxuan,” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief stated.

“Lord Chu Luxuan? Haha... I'd nearly forgotten that you've become Chu Luxuan's lackey.”

“Your cultivation has been stagnant at rank four Martial Ancestor for so long, unable to make any headway. For you to reach a breakthrough to rank five Martial Ancestor now, I bet it must be because of your master's contributions, right?” The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster mocked.

“You're trying to enrage me so that I will kill you sooner? So that you will be able to die contentedly? If you think I'll do that, you're simply indulging in fantasy.”

“Rest assured, I will definitely make you feel so aggrieved that you'll wish you were dead. I'll make you suffer so much that death will be a relief,” The corners of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's mouth was lifted into a strange smile.

Then, he shouted to his clansmen, “Why are you all still dilly-dallying? Kill them! Kill them all! Today, our Ying Heavenly Clan will dye the Three Stars Hall with blood!!!”

Upon hearing the order from the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, the Ying Heavenly Clansmen as well as the guest elders no longer continued to torture the people of the Three Stars Hall. Instead, they raised their weapons with the intention of taking the

lives of the Three Stars Hall's crowd.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a surge of energy arrived from afar. In the blink of an eye, it enveloped the entire region.

After that power enveloped the region, everyone from the Ying Heavenly Clan stopped moving. It was as if they were petrified.

Only the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was still capable of moving.

“Why are you all still standing there? Did you not hear my order?”

The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was unable to feel the energy that surrounded the region. He only noticed that his clansmen had their weapons raised, yet were not attacking the people of the Three Stars Hall. It caused him to become extremely furious.

“They have heard what you've said. Merely, they're unable to do as you have ordered.”

Right at that moment, a voice sounded from the distant sky.

“Who?! Who is it? Who dares meddle in our Ying Heavenly Clan's business?!” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted furiously.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, two figures flew over from the direction where the voice had sounded. Those two figures appeared before the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's line of sight.

Those two were none other than Chu Feng and Liu Xiaoli, who had just arrived.

“Chu Feng, it's you?! You... you're actually still alive?!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief first

revealed an astonished expression. Then, he was stunned. He simply did not dare to believe his eyes.

“Chu Feng?” Hearing that name, the crowd from the Three Stars Hall all raised their heads and turned their gazes to the sky.

“Chu Feng, that really is Chu Feng. Everyone, look! Chu Feng is still alive! Chu Feng has come to save us!”

Right at that moment, a female voice sounded from the Three Stars Hall’s crowd.

Chu Feng was able to tell right away that it was the voice of an acquaintance.

It was Song Biyu, Chu Feng’s friend and a disciple of the Three Stars Hall who possessed a very good relationship with Xu Yiyi.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng subconsciously turned his gaze over there. The moment he saw Song Biyu, his previously calm face immediately grew distorted.

Song Biyu had the same appearance as she did two years ago.

However, her body was filled with bruises and scars. Wounds astonishing to the eye were all over her lily white skin. Her previously jade green dress had already been dyed bright red.

Such a beautiful young woman was actually tortured to such a state by the Ying Heavenly Clansmen. It was a tragic sight.

Furthermore, beside Song Biyu was a person from the Ying Heavenly Clan with their weapon raised and aimed at her dantian.

In other words, if Chu Feng had arrived a moment later, Song Biyu would’ve died miserably at the hands of that Ying Heavenly Clansman.

Most importantly, scenes similar to Song Biyu’s were all over the Three Stars Hall.

Not only had the Ying Heavenly Clan left the people of the Three Stars Hall riddled with scars from the torture, but they had also

raised their weapons with the intention to kill them.

They were planning to exterminate the entire Three Stars Hall!!!

# Chapter 2478 – Sky Dyed With Blood

---

“Heavens, how could this be?!”

Liu Xiaoli also noticed the appalling devastation all around. Her face instantly turned pale from shock. Unable to contain herself, she covered her mouth with her hands.

As the Red Butterfly Society’s Society Master, Liu Xiaoli had experienced a lot, and seen many massacres.

Yet, that scene had still frightened her.

The reason for that was because the Three Stars Hall were truly left in a miserable state.

“The Ying Heavenly Clan is truly ruthless,” Chu Feng said as he gnashed his teeth.

Then, Chu Feng took a deep breath and closed his eyes. He grew silent. No one knew what he was thinking.

“Chu Feng, you are actually still alive. Great, this is great. Truly even the heavens are helping me.”

“It seems that the heavens have deliberately let you live all so that I can personally kill you and avenge my son.”

“Chu Feng, today, I will settle this debt of blood with blood. I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces.”

The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief revealed a malevolent expression. He waved the Ancestral Armament Sword in his hand many times in succession, sending forth many sharp blade rays toward Chu Feng like a meteor shower.

“Chu Feng, look out!!!” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster hurriedly shouted.

At the same time, everyone from the Three Stars Hall started to narrow their brows. They were all extremely worried.

After all, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's attacks were no small matter. Everyone was able to tell how frightening the blade rays that filled the sky were.

He was not joking around. He was really planning to take Chu Feng's life and dismember him into ten thousand pieces. Even Liu Xiaoli who stood beside Chu Feng would not be able to escape the onslaught.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right at the moment when the blade rays were about to reach Chu Feng, lightning suddenly emerged from Chu Feng's body.

That lightning was exceptionally fierce, and managed to completely shatter all of the incoming sword rays. At the same time, Chu Feng's aura was also released.

When Chu Feng's aura reached the crowd, their bodies all trembled. They were all astonished.

At that moment, everyone present was able to sense Chu Feng's aura, and realized Chu Feng's cultivation.

“Rank seven Martial Ancestor. Chu Feng's cultivation is that of a rank seven Martial Ancestor!!!”

Although the people from the Three Stars Hall were riddled with wounds, they still revealed joyous expressions.

“Little friend Chu Feng's cultivation has actually reached such a level?”

The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster felt disbelief. After all, when he had first met Chu Feng, Chu Feng had still only been a Half Martial Ancestor.

Yet, in such a short period of time, he had actually become a rank seven Martial Ancestor. It was simply unimaginable.

“Sure enough, one cannot judge the world of geniuses with the lenses of ordinary people. It would appear that our Three Stars

Hall will be saved today,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster revealed a smile.

Both Chu Feng and the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief possessed Heavenly Bloodlines.

As for the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, he was able to defeat him as a rank five Martial Ancestor.

Then, how powerful would Chu Feng, as a rank seven Martial Ancestor, be? The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster was able to imagine it very well.

Since Chu Feng had come to save them, it meant that all of them would be saved.

“This is impossible! This is absolutely impossible! It’s only been such a short period of time, you... how could you possibly have obtained your current cultivation?”

At the moment when everyone from the Three Stars Hall was overjoyed, that Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had an expression of disbelief.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. Lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes, and then his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared.

After Chu Feng’s cultivation increased from rank seven Martial Ancestor to rank nine Martial Ancestor, lightning was no longer the only thing present in Chu Feng’s eyes. In addition to them, there was also ice-cold killing intent.

Furthermore, like Chu Feng’s oppressive might, that killing intent of his completely surrounded the region, permeating into everyone’s bodies.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, everyone from the Ying Heavenly Clan floated into the sky. They were present all over the sky.

Like a bunch of sheep, they were hung in midair.

“Lord Clan Chief, save us! Save us!!!”

The Ying Heavenly Clansmen realized that the situation was amiss. However, they were still unable to control their bodies, and could only allow themselves to be controlled by Chu Feng like puppets. Helpless, they could only turn to ask their Clan Chief for help.

“Chu Feng, what are you planning to do?!” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief started to panic.

“It seems that the lesson of losing your son was still insufficient for you. In that case, I will allow you to experience the pain of having your entire clan exterminated,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, don’t you mess with me! Else, Lord Chu Luxuan will definitely not spare you!!!” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief shouted in panic.

“Heh...”

However, Chu Feng only laughed disdainfully at the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s threat.

Then, lightning flashed in Chu Feng’s eyes.

The next moment, all of the Ying Heavenly Clansmen that were hanging in midair revealed extremely ugly expressions.

Following that, ‘bang, bang, bang, bang, bang,’ muffled explosions began to sound nonstop.

Blood filled the sky. Like rain, it sprinkled downward, dyeing the earth.

In that one split second, all of the Ying Heavenly Clansmen exploded. They had all died without even an intact corpse.

The rain of blood was formed with their flesh.

“Nooooo!!!!”



The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to shout hysterically. He wanted to attack Chu Feng, but discovered that Chu Feng's oppressive might was still enveloping him. Like his clansmen that were killed by Chu Feng, he was powerless to resist.

"Lord Chu Feng, please spare us. Lord Chu Feng, please spare us."

"We are unrelated to the Ying Heavenly Clan. We only came here because we were ordered to do so. Please, please spare us."

At that moment, all of the Ying Heavenly Clan's guest elders began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

Those people were all Martial Ancestors. They were all members of the older generation that had trained for many years.

Yet, at that moment, they simply did not possess the bearings of the older generation. Instead, they were all shivering in fear. They were already in complete panic.

"If I had not arrived today, would you all have spared the people of the Three Stars Hall?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

"We..." Those guest elders grew quiet. They did not know how to respond.

"Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~"

At that moment, muffled explosion sounds were heard once again.

With the muffled explosions came flowers of blood that scattered about in all directions.

Several more people were killed. This time around, they were not the Ying Heavenly Clansmen, but rather those guest elders.

"Lord Chu Feng, please spare me. Please spare me. I will never dare to go against you again. I will never dare to go against you again."

"Lord Chu Feng, please, please spare me, please spare my life. I

truly did not know you possessed this sort of relationship with the Three Stars Hall. If I had known, even if I was to be given a hundred times the nerve, I would not have dared to attack the Three Stars Hall.”

The guest elders that were still alive completely crumbled before Chu Feng. They actually disregarded their status and identity to kneel before Chu Feng, kowtowing to him and begging for forgiveness. Furthermore, many among them were already crying in fear.

Their reactions were understandable. After all, Chu Feng’s method were truly ruthless. They were truly frightened by Chu Feng.

In fact, it was not only them. Even the people from the Three Stars Hall were frightened by Chu Feng.

No matter what, those were all living people. Yet, they were all instantly killed by Chu Feng.

Furthermore, Chu Feng showed absolutely zero emotion after killing them. Such coldness was something that terrified even them.

At that moment, Chu Feng was already no longer human in their eyes. Rather, he was more like a cold-blooded demon that viewed human life as grass.

“All those that I’ve killed earlier are people that raised their weapons at the Three Stars Hall.”

“As for you all, I did not see you try to kill the people from the Three Stars Hall. Thus, I will spare you all this once. Scram,” Chu Feng waved his hand at those Ying Heavenly Clan’s guest elders.

“Thank you Lord Chu Feng, thank you Lord Chu Feng.”

Those guest elders that were still alive began to thank Chu Feng for not killing them. At the same time, they started to flee in disarray. They were so flustered by what had happened that they

were actually unable to stand firm in midair, and started to roll and crawl as they frantically escaped. Their appearance was truly sorry.

“Next, it’s your turn now.”

Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

## Chapter 2479 – Paying The Price

---

At that moment, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief no longer possessed the threatening attitude he'd had when he arrived.

The current Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief looked like someone who was about to die. He was half-kneeling in midair, shivering, with his head lowered. His mood was exceptionally downcast.

Although those who were killed earlier were not everyone from the Ying Heavenly Clan, they were all the Ying Heavenly Clan's elites.

With those people killed, it was no different from exterminating the entire Ying Heavenly Clan.

Thus, at that moment, his heart had crumbled.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, the sound of a weapon piercing through the air could be heard in the vast sky.

Chu Feng was holding the Magma Emperor Sword in his hand.

Stepping on air, Chu Feng began to walk toward the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief one step at a time.

After killing all those people, Chu Feng would naturally not spare the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

After all, he was the cause of the battle.

“It seems that you've already made preparations to die.”

“Originally, you didn't have to die, and your clansmen also didn't have to die. However, because of your mistaken decision of insisting on avenging your evil son, you've brought about your deaths.”

Chu Feng had arrived before the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan

Chief. The Magma Emperor Sword he held in his hand was aimed at the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's dantian.

“Chu Feng, I admit that you’ve won today.”

“However, what of it?”

“Even though you’ve defeated me, you’re still going to lose to others. You will lose even more thoroughly than me,” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief stated.

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng frowned as he asked coldly. He had managed to determine something from those words.

“Haha...” The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out a sinister laugh.

Then, he slowly raised his head and looked to Chu Feng, “While you’ve saved the Three Stars Hall, are you able to save the Sunset Cloud Valley?”

“The one who is attacking the Sunset Cloud Valley is the Chu Heavenly Clan's Chu Luxuan.”

“You said that Chu Luxuan is attacking the Sunset Cloud Valley?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed instantly.

After all, the Sunset Cloud Valley was also a power that he was deeply concerned for. Never did he expect what he had worried about the most to happen.

Chu Luxuan actually really attacked the Sunset Cloud Valley.

“We left at the same time. If my calculations are not mistaken, the Sunset Cloud Valley should’ve already been eliminated several days ago.”

“Not mentioning whether or not you will be a match for Chu Luxuan, even if you are to rush over there now, all that you will see are ruins and corpses.”

“Furthermore, it is not only the Sunset Cloud Valley that is being

exterminated, that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong are your friends, no?" The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked.

"What had happened to them?" Chu Feng asked worriedly.

"They have already been captured by the lord from the Chu Heavenly Clan. I presume that they should be dead by now," The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Impossible! How could someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan be able to capture the two of them?" Chu Feng did not believe the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. However, he was still extremely worried.

He felt that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were extremely cautious individuals. Even if Chu Luxuan wanted to kill them, it would not be that easy for him to do so.

Yet, they were actually captured?

However, the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief did not seem to be joking around. As such, Chu Feng was very worried.

"Do you think I'm deceiving you? I'm already someone who's going to die soon, why would I do such a foolish thing?"

"As for the person that captured them, it would naturally not be a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation. Instead, the person who captured them is an extremely powerful lord, someone no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm can contend against," The Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief declared.

"That is even more impossible. The Chu Heavenly Clansmen are not allowed to concern themselves in the matters of their younger generation. How could that individual attack Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong?" Chu Feng said.

"How the hell would I know about something like that? However, I am certain of one thing. That is, your two friends have been captured, and are most likely dead by now."

“However, you don’t have to be so anxious either. After all, that lord will soon come and capture you too. Soon, you will be able to reunite with your friends.”

“Merely, at the time that you all reunite with one another, it will no longer be in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Instead, it will be in the underworld.”

“Of course, I will also wait for you there,” As the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke those words, a strange smile emerged on his ashen face.

“Puu~~~”

Right at that moment, the sword in Chu Feng’s hand was pierced into the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s dantian.

“You!!!” Even though he was already prepared to be killed, the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief still revealed a painful expression when his dantian was actually pierced through by Chu Feng’s sword.

“You can go and wait for me down there. However, you will definitely not be able to see me. After all, I do not plan to go down there.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng flipped his wrist, and the Magma Emperor Sword unleashed boundless power.

“Bang!” The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief exploded into pieces. He had been utterly killed.

Witnessing that scene, the crowd from the Three Stars Hall all shivered in their hearts.

Chu Feng was extremely decisive in killing. It was something that many people were unable to learn.

However, at the same time that they felt Chu Feng’s ruthlessness, they were actually feeling very relieved.

They knew very well that Chu Feng was an extremely ruthless

individual.

Chu Feng's ruthlessness caused them to feel fear toward Chu Feng. However, no one felt disgusted with Chu Feng.

After all, all the people that Chu Feng had killed were their enemies, people who wanted to kill them.

Thus, even though Chu Feng had killed those people, the people from the Three Stars Hall did not blame Chu Feng. Instead, they felt grateful toward Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and layers of spirit power flowed out from him. They turned into golden rays that filled the sky. Like raindrops, they sprinkled down from the sky, landing on everyone's bodies.

Upon being enveloped by the golden raindrops, the injured people from the Three Stars Hall all recovered instantly.

Not only did all the pain they felt wash away, but they also felt much more spirited. It was like they had never been injured, and had instead taken special medicinal pellets.

“What a powerful world spirit technique.”

At that moment, many people let out voices of wonder.

Actually, to world spiritists, healing injuries was a simple matter.

However, they generally would only heal one or two individuals at a time. For something like what Chu Feng had just done where he healed everyone from the Three Stars Hall with a wave of his sleeve, it was not something that ordinary world spiritists could accomplish.

“This Immortal-cloak Spirit Power, little friend Chu Feng, you're already a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist now?”

The Three Stars Hall's Headmaster revealed a marvelous expression. He had managed to tell that Chu Feng's spirit power



was that of a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Upon hearing what the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said, everyone revealed astonished expressions. They began to look to Chu Feng with even greater admiration.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there were much fewer Immortal-cloak World Spiritists than peak Martial Ancestors. As for Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, their numbers were even fewer.

If Chu Feng had already astonished the crowd with his cultivation, then his world spirit techniques came as an even greater astonishment than his cultivation.

However, although he was faced with gazes of admiration, Chu Feng had a serious look on his face as he looked to the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster.

“Senior, you’ve also heard it. The Sunset Cloud Valley is in danger. I cannot ignore this.”

“Thus, this Chu Feng will take his leave today. If the opportunity presents itself again in the future, I will definitely come visit senior again,” Chu Feng said to the Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster.

“Go on ahead. There is a teleportation formation to the east. Using it, you will be able to reach the Sunset Cloud Valley sooner. Merely, little friend Chu Feng, you must be careful,” The Three Stars Hall’s Headmaster said.

“Senior, farewell,” Chu Feng clasped his fist. As his voice landed, he had already disappeared.

Chu Feng had left for the Sunset Cloud Valley.

He was uncertain whether or not what the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had said was true.

However, what he could be certain of was that if something were

to happen to the Sunset Cloud Valley, if something were to happen to Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, then he, Chu Feng, would definitely make those people pay regardless of who they might be!!!

# Chapter 2480 - Appointment To Fight Chu Feng

---

At that moment, there were two silhouettes rapidly proceeding toward the Sunset Cloud Valley.

It was an elderly individual and a young individual. The elderly individual was an old man with white hair. He appeared to be close to ten thousand years old. He could be considered a living old monster.

As for the young individual, she was a young woman. Whilst that woman was a member of the younger generation, she was still over fifty years old.

However, her appearance was still that of a youthful and beautiful young woman.

Most importantly, her eyes were even shining with the innocence of a young woman.

Furthermore, her gaze did not seem to be a disguise. Rather, that innocent gaze really did belong to her.

The two of them were not people from the Sunset Cloud Valley. They also did not possess any extraordinary relationship with the Sunset Cloud Valley. The reason why they were rushing toward the Sunset Cloud Valley was because of another person, Chu Feng.

The two of them were both individuals who felt admiration for Chu Feng.

“Master, do you really think that Chu Feng could still be alive?” The woman turned to ask the old man. When mentioning that matter, an expression of worry filled her eyes. She seemed to be afraid that her master would give her a negative answer.

“I was present when Chu Feng fought against the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“The Chu Feng from that day was simply unparalleled.”

“I have traveled the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for all these years, yet have never seen someone exhibiting that sort of disposition of a ruler like Chu Feng did.”

“The way I see it, it was Chu Feng who spared the Kong Heavenly Clan. Else, the Kong Heavenly Clan would’ve already been exterminated. Say, how could such a powerful Chu Feng possibly die?” The old man asked.

“Then, Chu Feng is really still alive?” At that moment, the woman was overjoyed. She then asked, “Then, master, do you think that Chu Feng will accept the challenge?”

Hearing that question, the old man grew silent.

The reason why he was travelling there was because he had received news several days ago that Chu Luxuan had attacked the Sunset Cloud Valley and captured everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley to declare war against Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng cared about the safety of the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley, he would go and accept Chu Luxuan’s challenge at the Sunset Cloud Valley.

If Chu Feng were to win, Chu Luxuan would no longer make things difficult for Chu Feng, and would also release everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

If Chu Feng was to be defeated, Chu Luxuan would also not make things difficult for Chu Feng. He would only present a single choice for Chu Feng to take.

A choice between life and death...

Chu Feng could choose to live or die.

If he chose to die, then he had to kill himself. If he chose to live, then Chu Feng had to personally kill everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

“Chu Feng is a loyal and true individual. I believe that once the news of what has happened reaches him, he will definitely come.”

“Merely, this Chu Luxuan could simply challenge Chu Feng openly. Yet, he instead decided to use the Sunset Cloud Valley to threaten Chu Feng.”

“Furthermore, he even spread the news that if Chu Feng were to lose to him, he could choose whether to live or die. From this, it can be seen that this Chu Luxuan’s character is quite low,” The old man said.

“That’s right. If Chu Feng were to really be defeated and chose to die, then everything would be over. However, if he chose to personally kill everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley, his reputation will be swept away. Compared to death, that is simply even more painful.”

“That said, master, between Chu Feng and Chu Luxuan, who do you think to be even more powerful? That Chu Luxuan is, after all, a genius from the Chu Heavenly Clan. No one knows exactly how powerful he is,” The woman said.

“Regardless of how powerful Chu Luxuan might be, could he possibly take care on the entire Kong Heavenly Clan by himself?” The old man asked with a smile.

“I don’t think Chu Luxuan can accomplish that,” The woman also smiled sweetly.

“There we go then. If Chu Feng is to really come, you will know how powerful Chu Feng is.”

“He will definitely not disappoint you,” As the old man said those words, anticipation appeared in his eyes.

“I am also very much looking forward to it,” The woman smiled even sweeter. However, her gaze suddenly shifted. She pointed to the distance and said, “Master, look! That’s Senior Song and Senior Lin. Their disciples are also with them. Everyone has

come.”

“Chu Luxuan had already spread the news before he even attacked the Sunset Cloud Valley. They’re all located quite close to the Sunset Cloud Valley. Thus, they most probably rushed over the moment they received the news. Merely, we’ve all come for Chu Feng, and not for that Chu Luxuan,” The old man smiled faintly. As he spoke, he turned to wave at the several people in the distance.

“Merely, is Chu Luxuan really capable of taking down the Sunset Cloud Valley?” The woman was a bit skeptical.

“Look at that,” The old man pointed ahead.

“Heavens, that is?!!!” Following the location of the old man’s finger, the woman revealed an astonished expression.

The direction where he pointed to was naturally that of the Sunset Cloud Valley. At that moment, there was an enormous spirit formation cage spinning around directly above the Sunset Cloud Valley.

That spirit formation cage was humongous, and emitting a bright glimmer. It was even more eye-catching than the Sunset Cloud Valley itself.

Upon approaching, one could see that the spirit formation cage was packed full with people. They were actually all the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

It was obvious whether or not Chu Luxuan managed to take down the Sunset Cloud Valley.

As the Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had declared, the Sunset Cloud Valley had been attacked and breached by Chu Luxuan several days ago.

However, the Sunset Cloud Valley was not met with the same sort of devastation as the Three Stars Hall. On the contrary, not a single person from the Sunset Cloud Valley had died.

Chu Luxuan had only occupied the Sunset Cloud Valley and held everyone there captive. However, he did not actually kill anyone.

The reason he did so, was for the sake of a single individual, Chu Feng. He was going to use the Sunset Cloud Valley to threaten Chu Feng and force him to come accept his challenge.

At that moment. In a certain mountain peak of the Sunset Cloud Valley stood several figures.

Among them were the Four World Spiritist Emperors' mother, the World Spiritist Saintess.

Apart from the World Spiritist Saintess, the several other figures standing beside her were also renowned individuals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

In fact, their cultivations were even stronger than that of the World Spiritist Saintess; they were all peak Martial Ancestors.

However, those renowned individuals were all standing behind a young man. From their gazes and appearance, one could tell that they possessed obvious reverence for that young man.

As for that young man, he possessed a handsome appearance. However, below his sharp eyebrows, his eyes contained the look of someone who considered themselves to be unsurpassed in the entire world.

He was Chu Luyang's younger brother, a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Luxuan.

"Judging from the time, the Ying Heavenly Clan should've succeeded in their task by now. With the nature of the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, the Three Stars Hall has likely been completely eradicated from our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm," The World Spiritist Saintess said.

"The reason why I decided to take in the Ying Heavenly Clan is precisely because of the hatred the Ying Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief held toward the Three Stars Hall. If he is to slaughter

everyone, while I am to not kill a single person, this will better show how benevolent and righteous I am,” Chu Luxuan said.

“Young Master Chu is truly wise. This old man feels utter admiration,” An old man clasped his fist and spoke flattering words.

“In addition to being wise, Young Master Chu also possesses extraordinary rallying power. It has only been such a short period of time. Yet, so many people have managed to rush over here.”

“If the news of Young Master Chu seizing control of the Sunset Cloud Valley to issue a challenge to Chu Feng is to spread throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, I wonder how many more grand characters will rush over,” Another old man started to flatter Chu Luxuan.

“I am, after all, from the Upper Realms. Furthermore, I am a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan. They are all extremely curious to how strong I am. Now that I am willing to display my strength, they will naturally rush over here,” Chu Luxuan said in a very proud manner.

“Merely, didn’t that Chu Feng die two years ago? Young Master Chu, do you really think he’s still alive?” Someone asked.

“So what if he’s dead, so what if he’s alive? If he is dead, I can say that he’s still alive and did not dare to come and accept my challenge, that he deliberately hid himself. With that, I can label him a coward who does not dare to accept a challenge,” Chu Luxuan said.

“Young Master Chu, if that Chu Feng is still alive and receives news of this, will he really come?” The World Spiritist Saintess asked.

“If he is truly still alive and dares to show up, I will make him die by my hands. I will have everyone witness the strength that I, Chu Luxuan, possess.”



“I will have everyone in your Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm realize that a genius from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is simply incomparable to a genius of our Chu Heavenly Clan,” When mentioning this matter, Chu Luxuan’s face was filled with absolute confidence.

## Chapter 2481 - Coward Chu Feng

---

“Young Hero Chu is extraordinarily talented. Your understanding of martial cultivation is something that no commoner could compare with. The Ying Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had been unable to make any progress in cultivation for many years. Yet, with instructions from you, he managed to reach a breakthrough in merely a short period of time.”

“The reason why the Ying Heavenly Clan was daring enough to go and attack the Three Stars Hall by themselves was all thanks to Young Master Chu,” Someone flattered.

“Young Master Chu is, without a doubt, extremely talented. You’re so young, yet you’re already a rank seven Martial Ancestor. In my opinion, even that extremely arrogant Young Master Li Ming would not be able to compare to Young Master Chu.”

“Oh, that’s right. Young Master Chu is a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline. After activating your Heavenly Bloodline, with your cultivation of rank seven Martial Ancestor, it will truly be difficult for anyone below the True Immortal level to contend against you.”

“That Chu Feng will probably not show up. However, if he dares to show himself, he will undoubtedly be defeated and bring about his own disgrace.”

The many old monsters standing behind Chu Luxuan that had lived for thousands of years were flattering him, a member of the younger generation, nonstop.

Furthermore, they spoke in an extremely serious manner, without feeling the slightest bit of shame. From this, it could be seen that they truly had thick skin.

For the sake of obtaining benefits, they were willing to discard their status and dignity.

“Have you all encountered Chu Feng? Have you all seen Chu Feng

fight before?” Right at that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess suddenly spoke out, questioning the crowd.

“Eh...” The crowd were left speechless. The great majority of them had never met Chu Feng, much less seen him fight.

“Since you all do not understand Chu Feng in the slightest, it is best that you do not say this sort of thing. Else, you might end up harming Young Master Chu,” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

“World Spiritist Saintess, it seems that you’re not confident in me?” At that moment, Chu Luxuan frowned slightly and revealed a displeased expression.

“Young Master Chu, it is not that I am not confident in you. If I was, why would I submit to you?”

“I merely do not want you to underestimate your enemy. The reason for that is because I have personally fought that Chu Feng before. That child is no ordinary character. At the very least, I was unable to gain any advantage over him. Instead, I suffered enormously,” The World Spiritist Saintess said.

“Just because you were unable to gain an advantage over him doesn’t mean that I cannot. What makes you think that he could be discussed alongside me?”

“At the very most, he was someone who bullied my older brother while I was not around. If I were here, the one to die would’ve been him.”

When mentioning that matter, Chu Luxuan clenched his fists tightly and revealed a strong killing intent from his eyes.

From that, it could be seen that he hated Chu Feng to his bones.

“Young Master Chu, I am the same as you. That Chu Feng is also my enemy. More than anyone else, I wish for the death of that Chu Feng.”

“That is why I submitted to you. It’s because I know that it will

be very difficult for me to kill him with my strength. However, it will be different for...”

“Enough, you don’t have to say anymore.”

The World Spiritist Saintess wanted to explain. However, before she could finish, Chu Luxuan cut her off.

At that moment, intense battle intent had appeared in Chu Luxuan’s eyes. He looked at the World Spiritist Saintess and said, “Listen carefully. If that Chu Feng dares to appear before me, I will have him know who the true genius is, that he, Chu Feng, is simply unable to compare to me.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Luxuan turned and left the mountain peak.

“World Spiritist Saintess, why did you bother saying those words? It is not beneficial for you in the slightest to provoke the anger of Young Master Chu.”

“That’s right, what’s happened to you in the past few days? How can you not be able to discern the situation? Do you not know who Young Master Chu is?”

After Chu Luxuan left, those old monsters began to speak to the World Spiritist Saintess.

“I merely did not wish for Young Master Chu to be careless, for I have also underestimated Chu Feng like you all.”

“However, it ended up being that... I suffered enormously by that Chu Feng’s hands. Thus, I merely want you all to know that you must absolutely not underestimate that Chu Feng.”

“Don’t forget that he nearly extinguished the Kong Heavenly Clan by himself two years ago. If he is really still alive after these two years, have you all ever thought of how powerful he would’ve become?” The World Spiritist Saintess asked.

As she said those words, her eyes that were generally filled with a

condescending expression actually showed intense worry and fear.

“World Spiritist Saintess, it is not that we are looking down on you. However, you are simply thinking too highly of that Chu Feng.”

“He nearly extinguished the Kong Heavenly Clan by himself? If that were the case, why did he disappear? Why was the one that disappeared not the Kong Heavenly Clan instead?”

“None of us were present back then. As for those rumors, we must not easily trust them. After all, for a lot of things, one can only believe them should one witness them.”

“In short, I do not believe that Chu Feng, a mere Half Martial Ancestor, would possess the strength to kill True Immortals.”

“Furthermore, I must remind you of this. Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, he remains only a genius of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, who is Young Master Chu? He is a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan!”

“I believe you know very well what the Chu Heavenly Clan is without me having to explain it to you. They are a clan that could drown the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm with merely a spit. A genius from a clan like that is most definitely a dragon among men, an existence that no one in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could contend against.”

“Thus, you shouldn’t have groundless fears and worry about all that.”

“Unless that Chu Feng does not dare come, he will definitely bring about his own destruction by coming,” After the crowd finished saying those words, they dispersed.

At that moment, only the World Spiritist Saintess remained. She looked into the distance and saw the figures that were appearing nonstop and entering the Sunset Cloud Valley.

She knew that those were all individuals that had received news

of the challenge, people that had come to watch the battle between Chu Feng and Chu Luxuan.

However, at that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess still had an expression filled with worry in her eyes. Quietly, she muttered, “I suddenly hope that Chu Feng doesn’t come.”

After saying those words, the World Spiritist Saintess looked to the direction that Chu Luxuan and the others had left in. With a voice that only she could hear, she muttered, “Else, you will all regret it.”

The following two days, more and more people arrived upon receiving the news.

They came mainly for two purposes. The first was to see whether or not Chu Feng was still alive.

As for the second, it would naturally be to see exactly who, between the renowned Chu Feng and the genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Luxuan, was stronger.

On the third day, more and more people arrived at the Sunset Cloud Valley. From the few people that would arrive from time to time, it became groups of people that would arrive together. Furthermore, the great majority of the people that arrived were people that held some status in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

On the fourth day, a large signboard was erected above the Sunset Cloud Valley.

The signboard was a thousand meters tall and two thousand meters wide. It stood horizontally in the sky, and was extremely eye-catching.

The signboard was completely blank. No one knew why such a signboard was floating in the sky.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a figure holding a sword suddenly appeared before that signboard.

At that moment, the crowd's gazes grew serious. Even though it was the first time that many people encountered that person, they were able to guess that that man was the genius from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Luxuan held an Ancestral Armament sword in his hand. Before the crowd, he began to move his sword on the signboard.

Golden brilliance radiated all around as metallic sparks swirled in the air. Chu Luxuan personally carved three words onto the signboard.

“That is...”

“That is simply too excessive, no?!!!”

Upon seeing those three words, the crowd all revealed astonished expressions.

Many of the people that had come to support Chu Feng revealed angry expressions.

The reason for that was because those three words were related to Chu Feng.

‘Coward Chu Feng!!!’

# Chapter 2482 - Arrival Of The Genius

---

Seemingly sensing the discontent among the crowd, Chu Luxuan turned around and cast his gaze to the crowd.

With a proud and arrogant tone, he said, “Perhaps you all might think that it is somewhat inappropriate for me to place this signboard here right now. After all, the news of me challenging Chu Feng to a battle has yet to spread to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Perhaps Chu Feng still doesn’t know that I have challenged him.”

“However, I dare to guarantee to you all that Chu Feng... is nothing more than a coward. After he arrives, I will personally prove to you that not only is he a coward, but he is also an utter weakling.”

“Boom~~~”

After he finished saying those words, a boundless surge of martial power swept forth from Chu Luxuan and into the crowd’s bodies.

“Rank seven Martial Ancestor. Chu Luxuan is actually... a rank seven Martial Ancestor.”

The crowd were all astonished. For a member of the younger generation to possess such a cultivation and the Heavenly Bloodline’s formidable power, everyone knew what it meant.

It meant that Chu Luxuan’s reputation as a genius was fully justified.

After all, when Chu Feng became famous two years ago, he was merely a Half Martial Ancestor.

“No wonder Chu Luxuan is so confident. His cultivation is indeed not something that ordinary people could contend against. Likely, Chu Feng will not be a match for him.”



“It’s not that its unlikely, but rather absolutely impossible. Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be, it would still be impossible for him to become a rank seven Martial Ancestor in two years’ time.”

“Sure enough, a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan is no small matter. He is not someone that we people from an Ordinary Realm could compare to.”

The crowd began to discuss Chu Luxuan spiritedly. Astonishment filled the tones of their words. They were all awed by Chu Luxuan’s strength.

In fact, even those people who supported Chu Feng started to sway.

They felt that even if Chu Feng were still alive, could he really defeat a genius from the Upper Realms, a genius from the Chu Heavenly Clan?

“You all are overthinking things. Chu Feng might not even have the courage to come. After all, once this news spreads, the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan might rush over to take care of him too.”

“Say, when faced with a situation like this, would that Chu Feng really dare come?”

“Thus, in my opinion, what Young Master Chu said is very true. That Chu Feng is simply a coward.”

There were actually many people among the crowd that thought that Chu Feng would not dare to come. Some even seized the opportunity to flatter Chu Luxuan, and began to talk maliciously about Chu Feng.

At that moment, the people that supported Chu Feng felt extremely furious.

However, when faced with Chu Luxuan, they were unable to say anything, and did not dare to voice their own feelings. As such,

they could only sullenly hold their anger in.

“Those who felt that I would not dare to come, I’m afraid that I’ll have to disappoint you all.”

Right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard. It came like a thunderbolt striking that region.

Space itself trembled violently, and cracks appeared in the ground. At the same time... everyone present felt shaken by the voice.

They all turned their gazes toward the direction of the voice, and revealed very complicated emotions.

There was anticipation, worry and fear.

They were all wondering whether or not that person was the person from two years ago.

If that person was the same person, wouldn’t it mean that he was still alive?

Two years ago, he was said to have nearly extinguished the entire Kong Heavenly Clan. Was that real or not?

How much had he matured in two years’ time?

Before the gazes of the crowd, that empty space started to tremble. Following that, the crowd’s hearts began to accelerate.

Finally, a crack appeared in that space. Then, a figure stepped out from thin air and appeared before the crowd.

That person was none other than Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng! It is Chu Feng!!!”

“Chu Feng is actually alive! He is actually still alive!!”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, the crowd all revealed exceptionally marvelous expressions. Many among them did not dare to believe it to be true.

After all, Chu Feng had disappeared for two years. According to

the rumors, he had already died two years ago.

Yet now, Chu Feng had actually appeared before them in the flesh. How could they not be astonished by this?

While there were people who were overjoyed by Chu Feng's appearance, there were also people that were scared by his appearance. Those that were overjoyed would naturally be Chu Feng's supporters. As for those who were scared, they were naturally the ones who had spoken ill of Chu Feng earlier.

Although they had spoken maliciously of Chu Feng, that did not mean that they were not afraid of Chu Feng.

After all, all the rumors regarding Chu Feng were extraordinary. This was especially true when it came to the battle he had fought against the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago. That one rumor had turned Chu Feng into a legend.

During the two years Chu Feng had been gone, many people felt that he had died.

However, now that he had appeared in the flesh, who would dare to look down on him? Who would dare to hold him in contempt?

Not to mention the crowd composed of Half Martial Ancestors and Martial Ancestors, it was likely that not even True Immortals would dare to casually attack Chu Feng.

After all, regardless of how Chu Feng had managed to accomplish it, it remained that Chu Feng had killed the Kong Heavenly Clan's True Immortals.

Seeing the surprised, scared, overjoyed and saddened expressions of the crowd, Chu Feng revealed a faint smile.

He did not pay attention to the crowd. Instead, he cast his gaze to the spirit formation cage not far away. Imprisoned within that cage were the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley. Among them were naturally people Chu Feng was familiar with.

There was the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Xu Yiyi, Xu Yiyi's master and many others with decent relationships with Chu Feng imprisoned there.

With a smile on his face, Chu Feng nodded at the people inside the cage.

It was as if he was telling the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Xu Yiyi and the others that they shouldn't worry, because he would definitely save them.

Strangely, even though it was only a simple action, the Sunset Cloud Valley's Valley Master, Xu Yiyi and the others all managed to calm down. One by one, they returned Chu Feng's smile.

They were, after all, people who had interacted with Chu Feng before. Thus, they knew Chu Feng relatively well, and were completely confident in him.

They felt that Chu Feng was someone capable of bringing about miracles. Thus, they believed that since Chu Feng dared to show up, he would definitely have the ability to save them from this crisis.

Finally, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the rest of the crowd. His gaze also landed on Chu Luxuan, the World Spiritist Saintess and the others.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled again. It was a very meaningful smile. Then, he added to what he had said earlier.

"I, Chu Feng, am a coward? There's no need for anyone else to determine whether or not I am a coward for I, Chu Feng, will prove whether or not I am a coward myself."

"Boom~~~"

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, a burst of aura emerged from Chu Feng's body. It swept through heaven and earth and filled the air.

It was the aura of Chu Feng's cultivation!!!

Chu Feng's aura transformed the weather and darkened the sky. The previously sunny and cloudless sky was suddenly filled with thunder and lightning.

"Heavens! Quickly, feel Chu Feng's aura. He... he is actually also a rank seven Martial Ancestor!"

"Wasn't Chu Feng said to only be a Half Martial Ancestor two years ago? How did he manage to become a rank seven Martial Ancestor in merely two years?!"

"This is simply too unimaginable!!!"

The crowd was extremely astonished. For many people, two years' time would not even be enough to reach a single breakthrough in cultivation. Yet, Chu Feng had actually managed to grow this much. This caused them to be unable to contain their astonishment.

If Chu Feng was able to fight against the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago because he had relied on the power of his Demon Armament, then the current Chu Feng was proving himself to the crowd with his actual cultivation. Even if he didn't use any special weapons, he, Chu Feng, was still not someone to be looked down upon.

He was still someone qualified for the title of genius!!!

"Chu Feng, never did I expect that you actually really dared to come. I admire your courage. However... do you know why I admire your courage?" Chu Luxuan said to Chu Feng.

"Why?" Chu Feng asked.

"Because your arrival in this place will only bring about your own disgrace."

"Even though you already knew this would happen, you still dared to come. How could I not admire that courage of yours?"

Chu Luxuan mocked.

“Haha...” Chu Feng chuckled. Then, he said casually, “As fellow rank seven Martial Ancestors, how are you so certain that you will be able to defeat me?”

As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his palm, and an Ancestral Armament appeared in his hand.

That Ancestral Armament looked as if it had been made of crystal. It was translucent, and measured seven and a half feet long. It was like a blade, yet not a blade; like a sword, yet not a sword. Contained within the body of the blade were faint golden veined patterns. The veined patterns were flickering with light and giving rise to winds. Those winds were visible to the naked eye. Like a tornado, they revolved around the Ancestral Armament.

“That is...”

Upon seeing that Ancestral Armament, the World Spiritist Saintess’ expression changed. The reason for that was because she managed to recognize with a single glance that that Ancestral Armament was the Stormwind Edge.

Originally, this Stormwind Edge was something that she had purchased with an enormous sum. However, during a gamble against Chu Feng, she had lost it to him.

At that moment, the Ancestral Armament that had originally belonged to her was being used by Chu Feng. It caused the World Spiritist Saintess to feel extremely pained in her heart.

# Chapter 2483 - Amount Of Secret Skills

---

It was said that the stronger an Ancestral Armament was, the more difficult it would be to subdue it.

As for the Stormwind Edge, one did not have to doubt its quality. As Chu Feng was able to subdue it, it meant that Chu Feng's strength was undoubtedly strong.

Thus, upon seeing that Chu Feng was holding the Stormwind Edge in his hand under absolute control, even Chu Luxuan's gaze changed.

“That's a pretty decent weapon. Unfortunately, it has chosen the wrong master,” As Chu Luxuan spoke, his eyes started to flicker with lightning. Then, both his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared in unison. With a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, he flew toward Chu Feng.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Chu Feng was not to be outdone. He too unleashed the power of his Heavenly Bloodline. Then, with the Stormwind Edge in hand, he flew toward Chu Luxuan to confront him.

“Clank, clank, clank, clank~~~”

The two Heavenly Bloodline possessors did not use any martial skills when fighting. Instead, each with an Ancestral Armament in hand, the two of them entered a melee battle.

The two Ancestral Armaments collided with one another nonstop. At the same time as they caused dazzling sparks, the special powers of the two Ancestral Armaments began to bombard their opponents.

The energies were extremely powerful. They had already filled the entire battlefield with energy ripples.

However, to Chu Feng and Chu Luxuan, while the energies created by the collision of their Ancestral Armaments might affect them, those energies were unable to truly harm them.

To them, the actual threat would be their opponent's Ancestral Armament. As long as they were not struck by the Ancestral Armament, they would not be in fatal danger.

As such, what the two of them must do right now was not merely dodge and block their opponent's Ancestral Armament. Most importantly, they had to pierce their opponent's body with their own Ancestral Armament.

“Amazing! So these are Heavenly Bloodline possessors. Even though they were clearly only rank seven Martial Ancestors, their cultivation increased to rank nine Martial Ancestor upon activating the power of their Heavenly Bloodlines. Furthermore, they even both possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.”

“This is simply too frightening. Unless their opponents are also possessors of Heavenly Bloodlines, it is likely that no one else other than True Immortals will be able to contend against them.”

At that moment, the crowd all revealed marvelous expressions.

The great majority of them were Martial Ancestors. Thus, when Chu Feng and Chu Luxuan began fighting, they were able to personally realize how frightening the two of them were.

This was especially true for those experts who had reached the peak Martial Ancestor realm of cultivation. At that moment, they felt even greater reverence for Chu Feng and Chu Luxuan.

Although they were only two people from the younger generation, and had trained in martial cultivation for far fewer years than themselves, they were able to imagine very well what sort of end they would meet should they fight against either Chu Feng or Chu Luxuan.



Upon thinking about it, they had no choice but to revere those two individuals from the younger generation.

The reason for that was because they knew that they would undoubtedly be defeated if they were to fight either of them.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded in the sky.

At the same time, surging golden energy took the form of a tornado that ravaged the skies, spreading wider and outward.

It was Chu Luxuan. Chu Luxuan had suddenly used a martial skill during his confrontation with Chu Feng. Furthermore, it was an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill from the get-go.

Merely, his Emperor Taboo Martial Skill was blocked by Chu Feng’s Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

Following Chu Feng’s increase in strength, his Four Symbols Secret Skills had also grown much stronger. Although it was still somewhat difficult for him to use the Black Tortoise Armor Technique to block Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique was more than sufficient to block Emperor Taboo Martial Skills.

“You actually grasped a secret skill?”

Chu Luxuan frowned slightly. Evidently, he was surprised that Chu Feng had grasped a secret skill.

“Haha...”

Chu Feng replied with a chuckle. He felt this Chu Luxuan to be extremely despicable to suddenly unleash a Taboo Martial Skill at him. Fortunately, he responded quickly. Else, if he were someone else, Chu Luxuan’s sneak attack might have ended up being successful.

“However, Chu Feng, you are not the only one with a secret skill. If we are to compare the amount of secret skills we possess, then I

will definitely make you feel endlessly ashamed.”

Suddenly, Chu Luxuan retreated backwards explosively. Following that, a red radiance began to shine from his body.

The next moment, the red radiance turned into six. Then, all six of them shone from his body together.

Soon, the six red radiances turned into six figures that stood before Chu Luxuan.

Those six figures were each over thirty meters tall. They stood like humans, but possessed the bodies of beasts and extremely fierce faces.

They were all emitting a red glow, as well as auras capable of shaking one's core. They resembled four demons that had crawled out from the depths of hell.

“Secret skills! He actually managed to grasp six secret skills?!” Upon seeing those six red figures, someone cried out in alarm.

“His secret skills don't seem to be very powerful. Even if he is to send out six, they don't seem to be Chu Feng's match, no?” A person from the younger generation spoke in a questioning tone. He was unable to understand why Chu Luxuan would release those six secret skills even though they would clearly not be able to defeat Chu Feng.

This was simply a superfluous act.

“You don't understand. While there are strong and weak secret skills, one thing is constant. That is, secret skills are attached to the souls of their user. As their user grows more powerful, the secret skills will also grow more powerful.”

“Thus, for identical levels of cultivation, secret skills are generally stronger than martial skills.”

“And, precisely because of that, secret skills place an enormous burden on a cultivator's body. As such, for ordinary people,

containing two secret skills would be extremely difficult, and three secret skills could be said to be the limit. Those capable of using four are all geniuses.”

“This Chu Luxuan is able to use six secret skills. From this, it can be seen how outstandingly talented he is. He is fully deserving of the title of genius,” An experienced and knowledgeable old man explained.

After hearing the explanation from that old man, many people came to realize that Chu Luxuan being able to grasp six secret skills was extremely exceptional.

Seemingly able to hear the exclamations of admiration and praise from the crowd, Chu Luxuan revealed a proud smile. The gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng was also filled with contempt and provocation.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, with a single thought from Chu Feng, the Vermilion Bird, Black Tortoise, White Tiger and Azure Dragon, the Four Symbols Secret Skills, were all unleashed.

The Four Symbols Secret Skills were currently not attached to Chu Feng’s body. Rather, they took the form of four enormous beasts and appeared in the sky.

Merely in terms of size and imposing might, the Four Symbols Secret Skills completely overshadowed Chu Luxuan’s six secret skills.

“Chu Feng actually grasped four secret skills. He is truly a genius. The tolerance of his body is incomparable to ordinary people.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng’s four secret skills, the crowd started to exclaim in admiration again.

At that moment, Chu Luxuan’s proud expression dwindled slightly. However, he still said mockingly, “Four? Pretty good. However, compared to me, you’re still lacking.”

“They all say that the amount of secret skills one can support represents one’s talent and potential. It would seem that your potential is merely of this level.”

“Is that so?” Chu Feng smiled. Then, with a thought, five rays of light flew out from his body and appeared before him.

Naturally, they were the Five Elements Secret Skills, the Gold Immortal Profound Technique, Wood Immortal Profound Technique, Water Immortal Profound Technique, Fire Immortal Profound Technique and Earth Immortal Profound Technique.

“The auras of those five, could it... could it be that they’re also secret skills?”

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng actually grasped nine secret skills?!!!”

“This is simply too inconceivable!!!”

“Is... is he still human?!”

At that moment, the crowd were completely stunned. Many people even started to shiver with goosebumps all over.

If four secret skills could already signal one to be a genius, then one could very well imagine what nine secret skills represented.

At that moment, the crowd were completely captivated by Chu Feng’s nine secret skills, feeling envy and admiration for Chu Feng’s secret skills.

As for Chu Luxuan, he was no longer able to endure it. He no longer showed the complacency he had revealed before. On the contrary, his expression turned extremely ugly. Even the corners of his mouth were twitching.

Nine secret skills. Indeed, it was something that not even he could accomplish.

Six secret skills was his limit. This was something that he knew very well.

If the amount of secret skills one could hold represented the

strength of one's talent...

It was obvious that he had lost to Chu Feng in that.

# Chapter 2484 - The Battle Between Geniuses

---

“Chu Feng, don’t you think that you’re actually stronger than me just because you possess more secret skills.”

“What martial cultivation demands is strength. That is the same for secret skills.”

“Today, I, Chu Luxuan, will let you realise the strength of powerful secret skills.”

After Chu Luxuan said those words, he suddenly clasped his hands together. Then, a red radiance once again started to emit from his body.

The red radiance began to enter the six red figures nonstop. Following that, the six red figures began to grow indistinct. Then, they began to fuse in one location.

In the blink of an eye, the six red figures fused into a huge monster.

That huge monster was several hundred meters tall, and over a thousand meters long. It possessed a total of six heads and twenty six claws.

There were too many claws. It was as if it were permanently attacking. It was an extremely disgusting appearance.

However, not a single person present dared to look down on that monster.

The reason for that was because the aura that the monster emitted was exceptionally powerful. Its aura was actually much more powerful than even Chu Luxuan’s aura.

Naturally, it would also mean that that powerful monster was much more powerful than Chu Feng.

“What is happening? Did he fuse the secret skills together?”

“Amazing! The aura of that fused secret skill is simply too

powerful. Its power has simply surpassed that of Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills!”

The crowd were all awed by Chu Luxuan’s fused secret skill.

It could also be said that they were frightened. After all, the aura that that fused secret skill was emitting was something that no one present could withstand.

They knew very well that if that monster born of Chu Luxuan’s secret skills were to unleash a slaughter, it was likely that not a single person present would be able to escape death. In fact, they would not even have the opportunity to flee.

“This secret skill is called the Six Demons Transformation. It was created by the renowned Lord Six Demons.”

“Likely, a country bumpkin like you must’ve never heard of Lord Six Demons’ distinguished name.”

“Thus, you merely need to keep in mind that Lord Six Demons is an existence that you can only look up to your entire life.”

“As this secret skill, the Six Demons Transformation, was created by Lord Six Demons, not to mention its power, merely its value is already inestimable.”

“This is the greatest reward I’ve obtained from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Of course, while it is a reward, I relied on my own strength to master it.”

“The reason for that is because there are six people who have obtained this secret skill before me. However, they all failed to withstand the Six Demons Transformation, and ended up having no choice but to give up,” Chu Luxuan spoke very proudly.

His actions could be said to be openly blowing his own horn, flattering himself in public.

However, it just so happened that not a single person felt disgusted with his actions. On the contrary, they merely felt

admiration upon hearing those words.

After all, what Chu Luxuan said was the truth. If it were them, they would definitely not be able to control such a powerful secret skill.

“Pah! Fucking disgusting. This Chu Luxuan is simply even more shameless than his older brother,” However, when Her Lady Queen heard those words, she spit in disgust.

Then, she said, “Chu Feng, use the Ancient Era’s War Axe. Have this so-called Chu Heavenly Clan’s genius realize what it means by ‘no matter how strong you are, there is someone stronger than you,’ that no matter how powerful a secret skill might be, there is always a secret skill more powerful than it.”

“Since Milady Queen has spoken, I will naturally comply with Milady Queen’s order,” Chu Feng answered with a smile.

The conversation between Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen was something that only Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen could hear. However, the smile that Chu Feng revealed was visible to everyone.

While it would be one thing if others saw it, Chu Feng’s smile just so happened to be seen by the boasting Chu Luxuan. Upon seeing Chu Feng’s smile, Chu Luxuan’s expression turned extremely ugly.

“The hell are you smiling for? Are you looking down on my secret skill, my Six Demons Transformation?!” Chu Luxuan asked furiously.

“No, it’s not that I’m looking down upon it. Rather, it’s just that after hearing you blow your own horn, I found it kind of ridiculous. Are you that afraid of others not knowing how extraordinarily amazing you are?” Chu Feng asked mockingly.

“Blow my own horn, you say? Very well, this Young Master will have you understand whether I am blowing my own horn, or whether I possess actual ability,” After Chu Luxuan said those



words, his eyes started to shine red.

The next moment, the Six Demons Transformation also shone with the same sort of redness in its many eyes. It was as if the Six Demons Transformation was being controlled by Chu Luxuan.

Most importantly, the aura of the Six Demons Transformation became many times stronger than before.

“Oh no! That secret skill is simply too powerful. Chu Feng will likely not be a match for it.”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s supporters all revealed worried expressions. They were all afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to withstand an attack from that secret skill.

“Chu Feng, I’ve heard that you possess a Demon Armament. You should take it out right now. Else... don’t say that I didn’t give you a chance to do so,” Chu Luxuan said to Chu Feng. While he spoke as if he was allowing Chu Feng to use his Demon Armament, he was actually mocking Chu Feng.

At that moment, the bystanders started to anticipate Chu Feng’s reveal of the Demon Armament even more.

After all, it was rumored that Chu Feng was only able to battle against the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago because of that Demon Armament.

However, it remained that a rumor would only be a rumor. For the majority of the crowd, they had no idea as to what had really happened.

Thus, they all wanted to know whether or not Chu Feng actually possessed that powerful Demon Armament, whether or not that rumor was real.

“It seems that you’re quite knowledgeable with your information. Indeed, I possess a Demon Armament,” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

“He really possesses a Demon Armament. In that case, would that mean that the rumor is true? Chu Feng really managed to nearly extinguish the entire Kong Heavenly Clan using that Demon Armament?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd burst into a complete uproar. That bit of news was truly shocking.

“However, for someone like you, there is simply no need for me to use my Demon Armament,” Chu Feng added.

“What do you mean by that?! You actually dare to underestimate me?!” Fury emerged in Chu Luxuan’s eyes as his facial expression turned extremely fierce.

As a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he was someone adored by everyone his entire life. Never had he ever been held in such contempt in such a manner before.

For someone as proud and arrogant as him, this was simply unbearable.

“Aren’t you fond of using secret skills? In that case, I will have you experience today what an actually powerful secret skill is.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he pointed the Ancestral Armament he held in his hand toward the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

The next moment, rumbles began to sound in the sky as golden radiance began to spread about. Then, an enormous golden war axe appeared in the sky.

The moment that golden war axe appeared, the aura of the Six Demon Transformation was completely suppressed.

Naturally, the secret skill that possessed such overwhelming battle power was the secret skill that Chu Feng had obtained from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, the Ancient Era’s War Axe!!!

“Heavens! I am not dreaming, right? Chu Feng, he... he... he actually possesses ten secret skills!”

“His body is capable of tolerating ten secret skills!”

“Not only that, but this tenth secret skill’s aura is simply too frightening! It seems to be an entire realm stronger than Chu Feng!”

After the Ancient Era’s War Axe appeared, everyone was stunned. Many people even began to rub their eyes nonstop. They were trying to carefully distinguish whether or not they were seeing things.

“False bravado! I refuse to believe that this secret skill of yours will be able to surpass my Six Demons Transformation!” At that moment, Chu Luxuan urged the Six Demons Transformation to rush to attack Chu Feng.

In the blink of an eye, crimson radiance covered half of the entire region. It seemed to possess the imposing power capable of contending against Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Axe.

At this moment, the Six Demons Transformation’s twenty-six tentacle-like claws were all extending. With rapid speed, they rushed to attack Chu Feng.

Witnessing that scene, the crowd began to worry deeply for Chu Feng again.

After all, the attack of the Six Demons Transformation was frighteningly powerful. Even though Chu Feng had revealed his extraordinary might, the crowd was still not absolutely confident in him.

“Snap~~~”

However, right at that moment, a golden flash swept through the sky.

At the moment that golden flash appeared, the red radiance instantly grew dimmer.

The next moment, the crowd was stupefied.

This was especially true for those people who were worried about Chu Feng. They finally realized that their worries...  
...were unnecessary.

# Chapter 2485 - The Outcome Has Been Determined

---

The fierce and powerful Six Demons Transformation was still in the sky.

However, the red gaseous flames that it emitted had grown much dimmer.

Not only that, but the frightening tentacles it had used to attack Chu Feng had all been cut off.

Naturally, the one to sever its tentacles was the Ancient Era's War Axe that currently stood horizontally in the sky.

At that moment, the golden gaseous flames emitted by the Ancient Era's War Axe had covered over half of the sky. Its overwhelming power seemed to be telling everyone that regardless of how grand of an origin the Six Demons Transformation might possess, it would still not be able to contend against it.

"Seems like your secret skill is only of this level," Chu Feng mocked.

Hearing those words, Chu Luxuan turned deathly pale. Raging fury emerged in his eyes.

"You damned bastard! You dare underestimate me?! I'll make you pay!!!"

"Heeeahhh!!!"

Suddenly, Chu Luxuan shouted furiously. Then, a steady flow of red gaseous flames started to emit from his body and enter the Six Demons Transformation.

Soon, the Six Demons Transformation's severed tentacles were regrown. Its aura also grew more powerful again. Once again, the red gaseous flames it emitted started to increase in size. It once again seemed to be able to contend against Chu Feng's Ancient

Era's War Axe.

"Seems like you're unwilling to give up," Chu Feng chuckled. Then, a trace of ruthlessness flashed through his eyes.

"Boom~~~"

The Ancient Era's War Axe moved. It was rushing toward the Six Demons Transformation.

"Roar~~~"

The Six Demons Transformation let out a snarl. Then, its body started to transform. In the end, an enormous mouth appeared.

That enormous mouth was filled with white fangs covered with traces of blood. It was extremely frightening.

"Snap~~~"

However, at the moment when the two collided, the Six Demons Transformation was instantly sliced in two by the Ancient Era's War Axe.

Like tofu encountering a sharp blade, it was simply powerless to resist.

"This gap is simply too enormous. Exactly how powerful is Chu Feng's secret skill?!!!"

"A secret skill that powerful has simply surpassed the level of Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills. This is truly unbelievable."

Waves of exclamation sounded nonstop. It was only at that moment that the crowd realized that there was such an enormous gap even though both of them were powerful secret skills.

Before Chu Feng's secret skill, Chu Luxuan's secret skill simply did not possess the ability to even contend against it.

"Puu..."

Right at that moment, Chu Luxuan opened his mouth and vomited out a mouthful of blood.

At the same time, his complexion also became extremely pale. His legs started to grow soft, and he actually half knelt in midair.

In fact, there were even people that noticed that his body was shivering.

That one mouthful of blood was most definitely not an ordinary mouthful of blood. Rather, it seemed to be his heart's blood.

Chu Luxuan was already seriously injured. It was likely that he would no longer be able to fight.

At that moment, the crowd revealed more and more admiration in their eyes.

They had already realized....

That it was actually not only Chu Luxuan's secret skill that was unable to contend against Chu Feng's secret skill.

Instead, it turned out that even Chu Luxuan himself was unable to contend against Chu Feng.

“Huuu~~~”

After a moment of astonishment, many people were unable to stop themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

As matters stood, they were certain that Chu Luxuan had been defeated.

But, who was Chu Luxuan? He was a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Yet, he was defeated by Chu Feng. What did this signify?

This meant that Chu Feng's reputation as a genius was fully justified. His genius was not limited to only the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Even in the Upper Realms, he would be able to establish himself.

“Snap~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Axe swept through the sky. A golden slash landed on the enormous signboard nearby,

as well as the cage that had imprisoned everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. Not only was the signboard sliced in two, but the cage was also shattered.

However, the power of the golden slash was just the right amount. Although it shattered the cage, it did not injure anyone. Everyone from the Sunset Cloud Valley managed to regain their freedom.

“Chu Feng, did you really think you could save them today?”

“Let me tell you this. Today, you will not be able to save anyone. Even you will die here today!”

Chu Luxuan shouted loudly while fuming with rage between gritted teeth. The gaze with which he looked at Chu Feng was filled with irreconciliation, grievance and killing intent.

“Humph,” The corners of Chu Feng’s mouth rose as he let out a light snort.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, golden radiance began to flicker about as the Ancient Era’s War Axe arrived above Chu Luxuan’s head.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Chu Luxuan let out a scream. Then, he lost the ability to fly, and was forcibly knocked from the sky by the power of the Ancient Era’s War Axe.

Furthermore, he did not even have the strength to raise his head. Like a dying dog, he lay flat on his stomach motionlessly.

“Hahahaha...”

However, right at that moment, the crowd were able to hear that Chu Luxuan was laughing.



That's right, he was laughing.

Although his face was buried in the ground and not visible to the crowd, he was still laughing.

But, how could he still laugh in such a state?

The crowd was bewildered. They were unable to understand what was happening with Chu Luxuan.

"Chu Feng, if you have the ability to do so, then go ahead and kill me," Chu Luxuan mocked.

Even with the situation being as it was he actually still dared to provoke Chu Feng.

"Did you think that I do not dare to kill you?" Chu Feng's sharp brows narrowed slightly. Disdain filled his eyes.

Chu Luxuan wanted him to kill him. Thus, Chu Feng found no reason to spare him. As such, Chu Feng would not even blink an eye at killing Chu Luxuan.

If Chu Luxuan really thought that Chu Feng would not dare to kill him, he would be gravely mistaken.

"Go ahead and kill me if you can," Chu Luxuan let out a mocking provocation.

"As you wish," After Chu Feng said those words, the Ancient Era's War Axe that emitted golden light once again came striking down from the sky. It was aimed toward Chu Luxuan.

"Chu Feng is actually really planning to kill Chu Luxuan!!!"

The crowd was stunned. After all, no matter what, Chu Luxuan was a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan. His identity was no small matter.

It would be understandable for the Chu Heavenly Clan to not look further into it after Chu Feng killed Chu Luyang. However, Chu Luxuan was different. If Chu Feng were to kill him, he would definitely bring a major crisis upon himself.

At that moment, everyone felt that Chu Feng was being excessively daring.

However, no one dared to look down on Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng's courage and insight were precisely things that they did not possess.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Axe grew motionless right at the moment when it was about to reach Chu Luxuan.

Witnessing that scene, the crowd all heaved a sigh of relief.

In fact, some people present revealed smiles on their faces.

“It would appear that Chu Feng does not dare to really kill Chu Luxuan. He was merely trying to scare him.”

“This means that Chu Feng is still very rational. Yet, at the same time, this means that Chu Feng is not an out-of-control maverick.”

At that moment, the crowd all felt that it was Chu Feng who had stayed his hand. However, it was also because of that that the crowd's respect toward Chu Feng lessened slightly.

After all, to truly be intent on killing someone and to merely scare someone, there was an enormous difference between the two.

“Who stopped me?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

“What? It is not Chu Feng who stayed his hand?” The crowd were all astonished. At the same time, they started to feel doubt. After all, they had not felt any aura stronger than Chu Feng's.

They were all certain that Chu Feng was the strongest individual there. When even Chu Luxuan was no match for him, who could possibly stop him?

Thus, it was inevitable for there to be people that felt that Chu Feng was deliberately putting on a play so that he could get out of

an embarrassing situation.

“Young brother Chu Feng, there is not an enormous hatred between the two of you. Is there really a need for you to insist on killing?”

“How about you give me this face?”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded. At the same time, a figure appeared out of thin air. That person stood before Chu Luxuan.

“That is?”

Seeing that person, the crowd present, with the exception of Chu Feng, all revealed an enormous change in appearance!!!

## Chapter 2486 - Chu Xuanlang

---

At that moment, practically everyone present was certain that Chu Feng's secret skill was not stopped by Chu Feng himself. Rather, it was really stopped by someone else. Chu Feng... did not lie.

The reason why the crowd was so certain was because a middle-aged man had appeared before the crowd's sight.

Although that middle-aged man possessed an ordinary appearance, a deep gaze and a stubbly beard, he did not appear to be sloppy. Instead, he gave off a mature charm.

No one knew how old that man was. In fact, one could only faintly feel his aura.

As such, the crowd were unable to determine what level of cultivation that man had. However, instinctively, they started to feel fear toward him.

It was as if a tiger had suddenly appeared among a group of hares. Before the tiger started attacking the hares, before the tiger roared, the hares managed to smell the danger.

The crowd felt that that person was at the very least a True Immortal-level expert.

True Immortals, they were experts standing at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Regardless of how powerful a Martial Ancestor might be, regardless of what sort of heaven-defying battle power they might possess, and regardless of what sorts of abilities they might have, True Immortals were being that they could not contend against.

Back when Chu Feng was a peak Half Martial Ancestor, he could increase his cultivation to that of a Martial Ancestor temporarily after using his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings.

However, such a thing was out of the question for the True Immortal Realm. The True Immortal Realm was not a realm of cultivation that one could break through by using the power of one's Heavenly Bloodline.

Thus, not to mention Chu Feng being only a rank seven Martial Ancestor right now, even if he were a rank nine Martial Ancestor and unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings to increase his battle power, he would still not be a match for a True Immortal-level expert.

In short, Martial Ancestors would always be Martial Ancestors. They were beings that would never exceed True Immortals. This was the greatness of the True Immortal Realm.

The True Immortal realm was the true dividing line in the path of martial cultivation. Before this dividing line, regardless of how high one's cultivation might be, regardless of how powerful one's abilities might be, one would forever remain a mortal.

However, upon passing that dividing line, one would no longer be a mortal. Rather, one would have become an immortal. When faced with the power of an immortal, mortals would naturally be no match.

Thus, after a True Immortal appeared, everyone felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to defeat him.

However, the reason why the crowd was so astonished was not only limited to the fact that that man was very likely a True Immortal. In addition to that, it was because that man was very unfamiliar; he was someone that none of them had ever seen before.

Furthermore, on that man's waist was a title plate. There were three large words written on the title plate -- Chu Heavenly Clan!!!

“He's someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

At that moment, many of Chu Feng's supporters started to

worry. They all knew very well that the Chu Heavenly Clan was the overlord of an Upper Realm. To put it simply, they were the masters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Since that man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had appeared, he would naturally not look on without doing anything as Chu Feng tried to kill Chu Luxuan.

After all, Chu Luxuan was not an ordinary member of the younger generation. Instead, he was a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, the crowd finally realized why Chu Luxuan had laughed like that earlier.

It turned out that it was because he knew that someone would come save him, that the person to die today would be Chu Feng no matter what.

“Hahahaha...”

Right at that moment, Chu Luxuan started laughing again. This time around, not only was his laughter filled with mockery toward Chu Feng, but it was also filled with pride.

As the pressure from the Ancient Era's War Axe that was suppressing him earlier had disappeared Chu Luxuan stood up and looked at Chu Feng.

The smile on his face grew more and more concentrated. At that moment, Chu Luxuan totally had the appearance of someone taking advantage of his position to bully another. However, not a single person dared to say anything regarding Chu Luxuan.

The world of martial cultivators was like that In that world, it was not only one's individual strength that mattered. One's background, one's clan and one's reliance also mattered.

It was Chu Luxuan's fortune to be able to possess that sort of background. Even if others disapproved of it, what could they possibly do about it?

At that moment, the crowd could only feel sorry for Chu Feng, feel sorry for him being so unlucky as to provoke a clan with such a robust background.

However, right at that moment, that man shouted at Chu Luxuan angrily, “You still have the gall to laugh?”

His shout not only came as a shock to Chu Luxuan, it also came as a shock to the bystanding crowd.

“You’ve challenged someone to battle and been defeated. Yet you still have the nerve to laugh? Do you feel that you’re not being humiliated enough that you want to play to the gallery?” The man asked Chu Luxuan.

Chu Luxuan lowered his head silently. An ashamed expression emerged on his face.

“Since when did relying on another become an ability you could flaunt?” The man continued.

Chu Luxuan didn’t answer. However, his face grew even more ashamed.

“Answer me!” Suddenly, the man shouted sternly again.

His shout caused even the bystanders to tremble in fear. As for Chu Luxuan, he was so scared that his body started to shiver all over.

“Uncle Xuanlang, this Luxuan knows his mistake,” Chu Luxuan said timidly.

Although Chu Luxuan admitted to his error, the man did not continue to pay attention to him. Instead, he turned his head toward Chu Feng.

Different from when he looked at Chu Luxuan, when he looked at Chu Feng, there was not the slightest trace of sternness on his face. Instead, there was a good-natured smile.

“Young brother, you’re Chu Feng, right?” The man asked.

“Since you already know, why bother asking?” Chu Feng answered.

“Heh...” The man was not angered. Instead, his smile grew even stronger. He said, “It is merely a spar. Is there really a need to take his life?”

“You’re planning to help him handle me?” Chu Feng asked. This was the question that he cared about the most.

“Of course not. Merely... I hope that you can spare his life,” The man said with a faint smile.

“He’s pleading for leniency? He’s not planning to attack Chu Feng?”

The crowd were all surprised upon hearing those words. The reason for that was because that man not only said that sort of thing, but even his attitude was that of someone pleading. He seemed to truly not have plans to attack Chu Feng.

But, he was clearly someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. It would be one thing for him to not stand up for Chu Feng. Yet, how could he be this courteous toward Chu Feng?

The crowd were truly confused. After all, if they were this man before them, they would definitely not do what he was doing.

Instead, they would ruthlessly teach Chu Feng a lesson so as to avenge their clan’s younger generation.

“I have a question. Was it you... who captured my two friends?” Chu Feng asked.

“Your two friends are indeed with me. Merely, I have not captured them. Rather, I invited them.”

“Actually, I have not come here today with the intention of helping Luxuan.”

“Rather, I have come for you,” That man said to Chu Feng.

“For me?” Chu Feng was surprised.



“I have come especially to invite you,” The man said.

“Invite me?” Chu Feng’s gaze changed slightly.

Sensing that the situation was amiss, Chu Luxuan spoke out, “Uncle Xuanlang, this Chu Feng killed my older brother.”

“Indeed, your older brother was killed by Chu Feng. However, that was a result of his talent being inferior. As such, there’s nothing to complain about.”

“Do not forget about the reminder the clan has given you all before you all came here. The fact that I am pleading for leniency for you today is already an exception.”

“If you want to avenge your older brother, I will not stop you. However, you can forget about having me help you avenge your older brother,” The man reprimanded Chu Luxuan sternly.

Chu Luxuan’s face turned red after being reprimanded. Even though it was clear that he was feeling extremely unreconciled, he did not dare to refute what that man said at all.

Then, that man looked to Chu Feng again and courteously said, “I nearly forgot to introduce myself. I have the same surname as you. My name is Chu Xuanlang. I am a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Very well, I can accompany you,” Chu Feng nodded. He felt sincerity from the attitude of this Chu Xuanlang.

However, he would naturally not agree to accompany this Chu Xuanlang only because of that. Most importantly, it was because he believed that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were with him.

The reason why he agreed to accompany that Chu Xuanlang was because he wanted to see Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

## Chapter 2487 - Who Is The Coward?

---

“However, not only did this Chu Luxuan capture my friends as hostages, using them to threaten me, he also ordered for his men to exterminate the Three Stars Hall. Everyone knows that the Three Stars Hall were also my friends. If I didn’t arrive on time, the Three Stars Hall would’ve likely been gone by now,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Luxuan actually ordered his men to extinguish the Three Stars Hall? This is truly too ruthless, no? Even if the Three Stars Hall is related to Chu Feng, there shouldn’t be a need for one to go so far as to use them to vent one’s anger, no?” After hearing what Chu Feng said, everyone's heart tightened.

They all realized that that Chu Luxuan was actually only a gentleman on the surface, but in reality was a despicable and vile individual.

After all, in the Sunset Cloud Valley, he had only imprisoned the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley, and did not injure them in the slightest. This made him appear to be someone who was able to distance himself clearly between his grudges and grievances.

In turn, many people felt that Chu Luxuan was an upright individual.

However, he actually did such a despicable thing in the shadows. He had actually wanted to exterminate the entire Three Stars Hall. He was simply too ruthless.

When comparing the two, an intense contrast could be seen. This inevitably caused the crowd to feel that Chu Luxuan was a hypocrite.

He would do one thing on the surface, and do another in the shadows.

“Thus, no matter what, I absolutely cannot allow this matter to

be dropped just like this,” Chu Feng continued.

“You don’t want to drop this matter? What can you possibly do about it?” Seeing that Chu Feng still wanted to continue looking further into this, the already sullen Chu Luxuan spoke in a very unreconciled manner.

“You shut up!” Right after Chu Luxuan said those words, Chu Xuanlang immediately shouted at him angrily.

After being berated by Chu Xuanlang, Chu Luxuan’s fury vanished instantly. Once again, he lowered his head silently.

“Go ahead and tell me what you want,” Chu Xuanlang said to Chu Feng.

“Firstly, I want you to guarantee the safety of the people from the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, I agree to that. From today on, if anyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm dares to attack the Sunset Cloud Valley or the Three Stars Hall, they will be making an enemy out of me, Chu Xuanlang. I will definitely not allow them to get away with it,” Chu Xuanlang agreed frankly.

“Frank,” At that moment, even Chu Feng felt admiration for Chu Xuanlang’s manner of bearing.

Logically, a person of the younger generation like Chu Feng would simply not have the qualifications to make conditions with someone like Chu Xuanlang.

However, not only did Chu Xuanlang allow Chu Feng to raise his demands, but he also agreed to Chu Feng’s demands. This meant that... Chu Xuanlang truly possessed sincerity in his invitation for Chu Feng.

“Then, young brother Chu Feng, are you willing to leave with me now?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“Of course,” Chu Feng answered.

“Very well. There’s no time to delay, let’s set off right now. Your two friends are still waiting for you,” As Chu Xuanlong spoke, he soared into the sky and arrived before Chu Feng. He was planning to leave with Chu Feng.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly said, “Wait.”

“What’s wrong?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“There’s a gift that I must give him,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he looked at Chu Luxuan.

“What gift?” Not only was Chu Xuanlang curious, but the others present were also very curious.

Chu Feng wanted to give a gift to Chu Luxuan? This was simply something inconceivable.

However, it was evident that Chu Feng was not joking around. Thus, they were all curious as to exactly what sort of present Chu Feng would give Chu Luxuan.

“Woosh~~~”

Before the attentive gazes of the crowd, Chu Feng raised his hand and made a grabbing motion. Then, an attractive force covered the sky.

Before such an enormous attractive force, one of the two halves of the enormous signboard that had been cut into two by Chu Feng was sucked toward him.

Before the signboard could reach Chu Feng’s hand, Chu Feng suddenly waved his hand downward. Then, the signboard began to fly down from the sky. “Boom!” Like an enormous sharp blade, it landed beside Chu Luxuan.

“Sssss~~~”

When the crowd saw that piece of the signboard, they were all shocked.

As for Chu Luxuan, his expression turned exceptionally ugly.

The reason for that was because there was only a single word on the signboard -- coward.

“To challenge me to a battle by capturing people to threaten me, only to hide behind your senior’s protection to save your life.”

“The word coward suits you better,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“You!!!” Chu Luxuan’s complexion turned red. He started to gnash his teeth in anger. He had the appearance of someone who was about to lash out at Chu Feng.

However, before Chu Luxuan could speak, Chu Xuanlang said, “Luxuan, enough. Since you’ve lost, you must be willing to accept it.”

After Chu Xuanlang spoke, even though Chu Luxuan was feeling displeased, he did not dare to say anything.

Then, the space where Chu Xuanlang and Chu Feng were at trembled slightly. After that, Chu Xuanlang and Chu Feng disappeared.

At that moment, only Chu Luxuan, the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley and the bystanders remained.

“The hell are you all looking at?!” Suddenly, Chu Luxuan exploded. He shouted furiously, and caused even space itself to violently tremble. That ferocious gaze of his seemed to indicate that he wanted to eat someone alive.

Faced with such a Chu Luxuan, how could the crowd dare say anything? None of them even dared to look him in the face.

“Chu Feng, I’ll show you sooner or later!”

Chu Luxuan was truly feeling extremely sullen. Not only was he feeling extremely sullen, but he also felt extremely humiliated.

Thus, he had no face to continue to stay there. After he finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

Evidently, he had also left.

Although he felt extremely furious, he did not do anything to the crowd present, nor did he do anything to the people of the Sunset Cloud Valley.

However, it remained that he had shouted loudly at the crowd, and aimed the anger in his heart toward the crowd.

“If you have the ability, go and vent out your anger to Chu Feng. The hell are you venting your anger on us for?”

“That’s right. It seems that a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan is only at this level too.”

After verifying that Chu Luxuan had left, some bold individuals began to voice their discontent. After that, they all left in succession.

There were also people that chose to stay. They were still enjoying themselves while reminiscing on the things that had happened.

After all, it could be said that they had witnessed an enormous event.

Chu Feng had appeared and dispelled the rumors of his death. They were all able to verify that that exceptional genius was still alive.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had defeated a genius of the Chu Heavenly Clan with his absolute strength. Such a battle was simply too great.

What happened was destined to be spread far and wide. In fact, it would even be passed down to future generations. And they, were witnesses to that major battle.

Merely by witnessing what had happened on that day, they could boast for thousands of years to their friends, their children and their descendants. Thus, at this moment, they were all feeling extremely excited.

Of course, there were also a portion of people that decided to stay so as to worm their way into being friends with the Sunset Cloud Valley.

Their intentions were very clear. Since Chu Feng possessed such overwhelming strength, and had also obtained the favor of that Chu Heavenly Clan's Chu Xuanlang, he was destined to rise in power.

The crowd felt that there would be a bloodbath soon, a bloodbath formed by the emergence of Chu Feng.

After what happened on that day, they firmly believed that that person from the younger generation, Chu Feng, possessed the ability to stir up a storm in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As the Sunset Cloud Valley possessed an extraordinary status with Chu Feng, they felt that if they were able to enter a relationship with the Sunset Cloud Valley, they might be able to hug Chu Feng's thighs and benefit from him.

Chu Feng had no idea what was happening in the Sunset Cloud Valley at that moment. However, he was also not worried about the safety of the people in the Sunset Cloud Valley.

He could tell that this Chu Xuanlang was definitely an extraordinary individual. Likely, he would possess an extraordinary status even in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Else, there would be no reason for a genius as proud and arrogant as Chu Luxuan to be that scared of him.

With him voicing his guarantee, not to mention Chu Luxuan, it was likely that not a single person in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would dare do anything to the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

With the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall safe, Chu Feng would have one less worry. As such, he would be able to do

things with less concern in the future.



## Chapter 2488 - During The Two Years

---

“Chu Feng, never would I have expected this Chu Xuanlang to really agree to your demands.”

“But, your current situation is not optimistic either. Now that the Kong Heavenly Clan knows that you’re still alive, they will definitely not let you get away.”

“If you do not use the Evil God Sword, then, with your current strength, it is obvious that you will not be able to contend against the Kong Heavenly Clan.”

“Furthermore, don’t forget that you also have a great hidden enemy, the Infant Soul Sect. It is the target that you must take care of.”

“Instead of having this Chu Xuanlang protect the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, why didn’t you ask him to protect you directly?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Milady Queen, we still have no idea what sort of status this Chu Xuanlang possesses in the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“However, it is evident that he is very well-informed about all the things that we’ve done in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Protecting powers like the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall is simply a trivial matter for him. However, if I am to ask him to protect me, the significance will be completely different, and he might not necessarily agree to it.”

“Furthermore, if I am to ask him to protect me, what if my father is to find out about it?”

“Has the Chu Heavenly Clan not disgraced my father and I enough?”

“That is why I have vowed that I will never bring up the name of

the Chu Heavenly Clan to protect myself.”

“Naturally, I cannot have someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan protect me,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn, to not use them to protect you, but to be able to use them to protect your friends. You’ve handled this matter beautifully.”

“Boy, you’ve truly grown more and more shrewd. This Queen has not nurtured you in vain,” Her Lady Queen said happily. As she said those words, an immensely proud expression emerged on her exceptionally beautiful face. It was as if Chu Feng’s current intelligence was all thanks to her contributions.

“Milady Queen, in that case, shouldn’t you present me with a bit of reward?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“What sort of reward do you want?” Her Lady Queen revealed an innocent expression.

“For example, give me a kiss, or let me give you a kiss?” Chu Feng let out a shameless laugh.

“That suggestion is boring. How about I hack you with a knife once or twice?” Her Lady Queen revealed a mischievous smile.

“Cough, cough... I was joking. Don’t take it seriously. I can’t continue to chat idly with you anymore, I still have to scout out information regarding this Chu Xuanlang. I need to know why he invited me,” Chu Feng hurriedly found an excuse to escape from Her Lady Queen. He then turned to Chu Xuanlang.

“Don’t ask anything. Once we’re there, you will come to a natural realization,” Chu Xuanlang said with a faint smile.

Chu Feng was surprised. This Chu Xuanlang’s perception was truly impressive. Even though his gaze was fixed ahead the entire time, he managed to sense that Chu Feng was planning to speak. Furthermore, he knew what Chu Feng wanted to ask.

In such a situation, Chu Feng also smiled faintly. He no longer

tried asking Chu Xuanlang any questions.

The two of them did not utter another word on their journey.

That said, Chu Feng was able to sense that Chu Xuanlang was very powerful. Even if he was only a True Immortal, he was definitely not a True Immortal that the True Immortals of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could compare to.

In fact, it might even be possible that he was not a True Immortal-level expert at all.

The reason for that was because the surrounding objects on their journey were all indistinct. Chu Feng was unable to see anything clearly.

From this, it could be seen how powerful Chu Xuanlang was. Else, it would not be possible for him to possess such speed.

Most importantly, Chu Feng was unable to detect his aura even while they were rapidly journeying.

As for Chu Feng, he was, after all, an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

When someone of Chu Feng's caliber was unable to detect Chu Xuanlang's cultivation, it could only mean two things.

Either Chu Xuanlang possessed some sort of treasure that could conceal his cultivation, or he was so powerful that Chu Feng was simply incapable of determining how strong he was.

Judging from the situation at hand, the latter was the more probable case.

.....

Finally, Chu Xuanlang stopped, and Chu Feng was once again able to see his surroundings clearly.

At that moment, Chu Feng discovered that they were only flying in the sky.

When he looked down, he could only see spacious and empty lands, ordinary looking forests and ordinary looking brooks. There were no human habitats here.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Xuanlang made a grabbing motion toward the empty space before him. Then, he made a pulling motion, as if he were opening a door.

“Snap~” The space before them was actually opened, with a door emerging in its place. On the other side of the door was actually a completely different world.

An isolated space. This was an isolated space created by Chu Xuanlang.

However, it was not an ordinary isolated space. The reason for that was because that isolated space was actually formed through special methods using only martial power.

In other words, that isolated space was unrelated to world spirit techniques.

Precisely due to the fact that it did not contain the slightest bit of spirit power, even Chu Feng did not detect that there was actually an isolated space there earlier.

“Go on in. Your friends are waiting for you,” Chu Xuanlang said with a smile.

“Senior, you’re not entering?” Chu Feng asked.

“Since you all are going to reminisce with one another, it’d be better that I don’t participate in this. As such, I will wait for you here,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Thank you,” Chu Feng returned a courteous smile. Then, he walked in.

That isolated space was not very large. However, there were mountains and rivers there. It was a picturesque scene.

With Chu Feng's observational ability, he soon discovered a building among the mountains and rivers.

It was a simple building. In fact, it could even be said to be an extremely simple and unadorned little house made with tiles and bricks. The house had a small fenced-in courtyard. It looked just like a commoner's home in the countryside.

However, Chu Feng was actually unable to see through the little tile and brick house. However, Chu Feng knew that if Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were here, they would definitely be inside the house.

Thus, Chu Feng flew down. Right after he entered the courtyard, a figure flew out from the house and blocked the door.

At that moment, not only did Chu Feng see a gaze filled with killing intent, he also felt a very powerful aura. That person... was actually a rank eight Martial Ancestor.

Upon seeing who the person before him was clearly, Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

At the same time, that person's cold expression also changed instantly.

The reason for that was because the person before Chu Feng was Zhao Hong.

"Chu Feng, you're actually alive?" Upon seeing Chu Feng, Zhao Hong revealed an expression of disbelief.

"Aren't I standing before you? Zhao Hong, your cultivation truly progresses quickly," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng had thought that with how talented Zhao Hong was, her cultivation should be able to advance by leaps and bounds in two years' time. However, he did not expect her cultivation to increase so much.

With this, it was no longer that the Kong Heavenly Clan would

end up suffering by her hands. With the abilities Zhao Hong possessed, having a cultivation of rank eight Martial Ancestor would indeed serve as a nightmare for the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“You’re not bad yourself. You’re actually a rank seven Martial Ancestor already. Judging from this, it would seem that the current me is no match for you already,” Zhao Hong said jokingly.

“No, no, you’re the ruthless demonic woman. How could I dare fight against you?” Chu Feng also started joking around.

“Tsk, don’t make cutting remarks. I have already renounced my old ways,” Zhao Hong curled her lips and smiled. Her smile was truly quite pleasant to see.

Even Chu Feng had to admit that Zhao Hong was a beauty. At the very least, she was originally a beauty.

Chu Feng felt very happy in his heart. He felt happy for his brother. After all, with how Wang Qiang looked, being able to find a girl like Zhao Hong could be considered to be a toad managing to eat the meat of a swan.

“Oh, that’s right, where’s Wang Qiang?” Chu Feng asked.

“Something happened to him?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze changed.

He discovered that when he asked about Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong’s expression changed. The expression she revealed was not a good one. Instead, it seemed to indicate bad news.

# Chapter 2489 - Why Are You Surnamed Chu?

---

“Come on in,” Zhao Hong turned around and entered the house as Chu Feng followed after her.

The house was very small. With merely a single turn, they entered the guest room.

There was a special bed in the guest room. That bed was a treasure, and emitted a seven-colored radiance. The seven-colored radiance was currently spiraling around the person lying on the bed.

As for that person, he was none other than Wang Qiang.

Merely, the current Wang Qiang had a black complexion, and was unconscious.

Instinctively, Chu Feng arrived before Wang Qiang and grabbed his arm. He began to pour spirit power into Wang Qiang to determine the situation he was in.

He was able to tell that Wang Qiang’s current level of cultivation was not weak either. He was actually the same as Zhao Hong, a rank eight Martial Ancestor, a level above his own.

However, Wang Qiang’s aura was extremely chaotic. Not only was he seriously injured, but he was also suffering from a special sort of poison. Most importantly, even Chu Feng was unable to cure that poison.

“Who did this?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan,” Zhao Hong answered.

Afterwards, Zhao Hong began to narrate to Chu Feng what had happened.

During those two years he'd been gone, both Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang thought that Chu Feng had died. Thus, they made a firm resolution to avenge Chu Feng.

During the past two years, they had been striving their hardest to increase their cultivation and attack the Kong Heavenly Clan nonstop.

Originally, they were only mounting small-scale attacks. However, they later discovered an Ancient Era's Remnant in a certain place in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The two of them obtained enormous harvests from that Ancient Era's Remnant. That was how they managed to obtain their current level of cultivation.

Supported by their powerful cultivations, the two of them became increasingly unrestrained in their attacks, and began to focus more on their retaliations against the Kong Heavenly Clan.

With the planning the two of them made, they began to destroy the Kong Heavenly Clan's branches in succession. Countless Kong Heavenly Clansmen ended up dying by Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's hands.

Thus, in the past year, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had battered the Kong Heavenly Clan quite seriously.

However, not long ago, they were ambushed during one of their attacks against the Kong Heavenly Clan.

While their opponent was not a True Immortal, he was very powerful. Not only did that individual injure Wang Qiang, he also poisoned him.

Fortunately, Chu Xuanlang just so happened to be passing by, and saved the two of them. Otherwise, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong would likely be gone from the world of the living.

"In that case, Chu Xuanlang is your benefactor. Merely, why did he not heal Wang Qiang's injury?" Chu Feng asked.



The condition of Wang Qiang's injury was very strange. Even Chu Feng was unable to do anything about it. However, Chu Xuanlang was different. He was an expert from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, a true expert from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chu Feng felt that Chu Xuanlang would most likely be able to resolve what they were powerless against.

Zhan Hong sighed. She revealed an even greater expression of worry.

"Could it be that even he was unable to help Wang Qiang?" Chu Feng asked.

"Mn, although he does not care about the grudges that we have with the Kong Heavenly Clan, since he acted to save us, he actually wanted to save us all the way. But he... he was unable to treat my husband's injury. Furthermore, he declared that there is only a single person in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that is capable of curing my husband's injury," Zhao Hong said.

"Who?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Golden Crane True Immortal," Zhao Hong said.

"Golden Crane True Immortal? Have you all gone to request his assistance?" Chu Feng asked.

"We did. However, we were locked outside the gates by him, and he refused to even see us. The Golden Crane True Immortal is truly unwilling to help."

When mentioning that matter, deep grievances emerged in Zhao Hong's eyes. Evidently, Zhao Hong held a grudge against the Golden Crane True Immortal's refusal to save Wang Qiang.

"Let me go and have a try," As Chu Feng spoke, he turned around and began walking out.

Wang Qiang's injury was extremely strange. Although he was

still able to persevere at the moment, Chu Feng had no idea how much longer he could continue persevering with no cure.

As this matter concerned Wang Qiang's life and death, Chu Feng naturally did not wish to delay.

"Chu Feng, you must definitely be careful on your way there," Zhao Hong warned.

"Although I do not possess a deep relationship with the Golden Crane True Immortal, it remains that I have been acquainted with him once before. I believe that even if he is to refuse to see me, he would not make things difficult for me," Chu Feng said.

"No, it's not the Golden Crane True Immortal. Right now, it is not only the Golden Crane True Immortal that's at Mount Cloud Crane. Young Master Li Ming is also there," Zhao Hong said.

"Him? I don't think he possesses any hatred or grievance against us, no?" Chu Feng said.

"Although there are no grievances between us, he is an extremely arrogant individual. Originally... he was deemed to be the strongest genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"However, in the past two years, the three of us were being compared to that Young Master Li Ming constantly. That Young Master Li Ming kept a very low profile, whereas Wang Qiang and I kept very high profiles during the past two years. Thus, some people felt that our strength surpassed his."

"While Young Master Li Ming has never tried to make trouble for us, he is in fact feeling very unreconciled."

"Thus, when I ran into him at Mount Cloud Crane, he attacked me," Zhao Hong said.

"And the result was?" Chu Feng asked.

"I lost," Zhao Hong said.

"Not even you were a match for him?" Chu Feng felt very

astonished.

Chu Feng had met that Young Master Li Ming before. Back then, his cultivation had been much superior to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

However, during the past two years, the three of them had made extraordinary progress. Thus, Chu Feng was very surprised to find out that Young Master Li Ming was still able to defeat Zhao Hong.

After all, Zhao Hong was not an ordinary foe.

“I simply did not even possess the ability to fight back. In fact... I was unable to even sense his cultivation,” Zhao Hong said.

“Did he injure you?” After hearing what Zhao Hong said, Chu Feng felt that Young Master Li Ming to be even more extraordinary. He was either hiding his cultivation back then, or he had also obtained some fortuitous encounter in the past two years. Else, it would be impossible for him to reach breakthroughs this quickly.

However, Chu Feng was more worried about Zhao Hong’s well-being.

“No, he stopped the moment the outcome was determined. Furthermore, he declared that he would not spread word of the matter. Although he is proud and arrogant, he seems to have a pretty decent character. He merely wanted to prove himself.”

“However, Chu Feng, if the two of you are to encounter one another, I do not wish for you to lose,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng. Her gaze changed slightly as she said those words.

It was a special sort of emotion, the emotion of placing one’s hope onto another. Zhao Hong hoped for Chu Feng to be able to defeat that Young Master Li Ming.

“If I am to encounter him, I will battle against him with my all. Furthermore, I will definitely successfully request the Golden Crane True Immortal’s assistance.” After Chu Feng finished saying

those words, he began to walk toward the exit.

Seemingly sensing Chu Feng's return, the exit opened before him.

After walking out, Chu Feng saw that Chu Xuanlang was still present.

"Senior, thank you."

When Chu Feng saw Chu Xuanlang again, he had a completely different opinion of him.

After all, Chu Xuanlang had saved Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

"It is merely a trivial matter. Furthermore, I actually saved them with a purpose in mind," Chu Xuanlang said with a slight smile.

Chu Feng's gaze changed slightly. Then, he asked, "Senior, could it be that you saved them because of me?"

"Clever. However, I know that you're worried about your brother's safety. Thus, let's talk about this on the way. I will bring you to find the Golden Crane True Immortal first," Chu Xuanlang already knew what Chu Feng planned to do next. Thus, as he spoke, Chu Feng's surroundings grew indistinct.

Chu Feng knew that Chu Xuanlang was bringing him along and rapidly journeying toward Mount Cloud Crane.

On the way, Chu Luxuan said, "Chu Feng, I actually have a question."

"Senior, please ask away," Chu Feng said.

"Why are you surnamed Chu?" Chu Xuanlang asked.

## Chapter 2490 - Meeting Li Ming Again

---

“Why can’t I be surnamed Chu?” Chu Feng asked instead of answering.

“This is not your original surname, right?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“What if it is and what if it’s not?” Chu Feng asked.

“If it isn’t, I wish to know exactly which clan you’re from.”

“If it is, I wish to know who your parents are,” Chu Xuanlang said.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart tightened. Sure enough, this Chu Xuanlang had come to find him with something in mind. That is, he wanted to know about Chu Feng’s origin.

Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether or not this Chu Xuanlang was asking this with good intentions or malice. That said, Chu Feng still did not wish to confess to Chu Xuanlang that he was from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The reason for that was because even though Chu Xuanlang had saved Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, and could be considered to be Chu Feng’s benefactor, Chu Feng still did not trust him.

“Senior, if I do not answer your question truthfully, will you try to extort a confession from me through torture?” Chu Feng asked with a joking tone.

“Of course not. I was merely curious, that’s all. If you do not wish to tell me, I will not make things difficult for you.”

“Actually, I have only wanted to befriend you,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Befriend me? Senior, with your status, why would you want to befriend someone like me?” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“My status is not important. What’s important is the kind of talent you have,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Senior, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’ve heard about your accomplishments. I greatly admire your manner of conduct. Young people should have courage and insight like you. Most importantly, they should be able to distinguish between gratitudes and grudges, and be affectionate and true. In today’s world, there are not a lot of people like yourself. As for young people like you, they’re even rarer,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“But, no matter what, I’ve killed someone from your Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re talking about Chu Luyang, right? A person like him will only bring shame upon our Chu Heavenly Clan by living. I had longed for someone to kill him,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“If that was the case, you shouldn’t have saved Chu Luxuan,” Chu Feng said.

“Luxuan?” Chu Xuanlang smiled. He understood what Chu Feng meant by that. He said, “Indeed, Luxuan resembles his older brother greatly. However, there is one difference between them. That is, he is talented.”

“Although Luxuan cannot be considered extremely outstanding among our clan’s younger generation, he, at the very least, belongs to the minimally outstanding category.”

“Thus... even though his character might be lacking, our clan will still nurture him. After all... he will become a part of our clan’s battle power in the future,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“So that’s the case. Very well then. Senior, to be able to befriend you is this junior’s honor. Thus, this junior is willing to address senior as brother,” Chu Feng said.

“You’ve accepted it? Why did you suddenly grow this frank in accepting it?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“Chu Luxuan addressed you as ‘uncle.’ If I am to become your brother, wouldn’t it mean that he would have to address me as

‘uncle’ too? I am greatly looking forward to the expression he would have at that time,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile on his face.

“Haha, young brother, you are truly amusing. However... I, Chu Xuanlang, am fond of your character,” Chu Xuanlang laughed out loud. It seemed that he was truly fond of Chu Feng.

“In that case, should I address you as Elder Brother Xuanlang?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Then, Elder Brother Xuanlang, are you truly unable to cure Wang Qiang’s injury?” Chu Feng asked.

“I can’t. There is only a single person in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of curing Wang Qiang’s injury. That is the Golden Crane True Immortal,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Exactly who is the Golden Crane True Immortal?” Chu Feng asked.

“I can only tell you that the Golden Crane True Immortal is someone that even I cannot afford to provoke,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Even you cannot afford to provoke?” Chu Feng was greatly surprised. He had known that the Golden Crane True Immortal was no small fry. However, he had never expected him to be so powerful.

Not mentioning his status and background, it was clear that this Chu Xuanlang possessed powerful strength. When even he could not afford to provoke the Golden Crane True Immortal, it meant that the Golden Crane True Immortal’s strength would be superior to Chu Xuanlang’s.

“Why would someone like him not stay in the Upper Realms, and instead come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu

Feng asked.

“There’s naturally a purpose in him coming. Merely, as for what his purpose is, who would possibly know?” Chu Xuanlang said with a faint smile. It was a very meaningful smile.

Chu Feng no longer continued to ask. However, he now knew that the Golden Crane True Immortal must have some purpose in coming to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“For people like us, we will generally not concern ourselves with the matters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus, even for you, it will likely be extremely difficult to successfully request the Golden Crane True Immortal’s aid. As such, you must make mental preparations,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“I’ve already prepared myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Then, it’s up to you.”

As Chu Xuanlang spoke, he suddenly stopped.

After he stopped, Chu Feng’s surroundings grew clear. He saw that there was a mountain range in the distance. It was the Mount Cloud Crane that the Golden Crane True Immortal resided in.

“This fast?” Chu Feng felt a bit astonished. He had only chatted with Chu Xuanlang for a short moment. Thus, they had only taken a short while to journey there.

“For the sake finding the Golden Crane True Immortal more convenient, I deliberately chose a place closer to him,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Elder Brother Xuanlang is truly considerate,” Chu Feng clasped his fist. Then, without the slightest hesitation, his body moved, and he began to fly toward Mount Cloud Crane.

The words Chu Xuanlang had said to Chu Feng earlier were not only meant to describe the Golden Crane True Immortal. He was also describing himself.



He was telling Chu Feng that he had already made an exception to save Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong. As for protecting the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall, that too was an exception.

Thus, in what came next, including Chu Feng asking the Golden Crane True Immortal for help, he would not involve himself. Chu Feng had to take care of everything himself now.

Chu Feng arrived at the foot of Mount Cloud Crane. However, he was simply unable to enter. The reason for that was because there was a spirit formation currently enveloping Mount Cloud Crane. There was simply no entrance.

Chu Feng inspected the invisible spirit formation carefully. Then, he exclaimed, "Sure enough, this Golden Crane True Immortal is not as simple as I imagined him to be."

He discovered that that invisible spirit formation was formed with Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak Spirit Power.

However, it remained that Chu Feng was currently a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, his Heaven's Eyes had also grown much more powerful.

Chu Feng was faintly able to tell that that Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak Spirit Power was a disguise. The reason for that was because the power of that defensive formation barrier was something that not even Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak Spirit Power could accomplish.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that the Golden Crane True Immortal was most definitely not an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Rather, his level of world spirit techniques was even superior to that.

"Never would I have imagined there to be this many hidden dragons and crouching tigers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. With this many hidden experts, it would truly be great if the Golden Crane True Immortal was willing to become

your backing,” Her Lady Queen also realized that the Golden Crane True Immortal was very powerful.

“I’m afraid that’ll be very difficult,” Chu Feng smiled faintly. Then, his gaze suddenly changed.

Although it would appear that Mount Cloud Crane had not changed in any way, Chu Feng was able to see with his Heaven’s Eyes that an opening had actually appeared in the invisible spirit formation before him.

Evidently, the Golden Crane True Immortal already knew that Chu Feng had arrived, and had deliberately created an opening for him to enter.

Chu Feng understood the Golden Crane True Immortal’s intention. Thus, without hesitation, Chu Feng entered.

“Sure enough, even their treatment is different. It would appear that Young Brother Chu Feng will have a chance.”

Chu Xuanlang also noticed this from afar. A faint smile emerged on his face.

Chu Feng did not continue to fly after entering Mount Cloud Crane. Instead, he descended onto a small road on Mount Cloud Crane and began to follow it.

“Woosh~~~”

Not long after Chu Feng entered Mount Cloud Crane, a figure suddenly appeared before him.

It was a very handsome looking man wearing a white gown.

He did not possess a robust stature, but his aura was extremely imposing. As for that individual, he was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s genius, Young Master Li Ming.

Young Master Li Ming did not reveal the slightest bit of surprise upon seeing Chu Feng. Instead, he appeared as if he had been waiting for Chu Feng for a very long time.

He carefully examined Chu Feng from head to toe. Then, the corners of his mouth rose, and a mocking gaze appeared on his face.

“You’ve disappeared for two years. Yet, your cultivation is only this?”

## Chapter 2491 - Determine Superiority

---

Upon seeing Young Master Li Ming, Chu Feng also started to closely examine him.

He discovered that he was actually unable to see through Young Master Li Ming's cultivation.

That Young Master Li Ming was truly concealed with talent.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng did not reveal the slightest panic. Instead, with a faint smile on his face, he asked, "You attacked my friend?"

"You mean that woman?" Young Master Li Ming asked.

"Naturally," Chu Feng nodded.

"I have. What do you want to do about it?" Young Master Li Ming nodded.

"There was no hatred nor grievance between you two, why did you attack her?" Chu Feng asked.

"Must there be hatred or grievance in the world of martial cultivators for one to attack another?" Young Master Li Ming questioned instead of answering.

"True," Chu Feng revealed a faint smile. Then, he asked, "Then, have you stopped me today because you want to attack me?"

"You're quite smart. Let me mention this first. I do not possess any malice. I merely heard that you are very strong. Thus, I wish to have a spar to see if you're as strong as you're rumored to be."

"However, you can also be reassured. While I defeat you, I will not injure you," Young Master Li Ming waved the folding fan he held in his hand as he explained himself to Chu Feng. His words and attitude had revealed his absolute confidence.

"Unless you're a True Immortal, I fear that it will be difficult for you to defeat me," Chu Feng said.

“Is that so? Then, I will have to disappoint you.”

“Paa~~~”

As Young Master Li Ming spoke, he abruptly closed his folding fan. Then, with a quick step, he arrived before Chu Feng.

His palm extended forward, and a burst of wind shot forth. He had unleashed an attack toward Chu Feng.

“This guy!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was immediately startled.

There was not an overwhelming power to Young Master Li Ming’s palm strike. Even the burst of wind that it brought forth was extremely gentle.

However, when that wind landed on Chu Feng’s body, Chu Feng felt an enormous sense of oppression.

He... was actually being restricted.

He had been restricted by Young Master Li Ming’s oppressive might.

Not only did Young Master Li Ming possess a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, the same as Chu Feng, but he was also a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

“Woosh~~~”

In merely a blink of an eye, Young Master Li Ming’s palm arrived before Chu Feng. However, it stopped at a distance of a centimeter before Chu Feng’s face.

His palm did not land. It was not that he was unable to land his palm, but rather that he stopped himself right before landing it.

“You’ve lost,” Young Master Li Ming retrieved his palm and spoke to Chu Feng with a beaming smile and pride in his eyes.

After he finished saying those words, he suddenly turned around and soared into the sky. He was actually leaving.

“Chu Feng, chase after him. That guy mounted a sneak attack. This match doesn’t count,” Her Lady Queen said in a very unaccepting manner.

“Forget about it. Although I’ve lost due to carelessness, it remains that I have lost. I will not find a pretext for myself,” Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was rather calm.

He did not feel humiliated because he had lost to Young Master Li Ming.

Through what happened earlier, Chu Feng was certain that this Young Master Li Ming was truly very powerful.

He had likely been concealing his actual strength when Chu Feng had met him at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. Although Chu Feng could not be certain that he had concealed his cultivation, he was certain that he had concealed his battle power.

At that time, the battle power Young Master Li Ming had revealed was only capable of surmounting three levels of cultivation. Yet presently, his battle power was capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

Furthermore, he possessed the cultivation of a rank nine Martial Ancestor. Even if Chu Feng were to activate his Heavenly Bloodline’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, he would only be able to increase his cultivation to the same level as Young Master Li Ming’s.

As that Young Master Li Ming had concealed himself extremely deeply, Chu Feng had no idea what other abilities he might possess. Thus, even if Chu Feng were to go all-out, he still did not have absolute certainty in being able to defeat Young Master Li Ming.

Thus, Chu Feng did not feel humiliated to lose to someone like him.

More importantly, if Chu Feng did not accept defeat, and tried to

continue to fight with Young Master Li Ming, it would instead make him appear to be petty.

Chu Feng was not that sort of person.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt an even stronger power enveloping him.

The next moment, Chu Feng felt his surroundings growing fuzzy. When everything returned to normal, he discovered that he was now at a different location than before.

Chu Feng had been to that place before. It was the same place where he had met the Golden Crane True Immortal before.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it’s been a long time since we last met, I trust that you have been well.”

Suddenly, a familiar voice sounded. It was the voice of the Golden Crane True Immortal.

However, the Golden Crane True Immortal did not reveal himself.

“Senior, I trust that you have also been well since we last met,” Chu Feng clasped his fist toward the direction of the voice.

“You have come to find me for the sake of that Wang Qiang, right?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Senior, Wang Qiang is my brother. His injury is a danger to his life. Senior, I hope that you will be able to help him. As long as senior is willing to help, this Chu Feng will agree to any condition,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you really certain in agreeing to any condition?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“As long as it is something that this Chu Feng is capable of, as long as it is not an outrageous act or bloody atrocity, this Chu Feng will agree to anything,” Chu Feng said.

“While it might not be an outrageous act or bloody atrocity, it is something that you might not necessarily be capable of doing,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said profoundly.

Chu Feng did not hesitate. He said immediately, “Senior, please speak away.” He knew that this might be the only opportunity for him to ask the Golden Crane True Immortal to help Wang Qiang. Thus... he did not want to miss this opportunity.

“This matter might cause you to lose your life,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart moved slightly. He faintly felt that the situation might be bad.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still said resolutely, “Senior, please tell me what it is.”

“I need you to help me retrieve an item. As long as you can retrieve it, I will help you save Wang Qiang,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“I am able to help senior retrieve that item. Merely, I have a question. Senior, are you able to guarantee that you will definitely be able to cure Wang Qiang’s injury?” Chu Feng asked.

He had to ask this question. He was not afraid of displeasing the Golden Crane True Immortal. After all... he was planning to use his life to obtain an opportunity.

If he was able to retrieve the item that the Golden Crane True Immortal requested, yet the Golden Crane True Immortal was unable to cure Wang Qiang, he would have suffered enormous losses.

“Haha...” At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal started laughing. It was a very profound laughter.

“If I am to tell you that I cannot guarantee that I will be able to cure Wang Qiang, will you still be willing to help me retrieve what I want?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked instead of



answering.

“I am,” Chu Feng said without the slightest hesitation.

Even though he knew that things would be unfair if that were the case, he knew very well that he did not have a choice.

The reason for that was because it seemed that the Golden Crane True Immortal might be the only individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of saving Wang Qiang.

“Good, frank and straightforward. You are indeed affectionate and true. That Wang Qiang is fortunate to have a friend like you.”

“That said, Chu Feng, even if you are willing to help, it is not a place that you can go to just because you want to,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ve met that Young Master Li Ming, right? I believe you’ve heard that I wanted to take him as a disciple, but was refused by him, right?”

“Do you know why he would appear here?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Could it be that he had something to request of you, senior?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ve guessed correctly. Right now, both of you have things to request from me. However, I only need one person to go help me retrieve what I want.”

“Thus, I can only help one of you. As for who I will help, you two will have to strive for it yourselves,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“You want us to compete?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. I want the two of you to have a contest. The victor will be qualified to complete my task. Only then will you have a chance to be able to obtain my assistance.”

“I know the two of you already confronted one another just now. However, that cannot be regarded as an actual match. Actually, I am also providing this opportunity so that I can help you two.”

“I want the two of you, the two most famous geniuses of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, to compete with one another to determine who is superior,” the Golden Crane True Immortal said with a faint smile.

This smile was filled with anticipation.

## Chapter 2492 - Fair Match

---

“Chu Feng, are you willing?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“This junior is willing,” Chu Feng answered decisively without the slightest hesitation.

Chu Feng freely admitted that Young Master Li Ming was very strong. He could be said to be the strongest person of the younger generation Chu Feng had met so far.

However, Chu Feng would not cower when facing him.

While Chu Feng had indeed been defeated by Young Master Li Ming earlier, Chu Feng also felt that he was defeated because of his carelessness.

Chu Feng felt that if he were to fight him again without holding anything back, the outcome of the battle would not be determined.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had no choice. This seemed to be the only path that he could take to save Wang Qiang.

“Very well, you have courage and insight, and are frank and straightforward enough.”

“Although Li Ming is stronger than you, you can rest assured, for I will provide the two of you with a platform for a fair match,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What does this old fart mean by that? Why is he saying that Young Master Li Ming is stronger than you?” Hearing those words, Her Lady Queen revealed a displeased expression. She felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal was looking down on Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a flash of light suddenly streaked past Chu Feng. The next moment, a figure appeared beside him.

It was none other than Young Master Li Ming.

Young Master Li Ming noticed Chu Feng. However, his expression did not change. It was as if he was seeing a stranger. From beginning to the end, he showed a proud and arrogant expression.

“You need me for something?” Young Master Li Ming looked in the Golden Crane True Immortal’s direction.

Even though he was facing the Golden Crane True Immortal, there was no trace of respect in his tone.

“This brat is truly arrogant. If I were that Golden Crane True Immortal, I would definitely not be able to tolerate him,” Her Lady Queen curled her lips.

However, the Golden Crane True Immortal was exceptionally calm. He asked indifferently, “Have you finished considering what I mentioned to you earlier?”

“I have called for you in Mount Cloud Crane for three entire days. Did you not hear me?” Young Master Li Ming spoke in a very displeased manner. His tone was that of someone who did not place the Golden Crane True Immortal in his eyes at all.

“Heh...” Faced with Young Master Li Ming’s attitude, the Golden Crane True Immortal was actually not angry. On the contrary, he chuckled and said, “I have indeed heard you. Merely, those three days have already passed. As such, how would I know if your decision today will remain the same as those three days?”

“You know the result now. Can I be let out now?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“I’m afraid not. You have a competitor now,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“You’re talking about him?” Young Master Li Ming looked to Chu Feng. He was a bit surprised. However, his surprise soon turned to contempt. He looked to the Golden Crane True Immortal again and said arrogantly, “No wonder you ignored me before. So

you were waiting for him.”

“Are you still willing to continue now?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“How do you want us to compete?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“The two of you are to confront one another. The victor shall obtain the opportunity,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“If that’s the case, there is no need to compete. I have already confronted him earlier. He is absolutely no match for me,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“This brat is truly arrogant. Chu Feng, beat him up! You must teach him a lesson!” Her Lady Queen spoke in a very displeased manner.

However, Chu Feng had a very calm expression. He kept silent, and looked on with a smile on his face.

“I am the one who gets to decide the outcome of this match. The victor and loser is yet to be determined,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Even if we are to compete in world spirit techniques, he will not be able to defeat me,” After Young Master Li Ming finished saying those words, a layer of spirit power began to hover around him.

Not only was that spirit power Immortal-cloak spirit power, it was also Snake Mark.

“Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?” Chu Feng was rather surprised. He had only experienced how amazing Young Master Li Ming was in terms of martial cultivation before. He had truly never expect for his world spirit techniques to also be quite strong.

“As I’ve said, this match is up to me to decide,” After the Golden Crane True Immortal finished saying those words, a body of light suddenly flew over. That body of light began to rapidly grow

larger.

In a blink of an eye, it turned into an enormous crystal-like cage that surrounded Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming.

“This feeling?” Chu Feng’s heart tightened.

After being enveloped by that body of light, he discovered that all of his power was restricted.

Both his martial cultivation and world spirit techniques were restricted.

Standing here, Chu Feng felt as if he were an ordinary commoner without any special ability at all.

“Seems like I’m not the only one restricted,” Chu Feng noticed that Young Master Li Ming’s expression had also changed. He too revealed a surprised gaze.

“What is this?” Young Master Li Ming said to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Since it’s a match, it must naturally be fair,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“You’ve sealed both of our powers. Could it be that you want us to determine a victor by punching and kicking like ordinary people?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“Naturally not. If that were the case, it would be too senseless,” The Golden Crane True Immortal smiled profoundly.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, Chu Feng suddenly discovered that a pillar of light had appeared behind him.

This pillar was golden in color. It seemed to be made of crystal. It was a meter tall, and emitted an unusual sort of power.

Furthermore, an identical pillar of light had also appeared behind Young Master Li Ming.

“I have restricted both of your powers. Right now, you two are like two pieces of blank paper. The two of you now possess the same starting point.”

“However, those two pillars will change the situation. Your superiority over one another might change because of that,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Exactly what are you planning?” Young Master Li Ming spoke in an annoyed manner.

“I will explain the rules. The pillars behind you two are respectively what you must protect.”

“If the pillar behind you is to be touched by your opponent, it will be your opponent’s victory.”

“The pillars behind the two of you contain a certain amount of energy. By placing your hand on the pillar behind you, you will be able to absorb its energy.”

“The more energy you absorb from your pillar, the smaller your pillar will become. In turn, it will be more difficult for your opponent to touch your pillar.”

“Of course, the amount of power you will obtain and the size your pillar will shrink to will all depend on yourself,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after the Golden Crane True Immortal finished explaining, that Young Master Li Ming immediately leapt into the air. With a beautiful flip, he landed beside the pillar that he had to protect.

While his cultivation had been restricted, and he was left in a same state as ordinary people, his movement and agility were not something that ordinary people could compare with. This was the foundation of an expert. Even if they were to have their cultivation seized, they would still possess strength surpassing that of ordinary individuals.

“Buzz~~~”

Young Master Li Ming placed his hand onto the pillar. The next moment, that radiance from the pillar began to assimilate into Young Master Li Ming’s body.

It was as if Young Master Li Ming was depriving the pillar of its radiance. As the pillar grew dimmer, Young Master Li Ming started to shine.

Most importantly, that pillar actually really began to shrink. In the blink of an eye, it shrunk from a meter to a foot. Furthermore, it was still shrinking.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to sense that Young Master Li Ming’s aura was growing extraordinary too. He had obtained power from that pillar.

.....

At the same time as all this was happening, there was a golden crane in a place where Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming could not see. That golden crane was currently observing everything.

Naturally, that golden crane was the Golden Crane True Immortal. At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal revealed an expression of surprise and joy.

“This brat truly does have some skills. It is no wonder you thought that highly of him.”

Suddenly, a voice sounded. That voice was something that only the Golden Crane True Immortal could hear.

At the same time as that voice sounded, a figure also emerged. As for that individual... he was that plain-clothed old monk.



# Chapter 2493 - Merely One Move

---

“He is, after all, someone that I’ve chosen. It is only natural for him to not disappoint me.”

Hearing the plain-clothed old monk praising Young Master Li Ming, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s form started to change. In the blink of an eye, he turned from a golden crane into a human. Furthermore, he had a pleasant smile on his face.

“However, I am still optimistic regarding Chu Feng,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Chu Feng’s speed of progress is truly astonishing. As matters stand, I must admit that no aspect regarding that child can be picked on; he is indeed an exceptional genius.”

“However, if you insist on comparing the two of them, I am still optimistic of my Li Ming.”

“Let’s take my Profound Light Pillar as an example. The amount of energy one can draw from it is not only related to one’s talent. It is also related to the composition of one’s body, the strength of one’s willpower, and even one’s way of thinking.”

“To be able to accomplish what Li Ming has accomplished means that he could be said to be perfect all around.”

“I believe that he will be capable of shrinking the pillar of light to the size of a pinky finger. As for that, it is the limit of martial cultivators.”

“He is truly a genius among geniuses. His potential is extremely frightening.”

“They all say that countless geniuses will gradually lose their strength as geniuses, and come to a premature end as time passes.”

“However, a genius like Li Ming will definitely not come to a premature end. He will only continue to grow until he becomes a

grand character that can look down on an entire Starfield,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“No wonder you wanted to take him as your disciple this much. So it’s actually because you are very optimistic about his future prospects, and wanted to hug his thigh in the future,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Humph,” The Golden Crane True Immortal snorted eccentrically. It was as if he was feeling slightly displeased from his plot being seen through.

However, upon looking back toward the current Young Master Li Ming, a joyous smile soon appeared on his face again.

At that moment, that so-called Profound Light Pillar was still shrinking in Young Master Li Ming’s hand. It had already shrunk to the size of a pinkie finger.

However, that Young Master Li Ming still hadn’t stopped yet. His Profound Light Pillar was still shrinking.

Furthermore, as he continued to persist, the energy within the Profound Light Pillar was still being continuously extracted by him, and the pillar itself was still continuously shrinking.

In the end, that Profound Light Pillar actually ended up shrinking to a size of only two centimeters.

“It’s actually even smaller than I had anticipated. This Li Ming is truly worthy of being the person that I’ve chosen. His talent is truly too astonishing. He actually managed to refine the Profound Light Pillar to such a state. He has already surpassed the extreme of the extreme.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal was wild with joy. It was as if Young Master Li Ming was his own child; he was feeling extremely proud of him.

“Is this the extreme of the extreme? I’ve heard that a person from the Chu Heavenly Clan has also used this Profound Light Pillar to

test his potential before. As for his result, he refined the Profound Light Pillar to a state of disappearance,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“You’re talking about Chu Xuanyuan?” At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal revealed a displeased expression. In fact, when he mentioned Chu Xuanyuan, he revealed a very ugly expression.

“Naturally, it would be him. I met that child once before. The him from back then was already an overbearing individual, someone who possessed the airs of a ruler. Even today, his presence is still vivid in my mind.”

“I determined at that time that he was most definitely not an ordinary individual, that he would obtain inestimable achievements in the future.”

“Thus, I wanted to take him as my disciple just like how you wanted to take Li Ming as your disciple. However, I ended up being refused by him, and was even mocked by him, saying that I was not qualified to be his master.”

“Haha. Recalling it, although Li Ming was arrogant, he is still much inferior when compared to Chu Xuanyuan back then.”

“The Chu Xuanyuan from that time was like someone who was certain that he would become a peak expert in the future. He was truly someone who considered everyone else to be beneath him.”

“Even we were not placed in his eyes. Later on, what he managed to accomplish indeed made it so that others had no choice but to accept his arrogance.”

There was not the slightest trace of displeasure on his face when the plain-clothed old monk said those words. Instead, it was filled with smiles.

From this, it could be seen that even though he was refused and even insulted by Chu Xuanyuan, he did not feel the slightest bit of

resentment. On the contrary... he instead seemed to feel somewhat proud of it.

“Very few people saw Chu Xuanyuan’s test with the Profound Light Pillar. Thus, who knows whether or not he really managed to refine the Profound Light Pillar till it disappeared?” The Golden Crane True Immortal spoke with a tart tone.

“While others might not know, how could you not know? After all, you have personally seen his strength after he matured,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“So what? Wasn’t that Chu Xuanyuan still killed by his own clan? So what if he was a genius? All the geniuses that are unable to really mature are nothing more than jokes.”

“That Chu Xuanyuan is included among those geniuses that came to a premature end,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said. There was actually strong anger in the tone of his voice.

“Say, Golden Crane, you shouldn’t detest Chu Xuanyuan like that just because he defeated your master. After all, it was your Dao Imperial Palace that incited that match,” The plain-clothed old monk said with a smile.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Golden Crane True Immortal turned around and looked at the plain-clothed old monk. His gaze was exceptionally sharp. If an ordinary individual were to see that gaze, they would be scared to death.

It was not a gaze filled with killing intent. However, it contained absolute cowering force. Seeing that gaze, one would feel fear and terror from the bottom of one’s heart.

However, even though he was faced with that sort of gaze, the plain-clothed old monk remained smiling. He was not frightened in the slightest.

“Why are you looking at me like that? Your Dao Imperial Palace

was able to take defeat with grace.”

“Yet now, you, the current Palace Master of the grand Dao Imperial Palace, actually reacts in such a manner when mentioning an opponent from long ago. Could it be that there was something more to how you all took your defeat back then?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

Hearing those words, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s gaze started to dwindle. However, he did not answer the plain-clothed old monk.

“C’mon, tell me about it. This is actually also something that I am very curious about. Back then, only you were present in the battle between Chu Xuanyuan and your master.”

“After that battle, Chu Xuanyuan did not declare the result of the battle. He acted as if nothing had happened.”

“It was your master who declared to the world that he was defeated by Chu Xuanyuan.”

“Furthermore, he grew extremely depressed after that battle, and died soon afterwards.”

“All of this is extremely strange. After all, your Dao Imperial Palace has always been able to accept your losses with exceptional grace.”

“I wish to know exactly what happened. Could it be that Chu Xuanyuan used some sort of despicable method to make your master feel extremely unreconciled with the defeat? Was that why he started to have a knot in his heart, and died of depression?” The plain-clothed old monk asked in succession.

“Enough!” The Golden Crane True Immortal shouted. However, only the plain-clothed old monk was able to hear his voice.

That said, the Golden Crane True Immortal did not continue to become angry. Instead, he forcibly curbed his anger and said, “Indeed, our Dao Imperial Palace has been able to accept our

losses. Our Dao Imperial palace will never make retaliations against those that have defeated our people. We have always been respectful toward our opponents, always admired them.”

“But, who was my master? He was the strongest Palace Master to have ever appeared in our Dao Imperial Palace’s many generations of Palace Masters. He had made countless glorious accomplishments throughout his life. Back in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, very few people dared to disrespect him.”

“Yet, he was defeated by a member of the younger generation, one that was not even thirty years old. Let me ask, how could he be willing to accept that defeat?” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“In that case, your master was truly defeated then. It was because he wholly accepted his defeat that he grew that depressed?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

The Golden Crane True Immortal heaved a long sigh. Then, he looked to the sky and slowly closed his eyes. He said, “Merely one move. Oh, it was merely one move.”

“That Chu Xuanyuan defeated my master with merely one move. Before him, my master did not even have the opportunity to fight back. How could my master not be unwilling to accept his defeat?”

“But, even if he had wholly accepted his defeat, it was still too miserable of a defeat. It was so miserable that no one would believe it.”

“As such, it was inevitable for my master to feel unable to endure being defeated like that.”

“If my master was an arrogant and overbearing individual before that match, then all of his drive and spirit was polished off completely after that match.”

“With that one match, his entire life was destroyed.”

# Chapter 2494 - High Hopes

---

“Wait, one move?”

“You’re saying that in the match back then, Chu Xuanyuan, who was not even thirty years old, defeated your master with only one move?”

Hearing those words, the plain-clothed old monk also revealed a surprised expression. In fact, he even started to tremble slightly, and goosebumps appeared on his body.

It was not that he was afraid. Rather, he was incomparably shocked from how unimaginable that was.

“Mn,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said with a sigh.

At that moment, his state was very strange. It was as if he had returned to the scene back then, and was once again witnessing that battle.

“That’s impossible. No matter how powerful Chu Xuanyuan might be, it should still be impossible for him to defeat your master with only one move.”

“After all, your master was the strongest Palace Master to have ever appeared in the Dao Imperial Palace. Even though we have trained for so long, neither one of us are able to reach his level. In fact, we are people that will not be able to reach his level in our entire life.”

“How could Chu Xuanyuan defeat him with only...?”

“Only one move. I personally witnessed it. There is no mistake,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said sternly.

“Back then, Chu Xuanyuan was not even thirty years old. Yet, he defeated my renowned master with only a single move.”

“The way I see it, the strength he had back then was equal to that of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. Later on... he was most

likely unparalleled in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“But, why would he be killed by his clansmen? I feel that it was most definitely a voluntarily suicide. Otherwise, if he were to resist, who could possibly kill him?”

“I detest him because of his extreme arrogance and his demeanor of a ruler when facing others.”

“But... when facing his own clansmen, he became a coward, and even willingly renounced his life.”

“Originally, I respected him. However, after he died, I now look down on him.”

“It is precisely because I personally saw how powerful he was that I placed high hopes on him.”

“In fact, I even thought that he was capable of leading the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm to become the ruler of our Starfield, and then leading our Starfield to conquer the vast starry sky.”

“Yet he... was ruined by his own clansmen. Just like that, he died in vain.”

“I detest him not because he defeated my master and caused him to die of depression.”

“Instead, it is because I had placed that much hope on him. Yet he... decided to forfeit his life just like that.”

As the Golden Crane True Immortal said those words, he tightly clenched his aged fists. However, there was not the slightest trace of anger in his eyes. Instead, they were filled with sadness.

It was as if this was something that he felt very unreconciled toward, that was the regret of his life, a knot that he would never be able to undo in his heart.

The plain-clothed old monk walked over to the Golden Crane True Immortal and softly patted his shoulder. He said, “As your old friend of many years, how could I not understand you?”



“All these years, you will get angry every time Chu Xuanyuan is mentioned.”

“Others felt that you bore grudges against Chu Xuanyuan because your master was defeated by him.”

“However, I have always felt that it was because of something else that you wished to keep hidden. Merely, I never expected that it would actually be because you placed so great a hope on Chu Xuanyuan only to have it turn into deep disappointment.”

“That said, Golden Crane, all these years, have any of us managed to see Chu Xuanyuan’s corpse?”

“While rumor has it that he was killed by the Chu Heavenly Clan after being imprisoned by them, is he truly dead? Would the Chu Heavenly Clan really be willing to kill someone like Chu Xuanyuan? Would they really be able to kill him?”

The plain-clothed old monk used that questioning gaze to look at the Golden Crane True Immortal. However, his questions didn’t seem to only serve to question the Golden Crane True Immortal. Instead, it seemed like he was asking himself the same question too.

“Old Demonic Substance, forget about it. You shouldn’t bother to have high hopes. We all know very well what sort of people the Chu Heavenly Clan are. They are a clan of cold-blooded individuals who do not care about sentiments and feelings. Moreover, Chu Xuanyuan killed so many people, and indeed made an enormous mistake.” [1. Old Demonic Substance used to be Old Poisonous Substance. Not sure why Bee changed the name.]

“Rather than placing hopes on Chu Xuanyuan being alive, it is better to place our hopes on this Li Ming and Chu Feng. Perhaps one day, one of them might become the second Chu Xuanyuan,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Speaking of that Chu Feng, he is truly mysterious. He possesses

a Heavenly Bloodline, and trains in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Yet, no one knows where he's from."

"Come to think of it, I remember that Chu Xuanyuan's son also seemed to be named Chu Feng, no?" The plain-clothed old monk said.

"What do you mean by that?" The Golden Crane True Immortal's expression changed. He turned to the plain-clothed old monk and asked, "Could it be that you feel Chu Feng might be him?"

"Don't tell me you've never suspected that to be the case," The plain-clothed old monk said.

"There are countless individuals in this world with the same name and surname," The Golden Crane True Immortal shook his head.

"Indeed, there are a lot of people surnamed Chu in this world. As for people by the name of Chu Feng, there are quite a few of them too. However, there is only a single Chu family that possesses a Heavenly Bloodline."

"Furthermore, that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is not something that everyone possesses, nor is it something that anyone could learn."

"Not only does he possess such outstanding talent, his name is also exactly the same. No matter how many people with the same name and surname there are in this world, how many such coincidences could there be?" The plain-clothed old monk asked.

"You're saying all this just so that you can tell me that Chu Feng is Chu Xuanyuan's son, no?"

"But, do not forget why Chu Xuanyuan decided to unleash a massacre back then. Wasn't it because his son was humiliated by others after it was made clear that he did not possess a Heavenly Bloodline?"

"One was trash that did not possess a Heavenly Bloodline,

whereas the other is a genius who trains in the Divine Punishment Mysterious technique, how could they possibly be the same person?" The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"Perhaps he has changed over the years. After all, geniuses can come to a premature end, and trash can rise to power," The plain-clothed old monk said.

"Old Demonic Substance, I know that you think very highly of Chu Xuanyuan. Like me, you also experienced his strength. That is why you've also placed high hopes on him."

"But... I can tell you with certainty, that even if Chu Feng is Chu Xuanyuan's son, that does not mean that Chu Xuanyuan is still alive."

"You should stop having that sort of fantasy. Furthermore, even if Chu Xuanyuan really is still alive, so what? He is neither a friend nor a relative of ours. To him, we are nothing more than transient guests. Perhaps he might have already forgotten who we are."

"Even if he is still alive, even if he could once again emerge in power, what does that have to do with us? Could he possibly provide us with benefits?" The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

"That wasn't what you said earlier," The plain-clothed old monk said with a beaming smile.

"What I said earlier was what I felt back then. Right now, my opinions have changed. I need to find a promising genius. I need to make that genius related to me. Like that, once he matures in the future, I will be able to obtain benefits."

"As for this Li Ming, he is my hope," As the Golden Crane True Immortal said those words, he looked to Young Master Li Ming again.

The plain-clothed old monk also looked over.

"This brat."

Upon looking, those two grand individuals both revealed stunned expressions. They were shocked.

At that moment, Li Ming was sitting cross-legged on the floor. He was completely condensing the golden radiance on his body inside his body. He was stabilizing the power given to him by the golden radiance.

As for the Profound Light Pillar, it was still floating behind him. Merely, the size of that Profound Light Pillar had shrunk to only one centimeter in length.

“This brat’s potential is truly astonishing. Even in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, very few people will be able to contend against him. Golden Crane, you have truly managed to pick up a treasure,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Of course. My vision is absolutely correct,” The Golden Crane True Immortal was immensely pleased with himself.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Young Master Li Ming opened his eyes. He had managed to completely grasp the power he had obtained from the Profound Light Pillar.

At that moment, he stood up and cast his gaze toward Chu Feng. With a very arrogant tone, he said, “Are you still planning to contend against me now?”

# Chapter 2495 - Extremely Marvelous

---

“What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng asked with a smile on his face.

“We both have our cultivations sealed, and can only obtain the power within our respective light pillars.”

“The amount that we can obtain will determine our strength. And I, I have obtained nearly all of the power from the light pillar behind me.”

“If you still insist on contending against me, I will not show leniency toward you,” Young Master Li Ming said to Chu Feng.

“I have yet to start. What makes you so certain that I will obtain less power from my light pillar than you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Because you are inferior to me to begin with,” Young Master Li Ming spoke arrogantly.

Young Master Li Ming was currently emitting an air of absolute arrogance from all over his body, including his gaze, his skin, his every pore and his every hair.

“Truly shameless. Just because he won once through a sneak attack, did he really think that he is unparalleled in this world?” Her Lady Queen was so furious that her face turned deep red. She wanted to rush out and teach Young Master Li Ming a proper lesson.

“Haha...”

Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was relatively calm. He did not argue with Young Master Li Ming. Instead, after letting out a chuckle, he extended his hand.

“Paa~~~”

Chu Feng’s hand spread open, and he pressed his palm onto the Profound Light Pillar. Then, the radiance from the Profound Light

Pillar began to enter Chu Feng's body through his palm.

The speed at which Chu Feng refined the Profound Light Pillar was extremely fast. As the vast amount of energy entered Chu Feng's body, the Profound Light Pillar started to rapidly shrink in size.

"How could it be this fast?" At that moment, the plain-clothed old monk's expression changed.

"Chu Feng is too fast. If this is to continue, he might produce the opposite of the desired result," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

However, Chu Feng continued to maintain the rapid speed at which he was refining the Profound Light Pillar. He did not show any sign of slowing down. Soon... that Profound light Pillar went from one meter long to one foot long. Furthermore, it was still rapidly shrinking.

"This guy..."

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming's expression also changed somewhat. A surprised expression appeared in his eyes.

"Golden Crane, it seems like... Chu Feng was not affected by his rapid speed," The plain-clothed old monk said to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

"No, he will definitely slow down. Being this fast will only affect his final performance. Chu Feng... is letting his emotions affect his decisions."

"His temperament is inferior to Li Ming's. He actually allowed himself to be incited by Li Ming's words of provocation," The Golden Crane True Immortal shook his head.

At that moment, the Profound Light Pillar had been refined to the point where it was only five centimeters long.

However, the speed at which the Profound Light Pillar was

shrinking also started to rapidly decrease. Even though it was still being refined by Chu Feng, the speed at which it was being refined was simply a heaven and earth difference when compared to before.

Although the speed had decreased enormously, the Profound Light Pillar was still being refined.

Four centimeters. Three centimeters. The speed grew slower and slower. However, Young Master Li Ming's gaze grew less and less stable.

If Chu Feng were to continue to refine the Profound Light Pillar, he would soon shrink the Profound Light Pillar to the same size he had made his, shrink his Profound Light Pillar to the point where it was only a centimeter long.

If that was the case, it would mean that Chu Feng had reached the same heights he had. At that time, the arrogant boasts he had made earlier would have been made in vain.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, the Profound Light Pillar shrunk to a size of only two centimeters. At that size, Chu Feng's Profound Light Pillar stopped shrinking.

“Huu~~~”

At that moment, one could clearly see that Young Master Li Ming took a deep sigh of relief.

He was truly panicking. Earlier, he was truly afraid that Chu Feng would continue to refine the Profound Light Pillar.

However, he had now managed to relieve himself. Even though there was not much of a difference between them, Chu Feng was still a bit weaker.

“He stopped. It would appear that the final two centimeters of the Profound Light Pillar is Chu Feng's limit.”

“It seems like you were correct. Chu Feng is indeed inferior to Li Ming,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“No, Chu Feng was being too quick earlier. If instead he had gradually refined the Profound Light Pillar like Li Ming had, he would most likely have been able to refine the Profound Light Pillar to only one centimeter long like Li Ming did,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Pa, pa, pa~~~”

At that moment, claps could be heard. It was Young Master Li Ming.

As he clapped, Young Master Li Ming looked to Chu Feng with a beaming smile. At that moment, there was no longer any contempt toward Chu Feng in his eyes. However, he was still as arrogant and proud as before.

“Not bad. To be able to accomplish this much, it would appear that you possess the qualifications to contend against me,” Young Master Li Ming said to Chu Feng.

“Those words you’ve just said, seems like you feel that I’ve already finished?” Chu Feng said to Young Master Li Ming with a smile on his face.

“Are you perhaps planning to tell me you’re not finished?” Young Master Li Ming smiled mockingly. He simply did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to continue to refine the Profound Light Pillar.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that, moment, Chu Feng’s palm trembled. The power contained in the Profound Light Pillar started to rapidly fly toward Chu Feng’s palm. The speed was so astonishingly fast. In merely a blink of an eye, the Profound Light Pillar shrunk to only one centimeter long.

“Chu Feng, he actually managed to accomplish that?”



At that moment, not to mention the plain-clothed old monk, even the Golden Crane True Immortal was astonished.

The Golden Crane True Immortal had judged that Chu Feng had refined the Profound Light Pillar too quickly. Thus, it would affect his result.

That was why when Chu Feng had refined the Profound Light Pillar to two centimeters in length, he felt that Chu Feng's potential should be equally matched with Young Master Li Ming's. Even if it was inferior, it wouldn't be that much inferior. He felt that Chu Feng had merely been overeager and impatient, but his actual potential would be on par with Li Ming's.

Yet, Chu Feng continued to refine the Profound Light Pillar, shrinking it in size. From the size of two centimeters, he shrunk it to one centimeter long.

This meant that Chu Feng's potential was stronger than Li Ming's.

“You!!!”

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming also revealed an astonished expression. This was the first time Chu Feng saw Young Master Li Ming revealing this sort of expression.

Evidently, Li Ming also knew what Chu Feng had accomplished signified.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's palm trembled again. The Profound Light Pillar started to be refined by him again.

The remaining one centimeter of Profound Light Pillar was completely broken down by an enormous suction power. Soon, the Profound light Pillar completely scattered apart. It turned into a strand of light, and was sucked into Chu Feng's body.

“How could this be?!!!”

Young Master Li Ming was stupefied. He simply did not dare to believe his eyes. The reason for that was because the Profound Light Pillar had disappeared.

“He actually completely refined the Profound Light Pillar. There is actually really someone capable of doing that?” The Golden Crane True Immortal’s face was filled with disbelief and excitement. Even his body was trembling nonstop.

It was the trembling of excitement. His reactions were like those of someone searching for treasures finding an incomparably precious treasure.

At that moment, the plain-clothed old monk did not say anything. However, a complicated gaze was flickering in his aged and deep gaze.

His gaze was fixed onto Chu Feng. No one knew what he was thinking.

“The result is determined. Chu Feng directly refined the Profound Light Pillar till it disappeared. As a result, Li Ming has lost the chance to capture his Profound Light Pillar. It is Chu Feng’s victory,” The Golden Crane True Immortal exclaimed.

“Aren’t you a bit disappointed?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

“Why do you say that?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“I know that you were deeply looking forward to this confrontation between Chu Feng and Li Ming. However, before the match even began, it ended. Are you not disappointed with that?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

“Haha...” The Golden Crane True Immortal chuckled, “Today, I have witnessed someone capable of completely refining the Profound Light Pillar. A scene like this is much more marvelous than a match. Thus, how could I be disappointed?”

“That’s true. What we have seen today is indeed extremely

marvelous,” The plain-clothed old monk nodded in agreement.

At that moment, those two grand characters started to talk cheerfully and wittily. However, the concentrated astonishment in their eyes did not decrease in the slightest.

## Chapter 2496 - Mental Attack

---

“If I didn’t witness it myself, I would not have believed that someone would truly be able to accomplish such a thing either,” The plain-clothed old monk exclaimed.

“It would seem that I can announce the result then,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Wait a moment first,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“What’s the matter?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Look at Chu Feng,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

Hearing that, the Golden Crane True Immortal turned his gaze toward Chu Feng.

“That is?”

At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal also revealed a surprised expression.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s palm trembled once again. Then, a strand of light flowed out of his palm.

After that strand of light emerged, it started to condense together and change shape. In the end, it took the form of the Profound Light Pillar.

Although this Profound Light Pillar was only a centimeter long, it was indeed the Profound Light Pillar.

After Chu Feng completely refined the Profound Light Pillar, he actually reformed it.

Young Master Li Ming frowned. With a malicious tone, he asked, “What is the meaning of this?”

“Don’t think that I am deliberately yielding to you. I merely want to respect my opponent.”

“Your cultivation is stronger than mine. For the sake of being absolutely fair, the Golden Crane True Immortal set up this formation for us to compete in.”

“Since this match must be conducted fairly, I will naturally comply with this decision,” Chu Feng said.

“What grand aspiration,” The plain-clothed old monk exclaimed.

“Indeed. He had clearly already won. Yet, he still insists on competing with Li Ming. This sort of decision is not something that an average person would make.”

“After all, his opponent is Li Ming. Even if Chu Feng’s potential surpasses Li Ming’s, if they are to compete under equal terms, the outcome of the battle will still be undetermined,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Won’t this be even better? We will be able to enjoy another great show,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Indeed. Chu Feng has truly given us quite a few pleasant surprises today,” The Golden Crane True Immortal smiled profoundly.

After all, not only had Chu Feng astonished them with his potential, but he had also brightened their eyes with his aspirations.

“Merely, with how proud and arrogant that Li Ming is, will he really accept Chu Feng yielding to him like this?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

“Li Ming is indeed proud and arrogant. However, he came here mainly to request my help. This means that what he needs from me is very important to him.”

“Thus, he will accept it,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“This is your decision. Thus, don’t you be unwilling to accept defeat if you are to lose,” Young Master Li Ming said to Chu Feng.

Sure enough, even though Li Ming knew that Chu Feng was deliberately yielding to him, even though he felt a bit displeased because of it, he still chose to continue the match with Chu Feng.

“Rest assured. I, Chu Feng, am always one to accept my losses. However, the precondition for that is that you are able to defeat me,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“I will definitely let your desire come true.”

“Woosh~~~”

After Young Master Li Ming said those words, his body suddenly moved. Like an arrow leaving the bow, his speed surpassed that of lightning. With enormous power, he rushed toward Chu Feng.

That’s right. He was aiming for Chu Feng, and not the Profound Light Pillar behind Chu Feng.

His strategy was very simple. He planned to defeat Chu Feng and then capture the Profound Light Pillar.

“Woosh~~~”

At practically the same time Young Master Li Ming rushed toward Chu Feng, Chu Feng’s body also shifted. He turned into a perfectly straight ray of golden light and flew toward Young Master Li Ming.

“Watch my attack!!!”

In the blink of an eye, the two of them reached one another. Like a torrential rain, Young Master Li Ming started to shoot rapid fists toward Chu Feng.

He was not planning to attack only a single point on Chu Feng. Rather, he was planning to attack Chu Feng’s entire body. He was planning to knock Chu Feng down openly.

“Humph.”

However, faced with Young Master Li Ming’s attack, Chu Feng merely snorted. Then, his ten fingers spread open, and he pushed

his arms forward.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The next moment, like a copper wall, an iron bastion, an impenetrable defense, countless palms appeared before Chu Feng.

All of Young Master Li Ming’s fists were blocked by Chu Feng’s palms.

Then, Chu Feng unleashed a series of counterattacks toward Young Master Li Ming. However, his attacks were also all blocked by Young Master Li Ming.

At that moment, the two of them possessed the same battle power. As for their attacks and techniques, they were also equally matched.

In a back and forth manner, although their confrontation was exceptionally intense, they entered a stalemate right away.

“Those two brats’ fighting techniques are both really skillful. However, precisely because of that, it is hard to determine the outcome of the match. If they are to continue like this, it is very difficult for either one of them to effectively defeat the other. They must quickly turn their targets to the Profound Light Pillars,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“That might not necessarily be the case,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Could it be that what I said was wrong?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Oh Golden Crane, this is, after all, a formation that you’ve set up. How could you not know that the power of the Profound Light Pillars will eventually be completely exhausted?”

“Although their battle powers are equal right now, once they start to exhaust the powers they obtained from the Profound Light Pillars, an outcome to this battle will be determined,” The plain-

clothed old monk said.

“I understand what you mean. Once they exhaust the powers they obtained, Li Ming can only resign himself to fate. After all, he simply does not possess enough potential to refine the final bits of the Profound Light Pillar.”

“However, Chu Feng is capable of doing that. He is capable of doing what Li Ming cannot,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“No, you still do not understand Chu Feng. Since he decided to not completely refine the Profound Light Pillar from the very beginning, and chose to confront Li Ming with identical strength, that means that even if all of the power he obtained from the Profound Light Pillar is exhausted, he will not choose to refine the remainder of the Profound Light Pillar’s power,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Then, how are they to determine victory and defeat?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Although they possess the same amount of energy in their bodies, it does not mean that they will exhaust them at the same rate,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“I understand what you mean by that. However, Old Demonic Substance, I can tell you with certainty that what you are thinking of is impossible to accomplish.”

“It is very difficult for one to control the power one has obtained from the Profound Light Pillar. Thus, they will be consuming it at a practically identical speed,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said determinedly.

“While it might be true that ordinary individuals will not be able to be able to control the power they obtain from the Profound Light Pillars, do not forget that these two brats are not ordinary individuals.”



“Don’t forget that it was originally impossible for one to completely refine the Profound Light Pillar,” The plain-clothed old monk said with a beaming smile.

“Are you suggesting that Chu Feng will be able to bring about another miracle?” Hearing what the plain-clothed old monk said, the Golden Crane True Immortal cast his gaze toward Chu Feng once again.

“It might not necessarily be Chu Feng. Perhaps it is Li Ming who will accomplish that,” As the plain-clothed old monk spoke, he cast his gaze to Young Master Li Ming.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming were still fighting one another. Young Master Li Ming was unleashing a rapid offense at Chu Feng.

“Li Ming, have you not eaten anything? Why are your fists growing weaker and weaker?” With a sneer, Chu Feng mocked Young Master Li Ming.

Li Ming did not answer Chu Feng’s mocking words. Furthermore, he did not reveal any expression. However, his attacks grew faster and faster, and more and more powerful.

“It’s actually a mental attack. This brat Chu Feng truly has some tricks up his sleeve,” The plain-clothed old monk said with a beaming smile.

“Chu Feng is actually this shrewd and ruthless at such a young age. Compared to him, Li Ming is truly somewhat soft and immature,” The Golden Crane True Immortal gasped with admiration.

Although Young Master Li Ming appeared to be unaffected on the surface, his attacks grew more and more explosive.

Perhaps neither Chu Feng nor Young Master Li Ming were capable of controlling the speed at which they consumed their energy.

However, if one were to frantically attack like Young Master Li Ming, they would definitely increase the speed at which they consumed their energy.

Thus, at that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain-clothed old monk, these two old monsters, had already determined that Li Ming was affected by Chu Feng's mental attack.

The reason for that was because the energy he was consuming had already surpassed that of Chu Feng.

If it were to continue, he would be the first one to consume all of the energy in his body. Once he consumed all of his energy, he would no longer be able to contend against Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2497 - Well Hidden

---

“Sure enough, you’ve guessed correctly. A disparity has appeared in the speed at which they are consuming their energies.”

“Although Chu Feng is unable to slow his own consumption, he has managed to provoke Li Ming to make him consume his energy faster. That is indeed a very good method,” The Golden Crane True Immortal exclaimed.

“Although he managed to provoke Li Ming, the one that’s being beaten back right now is Chu Feng himself. What he did might not necessarily be advantageous,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“Indeed, it doesn’t seem like he has obtained any advantages other than increasing the speed at which Li Ming consumes the energies within him,” The Golden Crane True Immortal echoed upon seeing the battle.

The reason for that was because Li Ming’s attacks were extremely ferocious. Faced with this sort of situation, Chu Feng could only defend himself, and had no way of fighting back.

When faced with such a powerful offensive, even though Chu Feng was able to block everything, he was still unable to prevent himself from being beaten back by Li Ming.

Although the speed at which he was beaten back was very slow, and the scale was not large either, it remained that he was being beaten back.

With each step back Chu Feng took, Li Ming would move a step forward, and grow one step closer to the Profound Light Pillar behind Chu Feng.

Thus, at that moment, the equilibrium of the match had already started to tilt. Furthermore, it was not slanting toward Chu Feng, but rather, toward Li Ming.

“Old Demonic Substance, look over there, look at that brat Li

Ming's mouth."

Suddenly, the Golden Crane True Immortal's eyes shifted. Great astonishment emerged in his eyes.

"This brat," Seeing what was happening the plain-clothed old monk's gaze also changed. Then, he revealed a faint smile.

Perhaps others were unable to tell, but the two of them were able to tell.

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming had a concealed smile on his face. It was a smile of confidence, a smile of one's plot succeeding.

This most likely meant that Young Master Li Ming was not truly enraged by Chu Feng. Rather, he was deliberately pretending to have been enraged by Chu Feng.

He was using the opportunity as a pretext to push Chu Feng back so that he could approach Chu Feng's Profound Light Pillar.

"Judging from this, even though Chu Feng knows how to use mental attacks, the person who has truly gained the advantage in this is Li Ming."

"Golden Crane, who said that Li Ming was soft and immature? The way I see it, not only is this Li Ming not soft and immature, he is instead extremely shrewd," The plain-clothed old monk said to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

"This match has finally become interesting," The Golden Crane True Immortal revealed a smile.

The reason for that was because a match like this was precisely what they wanted to see.

Perhaps others might not be able to tell, but the two of them were capable of seeing the truly marvelous aspect of the match.

The reason for that was because the most marvelous aspect regarding the match was not Chu Feng or Li Ming's sharp attacks

or their techniques in both defense and offense, which greatly surpassed those of their fellow members of the younger generation.

Instead, it was the plotting that those two geniuses had toward one another; it was a battle of wits.

“Even if I only defend and not attack, you are still unable to do anything to me. Li Ming, your title of genius is only this much,” With a smile on his face, Chu Feng used a vile gaze to stare at Young Master Li Ming.

“It seems that Chu Feng still hasn’t realized that he has been plotted against.”

Seeing that Chu Feng continued to taunt Li Ming, and was so proud of himself as he did that, growing more and more pleased, the Golden Crane True Immortal sighed and revealed a disappointed expression.

He felt that Chu Feng was already at a disadvantage. If Chu Feng did not react in time, he would likely pay bitterly.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, a sharp sound was heard.

It was Chu Feng’s palm. Chu Feng tightly grabbed Young Master Li Ming’s fist with his own palm.

“That is?” Witnessing that scene, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain-clothed old monk both revealed a change in expression.

Even Young Master Li Ming, who was fiercely attacking Chu Feng, was slightly startled.

“Heeahh!!!”

The next moment, Chu Feng shouted loudly. Then, his arm and body turned around and threw Young Master Li Ming, who had been caught off guard, into the air.

Like a sandbag, Young Master Li Ming was thrown into the air. He then firmly crashing toward the surface.

If he were to land like that, he would most definitely be seriously injured. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had thrown him with an enormous amount of force.

“As if!”

However, Young Master Li Ming was no ordinary character himself. He had managed to see through Chu Feng’s intention. Even though he was being affected by the power of Chu Feng’s throw, he still managed to reverse his body in midair. He planned to land on his feet.

Like that, he would be able to transfer the power of his landing onto the surface, preventing injuries to himself.

“Heh...”

Right at that moment, the corners of Chu Feng’s mouth lifted. He suddenly let go of Young Master Li Ming’s fist.

After being let go of, Young Master Li Ming did not land on the ground. Instead, like an arrow, he was shot out by Chu Feng.

As for the direction that he was thrown toward, it was a corner of the formation they were in.

“Woosh~~~”

In the same moment he threw Li Ming out, Chu Feng started running immediately.

However, Chu Feng was not running toward Young Master Li Ming. Rather, there was only one goal in Chu Feng’s mind right now. He was going after Young Master Li Ming’s Profound Light Pillar.

In merely that one instant, the advantage that Li Ming had held earlier was destroyed by Chu Feng.

At that moment, the person who held absolute superiority was

Chu Feng!!!

“Chu Feng, he actually hid such a trick!!!”

At that moment, both the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain-clothed old monk revealed startled expressions. Then, pleasantly surprised expressions emerged in their aged eyes.

It was only at that moment that they realized that Chu Feng had done everything deliberately.

Chu Feng's provocation of Li Ming and then being beaten back by Li Ming, all of that merely served to pave the way for that one trick.

Chu Feng had wanted Li Ming to feel that he held the advantage over him so that he would relax his guard. Then, Chu Feng seized the opportunity to use his trick.

Chu Feng had used enormous strength to toss Li Ming away. Unless Li Ming were to descend onto the ground, it would be impossible for him to slow himself down. He could only allow himself to continue flying in the direction Chu Feng had thrown him, all the way till he smashed into the edge of the formation.

Thus, at that moment, Young Master Li Ming could only look on helplessly as his body continued to fly.

He could only look on helplessly as Chu Feng moved toward his Profound Light Pillar.

He was unable to do anything.

“The outcome had been determined.”

At that moment, the plain-clothed old monk finally revealed a gratified smile on his face.

The Golden Crane True Immortal also nodded his head.

A match between experts could be decided in an instant.

Li Ming had made a mistake in judgement and fell into Chu

Feng's plot. That mistake had caused Li Ming's defeat.

“Bang~~~”

Finally, Li Ming crashed ruthlessly into the wall of the formation.

“It's done.”

At that moment, Chu Feng was less than ten meters away from Li Ming's Profound Light Pillar. A relaxed smile emerged on his face.

His palm was already open. He was planning to grab the Profound Light Pillar.

As long as he grabbed the Profound Light Pillar, he would win the match.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right when Chu Feng was only a meter away from the Profound Light Pillar, a figure appeared before the Profound Light Pillar like a phantom.

“You!!!”

Seeing that individual, Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

It was actually Young Master Li Ming. Young Master Li Ming, who had been thrown into the wall by Chu Feng, who was at a distance of at least a hundred meters from the Profound Light Pillar, had actually appeared before the Profound Light Pillar.

It all happened too quickly. Chu Feng was simply unable to pull back his palm in time. Thus, his palm landed firmly onto Li Ming's chest.

“This feeling?”

The moment Chu Feng's palm came into contact with Young Master Li Ming's chest, he was immediately startled. Then, his heartbeat started to rapidly accelerate.



The reason for that was because the sensation he felt the instant he came into contact with Li Ming's chest was not a sensation of a man's flat-chestedness.

Instead, it was the softness of a woman.

"You..."

Chu Feng raised his head and looked to Li Ming. He discovered that Li Ming was standing there stunned.

Subconsciously, Chu Feng felt that Li Ming's current reaction was caused by what he had just done.

Seemingly trying to verify his guess, Chu Feng grabbed lightly twice more with his hand.

The softness was still present. It meant that Chu Feng's previous sensation was not a misconception. This Li Ming was truly hiding something.

"Shameless bastard!"

Suddenly, a furious voice was heard. Following that, a 'paa' was heard, and a slap landed on Chu Feng's face.

It was Young Master Li Ming.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to see that Young Master Li Ming's face had turned deep red. There was also fury in his eyes.

That gaze was one of someone itching to kill Chu Feng.

However, apart from the anger, there was also a special look that belonged to women. It was a shy expression.

This Young Master Li Ming was very charming to begin with. Upon revealing that expression, he simply looked like a cute little belle.

Seeing that expression, Chu Feng did not reveal any anger after being slapped by Young Master Li Ming. Instead, he rubbed his cheek that was slapped and smiled mischievously. "Lil' Sis Li

Ming, you've hidden yourself quite well. If I didn't touch it by accident, I truly would've never considered you to be this well-hidden."

# Chapter 2498 - Chu Feng's Victory

---

“I’ll kill you!”

Young Master Li Ming’s face turned a deep red. With overwhelming killing intent, she charged toward Chu Feng.

Her appearance was not only that of someone who wanted to kill Chu Feng. Instead, she simply wanted to dismember Chu Feng’s body into ten thousand pieces.

While dodging Li Ming’s attack, Chu Feng started to ridicule Li Ming with a smile on his face, “Hey hey hey, what are you doing? It was clearly stated that we were only sparring, since when did we start trying to kill each other?”

“Oh, I get it now. Isn’t it just because I accidentally touched you? You can’t blame me for that. After all, it’s your fault for dressing up as a man.”

“If I had known that you were a woman to begin with, I would’ve never touched you there. Thus, you cannot blame me for this. If you want to blame someone, you can only blame yourself.”

“Say, why would you, a little beauty, dress up as a man? Could it be...”

As Chu Feng spoke, his gaze grew a bit more provocative. He said, “Could it be that you have some sort of special interest? You couldn’t possibly also be fond of women, right?”

“I’ll tear your mouth apart!!!”

Young Master Li Ming started to gnash her teeth in anger. Her charming red lips seemed to be spraying out fire as she spoke.

She began to rush toward Chu Feng to attack him nonstop. Not only were all her attacks fatal in nature, her killing intent was also extremely dreadful.

She was not playing around. She was truly trying to kill Chu

Feng.

“Aiyayaya, this is bad. Not only was Li Ming’s identity as a woman seen through by Chu Feng, she was also taken advantage of by him.”

“With Li Ming’s temperament, she might really end up killing Chu Feng. Golden Crane, should we act to stop her?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

“This match is still not over yet. Furthermore, Li Ming’s cultivation has been restricted by me. She is only able to use the power she has obtained from the Profound Light Pillar.”

“Even if she has truly decided to kill, she will not be able to kill the current Chu Feng. Even if an accident is to truly occur, I will definitely act immediately. Thus, you don’t have to worry about Chu Feng’s safety,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“This place is, after all, your territory. Thus, you’ll handle the things here. As for me, my job is to enjoy the show,” The plain-clothed old monk said with a beaming smile.

“There’s actually nothing worth seeing. The outcome of this match has been decided already. Earlier, Li Ming was pretending to be enraged by Chu Feng. However, it’s different now.”

“After Chu Feng touched her taboo, she was truly enraged by him. On top of that, Chu Feng has said those provocative words. Thus, Li Ming is already completely enraged by him.”

“Such a Li Ming is already no longer able to continue to contend against Chu Feng. Soon, Chu Feng will obtain victory,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Indeed. That child Chu Feng is truly crafty. He was actually willing to take advantage of even such a thing. He has completely utilized Li Ming’s fury after having taking advantage of her.”

“However, to be honest, I am truly growing more and more fond of this boy Chu Feng,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“I am the same,” The Golden Crane True Immortal revealed a faint smile on his face.

They did not look down on Chu Feng for his shamelessness. On the contrary, they both appreciated Chu Feng’s quick-wittedness, and his ability to change according to the situation.

“In that case, why not just take him as your disciple?”

“If you are to protect him, who in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would dare to bully him?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

“It does seem that in all aspects, Chu Feng is superior to Li Ming. However, I am someone who will always finish what I have started. Since I have already decided that I want Li Ming to be my disciple, I will not go and take another person as my disciple.”

“Furthermore, no matter how talented one might be, they must still be nurtured. While Chu Feng’s display of performance is currently excellent, that does not mean that he will continue to be this outstanding. It might even be possible for Li Ming to surpass him.”

“In short, between the two of them, I am still more optimistic about Li Ming,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Is that so?” The plain-clothed old monk smiled faintly. However, contained within his eyes was a clear expression of disbelief.

He knew that it was actually due to another reason that the Golden Crane True Immortal did not wish to take Chu Feng as his disciple.

Meanwhile, Li Ming was running around the formation, chasing after Chu Feng and attacking him.

As for Chu Feng, he was merely running without fighting back.

At that moment, the location Chu Feng was running toward was

already less than a meter away from Li Ming's Profound Light Pillar. He extended his hand and grabbed the Profound Light Pillar.

“Taa~~~”

After grabbing the Profound Light Pillar, Chu Feng suddenly stopped and turned around. With a smile on his face, he said to Young Master Li Ming, who was chasing after him, “Lil’ Sis Li Ming, in a match, one must accept one’s losses; I have won.”

“I’ll kill you!!!”

Seeing that Chu Feng was holding the Profound Light Pillar in his hand, Young Master Li Ming realized that she had been made a fool of by Chu Feng again. Thus, at that moment, she was even more furious than before. She was truly determined to kill Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when Li Ming rushed toward Chu Feng to kill him, right when she was about to reach Chu Feng, an enormous power suddenly appeared out of nowhere, restricting her movements.

The current Li Ming was no longer able to move in the slightest.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, a figure appeared out of thin air. That person appeared in the center of the formation. He was none other than the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Li Ming, you must be able to accept your loss. Chu Feng has won this match,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Damn it! Let me go, I’ll kill him!” Evidently, Young Master Li Ming had yet to break free from her anger. She was still shouting angrily.

“Li Ming, this place is my territory. I will not allow you to behave atrociously here.”

“You have lost this match. As such, I will not help you.”

“However, I will give you an opportunity. Even though you’ve lost today, if you are willing to become my disciple, I will definitely help you,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said to Li Ming.

“If you are to release me now, return my cultivation and allow me to kill this Chu Feng, I will consider becoming your disciple,” Young Master Li Ming said to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“I’m afraid that won’t do. You should consider what I said first,” The Golden Crane True Immortal smiled lightly. Then, he gently raised his arm, and a strand of light flew out of his palm. That light enveloped Young Master Li Ming.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, that Young Master Li Ming disappeared into thin air. She had left that place.

Likely, she had been sent out of Mount Cloud Crane by the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Junior Chu Feng pays his respects to senior.”

As for Chu Feng, he bowed respectfully to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

After all, this was the first time he had seen the Golden Crane True Immortal’s actual appearance.

After seeing him, Chu Feng became even more certain that Golden Crane True Immortal was an otherworldly expert.

Even though Chu Feng was unable to see through the cultivation of the Golden Crane True Immortal, the ruler-like aura that he emitted made it clear that he was no ordinary martial cultivator.

“Follow me,” As the Golden Crane True Immortal spoke, he turned around and waved his sleeve.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Chu Feng felt that the scenery surrounding him started to change rapidly.

He was unable to clearly see anything. The only thing he was able to see was the Golden Crane True Immortal's back.

The Golden Crane True Immortal was ahead, leading the way for Chu Feng.

Finally, the scenery surrounding Chu Feng started to clear up.

“That is?”

As Chu Feng saw the things before him, his eyes shrunk, and his expression changed.



# Chapter 2499 - God Bestowment Bamboo Slips

---

At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if he had already left Mount Cloud Crane. His surroundings consisted of a field of dried up plains.

Those plains extend as far as the eye could see. There were no grass or trees. The earth was not only completely withered and filled with cracks, but one could even see a magma-like radiance shining from within the cracks.

That place simply did not resemble a place where humans could survive. Chu Feng felt that he had entered the Magma World.

However, what attracted Chu Feng's attention the most was a mountain in the distance.

The mountain was very special. Even though it clearly seemed to be formed through natural means, it possessed a supernatural shape.

It was a giant hand. The hand extended out from the surface and reached straight toward the blue sky.

That hand was open. It seemed to be propping something up. Merely, there was clearly nothing visible on the hand.

Indeed. At such a distance, ordinary people would indeed not be able to see anything. However, Chu Feng was able to.

The reason Chu Feng was so astonished was because of the thing that he saw.

It was a bamboo slip. That bamboo slip greatly resembled the bamboo slip in Chu Feng's dantian.

"Chu Feng, could it be that... there's more than one such bamboo slip?"

Eggy shared Chu Feng's vision and hearing. Thus, she was able to see what Chu Feng saw. She too saw the bamboo slip.

"It's too far. I'm unable to sense its aura. However, it truly resembles the bamboo slip," Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration.

At that moment, the most precious treasure Chu Feng had on him, apart from the uncontrollable Evil God Sword, would be the bamboo slip in his dantian that emitted the Ancient Era's aura.

Not only did that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip gift Chu Feng with martial comprehension far surpassing that of ordinary individuals, it had also greatly increased Chu Feng's battle power.

In fact, when Chu Feng nearly died while receiving the backlash from the Evil God Sword, he faintly remembered that a surge of power from his dantian had saved him.

Chu Feng had actually felt that it was caused by the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip the entire time.

Thus, Chu Feng had felt the entire time that the Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip must be a treasure from the Ancient Era.

Yet now, another such Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip actually appeared before him. Chu Feng was certain that if that Ancient Era's Bamboo Slip was the same as the one in his dantian, it would most definitely be a priceless treasure, a treasure that could bring about a rain of blood, a treasure that would cause countless martial cultivators to kill one another.

"Chu Feng, I believe that you can see it too. That is what I want you to retrieve," The Golden Crane True Immortal said to Chu Feng.

"One can easily obtain that item. Senior, why must you have me retrieve it for you?" Chu Feng asked.

The Golden Crane True Immortal did not answer. Instead, he extended his palm and pushed forward.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, his palm was stopped. At the same time, ripples began to emerge from the location of his palm.

“A spirit formation?” Chu Feng was greatly surprised.

Even though that spirit formation was right before him, before the Golden Crane True Immortal triggered it, Chu Feng did not notice it at all.

“Only the people of the younger generation are able to enter this place. Thus, I need your help.”

“However Chu Feng, I have a feeling that God Bestowment Bamboo Slip is not that easily obtained,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“God Bestowment Bamboo Slip?” Chu Feng was surprised. This was the first time he had heard of that name.

However, from what the Golden Crane True Immortal said, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Golden Crane True Immortal must know about the origin of that Ancient Era’s Bamboo Slip.

Thus, Chu Feng hurriedly asked, “Senior, could that God Bestowment Bamboo Slip possess some sort of extraordinary origin?”

“The God Bestowment Bamboo Slip is a legend. There are many different versions to the legend of its origin.”

“The version that is most widely accepted is that it came to be in the Ancient Era.”

“Reportedly, it was at the beginning of the Ancient Era. Back then, there was a special bamboo forest. That bamboo forest did not reside on any world. In a towering manner, it continued to exist in the vast Outer World.”

“It was shining with radiance, and appeared to be the smallest star in the vast Outer World. However, it contained an enormously

powerful amount of Natural Energy. The Natural Energy it contained was so enormous that not a single world was capable of matching it.”

“Most importantly, that bamboo forest actually contained profoundness of martial cultivation.”

“If one was fortunate enough to encounter that bamboo forest, one’s cultivation would definitely increase enormously. They would become a peak expert capable of traveling about unhindered through the various Starfields and even the entire vast starry sky.”

“However, that bamboo forest was always moving. The possibility of encountering it was practically next to impossible”.

“However, there were always fortunate individuals capable of encountering that bamboo forest.”

“Later on, a pair of brothers managed to encounter the bamboo forest together.”

“The two of them were extremely talented. The two of them were already extremely famous throughout the entire Outer World before even encountering the bamboo forest. They were ferocious individuals that even the various Starfield Masters from many different Starfields held in restraining fear.”

“After the brothers encountered the bamboo forest, they did not leave the bamboo forest after attaining some strength like the rest of the people. Instead, they began to wholly concentrate on training, and actually stayed in the bamboo forest for tens of thousands of years.”

“Reportedly, when the two of them were training in the bamboo forest, there would occasionally be lucky individuals that encountered the bamboo forest.”

“However, those people were all killed by the two brothers. The two of them were planning to seize the bamboo forest for themselves.”

“The brothers were extremely talented to begin with. Thus, with how profound the bamboo forest was, after training in the bamboo forest for tens of thousands of years, their cultivations reached an unimaginable level. They became existences at the apex of the entire Outer World.”

“Reportedly, the brothers both possessed the strength to rule over the entire Outer World.”

“However, there could only be a single overlord in the world. For the sake of ruling over the entire Outer World, the brothers became unparalleled existences akin to gods.”

“However, both brothers possessed ulterior motives. For the sake of becoming the overlord, they fell out with one another, and started to battle one another with the intent to kill each other.”

“The location where the two brothers started battling was precisely that bamboo forest.”

“That battle was extremely overwhelming. Their oppressive might filled the entire sky, and the heavens itself trembled.”

“Reportedly, the entire Outer World was affected by their battle, and countless worlds were destroyed.”

“With how devastating that battle was, the final result was also equally astonishing.”

“Not only did the two brothers completely destroy the bamboo forest, but they also fatally injured one another.”

“It was only in the moment before their deaths that the two brothers came to this realization. However, they were unable to continue living.”

“In the end, the two brothers gathered up some of the shattered yet still usable bamboo pieces from the devastated bamboo forest. They formed them into bamboo slips, and infused all that they had learned in their lives into the bamboo slips.”

“There are a total of three hundred and sixty seven such bamboo slips, forming a book of bamboo slips. They were the riches the two brothers left for future generations.”

“However, when the two of them finished making the book of bamboo slips, when they were about to die, the book of bamboo slips, for some unknown reason, was scattered.”

“From that point on, the scattered bamboo slips were dispersed all over the entire vast Outer World. Reportedly, every single bamboo slip contains extraordinary power.”

“Rumor has it that if one is able to gather all of the bamboo slips, one will obtain the strongest power in this world, and become the ruler of the Outer World, become a god and rule the entire world.”

“Because of that, the bamboo slips are known as the God Bestowment Bamboo Slips,” The Golden Crane True Immortal explained to Chu Feng with a serious expression on his face.

“Haha, never would I have expected that bamboo slip to have such a grand origin. They are simply the most precious treasures in the entire Outer World.”

“Chu Feng... you actually possess one such bamboo slip with your cultivation. Haha, you are simply too fortunate,” After learning the origin of the bamboo slips, Her Lady Queen was endlessly excited.

“Haha, truly. I have accidentally picked up an enormous fortune,” Chu Feng was also endlessly excited at that moment.

Although that was only a legend and could very well be fake, if it was real, the bamboo slip in Chu Feng’s dantian would simply be too valuable.

After all, one could tell how amazing the bamboo slips were just by the serious expression that the Golden Crane True Immortal had on his face.

At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal exclaimed,

“Originally, I had thought that the God Bestowment Bamboo Slips were only legends. However, that bamboo slip on the mountain peak is exactly the same as the other God Bestowment Bamboo Slips.”

“It would appear that the legend is very possibly real.”

Unconcealable excitement and endless anticipation filled his eyes as he looked to the bamboo slip.

# Chapter 2500 - Mountain Of Blades, Sea Of Flames

---

“If the legend is true, then the Exalted from this place is no ordinary individual either,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

He felt that the bamboo slip would not appear on Mount Cloud Crane for no reason. He felt that it must be related to that Exalted.

After all, that Exalted was a legend of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to begin with. No one knew exactly what sort of ability he possessed, and no one could be certain as to exactly what sort of cultivation he possessed.

When he arrived at that place, he became the true ruler of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, an existence that no one dared to provoke.

“It is most likely related to him. Merely, this place has only been discovered in recent days. Before this, I have never felt such a place existing in the Mount Cloud Crane,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“In other words, it appeared by itself?” Chu Feng understood the Golden Crane True Immortal’s intention. This was actually a hidden forbidden area. It was so hidden that even someone with the Golden Crane True Immortal’s strength was unable to detect it.

Thus, for this place to appear now, it was most definitely unrelated to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“That is indeed the case. But, precisely because this is the case, Chu Feng, you should also be able to imagine that it would not appear here without reason. There is most definitely something strange about this.”

“Furthermore, even if it will only allow people of the younger generation to enter it, it is absolutely not as simple as it appears to



be. If you manage to enter it, you will most likely encounter danger. It might even be possible for you to end up losing your life inside.”

“Thus, I will ask you again. Are you willing to enter it to help me retrieve the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Senior Golden Crane, if I do not enter to retrieve the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, would you help me treat my brother?” Chu Feng asked the Golden Crane True Immortal.

The Golden Crane True Immortal did not answer Chu Feng’s question. He only smiled profoundly.

Seeing this reaction from the Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu Feng also smiled, “Senior, even if you are willing to help me treat my brother now, I must still help you accomplish this matter.”

“Why’s that?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked in a surprised manner.

“Because this is our agreement. I, Chu Feng, am someone who will keep my promises,” After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng smiled casually. Then, his footsteps started moving forward.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, Chu Feng’s foot stepped into that formless formation. A splash-like ripple emerged from the formation.

However, the formation did not stop Chu Feng. Just like that, Chu Feng walked into it.

“Sure enough, only people of the younger generation are able to pass through,” Seeing Chu Feng entering the formation, the Golden Crane True Immortal heaved a sigh of relief.

For a legendary treasure like that, if it were to be said that he was not tempted by it, then it would most definitely be a lie.

Even though he knew very well that Chu Feng would most likely

face dangers by entering the formation, he still wanted Chu Feng to attempt it.

After all, Chu Feng's life and death was unrelated to him. However, if Chu Feng were to succeed, he would have picked up a legendary treasure.

Perhaps this might be the greatest fortune he would ever encounter in his life. As such, he would naturally not be willing to miss such an opportunity.

“Boom~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng stepped into the formation, before he could even take more than a few steps, the area Chu Feng was in started to tremble violently.

Rumbles began to sound from underneath the ground nonstop.

At the same time, the vast earth before Chu Feng started to crumble. As large amounts of earth crumbled, the area before Chu Feng turned into a bottomless abyss. Only the mountain peak that was supporting the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip remained.

Soon, a boundless aura began to emerge in waves from the deep abyss. It was as if something was trying to emerge from within the abyss.

However, such a situation only existed in the region where Chu Feng was.

In the area where the Golden Crane True Immortal was standing, everything was normal and without the slightest change.

In other words, that invisible spirit formation was a wall. That wall had separated the region into two.

The location where Chu Feng was at was already in utter devastation, with landslides and cracked earth. However, there was not the slightest bit of rupture where the Golden Crane True Immortal was.

“That is?”

The Golden Crane True Immortal had a serious expression on his face. His gaze was focused on the transformation of the region Chu Feng was in the entire time.

However, when a transformation truly occurred to that region, even the Golden Crane True Immortal started to frown.

A mountain and a sea had appeared before Chu Feng.

However, they were neither an ordinary mountain nor an ordinary sea.

That mountain was not very tall. However, it was covered with sharp blades. The blades were flashing with cold light. Some blades were only an inch long, whereas others were hundreds of meters long.

It was a mountain of blades!!!

As for that sea, it was surging with vast waves. However, those waves were raging with flames. Fire dragons could be seen galloping within the sea.

It was a sea of flames!!!

“A mountain of blades and a sea of flames?!” At that moment, Chu Feng’s gaze changed, his heart moved, and a slightly surprised expression emerged on his face.

[1. To ascend a mountain of blades and cross a sea of flames is a chinese term for undergoing extreme danger.]

He had thought of many different kinds of traps that might be waiting for him. However, he had never expected a literal mountain of blades and a sea of flames, such an old fashioned trial, to be waiting for him.

After all, this place had been established by an Exalted. As such, Chu Feng was disappointed for the trials to only be a mountain of blades and a sea of flames.

“That mountain of blades and sea of flames are simply too ordinary. They are unable to harm you at all,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng slightly smiled. Then, without any worry, he walked forward.

With Chu Feng’s current level of cultivation, things like these were simply unable to harm him in the slightest.

“Bang~~~”

However, right after Chu Feng took a step forward, before he even entered the mountain of blades, he felt a pain in his head. Then, he was shot back explosively and forcibly driven out of the formation.

“How could this be?”

At that moment, Chu Feng sat on the ground with a perplexed expression.

“It’s a spirit formation. There’s a spirit formation before the mountain of blades and sea of flames. It seems that you will not be able to enter it using ordinary methods,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What should I do then? I am unable to even see that spirit formation, it is clearly a very brilliant spirit formation. With my world spirit techniques, I am simply unable to undo the spirit formation at all,” Chu Feng said.

“The earth won’t do, perhaps the sky will. Chu Feng, try seeing if you can fly past that mountain of blades and sea of flames,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Woosh~~~”

After hearing what the Golden Crane True Immortal said, Chu Feng did not bother with any superfluous words, and directly soared into the sky. He once again passed through that spirit

formation that acted like a separating line and arrived above the mountain of blades.

“There’s no formation in the sky.”

Chu Feng was overjoyed. The reason for that was because after he arrived in the sky, he did not encounter the same formation that had repelled him earlier.

This meant that there wasn’t a formation in the sky, and he could pass through that region from the sky.

“Chu Feng, be careful. Perhaps there are still traps in the sky,” The Golden Crane True Immortal warned.

“Understood,” Chu Feng was not a careless individual. Even without the reminder from the Golden Crane True Immortal, he was already on guard against anything unexpected that might appear ahead.

However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, he managed to fly past the entire mountain of blades and sea of flames without encountering any obstructions.

“There’s actually no trap? In that case, this place is truly filled with mistakes for one to breach,” Her Lady Queen spoke in a doubtful manner.

She didn’t feel that there were no more traps here. Rather, she was reminding Chu Feng that this place might not be as simple as it appeared to be.

“The truth will soon be known.”

Chu Feng did not cower. The reason for that was because he had already arrived at the peak of the mountain. He descended from the sky, and the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip was right before him.

“Sure enough, this is it. However, it’s giving off a slightly different sensation. I truly wonder what sort of power this God

Bestowment Bamboo Slip contains.”

Upon arriving at such a close distance from it, Chu Feng was able to ascertain that the aura of that God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, that aura from the Ancient Era, was exactly the same as the aura given off by the bamboo slip in his dantian.

Thus, Chu Feng was certain that they were from the same place.

However, in terms of overall sensation, they were a bit different. It was as if the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip was reminding Chu Feng that it was different from the one in Chu Feng’s dantian.

“It would appear that regardless of whether or not the legend is real, this bamboo slip is most definitely a priceless treasure. Oh how great it would be if you could seize it for yourself,” Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile.

At that moment, a peculiar gaze was being emitted from her beautiful eyes.

It could be seen that she truly wanted Chu Feng to obtain this bamboo slip.

“I also wish for that. However, I cannot do it, and it is also impossible for me to do it,” Chu Feng laughed wryly. Then, he extended his hand and grabbed the bamboo slip.

He had actually managed to successfully retrieve the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

“Success,” Her Lady Queen was overjoyed.

As for Chu Feng, the boulder weighing down upon his heart had also been lifted.

He had originally thought that some sort of mishap would occur at that final moment. He thought that maybe an invisible spirit formation would block him from obtaining the bamboo slip. However, it would appear that there was no such thing.

“Indeed, it’s a success,” Chu Feng revealed a relaxed smile. Then,

he retrieved his arm and planned to leave.

“This sensation?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was astonished to discover that he was actually unable to retrieve his arm, his hand that had grabbed the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

# Chapter 2501 - Changed Beyond Recognition

---

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong? Did it glue you to it?” Her Lady Queen asked worriedly.

“No,” Chu Feng released the bamboo slip and retrieved his arm.

“Then what happened?” Her Lady Queen was very surprised. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had managed to successfully retrieve his arm. Yet, the bamboo slip was still there; it was not retrieved by Chu Feng.

“I am unable to move that bamboo slip,” Chu Feng said.

“How could that be? Where did the problem arise?” Her Lady Queen was puzzled.

At that moment, Chu Feng turned around and looked at the mountain of blades and sea of flames.

“Could it be that one must pass through the mountain of blades and sea of flames in order to retrieve the bamboo slip?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“That’s most likely the case,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng felt that the mountain of blades and the sea of flames were definitely not decorations. He also felt that it was definitely not a loophole that he was able to fly over here.

He felt that it was as Her Lady Queen had said, if he wanted to retrieve the bamboo slip, he would most likely have to pass through the mountain of blades and the sea of flames.

“But, you are simply unable to enter that region. How are you supposed to pass through it?” Her Lady Queen said.

“There must be a way,” Chu Feng flew back and returned to the Golden Crane True Immortal’s side.

“It would appear that one must pass through that mountain of blades and sea of flames,” The Golden Crane True Immortal



sighed.

Evidently, that grand expert had also discovered what Her Lady Queen and Chu Feng discovered.

“Senior, I have a method that might be feasible. However, I will need your help,” Chu Feng said.

“What is your method? Go ahead and tell me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“We are unable to breach that formation.”

“However, that mountain of blades and sea of flames is very ordinary. Even though we are unable to breach that formation surrounding it, with the strength I currently possess, if I am to enter that mountain of blades and sea of flames, I will not be injured in the slightest.”

“Thus, I dare ask, why would a mountain of blades and a sea of flames like that require such a powerful spirit formation to seal it off?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, could you mean to say that spirit formation simply cannot be passed through using brute force, but rather one must use a special method to pass through it?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“If that mountain of blades and sea of flames is a trial, then there is most likely only one way to pass through it. That is, I must turn it into an extremely difficult obstacle.”

“Since I am unable to change it, that means that I must change myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Could it be that, you want...” The Golden Crane True Immortal’s gaze changed.

“Senior, it is as you think. However, something like that is impossible for me to accomplish. As such, I need your help.”

“I need you to help me seal off my cultivation. You must seal off

all of my cultivation, returning me to an ordinary individual.”

“Only with that would that mountain of blades and sea of flames become an unsurpassable obstacle to me.”

“That is also the only way for me to step into that mountain of blades and sea of flames,” Chu Feng said.

“But, if I am to seal your cultivation, your physical body’s composition will also be sealed. At that time... you will really end up suffering the pain from the sharp blades piercing through your body and the pain from the burning of the raging flames. All that you can do would be to brace yourself with willpower.”

“Most importantly, if something is to happen to you, no one will be able to save you. You will die in there. This is extremely dangerous, and you will lose your life very easily. Are you really planning to do this?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

“Senior, let’s give it a try. If this is the only option available for me, we have no choice but to take it,” Chu Feng said.

“Have you really considered this properly?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked again.

The reason why he asked Chu Feng this was because he knew that if things were truly as Chu Feng said, then it was simply too dangerous.

After all, that was a mountain of blades and a sea of flames. If one were to enter a mountain of blades and a sea of flames with the body composition of an ordinary individual, it would simply be an impossible task.

Most would be sliced or pierced to death upon entering the mountain of blades, without even having a chance to enter the sea of flames.

Even though the current Chu Feng was a Martial Ancestor, if the Golden Crane True Immortal were to seal his cultivation, his body’s composition will be not much different from ordinary

individuals.

The only difference between them would be that he would possess willpower that surpassed ordinary individuals.

However, once one's body's resistance was greatly weakened, passing through a mountain of blades and a sea of flames using only willpower was simply too difficult.

"I've finished considering it. Allow me to give it a try," Chu Feng said.

"Very well. Since you've decided, I will help you."

The Golden Crane True Immortal nodded. Then, he began to set up a spirit formation. With enormous spirit power, he completely sealed off Chu Feng's cultivation.

At that moment, not only did Chu Feng lose his martial cultivation, but he was also no longer capable of using his spirit power.

In fact, even his secret skills were sealed. He no longer possessed an undying and indestructible body. His flesh had also lost the firmness of a Martial Ancestor.

If Chu Feng's body could be said to be invulnerable before, if his skin were tougher than even special weapons, then the current Chu Feng was incomparably weak. Even the most ordinary blades would be able to cut through his skin and pierce through his body.

"Chu Feng, return if you cannot bear it. Do not force yourself."

"Regardless of success or failure, I will heal your friend's injury," The Golden Crane True Immortal said to Chu Feng.

"Thank you senior. However, please rest assured. I, Chu Feng... will definitely succeed."

The corners of Chu Feng's lips were raised. His eyes were brimming with absolute confidence.

Then, under the watch the Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu

Feng resolutely walked into the spirit formation separating the two areas and toward the mountain of blades.

He... succeeded. He had successfully entered the area with the mountain of blades.

Chu Feng had guessed correctly. If one wanted to enter the mountain of blades, one must endure the sufferings brought forth by the mountain of blades.

As for this painful suffering, it was definitely not fake. Regardless of how careful Chu Feng tried to be, he was still unable to avoid some blades.

Soon, bloody cuts emerged all over Chu Feng's body.

His feet were also pierced through by the many blades.

That sort of pain was something intolerable for ordinary individuals. They would definitely not be able to continue onward.

It was already no longer a question of perseverance. Rather, after one's body has been injured to a certain state, they would lose the ability to continue moving.

However, Chu Feng was able to rely on his firm willpower to control his body. As long as his body remained intact, he would be able to force himself to move.

This willpower of his was something that he had gradually cultivated through the countless tribulations, the countless sufferings, he had endured through the many years.

However, without his cultivation and spirit power, the pain brought forth by the blades was felt completely by him. They had engulfed him through their most ruthless and most overwhelming method.

Chu Feng was truly experiencing the pain of every blade that pierced and cut into his flesh.

Soon, from head to toe, he was covered in blood.

Due to the fact that Chu Feng was unable to stop his bleeding, his blood was flowing from him non-stop, turning him into a person of blood.

In fact, it could even be said that he simply did not resemble a human at all at that moment.

“Chu Feng, are you able to continue? If you really cannot continue, then just turn around. After all, that old man Golden Crane agreed to help you treat Wang Qiang,” Her Lady Queen was observing Chu Feng the entire time. She felt very pained seeing Chu Feng’s sufferings, and was tightly clenching her fists for Chu Feng.

“It’s fine. I can still endure this. To me, this can also be considered a trial for me to temper myself. As such, I do not wish to miss this opportunity to temper myself,” Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

“How could this be considered tempering oneself? This is simply torturing oneself. Why must you do this?” Her Lady Queen was unable to understand Chu Feng.

“I was entrusted with a great task by another. As such, I must put forth my greatest effort. Rest assured Milady Queen, I will be able to endure this,” Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

However, one could no longer see his smile anymore. The reason for that was because his face had been so wounded by the blades that it was already beyond recognition. His appearance was extremely frightening.

Even though Chu Feng said that he was fine, his body had started to shiver. The wounds from the blades had covered his entire body, slicing off his flesh to the point where they had started to reach his bones.

The current Chu Feng resembled a skeleton dragging a badly damaged body with it as it proceeded onward through the

mountain of blades in a swaying manner.

“Why must you be this stubborn?”

“Fine, this Queen will not concern herself with you anymore.”

Seeing that urging Chu Feng against this was useless, Her Lady Queen sat down on the ground angrily. Although she declared that she would not concern herself with Chu Feng anymore, sparkling and translucent teardrops were flickering in her beautiful eyes.

## Chapter 2502 - Strange Smile

---

In the end, Chu Feng managed to successfully cross the mountain of blades. However, the current him no longer resembled a person.

Instead, he resembled a walking corpse.

“Chu Feng, if you cannot continue, turn around. It’s still not too late now.”

“However, if you are to step into that sea of flames, you will truly be placing yourself in great danger.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was still persisting onward even though he was so badly mutilated that he resembled a walking corpse, the Golden Crane True Immortal also started to urge him to turn around.

However, it was unknown as to whether or not it might be because Chu Feng could not hear him, or whether Chu Feng deliberately didn’t answer him, but Chu Feng dragged his badly mutilated body into that sea of flames.

When compared to the sea of flames, Chu Feng’s body was simply pitifully small.

Upon entering the sea of flames, he was immediately engulfed by the flames. He disappeared as if he had truly fallen into a vast sea.

Merely, that was no ordinary sea. Rather, it was a sea raging with heat and fiery flames.

Most importantly, after entering the sea of flames, even the Golden Crane True Immortal, with all his strength, was unable to see Chu Feng anymore.

“This sea of flames is not that simple. It simply does not resemble how ordinary it appeared to be. Will Chu Feng be able to endure this trial?” A voice sounded from behind. It was the plain-clothed old monk.

The plain-clothed old monk was actually there the entire time. Merely, he had not shown himself. Thus, Chu Feng had no idea at all that this old senior was also beside him, observing all that had happened the entire time.

“Let’s hope that he’ll be fine. Else... if a genius like him is to die because of me, I will also feel very apologetic,” The Golden Crane True Immortal sighed emotionally

The plain-clothed old monk did not say anything. He who remained calm toward everything actually had a worried expression in his eyes.

He naturally did not wish for something to happen to Chu Feng.

Time passed. However, to these two grand characters, time was simply passing too slowly. Enduring the passage of time was simply a painful torment.

They had already grown restless. Very few things were capable of causing the two of them to act in such a manner. However, this was, after all, a matter that concerned Chu Feng’s life and death. As such, how could they not worry?

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, strange noises began to sound from the mountain of blades and the sea of flames.

Soon, the mountain of blades started to sink, and the sea of flames started to disappear. Following that, the ground that had collapsed earlier began to recover.

The mountain of blades had disappeared and the sea of flames also dissipated. However, a figure was still present. It was Chu Feng.

“It’s Chu Feng, he succeeded.”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain-clothed old monk were both overjoyed and feeling deeply



distressed.

They were overjoyed because Chu Feng was standing at the other end of the sea of flames. This meant that he had successfully traversed through that sea of flames.

The reason why the sea of flames and the mountain of blades disappeared was because he had succeeded.

As for why they were feeling distressed, it was naturally because the current Chu Feng had changed beyond recognition.

Not only was all his flesh gone, but even his skeleton was pitch-black in color and emitting steam.

Fortunately, he was, after all, a Martial Ancestor-level expert. Thus, even though his cultivation had been sealed, his foundation as a Martial Ancestor still remained.

Else, to walk through the sea of flames without any protection at all would most likely have already incinerated him to ashes. How would he possibly be able to walk out of it alive?

However, even though Chu Feng had managed to walk out of the sea of flames, one could imagine how enormous the suffering he had endured was from his tottering appearance, where he found difficulty in even standing.

Due to his cultivation being sealed, Chu Feng had already lost the ability to fly in the sky. Thus, he had no way to directly ascend to the summit of the mountain, and thus had to climb the mountain one step at a time.

Fortunately, he had already passed the most difficult mountain of blades and sea of flames. Thus, even though Chu Feng was filled with injuries, with how powerful his willpower was, he was still able to continue on.

After a very long time, Chu Feng finally managed to climb to the summit of the mountain.

“Heh...”

Chu Feng let out a bitter laugh. Even though he no longer possessed a throat, tongue, heart, liver, spleen or lungs, he was still able to speak.

It was a sound let out using enormous spirit power.

After all, Chu Feng was a martial cultivator who had managed to train to the Martial Ancestor realm one step at a time.

Even though his cultivation and power had been sealed, there were certain things that could not be sealed. For example, there was his difficult-to-destroy bones and soul.

At the same time, there was also his mental strength, as well as his extraordinary willpower.

“I hope that I can succeed this time around. Else... I really don’t know what else I can do.”

Chu Feng was a bit worried. If he was unable to move the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip even after passing through the mountain of blades and the sea of flames, there would likely be no way for him to obtain the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

However, regardless, he must give it a try. Whether he would succeed or fail would all be determined at that moment.

Chu Feng extended his hand in a trembling manner and moved it toward the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

At the moment Chu Feng extended his hand, the Golden Crane True Immortal and the plain-clothed old monk also grew extremely nervous.

The two of them were also afraid that Chu Feng would fail. If that were to happen, they would really have no way to retrieve the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

“Woosh~~~”

“Success.”

At that moment, Chu Feng easily held the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip in his hand.

“Look, Chu Feng accomplished it! He succeeded! The God Bestowment Bamboo Slip is ours!”

At that moment, even someone like the Golden Crane True Immortal was unable to keep from shouting.

After all, that was the legendary treasure, the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

“Woosh~~~”

Upon obtaining the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, Chu Feng was wild with joy. He did not walk down from the mountain. Instead, he started to jump from atop the summit. He had jumped down from the mountain.

Having lost his cultivation, Chu Feng naturally started to fall straight toward the ground. In the end, he smashed firmly into the surface.

However, Chu Feng immediately climbed back up. His frail flesh was already all burned away. All that remained of him were his incomparably hard bones.

Thus, an impact like falling down from a mountain was simply unable to affect him in the slightest.

At the very most, it would only bring him the pain of falling to the ground from a very high altitude. However, when Chu Feng had managed to endure the pain of having his flesh cut off at the mountain of blades and having his entire body burned in the sea of flames, how could he possibly care about a slight pain from falling?

“This boy’s willpower has truly surpassed my imagination,” Seeing that Chu Feng immediately climbed back up after falling to the ground and began to drag his body that was on the verge of collapse to happily walk toward the location where he stood, the Golden Crane True Immortal was unable to contain himself from

exclaiming in admiration.

“Indeed. Without his cultivation, even though his bones cannot be destroyed and his soul cannot be extinguished, the pain should still be unbearable.”

“Fortunately, it is him. If it were anyone else, they would most likely have had a nervous breakdown and died already,” The plain-clothed old monk also exclaimed in admiration.

As martial cultivators, an ordinary wound would be like a tickle to them. Unless they were struck with special attacks, they would not feel any pain. The reason for that was because of their enormous cultivations.

With cultivation, all aspects regarding their bodies would be increased, their resistance to pain included.

However, Chu Feng’s cultivation had been sealed. As such, he had lost all the power that he had obtained through his many years of cultivation.

He would thus be suffering the same sort of pain as ordinary people. As for that, it was not something that just anyone could accomplish.

The reason why the plain-clothed old monk and the Golden Crane True Immortal exclaimed in admiration like this was because they felt that if they were in Chu Feng’s shoes, they would not be able to accomplish what he had.

Finally, Chu Feng passed through the spirit formation. With the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip in hand, he stood before the Golden Crane True Immortal.

The Golden Crane True Immortal immediately walked toward Chu Feng. He had an excited yet ashamed expression on his face.

Although Chu Feng had succeeded, the current Chu Feng was truly extremely injured.

As a world spiritist himself, the Golden Crane True Immortal could tell that Chu Feng would be able to instantly restore his physical body the moment he regained his cultivation. These would only amount to superficial wounds.

However, due to the fact that he had been tormented by that sort of pain for an extended period of time, Chu Feng's psyche had undergone an enormous attack. This sort of mental wound would be very hard to recover from.

To put it simply, although Chu Feng had succeeded, he had paid an enormous price.

"Senior, I've succeeded," As Chu Feng spoke, he opened his palm and revealed the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

"Tsk, tsk, tsk."

However, right at that moment, a strange laughter sounded beside Chu Feng's ear.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng's heart tightened immediately. The reason for that was because that voice was not the Golden Crane True Immortal's voice.

Most importantly, when that voice was heard, Chu Feng felt an indescribable oppressive sensation.

# Chapter 2503 - It's You?!

---

The Golden Crane True Immortal's gaze instantly grew alert.

“Who is it?!” he shouted angrily.

Evidently, the Golden Crane True Immortal had also heard the strange laughter, and realized that someone else was present.

“This aura?!!!”

At the same moment the Golden Crane True Immortal shouted angrily, Chu Feng's expression changed.

He had sensed the Golden Crane True Immortal's oppressive might. That oppressive might was extremely powerful and simply indescribable.

Chu Feng had no idea as to exactly what sort of cultivation the Golden Crane True Immortal might possess. However, he felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal's strength was most likely not merely that of a True Immortal.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had encountered True Immortal-level experts before. The oppressive might emitted by the Golden Crane True Immortal right now was countless times more powerful than that of True Immortal-level experts.

The Golden Crane True Immortal had unleashed his oppressive might so that he could manifest his strength to cow his opponent.

However, due to the fact that he realized that whoever this person might be, they most definitely came with ill intent, he rushed toward Chu Feng to protect him and the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip in his hand the moment he unleashed his oppressive might.

“Boom~~~”

However, right after the Golden Crane True Immortal managed to approach Chu Feng, an invisible yet enormous power suddenly

knocked the Golden Crane True Immortal away.

“Senior!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng was stunned.

The reason for that was because of seeing the inestimably powerful Golden Crane True Immortal actually being knocked away with his own eyes.

This most definitely meant that the person who let out that strange laughter was much more powerful than the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Huu~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was astonished, violent winds began to appear around him.

The violent winds carried crimson gaseous flames with them. Soon, the winds completely covered Chu Feng, sealing him within.

“Bastard!”

The Golden Crane True Immortal was endlessly furious. As he shouted angrily, the weather started to change. The sky immediately darkened.

Soon, his body started to radiate golden light. Like a sun, he started to illuminate his surroundings.

At that moment, the aura emitted by the Golden Crane True Immortal was much stronger than the aura Chu Feng had felt from him earlier.

His clothes fluttered about as he walked toward Chu Feng. With each step, the area underneath his feet trembled. Even space itself was trembling because of him.

At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal simply did not resemble a human at all. Rather, he appeared like a ruler who governed the entire world.

“Scram.”

Right at that moment, that strange voice was suddenly heard.

Immediately after that, the red gaseous flames that were revolving around Chu Feng suddenly shot forth toward the Golden Crane True Immortal.

The Golden Crane True Immortal waved his sleeve, sending forth golden radiance. He was planning to block the incoming red gaseous flames.

“Boom~~~”

However, before the Golden Crane True Immortal could finish his movement, the red gaseous flame landed right on his chest.

“Wuuahh.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal was once again knocked flying. However, this time around, he was not completely uninjured. When he landed on the ground, there was blood flowing from the corner of his mouth.

That enormously powerful Golden Crane True Immortal was actually unable to withstand a single blow when before those red gaseous flames.

“If you dare mess around with me again, I’ll take your little life.”

Shortly after, that strange voice sounded again. Merely, this time around, that voice was no longer strange-sounding. Instead, it was extremely domineering. It was as if it could take away the Golden Crane True Immortal’s life instantly should it wish to.

“Damn it.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal frowned deeply and revealed an incomparably furious expression. As he spoke, he planned to attack again.

“Golden Crane, don’t act rashly. This individual is not someone that we can handle.”



Right at that moment, a voice sounded from beside the Golden Crane True Immortal. At the same time, a figure descended beside him, stopping the Golden Crane True Immortal, who was planning to rush forward and attack again.

Naturally, that individual was the plain-clothed old monk who had been hidden beside the Golden Crane True Immortal the entire time.

“Old Demonic Substance, that is the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip we’re talking about here. Are you really planning to allow someone to take advantage of us like this?” The Golden Crane True Immortal revealed an extremely unreconciled expression.

“Golden Crane, you’ve been in Mount Cloud Crane for so long, yet never managed to find this place.”

“Then, this place appeared out of nowhere. Why do you think that is the case?” The plain-clothed old monk asked.

Hearing those words, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s gaze flashed. He had calmed down slightly. Not only did the scowl on his face decline rapidly, but a fearful expression also emerged in his eyes.

He naturally understood what the plain-clothed old monk was saying.

This place would naturally not appear by itself without any reason or cause. However, the appearance of this place was unrelated to him.

This meant that it was most likely related to that individual.

“Boy, I trust you have been well since we last met.”

Right at that moment, that voice sounded again.

“Who are you? Do we know each another?”

Chu Feng gazed around nervously.

The crimson gaseous flames were spinning rapidly like a tornado

whilst He was located in the eye of the storm.

Other than the crimson gaseous flames that were rapidly spinning around him, Chu Feng was unable to see anything.

Most importantly, the crimson gaseous flames made Chu Feng feel the oppressive sensation of death.

Chu Feng felt that if he were to touch those crimson gaseous flames once, even if it was only in the slightest, he would instantly be killed.

Those crimson gaseous flames had power that greatly surpassed his understanding. Before this power, Chu Feng felt that he was weaker than even an ant. He felt that he was pitifully weak, like a speck of dust.

As the saying went, there is always someone stronger. Thus, although Chu Feng was surprised by the appearance of this expert, he was not astonished.

Yet now, judging from what this individual said, it seemed like they knew him.

With this, Chu Feng felt very curious. When had he ever known someone so powerful?

Soon, a silhouette gradually appeared in the area sealed off by the crimson gaseous flames.

“It’s you?”

Seeing that individual, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. He revealed incomparable astonishment.

“Why would it be her?”

It was not only Chu Feng, even Her Lady Queen inside Chu Feng’s world spirit space revealed an incomparably astonished expression.

That was an exceptionally beautiful woman. She was so beautiful that all men would feel their heartbeat accelerate and become

unable to control themselves upon seeing her.

As for that beauty, she was someone that Chu Feng knew. The reason for that was because she was originally the same as Her Lady Queen. She was a world spirit that had been sealed in his world spirit space for many years.

She was... Xue Ji.

Although Xue Ji had appeared, she did not say anything. She was looking at Chu Feng with a very cold and detached expression.

“What’s going on with you?”

Upon closer inspection of Xue Ji, Chu Feng grew even more astonished and puzzled.

Crimson shackles had been placed around Xue Ji’s body. The shackles were flickering with light. Although the shackles were only around her arm and waist, all of Xue Ji’s aura had been sealed off.

At that moment, Xue Ji looked like a prisoner as she stood there.

Most importantly, the other end of the shackles led into the void. This meant that there was most definitely something else at the other end of the shackles.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the void that the other end of the shackles led to started to tremble. Then, a silhouette emerged from the void.

That individual’s size was very short and small. To be exact, it was simply not a human at all. Rather, it was an old yellow cat.

That old cat had a very wretched appearance. It held a very long tobacco pipe with its left paw. As for its right paw, it was holding onto a red chain. That was the same chain connected to the shackles that were around Xue Ji.

When the old cat saw Chu Feng, it did not reveal the slightest bit

of hostility. Instead, it had a vulgar smile on its face, “Hehe, boy, did you forget about this Lord Tiger so quickly?”

“It’s you?!”

Chu Feng was shocked once again upon seeing the old cat. He had thought of many possibilities. However, he truly never expected that it would be the old cat.

“Not bad, seems like you still remember your Lord Tiger,” Upon seeing that Chu Feng recognized it, the old cat smiled even more vulgarly.

# Chapter 2504 - The Bamboo Slip Snatched Away

---

“Not bad, seems like you still remember your Lord Tiger,” Seeing that Chu Feng recognized it, the old cat smiled even more vulgarly.

How could Chu Feng not remember it? Back at the Sunset Cloud Valley, it was precisely that old cat who messed with Zhan Haichuan’s tomb.

All of the treasures Zhan Haichuan had left behind had been plundered by the old cat.

Chu Feng had originally thought that the old cat had already left the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Never did he expect that not only had the old cat not left, it had also arrived there.

“The sudden uncalled-for appearance of this forbidden area the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip was sealed in is related to you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Hehe, of course it’s related to your Lord Tiger. If it wasn’t for your Lord Tiger, who else in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm could possibly be able to find this place that the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip was hidden in?”

“That said, the original owner of this place was truly quite remarkable. Even for your Lord Tiger, it still took him two entire years to make this place reveal itself. This place has truly wasted quite a lot of my time.”

“Fortunately, the heavens do not let down those who are determined. In the end, your Lord Tiger succeeded.”

“That said, to tell the truth, it is all thanks to you that I could obtain the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip this smoothly,” As the old cat smiled, it turned its vulgar gaze toward the God

Bestowment Bamboo Slip in Chu Feng's hand.

Seeing this, Chu Feng hurriedly held his hand tightly, containing the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip within his hand.

He did not care whether or not this place was brought forth by the old cat, all he cared about was that he had promised the Golden Crane True Immortal this God Bestowment Bamboo Slip.

Thus, he naturally did not wish for the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip to end up in the old cat's paws.

"You..."

However, Chu Feng's expression soon changed. His hand that he was holding tightly onto the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip actually started to involuntarily open itself. Then, he was only able to look on as the God bestowment Bamboo Slip floated away from his palm and entered the old cat's paw.

At this moment, Chu Feng came to a deep realization of the difference in strength between him and that old cat.

Before the old cat, not to mention trying to contend against it, even his own body was no longer under his control. That old cat was able to control him with merely a thought.

Holding the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip with its paw, the old cat said with a beaming smile, "Boy, don't hold what does not belong to you. This thing here will bring you a fatal calamity."

"Thus, it is safer for it to be placed with Your Lord Tiger."

"This is robbery!" Chu Feng said angrily.

"That's right, I am robbing you, what can you possibly do about it?" The old cat laughed mockingly. Then, it said, "If you are displeased with this, you are very welcome to come search for this Lord Tiger in the future. Merely, I'm afraid that you will not have the ability to do so," After the old cat finished saying those words, it clenched its paw, and the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip

disappeared.

Although Chu Feng had no idea where the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip had disappeared to, he knew for sure that it had been put away by the old cat.

“Boy, your Lord Tiger is going to leave this place where even birds don’t shit. We will never meet again.”

[1. A place where even birds don’t shit → extremely desolate place. Seems like it was originally ‘A place where birds don’t lay eggs and dogs don’t shit.’]

After the old cat said those words, it turned around and waved its paw at Chu Feng while pulling at the shackles with its other paw as it returned to the crimson mist.

“Where are you taking her?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng knew very well that the old cat was an insurmountable mountain to the current him. It would be impossible for him to snatch back the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip from the old cat.

Thus, at that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze to Xue Ji. He had no idea how Xue Ji had become that old cat’s prisoner.

However, it remained that Xue Ji was related to him. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to know what the old cat planned to do to Xue Ji.

“You’re talking about this doll? This doll here is an Asura World Spirit. As a world spiritist, you should know very well that when a world spirit leaves its master, it should turn into an Evil Spirit. However, this doll is still a world spirit and not an Evil Spirit,” The old cat said.

“Still a world spirit?” Chu Feng was greatly astonished.

Chu Feng had no idea about the current Xue Ji. However, he was certain that Xue Ji had been an Evil Spirit at one point.

In other words, Xue Ji had used some sort of method to turn herself into an ordinary world spirit from an Evil Spirit.

Regardless of how she managed to accomplish that, it remained an unimaginable feat.

“This Great Lord has always wanted to find an extraordinary slave. I just so happened to run into her. An Asura World Spirit with extraordinary beauty, it is perfect to have her as my slave.”

“It must be said that even though this is a place where even the birds don’t shit, your Lord Tiger’s journey here has garnered quite a harvest,” The old cat spoke proudly.

“She’s going to be your slave?”

Chu Feng finally understood why Xue Ji had such a depressed expression on her face. With how proud she was, she would naturally not be willing to become someone’s slave.

Otherwise, how could the Xue Ji from back then be so unwilling to serve Chu Feng?

“That said, boy, it seems like you know this doll. She couldn’t possibly have escaped from your world spirit space, right?” Suddenly, the old cat looked to Chu Feng very profoundly.

From the old cat’s gaze, Chu Feng felt an extremely dangerous sensation.

This old cat seemed to be planning to kill Chu Feng.

“Haha, forget about it. Boy, it could be said that you’ve helped this Great Lord enormously today.”

“If it wasn’t for you, this Great Lord would truly not have been able to obtain the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip so smoothly. Thus, this Great Lord will not punish you today.”

As the old cat spoke, it stepped into the crimson mist. Following that, Xue Ji who was tied up in chains, was also pulled into the crimson mist.

Chu Feng had been staring at Xue Ji the entire time. Thus, he noticed that in the moment she was pulled into the crimson mist,



an expression of despair emerged in her eyes.

For some unknown reason, Chu Feng's heart tightened at that moment.

He felt tense, as if his close friends or relatives were being captured. He was actually worried.

Merely, Chu Feng didn't understand why he would be worried for Xue Ji.

This Xue Ji was different from Eggy. She was a complete maverick. In fact, Chu Feng was deeply on guard against her before.

Without mentioning anything else, it remained that Xue Ji had tried to take Chu Feng's life before.

Even though Xue Ji used to be his world spirit, she had never served him, and was instead very hateful toward him. Thus, to be more exact, Xue Ji was more like Chu Feng's enemy.

This was precisely the reason why Chu Feng was confused as to why he would worry for an enemy.

Could it be that it was because Xue Ji was, after all, his world spirit, that this was some sort of spiritual connection?

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Right at that moment, the crimson gaseous flames started to rise into the sky.

Evidently, that old cat had left with Xue Ji.

“Putt~~~”

As for Chu Feng, he was finally unable to continue supporting himself; he half kneeled onto the ground.

“Chu Feng.”

At the moment Chu Feng kneeled onto the ground, a figure appeared before him to lend him an arm for support. That person

was naturally the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Senior Golden Crane, I...” Chu Feng looked to the Golden Crane True Immortal. Guilt filled his heart. He wanted to apologize.

“Don’t speak for now,” However, the Golden Crane True Immortal refused to allow Chu Feng to speak. He did not want to hear what Chu Feng wanted to say.

Instead, he surrounded Chu Feng with his spirit power and began to whole-heartedly focus on healing Chu Feng’s injuries.

# Chapter 2505 - Unable To Heal

---

With the help from the Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu Feng's cultivation soon recovered. His body was also reformed by the Golden Crane True Immortal.

In merely the blink of an eye, Chu Feng turned from a skeleton monster back to his original appearance.

Chu Feng was also able to sense that the Golden Crane True Immortal was going all-out with his world spirit techniques to heal him.

In such a situation, the pain Chu Feng felt started to subside. However, for some unknown reason, he was still feeling pain.

This was especially true for his head. He was feeling extreme pain in his head. It was as if his head was about to explode.

Most importantly, this sort of pain seemed to be imprinted deep in his head, ineradicably.

Seeing that the Golden Crane True Immortal had finally stopped treating him, Chu Feng spoke, "Senior, I am sorry. This junior let you down. That God Bestowment Bamboo Slip has been..."

"Don't say anymore. Chu Feng, I already know everything. The reason this place appeared was because of that expert's doings."

"That individual is an existence that not even I can contend against. As such, how could you possibly be able to save the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip before him?"

"Actually, the fact that we were able to survive after facing someone like that is already an enormous fortune from within misfortune. Thus, you do not have to have any sort of mental burden. As for your friend's injury, I will definitely heal him," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng revealed a grateful expression.

Although Chu Feng was depressed by the fact that the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip had been snatched away, the fact that the Golden Crane True Immortal was willing to honor their previous agreement and help Wang Qiang heal his injury made him immediately overjoyed.

Seeing Chu Feng's overjoyed expression from him saying that he would cure Wang Qiang's injury, the Golden Crane True Immortal sighed.

"Chu Feng, there is one thing that I must tell you," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"Senior, please go ahead," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, you were able to pass through the mountain of blades and sea of flames without any cultivation by relying on your enormous spirit power and drive."

"Truth be told, this is the first time I've seen such enormous spirit power and drive. By enormous, I do not mean how strong your spirit power and drive is. Rather, I mean how determined you were."

"That said, even though you've managed to successfully pass through the mountain of blades and the sea of flames, you've seriously overloaded your spirit power."

"Because of that, you've seriously injured your spirit power. It is so serious that even I am unable to heal it."

"Do you feel that your head hurts, that you do not feel completely healed? Furthermore, is the pain in your head growing more and more intense?" The Golden Crane True Immortal asked.

"That is indeed the case," Chu Feng nodded.

"That is what an injury to one's spirit power does. That is incurable regardless of how powerful the person trying to heal you might be. If you want to be cured, you can only rely on yourself."

“Perhaps you will recover by yourself over time. However, it is also possible that you will not recover for your entire life.”

“If that is truly the case, not only will it affect your martial cultivation, it might become very difficult for your world spirit techniques to make progress.”

“If that’s the case, I’m afraid that you may only be able to continue on as an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist for the rest of your life,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

Chu Feng’s heart trembled upon hearing those words. It was as if an invisible mountain had appeared out of nowhere and descended ruthlessly onto his head.

At that moment, Chu Feng was struck dumb. He had guessed that there might be some lingering effect. However, he had never imagined it to be so serious.

“Your cultivation will be affected, and your world spirit techniques will become stagnant? How could it be this serious?!!!”

“Chu Feng, quickly, ask him if there’s a way to cure this.”

Her Lady Queen’s voice sounded. Compared to Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen was even more restless. She was extremely nervous.

However, faced with the incomparably nervous Lady Queen and the Golden Crane True Immortal who had an ashamed expression all over his face, Chu Feng did not try to ask more questions. Instead, he smiled and said, “Senior, I have chosen this path. You do not have to blame yourself. Furthermore, I will definitely be able to recover.”

Seeing Chu Feng reacting like this, the Golden Crane True Immortal’s eyes moved. The self-blame in his eyes did not decrease. Instead, it increased.

He seemed to want to say something. However, in the end, he didn’t say anything. Instead, he flipped his palm and took out a green jade bottle.

He opened the jade bottle and then a green medicinal pellet rolled out from it.

That medicinal pellet was only the size of a grain of rice. It had an appearance similar to that of a grain of white rice. However, it was not white, but rather green in color. It was very translucent and sparking. Furthermore, it flickered with a firefly-like glimmer.

Once that medicinal pellet appeared, the surrounding space started to become gentle and a faint fragrance soon emerged.

That fragrance was very refreshing to smell. Merely by smelling that fragrance, Chu Feng felt that his headache, as well as the pain all over his body, decreased greatly.

“Take this medicinal pellet. It will be able to alleviate your body’s pain, as well as your headache. At the very least, this medicinal pellet will allow you to not be affected by your injury in your future battles against others.”

“Take one at a time. You are only to take another one when the effect of the medicine gradually dissipates,” The Golden Crane True Immortal handed the medicinal pellet as well as the jade bottle that held the rest of the medicinal pellets to Chu Feng.

Upon receiving the medicinal pellet, he immediately placed it in his mouth. It was as the Golden Crane True Immortal said, once that medicinal pellet entered his mouth, it turned into strands of aura that assimilated into his entire body, and even his spirit.

Soon, the pain Chu Feng felt all over his body, as well as that massive headache, both disappeared.

Moreover, Chu Feng was able to tell that there were still a lot of medicinal pellets in that jade bottle. Evidently, the Golden Crane True Immortal had produced so many pain-killing medicines because he was afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to recover from his injury, that he would continue to be affected by it.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng put the remaining medicine away

and expressed his thanks to the Golden Crane True Immortal.

The Golden Crane True Immortal sighed and said, “You must not thank me. If it wasn’t for me, you wouldn’t be like this. If you are to thank me still, you will only make me feel even more ashamed.”

“Come, let’s go. Let’s go see your friend.”

After that, the Golden Crane True Immortal brought Chu Feng away from Mount Cloud Crane.

“He really managed to request his help?”

Chu Xuanlang, who had been waiting outside Mount Cloud Crane the entire time, revealed a surprised expression upon seeing Chu Feng returning with the Golden Crane True Immortal.

Chu Xuanlang did not continue to stay hidden in the void. Instead, he hurriedly moved forward to welcome their arrival.

He... a grand expert from the Chu Heavenly Clan, actually hurriedly clasped his fist respectfully to greet the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Junior Chu Xuanlang pays his respect to Palace Master Golden Crane.”

“Palace Master?” Upon hearing those words and seeing Chu Xuanlang’s humble appearance, Chu Feng finally realized that the Golden Crane True Immortal seemed to be a remarkable existence in the Upper Realms.

Else, it would be impossible for the grand Chu Xuanlang of the Chu Heavenly Clan to be so respectful.

However, it was precisely because of how extraordinary a status the Golden Crane True Immortal possessed that Chu Feng came to realize even more how frightening that old cat was.

After all, no matter how powerful the Golden Crane True Immortal was, he was completely powerless to fight back, before that old cat.

That old cat was most definitely not only an expert of the Upper Realms. It was most likely an existence that could truly move about unhindered through Starfields.

But, if that old cat was that powerful, exactly how powerful was Zhan Haichuan from back then?

After all, even after Zhan Haichuan died, he was still able to trap the old cat in his tomb for so long.

From this, it could be deduced that Zhan Haichuan was an existence stronger than that old cat.

At that moment, Chu Feng had completely forgotten about the serious injury to his spirit power.

He seemed to be able to see the magnificent Starfields, as well as the countless powerful existences in those Starfields.

Chu Feng felt that he would one day join the ranks of those experts.

Thus, he was filled with endless anticipation for himself.



# Chapter 2506 - Voluntary Exploration

---

“It’s enough, there’s no need for you to be this courteous here. It would be fine for you to just address me as Golden Crane,” The Golden Crane True Immortal spoke in a somewhat annoyed manner.

Compared to his attitude toward Chu Feng, the Golden Crane True Immortal was not at all polite toward Chu Xuanlang.

However, Chu Xuanlang did not reveal the slightest bit of displeasure. Instead, he nodded his head respectfully. His appearance could be said to be extremely humble.

“Lead the way,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Yes,” Chu Xuanlang nodded again.

Then, the Golden Crane True Immortal and Chu Feng started to follow Chu Xuanlang toward the location where Wang Qiang was.

Upon arriving, the Golden Crane True Immortal requested that he not be disturbed when healing Wang Qiang’s injuries. Thus, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Chu Xuanlang could only wait outside.

At that moment, Zhao Hong was walking back and forth high in the sky atop the clouds. An expression of unease filled her face.

“Seems like your relationship has grown much closer,” Chu Feng said jokingly upon seeing how worried Zhao Hong was.

“If Wang Qiang had not tried to save me, he would not have ended up like this. The one to be injured should have been me. It was him who moved before me to block the attack, to suffer for me. If something is to truly happen to him, I...”

As Zhao Hong spoke, her eyes started to grow red as sparkling and translucent teardrops began to roll down her beautiful face.

“Zhao Hong, don’t worry too excessively. Since Senior Golden Crane is willing to help, Wang Qiang will definitely be fine,”

Seeing Zhao Hong's reaction, Chu Feng stopped trying to joke around and began to immediately comfort her.

“Really?” Zhao Hong was still doubtful. It was not because she did not believe in Chu Feng. Rather, it was because she was truly too worried for Wang Qiang.

“If even the Golden Crane True Immortal cannot save Wang Qiang, then there will not be anyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of saving Wang Qiang,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the space before them started to tremble slightly. Then, the Golden Crane True Immortal walked out.

“Senior, how was it?”

Upon seeing him, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong hurriedly rushed forth.

At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal's expression was slightly ugly. He shook his head, sighed and said, “The situation is bad.”

“Senior, could it be that even you are unable to save Wang Qiang?”

Chu Feng and Zhao Hong immediately became extremely worried. Even that Chu Xuanlang revealed a surprised expression.

No matter what, Wang Qiang was only injured by the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. They felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal would definitely be able to treat him. After all, the Golden Crane True Immortal was someone with status in the Upper Realms.

Yet now, the Golden Crane True Immortal had actually declared that the situation was bad. How could Chu Feng and the others not be surprised by this?

“The reason why Wang Qiang’s injury has been unable to heal is mainly because of that poison,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“That poison?” Chu Feng and the others had all diagnosed Wang Qiang’s injury before. Thus, they all knew that Wang Qiang had been poisoned.

“That poison is so powerful that even senior is unable to cure it?” Chu Feng asked.

“One will naturally need an antidote to cure poison. As for this poison’s antidote, I do not possess it,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Even senior does not possess the antidote to this poison? There’s actually such a powerful poison in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“It is naturally not a poison from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Not a poison from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? Then, it’s a poison from the Upper Realms?” Chu Xuanlang asked.

“I have seen this poison before. It is rare even in the Upper Realms. Thus, its antidote is very hard to obtain.”

“Although it is not a very strong poison, it is very hard to bring it under control.”

“Right now, all I can do is stabilize Wang Qiang’s condition so that he will not be in fatal danger. However, if you all want to cure his poison, you will have to obtain that antidote,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, where must we go to obtain this antidote?” Zhao Hong hurriedly asked.

“Where you go to find the antidote is your business,” As the Golden Crane True Immortal spoke, he looked to Chu Feng and

said, “Although I’ve promised you that I will treat Wang Qiang, I will not go and help you find the antidote.”

“The reason for that is because it is very possible that one must fight to obtain the antidote. And I... do not plan to involve myself in the struggles of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

The Golden Crane True Immortal’s intention was clear. He was willing to treat Wang Qiang’s injury, but would not help Chu Feng and the others settle their grudges in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

This was a question of principle.

“Senior’s agreement to come treat Wang Qiang is already a great kindness to us. This Chu Feng will not make excessive requests,” Chu Feng said.

“That said, you can rest assured. Before you all obtain the antidote, I will ensure the safety of this Wang Qiang,” After the Golden Crane True Immortal finished saying those words, he looked to Chu Xuanlang and said, “It would be safer for this Wang Qiang to stay at my place.”

“Of course,” Chu Xuanlang hurriedly agreed. He had realized the Golden Crane True Immortal’s intentions. That is, he planned to bring Wang Qiang into Mount Cloud Crane.

Although the Golden Crane True Immortal would not involve himself in the grievances and grudges Chu Feng and the others had with the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, for Wang Qiang to be with him, he would definitely be safe.

After all, no matter how powerful the various powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm might be, not a single one of them were willing to provoke the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Thank you, senior,” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong both expressed their thanks.

They felt that it was already very rare for someone neutral like

the Golden Crane True Immortal to be willing to go this far for them.

“It’s decided then. After you’ve obtained the antidote, come find me at Mount Cloud Crane. As for Wang Qiang, I’ll bring him away for now,” As the Golden Crane True Immortal spoke, he disappeared.

Right after he disappeared, he immediately reappeared. When he reappeared, there was one extra individual next to him. As for that person, he was none other than Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang was still unconscious. However, when compared to before, Wang Qiang’s aura was much better.

Apart from his complexion still being a bit pale, he only resembled someone who had fallen asleep. One could not tell that he had been injured and poisoned.

From this, it could be seen that even though the Golden Crane True Immortal was unable to completely cure Wang Qiang, he had indeed managed to stabilize Wang Qiang’s condition and save his life.

“Buzz~~~”

Suddenly, the Golden Crane True Immortal spread open his palm. Then, light started to shine from his palm. It was a medicinal pellet.

This medicinal pellet was a bit special. It was sparkling and translucent, like a bead of crystal. However, in the center of this bead was the image of a blade of grass.

Even though it was clearly formed by the Golden Crane True Immortal with his world spirit techniques, that medicinal pellet not only possessed a life-like appearance, it also emitted an aura and fragrance. It was as if that medicinal pellet was real.

At that moment, even Chu Feng and Zhao Hong revealed expressions of admiration.

They realized that there was no end to learning on the path of world spirit techniques.

“If the antidote is finished, it should resemble this. If it is a medicinal herb, then it should resemble the herb in the medicinal pellet. Remember this, do not be deceived,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong said in unison.

“In that case, I will wait for you all at Mount Cloud Crane.”

After the Golden Crane True Immortal finished saying those words, he started to float off into the distance. Soon, he disappeared into the vast white clouds.

The Golden Crane True Immortal was flying while bringing Wang Qiang with him. They were currently flying toward Mount Cloud Crane.

He looked at the sleeping Wang Qiang and moved his palm to the Cosmos Sack on his waist. A flash of light emerged as a medicinal pellet appeared on his palm.

That medicinal pellet was actually exactly the same as the medicinal pellet he had formed through world spirit techniques earlier. Merely, it was real now.

The Golden Crane True Immortal fed Wang Qiang the medicinal pellet and helped him swallow it.

“Ahh~~~”

Suddenly, Wang Qiang’s mouth opened as a layer of deep green stinky gas emerged from his mouth.

The next moment, Wang Qiang’s pale complexion turned rosy.

Although Wang Qiang was still sleeping, the poison on his body had been completely removed.

“I don’t understand. Since you have the antidote, why must you deceive Chu Feng and the others and demand that they seek the

antidote themselves?”

A figure appeared. He was none other than the plain-clothed old monk.

He had been hidden the entire time. Although Chu Feng and the others had not discovered him, he had witnessed all that had happened.

“This poison is something that the Kong Heavenly Clan should not possess. As for where it came from...”

“I feel like there are some answers that I need Chu Feng and the others to find,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“That’s true. Merely, there are already people from the Upper Realms involving themselves in this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s mess. Furthermore, they are targeting Chu Feng and the others. The path that Chu Feng and the others have to follow will be hard to walk,” The plain-clothed old monk said.

“The path to become an expert has never been an easy path. If you’re afraid that something will happen to them, you can act to help them. In that case, all of the crises here will be solved,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Heh...” The plain-clothed old monk chuckled. Then, he entered the void. No one knew what exactly that chuckle meant.

# Chapter 2507 - Rank Eight Martial Ancestor

---

Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Chu Xuanlang were still standing there even after the Golden Crane True Immortal left with Wang Qiang.

They had no idea that the Golden Crane True Immortal had deceived them, nor did they know that Wang Qiang's poison had been neutralized by the Golden Crane True Immortal.

Thus, at that moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were both fretting over how to find the antidote.

“Brother Chu Feng, like the Golden Crane True Immortal, I too will not involve myself in what is to happen.”

“I hope that Brother Chu Feng will not blame me for that,” Chu Xuanlang said to Chu Feng in a slightly apologetic manner.

“Elder Brother Xuanlang is overthinking things. You have already helped us enough. How could we blame you?” Chu Feng said.

Chu Xuanlang sighed, then said, “If possible, I truly want to help you. Merely, there are rules from above. I cannot interfere in the things of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. My decision to interfere last time around was already an exception.”

“That said, even though I cannot interfere, I am able to provide you with some information.”

“What sort of information?” Zhao Hong asked.

“Whoever started it should end it. To find the antidote for Wang Qiang's poison, you would naturally have to go find the individual who injured Wang Qiang,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Brother Xuanlang, do you know any information regarding that individual?” Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

Indeed, if they wanted to find the antidote, they would indeed have to find the person that poisoned Wang Qiang. However, Chu



Feng had no clue as to who it was that had injured Wang Qiang.

However, if they were able to find out who it was that had injured Wang Qiang, their target would be clear-cut, and they would be able to skip many roundabout routes.

“I have guessed that you all would try to find that individual to avenge Wang Qiang. However, if you all are to try to find out about that individual from the Kong Heavenly Clan’s headquarters, it will be very dangerous with the strength that you all currently possess. Thus, I have already helped you two make inquiries about it.”

“The person who injured Wang Qiang is called Kong Doumoyuan. He possesses the cultivation of a rank nine Martial Ancestor, and was deemed to be the strongest individual in the Kong Heavenly Clan apart from the True Immortals.”

“Thus, you all must be careful when facing this individual. His strength is no small matter. You must not underestimate him.”

“At the very least, to the current you two, he is an extremely dangerous existence.”

“Furthermore, this Kong Doumoyuan is very conceited. Very rarely does he reside in the Kong Heavenly Clan’s headquarters. Instead, he possesses his own personal residence and will generally cultivate, undergo closed-door training and meet his friends there.”

“Thus... if you all want to find him, then go here. You will definitely be able to find him there,” As Chu Xuanlang spoke, he handed a map to Chu Feng.

A location was marked on the map. Naturally, that place was where Kong Doumoyuan resided.

“Brother Chu Feng, as this Kong Doumoyuan was deemed to be the strongest in the Kong Heavenly Clan apart from the True Immortals, this means that he most definitely possesses actual

abilities.”

“Thus, you must remember this at all costs. Before you feel that you possess absolute certainty in victory, it is best for you not to find him.”

“After all, for a nobleman to take revenge, ten years is not too long,” Chu Xuanlang reminded Chu Feng again.

“Thank you for your reminder, Elder Brother Xuanlang. We will definitely act carefully,” Chu Feng said.

“Since that’s the case, then let’s meet again in the future. I will wait for you in the Upper Realms,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Elder Brother Xuanlang, you’re planning to leave?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn, I have something important that I must return to take care of. I’m afraid that I will not be able to return any time soon,” Chu Xuanlang said.

“Very well, we shall meet again in the Upper Realms,” Chu Feng said.

“Farewell,” After saying those words, Chu Xuanlang entered the void and disappeared.

Only Chu Feng and Zhao Hong remained.

“That guy is actually a rank nine Martial Ancestor? It’s no wonder that my husband and I were unable to fight back even after joining hands,” After Chu Xuanlang left, Zhao Hong revealed a worried expression.

At that moment, they had the information on how to find Kong Doumoyuan. However, their strength was inferior to their opponent’s.

On the other hand, her husband Wang Qiang was still waiting for the antidote.

Even though she knew that Wang Qiang would be fine with the

Golden Crane True Immortal stabilizing his condition, she was unable to not feel worried for Wang Qiang upon recalling that he was still poisoned.

As such, Zhao Hong was extremely impatient to find the antidote.

As for Chu Feng, he too was very impatient to find the antidote.

“Chu Feng, with Wang Qiang being with the Golden Crane True Immortal, he will be fine for the time being. Thus, you shouldn’t worry yourself,” Her Lady Queen said.

Her Lady Queen understood Chu Feng extremely well. She knew that he was capable of disregarding his own life for the sake of his friends.

She was truly worried that Chu Feng would utilize the Evil God Sword’s power for the sake of obtaining the antidote for Wang Qiang sooner.

“Milady Queen, please rest assured. I will not act recklessly,” Chu Feng pondered for a moment. Then, he said to Zhao Hong, “Give me some time. I will have to undergo closed-door training.”

“Training?” Hearing those words, Zhao Hong’s expression changed.

Although Chu Feng was very powerful now, he was still only a rank seven Martial Ancestor. Compared to that Kong Doumoyuan, he was two entire levels of cultivation weaker.

Furthermore, both of them were Heavenly Bloodline possessors. As such, their various abilities should be practically identical. The two levels of difference in cultivation would assure Chu Feng would be no match for Kong Doumoyuan.

Even if Chu Feng were to train, he would have to increase his cultivation to rank nine Martial Ancestor in order to contend against Kong Doumoyuan.

Zhao Hong believed that Chu Feng would one day become a rank nine Martial Ancestor. Merely, she was uncertain as to how long he would be in closed-door training for.

Thus, she was somewhat hesitant. The reason for that was because she truly did not wish to delay this matter too much.

“Do you want me to accompany you in your closed-door training?” Zhao Hong asked.

“It is best that we stay together for now. It will be safer for us to act together,” Chu Feng said.

“But...” Zhao Hong was hesitant.

“Rest assured, it will not take long,” Chu Feng was able to see through Zhao Hong’s hesitation. He spoke to comfort her.

“Okay then. We’ll do as you suggested,” Although Zhao Hong was slightly hesitant, she still forced herself to agree with Chu Feng.

Then, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong reached a hidden location and began to enter closed-door training.

Actually, there was definitely more than a single path before Chu Feng.

Chu Feng could actually search for help.

However, to request the assistance of others would definitely pose some sort of uncertainty. As the saying goes, if one wanted something done well, one must do it oneself.

Thus, compared to requesting help, Chu Feng felt that reaching breakthroughs in cultivation and relying on himself would be more reliable.

Of course, Chu Feng’s target was not to increase his cultivation to rank nine Martial Ancestor. The reason for that was because it would definitely take a long time for him to reach rank nine Martial Ancestor. In fact, he was unable to be certain as to exactly how long it would take.

However, if it was to only increase his cultivation to rank eight Martial Ancestor, Chu Feng possessed a certain amount of certainty of being able to do so in a short period of time.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had already managed to sense the junction toward rank eight Martial Ancestor back when he was at the War Clan's Ancient Domain. It was merely due to the fact the Ancient Era's War Clan was attacked that he was delayed from reaching a breakthrough.

After that, Chu Feng never had the chance to fully concentrate on training. However, he knew that as long as he fully concentrated on training, it would not be difficult for him to reach rank eight Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, with his abilities, he felt that if he was able to increase his cultivation to rank eight Martial Ancestor, he would be able to fight against that so-called Kong Doumoyuan.

.....

Chu Feng entered closed door training, and Zhao Hong began to stand on guard for him.

The speed at which Chu Feng reached his breakthrough in cultivation was extremely fast. In merely a short ten days, he successfully reached a breakthrough from rank seven Martial Ancestor to rank eight Martial Ancestor.

After the Divine Tribulation's lightning filled the sky and then descended upon him, Chu Feng had managed to successfully increase his cultivation to rank eight Martial Ancestor.

“Zhao Hong, we can set off now.”

After successfully reaching his breakthrough, Chu Feng hurriedly walked out from where he was undergoing closed-door training to announce the good news to Zhao Hong.

“Where's Zhao Hong?” However, after he walked out, his expression sunk. The reason for that was because Zhao Hong was

nowhere to be seen.

Not only was Zhao Hong not present, but Chu Feng was unable to sense her aura nearby either.

“Could she have left because of some business?” Her Lady Queen said.

“No, her aura has disappeared for a long time. Likely, she left ten days ago, right after I entered closed-door training,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, there’s only one possibility. She is truly one to not let others be worry-free,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Woosh~~~”

Once Her Lady Queen said those words, Chu Feng’s body shifted. He turned into a flash of light and started to fly rapidly in the sky.

If it was as Her Lady Queen had said, then there would indeed only be one possibility. That is, that Zhao Hong was most definitely too impatient.

She must have left to find Kong Doumoyuan for revenge by herself.

# Chapter 2508 - Inside the Moyuan Palace

---

There was a vast sea in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that was called the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea.

The reason why that sea was called the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea was because there were countless sea beasts inside the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea. Their exact amount was most definitely more than ten thousand. Instead, they numbered greater than a hundred million.

Those so-called sea beasts were actually ferocious beasts that lived deep underwater. Those ferocious beasts did not possess intelligence, and only knew murder. Thus, they were extremely fierce.

That said, those ferocious beasts that lived deep underneath the sea possessed powerful cultivations. The weakest among them were Martial Emperors, whereas the majority of them were Half Martial Ancestors. There were reportedly some ferocious beasts with cultivations reaching Martial Ancestor.

Thus, the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea was very dangerous. Those below Half Martial Ancestor would simply not dare to set foot into the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea. Even if one were to fly in the sky, one could forcibly be sucked into the sea and eaten alive by the ferocious beasts hidden deep underneath the sea.

Furthermore, the vast and boundless Ten Thousand Beasts Sea was a place with no cultivation resources or treasures apart from the countless amount of ferocious beasts.

Thus, the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea became a desolate place with no sign of human activity.

However, in the center of the Ten Thousand Beasts Sea was a man-made island.

On the island were extravagant buildings. At the entrance to the

island was a gate reaching a hundred meters tall. On the gate was a signboard. There were three large characters on the signboard: Moyuan's Palace. [1. Moyuan is two characters.]

That place was Kong Doumoyuan's residence.

Generally, only Kong Doumoyuan, as well as his servants, were present in Moyuan's Palace.

However, at that moment it was different from the other days. In recent days, Kong Doumoyuan's friends had all rushed to his Moyuan's Palace.

They naturally arrived there per Kong Doumoyuan's invitation.

At that moment, several hundred figures were gathered in one of the Moyuan's Palace's vast palace halls.

That said, as that palace hall was capable of containing several tens of thousands of people, several hundred people still appeared to be very empty.

That said, these several hundred people were all people with status in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Not to mention some hidden experts, there were also reputed individuals from the four tier one powers present among them.

For example, there was the genius who was said to rarely appear in ten thousand years from the Immortal Sword School, Dugu Jianxu.

From the Zhou Heavenly Clan, the person with the same status as Kong Doumoyuan, the person deemed to be strongest in the Zhou Heavenly Clan apart from the True Immortals, Zhou Fukong.

There was also a strange individual from Buddha's Heavenly Temple. Even though he was clearly a monk, he was someone who enjoyed the four vices of wine, sex, avarice and temper; Wine-Meat Monk. [1. Wine-Meat Monk is a term used to describe a monk that indulges in vices.]



Those three individuals were all people with the greatest reputation and strongest power apart from True Immortals among the three tier one powers.

The three of them were close friends of many years with Kong Doumoyuan.

Apart from them, there were also many other peak Martial Ancestor-level experts present. Although they were all of different ages, they were like-minded individuals, and they all got along with one another extremely well.

From that Wine-Meat Monk, it could be seen that even though those people were all from reputed and upright powers, none of them were good-natured individuals.

While they were not actual evildoers, they were all hypocrites.

As they chatted, a peak Martial Ancestor-level white-haired old man asked, "Brother Moyuan, I've heard that Chu Feng hasn't died, that someone has seen him already."

"Say, will he come to take revenge on your Kong Heavenly Clan?"

"Revenge? Does he even possess the ability to do so?" Although Kong Doumoyuan was already over a thousand years old, he had the appearance of a young man. At that moment, the corners of his mouth were lightly raised as he revealed his contempt toward Chu Feng.

"Two years ago, that Chu Feng nearly eliminated your entire Kong Heavenly Clan. Are you to say that he does not have the ability to take revenge?" The white-haired old man continued to ask.

"Old Monster Fengjin, you couldn't possibly believe that Chu Feng really does possess some sort of Demon Armament, and is capable of eliminating our Kong Heavenly Clan by himself, right?" At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan had a slightly displeased

expression as he looked at the white-haired old man.

“Eh...” Seeing that Kong Doumoyuan had revealed an ill-intended gaze, Old Monster Fengjin, a grand peak Martial Ancestor, actually revealed a timid expression. He hurriedly smiled in a good-natured manner, bowed and said, “This is only conjecture. I actually did not believe it much myself. I merely wanted to seek an answer today.”

“That’s true, exactly what is going on? The Kong Heavenly Clan has yet to give an explanation of what happened. We all wish to know the truth,” The crowd echoed.

“Regardless, I do not believe it. Chu Feng is but an insignificant member of the younger generation. How could he possess the ability to do that? Even if he truly possesses such a frightening Demon Armament, I do not believe that brat will be able to handle it.”

There were also many people who expressed their disbelief toward what had happened in the Kong Heavenly Clan two years before.

From their expressions of contempt, it could be seen that they were not just saying it to flatter Kong Doumoyuan. Rather, they were looking down on Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

Although those individuals were filled with disbelief toward the rumors, they were still looking at Kong Doumoyuan with gazes filled with anticipation.

Evidently, they all wanted to obtain a definite answer from Kong Doumoyuan so as to prove that their guesses were correct.

“Although you all might not know Chu Feng well, you all must’ve heard of Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, right?” Kong Doumoyuan said to the crowd.

“Of course. Weren’t that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang Chu Feng’s close friends? I’ve heard that the three of them all obtained

Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance.”

“I’ve also heard that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang possess immeasurable talent, and are capable of fighting on par against Young Master Li Ming, that the two of them are demon-level geniuses.”

“To speak it unpleasantly, your Kong Heavenly Clan has suffered quite a bit at the hands of those two in the past two years.”

The crowd all spoke. Although many among them did not believe in the rumors regarding Chu Feng, they had a different level of respect toward Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. In fact, one could even hear traces of admiration in their tones when speaking of Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

“Geniuses? Humph.”

Right at that moment, a youth among the crowd let out a snort of contempt.

That person was the Immortal Sword School's genius rarely seen in ten thousand years, Dugu Jianxu.

That Dugu Jianxu could be said to be the youngest among the crowd. However, he was most definitely not a youth.

He had lived for over three hundred years. Even though he was only over three hundred years old, he possessed the cultivation of rank eight Martial Ancestor. In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, this made him fully deserving of the title of genius.

“Young Hero Dugu, it seems that you look down deeply on that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang?”

“However, the two of them managed to become reputed all over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in merely two years, their reputations even surpassing that of Young Master Li Ming. They are most definitely not to be trifled with,” Someone said upon seeing Dugu Jianxu's reaction.

“You’re saying they possess abilities and strength? If they really do, how could they be beaten fleeing by Brother Moyuan?” Dugu Jianxu mocked.

“Could it be that you’ve fought against Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong?” Hearing those words, the crowd all turned their gazes to Kong Doumoyuan.

Faced with the gazes from the crowd, Kong Doumoyuan deliberately tidied up his clothes.

Then, he revealed a faint smile and said in a proud manner, “I have indeed. That Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang are no commoners, they do indeed possess some skills.”

“However, they are simply nowhere as outstanding as they are rumored to be. Actually, the two of them were able to destroy so many of our Kong Heavenly Clan’s branches by relying on despicable methods.”

“The reason for that is because when I confronted them head-on, they simply did not have the ability to fight back at all,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“In that case, have the two of them been killed by you?” The crowd asked.

“No, they have not. However, it is not because I couldn’t kill them. Rather, it’s because they were saved by someone,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Someone saved them? To be able to save someone from you, could it be... a True Immortal-level expert?”

“In that case, it would appear that they really do possess the backing of a True Immortal-level expert,” The crowd revealed surprised expressions.

They had all already heard rumors of Chu Feng possessing a True Immortal-level expert behind him. However, as they had not personally witnessed it, they were skeptical of it.

However, Kong Doumoyuan was their close friend. As such, they would trust what Kong Doumoyuan said a lot more.

“Indeed, that person was a True Immortal-level expert. Otherwise, how could he be able to save them from my hands?”

“Thus, I can tell everyone with certainty, that regardless of whether it is that Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong or even that Chu Feng, the only reason they were able to obtain their current reputation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was all because they possess the backing of a True Immortal, and not because of their own abilities,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“In that case, two years ago, the one to inflict serious damage upon your Kong Heavenly Clan was simply not Chu Feng, but rather someone else?” Someone said.

“Of course. How could Chu Feng possibly be able to inflict serious damage upon our Kong Heavenly Clan?” Kong Doumoyuan said with certainty.

## Chapter 2509 - Merely Trash

---

After hearing what Kong Doumoyuan said, the crowd exclaimed in surprise.

They all became certain of one thing, something that they had been skeptical of the entire time.

That is, they suspected that Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were only able to act like mavericks in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and accomplish so many unimaginable feats because they possessed an enormous backer behind them, a mysterious expert that had nearly eliminated the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

As for exactly who that expert was, none of them knew. However, one thing was certain: that expert was extremely powerful, and might even be an existence very few people could match in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Brother Moyuan, since you know that those three possess the backing of an expert, it is best that you do not make them your enemies again. Else, you will end up suffering enormously,” Someone advised with kind intentions.

“Humph, when I was taking care of that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, their backing wasn’t able to do anything to me. I presume that individual possesses misgivings too,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“What sort of misgivings?” The crowd began to guess.

“That would naturally be our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Didn’t that individual nearly extinguish your entire Kong Heavenly Clan? Why would he feel misgivings toward your Kong Heavenly Clan?” Someone said.

“Fool!” Hearing those words, Kong Doumoyuan suddenly stood up. With a displeased expression on his face, he said loudly, “Did

you all really think that that individual really nearly eliminated our Kong Heavenly Clan?”

“Let me ask you all this, if you all possessed the ability to eliminate your opponent, would you stop midway so that your opponent can come back for revenge in the future?”

“This... we wouldn't,” The crowd said.

“When you all wouldn't do something like that, why would that individual do something that foolish?” Kong Doumoyuan asked.

“Then, exactly what is going on?” The crowd asked.

“The truth is, he did not stop by himself, but was instead beaten back by our Kong Heavenly Clan,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“So that's the case, no wonder...” The crowd nodded their heads as if they had suddenly realized the truth.

However, the people present were all old foxes. Although they were acting as if they had suddenly realized the truth, they were actually skeptical toward what Kong Doumoyuan said.

After all, the Kong Heavenly Clan had never provided an explanation.

For a power like the Kong Heavenly Clan, when they did not provide an explanation, they would generally avoid doing so because they felt shame.

Of course, they also couldn't be certain as to whether or not Kong Doumoyuan was lying. Thus, they were half trusting of his words and half trusting of the rumors.

Suddenly, someone asked curiously, “In that case, Brother Moyuan, may I ask exactly what cultivation that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had?”

Once that question was asked, the crowd all revealed curious gazes. After all, the rumors regarding Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong in the past two years were simply too enormous.

Yet, very few people knew of their actual strength. All they knew was that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were among the strongest geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Thus, the crowd were extremely curious as to what their cultivations were.

“The two of them are merely rank eight Martial Ancestors,” Kong Doumoyuan spoke in a very disdainful manner.

“Rank eight Martial Ancestors?” The crowd revealed complicated expressions.

Initially, the crowd truly did not feel much surprise after hearing that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were rank eight Martial Ancestors. After all, the people present were all very powerful, and many among them were peak Martial Ancestors.

This was especially true for the possessors of Heavenly Bloodlines. When their cultivation reached peak Martial Ancestor, they would become extremely frightening to deal with when their Heavenly Bloodline’s power was added onto their peak Martial Ancestor-level cultivation.

Thus, to the crowd present, rank eight Martial Ancestor was not enough to shock them.

However, upon closer thinking, they recalled that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong were only people of the younger generation with very young ages.

They were people who had only trained for some dozens or twenty-odd years. Yet, they had already managed to become rank eight Martial Ancestors. Thus making it no small matter.

After all, when they themselves were still members of the younger generation, their cultivations were pathetically weak. Not to mention rank eight Martial Ancestors, merely just the Martial Ancestor realm itself was already out of reach for them.

By comparison, they realized how frightening Wang Qiang and



Zhao Hong's talent toward martial cultivation and their speed of progress were.

“Brother Moyuan, although Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong's cultivations are not to be feared right now, it is very frightening that they, with how young they are, managed to obtain their current level of cultivation.”

“Furthermore, both of them are Grandmaster Kai Hong's successors. Their world spirit techniques are no small matter either. In the future, it is best to be wary of them,” Someone spoke to advise Kong Doumoyuan.

“Be wary of them?”

“Haha...”

“Hahaha...”

“Wahahaha!!!”

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan burst into loud and frantic laughter.

Witnessing that scene, the crowd looked at one another. They were all confused as to why Kong Doumoyuan was acting that way.

After laughing for a long time, Kong Doumoyuan said, “What sort of ability do they possibly possess to make me, Kong Doumoyuan, be wary of them?”

“But...” Someone opened their mouth and tried to explain their worry.

However, before that individual could finish what he wanted to say, Kong Doumoyuan suddenly interrupted him, “Actually, I have another gift that I wish to show brothers here.”

“Gift?” Hearing the word gift, the crowd all revealed confused expressions.

“Bring up that trash,” Kong Doumoyuan waved his sleeve. Then, two servants immediately pushed forth a cage.

On that cage was a cloth. That cloth was composed of special materials. Thus, even the world spiritists present were unable to see through it.

“Brother Moyuan, could it be that you’ve captured some sort of rare gourmet beast?”

At that moment, many people revealed avaricious smiles.

Those people frequently captured rare gourmet beasts. As for the so-called rare gourmet beasts, they were either ferocious beasts or monstrous beasts with special bloodlines that were useful toward their cultivation.

Their purpose in capturing those so-called rare gourmet beasts would naturally be to drink their blood and eat their flesh, using their blood and flesh to enhance their own body’s constitution.

Thus, upon seeing the cage, the first reaction from the crowd was that they would be able to enjoy a delicacy.

However, faced with the crowd’s reaction, Kong Doumoyuan laughed even more. He only stopped laughing when the cage arrived at the center of the palace hall. He slowly walked toward the cage and grabbed the cloth that covered the cage, pulling it off.

“Woosh~~~”

“That is?”

When that cloth was pulled off, the crowd that was filled with anticipation all revealed surprised expressions.

The reason for that was because within the cage was not the rare gourmet beast that they were expecting. Rather... it was a human.

Inside the cage was a woman. Although she had a pale complexion, she revealed an ominous glint in her eyes. Her gaze seemed to be saying that she wanted to eat someone.

However, there was nothing she could do, for she was completely bound by special chains. Her cultivation had been entirely

restricted.

As for that woman, she was none other than Zhao Hong.

“Zhao Hong, she... why would she be here? Didn’t you say that she was saved?” The crowd questioned in astonishment.

Although this was the first time they had met Zhao Hong face to face, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang’s portraits, like Chu Feng’s, had already been spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Thus, they all knew what Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang looked like.

“Indeed, she was saved,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“She was captured by you again?” Someone asked.

“No,” Kong Doumoyuan smiled faintly. Then, he added, “This trash showed up by herself.”

“She thought her world spirit techniques were exceptional, and tried to steal my possessions while I was not paying attention. Unfortunately for her, she was caught red-handed by me.”

“This time around, there was no one to protect her. As such, she was unable to escape, and could only be captured.”

After saying those words, Kong Doumoyuan turned to the crowd and said, “Everyone, is there really a need for me to be worried about trash like this?”

# Chapter 2510 - Killing Intent From Chu Feng

---

“Haha, Brother Moyuan, you are truly the model among us. You actually managed to capture this demonic woman Zhao Hong.”

“You must know how extraordinary this demonic woman is. She has been the nightmare of countless individuals.”

“Yet you were actually able to capture her alive. This monk truly feels admiration toward Brother Moyuan.”

Right at that moment, an extremely sinister laughter was heard. That laughter was actually from the monk.

That monk was very robust, with a stubble beard. Originally, he should have been very masculine-looking. However, he had an extremely vile gaze that was completely inconsistent with his image.

Although he was wearing a buddhist kasaya robe, he did not resemble a monk in the slightest. Instead, he gave off a corrupted air all over.

Especially his pair of small beady eyes. At that moment, they were looking at Zhao Hong lecherously in an extremely vulgar manner.

That monk was naturally that vice indulging Wine-Meat Monk from the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

Whilst that monk was extremely wretched, he possessed extraordinary strength.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was one of the most famous Martial Ancestors.

“Wine-Meat Monk, you couldn't possibly be interested in that demonic woman, right? You should know that demonic woman cannot be compared with ordinary young women, right?” Another individual slowly stood up and walked toward Zhao Hong's cage.

That person possessed the cultivation of rank nine Martial Ancestor. He was the strongest in the Zhou Heavenly Clan apart from the True Immortals, Zhou Fukong.

Zhou Fukong, the Wine-Meat Monk, Kong Doumoyuan and Dugu Jianxu; the four of them were the most famous existences in the four tier one powers apart from the True Immortals.

The four of them were also very close friends.

Although they were all seen to be representatives of righteousness, when the four of them gathered in private, they would reveal their true ugly appearances.

The four of them were all genuine hypocrites.

“Brother Zhou, you couldn’t possibly be planning to fight over her with me? I remember that you’ve never been one to lust for women, no?” The Wine-Meat Monk said.

“As a man, how could I not be fond of women? Merely, I possess a relatively high requirement toward women. Thus, ordinary women will simply not enter my discerning eye. As for this demonic woman, I am quite fond of her,” Zhou Fukong said with a beaming smile.

“Have the two of you gone insane? This Zhao Hong is our Brother Moyuan’s enemy. Could the two of you be planning to marry Brother Moyuan’s enemy?” Dugu Jianxu also stood up and stepped forward.

“Marry the demonic woman? I wouldn’t dare do something like that.”

“However, playing with her should be fine, no? After all, she’s already been captured, and I believe Brother Moyuan will not spare her either.”

“Since she’s going to die eventually, why not allow us to enjoy ourselves before she dies?” Zhou Fukong began to size Zhao Hong up lecherously. He simply did not resemble an expert from an

upright and righteous power. Instead, he seemed to be someone from a demonic sect who would not shrink from any crimes.

“I say that’s fine. Hahahaha!!!” The Wine-Meat Monk voiced his agreement to Zhou Fukong’s suggestion.

The two of them reached an agreement in this.

“Who said that Zhao Hong must die?” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“You’re not planning to kill her?” The crowd asked in unison.

After all, the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhao Hong were already irreconcilable enemies.

Over the past two years, countless Kong Heavenly Clansmen had died by Zhao Hong’s hand. Many among them were even the Kong Heavenly Clan’s elites.

Thus, the crowd felt that since Zhao Hong was captured by Kong Doumoyuan, then with Kong Doumoyuan’s personality, he would definitely not spare her.

“As long as she obediently listens to me, I will spare her dog life. However, if she doesn’t...”

As Kong Doumoyuan said those words, a flash of ruthlessness shone through his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a cold flash appeared in Kong Doumoyuan’s hand. That cold flash pierced directly through Zhao Hong’s abdomen.

It was a sword, a silver sword.

“My, Brother Moyuan, why would you act immediately after saying that you will? Don’t you have any tender, protective feelings for the fairer sex?”

“That’s right. Look, you’ve wasted such a decent beauty just like this.”

Witnessing that scene, Zhou Fukong and the Wine-Meat Monk

both criticized Kong Doumoyuan's action.

Although they were criticizing Kong Doumoyuan, they did not have the slightest bit of sympathy on their faces. Instead... they had ridiculing smiles on their faces.

To them, this was simply a show, a show that they enjoyed watching.

“Heh...”

Although Zhao Hong's abdomen was pierced through by the sword, she did not reveal the slightest expression of pain. Instead, the corners of her lips were raised into a cold smile.

“I'll make you unable to smile very soon.”

The sword in Kong Doumoyuan's hand trembled slightly. Then, an electric current emerged from the sword and entered Zhao Hong's body.

“Zzzzz~”

The next moment, being shocked by electricity, Zhao Hong's body started to shake nonstop. A faint amount of smoke even emerged from her body. Then, she was actually unable to endure the shock, and half kneeled on the ground whilst blood started to involuntarily flow from the corner of her mouth.

“This demonic woman truly possesses quite the endurance. She actually did not even cry out once,” Zhou Fukong said.

“No, it's not that she possesses high endurance. Instead, I just haven't put forth enough power,” After Kong Doumoyuan said those words, the electric current once again emerged from his sword and started to flow steadily into Zhao Hong's body.

“Ahhh~”

This time around, even Zhao Hong was unable to contain herself from letting out a miserable and painful scream.

Her one leg that was supporting her body also grew weak,

becoming unable to support her. She fell on both knees, curled over and started to shake violently as she screamed in the cage.

“Zhao Hong, let me tell you this. This sword of mine is called the Punishment Lightning Strike Sword. It specializes in torturing others.”

“Regardless of whether or not you’re a Martial Ancestor or an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, the pain brought forth by my Punishment Lightning Strike Sword is something that you will not be able to endure.”

“If you are sensible, then tell me honestly where that Wang Qiang and where that Chu Feng are right now.”

“If you tell me where they are and bring me to them, I will spare your life,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Hehe...” Zhao Hong let out a sneer. Then, she said two words. Those were the only two words she had said ever since she had been captured by Kong Doumoyuan.

“Keep dreaming!!!”

“Very well, I’ll have you know whether or not I’m the one dreaming or you’re the one dreaming.”

“Zzzzz~”

As Kong Doumoyuan spoke, his Punishment Lightning Strike Sword once again let out an enormous electric current.

Zhao Hong started screaming miserably again. Not only that, but her fair skin was also charred black from the electric torture. A burning smell wafted from her.

Her beautiful face was also ruined beyond recognition.

“It was such a beautiful face, what a waste,” Zhou Fukong sighed and shook his head.

As he spoke, he took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.



It was a box. After he opened the box, pitch-black substances could be seen moving about inside. If one were to look closely, one would see that they were ant-like substances. However, they were much smaller than ants. Those were insects.

“Since your face is already ruined, there’s no need for me to have tender, protective feelings for the fairer sex. Since she is unwilling to confess, have her experience the ferociousness of these little treasures of mine.”

As Zhou Fukong spoke, he raised his box toward Zhao Hong. Immediately, the bugs from the box pounced toward Zhao Hong.

“Ahhh!!!”

At that moment, Zhao Hong’s screams grew even more miserable.

Not only was she suffering the torture of being shocked, she was also suffering the torture of being bitten by bugs.

The pain brought forth by those two things were all things that ordinary people could not possibly endure.

“Seems like Brother Moyuan was correct. This Zhao Hong is only this much. She is simply unworthy for us to be afraid of.”

“Hahaha...”

Even though they were watching a woman undergoing such torture and pain, there was not a single person among the crowd pleading for leniency for her.

On the contrary, they were all acting as if they were enjoying a show. Not only that, but they also had ridiculing smiles on their faces.

“Wuuaoou~~~”

Right at that moment, a roar that punctured through the horizon suddenly sounded from outside.

Not only was that voice ear-piercing, but it was also filled with

intimidation. That was not a roar from an ordinary ferocious beast. Rather, it was a dragon's roar.

That sudden roar caused the expressions of the crowd to all change. Immediately, they all turned their gazes toward the outside of the palace.

“That is?!!!”

Upon seeing what they saw, the crowd's expression all changed enormously.

It was an enormous azure dragon. That azure dragon was currently galloping in the sky and rapidly approaching the island.

A figure was standing atop the azure dragon.

That person's clothes were fluttering in the air. His long hair was dancing with the wind. However, he stood completely stable on the head of that enormous azure dragon.

From a glance, even the enormous dragon appeared to be insignificant when compared to that individual. That individual was giving off the airs of a ruler.

Furthermore, when the crowd met that individual's eyes, they all felt fear in their hearts, and goosebumps emerged on their bodies.

It was killing intent. Boundless killing intent emerged from Chu Feng's eyes!!!

# Chapter 2511 - Lightning Splitting The Sky

---

“That’s Chu Feng? He really appeared again!!!”

The members of the crowd were all astonished. After all, Chu Feng was much more famous-and had many more controversies surrounding him-than Zhao Hong or Wang Qiang.

After Chu Feng disappeared two years ago, he was never seen again. Thus, when Chu Feng appeared before the crowd, their astonishment was incomparable to when they saw Zhao Hong.

“This Chu Feng possesses enormous killing intent!!!”

At the same time as they were astonished by Chu Feng’s appearance, the crowd was deterred by Chu Feng’s killing intent.

Even though the majority of the people present were peak Martial Ancestor-level experts, there were still many that started to cower before Chu Feng’s killing intent.

Firstly, they all knew that Chu Feng must have come for Zhao Hong.

Then, and most importantly, the killing intent Chu Feng was emitting from his eyes truly caused their blood to run cold.

Seeing that some among the crowd had started to panic, Zhou Fukong mocked, “You all are simply too timid, how could you be scared by this Chu Feng?”

“This Chu Feng has come at the perfect time. Today, I will have him experience what an actual genius is,” As Dugu Jianxu spoke, a ‘clank’ was heard as he pulled out a sword from behind his back.

That sword was silvery white. Not only was it forged exquisitely, but the aura that it emitted was also capable of affecting the weather.

It was an Ancestral Armament, a superb quality Ancestral Armament.

At the same time he pulled out the Ancestral Armament, Dugu Jianxu soared into the sky and flew out of the island.

“Brother Dugu, I have wanted to take on this Chu Feng for a long time now. There’s no need for you to act today, why don’t you allow me to take care of him?” The Wine-Meat Monk also soared into the sky.

Although many among the crowd were frightened by Chu Feng’s killing intent, Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk were not at all afraid.

On the contrary, the two of them were both extremely eager to fight Chu Feng, and even started to scramble with one another to be the one to take care of Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was growing closer and closer to the island. He had already managed to see the situation inside the island with his Heaven’s Eyes.

The reason why Chu Feng was so furious was precisely because he saw the miserable condition Zhao Hong was in.

With his close friend being tortured, how could Chu Feng not be furious?

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong has only suffered superficial wounds. Her life is not in danger.”

“Thus, don’t be overly emotional. You must maintain your calm. After all, your opponent is Kong Doumoyuan,” Her Lady Queen reminded Chu Feng.

She knew very well that even though Chu Feng was very strong, he was, after all, only a rank eight Martial Ancestor, whereas that Kong Doumoyuan was a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

Even though Chu Feng possessed an extremely powerful secret skill, the Ancient Era’s War Axe, there was no way for anyone to know whether or not Kong Doumoyuan might have a trump card of his own before they actually battled one another.

If one was not calm, it would be very easy for one to lose one's judgment. Something like that would be very detrimental to Chu Feng.

"Eggy, you don't have to worry, I have this under control."

After hearing what Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng's killing intent lessened greatly.

At that moment, he had arrived before the island. He was only several thousand meters away from Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk.

Upon reaching that place, Chu Feng stopped flying forward. He planned to first take care of them before going to save Zhao Hong.

As Chu Feng anticipated, Kong Doumoyuan, Zhou Fukong and all of the others in the palace hall also flew out of the island.

At that moment, the two parties were standing in confrontation with one another.

"I have traveled far and wide looking for you, never would I have expected to find you this easily. And here I was worrying about how to find you, never would I have expected that you'd be so daring to come over by yourself."

"Very well, I'll have you accompany Zhao Hong and die with her today."

"As for that Wang Qiang, having been poisoned by me, he will not likely live for long either. Soon, the three of you will reunite with one another in the underworld."

Kong Doumoyuan arrived at the forefront of the crowd and looked at Chu Feng with an expression filled with contempt. His gaze seemed to be indicating that he would definitely be able to defeat Chu Feng, that Chu Feng would die by his hands.

"Indeed, there are people who are going to die today," Chu Feng said coldly.

“What arrogance!” As Kong Doumoyuan spoke, he unleashed his peak Martial Ancestor-level aura.

Once his aura emerged, not only did it bring forth great wind that blow away the clouds, but the sky also turned dark. Thick lightning strikes that looked like lightning dragons emerged from the black clouds and struck down in all directions. Their might was extremely shocking.

“Brother Moyuan, is there a need to use an ox-butcher knife to kill a chicken?”

“For a mere Chu Feng, there is simply no need for you to act. I, Dugu Jianxu, will be able to take care of him on your behalf,” Dugu Jianxu said.

“I have always wanted to confront this Chu Feng. You all should have me take care of him today,” The Wine-Meat Monk said with a sigh.

“Two ignorant fools. They’re actually fighting over taking care of you. With their strength, aren’t they simply courting death??”

“They have simply been driven insane by the desire to become famous,” Her Lady Queen mocked.

She knew very well that this Dugu Jianxu and Wine-Meat Monk were only fighting over the chance to take care of Chu Feng because they wanted to seek fame in being able to defeat Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng was extremely famous at the moment. If they were able to defeat Chu Feng, they would most definitely become much more famous.

Her Lady Queen knew very well what sort of strength Chu Feng possessed. It would be one thing if a Heavenly Bloodline possessor were to challenge him. However, neither Dugu Jianxu or the Wine-Meat Monk were Heavenly Bloodline possessors. Even if they were both peak Martial Ancestors, it would still be impossible for them to be a match for Chu Feng.

Of course, Chu Feng had been concealing his cultivation the entire time. Thus, they had no idea what sort of cultivation Chu Feng possessed.

Perhaps they believed that Chu Feng's cultivation was very weak, and were so confident because of that. They all thought Chu Feng to be a pushover, and were fighting over the opportunity to completely dominate Chu Feng.

“Monk, your cultivation is higher than mine. Thus, it is better that I go first. If I cannot take care of him, it'll be your turn.”

“Merely, I'm afraid that you will not be able to have the chance to take care of Chu Feng.”

As Dugu Jianxu spoke, he soared forth toward Chu Feng with sword in hand.

At that moment, the Ancestral Armament sword in his hand was emitting a dazzling light formed from enormous martial power.

“Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught!!!”

Dugu Jianxu pointed his sword forward. In an instant, countless sword silhouettes of light emerged. They overlapped one another and began to fly toward Chu Feng to hunt and kill him.

There were simply too many sword silhouettes. It was like a wave composed of swords. In succession, the sword waves filled the sky as they flew toward Chu Feng. It was an exceptionally ferocious attack.

“He actually used the Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught from the get-go?”

Many people were extremely shocked by that scene.

They all knew very well what the Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught represented. The Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught was one of the most powerful martial skills from the Immortal Sword School.

At that moment, the Wine-Meat Monk had an upset expression on his face. He cursed in his heart, ‘This brat Dugu Jianxu used his strongest killing attack from the very start. He’s simply planning to kill Chu Feng directly, and not give me the opportunity to fight at all. Damned scheming bastard.’

As the Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught was one of the strongest attacks from the Immortal Sword School, its might was naturally no small matter.

At the moment when the crowd exclaimed in surprise, the Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught had completely engulfed Chu Feng. Powerful energy ripples began to rise in succession, wreaking havoc throughout that region of the sky. As the waves of energy ripples emerged, the surrounding seawater was blown thousands of meters high.

However, regardless of how powerful the energy ripples or the hurricane-level wind it brought forth might be, they were unable to harm anyone present.

At that moment, the crowd were staring at the water raining from above, as well as the enormous waves and hurricane-level winds. Their gazes were fixed onto the location where Chu Feng was at.

They had all used their various abilities to observe the situation Chu Feng was in right now.

However, no matter how hard they tried, they were unable to detect Chu Feng’s aura at all.

“Could it be that Chu Feng has died?”

Unable to see Chu Feng’s body and unable to feel Chu Feng’s aura, the crowd all thought that Chu Feng had been killed by the Ancestral Taboo: Sword Sea Onslaught’s myriad of sword silhouettes of light.

“Seems like Chu Feng is only this strong. His reputation is truly



ill-deserved.”

After feeling that Chu Feng had already died, many people revealed disappointed expressions.

“Humph, sure enough, he’s unable to withstand a single attack,”  
As for Dugu Jianxu, he revealed a proud smile.

He felt that since he had defeated Chu Feng, he would definitely become much more famous, so famous that his fame would surpass Kong Doumoyuan’s and the others’ to become the most famous individual beneath True Immortals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Zzzzz~”

Right at that moment, a dazzling ray of lightning suddenly emerged before Dugu Jianxu.

The next moment, all the people present were stunned.

It was Chu Feng. Without any sign, Chu Feng had appeared before Dugu Jianxu.

Furthermore, behind Chu Feng’s back were his Thunder Wings, and on his body was his Thunder Armor. His aura had surpassed even that of rank nine Martial Ancestors.

That said, he was still a Martial Ancestor, and had yet to truly reach the True Immortal realm.

However, his current level of cultivation was something that Dugu Jianxu was far from being able to compare to.

Most importantly, Chu Feng’s hand had pierced through Dugu Jianxu’s dantian.

His hand had pieced into the place where Dugu Jianxu’s cultivation was stored!!!

# Chapter 2512 - Ruthlessness

---

“Chu Feng’s cultivation has actually reached this level?”

The crowd was extremely astonished. Although Chu Feng only managed to possess the strength to suppress Dugu Jianxu after utilizing his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, the crowd was able to tell with a single glance that Chu Feng’s actual cultivation had reached the same level as Dugu Jianxu, that he was a rank eight Martial Ancestor.

However, Chu Feng was clearly only a Half Martial Ancestor when he had disappeared two years ago. Yet, in merely two years, his cultivation actually increased to such a level. This level of progress was simply incredible.

“Chu Feng, you... you... what are you planning to do?”

“If you are to cripple my cultivation, my Immortal Sword School will definitely not let you get away with it.”

At that moment, Dugu Jianxu started to panic. After all, Chu Feng’s hand had already pierced into his dantian, and he could completely destroy his cultivation at any moment.

At that moment, it was as if Chu Feng had captured his lifeline. As such, he had no choice but to be afraid. After all, that was the cultivation that he had trained many years to obtain.

“Did you think that I, Chu Feng, am someone who is scared of your Immortal Sword School?” Chu Feng looked at Dugu Jianxu with an extremely mocking gaze.

Seeing that gaze, Dugu Jianxu’s heart tightened. He suddenly realized how foolish he was.

Chu Feng did not even fear the Kong Heavenly Clan. Naturally, he would also not fear his Immortal Sword School. Thus, it was truly ridiculous for him to try to threaten Chu Feng with his power.

“Chu Feng, there are neither grievances nor hatred between us. As for my earlier attack, I had merely made it so with the intention of swapping pointers with you,” Seeing that threatening Chu Feng was useless, Dugu Jianxu began to utilize soft words.

“Before today, there were indeed no grievances nor hatred between us. Never have I thought of making you my enemy or taking your life.”

“However, when you attacked me earlier, you did not start off with a lenient attack. Instead, you wanted to take my life from the very beginning.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that I am stronger than you, my life would’ve already been lost,” Chu Feng said those words one at a time with an extremely cold tone.

Seeing that Chu Feng was determined to kill, Dugu Jianxu started to shiver in fear. He who used to be filled with arrogance had no choice but to lower himself. He hurriedly begged, “Chu Feng, I...”

However, right after he opened his mouth, ruthlessness emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes, “Towards people like you, I, Chu Feng, am never one to be lenient.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng’s hand that was pierced into Dugu Jianxu’s dantian suddenly trembled. Then, a ‘bang’ was heard.

Dugu Jianxu’s dantian has been completely destroyed by Chu Feng.

After Chu Feng finished doing that, he pulled his arm back.

“No!!!!”

Dugu Jianxu let out a hysterical scream. Then, he waved his fists toward Chu Feng.

Chu Feng moved slightly to the side, and Dugu Jianxu’s fists

landed in air.

Dugu Jianxu was no match for Chu Feng back when he had had cultivation. Now that his martial cultivation was crippled by Chu Feng, how could he possibly be a match for him?

At that moment, Dugu Jianxu felt that the great majority of his cultivation had already escaped him. In utter despair, he half knelt in midair with a ‘putt.’

Dugu Jianxu was still able to fly by relying on the remaining power within him. However, he would never again be the same Dugu Jianxu, no longer would he be a rank eight Martial Ancestor.

“I am already showing you mercy by sparing your life,” Chu Feng looked at Dugu Jianxu without the slightest bit of sympathy.

The reason for that was because he knew very well that if it wasn’t for the fact that he was stronger than Dugu Jianxu, he would’ve already died by Dugu Jianxu’s hands. There was no reason for Chu Feng to sympathize with someone like him.

“It’s your turn now,” Chu Feng cast his gaze to the Wine-Meat Monk.

At that moment, the Wine-Meat Monk smiled wryly. He hurriedly waved his hand and said, “Brother Chu Feng, I was merely joking around earlier. You must not take my joke seriously.”

The Wine-Meat Monk was truly scared. Even Dugu Jianxu was so easily defeated by Chu Feng. Thus, he knew that he would not be a match for Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng had revealed his strength. He possessed the cultivation of a rank eight Martial Ancestor and possessed the Heavenly Bloodline’s power of Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation.

As such, Chu Feng was naturally not an opponent that he, an

ordinary peak Martial Ancestor, could match.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s figure shifted, and he disappeared.

When he reappeared, he arrived beside the Wine-Meat Monk.

“You!!!”

At that moment, the Wine-Meat Monk’s expression changed enormously. He was able to feel clear pain in his dantian.

Upon looking, it was not only the Wine-Meat Monk who was shocked, but the surrounding crowd was also shocked. Chu Feng had pierced the same hand he had pierced into Dugu Jianxu’s dantian earlier into the Wine-Meat Monk’s dantian.

How could that be considered to be a hand? It was simply a sharp blade capable of penetrating everything. Even though the Wine-Meat Monk was a rank nine Martial Ancestor, he was still unable to contend against Chu Feng’s hand.

“Ahhh!!!”

The Wine-Meat Monk suddenly let out a miserable scream.

He ended up suffering the same fate as Dugu Jianxu. His dantian was destroyed by Chu Feng, and he could only continue to fly in the sky by relying on the remaining power within him.

“I did not attack you, why did you cripple my cultivation?!” The Wine-Meat Monk shouted angrily.

“For scum like you, I am already being lenient by only crippling your cultivation,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he looked to Zhou Fukong, “It’s your turn now.”

“Brother Chu Feng, you’re being too excessive here, no? At the very least, the two of them were fighting with one another to take care of you. Thus, it could be understandable for you to cripple their cultivations.”

“However, I have never done anything to you,” Zhou Fukong said with an innocent expression.

“Where did the poisonous bugs on Zhao Hong’s body come from?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing those words, Zhou Fukong’s expression changed. He knew that he would not be able to dodge a battle today.

However, after verifying that Chu Feng was determined to fight him, he was not terrified, and instead sneered.

“Chu Feng, while they are afraid of you, I am not,” After Zhou Fukong finished saying those words, a buzzing sound was heard as his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on him.

As his cultivation was that of a rank nine Martial Ancestor to begin with, after he activated his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his aura actually surpassed Chu Feng’s.

Right at that moment, Kong Doumoyuan suddenly said, “Brother Zhou, I should be the one to take care of this Chu Feng.”

“Very well,” The lightning in Zhou Fukong’s eyes gradually vanished. His Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings disappeared, and he also moved back.

Upon seeing this, the others present also moved back. They all knew that a great battle between Chu Feng and Kong Doumoyuan was about to occur.

As both of them possessed extraordinary strength, they did not wish to be implicated by it.

“Chu Feng, you dared to injure my brothers in my territory. You are simply not placing me in your eyes,” Kong Doumoyuan said to Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng laughed mockingly.

“What are you laughing about?” Kong Doumoyuan asked.

“It’s one thing for Dugu Jianxu, but do you dare tell me that you

were unable to save that monk?”

“You could have saved them, yet you didn’t. And here you still have the nerve to address them as brothers?” Chu Feng said coldly.

“That’s true. With Kong Doumoyuan’s ability, he should’ve been able to save them.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd started to spiritedly discuss the matter. In fact, Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk even started to look at Kong Doumoyuan with resentful gazes.

“Kong Doumoyuan, we have considered you our brother, yet you actually exploited us!” The Wine-Meat Monk spoke furiously.

That’s right, he had exploited them.

Regardless of whether or not Chu Feng lived or died today, as long as he crippled Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk’s cultivations, he would’ve made enemies of the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple.

The people present were all intelligent individuals. Thus, they all knew why Kong Doumoyuan did not save his so-called brothers.

Being blamed by Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk, Kong Doumoyuan did not bother to even look at them.

It was as if Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk were simply unable to enter his discerning eye at all. At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan’s gaze was completely focused on Chu Feng. He said, “You are the ruthless and vicious one. You were the one to harm others, yet you’re actually trying to disgrace me? Chu Feng, today... no matter what, I will not spare you.”

“You’re speaking as if you were definitely going to spare me if I didn’t do these things today,” Chu Feng smiled with contempt.

“That’s true. We cannot coexist. There is no reason for me to spare you. However, I, Kong Doumoyuan, have never been one to bully the weak.”

“Since we are going to battle today, I will not defeat you by relying on my superior cultivation. Today... I will battle you with the same battle power.”

After Kong Doumoyuan finished saying those words, his Thunder Armor appeared on his body. Instantly... his cultivation surpassed that of ordinary peak Martial Ancestors.

Although he was unable to reach the True Immortal realm, his current battle power was on par with Chu Feng.

And that was when he was not using his Thunder Wings.

“Only the Thunder Armor and not the Thunder Wings? Are you certain that you want to fight me like this?” Chu Feng asked.

“I always keep my words,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Then you will definitely regret it,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance!” Kong Doumoyuan shouted. Then, he revealed an Ancestral Armament spear and charged forth toward Chu Feng.

“Humph,” Chu Feng snorted. The Stormwind Edge was already in his hand. He also charged forth to confront Kong Doumoyuan.

In an instant, the two fighters collided!!!



# Chapter 2513 - Zhan Haichuan's Successor

---

The people present were all able to bear witness to exactly how powerful Chu Feng and Kong Doumoyuan were.

The energy ripples that were capable of toppling mountains and overturning the seas, the enormous waves that wreaked havoc through heaven and earth both showed and proved the strength the two fighters possessed.

This was a true battle of peak Martial Ancestors. This was a battle between two of the strongest individuals beneath True Immortals.

“Chu Feng’s speed of progress is truly rapid. His battle experience is also astonishing.”

“Before, I had never believed any of the rumors regarding Chu Feng. However, upon seeing him today, this child is truly capable of making one have a whole new level of respect toward him.”

At that moment, not a single person present dared to question Chu Feng’s abilities.

The reason for that was because they were convinced by Chu Feng’s strength. Apart from Heavenly Bloodline possessors, even though they were also peak Martial Ancestors, they were simply unable to contend against the current Chu Feng.

“Brothers, between Chu Feng and Brother Moyuan, who do you all think will win today’s battle?” As the crowd watched the battle, someone raised a question.

“If Brother Moyuan is to go all-out, that Chu Feng will naturally be no match against him. However, he deliberately refused to use his Thunder Wings to keep his strength equal to Chu Feng’s. As such, it will be very difficult to determine who will win and who will lose,” Someone revealed a deferent expression.

“I think Brother Moyuan will win. No matter what, Brother Moyuan is known as the strongest beneath the True Immortals in

the Kong Heavenly Clan. That reputation of his is not baseless.”

“Since he is capable of shouldering that reputation, this naturally means that he possesses the strength. As for Chu Feng, even though he has shocked us with his abilities today, it remains that he is very young,” Someone felt that Kong Doumoyuan would win.

“That might not necessarily be the case. After all, Chu Feng possesses many past achievements, and his battle records are simply astonishing.”

“The fact that he is capable of doing all that means that he is no ordinary character, but is instead a genius. We cannot judge him like we do others. As such, I feel that Chu Feng has a chance to win,” There were also people among the crowd who felt that Chu Feng would win.

At that moment, people actually started to argue due to their differences in opinion as to who would win.

While the crowd was arguing, the battle between Chu Feng and Kong Doumoyuan grew increasingly more intense.

At the beginning, the two of them had fought with one another with their weapons. Then, they started to use martial skills, and then Taboo Martial Skills. Their attacks grew more and more ferocious, and more and more destructive.

At that moment, the two fighters were both using Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

Kong Doumoyuan had unleashed an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill that sent forth a myriad of ferocious beasts. Densely packed, the ferocious beasts were flying in the sky and attacking Chu Feng from all sides.

Most importantly, being controlled by Kong Doumoyuan, those ferocious beasts were not impulsive, but rather attacking Chu Feng in a strategic manner.

That said, the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng had

unleashed was even more dazzling.

Chu Feng's Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill was four war gods dazzling with golden light. With humanoid appearances, they each stood a hundred meters tall and were clad in armor.

Not only was their armor dazzling with light, but their armor also covered their entire body. As such, one simply could not see their faces. It was only their fierce eyes that emitted a red glint that were visible.

At that moment, the four golden-armored war gods were standing around Chu Feng. Regardless of how many ferocious beasts there were, they were simply unable to approach Chu Feng in the slightest.

All those that tried to approach Chu Feng met tragic deaths by the four golden-armored war god's giant axes.

"Everyone, look at that, look at Chu Feng's martial skill...!"

After observing for some time, someone cried out in alarm while staring at Chu Feng's martial skill.

It was a voice of disbelief...

"What about it?" Someone voiced their confusion.

"According to legend, Zhan Haichuan, the absolute ruler of the Hundred Refinements ordinary Realm back then, possessed a famous martial skill by the name of Ancestral Taboo: Four Heavenly Guards."

"That Ancestral Taboo: Four Heavenly Guards summoned four golden-armored guardians to fight for him," That person said.

"You mean to say that the martial skill Chu Feng is using is that Ancestral Taboo: Four Heavenly Guards?"

"That is impossible. Zhan Haichuan is from the Ancient Era's War Clan. His abilities are all from the Ancient Era's War Clan."

"Furthermore, ever since he became famous throughout the

Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he never took a disciple. Thus, after he disappeared, his various abilities also disappeared with him. No one has ever used them again. As such... how could this Chu Feng be able to use Zhan Haichuan's signature martial skill?" Someone voiced their disbelief.

"Senior Heng Hui, haven't you been studying Senior Zhan Haichuan the entire time? You should know the characteristics of his martial skills, no?" At that moment, someone turned their gaze toward an old man among the crowd.

That old man had barely any hair left on his head. Not only was he hunchbacked, but he was also holding onto a cane.

However, that cane of his was a bit frightening; it was made out of human bones, and reeked of blood.

As for that old man, his name was Old Freak Heng Hui. He was a very infamous monster in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The reason why he was infamous was because he possessed a strange craving. That is, he was fond of eating human flesh.

Apart from human flesh, he was not interested in any other culinary delicacies.

That said, apart from his craving for human flesh, Old Freak Heng Hui possessed another interest. That is, he was a Zhan Haichuan nerd.

He considered Zhan Haichuan his idol since he was a child. After his cultivation grew stronger, he began to inquire about Zhan Haichuan's various achievements and to research Zhan Haichuan's origins.

Thus, if one wanted to ask who was the most knowledgeable about Zhan Haichuan in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm at that moment, then the first answer people would give was most definitely Old Freak Heng Hui.

“Senior Heng Hui, say, does Chu Feng’s current martial skill resemble Senior Zhan Haichuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Four Heavenly Guards?” Another curious individual asked.

Faced with these curious gazes, Old Freak Heng Hui did not answer their question. Instead, he opened his mouth.

When his mouth was opened, one could see that all of his teeth were actually razor sharp. Those were not beast teeth, but rather human teeth. Merely, they were forcibly ground and polished to their current sharpness. At a glance, his teeth appeared very strange and frightening.

“Humph!!!” Old Freak Heng Hui first let out a strange snort. Then, he raised his head and revealed a very aloof yet displeased expression. Then, he said, “You bunch of rude little brats actually remembered this old man now?”

“Eh... Senior Heng Hui, your status has always been very high in our hearts. Since when have we forgotten about you?”

“That’s right. Senior Heng Hui, you have always been this junior’s idol. How could this junior dare be rude toward you? This is the present that I’ve prepared for you. Merely, I did not have the time to hand it to you yet.”

At that moment, the crowd suddenly recalled that that Old Freak Heng Hui was a narrow-minded individual.

Thus, many people started to flatter him. Furthermore, one by one, they started to take out gifts to hand to Old Freak Heng Hui.

As for Old Freak Heng Hui, he accepted all of the gifts without hesitation. After receiving everything, he nodded in a satisfied manner, “That’s more like it.”

“Then, Senior Heng Hui, please have a look. Is Chu Feng’s martial skill Senior Zhan Haichuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Four Heavenly Guards?” The crowd asked.

“There’s no need,” Old Freak Heng Hui’s neck twisted to the side,

and he did not even bother to look. Instead, he cast his gaze elsewhere.

“.....”

Witnessing that scene, the crowd all felt annoyed. They complained in their hearts, ‘Old Freak Heng Hui is truly avaricious and insatiable. We have already treated him so well, yet he still continues to make things difficult for us. It’s clear that he thinks that our gifts are insufficient.’

At the moment when the crowd were voicing their complaints in their hearts and were thinking about joining hands to take care of Old Freak Heng Hui, he spoke again, “Not only is the martial skill Chu Feng using right now Lord Zhan Haichuan’s martial skill, several other martial skills he used earlier were also martial skills that Lord Zhan Haichuan had frequently used.”

“Ah?” Hearing those words, the crowd were astonished, “Senior Heng Hui, are you certain?”

“This old man has paid close attention to everything. I am absolutely certain,” Old Freak Heng Hui said.

“Senior, then, you mean to say...?” The crowd asked in unison.

“What I’m saying is that this Chu Feng has obtained Lord Zhan Haichuan’s legacy, he is Lord Zhan Haichuan’s successor,” Old Freak Heng Hui said.

# Chapter 2514 - Clan Protection Martial Skill

---

“Ssss~~~”

At that moment, the crowd were all unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

If those words were spoken by someone else, they would definitely not believe them. However, it was Old Freak Heng Hui who said those words. As such, they had no choice but to believe it.

However, upon thinking that Chu Feng actually managed to obtain Zhan Haichuan's legacy to become Zhan Haichuan's successor, they were unable to contain their astonishment.

“Two years ago, Chu Feng obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance. It was already something that caused everyone to feel envious.”

“I truly never expected that he would actually also obtain Lord Zhan Haichuan's legacy. Exactly what is the origin of this child? How could he possess such enormous luck?”

The more the crowd thought about it, the more astonished they became. Even though they were experienced and knowledgeable individuals, they were still unable to calm themselves.

Who were Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong? They were both super experts who ruled over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in their respective eras.

As for Zhan Haichuan, his fame was even greater than Grandmaster Kai Hong's.

And now, Chu Feng actually became the successor to both Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong.

Not to mention the others, merely his luck was already something that others would find incredible.

“Your martial skills are Zhan Haichuan's?”

The discussion from the bystanders entered Kong Doumoyuan's ears and caused his expression to change too. He actually directly questioned Chu Feng.

"What if they are and what if they're not?" Chu Feng said in a disapproving manner, and then smiled with contempt.

"In that case, you've simply not obtained Zhan Haichuan's inheritance. Humph, that's right, how could trash like you possibly obtain Lord Zhan Haichuan's acknowledgement?" At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan revealed a smile of ease.

Evidently, he personally did not wish for Chu Feng to obtain Zhan Haichuan's inheritance.

"I'm afraid that I'll have to disappoint you. The many secret skills that I've used earlier are all from the Ancient Era's War Clan."

"Although I am not Zhan Haichuan's successor... I have obtained the Ancient Era's War Clan's teachings," Chu Feng said.

"Ah! It's actually real!!!"

"Even he himself admitted to it, it must absolutely be true."

"This is truly unimaginable. Could this Chu Feng be a destined deity? Else, how could he be this lucky?"

The surrounding crowd burst into an uproar.

This was not only those that were purely observing the battle, as even Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk, who had their cultivations crippled by Chu Feng, revealed dumbfounded expressions.

The reason for that was because this matter was truly huge. This was already no longer an issue of talent. Rather, the issue became the fact that Chu Feng had managed to obtain the acknowledgement of both Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong.



How many people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not believe in Chu Feng's accomplishments, and looked down on him?

However, from that day forward, they would all be useless. Those people's questioning of the validity of Chu Feng's accomplishments would all be worthless.

When even Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong had acknowledged someone, what could their questioning possibly amount to?

"Good, good, good. This is even better! Today, I will seize your inheritance and make everything that's yours mine!"

Kong Doumoyuan suddenly grew incomparably furious. His anger originated from his jealousy toward Chu Feng. He was truly upset by Chu Feng's luck.

At the same time as he grew furious, he flipped his palm, and another Ancestral Armament spear appeared in his hand.

The true powers of Ancestral Armaments were something that only Martial Ancestors could unleash. In other words, Ancestral Armaments could be said to be the greatest assistance to Martial Ancestors.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan was using two Ancestral Armament spears simultaneously. As such, his battle power greatly increased.

After his battle power increased, Kong Doumoyuan's martial skills also grew more ferocious. In fact, it seemed like the size of those ferocious beasts had also increased.

Most importantly, a whirlwind appeared above Kong Doumoyuan.

That whirlwind was black. It was very powerful, and caused space itself to distort. Moreover, it was emitting an extremely frightening aura. It was as if that dark black whirlwind was

capable of devouring everything.

“That’s an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, what a powerful Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Not only is Brother Moyuan utilizing two Ancestral Armaments simultaneously, he is actually also using two Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills at once. Furthermore, the other one is actually this powerful too,” Someone cried out in alarm.

He had already realized that the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill that Kong Doumoyuan was unleashing was even stronger than those ferocious beasts, that it was a higher tier Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

At the moment when the crowd were exclaiming in admiration, four more dark black whirlwinds appeared above Kong Doumoyuan in succession.

Adding them together, there were a total of five such black whirlwinds.

Suddenly, an old man among the crowd said, “That’s no ordinary Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, that is the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Protection Martial Skill, the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.”

“Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash? Isn’t the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash a slash attack? What Brother Moyuan is using right now are clearly whirlwinds, no?” Someone asked.

“The Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash is composed of black whirlwinds. When one is to attack with the whirlwinds, they will merge into a slash.”

“However, not only does the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash need a long time to set up, but one must also possess very powerful cultivation to support it.”

“Reportedly, this Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash is a martial skill at the pinnacle of Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills. It is said that

Martial Ancestors will find it very difficult to use it. Even in the Kong Heavenly Clan, only the True Immortal-level experts know it. I truly never expected that Brother Moyuan had actually grasped the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.”

“Never did I expect that Brother Moyuan was actually this amazing. His reputation as the strongest below True Immortals is truly well justified.”

“It would appear that even Chu Feng will be destined to suffer a crushing defeat today.”

After verifying that the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill Kong Doumoyuan was utilizing at that moment was the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Protection Martial Skill, an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill that only the Kong Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals were able to use, the crowd all revealed gazes of admiration as they looked at Kong Doumoyuan.

“Indeed, that is the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash. I have seen a Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder using it before.”

“However, when that Utmost Exalted Elder was using the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash, eight black whirlwinds appeared in the sky. Brother Moyuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash has only brought forth five whirlwinds. This means that Brother Moyuan still has yet to completely grasp that martial skill,” Another old man from among the crowd said.

“Quickly, look! Another black whirlwind has appeared! There’s a total of six now!” Suddenly, someone cried out while pointing at the sky.

The crowd looked up. Sure enough, another black whirlwind appeared above Kong Doumoyuan.

At that moment, there were a total of six whirlwinds.

Furthermore, after the sixth whirlwind appeared, a seventh whirlwind also appeared.

“Truly unbelievable! As a Martial Ancestor, he is actually able to form seven whirlwinds?”

“Kong Doumoyuan, is he really just a Martial Ancestor?”

At that moment, the bystanders were all stunned once again. Disbelief filled their eyes.

Merely, their disbelief was not aimed toward Chu Feng, but rather Kong Doumoyuan this time around. Their gazes were all focused onto Kong Doumoyuan.

Sthe exclamations of admiration and gazes of adoration from the crowd, the corners of Kong Doumoyuan’s lips rose into a proud smile.

However, right at that moment, the seventh whirlwind that he was still condensing suddenly dissipated.

“Crap.”

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan’s expression instantly changed. He knew very well that he had been careless and failed to condense the seventh whirlwind. He immediately started to concentrate and focus on condensing the seventh whirlwind again.

However, this time around, no matter how hard he tried, he was unable to condense the seventh whirlwind.

Seeing that Kong Doumoyuan was unable to condense the seventh whirlwind, the crowd that were exclaiming in admiration before all revealed awkward expressions.

It would appear that they had praised him too early, that they had exclaimed in admiration too early.

# Chapter 2515 - Stunning Everyone

---

At that moment, the crowd that were crying out in alarm earlier grew absolutely silent.

As for Kong Doumoyuan, he who was originally extremely proud grew incomparably embarrassed.

Humiliating. This was truly too humiliating. It was originally something worth flaunting. Yet now, due to his own carelessness, he had made an embarrassment of himself.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan, who had always cared deeply about his reputation, felt like killing himself out of shame.

“Cough, cough. Actually, being able to condense six black whirlwinds is already pretty decent.”

“Right, right, right. After all, that’s an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill only True Immortals are capable of unleashing. Brother Moyuan is only a Martial Ancestor. Yet, not only was he able to unleash it, he even managed to condense six whirlwinds, only two whirlwinds short from True Immortal-level experts. This is already extremely amazing.”

Seemingly afraid that Kong Doumoyuan would be placed in a very awkward situation, and because they were truly in admiration, the crowd started to praise Kong Doumoyuan again.

As expected, after hearing those praises, Kong Doumoyuan’s expression was no longer as ugly as before.

“What’s this? You failed? You are truly useless.”

Right at that moment, a voice filled with mockery was suddenly heard.

It was Chu Feng. Chu Feng was the one who had spoken those words.

“What do you mean by that?” Kong Doumoyuan asked furiously.

“What do I mean? Your martial skill is very powerful. However, it requires time to form. I decided not to stop you, and have deliberately given you time to form your martial skill because I wanted to see exactly what sort of martial skill you would bring forth.”

“However, I truly never expected that even though I’ve given you a chance, you would actually be so disappointing, that you actually failed,” Chu Feng shook his head with a disappointed expression.

He was no longer looking at Kong Doumoyuan with a gaze of someone looking at one’s enemy. Rather, he was looking at him as if he were looking at a disappointing fool. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s eyes were filled with disappointment.

“So Chu Feng actually managed to see through Brother Moyuan’s martial skill, and had deliberately decided not to stop him? This... how confident is he?”

“Could it be that Chu Feng actually possesses a means to handle the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash?”

The crowd came to a sudden realization after hearing what Chu Feng said. They realized that Chu Feng was not foolish, but rather that he had deliberately allowed Kong Doumoyuan to form his martial skill.

“The hell do you know?! I have already successfully unleashed my Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash, how is it a failure?!” Kong Doumoyuan argued.

“You’re actually willing to believe your own lies? Very well, then consider that I never said anything,” Chu Feng shrugged.

“Arrogant brat, I will have you experience the might of my Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash right now!!!” As Kong Doumoyuan spoke, the six black whirlwinds above his head started to fuse with one another.

“Snap~~~”

“Rumble~~~”

At that moment, black clouds were surging in the sky as lightning and thunder galloped about. The fusion of the six whirlwinds brought about a major storm.

Soon, the six whirlwinds fused into a sharp blade that stood horizontally in the sky.

That sharp blade was also black. In the beginning, the blade seemed to be formed of scattered wind. However, it then started to become more substantial.

The more substantial the blade became, the more frightening its aura became.

“Kong Doumoyuan is planning to attack. Why is Chu Feng not doing anything? Is he truly that confident, or is he that arrogant?”

Seeing that Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged, and he did not do anything to answer Kong Doumoyuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash that was about to be sent forth toward him, the crowd were confused.

They were unsure as to whether Chu Feng was really confident in being able to take on Kong Doumoyuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash, or whether Chu Feng was so arrogant that he decided to underestimate Kong Doumoyuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.

“Kong Doumoyuan, look, what is this?”

Right when Kong Doumoyuan was about to attack, a large golden sword appeared in Chu Feng’s left hand.

That sword was two feet wide and three meters long. It was larger than even an ordinary person.

Compared to the Stormwind Edge Chu Feng held with his right hand, the sword he took out was many times more domineering. Most importantly, the aura of that sword was actually not at all

inferior to the Stormwind Edge in Chu Feng's right hand.

Once the sword appeared, Chu Feng's aura immediately increased by a great amount. After all, Chu Feng was dual-wielding two top quality Ancestral Armaments right now.

"Amazing. Chu Feng is actually able to simultaneously wield two top quality Ancestral Armaments," The crowd gasped in admiration.

Compared to Kong Doumoyuan's Ancestral Armaments, the two Ancestral Armaments Chu Feng was using at that moment were much harder to subdue. They were, after all, two top quality Ancestral Armaments.

"Flame Dragon Greatsword!!!" Compared to the others, Kong Doumoyuan's expression became distorted. Incomparable fury emerged in his eyes. It was as if he was about to spray fire out of his eyes.

"Flame Dragon Greatsword, that's the name of that Ancestral Armament? Strange, why does that name sound so familiar?"

"Wait, Flame Dragon Greatsword, wasn't that the weapon of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Ancestor?"

Suddenly, the crowd recalled a matter.

"Ah? That's actually the Kong Heavenly Clan's ancestor's weapon, the Flame Dragon Greatsword?"

"But... but... wasn't the Flame Dragon Greatsword said to be lost for many years? Why would it be with Chu Feng?"

Once that matter was revealed, the crowd once again became confused.

They knew very well who the Kong Heavenly Clan's ancestor was. He was the person that had brought the Kong Heavenly Clan to its current level of status.

Although the Kong Heavenly Clan's ancestor could not match up



to Grandmaster Kai Hong and Zhan Haichuan in the history of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was an existence that was second only to the two of them.

He was a legendary individual who possessed the ability to rule over an era.

Thus, his Ancestral Armament and his techniques were all things that the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about.

Unfortunately, after the Kong Heavenly Clan's ancestor died, his weapon and his techniques that brought him his fame all disappeared.

Even the Kong Heavenly Clan's descendants had never used them again.

Thus, the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had all thought that his weapon had already been lost.

Why would a legendary weapon that had been lost for so many years suddenly appear in Chu Feng's hand?

“Rumble~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were astonished and confused, Chu Feng raised the Flame Dragon Greatsword up high.

The next moment, boundless martial power visible to the naked eye shot from the Flame Dragon Greatsword and toward the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

After the martial power was shot forth, it exploded in the sky. In an instant, the entire region was covered in a magnificent golden color.

Soon, black clouds began to gather above Chu Feng. Lightning started to flicker in the clouds.

The fusion of the black clouds and lightning formed a spectacular sight.

Most importantly, those clouds were no ordinary clouds, and that lightning was no ordinary lightning.

Although the clouds and lightning did not appear to be anything but normal, they were emitting extremely frightening auras.

In fact, they were not at all inferior to the aura of Kong Doumoyuan's Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.

"That martial skill, could it be... that it's the Kong Heavenly Clan's long lost Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement?"

An old man from among the crowd let out a cry of alarm. There was a tone of disbelief in his cry. Most importantly, that old man had an extremely astonished expression on his face.

"What?! That's the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement? How could that be?!"

That old man's cry of alarm brought forth an uproar amongst the crowd.

The people present knew very well what the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement was.

That was the technique that had allowed the Kong Heavenly Clan's ancestor to become famous, his consummate skill, something that had been lost to the Kong Heavenly Clan for many years.

As such, how could Chu Feng know it? Furthermore, how was he able to unleash it?

After all, it was already incredible that Chu Feng had obtained the Flame Dragon Greatsword.

If the martial skill Chu Feng had used was truly the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement, then it would truly be too astonishing.

At the moment when the crowd were unwilling to believe it to be

true, Chu Feng looked to that old man and said slowly, “Nice eyesight. This martial skill of mine is indeed called the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement.”

“Heavens! It’s actually the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement!!!”

At that moment, the people present, regardless of who they might be, and with the exception of Chu Feng, were all stunned.

# Chapter 2516 - Heaven-defying Ability

---

Astonishment. The crowd were so astonished that they all felt this to be incredible.

When Chu Feng personally admitted to his martial skill being the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement, the surrounding crowd was all instantly petrified.

At that moment, the crowd had been completely stunned by the situation before them.

What was going on?

Chu Feng's Flame Dragon Greatsword was something that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Ancestor had used.

As for the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement, it was also the Kong Heavenly Clan's Ancestor's most famous martial skill.

Why would these two things that had been lost to the Kong Heavenly Clan for many years suddenly appear in Chu Feng's hands?

Furthermore, who was Chu Feng? He was someone who viewed the Kong Heavenly Clan as his sworn enemy!!!

This dramatic reveal had truly baffled the surrounding crowd.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan shouted angrily, "Chu Feng, you despicable bastard, so you really were the one to intrude upon our Kong Heavenly Clan's forbidden area!!!"

His furious voice was even more ear-piercing than thunder.

In fact, even his body started to tremble.

Anger, indescribable anger.

As a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan, he knew very well that the Flame Dragon Greatsword and the Ancestral Taboo:

Thundercloud Displacement were not lost.

Rather, they were hidden in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range by their ancestor.

The fact that Chu Feng actually possessed those two things meant that the person to intrude upon the Grief Calamity Mountain Range back then was definitely Chu Feng.

“Despicable bastard? What do you mean by that?” Chu Feng showed a confused expression toward Kong Doumoyuan’s accusation.

“What do you mean? Let me ask you, do you dare tell me where exactly you obtained your Flame Dragon Greatsword and the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement?” Kong Doumoyuan asked furiously.

“That’s right. Exactly where did you obtain them?”

The people in the crowd all turned their gazes to Chu Feng. They all wanted to know the truth.

“Why wouldn’t I dare?” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“Then go ahead and tell me!” Kong Doumoyuan urged angrily.

He wanted everyone to know that Chu Feng had intruded upon their Kong Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area and stolen their Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Protection Treasures.

“This Flame Dragon Greatsword and the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement were imparted to me by Senior Kong Yingyi,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“This!!!”

Although Chu Feng was completely calm, the surrounding crowd were unable to remain calm.

The reason for that was because they all knew very well that Kong Yingyi was the Kong Heavenly Clan’s ancestor!!!

“You!!!”

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan was so furious that his face turned green. He knew clearly that Chu Feng had stolen their Clan Protection Treasures.

Yet, with the way Chu Feng had explained things, there was a completely different connotation.

Instead of stealing, Chu Feng made it sound as if he had rightfully obtained them.

How could Kong Doumoyuan possibly accept this?

“That senior also stated that his descendants were all incompetent. He had waited many years, but none of his descendants were able to pass through the grand formation he had left behind to obtain his inheritance.”

“He said that since I, on the other hand, managed to pass through his grand formation, I was the fated individual. As such, he decided to pass on his inheritance to me,” Chu Feng said.

“Bullshit! Why would our Kong Heavenly Clan’s ancestor pass on his inheritance to an outsider like you?!” Kong Doumoyuan was so furious that he started to shiver from head to toe.

He felt that Chu Feng was not only making up a story, but he was also insulting their Kong Heavenly Clan at the same time.

“What? So that senior was actually your Kong Heavenly Clan’s ancestor? Then the incompetent descendants that he spoke of also include you, no?” Chu Feng said with a surprised expression.

“Despicable bastard, don’t you show off your so-called ability to spout nonsense. Today... I will use my strength to retrieve all that belongs to our Kong Heavenly Clan.”

After he finished saying those words, the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash over Kong Doumoyuan’s head was slashed toward Chu Feng.

Once the slash was shot forth, it immediately started to rapidly increase in size. In the blink of an eye, it became so enormous that it covered the sky and earth.

As for the aura that it emitted, it was as if it could destroy all of heaven and earth. It was extremely frightening.

Faced with that attack, Chu feng was not to be outdone. “Humph,” He snorted coldly. As his eyes flickered with lightning, the black clouds filled with over ten thousand galloping lightning strikes came flying down while covering the sky.

The might of his attack was actually even stronger than Kong Doumoyuan’s Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.

“Rumble~~~”

In the blink of an eye, the two colossus-sized attacks collided.

The dark black slash and a pitch-black cloud interweaved together. Apart from the lightning, the only thing one could sense was the gloominess and fearsomeness.

Not to mention the center of the collision, merely the energy ripples caused Chu Feng and Kong Doumoyuan to be beaten back repeatedly.

When even the two of them were unable to withstand the energy ripples, one could very well imagine how disastrous it would be if either martial skill were to land on their bodies.

That said, between a battle of experts, there would inevitably be a victor and a loser. As such, these two Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills said to be peak masterpieces would also have a difference in strength.

Inside the ripples, the black clouds and lightning were decreasing. However, the power from the slash was also decreasing. Moreover, it was decreasing even faster.

After the Blackwind Slash completely disappeared, the

Thundercloud Displacement still remained. Furthermore, it began to move toward Kong Doumoyuan.

“Chu Feng has won. As expected of the Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement. Its might has reached such a frightening state. Even the Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash was unable to match up against it.”

The crowd started to exclaim in admiration. After all, the outcome of the showdown between Ancestral Taboos had been determined.

However, they did not think that Kong Doumoyuan would be defeated just like this. The reason for that was because they knew Kong Doumoyuan very well, and knew that he was not someone who would admit defeat just like that.

“Zzzzz~”

Sure enough, at the moment when Chu Feng’s Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement was about reach Kong Doumoyuan, a pair of lightning wings suddenly extended out from behind Kong Doumoyuan’s back.

When the Thunder Wings appeared, Kong Doumoyuan’s battle power instantly increased by a tier.

“Snap~”

Kong Doumoyuan suddenly thrust forth the Ancestral Armament spear that he held in his right hand.

A golden dragon flew out. That golden dragon was extremely mighty and oppressive. It was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

In terms of the martial skill itself, that golden dragon was naturally no match for Chu Feng’s Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement.

However, Kong Doumoyuan’s battle power was extremely strong at the moment; he was an entire tier above Chu Feng.



Furthermore, over half of the power behind Chu Feng's Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement had been neutralized by Kong Doumoyuan's Ancestral Taboo: Blackwind Slash.

Thus, that golden dragon managed to easily pierce through Chu Feng's Ancestral Taboo: Thundercloud Displacement.

The black clouds were scattered as the golden dragon soared into the sky.

“Roar~~~”

The golden dragon roared. With its mouth wide open, intense killing intent and unstoppable might, it began to charge toward Chu Feng to devour him.

Seeing this scene, the crowd felt that the outcome of the match had been decided.

After all, there was a difference of an entire level of battle power between them. Unless Chu Feng possessed a heaven-defying technique, he would definitely not be able to block the incoming attack.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right when the golden dragon was about to approach Chu Feng...

A loud explosion was suddenly heard, and that golden dragon was actually hacked in two.

“That is?!”

At that moment, the crowd was completely shocked. They immediately turned to inspect what had happened.

Upon looking, they discovered that a golden-bright and dazzling giant axe was actually before Chu Feng.

That axe was extremely imposing, and was emitting an indescribable aura.

Most importantly, that giant axe was actually able to easily hack that golden dragon apart. This meant only one thing.

“Chu Feng, he... he... he really possesses a heaven-defying technique! He was actually really able to contend against someone with battle power an entire level above him!!!”

# Chapter 2517 - Surprise Attack With Lightning Mark

---

“Kong Doumoyuan, since I, Chu Feng, dared to come here today, that means I possess certainty in being able to fight against you.”

“If you thought that you would be able to defeat me because your cultivation is a level above mine, then you are simply delusional.”

“The battle between you and I... has only just begun.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he controlled the Ancient Era's War Axe and slashed it at Kong Doumoyuan.

With battle power one level above Chu Feng, Kong Doumoyuan would naturally retaliate against Chu Feng's attacks. He began to send Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills toward Chu Feng nonstop.

However, regardless of what sort of Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill he sent forth, they were easily hacked down by Chu Feng.

Seeing that the Ancient Era's War Axe was growing closer and closer to him, Kong Doumoyuan was unable to continue to stand his ground. He began to fall back while continuing to send forth Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills to slow down the incoming Ancient Era's War Axe.

“Bastard!”

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan had a completely unreconciled expression. He was feeling extremely sullen.

Originally, he had thought that he would be able to easily defeat Chu Feng after going all-out. Never did he expect for Chu Feng to take out a thing like that, a thing that was actually able to overcome an entire level of battle power. Not only was Chu Feng able to contend against him, but he was even suppressing him.

“Exactly what is that?! How could it be this ferocious?!”

“This overwhelming aura, this sensation of being under a ruler...”

“That is most definitely not an ordinary martial skill. Even Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills should not be this powerful.”

“Could this be a secret skill?! But, even secret skills shouldn’t be this frighteningly powerful.”

As Chu Feng and Kong Doumoyuan fought, the crowd were unable to calm themselves. They all wanted to know exactly what that technique Chu Feng was using was, and exactly what its origin was for it to be so ferociously powerful, for it to be able to shatter their understanding of martial skills.

“It seems that Chu Feng not only obtained the Ancient Era’s War Clan’s martial skills, he also obtained this sort of thing.”

At the moment when the crowd were all guessing as to exactly what Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Axe was, Old Freak Heng Hui, who had not said anything for a long time, spoke again.

“This is also from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?!”

Old Freak Heng Hui’s words came like a boulder that fell onto the surface of a calm lake. Immediately, a huge wave was raised. All of the members of the crowd turned their gazes toward Old Freak Heng Hui.

“Back then, Lord Zhan Haichuan possessed a true trump card. That was not an ordinary martial skill. Instead, it was a secret skill.”

“That secret skill was called the Ancient Era’s War Spear. Unless he was to not use the Ancient Era’s War Spear, when he did, regardless of how powerful his opponents might be, they would all suffer the same fate of death.”

“Although Chu Feng’s heaven-defying technique is an enormous axe and not an enormous spear, it greatly resembles the recorded descriptions of Lord Zhan Haichuan’s secret technique, the

Ancient Era's War Spear.”

“Thus, it is no wonder that axe is this heaven-defyingly powerful. The reason for that is because... that is most definitely a secret skill from the Ancient Era's War Clan,” Old Freak Heng Hui said.

“So that's the case. That's actually a secret skill from the Ancient Era's War Clan. No wonder, no wonder.”

“Chu Feng had obtained the inheritances of Grandmaster Kai Hong, Zhan Haichuan and the Kong Heavenly Clan's Ancestor.”

“When he becomes a True Immortal, who could possibly match him? He will likely really end up being the absolute ruler of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

At the moment when the crowd were astonished, they also felt endlessly excited.

After all, they were witnessing a secret skill comparable to Zhan Haichuan's strongest ability.

Even though they greatly disliked Chu Feng, and could also be considered to be Chu Feng's enemies, as they were Kong Doumoyuan's friends, upon considering how frighteningly powerful Chu Feng was, they had made the decision that if Chu Feng were to win the battle, they would definitely not become Chu Feng's enemy.

Instead, they would try their best to turn their former hostility with Chu Feng into friendship, and try their best to deepen their relationship.

“Rumble~~~~”

At the moment when the crowd were pondering, another loud explosion sounded from the sky.

Accompanying that loud explosion was a golden radiance that filled the sky.

The golden radiance illuminated the entire sky and earth. The

oppressive might from that radiance caused the crowd present to tremble.

However, that golden radiance... was another one of Kong Doumoyuan's defeats.

That's right, Kong Doumoyuan had unleashed another Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill toward Chu Feng. Yet, it was also easily hacked into two by Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe.

"Damn it! Exactly what the hell is that?! How could it be this hard to deal with?! Could it be some sort of treasure?!"

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan's complexion had turned pale. Compared to before, he was much weaker.

Regardless of how powerful he was, regardless of how robust his foundation was, he was still unable to support himself through using Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills continuously.

To his great helplessness, Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe seemed to be unstoppable. Regardless of what sort of attack he used, he was unable to breach Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe. Before the Ancient Era's War Axe, he could only flee in disarray in a battered and exhausted state.

At that moment, he felt a massive headache.

Kong Doumoyuan still had one final technique that he had yet to use. However, he knew very well that Chu Feng most definitely possessed that same technique.

As it would be his final trump card, he must catch Chu Feng off guard with a surprise attack. Else... he would likely suffer a crushing defeat by Chu Feng's hand.

"At the very least, you're a rank nine Martial Ancestor. Why would you continue to flee nonstop? Didn't you say that you're going to kill me? Why don't you try killing me?"

As Chu Feng controlled the Ancient Era's War Axe to chase after

Kong Doumoyuan to kill him, he was also humiliating Kong Doumoyuan.

“Chu Feng, let’s consider it that you’ve won today. Is it possible for us to stop fighting now? If you are to do that, I can plead for leniency for you to my clan’s Clan Chief. I will ask him to no longer look further into what you did back then,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“He’s actually begging for forgiveness. This...”

Once Kong Doumoyuan’s words were said, the expression of the crowd present all changed. They looked to one another and discovered that they all had bewildered and confused expressions.

This was strange. With their understanding of Kong Doumoyuan, he was not someone who was willing to admit defeat.

Furthermore, he was facing Chu Feng. At that moment, the crowd were all at a complete loss.

“I, Chu Feng, have never done anything that was unrighteous toward your Kong Heavenly Clan. It has only been your Kong Heavenly Clan that has been unrighteous toward me.”

“Thus, it’s not for your Kong Heavenly Clan to decide whether to look further into the grievances between your Kong Heavenly Clan and I.”

“Instead, if your Kong Heavenly Clan does not present to me an answer capable of satisfying me, then I, Chu Feng, will definitely not be willing to let this matter go.”

“Furthermore, as you’ve injured my friends, I will definitely not spare you,” Chu Feng’s words revealed his determination.

That was, that he was not planning to spare Kong Doumoyuan regardless.

“In that case, you are insistent on killing me?” Kong Doumoyuan asked.

“That is not up to me to decide,” Chu Feng said.

“If not you, then who?” Kong Doumoyuan asked.

“My friend, Zhao Hong,” As Chu Feng spoke, he turned his gaze toward Zhao Hong.

Chu Feng had already decided that he would let Zhao Hong determine whether he should kill Kong Doumoyuan, Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and that Zhou Fukong.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was heard. Turning toward the direction of the explosion, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

It was Kong Doumoyuan. At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan’s appearance was completely different from his previously sorry state.

A bizarre golden radiance was being emitted from his feet. The reason why it could be said to be bizarre was because the golden radiance was wiggling nonstop.

Upon closer inspection, it seemed to be two dragons. His feet were on top of the two dragons.

It turned out that it was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, a kind of movement Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

Those two dragons greatly increased Kong Doumoyuan’s speed. He was so fast that even Chu Feng was caught off guard.

At that moment, the two spears Kong Doumoyuan held in his hands had changed completely.

The two spears were both covered with a purple flame. It was also an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Two Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills were attached to the two Ancestral Armaments, greatly increasing their power.

Most importantly, Kong Doumoyuan’s Thunder Armor and



Thunder Wings both seemed to be much more magnificent than before.

In other words, not only had Kong Doumoyuan recovered his energy, but his battle power seemed to have also increased to a whole new level.

All of this originated from the mark formed from the gathering of lightning on his forehead.

Upon closer inspection, it was the character 'Mortal.'

It was the power that Heavenly Bloodline possessors had after reaching the Martial Ancestor realm, the Lightning Mark!!!

Kong Doumoyuan's battle power was increased by his Lightning Mark.

It turned out that using his Lightning Mark was his final attack. It was also the surprise attack that he had planned for so long.

# Chapter 2518 - This Is Divine Mark

---

“Heeahhh!!!”

Everything happened too fast. By the time Chu Feng managed to react, Kong Doumoyuan had already dodged the Ancient Era’s War Axe and arrived before him.

The oppressive might emitted by those two Ancestral Armaments gave Chu Feng a fatal sensation.

It was a very stifling and unbearable sensation.

Even though the Ancestral Armament spears had yet to pierce into Chu Feng’s body, Chu Feng was already feeling the aura of death.

Defeat. Chu Feng was able to fight against Kong Doumoyuan for so long not because of his own strength, but rather because of the Ancient Era’s War Axe.

And now, Kong Doumoyuan’s speed had surpassed that of the Ancient Era’s War Axe, and he had successfully avoided it.

Without the protection of the Ancient Era’s War Axe, even if Chu Feng were to form his Lightning Mark, it would be useless.

“Chu Feng, your carelessness is what has caused your defeat,” Kong Doumoyuan mocked.

He had a very proud expression on his face.

Showing no mercy, he thrust his spears toward Chu Feng’s dantian.

His goal was very clear. He was planning to cripple Chu Feng’s cultivation.

“So it was actually a diversionary tactic. Kong Doumoyuan’s admitting defeat earlier was merely so that he could divert Chu Feng’s attention. Everything was for the sake of this surprise attack. Chu Feng was careless, that’s why he’s going to be

defeated.”

Upon seeing all that had happened, the crowd finally realized what had happened.

Kong Doumoyuan had held back on using his Lightning Mark the entire time because he knew that as Chu Feng was a Martial Ancestor, he too possessed the power of a Lightning Mark.

If he were to use his Lightning Mark openly, it would serve no purpose. Only by catching Chu Feng off-guard would he be able to make him pay bitterly.

And now, it was very clear that Kong Doumoyuan’s scheme had succeeded.

“Puchi~~~”

Suddenly, a muffled sound was heard, and a spray of blood appeared.

“Ahh~~~”

Then, a miserable scream sounded.

However, at that moment, the crowd were all tongue-tied. They were completely stunned.

The reason for that was because the person that was struck was not Chu Feng. Rather, it was Kong Doumoyuan.

It was the Ancient Era’s War Axe. The Ancient Era’s War Axe had chased over and hacked down at Kong Doumoyuan from behind.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan had been split open from head to toe. Only a small portion of his bones were still barely keeping his badly damaged body together.

Blood was flowing from his body uncontrollably, and dyeing his clothes crimson red.

His Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and even the Lightning Mark on his forehead had all disappeared.

He was seriously injured, and had completely lost the ability to continue fighting against Chu Feng. Merely, he had a completely baffled expression on his face.

“How could this be? I’ve already dodged that strange axe of yours. Even if you were to condense your Lightning Mark, it should still be impossible for that axe to be able to catch up to me. How? How?!”

Kong Doumoyuan was unable to understand how the Ancient Era’s War Axe was able to catch up to him.

“That is?!”

At the moment when Kong Doumoyuan raised his head and saw the current Chu Feng, he was immediately stunned.

At that moment, he did not dare to believe his eyes, did not dare to believe what he was seeing.

It was as he had anticipated, Chu Feng had condensed his Lightning Mark.

Merely, the Lightning Mark on Chu Feng’s forehead was completely different from his own.

The lightning that made up the Lightning Mark on Chu Feng’s forehead was flickering violently. The aura it emitted was countless times more powerful than his own Lightning Mark.

Most importantly, the Lightning Mark on Chu Feng’s forehead was not the character ‘Mortal.’ Rather, it was the character ‘Divine.’

“Divine? How could there be a Lightning Mark with the character ‘Divine?’”

Kong Doumoyuan was dumbfounded. He was truly frightened by the dazzling Lightning Mark before him.

As a member of the Kong Heavenly Clan, as a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline, he naturally knew there were different ranks

between Lightning Marks.

If one wanted to form a Lightning Mark, one must train in a Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique.

As for Self-Punishing Mysterious Techniques, they were separated into three levels according to their strength. Respectively, they were the Mortal Punishment, Earthen Punishment and Heaven Punishment.

Not to mention the difficulty, the higher tier a Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique was, the more precious it was.

Not to mention the others, even the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's two strongest Heavenly Clans, the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan, only possessed a Mortal Punishment Mysterious Technique.

They did not even possess an Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique.

As for a Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, it was simply a legend to them.

Thus, in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there had simply never been anyone that had trained in the Earthen Punishment Mysterious Technique. Naturally, there was no one capable of forming an Earthen level Lightning Mark.

Yet, Chu Feng was actually able to form a Lightning Mark with the character 'Divine'. Wouldn't this mean that Chu Feng had formed a Divine level Lightning Mark, that he had trained in a Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?

But, Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques were something that Kong Doumoyuan had never even heard of before.

In his mind, a Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique simply did not exist.

Yet, the character 'Divine' on Chu Feng's forehead was clearly

right in front of him.

Furthermore, the enormous aura emitted by that Lightning Mark made him feel so extremely small. He felt so small and weak that he started to fear Chu Feng from the bottom of his heart.

It was as if he felt that he was fundamentally inferior to Chu Feng.

It was a sort of humility and submission that originated from the depths of his soul. It was like how a soldier feels when they see their general, how a subject feels when they see their ruler.

Not to mention that he didn't have the ability to continue fighting Chu Feng, even if he did, he would still not be able to fight against Chu Feng.

He had lost all will to battle.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, Kong Doumoyuan's body fell from the sky and crashed ruthlessly onto the ground. When he landed, he was shivering nonstop.

The sensation he felt from Chu Feng was still lingering within him.

Furthermore, his mouth was open, and he was muttering one sentence repeatedly.

“Impossible, impossible, impossible...”

“I must've seen it wrong, I must've seen it wrong...”

Seeing Kong Doumoyuan reacting like this, Chu Feng did not continue to attack him. Instead, he turned around and cast his gaze toward the direction of the palace hall.

“Look, on Chu Feng's forehead, that is...?”

“Is that a Lightning Mark? But... how could there be a Lightning Mark like that?”

“Could it be that the strange yet powerful aura he is emitting right now was brought forth by that Lightning Mark?”

After Chu Feng turned around, the crowd were finally able to see Chu Feng’s Lightning Mark. Upon seeing the dazzling character created by Chu Feng’s Lightning Mark, their hearts all trembled.

At that moment, the bodies of all the people present were involuntarily shaking.

It was as if a group of meek sheep had encountered a savage ferocious beast, and were feeling fear from the bottoms of their souls.

Chu Feng completely ignored the crowd’s fear-filled gazes.

He first put his Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword away. Then, stepping on air, he began to walk toward the crowd.

Although Chu Feng had put his two Ancestral Armaments away, his aura did not decrease in the slightest.

Not only was Chu Feng surrounded by lightning, but the Ancient Era’s War Axe was still floating above him.

With a single thought, he would be able to send the Ancient Era’s War Axe to attack, destroying everything in its path.

The current Chu Feng was like an unparalleled God of War. Not to mention ordinary individuals, even gods and demons would have to shrink back from him.

“Chu Feng, I, I... I was wrong. Please give me a chance. I will never dare to do something like that again.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s arrival, the person that was most scared would be none other than Zhou Fukong.

Earlier, he was eager to fight against Chu Feng. Yet, at that moment he had completely lost his will to battle.

With a ‘putt,’ he knelt in midair, and began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

It was not that he was a coward. Rather, as even Kong Doumoyuan was no match for Chu Feng, he knew very well that even if he were to attack Chu Feng, he was destined to be defeated.

Rather than suffering serious injuries, it was better that he beg for forgiveness to preserve his life before they even started fighting.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, we are merely guests invited here by Kong Doumoyuan. The ones torturing Zhao Hong earlier were all Kong Doumoyuan and the others. We are truly unrelated to this.”

“That’s right. Young Hero Chu Feng, you must not harm the innocent.”

In fact, it was not only Zhou Fukong who started to beg for forgiveness. Even some of the older generation’s experts started to beg for forgiveness.

Even though they were all grand and famous characters in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Even though they were individuals that possessed much greater seniority than Chu Feng.

When faced with Chu Feng, they were still afraid from the bottom of their hearts.

Thus, to avoid being implicated, they truly did not know what to do apart from providing an explanation for themselves and begging Chu Feng for forgiveness.

After all, they knew very well that when faced with the current Chu Feng, they would have no hope of victory even if they were to all join hands against him.



# Chapter 2519 - Cold-blooded and Ruthless

---

Honestly, it was quite ironic.

Before Chu Feng came, the great majority of the people there had looked down on him.

However, at that moment, there was not a single person present that was not afraid of Chu Feng.

As Chu Feng walked over, the crowd were not only trembling with fear, they also hurriedly moved to either side in fear that Chu Feng would attack them.

At that moment, a path emerged from the crowd, a path toward the palace.

Chu Feng walked through the path and past Zhou Fukong and the others. He did not stop, nor did he try to make things difficult for them.

It was as if... Chu Feng was ignoring them.

Chu Feng continued forward, straight for the palace, straight for Zhao Hong.

At that moment, the crowd started to rejoice. No matter what, Chu Feng had, at the very least, not killed them yet. This was already an enormously fortune among this great misfortune.

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing that Chu Feng had entered the palace hall, an old man’s body shifted and entered the void.

Evidently, that individual was trying to seize the opportunity to escape.

As for Chu Feng, he did not even bother to turn around. Instead, with his back facing the crowd, he shot forth a palm strike.

“Bang~~~~”

The palm strike exploded in the distant space. It turned into energy ripples that started to wreak havoc through space.

As the energy ripples wreaked havoc, a figure appeared out of thin air. Like a dying dog, that figure fell from the sky and ruthlessly crashed onto the surface.

It was a person. His clothes had been completely shattered by the explosion. His body had turned pitch-black as his flesh was burned. Furthermore, he was twitching nonstop.

As for that individual, he was none other than that old man who had entered the void in an attempt to escape earlier.

Although he was still alive, he had been seriously injured.

“Sssss~~~”

At that moment, the crowd’s hearts tightened. No one dared to think about escaping again.

One should know that the old man that had entered the void and was then seriously injured by Chu Feng was a peak Martial Ancestor.

However, such a peak Martial Ancestor was unable to even withstand a single palm strike from Chu Feng.

In fact, when Chu Feng attacked, he did not even bother to look back. Yet, an attack with his back facing his target was actually able to seriously injure his target.

From this, the crowd once again experienced how frightening Chu Feng was.

After shooting down that escapee, Chu Feng still didn’t say anything. At that moment, he had arrived before Zhao Hong.

“Clank~~~”

Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and the cage shattered into pieces. At the same time, the chains binding Zhao Hong were also shattered by him.

Those were special chains. They were not very strong. Merely, when they were used to tie up seriously injured individuals, they would be able to restrict their cultivation.

After the chains were shattered, Zhao Hong's cultivation rapidly recovered. As for her injuries, they were merely superficial injuries, and not serious.

There was simply no need for Chu Feng to heal Zhao Hong's injuries. She sat cross-legged and began to operate her world spirit power. Soon, the insects within her were all driven out, and her flesh started to heal.

In merely the blink of an eye, Zhao Hong returned to normal. Not to mention not having any scars on her face, there was not even a speck of dust on her face. Even her clothes that were pierced through by the sword had been restored to normal.

"Chu Feng, you damned bastard, so you were actually going to become this powerful after reaching rank eight Martial Ancestor. Why didn't you tell me sooner?"

"You made me think that you were only going to come out of your closed-door training after reaching rank nine Martial Ancestor. That's why I decided to come here myself. Unfortunately, I ended up falling into that Kong Doumoyuan's trap."

Although Zhao Hong was complaining, she was brimming with smiles on her face.

As Chu Feng's close friend, she would naturally be very happy for Chu Feng to find out that he would possess such overwhelming abilities after two years.

"My apologies. I should've explained myself to you beforehand. I've made you suffer," Even though he knew that Zhao Hong was merely joking, Chu Feng was feeling sorry from the bottom of his heart.

He felt that although Zhan Hong was reckless to come by herself, it was because she was worried for Wang Qiang. He was able to understand that.

If he had told Zhao Hong that he would definitely be able to defeat Kong Doumoyuan once he reached rank eight Martial Ancestor, then Zhao Hong would not have ended up in her earlier miserable state.

Fortunately, he came right on time. What would've happened if he was late?

If he were to truly come late, then he would likely end up recovering Zhao Hong's corpse.

If Zhao Hong were to die, how could Chu Feng possibly face Wang Qiang?

"Enough, you. I was merely joking. I was clearly the one in the wrong, why are you apologizing? You're making me feel uncomfortable," Zhao Hong had a smile on her face as she punched Chu Feng's chest. Then, she actually revealed an apologetic expression on her face.

It could be seen that Zhao Hong knew that she had made a grave mistake.

"You've already suffered. This is not something that can be changed. However, we must take revenge."

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned his gaze to the crowd behind, "How do you want to handle these people?"

Hearing those words, Zhou Fukong and the others that were standing there in a well-behaved manner all felt their hearts tighten.

Sure enough, it was as they had worried, Chu Feng did not plan to leave the matter at that.

However, there was nothing they could do. Faced with such a

powerful Chu Feng, they were truly nothing more than fish and meat on the chopping block.

“Young Hero Chu Feng, Miss Zhao Hong, we were truly only invited here by Kong Doumoyuan. We never had the intention to disrespect you all.”

“Miss Zhao Hong, this old man was not among the crowd to torture you earlier. Please inform Young Hero Chu Feng properly of this so that the innocent are not harmed.”

Many among the people present feared death. Seeing that the situation had turned bad, they no longer cared about their status, and started tearing up. They pretended to be pitiful, and cried to gain sympathy.

“Shut up! I will cut off the tongue of he who dares to utter another word!”

Suddenly, a stern shout was heard. Like a sudden clap of thunder, that shout echoed in the sky for a very long time.

At that moment, those people begging for forgiveness all shut their mouths immediately. Those who were planning to start begging for forgiveness did not dare to open their mouths.

It was not that they were cowards. Merely, the person who shouted at them to shut up was Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was someone who dared to do anything. As such, how could they dare to go against his order?

“Zhao Hong, say, how do you want to handle them?” Chu Feng looked to Zhao Hong and asked again.

“I don’t care about the others. However...” As Zhao Hong spoke, she pointed to Kong Doumoyuan, Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and Zhou Fukong, “him, him, him and him... they must all die today.”

Hearing those words, the expressions of Dugu Jianxu and the

others immediately turned ashen.

This was especially true for Zhou Fukong. He was so scared that his eyes were wide open, and he was tongue-tied speechless. He started sweating profusely. His legs started shaking so hard that he was unable to even stand stably, nearly falling from the sky.

“You all hear that?” Chu Feng turned his gaze over and cast his gaze over Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk, Zhou Fukong and Kong Doumoyuan.

Sensing Chu Feng’s gaze that was filled with killing intent, Dugu Jianxu and the others turned green with fear. They knew that Chu Feng was truly planning to kill. It was clear... they would not be able to escape a calamity.

At that moment, they were filled with regret. They regretted that they insulted and made things difficult for Zhao Hong.

Originally, it was only a grudge between Kong Doumoyuan and Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. However, they were now wrapped up in it too.

If they could choose again, they would definitely not have made things difficult for Zhao Hong. Unfortunately... they had no chance to choose again.

“Chu Feng, all of this is Kong Doumoyuan’s doing. He was the one to capture Zhao Hong. He was also the one to torture Zhao Hong. This is unrelated to us. Why must you be so forceful and insistent on killing us?”

“Chu Feng, you really shouldn’t do this. Let’s just drop this matter here today. We can talk things over. If you are to kill us, you will not have an easy time in the future either. You must definitely reconsider things.”

“Brother Chu Feng, calm down, calm down. You must not allow your emotions to affect your decisions.”

Dugu Jianxu and the others started to explain themselves and

started to urge Chu Feng to reconsider killing them. They truly did not want to die.

However, as if he could not hear them, Chu Feng did not bother to respond to their words at all.

“Dugu Jianxu, you are the most talkative. Let’s start with you.”

Chu Feng’s gaze turned to Dugu Jianxu. He began to walk toward Dugu Jianxu. Zhao Hong was following behind him.

“.....”

Hearing those words, Dugu Jianxu’s body started to tremble violently. Then, he felt that his body had turned ice-cold. It was as if even his soul was trembling.

He felt that the current Chu Feng was like a cold-blooded and ruthless beast. He only saw his prey in his eyes. As for that prey, it was him... Dugu Jianxu.

# Chapter 2520 - Distinction

---

“Chu Feng, you’ve already made an enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan. If you are to kill us today, you will have made enemies of all four of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s tier one powers. At that time, you will not be able to find anywhere safe.”

“There was originally no hatred between us. As such, there really isn’t a need for you to go that far. It’s still not too late to stop now.”

As Dugu Jianxu urged Chu Feng not to kill him, he started to frantically attempt to escape in midair.

As for Chu Feng, he did not bother to stop Dugu Jianxu from trying his best to distance himself.

The reason for that was because Dugu Jianxu’s cultivation had already been crippled by him. The remnants of his cultivation were simply insufficient for him to fear.

While Chu Feng was walking through the air in a very deemphasizing manner, his speed was extremely fast. He was many times faster than the fleeing Dugu Jianxu.

Thus, in merely the blink of an eye, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong had arrived before Dugu Jianxu.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng grabbed Dugu Jianxu’s neck and lifted him up.

At that moment, Dugu Jianxu’s body was trembling nonstop. One could tell with one’s naked eye that he was truly scared.

“Chu-Chu Feng, you must reconsider. If you are to kill me today, our Immortal Sword School will definitely not spare you,” Dugu Jianxu threatened.

However, Chu Feng reacted as if he did not hear his threat at all. He turned to Zhao Hong and said, “It would do to leave him an



intact corpse.”

“Intact corpse?”

“Could it be that Chu Feng and Zhao Hong are really planning to kill Dugu Jianxu?”

“Dugu Jianxu is one of the most important people in the Immortal Sword School, the future successor to the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster. If Chu Feng and Zhao Hong are to kill him, the Immortal Sword School will definitely not let things go.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was truly preparing to kill, the bystanders grew even more frightened.

When even the bystanders were scared, one could very well imagine what sort of expression Dugu Jianxu currently had. He was completely terrified.

“Chu Feng, I beg of you, please, please spare me.”

“If you are to spare me, our Immortal Sword School will form an alliance with you. Even helping you take care of the Kong Heavenly Clan will be possible,” Dugu Jianxu begged in a very pathetic manner.

At that moment, he did not possess the awe-inspiring might of a genius. He was truly petty and low.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, Zhao Hong shot forth her palm. Her palm landed on Dugu Jianxu’s face.

At that moment, Dugu Jianxu’s complexion turned red. Then his mouth opened, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

The next moment, his eyes rolled back, and his aura completely ceased. Dugu Jianxu was no longer living.

Zhao Hong had really killed Dugu Jianxu.

“She actually really killed him!!!”

“This... this Zhao Hong is truly ruthless.”

The crowd were feeling endless fear. A change appeared in the gazes with which they looked to Chu Feng and Zhao Hong.

If one must describe the change, then it would be that they felt even more terrified of Chu Feng and Zhao Hong now.

It was one thing to think about doing something, and another thing to actually do it.

Over the years, there had been a lot of people that wanted to kill Dugu Jianxu. There were also many that announced they'd kill him.

However, Zhao Hong was the only one to actually kill Dugu Jianxu.

Of course, the crowd knew very well that even though it was Zhao Hong who had killed Dugu Jianxu, the main culprit was actually Chu Feng.

If Chu Feng was not backing up Zhao Hong, Zhao Hong would not have been able to kill Dugu Jianxu.

“Who do you want to kill next?” Chu Feng turned to ask Zhao Hong.

“The next one will be him,” Zhao Hong turned her gaze to the Wine-Meat Monk.

The Wine-Meat Monk's expression turned ashen. Seeing that Dugu Jianxu had been killed, he knew very well that he was in imminent peril.

At that moment, he simply did not dare to use his Buddha's Heavenly Temple to threaten Chu Feng and Zhao Hong. The reason for that was because he knew that it would be useless.

In a moment of desperation, he actually decided to disregard his injuries and face to directly kneel and beg, “No, no, no, don't, don't, don't kill me, don't kill me.”

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived before the Wine-Meat Monk with Zhao Hong.

“Paa~~~”

Showing no quarter, Zhao Hong shot forth her palm and it ruthlessly landed on the Wine-Meat Monk’s face.

“Puu~~~”

The Wine-Meat Monk also let out a mouthful of blood. Then, like Dugu Jianxu, his body grew powerless, and he died.

After killing two people in succession, Zhao Hong did not reveal the slightest intention of stopping. Furthermore, the corner of her mouth was raised into a smile of wanting to continue.

It must be said that even though the current Zhao Hong had the appearance of a harmless beauty, that smile had caused her nature as a demonic woman to come to light.

At that moment, the crowd all realized that it was not only Chu Feng who was ruthless, this woman by the name of Zhao Hong was an equally ruthless character that would not blink upon killing.

“The next one is you,” Zhao Hong looked to Zhou Fukong.

“Damned bastard, what do you all take me, Zhou Fukong, as?” Zhou Fukong shouted furiously.

Then, he unleashed his Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and Mortal level Lightning Mark.

Not only did he unleash all of his Heavenly Bloodline’s power at once, he also took out two Ancestral Armaments.

They was a sword and a blade. Although they were inferior to Chu Feng’s Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword, the sword and blade both possessed extraordinary quality.

Zhou Fukong could be said to have gone all-out at once. The aura

that he currently emitted was capable of suppressing everyone apart from Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, did the two of you think that I, Zhou Fukong, am the same as those two pushovers?!”

“I’m not someone you can kill just because you want to!” Zhou Fukong shouted angrily. He had the appearance of someone putting forth a final life and death struggle.

“Oh? Is that so?” Faced with the current Zhou Fukong, Chu Feng smiled faintly. That smile contained a faint amount of mockery.

Upon seeing Chu Feng’s mocking smile, Zhou Fukong’s heart tightened once more. He felt as if his newly ignited flame had been instantly extinguished by a large basin of cold water.

The confidence that he had gained from unleashing all his strength was completely shattered the moment he saw Chu Feng’s smile.

He suddenly felt himself to be ridiculous.

When even Kong Doumoyuan was no match for Chu Feng, how could he possibly be a match for Chu Feng?

Not to mention a life and death struggle, even injuring Chu Feng and Zhao Hong would be an extravagant hope.

“Woosh~~~”

Thinking of that, Zhou Fukong’s body suddenly shifted. He was trying to escape.

Zhou Fukong was very wise. He knew that victory was impossible. Thus, it would be better to take this opportunity to escape.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

At the moment Zhou Fukong started escaping, a figure of lightning and an enormous axe rapidly chased after him.

In an instant, heaven and earth started shaking. The clouds were rolling with lightning. They were actually chasing after Zhou Fukong alongside that figure of lightning.

Although the clouds were ordinary black clouds, the lightning within them had nine different colors. They were exceptionally dazzling.

The speed of the black clouds was not at all inferior to the speed of that figure of lightning.

The reason for that was because the figure of lightning was Chu Feng, and the black clouds were Chu Feng's might. The two of them were one. As such, their speed would naturally be equally matched.

Although Chu Feng had not unleashed his Ancestral Armaments, he soon caught up to Zhou Fukong and stopped him.

"You won't be able to escape," Chu Feng looked to Zhou Fukong.

"You!!!"

At that moment, Zhou Fukong was driven into a corner. With incomparable fury, he was planning to stake his life on the line for a final battle against Chu Feng.

However, when he saw the Divine level Lightning Mark on Chu Feng's forehead, he was instantly terrified.

He did not want to be terrified. However, he was unable to control himself.

When he saw Chu Feng's Divine level Lightning Mark at such a close distance, he felt terror toward Chu Feng from the bottom his heart, from the core of his bones and the depths of his soul.

It was not only fear that he felt. In addition to fear was a kind of reverence. It was as if Chu Feng was his master, that he would be offending his superior should he fight Chu Feng.

Actually, there was an explanation for this. Regardless of

whether it was the current Zhou Fukong or Kong Doumoyuan before him, they were reacting the same as a possessor of a Royal Bloodline encountering a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline, or a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline encountering a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline when they saw the current Chu Feng.

Even though they were also Heavenly Bloodline possessors like Chu Feng, they trained in completely different Self-Punishing Mysterious Techniques.

The ones that they'd trained in were the weakest among the Self-Punishing Mysterious Techniques, the Mortal Punishment Mysterious Techniques.

As for the one that Chu Feng had trained in, it was the strongest, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

After training in the Self-Punishing Mysterious Techniques, their bloodlines would be transformed.

After Chu Feng unleashed his Lightning Mark, his enormously powerful bloodline was completely revealed.

It would be one thing for those with strength surpassing Chu Feng. However, for Zhou Fukong and Kong Doumoyuan, who possessed strength equal to Chu Feng, they would not be able to contend against Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because they had lost to Chu Feng fundamentally.

This was why regardless of how robust or fierce a hound might be, they would remain a dog.

Regardless of how powerful that hound might be, when faced with a fierce tiger or a lion, it will immediately lose the will to battle and would only try to flee in disarray.

That was the sort of suppression that originated from the depths of one's bloodline, a fundamental distinction.

# Chapter 2521 - I'm Determined to Take His Life

---

“Chu Feng, it is one thing for you to have killed Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk after they provoked you earlier.”

“However, I, Zhou Fukong, have not done anything to you. Are you really planning to have that demonic woman kill me?”

“Right now, you have already made enemies of the Kong Heavenly Clan, the Immortal Sword School and Buddha's Heavenly Temple.”

“If you are to kill me, you would be making an enemy of our Zhou Heavenly Clan too. At that time, you will really end up...” Zhou Fukong realized that it would not do to use force, and thus could only try to continue to talk things out.

“Puu~~~”

However, before Zhou Fukong could finish his words, the Ancient Era's War Axe in the sky suddenly came down, piercing through his body.

“Wuuahh.”

Zhou Fukong let out a miserable scream and he instantly despaired.

At the moment the Ancient Era's War Axe pierced through his body, he felt an extremely powerful oppressive sensation.

That oppressive sensation was naturally from the Ancient Era's War Axe.

If Zhou Fukong was able to barely put up a fight against Chu Feng before, then, now that his body had been pierced through by the Ancient Era's War Axe, he had completely lost the ability to fight against Chu Feng.

Not to mention Chu Feng, any one of the people present would be able to easily take his life.

“It’s best that you don’t move around. Else, if my Ancient Era’s War Axe is to move slightly lower, it will hack your body in two. At that time... when your Zhou Heavenly Clan comes to retrieve your corpse, they will not be able to retrieve an intact corpse,” Chu Feng said to Zhou Fukong.

“You...”

Zhou Fukong was so furious that he felt as if his heart, liver, spleen and lungs were about to explode. The meaning of Chu Feng’s words were extremely obvious. Chu Feng was telling him that he, Zhou Fukong, would definitely die.

In truth, Zhou Fukong did indeed feel that he would die there. The reason for that was because that demonic woman Zhao Hong was rushing toward him murderously.

“Zhao Hong, go ahead,” Chu Feng said to Zhao Hong.

Zhao Hong did not hesitate. She raised her palm and planned to take Zhou Fukong’s life.

“Stay your hand!!!”

Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard.

After that voice was heard, space itself started to tremble. Even Chu Feng’s oppressive might, those black clouds of lightning that filled the region, were trembling.

“This aura, it’s a True Immortal?” At that moment, the surrounding crowd were all alarmed. They were able to sense the person that had arrived was a True Immortal.

“Haha, come, kill me. That is our Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Elder Zhou Yuluo!!!”

At that moment, Zhou Fukong burst into loud laughter. His laughter was filled with pride and provocation.



The reason for that was because he knew that his life had been saved.

Not only would his life be saved, but the two people before him, those two people that had tormented him miserably, would end up suffering greatly.

“True Immortal?”

At that moment, Chu Feng also felt the aura of that True Immortal. Inevitably, he started to feel apprehension in his heart.

Based on the True Immortals that he had encountered so far, he was able to tell that the True Immortal that came here was merely a rank one True Immortal.

However, even though his opponent was only a rank one True Immortal, his opponent’s aura still firmly surpassed his own.

Even though Chu Feng was a Heavenly Bloodline possessor, even though he possessed the Divine Mark and the Ancient Era’s War Axe, even if he currently surpassed all Martial Ancestors, it remained that when he was faced with an actual rank one True Immortal, he was able to feel how inferior he was by comparison.

True Immortals were True Immortals. They were in a realm of cultivation that no Martial Ancestor could match up against regardless of how powerful they might be.

This enormous gap was something that not even Heavenly Bloodline possessors could breach.

When Chu Feng was a peak Martial Emperor, he was able to rely on his Heavenly Bloodline’s power to temporarily increase his cultivation to the peak Half Martial Ancestor realm.

However, when he became a peak Martial Ancestor, even though his Heavenly Bloodline’s power would still be present, even though he would have grasped many more heaven-defying methods, he would never be able to increase his cultivation to the True Immortal realm.

This was the greatness of True Immortals. Unless one were to truly reach True Immortal realm through cultivation, no ability would allow one to become a True Immortal.

Thus, regardless of how powerful Chu Feng might be at moment, regardless of how heaven-defying his battle power might be, he remained a Martial Ancestor.

As long as he was a Martial Ancestor, he would not be able to withstand a True Immortal.

“Damn it, why would a True Immortal come now?”

Zhao Hong also realized that the situation was amiss. Thus, her raised palm never landed.

She knew very well that since that True Immortal’s oppressive might had already covered the region, this meant that True Immortal had already arrived. As such, she no longer possessed the opportunity to kill Zhou Fukong.

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, what enormous nerves you have!”

That furious shout was heard once again. Merely, this time around, that voice was closer and more resounding.

At the moment that voice sounded, without even mentioning how powerful that True Immortal’s oppressive might was, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were able to feel intense sound waves crashing into them, making them unable to stand firm.

However, Zhou Fukong who stood beside them was not affected in the slightest.

The other bystanders present also did not feel anything.

Evidently, that sound wave was aimed at Chu Feng and Zhao Hong only.

After that voice landed, two figures appeared.

The person standing at the front was a nearly two meter tall middle-aged man.

This man was very robust, and possessed a stubby beard. He had a very prominent ‘uncle’ appearance.

Especially his pair of deep eyes. They allowed one to know that he had experienced countless years, seen countless people, and encountered countless things.

This man was an old monster that had lived for a very long time. He was most definitely not a middle-aged man like his appearance suggested.

At that moment, that man was looking at Chu Feng and Zhao Hong with a very ill-intended gaze. It could even be said that his gaze was filled with murderous intent.

It was as if, if Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were to make any movements that dissatisfied him, he would immediately act to kill them.

The overwhelming True Immortal’s aura was coming from this man. Likely... this man was that Elder Zhou Yuluo that Zhou Fukong spoke of.

However, apart from Zhou Yuluo, there was another individual. That person was wearing a special conical bamboo hat. His conical bamboo hat was so special that even Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were unable to see through it.

However, judging from his appearance, he was most likely an old man.

Furthermore, he did not try to especially alter his appearance. Thus, his facial appearance should likely also be that of an old man.

“Woosh~~~”

Soon, that individual took off his conical bamboo hat and revealed his facial appearance.

Sure enough, it was a white-haired old man. He possessed a dark

complexion and had a horse-shaped face. However, his eyes were bright and full of expression.

“Immortal-cloak World Spiritist?”

Merely upon meeting that individual’s eyes, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong realized that individual to be an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Zhao Hong was surprised. Even though that world spiritist was clearly on Zhou Yuluo’s side, that old man was looking at them with a gaze without anger. Instead, it was filled with surprise and unease.

“It’s him?”

As for Chu Feng, his gaze changed.

Chu Feng had met this old man once before. It was when Chu Feng was using his Evil God Sword to battle against the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago. At that time, that old man was present.

Chu Feng faintly remembered that someone had addressed the old man as Zhuge Mingren. And he... was indeed an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Moreover, he was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

In the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was a very reputed individual.

This Zhuge Mingren was one of the most important witnesses to Chu Feng’s battle against the Kong Heavenly Clan two years ago.

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, are the two of you not going to explain what is going on here today?” Zhou Yuluo questioned. His tone was very ill-intended.

“Chu Feng, let’s go.”

Zhao Hong did not plan to explain. Instead, she grabbed Chu Feng’s arm and urged him to leave.

She was no fool. When this True Immortal appeared, she knew that their absolute dominance had been turned around.

If they were to continue to draw this on, the ones to suffer would be them.

However, Chu Feng did not move. Instead, he pulled back Zhao Hong, who was planning to leave.

“Chu Feng, you...”

At that moment, Zhao Hong revealed a confused expression. She didn’t understand why Chu Feng wasn’t leaving.

As for Chu Feng, he smiled at Zhao Hong, and then said, “Even if we are to leave, we should finish what we need to do first.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned to Zhou Yuluo and said, “I have nothing to explain to you. However, there is one thing that I can tell you.”

“Today, I am determined to take Zhou Fukong’s life.”

# Chapter 2522 - That Is A Demon Armament

---

“Today, I am determined to take Zhou Fukong’s life.”

Chu Feng’s words came like a sudden clap of thunder to the crowd’s ears. The people present were all greatly shocked.

Not to mention the others, even Zhou Yuluo himself was startled.

What was this?

A mere Martial Ancestor actually dared to talk back to a True Immortal? This was simply too arrogant, simply too ignorant to the immensity of heaven and earth.

“Chu Feng, I do not care about what’s up with that Lightning Mark on your forehead, nor do I care about where the secret skill floating above you came from.”

“In the end, you remain a Martial Ancestor. You are simply no match for me, much less qualified to be my opponent.”

“Right now, I am asking you questions, and you’d best answer them obediently.”

“Else, don’t blame me for taking your lowly life.”

Zhou Yuluo was very aggressive and filled with confidence.

At that moment, the surrounding crowd started to reveal mocking smiles.

They naturally knew that Chu Feng was very powerful. In fact, after today, they felt that Chu Feng was unparalleled beneath True Immortal realm.

They had recognized Chu Feng’s strength.

However, if Chu Feng were to talk back to Zhou Yuluo, they felt that Chu Feng would only be inviting disaster upon himself.

“Chu Feng, let’s...” At that moment, even the fearless Zhao Hong started to urge Chu Feng against it.

Zhao Hong was naturally not afraid of death. Merely, she did not wish to implicate Chu Feng in her own grudges.

However, Chu Feng seemed to know what Zhao Hong wanted to tell him.

Thus, before she could finish her words, Chu Feng interrupted, “Zhao Hong, don’t say anymore. I am definitely going to take this Zhou Fukong’s life for you today.”

“What arrogance! What makes you think you can?!” Zhou Fukong asked furiously.

Before Zhou Yuluo had arrived, he did not dare to speak like this toward Chu Feng. However, now that Zhou Yuluo had arrived, he felt that Chu Feng had no means to talk to him like this.

He felt that Chu Feng should be scared, should be apologizing, should be kneeling and begging him for forgiveness.

“Puu~~~”

“Wuahh~~~”

Right after Zhou Fukong’s words left his mouth, he sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

The Ancient Era’s War Axe had pierced even deeper into him. That sort of oppression was something that Zhou Fukong was unable to endure.

“Impudent!”

Seeing that Chu Feng dared to continue to attack Zhou Fukong right before him, that Zhou Yuluo revealed a furious expression.

After all, Chu Feng’s actions could be said to be completely disregarding him. This caused Zhou Yuluo to feel extremely humiliated.

Thus, he decided on the spot that regardless of what sort of background Chu Feng might have, he would definitely teach Chu Feng a lesson.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, a sword appeared in Chu Feng’s hand.

That sword was not the Stormwind Edge, nor was it the Flame Dragon Greatsword. Rather, it was the... Evil God Sword.

“That is?”

Upon seeing the Evil God Sword, the crowd’s expressions all changed.

They were not frightened by the Evil God Sword. Rather, they were startled by the Evil God Sword.

After all, before the Evil God Sword unleashed its might, it appeared to be no different from an ordinary Incomplete Imperial Armament.

The crowd were truly confused as to why Chu Feng would take out an Incomplete Imperial Armament at such a crucial moment.

Not to mention before True Immortals, Incomplete Imperial Armaments were akin to scrap metal before Martial Ancestors and Half Martial Ancestors.

Could it be that Chu Feng was deliberately shaming Zhou Yuluo?

“Don’t say that I did not warn you. Whatever happened here today is unrelated to you. If you don’t act recklessly, I can consider it that nothing has happened.”

“However, if you refuse my advice and insist on meddling in this matter here today, then I will not spare your lowly life either,” With the Evil God Sword in hand, Chu Feng spoke as he pointed at Zhou Yuluo.

Humiliation. This was a completely undisguised humiliation.

At that moment, the crowd was convinced that Chu Feng had taken out that weapon just to insult Zhou Yuluo.

He truly did not place this grand True Immortal in his eyes. Else,



how could he dare act this impudently?

“Very well, Chu Feng. It would seem that you really think that I do not dare attack you?”

“Good, good, good. Today, I will act in righteousness for the heavens and slaughter you, damned animal. Else... you truly will not know who I, Zhou Yuluo, am!”

Zhou Yuluo’s complexion turned deep red with fury. With a thought, his oppressive might swept forth. He was actually planning on killing.

“Wait!”

Right at that moment, Zhuge Mingren who stood beside Zhou Yuluo suddenly grabbed him, stopping him.

“Brother Zhou, you must not act impulsively. You will not be a match for that Chu Feng,” Zhuge Mingren said.

“What?!” Upon hearing Zhuge Mingren’s words, the expressions of the crowd all changed.

As for that Zhou Yuluo, he was extremely startled. Soon, the shock on his face turned into raging fury.

It was one thing for Chu Feng to humiliate him. He truly never expected that his good friend of many years, Zhuge Mingren, would also look down on him.

“Brother Zhuge, move aside. Today... I must exterminate this arrogant brat.”

Zhou Yuluo refused to listen to Zhuge Mingren’s advice. He grabbed him and pushed him aside.

“Brother Zhou, what Chu Feng is holding is a Demon Armament!!!” Zhuge Mingren shouted.

“Demon Armament?”

Upon hearing those words, not only was the crowd shocked, but

even Zhou Yuluo, who had raised his hand and was planning to attack Chu Feng, stopped.

Demon Armament. Merely those two words caused them to recall one matter.

An extremely significant matter!!!

In the battle two years ago, the Kong Heavenly Clan suffered disastrous losses. Their Utmost Exalted Elders were either killed or missing. Even their Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief suffered serious injuries.

One of the most powerful existences in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Kong Heavenly Clan, was nearly extinguished.

As for the person who did that shocking thing, it was none other than Chu Feng.

Reportedly, Chu Feng was only a Half Martial Ancestor back then. The reason why he was able to nearly extinguish the Kong Heavenly Clan was because of a Demon Armament.

Many people had witnessed that scene from two years ago. It was precisely because of the many witnesses that news of the event spread, and caused many people to firmly believe it.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that Zhuge Mingren was also present two years ago. Furthermore, over the past two years, he was insistent that that event was true.

“Demon Armament, is that the Demon Armament that you mentioned to me constantly?”

At that moment, the anger in Zhou Yuluo's eyes instantly decreased. When he looked to Zhuge Mingren again, there was no longer anger in his eyes. Instead, it was filled with gratefulness and apology.

As Zhuge Mingren's close friend, he had heard Zhuge Mingren

mention what had happened two years ago many times.

Due to the fact that the matter was truly a mystery within a mystery, he was also skeptical of it.

However, even though he was skeptical, he still half-believed it. The reason for that was because it was Zhuge Mingren who told him about it.

He and Zhuge Mingren were close friends of many years. Furthermore, he knew Zhuge Mingren's personality very well. Thus, he knew that Zhuge Mingren was someone who never lied.

It was precisely because he half-believed in Zhuge Mingren's story that he suddenly felt fear. He truly did not want to die.

# Chapter 2523 - Scaring Away A True Immortal

---

“It is absolutely true. Two years ago, I witnessed with my very own eyes Chu Feng killing the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders using that sword. Even the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was unable to contend against him.”

“Brother Zhou, take my advice, do not be impulsive. Else... the consequences will be unthinkable,” Zhuge Mingren said earnestly.

“In that case, the matter regarding the Demon Armament is true?”

Seeing how serious Zhuge Mingren reacted, the others present also began to doubt whether or not what had happened two years ago was real.

After all, Zhuge Mingren was a very reputable individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The things he said held a lot of credibility.

To hear about the rumors was one sort of feeling. However, to personally see Zhuge Mingren and to hear him saying this sort of thing so earnestly was a completely different sort of feeling.

Moreover, Chu Feng had an extremely confident appearance.

Thus, at that moment, many of the people present started to half-believe the matter regarding the Demon Armament.

As the saying goes, if something didn’t concern oneself, one would not have to worry. However, if it did, then one must be extra careful.

At that moment, Zhou Yuluo found himself in a very awkward situation.

If he were to attack Chu Feng now, there would only be two possible results.

Either the Demon Armament in Chu Feng's hand was a fake, and he would be able to directly kill Chu Feng, ending everything.

Or the Demon Armament in Chu Feng's hand was real, and he would end up enraging Chu Feng and be killed by Chu Feng should he attack him.

“Chu Feng, we have never met before this. There are neither grievances or grudges between us either. There is no need for us to confront one another with weapons. How about we discuss things?”

After a moment of hesitation, Zhou Yuluo not only retrieved his extended hand, but he also retrieved his oppressive might filled with killing intent.

At that moment, he no longer possessed the overbearing arrogance from before. He was also no longer furious. Instead, he revealed a fake smile on his face.

Even though everyone could tell that it was a fake smile that he had forced out, they also knew that the reason Zhou Yuluo reacted like this was because he was scared.

Scared, he was indeed scared. He was afraid that Chu Feng's Demon Armament was truly capable of beheading True Immortals.

Seeing that Zhou Yuluo had grown timid, Zhou Fukong was struck dumb. He felt as if he had managed to grab onto a log while drowning, only to find out that log was actually rice straws that were unable to save him at all.

“Elder Zhou, save me!!!”

In a moment of desperation, Zhou Fukong cried for help. He was deeply afraid that Zhou Yuluo would disregard him.

“You shut up!” Zhou Yuluo shouted at Zhou Fukong.

Then, he looked to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, I do not know exactly what happened here today.”

“However, the corpses of that Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk are there. I believe their deaths are related to you?”

“I’ve killed them, what about it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Why did you kill them?” Zhou Yuluo asked.

“They wanted to kill me and my friend. Why shouldn’t I kill people who want to kill me?” Chu Feng asked.

“Since you said it like that, you must possess your own reasons. I will not argue with you.”

“However, Chu Feng, I must remind you of this: those two were no ordinary individuals. They were not people that you can kill as you wish.”

“Since you’ve killed them, you must prepare yourself to shoulder the consequences,” Zhou Yuluo said.

“There’s simply no need for you to remind me of that,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Since you’ve already made the preparations, I will say no more. Today, I only have one request. Might you be willing to take me into consideration and spare Zhou Fukong?” Zhou Yuluo said.

Hearing those words, the crowd was startled. Then, they looked to one another, and discovered that they all had astonished expressions on their faces.

Request. A grand True Immortal Zhou Yuluo was actually making a request of Chu Feng.

Considering his status, this was no longer being courteous. Instead, he was lowering himself.

Zhou Yuluo had already given in. The crowd felt that Chu Feng should give way to Zhou Yuluo too and spare Zhou Fukong.

To drop this matter like this would be beneficial to both sides.

“I’ve said that I am determined to take this Zhou Fukong’s life today,” However, Chu Feng was not planning to give Zhou Yuluo face.

“You are truly indiscriminating!!!”

Zhou Yuluo’s expression changed enormously. His forced smile instantly disappeared, and was replaced with anger.

He truly never expected for Chu Feng to be this savage. He had already lowered himself, yet this Chu Feng was still insistent on doing things his way. He was simply not placing him in his eyes at all.

With this, how could he, a True Immortal who had always been domineering, not be furious?

Chu Feng did not bother with Zhou Yuluo at all. Instead, he turned to Zhao Hong and said, “Zhao Hong, kill him.”

“You really want me to kill him?” At that moment, Zhao Hong was hesitant.

After all, this was different from when she had killed Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk.

If she were to kill Zhou Fukong, she would be doing so before a Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortal-level expert.

This was truly too crazy.

“It would do to leave him an intact corpse,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” Seeing that Chu Feng was insistent on killing Zhou Fukong, Zhao Hong did not hesitate any longer and raised her palm.

“Stop!” At that moment, Zhou Yuluo shouted loudly. Then, he threatened, “Zhao Hong, if you dare kill him, I’ll take your life!”

“Give it a try if you dare!” Chu Feng shouted back furiously.

“Chu Feng, you... did you really think that I was afraid of you?”

The anger in Zhou Yuluo's eyes grew stronger and stronger.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored his anger. Instead, he said to Zhao Hong, "Do it."

"Paaa~~~"

Zhao Hong did not hesitate. Her palm landed on Zhou Fukong's head.

The next moment, Zhou Fukong died like Dugu Jianxu and the Wine-Meat Monk.

"She actually killed him?!"

Seeing that Zhao Hong had actually killed Zhou Fukong right before Zhou Yuluo, the crowd was truly stunned.

This courage and boldness of hers was simply something that they found incomprehensible. It was also something that commoners did not possess.

Although Zhao Hong's courage caused them to feel admiration, they admired Chu Feng even more.

They knew very well that if it wasn't for Chu Feng backing her up, Zhao Hong would not be able to kill Zhou Fukong.

However, thinking that a Martial Ancestor was actually capable of frightening a True Immortal, this caused them to gasp in admiration.

Fortunately, they saw it with their very own eyes. If they hadn't, they wouldn't have believed this to be true even if they were to hear about it.

"I've killed him. The corpse is yours," Chu Feng grabbed Zhou Fukong's corpse and tossed it toward Zhou Yuluo.

Zhou Yuluo caught the corpse. At that moment, his body was shaking. Especially his arms that caught Zhou Fukong's corpse, the veins on his arms were bulging. From this, it could be seen how furious he was.



However, even though he was filled with overflowing fury, he still did not attack Chu Feng.

It was not that he did not want to attack Chu Feng. Rather, he did not dare to attack Chu Feng.

He was afraid, afraid that Chu Feng's Demon Armament was real. He was afraid that he would end up being killed by Chu Feng the moment he attacked Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, from today on, our Zhou Heavenly Clan and you are unable to coexist in this world!" Zhou Yuluo said while gnashing his teeth furiously.

"Heh..." Chu Feng chuckled at Zhou Yuluo's words.

Chu Feng knew more or less what sort of status Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk, Kong Doumoyuan and Zhou Fukong possessed.

Since he knew their status, he naturally also knew what the consequences of killing them would be.

However, he was still determined to kill them. This meant that he had already taken the consequences into consideration.

While the consequences of killing them were indeed unthinkable, he was determined to avenge Zhao Hong.

Thus, when Chu Feng decided to have Zhao Hong kill them, he had already prepared himself to shoulder the consequences.

The consequences of making an enemy of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's most powerful four tier one powers!!!

# Chapter 2524 - Said Kill, Will Kill

---

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng extended his hand and made a grabbing motion. Kong Doumoyuan, who was lying in the distance with blood covering his entire body, was caught in Chu Feng's hand.

“If there's nothing else, I will take my leave now.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he soared into the sky with Zhao Hong and began to fly into the distance.

However, before they flew far, Chu Feng suddenly stopped, turned his gaze to the people present and said, “You all have witnessed what happened here today. Thus, I will offer you a word of advice. It's best that you consider carefully before touching people related to me, Chu Feng.”

“Else, I, Chu Feng, dare to guarantee that your consequences will be even more miserable than theirs today.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he left without paying attention to the current expressions of the crowd.

As for the people present, their expressions all turned ashen.

Although Chu Feng's words were spoken very arrogantly, he possessed the strength to be arrogant.

When even Zhou Yuluo, a True Immortal, could only swallow his anger, what could they, Martial Ancestors, possibly do to Chu Feng?

Although they were feeling lingering fear, they were also rejoicing, rejoicing at the fact that they managed to witness all of this.

What they'd witnessed would become something that they could brag about in the future.

After all, a Martial Ancestor scaring away a True Immortal was something that had never happened before in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Once word of this matter spread, it would definitely shock the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After feeling their joy, the crowd subconsciously turned their gazes to Zhou Yuluo. After all, Zhou Yuluo was the other leading character in this matter apart from Chu Feng.

“The hell are you all looking at?! Scram!” Zhou Yuluo shouted furiously.

Not only did his shout shake heaven and earth, but his oppressive might was also swept forth.

His oppressive might was extremely powerful. Even though the great majority of the people present were peak Martial Ancestors, they were unable to withstand his oppressive might at all.

At that moment, those reputed experts of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were all blown away like fallen leaves.

At that moment, Zhou Yuluo was venting his anger on the bystanders.

Seeing that Zhou Yuluo was furious, how could the bystanders possibly dare to continue lingering there?

After stabilizing themselves, they began to frantically escape without even turning their heads. They were fleeing with their lives on the line.

They were deeply afraid that Zhou Yuluo would continue to vent his anger and actually kill them.

In the blink of an eye, only Zhou Yuluo and Zhuge Mingren remained there.

Of course, in addition to the two of them were three corpses.

Those were the corpses of Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and Zhou Fukong, who Zhou Yuluo was holding.

“It’s all your fault. You’ve made me lose all face today. I am going to become the object of ridicule for everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zhou Yuluo looked at Zhuge Mingren. His gaze was filled with complaint.

Faced with such a Zhou Yuluo, Zhuge Mingren sighed helplessly. Then, he said, “No matter how you see me, only I know that my advice today has saved your life.”

“Furthermore, I urge you to not incite your Zhou Heavenly Clan to wage war against Chu Feng after your return.”

“I clearly witnessed the scene from that day. If it wasn’t for Chu Feng stopping himself, the Kong Heavenly Clan would already be exterminated by now. I do not wish for your Zhou Heavenly Clan to become the second Kong Heavenly Clan.”

After he finished saying those words, Zhuge Mingren soared into the sky and left.

At that moment, only Zhou Yuluo remained. He was still holding onto Zhou Yukong with a very gloomy expression on his face.

After a very long time passed, he suddenly opened his mouth and let out an ear-piercing roar.

That voice was extremely ear-piercing. It resonated for several miles and continued to echo in the sky.

Even Chu Feng and Zhao Hong who left first were able to hear that furious roar.

“It’s Zhou Yuluo’s voice. It would appear that he is truly enraged by you,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng.

At that moment, Zhao Hong’s face was brimming with joy. She did not feel the slightest bit of lingering fear or regret from killing Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and Zhou Fukong. On the

contrary, she had a very carefree and excited expression.

“His reputation will be completely ruined after today. Naturally, he will be furious,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, that Demon Armament of yours is really capable of killing True Immortals?” Zhao Hong asked curiously.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng said.

“Since your Demon Armament is that powerful, why didn’t you go and directly extinguish the Kong Heavenly Clan using it?” Zhao Hong asked.

Regarding that, Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

Although the Evil God Sword was very powerful, its power was so uncontrollable that even Chu Feng was afraid of it.

To use the Evil God Sword would be akin to walking through the gates of hell. It would be difficult for one to determine whether or not one would live or die. It was simply no different from gambling with one’s life.

Furthermore, after using the Evil God Sword the last time, Chu Feng had experienced how frightening it was. If he had not forcibly taken control of his body back from the Evil God Sword, it would likely not only be the Kong Heavenly Clan that would be destroyed, but rather the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that would suffer.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had promised the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Ancestor that regardless of what wrong the Kong Heavenly Clan might’ve done, he must still leave them a way to survive. At the very least, he couldn’t exterminate them all.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong continued to travel for a very long time. It was only after he determined that they were safe that they stopped.

Chu Feng removed Kong Doumoyuan’s Cosmos Sack from his

waist and began to search it. When he managed to retrieve a green medicinal pellet, Chu Feng revealed a relaxed smile.

The reason for that was because that medicinal pellet was the antidote to Wang Qiang's poison.

"You've found the antidote, it's time to kill him now," As Zhao Hong spoke, she planned to kill Kong Doumoyuan.

"Wait," However, Chu Feng stopped Zhao Hong. He said, "With how powerful that poison is, it is most definitely not something from the Ordinary Realms. We must find out about its origins."

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng began to heal Kong Doumoyuan's injuries. Although his internal injuries were not cured, his external injuries were soon healed.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan appeared to be completely fine. However, his aura was still extremely weak. The reason for that was because his internal injuries were still extremely serious.

Chu Feng had only healed Kong Doumoyuan's injuries so that he could make it easier for him to speak. The reason for that was because he had questions that he wanted to ask Kong Doumoyuan.

"Tell me, where did you obtain this medicinal pellet?" Chu Feng asked.

"I can tell you. However, you must let me go," Kong Doumoyuan said.

"You dare haggle with us still?" Zhao Hong revealed a furious expression. As she spoke, she planned to attack and teach Kong Doumoyuan a lesson.

"Go ahead and kill me. Kill me if you can. If you are to kill me, you all can forget about finding out who gave me this poison," Kong Doumoyuan closed his eyes. He had the appearance of being unafraid of death.

At that moment, Chu Feng didn't say anything. Instead, he

looked at Zhao Hong.

He wanted to know the answer. However, he had also promised Zhao Hong that he would kill this Kong Doumoyuan.

Thus, he had decided to have Zhao Hong personally determine what to do.

At that moment, Zhao Hong's face turned deep red out of anger. However, she did not attack Kong Doumoyuan, and instead said to him with a threatening tone, "If you dare lie to us, I will definitely make you wish you were dead."

"In that case, you've agreed to it? You really won't kill me?" Hearing those words, Kong Doumoyuan opened his eyes and revealed a joyous expression.

After personally witnessing Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and Zhou Fukong being killed, Kong Doumoyuan felt that he would also undoubtedly be killed.

After all, Zhou Fukong had the protection of Zhou Yuluo, but was still killed. As such, how could he possibly escape death?

He truly never expected that he, the person that Chu Feng and Zhao Hong would want to kill the most, was actually able to see a trace of hope to live. With this, how could he not feel overjoyed?

This Kong Doumoyuan was quite a quick-witted individual. He realized that Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were interested in the origin of his poison.

Thus, he decided to take advantage of it and said to Chu Feng, "Zhao Hong has agreed to not kill me. What about you?"

"As long as you tell the truth, we will spare your life today," Chu Feng said.

"Really?" Kong Doumoyuan was a bit skeptical.

"I, Chu Feng, am always one to keep my word. It is best that you tell me what I want to know. Else... don't blame me for being

ruthless,” As Chu Feng spoke, a flash of coldness shone across his eyes.

“Don’t, don’t, don’t. I’ll tell, I’ll tell,” Kong Doumoyuan started to shiver in fear because he saw killing intent from Chu Feng’s eyes.



# Chapter 2525 - Great Mysterious Enemy

---

“That poison was given to me by someone. I do not know who that person is. All I know is that he was wearing a blue gown that covered his face. As such, I was unable to see his appearance. However, I am certain that he is a True Immortal-level expert,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Was there any distinctive property to that blue gown?” Chu Feng asked.

“There was nothing distinctive. That blue gown was very clean. Not only did it not have any embroidery, it didn’t even have any patterns,” Kong Doumoyuan said.

“Why would he give you the poison without any reason?” Chu Feng asked.

“This...” Kong Doumoyuan started to hesitate.

“Speak!!!” Chu Feng shouted at him.

“He gave me the poison so that I could take care of you all. He said... that if I am to encounter you all and I’m unable to win, then use the poison, as it will definitely be able to kill you.”

“Back then, when I was fighting against Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong, I saw that they were no match for me and thus thought the poison to be useless.”

“But, it remained that person had given me the poison so that I could use it on all you. Thus, I decided that I should not waste the poison, and ended up using it on Wang Qiang.”

“That was what happened. After that, I never encountered that individual again. I also do not know who he is or why he wanted to help me take care of you all,” Kong Doumoyuan was nervous. He was deeply afraid that Chu Feng would go back on his word and kill him.

“Let’s go,” As Chu Feng spoke, he began to walk toward the distance. Zhao Hong silently followed him.

When Chu Feng was healing Kong Doumoyuan’s injuries, he had actually left behind a spirit formation on him. That spirit formation was capable of determining whether or not Kong Doumoyuan was lying.

Thus, he was certain that Kong Doumoyuan had spoken the truth and did not lie to them.

Seeing that Chu Feng and Zhao Hong really left, Kong Doumoyuan was overjoyed. Then, the corners of his mouth rose into a strange smile.

He thought in his heart, ‘What fools. They actually really spared me. However, I dare to guarantee that your decision to spare me today will be something that you will regret the most!’

The more Kong Doumoyuan thought about it, the more pleased he became. He had done all this and caused so many people to die. Yet he, the person that Chu Feng and Zhao Hong wanted to kill the most, actually survived. He was feeling overjoyed.

Furthermore, with Kong Doumoyuan’s character, he would naturally not feel grateful toward Chu Feng and Zhao Hong merely because they spared his life.

On the contrary, he was planning on how to take revenge on Chu Feng and Zhao Hong.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his hand, and a ray of light flew out from his hand. It was flying toward Kong Doumoyuan.

It was a blade ray formed with martial power. Furthermore, its speed was extremely fast. With a ‘puu,’ it pierced into Kong Doumoyuan’s dantian.

At that moment, Kong Doumoyuan's cultivation was completely destroyed.

“Chu Feng, you broke your promise!!!” Kong Doumoyuan shouted with incomparable rage.

At that moment, he truly felt as if he was in between heaven and hell.

He had originally thought that he had escaped a calamity. Yet, his cultivation that he had trained bitterly for years to obtain was suddenly crippled. To him, this was something even more painful than being killed.

Faced with the furious Kong Doumoyuan, Chu Feng laughed coldly. “I only agreed to not kill you. I never said that I would not harm you. I'm already being merciful in only crippling your cultivation.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng flew away.

At that moment, Zhao Hong, who was previously feeling depressed, revealed an enchanting smile.

Although she was unable to kill Kong Doumoyuan today, it was still a satisfaction to cripple his cultivation.

After obtaining the antidote, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong would naturally be proceeding toward Mount Cloud Crane.

However, on their way there, one thing had been bothering Chu Feng the entire time. He was wondering who exactly it was that wanted them dead. Furthermore, that person was a True Immortal on top of that.

Most importantly, it was very possible for that True Immortal to be an expert from the Upper Realms.

Chu Feng and Zhao Hong pondered the issue for a long time. However, they were unable to think of an answer.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng didn't feel like he had

ever offended any True Immortals apart from the ones from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At the moment when Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were racking their brains thinking about who that individual might be, Her Lady Queen suddenly said, “Chu Feng, if my guess is correct, that person... should be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Eggy, why would you say that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Although you haven’t offended any of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s True Immortal-level experts, you have killed a person from the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Although the Chu Heavenly Clan has announced that they will not care about the life or death of their younger generations while they’re in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it remains that those younger generations of theirs are people of their Chu Heavenly Clan. As such, how could they really sit and watch, but remain indifferent?” Her Lady Queen analyzed.

“Now that you mention it, it is reasonable.”

“If others were to possess the strength of True Immortal and wanted to take care of me, they could very well attack me head-on. There would be no need for them to help Kong Doumoyuan from the shadows and hide their identity while doing so.”

“If we must provide an explanation for that, then it is true that the Chu Heavenly Clan will be the most suspicious. After all... they cannot attack me openly. If they are to do so, they’ll have gone against the rules established by their Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, this is no small matter.”

“It would be one thing if it were only the people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, with your current strength, if you are truly targeted by the Chu Heavenly Clan, you cannot be careless anymore.”

“In short, regardless of who it is that is targeting you from the shadows, you must be careful,” Her Lady Queen warned.

“I will be careful,” Chu Feng said.

After that, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong continued to travel, and finally arrived at Mount Cloud Crane.

Their arrival this time was different from usual. They were not stopped, but were instead directly sent to the Golden Crane True Immortal’s side with a teleportation formation right after reaching Mount Cloud Crane.

“Senior, how was it? Could it be that something has happened?”

Right after seeing the Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong became nervous. They faintly felt that something was amiss.

The reason for that was because they discovered that the Golden Crane True Immortal had a very serious expression on his face.

Such a serious expression made them afraid that something had happened to Wang Qiang.

“There are two matters that I must tell you two about” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, please go ahead,” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong said in unison.

“Firstly, I have actually already removed Wang Qiang’s poison. I had the two of you search for the antidote merely because I wanted you two to find some answers,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“.....”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong both fell silent. They had a sensation of being toyed with.

After all, the two of them had searched for that antidote while placing their lives on the line all so that they could save Wang

Qiang. Yet... in the end, Wang Qiang's poison was already removed.

Fortunately, they managed to get through this daunting journey without mishap. Else... even Chu Feng was unable to be certain as to whether or not he would hate the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Senior, what about the second matter?” Chu Feng asked.

“The second matter is also related to Wang Qiang,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What's wrong with Wang Qiang?” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong asked in unison. After all, the two of them were the most worried for Wang Qiang's safety.

“There has been a change to Wang Qiang's body. It will be difficult for me to describe.”

“How about this, the two of you can follow me. Merely, you must be prepared for what you'll see,” After he finished those words, the Golden Crane True Immortal waved his sleeve. Then, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong felt the scenery before them changing rapidly.

The next moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong's line of sight returned to normal. They had arrived deep inside a palace.

“That is?!!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong's expressions both changed enormously.

The palace was not very large, nor was it very gorgeous. However, it was very special. Its four walls were all very firm, as very powerful spirit formations had been placed on them.

Furthermore, the structural composition of the walls were very special too. This most definitely meant that this was a place for one to enter closed-door training.

Merely, a place for closed-door training should not suffice for Chu Feng and Zhao Hong to react like they did.

The reason why they were reacting like that was because Wang Qiang was lying here.

Furthermore, the current Wang Qiang could be said to be entirely different from how he was before.

An enormous change had occurred to Wang Qiang's body.

This change was so enormous that even Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were astonished by it.

# Chapter 2526 - Power Awakening

---

At that moment, Wang Qiang's body seemed to have doubled in size. His skin was distorting and wriggling nonstop.

It was as if something was about to emerge from within his body.

Furthermore, Wang Qiang's body was also emitting a faint glow.

This faint glow was slightly strange. Even though it was very faint, one could tell upon closer inspection that it was composed of four different colors.

They were green, blue, red and purple.

Most importantly, apart from the radiance, there was also a sort of gaseous flame that surrounded Wang Qiang together with the light. Those gaseous flames were also green, blue, red and purple.

It was as if flames were rising from Wang Qiang's body.

"Senior, what happened to Wang Qiang?"

"Didn't you say that the poison has been removed?"

Chu Feng was panicky. He was unable to determine exactly what was happening with Wang Qiang.

"No, it's not poison. I've already removed that poison. The change to Wang Qiang right now is indeed somewhat strange."

"However, you all actually do not have to worry about it. What's happening to him is not something bad but something good," Suddenly, the Golden Crane True Immortal removed his serious expression and revealed a faint smile.

It was as if he had been deliberately pretending with that serious expression he wore before, that he was toying with Chu Feng and Zhao Hong.

"Good thing?" Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were confused.

"Wang Qiang's current appearance seems more like some sort of



hidden power within him is awakening,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Some sort of hidden power within him is awakening?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong were both shocked. Then, they were overjoyed.

The reason for that was because if the power hidden within Wang Qiang were to awaken, then it would most likely increase Wang Qiang’s strength. To Wang Qiang, this would indeed be something good.

“However, exactly what sort of power is this? Could it be Divine Power?” Chu Feng asked.

“Something like this is hard to tell. For some, it might be because their Inherited Bloodline has been sealed. For others, it might be that their Divine Power was sealed.”

“However, regardless of which it might be, it remains a good thing for Wang Qiang. Thus, the two of you do not have to worry too much,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, is this sort of seal man-made?” Chu Feng wanted to know whether or not someone had sealed Wang Qiang’s power.

“That’s hard to say. It might be possible that someone did the sealing, and it might also be possible that it was caused by some sort of unforeseen event.”

“Since his power is automatically awakening, it is very possible that his hidden power sealed itself.”

“If it was sealed by someone, how could the seal be undone this easily?” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What senior says is very true,” Hearing what the Golden Crane True Immortal said, Chu Feng heaved a sigh of relief.

If the sealing of Wang Qiang’s power was not man-made, then it would mean that Wang Qiang did not have some sort of enemy

that sealed his power.

However, there was no such thing as an absolute. Even if the sealing wasn't man-made, it could not be said with certainty that Wang Qiang did not have enemies.

After all, as long as his power was sealed, this meant that he must've encountered something in the past.

"My husband is truly exceptional. His talents were already this amazing even before his power completely awakened. If his power is to completely awaken, wouldn't he be even more powerful?"

"Haha, I truly want to see exactly what my husband's awakening power will be like."

Zhao Hong was overjoyed. As Wang Qiang's lover, she would naturally be more happy than others to see her husband receiving such a fortunate opportunity.

"Roar~~~"

Right at that moment, a roar suddenly sounded from within Wang Qiang.

That roar was extremely strange. The moment it was heard, Chu Feng immediately felt a shiver all over.

Precisely because that voice was so frightening, Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and the Golden Crane True Immortal all involuntarily took two steps back.

At that moment, Chu Feng looked at Zhao Hong and the Golden Crane True Immortal, and discovered that they had the same reaction as him.

It was one thing for Zhao Hong to have the same sort of reaction as him. However, the Golden Crane True Immortal was a renowned individual from an Upper Realm. Yet, even his expression changed upon hearing that roar.

"Senior, what's happening to my husband? Why would there be a

beast roaring from within his body? Furthermore, that roar was so terrifying.”

“Are you certain that it is his power that is about to awaken, and not some sort of monster sealed within him?” Zhao Hong asked nervously.

The reason for that was because she had discovered that not only was Wang Qiang’s body emitting that strange roar, but the dark purple radiance on his body was also growing stronger and stronger.

“Move back immediately.”

At that moment, the Golden Crane True Immortal waved his sleeve and brought Chu Feng and Zhao Hong behind him.

He had moved to the edge of the palace hall with Chu Feng and Zhao Hong.

Then, he set up a spirit formation to seal Wang Qiang within it.

That spirit formation was very large, and was composed of many layers of spirit formations. It was a very powerful sealing formation.

“Senior, what are you doing?” Seeing this scene, Zhao Hong started to panic even more.

She was panicky because she was worried that some sort of monster was sealed in Wang Qiang’s body, a monster that could end up taking Wang Qiang’s life.

Among them, the Golden Crane True Immortal would be the person with the greatest capability of saving Wang Qiang’s life.

However, not only did the Golden Crane True Immortal not do anything to save Wang Qiang’s life, he instead set up such a powerful sealing formation to seal Wang Qiang within it. She felt that he was simply abandoning Wang Qiang. As such, how could Zhao Hong not be panicky?

“Zhao Hong, you don’t have to worry. It is most definitely some sort of power awakening from within Wang Qiang. Thus, his life will not be in danger. Instead, it is us, the bystanders, that need to be careful.”

“Judging from things now, regardless of what sort of power Wang Qiang’s awakening power might be, it is very powerful.”

“I fear that power will be enormously ferocious once it is completely awakened,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Ah?” Hearing those words, Zhao Hong’s mouth opened slightly. Joy emerged in her eyes. According to what the Golden Crane True Immortal had said, this was most definitely a good thing.

Not only would Wang Qiang obtain a new power, but this power was also extremely strong.

“Senior, there are four different beast roars coming from Wang Qiang’s body. Could it be that there are four ferocious beasts within his body?” Chu Feng said.

“Four different beast roars?” Zhao Hong was surprised. She had felt that the roars were all the same.

“Chu Feng, your hearing is very good. Indeed, there are four different beasts roaring right now. Thus... it might be possible that Wang Qiang is a person from a Monstrous Clan, and his body contains some sort of Monstrous Bloodline,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“A person from a Monstrous Clan, is it?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. Although he was surprised, he was able to accept it.

After all, Wang Qiang’s origins were a mystery. Although he appeared to be a human the entire time, if his Monstrous Bloodline was sealed, it would be natural for him to be unable to take a Monstrous Beast form or emit a Monstrous Beast’s aura.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, the four roars grew even more resounding and distinctive.

Those were indeed roars from four different beasts. Furthermore, their roars were extremely frightening. One would feel fear from one's heart upon hearing those roars.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, heaven and earth started to shake violently. It was as if Wang Qiang's body had exploded.

A dark purple radiance and dark purple gaseous flames filled the entire spirit formation that sealed Wang Qiang within.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong's hearts tightened. They were both afraid that something might happen to Wang Qiang.

However, through seeing with his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng's suspended heart was lifted.

Wang Qiang was still present within the spirit formation. Not only was he completely unscathed, but his body was also emitting a purple radiance.

At that moment, Wang Qiang's body had returned to its original size. It was also no longer distorted or twitching. It was as if Wang Qiang had returned to normal.

Although Wang Qiang was fine, Chu Feng once again revealed an extremely astonished expression.

The reason for that was because four enormous ferocious beasts were standing around Wang Qiang.

Those four ferocious beasts were respectively green, red, blue and purple.

They were each over a hundred meters tall and several hundred meters long. Those were four actual colossuses.

Furthermore, although those four ferocious beasts had different

appearances, they were all extremely fierce-looking, and possessed sharp fangs.

Chu Feng had seen many frightening things in his life. However, it was the first time Chu Feng had ever seen ferocious beasts as frightening as the four before him.

If the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird and Black Tortoise were four Divine Beasts from the heavens...

Then, the four ferocious beasts surrounding Wang Qiang resembled Demonic Beasts from hell.

Not only were they extremely ugly in appearance, but their auras were also ice-cold, dark and fierce.

Furthermore, even though a spirit formation was separating them, Chu Feng was still able to sense the might of the four ferocious beasts. They were so powerful that even Chu Feng's hairs started to stand on end.

However, to Chu Feng's joy, regardless of how fierce and frightening the four ferocious beasts were, they did not seem to have any intention of harming Wang Qiang.

Instead, they seemed to be guarding Wang Qiang.

# Chapter 2527 - Zhao Hong's Decision

---

The four sinister and frightening ferocious beasts were red, green, blue and purple.

Although their bodies were only bodies of light and not actual physical bodies, the oppressive sensation they emitted was enough to make one suffocate.

At that moment, the four beasts all possessed a ray of light that was linked to Wang Qiang's body like chains.

The four different colored rays of lights all gathered on Wang Qiang's body. That was how the four different lights and gaseous flames came to be.

"This shouldn't be an Inherited Bloodline, right?" Chu Feng asked.

At that moment, Chu Feng was pleasantly surprised. He was surprised at how powerful those beasts were, and gratified that Wang Qiang was the master of such power.

That said, although the four ferocious beasts were emitting very dark and gloomy auras, they made him recall his own Four Great Secret Skills, the Four Symbols Divine Body.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that Wang Qiang's power was very possibly that of a Divine Body. Furthermore, it should be a very powerful sort of Divine Power.

"Indeed, it doesn't resemble an ordinary Inherited Bloodline. However, it also doesn't resemble Divine Power. I have never seen such a strange Divine Power," The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

"Regardless of what it is, it seems that the power within my husband's body is very strong, no?"

Seeing that Wang Qiang was fine, Zhao Hong revealed an

extremely overjoyed expression. Furthermore, her eyes seemed to be shining as she swept her gaze across the four ferocious beasts nonstop.

“Wang Qiang’s power has only just awakened. It is still unstable. We will know whether this is a special sort of Inherited Bloodline or a special sort of Divine Power when his power completely awakens,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, how long do you think it’ll take for Wang Qiang’s power to completely awaken?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s very hard to say. That said, I have seen many people with hidden powers awakening.”

“According to the experience I have, after a person’s power is completely awakened, that person will also receive an increase in strength.”

“The longer it takes for a power to completely awaken, the more powerful it will be. Thus, it is not detrimental for Wang Qiang to take a long time.”

“Before he awakens completely, you all can have him stay here with me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said to Chu Feng.

“Thank you senior,” Chu Feng and Zhao Hong hurriedly expressed their thanks.

The two of them knew very well that the Golden Crane True Immortal’s residence could be said to be one of the safest places in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Unless it was an expert from an Upper Realm, practically no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would dare come to Mount Cloud Crane to act atrociously.

If Wang Qiang could continue to stay here, the power within him would definitely be able to awaken safely.

“It would appear that my brother has not suffered in vain. At the



very least, it allowed the power within him to awaken. This could also be considered to be fortune from within a disaster,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“That’s right, that’s right,” Zhao Hong nodded repeatedly. She was smiling very brilliantly.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong chatted with the Golden Crane True Immortal about many things.

From their conversations, the Golden Crane True Immortal came to find out about Chu Feng and Zhao Hong killing Dugu Jianxu and the others.

“Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, I must say that the two of you are simply too impulsive.”

“However, since it has already happened, I will not say too much about it. Merely, this time around, the two of you have offended all four of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s tier one powers. When you two go out again, you must be extra careful.”

“Else, you might end up losing your lives here, and miss the opportunity to journey to the Upper Realms,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, please rest assured. This was caused by me, Zhao Hong. I am able to shoulder this responsibility.”

“I will definitely not continue to hide in Mount Cloud Crane. I will leave right now.”

After Zhao Hong finished saying those words, she clasped her fist at the Golden Crane True Immortal and added, “Senior, thank you for your hospitality, and thank you for protecting my husband. I, Zhao Hong, will remember senior’s kindness. I will definitely repay you in the future.”

After she finished saying those words, Zhao Hong immediately got up and proceeded to walk toward the exit of Mount Cloud Crane.

Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly chased after Zhao Hong. He was only able to stop Zhao Hong outside of Mount Cloud Crane, “Zhao Hong, Senior Golden Crane did not have the intention to drive us out. Why must you be this emotional?”

“Chu Feng, I know that Senior Golden Crane does not have the intention to drive us out. I am also not doing this because of anger toward Senior.”

“Merely, right now, I really do have an important matter that I must take care of,” Zhao Hong said.

“Very well, even if you must leave, we should leave together. I’ll accompany you,” Chu Feng said.

“No,” Zhao Hong shook her head, “Chu Feng, you must stay here.”

“With the current situation, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is simply too dangerous. However, with your talent, as long as you enter closed-door training, you will definitely one day break through into True Immortal realm. At that time, with all the abilities you possess, you will not have to be afraid of the four tier one powers.”

“The Golden Crane True Immortal possesses quite a good relationship with you. Although he will not help us take care of our enemies, he should be willing to agree to have you stay here and undergo closed-door training.”

“Thus, at this time, it’s best for you to stay on Mount Cloud Crane,” Zhao Hong said.

“No, if I, Chu Feng, am to hide myself like this, I’ll truly become an object of ridicule for the four tier one powers, an object of ridicule for the people of the world,” Chu Feng said.

“Could it be that you plan to continue fighting against them? But, Chu Feng, our enemy was only the Kong Heavenly Clan before. And now, it is all of the four tier one powers. They are the

strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. How are you to take them on?”

“Furthermore, I am leaving because I have something important that I must do. I will not be able to bring you with me, and also will not be able to fight against the four tier one powers with you,” Zhao Hong said.

“Exactly what is so important for you to leave this urgently? Explain to me exactly what it is. Else... I will not let you go,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

At that moment, Zhao Hong grew silent. Chu Feng was able to see hesitations and misgivings in her eyes.

However, after a short moment, Zhao Hong opened her mouth, “Actually, I should tell you about this matter.”

“Merely... I fear that you will worry. That’s why I have been hesitant to tell you the entire time. Since you insist on learning about it, I will not keep it from you.”

It turned out there was a reason why Zhao Hong’s cultivation had been able to increase during the past two years. She had managed to encounter another chance opportunity, and discovered another remnant.

She had not been to the depths of that remnant the entire time. The reason for that was because there was a certain amount of danger in the remnant.

However, as she had made enemies of the four tier one powers, if she did not increase her cultivation rapidly, she would only become a burden.

Zhao Hong did not wish to become Chu Feng and Wang Qiang’s burden.

Thus, she had decided to challenge that remnant.

“Do you really not need me to accompany you?” Chu Feng was

worried. From Zhao Hong's tone, he was able to tell that even though that remnant was capable of allowing her to become stronger, it was also capable of killing her.

"I know that you can help me. However, I wish to accomplish this task myself."

"Chu Feng, you know it too. For Martial Cultivators, we must mature through predicaments. For some things, I must face them myself."

"Furthermore, didn't you yourself also experience a lot in order to grow so much in such a short period of time?" Zhao Hong said.

"Very well. Since you've decided, I will no longer stop you. However... you must definitely return safely. Your husband is still waiting for you," Chu Feng said.

"I will definitely succeed. Are you really planning to take on the four tier one powers with your current strength and by yourself?"

"I truly hope you can stay here to accompany my husband. With your talent, when my husband's power is completely awakened, you will definitely be able to make progress too. If you are to give me enough time, I too will definitely succeed."

"At that time, the three of us can come out together and declare war against the four tier one powers. Wouldn't that be even better?" Zhao Hong asked.

She was not only very emotional when she said these words, but her eyes were also filled with anticipation.

It seemed that Zhao Hong had already made preparations to take on the four tier one powers in the future.

## Chapter 2528 - Four Tier One Powers

---

“Rest assured, I will not go and battle against the four tier one powers by myself. However, I will also not be staying on Mount Cloud Crane,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

“I truly don’t know what to do with you. However, regardless, you must care for your safety. I hope that when I return, you’ll be able to stand before me unscathed.”

“No, not hope, instead, you must definitely stand before me unscathed.”

“Chu Feng, as Wang Qiang is my husband, he cannot be considered to be my friend.”

“Thus, I, Zhao Hong, only have you as my friend. I also only recognize you as my friend.”

“I hope that the three of us can journey together,” After saying those words, the corners of Zhao Hong’s eyes actually started to moisten.

She was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with concern.

Zhao Hong was truly no longer that cold-blooded and ruthless demonic woman. She had become emotional. Her rare emotions were placed onto Wang Qiang and Chu Feng.

Toward Wang Qiang, she felt love.

Toward Chu Feng, she felt friendship.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart also started to feel sour.

As Zhao Hong’s only friend, he was able to sense how much he weighed in her heart.

“Very well, let’s make a promise today. When Wang Qiang awakens, the two of us must both stand before him unscathed.”

“Regardless of whether it is the Upper Realms or the Starfields,

in the future, the three of us will journey to them together,” Chu Feng said to Zhao Hong.

“Mn,” Zhao Hong nodded sternly.

Then, Zhao Hong left. As for Chu Feng, he returned to bid his farewell to the Golden Crane True Immortal and then also left.

Zhao Hong had left for that remnant.

As for Chu Feng, he naturally had a destination in mind too. Chu Feng’s destination was a place called the Demon Elimination Cave.

Chu Feng was proceeding for the Demon Elimination Cave to search for someone, a person by the name of Zi Xunyi.

Back in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, not only did Chu Feng obtain the Kong Heavenly Clan’s ancestor’s inheritance, he had also encountered an individual. That individual was the City Master of Hero City, whose reputation had shaken the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm a thousand years ago, Ying Mingchao.

Ying Mingchao was plotted against by both the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan. He was forced to use his Taboo Technique to escape. However, that Taboo Technique caused him to be trapped inside the Kong Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area, the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Chu Feng had promised Ying Mingchao that he would help rescue him. As for the person that could rescue Ying Mingchao, it was a person by the name of Zi Xunyi.

.....

Should Chu Feng be able to successfully rescue Ying Mingchao, Ying Mingchao would definitely take revenge against the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

Thus, the top priority for Chu Feng would be to rescue Ying Mingchao.

As Chu Feng bid his farewell to the Golden Crane True Immortal, he had also inquired about how to proceed for the Demon Elimination Cave.

Although the Demon Elimination Cave was a dangerous place, Ying Mingchao had given Chu Feng a route to take. Thus, Chu Feng's journey toward the Demon Elimination Cave could be said to be sure-fire and worry-free.

However, Chu Feng had no idea that while he was proceeding for the Demon Elimination Cave, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot had all arrived at the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

Inside the Zhou Heavenly Clan's most gorgeous main palace hall, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, as well as their several Utmost Exalted Elders, were all present.

Although not a lot of people were present in the palace hall, they were all True Immortal-level experts.

At that moment, those True Immortal-level experts were gathered around three coffins.

Those three coffins were all made of crystal. Not only were they capable of stopping the decay of corpses, one could also see the corpses through the crystal coffins.

The corpses inside the three crystal coffins were respectively, Dugu Jianxu, the Wine-Meat Monk and Zhou Fukong.

Suddenly, an old man among the crowd spoke, "Two sirs, are the two of you still unable to make a resolution?"

This old man was very tall and sturdy. He possessed two long patches of white hair on his temples, but the rest of his hair was jet-black.

At a glance, he simply did not resemble an old man. Furthermore, his aura was extremely fierce and tough.

This was especially true for his eyes. They simply did not resemble human eyes, as they were even sharper, even fiercer, than the eyes of ferocious beasts.

He was the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Zhou Yuyuan.

His words were spoken toward two individuals.

They were two old men...

One of them was filled with the aura of immortality. On his back were three swords. He appeared very mysterious, and gave off the airs of a living immortal.

He was the headmaster of the Immortal Sword School, Daoist Sword Governor.

As for the other old man, he was a very amiable-looking monk with a very petite build. He was the Abbot of Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Monk Yuangui. [1. Yuangui means 'desire to return.' A monk-sounding name I guess.]

The two of them had been here for a while now. They had also come to know about what had happened.

The Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan naturally wanted them all to join hands to eradicate Chu Feng together.

Merely, the two of them were hesitant.

"Chu Feng has killed our most prospective disciples. He is clearly not placing us in his eyes."

"If we are to let this matter go like this, wouldn't we become objects of ridicule for the people of the world?"

"I truly do not understand why the two of you are still hesitating," The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had become impatient.

"Jingyi has always been a naughty and mischievous child. He had indeed done many excessive things. I have punished him severely so as to discipline him. However, time and time again, he refused



to repent.”

“Originally, I had planned to lock him up in our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple so that he would not go out to stir up troubles. Never would I have expected for this matter to happen before I could do so.”

“However, with the nature of this child Jingyi, it is very hard for me to say that Chu Feng is in the wrong here.”

“Thus, before we thoroughly investigate what happened, I will not rashly attack Chu Feng,” The Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot gently caressed the Wine-Meat Monk’s coffin as he spoke.

As for the Jingyi that he spoke of, it was the Wine-Meat Monk’s buddhist name. [2. Jingyi means ‘cleanse one.’]

“What is there to investigate? There were so many people present back then. They were all able to verify that Chu Feng was the one in the wrong,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple will look into this matter ourselves. Farewell,” As the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot spoke, he soared into the sky. The crystal coffin with the Wine-Meat Monk also left with him.

“My opinion is the same as Grandmaster Yuangui’s. Two sirs, please don’t think too much into it. It is not that I do not believe you all. Merely, for some things, I wish to personally verify them first. After all, this matter is of great concern.”

“Apart from that, I thank you all for bringing back Jianxu’s body. Farewell,” After that, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster also left with Dugu Jianxu’s corpse.

At that moment, only the people from the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan remained in the palace hall.

“Those two are still this indecisive. Who knows how long they are going to investigate this matter,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief complained angrily.

“You couldn’t possibly really be thinking that they’re planning to investigate, right?” At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, who had been silent the entire time, suddenly spoke.

“You mean to say that they do not plan to make an enemy of Chu Feng?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“That’s obvious. They will not act,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Then what about you? What do you plan to do?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked. From his gaze, it could be seen that he was very afraid that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief would also decide to not confront Chu Feng.

“It is all because of that Chu Feng that our Kong Heavenly Clan has fallen to our current state. There is already no way out for me. Even if I do not attack him, he will not let me off.”

“Thus, it should be me asking you, are you willing to join hands with me to eliminate that Chu Feng?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Is there even a need for you to ask me that? I am definitely not going to let things go. Not only that Chu Feng, that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang are also going to be eliminated.”

“Not only them, but everyone related to them shall be eliminated. Else... I will not be able to curb my anger, my hatred.” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke as he gnashed his teeth angrily. Intense and frightening killing intent was present in his eyes.

# Chapter 2529 - Chanced Encounter With Li Ming

---

After journeying for some time, Chu Feng arrived at the so-called Demon Elimination Cave.

The Demon Elimination Cave was located in an enormous basin. This basin was so enormous that it could be described as being boundless.

Brilliant green stones were flickering within the basin. Even though it was night, this place was still exceptionally bright.

At a glance, the basin appeared to be an ocean filled with green gems. It was a very spectacular scene.

The Demon Elimination Cave was actually a very beautiful place. It could be considered to be a very scenic land.

However, the Demon Elimination Cave was a forbidden area of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The reason for that was because this Demon Elimination Cave originated from the Ancient Era.

Reportedly, a very ferocious Monstrous Clan once appeared in the Ancient Era. That Monstrous Clan possessed special Inherited Bloodlines and enormous power. They began to run amuck throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm fearlessly.

Later on, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's many experts joined hands to resist the Monstrous Clan. They chose a peculiar terrain to set up countless traps and slaughtering formations.

Later on, those experts lured the Monstrous Clan into a battle at that location.

The Monstrous Clan did not know of the traps. After being lured into that place, they were eradicated by the countless traps and

slaughtering formations.

From then on, the fierce Monstrous Clan disappeared. From that point on... that location where they were eradicated was known as the Demon Elimination Cave. [1. Discovered that it should be Monstrous Elimination Cave. However, it's over a hundred chapters to change. I guess I should just keep it as-is.]

Those slaughtering formations from the Ancient Era were still present in the Demon Elimination Cave. Those traps were also still present. Due to the fact that the slaughtering formations and traps were extremely dangerous, even True Immortals did not dare to enter the Demon Elimination Cave at will.

Thus, the Demon Elimination Cave could be said to be one of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's most fiercely famous forbidden areas.

However, Chu Feng knew of a safe passage. This passage was capable of allowing him to avoid countless slaughtering formations and traps to enter the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave safely.

“This place is truly a wondrous location.”

At that moment, Chu Feng had already entered the Demon Elimination Cave.

He was currently proceeding according to the route. Upon entering the Demon Elimination Cave, Chu Feng discovered that although the Demon Elimination Cave was boundlessly vast when judged from the outside, he felt that the inside was even more vast upon entering it.

The Demon Elimination Cave was simply too enormous. Even for Chu Feng, it would likely take him several days of travel to reach its depths.

With that in mind, Chu Feng began to ponder. Those seniors from the Ancient Era, exactly how enormous of an effort did they

put in to set up all these slaughtering formations and traps inside this place?

“Chu Feng, listen, it seems like something is shouting,” Her Lady Queen’s gentle and beautiful voice was heard. She was warning Chu Feng.

It was not that Her Lady Queen was nervous. As Chu Feng entered further into the Demon Elimination Cave, many strange sounds could be heard. Some were louder than others, and some sounded closer than others.

Those sounds resembled the anguished wailing of fierce ghosts. Yet, they also resembled a mixture of screams, roars and cries of resentment from people.

Some of the sounds appeared to be from very far away, whereas others appeared to be right beside one’s ear. Those were noises that caused one’s blood to run cold. It was very frightening.

Chu Feng swept through his surroundings with his Heaven’s Eyes, but was unable to see anything. However, the further he went into the Demon Elimination Cave, the more distinct the sounds became.

“The terrain of this place is very special. Furthermore, there’s all these slaughtering formations set up here. This makes it so that sounds that have originated here before continue to linger.”

“I think that these sounds we’re hearing are the sounds from the participants of that major battle during the Ancient Era,” Chu Feng said.

“If that really is the case, then with how enormous this place is and how the sounds are present throughout this place, the battle back then was truly vast. There were most definitely a lot of casualties,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Although many of the things from the Ancient Era have become mysteries now, there is one thing that is widely accepted by

everyone. That is, the Ancient Era's martial cultivators were stronger than the current martial cultivators," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, in that case, do you think all of the experts from the Ancient Era are all dead? Could some have managed to survive?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"That's hard to say. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, there was a wondrous land like the Misty Peak. I believe there is no lack of wondrous lands in this vast Outer World."

"Since there are Ancient Era's Organisms that cannot be explained still present, then it would not be impossible for the experts that traveled about unhindered through the Ancient Era to still be living today," Chu Feng said.

"If they're alive, they must be really powerful," Her Lady Queen said.

"If there are really those that survived from the Ancient Era, I truly wish to meet them," Chu Feng smiled.

"That said, with how devastating the battle from back then was, sounds from the battle shouldn't be the only things that remain, no? There should be bones and remains. Why are no bones to be seen here?" Her Lady Queen asked curiously.

"They must've been retrieved by others," Chu Feng said.

"They have truly picked everything clean," Her Lady Queen said.

"Mn?" Suddenly, Chu Feng's gaze changed. After his gaze was cast toward a location, he suddenly stopped moving forward.

"It's her?" At that moment, Her Lady Queen's gaze also changed. A surprised expression emerged in her beautiful eyes.

As Chu Feng possessed the Heaven's Eyes, he was not only able to see through obstructions, but was also able to see very far.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were seeing a slaughtering formation.

The slaughtering formation was currently active. At that moment, there was actually a person trapped inside the slaughtering formation.

At that moment, all of the powers of that slaughtering formation were attacking that individual with the intention to kill them.

As for the person that was trapped, it was a young man. Not only was he very young, but his skin was also very tender, soft and fair. It was even better than the skin of many women.

As for his face, it was also very delicate and fine. If he were a female, he would definitely be a beauty.

In fact, that person actually was a female. She was a female dressed up as a man.

She was Young Master Li Ming.

“Enemies of a narrow road. To encounter her here, that girl is truly one to travel everywhere. Why would she come to the Demon Elimination Cave?” Chu Feng had a surprised expression on his face.

“What’s the plan? Are you going to help her?” Her Lady Queen asked mischievously.

“That slaughtering formation that has trapped her is no small matter. It is very difficult to breach from the inside. Although she is also a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it is still very difficult for her to breach that slaughtering formation. Logically, I should help her.”

“However, she clearly harbored hard feelings for me due to what happened last time. I’m afraid that if I am to save her, she will not only not be grateful, but will instead attack me.”

“If that’s the case, the gains will not make up for the losses,” Chu Feng said.

“When you fought her last time, you were still a rank seven

Martial Ancestor. However, you're a rank eight Martial Ancestor now. As for her, judging by her aura... she should still be a rank nine Martial Ancestor."

"Even if the two of you both possess heaven-defying battle powers capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation, don't forget that you're a Heavenly Bloodline possessor, and have also grasped the two great secret skills of Ancient Era's War Axe and Ancient Era's War Sword. She is no match for you," Her Lady Queen said.

"Milady Queen, it seems like you very much want me to help her? She's a little beauty. Furthermore, that feeling is truly exceptional."

"If I am to go help her, wouldn't Milady Queen feel jealous?" Chu Feng said with a mischievous laugh.

"Humph~~~ Humph~~~"

Her Lady Queen did not answer Chu Feng, and instead replied with two snorts.

Her two snorts were truly mocking in nature. It was like two sledgehammers ruthlessly smashing onto Chu Feng's head. They were telling him that he was overthinking things.

Her Lady Queen would simply not be jealous. The reason why she was not jealous was because Chu Feng's status in her heart had yet to reach that level.

Regardless of how much Her Lady Queen cared about Chu Feng, she only considered him a friend, and not a lover.

"Sigh~~~"

Chu Feng sighed awkwardly. Then, he flew toward the slaughtering formation trapping Young Master Li Ming.

Chu Feng did not dislike Young Master Li Ming. In fact, he felt guilty for touching her breasts by accident.



And now, she was in danger. Chu Feng would naturally help her.

# Chapter 2530 - Farewell

---

After approaching, Chu Feng began to see the grand formation that had trapped Young Master Li Ming more clearly.

That grand formation was a very powerful slaughtering formation.

Although that slaughtering formation was visible at the moment, from the traces surrounding it, Chu Feng was able to determine that it should have been hidden before.

Not to mention Young Master Li Ming being trapped by the slaughtering formation, if Chu Feng had not obtained the safe route from Ying Mingchao, he likely would not have been able to discover that slaughtering formation either.

At that moment, the slaughtering formation had trapped Young Master Li Ming within it, and its various mechanisms and traps were also activated. Countless sharp swords formed by the slaughtering formation had surrounded Young Master Li Ming with the intention of skewering her.

Those sharp swords were no ordinary swords. If one were to be struck by them, it would be very difficult to heal the injuries they would cause. Even one's soul would suffer damage. One would truly and inevitably die should one be struck by those swords.

Furthermore, the slaughtering formation was extremely powerful. Unless one's cultivation had reached True Immortal realm, regardless of how strong one's martial power might be, it would be useless.

Fortunately, that Young Master Li Ming was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. By relying on her world spirit techniques and spirit formations, she was still barely able to deal with the slaughtering formation. Else... she would really end up suffering a calamity.

It could be said that, Young Master Li Ming was trapped in a crisis. She was currently going all-out with her world spirit techniques to confront the crisis before her. As such, she did not notice Chu Feng's approach.

"Yoh, girl, what are you doing?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Young Master Li Ming's expression changed instantly. She cast her extremely sharp gaze to Chu Feng.

At the beginning, it was only a gaze of alertness. However, Chu Feng was able to sense that the moment Young Master Li Ming's gaze landed on him, her gaze turned from one of alertness to one filled with killing intent.

However, she merely took a single glance at Chu Feng before retrieving her gaze. She did not even bother to utter a word. She was reacting as if she hadn't seen him.

"Girl, it will be very difficult for you to escape from this spirit formation by yourself. However, if I am to help you, you'll be able to escape much more easily."

"While I can help you out, you must disregard your former hatred towards me," Chu Feng said.

Young Master Li Ming was still completely silent. It was as if she could not hear Chu Feng.

Although Young Master Li Ming was ignoring Chu Feng, Chu Feng continued with a smile on his face, "This slaughtering formation is no small matter. It'll be very difficult for you to break free relying only on your own strength."

"There's no need for your concern," Young Master Li Ming spoke coldly.

"Apologies, you cannot determine what I want to do," Chu Feng said.

“You!!!” Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed. Then, she swept her gaze filled with overwhelming killing intent toward Chu Feng.

However, upon seeing Young Master Li Ming’s reaction, the smile on Chu Feng’s face grew more and more concentrated. Then, he began to move his arms, and waves of spirit power started to emerge from his body.

Chu Feng’s spirit power was like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses whereas, Chu Feng himself was like the commander of that magnificent army.

Under Chu Feng’s control, the vast amount of spirit power soon started to change form. It turned into a hundred dazzling golden rhinoceroses.

Those one hundred golden rhinoceroses were all several tens of meters tall. There were chains on their bodies that connected them with one another.

This was a grand formation, a grand formation that specialized in breaking through slaughtering formations.

Witnessing this scene, Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed. As a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, she was naturally able to tell how amazing Chu Feng’s spirit formation was. Chu Feng... was planning to help her.

“If you want to break free from this slaughtering formation, you must cooperate with me to attack it from both sides. Else... it will produce the opposite of the desired result,” Chu Feng reminded.

“Even if you are to help me, I will not be grateful towards you,” Young Master Li Ming said coldly.

“I don’t need you to feel grateful towards me,” As Chu Feng spoke, he set his grand formation in motion.

“Roar~~~”

The hundred golden rhinoceroses formed by Chu Feng's spirit formation seemed to be living creatures as they roared.

Then, the horns of those hundred golden rhinoceroses started to shine brightly. At that moment, their horns seemed greatly increased in size.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

.....

Then, loud consecutive explosions began to be heard. The hundred golden rhinoceroses had all smashed into various locations on the slaughtering formation.

In response, that Young Master Li Ming immediately started to cooperate with Chu Feng from the inside. She increased the strength of her own spirit formations.

With the joint effort from the two, the slaughtering formation was finally breached after a loud explosion was heard.

“Prepare to die!!!”

Right at that moment, that Young Master Li Ming suddenly shot forth a palm strike directly toward Chu Feng.

Once that palm strike was shot forth, it brought with it overwhelming martial power. The martial power turned into an enormous hand ten meters tall that moved toward Chu Feng to oppress him.

It was like a golden-bright and dazzling little mountain was about to crush Chu Feng alive.

That Young Master Li Ming was trying to kill Chu Feng.

That said, Chu Feng was not startled, nor was he afraid when faced with the situation before him. Instead... he had a very

confident expression. It was as if he had anticipated all of it.

“Zzzzz~”

Lightning flashed as radiance filled their surroundings. Chu Feng’s Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared on his body together.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s cultivation was no longer that of a rank eight Martial Ancestor. In fact, it had even surpassed that of ordinary rank nine Martial Ancestors.

“Woosh~”

Chu Feng waved his sleeve. With merely that simple move, Chu Feng had managed to instantly shatter the incoming enormous golden hand.

“Girl, I’m afraid that it will be very difficult for the current you to kill the current me,” Chu Feng said to Young Master Li Ming with a beaming smile.

Young Master Li Ming was very powerful. Her cultivation was that of an actual peak Martial Ancestor, a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

As for Chu Feng, he was only a rank eight Martial Ancestor. When compared to Young Master Li Ming, his cultivation was an entire level lower.

However, Chu Feng was a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. Thus... while he might only be a rank eight Martial Ancestor, once he utilized his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, his battle power became a level above that of Young Master Li Ming.

This was one of the reasons why Chu Feng had decided to save Young Master Li Ming knowing fully that she would try to kill him afterward.

That is, Chu Feng was certain that she would not be able to kill him.

“What makes you think that I cannot kill you?”

After Young Master Li Ming finished saying those words, nine-colored lightning began to flicker in her eyes.

“Zzzzz~”

The next moment, Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings emerged on Young Master Li Ming’s body.

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming’s battle power had surpassed Chu Feng’s by a level.

“You’re actually also a Heavenly Bloodline possessor?” Chu Feng was greatly astonished.

Before that, he had truly never anticipated that Young Master Li Ming would also be a Heavenly Bloodline possessor.

“I never once said that I wasn’t a Heavenly Bloodline possessor,” Young Master Li Ming spoke indifferently.

“This is embarrassing then,” Chu Feng scratched his head with a smile. Then, he said to Young Master Li Ming, “Could you pretend that I’ve never been here?”

“What do you think?” Young Master Li Ming replied coldly. The killing intent in her eyes grew even more intense.

“Haha, it would seem that’s a no then. It can’t be helped then.”

Seeing this, Chu Feng clenched his fists. Then, he began to move, and explosions began to be heard from all over his body.

Seeing Chu Feng like this, Young Master Li Ming’s gaze also changed. Being experienced in battle, she knew that Chu Feng was warming up his body, that he was planning to fight her.

“Roar~”

Right at that moment, an azure dragon suddenly appeared below Chu Feng’s feet.

With a move of that azure dragon’s tail, and with Chu Feng still

standing atop it, it began to flee toward the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave.

“Girl, farewell!!!”

It turned out that Chu Feng did not plan to fight Young Master Li Ming. Instead, he planned to escape.

“Bastard!”

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming grew extremely furious. How could she be willing to allow Chu Feng to escape? With overwhelming killing intent, she began to chase after Chu Feng.



# Chapter 2531 - Fighting Li Ming Again

---

Chu Feng finally realized why Young Master Li Ming would be known as the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's number one genius.

She was not only a peak Martial Ancestor, but she was actually also a Heavenly Bloodline possessor.

“Why are you running? Fight her.”

“Chu Feng, let me tell you, a girl like Li Ming will only be susceptible to force, but not persuasion. You must subdue her with strength,” Seeing that Chu Feng had turned to escape, Her Lady Queen spoke disappointedly.

“My Eggy, do you really want me to fight against her? I keep having a feeling that this girl Li Ming is not like Kong Doumoyuan and the others.”

“Although her cultivation is the same as Kong Doumoyuan's, I keep feeling that it will be difficult for me to win against her, that it will be dangerous to fight her,” Chu Feng said.

“Do what you want. This Queen has no time to bother with you. After all, even if you refuse to fight with her, you will absolutely not be able to escape from her.”

Her Lady Queen folded her arms and then sat on the ground.

Not only did she have a very haughty appearance, but she also had a mischievous smile on her exceptionally beautiful face.

Her Lady Queen was simply not worried about Chu Feng at all. Instead, she appeared to be planning on enjoying a show.

“Chu Feng, you won't be able to escape.”

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Young Master Li Ming was extremely fast. She was growing closer and closer to Chu Feng. Furthermore, following her shout,

countless arrows were shot toward Chu Feng from behind.

Those were no ordinary arrows. Each and every one of them were several tens of meters long and dazzling with golden light. They were incomparably sharp.

There were actually an innumerable amount of such arrows. They were like a rainstorm as they chased after Chu Feng.

That was not an ordinary martial skill. Rather, it was a Mortal Taboo Martial Skill. It was extremely mighty.

Seeing that he was unable to escape, Chu Feng suddenly stopped. With a thought, an enormous axe appeared in the sky.

“Buzz~~~”

The enormous axe appeared before Chu Feng. Like the ruler of weapons, it let out a dazzling golden light.

Before the arrows could approach Chu Feng, they were all swallowed by the golden light and shattered in the process.

In an instant, countless golden lights dispersed before Chu Feng. Those were the shattered golden arrows.

“Secret skill?”

“You’re from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?”

“No, if you were from the Ancient Era’s War Clan, how could you possess a Heavenly Bloodline?”

“Could it be that you’re Zhan Haichuan’s successor?”

Upon seeing the Ancient Era’s War Axe, Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed. She was shocked.

It was evident that this girl was very knowledgeable about the things of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. She actually managed to recognize that Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Axe was related to Zhan Haichuan instantly.

“That’s right, I am a person who has received the teachings of the

Ancient Era's War Clan. This secret skill is called the Ancient Era's War Axe. It's as equally famous as Senior Zhan Haichuan's Ancient Era's War Spear. It is one of the Ancient Era's War Clan's Three Great Secret Skills."

"Girl, you should be able to sense the might of my Ancient Era's War Axe, no?"

"Although my own battle power is a level below yours, with my Ancient Era's War Axe here, you can forget about defeating me," Chu Feng said proudly.

Chu Feng was not saying these words with the intention to show off. The reason for that was because he had spoken with a joking tone. It was more mocking than showing off.

Even though he had unleashed the Ancient Era's War Axe, Chu Feng did not really plan to harm Young Master Li Ming.

Thus, even if they were to truly fight, Chu Feng would not kill Young Master Li Ming.

The reason for that was because he did not possess any hostility toward her.

"What arrogance," Young Master Li Ming snorted coldly. Then, she streaked her hands across her Cosmos Sack. The next moment, light began to soar on her palms.

At the moment when the light dispersed, Chu Feng was able to clearly see two long whips in Young Master Li Ming's hands.

Those two whips were exactly the same. However, wind was lingering around one whip, whereas lightning was lingering around the other whip.

The wind on the whip was so violent that it could affect the weather. The lightning on the whip was exceptionally dazzling. The auras of the two whips were extremely dreadful.

They were two Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, they were

extremely high quality Ancestral Armaments. They were not at all inferior to Chu Feng's Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword.

“Paa, paa, paa~~~”

Right at that moment, the two whips in Young Master Li Ming's hand started to move about simultaneously.

She possessed superlative whip skills. In her hands, those two whips simply did not resemble two weapons. Rather, they resembled two huge dragons.

Ear-piercing sounds began to explode in the sky nonstop. Lightning and wind started to wreak havoc through the sky. An army of wind and lightning began to move toward Chu Feng to oppress him.

Not only had Young Master Li Ming used the strength of the Ancestral Armaments, but she had also used Taboo Martial Skills with matching properties to her Ancestral Armaments.

Furthermore, her Taboo Martial Skills were no small matter either. They were Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills. Otherwise... it would be impossible for her attacks to be this mighty.

Lightning flashed as the violent winds rushed forth. Ear-piercing explosions filled the entire sky. It was as if countless cracks had been ripped apart in the sky.

Before the bombardment of the lightning and wind army, even Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe started to let out buzzing noises nonstop. Gradually, it was being beaten back. Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe was actually unable to withstand the bombardment.

Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe that was able to completely suppress Kong Doumoyuan was actually being suppressed by Young Master Li Ming.

“This girl, I really cannot afford to underestimate her.”

Seeing that the situation was discouraging, Chu Feng did not dare to hold back anymore. He immediately took out his Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword.

Blazing flames soared into the sky as violent winds moved about. After his two Ancestral Armaments appeared, Chu Feng's battle power also increased.

At that moment, the power of the Ancient Era's War Axe also grew stronger.

Soon, the Ancient Era's War Axe that was being bombarded by wind and lightning no longer let out buzzing noises, and was no longer being beaten back.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Axe was like a fierce tiger that had eaten its fill. It possessed overwhelming power.

Not only was it no longer being beaten back, but it was also moving forward, and dispersing the lightning and wind bombarding it.

In merely an instant, Chu Feng had turned the situation of the battle around and gained the upper hand.

“Damn it!”

Seeing that she was unable to defeat the Ancient Era's War Axe even after attacking with both Ancestral Armaments and Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills, Young Master Li Ming revealed an unreconciled expression.

Judging from her reactions, her attacks using her Ancestral Armaments and Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills should be one of her most powerful attacks.

Otherwise, she would not have such a reaction to it being beaten back.

“Girl, I merely touched your chest by accident. It's not like there's an enormous hatred between us. Must you insist on killing

me like this?”

“How about the two of us sit down and have a proper chat? Perhaps we might even become friends. After all, I have quite a high opinion of you.”

Seeing that he held the upper hand, Chu Feng revealed a relaxed smile, and actually started to mock Li Ming again.

Speaking of it, it was quite strange. Although this Li Ming was a very haughty individual and was even trying to kill Chu Feng now, Chu Feng did not dislike her.

Instead, he felt her to be very amusing.

“Enough of your nonsense. Today, you will definitely die.”

However, what Chu Feng said only served to further ignite Young Master Li Ming’s anger.

Not only were the nine-colored lightnings in Young Master Li Ming’s eyes growing more and more intense, but her eyes were actually also emitting a golden glow.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, a golden light flew out from her body. It was flying straight toward the Ancient Era’s War Axe in the sky.

“Clank~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. The Ancient Era’s War Axe was actually knocked back.

“This girl!!!”

After Chu Feng was able to get a good look at the golden radiance, a surprised expression appeared in his eyes.

That golden radiance was actually a giant beast reaching a hundred meters tall.

That giant beast was a lion. However, it didn’t completely resemble a lion. The reason for that was because it possessed a pair

of enormous wings.

Although that golden lion was not an actual living being, it was composed of golden light; it appeared to be living, and emitted a very powerful aura.

It was a sort of ruler's aura, a ruler's aura that could cause all beasts to cower before it.

If the Ancient Era's War Axe could be said to be a ruler of weapons.

Then this golden lion would be a ruler of beasts.

As for that lion, it was not a treasure, nor was it a Taboo Martial Skill. It was a... secret skill.

# Chapter 2532 - Heaven Level Lightning Mark

---

“Roar~~~”

That secret skill was extremely powerful. Although it had yet to reach the power of the Ancient Era's War Axe, being so powerful that it could surpass an entire level of cultivation, it was still extremely powerful.

As Young Master Li Ming possessed cultivation a level above Chu Feng, it allowed Young Master Li Ming's secret skill to beat back Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe repeatedly.

“Chu Feng, you were correct, this girl possesses numerous abilities. She cannot be looked down upon.”

“Sure enough, she cannot be discussed alongside someone like Kong Doumoyuan.”

Her Lady Queen was growing more and more high-spirited the more she watched. As she saw the numerous abilities Young Master Li Ming had grasped, she was not only not worried, she even grew excited.

The reason why she was not worried for Chu Feng was because she knew that Chu Feng still possessed three abilities that he had not used.

Firstly, there was Chu Feng's Divine Mark. The power of his Divine Mark was far superior to other Lightning Marks. Although Chu Feng was at a disadvantage now, Her Lady Queen felt that Chu Feng would be able to turn the battle around the moment he used his Divine Mark.

Apart from the Lightning Mark, Chu Feng also possessed another secret skill from the Ancient Era's War Clan, the Ancient Era's War Sword.



The Ancient Era's War Sword was the strongest of the Ancient Era's War Clan's Three Great Secret Skills. It was a secret skill that even Zhan Haichuan had failed to subdue.

Not only was the Ancient Era's War Sword stronger than the Ancient Era's War Axe, but it was even stronger than Zhan Haichuan's Ancient Era's War Spear.

Merely, the Ancient Era's War Sword was too powerful. As such, it was very hard to control it.

Chu Feng was currently still unable to use the Ancient Era's War Sword.

However, After Chu Feng's cultivation reached rank eight Martial Ancestor and he used his Lightning Mark, he had mentioned to Her Lady Queen that although he was unable to completely control the Ancient Era's War Sword, he would be able to use it when absolutely necessary.

Merely, using the Ancient Era's War Sword would definitely overload his body. He would inevitably be affected by it.

To put it simply, if Chu Feng were to go all-out, he would be able to unleash a portion of the Ancient Era's War Sword's power.

Merely, like using the Evil God Sword, using the Ancient Era's War Sword would tax his body enormously, and he might even receive a backlash after using it.

Thus, as long as Chu Feng was able to not use the Ancient Era's War Sword, he would not use it. In the end, the Ancient Era's War Sword was a technique to preserve Chu Feng's life. It was a trump card that Chu Feng would only use when he had no other options.

Of course, apart from the Ancient Era's War Sword, Chu Feng still possessed one final ability, the Evil God Sword.

If Chu Feng were to use the Ancient Era's War Axe, he would still not necessarily be able to escape from True Immortals.

However, should he use the Evil God Sword, even ordinary True Immortals would not be able to escape from it alive.

This was the strongest trump card that Chu Feng possessed at the moment. However, it was also the ability that Chu Feng possessed that would cause the greatest amount of trouble, the trump card that he did not dare to use the most.

Her Lady Queen felt that as long as Chu Feng possessed those three trump cards, he would possess boundless possibilities.

During crucial moments, Chu Feng would not fear even True Immortals. As such, how could he possibly fear a Martial Ancestor?

That was the reason why Her Lady Queen was able to remain this calm. She knew that Chu Feng would definitely win.

“Girl, exactly what is your origin? How could you possess this many abilities?”

“However, I must say that even though your little golden lion is bold and powerful, it’s actually still weaker than my Ancient Era’s War Axe.”

“Your little golden lion is only able to contend against my Ancient Era’s War Axe because your cultivation is a level above mine.”

“Thus, girl, if you really detest me to the bones, then you should kill me right away.”

“Else, once my cultivation catches up to yours, once I become a rank nine Martial Ancestor like you, at that time... you will no longer be able to contend against me.”

Chu Feng was confident. Although he was in a disadvantaged situation right now, he was still teasing, mocking and provoking Young Master Li Ming nonstop.

Young Master Li Ming was originally a very calm individual. She

was someone that would simply not be affected by ordinary provocations. This could be seen in her match against Chu Feng on Mount Cloud Crane.

However, Chu Feng had infringed upon Young Master Li Ming's baseline when he accidentally touched her breasts.

Everyone possessed a baseline, something that could not be infringed upon. If one were to infringe upon it, one would not be spared.

Thus, as long as Chu Feng continued to provoke Young Master Li Ming using that, she would definitely be enraged.

“Very well, since you wish to die this much, I will grant you your wish and kill you right away.”

Young Master Li Ming's tone grew increasingly ice-cold. Then, lightning began to gather on her forehead.

“Are you going to use your Lightning Mark?”

“Very well, I am quite interested in seeing what sort of Lightning Mark you will have.”

Seeing this scene, Chu Feng revealed a serious and anticipating expression.

Chu Feng subconsciously felt that Young Master Li Ming's Lightning Mark was most likely not the lowest Mortal level Lightning Mark.

That was the reason why he was anticipating so much. He wanted to know exactly what sort of Lightning Mark a genius like her would possess.

He wanted to know whether it would be an Earthen level Lightning Mark or a Mortal level Lightning Mark.

Under Chu Feng's serious gaze, Young Master Li Ming's Lightning Mark finally condensed on her forehead.

At the moment the Lightning Mark was formed, a boundless aura

began to emit from Young Master Li Ming's body.

At that moment, not only was Young Master Li Ming's body covered with lightning, but there was also nine-colored lightning present all over the sky. Like lightning dragons, they would appear and disappear from time to time and let out thunderous roars.

“It's actually this level!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng's expression changed. Even though he had prepared himself beforehand, Chu Feng still never expected Young Master Li Ming's Lightning Mark to be at this level.

On Young Master Li Ming's forehead was the character 'Heaven', condensed with nine-colored lightning.

Heaven level Lightning Mark, this was the Lightning Mark that Young Master Li Ming had grasped.

Young Master Li Ming had actually trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, a Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique second to only the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

“It's too late to be scared now.”

As Young Master Li Ming spoke, she unleashed her power that she had received from her Heaven level Lightning Mark.

“Rooarr~~~”

At that moment, that golden lion reacted as if it was shot with hormones and let out a loud, ear-piercing roar.

At that moment, it seemed like that lion's body had grown much bigger. The aura it emitted also grew much more powerful.

If Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe was still able to withstand the lion's attack even though it was being beaten back, then, at that moment, Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Axe was no longer able to withstand the golden lion's attacks.

That said, even though he was being absolutely suppressed and

the golden lion was soon to breach the Ancient Era's War Axe and reach him, Chu Feng still did not reveal any fear. Instead, he shook his head helplessly and said with a sigh, "There's nothing I can do about it. It would seem that if I do not beat you into submission, you will not give up."

"Beat me into submission? What makes you think you can do that?" A ridiculing gaze appeared in Young Master Li Ming's eyes.

She felt that as long as she used the power of her Heaven level Lightning Mark, she would grasp absolute victory.

Even if Chu Feng were to use his Lightning Mark, he would still not be able to contend against her. After all, she had used the most powerful Heaven level Lightning Mark.

She felt that Chu Feng was overestimating his capabilities, that he was indulging in fantasy by saying those words.

"Zzzzz~~~"

Right at that moment, dazzling nine-colored lightning suddenly appeared around Chu Feng.

The nine-colored lightning began to spiral around Chu Feng as it soared into the sky. Both their quantity and size were many times greater than Young Master Li Ming's lightning.

Most importantly, a character had appeared on Chu Feng's forehead.

It was a character condensed by nine-colored lightning, it was the character 'Divine.'

# Chapter 2533 - It's Actually An Immortal Armament

---

“That is...”

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming, who was filled with murderous desire, revealed a change in expression. Her facial expression turned sluggish as she was startled by Chu Feng.

The next moment, an extremely astonished expression emerged in her eyes that were flashing with lightning, radiating a golden glow and filled with killing intent.

“Divine Mark, you’ve trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?!”

“How could this be? That sort of thing actually really exists in this world?!”

Young Master Li Ming let out a voice of disbelief.

Compared to the ignorant Kong Doumoyuan and others, it was evident that Young Master Li Ming knew of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

It was also precisely because she knew of the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique that she revealed such astonishment and disbelief.

Based on what she knew, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was simply a legend. Yet now... this legendary thing was actually placed before her.

How could she not be astonished by this?

However, what she could not accept the most was the fact that Chu Feng had actually trained in this legendary Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique.

Furthermore, judging by his appearance, it was evident that he

had practiced it successfully.

As she was very proud, she found this truly unacceptable.

“Seems like it’s true.”

That said, at the same time as Young Master Li Ming was astonished and filled with unreconciliation, she was also able to feel the sensation that was coming from her Bloodline deep in her dantian.

It was actually a feeling of fear.

She, who had trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique and formed her Heaven level Lightning Mark, was actually feeling fear toward Chu Feng from the depths of her soul, from the bottom of her core.

This made her even more certain than what Chu Feng had trained in was the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

The reason for that was because the only thing that could make her, someone who had trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, feel fear would be that legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Right at that moment, Young Master Li Ming shouted, “Even if this is the case, you can still forget about defeating me!!!”

Then, Young Master Li Ming raised her arms and tossed away her two Ancestral Armaments.

Chu Feng’s gaze changed upon seeing this scene. He was confused by Young Master Li Ming’s actions.

Throwing away her Ancestral Armaments would only serve to decrease her battle power. Yet, judging from her appearance, she was planning to continue her struggle against Chu Feng.

Since she was planning on continuing the battle against Chu Feng, why would she throw away her Ancestral Armaments and lower her battle power at a time like this?

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, Chu Feng realized why Young Master Li Ming had tossed away her two Ancestral Armaments.

A sword had appeared in Young Master Li Ming’s hand.

It was a long, pink sword composed of pink gems. It possessed a very exquisite appearance.

Beautiful, this sword was very beautiful. Rather than calling it a weapon, it would be more accurate to say that it was a masterpiece, a work of art.

However, after that three-foot-long sword appeared, not only did Chu Feng no longer dare to underestimate Young Master Li Ming, but even Her Lady Queen who was enjoying the show abruptly stood up with a serious expression on her face.

The reason for that was because the aura being emitted by that pink sword was extremely powerful. That was not an ordinary weapon.

The aura it emitted caused even Chu Feng’s Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword to tremble before it.

This allowed Chu Feng to know that the weapon in Young Master Li Ming’s hand was most likely an... Immortal Armament.

“Immortal Armament, this girl actually possesses an Immortal Armament.”

“But, even if she possesses an Immortal Armament, can she really control it with her current cultivation?”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen also had a surprised expression. She was also filled with uncertainty.

After all, no matter how strong a Martial Ancestor might be, they would be inferior to True Immortals.

Immortal Armaments were likely weapons that even ordinary



True Immortals would find difficult to control.

Not to mention how precious Immortal Armaments were, merely the fact that they were difficult to control was something that one couldn't change.

Even if that Young Master Li Ming possessed an Immortal Armament, how could she possibly be able to control her Immortal Armament?

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were pondering how Young Master Li Ming could control her Immortal Armament, a red medicinal pellet suddenly appeared in her hand.

She directly tossed that medicinal pellet into her mouth.

“Li Ming, stop,” Seeing this, Chu Feng hurriedly shouted, “There are no deep hatreds or grievances between us. There's simply no need for you to go this far.”

The medicinal pellet Young Master Li Ming had tossed into her mouth was most definitely not an ordinary medicinal pellet. That medicinal pellet should be capable of granting her the power to control an Immortal Armament.

However, a medicinal pellet like that would definitely be much more powerful than ordinary Forbidden Medicines.

Such a powerful medicinal pellet would most naturally also have an enormous backlash.

Chu Feng felt that there was simply no need for Young Master Li Ming to do something that would harm herself like this for the sake of taking care of him.

“I must kill you.”

However, Young Master Li Ming was determined to kill. She directly swallowed the medicinal pellet in her mouth.

After that medicinal pellet entered her mouth, Young Master Li

Ming's body started to emit a red glow, and even her skin turned red.

Young Master Li Ming did not emit overwhelming battle power. However, a strange sort of power was present in her body.

Soon, Chu Feng noticed that the red glow on Young Master Li Ming's body was extending from her arm to the Immortal Armament she held.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, the Immortal Armament started to emit an extremely strong power.

That power was extremely frightening. To be exact, it was that Immortal Armament that was too frightening.

Wave upon wave of energy was being emitted from the Immortal Armament and sweeping across the sky.

That Immortal Armament had yet to move. However, Chu Feng and the Ancient Era's War Axe before him were already being pushed back repeatedly by the Immortal Armament.

“So that's an Immortal Armament. What overwhelming power,” Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration.

Chu Feng could tell that even though Young Master Li Ming was able to use the Immortal Armament after taking that special medicinal pellet, she was still unable to completely reveal the power of the Immortal Armament.

However, even though it was only a portion of the Immortal Armament's power, it was already so strong. If she were able to completely unleash the power of the Immortal Armament, how overwhelmingly powerful would that be?

“Chu Feng, this is bad. The power of the Immortal Armament is infinitely close to that of True Immortals,” At that moment, Her Lady Queen started to grow nervous.

Originally, she thought that Chu Feng would be able to defeat Young Master Li Ming after using his Divine Mark.

She never expected Young Master Li Ming to be so fierce. She never expected her to possess more and more powerful abilities that were not at all inferior to those Chu Feng possessed.

Not only did she successfully train in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, but she actually also possessed an Immortal Armament.

One must know that even those True Immortals that Chu Feng had fought only possessed Ancestral Armaments.

From this, it could be seen how valuable and precious Immortal Armaments were.

Immortal Armaments could be said to be extremely rare in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. At the very least, not even the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief possessed an Immortal Armament.

Thus, merely that Immortal Armament revealed how special Young Master Li Ming's identity was. She was most definitely not someone to be trifled with.

However, and most importantly, that Young Master Li Ming was actually able to use her Immortal Armament.

At that moment, Chu Feng had to use either the Ancient Era's War Sword or the Evil God Sword.

However, regardless of which he decided to use, he would suffer a backlash from it.

The gains of this battle would already no longer be able to make up for the losses.

“Chu Feng, prepare to die!”

Right at that moment, Young Master Li Ming thrust forth with her Immortal Armament.

“Boom~~~”

That sword surged like a gathering storm and seemed to be capable of overturning the heavens and splitting the earth.

It was as if that one sword thrust would be able to determine Chu Feng's life and death.

Right at the moment when Young Master Li Ming thought that victory was at hand, Chu Feng suddenly closed his eyes.

If others were to see this scene, they would most definitely think that Chu Feng had given up on resistance and was prepared to die.

However, they had no idea that at the moment when Chu Feng closed his eyes, from within his body and deep within his soul, an invisible pair of eyes suddenly opened.

Following that, an enormously powerful Ancient Era's aura was awakened.

That aura was completely unrestrained and overbearing. It was as if nothing could match against it!!!

At that moment, the aura had taken the form of an enormous sword and was about to break out of Chu Feng's body!!!

# Chapter 2534 - Trump Cards Showdown

---

“Buzz~~~”

Pink radiance dyed half the sky red. It was moving toward Chu Feng oppressively with a speed faster than lightning.

That pink radiance was extremely powerful. Wherever it passed, spatial cracks would appear.

It was not that the pink radiance's power was insufficient to shatter space itself. On the contrary, the pink radiance possessed power that was more than sufficient to shatter space itself.

This was truly a power capable of bringing about the destruction of a region. With the shattering of space, the earth would also start to cave in.

The reason why space had yet to shatter and the earth had yet to sink in was because the pink radiance was simply too fast, unimaginably fast.

Fortunately, its opponent was Chu Feng. If it were a martial cultivator inferior to Chu Feng, they would not be able to even react in time before being killed by that pink radiance.

For ordinary people, they would only be able to see the pink radiance after it had already left behind a path of utter destruction.

That pink radiance was not a natural or man-made disaster. Instead, it was a pure sword aura.

It was a wave of sword aura shot forth by an Immortal Armament.

At that moment, the Immortal Armament's sword aura was rapidly moving toward Chu Feng.

Not to mention being struck by it, as long as it reached within ten meters of Chu Feng, Chu Feng would undoubtedly be killed by it.

However, precisely at a time of crisis like that, Chu Feng's eyes

were tightly closed.

Seeing such a reaction from Chu Feng, Young Master Li Ming did not feel joy. Instead, a trace of unease flashed through her eyes.

This time around, it could be said to be the first actual confrontation between her and Chu Feng.

So far, she had been forced by Chu Feng to use her trump cards continuously.

Thus, Chu Feng's strength had already surpassed her imagination.

He had even forced her to use her Immortal Armament.

With how powerful Immortal Armaments were, her victory should be at hand.

However, when she saw that Chu Feng had actually closed his eyes when facing her Immortal Armament, she faintly felt that Chu Feng possessed an ability to take on her Immortal Armament.

“Could it be that this guy really possesses a Demon Armament that can kill True Immortals?”

Young Master Li Ming started to recall the rumors of Chu Feng possessing a Demon Armament.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his tightly closed eyes.

The next moment, a loud explosion sounded from Chu Feng's body.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, dazzling golden radiance began to emit from Chu Feng's body.

That golden radiance was too bright. It was actually able to overshadow the pink sword aura. At that moment, Chu Feng was

shining magnificently like a sun.

“That is?!!!”

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming was able to clearly see an enormous hundred meter-long golden sword appearing right before Chu Feng.

From its appearance, that enormous golden sword greatly resembled Chu Feng’s Ancient Era’s War Axe.

Merely, its size was much smaller than the Ancient Era’s War Axe Chu Feng had used earlier.

Although its size was much smaller than the Ancient Era’s War Axe, the aura it emitted was several times more powerful than that of the Ancient Era’s War Axe.

“Boom~~~”

A loud explosion was heard. The pink radiance that filled half the sky scattered about in all directions.

In an instant, heaven was overturned, the earth was split apart and space itself was shattered. At that moment, in the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave, only the golden radiance and the dark green colors of the Demon Elimination Cave were reflecting upon one another.

The enormous golden sword had actually managed to scatter Young Master Li Ming’s sword aura sent forth by her Immortal Armament.

“Another secret skill.”

Young Master Li Ming started to frown tightly.

Originally, she had thought that Chu Feng would use his legendary Demon Armament.

She never expected that Chu Feng would use another secret skill.

However, how could a secret skill be this overwhelmingly

powerful? It actually allowed Chu Feng's battle power to grow infinitely close to that of a True Immortal, enough to withstand her Immortal Armament.

"Is this another secret skill from the Ancient Era's War Clan?" Young Master Li Ming asked.

"Li Ming, this is indeed also from the Ancient Era's War Clan. This secret skill is called the Ancient Era's War Sword," Chu Feng replied.

"Exactly what sort of relationship do you have with the Ancient Era's War Clan?" Young Master Li Ming asked.

She was feeling very unreconciled at the fact that Chu Feng had actually grasped abilities this much more powerful than her own.

She was a very proud individual. Rarely did she ever find a match among those of her generation. As Even for those with the same cultivation as her, she was practically undefeatable.

Yet today, Chu Feng was actually able to obstruct her like this. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's strength surpassed her own.

It was as Chu Feng had stated, the only reason why she was able to fight with Chu Feng for so long was because her cultivation was a level above Chu Feng's.

If the two of them possessed the same level of cultivation, she would most likely have already been defeated by Chu Feng. It would be impossible for her to fight against Chu Feng for so long.

It was precisely because Chu Feng was so powerful that she wanted to know exactly what his origins were.

"Tell me which Heavenly Clan and which Upper Realm you're from."

"As long as you tell me what I want to know, I will tell you what relationship I have with the Ancient Era's War Clan," Chu Feng



said with a beaming smile.

Just like how Li Ming was curious about Chu Feng's identity, Chu Feng was also curious about Li Ming's identity.

Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, a powerful secret skill, her Immortal Armament and a medicinal pellet that allowed her to use her Immortal Armament.

All of these made Chu Feng feel that Young Master Li Ming was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, but instead someone from an Upper Realm.

"You don't have to tell me. After all, I am not interested in knowing what someone that is about to die wants to say."

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Young Master Li Ming thrust her Immortal Armament at Chu Feng in rapid succession.

Her attacks this time were different from earlier. This time around, countless sword auras were being sent toward Chu Feng simultaneously. As such, the attack was much more powerful.

"Very well, we shall have a showdown then."

Seeing that Young Master Li Ming had sent forth her attack, Chu Feng was not to be outdone either.

With a thought from him, the hundred meter-long Ancient Era's War Sword charged toward the incoming sword auras like an indestructible warship.

On one side was dazzling pink light.

On the other side, dazzling golden radiance.

The two collided and brought forth powerful energy ripples.

The energy ripples swept through everything, sending violent wind everywhere.

Even though Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming were the

people that were controlling the sword aura and secret skill, they were still knocked back repeatedly by the energy ripples.

“Immortal Armaments are truly powerful. Could it be that even my Ancient Era’s War Sword is only able to fight it to a draw?”

At that moment, an answer was present in Chu Feng’s heart.

Although both he and Young Master Li Ming possessed battle power infinitely close to that of True Immortals, it remained that they were only infinitely close.

Thus, it could be said that the two of them had reached the limits of battle power that Martial Ancestors could reach.

Their battle powers were only a match for one another.

Even if they were to continue fighting, it would only result in a draw.

Unless...

One of the two parties wereas no longer able to continue fighting.

Thus, whichever side first failed the test of endurance would be the one to lose.

Thus, the match was now one of physical capability and willpower. The outcome of the battle would thus be determined.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng’s expression suddenly changed. Then, he hurriedly stopped controlling the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

The reason for that was because he discovered that Young Master Li Ming’s sword aura was growing weaker and weaker. If he were to continue controlling the Ancient Era’s War Sword to fight her, he would definitely injure her.

“Puu~~~”

Right after Chu Feng halted his attacks, Young Master Li Ming

sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

At the moment Young Master Li Ming sprayed out that mouthful of blood, her legs grew weak, and she half-kneeled in midair. She was only able to stabilize herself with her Immortal Armament.

At that moment, although Young Master Li Ming's Immortal Armament still possessed an Immortal Armament's aura, it had already lost its overbearingness and unparalleled might.

The power of that Immortal Armament had stopped. Young Master Li Ming was no longer able to utilize the Immortal Armament.

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming's complexion had turned paper pale. She was like a dying individual. It was a very frightening sight.

In fact, she appeared to have shrunk to half her former weight. Her plump flesh had become extremely boney.

The mouthful of blood that she sprayed out earlier seemed to be more than only blood. It seemed like her vitality was also sprayed out along with her blood, leaving her with enormous harm.

However, Chu Feng knew that what had caused Young Master Li Ming to become like this was not that mouthful of blood that she had vomited out. Instead, this was the price that she paid to forcibly use her Immortal Armament.

The outcome of the battle had been decided. In the end... it was Chu Feng who won.

# Chapter 2535 - Bloodscale Monstrous Clan

---

At that moment, Chu Feng retrieved his Ancient Era's War Sword. He sat cross-legged in midair and closed his eyes.

Then, he swallowed ten medicinal pellets and covered his body with spirit power.

Chu Feng knew that Young Master Li Ming no longer possessed the strength to attack him.

Even though he had only used the Ancient Era's War Sword for such a short period of time, Chu Feng had overloaded his body by using it.

Thus, he had to work to lessen the backlash from the Ancient Era's War Sword using all the abilities that he could.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng's complexion soon turned pale, and his aura started to become erratic and weak.

"Never would I have expected the backlash from this Ancient Era's War Sword to be this severe."

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped in his heart.

Fortunately, the battle was short. Else, the backlash Chu Feng would have received would most definitely have been even more severe.

It would even be possible that he would lose the ability to battle, like Young Master Li Ming.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had only managed to unleash a portion of the Ancient Era's War Sword's power.

This could be seen by how the Ancient Era's War Sword was only a hundred meters long.

When the Ancient Era's War Sword had appeared in the Ancient Era's War Clan, it had been over a thousand meters long!!!

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was wholeheartedly focused on healing his injuries, Young Master Li Ming’s body grew weak and fell from the air. She actually did not even have the strength to stabilize herself in the air.

Chu Feng hurriedly opened his eyes and extended his finger. Spirit power shot out from Chu Feng’s finger.

That spirit power was extremely fast. Young Master Li Ming had only fallen ten meters from the sky when Chu Feng’s spirit power reached her. Chu Feng’s spirit power turned into a cloud that caught Young Master Li Ming.

Then, Chu Feng used his oppressive might to send the two Ancestral Armaments Young Master Li Ming had tossed away earlier onto the cloud beside her.

Chu Feng did not hold any hostility toward Young Master Li Ming. Thus, even though Chu Feng had won this battle, he did not wish to make things difficult for her.

“What is this? Are you trying to humiliate me?”

However, Young Master Li Ming was clearly unappreciative of Chu Feng’s kindness. She questioned Chu Feng with an extremely weak voice.

She felt that what Chu Feng was doing was simply humiliating her.

“That girl is truly unappreciative. Chu Feng, you must teach her a lesson. Otherwise, she will forever not place you in her eyes,” Her Lady Queen said aggrievedly.

“Teach her a lesson, how? My beloved Eggy, you have the greatest amount of ideas, how about you give me a suggestion?” Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

She is powerless right now. Why don’t you do that to her and

make her your woman? Perhaps she might become docile and obedient afterwards?” Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous smile on her face.“

That girl is quite decent-looking. It would indeed be pretty good for me to do that,” Chu Feng also revealed a mischievous smile. However, then, he said hesitantly, “Merely, there isn’t an enormous hatred between us. Wouldn’t it be too excessive for me to do something like that?”

“For an unreasonable girl like her, you should punish her like that. Else, she will forever not know the immensity of the heaven and earth,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn, it is still my Eggy that is most reasonable. Since that’s the case, I will do as you suggested.”

At that moment, Chu Feng decided to ignore the pain from the backlash and stopped healing his injuries. With a mischievous smile on his face, he slowly stood up.

Not only did Chu Feng have a mischievous smile on his face, but even the gaze with which he looked to Young Master Li Ming had changed.

“What are you planning to do?” Seeing the mischievous smile on Chu Feng’s face, Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed. She started to panic.

It was not that she was a cowardly individual. Rather, from Chu Feng’s gaze, she saw what she was most afraid of.

Chu Feng could beat her or even kill her. She would not blink an eye at that.

However, if Chu Feng were to do such a thing to her, she would absolutely be unable to accept it.

As for Chu Feng, he would naturally not be so shameless as to do that sort of thing to Li Ming.

Moreover, even if he were to ignore morality, Young Master Li Ming was not Chu Feng's type. Chu Feng was merely doing this to scare her.

For some unknown reason, he felt her to be very amusing. Toying with her would be able to bring Chu Feng joy.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly shouted, "Who is it?!"

At the same time, the mischievous gaze on Chu Feng's face turned incomparably sharp.

Being stared by Chu Feng's gaze, even the surrounding space turned incomparably ice-cold. It was even more bone-piercing than winter.

"Don't be afraid, we're on the same side.

"Right at that moment, the space in the direction that Chu Feng was staring at started to squirm. Then, several tens of figures walked out from it.

Seeing those people, Chu Feng's expression changed.

Those people simply did not resemble humans at all.

Although they possessed a humanoid build, they were over twice the height of an ordinary human.

Although they were wearing the same sort of red armor, Chu Feng was able to tell from their exposed skin that their skin was covered with red scales.

Those scales were crimson red. It was a very dazzling sight.

Furthermore, their eyes were dark green in color.

Rather than saying that they were humans, they resembled more or less resembled a group of monstrous beasts.

Merely, Chu Feng had never seen monstrous beasts like them before.

Most importantly, the aura of those several tens of people were

all those of peak Martial Ancestors.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to sense that they possessed the same sort of heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting four levels of cultivation like himself.

“Paa, paa, paa~~~”

After appearing, the leading monstrous beast started to clap its hands. It also revealed a good-natured smile toward Chu Feng.

“Brother, it must be said that your abilities are truly decent. To be able to subdue that fellow, I am truly in humble admiration.”

Although that monstrous beast praised Chu Feng, Chu Feng was still completely on guard against them. He asked, “Exactly who are you all?”

“We are the masters of the Demon Elimination Cave, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan,” The leader of the group said.

“Bloodscale Monstrous Clan?” Chu Feng was startled. He had never heard of a Bloodscale Monstrous Clan before.

“Judging from your reaction, I can tell that you do not know about us. However, that’s understandable too. Our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan has lived in seclusion in the Demon Elimination Cave, withdrawn from worldly affairs. It is very natural that you would not know about us.”

“That said, you do not have to worry. We are friends... because, we possess the same enemy,” That Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s group leader said.

Right after saying those words, it suddenly turned its gaze filled with anger toward Young Master Li Ming. It shouted, “Capture that fellow.”

After saying those words, the several tens of monstrous beasts behind it started to fly toward Young Master Li Ming.

“Boom~~~”



However, right at that moment, a fire dragon suddenly soared forth. It swept through the sky and separated those monstrous beasts from Young Master Li Ming.

“Brother, what are you doing?” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen turned their surprised gazes toward Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because that fire dragon was sent forth by Chu Feng using the Flame Dragon Greatsword.

“I do not care about what sort of hatred you all might have with her. However, you all can forget about bringing her away today,” Chu Feng said.

“You...” Hearing those words, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were startled.

Not to mention them, even Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed. Confusion emerged in her eyes.

She was unable to understand. Earlier, she was really planning on killing Chu Feng. Thus, why would he be protecting her now?

Could it be that Chu Feng really planned to do immoral things to her? Could he be planning to personally torture her?

# Chapter 2536 - Scram Immediately

---

“Brother, we are friends, whereas she is our mutual enemy. Why are you helping her?” The leader of the group of Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen asked.

“Who said that she and I are enemies?” Chu Feng asked.

“Ehh...” Hearing that, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were all speechless.

They had all witnessed the battle between Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming. With the abilities that they were using to fight one another, they were clearly fighting with their lives on the line.

Yet now, Chu Feng actually declared that he and Young Master Li Ming were not enemies. Naturally, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen would find this incomprehensible.

“Brother, you don’t know about this, but that fellow has stolen two of our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s possessions. We must bring him back so that our Lord Clan Chief can punish him.” [1. Chinese him/her/it all sounds the same ‘ta.’ Thus, although Chu Feng was referring to Li Ming as her, that is only true for the written text, and not true for the spoken text. Thus, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen have no idea Li Ming is a she.]

“Brother, if you insist on protecting him, I would urge you to reconsider. If you are to do that, you will only make an enemy of our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan,” The leader of the group of Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen said.

However, upon hearing that, Chu Feng’s expression sunk. Without the slightest bit of politeness, he said, “I’ve said it already. I don’t care what sort of grudges and grievances you all might have. However, today, you can forget about bringing her away.”

“Brother, it seems that you do not understand the situation at hand.”

“Although I do not know what sort of relationship you and that fellow might have, I can tell you with certainty that the entrance of the Demon Elimination Cave is currently sealed. Furthermore, our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief has already come to know about this matter.”

“If you are to hand that fellow over to us right now, our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan will be grateful toward you, and treat you as our honored guest.”

“However, if you insist on being stubborn about it and insist on protecting that fellow, then our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan will consider you as that fellow’s accomplice, and capture you together with him,” The leader of the group of Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen said.

“Zzzzz~”

Right at that moment, lightning emerged in Chu Feng’s eyes, covered his body and gathered on his forehead to form the character ‘Divine.’

The next moment, lightning filled the entire region. Lightning serpents began to flicker nonstop. It was a very oppressive sight.

At that moment, it was as if that region was simply not the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s territory. It was as if Chu Feng was the true ruler of that place.

“It would seem that I have not been clear enough with you. Since that’s the case, I will speak my intentions more clearly. You all, scram immediately. Else, do not blame me for being impolite,” Chu Feng spoke one word at a time.

The gaze that he had was many times sharper than before.

“Good, very good.”

At that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen all felt the overwhelming power of Chu Feng’s oppressive might.

Even though they were all rank nine Martial Ancestors, all peak Martial Ancestors, they knew very well that they would be no match for Chu Feng even if they were to join hands against him.

This fellow before them was simply a monster, an actual monster.

Unless one was a True Immortal, it was likely no one would be able to contend against Chu Feng.

“You will regret this.”

After leaving behind this sentence, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen turned around and left.

After the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen left, Chu Feng arrived before Young Master Li Ming and said to her, “Although I have no idea exactly what you stole from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, it would seem that I must send you out of here right away.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he turned around and planned to bring Young Master Li Ming out of the Demon Elimination Cave.

Grimacing at the pain of her backlash, Young Master Li Ming asked Chu Feng, “Why did you help me?”

At that moment, she was looking at Chu Feng with a very complicated gaze.

If one had to describe it, it was a perplexed expression. She was unable to understand Chu Feng, unable to understand his actions.

“I’ve said it already, there isn’t any enormous hatred or grievance between us. There is simply no need for us to confront one another with weapons, much less fight to the death.”

“What I did on Mount Cloud Crane was merely an accident. If I had known that you were a woman to begin with, I would never have done such a thing.”

“If you feel that I owe you an apology, I can give one to you right

now.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng put his Ancestral Armaments away, turned around, clasped his hand and bowed toward Young Master Li Ming. “I was wrong. Although I didn’t do it intentionally, it remains that I was wrong.”

“As long as you do not take my life, I am willing to accept any punishment.”

“Go ahead and tell me what you want. I will definitely do it.”

Young Master Li Ming was startled upon seeing Chu Feng react like this. She was able to see the sincerity in Chu Feng’s gaze. Chu Feng was actually sincerely apologizing to her.

After being startled for a moment, Young Master Li Ming said, “Very well, chop off the hand that you touched me with. Do that, and I’ll consider that nothing happened.”

“No problem.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he gathered martial power onto his palm and turned his palm into a sharp blade. Then, he prepared to hack off his other hand with that blade hand.

He was actually really planning to cut off his hand.

“Stop,” Seeing Chu Feng actually doing it, Young Master Li Ming immediately called for him to stop.

However, even though Chu Feng clearly heard her calling for him to stop, he did not stop. With a ‘puu,’ Chu Feng personally sliced off his hand.

“How was it? Is your anger satisfied?”

“If it’s not, I can cut it off again,” Chu Feng said to Young Master Li Ming with a smile on his face.

At that moment, Young Master Li Ming grew silent.

Although the pain of having one’s hand chopped off was simply

nothing for a person of Chu Feng's cultivation and, as a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, he was not only able to restore his lost hand, but even his entire body were it to be destroyed, it remained that Chu Feng, although stronger than her, was willing to do this sort of thing.

From this, Young Master Li Ming was certain that Chu Feng was sincere in his apology, and not putting on an act.

At that moment, even though Young Master Li Ming was a hard-hearted individual, she was still moved by Chu Feng's apology.

"Seems like you are still angry. That's fine, let me do it again. After all, my hand was vile."

Chu Feng smiled carefreely. As he spoke, he retrieved his severed hand and reconnected it. Then, he raised his blade hand and prepared to hack off his reconnected hand again.

Seeing this, Young Master Li Ming hurriedly said, "It's enough."

This time around, Chu Feng stopped his movement. With a smile on his face, he said, "Seems like your anger has been quelled."

Young Master Li Ming cast a side-eye at Chu Feng. She had a helpless expression in her eyes.

Evidently, she did not wish to continue to be entangled on this subject.

Thus, she said, "We will not be able to leave this place. This Demon Elimination Cave is indeed under the control of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. They are able to activate a grand defensive formation to seal off the entrance of the Demon Elimination Cave."

"Since they said that they've already sealed off the entrance, it means that they have already sealed off the entrance."

"Are we to be trapped in here like this forever?" Chu Feng asked.

"No, that's not the case. Based on what I know, while the

entrance can be sealed, it cannot be sealed forever. There is a limit as to how long it can be sealed.”

“Thus, rather than proceeding for the entrance, it is better that we find an isolated place to hide and wait for the grand formation sealing off the entrance to wear off. We can then leave,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Since they’ve already discovered the problem, they will definitely send people to block up the Demon Elimination Cave’s entrance. Even if the spirit formation sealing off the entrance cannot be maintained forever, their troops will definitely be waiting at the Demon Elimination Cave’s entrance,” Chu Feng said.

“You do not have to worry about that. When my injuries are healed, I will have a way to leave this place. Merely... right now, we must hide,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“If this place is truly their territory, where are we to hide?” Chu Feng asked.

“Precisely because this is their territory, there are places that even they do not dare enter,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“I got it now, you’re saying that the more dangerous a place is, the safer it will be, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“Precisely,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Then it’s decided,” After saying those words, Chu Feng turned around and no longer proceeded toward the entrance. Instead, he brought Young Master Li Ming with him and began to travel into the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave.

# Chapter 2537 - Stolen Treasure

---

This time around, Chu Feng did not choose to follow the safe path. Instead, he began to walk amongst the dangerous slaughtering formations.

Actually, Ying Mingchao had not only mentioned the route directly to the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave, but he had also told Chu Feng the locations of some rich powerful slaughtering formations.

Thus, even if Chu Feng did not follow the direct and safe route, as long as he was on guard, he would be able to avoid many slaughtering formations, and travel amongst the dangers of the Demon Elimination Cave.

At the moment, Chu Feng was planning to proceed for one of the most dangerous regions in the Demon Elimination Cave. It was a place with a lot of slaughtering formations aggregate together.

That region of slaughtering formations was composed of the most frightening slaughtering formations in the Demon Elimination Cave.

As Young Master Li Ming said, the more dangerous a place was, the safer it'd be.

Therefore, Chu Feng felt that the people from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan would definitely not dare to approach that group of slaughtering formations.

Also, as they knew very well how powerful the group of slaughtering formations were, they would definitely not expect Chu Feng and Li Ming to proceed for that region.

After all, they most definitely felt that if Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming, with the strength they possessed, were to encounter any of the slaughtering formations inside by accident, they would undoubtedly be killed.



That, this group of slaughtering formations would be the safest place in the Demon Elimination Cave right now. Of course... it would also be a very dangerous location.

If they were to be careless, Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming might very well die amongst the group of slaughtering formations.

"We must stop here. The slaughtering formations here are too powerful. If we are to enter deeper, we will likely not be able to escape even if we want to," Chu Feng stopped at a hidden location.

Chu Feng was not lying. Although there appeared to be nothing before them, according to the information Ying Mingchao had given him, before them was the most concentrated location of slaughtering formations in the entire Demon Elimination Cave.

Chu Feng was unable to even advertise those slaughtering formations. From this, it could be determined how important those slaughtering formations were.

Thus, if they were to enter it, they would definitely be undoubtedly killed.

"How do you know this place so well?" Young Master Li Ming asked curiously.

"Can you tell me how you offended the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile.

Then, Spirit Master began to flow out of her body. Spirit power began to gallop around her, sealing her off.

Young Master Li Ming was healing her injuries.

"Even though you're helping her this much, it seems like this girl is not appreciative of your kindness."

"She has quite a personality," Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous laugh.

Even though Young Master Li Ming was proud and arrogant, Her Lady Queen did not dislike her either.

“Let her do as she wishes. After all, I am not helping her because I wanted it to be reciprocated.”

Chu Feng revealed an indifferent expression. Then, he sat down cross-legged and continued to heal his injuries as well.

The backlash from the Ancient Era’s War Sword was no small matter. Although the backlash had not affected Chu Feng’s battle power, it still took him half a day to suppress the backlash. At the moment when Chu Feng opened his eyes and looked to Young Master Li Ming, he just so happened to catch the sight of the spirit power surrounding her dispersing. Young Master Li Ming also slowly opened her tightly closed eyes.

Even in the moment, Young Master Li Ming had a rosy complexion. Even her skin had become plump and full of luster again. Her aura had also returned to being robust and vigorous.

It seemed like that girl had also managed to suppress the backlash she already received using her Immortal Armament.

"This girl is quite amazing," Seeing that Young Master Li Ming appeared still be completely fine now, even Her Lady Queen was unable to keep herself from praising her.

One should know that the backlash Young Master Li Ming was earlier was much more serious than Chu Feng’s backlash.

Although Chu Feng’s aura was affected, his battle power was still present. As such, he would, at the very least, be able to take care of anyone below the True Immortal level of cultivation.

As for Young Master Li Ming, she had not even had the strength to fly. The intensity of the backlashes that they suffered was simply a heaven and earth difference.

Yet, faced with such an enormous backlash, Young Master Li Ming actually managed to contain it using the same amount of time Chu Feng did. This was naturally extremely astonishing.

“She must have taken some sort of special medicinal pellet. This

girl is truly of extraordinary origin,” Chu Feng said.

In terms of world spirit techniques, even if Chu Feng was not superior to Young Master Li Ming, his world spirit techniques would definitely not be inferior to hers.

Thus, the speed at which they healed their injuries was most definitely unrelated to their world spirit techniques.

If there was no difference in terms of world spirit techniques, then it would most definitely be the medicinal pellet that Young Master Li Ming took.

That single medicinal pellet was able to decrease the time she needed to heal her injuries to such a short amount. Merely with that, one could very well imagine how powerful that medicinal pellet was.

At the very least, Chu Feng did not possess such a powerful medicinal pellet. In fact, not a single person in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed such a medicinal pellet.

“You’ve saved me once. I do not wish to owe you a favor,” Young Master Li Ming said to Chu Feng.

“How do you wish to repay me then? Could you be planning to devote your life to me?” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile.

Hearing those words, Young Master Li Ming’s expression immediately sunk. Coldly, she said, “Don’t you think that I will not kill you just because we’ve settled what happened on Mount Cloud Crane. If you make this kind of joke again, I will attack you again.”

“Since you knew it was a joke, why take it so seriously?” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

“You can joke with others. However, I am someone who is not fond of jokes,” Young Master Li Ming spoke very earnestly.

“Actually, I am not fond of jokes either. However, I just so

happen to be fond of joking with someone like you.”

“I also do not know why that’s the case. However, I’m unable to control myself. I guess this might be natural instinct.”

“However, I will try my best to restrain myself. If I happen to be unable to restrain myself, I hope that you will forgive me,” Chu Feng said with an innocent expression on his face. It was as if he was not voluntarily joking.

“I do not wish to waste time arguing with you,” Young Master Li Ming cast a side eye at Chu Feng. Then, she said, “Didn’t you wish to know exactly what I’ve stolen from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan?”

“It’s these.”

As Young Master Li Ming spoke, she opened her palm. Two pearl-sized beads were present on her palm.

“Those are?”

Upon seeing the two beads, Chu Feng’s gaze immediately changed. He who was laughing and smiling instantly turned extremely serious.

Those two beads were only the size of ordinary pearls. They were very smooth and round.

The two beads seemed to be made of glass. The insides of the beads were pitch-black.

However, should one pay close attention to them, one would discover that the pitch-black color was not the original color of the beads.

The pitch-black substance contained inside the beads were like black clouds that surged about like a gathering storm within them.

In fact, if one were to pay close attention, one would even feel fear. The reason for that was because the pitch-black clouds were extremely gloomy in nature. It was as if the black clouds contained

boundless killing intent.

Upon noticing the unusual properties of the beads, Chu Feng immediately activated his Heaven's Eyes. Upon the activation of his Heaven's Eyes, the beads grew much clearer.

Chu Feng was able to see that the two beads were like two worlds. The worlds were covered by black clouds. However, in the center of each of the worlds was an enormous gate, a very imposing gate that emitted a sort of sacredness.

The gates were tightly closed. It was as if, unless the gates were to open by themselves, or if one possessed the key to open them, one would not be able to open them even if one possessed heaven-defying capabilities.

# Chapter 2538 - Sacred Heavenly Temple

---

“What is this?” Chu Feng asked. He had already realized that the beads were no small matter.

“Have you heard of the Sacred Heavenly Temple?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“Sacred Heavenly Temple?” Chu Feng’s gaze changed. He had never heard of the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

“Seems like you haven’t heard of it before.”

Before Chu Feng could respond, Young Master Li Ming had managed to determine from Chu Feng’s expression that he had never heard of the Sacred Heavenly Temple before.

“Indeed, I’ve never heard of it before,” While smiling, Chu Feng nodded.

“The vast starry sky is boundless and limitless. This is what people view as the Outer World.”

“The Outer World is vast and magnificent. Ever since the Ancient Era, martial cultivators have ruled over this vast Outer World.”

“Those seniors before us have left behind countless treasures. In fact, it could even be said to be an infinite amount of treasures.”

“Thus, those remnants that contained treasures have become places where various powers and hidden experts will fight over.”

“That said, when mentioning remnants, there is one place that is widely accepted to contain the greatest amount of treasures in the entire Outer World.”

“As for that place, it is the Sacred Heavenly Temple,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Sacred Heavenly Temple?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression. He had not expected there to be such a place in this world. Then, he asked, “What sort of place is that?”

“Opinions differ in regards to the origin of the Sacred Heavenly Temple. There has never been a definite theory, nor has any legend regarding it been acknowledged by the people of the world. However, the great majority feel that it should be from the Ancient Era.”

“As of yet, there is only one thing that is certain. That is, the Sacred Heavenly Temple is the most mystical remnant that has been discovered so far. The treasures and powers that it contains all surpass one’s imagination,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Mystical? How mystical?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Not only is this Sacred Heavenly Temple hidden throughout the entire Outer World, it also possesses countless entrances to its precious treasures,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Countless entrances?” Chu Feng was surprised.

“That’s right, it possesses countless entrances. As for these, they are two of the entrances,” Young Master Li Ming said as she pointed to the two miraculous beads in her hand.

“We will be able to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple using only these two beads?”

“But, according to what you said, since the Sacred Heavenly Temple is the greatest treasure deposit in the entire Outer World, it should also be the most dangerous, no? Would we really be able to survive if we are to enter there with our current strength?”

Chu Feng was worried. After all, danger would generally accompany chance opportunities. The greater a chance opportunity might be, the more dangerous it would be.

The vast Outer World was a place with countless experts. Chu Feng knew very well that compared to those experts, he was still no different from an ant.

Thus, if he were to enter a remnant that contained treasures that even those peak experts yearned for with the strength that he

possessed, wouldn't he simply be courting death?

“The most mystical aspect regarding the Sacred Heavenly Temple is the fact that it does not possess any dangers. As long as you are able to enter it, you will definitely be able to profit from it.”

“As for the most mystical aspect of the Sacred Heavenly Temple, it is the fact that no one knows where it is located. However, as long as one is able to find an entrance to enter it, one will be able to enter it,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“It's actually this mystical?” Chu Feng felt greater amazement. He gradually came to understand what Young Master Li Ming meant.

No one knew where the Sacred Heavenly Temple is located. However, it could be present everywhere.

If beads like these were capable of opening a gate to the Sacred Heavenly Temple, then there should be a lot of beads like these covering every nook and cranny of the vast Outer World.

Regardless of where one might be, as long as one possessed such a bead, they would be able to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple. With that being the case, that Sacred Heavenly Temple would be simply too extraordinary.

Exactly what sort of person was capable of creating such a mystical temple?

Exactly how enormously formidable would be the power driving such a mystical temple?

Furthermore, who was it that had gathered all those treasures within in the Sacred Heavenly Temple to make it into the number one treasure deposit in the entire vast Outer World?

“Wow! This Queen is deeply interested in seeing that Sacred Heavenly Temple.”



After hearing what Young Master Li Ming said, even Her Lady Queen's eyes were filled with anticipation.

"However, these two beads by themselves are still unable to allow one to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple. Thus, even though I've stolen these two beads, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan would have no use keep them to begin with. At the very Most, they will serve as collectables," Young Master Li Ming added.

"What the hell! After all this, we're actually unable to enter?"

"Really! This girl is truly annoying. If we're not able to enter it, why the heck did she even bother to take it out to show off? Isn't she just toying with this Queen?" After hearing those words, Her Lady Queen raised her shoulders and crossed her arms with a pouting and dissatisfied expression on her face.

"My dear Eggy, don't be so anxious. I don't think this girl Li Ming is the sort to joke around. Let me ask her about it, I think she will have a way to enter it."

At the same time Chu Feng consoled Eggy, he asked Li Ming, "In that case, how do we enter it?"

"To put it simply, these beads are separated into two types. One is a locking bead, turning the other is an opening bead."

"As long as the two types of beads of the same level encounter one another, a gate to the Sacred Heavenly Temple will be opened."

"The two beads that I've stolen from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan are both locking beads."

"That said, I myself already possess some opening beads."

After saying those words, Young Master Li Ming extended her other hand. After she opened her hand, a total of thirteen beads appeared in her hand.

The size of those beads were pretty much identical to the two beads in her other hand. However, those thirteen beads were

emitting a faint white light.

That's right, they were emitting a white light. Upon closer inspection, those thirteen beads also each seemed to contain a world.

The worlds within them were surging with white clouds. In the center of each of the worlds was a key.

The keys were all golden in color, and enormously huge. As they stood in the center of the worlds within the thirteen beads, the keys were like the rulers of the worlds.

"Shoot! This girl actually possesses this many opening beads," At the moment, Her Lady Queen revealed a surprised expression.

If the Sacred Heavenly Temple was truly as extraordinary as Young Master Li Ming described it to be, then the beads would most definitely all be very valuable.

After Young Master Li Ming revealed the beads to Chu Feng, she stored eleven of her opening beads away, leaving behind two. Then, she tossed one to Chu Feng.

"As long as you let the opening bead touch the locking bead, you will be able to open the entrance to the Sacred Heavenly Temple."

"Remember, after entering the Sacred Heavenly Temple, you will be given a chance to make a choice. Once you've chosen what you want to obtain, you will not be able to change it. 've chosen, you will be sent out of the Sacred Heavenly Temple."

"If you wish to return to the Sacred Heavenly Temple, you will have to open another entrance gate to it. Otherwise, you will not be able to return to it again," Young Master Li Ming said to Chu Feng in a very earnest manner. It was as if she was afraid that Chu Feng would make some sort of mistake.

"Once the gate is opened, one will definitely be able to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple and obtain a treasure?" Chu Feng was wild with joy. He had never experienced such a miraculous thing

before.

Just thinking about it caused him to feel as if his blood was rushing through his body. He was feeling excitement from the bottom of his heart.

"That's not the case. There's another possibility that will lead you to return without anything," Young Master Li Ming said.

"What sort of possibility is it?" Chu Feng asked.

He did not want to return without any treasure after entering the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

"After opening the entrance to the Sacred Heavenly Temple, the person that opened the entrance will be sent directly to the Sacred Heavenly Temple. However, rather than saying their body will enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple, it would be more accurate to say that their Soul will enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple."

"However, it is not only you and I who possess opening and locking beads. It is possible that others will have entered the Sacred Heavenly Temple at the same time you did, and chose the same treasure that you wanted."

"In that sort of situation, the two individuals will have to fight over the single treasure. As there is only a single treasure, it is impossible for it to be divided evenly between both individuals."

"Thus, at that time, the Sacred Heavenly Temple's guardian spirit will appear. It will present the two individuals a question."

"The person to answer the question accurately will obtain the treasure, but the person who answers it incorrectly will return empty-handed," Young Master Li Ming said.

# Chapter 2539 - Being Stubborn

---

"There's actually such a thing?"

Chu Feng began to look forward to the Sacred Heavenly Temple more and more. Just thinking about the fact that two individuals that should not be meeting one another as they were separated by the vast as starry sky would actually be able to meet one another in the Sacred Heavenly Temple, he felt utter amazement at how unimaginable it was.

It was truly unbelievable.

He was merely looking forward to the mystical Sacred Heavenly Temple.

"Of course, something like that rarely occurs. At the very least, I've never encountered anything like that before. None of the people that I know have ever encountered that sort of thing either. Thus, you can rest assured, as I Believe you will also not encounter that sort of thing," Young Master Li Ming said.

"In that case, you've been to the Sacred Heavenly Temple before? I am truly becoming more and more curious of your origins."

At that moment, Chu Feng started to have a whole new level of respect for Young Master Li Ming. From both the treasures that she possessed and the experience that she had, it could be seen that she was absolutely not someone to be trifled with.

At that moment, Chu Feng became even more certain that she was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Else... it would be impossible for her to know all those things, and impossible for her to have so many treasures.

"You do not have to care about that. Go on and choose what you want."

As Young Master Li Ming spoke, she tossed a locking bead toward Chu Feng's palm.

The locking bead just so happened to make contact with Chu Feng's opening bead.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, bright light filled Chu Feng's field of vision. In an instant, the scene surrounding him had changed completely.

At that moment, Chu Feng was no longer present in the Demon Elimination Cave. Instead, he was within the vast starry sky.

He was standing on air. Boundless flickering stars filled his entire field of vision. Even when looking down, he would still see an endless amount of stars.

That feeling was so very real, so very powerful.

Beautiful. Not only was the scene beautiful, but the sense of magnificence was battering against Chu Feng's heart and soul from all sides.

With that, Chu Feng realized what genuine magnificence was, what endlessly vast meant.

"Is this the actual Outer World?"

At that moment, Chu Feng became so excited that he started to have goosebumps.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was unable to be certain as to whether or not the scene before him was an illusion or real.

If this were real, it would be impossible. After all, he should be in the Demon Elimination Cave, and should not have moved often all.

However, if this were an illusion, then it was so very life-like and real that Chu Feng was unable to find anything that was could show it to be fake.

"Chu Feng, look ahead," Suddenly, Her Lady Queen cried out in excitement.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to see a dazzling golden light appearing before the vast starry sky, right before his gaze.

That golden light was truly dazzling and magnificent. In fact, Chu Feng felt that it was even more dazzling than the sun itself.

Then, Chu Feng was able to see that it was a gate.

That gate was the same gate within the locking bead. At that moment, the gate was floating toward Chu Feng with huge speed.

The closer the gate was to Chu Feng, the greater and more imposing the gate felt to Chu Feng.

Grand... extremely grand. That gate was much bigger than Chu Feng imagined it to be.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that the gate was very possibly larger than the entire Nine Provinces Continent.

"Rumble~~~"

Following an ear-piercing explosion, the golden-bright and dazzling gate opened. At the moment when it was completely opened, the enormous gate had also arrived before Chu Feng, swallowing him into it.

To be exact, instead of being swallowed by a gate, Chu Feng felt that he was swallowed by an entire world.

The next moment, Chu Feng arrived in a completely different world.

He had arrived in a glorious and imposing palace hall.

Chu Feng had been to countless palaces, and even many remnants. However, he had never been to a place with such magnificent constructions.

Even the ground below his feet was made of gold.

Everything, his appeared rather be made of gold too. However, the gold didn't resemble gold. Rather, it appeared to be a sort of

material many times more precious than gold.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that the material was indestructible. If it was gold, it would be the most definitely not be indestructible.

To put it simply, that entire entire place was a rare treasure in and in itself. It was composed of an extremely rarely-seen treasured material.

The, that place was enormous, extremely enormous.

A single dragon in that place was a thousand meters in girth. An dragon has been carved onto the pillar. That dragon spiraled up the pillar in a very domineering manner.

Looking around, that palace hall filled Chu Feng's line of sight. It was as if there was no end to be seen.

When Chu Feng raised his head, he could see boundless white clouds. Yet, he was actually unable to see the peak of the palace hall.

The palace hall was taller than even the sky!!!

"This is the Sacred Heavenly Temple? This is simply too ridiculous, no?"

At that moment, even Her Lady Queen's eyes were wide open. Her little mouth was slightly open in surprise.

"This is truly a work of gods. It is truly an unimaginable place."

Chu Feng also gasped in admiration. He did not know what sort of individual would be able to construct such a magnificent palace.

"Those who open the True Immortal Gate can choose between a total of three items. Only one can be chosen."

Right at that moment, an extremely grand voice was open heard.

Even though it was clearly only a voice, the voice originated from all directions and entered Chu Feng's ears simultaneously.

At the same time that voice was heard, three gates showed before Chu Feng.

Compared to the entrance of the Sacred Heavenly Temple, those three gates were much smaller; they were only a hundred meters tall.

However, they were still very awe-inspiring and majestic. Apart from the entrance gate to the Sacred Heavenly Temple, those three gates were more imposing than all other gates Chu Feng had ever encountered.

If Chu Feng had to describe them, then it would be a sort of oppressive sensation, a very ancient yet powerful oppressive sensation.

Feeling that sensation, one's heart would be filled with reverence, and not dare to show the slightest bit of disrespect.

On the three gates would have well signboards.

The writing on the signboards were all graceful, elegant and filled with power.

Just as if he wanted to submit to the signboards. Enough to make others want to submit to him or her.

It was clear that the words on the three signboards were written by the same individual. However, the words were all different.

They were individually...

Martial Cultivation.

World Spirit.

Weapon.

"Chu Feng, choose Martial Cultivation. Your cultivation might be to advance by leaps and bounds, sending you to the True Immortal realm."

"No, no, no, wait, you can also choose Weapon. Perhaps you



might obtain an Immortal Armament. That would be extremely good too.”

“No, it’s better to choose Martial Cultivation still. To the current you, your martial cultivation is more important. Even if you are to obtain an Immortal Armament, you will not be able to use it.”

At that moment, Her lady Queen was endlessly excited. She was truly looking forward to the treasures behind the gates.

She felt that with how powerful the Sacred Heavenly Temple was, the treasures inside would all definitely be extremely greatly too many.

Chu Feng would be able to obtain magnificent profits this time around.

At the moment when Her Lady Queen was speaking excitedly, Chu Feng had begun to walk toward the gates.

He was not proceeding toward the Martial Cultivation gate, nor was he proceeding toward the Weapon gate. Rather, he was proceeding toward the gate with the signboard ‘World Spirit.’

"Chu Feng, where are you going? Don’t go that way,” Seeing that, Her Lady Queen started to panic.

“If my understanding is correct, the treasure contained behind this gate with the words ‘World Spirit’ should be beneficial to Milady Queen, no?”

"Chu Feng, don’t make rash choices. This is the Sacred Heavenly Temple. How could it possess treasures beneficial to world spirits? You must not mess around with this Queen,” Her Lady Queen tried her best to stop Chu Feng.

"But I still want to give it a try. Milady Queen has done so much for me, has helped me so many times. I also wish to help Milady Queen in return," Chu Feng said.

"You, why are you this disobedient? Stop immediately. This is

the Sacred Heavenly Temple, the most mystical remnant in the entire Outer World, the most precious treasure deposit in the entire Outer World."

"This is an opportunity that comes once in a blue moon. Are you truly planning to waste it like this?" Her Lady Queen was extremely nervous. She was trying her best to persuade Chu Feng against it. She was deeply afraid that Chu Feng Would not listen to her and choose a treasure related to her.

At that moment, Chu Feng had arrived before the World Spirit gate. However, he turned stopped.

"Indeed, this is indeed a rare opportunity that comes only once in a blue moon."

"However, Milady Queen, I want to be stubborn just once for your sake."

After saying those words, Chu Feng extend his arms and pushed the World Spirit gate open.

# Chapter 2540 - Xianhai Shuoyi

---

“Buzz~~~”

At practically the moment when Chu Feng touched that gate, the two other gates disappeared.

Following that, the gate before Chu Feng opened.

In an instant, a boundless attractive force sucked Chu Feng into it.

At the moment when Chu Feng managed to stabilize his body, he was surprised to discover that he was currently in another palace hall.

Compared to the palace hall that he was in before, that palace hall was much smaller.

However, it was still extremely large, so large that it felt overly spacious and empty. The reason for that was because there was nothing in that palace hall at all, not even a single pillar.

That said, there was a platform in the center of the palace hall. That platform seemed to be made of gems. It was sparkling with light and very pretty.

That deep blue platform of gems had a circular shape. It was only a meter tall and ten meters in diameter.

However, being placed in a palace hall that seemed to be completely made of gold, the platform of gems that emitted a blue light appeared exceptionally beautiful.

It was gorgeous and dazzling, like a blue rose within a sea of peonies.

Most importantly, above the blue platform floated a fist-sized gem.

“That gem?”

Upon seeing that gem, Her Lady Queen's expression immediately changed.

Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was much more excited and emotional.

The reason for that was because that gem was no ordinary gem. That gem was emitting a very intense amount of power.

As for that power, it was source energy.

That was a gem containing source energy.

"Seems like I've chosen correctly."

Chu Feng was wild with joy.

He had actually chosen the World Spirit gate with only a very simple purpose in mind. That is, he hoped to obtain something that would increase Her Lady Queen's cultivation.

Chu Feng knew very well what sort of personality Her Lady Queen had. She was actually a very prideful individual. She was someone who feverishly pursued strength.

However, due to special causes, her cultivation was progressing extremely slowly right now, distinctly slower than the speed at which Chu Feng's cultivation increased.

Although Her Lady Queen was not concerned with it, Chu Feng felt a great amount of guilt because of it.

If he hadn't had Her Lady Queen with him, if he hadn't had Eggy's assistance, Chu Feng wouldn't have been able to attain his current level of success.

In fact, Chu Feng would not have been able to even survive for so long.

Thus, what he wanted to do the most right now was repay and help Her Lady Queen.

And now, his cherished desire had finally come to fruition. He

knew very well that gem would be able to help Her Lady Queen increase her cultivation.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was planning to approach the gem, a dazzling light suddenly appeared on the other side of the gem platform.

That dazzling light lasted only a single instant. At the moment when the light disappeared, a person appeared.

“I wouldn’t be this unlucky, right?”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s heart tightened.

He had heard from that girl Li Ming that one would generally never return empty-handed after entering the Sacred Heavenly Temple. However, there was one exception to this case.

That is, one could enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple at the same time as someone else.

Furthermore, both individuals could decide to choose the same treasure.

That said, something like that was a very rare occurrence.

However, at that moment, something that was practically impossible actually happened to Chu Feng.

“Fuck! You must be kidding, how could I be so unlucky to encounter this!”

At that moment, that other individual spoke with great displeasure. Evidently, that individual had noticed Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng also began to size up the individual before him. After all, that person would be his opponent.

That individual was a young man. Judging from his appearance, he should be around the same age as Chu Feng.

He had a very handsome appearance. Furthermore, it was not the

pretty-boy sort of handsomeness. Rather, he had a very manly handsomeness.

Merely from his appearance, the young man would be capable of attracting countless women, making them want to throw themselves into his arms.

As for the outfit that young man wore, it was also very gorgeous. At a glance, one could tell that not only was his clothes precious, but each and every item on him was exceptionally precious as well.

However, in terms of what was the most precious, it would be a title plate on that young man's waist. Not only was that title plate extremely exquisite, it was also a quality and refined work of art.

That title plate should be made out of some sort of treasure, an extremely rarely-seen and also extremely firm treasure.

Chu Feng felt that something like that should be meant to be used to forge weapons with.

To use a treasure like that to create a title plate was truly extravagant in Chu Feng's eyes.

However, it was precisely because of that that Chu Feng was able to determine that the young man possessed an extraordinary origin.

Thus, Chu Feng remembered the two characters on the title plate, Xianhai. [1. Xianhai → Immortal Sea.]

At the same time that Chu Feng was sizing up that young man, that young man was also sizing up Chu Feng.

At the beginning, he had a very displeased expression. However, after sizing up Chu Feng, he revealed a relaxed expression.

Then, the corners of his mouth actually lifted into a smile.

“Alas, although I am unlucky, I am extremely fortunate to actually encounter trash,” That man said.

“Who are you talking about?” Chu Feng asked coldly.

“There’s only you and I here, who do you think I’m talking about?” That man said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng wanted to talk back.

However, right at that moment, that man’s expression changed. Then, a boundless oppressive might swept forth from within him.

“This aura!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. Even though that man possessed a similar age to Chu Feng, his aura was actually that of a True Immortal.

Furthermore, that aura was extremely powerful. Not only was he a True Immortal-level expert, but he was also not just a rank one True Immortal.

His power had surpassed the limits of Chu Feng’s perception.

Everything happened too quickly. Chu Feng simply did not even have the time to react, he did not even have the time to take out his Evil God Sword. That man’s powerful oppressive might had already completely engulfed Chu Feng.

“This...”

In that one instant, Chu Feng felt that he would undoubtedly be killed.

However, when that oppressive might swept through him, Chu Feng discovered that he was actually completely unscathed.

“Damn it, I forgot that cultivation is useless here,” At that moment, that man shook his head in disappointment. Then, he revealed a proud smile on his face and said to Chu Feng, “Boy, consider yourself lucky. Else... you wouldn’t even know how you died today.”

“What arrogance,” Chu Feng smiled coldly. He now looked to the man with a gaze filled with hostility.

That man had attacked him right after a verbal confrontation.

Furthermore, he was planning to kill him earlier.

Fortunately, cultivation was useless here. Otherwise, Chu Feng would've already been killed by him. As such, how could Chu Feng have a favorable impression of someone like that?

“What, you’re unconvinced?” That man narrowed his brows.

“I am, what can you do about it?” Chu Feng revealed a provocative expression.

Although that man was stronger than him, Chu Feng was not afraid of him since cultivation was useless here.

“You!!!” Seeing such a reaction from Chu Feng, that man immediately revealed a displeased expression. Then, he asked, “Boy, do you dare tell me your name?”

“Uneducated trash, have your parents not taught you that you should give your name first when asking for another’s name?” Chu Feng mocked.

“What? You want to know my name? Could it be that you want to find me to settle things?” The man asked.

“Why can’t I?” Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

“Haha. It is not that I am looking down on you. However, if you are to know my name, I’m afraid that you will piss your pants in fear,” That man said with mocking laughter.

“If you don’t dare to tell me your name, you don’t have to,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“Don’t dare? This Young Master doesn’t know those words. Boy, listen carefully. This Young Master is called Xianhai Shuoyi,” The man said.

“Xianhai Shuoyi?”

“You’re surnamed Xianhai?” Chu Feng had a surprised expression on his face. This was the first time he had heard such a surname.



“”You’ve actually never even heard of our Xianhai Clan?” That man was surprised. Evidently, he was slightly disappointed by Chu Feng not knowing about his name. Then, he curled his lips and said, “You truly are a country bumpkin.”

“No, no, no, since I’ve never heard of you before, it would only mean that your Xianhai Clan is not famous enough,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“What a sharp tongue. Exactly who are you? Do you dare give your name?”

That man by the name of Xianhai Shuoyi was angered. Evidently, he cared greatly about his reputation. Chu Feng’s contemptuous behavior had enraged him.

“Perk up your ears and listen carefully. Your granddaddy here will not change his name standing, nor will he change his surname sitting. I am surnamed Chu and named Feng. I, your granddaddy, am named Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said.

“Impudent little thief, you dare address yourself as granddaddy before this Young Master?! You’re courting death!!!” Xianhai Shuoyi was completely enraged by Chu Feng. He shot forth a palm strike, and his overwhelming Immortal-level martial power moved toward Chu Feng oppressively like a giant tide.

His martial power was extremely fierce. In a blink of an eye, it completely swallowed Chu Feng. Like a group of wolves surrounding a little rabbit, it began to attack Chu Feng nonstop.

However, even though that attack seemed to be able to easily obliterate Chu Feng was wreaking havoc through Chu Feng’s surroundings, Chu Feng himself was completely unscathed.

# Chapter 2541 - Awakened Fierce Beast

---

“What’s this? You want to kill your granddaddy? Seems like you can’t.”

Chu Feng had a smile on his face. That smile was filled with provocation. He had an appearance as if he was saying ‘What could you possibly do to me?’

While Chu Feng’s cultivation was inferior to his opponent’s, he dared to act in such a manner because cultivation was useless there.

Of course, even if his cultivation was effective here, Chu Feng would still not be scared of him.

Chu Feng would never lower his head to such an unreasonable and arrogant individual.

“Damned little thief, do you dare tell this Young Master which Galaxy, which Starfield, which Upper Realm and which clan you’re from?” Xianhai Shuoyi asked furiously.

Evidently, Chu Feng had completely enraged him. From his tone, it could be determined that he was not merely purely asking Chu Feng about those things because he wanted to know.

Rather, he was asking them because he planned to make retaliations against Chu Feng.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a body of light suddenly appeared and stood on the platform.

That body of light took a humanoid shape. It held a scepter in its hand, and had the appearance of an old man. However, for some unknown reason, its appearance could not be seen clearly.

Chu Feng did not know whether that individual was an actual person, a spirit body or the creation of a spirit formation.

However, Chu Feng was able to be certain that that individual possessed extraordinary strength. His power was much stronger than Xianhai Shuoyi's.

“Only one among the two of you will be able to obtain the treasure here. As for the other, you will be leaving.”

“Furthermore, in this place, your cultivations will possess no use. Who stays and who leaves will be dependent on which among you will be able to answer my question correctly,” That mysterious body of light said.

“Senior, go ahead and ask your question. This junior will definitely spare no effort to answer it.”

Xianhai Shuoyi bowed respectfully to the body of light. There was no trace of the arrogance and overbearingness that he had displayed toward Chu Feng. At that moment, he appeared very lowly.

His lowly appearance was not only born of politeness. Rather, it was a humble posture, the lowliness of flattering someone.

“Don't bother flattering me. Whether or not you'll be able to stay will depend on you yourself,” The mysterious body of light said indifferently.

Evidently, it was not affected by Xianhai Shuoyi's flattery.

Being refused, Xianhai Shuoyi's expression turned ugly. Then, he withdrew his humble attitude and revealed an extremely displeased expression.

To change his attitude immediately upon the failure of his flattery, it could be seen that that man was extremely snobbish.

“Seeing that the both of you are world spiritists, I will give a task that can be completed with spirit power,” The mysterious body of light said.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, that mysterious body of light pointed its scepter forward. Then, a ray of light shot forth and landed between Chu Feng and Xianhai Shuoyi.

That ray of light soon turned into a gate. The gate was only three meters tall and two meters wide. At that moment, it was open.

That gate was located right between Chu Feng and Xianhai Shuoyi without moving at all.

“You all will be able to push this gate with your spirit power. Whoever manages to push this gate to their opponent’s body will be able to send their opponent out of here.”

“As for the person that manages to stay, he will obtain the treasure.”

“The time limit is an hour. If the outcome of the battle isn’t determined in an hour, then...”

“Piece of cake, this Young Master will immediately have you scam out of here,” Before that mysterious body of light could finish its words, Xianyi Shuoyi immediately sent forth overwhelmingly powerful spirit power and started to push the gate toward Chu Feng.

“Truly lacking manners,” Seeing that, how could Chu Feng dare hesitate? He immediately sent forth his own spirit power to push at the gate as well.

Chu Feng’s spirit power was extremely powerful. Even though that Xianhai Shouyi had struck first and gained the upper hand, Chu Feng immediately pushed the gate back to where it was originally.

“Your cultivation is not up to much, but your spirit power is quite strong. Seems like I have underestimated you.”

Seeing that Chu Feng’s spirit power was this strong, Xianhai Shuoyi’s expression also changed. Then, Chu Feng discovered that the gate that he was easily pushing back was being hindered from

moving.

It was clear that this Xianhai Shuoyi did not place Chu Feng in his eyes at the beginning, and had not gone all-out at the very start.

However, upon discovering that Chu Feng's spirit power was very strong, he also no longer held back, and started to go all-out against Chu Feng.

As that Xianhai Shuoyi's spirit power was quite strong to begin with, Chu Feng was unable to hold much superiority over Xianhai Shuoyi.

“Seems like I must go all-out too.”

Chu Feng did not wish to delay the match. The reason for that was because he knew that his actual body was still in the Demon Elimination Cave, and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan was still trying to find and kill him.

Thus, while he was hiding in a very safe place, Chu Feng still wished to quickly settle the match in order to guard against the unexpected.

Thus, he planned to go all-out and settle the match as soon as possible.

“Eaaahhh~~~”

However, right at the moment when Chu Feng was planning to go all out, his head suddenly started to hurt massively. “Putt,” Chu Feng half kneeled onto the ground.

At the moment Chu Feng half kneeled onto the ground, his spirit power also grew much weaker. That Xianhai Shuoyi immediately captured the opportunity to rapidly push the gate toward Chu Feng.

“Damn it!”

Seeing this, Chu Feng hurriedly resisted the pain in his head and

used his spirit power to push the incoming gate back.

However, the enormous headache made it so that Chu Feng was unable to control his spirit power with full concentration. As such, he was simply unable to unleash the full might of his spirit power.

Thus, at that moment, not to mention not being able to push the incoming gate back, he was unable to even stop it from being pushed his way.

Gradually, the gate was growing closer and closer to Chu Feng.

“Humph, I thought for a moment that you might be some genius world spiritist.”

“Turns out it’s nothing more than a bluff.”

“However, don’t be down. To be defeated by this Young Master is only natural. You should be honored to be defeated by me.”

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi’s face was filled with complacency.

“That damned bastard is actually this arrogant.”

“If it wasn’t for the fact that you seriously injured your spirit power for the sake of obtaining that God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, how could he possibly be a match for you? You would have already defeated him long ago.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was being insulted, Her Lady Queen revealed an unreconciled expression. She was feeling even worse than having herself be humiliated.

After all, she knew very well that in terms of spirit power, Chu Feng was far superior to this Xianhai Shuoyi.

Unfortunately, for the sake of helping the Golden Crane True Immortal obtain the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, Chu Feng had seriously injured his spirit power on Mount Cloud Crane.

At that moment, Chu Feng was simply unable to unleash the spirit power that he actually possessed. Otherwise... Her Lady

Queen felt that Chu Feng would be able to completely trample Xianhai Shuoyi in terms of spirit power.

“Trash, why don’t you pull yourself together? The time limit is one hour, and the match has only just begun.”

“What’s this? You’re planning to let this Young Master win already? This is truly too boring.”

“Say, trash, do you want this Young Master to go easy on you?”

“How about this, call this Young Master ‘ancestor’ and I’ll consider defeating you slower, and give you an opportunity to turn the situation around.”

“Hahahaha...”

At that moment, Xiaohai Shuoyi was laughing extremely malevolently. His originally handsome face had turned extremely disgusting from his shameless laughter.

Most disgusting of all, even though he was shouting about going easy on Chu Feng, he was actually going all-out to defeat Chu Feng as quickly as possible.

“Damn it!”

Chu Feng felt extremely unreconciled in his heart. He tried his best to unleash his spirit power.

However, the more he tried to unleash his spirit power, the more unbearable his headache became. In the end, his desire to unleash more spirit power only produced the opposite result, with his spirit power growing weaker and weaker.

As for that gate, it was also growing closer and closer to Chu Feng.

“Eggy, I’m sorry, it would seem that I’ll be defeated.”

At that moment, Chu Feng felt enormous guilt in his heart.

He was feeling guilty because even though the opportunity to

help Her Lady Queen was right before him, he was actually not strong enough to obtain it, and would soon be returning empty-handed.

He was feeling extremely pained in his heart. In fact, to Chu Feng, the pain in his heart was even more unbearable than the pain in his head.

“Chu Feng, you can’t admit defeat. You must persevere. You can’t lose to a bastard like him.”

“It doesn’t matter whether or not you can obtain that gem. However, you absolutely cannot allow yourself to be defeated by that sort of bastard. You cannot let him look down on you.”

“How did this Queen teach you? Have you forgotten about all the experiences that you’ve had over the years? Have you endured all that suffering in vain?”

“How could you admit defeat at such a time? This is not like the Chu Feng that I know. The Chu Feng that I know would absolutely not admit defeat toward someone like that, he would absolutely not lower his head at a time like this.”

“Bastard Chu Feng, pull yourself together for this Queen!!!”

Her Lady Queen shouted hysterically. Her words were filled with unwillingness.

Xianhai Shuoyi was unable to hear this voice. In fact, apart from Chu Feng, no one else was able to hear that voice.

However, when that voice entered Chu Feng’s ears, that voice of unwillingness was like a series of sharp blades that pierced through Chu Feng’s heart.

That’s right. All these years, from when he was an outer court disciple of the Azure Dragon School, he had reached his current accomplishments today one step at a time, and experienced countless difficulties. Yet, never once did he admit defeat. As such, how could he admit defeat at a time like this?



Most importantly, Eggy had given so much for him. She had nearly even lost her life for him.

How could Chu Feng admit defeat? How could he disappoint Eggy?

He could not. No matter what, he absolutely could not do that. Even if he were to die, he still could not admit defeat.

“Ahhh!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng let out a loud shout.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He stood there like an awakened fierce beast.

# Chapter 2542 - The Queen's Smile

---

“This guy.”

Seeing Chu Feng suddenly standing back up, Xianhai Shuoyi's heart grew tense.

He subconsciously felt that the situation was bad. Thus, he gnashed his teeth and went all-out to unleash his spirit power. He wanted to defeat Chu Feng quickly.

However, he was surprised to discover that the gate that could only be moved with spirit power, that gate that was only three meters away from Chu Feng, was actually unmoving.

At that moment, that gate was like an enormous mountain that he was incapable of moving. No matter how much spirit power he poured forth, he was unable to move that gate toward Chu Feng in the slightest.

As for Chu Feng, he was acting as if he had forgotten about his headache. There was only a single person, Xianhai Shuoyi, in his eyes.

There was only a single thing in Chu Feng's mind, something that he had to do, something that was even more important than his life.

That is, he must defeat Xianhai Shuoyi.

“Xianhai Shuoyi.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng opened his mouth and spoke tranquilly. There was no anger in either his tone or his eyes.

“Ah?”

Xianhai Shuoyi was startled. He did not know why Chu Feng would suddenly call out his name at such a time.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was doing so with such a tranquil tone. It was as if his mockeries and insults earlier had not angered Chu

Feng at all.

“Listen carefully and remember this properly. My name is Chu Feng,” Chu Feng said to Xianhai Shuoyi.

“What do you mean by that?” Xianhai Shuoyi grew even more bewildered. He did not understand why Chu Feng had said those words.

Right at that moment, the originally calm Chu Feng suddenly let out a shout like an enraged beast, an erupting volcano.

“The reason for that is because your granddaddy, me, is going to be the one to defeat you!!!”

“Boom~~~”

Right after his words left his mouth, enormous spirit power exploded out from Chu Feng’s body. The gate that was only three meters away from Chu Feng was instantly pushed onto Xianhai Shuoyi by Chu Feng’s explosive spirit power.

“No!!!”

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi let out an extremely unreconciled shout.

His voice was still lingering in the palace hall. However, his body had already been swallowed by that gate and sent out of the palace hall, sent out of the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

After Chu Feng drove Xianhai Shuoyi away, he sat powerlessly on the ground like a deflated ball. At that moment, Chu Feng’s aura was extremely weak and his complexion was very ugly. It was as if he was seriously ill. Bean-sized beads of sweat covered his entire body and were falling from him nonstop.

However, Chu Feng had a joyous expression on his face. He said to Eggy, “Milady Queen, how was it? I didn’t shame you, no?”

“Oh you, don’t try to flaunt here. You should know that you were originally able to easily win today. The reason why it was so

difficult was all because you decided to show off back then,” Her Lady Queen said in a very stern manner.

“I got it, Milady Queen. This lowly one will definitely take note of it in the future,” Chu Feng said with a joyous smile on his face.

“Humph, that’s right,” Her Lady Queen spoke in a pretended strict manner.

However, she clearly had a joyous expression on her exceptionally beautiful face. In her quick-witted eyes was clearly the expression of heartache.

Naturally, she was feeling heartache for Chu Feng.

“The victor can obtain the treasure.”

Right at that moment, that mysterious body of light spoke dully. The next moment, it disappeared. What disappeared together with it was the gate that Chu Feng had used to defeat Xianhai Shuoyi.

“Finally succeeded.”

Chu Feng walked to the gem platform and looked at the source energy gem that was now within his reach. He was still feeling somewhat nervous.

Chu Feng was unable to be certain as to whether or not he could really obtain the source energy gem.

The reason for that was because he kept feeling that he was extremely extremely far away from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

With how far away he was, how did he arrive in this place? Could it really be as Young Master Li Ming said? That only his soul had traveled there?

If it was really only his soul, would he be able to successfully bring this source energy gem back to his actual body?

Although nervous, Chu Feng still extended his hand to grab that source energy gem.

“Buzz~~~”

At the instant Chu Feng’s hand grabbed that source energy gem, Chu Feng felt that his surroundings started to rapidly change.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if his body passed through countless worlds.

However, that sort of sensation lasted for only an instant.

At that moment, Chu Feng discovered that he had returned to the Demon Elimination Cave.

He was still standing at the same place where he was previously. His surroundings were also exactly the same.

However, one extra item had appeared in his hand. It was that source energy gem he had obtained in the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

Not only was the source energy gem in his hand, but it was also emitting a dense amount of source energy. It was practically the same as when he had obtained it in the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

“It’s actually really here. Milady Queen, do you see this, it’s really here.”

“This is truly mystical. Such a mystical place actually exists in this world.”

At that moment, Chu Feng was endlessly excited. Even though he had been to many remnants and treasure deposits, he had never been to a place as mystical as the Sacred Heavenly Temple.

“You took so long, and you only brought back a treasure like that?”

Right at that moment, a voice sounded. It was Young Master Li Ming. At that moment, Young Master Li Ming was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze showing her inability to understand Chu Feng.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Feng continued to smile. At that moment, he was truly overjoyed.

“Is that thing even helpful to you? That’s for your world spirit, no?” Young Master Li Ming said.

“This is precisely what I wanted,” Chu Feng smiled even stronger. He said to Young Master Li Ming, “Girl, thank you. If it wasn’t for you, I wouldn’t have been able to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple, and wouldn’t have been able to obtain this.”

“You don’t have to thank me. I merely did not wish to owe you a favor,” Young Master Li Ming said coldly.

Faced with the cold reply from Young Master Li Ming, the smile on Chu Feng’s face remained unchanged.

He already knew that Young Master Li Ming was actually also an outwardly-cold yet inwardly-warm sort of person.

Chu Feng no longer continued to be courteous toward Young Master Li Ming. Instead, with a thought, he opened his world spirit gate.

Soon, an exceptionally beautiful figure walked out from his world spirit gate.

That woman was devastatingly beautiful. Her appearance was capable of charming all men in the world. As for who she was, she was naturally Her Lady Queen.

“Eggy, refine this. You should be able to reach a breakthrough in your cultivation,” Chu Feng handed Her Lady Queen the gem that contained a dense amount of source energy.

“Bang~~~”

However, Her Lady Queen shot forth her fist and smashed it onto Chu Feng’s chest.

“Bastard, you are simply too disobedient. Didn’t I tell you not to choose this?” Her Lady Queen was actually not happy. She had an expression of complaint.

However, although he was seeing Her Lady Queen angry, the

smile on Chu Feng's face grew stronger. Merely, that smile of his was guilt-ridden.

“Next time, I will definitely listen to you. Is that okay?” Chu Feng said.

“It's a deal. Next time, if you are to encounter something like this again, you must choose what this Queen wants you to choose. Understand?” Eggy spoke with a commanding tone.

“Got it, I will definitely do as you order,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“Act seriously,” Her Lady Queen berated.

“Yes,” Chu Feng revealed a very serious appearance and stood perfectly straight.

“Puu~~~” Seeing this scene, Her Lady Queen was finally unable to contain herself and burst into laughter.

Her smile was so very charming. That smile was simply capable of overturning the entire world. Seeing this scene, Chu Feng felt that everything was worth it.

# Chapter 2543 - Being Even

---

“Milady Queen, please enjoy,” Chu Feng said earnestly.

Before Eggy, he was truly acting like a servant. No, to be exact, he was acting like her guard.

No matter what Eggy did, Chu Feng was able to accept it. He would never feel fed up with her. He only possessed love and affection for Eggy.

By the same account, he would not feel displeased by Eggy’s actions. On the contrary, he was very happy.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt happy from Eggy feeling happy.

“Set up the formation for me.”

Her Lady Queen received the source energy gemstone from Chu Feng.

“Yes.”

Chu Feng did not hesitate. He knew that Eggy was planning to refine the source energy gem right now. Thus, he hurriedly took a couple steps back and then set up a spirit formation, covering Eggy.

Chu Feng knew that the source energy gem was somewhat special. Even for Eggy, it would take her some time to refine it.

Within that spirit formation, Eggy would be able to refine the source energies in a more focused manner.

“So you’re actually interested in beauty. You chose that thing that is useless for you so that you can obtain a smile from that beauty.”

“That said, it is also understandable. After all, this is also my first time seeing such a beautiful world spirit. Perhaps all you men will not be able to withstand that sort of enticement,” Young Master Li



Ming said faintly. It was as if she had seen through Chu Feng.

“Heh...” Chu Feng lightly chuckled at Young Master Li Ming’s words. Then, he said, “Perhaps you do not understand the sentiments between Eggy and myself. That said, as far as I’m concerned, she is more like my relative. Our relationship is most definitely not limited to a contract.”

“Perhaps that’s the case,” Young Master Li Ming spoke indifferently.

“Oh, that’s right, did you also enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple earlier?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course,” As Young Master Li Ming spoke, she suddenly raised her hand. Then, an item fell into Chu Feng’s hand.

Chu Feng received the item, and discovered that it was a bamboo slip. This tiny bamboo slip was completely engraved with complicated characters.

“This is what you obtained at the Sacred Heavenly Temple?”

“The Sacred Heavenly Temple is truly worthy of its reputation as the most amazing remnant. It truly possesses everything.”

Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression. He was already able to tell that the tiny bamboo slip was no ordinary item.

The bamboo slip was completely engraved with the way of martial comprehension. Furthermore, the martial comprehensions engraved onto it were easily comprehended.

Although Chu Feng only took a glance at the bamboo slip, and did not try to comprehend its martial comprehension, Chu Feng was able to tell that the martial comprehensions contained in it were no small matter.

If he were to comprehend them, he might even reach a breakthrough to rank nine Martial Ancestor.

“I’m giving it to you,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Giving it to me?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

“I do not wish to repeat what I said,” Young Master Li Ming spoke coldly.

“But...” Chu Feng wanted to refuse.

“There’s no but. This thing is useless to me. However, if you are able to comprehend it, you will most likely be able to obtain enough comprehension to breakthrough to peak Martial Ancestor,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Even if it’s useless for you...” Chu Feng still did not want to accept it. The reason for that was because he was only able to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple thanks to Young Master Li Ming.

As for that bamboo slip, it was something very precious. Even if Young Master Li Ming had no use for it, she would be able to fetch a vast price for it in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, or even the Upper Realms.

After all, to martial cultivators, what they sought the most was obtaining something that would allow one to gain martial comprehension. As for that bamboo slip, the martial comprehension it contained was very easily comprehended.

To martial cultivators, this was most definitely a valuable item.

“Don’t say anymore. Earlier, you brought me away from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. It could be said that you’ve saved my life.”

“Compared to my life, mere worldly possessions like this bamboo slip are not worth anything.”

“If you really feel that this item is precious, we will be completely even after you accept it,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Girl, I truly can’t argue against you. Since that’s the case, I will accept it,” Chu Feng said.

“Your world spirit will need some time to refine that gem. You

can take this time to comprehend it,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng did not hesitate. He sat down and planned to comprehend the bamboo slip.

Chu Feng was not worried about his safety. As matters stood, he could be said to have turned his former hostility with Young Master Li Ming into friendship.

Furthermore, he felt that, with Young Master Li Ming’s character, she would not seize the opportunity to attack him while he was comprehending things.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew very well that making an enemy of someone like Young Master Li Ming would be very dangerous. However... as a friend, she would be very reliable.

“If you are able to comprehend enough to break through to peak Martial Ancestor, you should just break through directly,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Break through directly? That wouldn’t be good, no?” Chu Feng shook his head.

This place was, after all, the territory of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. If he were to reach a breakthrough here, he would definitely give rise to the Divine Tribulation’s lightning.

The appearance of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning would definitely catch the attention of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. If that were to happen, their location would be exposed.

“Use this,” Young Master Li Ming tossed an umbrella to Chu Feng.

“This is?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. That umbrella was another treasure.

“Open that umbrella and place it above your head. Not only will it help you avoid a portion of the Self-Punishment Mysterious Technique’s power, but it will also let the Self-Punishment

Mysterious Technique land without any sound and movement. Others will not be able to see the descent of the lightning,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“There’s actually this sort of thing?” Chu Feng exclaimed in admiration. The reason for that was because he felt enormous headache at the emergence of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning during his breakthroughs.

After all, the Divine Tribulation’s lightning was so very magnificent. Every single time it appeared, Chu Feng would alarm others. Chu Feng had thought about how good it would be if he had a treasure that could conceal the Divine Tribulation’s lightning.

Merely, Chu Feng had felt that something like that was impossible to accomplish. After all, the power of the Divine Tribulation’s lightning was so very strong. As such, Chu Feng had truly never expected a treasure like that to really exist.

“I am truly becoming more and more curious as to exactly what your origin is, as well as what other treasures you have with you,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“If you continue on with your nonsense, your world spirit will be able to completely refine that gem,” Young Master Li Ming cast a side eye at Chu Feng.

“I understand,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he opened the umbrella that was given to him.

After the umbrella was opened, it floated into the air and stopped three meters above Chu Feng. Then, a shower of light fell from the umbrella and surrounded Chu Feng within it.

When that light surrounded him, Chu Feng was able to feel the power of the umbrella with even greater certainty. Indeed, this was a treasure made precisely for those that trained in the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques.

“What a good treasure,” After Chu Feng said these words, he closed his eyes and tightly held the bamboo slip in his hand.

Chu Feng did not have to read the contents of the bamboo slip with his eyes at all. The reason for that was because the contents must be comprehended using one’s heart and mind.

As Chu Feng began his comprehension, the characters that were densely packed on the bamboo slip actually began to disappear nonstop.

Evidently, the bamboo slip could only be used once.

.....

At the same time. In a place extremely far from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

There was an extremely beautiful lake. That lake was actually seven-colored.

Mist was floating on the surface of the lake. The seven colors of the lake had dyed the mist seven colors too.

That place resembled the world of immortals. It was extremely gorgeous. With a glance, one’s heart would feel untroubled, and one’s spirit pleased.

There were countless little isles on the lake. On one of the isles was a young man sitting languidly with his back against a boulder.

His hands were tightly clenched. They were clenched so hard that creaking sounds could be heard, and the veins in his arms were all bulging.

As for that young man, he was none other than the person Chu Feng had defeated in the Sacred Heavenly Temple, that man who had called himself Xianhai Shuoyi.

“Damn it, I actually lost to trash like that!”

Suddenly, Xianhai Shuoyi smashed his fist onto the ground, violently shaking the entire isle and leaving behind a deep crack

that extended outward like a cobweb on the ground.

“Am I mishearing things? Xianhai Shuoyi, you were defeated? How were you defeated? Could it be that you encountered a competitor after entering the Sacred Heavenly Temple, and were then defeated by that competitor?”

“Haha, Big Brother Shuoyi, you are truly pathetic.”

Right at that moment, two figures flew over and landed before Xianhai Shuoyi.

They were a man and a woman. The two of them possessed similar ages to Xianhai Shuoyi.

The man had a handsome appearance, whereas the woman was a beauty. They were truly a model handsome man and beautiful woman.

Not only were they wearing gorgeous clothes, but there were also the same sort of title plate as Xianhai Shuoyi's title plate, the title plate with the characters 'Xianhai' on it, on their waists.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that those two people were actually also True Immortals. Although they were only rank one True Immortals, it still remained that it was extraordinary.

## Chapter 2544 - Immortal Sea Fish Clan

---

Seeing those two people, Xianhai Shuoyi stood up and asked, “What sort of treasure did the two of you manage to obtain?”

“Here, Big Brother Shuoyi, this is what I’ve obtained.”

“This is mine.”

The man and woman both revealed an item in their hands.

The woman was holding a bamboo slip. The color of the bamboo slip was different from the one that Young Master Li Ming gave Chu Feng. However, the mysterious characters engraved onto it were exactly the same.

As for the man, he had a stone in his hand. That stone was completely pitch-black in color. However, it was emitting a glistening luster. It was not light. Rather, it was luster.

That stone was only the size of an ordinary brick. At a glance, it appeared very unremarkable. However, it just so happened to give off an extremely extraordinary feeling. It was as if the stone was alive, and possessed a very precious lineage.

“Bamboo Slips with martial comprehension are only useful to Martial Ancestors. However, they can fetch some cash. Thus, there’s no loss in obtaining it.”

“As for this Immortal Armament Blackiron Stone, it could fetch a very good price,” Xianhai Shuoyi evaluated the two items. Then, he arrived beside the man and patted his shoulder, “You’ve made a profit this time around.”

“Big Brother Shuoyi, then what did you manage to obtain after entering the Sacred Heavenly Temple this time around?” The woman asked curiously.

“I...” Xianhai Shuoyi revealed an embarrassed expression.

“Xianhai Shuoyi, I’ve heard you saying that you’ve failed

earlier?” Seeing Xianhai Shuoyi’s hesitant expression, the man asked, “You couldn’t possibly really be that unlucky to encounter an expert that had chosen the same treasure as you in the Sacred Heavenly Temple, and then be defeated by that person, right?”

As for the woman, she stopped her previously taunting mannerisms and stared at Xianhai Shuoyi with wide-opened eyes.

The two of them were both waiting for Xianhai Shuoyi to give them an answer.

“Mn.”

After hesitating for a moment, Xianhai Shuoyi nodded.

“You were actually unlucky enough to encounter something like that?” The man and woman both revealed extremely surprised expressions.

However, at that moment, the two of them no longer expressed any ridiculing mannerisms, and were more or less feeling sorry for Xianhai Shuoyi.

It would appear that their relationships were pretty decent. Their taunting and ridiculing mannerisms earlier were merely meant to joke around with Xianhai Shuoyi. They did not really expect that Xianhai Shouyi would encounter such an unlucky thing.

After all, the possibility of something like that happening was extremely slim.

After finding out that Xianhai Shuoyi had encountered that sort of unfortunate thing, and was even defeated by his opponent, the man and woman who knew Xianhai Shuoyi’s personality well started to feel sorry for him.

“It was merely an accident. That fellow was extremely weak. In terms of cultivation, he was simply no match for me.”

“Unfortunately, cultivation is useless in the Sacred Heavenly



Temple. As for the test put forth by that guardian spirit, it just so happened to be in something that I am not very proficient in. That is why I ended up being defeated.”

“Else, even ten thousand of him would not be a match for me,” Xianhai Shuoyi declared.

“Exactly what sort of test did that guardian spirit give?” That woman asked curiously.

“It’s hard to explain. In any case, it was not a conventional match,” Xianhai Shuoyi said.

Xianhai Shuoyi would naturally not say that he had been defeated by Chu Feng in a match of spirit power. After all, a match of spirit power was a very common practice. If he were to declare that he had lost in a match of spirit power, he would most definitely be laughed at by others.

“Exactly what is happening here today? I’ve heard that Her Highness Yu’er also encountered a competitor in the Sacred Heavenly Temple,” The man said. [2. The Yu in Yu’er means ‘fish.’ ‘er is just a suffix to make a name sound cutesy/familiar. Hint hint Eastern Sea Region]

“Yu’er also encountered a competitor?” Hearing those words, Xianhai Shuoyi immediately grew tense.

“That’s right. Her Highness Yu’er declared it herself,” That man nodded.

“How is Yu’er?” Xianhai Shuoyi asked nervously.

From his reaction, it seemed that he was deeply concerned for that Her Highness Yu’er.

“Who is Her Highness Yu’er? She is the number one genius to appear in our Immortal Sea Fish Clan in the last several tens of thousands of years.”

“Naturally, she won,” The man said proudly.

“It’s great that she won. Yu’er is truly amazing,” Hearing those words, Xianhai Shuoyi felt relieved.

“Actually, when we first heard about it, we were also extremely worried for Her Highness.”

“After all, what Her Highness used was the Martial Immortal-level Sacred Temple Bead. We all know that apart from the True Immortal-level Sacred Temple Beads that anyone can use, the other Sacred Temple Beads possess cultivation requirements.”

“Thus, we felt that Her Highness Yu’er must’ve encountered a Martial Immortal-level expert.”

“Her Highness Yu’er has only just become a Martial Immortal, thus we were afraid that she would end up suffering a mishap after encountering such a powerful opponent.”

“But, Her Highness Yu’er managed to defeat her opponent and successfully obtained the treasure,” That woman said with a proud expression.

Xianhai Shuoyi stood up and said, “Where’s Yu’er? I’m going to see her.”

“I heard that Her Highness Yu’er is still on the isle in the center of the lake,” The woman pointed into the distance.

“I’ll go see Yu’er. You two wait for me here,” Xianhai Shuoyi said. Then, he soared into the sky and began flying toward the direction that woman indicated.

After Xianhai Shuoyi left, the man and woman both revealed envious expressions on their faces.

“I am truly envious of Big Brother Shuoyi. He is actually able to be this close to Her Highness Yu’er. People like us do not even have a chance to approach Her Highness Yu’er,” The woman said as she looked to the direction Xianhai Shuoyi had left toward.

“When even a girl like you is feeling envious, you can very well

imagine how enormously envious I, a man, am,” The man sighed.

“Haha, big brother, you were just unlucky. After all, Big Brother Shuoyi grew up together with Her Highness Yu’er,” The woman said.

“That’s true. Although Xianhai Shuoyi’s mother is only Her Highness Yu’er’s servant, it was thanks to her that Xianhai Shuoyi was able to get in contact with Her Highness Yu’er. To us people of the Immortal Sea Fish Clan, this should be the greatest fortune, no?” The man sighed with deep emotions.

In the center of the seven-colored immortal lake was an enormous island.

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi was rapidly approaching that island.

“Stop!”

Suddenly, a shout was heard. Then, a middle-aged man appeared in the empty space.

That middle-aged man was wearing cyan armor. His armor seemed to be made of fish scales, and was glistening under the sunshine.

That armor was the work of uncanny craftsmanship. It was even like art. That armor itself was a treasure.

As for that middle-aged man’s aura, it was extremely deep and powerful. Even Xianhai Shuoyi, a True Immortal, felt extremely small before that man.

Not to mention attacking him, merely a spit or even a glance from that middle-aged man would be sufficient to instantly obliterate him.

On the waist of the middle-aged man were two title plates. One was the same as the one that Xianhai Shuoyi had on his waist, the title plate with the characters ‘Xianhai’ on it.

As for the other, it possessed two other characters, 'Palace Guard.' [3. Palace Guard → Dianwei.]

“Immortal Sea Fish Clansman Xianhai Shouyi pays his respects to Lord Palace Guard!!!”

Upon seeing this individual, Xianhai Shuoyi immediately clasped his fist and bowed respectfully to that man.

“And here I was wondering who it was. So it's you, Shouyi. There's no need to stand on ceremony, you can stand back up,” The middle-aged man said with a smile.

“You must have come to find Her Highness Yu'er, right?” The middle-aged man asked with a smile on his face. Judging from his appearance, he was quite familiar with Xianhai Shuoyi.

“Yes, Lord Palace Guard. Is Her Highness Yu'er present?” Xianhai Shuoyi asked.

“Her Highness Yu'er is on the island. Go on ahead,” The middle-aged man said.

“Thank you Lord Palace Guard,” As Xianhai Shuoyi expressed his thanks, his body shifted and his clothes fluttered in the wind. He had proceeded to continue flying toward the island.

“Humph.”

Right after Xianhai Shuoyi left, the smile on that middle-aged man's face immediately disappeared. It was replaced with an expression of contempt.

# Chapter 2545 - Her Highness Yu'er

---

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the space next to him started to tremble slightly. Then, a woman walked out.

Compared to the middle-aged man, this woman was much younger. Not only did she have an attractive face, but her figure was also enchanting. She was a sexy woman.

That said, although she had a very sexy appearance, she was wearing the same sort of majestic armor as the middle-aged man.

Furthermore, that woman also had the same identical ‘Palace Guard’ title plate on her waist.

“That boy is truly a toad that wants to eat swan meat,” The woman looked to the direction that Xianhai Shuoyi had left in and smiled coldly. She added, “He should have checked his status. If it wasn’t for Her Highness Yu’er having such a good personality, how could she concern herself with someone like him, the son of a servant?”

“Don’t bother with him. After all... he’s hopeless,” The middle-aged man said.

“Of course. With how excellent Her Highness Yu’er is, how could she fancy someone like him? She is merely feeling pity for him,” The woman said.

The two of them were conversing through voice transmissions. Thus, only the two of them were capable of hearing it.

On the island was an overhanging cliff.

The cliff was very dangerous. However, a young woman was sitting at the edge of the cliff.

She was sitting at the edge of the cliff with her legs dangling at an altitude of over ten thousand meters.

That young woman had a head full of beautiful jet black hair that sprinkled down behind her. As she blinked, her long eyelashes trembled slightly.

Her beautiful eyes were very clear. It was as if there were countless stars within them. They were completely untainted.

Her tall nose bridge and delicate cherry lips were also magnificently beautiful.

This young woman's appearance was simply the pinnacle of beauty. Especially her pure and charming aura, it was simply akin to that of a celestial fairy. She was simply perfect.

Not only was the young woman's facial appearance akin to that of a celestial fairy, but her figure was also very good. She possessed snow-white skin with a faint rosy and translucent glow. Her skin was like that of jade.

As for her long green dress, it made the woman appear like an elf in the world.

It was as if a woman like her could only be seen in one's dreams, and not present in reality.

“Huu~~~”

Suddenly, wind blew past. Her long green skirt started to flutter slightly. The young woman's beautiful legs were exposed intermittently. It was truly alluring.

Likely, apart from Her Lady Queen, there was no one that could match that young woman's beauty.

Although that young woman was very beautiful, she had a child-like personality.

The young woman was swinging her legs back and forth over the cliff. As for her beautiful eyes, they were sizing up a beaded chain that she was fiddling with in her hand.

However, her witty appearance made her seem even more lovely.

“Yu’er, is that beaded chain what you’ve obtained from the Sacred Heavenly Temple?”

Suddenly, a voice was heard. It was Xianhai Shuoyi. He descended from the sky and stood behind that beautiful young woman, then slowly walked toward her.

Seeing Xianhai Shuoyi, the young woman did not show any sign of being on guard. Instead, she turned around, smiled sweetly and held up the beaded chain in her hand.

“How is it? Not bad, no?”

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi was able to clearly see the beaded chain. The beaded chain was sparking, translucent and dark green in color. Each and every bead on the beaded chain seemed to be alive.

Not only that, but if one were to look carefully, one would see that the beads were actually all grand formations. There was a total of a hundred and thirty-eight beads. In other words, there were a hundred and thirty-eight grand formations. Each and every single grand formation was extremely powerful. Furthermore... there were both defensive and offensive formations.

“The treasure one obtains after using a Martial Immortal-level Sacred Temple Bead to enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple is truly of excellent quality,” Xianhai Shuoyi said.

“Xianhai Shuoyi, what sort of treasure did you obtain? Let me have a look at it,” The young woman’s beautiful eyes were flickering in a very mischievous manner.

“I...” Xianhai Shuoyi’s expression turned sluggish. After a moment of hesitation, he said, “Compared to your bracelet, what I’ve obtained is simply unworthy of mention. Thus, I’m not going to take it out to shame myself.”

Xianhai Shuoyi did not tell the truth.

He was able to tell anyone that he had been defeated in the

Sacred Heavenly Temple by someone and did not obtain any treasure. However, it was only before this young woman before him that he did not dare say that.

He was afraid that the young woman would be disappointed in him. He was also afraid that he would shame himself.

“If you don’t want to tell me, so be it.”

The young woman raised her head and turned around as she continued to fiddle with the beaded chain in her hand.

It seemed like she was not very concerned with what that Xianhai Shuoyi might have obtained.

Xianhai Shuoyi walked over to the young woman and said, “Yu’er, this bracelet of yours is very pretty. It suits you very well. Why don’t you wear it?”

“What bracelet? This is a footlace. Boys like you truly do not know about anything,” The young woman let out a ridiculing laughter.

However, this ridiculing and mocking laughter was so very pleasant-sounding when it reached Xianhai Shuoyi’s ears.

He did not feel that his ego was insulted from the young woman’s ridiculing laughter. The reason for that was because he knew the young woman very well, and knew that she was not really ridiculing him. He knew that she was merely joking with him.

“So it’s actually a footlace. Isn’t that even better? You’ll be able to replace that old, dirty footlace on your feet,” Xianhai Shuoyi said.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after Xianhai Shuoyi said those words, he suddenly felt that the surrounding air had instantly turned incomparably ice-cold.

Even though he was a grand True Immortal-level expert, he still



felt bone-chilling coldness.

“Yu’er, are you angry?”

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi’s voice was trembling slightly. Although the young woman did not explicitly express it, he knew that she was angry.

The bone-chilling coldness was caused by the young woman’s change in mood.

The young woman slowly got up. However, she completely ignored Xianhai Shuoyi and walked past him. She began to walk toward the depths of the mountain.

Seeing that, Xianhai Shuoyi hesitated slightly. He wanted to say something, but didn’t dare to say it.

Finally, he tightly clenched his fists, gathered up his courage and said, “Yu’er, wait a moment.”

The young woman stopped. However, she did not turn around. Instead, with her back facing Xianhai Shuoyi, she said, “What do you need now?”

“Yu’er, I have something that I’ve wanted to ask you for a long time now. Exactly what did you experience back then? Why did you completely change after returning?”

“Furthermore, you’ve been wearing that footlace the entire time ever since. But, that footlace is merely an Elite Armament. It is simply useless in protecting you.”

“Why do you wear it all the time? Exactly what did you experience?” Xianhai Shuoyi spoke in an emotional manner.

Evidently, he had kept those words in his heart for a very long time. Today, he was finally able to let them out.

“You have given me footlaces many times in the past. Your goal is so that I will change this footlace, right?”

“Did you do that because you felt that my footlace was very

unbefitting of me?” The young woman spoke calmly.

“That’s right, I feel that footlace to be very ugly, very irksome. I do not wish to see you wearing it,” Xianhai Shuoyi spoke emotionally.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, that Xianhai Shuoyi suddenly crashed onto the ground. Overwhelming power caused crushed rocks to scatter about in the air. Xianhai Shuoyi was crushed deep into the rocks of the cliff, unable to move in the slightest.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At the very next instant, a total of twenty-four figures appeared on the cliff simultaneously. They completely surrounded the young woman.

Among those people, the youngest were middle-aged individuals, whereas the oldest were white-haired elderly individuals. The man and woman from earlier were also present among them.

Not only were they all wearing the same sort of armor, but they also all had the ‘Palace Guard’ title plate on their waists.

Most importantly, those twenty-four individuals all possessed extremely frightening auras. Their cultivations were extremely powerful, and most definitely superior to those of Martial Immortals.

At that moment, they were looking at their surroundings in a greatly alerted manner. The killing intent from their eyes could be said to be extremely frightening.

It was as if their gazes and auras alone were sufficient to suffocate and kill their enemies.

## Chapter 2546 - Who Gave It To You

---

“Your Highness Yu’er, what happened?”

Those twenty-four palace guards thought that something had happened.

However, when they discovered that it was actually Xianhai Shuoyi who was crushed into the cliff by the young woman’s oppressive might, they were all stunned and confused.

After all, they knew very well that even though Xianhai Shuoyi had a very lowly status, he possessed a very good relationship with the young woman, as they’d grown up together.

They did not understand who could possibly make the young woman so angry that she would treat Xianhai Shuoyi in such a manner.

That said, as they knew that the relationship between Xianhai Shuoyi and the young woman was generally very good, they did not attack Xianhai Shuoyi even after knowing that he had offended the young woman.

They all knew very well that the matter should be left for the young woman to personally handle due to Xianhai Shuoyi’s special status.

“Xianhai Shuoyi, there are words that I’ve wanted to tell you for a very long time now. Although we have grown up together and are friends of many years...”

The young woman suddenly turned around. She had a very serious expression on her face, “...however, I have always only considered you to be my older brother. Thus, do not misunderstand my affection for you.”

“Furthermore, I have warned you before. I do not allow anyone to speak ill of what I am fond of.”

“You want to know where I obtained this footlace? Very well, I can tell you. It was given to me by a friend of mine.”

“That’s right, it is only an Elite Armament. However, I just so happen to be fond of wearing it. I will not allow anyone to speak ill of it.”

Although the young woman spoke those words sternly, she removed her oppressive might from Xianhai Shuoyi.

Without the pressure from the oppressive might, Xianhai Shuoyi was finally able to stand up.

At that moment, he did not concern himself with the dust on his body at all. With an apologetic expression on his face, he said to the young woman, “Yu’er, I was wrong. I should not shoot off my mouth. It is good that you like it. I will never again...”

“There is no next time,” The young woman said.

“Ah?” Xianhai Shuoyi was startled. Then, he said, “Yu’er, w-w-what do you mean by that?”

“Palace guards, listen up!” Suddenly, the young woman shouted.

“We are listening!” The twenty-four enormously powerful palace guards all half-kneeled onto the ground.

“From today on, unless I personally request for him, Xianhai Shuoyi is not allowed to enter where I’m staying at will,” The young woman declared.

“Yes, Your Highness!” The twenty-four guards spoke in unison. Their voices were extremely resounding.

“Woosh~~~”

After she finished giving the order, the young woman soared into the sky. She was walking in the sky barefooted.

Although the young woman’s movement appeared to be very elegant and slow, her speed was extremely fast. In merely the blink of an eye, she had disappeared into the distant horizon.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Following that, twenty-three of the guards all soared into the sky to follow after her.

Only one of the palace guards was still standing on the ground.

“Yu’er, wait, let me explain, I truly did not have any ill intentions.”

Seeing that, Xianhai Shuoyi immediately started to panic. He wanted to chase after the young woman.

“Wuuahh~~~”

Right at that moment, a powerful energy suddenly restricted him. Then, that power pinned him to the cliff once again.

It was the palace guard that had stayed behind. As for that palace guard, it was the same middle-aged man that had allowed Xianhai Shuoyi inside.

“Release me! Let me go after Yu’er!” Xianhai Shouyi spoke anxiously.

“Insolent! That is Her Highness Yu’er! How could you address her by name?!”

The middle-aged man shouted at Xianhai Shuoyi sternly. He no longer showed any sort of politeness from before.

“Scram! Who the hell do you think you are to dare block my path?! Do you know my relationship with Yu’er?!”

“If I am to mention this matter to Yu’er, she will immediately remove your status as a palace guard!”

Xianhai Shuoyi was extremely furious. He had already lost all sense of propriety, removed his hypocritical mask and actually spoke what he wanted to say in his mind the most.

“Paa, paa~~~”

The middle-aged man raised his hand and gave Xianhai Shuoyi

two slaps. Although those slaps were sent forth from afar, they ruthlessly landed onto Xianhai Shuoyi's face.

After the two slaps landed, Xianhai Shuoyi's cheeks were both lacerated. His handsome face had been slapped beyond recognition.

"You...!" Xianhai Shuoyi was stunned. After verifying the pain on his cheeks, he said, "You dare hit me?!"

"Why wouldn't I dare? What sort of status do I possess, and what sort of status do you possess? Yet you dare speak to me in such a manner?"

"Today, I am already being lenient by only giving you two slaps to the face. Else, how could you still be able to lay there?"

That middle-aged man did not show any anger. However, his overwhelming oppressive might surged forth, oppressing Xianhai Shuoyi to a state of being unable to breathe easily.

There was simply no need for him to attack. Merely a single thought from the middle-aged man would be able to completely obliterate Xianhai Shuoyi.

In such a situation, Xianhai Shuoyi gradually regained his calm. He did not dare utter another word.

"Humph," The middle-aged man let out a cold snort. Then, he soared into the sky.

However, upon reaching the sky, he suddenly stopped, turned around and said to Xianhai Shuoyi mockingly, "Brainless trash, do you really think that you can see Her Highness Yu'er again? You have already intruded upon her baseline. From today on, you and Her Highness Yu'er will be people from two separate worlds. You will no longer be associated with her again."

After saying those words, that middle-aged man sneered. Then, he continued to fly toward the direction that the young woman left in.

At that moment, Xianhai Shuoyi was stunned. He remained silent for a very long time.

After a long time passed, Xianhai Shuoyi was finally able to somewhat alleviate himself. However, at that time, overwhelming hatred emerged in his eyes.

With a voice that only he could hear, he muttered, “Xianhai Yu’er, I never expected you to be this heartless.”

“Very well, since you want to break all ties, I will also not wag my tail, beg for pity and lower myself to curry your favor.”

“Even if I am to leave you, the so-called Her Highness Princess, I, Xianhai Shuoyi, with my own abilities, will still be able to make a name for myself in the Immortal Sea Fish Clan.”

Only Xianhai Shuoyi was able to hear those complaint-filled words. However, the scene of him saying those words was caught by two individuals.

Away from and above that seven-colored lake was a floating palace.

That palace was very peculiar. Although the palace was not very large, it was completely composed of bright and shiny green gemstone. It gave off a special sort of beauty.

In the center of the palace was a ten meter-tall mirror. On that mirror was Xianhai Shuoyi’s ugly and grievance-filled face.

Furthermore, the words Xianhai Shuoyi muttered earlier were all revealed by the mirror.

Her Highness Yu’er was standing right before the mirror. Seeing that scene, anger emerged in her previously clear eyes.

She was angered. She was tightly clenching her lily-white fists. She was biting down so hard on her pearly white teeth that creaking noises could be heard.

However, she did not say a single word.

Suddenly, a figure approached her. It was a young man with a very handsome appearance. It was a very manly sort of handsomeness.

Even when compared with Xianhai Shuoyi, he was much more handsome.

Furthermore, that young man was very tall. He was wearing a special sort of armor, and appeared very imposing and domineering. It was as if he was emitting the aura of a ruler from every pore on his body.

Furthermore, if one were to pay close attention, they would notice that the man's appearance slightly resembled that of Her Highness Yu'er.

"My little sister, do you now know the true colors of that Xianhai Shuoyi?"

"I have already told you that he had only approached you for his personal benefit," The man said.

"Actually, I already knew that such was the case. Merely, I am still unable to contain my anger after seeing it personally."

"After all, I had sincerely considered him my friend before."

"However, big brother, you do not have to worry about me. I will not take something like this to heart."

Her Highness Yu'er turned around and looked at the man. At that moment, she revealed a witty and pleasant smile on her refined little face.

It was as if everything that had happened before was already in the past, and her current negative mood would not affect her much.

"Although that Xianhai Shuoyi approached little sister for his own benefits, he is indeed fond of you from the bottom of his heart. Even earlier, his hatred was only borne of love."



“Actually, you have treated him quite well too. Even if you’ve only considered him an older brother, you’ve still treated him very well.”

“However, ever since you’ve returned from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, you’ve completely changed. Especially toward him...”

“Although the relationship between the two of you is still very good in the eyes of others, it is no longer as intimate as before.”

“Thus, I, your older brother, am also very curious as to exactly who gave you that footlace of yours to be able to change a mischievous girl like you,” The man asked with a beaming smile.

He was looking at Her Highness Yu’er with a very gentle and soft gaze. It was filled with love and pampering.

That said, he was also truly curious.

He really wanted to know who gave his little sister that footlace.

# Chapter 2547 - Rank Nine Martial Ancestor

---

“Big brother, if you want to know, bring me there. I’ll bring you to see him, okay?”

“He is an extremely, extremely, extremely, extremely good person. I feel like he would become good friends with big brother,” Her Highness Yu’er spoke with a beaming smile.

“Lord Father has set a restriction spell on you. As such, you are simply unable to leave this place. Thus, how am I to bring you there?” The man said.

“Big brother, help me remove it. I know you have the ability to do so,” Her Highness Yu’er grabbed the sleeve of the man and spoke in a very pitiful manner, “Good brother, please help me.”

“My dear sister, I’ve said it many times already. Big brother wants to help you too. Merely, I do not dare to go against Lord Father’s decree.”

“If you want to remove the restriction to find that fellow, you must train hard. When you become an Exalted, Lord Father will definitely honor his promise and let you go out.”

“At that time, big brother will accompany you there,” The man said.

“Okay, that’s a promise then. With big brother standing up for me, who would dare bully me?” Her Highness Yu’er said with a protruded mouth.

“That said, it has been many years, are you certain that he’s still in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” As the young man said those words, his tone grew heavier, “Moreover... are you certain that he’s still alive?”

“I am uncertain as to where he is. However, he is most definitely still alive. I have a feeling... that he will become someone even more powerful than you, big brother,” Her Highness Yu’er spoke

with great confidence.

“My dear sister, it is not that big brother is looking down on your beloved, but that Ancestral Martial Starfield has been a desolate place for a very long time now. The reason for that is because there have not been any powerful experts from that place for a very long time now,” The man said.

“He is the expert that will allow the Ancestral Martial Starfield to shine again,” Her Highness Yu’er said stubbornly. Suddenly, her expression changed, “What do you mean by beloved, he’s merely a friend, friend!”

“Oh, he’s only a friend? If that’s the case, why are you blushing?” The man said with a smile.

“Who said I’m blushing? I’m not blushing. Big brother, you’re so annoying. I don’t like you anymore, get out of here,” Her Highness Yu’er pushed the man out toward the exit of the palace.

“Okay, okay, okay. Your mood is bad so big brother will not disturb you.”

“Remember to wholeheartedly concentrate on training. Although you’ve already reached the Martial Immortal realm, the Exalted realm is not that easily obtained,” As the man spoke, he walked out by himself.

“I got it, just get out,” Her Highness Yu’er waved her hand.

Then, she sat down cross-legged. Her beautiful eyes were flickering nonstop. It was unknown as to what she was thinking.

After a while, she took off the footlace on her ankle.

If others were to see this scene, they would definitely feel very surprised. The princess of the Immortal Sea Fish Clan was actually touching an Elite Armament footlace so very gently and cautiously.

As she looked at the beautiful footlace she held in her hand, Her Highness Yu’er’s gaze grew incomparably gentle and soft. Her gaze

seemed to be capable of melting anyone's heart.

“Big brother, you must be well. Little Fishy will definitely go see you again,” The young woman said softly.

It turned out that the extremely powerful Her Highness Yu'er was actually that mischievous little girl from the Eastern Sea Region.

.....

Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. In the Demon Elimination Cave.

Chu Feng was gnashing his teeth. At that moment, fierce lightning covered his entire body.

That lightning seemed to be about to tear his body apart. They were attacking him nonstop.

By relying on the bamboo slip given to him by Young Master Li Ming, Chu Feng had successfully comprehended enough to reach the junction for a breakthrough to peak Martial Ancestor.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had decided to directly utilize this junction to attempt the breakthrough to rank nine Martial Ancestor.

He was already halfway there. The Divine Tribulation's lightning had already arrived. As long as he could withstand the Divine Tribulation, Chu Feng would be able to successfully break through to rank nine Martial Ancestor from rank eight Martial Ancestor.

Merely, the Divine Tribulation's lightning this time around was extremely fierce. Chu Feng had a very painful expression on his face.

It was still unknown as to whether or not Chu Feng would really be able to withstand the Divine Tribulation this time around.

“What powerful lightning. It seems that he really does train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“I wonder... if it was me, would I be able to withstand the Divine Tribulation from the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?”

Young Master Li Ming was standing nearby and watching Chu Feng attentively.

She felt that the lightning surrounding Chu Feng was simply too frightening, and that Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to succeed.

After watching Chu Feng for some time, she raised her head upward.

Using special methods, she was able to see through the walls of the Demon Elimination Cave and see the scene outside, the scene deep in the sky.

Deep in the sky, lightning clouds were surging about. The Divine Tribulation's lightning was galloping. Wave upon wave of power capable of utterly destroying the world was gathered high up in the sky.

That scene was exceptionally terrifying.

“For my umbrella, before reaching the True Immortal realm, even my Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique will not cause the slightest bit of abnormal sign when reaching a breakthrough.”

“However, for this Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, even though my umbrella has managed to successfully conceal the Divine Tribulation's lightning that struck down, it was unable to conceal the lightning clouds above the skies.”

“Sure enough, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is not something that the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique can compare to,” Young Master Li Ming gasped with admiration.

The reason for that was because her umbrella was able to completely conceal her Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique. Yet, it was unable to completely conceal Chu Feng's Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Merely by that, it indirectly showed the disparity between her and Chu Feng.

“Zzzzz~”

Right at that moment, the lightning surrounding Chu Feng started to wane. Gradually, the painful expression on Chu Feng’s face began to lessen.

“He succeeded? He actually managed to successfully endure such powerful lightning?” At that moment, Young Master Li Ming’s expression changed.

Evidently, she was very surprised by Chu Feng being able to successfully endure the Divine Tribulation’s lightning.

She had thought that with how fierce the Divine Tribulation’s lightning was and the painful expression that Chu Feng revealed, Chu Feng would not be able to withstand the Divine Tribulation.

She had thought that he would fail in his breakthrough attempt.

Never did she expect for Chu Feng to actually succeed, for him to actually successfully endure through the Divine Tribulation’s lightning and reach rank nine Martial Ancestor, the peak Martial Ancestor cultivation.

Chu Feng had indeed succeeded. After the Divine Tribulation’s lightning dispersed, Chu Feng’s complexion turned rosy and full of luster. His aura also increased from rank eight Martial Ancestor to rank nine Martial Ancestor.

“Li Ming, thank you. If it wasn’t for you, I would not be able to reach a breakthrough this quickly.”

Chu Feng had an overjoyed expression on his face. He had originally only come to the Demon Elimination Cave to find Zi Xunyi to request her assistance. He did not expect to actually obtain such a great fortune.

Although a rank nine Martial Ancestor was still a Martial

Ancestor, and was no match for True Immortals, Chu Feng had managed to attain a lot of comprehension after comprehending the bamboo slip. He felt that he was only a fine line away from reaching the True Immortal realm.

“There’s no need to thank me. You relied on your own ability to withstand that Divine Tribulation,” Young Master Li Ming said indifferently.

“So you already knew that I trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique,” Chu Feng said.

“The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is the only thing above my Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique. Merely, I never expected this legendary Self-Punishment Mysterious Technique to actually exist in this world.”

After saying those words, she looked at Chu Feng with a whole new level of respect. She said, “More than that, I never expected that you’d actually manage to successfully learn that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“I’ll consider it that you’re praising me,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he cast his gaze to the spirit formation Her Lady Queen was in.

At that moment, what he was most concerned about was naturally Eggys’ well being.

“Has Eggy still not finished refining the gemstone?”

After saying those words, Chu Feng was planning to observe the spirit formation with his Heaven’s Eyes. He wanted to see how things were going with Her Lady Queen.

“Bang~~~”

Right at that moment, the spirit formation suddenly exploded.

The next moment, the exceptionally beautiful figure of Her Lady Queen emerged.

Furthermore, at that moment, Her Lady Queen’s aura was much

more powerful than before.

Her Lady Queen's aura was actually the same as Chu Feng's, that of a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

“Rank nine Martial Ancestor, Milady Queen, it would seem that the source energy gem was truly a treasure,” Chu Feng was overjoyed. He knew very well that, for some reason, Her Lady Queen needed a lot more source energy than ordinary world spirits.

This made it so that it was very difficult for Her Lady Queen to increase her cultivation by absorbing source energies.

For the same sort of source energy that other world spirits could use to reach two breakthroughs in cultivation, Her Lady Queen would only be able to reach a single breakthrough in cultivation.

And now, Her Lady Queen's cultivation had actually increased to rank nine Martial Ancestor, the peak Martial Ancestor realm. With this, how could Chu Feng not be overjoyed?

Extremely excited, Chu Feng rushed toward Her Lady Queen and hugged the exceptionally beautiful Eggy.

The proud Eggy actually did not take offense at Chu Feng's action. Instead, she continued to have an enchanting smile on her face the entire time. It would appear that she was extremely happy to have reached rank nine Martial Ancestor.

However, after a short moment passed, Chu Feng was still tightly hugging her. It seemed that he did not plan to release his hands at all.

Furthermore, he was rubbing his face onto Her Lady Queen's face nonstop. At that moment, Her Lady Queen's expression started to sink.

“Hey, hey, hey! How much longer are you going to hug me? Even if you are to take advantage of me, you should have a limit, no?!” Her Lady Queen spoke in a very displeased manner.



## Chapter 2548 - Touching Upon The Taboo

---

“Haha, how could I? I’m just happy for you, how could I be taking advantage of you? Why would you speak as if I’m a pervert?”

After Her Lady Queen voiced her displeasure, Chu Feng found it unsuitable to continue embracing her. Thus, he released his hands and scratched his head with an awkward expression on his face.

In fact, Chu Feng even took a glance at Young Master Li Ming. It was as if he was afraid that Young Master Li Ming would have a misunderstanding.

“Why are you looking at me? You were clearly taking advantage of her. Even I can tell,” Young Master Li Ming spoke unenthusiastically.

“Aiyah, why would you two be acting like this? I was merely giving a hug of friendship. Why would you all think things this crookedly?”

Chu Feng hurriedly explained. However, he had a vile smile on his face. It was clear that he had indeed been deliberately taking advantage of Eggy. Thus, no matter how he tried to explain it, no one would believe him.

“Putt~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt two soft substances pushing onto his chest.

Then, a sweet fragrance assailed his nostrils. At the same time, a warm sensation spread through his entire body.

It was Her Lady Queen. At that moment, that exceptionally beautiful woman had actually thrown herself into Chu Feng’s bosom, and was hugging him tightly.

However, at the moment when Chu Feng revealed an

incomparably overjoyed smile and was about to even drool, Her Lady Queen suddenly stopped hugging him.

At that moment, Her Lady Queen placed her hands behind her back and raised her head to look to Chu Feng. Her eyes were slightly narrowed into two crescents. It was truly charming.

“Although you haven’t listened to this Queen’s words, it remains that you’ve done so for this Queen’s sake.”

“Consider that hug to be the reward that this Queen will bestow upon you.”

After saying those words, Her Lady Queen started to hop gracefully toward the world spirit gate, entering it.

“That Asura World Spirit of yours is truly charming. It’s no wonder that you’re head over heels in love with her,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“My Eggy is indeed very charming,” Chu Feng was immeasurably pleased. However, his expression suddenly changed. He looked to Young Master Li Ming with a mischievous gaze and said, “Strange, you rarely ever praise others. Why would you be praising my Eggy? You couldn’t possibly have fallen for her, right?”

“I am not interested in women,” Young Master Li Ming spoke coldly.

“Then are you interested in me?” Chu Feng revealed a mischievous smile.

Young Master Li Ming gave Chu Feng a side-eye. She said, “I am less interested in men.”

After saying those words, Young Master Li Ming continued to set up a spirit formation.

It turned out that whilst Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were in closed-door training, Young Master Li Ming had been setting up a spirit formation.

Furthermore, at that moment, this spirit formation had already taken an elementary form.

“This spirit formation!!!”

When Chu Feng saw the spirit formation Young Master Li Ming was setting up, surprise filled Chu Feng’s eyes.

The spirit formation that Young Master Li Ming was setting up was something that Chu Feng knew of too. It was the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation that he had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong’s inheritance.

“Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, you actually also know that spirit formation?” Chu Feng asked in surprise.

“Could it be that you know it too?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

“If you know it, then come help me out. It’s as you said, even though the spirit formation sealing off the entrance has a time limit, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan have most definitely dispatched their experts to guard the entrance.”

“If we wish to leave, we must use this spirit formation,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Indeed,” Chu Feng nodded. As he spoke, he arrived before the spirit formation and unleashed his own Snake Mark Immortal-cloak spirit power to assist Young Master Li Ming in setting up the grand spirit formation.

Back then, Chu Feng had joined hands with Wang Qiang to set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation so as to infiltrate into the Kong Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area.

That spirit formation was actually very difficult to set up, and would take a lot of time.

However, at that time, Chu Feng and Wang Qiang who were only Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists managed to

successfully set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

And now, both Chu Feng and Young Master Li Ming were Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. If the two of them were to join hands, the speed at which the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation would be completed would be several times faster.

“Li Ming, there should be more than a single type of entrance to that Sacred Heavenly Temple, right?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Indeed, there’s more than a single type. The ones that we used are merely the lowest level ones, the True Immortal-level Sacred Temple Beads.”

“Above that is the Heavenly Immortal level, Martial Immortal level, Exalted level and even higher level Sacred Temple Beads.”

“Different level Sacred Temple Beads correspond to different entrances. The treasures that one will obtain from those different entrances will also be completely different,” Young Master Li Ming explained.

“Sure enough. That Sacred Heavenly Temple is truly the greatest remnant in the entire Outer World,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

Remnants and treasures were things that gave off an irresistible sense of enticement for martial cultivators. This was even more so for the Sacred Heavenly Temple that was deemed to be the number one remnant in the entire Outer World.

After Chu Feng had personally experienced the mystique of the Sacred Heavenly Temple, he was unable to forget about it.

He really wanted to experience it for a second and a third time. In fact, it could be said that he wanted to experience every nook and cranny of the Sacred Heavenly Temple and obtain all the treasures inside.

Greed, it was something that everyone possessed. Chu Feng also possessed it.

However, if one was able to assess one's capabilities and act accordingly, if one was able to put forth effort for the sake of obtaining what one wanted, then it would not be greed, but rather aspiring spirit.

“The Sacred Temple Beads are very precious items. They are things that all the various powers will disregard all prices to fight over.”

“If a single precious treasure will be able to bring forth an enormous bloodbath in the martial cultivation world, then the Sacred Temple Beads that are able to open a gate to the Heavenly Sacred Temple could be said to be the treasures that create the greatest amount and the most bitter bloodbaths in the entire Outer World.”

“Furthermore, I must remind you that the True Immortal-level Sacred Temple Beads that you and I used are the lowest level Sacred Temple Beads. They are also the only ones that do not possess restrictions upon one's cultivation.”

“However, the rest of them, like the Heavenly Immortal-level and the Martial Immortal-level Sacred Temple Beads, all possess restrictions upon one's cultivation. Unless you have reached the cultivation that they require, you will simply not be able to open those gate to the Sacred Heavenly Temple even if you are to put the locking bead and opening bead together on your palm.”

“As for the Sacred Temple Beads, they possess a special characteristic. That is, they will only allow the person that manages to put the locking bead and the opening bead together on their palm to enter upon the Sacred Heavenly Temple. Thus... you will not be able to have others open the gate to the Sacred Heavenly Temple on your behalf so that you can enter the Sacred Heavenly Temple afterwards,” Young Master Li Ming said.

“Hearing what you said, I feel that Sacred Heavenly Temple to be even more miraculous,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“The Sacred Heavenly Temple is indeed very miraculous,” Young Master Li Ming expressed her agreement.

At the same time Chu Feng was helping Young Master Li Ming set up the spirit formation, he asked curiously, “Oh, that’s right, Li Ming, there is something that I wanted to ask you. Exactly what is your name?”

“Why do you ask that?” Young Master Li Ming asked.

“Intuition. I have a feeling that Li Ming is not your actual name. While it is fine that you do not wish to tell me your origins, are you able to tell me your actual name?” Chu Feng asked.

Young Master Li Ming did not answer Chu Feng’s question. Instead, she focused on setting up the spirit formation.

“It’s fine if you don’t want to tell me,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he continued to focus on setting up the spirit formation.

Right at that moment, Young Master Li Ming slowly opened her mouth and said three words, “Li Yue’er.”

“Mn?” Chu Feng was startled. He was feeling a bit of disbelief at the fact that Young Master Li Ming actually told him her actual name.

“I said that my name is Li Yue’er,” Young Master Li Ming repeated herself.

“Great name. It is much better sounding than Li Ming,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

“I won’t allow you to say that,” However, Young Master Li Ming revealed an angry look at Chu Feng’s joking comment.

Not only did she stop setting up the spirit formation, but she also looked at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with anger.

It was as if Chu Feng had infringed upon her taboo.

“I do not know what you’ve experienced. However, I really did not say that sentence with ill intentions,” Chu Feng explained.

Chu Feng had originally only thought that Li Yue’er had only chosen to name herself Li Ming to conceal her identity, that the name Li Ming was just a random name.

However, judging from things now, Chu Feng discovered that he was mistaken. To Li Yue’er, the name Li Ming seemed to hold special significance.

Otherwise, Li Yue’er would not have such an intense reaction from Chu Feng saying that the name Li Ming didn’t sound good.

Li Yue’er did not continue to pay attention to Chu Feng. She returned to the spirit formation.

Then, Li Yue’er grew completely silent. No matter how Chu Feng tried to talk to her, she would not answer him.

Even when Chu Feng tried to deliberately make her laugh, she would not reveal the slightest change in expression.

## Chapter 2549 - Zi Xunyi

---

“This girl is truly an ice beauty. She is even colder than that Tantai Xue,” Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile.

She had said those words deliberately to tease Chu Feng. After all, it was Chu Feng’s one joking comment that had caused Li Yue’er to become completely silent.

“Generally, those that are cold will all have gone through extraordinary experiences. Likely, it is also the case with her,” Chu Feng said.

“Perhaps. However, although she’s cold, her name is quite sweet-sounding.”

“Li Yue’er, I am fond of that name,” Her Lady Queen said.

Afterwards, Chu Feng no longer tried to continue to invite a snub and stopped trying to speak to Li Yue’er.

When he felt bored, Chu Feng started to speak to Her Lady Queen.

As for Her Lady Queen, perhaps it was because her cultivation had reached a breakthrough to rank nine Martial Ancestor, but her mood was very good.

As he chatted with Her Lady Queen, who was in a very good mood, Chu Feng’s mood also improved.

He felt as if he had forgotten about Li Yue’er ignoring him, forgotten about all the unpleasanties.

Time passed rapidly. Soon, the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation was completed.

However, Chu Feng felt that they had not spent a long time to finish it.

Of course, Chu Feng was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist now. Furthermore, he was setting up the spirit formation



together with Li Yue'er. As such, the speed at which they completed the spirit formation would naturally be much faster than when he did it with Wang Qiang back then.

That said, it remained that setting up a spirit formation was a tasking effort. The fact that Chu Feng was chatting with Her Lady Queen had most definitely contributed to why Chu Feng was able to remain so relaxed after setting up the spirit formation.

“Judging from the time, the grand sealing formation should have stopped its activation by now. We can leave now,” Li Yue'er finally spoke again.

As she spoke, she gave Chu Feng a bead created from the completed spirit formation.

It was the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. Like last time, only two spirit formation beads were formed from the completed spirit formation. Upon using them, they would be able allow two people to conceal themselves.

Even True Immortals would not be able to discover them.

“You can leave first. I still have something that I must take care of,” Chu Feng said to Li Yue'er.

“I would have nearly forgotten if you didn't mention it. Why did you come to this Demon Elimination Cave?” Li Yue'er asked.

“I have come to find a person,” Chu Feng said.

“Who?” Li Yue'er asked.

“Zi Xunyi. Have you heard of her?” Chu Feng asked.

“It's her?” Li Yue'er revealed a surprised expression.

“Seems like you've heard of her,” Chu Feng smiled faintly.

“Mn, I know of her. Why are you finding her?” Li Yue'er asked.

“I am finding her to request her assistance in one thing. Do you know whether or not she's still in the Demon Elimination Cave?”

Chu Feng asked.

“She is. Merely, there is one thing that I must tell you,” Li Yue’er said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Zi Xunyi and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan are accomplices,” Li Yue’er said.

“Accomplices?” Chu Feng’s expression changed.

Evidently, he had already offended the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan earlier.

He did not merely drive out the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

He had also used one of the two Sacred Temple Beads that Li Yue’er had stolen from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan.

Although it might not have been intentional, it remained that Chu Feng had enjoyed the stolen goods together with Li Yue’er. The two of them were already accomplices.

Thus, it could be said that he had already become the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s enemy.

“Are you still planning to find her now?” Li Yue’er asked.

“I have no other choice. I must go and find her. I hope that Zi Xunyi is able to consider old affections and spare me on behalf of that individual,” Chu Feng said in a slightly helpless manner.

He could only entrust his life and death to the old affections between Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao.

“Since that’s the case, I’ll accompany you,” Li Yue’er said.

Chu Feng’s expression changed upon hearing those words. He hurriedly opened his mouth to speak against it.

After all, it was undetermined whether or not he would be able to survive the journey. All of it would depend on how deep the friendship between Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao was.

If it was deep, he could survive.

If it was shallow, he would die.

It could be said that it was a gamble, a gamble with one's life.

Chu Feng did not wish for Li Yue'er to undergo such a gamble together with him.

"You don't have to advise me against it. No one will be able to change what I've decided."

"You also do not have to worry for me. My status is a bit special. Even if the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan is to truly capture me, they will absolutely not dare to do anything to me."

As Li Yue'er said those words, she revealed a confident, proud and conceited expression.

"It would appear that what this girl says is true. Since she is determined to protect you, you should accept her kind intentions and allow her to accompany you," Her Lady Queen said.

Her Lady Queen had managed to tell that Li Yue'er wanted to accompany Chu Feng to protect him. After all, her background was extremely powerful, so powerful that the Bloodscale Monstrous Beasts would not dare to do anything to her. Thus, with her accompanying Chu Feng, even if that Zi Xunyi was to ignore her old affections with Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng would still be able to live.

"I suspect that I will not be able to persuade you against it. In that case, let's go together," Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er both stepped onto the path to the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave.

On their way there, Chu Feng came to find out from Li Yue'er that the depths of the Demon Elimination Cave was the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters.

In order to prevent accidents from happening, Chu Feng and Li

Yue'er used their Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation beads upon approaching the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters.

Chu Feng knew that if they were discovered by the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, they would definitely be killed.

Thus, the strategy that they had in mind was very simple. They were going to use the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation to infiltrate the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters.

Chu Feng planned to find Zi Xunyi directly and inform her of the situation at hand. He hoped that Zi Xunyi would take Ying Mingchao into consideration and spare him and Li Yue'er. Most importantly, he hoped that Zi Xunyi would agree to go and help Ying Mingchao.

Upon infiltrating the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters, Chu Feng uttered in a surprised manner, "This... are they having a wedding? With such a great disposition of forces, it seems that someone important in the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan is going to get married."

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters was decorated with lanterns and colored banners. It was extremely lively. It was clear that someone important was getting married.

"Isn't it that Zi Xunyi that you wanted to find?" Li Yue'er said.

"Ah? It's actually Zi Xunyi that's getting married?" Chu Feng was incomparably shocked.

"Seems like you know nothing about that Zi Xunyi," Li Yue'er said.

"Could it be that you know a lot about her?" Chu Feng was very surprised. Judging from Li Yue'er's reaction, it was clear that she knew about Zi Xunyi.

Merely, Chu Feng was very curious. This girl was clearly not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus,

how could she know so much?

It was one thing to know about Zhan Haichuan. After all, he was a grand character, an era's legend famous throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, someone that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about.

However, that Li Yue'er actually knew about Zi Xunyi too. Furthermore, it seemed like she also knew some things regarding Zi Xunyi.

"Seems like I will have to explain the situation first before entering."

After Li Yue'er finished saying those words, she began to narrate the things regarding Zi Xunyi to Chu Feng.

Zi Xunyi was not from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. She was a human.

The reason why she was in the Demon Elimination Cave was because she managed to have a chance encounter with the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

When Zi Xunyi was young, she was saved by an expert from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. As for that expert, it was the former Clan Chief of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan.

Seeing that Zi Xunyi had a pitiful life, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's former Clan Chief decided to bring her back into the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. Not only did he take her in, but he also taught her martial cultivation.

Coincidentally, that Zi Xunyi was actually a genius martial cultivator. Because of that, she was highly regarded by the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's former Clan Chief.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that the son of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's former Clan Chief, that is the current Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, was Zi Xunyi's martial sibling.

Back then, the two of them had learned martial cultivation together. This produced a very deep relationship for the two of them. The current Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had also fallen deeply in love with the human woman.

Unfortunately, after the matter was known by the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's former Clan Chief, he utterly opposed it.

# Chapter 2550 - To Fish A Needle From The Sea

---

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's former Clan Chief did not refuse because he disliked Zi Xunyi.

Instead, it was because the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's bloodline could not be allowed to become impure. Because of that, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were only allowed to integrate with fellow Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

This was especially true for his son. He had been nurtured as the successor to the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan from the very beginning.

As such, he would naturally not permit his son to be with a human. As such, he would not allow his son to be with Zi Xunyi.

Even though he was very fond of Zi Xunyi and had nurtured her as his own daughter, he still would not allow such a thing to happen.

Because of that, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's current Clan Chief concealed his love for Zi Xunyi in the depths of his heart.

However, it was actually an open secret that everyone knew about. Even the wife of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief knew that her husband was actually deeply in love with Zi Xunyi.

In fact, Zi Xunyi was the only woman that the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief truly loved.

However, due to his father's prohibition, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had been unable to marry Zi Xunyi the entire time.

"In that case, why would the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief be marrying Zi Xunyi now?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"That's because his father just passed away not long ago.

Furthermore, rumor has it that the former Clan Chief finally agreed to have him marry Zi Xunyi before his death.”

“Thus, not long after the funeral for the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s former Clan Chief was held, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief, who had been impatient to marry Zi Xunyi the entire time, immediately started to make preparations for this marriage ceremony. As for us, we have arrived at quite a coincidental time... we actually managed to come right at the time of the marriage ceremony,” Li Yue’er said.

“Oh, that’s right, exactly who asked you to come find Zi Xunyi? According to my knowledge, it seems that Zi Xunyi has never left this Demon Elimination Cave,” Li Yue’er asked curiously.

She already knew that Chu Feng had come here not because of himself, but rather because someone asked him to find Zi Xunyi.

“Since you know Zi Xunyi, you must also know Ying Mingchao, right?” Chu Feng said.

“I have naturally heard of Ying Mingchao. He was the Hero City’s City Master, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s strongest genius a thousand years ago. He was the person with the greatest opportunity to rule over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“But, didn’t that Ying Mingchao die already?”

“He was too impatient to rule over the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Because of that, he needed to eliminate the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans first.”

“However, he was overly conceited, and tried to eliminate the two Heavenly Clans by himself.”

“In the end, due to his conceit, he suffered a miserable defeat and was eliminated by the joint efforts of the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans.”



“Not long after Ying Mingchao died, the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clan jointly attacked and eliminated his Hero City too,” Li Yue’er said.

“Do you think that is the truth?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do not know whether or not that is true. After all, it is merely a rumor. That said, why are you asking about Ying Mingchao?” Li Yue’er asked curiously.

Li Yue’er was not a talkative person. However, it seemed like she was very interested about others’ business.

Otherwise, she would not know so much about the story of Ying Mingchao.

“The person who asked me to find Zi Xunyi was Ying Mingchao,” Chu Feng said.

“Ying Mingchao? He’s still alive?” Li Yue’er was very surprised. She said, “He is someone capable of moving the winds and clouds in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Since he’s alive, what sort of situation is he in? Was he imprisoned, or was his cultivation crippled? Why did he not reveal himself to take revenge even though he was alive?” Li Yue’er asked curiously.

She was very smart. She knew that there must be a reason for Ying Mingchao to not reveal himself and take revenge when he was still alive.

“He is currently trapped in the Kong Heavenly Clan. Only Zi Xunyi is capable of saving him,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you certain? I’ve never heard that Ying Mingchao had any sort of relationship with Zi Xunyi,” Li Yue’er said.

“You’re saying that they do not know one another?” Chu Feng was very surprised.

“I’ve never heard of the two of them knowing one another,” Li

Yue'er said in a determined manner.

Hearing what Li Yue'er said, Eggy's expression changed. She said, "Chu Feng, that Ying Mingchao couldn't possibly be deliberately lying to you so as to put you into danger, right?"

"There's no reason for him to lie to me," Chu Feng said.

"If what Ying Mingchao said is true, then there is only one sort of explanation for that. That is, only Zi Xunyi and him knew about their relationship," Eggy said.

"No matter what, since we're already here, we cannot shrink back," Chu Feng said.

"If we are to leave now, we will still be able to make it," Li Yue'er said to Chu Feng. She felt that Chu Feng might have been deceived.

At the very least, according to the information that she knew, there was no relationship between Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

She felt that it was simply nonsense, something absolutely impossible, for Yin Mingchao to ask for Zi Xunyi to save him.

Thus, instead of continuing to find to find Zi Xunyi, it was better to leave.

"I must give it a try," Chu Feng said.

"There's a grand formation in this place. My observation methods are ineffective here. What about yours?" Li Yue'er asked.

Chu Feng shook his head. A very powerful spirit formation was placed around the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters. Even Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were unable to see through the buildings here.

Li Yue'er handed Chu Feng a communication talisman, and said, "The Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formations have a time limit. If you insist on finding Zi Xunyi, the two of us must move quickly."

"Take this. If I am to find Zi Xunyi, I will notify you."

“If you are to find Zi Xunyi, you can pinch this communication talisman and I will immediately withdraw from here.”

Then, she entered the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters.

Chu Feng followed into the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters after her.

Since observation methods using world spirit techniques were useless, they could only use the fastest speed to search for Zi Xunyi throughout the entire Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s territory.

Furthermore, Chu Feng must try to chat with Zi Xunyi regarding this matter before the wedding ceremony started.

Thus... this was a very difficult task.

Fortunately, both Chu Feng and Li Yue’er were Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. Thus, the time limit for the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation that they set up was much longer than the one that Chu Feng had set up with Wang Qiang in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

However, even with that being the case, the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation still had a time limit. Furthermore, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters was very big.

Thus, Chu Feng and Li Yu’er searched carefully and rapidly.

“This is too hard. This is simply trying to fish a needle from the sea.” [1. Fish a needle from the sea is the chinese equivalent of finding a needle in a haystack.]

After searching for a while with no results, Her Lady Queen felt desperate.

What Her Lady Queen said was not false. The reason for that was because the entire Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters was covered with spirit formations.

Thus, it was not only Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes, but his world spirit techniques and other observation methods were also all

ineffective. He and Li Yue'er must search through the buildings one by one in order to find Zi Xunyi.

However, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan possessed countless buildings. Furthermore, it was unknown whether or not they had forbidden areas.

Thus, it would truly be very difficult for them to find Zi Xunyi. It could even be said that the chances of them finding her were extremely slim.

"Chu Feng, should we capture someone and interrogate them?" Her Lady Queen suggested.

"No, I've already used the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. If I am to capture someone to interrogate them, I would easily expose myself," Chu Feng said.

"Then what are we to do? If we continue to search like this, it will be truly difficult to find Zi Xunyi," Her Lady Queen said.

"If there's no other option, we will have to use the final resort," Chu Feng said.

"What final resort?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"If we cannot find Zi Xunyi, then we can only wait for her to show herself," Chu Feng said.

"Are you really planning to do that? That would be truly dangerous," Her Lady Queen's heart tightened upon hearing what Chu Feng said. She revealed a worried expression.

She understood what Chu Feng planned to do. Chu Feng did not plan to leave.

If they were truly unable to find Zi Xunyi, he planned to wait till the marriage ceremony officially started, wait till Zi Xunyi showed herself.

However, at that time, everyone from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan would be present. Even the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan

Chief would be present.

If Chu Feng were to reveal himself at that time, he would truly be stranding in confrontation with the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan. At that time, he would have no way of escape.

It would truly be a gamble with his life!!!

“Regardless, I cannot journey here in vain. Even if it is a gamble, I must gamble this once,” Chu Feng said.

“You stubborn fellow. I know for sure that my advice will be useless.”

“Right now, I only hope that girl Li Yue’er’s background is truly capable of scaring away the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan.”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen did not have any hope for Chu Feng being able to find Zi Xunyi. The reason for that was because the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters was simply too large.

To find Zi Xunyi like this, and to find her before the marriage ceremony, was simply too difficult.

Unless they were extremely lucky, it would simply be impossible to find Zi Xunyi.

Thus, Her Lady Queen placed her hopes onto Li Yue’er.

If Li Yue’er’s background was truly capable of scaring away the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, then regardless of what sort of attitude Zi Xunyi might have, Chu Feng would be able to escape unscathed.

Otherwise, Her Lady Queen felt that everything would lead to disaster today.

After all, according to Li Yue’er, there wasn’t any relationship between Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao.

Thus, with the information they had at hand, it would appear that they had a higher chance of losing this gamble.

“That’s right, it’s him, it’s this bastard that stole the wedding gift Lord Clan Chief had prepared for Lady Zi.”

“Beat this bastard to death. Dismember his body into ten thousand pieces! Skin him alive and pull out his tendons!”

“Make him suffer a fate worse than death! Make him pay!”

.....

Suddenly, furious shouts could be heard nonstop.

The direction where the shouts were heard was the location where the wedding ceremony would be held.

Most importantly, upon hearing those shouts, Chu Feng’s heart tightened.

Stole from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan?

Apart from Li Yue’er, Chu Feng could not think of a second person who had done that.

Li Yue’er had been captured?

# Chapter 2551 - The Appearance Of Chu Feng

---

“Li Yue’er was captured?”

Chu Feng realized that the situation was bad, and immediately started to observe his body.

Chu Feng had originally thought that Li Yue’er was captured because the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation had lost its effectiveness.

However, his Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation was clearly still active.

He felt that the effective time for Li Yue’er’s Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation should be the same as his. Since his was still present, Li Yue’er’s Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation should still be effective too.

“It shouldn’t be Li Yue’er, right?” Her Lady Queen said.

“I feel like it’s her. Regardless, I must go have a look.”

Chu Feng’s body shifted. He started to rush toward the plaza where the wedding was to be held.

Upon arriving at the plaza, Chu Feng discovered that a vast crowd was already gathered at the vast plaza. There were tens of thousands of Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen present.

They all had angry expressions on their faces. Their eyes emitted unforgiving gazes as they stared at the center of the plaza.

As for Li Yue’er, she was at the center of the plaza. The person they were staring at was Li Yue’er.

“She really was captured. How did this happen?”

“Could it be that someone managed to see through her Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation?”

Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression. At that moment, Li

Yue'er was present before the crowd. Her Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation was no longer in effect.

However, it was clearly still within the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation's time limit. This meant that it was very possible that someone had managed to see through her Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

However, the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation was such a powerful spirit formation. Who could possibly be able to see through it?

This was precisely the reason why Chu Feng was so astonished.

That said, what was most important right now was the fact that there were two old men standing on either side of Li Yue'er.

Although those two individuals were both white-haired and filled with wrinkles, they were very tall and possessed robust builds.

Those two individuals were both Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen. At that moment, one left and one right, the two of them had grabbed onto Li Yue'er's arms and shoulders and forced her to kneel on the ground.

The auras emitted by those two old men had filled the entire region. They were extremely powerful.

Their auras had completely surpassed those of Martial Ancestors.

True Immortals. The two of them were True Immortals. They were two True Immortal-level experts.

Furthermore, they were not the only True Immortals present. At the highest location of the plaza was a gorgeous viewing platform. There was another True Immortal-level expert there.

Furthermore, the aura of that individual was much more robust than the two True Immortals holding down Li Yue'er.

Rank two True Immortal. That individual was a rank two True Immortal.



Furthermore, judging from his high position and majestic airs, he should be the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's current Clan Chief.

“This is a thorny problem now. The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief is actually a rank two True Immortal.”

Her Lady Queen was worried. After all, rank two True Immortal could be said to be the apex level of cultivation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Event the four tier one powers only had rank two True Immortals as their leaders.

In other words, facing the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan would be equivalent to facing one of the four tier one powers.

“Is that Zi Xunyi?”

Compared to the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, Chu Feng cast his gaze to another individual on the viewing platform.

That individual was a human, a human woman. However... she was not a beautifully flowery young woman.

Instead, her head was covered in white hair, her face was filled with wrinkles and age spots covered her entire body. She was an elderly lady who had been changed beyond recognition by her age.

However, that old lady was wearing a phoenix crown with red clouded wedding clothes.

She was the woman that the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief wanted to marry.

As such, she was most definitely Zi Xunyi.

“Insolent thief, not only did you steal our Clan Chief's treasures, but you even dared to intrude upon Lady Zi Xunyi's sleeping chambers. Exactly what is your purpose?”

A True Immortal that was holding down Li Yue'er asked her with incomparable fury.

“Humph.”

However, Li Yue'er did not answer him. Instead, she snorted at him disdainfully. Then, she revealed a cold smile.

“You dare smile?!” That True Immortal was extremely furious. Then, a resounding slap landed on Li Yue'er's face.

The powerful slap caused one of Li Yue'er's cheeks to swell. Blood flowed nonstop from her cheek and the corner of her mouth.

However, Li Yue'er did not seem to have the slightest intention of giving in. Furthermore, she did not utter a single word. She continued to have a disdainful expression on her face.

“What is going on with that girl? Didn't she say that her background is sufficient to scare the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan?” Her Lady Queen had a confused expression.

Logically, Li Yue'er should be announcing her backing right now. Only by doing so would she be able to prevent the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan from torturing her.

However, not only did she not announce her power, but she even revealed such a disdainful expression. She was simply courting death here.

“It seems that she does not plan to announce her background. She never planned to rely on the power behind her from the very beginning.”

“She only said those words because she wanted me to agree to have her accompany me,” Chu Feng said.

“Why would this girl do that? After all, you are neither friends nor acquaintances with her,” Her Lady Queen revealed a confused expression.

“I also do not know why. Perhaps she thinks that a source energy gem and a martial comprehension bamboo slip are still insufficient to be even with me,” Chu Feng guessed.

By ‘even,’ Chu Feng naturally meant when he saved Li Yue’er from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

It was because of that one rescue that Li Yue’er had a complete change in attitude toward Chu Feng.

Li Yue’er felt that she owed Chu Feng for her life. Even the extremely precious source energy gemstone and martial comprehension bamboo slip would not be sufficient to repay him for saving her.

That was why she was insistent on accompany Chu Feng on this dangerous journey.

At that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief asked, “Is this the thief that stole my Golden Gate Black Cloud Beads?”

“Lord Clan Chief, it is him,” Some Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen voiced in unison.

“Where are my Golden Gate Black Cloud Beads?” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief asked Li Yue’er.

“Humph,” Li Yue’er smiled with contempt at that question. After that, she spoke disdainfully, “Ignorant fool, what Golden Gate Black Cloud Beads? Those are clearly the Sacred Temple Bead’s locking beads.”

“Insolent thief!”

“You dare speak rudely toward our Lord Clan Chief?! You are simply courting death!”

Hearing what Li Yue’er said, the two True Immortals standing on either side of Li Yue’er were immediately enraged. As they spoke, they planned to attack her again.

“Wait,” However, right at that moment, that Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief spoke to stop them.

Then, he asked, “You have already stolen my treasures.

Originally, you should have made your getaway. Why did you deliberately return and infiltrate Xunyi's sleeping chambers? I believe your intention was not merely to steal treasures, right?"

"Speak, exactly what is your intention? Who sent you here?"

As he spoke, his oppressive might swept forth aggressively. That powerful oppressive might was sufficient to make common folk piss themselves in terror.

Not only would they immediately speak the truth, they would also start kowtowing and begging for forgiveness, begging to have their lives spared.

"Humph," However, faced with that oppressive might, Li Yue'er merely snorted and did not answer.

"Did you really think that I do not dare kill you?" The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief narrowed his eyebrows. His expression sunk.

However, at that time, Li Yue'er felt disinclined to even snort back.

Instead, she merely revealed an indifferent expression. This caused the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen to all gnash their teeth in enormous rage.

The reason for that was because Li Yue'er's actions could be said to be completely disregarding their Bloodscale Monstrous Clan.

"Kill her! Dismember her into ten thousand pieces!!!"

Furious shouts began to be heard from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen. Their voices were so resounding that it was like thunder exploding in the sky.

However, Li Yue'er's expression remained unchanged the entire time. She continued to have a disdainful expression on her face.

It was unknown whether she was truly unafraid of death, or whether she still possessed the ability to save herself.

“Very well. If you want to die, I will help you succeed.”

“Merely, I will not let you die a delightful death.”

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief revealed his murderous desire. He was truly planning to kill Li Yue’er.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, “Stop!!!”

# Chapter 2552 - Who Dares Touch Him?!

---

“Who is it?”

The words that were suddenly spoken caused the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen to all cast their alerted gazes toward the direction of the sound.

They all subconsciously felt that it was very possible that Li Yue'er's accomplice had arrived.

“Where is the person who spoke?”

However, when the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen all turned their gazes toward the direction of the sound, they all revealed stunned and bewildered expressions.

The reason for that was because they were looking in Chu Feng's direction, but were unable to see Chu Feng at all.

At that moment, they all came to suspect whether or not they might have misheard things.

They began to look everywhere. It was only then that they discovered that everyone else was doing the same sort of thing.

At that moment, they grew even more bewildered.

After all, while it was possible for a single person to mishear things, it would be impossible for all of them to mishear things.

“Buzz~~~”

At that moment, Chu Feng removed the effect of the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation of his own accord and revealed himself to the crowd.

At that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen all revealed stunned expressions. Evidently, they had not expected Chu Feng to reveal himself.

Furthermore, they did not expect that the person who had the

courage to reveal themselves at such a time would be a member of the younger generation.

Right at the moment when the crowd was stunned, Chu Feng leapt past the crowd before him and landed at the center of the plaza before Li Yue'er.

“Clank~~~”

At the same time, a crimson sword also appeared in Chu Feng's hand.

Chu Feng was unable to be certain as to whether or not Zi Xunyi would help him. If Zi Xunyi were to not help him at a time like this, he could only rely on the Evil God Sword's power for protection.

After all, what he was facing at that moment, were two rank one True Immortals and a rank two True Immortal.

As for the Evil God Sword, it seemed to have sensed the fact that Chu Feng needed its strength and was trembling nonstop.

It was not trembling from fear. Rather, it was trembling from excitement. It was excited that it was finally able to unleash its power again, that it was finally able to rule over the world again, finally able to have the people of the world realize how frightening it was again.

That said, although the Evil God Sword was very powerful, only Chu Feng was able to sense its surging powers before its power was actually released.

Thus, at that moment, not a single person from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan realized that the Incomplete Imperial Armament Chu Feng held in his hand would be the greatest threat to them.

They were all looking at Chu Feng with confused expressions on their faces. It was as if they were looking at a clown.

The reason for that was because they did not understand why the

fellow before their eyes would take out an Incomplete Imperial Armament in such an aggressive and overbearing manner.

Logically, to have the cultivation of a rank nine Martial Ancestor at such a young age was already something very frightening. He could be said to be an absolute genius. As such, there shouldn't be a reason for him to be so poor that he could not even afford an Ancestral Armament, no?

Even if he didn't have an Ancestral Armament, he should most definitely possess an Incomplete Ancestral Armament or an Imperial Armament.

The crowd were truly confused by Chu Feng's sudden reveal of an Incomplete Imperial Armament and arrogant display.

At that moment, many people felt that the brat before them might be suffering from some mental deficiency.

"Chu Feng, seems like you're being underestimated again. Look at the expressions of those people, they must all be thinking that you're mentally retarded, no?"

"If possible, I truly hope for you to use that Evil God Sword and show them exactly what sort of weapon that Incomplete Imperial Armament is," Her Lady Queen said with a beaming smile.

She felt the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen to be too ignorant.

Of course, she was merely joking with her words. As Her Lady Queen knew very well how powerful the Evil God Sword was, she naturally did not wish for Chu Feng to use it.

As for Chu Feng, he did not start attacking right away either. He also did not bother to pay attention to the crowd. Instead, he turned his gaze to the viewing platform and looked to Zi Xunyi.

He asked, "Do you know Ying Mingchao?"

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were all confused by Chu Feng's words.



However, the expressions of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief and Zi Xunyi changed enormously. They both revealed very complicated expressions.

This was especially true for the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. He turned his complicated gaze to Zi Xunyi.

“There's hope, seems like they know one another.”

Her Lady Queen was delighted to see this reaction. The reason for that was because their reaction most likely meant that Zi Xunyi knew Ying Mingchao.

“It is Ying Mingchao who asked me to come here. He is currently trapped somewhere, and wanted to request that you go and save him,” Chu Feng added.

Right after Chu Feng said those words, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief shouted, “Kill them!”

At the moment he shouted that order, the two True Immortals standing to either side of Li Yue'er immediately unleashed overwhelming killing intent.

It was not only those two that let out overwhelming killing intent; even the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief himself let out overwhelming killing intent.

During that moment of crisis, how could Chu Feng dare hesitate anymore? He tightly held the Evil God Sword and unleashed his martial power. He was planning to unleash the power of the Evil God Sword.

“I shall see who dares touch him!!!”

Right at that moment, a shout was heard.

At the moment that voice was heard, a powerful oppressive might also swept forth.

Not only did that oppressive might block the oppressive might unleashed by the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, but it

also knocked the two True Immortals holding Li Yue'er down several meters away and into the crowd.

It was Zi Xunyi. That shout was also let out by Zi Xunyi.

Zi Xunyi was actually also a rank two True Immortal.

“Rank two True Immortal, this Zi Xunyi is actually a rank two True Immortal. We're saved. She most definitely knows Ying Mingchao.”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen was wild with joy.

Even Chu Feng finally heaved a sigh of relief.

He had nearly unleashed his Evil God Sword.

Even he himself had no idea what would happen if he were to unleash the Evil God Sword this time around.

However, it would appear now that he did not have to use the Evil God Sword. Evidently, Zi Xunyi knew Ying Mingchao.

“Xunyi, don't trust him. I've already ordered my men to investigate, Ying Mingchao has really died,” Seeing that, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief hurriedly explained to Zi Xunyi.

However, Zi Xunyi completely ignored the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. Instead, her body shifted, and she flew down from the viewing platform, slowly descending beside Chu Feng.

At that moment, Zi Xunyi revealed an extremely sharp gaze from her aged eyes.

It was like two sharp blades that pierced into Chu Feng's life.

“You said Ying Mingchao told you to come here?” Zi Xunyi asked coldly.

“It is precisely Senior Ying Mingchao who requested for me to come here,” Faced with this sort of situation, Chu Feng was neither servile nor overbearing.

“He’s still alive?” Zi Xunyi asked again.

“He needs your help right now,” Chu Feng said.

“If you dare deceive me, I will definitely make you suffer a life more miserable than death,” When Zi Xunyi said those words, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel her killing intent.

She was not joking around. If Chu Feng really deceived her, she would definitely not spare Chu Feng.

“There is no reason for me to come into the Demon Elimination Cave and brave its dangers to find you only to deceive you,” Chu Feng said.

“Then tell me, where is he right now?” Zi Xunyi asked.

“He was plotted against by the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan. At that time, he had no choice but to escape into the Kong Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area, the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.”

“The Grief Calamity Mountain Range is filled with slaughtering formations. Senior Ying Mingchao ended up falling into one of the slaughtering formations. For the sake of self-preservation, he ended up using his taboo technique. Although he managed to escape death with his taboo technique, he ended up being trapped in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Even now, he is unable to escape.”

“That said, the Kong Heavenly Clan has no idea that he is still alive.”

“Merely, as he was trapped by his taboo technique, he has been trapped in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range for the past thousand plus years, unable to move in the slightest.”

“He said that only you can save him,” Chu Feng informed Zi Xunyi of what'd happened.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Zi Xunyi’s expression

changed. Earlier, she was filled with suspicion toward Chu Feng and did not trust him.

However, the suspicion in Zi Xunyi's eyes had now decreased by over half. At least... she now trusted Chu Feng a lot more.

Evidently, something Chu Feng said had changed her attitude.

# Chapter 2553 - Fury Of The Entire Clan

---

“How did you manage to find him?” Zi Xunyi asked.

“I did not know of Senior Ying Mingchao before I ran into him, but I accidentally encountered him after entering the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.”

“If you plan to go save him, you must bring me with you. Only I know how to get to him,” Chu Feng said.

“Let’s go,” As Zi Xunyi spoke, she waved her sleeve, and a layer of overwhelming spirit power was emitted from her body.

Her spirit power directly engulfed Chu Feng and Li Yue’er.

“This spirit power,” At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

At that moment, he realized who had managed to breach Li Yue’er’s Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

It must have been Zi Xunyi. The reason for that was because Zi Xunyi was a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to sense that even though they were all Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, Zi Xunyi’s spirit power was much stronger than their own.

Likely, this Zi Xunyi was only a fine line away from becoming a Dragon Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Her spirit power had reached a very powerful level already.

Zi Xunyi lifted Chu Feng and Li Yue’er with her spirit power. She was protecting them.

She was planning to bring Chu Feng and Li Yue’er away from there.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan

Chief waved his sleeve. Immediately, overwhelming martial power scattered about in all directions like sunshine basking everything. Soon, his martial power completely sealed off the region.

“Do you wish to do as master did and trap me here until I die?” Zi Xunyi cast her cold gaze to the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief.

“I do not plan to trap you here. If you wish to leave, I will allow you to leave.”

“Merely, that brat’s words have no proof at all. Why are you trusting him? What if it’s a trap?”

“Furthermore, even if what that brat says is true and Ying Mingchao is still alive, are you really planning to save him?” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“I must go save him,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Did he not hurt you enough? Why must you act like this?” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“He never hurt me. I am the one who owes him,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Then what about me? What am I to do? Today is our wedding day,” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief grew emotional.

At that moment, the rest of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen also grew emotional.

They finally knew who that Ying Mingchao was. Merely, the existence of that individual made them feel extremely displeased.

“Zhenping, you’ve treated me very well. Merely, I am sorry, I truly do not love you,” After Zi Xunyi said those words, she brought Chu Feng and Li Yue’er and charged toward the martial power sealing off the region.

“Roar~~~”

However, the next moment, a strange roar sounded from the martial power sealing off the region.

At the same time, the golden-bright and dazzling martial power started to change.

Crimson radiance was emitted from the golden martial power. Then, scales began to appear from the crimson radiance.

At this moment, Chu Feng was able to feel that the martial power sealing off this region had become incomparably solid and simply impregnable.

Most importantly, that was a martial power formation, and not a spirit formation.

Thus, when facing something like that, even world spirit techniques would be useless. The only way to breach it would be to use one's martial power.

However, merely by looking at it, one could tell how powerful that martial power formation was.

It was an extremely powerful martial power formation. It would be extremely difficult to break through it.

“Is this the power of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's bloodline?”

Chu Feng guessed in his heart. He felt that this was not an ordinary martial skill, nor was it a secret skill.

Chu Feng felt that this was most likely a technique using the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's bloodline's power. In other words, this was most likely something exclusive to only the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

It was similar to how Heavenly Bloodline possessors possessed the Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and the Lightning Mark.

“What if I refuse to allow you to leave?” said the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. His tone had grown ill-intended.

“That's right, she can't be allowed to leave!”

Right at that moment, two women flew out from the crowd and landed on the viewing platform.

They wore very gorgeous attire. Their cultivations were not weak either; they were both peak Martial Ancestors.

Furthermore, their appearances were very young too. However, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that they were definitely not younger than Zi Xunyi.

Their youthful appearances were merely disguises using special methods. Additionally, they were not human, but two female Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

“Zi Xunyi, you are truly cruel and unscrupulous. How has my husband treated you? Even though your appearance has turned ugly, he still did not turn his back toward you in the slightest. His love for you is several times greater than his love for my son and me. Yet you... you actually still have that Ying Mingchao on your mind after all this time. Do you even have a conscience?” One of the two women pointed at Zi Xunyi and cursed loudly. She was filled with complaint toward Zi Xunyi.

“Husband, it has been over a thousand years now. You’ve shown this Zi Xunyi overwhelming love. Yet, she has been thinking of that Ying Mingchao the entire time. Do you think someone like her is really worth it?” The other woman turned to ask the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief.

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief did not answer. However, his complexion had sunk.

Seeing that the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief did not answer, that woman turned to the rest of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen and declared, “Clansmen of our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, you all have observed how your Lord Clan Chief has treated Zi Xunyi over the years.”

“Yet she has been deeply in love with another man the entire time. Tell me, is all the time and energy your Lord Clan Chief invested in her worth it?”



“No, it is not!!!”

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen shouted in unison. Intense anger was present in their tone when they spoke those words.

“Zi Xunyi, you are nothing more than a wench!”

“You damned bitch!”

“Our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan has treated you so well in vain!”

.....

.....

The next moment, all of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen turned their gazes toward Zi Xunyi and began to curse at her.

All kinds of malicious words were being thrown at Zi Xunyi without the slightest hesitation.

Evidently, they were only respectful toward Zi Xunyi because of their Lord Clan Chief.

Deep in their hearts, they actually felt enormous dislike toward Zi Xunyi. In fact, they deeply hated her.

Their hatred toward Zi Xunyi might be because she was a human.

However, Chu Feng felt that it was more likely because of the fact that their Lord Clan Chief had treated Zi Xunyi with such sincerity and love, yet was unable to obtain sincerity and love from her in return.

Perhaps because she was feeling guilty, Zi Xunyi did not utter a word from the curses of the tens of thousands of Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

“Shut up!!!”

Right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly shouted.

After his shout, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen all grew quiet. No one dared utter another word.

The plaza that was filled with curses grew absolutely silent.

“Xunyi, even if you do not love me, it is fine. It is enough that I love you.”

“Today is the day of our marriage. Is it possible for you to not leave?”

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief forcibly restrained the anger in his heart and spoke to Zi Xunyi with a gentle tone.

“Unless you are to kill me, I must definitely leave here today,” Zi Xunyi replied.

“Kill her! Husband, you must definitely kill her today. This woman is simply unworthy of you to act like this.”

“That’s right. Husband, look carefully... she simply does not have you in her heart at all. No matter how much you’ve put forth on her behalf, it will all be useless.”

“Husband, even if you are able to make her stay, you will not be able to keep her heart. How could you marry a woman like her?”

Those two women started to persuade the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief strenuously with tearful voices. It could be seen that they deeply detested Zi Xunyi.

“Kill her!”

“Kill her!”

“Kill her!”

.....

.....

.....

The next moment, enormously angry shouts began to resonate through the vast plaza, resonate in the vast Demon Elimination Cave. It was as if the words ‘kill her’ were echoing throughout the entire Demon Elimination Cave.

Zi Xunyi's coldness and strong attachment completely ignited the hatred for her in the hearts of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen.

At that moment, practically all Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were shouting those two words - 'kill her.'

# Chapter 2554 - Break All Ties

---

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were no longer capable of tolerating Zi Xunyi.

Their Lord Clan Chief had clearly treated Zi Xunyi very well. Yet, Zi Xunyi deeply loved a human instead.

They all wanted Zi Xunyi to die.

It was as if only Zi Xunyi's death could alleviate the hatred in their hearts.

However, there was a single Bloodscale Monstrous Clansman that did not say anything. He was the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

Although he did not say anything, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was clenching his fists tightly. The veins throughout his entire body were bulging. His appearance was truly frightening.

Most importantly, wave upon wave of oppressive might was surging forth from his body like tornadoes. They were truly frightening.

His eyes were filled with hatred and irreconciliation. If all of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen were feeling pain in their hearts because of Zi Xunyi, then the person feeling the greatest pain would be none other than the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief flipped his wrist.

In an instant, a weapon over ten meters long appeared in his hand.

It was a blade, a crimson blade. That blade was covered in

crimson scales.

That was an Ancestral Armament, a very high quality Ancestral Armament.

“Ahh!!!”

Suddenly, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief let out a roar.

That roar was even more ear-piercing, even more frightening, than roars from ferocious beasts.

At the same time, he roared, he also raised the crimson blade in his hand.

He was planning to attack!!!

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that two purple daggers had appeared in Zi Xunyi’s hands.

Those two purple daggers were two top quality Ancestral Armaments.

Zi Xunyi was not planning to resign herself to death.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief’s blade landed.

However, the direction in which his blade landed was not toward Zi Xunyi. Rather, it was toward the depths of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s headquarters.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, a loud explosion was heard. A palace was destroyed. However, that was the only palace that was destroyed.

“You can go. Don’t return again.”

“From today on, our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan will break all ties with you, Zi Xunyi,” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief said to Zi Xunyi.

It turned out that the palace that the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had destroyed was Zi Xunyi's palace.

"My thanks," Zi Xunyi said those words and then brought Chu Feng and Li Yue'er and flew toward the outside.

Zi Xunyi knew the Demon Elimination Cave like the back of her hand. Furthermore, her cultivation was that of a rank two True Immortal. Going all-out in fleeing, she soon arrived at the exit of the Demon Elimination Cave with Chu Feng and Li Yue'er.

It was at that moment that Chu Feng noticed that there was indeed a large group of Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's elites gathered at the entrance of the Demon Elimination Cave.

Leading them were two True Immortal-level experts.

In other words, apart from Zi Xunyi and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan possessed four other rank one True Immortals.

Their strength was truly powerful.

However, upon seeing Zi Xunyi, they immediately moved aside.

No one dared to obstruct Zi Xunyi. Of course... with their strength, none of them would be able to stop Zi Xunyi.

After leaving the Demon Elimination Cave, Li Yue'er said, "Let me go."

However, Zi Xunyi did not immediately release Li Yue'er. Instead, she looked to Chu Feng.

"You can let her go. She is unrelated to this matter," Chu Feng said.

"Buzz~~~"

After Chu Feng said those words, with a thought, Zi Xunyi created an entrance to her spirit formation.

"With this, we are truly even now," Li Yue'er said those words to

Chu Feng. Then, she started flying toward the distance. In the blink of an eye, she disappeared.

“How deeply does this girl not want to owe me a favor?” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

He noticed that Li Yue’er’s tone was very ice-cold when she said the words ‘we are truly even now.’ It was the same as when she first knew Chu Feng.

However, at the same time, Chu Feng also noticed that Li Yue’er revealed a slightly relaxed expression on her icily arrogant face when she said those words. It was as if she was finally able to lay down a heavy burden.

It could be seen that this girl was truly not fond of owing another a favor.

After Li Yue’er left, Zi Xunyi did not linger. She continued to journey toward the Kong Heavenly Clan with Chu Feng.

On the journey, Zi Xunyi suddenly asked, “You two must have jointly set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, right?”

“That is right, senior,” Chu Feng answered.

“To have this sort of level at such young ages, it would appear that the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm has once again entered a period where talents come forth in large numbers,” Zi Xunyi said with admiration.

“Senior, I am very curious. How did you manage to see through her Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Although Zi Xunyi was a very powerful Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would remain very difficult for one to see through the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. After all, not even True Immortals could detect the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Logically, Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritists should also not be able to detect the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

If one was unable to detect the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, it would be practically impossible for one to breach it.

“There is a defensive spirit formation surrounding the palace that I reside in. That is a spirit formation that I spent a thousand years to set up.”

“That defensive spirit formation will be activated as long as I am in that palace. As for what it did, it was capable of detecting practically all concealment formations, including even the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation,” Zi Xunyi said.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng did not doubt Zi Xunyi’s explanation. Instead, he absolutely believed her.

The strength of martial cultivators originated from within them. They were able to unleash overwhelming battle power in a split second.

As long as a martial cultivator was there, they would be able to bring their strength there.

As for world spiritists, they too grasped a power capable of utter destruction. Merely, the power of world spiritists needed spirit formations to unleash.

The stronger a spirit formation was, the more time was needed to set up the spirit formation. Furthermore, that sort of spirit formation could not be moved, and could only be active at designated locations.

In fact... with Chu Feng’s current world spirit techniques, if he was given sufficient time, he would also be able to set up a spirit formation capable of withstanding True Immortals at a designated place.

As for Zi Xunyi, she had used a total of a thousand years to set up



her spirit formation. As such, the might of her spirit formation would naturally be no small matter.

Thus, it would not be surprising for Zi Xunyi to have set up a spirit formation capable of detecting the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Suddenly, Zi Xunyi asked, “How is he right now?”

Chu Feng knew that by ‘he,’ she meant Ying Mingchao.

“Senior Ying Mingchao is doing very well. Apart from being unable to move, there is nothing serious,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s good,” Zi Xunyi said faintly.

Suddenly, Zi Xunyi stopped. She said to Chu Feng, “Wait here for a bit.”

After saying those words, with a thought, a wave of spirit power emerged from Zi Xunyi’s body. Then, like a whirlwind, it began to spin while revolving around her. Soon, it covered her completely.

That spirit power only stayed on her for a short moment before disappearing.

When the spirit power dissipated, Chu Feng’s gaze changed when he saw Zi Xunyi again.

The current Zi Xunyi was no longer that old woman with wrinkles all over her face. She had turned into a pretty young woman.

She possessed fair skin, a signature oval face, large spirited eyes, sexy red lips and an enchanting figure.

The current Zi Xunyi was simply a beauty.

Furthermore, even her clothes had changed. She was now wearing a long purple skirt.

Beautiful. At the very least, her outward appearance was that of a beauty, a rarely seen beauty.

Chu Feng was also able to tell that Zi Xunyi's beauty was most definitely not a disguise. Rather, she was naturally this beautiful. At least, she was this beautiful when she was young.

# Chapter 2555 - Dearly Loved Individual

---

“Let’s go,” As Zi Xunyi spoke, she began to continue journeying with Chu Feng. At that moment, even the voice that she spoke with had changed. It was no longer lifeless, but rather filled with spirit.

“It seems that this Zi Xunyi deeply loved that Ying Mingchao.”

“I am truly curious as to what sort of story there was between the two of them,” Her Lady Queen said with a curious expression.

Even a fool could tell that Zi Xunyi had deliberately changed her appearance to meet Ying Mingchao.

Yet, when she was in the Demon Elimination Cave, Zi Xunyi clearly had the appearance of an old granny. Even though it was the day of her marriage, she still did not change her appearance.

However, she immediately changed her appearance when she was about to meet Ying Mingchao. She even put great care into dressing herself up.

From this, it could be seen how deeply she cared about her appearance in Ying Mingchao’s heart.

If Zi Xunyi did not possess any love toward the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief, then she most definitely deeply love Ying Mingchao.

“That’s an easy task. I’ll ask her for you.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng said to Zi Xunyi, “Senior, I’ve heard that you’ve never been out of the Demon Elimination Cave. If that’s the case, how did you come to know Senior Ying Mingchao?”

“You want to know our story?” Zi Xunyi took a glance at Chu Feng. She had managed to see through Chu Feng’s intentions.

At that moment, Chu Feng smiled awkwardly. Then, he said,

“Senior, is it suitable for you to tell me?”

“Actually, it’s nothing to conceal. After all, if you are to ask him, with how big-mouthed he is, he will definitely tell you,” Zi Xunyi gave a faint smile. It was very beautiful. It was as if she suddenly recalled what she had experienced back then.

Then, Zi Xunyi began to tell Chu Feng the story of her and Ying Mingchao.

It turned out that it was not true that Zi Xunyi had never left the Demon Elimination Cave. She had left the Demon Elimination Cave and entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before.

It was also precisely at that time that she encountered Ying Mingchao by chance.

At that time, Ying Mingchao was still a bandit. However, his outspoken and straightforward character immediately gained Zi Xunyi’s favorable impression.

After that, Zi Xunyi experienced many things together with Ying Mingchao. The two of them entered many remnants together and explored many treasure deposits. Naturally... they also experienced life and death together.

In fact, for the sake of protecting Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao nearly forfeited his life.

At that time, Ying Mingchao was seriously injured. Even using all of her world spirit techniques, Zi Xunyi was unable to cure him.

At that time, Zi Xunyi’s tears were falling like rain. She was truly frightened. Even though he was so seriously injured, Ying Mingchao still had a smile on his face. With great difficulty, he raised his arm filled with wounds and wiped away the tears on Zi Xunyi’s face.

Zi Xunyi fell deeply in love with Ying Mingchao. She decided to devote herself to this man.

It was actually also Zi Xunyi who informed Ying Mingchao about the topography of the Demon Elimination Cave.

As for the taboo technique that Ying Mingchao used, it was something that he and Zi Xunyi obtained together in a remnant.

Thus, Zi Xunyi was the only person capable of helping him undo the taboo technique.

As for why the two of them separated from one another, it was because their opinions differed.

Zi Xunyi was not fond of the mutual deceptions of the world and wanted to retreat into the mountains with Ying Mingchao to live by themselves.

However, at that time, Ying Mingchao had held magnificent aspirations. As such, he would naturally not be willing to retire.

Afterwards, Ying Mingchao created Hero City, and Zi Xunyi left him and returned to the Demon Elimination Cave.

Actually, Ying Mingchao had sought after Zi Xunyi before. Merely, he was driven away by Zi Xunyi's master.

In short, after that time, the two of them had never once seen each other again.

“Since you were always in love with Senior Ying Mingchao, why did you decide to get married to the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief?” Chu Feng asked.

According to what Zi Xunyi said, she had only ever loved one man in her life, Ying Mingchao. As such, she should not be marrying herself to another man.

Moreover, judging from Zi Xunyi's attitude in the Demon Elimination Cave, she was truly not fond of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

Thus, Chu Feng was unable to understand why the marriage was being conducted.

“Back then, after the news of Ying Mingchao being killed by the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan spread forth, my master imprisoned me in the Demon Elimination Cave.”

“He knew my temperament, and knew that I would definitely find the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan for revenge. Even if I were to die, I would not have cared.”

“At that time, although I was already an Insect Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, my cultivation was only that of a rank eight Martial Ancestor.”

“As such, I was simply unable to contend against the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan.”

“Because of that, my master imprisoned me and refused to allow me to take another step out of the Demon Elimination Cave. Upon being imprisoned, I was imprisoned for over a thousand years.”

“Over a thousand years is enough time to change a lot of things. Not only did it change my appearance, but it also made me gradually forget about the pain in my heart.”

“Over the past thousand years, Xuelin Zhenping has treated me extremely well. As for me, I am, after all, a woman. As such, I was moved many times by his actions.” [1. Xuelin means Bloodscale. Seems like all the monstrous beasts have the same surname as their race/clan?]

“However, when you appeared, when you mentioned the name Ying Mingchao, when you said that he was still alive, I suddenly realized that the man that I deeply loved in my heart was still Ying Mingchao.”

“In fact, the reason why I’ve trained so hard over the past thousand plus years was subconsciously also because I’ve wanted to avenge him.”

“And now, he is actually still alive. Furthermore, he needs my help. As such, I have no reason to not help him.”

“It was also at that time that I discovered that my feelings for Xuelin Zhenping were merely gratefulness and not love. In fact, it cannot even be regarded as liking him.”

“Actually, I also know how cruel my decision today was for Xuelin Zhenping.”

“However, I cannot ignore this matter, I cannot disregard Ying Mingchao.”

“Thus, this time around, not to mention finding myself utterly isolated, even if I am to die, I will still not turn around,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Senior is daring to love and hate, this junior is in admiration,” Chu Feng said as he clasped his fist.

“You have merely met Ying Mingchao once. Yet, you are willing to charge into the Demon Elimination Cave by yourself for him. I can also tell that you are also an individual daring to love and hate,” Zi Xunyi said to Chu Feng with a smile on her face.

She had a very good impression of Chu Feng. The reason for that was precisely because Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao were unfamiliar with one another, yet Chu Feng was willing to pass on this message for him.

Of course, it could also be said that she held a favorable impression toward Chu Feng because Chu Feng had transmitted the message to her, making it possible for her to go and save Ying Mingchao.

After all, no matter what, Chu Feng’s message had not only helped Ying Mingchao, it had also helped her.

“When mentioning it, I am quite ashamed.”

Chu Feng laughed bitterly. The reason for that was because he recalled his lovers Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei.

The situation for Zi Ling was still alright. She was training in the

Eastern Sea Region's Heavenly Road. With his father instructing her, Chu Feng felt that Zi Ling's cultivation would definitely advance by leaps and bounds.

However, Su Rou and Su Mei's bodies were seized by the Moon Immortal. Even now, Chu Feng had no idea where they were. In fact, he didn't even know if they were dead or alive.

Chu Feng felt extremely guilty toward the sisters Su Rou and Su Mei.

"In this world, there are a lot of things that one has no way to control."

"In short, it would be fine as long as you hold a clear conscience."

Zi Xunyi had most likely seen through Chu Feng's heartache. However, she did not ask about it. She merely spoke comforting words to him.

On their journey to the Kong Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng continued to chat with Zi Xunyi. The two of them were getting along very well.



# Chapter 2556 - Mysterious Individual, Blue Gown

---

At the moment when Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were rushing toward the Kong Heavenly Clan, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief brought with him a total of five True Immortal-level Utmost Exalted Elders and arrived in the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, they were all in a hidden palace. It was a Kong Heavenly Clan's forbidden area.

"Didn't you agree to bring all of your True Immortals over?" The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"I have brought five of our six Utmost Exalted Elders. Is that not enough? You need to allow me to leave one behind to protect my clan, no?" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Forget about it, forget about it," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief waved his hand in a somewhat dissatisfied manner.

"Didn't you tell me to bring all of our clan's battle power over for the sake of eliminating Chu Feng?"

"Since that's the case, do you know where Chu Feng is right now?" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked.

"It is best for Grandmaster Prophet to explain this to you," As the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke, he opened the a door in his palace hall.

Then, a figure walked out from it.

It was a white-gowned old man. He was Grandmaster Prophet.

"Grandmaster, could it be that you managed to prophesy something?"

At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief as well as the five Zhou Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders all looked to

the crystal ball in Grandmaster Prophet's hand.

It was the Prophecy Crystal Ball. The reason why Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies were so accurate was all because of that Prophecy Crystal Ball.

"I've prophesied that Chu Feng will arrive at the Kong Heavenly Clan in the near future," Grandmaster Prophet said.

"Arrive at the Kong Heavenly Clan? Could it be... that he's planning to take the initiative to attack you all?" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief looked to the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"That's most likely the case. The reason for that is because Grandmaster Prophet has prophesied that Chu Feng will not be coming alone. There will be two other individuals accompanying him," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Those two other individuals must be Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. Merely three brats, what sort of storm could they possibly raise?" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

Right at that moment, Grandmaster Prophet added, "While it is certain that Chu Feng is coming, I am still unable to ascertain who the other two individuals are. As of now, the only thing that is certain is that one of them is a woman. As for that woman, she is a True Immortal."

"True Immortal-level woman?"

"Impossible. Regardless of how heaven-defying that Zhao Hong might be, it would still be impossible for her to raise her cultivation to the True Immortal realm in such a short period of time."

The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief revealed a tensed expression as he asked, "Chu Feng has found another helper? Could it be that he has brought forth the person behind him?"

"Didn't you say that there was a True Immortal helping Chu

Feng when you were trying to eliminate him two years ago?”

“No, that’s not the case. According to our investigation, the True Immortal that helped Chu Feng two years ago was a man,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“In that case, does that mean that his backing has changed? There are others backing Chu Feng now?”

“Grandmaster Prophet, that individual... what is her cultivation?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked nervously.

If it was the same True Immortal that had helped Chu Feng two years ago, he would not be that nervous. After all, they knew that True Immortal was only a rank one True Immortal.

However, they were thinking the entire time that since Chu Feng dared to act so absolutely unrestrained in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he very likely possessed a powerful character backing him.

He was afraid of that powerful character acting for Chu Feng. Most importantly, they were all uncertain as to what the cultivation of Chu Feng’s backer might be if he really did possess someone backing him.

“My apologies, as of now, this old man is only able to determine that one of the two individuals is a True Immortal. As for their exact cultivation, I am unable to predict it,” Grandmaster Prophet declared.

“Exactly who is she?” At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief started to frown.

He was a bit panicky. After all, no matter how confident he might be, he would still fear the unknown.

Moreover, this battle concerned their life and death. In fact, it concerned the continued existence of their two clans. As such, he would naturally be worried.

“That is precisely the reason why I had you bring all of your Zhou Heavenly Clan’s battle power over,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“However, if that person is a rank three True Immortal, what are we to do then?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly asked.

“You’re scared?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Actually, our conflict with Chu Feng is not that deep. It would be one thing if it were only him. We naturally cannot forgive him.”

“However, if he truly possesses backing that we cannot defeat, then...” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was evidently showing signs of cowardice.

The reason for that was because he deeply believed in Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecy.

“If he possesses a rank three True Immortal behind him, then it would most definitely be someone from the Upper Realms. If the people from the Upper Realms are to interfere in this matter, I will also not resign myself to fate,” Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded.

Following that, a figure appeared.

This person was wearing a blue gown. The blue gown covered that individual’s facial appearance. As such, one simply could not see his facial appearance.

However, the aura he emitted was exceptionally valiant. Even the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, that rank two True Immortal, felt himself to be insignificant before that blue-gowned individual.

“This person is?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s expression changed. He looked at the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

The reason for that was because he did not know that individual.

However, he was able to faintly sense that this blue gowned individual was extremely extraordinary.

Else, it would be impossible for them to have not noticed him in the slightest even though he was right beside them.

“Weren’t you very curious as to why I still dared to make an enemy out of that Chu Feng after experiencing the power of his Demon Armament?”

“The reason for that is because this senior is standing behind our Kong Heavenly Clan. He is willing to support us,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief introduced.

“You can call me Blue Gown,” That mysterious blue-gowned individual said.

“Senior Blue Gown, you are willing to help us take care of that Chu Feng?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief reacted as if he had seen a savior.

Even though it was the first time he had met that Blue Gown individual, and he knew nothing about him, he was able to tell judging from the situation at hand that that mysterious individual should be from the Upper Realms.

Furthermore... he was willing to stand on their side.

If such a powerful existence were to help them, then regardless of how formidable the existence behind Chu Feng might be, they would no longer be afraid.

“I cannot attack people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus... unless there’s someone from the Upper Realms involving themselves in this matter... I cannot interfere.”

“However, I am still able to assist you all. For example, there’s this,” As the man spoke, he extended his palm.

There was a jade pendant on his palm. The pendant was gold in color and round in shape. When it appeared, it immediately

unleashed an intense ancient aura.

Most importantly, on that round jade pendant were ancient characters, two large characters inscribed onto it -- Demon Suppression!!!

“Senior, is this the treasure that you mentioned?”

Upon seeing the jade pendant, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was immediately overjoyed and filled with endless excitement.

“What is that?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked curiously.

“This is a Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. It is especially used to suppress Demon Armaments,” That Blue Gown said.

“Demon Armament Suppression Talisman? What use does it have?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Two years ago, Chu Feng nearly eliminated our entire Kong Heavenly Clan. At that time, no one was backing him. He relied completely on his Demon Armament that he held in his hand.”

“Senior Blue Gown mentioned before that he was capable of finding a treasure capable of suppressing Chu Feng’s Demon Armament. It is precisely due to that talisman that I dared to declare war on Chu Feng again,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

His words were absolutely not empty words.

Two years ago, after he personally witnessed the power of Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword and after Chu Feng decided to spare them for some unknown reason, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief made the decision to no longer make an enemy of Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because he knew that Chu Feng, with the power of the Demon Armament in his hand, was truly capable of

completely exterminating their Kong Heavenly Clan.

Thus, even though Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were attacking their Kong Heavenly Clan nonstop over the past two years, their Kong Heavenly Clan never really tried to suppress Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

They were not afraid of Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. Rather, they were afraid of Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had disappeared for two years, the Kong Heavenly Clan still firmly remembered the nightmare from two years ago.

In fact, the Kong Heavenly Clan had been unable to ascertain whether or not Chu Feng would seek them for revenge, should he still be alive.

This sort of struggle and unease caused the Kong Heavenly Clan to live the past two years in great misery. This was especially true for the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. He was practically unable to sleep properly every night.

He always had nightmares upon sleeping. It was always the same nightmare, the nightmare of Chu Feng arriving at their Kong Heavenly Clan with that Demon Armament in hand.

Then, before his face, Chu Feng beheaded everyone from their Kong Heavenly Clan. Regardless of whether they were men or women, young or old, not a single person was spared. In the end, even he himself was not spared.

Thus, he always felt that Chu Feng would one day reappear and seek revenge against their Kong Heavenly Clan.

When the news of Chu Feng's reappearance arrived not long ago, the worry that he had magnified by an unbounded amount.

Although Chu Feng did not rush to their Kong Heavenly Clan with killing desire and Demon Armament in hand, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief felt that day would arrive sooner or

later.

However, right at that moment, the mysterious blue-gowned individual appeared.



# Chapter 2557 - Infiltrating The Kong Heavenly Clan

---

Blue Gown. He had arrived at the Kong Heavenly Clan on his own initiative. Furthermore, he gave the Kong Heavenly Clan two promises.

The first promise was that if there were people from the Upper Realms helping Chu Feng, he would help the Kong Heavenly Clan eliminate those people.

If there was no one from the Upper Realms helping Chu Feng, then there would not be anyone in the current Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of extinguishing the Kong Heavenly Clan by themselves.

As for the second promise, he declared that he would find a treasure capable of suppressing Chu Feng's Demon Armament. Furthermore, he was willing to lend that treasure to the Kong Heavenly Clan for the time being.

He was willing to lend that treasure to the Kong Heavenly Clan until they eliminated their great enemy, Chu Feng.

It was precisely because of that that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief dared to declare war against Chu Feng.

"But, if Chu Feng's Demon Armament is truly that powerful, will this treasure really be useful?" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was skeptical.

Actually, he still did not firmly believe in what had happened two years ago. After all, he did not personally witness it.

He was someone who had lived for a very long time. Yet, never had he ever heard of a mere Half Martial Ancestor relying on a single Demon Armament being able to nearly eliminate a clan with several True Immortals.

Thus, he felt the entire time that it was the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief that was incompetent, that it was merely an excuse he provided for his own failure.

However, after this mysterious blue-gowned individual appeared, he started to believe it.

To put it simply, he did not believe the words spoken by the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, but he did believe this blue-gowned individual.

No matter how powerful the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief might be, he was still only someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He was someone who felt reverence toward the experts from the Upper Realm from the bottom of his heart.

This sort of reverence made it so that he would generally believe the words of experts from the Upper Realms.

Merely, after he believed that Chu Feng really possessed one such Demon Armament, he became somewhat scared.

He was afraid that the treasure given by this Blue Gown would not be able to restrain Chu Feng's Demon Armament.

If it was truly unable to restrain Chu Feng's Demon Armament, then all of them would be no match for Chu Feng.

“Regarding that, you all can rest assured. So-called Demon Armaments have appeared many times in the Upper Realms.”

“Merely, not a single Demon Armament was able to withstand the restraint brought about by this Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.”

“Even the Demon Armaments from the Ancient Era are completely useless before my Demon Armament Suppression Talisman,” Blue Gown spoke in a very certain manner.

“If that's the case, then unless that Chu Feng does not show up,

the Kong Heavenly Clan will become the place where he will die.”

After that Blue Gown spoke so determinedly, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief no longer panicked like before. An expression of anticipation actually appeared in his eyes.

“Back then, that Chu Feng was able to infiltrate our Kong Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area. He most definitely possesses a special sort of concealment method.”

“Thus, we absolutely cannot be careless,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Regarding that, you all can rest assured. Although I cannot act directly, I am still able to help you all observe things.”

“As long as Chu Feng arrives in the Kong Heavenly Clan, regardless of what sort of concealment method he might possess, I will definitely be able to detect him,” Blue Gown spoke confidently.

“In that case, we shall trouble senior,” Everyone from the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans present bowed to express their thanks to Blue Gown simultaneously.

The reason for that was because they all knew that whether or not they would be able to win against Chu Feng in the following battle would not depend on them. Rather, it would all be dependent on the mysterious Blue Gown from the Upper Realms.

“Prepare yourselves in the following days. That Chu Feng might show up at any moment.”

“When he arrives, I will inform you all of it,” After Blue Gown finished saying those words, he entered the void.

“Senior, please wait,” Right when Blue Gown was about to leave, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief suddenly called out.

“What is it?” Blue Gown did not reveal himself. However, his voice was still present in the palace hall.

“There is one thing that this junior’s been curious about the entire time. What sort of conflict do you have with that Chu Feng? Why are you helping us take care of him?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, as well as the others present, including even Grandmaster Prophet, all revealed a change in expression. They also revealed curious expressions in their eyes.

Before this, none of them knew of that Blue Gown. As such, there was simply no friendship between them.

There could only be one reason for Blue Gown to come find the Kong Heavenly Clan of his own accord and decide to help the Kong Heavenly Clan take care of Chu Feng. That is, Blue Gown possessed his own conflict with Chu Feng. However, due to some sort of restriction or inconvenience, he could only have the Kong Heavenly Clan take care of Chu Feng.

“There is no conflict between me and that Chu Feng,” Blue Gown’s voice sounded.

“No conflict?” The crowd all revealed surprised expressions.

There was no conflict, yet he decided to help them take care of Chu Feng? They were truly unable to understand that Blue Gown.

The reason for that was because they never believed that something would fall into one’s lap from the sky.

At the moment when the crowd were all confused and bewildered by Blue Gown’s response, Blue Gown’s voice sounded again, “I am doing this purely out of my dislike towards that Chu Feng’s name.”

After those words were said, that Blue Gown’s voice never sounded again. He had truly left.

As for the people left behind, they were still completely bewildered.

Merely due to disliking someone's name, that mysterious Blue Gown went through that much effort to help them?

They were still unable to understand him.

Although they were unable to understand him, the corners of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's lips were raised into a pleased smile as he looked to the so-called Demon Armament Suppression Talisman in his hand.

"Chu Feng, so what if you possess a Demon Armament? So what if you possess backing?"

"As long as you dare to come, you will be digging your own grave."

"I am destined to win this battle."

.....

Chu Feng had no idea about the mysterious blue-gowned individual's involvement with the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Thus, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi could only proceed according to their plan.

Their plan was very simple. They planned to infiltrate the Kong Heavenly Clan and rescue Ying Mingchao.

Merely, in order to prevent unnecessary conflict, they could not force their way in.

Although the Kong Heavenly Clan's battle power had been weakened beyond recognition by Chu Feng two years ago, they could not force their way in as long as the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was still there. The reason for that was because Chu Feng could not be certain as to whether or not Zi Xunyi was able to defeat the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

After all, this was the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's territory.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had now offended all four of the tier one

powers. As such, he could not be certain as to whether the three other tier one powers would dispatch their experts to assist the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Thus, the most effective method for them would be to use the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Like that, they would be able to quietly infiltrate the Kong Heavenly Clan and make a beeline for the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

After entering the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, even if the Kong Heavenly Clan were to discover them, there would be nothing they could do. The reason for that was because they did not dare to charge into the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

To Chu Feng's delight, it turned out that he was not the only one who had obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's Inheritance. This Zi Xunyi had also obtained a portion of Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance over a thousand years ago.

Although the inheritance she obtained was nowhere as complete as the ones they'd obtained, Zi Xunyi was still proficient in many wondrous spirit formations. Among them was naturally the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi jointly set up the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. After they finished setting up their Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formations, the two of them placed the spirit formations onto their bodies. Then, they directly entered the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi entered the Kong Heavenly Clan, a pair of deep eyes suddenly opened.

It was Blue Gown's eyes.

“They're finally here.”

Underneath the cloak that covered his face, a gloomy yet excited voice was heard.

# Chapter 2558 - Exposed

---

Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi entered the Kong Heavenly Clan with their Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation activated.

Their target was very clear: they were planning to make a beeline for the Kong Heavenly Clan's forbidden area, the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

However, right after they reached the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, Zi Xunyi's expression took a huge change.

“Careful.”

Suddenly, Zi Xunyi pulled Chu Feng behind her.

“Boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The next moment, many dazzling rays of light appeared in the space right before them.

It was martial power, Immortal-level martial power.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~” In response, Zi Xunyi waved her sleeve three continuous times, and surging martial power began to fly out of her sleeve.

Her martial power gathered together and began to radiate. They formed a martial power barrier before her and Chu Feng, protecting them.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

The next moment, the martial power that had appeared before them all collided with that martial power barrier.

The powerful martial power not only caused the surrounding rocks to shatter and scatter about, leaving behind a huge crater on the ground, but it also caused many cracks to appear in the surrounding space.



However, the martial power that collided with Zi Xunyi's martial power barrier were unable to harm Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi in the slightest. They were all blocked by her martial power barrier.

At that moment, Zi Xunyi stood straight and moved her sleeve two more times, dispersing her martial power barrier.

At the same time, her figure also appeared. She had canceled her Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Right at that at moment, Zi Xunyi's voice entered Chu Feng's ears.

"Chu Feng, we've been discovered. However, do not reveal yourself."

Zi Xunyi's intention was very clear. They had been ambushed.

However, as an experienced world spiritist, she felt that it was impossible for them to be detected, as they were using the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

It would be impossible for them to be detected... unless their opponents possessed a spirit formation capable of detecting the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

And now, as Zi Xunyi was actually detected with her opponents having already locked onto her, she had no choice but to reveal herself.

Merely, she was only thinking wishfully, and hoping that Chu Feng had not been discovered yet.

With that, even if her opponents were to be too powerful, and she was no match for them, Chu Feng, who was still concealed with the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, would still have a chance of being able to escape.

"Chu Feng, don't bother hiding anymore. We know that you're right behind that woman."

Right at that moment, the voice of the Kong Heavenly Clan's

Clan Chief sounded.

Following that, the space where the several martial power attacks collided started to tremble.

Then, a total of seven figures appeared.

They were led by the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. Standing on either side of them were the five Utmost Exalted Elders from the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

Those people were all True Immortals. Especially the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, they were both rank two True Immortals.

Thus, they were extremely imposing as they stood there. Their auras were so strong that they were like seven divine beings overlooking the mortals beneath them.

They were truly existences high and above everything else.

“How did they discover us?”

Seeing their situation Chu Feng's heart tightened. Evidently, the Kong Heavenly Clan was already prepared for them. Else, they would not have gathered this many experts.

“What's this, you do not even dare show yourself? What happened to your awe-inspiring authority from two years ago?” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief mocked.

“Buzz~~~”

At that moment, the space behind Zi Xunyi started to wiggle. Then, Chu Feng's figure appeared.

Since he had already been discovered, there was no reason for Chu Feng to continue concealing himself. As such, he also removed the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation on him.

“Who is helping you all from the shadows? Is it that blue-gowned individual?” Chu Feng asked.

Hearing those words, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the True Immortals from the Zhou Heavenly Clan all revealed a change in expression.

They never expected that Chu Feng actually knew of Blue Gown. Moreover, they never expected that Chu Feng knew Blue Gown was helping them.

"Seems like it really is him," Chu Feng said.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was only suspecting that might be the case. The reason for that was because he knew that no one in the Kong Heavenly Clan would be able to detect the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.

Furthermore, their ancestor had also never left behind any spirit formation capable of detecting the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation. Else... he would not have been able to successfully infiltrate the Grief Calamity Mountain Range the last time.

Thus, the first person that Chu Feng thought of was that mysterious blue-gowned individual.

That said, Chu Feng was merely questioning in an attempt to probe things previously.

However, from the reactions of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the others, Chu Feng was now certain that the person helping them was definitely that mysterious blue-gowned individual.

"There is simply no one helping us. For a mere brat like you, why would we need the help of others?"

"With our two clans joining hands, we are able to easily eliminate you," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

With a gloomy expression on his face, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief added, "Chu Feng, you must pay for Zhou Fukong's death."

“Humph,” Chu Feng coldly snorted upon hearing those words. A sneer emerged on his face. No matter how they tried to deny it, Chu Feng was determined that the mysterious blue-gowned individual was helping them from the shadows.

Else, with merely these people from the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan, it would simply be impossible for them to see through their Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, track them and accurately ambush them.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, a purple dagger appeared in both of Zi Xunyi’s hands.

Once the two purple daggers appeared, Zi Xunyi’s gown immediately started to flutter, and her long hair began to drift.

At that moment, Zi Xunyi was emitting surging purple gaseous flames from her entire body.

An ice-cold expression also appeared in her eyes. It was killing intent.

With a gaze filled with killing intent, she looked to the Kong Heavenly Clan’s crowd. With an ice-cold tone, she said, “Scram.”

“Scram? By merely you?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief sneered.

“You must be that person backing Chu Feng, right? It is no wonder this Chu Feng is so undisciplined and out of control. Turns out, you are as arrogant and conceited as him,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief mocked.

Although this was the first time they had met Zi Xunyi, they were extremely hostile toward her.

The reason for that was none other than the fact that Zi Xunyi was standing on Chu Feng’s side. Thus, they were certain that Zi Xunyi was Chu Feng’s backer.

“You spout too much rubbish,” At that moment, Zi Xunyi’s gaze grew increasingly ice-cold. After saying those words, the entire region of space around them immediately grew extremely chilly. It was as if a severe winter had suddenly descended upon the area.

“What’s this, you’re really planning to fight us?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief laughed mockingly. Although Zi Xunyi was a rank two True Immortal, he did not place Zi Xunyi in his eyes in the slightest.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The next moment, Zi Xunyi’s arms began to move about, and surging martial power began to gush out of her body like a flood breaking through a dam.

The martial power fused together and began to transform. Soon, it turned into countless crimson blade rays that started to fly toward the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals.

It was a martial skill. Furthermore, it was no ordinary martial skill. Rather, it was a taboo martial skill.

Zi Xunyi knew that her opponents weren’t weak. Thus, she immediately unleashed her trump card from the very start.

The Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chiefs had already revealed their Ancestral Armaments.

Seeing Zi Xunyi’s attack, the two of them also unleashed taboo martial skills with their Ancestral Armaments to counter Zi Xunyi’s attack.

# Chapter 2559 - The Reappearance Of The Demon Armament

---

“Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom~~~”

The three martial skills collided. Immediately, they brought forth massive energy ripples.

In an instant, countless surrounding buildings were destroyed.

From this, it was completely revealed how powerful True Immortals were.

Furthermore, as the two parties fighting were extremely close to one another, the power of the energy ripples were even more ferocious. As such, even Zi Xunyi herself was forced back repeatedly by the energy ripples.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was hiding behind Zi Xunyi. Otherwise, the energy ripples themselves would be sufficient to obliterate him.

As Chu Feng could not even defeat rank one True Immortals, rank two True Immortals were so powerful that they were akin to a nightmare for him.

“And here I thought that the person standing behind Chu Feng would be an expert from the Upper Realms. Turns out, it’s only someone from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said coldly.

He had already determined from the martial skill that Zi Xunyi used that she was someone from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan.

The reason for that was because the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan would never teach their martial skills to others. Thus, as of now, no one apart from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clansmen knew the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s martial skills.

“Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, you all have been withdrawn from

the world's affairs for thousands of years. I had thought that you all would really continue to be hidden forever.”

“Turns out, you all have been secretly nurturing this freak Chu Feng. You all have quite the ambition,” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke with a mocking tone.

“Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, you will pay miserably for protecting that Chu Feng. Not only are you going to die today, but your Bloodscale Monstrous Clan will also be completely exterminated.”

“I will have your Bloodscale Monstrous Clan completely erased from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm from this point on. I will make it so that there will be no information regarding you at all,” the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said while pointing at Zi Xunyi. His attitude was extremely high and above, extremely aggressive.

It was as if he would really be able to determine the fate of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan if he wanted to.

“Humph, it is not that I am looking down on you all. However, if you dare to intrude into our Demon Eliminate Cave, before you can even reach our Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's headquarters, your entire army will be utterly destroyed.”

“Eliminate us? You're speaking as if you all never planned to eliminate us to begin with. The only reason why you didn't was because you did not have the ability to do so,” Zi Xunyi mocked.

Being raised in the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan, Zi Xunyi actually knew the way the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan did things very well.

These two self-proclaimed righteous families were actually filled with ambitions. They had always been eyeing the treasures of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan covetously.

Merely, due to the fact that there were too many Ancient Era's

slaughtering formations in the Demon Elimination Cave, they were unable to have their way the entire time.

Thus, she felt it very ridiculous for the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan to proclaim that they eliminate the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan in front of her.

“You will not be able to witness whether or not we actually possess the power. After all, you will not be able to live past today.”

As the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke, he unleashed his attack.

Immediately after him, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief also unleashed his attack.

Merely, this time around, their attacks were different from before. The reason for that was because even the five Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders who had been standing behind their clan chief the entire time joined in to attack Zi Xunyi.

At that moment, surging lightning was flickering on their bodies. These were not lightning from the power of their Heavenly Bloodlines. However, it greatly resembled the lightning of Heavenly Bloodlines.

The lightning emitted from their bodies started to fuse with one another. At that moment, the auras of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief grew increasingly more powerful.

A formation. It was a grand slaughtering formation, a formation that only Heavenly Bloodline possessors could set up.

“If you are to concede to us now, we can consider leaving you an intact corpse,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to Zi Xunyi.

“Humph,” Faced with the situation at hand, Zi Xunyi was not only unafraid; she even let out a cold snort of disdain.



Then, purple light flickered in her eyes. The next moment, the surging purple gaseous flames on her body grew even more ferocious.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

Immediately afterward, she actually tossed away her two daggers.

At the same moment when the two purple daggers were tossed out, surging martial power was emitted without reservation.

The next moment, the two daggers started to spin simultaneously. Then, they actually started to emit purple gaseous flames. Following the daggers, the purple gaseous flames also started to rotate, forming majestic purple whirlwinds.

“That is!”

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that the ability Zi Xunyi used was no small matter.

Not only was it an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, but it was also an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill that perfectly harmonized with the power of her Ancestral Armaments. The might of that attack was extremely powerful.

“Zzzzzz~~~”

Right at that moment, lightning started to flicker and surge. A large area of lightning struck down from the sky like a sea of lightning.

It was the slaughtering formation cast by the joint effort of the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals.

In an instant, the enormous sea of lightning collided with the whirlwinds brought forth by Zi Xunyi’s daggers.

“Rumble~~~”

The next moment, rumbles began to be heard all over as sparks swirled in the air. The collision between the lightning and the

purple gaseous flames created wave upon wave of powerful energy ripples that wreaked havoc throughout their surroundings.

Zi Xunyi was extremely powerful. She actually managed to block the grand slaughtering formation jointly unleashed by the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals.

Unfortunately, her powers were finite. If this were to continue, she would naturally lose.

"I shall see exactly how much longer you can persevere."

The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had evidently also noticed this. Thus, they did not utilize any other techniques, and continued to suppress Zi Xunyi with their grand slaughtering formation. They planned to have her completely exhaust her stamina and then utterly defeat her.

Not long after this battle of attrition began, Zi Xunyi's complexion grew ugly. Chu Feng knew that Zi Xunyi would not be able to persevere for long.

"Puu~~~"

Sure enough, not long after that, Zi Xunyi sprayed out a mouthful of blood. Immediately afterward, her aura grew much weaker. Her daggers that were contending against the grand Heavenly Bloodline slaughtering formation were also pushed back several meters.

Zi Xunyi hurriedly adjusted herself and continued to send forth her power to her daggers. With great difficulty, she managed to continue to persevere.

However, Chu Feng noticed that Zi Xunyi's body was trembling violently.

She was no longer able to continue to resist the grand slaughtering formation. In fact, she was on the verge of collapse.

Chu Feng knew that he could not continue to watch with folded

arms.

“Eggy, I must act,” Chu Feng said to Eggy.

“Go ahead. As matters stand, you can only fight with your all,” Her Lady Queen spoke with a supporting tone.

After receiving Her Lady Queen’s approval, Chu Feng streaked his hand across his Cosmos Sack.

“Clank~~~”

The next moment, a long crimson sword appeared in Chu Feng’s hand.

Chu Feng raised the sword up high and looked to the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He shouted, “Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, do you still remember this sword?”

“You!!!”

Upon seeing the Evil God Sword, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had an immediate change in expression.

The expression that appeared on his face was clearly that of fear.

He was scared. He was unable to not be scared. After all, two years ago, Chu Feng had relied on that exact same sword to nearly extinguish his entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

Due to being overwhelmingly scared, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief actually took two steps back and directly withdrew his martial power.

As one of the most important members in the slaughtering formation, his sudden withdrawal caused the grand slaughtering formation to instantly fall apart.

“Putt~~~”

At that moment, Zi Xunyi knelt in the ground and started to gasp. She was sweating profusely.

Even her two Ancestral Armament daggers directly fell to the

ground.

Chu Feng was able to tell that it was fortunate that the grand slaughtering formation had fallen apart upon the withdrawal of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. Otherwise, Zi Xunyi would most definitely have suffered serious injuries. It might even be possible for her to have been bombarded to death by them.

The reason for that was because she was no longer able to withstand the grand slaughtering formation. As long as she failed to keep it at bay, the grand slaughtering formation would strike down upon her.

If she were to be struck by such a powerful grand slaughtering formation, the aftermath... would naturally be unthinkable.

“We were about to settle them. What the hell are you doing?”

The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief looked at the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief with a puzzled expression.

He was also able to tell that they'd been about to obliterate Zi Xunyi and Chu Feng with the grand slaughtering formation.

To suddenly stop at a time like this meant that all of their efforts would be in vain. As such, he was naturally feeling very displeased.

“Demon Armament, that is the Demon Armament,” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief pointed to Chu Feng's Evil God Sword.

When he spoke, not only was his body trembling, but even his voice was trembling.

From this, it could be seen how deeply afraid of Chu Feng's Evil God Sword he was.

# Chapter 2560 - Demon Armament

## Suppression Talisman

---

“So what if it’s the Demon Armament? Don’t you have the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Right, Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, I have the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief came to a sudden realization.

Then, he put away one of his Ancestral Armaments. He took out the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman and held it in his hand. [1. I guess he was using both of his Ancestral Armaments earlier.]

After holding the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, the expression of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief changed instantly.

His body was no longer shivering. Even the expression of fear on his face disappeared. In fact, he actually revealed a proud smile.

Due to being overly scared earlier, he had completely forgotten about the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

However, once he held the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman in his hand, he was immediately filled with confidence.

The reason for that was because he discovered that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman in his hand was completely different from before.

Enormous power was surging within it. It was as if it had discovered its mortal enemy, and was eagerly excited to battle.

This sort of sensation was not present in the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman before Chu Feng had revealed his Evil God Sword.

This most likely meant that the reaction of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was brought forth by Chu Feng's Evil God Sword.

Thus, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to believe with even greater certainty that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman possessed enormous effectiveness toward Chu Feng's Demon Armament. He felt that regardless of how powerful Chu Feng's Demon Armament might be, he would not be able to unleash its might should he use the talisman.

"Chu Feng, did you really think that you could take care of our Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans merely by relying on a Demon Armament?"

"If you think you can, then give it a try. I will let you know how incompetent you really are," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said to Chu Feng.

The current Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief no longer possessed any of the fear he had displayed earlier. On the contrary, he now had an utterly confident expression on his face. His gaze seemed to be saying that Chu Feng was destined to be defeated by his hand today.

"Why are you suddenly so confident?"

Chu Feng's expression changed. Then, he looked to the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief held in his hand. He thought to himself, "Could it be because of that?"

Not only was the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman emitting a mysterious Ancient Era's aura, but the words 'Demon Suppression' were also inscribed onto it.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that was most definitely an extraordinary treasure.

"Chu Feng, it seems that Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief has

managed to obtain a treasure capable of restraining your Evil God Sword,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Even if that is the case, I have no way to retreat from this.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he infused his power into the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, layer upon layer of crimson gaseous flames began to emit from the Evil God Sword nonstop. Then, they completely enveloped Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, rumbles began to sound from the sky.

Looking upward, crimson clouds were appearing above Chu Feng. Furthermore, they were rapidly spreading. In an instant, the clouds covered the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

As the crimson clouds surged about, they only emitted a single sort of aura, a demonic aura.

“Chu Feng’s sword...”

At this moment, Zi Xunyi’s expression changed.

“Is that the power of a Demon Armament?”

Even the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the five Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders revealed a change in expression.

They were all able to sense how powerful the aura coming from Chu Feng was. It was something that they were incapable of contending against.

“This bastard.”

Sensing the power of Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword again, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief stood there stunned.

His body started to shiver. Even though he was holding the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, he was still extremely

panicky. He was simply unable to control the fear deep in his heart.

Evidently, the Evil God Sword had already left behind an unerasable shadow in his heart two years ago.

In fact, frightened screams were sounding from all over the Kong Heavenly Clan at that moment, furthermore, the Kong Heavenly Clansmen were frantically flying away from their clan so as to escape into the distance.

Those were all Kong Heavenly Clansmen who had experienced the might of the Evil God Sword two years ago.

Not only did the massacre from two years ago leave a shadow in the heart of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, it had also left a shadow in the hearts of those fleeing Kong Heavenly Clansmen.

The moment when they felt the aura of the Evil God Sword again, their hearts' defenses instantly crumbled.

At that moment, the entire Kong Heavenly Clan entered a state of chaos.

"Why are you still standing there blankly, use the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman!" The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to urge the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"No, it-it's useless. That Demon Armament is too powerful, even the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman will not be able to restrict it. We are doomed today."

The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had lost his head in fear, and actually started to back away from Chu Feng repeatedly. The desire to escape filled his heart.

He had also crumbled before the might of the Evil God Sword. He discovered that his previous confidence was merely self-deception.

When he felt the destructive power of the Evil God Sword again, he once again felt fear from the bottom of his heart.



At that moment, he felt that regardless of what sort of aura the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman might be emitting in his hand, it would still not be able to suppress Chu Feng's Demon Armament.

Thus, he felt that that day would likely become their doomsday. Chu Feng had once again brought upon them the disaster of their clan's elimination.

“Give it to me.”

The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief directly grabbed the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's hand.

“Chu Feng, don't you act arrogant. This Demon Armament Suppression Talisman specializes in subduing Demon Armaments.”

“Even if your Demon Armament possesses overwhelming power, you will still not be able to unleash it today. The power of your Demon Armament will be purified by this. You will become completely powerless.”

After the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said those words, he instilled his martial power into the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. Then, the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman started to glow with golden light, The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief also started to glow dazzling gold.

It was as if the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had fused with the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Once that golden radiance appeared, the crimson gaseous flames emitted by Chu Feng were immediately suppressed.

At that moment, the crimson gaseous flames that covered the sky earlier had completely disappeared. Only the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng's hand was still emitting crimson gaseous flames.

Chu Feng shouted “Oh no!” in his heart. Holding the Evil God

Sword, he was able to sense that the power of the Evil God Sword was being suppressed. He was simply unable to unleash the power of the Evil God Sword.

That so-called Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was actually really capable of suppressing the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Trash, hand your body over to this god, this god will extinguish them for you.”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly heard a voice. It was the Evil God Sword’s voice.

“You want me to hand my body to you? Never!!!” Chu Feng refused.

He understood what the Evil God Sword meant. Right now, Chu Feng was only using the Evil God Sword. Thus, he was still in control.

As for the Evil God Sword, what it proposed was for it to gain control.

Chu Feng knew very well how frightening the killing intent the Evil God Sword possessed was. It was an existence filled with murderous desire. It was a true demon.

No matter how fierce and malicious the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm might be, they would simply pale into insignificance when compared with the Evil God Sword.

If he were to truly hand his body to the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng would likely become the embodiment of the Evil God. At that time, an enormous disaster would truly befall the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was unable to be certain whether or not the Evil God Sword would really be able to resist the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman if he were to truly hand his body to the Evil God Sword.

What if the Evil God Sword was simply no match for it?

Or what if it was capable of withstanding the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman but refused to do so? What if those enticing words spoken by the Evil God Sword were merely its evil scheme?

Perhaps it never planned to help Chu Feng to begin with, and only wanted to use this opportunity to devour Chu Feng's body.

After all, legends had it that the previous masters of the Evil God Sword had all mysteriously disappeared.

Furthermore, according to the rumors, they were all devoured by the Evil God Sword.

Thus, Chu Feng was very cautious when it came to the Evil God Sword.

## Chapter 2561 - The Third Prophesied Person

---

“Did you see that? The Demon Armament that you’re so scared of is merely this,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Actually, there was no need for the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief to call this to attention, as the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had witnessed everything that had happened.

“Worked, it really worked. The Demon Armament Suppression Talisman really worked!”

“Hahaha...”

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had completely changed. Not only was he no longer afraid, but he even let out frantic laughter.

It was as if his feelings that had been repressed for so long were finally able to be unleashed.

Then, he looked to Chu Feng with eyes filled with complacency. Loudly, he said, “Chu Feng, so what if you possess a Demon Armament? Are you able to unleash its powers?”

“Today, that Demon Armament of yours will be purified, and you will be killed here.”

“Damn it.”

At that moment, Chu Feng began to pour all of his power into the Evil God Sword.

He did not give his body to the Evil God Sword. However, he unleashed his greatest power to urge the Evil God Sword to give out greater strength.

“Roar~~~”

At that moment, the Evil God Sword immediately had a reaction.

Surging crimson gaseous flames once again started overflowing from it. The crimson clouds once again appeared in the sky.

Although the crimson gaseous flames were inferior to before, as they were being suppressed by the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, they managed to cover a fifth of that entire region.

Furthermore, they were gradually expanding in size.

The Evil God Sword's power was currently recovering.

“Don't even think of it!”

Seeing that, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief tossed his Demon Armament Suppression Talisman toward the sky.

“Buzz~~~”

After being unleashed by the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and entering the sky, the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman reacted as if it had been liberated.

Not only was the golden radiance it emitted even more dazzling, but many characters began to appear on the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Those characters started to float out from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, and began to spread everywhere with the golden radiance.

It was as if the golden radiance was the sea, and the characters were fishes in the sea.

Just like that, those characters started to surge forth in the sea, covering all the locations that the golden radiance had spread to.

Those were very ancient characters. They were most likely characters from the Ancient Era. As such, they could not be interpreted.

However, after those characters appeared, the power of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman grew even more powerful.

In fact, Chu Feng and the others were even able to hear an ancient voice being emitted by the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman nonstop.

They were simply unable to make sense of that voice. However, they felt a very sacred sensation upon hearing it.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng was going all-out to urge the Evil God Sword, the crimson gaseous flames emitted by the Evil God Sword were still being suppressed. Chu Feng was unable to unleash the power of the Evil God Sword.

Under such circumstances, Chu Feng's Evil God Sword started to tremble violently. It was as if it was feeling extremely unreconciled.

“Bastard brat, hand your body over to this Evil God. Let this Evil God destroy that thing.”

At that moment, the Evil God Sword's voice was sounding in Chu Feng's ears nonstop. Its tone was filled with anger.

It was reacting as if someone had desecrated it. It was determined to inflict punishment upon that person. It was determined to reveal its power.

However, Chu Feng felt even greater murderous desire from the Evil God Sword's voice.

Under such circumstances, Chu Feng was even more reluctant to hand his body to the Evil God Sword.

“Why are you still standing there? Eliminate him immediately!” The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted at the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Although the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was able to suppress Chu Feng's Evil God Sword using the power of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, he was evidently unwilling to continue their stalemate. He was determined to quickly kill Chu Feng because he felt that there would be hidden dangers if Chu

Feng were to be kept alive any longer.

After all, he had already personally experienced the aura of Chu Feng's Demon Armament. Fortunately, they possessed the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. Otherwise, he also felt that they'd have all been killed.

By relying only on their own strength, none of the people present would be able to contend against Chu Feng's Evil God Sword.

"There's no need for you to remind me."

The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief held his Ancestral Armament in hand and began to fly toward Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi.

Merely, his target was not Zi Xunyi, but rather Chu Feng.

The person he wanted to kill the most was Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he felt the greatest threat right at that moment to be Chu Feng.

"Clank~~~"

Right at that moment, Zi Xunyi who was half kneeling on the floor and in extremely weak health suddenly stood up.

At the moment she stood back up, the two Ancestral Armament daggers that had landed not far away also flew into her hands.

"Scram!"

Zi Xunyi's arms moved as two blade rays shot out from her Ancestral Armament daggers. The two blade rays criss-crossed one another as they were shot out to cut the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief down.

"Humph, the current you will not be able to stop me," The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief sneered.

Then, he lightly waved his Ancestral Armament and easily dispersed Zi Xunyi's blade rays.

Following that, he slashed down with his Ancestral Armament in Chu Feng's direction.

Before the Ancestral Armament reached Chu Feng, the blade ray that it sent forth was on its way to cut down Chu Feng.

With the might and distance of this attack, Chu Feng would not be able to avoid it. If he was struck by it, his body and soul would be completely shattered and he would undoubtedly die.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Zi Xunyi appeared before Chu Feng. She placed the daggers in her hand before him and forcibly blocked the incoming blade ray.

“Puu~~~”

However, after blocking the blade ray, Zi Xunyi was not only knocked back several steps, but she also vomited a mouthful of blood.

Then, she sat powerlessly beside Chu Feng. Zi Xunyi's injuries were extremely serious; she simply did not have the strength to continue battling. She was totally putting her life on the line to block the attacks from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Look at yourself, you're still trying to protect him?” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said to Zi Xunyi mockingly.

“As long as I am still alive, you can forget about touching him in the slightest.”

Zi Xunyi stood back up with great difficulty and once again walked before Chu Feng, shielding him behind her.

Firm determination filled her eyes.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart was moved.

Zi Xunyi and him were only people that had just met. Even though they got along very well, there was still no reason for her to go so far.



Yet, Zi Xunyi had decided to do so. She was willing to sacrifice herself to protect him.

Oh how loyal and righteous she was. “Very well, since you insist on it, I will kill you first.”

As the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke, he slashed his Ancestral Armament at Zi Xunyi.

Zi Xunyi tried her best to unleash her martial power. However, as if her martial power was completely extracted from her, she was unable to unleash anymore of her martial power.

The current her was simply powerless to block the attack from the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Clank~~~”

However, right at that moment, a large crimson blade suddenly stood horizontally before Zi Xunyi, blocking the attack from the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. It was not only Chu Feng; the expressions of everyone present had changed greatly.

The reason for that was because not only did a large crimson blade appear, but a figure was also standing before Zi Xunyi.

That person was wearing armor. Although he had a humanoid appearance, he was not human. The reason for that was because his skin was completely covered in crimson scales.

That said, his aura was extremely powerful. He was a rank two True Immortal.

That person was the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief. With an Ancestral Armament blade in hand, he blocked the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s attack.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan

Chief suddenly waved his blade. He actually managed to force the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief back.

The power behind his slash was so strong that the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was pushed several thousand meters away. Even the Ancestral Armament the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief held in his hand was trembling violently.

“You dared injure her, all of you shall die!!!”

Right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief let out an incomparably furious roar.

It was as if Zi Xunyi was his dragon's forbidden inverse scale. Whoever dared to touch her would be met with death.

# Chapter 2562 - Finally Meeting Ying Mingchao

---

The sudden arrival of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief shocked the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals.

They suddenly recalled Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy. He had prophesied that three people would arrive.

However, they had overlooked that third individual. Furthermore, none of them expected that third individual to be a rank two True Immortal.

"Take this. It will heal your injuries. After that... go and save him. I will help you keep these people at bay," The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief handed Zi Xunyi a medicinal pellet.

"Zhenping," At that moment, Zi Xunyi looked at the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief with a very complicated expression.

Evidently, she had never expected the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief to be willing to come assist her even after how cruelly she refused him.

He was willing to come assist her in saving his rival in love.

"Don't say anything."

"Just go and save him."

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief smiled faintly at Zi Xunyi. That smile of his was so very gentle.

Even though Chu Feng was a man, his heart was also moved upon seeing that smile.

At that moment, Chu Feng knew how much the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief loved Zi Xunyi.

If Zi Xunyi's love for Ying Mingchao was so rare and deep that

she was willing to give up her life and abandon everything for him, then the love the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had toward Zi Xunyi was the same.

His love for her also penetrated deep into his bones. He was willing to abandon everything for her.

Even Chu Feng, an outsider, was moved by him. As such, Chu Feng could very well imagine what Zi Xunyi was feeling in her heart.

At that moment, Zi Xunyi's eyes became moist. She seemed to want to say something.

However, right at that moment, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief suddenly turned around. He looked to the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals.

At that moment, he no longer had a gentle smile on his face. All there was on his face was a very fierce expression and frightening killing intent.

“You dare touch my woman?! You shall all die!!!”

Then, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief soared into the sky. With the crimson blade in hand, he charged toward the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Chu Feng, let's go.”

Seeing that, Zi Xunyi immediately swallowed the medicinal pellet. Then, she grabbed Chu Feng and began to rush toward the direction of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

“Where do you think you can escape to?!” Seeing that scene, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief immediately chased after them.

Their main target was Chu Feng. As such, he would naturally not allow Chu Feng to escape easily.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, a slash was sent toward him, forcibly making him stop his chase them.

It was the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

"Your opponent is me!" The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief shouted coldly.

His voice was akin to thunder. It was truly awe-inspiring.

As for the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, he completely ignored the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief and continued to chase after Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi.

"Rumble~~~"

Another slash was sent forth, blocking the path of the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief again.

"I said, your opponent is me!" The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief shouted again.

"Very well, since you wish to die this much, I will help you."

The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was infuriated. He decided to ignore Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi, and instead charged toward the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

"To dare touch Zi Xunyi, the ones who will die are you all!!!"

As for the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, he was not to be outdone.

Brandishing the crimson blade in his hand, he actually began to take on the seven Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans' True Immortals by himself.

Chu Feng had no idea what sort of medicine the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief gave Zi Xunyi. However, he was certain that the medicine was very powerful.

After taking that medicinal pellet, Zi Xunyi's injuries started to rapidly improve. Her aura also started to recover.

Furthermore, following Chu Feng's guidance, they soon reached the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

“Who is it?!”

There were many Kong Heavenly Clan's elders guarding the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range. Their cultivations were all very strong; they were all peak Martial Ancestors.

Seeing that there were people approaching the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, they immediately revealed their weapons and shouted sternly.

Furthermore, even though they were very far away, Chu Feng was still able to sense their killing intent.

“Scram!”

However, Zi Xunyi did not even bother to stop moving.

With merely a wave of her sleeve, she sent forth her martial power and smashed away all of the elders guarding the entrance of the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

Before Zi Xunyi, those peak Martial Ancestors were like fallen leaves. They were unable to withstand a single blow from her.

When they landed on the ground, they started bleeding from their seven facial orifices.

Just like that, they all died. All of them were killed by Zi Xunyi.

However, this was reasonable. After all, Zi Xunyi was a rank two True Immortal. Apart from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, there was practically no one in the Kong Heavenly Clan who could hinder her.

However, Chu Feng was able to feel that Zi Xunyi was not a ruthless person. He felt that it was most likely due to what had happened earlier that she decided to kill them.

The Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans wanted to kill her, and nearly succeeded.

Being in that sort of situation, Zi Xunyi's heart was burning with rage. Thus, it was understandable for her to decide to kill.

After entering the Grief Calamity Mountain Range, Chu Feng moved about with ease and familiarity. As he had already been there once, he quickly brought Zi Xunyi to that remnant and found Ying Mingchao.

Merely, as Ying Mingchao was affected by the forbidden technique, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were simply unable to see him.

However, Ying Mingchao was able to see them.

"Xunyi, Xunyi, is it you, is it you?"

"It really is you. Xunyi... I've finally gotten to see you again."

Ying Mingchao was extremely excited upon seeing Zi Xunyi's arrival.

In fact, Chu Feng was able to tell that even Ying Mingchao's tone had changed. He was no longer as crude and vulgar as before. On the contrary, his tone was so very gentle.

If he didn't hear it himself, Chu Feng would never believe that Ying Mingchao was capable of speaking so gently.

That said, compared to Ying Mingchao's excitement and enthusiasm, Zi Xunyi had a complicated expression on her face.

She did not say anything. However, glistening teardrops appeared in her eyes.

Soon, tears began to flow down her cheeks uncontrollably.

Her love that she had not met for over a thousand years, that lover that she loved dearly for so long, she was finally able to see him.

Only Zi Xunyi herself knew what sort of emotion that was.

"Xunyi, don't cry, don't cry."

Seeing that, Ying Mingchao hurriedly consoled her. That grand

hero was actually panicky.

However, Zi Xunyi ignored Ying Mingchao. Instead, she turned to Chu Feng and handed him a scroll. She said to him, “Chu Feng, remember the contents of this scroll. Make sure to remember it carefully. You cannot afford to make a single mistake.”

After saying those words, Zi Xunyi started to set up a spirit formation. That spirit formation was very complicated. Even Chu Feng was unable to make sense of it.

However, Zi Xunyi was able to set up that spirit formation with enormous ease. In merely a short moment, she finished setting up the spirit formation.

After finishing the spirit formation, Zi Xunyi asked Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, did you memorize the contents of the scroll?”

“Senior, I’ve memorized it all,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you able to act according to the contents on the scroll?” Zi Xunyi asked again.

“I am,” Chu Feng nodded.

The contents of the scroll were related to the spirit formation she had set up. However, it was not how to set up the spirit formation, but rather how to activate the spirit formation.

In short, it was very difficult to set up the spirit formation. Its difficulty was different from that of the Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation, and did not need to consume a great amount of energy and time.

Instead, its difficulty was related to one’s technique. One must be able to set up the spirit formation smoothly in one go.

As for the method to set up the spirit formation, it was extremely complicated. Thus, if one were to make a mistake while setting up the spirit formation, the spirit formation would definitely fail.

If one wished to grasp such a spirit formation, one must spend a



lot of time learning it. One must become familiar with it. It was very similar to learning a martial skill.

Thus, although Zi Xunyi had managed to finish setting up the spirit formation rapidly, the amount of effort she had put into learning that spirit formation was unimaginable.

Furthermore, not only was that spirit formation very difficult to set up, it was also very difficult to activate.

Once activated, the spirit formation could not be stopped. Otherwise, it would crumble completely, and would have to be set up again.

Furthermore, Ying Mingchao would also receive a backlash from the spirit formation.

## Chapter 2563 - Fighting For Love

---

“You will activate this spirit formation. Remember, you must concentrate fully,” Zi Xunyi said to Chu Feng.

“This Chu Feng does not dare to guarantee that he will definitely succeed. However, I will definitely do my best,” Chu Feng said with a serious expression.

Zi Xunyi looked to Chu Feng. She wanted to say something, but hesitated. Then, she wanted to turn to look at Ying Mingchao.

However, she didn't do that. Instead, she turned around.

Seeing that, Ying Mingchao spoke to ask her, “Xunyi, where are you going? Are you still angry at me?”

Zi Xunyi stopped. However, she did not turn around. With her back facing Ying Mingchao, she said, “Forget about me.”

After saying those words, Zi Xunyi's body moved, and she instantly disappeared.

At that moment, Ying Mingchao revealed a stunned expression. He was confused as to what was going on.

However, Chu Feng knew where Zi Xunyi had gone. He also knew what she was going to do.

Zi Xunyi deeply loved Ying Mingchao. However, it was also because of how much she loved Ying Mingchao that she felt extremely guilty toward the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

That sort of guilt most definitely felt like a sharp blade that stabbed into her heart nonstop. It was something extremely unbearable.

This was especially true after she broke off all relations with the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, yet the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was still willing to brave dangers to

save her.

She was truly moved by him. The guilt in her heart had completely burst forth. At that moment, she was feeling extremely pained in her heart.

She could not refuse to save Ying Mingchao. Yet, she also could not abandon the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

Thus, Zi Xunyi had left to fight alongside the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

Merely, it was difficult to tell whether they would survive the battle. After all, their opponents were the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans. Furthermore, their opponents possessed their special Bloodline formation.

Ying Mingchao sighed. "That girl is truly headstrong. It's alright, she will be fine once I amuse her after going out."

"Hehe, Brother Chu Feng, it will all be up to you as to whether or not I will be able to go out," he said to Chu Feng with a mischievous laugh.

Chu Feng was able to tell that Ying Mingchao had forced himself to laugh. After seeing Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao's heart was also fluctuating enormously. It was fluctuating so strongly that he was unable to conceal his expression. The more he tried to conceal his emotions, the more loopholes there were.

That said, Ying Mingchao had no idea how dangerous the situation outside was. Thus, he only thought that Zi Xunyi was angry at him for what had happened back then.

However, he had no idea that Zi Xunyi might die after leaving, that it would be very possible for him to not see her again.

"Senior, after I activate this spirit formation, I will need your full cooperation," Chu Feng said to Ying Mingchao.

"Rest assured boy, I know this formation. Go ahead, I know what

I must do,” Ying Mingchao spoke very straightforwardly.

Seeing Ying Mingchao agreeing to it, Chu Feng hurriedly sat down and unleashed his spirit power. He began to wholeheartedly focus on activating that spirit formation.

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment the spirit formation was activated, a golden light appeared. Like a small palace, it completely covered Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao.

Time quickly passed. In the blink of an eye, ten hours passed.

After ten hours passed, the spheroid golden spirit formation finally dissipated.

At that moment, Chu Feng raised his head. He was finally able to see Ying Mingchao.

The man was over two meters tall. He had a very robust build.

Although he had a middle-aged man’s appearance, he had a head of long hair. His hair was truly long. Although he was only over two meters tall, his hair was over three meters in length.

Apart from his extremely long hair, he also had a full beard. His beard was also extremely long. Although his beard was not as long as his hair, it was over two meters long.

Fortunately, his lower half was covered by his black beard.

The reason for that was because Ying Mingchao was actually completely naked.

“I can move now, I can move now! It has been over a thousand years now! I, Ying Mingchao, have finally regained my liberty! Hahaha!!!”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao faced upwards and started laughing. He was truly excited.

At that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense Ying Mingchao’s

aura. He was indeed a True Immortal. Not only that, but he was also a rank two True Immortal.

“Senior, please wear some clothes first. It is a bit indecent.”

Chu Feng took out a change of clothes from his Cosmos Sack and tossed them to Ying Mingchao.

“Haha, we’re both men, what’s there to fear? Rest assured, I am not interested in men.”

Ying Mingchao was laughing loudly. However, as he spoke, he had also changed into Chu Feng’s clothes.

“Senior, let’s leave right now,” Chu Feng stood up and said to Ying Mingchao.

“Little brother, this is all thanks to you this time around. I must properly thank you. Come... I have deliberately saved these two jugs of wine for today. Let us enjoy them.”

Ying Mingchao was overjoyed. He held the two jugs of wine in his hand and handed one to Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng had no heart to enjoy wine. Instead, with a serious expression on his face, he said to Ying Mingchao, “Senior, we must leave immediately. If we don’t leave right now, I’m afraid that Senior Zi Xunyi will be in danger.”

“Zi Xunyi... what’s going on with her? Why would she be in danger?” Hearing the name Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao’s expression changed immediately.

“At this moment, there are people from the Zhou Heavenly Clan in the Kong Heavenly Clan. We have forced our way in here.”

“Earlier, Senior Zi Xunyi must’ve left to confront them. As of now... we have no idea if she is still alive,” Chu Feng said.

“Damn it!” Hearing those words, Ying Mingchao immediately grabbed Chu Feng and started flying out with him.

Being shown the way by Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao successfully

avoided the numerous slaughtering formations in the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

With the greatest speed, they exited the Grief Calamity Mountain Range.

It was no longer daytime outside.

Thick smoke was surging about in the Kong Heavenly Clan. Overflowing oppressive might covered the entire sky. The already dark night had become even more dusky.

However, it seemed that the battle had already ended.

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief was covered in blood. Countless of his scales had fallen off. Not only that, but his flesh was all torn, and his legs were missing. The condition of his injuries was truly astonishing to the heart and shocking to the eyes.

However, although those injuries of his could cause one's heart to grieve upon seeing them, they remained only superficial wounds. To martial cultivators, they were nothing serious.

What cultivators feared the most was their source energy being injured, their souls being injured or their dantian being injured.

At that moment, the parts where the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief should not be injured the most were all damaged.

He was seriously injured, and simply unable to continue living. All that remained was his final breath.

At that moment, he had fallen into Zi Xunyi's bosom.

However, he was reacting as if he could not feel the pain in his body. He had a blissful expression on his face, and was looking at Zi Xunyi with an incomparably gentle gaze.

As for Zi Xunyi, she too was seriously injured. However, she simply had no heart to care about her injuries and pain. Instead, she was looking at the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief in

her bosom with tears falling like rain.

The reason for that was because she knew that the one who should be seriously injured was her. The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief had blocked an attack for her at the crucial moment.

He had saved her with his own life as the price.

“Don't cry.”

The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief raised his hand with great difficulty. Using that violently trembling palm, he gently wiped away the tears on Zi Xunyi's face.

Although he managed to wipe away her tears, bloodstains were left behind on Zi Xunyi's face.

It was the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief's blood.

## Chapter 2564 - Furious Roar

---

“Xunyi, I’m... sorry. This disappointing body of mine has defiled your face.”

“I... I know that you... are most fond of being clean. But, Xunyi, p-please don’t blame me for it. I t-truly did not intend to do that,” The Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief spoke in a very apologetic manner. His tone was very weak, and it took him a lot of effort to speak.

“Don’t say anymore. Quickly, take this,” Zi Xunyi wanted to give the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief the medicinal pellet in her hand.

However, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief waved his hand. With great difficulty, he said, “I am most aware of my own body. Even if a god were to descend upon the mortal world, he would still not be able to save me.”

“Xunyi, I want to tell you this. I am truly glad to be able to see your youthful appearance again.”

“A-alth-although...”

“Although I know that this youthful appearance of yours is not for me.”

After saying those words, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief’s head leaned to the side. He completely collapsed in Zi Xunyi’s bosom.

“Zhenping!!!”

At that moment, Zi Xunyi let out a scream so painful that she felt like dying.

“Zhenping, wake up, I am willing to marry you, wake up. As long as you wake up, I will return to the Demon Elimination Cave with you and become your wife.”



“I will never leave the Demon Elimination Cave again. I will never leave you again.”

“I will spend the rest of my life together with you. Since you are fond of my current appearance, I will always keep my current appearance, okay?”

“Just wake up. Please, wake up. As long as you wake up, I will agree to everything. This time, I will definitely keep my word.”

Tears filled Zi Xunyi’s face. She was sincere in each and every word she spoke. Those were what she felt from the bottom of her heart.

Unfortunately, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief was no longer able to hear those words. The reason for that was because he had died, he was completely dead.

“Paa~~~”

“Paa~”——“Paa~”

Right at that moment, a series of claps was suddenly heard.

It was the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

It turned out that the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the five Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted elders were actually all standing there.

They were watching what had happened earlier as if they were enjoying a show.

Merely, there was not the slightest trace of sympathy or pity on their faces. Instead, they all had smiles of enjoyment on their faces.

“What an unfortunately affectionate couple. However, you don’t have to grieve too much either. After all, you will soon meet him again in the netherworld.”

After saying those words, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief raised his Ancestral Armament and unleashed a slash toward Zi

Xunyi.

Zi Xunyi was able to dodge that slash. However, she did not try to dodge the slash. It seemed like she was not planning to continue living.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, a ferocious slash was sent out from deep within the Kong Heavenly Clan.

That slash was very powerful. With an unbelievable speed, it flew over and easily slashed apart the slash sent forth by the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Children Kong and Zhou, do you all still recognize your daddy I?”

At that moment, a roar filled with anger exploded in throughout the region.

“That is?”

Looking toward the direction of the voice, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortal immediately revealed an enormous change in expression.

The reason for that was because the person who had shouted those words was none other than Ying Mingchao. Arriving together with him was Chu Feng.

However, the Ying Mingchao that they knew had already died over a thousand years ago. As such, how could he be there at that moment?

“You didn’t die?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief asked in a slightly panicky manner.

It was not only the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief who started to feel slightly panicky; even the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the five Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders started to feel slightly panicky.

Although they were all rank two True Immortals, Ying Mingchao's battle power was not something that Zi Xunyi and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief could compare to.

Although they had managed to defeat Ying Mingchao over a thousand years ago, they had made numerous preparations for the sake of that battle. Only they themselves knew how much they invested back then.

At the moment they had already exhausted themselves quite a bit fighting Zi Xunyi and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief.

If they were to fight Ying Mingchao, even they had no certainty as to whether or not they would be able to win the battle.

Although Ying Mingchao was filled with fury and overflowing with murderous desire, he did not immediately attack the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals after seeing Zi Xunyi.

Instead, his body moved. Bringing Chu Feng with him, he arrived beside Zi Xunyi.

Seeing Zi Xunyi who was riddled with wounds, Ying Mingchao started to gnash his teeth furiously. He felt extremely pained; pained for that woman before him.

"Chu Feng, help me heal her injuries," Ying Mingchao suddenly said to Chu Feng.

After saying those words, Ying Mingchao flipped his wrist, and a golden-bright and dazzling halberd appeared in his hand.

Once the golden halberd appeared, dragon roars started to sound.

It turned out there was actually a golden dragon coiling around the golden halberd. That golden dragon was so very vivid and lifelike. It was as if it were an actual dragon that was radiating its oppressive might all over.

This Ancestral Armament was of even higher quality than Chu

Feng's Stormwind Edge.

“Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd, he is indeed Ying Mingchao. He is actually still alive.”

After sensing the oppressive might coming from Ying Mingchao's Ancestral Armament, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals felt with even greater certainty that the man before them was truly Ying Mingchao.

While it might be possible for one to disguise oneself as another, it would be impossible for one to disguise an Ancestral Armament. After sensing its oppressive might, they were certain that the man before them was Ying Mingchao.

The reason for that was because the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd originated from the Ancient Era. There was only one such weapon in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Back then, countless people fought over it in that Ancient Era's remnant. In the end, Ying Mingchao was the one who managed to obtain it.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted, “Set up the formation!” Then, they once again set up their bloodline slaughtering formation that they used against Zi Xunyi earlier.

Although they were extremely afraid of Ying Mingchao, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals had no other options. They had no choice but to fight Ying Mingchao.

Unfortunately, even though they were going all-out to fight Ying Mingchao, they were incapable of obtaining their desired result.

Although the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals had managed to seriously injure Zi Xunyi and kill the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief using that bloodline formation of theirs, they found it very strenuous

when faced with Ying Mingchao.

After merely fighting him for a short moment, they entered a disadvantaged position.

Ying Mingchao was truly ferocious. It was as if he was born to battle. He was incomparably fierce in battle.

“Ying Mingchao’s battle power is extremely strong. Moreover, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals have already exhausted quite a bit of their stamina and power. It would seem that he is able to take care of them by himself.”

After observing the battle for a while, Her Lady Queen felt relieved.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword was curbed by that so-called Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. Thus, Chu Feng’s strongest trump card was simply ineffective.

Furthermore, the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief had already died, and Zi Xunyi was seriously injured. At that moment, the only person capable of fighting against the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clan was Ying Mingchao.

Whether or not they would be able to leave alive would all be dependent on Ying Mingchao.

“Heeahh!!!”

Ying Mingchao was burning with rage. He roared as he fought on. At that moment, he was like a fierce tiger fighting a group of wolves; he was completely unparalleled.

“Trash! What sort of ability is it to bully a woman?! Where are your capabilities?! Show them to me!”

“If you have any skills, bring them on at your daddy I!”

Ying Mingchao was truly furious. The reason why he was so furious was not because he was plotted against by the Kong and

Zhou Heavenly Clan over a thousand years ago.

Rather, it was because Zi Xunyi was seriously injured by them. Zi Xunyi was the woman that he loved dearly. Furthermore, Ying Mingchao knew very well that if he were to have shown up any later, Zi Xunyi would have been a corpse.

Faced with people who wanted to kill his beloved, as a man, Ying Mingchao would naturally not be able to tolerate it.

He had already made preparations to unleash a massacre.

“Ying Mingchao, you dare call us trash? Even after you’ve disappeared for a thousand years, you’re still only a rank two True Immortal.”

“The outcome of the battle today is still undetermined.”

Faced with Ying Mingchao’s insults, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke back to mock Ying Mingchao.

“Puuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Ying Mingchao’s Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd hacked down and sent forth a blade ray. The speed of that blade ray was so fast that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was simply unable to dodge it. His right arm was actually sliced off by Ying Mingchao’s slash.

The Ancestral Armament that he held in his right arm also fell to the ground.

# Chapter 2565 - Overwhelming Battle Power

---

“Trash! Apart from bullying women, you are incapable of anything else!” Ying Mingchao mocked.

“Damn it!”

Being insulted in such a manner, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief turned red.

However, he was unable to find words to refute Ying Mingchao. The reason for that was because even though they were fighting Ying Mingchao seven to one, they were still at a disadvantage.

If he were to fight against Ying Mingchao alone, he would indeed be no match for him.

At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief shouted, “Bloodline formation, set it up!!!”

After he said those words, a ray of light appeared from his dantian.

Right after he said those words, the dantians of the five Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals also started to emit light.

The next moment, the six rays of light flew out from their dantians and gathered together.

“That formation,” Seeing that formation, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed.

He recognized that formation. It was the Grand Bloodline Formation. When he fought against the Kong Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals back then, they used that bloodline formation.

It was a formation capable of summoning their Lightning Marks. Merely, even though that bloodline formation was very powerful, there was an enormous cost associated with using it. That is, it would burn away the lives of its users.

Although they would be able to utilize their Lightning Marks,

they would have to use their lives as the price for the continued activation of that bloodline formation.

At the moment that bloodline formation was unleashed, Chu Feng knew that the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals were planning to place their lives on the line.

This was their final technique. They planned to have a final battle against Ying Mingchao using that technique of theirs.

Right at that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief also joined the Grand Bloodline Formation.

At that moment, Lightning Marks appeared on their foreheads. They were all 'Mortal' character Lightning Marks.

After their Lightning Marks appeared, their battle power also increased.

In that sort of situation, Ying Mingchao who was originally holding the upper hand in their battle was actually put at a disadvantage.

"Back then, you had your Evil God Sword in hand. Thus, even after those Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders used their Grand Bloodline Formation, they did not appear to be very powerful."

"However, seeing it today, it would appear that the might of the Grand Bloodline Formation cannot be looked down upon."

"I wonder, will Ying Mingchao really be able to withstand them?" Her Lady Queen said.

"After reaching the True Immortal realm, both the power of Heavenly Bloodlines and Divine Bodies will be restricted."

"To put it simply, upon reaching the True Immortal realm, regardless of what sort of battle power you might have had before, regardless of what abilities you might know, it will all amount to nothing."



“After reaching the True Immortal realm, everyone will reach an equal footing. Regardless of whether it is Heavenly Bloodline possessors, Divine Bodies or even those without any special power, they will all stand on the same starting line. As such, it will become very difficult for one to prevail over another.”

“In times like that, if one is able to even slightly utilize their restricted power, they will be able to instantly increase their battle power and pull apart the distance between them.”

“However, the price for that is truly something major.”

“They are simply unable to utilize the Bloodline Grand Formation for an extended period of time. I wonder if Senior Ying Mingchao will be able to persist.”

Chu Feng carefully observed the battle with his Heaven’s Eyes. He was able to discover that even though the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan were currently holding the upper hand, their lifespans were rapidly decreasing. The speed of the decrease was simply astonishing.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that as long as Ying Mingchao was able to persist in withstanding them, he would be able to win the battle.

“Even if you are to use this formation, you will all still die today.”

Although Ying Mingchao had entered a disadvantaged position, the disadvantage was not that great. Filled with overflowing fury, Ying Mingchao seemed to be able to overcome the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans’ True Immortals.

By relying on the anger in his heart and that overwhelming killing intent, even though Ying Mingchao was in a disadvantaged position, he was still holding the upper hand in terms of vigor and imposing might.

“Senior Ying Mingchao’s strength is truly not to be looked down upon. I wonder, how was he defeated by the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans back then?” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

Although they were all rank two True Immortals, Chu Feng was able to tell that Ying Mingchao's battle power was truly strong, and not something that others could compare with.

Perhaps it was precisely because of that that Ying Mingchao was deemed to be the person with the greatest chance of ruling over the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm after Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong.

The reason for that was because Ying Mingchao was truly extraordinary.

“Judging from the current situation, even if this battle is to continue, the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan will undoubtedly be defeated. They will not be able to continue the activation of their Grand Bloodline Formation for long. They will also not be able to defeat Ying Mingchao in a short period of time. Even if they are to consume their lifespan, they will consume themselves before they defeat Ying Mingchao.”

“Although they have exhausted quite a bit of their stamina and strength fighting against Zi Xunyi and the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief before Ying Mingchao's arrival, it was still not enough for them to go this far against Ying Mingchao. Ultimately, they are unable to defeat Ying Mingchao.”

“From this, it can be seen that they must've made ample preparations and used multiple tricks in order to defeat Ying Mingchao back then. Else, they would have simply been incapable of defeating him,” Her Lady Queen analyzed. She also began to feel increasingly optimistic regarding Ying Mingchao.

“A bunch of trash. So what if you possess the Grand Bloodline Formation? Without your despicable tricks, how could you all possibly defeat me?”

“All of you will die, all of you!!!”

Ying Mingchao grew braver the more he fought. Not only was his

might earth-shattering, but his roars were also capable of shaking everything around him.

Although the Kong Heavenly Clansmen had already taken refuge, they still started to shiver in fear because of Ying Mingchao's roars.

In that sort of situation Ying Mingchao's disadvantage in the battle grew weaker and weaker. Once again, he managed to regain his superiority. Even the Grand Bloodline Formation was unable to stop him.

Seeing that they were doomed to lose, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted, "Senior Blue Gown, can you step forth to help us?"

"Senior Blue Gown?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed.

He clearly remembered that the person who gave Kong Doumoyuan the poison was a mysterious individual wearing a blue gown. It was that person that was trying to take care of them from the shadows.

"Could that guy really be here?"

Chu Feng started to worry. Although Ying Mingchao's battle power was very strong and the current situation was very favorable to them, it remained that Chu Feng had no idea exactly who that mysterious blue-gowned individual was.

However, he felt that that blue-gowned individual was most likely someone from the Upper Realms.

There were a lot of people from the Upper Realms. Not all of them were very powerful. In fact, many of them were not even True Immortals, or even Martial Ancestors.

However, those capable of reaching the Ordinary Realms from the Upper Realms were most definitely all extraordinary individuals. Furthermore, to be able to obtain that sort of poison

meant that that blue-gowned individual possessed some tricks up his sleeve.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that if that blue-gowned individual were to act, even Ying Mingchao would be no match for him.

Fortunately, even after the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted for assistance, there was no response.

"Is that guy bluffing? How could Ying Mingchao possibly be driven away by that mere shout for assistance? He is simply underestimating Ying Mingchao too much, no?"

Her Lady Queen thought that the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was bluffing. She started to mock him.

"It might not necessarily be a bluff. It is definitely not a coincidence for them to have seen through our Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation and possess the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman to restrict my Evil God Sword. Likely, someone really is helping them from the shadows," Chu Feng said.

"You mean to say that Blue Gown is really here right now?" Her Lady Queen started to panic slightly. After all, she also knew very well how dangerous that mysterious blue-gowned individual was.

# Chapter 2566 - Forbidden Technique

---

“It’s hard to say. Even I am uncertain, since I am simply unable to sense that Blue Gowns’ aura.”

“This can only mean two things. He is either not here, or his strength surpasses that of everyone here.”

“However, I am certain that they have received assistance from that Blue Gown to see through my Immortal-avoiding Concealment Formation.”

“As for that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, it is most definitely also given to them by that mysterious blue-gowned individual,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s useless, he will not help us,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Why? Why won’t he help us?”

“Are we not of the same faction? Aren’t we all planning to take care of that Chu Feng?” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Sure enough, the target is me,” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s eyebrows narrowed. Merely from those words, he became certain that Blue Gown was aiming for him.

“That guy is most definitely very strong. At least, his strength should surpass Senior Ying Mingchao’s. But, with how strong he is, why didn’t he attack me directly? Why did he instead help the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan from the shadows, and try to have them take care of me?”

Chu Feng pondered nonstop in his heart.

He was uncertain as to whether that Blue Gown felt it beneath himself to personally take care of him, or if he was unable to personally take care of him.

Or perhaps he was merely playing around, and taking all this to

be a game.

“Listen, we can only rely on ourselves right now. I’ll be the bait, use that move,” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Ah?” Hearing those words, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief revealed a surprised expression. He did not dare believe what he had just heard.

As for the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s five Utmost Exalted Elders, they all revealed frightened expressions.

“Are we really going to use that move? If we are to use that, there’s no way around it,” The Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“I said that I’ll be the guide. Even if someone is to die, I’ll be the one to die. What’s there for you to fear?”

“If we continue to consume our lifespan, we will all die. After we die, my Kong Heavenly Clan and your Zhou Heavenly Clan will both be extinguished. Have you thought about that?” The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said furiously.

“Lord Clan Chief, you absolutely cannot. Our cultivation is insufficient. Even if the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief is planning to be the guide, with our cultivation, we too will die.”

At that moment, a Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder spoke with a panicky expression.

“Shut up! For the sake of the continuation of our clan, so what if we die?”

At that moment, another of the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders began to sternly criticize that Utmost Exalted Elder.

Furthermore, that Utmost Exalted Elder also said to their Clan Chief, “Lord Clan Chief, let’s do as the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief suggested. For our clan, sacrificing just our lives does not

amount to anything.”

“Lord Clan Chief, go ahead... we are not afraid of death.”

“Lord Clan Chief, please reconsider, please reconsider.”

As for the remaining three Utmost Exalted Elders, there were those that voiced their acceptance of death and those that voiced their desire against it.

At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief revealed a determined expression in his eyes.

“Kong Jitian, it will be all up to you now.”

After saying those words, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief shouted loudly.

A strange light began to flicker from his dantian.

“Ahhh!!!!”

The next moment, the five Utmost Exalted Elders standing behind him began to let out miserable screams.

“Nooo!!!!”

“Stop! Lord Clan Chief, stop!!!”

The Utmost Exalted Elders who had advised against this earlier started to beg their Lord Clan Chief to stop. At that moment, they were no longer able to control their bodies. It was as if they were all being controlled by the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

However, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief did not have the slightest intention of stopping.

“That formation!!!”

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s five Utmost Exalted Elders were all emitting nine-colored lightning from their dantians.

That nine-colored lightning had not been present before.

Most importantly, after that lightning was extracted from their dantians, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and the five Utmost Exalted Elders reacted as if something important had been extracted from them.

Their bodies started to rapidly age, and their skins withered incomparably. This was especially true for the five Zhou Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders. In merely the blink of an eye, they turned to mummy-like states. It was as if all of their essence had been extracted from them.

In fact, even their bodies shrunk greatly.

"They've used a taboo technique. This is their final struggle."

Chu Feng shouted 'oh no' in his heart. The reason for that was because he discovered that the nine-colored lightnings extracted from the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals were currently gathering toward the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

At that moment, not only was the Lightning Mark on the forehead of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shining even brighter, but lightning also began to appear on his body.

The lightning twined around him like armor covering his body. It was the Thunder Armor.

Although it was incomplete, Chu Feng, a Heavenly Bloodline possessor, was able to tell with a single glance that it was the Thunder Armor.

For the sake of protecting the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals as they set up the formation, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had been pinning down Ying Mingchao alone the entire time.

At the beginning, it was very strenuous for him to deal with Ying Mingchao. In fact, he was simply no match against Ying Mingchao. However, as more and more lightning gathered, as his Thunder Armor grew more and more complete, his aura also grew stronger



and stronger.

“Ahhh!!!”

Suddenly, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out a roar. Then, the Ancestral Armament in his hand grew even more ferocious. With each attack, he would give birth to wind and shake space itself.

Although he had lost an arm, he was actually able to contend against Ying Mingchao with one arm.

He was actually able to contend against Ying Mingchao alone.

Most importantly, after he let out that roar, the speed at which he absorbed the lightning extracted from the Zhou Heavenly Clan's True Immortals grew even faster.

Under those circumstances, the battle power of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief grew stronger and stronger.

At that moment, not only was he able to take on Ying Mingchao alone, but he was also gaining the upper hand in their battle.

Soon, the screams from the five Zhou Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders grew weaker and weaker.

Finally, nine-colored lightning was no longer being extracted from their dantians. Their dantians had also completely dimmed.

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

“Putt~~~”

.....

Then, they actually all lost the ability to fly at the same time, and fell to the ground.

Dead. At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's five Utmost Exalted Elders, those five rank one True Immortals, had all died.

Furthermore, their state of death was extremely frightening.

They appeared to have been sucked completely dry; there was not a single trace of essence in their bodies.

“This...”

Upon seeing that, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

Through his observation with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see that the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s five Utmost Exalted Elders even had their source energies refined completely.

As they were originally martial cultivation experts, their bones should be exceptionally hard even in death.

In fact, from a certain point of view, the remains of powerful martial cultivators would become precious treasures upon death. Their bones would be harder than even ordinary weapons.

However, the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s five Utmost Exalted Elders’ bones were akin to those of ordinary people. In fact, their bones were even weaker than those of ordinary people. The reason for that was because their bones were actually all shattered.

“That taboo technique is truly frightening.”

Chu Feng looked to the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. At that moment, his dantian also stopped emitting lightning.

Furthermore, his dantian also stopped shining.

However, unlike the five Utmost Exalted Elders, his body’s powers were not completely extracted.

Instead, he had voluntarily stopped the taboo technique.

Perhaps it might be because of his cultivation, or perhaps it was because of something else, but the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was not only still standing on the sky, his cultivation did not decrease either.

He was still a rank two True Immortal.

However, his current appearance was akin to that of a mummy.

All of his hair had fallen from his head. His wrinkled skin was tightly wrapping around his bones. It was as if all of his flesh was gone.

His eyes were caved in. At a glance, he looked like a dead man who had just crawled out of his coffin. It was a truly frightening sight.

Although his cultivation was still present, his aura had become extremely weak. It was as if he was seriously injured. He was no longer able to join the battle between the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and Ying Mingchao.

From that, it could be seen that even though he had survived, the taboo technique had done enormous harm to him.

# Chapter 2567 - The Situation Of The Battle Turning Bad

---

Chu Feng noticed that even though the Zhou Heavenly Clan's five Utmost Exalted Elders had died, even though his five subordinates that were as close as brothers to him had died, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief did not have the slightest bit of sorrow on his face.

Instead, the corners of his lips were raised in a cold smile.

"Ying Mingchao, you must've never imagined that we would be willing to sacrifice ourselves to defeat you."

"The ones to die today will not be all of us. Rather, it will be you."

"So what if you are a genius?"

"Aren't you still going to be killed by our hands today?"

"Furthermore, this is the second time that you will be defeated by us," The Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke using his extremely weak voice.

Even though his voice was very weak, his words were filled with pride.

It was as if he was certain that they would undoubtedly win, and began to enjoy the lively show, the show of Ying Mingchao's defeat, from the side.

"Puu~~~"

Right at that moment, a crimson ray suddenly flew past. A slash from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had actually managed to hit Ying Mingchao.

"Heeahh!!!"

Being struck by that slash, Ying Mingchao did not let out a

scream of pain, he instead roared.

It was like that slash had reawakened his fighting spirit. Ying Mingchao began to fight on even more bravely.

Unfortunately, it was useless. His battle power was absolutely suppressed by the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

After that, Ying Mingchao was struck by attacks from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief nonstop.

In such a situation, Ying Mingchao was soon riddled with wounds. His flesh was all overturned, and blood was flowing from his body nonstop.

“You kept on calling others trash, but it turns out that you are the greatest trash of all.”

“Why must Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong's successors all be people who boast nonsense?” the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief mocked.

“Ahhh!!!!”

Ying Mingchao let out a snarl. Then, he slashed his Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd across the sky.

“Roar~~~~”

The next moment, a roar was heard. The golden dragon coiling around the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd actually flew out from the halberd.

Everything happened too quickly. Furthermore, as the distance between the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and Ying Mingchao was so very close, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was struck directly by the golden dragon and sent flying.

Moreover, that golden dragon actually began to expand in size. Its speed also began to hasten. In merely an instant, the several meter-long golden dragon grew to over a thousand meters.

The giant thousand-plus-meter dragon covered the sky. It was

flickering as if it was made of gold. Moreover, it was emitting an exceptionally valiant oppressive might.

That golden dragon had managed to completely swallow the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Crap! I forgot that he still had that move.”

At that moment, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief turned ashen, and a panicky expression emerged in his aged eyes.

As it had been so long, he had actually forgotten that the reason why Ying Mingchao's Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd was so powerful was because it possessed power surpassing that of other Ancestral Armaments.

As for the earlier golden dragon, it was a martial skill unique to the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd. That golden dragon could be said to be an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. However, as it was in perfect harmony with the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd, once unleashed, its might greatly surpassed that of ordinary Ancestral Taboo Martial Skills.

As the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was struck directly by that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill, the situation would naturally be extremely bad for him.

“Ahhh!!!”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao faced the sky and let out a roar.

As he roared, blood began to flow from his eyes, nose, ears and mouth nonstop.

At the same time, the might of that golden dragon also started to grow stronger and stronger.

Seeing that, Chu Feng started to frown. He had no idea what that golden dragon was, but he guessed that it must be some sort of integration between an Ancestral Armament and an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

However, judging from the situation at hand, although that martial skill was very powerful, it also placed an enormous burden onto Ying Mingchao.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. Golden light began to sprinkle all over like golden raindrops.

That golden dragon had actually exploded.

“Putt~~~”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao suddenly half knelt in midair. Judging by how hard he was gasping, the martial skill he had used earlier had put an enormous burden on him.

Furthermore, Chu Feng also noticed that as the scattered golden light sprinkled down like rain and came into contact with the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd Ying Mingchao held in his hand, the golden dragon gradually reappeared on the Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd.

That Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd was truly a miraculous Ancestral Armament. Its quality had definitely surpassed Chu Feng’s Stormwind Edge and Flame Dragon Greatsword.

“Is this all you’re capable of?”

Right at that moment, a voice was heard.

Upon hearing that voice, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously.

The reason for that was because it was the voice of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He was actually alive. Although he was also injured and even covered in blood, his aura was still very ample and robust.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief

suddenly moved. With his Ancestral Armament aimed at Ying Mingchao, he thrust forth.

Seeing that, Ying Mingchao hurriedly moved to avoid the incoming thrust. However, perhaps because he had received an enormous burden from his previous attack, his speed had grown much slower.

With a “puu,” the Ancestral Armament pierced into Ying Mingchao’s body, into Ying Mingchao’s dantian.

However, as Ying Mingchao was a True Immortal, he would not lose his cultivation even after having his dantian pierced.

Upon reaching the True Immortal realm, even if one’s body was completely destroyed, one would still not die, [and one’s cultivation will still not decrease](#).

Wait, how did the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan’s Clan Chief die then? I mean... Chu Feng killed the Kong Heavenly Clan’s True Immortal by refining them alive. As for those Zhou Heavenly Clan’s True Immortals, they died cause they completely refined themselves.

The True Immortal realm was a cultivation realm that surpassed the limits of humanity. It was a realm where one truly obtained the title of ‘Immortal.’

However, the Ancestral Armament the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief pierced through Ying Mingchao’s dantian evidently contained special power. Lightning began to flow out from the Ancestral Armament, and started to cover Ying Mingchao’s entire body.

Ying Mingchao was in so much pain that his facial appearance started to distort. However, he did not utter a single sound of pain. Instead, he tightly clenched his teeth and endured the pain.

That man was truly strong and determined.

“Woosh~~~”



At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief suddenly raised his Ancestral Armament. Ying Mingchao was also raised into the air with his Ancestral Armament.

“Ying Mingchao, didn't you possess overflowing killing intent? Didn't you want to kill me? I am right before you, why don't you come and kill me?”

“Come, kill me.”

As the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief mocked Ying Mingchao, he twisted the Ancestral Armament he held in his hand to bring greater pain to Ying Mingchao.

However, Ying Mingchao was still clenching his teeth and not uttering a single word of pain.

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao opened his mouth, and a mouthful of spit landed on the face of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Pah! Trash!”

“Don't you think I do not know what sort of technique you're using right now? After your power disappears, you too will not be able to survive. Both your body and soul will be completely exterminated,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Right, what you said is correct, I am undoubtedly going to die. However, before I die, I am able to kill you,” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, two dagger whirlwinds suddenly flew forth from below. They were aimed at the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

It was Zi Xunyi. She had been treated by Chu Feng, and her injuries were now mostly cured.

Regardless of how much grief she was in at that moment, she would definitely not allow the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief to

kill Ying Mingchao.

Thus, she once again joined the battle. Furthermore, perhaps it was because she wanted to save her beloved, but her attacks were even more imposing than before.

# Chapter 2568 - Eruption Of Rage

---

“Humph, overestimating one’s capabilities.”

Faced with Zi Xunyi’s even more powerful attack, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief merely snorted coldly.

Then, he waved his sleeve and “clank, clank,” Zi Xunyi’s two Ancestral Armament daggers were knocked flying.

Just like this, he effortlessly defeated Zi Xunyi’s strongest attack.

“Wuuahh.”

Right at this moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief extended his palm and made a grabbing motion. Immediately, Zi Xunyi let out a scream.

The Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had actually managed to grab Zi Xunyi’s neck from afar. Furthermore, he directly moved her toward him.

Seeing this scene, Ying Mingchao shouted, “Stop!”

However, the more he panicked, the more complacent the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief became.

He looked to Ying Mingchao and said, “I nearly forgot to tell you this: not only am I able to kill you, but I’m also able to kill Chu Feng and this woman.”

“Yoh, now that I take a closer look, this girl is quite attractive.”

“No wonder you and that fellow from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan cared so much for her.”

After saying those words, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief cast her gaze toward Zi Xunyi. Furthermore, it was unknown whether or not he was doing it deliberately, or he was feeling that from the bottom of his heart, but a perverted expression actually emerged in his eyes.

Then, he turned back around toward Ying Mingchao and said, “Ying Mingchao, I wonder, have you slept with this beauty yet?”

“That said, it’s alright. Although I am undoubtedly going to die, I still have some time. I’m going to let you enjoy a show during this period of time.”

“What are you planning to do?!” Ying Mingchao shouted furiously. Panic emerged in his eyes.

“What I plan to do? I’m planning to toy with your woman right before you.” As the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief spoke, he grabbed Zi Xunyi’s left shoulder. Then, a ‘rip’ was heard as a piece of Zi Xunyi’s clothes was ripped apart.

“I’ll kill you!”

Seeing this, extremely intense killing intent exploded in Ying Mingchao’s eyes.

Unfortunately, he was completely in the grasp of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

No matter how furious he was, no matter how much he struggled, he could only remain suspended above the Ancestral Armament of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He was simply powerless to do anything to the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Are you furious? Go on, be furious. I am precisely going to sully your woman right before you.”

After the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief finished saying those words, he extended his hand toward Zi Xunyi.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at this moment, an ear-piercing explosion suddenly sounded from the sky.

The next moment, black clouds began to surge as an extremely powerful aura started to emit from Ying Mingchao’s body.

“You...”

Seeing the current Ying Mingchao, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was stunned.

He was surprised to discover that Ying Mingchao's eyes were not only emitting overwhelming killing intent, but they were also emitting a dark green light.

That light simply does not resemble that which might come from a human's eyes. Rather, it was like a light emitted by the eyes of ferocious beasts.

Not only that, but there was even dark green light within the surging black clouds in the sky.

“Paaa~~~”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao grabbed onto the Ancestral Armament that had pierced his body with his hands. Then, with his flesh overturned, he forcibly pulled the Ancestral Armament out from his body.

Seeing that, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief hurriedly move on to grab the Ancestral Armament. With great effort, he was trying to thrust his Ancestral Armament back into Ying Mingchao's body.

However, when he tried to do so, he discovered that he was actually unable to contend against Ying Mingchao. Ying Mingchao's current strength had completely surpassed his own.

“Clank~~~”

Suddenly, blood splattered everywhere. Not only had Ying Mingchao managed to pull out that Ancestral Armament, he even directly snatched that Ancestral Armament away from the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Rumble~~~”

At that moment the rumbles in the sky grew even more ear-piercing. Even the earth started to shake violently.

The dark green light in the clouds grew brighter and brighter. Vaguely, Chu Feng saw the face of a ferocious beast from the surging black clouds.

It was an enormous face. It practically covered the entire sky, covered the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

It was a wolf's face. However, the aura that it emitted was much more powerful than that of wolves.

“Divine Power?”

Chu Feng's gaze changed. Although the dark green light in the sky gave off a very cold and oppressive sensation, Chu Feng was able to tell that it was Divine Power.

However, upon reaching the True Immortal realm, both the power of Heavenly Bloodlines and Divine Powers would all be restricted.

For Ying Mingchao to be able to utilize the power of his Divine Power meant that he had completely undone the restriction the True Immortal realm had placed upon him.

“No, impossible! How can you use your Divine Power?!!!”

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to panic. His complexion turned pale, and his body started shivering. He was moving backwards repeatedly.

He was able to sense that Ying Mingchao's current aura had completely surpassed his own.

That aura was simply too powerful. It was at the peak of a rank two True Immortal. Likely, apart from rank three True Immortals, no one would be able to contend against the current Ying Mingchao.

“I will make you pay!” Ying Mingchao said as he gnashed his teeth.

At that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief grew

completely panicked.

He was surprised to discover that not only had Ying Mingchao's eyes turned dark green like those of ferocious beasts, even his teeth were emitting a dark green radiance. Furthermore, his teeth were as sharp, as those of ferocious beasts.

However, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief remembered very well that Ying Mingchao was a human, and not a ferocious beast or a monstrous beast.

“Damn it!”

Suddenly, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief suddenly turned around. He was actually planning to flee.

“Roar~~~”

Right at that moment, like a beast, Ying Mingchao leapt in midair and pounced at the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

His speed was simply too fast. In a flash, he arrived behind the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and brought him down.

The two men fell from high in the sky and crashed onto the ground.

Upon landing, Ying Mingchao immediately bit into the neck of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Ahhhh!!!”

Right away, blood splattered all over, and the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out a miserable scream.

However, that was only the beginning.

One bite.

Two bites.

Three bites.

Ten bites.

A hundred bites.

.....

Ying Mingchao was reacting as if he was truly possessed by a ferocious beast. He was using his teeth to tear at the body of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief repeatedly.

Furthermore, it seemed like his teeth were capable of causing unbearable pain. Thus, the screams of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief soon filled the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

In merely the blink of an eye, all the flesh on the body of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had been bitten off.

However, Ying Mingchao did not stop there. He began to bite the bones of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, forcibly biting them apart.

The hatred Ying Mingchao had toward the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was simply too deep. It was as if he could only alleviate his hatred by drinking the blood and eating the flesh of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

“Mingchao, you...”

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that Zi Xunyi had a very complicated gaze.

Evidently, she was moved at that moment.

After all, it was all because of her that Ying Mingchao had become like that. This indirectly revealed how important she was in Ying Mingchao's heart.

“God damn it!”

Seeing that the situation was bad, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief turned around and began to flee.

“Chu Feng, that Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief is escaping,” Her Lady Queen immediately called to Chu Feng's attention.



“Let him escape,” Chu Feng actually also noticed the escape. However, he did not bother to pay attention to it.

Firstly, Chu Feng did not have the strength to stop the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief from escaping.

Even if that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was seriously injured, he remained a rank two True Immortal. As such, Chu Feng was still unable to defeat him.

As for Ying Mingchao, he was overwhelmed with rage. As such, there was only the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief in his eyes. He was simply unable to consider other things.

Even if Chu Feng were to bring to his attention that the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was escaping, Ying Mingchao would still not pay attention to it.

Chu Feng understood Ying Mingchao’s current state very well. He had already gone berserk. He had become deranged.

His soul was completely occupied by his rage. He was no longer capable of reasoning. At that moment, there was only one thing in his mind. That was, he wanted to make the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief pay.

As for everything else, he simply did not care.

## Chapter 2569 - To Be Even

---

As for Zi Xunyi, it was also obvious that the current her had no heart to pay attention to the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Furthermore, she was still seriously injured. Even if she were to chase after the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, she would not necessarily be able to stop him.

Thus, in such a situation, Chu Feng would rather have the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief escape than to have more people injured.

“Hahaha, hahahaha...”

Right at that moment, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief whose flesh had been completely bitten away and whose bones were broken by Ying Mingchao's bites suddenly started to laugh.

“Go ahead and torture me. It doesn't matter how much you torture me, after all, I will soon die,” The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief mocked.

Since he knew that he would not survive either way, he was able to accept his situation.

Hearing those words, Ying Mingchao was stunned. He stopped biting at the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

No one knew exactly what Ying Mingchao was thinking just then.

“Hahahaha, Ying Mingchao, in the end, you are unable to do anything to me. I am still the one in control of my fate.”

Seeing Ying Mingchao's reaction, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief started to laugh even more frantically. Although he was going to die, he felt that he had not lost the battle. Rather, he was acting as if he was the winner.

At that moment, Ying Mingchao spoke coldly, “In that case, I will extinguish your entire clan before your death.”

“You...” Hearing those words, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief immediately let out an incomparably alarmed voice.

He was scared. He was extremely scared. As he knew that he was going to die, he did not care about his own life.

However, the Kong Heavenly Clan was still something that he worried deeply for. In fact, the reason why he was willing to sacrifice himself was all so that he could preserve his Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Ying Mingchao, don’t, you absolutely must not.”

“It is my fault. Everything is my fault. I am the one at fault for everything back then. I am also the one at fault for everything today.”

“This matter is unrelated to my clansmen. They are all innocent. Please, you must not attack them,” In panic, the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief started to beg Ying Mingchao.

However, Ying Mingchao completely ignored the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He slowly stood up and said to him, “Open your eyes and watch carefully.”

After saying those words, Ying Mingchao’s body started to emit a dark green radiance.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

The dark green radiance started to spin like a whirlwind. With Ying Mingchao as the eye of the storm, the dark green radiance started to sweep forth.

Wherever it passed, everything was destroyed. In merely an instant, the entire Kong Heavenly Clan was razed to the ground.

“No!”

“Nooo!!”

“Noooooooo!!!”

The Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out an incomparably furious roar.

Not only was his roar filled with anger, it was also filled with grief.

The reason for that was because the Kong Heavenly Clan that was originally filled with countless buildings, a majestic atmosphere and had resembled a paradise on earth, then it had been turned into a hell on earth.

Thick smoke covered the entire region. It was smoke from the destroyed buildings. Even with multiple layers of spirit formations, they were unable to withstand the might of Ying Mingchao's attack.

Beneath the rubble of the buildings were countless corpses. Regardless of whether they were men, women, young or old, they were all dead.

Apart from the people that had escaped the Kong Heavenly Clan earlier, Ying Mingchao's attack left a destructive impact upon the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“This...”

The impact of Ying Mingchao's attack was simply too great. Even Chu Feng felt muddle-headed.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes again, he discovered the current state of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, Chu Feng suddenly recalled the scene of the extermination of the Chu Family.

However, the Chu Family was merely a small family. As for the Kong Heavenly Clan, it was a colossus.

All those lives were instantly obliterated. The degree of destruction was hard to believe.

“They brought it upon themselves,” Zi Xunyi said to Chu Feng.

It turned out that Zi Xunyi had stood before Chu Feng to block Ying Mingchao's attack. Otherwise, even Chu Feng might not have survived the impact of that attack.

“I'll kill you!!!”

Suddenly, a body of light shot out from the devastated remains of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

That body of light was golden, and was flickering with enormous power.

Furthermore, that body of light had the same appearance as the original appearance of the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. From his expression, Chu Feng was able to tell how furious the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was.

It was understandable. Although the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief possessed a very bad moral character, he was someone who valued his clan enormously.

Else, he would not have been willing to sacrifice his own life for his clan.

Yet now, his clan was gone. The thing that he wanted to protect the most was gone.

He now had nothing left. Thus, how could he not be furious?

“Paaa~~~”

However, faced with the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief filled with murderous desire, Ying Mingchao merely pushed forth his palm and grabbed the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief by the throat.

With merely a single clench of Ying Mingchao's palm, the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief reacted as if his life had been captured.

Although rage and murderous desire still filled his face, his aura was much inferior to before.

“Go and accompany your clansmen in death,” After saying those

word, Ying Mingchao tightly clenched his grasp.

“Bang.” The body of light that the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had turned into shattered into pieces.

Following that, the aura of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief also disappeared.

He had died. Following that muffled explosion, he was utterly killed.

At that moment, Ying Mingchao seemed to have regained his calm. He took a glance at his surroundings. From his eyes, a trace of regret could be seen.

That was understandable. Ying Mingchao was not an evildoer. If his head had not been filled with rage earlier, he would not have killed so many innocents.

Innocent, of course they were innocent. Regardless of what their Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had done, regardless of how many evildoers there were in the Kong Heavenly Clan, it remained that there were still good individuals in the Kong Heavenly Clan, and even many newly-born children.

They had all definitely died innocently.

However, the world of martial cultivators was cruel. The weak were prey to the strong, and battles of grudges were common things.

Strength was everything in the world of martial cultivators. When the weak died, they had no way to argue for justifications.

Today, the Kong Heavenly Clan was defeated. As such, the calamity of a clan extermination arrived upon them.

However, what about over a thousand years ago?

When Ying Mingchao was defeated, what happened to his Hero City?

Chu Feng was able to very well imagine how Hero City had also

suffered the calamity of utter elimination back then.

Although he felt slightly regretful, Ying Mingchao did not linger there forever. Instead, he hurriedly arrived beside Zi Xunyi.

“Xunyi, are you alright?”

“Quickly, take this medicinal pellet. Let me help you heal your injuries.”

Ying Mingchao immediately supported Zi Xunyi. Furthermore, he handed her a medicinal pellet and helped her swallow it. Then, waves of gentle spirit power began to flow from his palm into Zi Xunyi’s body.

Sure enough, Ying Mingchao was extremely worried for Zi Xunyi.

However, Zi Xunyi swung her body and struggled free from Ying Mingchao.

“Xunyi, are you still angry at me?” Ying Mingchao asked nervously.

“Mingchao, I came to save you today of my own accord.”

“However, Zhenping was unrelated to this.”

“I’m sorry, I cannot meet you again.”

“You also do not have to come find me again.”

“From this point onward, we are even now.”

As Zi Xunyi spoke, she lifted up Xuelin Zhenping’s corpse.

# Chapter 2570 - Blue Gown Appearing On The Stage

---

“Xunyi, wait.”

Ying Mingchao hurriedly moved before Zi Xunyi to stop her.

At that moment, he had a lot of things that he wanted to say. However, as he saw Zi Xunyi, as he saw Xuelin Zhenping’s corpse that she was carrying in her hands, Ying Mingchao was unable to utter a single word.

However, Ying Mingchao did not wish for Zi Xunyi to leave. The reason for that was because he knew that if she were to leave now, they would never meet again.

Thus, Ying Mingchao clenched his teeth and said, “Xunyi, I am regretful. I should not have sought after fame and riches. I should not have been infatuated with martial cultivation.”

“My decision back then was wrong. Could you please give me another chance?”

“Xunyi, let us leave together. I will follow you wherever you go. I will never leave you for the rest of my life.”

Ying Mingchao spoke those words very emotionally. He was not lying; those words were spoken from the bottom of his heart.

However, he spoke those words in a slightly timid manner. Perhaps he was scared, scared of being rejected by Zi Xunyi after speaking his inner feelings.

Zi Xunyi stood there stunned. Chu Feng was able to see that her eyes had turned slightly red. Then, two lines of tears rolled down her cheeks.

She was crying. She was crying so much that her body was twitching.



One could imagine what sort of struggle she was going through in her current state of mind.

The man before her was the man that she had loved deeply for over a thousand years. He was the person that she had wanted to spend the rest of her life with the most.

However, she was unable to let go of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. Although she did not love the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief, she felt deep guilt for him.

After a long moment of silence, Zi Xunyi said, "If you really care about my feelings, let me go."

She said those words with a smile on her face. Her eyes were also looking at Ying Mingchao.

While her smile might be forced, it did seem like she had managed to let go of something.

As a spectator, Chu Feng was able to see the situation between Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao more clearly. As such, he was able to tell that Zi Xunyi had forced that smile.

However, being put on the spot, Ying Mingchao started to hesitate. He naturally cared about Zi Xunyi's feelings. Thus, he did not wish to go against her desires, nor did he wish to force her.

Thus, he stood to the side and opened up a path for Zi Xunyi.

He handed a communication talisman to Zi Xunyi and said, "Keep it with you. If you are to encounter any trouble, notify me."

"There's no need," After Zi Xunyi said those words, she soared into the sky with Xuelin Zhenping's corpse in hand. She had left.

Ying Mingchao continued to stand there. He did not even move in the slightest. His hand with the communication talisman was still extended.

After a long time...

"Paa~~~"

“Paa~~~”

“Paa~~~”

.....

Right at that moment, a series of sharp and clear claps suddenly sounded.

Turning toward the claps, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed.

A figure was standing in the direction where the claps had sounded from.

Although that individual was clearly standing there, Chu Feng did not notice him at all. If it weren’t for the sudden claps, Chu Feng would have had no idea that there was actually someone standing there.

As for the reason why Chu Feng was so astonished, it was not because that man was extremely powerful. Rather, it was because that man was wearing a blue gown.

That blue gown was exactly the same as the blue gown of the mysterious individual described by Kong Doumoyuan.

“That was truly quite an emotional and passionate scene.”

“That was most definitely the most emotional and passionate love triangle that I’ve ever seen in my life.”

“Two men both loved one woman so much. Unfortunately, in the end, neither man managed to obtain her.”

“Tragic, truly tragic. Pitiful, truly pitiful.”

The mysterious blue-gowned individual spoke insipidly. It was as if he had just witnessed a great show, and was giving his evaluation.

“Courting death!”

Ying Mingchao was immediately enraged upon hearing those

words. He shot forth his palm, and Immortal-level martial power soon exploded in the direction of that mysterious blue-gowned individual.

“With how furious you are, your actions could be said to be pardonable. After all, if my woman were to run away with another man, I too would be furious.”

At that moment, the voice of that mysterious blue-gowned individual sounded again. When the energy ripples dispersed, Ying Mingchao revealed a surprised expression in his eyes.

That blue-gowned individual was still standing where he was. Furthermore, he was not injured in the slightest.

“Heeahh!!!”

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao soared into the sky. With his Coiling Dragon Heaven-fighting Halberd in hand, he slashed at that mysterious blue-gowned individual.

“Woosh~~~”

As for that mysterious blue-gowned individual, he merely swept his hand across the space before him, and Ying Mingchao who was emitting overwhelming oppressive might, reacted as if he had been restricted, and fell directly from the sky. Ying Mingchao was actually unable to move in the slightest.

Although he was extremely powerful, Ying Mingchao was actually powerless to even contend against that mysterious blue-gowned man.

“This guy.”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown. As he had guessed, that mysterious blue-gowned man was extremely powerful.

He was so powerful that there was no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that could contend against him. He must have been an expert from the Upper Realms.

For experts like him, they were beings akin to gods in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They were truly individuals capable of moving the clouds and summoning the rain with a flip of their hands. After all, there was simply no one capable of contending against him there.

It was as if a fierce tiger had arrived within a group of sheep. That tiger could do whatever it wished to the sheep.

“Young man, it is fine to be furious. However, if you want to unleash your fury on someone, you must first find the right target. You should be glad that this senior of yours possesses a good temperament. Otherwise... you would already be dead,” That blue-gowned man said to Ying Mingchao.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng asked, “Why are you aiming to kill me?”

He knew very well that the target of that blue-gowned individual was not Ying Mingchao. Rather, it was him.

“You’re quite smart,” The blue-gowned individual cast his gaze onto Chu Feng. There was a trace of oppressiveness in his gaze.

“Let me ask you a question: is your father called Chu Xuanyuan?” The blue-gowned man asked.

“Chu Xuanyuan?”

Chu Feng’s heart tightened. Sure enough, that blue-gowned individual had come for him. Merely, Chu Feng did not expect that it was related to his father.

“He is not Chu Xuanyuan’s son. He merely has the same name as Chu Xuanyuan’s son.”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded. Then, a figure appeared before Chu Feng.

It was the Golden Crane True Immortal. The person that had suddenly appeared was the Golden Crane True Immortal.

“Oh, then I have made an error,” The blue-gowned individual said with a beaming smile. As he spoke, he also released Ying Mingchao.

“Didn’t you hear that Chu Xuanyuan’s son already died? Even if he is alive, he would not have a Heavenly Bloodline,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Haha, of course I knew that. It’s nothing too serious, I merely dislike that name,” That blue-gowned individual said.

“You should leave this place. Otherwise... do not blame me if I am to inform your master about this,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Golden Crane True Immortal, don’t you go around starting rumors and creating troubles. I have never once gone against the wishes of my lord,” That blue-gowned man said.

“Then what happened to him?” The Golden Crane True Immortal looked to Ying Mingchao who was still lying on the ground.

“He attacked me. I couldn’t possibly stand here and allow myself to be attacked, no? Moreover, have a look, have I injured him in the slightest?” Blue Gown argued.

“Leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm immediately. You are not allowed to create trouble for Chu Feng again. Otherwise... I will definitely not let you get away,” The Golden Crane True Immortal spoke seriously.

“Don’t worry, I’ll leave right now. This lousy place is not fun to be in, in the slightest. However, there’s quite a lot of trash here.”

As he said those words, that Blue Gown took a glance at Ying Mingchao.

“Hahaha...”

Then, he let out a laugh as he began to walk toward the distance.

Although he was merely walking, each footstep took him tens of thousands of meters. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared without a trace.

However, his laughter continued to echo. It was very mocking.

That said, it was true. Before him, Chu Feng and the others were akin to trash.

# Chapter 2571 - Father's Enemies

---

“Let’s talk elsewhere,” The Golden Crane True Immortal looked to Chu Feng. As he spoke, he waved his sleeve.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt that the surrounding scenery was rapidly changing.

When everything returned to normal, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that he had arrived at a different place. He was within a forest, and very far away from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

“Are you alright?” The Golden Crane True Immortal asked Chu Feng.

“I’m fine,” Chu Feng shook his head. Then, he asked the Golden Crane True Immortal, “Senior, you know that person?”

“Mn,” The Golden Crane True Immortal nodded. Then, he said, “You don’t have to ask about him. In the future, he will no longer cause trouble for you.”

“But, why did he decide to target me? I simply do not even know him,” Chu Feng said.

“If a reason must be said, then it’s because you’re a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline and... named Chu Feng,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“What’s wrong with that?”

Chu Feng asked in a probing manner. He wanted to know very much... exactly what sort of conflict that mysterious blue-gowned individual had with his father.

The reason for that was because he already knew that that mysterious blue-gowned individual had targeted him because of his father.

“He asked you whether you are Chu Xuanyuan’s son earlier. As for that man by the name of Chu Xuanyuan, he brought an

ineradicable humiliation upon that man.”

“He harbored hard feelings because of that. That is all,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Chu Feng, it seems that your father has a lot of enemies,” Her Lady Queen said with a smile on her face.

“That’s right,” Chu Feng echoed in agreement. However, Chu Feng did not feel fear because of that. Rather, he felt excitement, and even pride.

Those were all enemies of his father. Furthermore, they had all suffered defeat by his father’s hand. As such, it meant that his father was very strong.

To have such a strong father, Chu Feng would naturally be proud.

“Senior, in that case, were you in the Kong Heavenly Clan earlier the entire time?”

“Did you witness all that happened earlier?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

He felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal should not know of his whereabouts, and should not know that he was heading to the Kong Heavenly Clan today.

Chu Feng felt that the Golden Crane True Immortal must’ve investigated and found that Blue Gown was planning to harm him. Thus, fearing that Blue Gown would attack him, he had been secretly monitoring that Blue Gown’s movements. Chu Feng felt that to be the reason why the Golden Crane True Immortal was there.

If that was the case, then the Golden Crane True Immortal should have arrived even before him.

“Mn, I followed Blue Gown here.”

“However, Chu Feng, I hope that you will not blame me. We



from the Upper Realms should not be involved with matters of the Ordinary Realm.”

“Moreover, the vast Outer World is a boundlessly large place. Slaughters and massacres are happening all over the place. If one needs to prevent them everytime one encountered them, then one would have no time to do anything else.”

“While it is true that those Kong Heavenly Clansmen died somewhat innocently, that is their fate of being born to the Kong Heavenly Clan,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, you do not have to think too much about it. This Chu Feng understands your hidden difficulties.”

Although the Golden Crane True Immortal had looked on without doing anything as Ying Mingchao razed the Kong Heavenly Clan to the ground when he could have saved those innocent Kong Heavenly Clansmen, Chu Feng did not blame the Golden Crane True Immortal.

After all, everyone had their own decisions. Chu Feng did not possess the qualifications to demand that others do what he wanted.

“Actually, it is perfect timing that I encountered you here today. Otherwise, I would have made plans to come find you,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, is there something that you need me for?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am going to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“Senior, you’re planning to leave? Where are you going?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have yet to decide upon where I’m going. In short, I do not know when we will meet again.”

“That said, you do not have to worry about Wang Qiang either. I have set up a spirit formation around him. That spirit formation can only be undone from within. As for undoing it from the outside, there is no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that is capable of that.”

“Thus, nothing will happen to Wang Qiang before he completely awakens.”

“Take this. With this, you will be able to move that spirit formation elsewhere,” The Golden Crane True Immortal handed a title plate to Chu Feng.

That title plate was very special. It was formed with spirit power. Rather than saying that it was a title plate, it would be more accurate to call it a key.

“Thank you senior. This junior will forever remember the assistance that senior has provided us,” Chu Feng said.

The Golden Crane True Immortal sighed and said, “Don’t mention it. If it wasn’t for the fact that I grew greedy back then and demanded that you help me retrieve the God Bestowment Title Plate, your spirit power would not have been injured,” When mentioning that, the Golden Crane True Immortal revealed an ashamed expression.

“Chu Feng, when do you plan to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? With your current cultivation, you are capable of journeying to the Upper Realms.”

“Although the Upper Realms are dangerous, there are more opportunities. With your talent, courage and insight, the speed of your progress will greatly surpass wasting your time here.”

“How about you leave together with me?” The Golden Crane True Immortal suddenly asked.

“Doesn’t the Upper Realm’s Stairway to Heaven possess a cultivation requirement? My cultivation is clearly insufficient,”

Chu Feng said with a light smile.

He knew that there were many Stairways to Heaven in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. They were all entrances to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

However, there was a cultivation requirement to enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. That is, one must be a True Immortal.

“The requirement is relative. If this old man is to accompany you, you do not need to reach the True Immortal realm to enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” The Golden Crane True Immortal said.

“This junior appreciates senior’s kind intentions. Merely, this junior still has some business that he needs to attend to. Before finishing those things, I will not be leaving here.”

“Furthermore, I have yet to settle the grudge between the Zhou Heavenly Clan and myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. To be honest, I am not too worried about you. After all, there will always be disputes wherever there are cultivators. Regardless of whether it is the Upper Realms, the Ordinary Realms or even the Lower Realms, nowhere is absolutely safe.”

“That said, martial cultivators need to face difficulties head-on. They need to mature through battles. Only by surviving their battles, grudges and grievances can they distinguish themselves and reach new heights.”

After the Golden Crane True Immortal said those words, the gaze with which he looked to Chu Feng started to change. “I think very highly of you. I believe that this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will not be the pinnacle of your journey. As for the Upper Realms, they too will not be the pinnacle of your journey. In fact, not even the Starfields will be the pinnacle of your journey.”

“This junior will do his best to not disappoint senior,” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, you will definitely not disappoint me,” The Golden Crane True Immortal laughed out loud. Then, he said, “Let me bring you back. That person... might need your consolation.”

As the Golden Crane True Immortal spoke, he waved his sleeve. After the change to the surrounding scenery stopped, Chu Feng once again returned to the Kong Heavenly Clan.

The Golden Crane True Immortal did not reveal himself. Merely, his voice continued to echo in Chu Feng’s ears.

“Little friend Chu Feng, farewell.”

“I hope to meet you again in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

Only Chu Feng was able to hear this voice.

.....

“He left just like that? What if your father’s enemy hasn’t left, and is still planning to attack you?”

Her Lady Queen was a bit worried. As for the person she was worried about, it was naturally that mysterious blue-gowned individual.

“If he had wanted to kill me, he could very well kill me directly. There’s no reason for him to go through all the trouble.”

“There must be some sort of reason as to why he cannot personally attack the people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and personally kill me.”

“Moreover, even if he hasn’t left, there’s nothing that can be done about it. If it’s a blessing, then it will not be a disaster. If it’s a disaster, then I will not be able to avoid it. Regardless of what it might be, I must still face it.”

“Otherwise, why would I have come out to temper myself? Wouldn’t it be fine if I had just stayed beside my father?” Chu Feng said.

“Very well, this Queen is fond of your temperament,” Her Lady

Queen smiled in satisfaction. Then, she said, “It would seem that man really does need your consolation.”

The man that Her Lady Queen spoke of was naturally Ying Mingchao.

Ying Mingchao was currently sitting on the ground. There were several hundred jugs of wine placed around him. The majority of them were empty.

Likely, these wines were obtained from the Cosmos Sacks of the dead.

“Brother Chu Feng, so you’ve returned. Come, come, come... accompany big brother in drinking,” Ying Mingchao burst into laughter upon seeing Chu Feng.

Chu Feng walked over to Ying Mingchao and said, “Senior, Senior Zi Xunyi possesses her own difficulties too.”

Ying Mingchao sighed, “Don’t address me as senior. I, Ying Mingchao, was only able to escape because of your assistance.”

“From today on, we shall be brothers. You, Chu Feng, are my brother. If anyone dares to touch you, I will extinguish their entire family.”

“Hahaha... come, let’s drink.” The smell of alcohol filled Ying Mingchao. It seemed that he was truly drunk.

However, with his cultivation, how could he possibly be drunk?

Perhaps this was what they meant when they said that one could intoxicate oneself even if wine would not. Ying Mingchao must be feeling very pained in his heart.

After all, he had finally managed to escape and meet the person that he had yearned for day and night.

Yet, after meeting her, they ended up being separated forever.

The dream that he had had for over a thousand years had been shattered in an instant.

Pain, how could he not feel pain?

No matter how strong his cultivation was, he was still human.

“Very well, I’ll drink with you.”

Chu Feng knew that all consolations would be useless at a time like this. Thus... he decided to drink with Ying Mingchao to their heart’s delight.

“Who is it?!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng cast an ice-cold gaze toward the nearby sky.

“Get the hell down here!”

As for Ying Mingchao, he was truly overbearing. With a wave of his sleeve, a figure appeared in the sky and smashed onto the ground. The powerful impact created a deep crater in the ground.

# Chapter 2572 - The Arrival Of Calamity

---

“It’s you?” Upon seeing this individual, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

Chu Feng knew this man. He was Grandmaster Prophet.

“It’s actually this old codger. Chu Feng, kill him. If it wasn’t for his crazy prophecies, the Kong Heavenly Clan wouldn’t have tried to kill you for no reason.”

“All these things wouldn’t have happened either,” Her Lady Queen said angrily.

“Why are you here?” Chu Feng narrowed his brows and asked coldly.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I know that you harbor a grudge against this old man. However, this old man was forced without choice too.”

“This old man has been under the control of the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief the entire time. He possessed information that could have been used against me. If I did not make prophecies for him, he would have swept my reputation away completely,” Grandmaster Prophet spoke remorsefully.

“What sort of information that can be used against you?” Chu Feng asked.

“This...” Grandmaster Prophet started to hesitate.

“Seems like you’ve done shameful things before too,” Chu Feng sneered.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that the so-called information that could be used against Grandmaster Prophet must be some sort of shady matter that was discovered by the Kong Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“It is a mistake that I made in my youth. I have regretted it the

entire time,” Grandmaster Prophet said with a sigh.

“Have you deliberately come here to apologize to me?”

“There’s no need. You can go, I will not kill you,” Chu Feng said.

“I have indeed come here to apologize to you. However, I also have an important matter that I needed to inform you of,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“What sort of important matter?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, have a look,” With his Prophecy Crystal Ball in hand, Grandmaster Prophet walked over to Chu Feng.

“That is...” Chu Feng’s expression changed upon seeing Grandmaster Prophet’s Prophecy Crystal Ball. He was able to see that within the Prophecy Crystal Ball was a world.

Certain locations of that world felt so very familiar to him.

Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The world within the Prophecy Crystal Ball was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, corpses filled the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm within the Prophecy Crystal Ball. The earth was completely withered, and all living things had turned to ash. In fact, Chu Feng was able to feel a stifling sensation even though he was seeing the world through the Prophecy Crystal Ball.

“What is going on?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is the prophecy that I’ve just made. My prophecy predicted that in the near future, a great calamity will befall the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“This great calamity will befall everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Not only will everyone lose their lives, but the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm itself will also turn into a barren land.”

“As for the person who is capable of preventing this calamity, he



is right here,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Who?” Chu Feng asked.

“There are only the three of us alive here. With my cultivation, it will naturally not be me.”

“Thus, it will either be you or Lord Ying Mingchao.”

“One among you will be able to prevent this calamity,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Enough of your nonsense. I do not believe your bullshit prophecy,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I am really not deceiving you. Even if you do not believe me, you must believe this Prophecy Crystal Ball. This Prophecy Crystal Ball is something given to me by a divine individual. All these years, it has never once prophesied wrongly.”

“Little friend Chu Feng, you must definitely believe me. You must prepare with Lord Ying Mingchao. Whether or not the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will be able to survive will all depend on the two of you,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“If you’re so scared of death, you can go and hide in the Upper Realms,” Chu Feng mocked.

At that moment, Grandmaster Prophet revealed a wry smile. He said, “I do want to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Merely, this old man’s cultivation is insufficient. Even though I want to go there, I will not be able to.”

“Sure enough, you are a craven and cowardly individual. Scram immediately.”

Chu Feng cast a side-eye at that Grandmaster Prophet. He discovered that Grandmaster Prophet simply did not possess the demeanor of a Grandmaster.

He was merely a selfish individual who held no regard for others. Even the fact that he came to tell Chu Feng about the prophecy was

because he himself did not wish to suffer a calamity.

A person like him was truly a hypocrite.

“Little friend Chu Feng, I know that you harbor hard feelings against this old man. However, this old man is truly only calling this matter to your attention out of kind intentions. You must definitely make preparations.”

After saying those words, Grandmaster Prophet looked to the intoxicated Ying Mingchao, “You must definitely inform Lord Ying Mingchao about this too.”

After saying those words, Grandmaster Prophet soared into the sky. With his Prophecy Crystal Ball in hand, he left.

After Grandmaster Prophet left, Chu Feng started to ponder. He suddenly felt that Grandmaster Prophet’s words didn’t seem to be lies.

A calamity. What sort of calamity would it be?

Who was capable of bringing a calamity to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?

Could it be that Blue Gown?

Chu Feng thought about it for some time. However, apart from those from the Upper Realms, he didn’t seem to be able to think of anyone else capable of bringing a calamity to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, suddenly, Chu Feng looked to his Evil God Sword that he was still holding in his hand. Although the Evil God Sword was calm at that moment Chu Feng knew very well how frightening it was.

He knew that the Evil God Sword was a potential menace that could bring about a calamity to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Upon thinking of that point, Chu Feng put his Evil God Sword

away.

“Brother Chu Feng, quickly, come, come drink.”

Right at that moment, Ying Mingchao arrived beside Chu Feng with two jugs of wine in his hands.

Seeing the current Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng felt sorry for him.

From the battle between Ying Mingchao and the Kong Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief earlier, Chu Feng was able to tell how much of a grand and imposing individual Ying Mingchao was.

He... was truly a great hero.

However, the current Ying Mingchao was so very haggard and disheveled. He was in enormous pain because of his beloved woman.

Sure enough, pain to one's heart greatly surpassed pain to one's body.

“Come, let's drink.”

Chu Feng received the jug of wine from Ying Mingchao and toasted it with the jug of wine Ying Mingchao was holding. Then, he drained the entire jug with a single gulp.

Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao drank in the Kong Heavenly Clan's ruins for an entire day and night.

However, as the Kong Heavenly Clan was razed to the ground, there would sooner or later be people who would discover the matter.

As such, Chu Feng felt that it was unsuitable to continue to stay there and drink. Thus, he brought the still-intoxicated Ying Mingchao somewhere else.

In the days that followed Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao indulged in only one thing -- drinking.

However, Chu Feng was never intoxicated the entire time. With

his body's composition, ordinary poisons were simply unable to do anything to him. This was the case for even alcohol.

However, Ying Mingchao was drunk the entire time. He truly drank too much. Furthermore, he was growing more and more drunk.

Chu Feng wanted to urge him to stop drinking. However, he didn't know how to start.

This was especially true when Ying Mingchao started calling for Zi Xunyi nonstop in his sleep. This made Chu Feng feel even more sorry for him.

With the situation at hand, Chu Feng thought that the only way to help Ying Mingchao would be to bring him and wander around to places without signs of human activity, to places where mutual deception was not present, places without the struggles of martial cultivators, yet possessing beautiful scenery.

He hoped that the various sceneries of the world would gradually wake Ying Mingchao.

Chu Feng did not have an extravagant hope in being able to have Ying Mingchao let go of Zi Xunyi completely, because he knew that something like that would be impossible.

That said, Chu Feng hoped that Ying Mingchao would be able to pull himself together. After all, no matter what sort of setback one were to face, one must still live one's life properly.

“What happened over there?”

Chu Feng was bringing Ying Mingchao toward a lake. On the way there, Chu Feng passed by a city.

Although they were still far from the city, he was able to see that the city was filled with corpses.

Actually, massacring everyone in a captured city was a common occurrence. The world of martial cultivators was cruel like that.

However, the massacre of that city was somewhat strange. The reason for that was because practically all the people in the city died from their bodies exploding. As such, the reek of blood filled the entire place. It was truly a nauseating sensation.

However, it was not that there were no corpses in the city. Merely, the corpses in the city would make one's blood run cold. The reason for that was because they were all infants.

Furthermore, those infant corpses all possessed an identical characteristic. That is, they had all died miserably. They were all completely withered like mummies.

If one must describe their corpses, then it would best be described that their corpses greatly resembled the five Zhou Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders that had died in the Kong Heavenly Clan that day.

Those infants had all been refined to death.

Furthermore, they were refined alive.

“How could this be?”

It was unknown whether it was because he was roused by the pungent smell of blood or by the corpses of those infants, but Ying Mingchao actually woke up.

“This!!!” Upon properly seeing the corpses of those infants, Ying Mingchao revealed a startled expression.

Those were infants. They were newborn infants that had yet to experience the world, infants that did not know anything at all.

Yet, just like that, they were refined alive. Before their death, they suffered unimaginable torture.

# Chapter 2573 - What Are You?

---

“Truly animals!” Ying Mingchao shouted furiously.

“If my guess is correct, this should have been done by the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Feng said.

Based on the information that he knew so far, the first thing that came to his mind was the Infant Soul Sect.

“The Infant Soul Sect is still in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, still not eliminated?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“No, they have hidden themselves extremely well the entire time. In fact, many people do not even know of the Infant Soul Sect anymore,” Chu Feng said.

“Damn it! What have those so-called righteous powers been doing all these years?!”

Ying Mingchao revealed a furious expression. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “Actually, back then, I established Hero City precisely to eliminate that Infant Soul Sect. Merely, I never expected to be plotted against by the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan not long afterward.”

“I had thought that the Infant Soul Sect would’ve already been wiped out after all these years have passed. Never did I expect that even though the four tier one powers are all still here, not a single one of them has bothered to do the righteous thing.”

“Senior, do you not think that you should accomplish your aspiration that you were unable to accomplish back then?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

After seeing the scene before them, Chu Feng felt even more firmly that the Infant Soul Sect should be eliminated immediately.

Although Chu Feng wanted to personally eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, as it was a mission that his father had entrusted him

with, he could not find any reason to allow the Infant Soul Sect to continue to exist, to continue to sin.

Thus, even if he was unable to accomplish the task entrusted to him by his father, Chu Feng still hoped that the Infant Soul Sect would be eliminated as soon as possible, so as to prevent other innocent infants from suffering such a calamity.

While he was able to tolerate casualties of innocents caused by disputes between martial cultivators, he was unable to tolerate miserably killing innocent children for the sake of increasing one's cultivation.

This was something that the entire world of martial cultivation should not tolerate.

As of now, Ying Mingchao was the person with the greatest capability in being able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to join hands with Ying Mingchao. He wanted to borrow Ying Mingchao's strength to eradicate the Infant Soul Sect, this root of countless evil in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao closed his eyes and started to take deep breaths.

It was only after a long time that he gradually calmed himself. When he opened his eyes again, his gaze was no longer sunken. Instead, it was brimming with light.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao removed the Cosmos Sack on his waist and tossed it to Chu Feng.

“I’ve said it before. As long as you managed to free me, I would repay you for your help. Those are all yours,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Senior, there’s no need for this. I did not save you for the sake of obtaining reciprocation from you. It was merely that since I accepted your request, I must abide by it,” Chu Feng planned to

hand the Cosmos Sack back to Ying Mingchao.

“If you want me to eliminate the Infact Soul Sect, you’ll have to accept it,” Ying Mingchao said.

Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words. Then, he smiled and shook his head, “Senior, it seems that you have given me a reason that I cannot refuse.”

“In that case, just accept it. Accept it, and then we can re-establish Hero City.”

“I believe that it should be impossible for all of my brothers from back then to have been killed by the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clans. They must still be alive in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. I am going to recall them.”

“This time around, I am not going to wait. I will unite all of the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to eliminate that Infant Soul Sect as quickly as possible,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Very well, I will accompany you in this,” Chu Feng said.

After that, Ying Mingchao returned to the former site of Hero City.

As they had anticipated, the city had already been razed to the ground. The formerly scenic Hero City had turned into a barren land.

There was not a single trace of human activity in the surrounding thousands of miles. No one dared to appear there. They were afraid that the people from the Kong and Zhou Heavenly Clan would mistake them to be remnants from Hero City and slaughter them.

However, both Ying Mingchao and Chu Feng were world spiritists.

With their abilities, rebuilding a city was a very simple task.

In accordance with his memories, Ying Mingchao reconstructed



Hero City.

However, compared to the original Hero City, a glorious palace was added to the main city.

That glorious palace was personally constructed by Ying Mingchao for Chu Feng to use.

Although Chu Feng had mentioned to him that he did not plan to join Hero City, Ying Mingchao did not mind.

Chu Feng did not have to join Hero City. However, the gates to Hero City would forever be open to Chu Feng. Hero City would forever be a home to Chu Feng.

.....

One thing worthy of mentioning was that not long after Hero City was reconstructed, people started coming to Hero City.

Some of them were remnants that had escaped the destruction of the Hero City back then. Others were people unrelated to Hero City who came just to enjoy the excitement.

From inquiring those people, Chu Feng came to know that they had all come upon hearing the news that Ying Mingchao was still alive.

Not only did they know that Ying Mingchao was plotted against by the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan over a thousand years ago, they also knew that Ying Mingchao had completely wiped out the Kong Heavenly Clan.

All those rumors were beneficial to Ying Mingchao.

Not only did they return his innocence that was stained for over a thousand years, the rumors stated that Ying Mingchao was forced to eliminate the Kong Heavenly Clan.

As for the person who was spreading the rumor, it was a person that held an extremely esteemed status in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm -- Grandmaster Prophet.

As Grandmaster Prophet was the one spreading the rumors, everyone believed him.

“That Grandmaster Prophet truly knows how to flatter someone.”

“Seeing that both the Kong Heavenly Clan and Zhou Heavenly Clan are done for, he immediately started hugging Ying Mingchao’s thighs,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Perhaps it might truly be as he said, and he did what he did because of hidden difficulties?”

When mentioning Grandmaster Prophet, Chu Feng involuntarily recalled the prophecy that he spoke of.

When Chu Feng recalled the scene in Grandmaster Prophet’s Prophecy Crystal Ball, he felt a slight familiarity.

Over the days, Chu Feng had been pondering the entire time. In the end, he came to a conclusion that the frightening aura he felt from the Prophecy Crystal Ball greatly resembled that of the Evil God Sword.

Thus, Chu Feng felt slightly afraid. He feared that the person who would ultimately destroy the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be him. Even if he did not intend it, it remained that the Evil God Sword was his possession.

After that, Chu Feng increasingly felt that the power of the Evil God Sword must be used cautiously. Else, he might bring about an irreversible situation.

.....

That said, the current situation was better than Chu Feng had anticipated.

Ying Mingchao’s reputation was extremely good.

Even though he had disappeared for over a thousand years, and had massacred the entire Kong Heavenly Clan, not many people

blamed him. On the contrary, they chose to believe him. They all felt that he had been forced.

For people to trust a person this much, Chu Feng felt that this was most definitely some sort of charisma.

After that, more and more former members of Hero City began to return. There were also many newcomers joining Hero City out of admiration for Ying Mingchao.

Moreover, headmasters from various powers began to arrive at Hero City and started to request to become allies with the Hero City.

Actually, they all had only one purpose in mind. That was, they wanted to hug Ying Mingchao's thighs.

More and more people gathered in Hero City. The people capable of helping Ying Mingchao were also increasing nonstop. Gradually, Chu Feng started to have time for leisure.

With leisure time, Chu Feng did not choose to appreciate the achievements of those days. Instead, he chose to leave Hero City.

The reason for that was because he still had an important matter that he must attend to. That was, he needed to bring Wang Qiang to Hero City.

Chu Feng arrived at Mount Cloud Crane. The spirit formation around Mount Cloud Crane had been removed. Mount Cloud Crane had become a place that anyone could enter.

That said, while there were still people coming to visit Mount Cloud Crane out of admiration, no one dared to set foot onto it. They only dared to linger around outside Mount Cloud Crane.

They were all people that had come to seek the Golden Crane True Immortal. However, they were also afraid of the Golden Crane True Immortal. Thus, none of them dared to intrude upon Mount Cloud Crane without the Golden Crane True Immortal's permission.

Chu Feng entered Mount Cloud Crane. Then, going according to the directions given to him by the Golden Crane True Immortal, he soon discovered Wang Qiang in a cave.

Actually, one could not see Wang Qiang in the cave. There was only a single stone in that cave.

That stone was about twice the size of an ordinary coffin. However, it was not a coffin, but rather an oval-shaped rock.

Judging from its outward appearance, the rock did not appear to be special. It just looked like an ordinary mountain stone. At the very most, it was relatively more smooth than ordinary rocks.

However, when Chu Feng held the title plate given to him by the Golden Crane True Immortal, the title plate started to shine, and that rock also started shining.

The originally light yellow rock started turning transparent and dazzling like a crystal.

When that rock turned transparent, Chu Feng was able to see Wang Qiang.

Wang Qiang was lying in the center of that rock. At that moment, Wang Qiang had become extremely small. His size was only that of a pinkie finger.

However, Chu Feng knew that it was not Wang Qiang who had become small, but rather that stone contained an isolated space.

It was merely that Wang Qiang appeared to be very small inside of that isolated space.

Beside Wang Qiang sat the four mysterious yet powerful ferocious beasts.

Merely, compared to before, they seemed to be in better harmony with one another. Furthermore and most importantly, while holding the title plate in his hand, Chu Feng was able to feel Wang Qiang's current aura from the title plate.

Rank nine Martial Ancestor. Wang Qiang's current cultivation was actually that of a rank nine Martial Ancestor, the same as Chu Feng.

Seeing Wang Qiang within the stone, Chu Feng said with a light smile on his face, "Brother, exactly what are you?"

He was greatly looking forward to Wang Qiang waking up. He looked forward to finding out what sort of strength Wang Qiang would have.

Chu Feng firmly believed that Wang Qiang would become many times stronger than before upon awakening.

After all, the power within Wang Qiang had awakened.

# Chapter 2574 - Returning To The Hero City

---

By relying on the title plate given to him by the Golden Crane True Immortal, Chu Feng was able to move the spirit formation guarding Wang Qiang.

As for the safest place right now, it would naturally be Hero City.

Although there was an enormous difference in strength between Ying Mingchao and the experts from the Upper Realms, very few people would likely be able to defeat Ying Mingchao.

At the very least, no one from the four tier one powers would be able to defeat Ying Mingchao.

To be exact, only three tier one powers remained. They were the Immortal Sword School, the Buddha's Heavenly Temple, and the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

Ever since Ying Mingchao reappeared in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and reestablished Hero City, everyone felt that Hero City would become one of the most formidable powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Merely with Ying Mingchao alone, Hero City would be able to vie for supremacy in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

On the journey back, Chu Feng did not say anything...

When Chu Feng returned to Hero City, it was bustling with even more noise and excitement than when he had left.

Not only were more and more powers arriving at Hero City to request to become allies with it, but practically all of the remnants from the previous Hero City had returned.

At that moment Ying Mingchao was no longer the only True Immortal in Hero City. Chu Feng was able to sense three more True Immortal-level experts in Hero City apart from Ying Mingchao.

Chu Feng had never felt the auras of those three True Immortals before.

Thus, three True Immortals that he had never met before had arrived in the Hero City.

After Chu Feng finished settling Wang Qiang, he was called to Hero City's main palace by Ying Mingchao.

Inside the main palace hall, Chu Feng met with the former members of Hero City. At the same time, he also met those three True Immortals.

One of them wore pure white clothes. Although he had the appearance of a middle-aged man, as he had lived for over a thousand years, he gave off a very mature aura, a special sort of air. It was something that could only be obtained through trials and experience.

That person was not a former member of Hero City. Rather, he was a Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's genius.

When that genius was young, he had deeply admired Ying Mingchao, and had always wanted to join Hero City.

Merely, when he had just managed to attain success in his cultivation, Ying Mingchao suffered a calamity, and Hero City was subsequently destroyed.

Afterwards, he entered the mountains and started to seclude himself in closed-door training. In the thousand-plus years that Ying Mingchao was gone, no one knew of his existence. However, during that period of time, his cultivation had reached the True Immortal realm, becoming one of the peak experts in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Originally, he had planned to spend the rest of his life as a hermit until his death. However, upon hearing the news of Ying Mingchao being alive, he immediately rushed toward Hero City.

As he had been in closed-door training the entire time, practically

no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew of him.

However, his name would soon become renowned through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for that, it was for none other than the fact that he was a True Immortal.

After being introduced by Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng came to know that the man was called Li Haoyang.

Apart from Li Haoyang, the other two True Immortals were former members of Hero City.

Like Li Haoyang, the two of them were both rank one True Immortals. However, they were much older than Li Haoyang.

They were both people that had lived for thousands of years. One of them had the appearance of a white-haired old man. He gave off an extraordinary air. He wore a snow white gown, and held a jade white scepter. His appearance truly resembled that of an actual immortal.

The title of 'True Immortal' was extremely fitting for him.

Compared to that old man, the other individual was the polar opposite of the title of 'True Immortal.'

Even though he was clearly an old monster that had lived for thousands of years, that person had the appearance of a youngster. His height was not even a [hundred and fifty centimeters](#). In fact, a childish nature filled his face. There was not the slightest trace of maturity from being alive for so long.

[150cm is around 4.9ft.]

Furthermore, it seemed that that man disliked Chu Feng a lot.

The people present, regardless of whether they were former members of Hero City or newly-joined members, all revealed a good-natured expression upon seeing Chu Feng.

They all knew that it was all thanks to Chu Feng that Ying Mingchao had managed to escape.



Ying Mingchao had been saying without the slightest hesitation to others that Chu Feng had saved him.

This was something that practically everyone knew. Thus... the people from Hero City all felt a great amount of respect toward Chu Feng.

However, that True Immortal with a youngster's appearance was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with hatred. It was as if Chu Feng owed him money, or had stolen something from him.

"Brother Chu Feng, let me introduce you. These two people are both my good brothers, and have gone through fire and water with me."

"This person here is Bai Liuxu," Ying Mingchao pointed to the white-clothed old man. Then, he pointed to the True Immortal with a youngster's appearance, "As for him, he's [Lil Ball](#)."

[Technically... little leather/rubber ball.]

"When Lil' Ball was young, he encountered a fortuitous meeting. It allowed his talent for martial cultivation to greatly increase. Yet, it made it so that his appearance remained unchanged. He will forever remain with a youngster's appearance."

"Furthermore, Lil' Ball has been with me since my bandit days. He is my sworn brother."

Ying Mingchao spoke with an especially intimate tone when introducing Lil' Ball. From this, it could be seen that the two of them possessed quite a deep relationship.

After that, Ying Mingchao began to introduce all the people present to Chu Feng one by one.

Then, Ying Mingchao walked over to Chu Feng. With a smile on his face, he said to the crowd, "As for this person, I believe I do not have to introduce him to everyone. He is my benefactor, the person that saved me, my brother Chu Feng."

“Brother Chu Feng’s name has already spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm when our Lord City Master was still trapped. Thus, this Bai Liuxu naturally knew of you already,” Bai Liuxu walked over to Chu Feng and actually half kneeled on the ground to express a grand salute to Chu Feng.

“Senior, what are you doing?” Chu Feng was greatly alarmed upon seeing this scene. He hurriedly moved forward to help Bai Liuxu back up.

However, that Bai Liuxu was unwilling to move in the slightest. He said to Chu Feng, “Our Lord City Master was harmed by crafty scoundrels. Had it not been for brother Chu Feng’s righteous rescue, we would have had no idea when we would be able to meet our Lord City Master again.”

“Brother Chu Feng, not only are you the savior of our Lord Clan Chief, but you are also the savior of our Hero City. I, Bai Liuxu, will never forget brother Chu Feng’s grace.”

It turned out that this Bai Liuxu made such a respectful gesture toward Chu Feng out of gratefulness toward Chu Feng for saving Ying Mingchao.

From that, it could be seen that he was not only loyal and devoted to Ying Mingchao, but he also feel great sentiment toward Ying Mingchao. Otherwise, he would not have done such a thing.

“I have also heard of Chu Feng’s distinguished name. You nearly extinguished the Kong Heavenly Clan by yourself. This one is truly in admiration.”

“Merely...” Right at that moment, that man by the name of Lil’ Ball began to walk toward Chu Feng.

Seeing the eccentric behavior of that Lil’ Ball, Chu Feng felt slightly annoyed. Thus, he said, “It would be fine to speak your mind without reservations.”

“Merely, you knew that my elder brother was trapped two years

ago. Why did you not save my elder brother two years ago?" Lil' Ball asked.

"What are you trying to say?" Chu Feng asked.

"Nothing much. I am merely skeptical of your rumored heaven-defying strength," Lil' Ball said to Chu Feng.

He was looking at Chu Feng with a gaze filled with contempt.

# Chapter 2575 - Zhou Heavenly Clan Exterminated

---

“Lil’ Ball, do not be rude toward Brother Chu Feng,” A voice containing slight anger sounded. It was Ying Mingchao.

“Big brother, I am also grateful toward Chu Feng for saving you. However, it is one thing to be grateful, and another thing to question his strength.”

After saying those words, Lil’ Ball looked around and said, “I believe I am not the only one present that questions Chu Feng’s strength.”

“We do not.”

“That’s right, you are the one who’s calling brother Chu Feng’s strength into question. Do not involve us in this matter.”

Hearing Lil’ Ball’s question, the crowd all waved their hands to voice their disapproval.

“Humph, you all know fully well in your hearts whether or not you actually question his strength,” Lil’ Ball sneered.

“This junior is a new member to Hero City. As such, I do not know whether or not I should say this,” Right at that moment, Li Haoyang suddenly spoke.

“If there’s something that you want to say, go ahead and say it. Why bother trying to be secretive?” Lil’ Ball felt that Li Haoyang was not going to say anything good about him. Thus, he revealed a displeased expression on his face.

“Brother Chu Feng, before your return, Lord City Master discussed with us that he wanted to make you Hero City’s Vice City Master,” Li Haoyang said to Chu Feng.

“Make me the Vice City Master?” Chu Feng’s expression changed upon hearing those words.

Firstly, with his strength, he felt that it was unsuitable for him to be the Vice City Master.

Secondly, he had never joined Hero City, since he had vowed to never join another power again.

Because of that, he had refused invitations from many powers. Thus, even though he was helping Hero City, Chu Feng was doing so out of friendship, and never with the intention of joining Hero City.

“As for Senior Ball, he was Hero City’s Vice City Master back then. As Lord Clan Chief is planning to hand the position of Vice City Master to brother Chu Feng, Senior Ball is likely feeling unreconciled. That is why he has decided to deliberately make things difficult for brother Chu Feng,” Li Haoyang continued.

“Ehh...” At that moment, the crowd all grew silent. Actually, even without Li Haoyang mentioning it, they too knew very well what was happening.

“It is not that I am feeling unreconciled. Merely, I remain unconvinced by him,” Lil’ Ball said.

“I, Ying Mingchao, have always been one to convince the masses with virtue. It is I who recommended Brother Chu Feng to be Hero City’s Vice City Master. However, it is also something that everyone has agreed upon. As such, why are you unconvinced?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“Big brother, I am not unconvinced with you. I am unconvinced with that Chu Feng. If he were stronger than me, I would not say anything. However, he is but a mere Martial Ancestor. Exactly what qualifies him to be the Vice City Master?” Lil’ Ball said.

Hearing those words, the expression of anger on Ying Mingchao’s face increased. He opened his mouth and planned to lash out at Lil’ Ball.

“Lord City Master, this subordinate has an important matter to

report to you!”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from outside the palace.

“Come in,” As Ying Mingchao spoke, he waved his sleeve, and the entrance to the palace that was sealed with spirit power opened.

After the entrance to the palace was opened, an old man could be seen half kneeling outside the entrance.

That old man possessed a cultivation of peak Martial Ancestor. Chu Feng recognized him. His name was Mo Xuwen. He was an old subordinate of Hero City.

Not long after Hero City was reconstructed, he returned to Hero City. He could be said to be among the first group of old subordinates to return.

“Xuwen, have you managed to scout out anything at the Zhou Heavenly Clan?” Ying Mingchao asked.

No wonder Ying Mingchao allowed Mo Xuwen to enter so frankly. It turned out that he had dispatched Mo Xuwen to scout out the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

“Lord City Master...” Mo Xuwen entered the palace hall. He was planning on speaking. However, when he saw that Chu Feng was within the palace hall, he immediately revealed a delighted expression. He said, “Brother Chu Feng, so you’ve already returned.”

“Since brother Chu Feng is here, I presume that Lord Clan Chief and everyone else already knows about this matter?”

“What is it?” Not only were the people inside the palace hall confused by Mo Xuwen’s words, but even Chu Feng was confused.

“Brother Chu Feng, you still haven’t mentioned this matter to Lord Clan Chief?” Mo Xuwen turned to ask Chu Feng.

“Xuwen, exactly what happened? Just speak directly,” Ying

Mingchao said.

“Lord Clan Chief, this subordinate left for the Zhou Heavenly Clan to scout whether or not the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had returned to the Zhou Heavenly Clan.”

“However, when this subordinate was journeying to the Zhou Heavenly Clan, I discovered that... the Zhou Heavenly Clan had already been extinguished by someone. The entire clan, apart from the old, weak and disabled, were all killed,” Mo Xuwen said.

“What? The Zhou Heavenly Clan has been entirely exterminated by someone?” The crowd were all greatly alarmed upon hearing those words.

“Do you know who did it?” Ying Mingchao asked.

Mo Xuwen did not answer immediately. Instead, he took a glance at Chu Feng.

“Tell me,” Ying Mingchao urged.

“I do not know who did it. However, there is a grand formation floating in the sky. That formation was set up with the blood of the Zhou Heavenly Clansmen. It took the form of nine large characters that hid the sky and covered the earth. Everyone in the surrounding hundred miles would be able to clearly see the characters,” Mo Xuwen said.

“What did it say?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“[This is the consequence of provoking Chu Feng](#),” Mo Xuwen said.

[This is nine characters in chinese... eight words in english.]

“Chu Feng?” At that moment, it was not only Mo Xuwen. Practically everyone present turned their gazes toward Chu Feng.

“Brother Chu Feng, you did that?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“It’s not me. You also know where I left to this time,” Chu Feng said.

“That’s right, it’s impossible for it to be you. The timing doesn’t match either. Exactly who did it?”

“Could someone be trying to protect you from the shadows, or could it be that someone is trying to frame you?” Ying Mingchao started to guess.

“Lord City Master, it is most definitely not to frame brother Chu Feng. Although the entire Zhou Heavenly Clan was massacred, the old, weak and disabled were all left alive.”

“If they wanted to frame brother Chu Feng, they would not have been so lenient as to leave those survivors behind. Instead, they should’ve been as cruel as possible. Furthermore, they would not leave behind those words. Instead, they should be leaving behind words that it was done by Chu Feng,” Mo Xuwen said.

“What you’ve said is indeed reasonable,” Ying Mingchao nodded. Then, he asked Chu Feng, “Brother Chu Feng, can you guess who did that?”

“I do have a person in mind. Merely, I am not certain,” Chu Feng said.

“Who?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“If the person who did that is a friend of mine, then I would only have a single person in mind -- Zhao Hong,” Chu Feng said. The only person he could think of was Zhao Hong.

“Zhao hong? Heh...” At that moment, that Lil Ball started laughing.

“What’s so funny?” Chu Feng asked in a slightly annoyed manner. The reason for that was because he was able to sense mockery in Lil Ball’s laughter.

“That friend of yours is truly capable. Knowing that the Utmost Exalted Elders from the Zhou Heavenly Clan had all left their clan, she decided to seize the opportunity to slaughter their entire clan, and even left behind those sort of words to threaten others. That is



truly the doing of a vile and lowly character,” Lil’ Ball said.

Right at that moment, Mo Xuwen said, “Lord Ball, what you’ve said is incorrect.”

“Although the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had not returned to the Zhou Heavenly Clan, the Zhou Heavenly Clan was still guarded by a True Immortal. Even that True Immortal was killed,”

“That True Immortal was killed?” Hearing those words, the expression of the crowd all changed.

At that moment, Lil’ Ball’s previously disdainful expression turned into one of awkwardness.

After all, in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, True Immortals were grand characters possessing enormous strength. Those capable of killing True Immortals should definitely not be trifled with.

That massacre was not one of taking advantage of another. Rather, it was truly done with one’s actual strength.

# Chapter 2576 - They're All Acquaintances

---

“It would seem that not only is brother Chu Feng exceptionally talented, but even brother Chu Feng’s friends are exceptional.”

“Truly, birds of a feather flock together. The friends of geniuses are also geniuses.”

At that moment, the crowd began to spout praises nonstop. No matter what, the Zhou Heavenly Clan and Kong Heavenly Clan were only able to trap Ying Mingchao and destroy Hero City by joining hands.

Although they had not planned to exterminate the entire Zhou Heavenly Clan, they also did not plan to spare the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

To take revenge against the Zhou Heavenly Clan was something that they had already been making plans for.

As for the current situation, it had saved them a lot of effort and time. As such, they would naturally rejoice.

“Exceptional? That’s more than exceptional, that person is simply stronger than Chu Feng.”

Lil Ball spoke eccentrically again.

Unlike others, he was not simply praising the person who extinguished the Zhou Heavenly Clan, he was mainly belittling Chu Feng.

“It is the first time that we’ve meet. Why are you so against me?” Finally, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, “Could it be that it really is because of the position of Vice City Master?”

“If that’s the case, I can tell you that I have no interest in the position of Vice City Master. I have never planned to join Hero City.”

“Brother Chu Feng still hasn’t joined Hero City?”

The crowd were all startled by Chu Feng's words.

They had originally thought that Chu Feng had already joined Hero City.

Never did they expect that not only had Chu Feng not joined Hero City, but he never planned to join Hero City to begin with.

If that was the case, wouldn't it mean that their discussions and agreement to have Chu Feng become the Vice City Master simply meaningless?

Lil Ball was also very surprised. However, his surprise only lasted for a short moment. The reason for that was because he did not believe Chu Feng.

Thus, he asked, "If you never planned to join Hero City, why did you build a palace especially for yourself in Hero City?"

"I am the one who built that palace for Brother Chu Feng. It was also true that he mentioned that he does not wish to join Hero City," Right at that moment, Ying Mingchao spoke.

"It's actually true?!"

Hearing those words, the crowd all sucked in a mouthful of cold air. With Ying Mingchao verifying it, this meant that the matter was real.

"Brother Chu Feng," Ying Mingchao looked to Chu Feng. Judging from his appearance, he seemed to want to persuade Chu Feng.

Chu Feng naturally knew what he wanted to say. He most definitely wanted to persuade him to join Hero City and become the Vice City Master.

However, Chu Feng was already determined. Thus, before Ying Mingchao could say anything, Chu Feng said, "Senior Ying, I appreciate your kindness. But, didn't we agree earlier that I will not be joining Hero City? Senior, you are truly making things difficult for this junior."

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao's expression stiffened. Evidently, he felt quite apologetic.

After being silent for a moment, he said, "I am the one in the wrong here. I should have consulted with you beforehand. For me to decide things without your approval, I have indeed made things difficult on you. Brother Chu Feng, I hope that you do not take offense to my actions."

"Senior, as long as you do not force this junior, you will not be making things difficult for me," Chu Feng said.

"Forget about it. If you do not wish to join, then you do not need to join. However, Hero City will forever remain your home," Ying Mingchao said.

"This..."

Seeing that Ying Mingchao had decided to not urge Chu Feng to join, the others present started to become restless.

They knew very well how talented Chu Feng was. Even without mentioning how Chu Feng had saved Ying Mingchao, merely by how talented Chu Feng was, they wanted to rope him into Hero City.

Thus, the people present all wanted to speak to urge Chu Feng to join Hero City.

Seemingly able to tell what the crowd were thinking, Ying Mingchao looked to everyone and said, "Since Brother Chu Feng is not planning to join Hero City, everyone, do not make things difficult for Brother Chu Feng either."

With Ying Mingchao having spoken, even though the crowd felt regret in their hearts, they could not disobey Ying Mingchao's orders. Thus, they nodded, and no longer tried to attempt to persuade Chu Feng.

"Senior, this junior is somewhat exhausted from the journey outside. If there's nothing else, I will return to rest."

Chu Feng clasped his fist to the crowd. Then, he took a glance at that Lil Ball and turned around to leave.

“Senior Ball, now you know that you’ve been overly worried, no?” Li Haoyang turned to ask Lil Ball.

Lil Ball did not answer. Merely, his expression turned increasingly ugly. As matters stood, he had also realized that he had targeted Chu Feng wrongly.

As for Chu Feng, he did not return to his palace to rest. Instead, he planned to take a breath of fresh air outside Hero City.

On the way out, Her Lady Queen said, “Chu Feng, do you think that person really was Zhao Hong?”

“If it really was her, it would be a very good thing.”

“That’s true,” Chu Feng naturally knew that it would be a good thing. After all, if it really was Zhao Hong, this would mean that she currently possessed the strength to eliminate a True Immortal and extinguish the Zhou Heavenly Clan. In other words, her current cultivation would be at least that of a True Immortal.

Merely, for some unknown reason, Chu Feng felt that the person who did that was not Zhao Hong.

However, if it was not Zhao Hong, then who did it?

Chu Feng walked very fast. As he pondered, he had already arrived at the gates to Hero City.

The outside of Hero City could be described as extremely crowded. Countless people had arrived to pay their respects. There were those that had come to pay respect to Ying Mingchao, and those they had come to pay respects to Chu Feng.

However, more than either of those, were the people that wanted to join Hero City or become an ally of Hero City.

Ying Mingchao’s reputation was truly grand. Even though he had disappeared for over a thousand years, there were still countless

people that wanted to hug his thigh.

After all, the news of him extinguishing the Kong Heavenly Clan alone had already spread through the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Furthermore, as a True Immortal, he had managed to regain the power of his Divine Body.

Everyone knew that upon reaching the True Immortal realm, the power of one's bloodline or Divine Body would all be restricted.

If one was able to undo the restriction upon their power, they would become more powerful than other True Immortals.

However, very rarely would people be able to accomplish that sort of thing. Currently in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, only Ying Mingchao had managed to accomplish that.

As such, Ying Mingchao had already become the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's number one expert in the hearts of the crowd.

Chu Feng did not wish to create a sensation, and also did not wish to chat with others. Thus, he concealed himself, making it so that others would not notice him.

If it wasn't for the fact that Hero City was covered with a spirit formation making it so that people could only come and go through its several gates, Chu Feng would've directly soared into the sky. He would not have gone through the trouble of walking among the crowd.

"Isn't that Liu Xiaoli?"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed.

He had saw a familiar face among the crowd. It was the Society Master of the Red Butterfly Society, Liu Xiaoli. The members of the Red Butterfly Society were also with her.

Liu Xiaoli had come with the intention of joining Hero City with

her Red Butterfly Society and becoming their subsidiary power.

However, judging from her appearance, Liu Xiaoli had been rejected.

“That was truly looking down upon another with their cur eyes. Never would I expect for there to also be that sort of scum in Hero City,” Seeing that scene, Chu Feng felt extremely furious. It was not only because Liu Xiaoli was his friend, but it was also because the person who had rejected Liu Xiaoli was mocking and ridiculing her.

In fact, that person even spoke to insult Liu Xiaoli and the rest of her Red Butterfly Society.

Although Hero City did consider strength when choosing powers to become allies with, to insult another was against the rules of Hero City.

Furious, Chu Feng planned to reveal himself and criticize that individual that was insulting Liu Xiaoli and the others.

“Truly, a small sect like this wants to become allies with Hero City? Scram immediately. Do not waste our time.”

Right at that moment, a large hand suddenly extended from behind Liu Xiaoli. That hand grabbed Liu Xiaoli’s shoulder and directly flung her away.

A strong wind was raised at the same time Liu Xiaoli was flung away. The others from the Red Butterfly Society were all thrown to the ground with her.

Although the power behind that fling and the wind was not very strong, and Liu Xiaoli and the others were not injured, Liu Xiaoli and the others rolled on the ground multiple times before finally being able to stabilize themselves.

As there were a lot of people present there, they all witnessed the scene. At that moment, mocking laughter began to resonate.

Regardless of whether they might be from Hero City, people that had come to pay respects or people that had come to become allies, they all began to laugh at Liu Xiaoli and the others.

Chu Feng was able to clearly notice that Liu Xiaoli and the others had very embarrassed expressions on their faces.

Their expressions indicated that they were wishing to immediately get up and leave that place. They felt that they had been truly humiliated.

Chu Feng felt very pained upon seeing that scene. However, more than feeling pain, he felt anger.

When Chu Feng cast his furious gaze to the person that flung Liu Xiaoli and the others away, his gaze changed again.

That... was actually also a familiar face.



# Chapter 2577 - Reconciliation

---

While that person was indeed a familiar face, that person was a not a friend, but rather an enemy.

That person was the mother of the Four World Spiritist Emperors, the World Spiritist Saintess.

The World Spiritist Saintess was standing behind Liu Xiaoli and the others. As for the reason why she had appeared there, it was naturally because she also wanted to become allies with Hero City or join Hero City.

“Even if you want to find a backer, you should first look at your own strength. For ants to try to have an elephant as a backer, they will only be stomped to death.”

Not only had the World Spiritist Saintess thrown Liu Xiaoli and the others to the ground, but she even started mocking them.

As for the surrounding people, they all started to laugh loudly.

No matter what, the World Spiritist Saintess was a famous individual in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus, with her before them, many people started to subconsciously support her.

Being ridiculed in such a manner, Liu Xiaoli and the others felt completely humiliated. They got up and planned to leave.

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice suddenly sounded.

“World Spiritist Saintess, you’re acting quite impressively, eh?”

After Chu Feng’s voice sounded, Chu Feng appeared before the crowd.

“Chu Feng! Everyone, look, it’s Chu Feng!!!”

At that moment, the expressions of the crowd all changed. They did not dare believe that they actually managed to see Chu Feng.

The next moment, the crowd burst into an uproar. Many people that were far away started to rush over upon hearing that Chu Feng had appeared.

At that moment, the outside of Hero City that was originally quite orderly had become completely chaotic with the appearance of Chu Feng.

Regardless of whether they were people from the younger generation or experts from the older generation, those people all reacted as if they'd managed to see their idol, and became extremely excited.

The older generation was relatively better, and managed to keep themselves a lot more calm. However, the people from the younger generation were reacting frantically. They were shouting with their loudest voices to express their admiration and adoration for Chu Feng.

Witnessing that scene, the expression of the World Spiritist Saintess changed. Chu Feng was able to notice a definite expression of remorse on her face.

However, her remorseful expression was evidently not because she attacked Liu Xiaoli and the others earlier. Rather, she regretted making Chu Feng an enemy back then.

With the status and fame that Chu Feng currently possessed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it was understandable that she would feel regret.

“Little friend Chu Feng, it has been a while.”

Different from before, the World Spiritist Saintess revealed an amiable smile on her face as she spoke to greet Chu Feng. Her appearance was as if she were greeting a friend.

“Little friend Chu Feng is truly the number one genius in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The speed at which your cultivation increases is truly astonishing.”

“Back then, when I first met little friend Chu Feng, little friend Chu Feng was still only a Half Martial Ancestor. And now, you’re already a rank nine Martial Ancestor, your strength has already greatly surpassed my own.”

“Thinking back to it now, I truly feel moved. It could be said that I have witnessed little friend Chu Feng’s growth. I am truly honored.”

The World Spiritist Saintess actually began to praise Chu Feng nonstop. It was as if she had completely forgotten how she had opposed Chu Feng and even wanted to take his life back then.

“Honored? It should be I who am honored to not have died by your hands,” Chu Feng said with a cold smile.

“Eh...” Hearing those words, the World Spiritist Saintess’s face turned stiff. She felt very awkward.

However, soon, she smiled again. She said, “Little friend Chu Feng, I might as well mention it directly. I have not only come here today with the intention of becoming a Guest Elder to Hero City, my main purpose is to apologize to you.”

After she finished saying those words, the World Spiritist Saintess took out a Cosmos Sack. After opening the Cosmos Sack, countless treasures flew out. In an orderly manner, they floated before Chu Feng.

There were countless treasures. The majority of them were treasures for world spiritists. There were those used for concocting medicines, those for refining weapons and those to increase spirit power.

However, most eye-catching were the two Ancestral Armaments among the treasures.

These two Ancestral Armaments were a blade and a sword. Their appearances were completely different. However, they matched one another very well.

The same character was carved on the blade and the sword, the character ‘hatred.’

Chu Feng noticed that those two Ancestral Armaments were very high quality. As for the source of their powers, it was their characters ‘hatred.’

“It’s actually the Dual Hatred, those are Ancestral Armaments that have been lost for a long time.”

“Where did the World Spiritist Saintess obtain those treasures?”

Many of the older generation from the crowd cried out in surprise upon seeing the Ancestral Armaments. From their conversations, Chu Feng came to know that those Dual Hatred Ancestral Armaments were renowned treasures in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

In terms of quality, the Dual Hatred possessed quality on par with the Flame Dragon Greatsword. They were all top quality Ancestral Armaments.

However, in terms of fame, the Dual Hatred were even more famous. In terms of value, the Dual Hatred were also more valuable.

For the World Spiritist Saintess to take out these treasures to reconcile with Chu Feng, it could be seen that she had spent a great amount of effort and placed a great amount of thought into it.

“Little friend Chu Feng, these are my slight regards. I hope you’ll accept them.”

“I know that compared to what I have done, these treasures are simply unable to make up for it.”

“However, I am truly repenting with sincerity. These treasures represent my good faith,” The World Spiritist Saintess said to Chu Feng.

After the World Spiritist Saintess said those words, the crowd all

started nodding their heads. Many among them knew what sort of character the World Spiritist Saintess was.

She was someone with actual ability. As one of the few Immortal-cloak World Spiritists in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, she was someone with a great ability to accumulate wealth.

That said, she was also an utter cheapskate.

If it were others that took out treasures to reconcile with Chu Feng, it would be understandable.

However, with the temperament of the World Spiritist Saintess, the crowd were truly shocked at how she was willing to take out all those treasures to reconcile with Chu Feng.

“Truly repenting with sincerity?” Chu Feng chuckled coldly.

He took a glance at Liu Xiaoli and the others. Then, he said to the World Spiritist Saintess, “Is harming others what you mean by sincerely repent?”

“I... I didn’t do anything serious to them. Merely... how could a power like Hero City possibly accept people like them?”

“What I’ve done was merely a warning to others, a warning to tell them that they should conduct themselves properly, act within their competence and not overestimate their capabilities,” The World Spiritist Saintess explained.

“Then did you know that they are my friends and have saved my life before?” Chu Feng said.

“Ah?”

Hearing those words, the crowd all revealed surprised expressions.

As for the World Spiritist Saintess, she had an enormous change in expression. She never ever expected that Liu Xiaoli and the others would be Chu Feng’s friends.

At that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess finally realized that

her minor action earlier had courted a major disaster.

At that moment, the World Spiritist Saintess wanted to explain.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. All of the treasures before him were put back into the Cosmos Sack.

Seeing that, the expression of the World Spiritist Saintess improved.

She thought in her heart, ‘So what if I’ve touched your friend? Aren’t you still attracted by my treasures?’

As the saying goes, receive another’s possession, accept another’s fault. Since Chu Feng had accepted those treasures, then a reconciliation would be hopeful today. At the very most, he would only reprimand the World Spiritist Saintess.

“Woosh~~~”

However, right at the moment when the World Spiritist Saintess was secretly delighted, Chu Feng pushed with his palm, and the Cosmos Sack with all the treasures was pushed toward the World Spiritist Saintess.

“I am unable to have a say in you entering Hero City.”

“I am also able to forget about the past. However, you and I will most definitely not become friends.”

“While I can ignore what you’ve done to me, I will never forget what you’ve done to my friends.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he suddenly shot forth his palm. A strong wind swept past and landed on the World Spiritist Saintess.

Although the strong wind did not actually cause any injury to the World Spiritist Saintess, the powerful wind directly blew the World Spiritist Saintess tens of thousands of miles away, disappearing from the crowd’s field of view.

Looking at the direction where the World Spiritist Saintess disappeared in, Chu Feng said dully, “That’s for my friends.”

# Chapter 2578 - Igniting The Fury Of The Crowd

---

At that moment, everyone cast their gazes to Liu Xiaoli and the others.

While those who arrived later were fine, the crowd present from earlier; the crowd that had laughed at Liu Xiaoli, had all turned ashen. They all felt lingering fear in their heart.

This was especially true for that member of Hero City who had rejected Liu Xiaoli and the others and even spoke to insult them. Even though he possessed a strong cultivation, his complexion still turned pale. Beads of sweat were falling from his forehead nonstop. Even the hand that he was wiping his sweat with was shivering.

As they were disrespectful toward Chu Feng's friends earlier, they knew they had made an enormous mistake.

Fear. They were all afraid that Chu Feng would attack them.

What they feared even more was that no one would act to stop Chu Feng if he were to attack them.

Even if he were to kill them, no one would say that Chu Feng was in the wrong.

Thus, at that moment, they all felt as if there was a blade right on their necks. It was the sensation that they could die at any time.

However, Chu Feng did not do anything to them.

Instead, he walked over to Liu Xiaoli and the others. With an apologetic expression, he said, "I'm sorry, I have made you all suffer because I came out late."

"Chu Feng, what sort of words are those? I am already very satisfied to be able to see you again," Liu Xiaoli said with a joyous expression on her face.



“Little friend Chu Feng, are you really planning to refuse the World Spiritist Saintess’s offer of reconciliation for us? That was a lot of treasures.”

Before Liu Xiaoli could say anything, those Red Butterfly Society’s elders spoke with distressed expressions on their faces.

To them, suffering some minor humiliation was nothing serious. Yet, what the World Spiritist Saintess offered to Chu Feng was a great amount of treasures. Especially the renowned Dual Hatred, the two of them were things that they felt they would never be able to obtain in their lifetime.

As Chu Feng had actually renounced those treasures because of them, they felt extremely guilty.

“Are treasures more important than friendship?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

At that moment, the people from the Red Butterfly Society were all startled.

Even the bystanders present were startled.

Friendship?

In the world of martial cultivators, was friendship important?

It was. For certain people, friendship was enormously important. However, in the end, there would still be a limit to one’s friendship.

Thus, even if friendship was important, it would not be the most important thing. What was most important would be one’s strength, one’s cultivation.

Thus, in the world of martial cultivators, many people would seek friendship for the sake of self interest.

In fact, even those of the same family; kin related by blood, would kill one another for the sake of their own benefits.

Yet, Chu Feng was actually able to remain unwavering even

when faced with treasures like the Dual Hatred.

From this, one could tell how important friendship was in his heart. It had most likely reached an invaluable degree.

The crowd present felt admiration and even astonishment for Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because this was something that they could not accomplish.

“Lord Chu Feng, my apologies, I am truly sorry.”

“I had no idea that these people were your friends. If I had known... I would never have dared to reject them.”

Right at that moment, the Hero City member that had rejected Liu Xiaoli and the others ran over with an eagerly attentive expression on his face.

“It’s actually Lord Xu Lian.”

Upon seeing the middle-aged man, many people gasped in surprise.

As this Hero City member was capable of holding the authority to accept or reject those wanting to become allies to Hero City, he would naturally not be an ordinary individual.

That said, that person by the name of Xu Lian was also a famous character in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

He possessed a cultivation of peak Martial Ancestor, and was one of the more outstanding non-associated cultivators in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng slapped with his hand. That slap accurately landed onto that Xu Lian’s face.

The surrounding crowd were all struck speechless by that scene. Even Liu Xiaoli and the others were deeply shocked.

That person was not an ordinary member of Hero City. He was Xu Lian!

If Chu Feng were to attack them, they would have no say about it. However, Chu Feng actually slapped Xu Lian like that. They were truly shocked by it.

“Lord Chu Feng, you...”

Xu Lian was also stunned. He was at a complete loss as to what had just happened.

“It is your business as to whether you agree to have them join Hero City. I have no say in that matter.”

“However... you spoke to insult my friends. Thus, I cannot watch with folded arms. That slap was only a warning. If there’s a next time, I will cut out your tongue,” Chu Feng spoke coldly.

It was only after hearing those words that Xu Lian knew why he was slapped. At that moment, he also became certain of how serious the matter was. Thus, he promptly apologized, “This lowly one will never dare to do it again, this lowly one will never dare to do it again.”

While others might not know about it, that Xu Lian had been in Hero City for some time now. Thus, he knew very well how much importance Ying Mingchao placed on Chu Feng.

Furthermore, he had obtained news from others that Chu Feng would become Hero City’s Vice City Master.

If Ying Mingchao was the number one individual that one could not offend in Hero City, then Chu Feng would definitely be the number two individual that one could not offend.

“Chu Feng, why did you hit my elder brother, what makes you think that you can hit him?”

Right at that moment, a woman rushed out from the crowd. She pointed at Chu Feng like a vixen.

Although that woman was young and beautiful, she was emitting a sharp and hostile aura all over.

Her cultivation was not weak; she was a rank eight Martial Ancestor. As for her age, she was over a thousand years old.

Not only was she a member of Hero City, but she was also that Xu Lian's younger blood sister.

"Don't speak nonsense!"

Seeing this, Xu Lian hurriedly shouted down his sister.

Although Xu Lian also felt displeased to be slapped in public, he decided to swallow his anger after considering Chu Feng's identity and status.

As for his younger sister, she had always been a crafty and unruly tyrant. Only she was allowed to bully others, and not the other way around.

Today, he had been publicly slapped. His younger sister would most definitely not be able to tolerate that. As such, he was extremely scared that his younger sister would do something that she should not, and court unnecessary trouble.

"Big brother, did you know that this Chu Feng is simply not a member of Hero City? What makes him think that he can hit you?" Xu Lian's younger sister said.

"What? Chu Feng is not a part of Hero City?"

Hearing those words, the surrounding crowd were all shocked. They had all heard that Chu Feng had joined Hero City long ago.

"What sort of nonsense are you spouting?!" Xu Lian loudly shouted his younger sister down. He even revealed a slightly angry expression.

The reason for that was because he felt Chu Feng to be the person that would become Hero City's Vice City Master. As such, how could Chu Feng not be a part of Hero City?

He felt that his younger sister was simply crazy to say something like that.

“I’m not spouting nonsense. If you don’t believe me, go and ask around. Go and ask Chu Feng, ask him if he’s a part of Hero City,” Xu Lian’s younger sister pointed to Chu Feng.

“That’s right, I have indeed not joined Hero City. I have not joined it before, and will not join it after,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng actually really did not join Hero City?”

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd immediately burst into an uproar. This was most definitely immensely serious news.

“You... you don’t plan to join Hero City?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Xu Lian’s expression changed.

If Chu Feng did not plan to join Hero City, he would not be able to become the Vice City Master. Furthermore, for someone not a part of Hero City to have the audacity to publicly slap a person from Hero City, that was most definitely an unforgivable action.

To others, they felt that, to Hero City, this was most definitely something punishable with death.

Even if that person was Chu Feng, it would still be an action that Hero City would not tolerate.

The reason for that was because Hero City was a power that cared deeply for brotherly affection.

All of the members of Hero City were brothers with one another. Even in the rules of Hero City, it explicitly stated that those that dared to humiliate a brother of their city, regardless of the reason, would be killed with no exception!!!

“Was what I said earlier not clear enough for you?” Chu Feng asked.

“If that’s the case, why did you hit me?” Xu Lian’s attitude changed. It turned to one of anger.

The reason for that was because he came to find out that Chu Feng was not a part of Hero City. Thus, he grew confident.

After all, according to the rules of Hero City, as Chu Feng had slapped him earlier, Chu Feng had become an enemy of Hero City.

“Because you insulted my friends,” Chu Feng said disapprovingly.

“Chu Feng, you are truly an intolerable bully!”

Xu Lian’s complexion grew completely gloomy. As he spoke, he unleashed his boundless rank nine Martial Ancestor aura. His aura enveloped the entire region.

At that moment, everyone’s nerves tightened. Could it be that Xu Lian planned to attack Chu Feng?

But, would he be able to win against Chu Feng?

Although they were all peak Martial Ancestors, Chu Feng’s battle power was absolutely not something that Xu Lian could compare with.

“Brothers of our Hero City, you all see this? This Chu Feng is not a member of our Hero City. Yet, he attacked me for no reason! Furthermore, his attitude was exceptionally vile!”

“Not only is he not putting me, Xu Lian, in his eyes, but he is not putting our entire Hero City in his eyes!”

“Brothers, can we possibly tolerate something like this?!” Xu Lian shouted loudly.

It turned out that he didn’t plan to fight against Chu Feng alone. Rather, he was planning to ignite the fury of the crowd and borrow the strength of all of Hero City to attack Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2579 - Completely Unreasonable

---

Xu Lian's intention was clear to everyone. Merely, the result of his attempt caused Xu Lian enormous embarrassment.

Although there were a lot of people from Hero City present, not a single person was standing up for him.

“Could it be that you all didn't see this Chu Feng attacking me earlier?!”

“What is this? Are you all disregarding the rules of Hero City?!” Xu Lian shouted loudly.

However, the crowd from Hero City still did not respond.

“You people, you couldn't possibly not even know the rules of Hero City, right?!” Xu Lian grew even more furious.

However, there was still no reaction from the crowd. They merely lowered their heads silently without answering Xu Lian at all.

The people from Hero City would not allow others to attack them. This was the rule of Hero City that even outsiders knew about. As such, how could the people from Hero City not know about it?

However, who was Chu Feng? Not only was he the person who saved Ying Mingchao, but he was also the number one genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

His future accomplishments would most likely surpass those of Ying Mingchao. He would become an overlord to rule over an era.

As such, who would be willing to offend someone like him?

Actually, many people were ridiculing Xu Lian in their hearts. They were laughing at how brainless he was.

Everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about the relationship between Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao.

However, that Xu Lian, as a member of Hero City, was actually trying to confront Chu Feng. His actions were simply courting death.

“What are the city’s rules to you all?! You all are simply unqualified to be members of Hero City!” Xu Lian shouted with incomparable rage. His voice was so loud that even the people in Hero City could hear it.

Hearing Xu Lian’s shout, more and more people from Hero City came over. However, upon hearing what had happened, not a single person was willing to attack Chu Feng.

At that moment, only two people were confronting Chu Feng. They were Xu Lian and his younger sister.

“You all... very well... you are all truly capable, truly loyal and upholding the spirit of brotherhood!”

At that moment, Xu Lian’s face turned green.

He had originally thought that his words would incite the crowd, that the people from Hero City would all come to attack Chu Feng. Yet, the current situation caused him incomparable embarrassment.

“Lord City Master! Is Lord City Master present?!”

“Someone has humiliated this subordinate! Lord City Master, would you please uphold justice for this subordinate?!”

Feeling helpless, Xu Lian began to loudly shout for Ying Mingchao directly.

“Has this Xu Lian gone crazy? He actually called for Lord Ying Mingchao to uphold justice for him?”

Some people were shocked. The reason for that was because they all knew that Chu Feng was Ying Mingchao’s savior.

It would be understandable for Xu Lian to try to incite the others from Hero City to attack Chu Feng. However, to ask Ying



Mingchao to help him would simply be indulging in fantasy.

“That’s not necessarily the case,” However, at that moment, someone voiced their objection.

“Are you to say that Ying Mingchao will help that Xu Lian attack Chu Feng?” Someone asked.

“Although Ying Mingchao has disappeared for over a thousand years, I believe everyone has heard of his character.”

“Ying Mingchao has always attached the most importance to his brothers. The reason why Hero City was able to establish itself was also because of its strict rules and the code of brotherhood people yearned for.”

“Even if Ying Mingchao is grateful toward Chu Feng for saving his life, if he wants to make a comeback, he absolutely cannot tear down his own reputation.”

“Don’t forget, it is precisely because of Ying Mingchao’s strict character that he was able to establish such prestige in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” That person said.

“Now that you mention it, that’s reasonable too.”

At that moment, the crowd’s hearts were swayed slightly. After all, if Ying Mingchao wanted to keep his prestige, even if he did not do anything to Chu Feng, he must still speak on behalf of Xu Lian in that matter.

Else, his reputation would be gone. To someone like him who cared deeply about reputation, it would be something unendurable.

After the crowd came to that realization, they started to feel admiration toward Xu Lian’s intelligence.

It turned out, that Xu Lian was not a fool. Rather, he was very smart.

For Xu Lian to dare declare war against Chu Feng in such a

manner, he had most definitely already thought about all those things. He must be feeling that Ying Mingchao would definitely stand on his side for the sake of his sentiment and face.

Else, there would be no reason for him to go completely against Chu Feng.

“Quiet!”

Right at that moment, a furious shout exploded.

That voice was so resounding that both heaven and earth started to tremble. The outside of the city that was originally filled with noise immediately went silent.

Everyone was frightened by that shout.

Following that, an awe-inspiring and domineering individual appeared out of thin air and stood beside Chu Feng.

“Look, it’s Lord Ying Mingchao!!!”

At that moment, the crowd burst into an uproar again. The reason for that was because the person that had appeared was Ying Mingchao.

“We pay our respects to Lord City Master!”

Upon seeing Ying Mingchao, the people from Hero City all half kneeled onto the ground to express their utmost respect to Ying Mingchao.

Even Xu Lian and his sister did the same.

“Xu Lian, what sort of nonsense are you causing?” Ying Mingchao turned to ask Xu Lian.

“Lord City Master, this subordinate has one thing that he wishes to ask. Is this Chu Feng a member of our Hero City?” Xu Lian asked.

“No he isn’t, what of it?” Ying Mingchao answered very firmly.

“If he isn’t, then it will be easy to handle.”

“This Chu Feng attacked this subordinate without reason or cause. Regarding this... I hope that Lord City Master will uphold justice for this subordinate,” Xu Lian spoke with a wronged expression.

“Was it truly without reason or cause?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“This...” Xu Lian started to hesitate. After all, he was the one to insult Chu Feng’s friends first. As such, he was somewhat in the wrong first.

However, upon recalling the rules of Hero City, even if he was in the wrong, Chu Feng would still be at fault. Thus, Xu Lian planned to confess everything in detail.

However, before Xu Lian could say anything, Ying Mingchao asked, “Even if he had really attacked you without reason or cause, what would you want to do about it?”

“Lord City Master, I...?” Xu Lian was stunned. Confusion filled his eyes.

The reason for that was because he had not only sensed discrimination in favor of Chu Feng from Ying Mingchao’s words, but he had also sensed anger.

That anger was aimed toward him.

“Humph.”

Ying Mingchao snorted coldly. Then, he cast his sharp gaze around the surroundings.

He said, “Everyone, please listen carefully.”

“Not only is Brother Chu Feng the person who saved me, he is also my brother of a lifetime.”

“I, Ying Mingchao, am willing to experience life and death together with him. Regardless of whether it is someone from my Hero City or not, if anyone dares to make an enemy of Brother Chu Feng, I, Ying Mingchao, will definitely not let them get away with

it.”

“Boom~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Ying Mingchao waved his sleeve. Xu Lian and his younger sister were directly flipped to the ground.

“The two of you were disrespectful toward Brother Chu Feng. From today on... you are expelled from Hero City.”

“However, this is merely a warning. If this happens again, I will take the lives of you curs!” Ying Mingchao shouted angrily.

Xu Lian and his younger sister were already shivering in fear.

No matter how famous Xu Lian and his younger sister might be, they were still only a peak Martial Ancestor and a rank eight Martial Ancestor. They were people on completely different levels from Ying Mingchao.

Who was Ying Mingchao? He was the publicly accepted number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm right now. He was a ruthless character that directly exterminated the entire Kong Heavenly Clan.

Before him, the two of them simply did not dare to cause any offense.

“Lord City Master, Lord City Master, this lowly one had a bee in my bonnet. I hope that Lord City Master will give this subordinate a chance to turn over a new leaf,” Xu Lian kneeled before Ying Mingchao and begged for forgiveness repeatedly.

He even looked to Chu Feng and said, “Lord Chu Feng, I was wrong. Please show mercy upon this lowly one and help me say something to Lord City Master.”

Xu Lian was truly regretting. If he had known that Chu Feng held such a great status in Ying Mingchao’s heart, even if he were to be given a hundred times more courage, he would not dare to do what

he had done.

“Scram,” Ying Mingchao waved his sleeve, and that Xu Lian and his younger sister were blown away. They disappeared from the crowd’s field of view.

At that moment, the crowd all sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

What Ying Mingchao did was far from only discriminating in favor of Chu Feng; he was simply being completely unreasonable.

With what had happened, the crowd finally had a clear understanding of the relationship between Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao.

Their relationship was even more robust than they had imagined.

They now knew that Chu Feng was someone that they absolutely could not offend.

# Chapter 2580 - There's No Path For Regret

---

“All members of Hero City, listen up. In the future, as long as they are friends of Chu Feng, the entrance to our Hero City will always be open to them,” Ying Mingchao said to the crowd.

Hearing those words, the crowd's expression changed again.

As long as they were Chu Feng's friends, they would be allowed to join or become Hero City's allies. In other words, cultivations would be disregarded.

Hero City was a place that generally only accepted elites. What Ying Mingchao was doing was simply once again telling the crowd how important Chu Feng was to him.

Although Ying Mingchao's actions had already gone against the rules of Hero City, and it could even be said that he was smashing apart his own reputation, no one dared to voice any word of objection.

In fact, no one felt that what Ying Mingchao did was a mistake.

Chu Feng had saved Ying Mingchao. If it weren't for Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao might be trapped in the Kong Heavenly Clan for the rest of his life.

While it could be said that Chu Feng had saved Ying Mingchao's life, it could also be said that Chu Feng had given Ying Mingchao a new lease on life.

With Ying Mingchao's personality, for him to attach so much importance to Chu Feng was also completely reasonable.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment when Ying Mingchao was declaring the status that Chu Feng held in his heart, a figure quietly blended into the crowd.

As for that person, it was none other than the World Spiritist

Saintess.

Although she had failed to reconcile with Chu Feng, she did not plan to give up on joining Hero City.

Merely, upon taking into consideration the relationship between Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao, she did not dare reveal herself when both Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao were present.

After all, if Chu Feng were to speak ill of her, who knew what Ying Mingchao might do?

However, what sort of cultivation did Ying Mingchao possess? He had already noticed the World Spiritist Saintess's aura the moment she approached.

Furthermore, during the time Chu Feng was gone, Ying Mingchao had made a lot of inquiries regarding Chu Feng.

As such, Ying Mingchao knew to a greater or lesser degree who had helped Chu Feng before and who were Chu Feng's enemies.

"Have you all caught what I've said earlier?" Ying Mingchao asked loudly.

"Yes, Milord," Thunder-like voices resonated throughout the region. The members of Hero City did not dare to go against Ying Mingchao's order.

"There's another thing that you all must remember. Just like how Chu Feng's friends are our Hero City's friends, Chu Feng's enemies are also our Hero City's enemies. For example, her."

As Ying Mingchao spoke, he suddenly extended his palm and grabbed the space before him.

"Wuuahh."

The next moment, a scream was heard. Then, a figure flew from the crowd.

Following the movement of Ying Mingchao's palm, that figure was raised from the ground and appeared before the crowd's field

of view.

“It’s actually the World Spiritist Saintess?”

The crowd were all greatly shocked. The reason for that was because none of them had detected the World Spiritist Saintess, as she had concealed herself.

Thus, they were all surprised by the sudden appearance of the World Spiritist Saintess. However, what they were more surprised by was the fact that Ying Mingchao actually attacked the World Spiritist Saintess directly.

Although they were all unable to feel Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might, they knew from the painful expression of the World Spiritist Saintess that she was currently enduring enormous pressure.

“City Master Ying, please spare me. City Master Ying, please spare me.”

The World Spiritist Saintess was struggling in midair with a painful expression on her face. Even the voice that she begged with was very weak.

Furthermore, her aura was growing weaker and weaker. Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might was currently entering her body. If it were to continue, she would sooner or later be crushed to death by Ying Mingchao’s oppressive might.

“Senior, just let her go. The things between her and I are things from the past. Just spare her today,” Chu Feng said.

“Since Brother Chu Feng has spoken, I will spare your life,” As Ying Mingchao spoke, he released his hand.

After Ying Mingchao released his grasp, the World Spiritist Saintess fell directly to the ground like a loose kite. She started to gasp for air, and began to cough nonstop.

Although Ying Mingchao had only held her for a short moment,



the crowd were able to gain an even clearer realization as to how frightening Ying Mingchao was from how weak the World Spiritist Saintess appeared at that moment.

“Thank you, City Master Ying, for sparing my life. Thank you, Little Friend Chu Feng, for helping me plead for leniency.”

Even though she was already incomparably weak, the World Spiritist Saintess gave all her strength to get up from the ground to express her thanks to Ying Mingchao and Chu Feng nonstop.

Lingering fear filled her face. She herself knew best what Ying Mingchao did to her earlier.

Thus, she knew that she had taken a journey to the gates of hell, and nearly died in the process.

At that moment, she was extremely afraid. The reason for that was because she knew that if Ying Mingchao wanted to kill her, she could die at any moment.

Thus, rather than trying to escape right away, she felt that it would be better to resolve the hostility that Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao held toward her. Only with that would she be able to remain alive in a long-term manner.

“There’s no need to thank me. If you want to thank someone, thank Chu Feng,” Ying Mingchao spoke coldly.

“Little friend Chu Feng, thank you for being a person of great moral stature, and not remembering the offenses committed by this one of low moral stature. Thank you... thank you...” The World Spiritist Saintess hurriedly begged Chu Feng for forgiveness.

Although there was a very deep grievance between Chu Feng and the World Spiritist Saintess, Chu Feng did not particularly dislike the World Spiritist Saintess. At the very least, he had not reached a point where he would insist on taking her life.

The reason for that was because the World Spiritist Saintess had

left behind a single good impression on Chu Feng.

No matter how she treated others, the World Spiritist Saintess was most definitely a caring and doting mother.

Chu Feng was emotionally moved by how far the World Spiritist Saintess was willing to go to protect the Four World Spiritist Emperors.

The greatness of maternal love had given Chu Feng a new recognition for the World Spiritist Saintess.

Thus, Chu Feng did not continue to make things difficult for the World Spiritist Saintess. Instead, he merely warned her, "I've said it already, the past is the past."

"However, let me advise you this: it is best that you do more good deeds and fewer malicious deeds in the future."

"If I am to hear that the World Spiritist Saintess has committed bloody atrocities again, then even without having senior Ying Mingchao do anything, I, Chu Feng, will personally not let you get away with it."

"I wouldn't dare, I most definitely wouldn't dare. I will definitely do good deeds in the future," The World Spiritist Saintess vowed.

"That's enough. Leave now. Even if Brother Chu Feng has forgiven you, the entrance to our Hero City will definitely not open to you," Ying Mingchao said impatiently while waving his hand.

He was disgusted with this World Spiritist Saintess from the bottom of his heart.

The World Spiritist Saintess was very tactful. After she finished guaranteeing her good behavior to Chu Feng, she immediately left.

"Little friends, I hope you all will forgive me for the negligence we've shown earlier."

After the World Spiritist Saintess left, Ying Mingchao spoke to Liu Xiaoli with an apologetic expression.

“Lord City Master, you’re being too courteous. We... we were simply not neglected. We are already extremely delighted to be able to meet you.”

Liu Xiaoli and the others were reacting with overwhelming nervousness. It was as if they were seeing their idol. Even their speech started to stammer.

“I am truly delighted that you all do not blame me. I have already ordered my people to prepare a welcoming banquet. Let’s continue to chat inside the city,” Ying Mingchao said.

“A welcoming banquet? For us?” The expressions of Liu Xiaoli and the others changed enormously. They knew very well what sort of people they were. How could they possibly be qualified for Ying Mingchao to throw them a welcoming banquet? They were truly overwhelmed.

“Lord City Master, there’s no need for that. You are simply being too courteous. We...” Liu Xiaoli’s face had turned red.

“Since you all are already here, you’re guests. As guests, you should go with the decision of the host.”

Ying Mingchao laughed. Then, he waved his sleeve, and Chu Feng, Liu Xiaoli and the others all disappeared together with him.

Even without thinking, the crowd knew that they must’ve entered the city.

Although Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and the others had left, the remaining crowd were still unable to calm themselves.

The attitude Ying Mingchao had toward the World Spiritist Saintess was simply a night and day difference when compared to the attitude he had toward Liu Xiaoli and the others.

Most importantly, the World Spiritist Saintess was, after all, an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, a top character in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As for Liu Xiaoli and the others, none of them knew who they were. It could be said that they were only nameless nobodies in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Yet before the entrance of Hero City, that renowned World Spiritist Saintess had nearly died. In the end, she started to plead for mercy.

As for those nameless nobodies, they instead received enthusiastic treatment from Ying Mingchao.

Logically, something like that was simply impossible. Yet, it had happened.

“It would appear that there will only be two types of people in Hero City in the future.”

“One would be Chu Feng’s friends, whereas the other would be Chu Feng’s enemies.”

“As long as they’re Chu Feng’s friends, regardless of how weak their cultivation might be, they will be able to enjoy the treatment of honored guests.”

“However, if they’re Chu Feng’s enemy, regardless of how strong their cultivation might be, they will not be able to escape death.”

Suddenly, an old man from the crowd gasped in admiration repeatedly.

“Indeed. With Ying Mingchao as his backing, all those that have befriended Chu Feng before will enjoy great fortune.”

“As for those who have made an enemy out of Chu Feng, they are most likely in so much regret that even their intestines will have turned green.”

The others present were also gasping with admiration.

Life was a series of choices. With a single correct choice, one could ascend to heaven with a single step. With a single incorrect choice, one could fall into hell with a just one step.

All those that had chosen to befriend Chu Feng had all struck gold.

Those people would become the target of envy for all people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As for those that had chosen to become Chu Feng's enemies, they would be pitied by the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, their paths were all chosen by themselves. As such, who could they possibly blame even if they now regretted it?

# Chapter 2581 - Long Time No See

---

Everyone knew that Chu Feng was the person who had saved Ying Mingchao and now possessed an extraordinary relationship with him.

However, they actually had no idea exactly what sort of status Chu Feng had in Ying Mingchao's heart.

However, after what happened at Hero City's entrance, the crowd realized Chu Feng's status in Ying Mingchao's heart.

To Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng was more important than his own reputation. It was as if he could fight against the whole world for Chu Feng's sake.

Furthermore, not long after that matter passed, Ying Mingchao did another thing that shocked everyone.

Ying Mingchao sent forth an invitation to both the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. He had voluntarily offered to become allies with them.

Before that, it had always been the various powers going to Hero City to ask to become allies.

Even huge monsters like the Immortal Sword School and Buddha's Heavenly Temple sent forth representatives to Hero City to request to become allies.

In short, this was the first time that Hero City had voluntarily invited another power to become allies.

It was all thanks to Chu Feng that the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall were able to enjoy such treatment.

Back then, countless people had mocked and ridiculed the Sunset Cloud Valley and Three Stars Hall for declaring war against the Ying Heavenly Clan for the sake of helping Chu Feng.

Yet at that moment, there were countless people praising them

for having such great insight.

At that moment the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall had arrived on schedule.

The people from the older generation were chatting amongst themselves, and the people from the younger generation were gathered together.

At that moment, not only was Liu Xiaoli in Chu Feng's personal palace, but Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu were also present.

In fact, even those members of the younger generation from the Three Stars Hall and Sunset Cloud Valley that Chu Feng was not very familiar with had received invitations.

Chu Feng knew that he would not be staying in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for much longer, and would not have many chances to meet with those people.

As such, the current gathering could be said to be a rare opportunity. Thus, Chu Feng decided to take the opportunity to properly keep those people company.

Regardless of whether they were people that had gone through life and death together with him or people that he had only met once, it remained that they were all brought together by fate.

That was the reason why Chu Feng invited all of them over.

“Chu Feng, I said that you'll definitely become a greatly capable individual in the future. Look, I was right, no?”

A sweet smile was present on Xu Yiyi's spotlessly white face. Although it had been several years since she had first met Chu Feng, Xu Yiyi's appearance remained completely unchanged. She was still pleasantly sweet-looking, and her character was still candid and open.

“Yiyi, you're not the only one with good foresight. My foresight is pretty good too.”

“Back then, when my idol only just started growing famous, I already started declaring to everyone that Chu Feng was my idol. At that time, there were many people saying that I had problems with my vision.”

“However, countless people now admire my vision,” Song Biyu started to praise Chu Feng too.

Of course, she was also praising herself as she praised Chu Feng.

“If you all are to continue acting like this, my face will turn red,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Pah! I’ve known you for so long, never have I seen your face turn red,” Xu Yiyi said.

“I’ve never seen it either. Big sister Liu, have you?” Song Biyu turned to ask Liu Xiaoli.

“I don’t seem to recall seeing it either,” Liu Xiaoli said with a faint smile.

“Hahaha...”

“Chu Feng actually has the nerve to say that his face will turn red. Although his talent is exceptional, it seems that his skin is also extremely thick.”

“Haha...”

The next moment, the three girls started to laugh heartily. They were laughing so hard that their bodies started to rock back and forth.

It was unknown exactly what was so funny about this. However, they were laughing extremely hard.

Seeing this scene, those that were not familiar with Chu Feng started to feel admiration and envy from the bottoms of their hearts.

In the current Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, how many people would possibly dare to laugh at Chu Feng like this?



Likely, Xu Yiyi and the others would be the only ones that dared to do so.

As for Chu Feng, even though he was clearly being laughed at, he did not show the slightest bit of anger. Instead, he too, had a smile on his face.

With that, Chu Feng had revealed his closeness with the three girls. As such, how could the others possibly not feel envious of the three girls?

“Truth be told, when I first met Chu Feng, although his talent was exceptional, his cultivation was truly not particularly high. While I knew that he would be able to accomplish great things at that time, I never expected him to become so powerful,” Liu Xiaoli suddenly spoke with a serious expression.

“That’s true,” At that moment, Xu Yiyi and Song Biyu also looked to Chu Feng with thoughtful gazes.

As for those that had only met Chu Feng once before, they too started to ponder.

They all began to recall the time when they first met Chu Feng.

At that time, none of them had ever expected that the person before them would become the number one genius known to everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in merely a few short years. They never expected that he would become the number one expert beneath True Immortals.

At that moment, they once again started to gasp deeply with admiration.

As for Chu Feng, he was currently recalling some other people.

ZI Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhan Tianyi, Jiang Wushang...

Back then, he was still young. Spirited, he was about to leave the Nine Provinces Continent to journey to the Eastern Sea Region.

At that time, he had also gathered his friends from the Eastern

Sea Region to talk about the future.

And now, in the blink of an eye, Chu Feng had not only left the Nine Provinces Continent, but he had also left the Eastern Sea Region, the Holy Land of Martialism and the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

He had arrived at the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm by himself. He had separated from his lovers and brothers. He now lived in completely different worlds to them. Between them was the vast starry sky.

The distance between them was extremely far, so far that Chu Feng would not be able to see them regardless of how much he missed them.

‘Are you all doing fine still?’ As he pondered, emotions filled Chu Feng’s heart.

In the blink of an eye, several years had passed. Yet, Chu Feng had not been able to find Su Rou and Su Mei. He had no idea as to whether they were still alive or not.

Furthermore, he had no idea how Zhan Tianyi and Jiang Wushang were doing in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

He had no idea about the future at all...

Filled with emotions, Chu Feng started to cherish the friends before him even more. At that moment, Chu Feng spread forth his spirit power. His spirit power covered all of Hero City, and even reached outside Hero City.

He wanted to see if there were any more familiar faces present among the people there.

“This aura, it’s her?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

Xu Yiyi and the others all heard Chu Feng’s muttering. As such, they asked, “Chu Feng, what’s wrong?”

“Everyone, please excuse me. I will have you all wait here for a bit.” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

When he appeared again, he had arrived outside of Hero City.

“Look! It’s Lord Chu Feng!”

The crowd immediately burst into an uproar when they saw Chu Feng.

Someone as famous as Chu Feng had already become the idol of countless people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As long as someone recognized him, regardless of where he might go, Chu Feng would definitely cause a major commotion. This was even more so when they were outside Hero City.

At that moment, the people that saw Chu Feng all began to rush toward him. From the sky and on the ground, a vast crowd was gathering around Chu Feng. They were pushing and shouting at one another. Some even started fighting among themselves because of it.

However, there were two figures that were currently withdrawing.

They were two women, two very ordinary-looking women.

However, they were precisely the ones that had caught Chu Feng’s attention and brought him here.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body shifted. He passed through the crowd and arrived before the two women, stopping their path.

The two women were immediately startled upon seeing Chu Feng. Incomparably complicated emotions emerged in their eyes.

As for Chu Feng, the corners of his mouth were raised into a smile. He said, “Tang Ying, long time no see.”

# Chapter 2582 - All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart

---

Tang Ying was the Young Miss of the Tang Family. She was Chu Feng's friend from when he first came to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Originally, Chu Feng was a benefactor to the Tang Family. However, for the sake of currying favor from Luyang's Pavilion, not only did the Tang Family betray Chu Feng and try to kill him, they even sold Tang Ying away.

Tang Ying was a pitiful person. That said, she was extremely grateful toward Chu Feng. After what had happened in the past, she felt that she was very weak and would become Chu Feng's burden. As such, without any hesitation, Tang Ying refused the Red Butterfly Society's offer to shelter her and left together with her maid.

In the blink of an eye, it had been several years since they were separated. Chu Feng never expected to meet Tang Ying again.

However, when Tang Ying saw Chu Feng, she had a hesitant expression, and did not dare to recognize him. At the same time, great shock emerged in her eyes.

"What's wrong? You couldn't possibly have forgotten about me, right?" Chu Feng asked with a beaming smile on his face.

Chu Feng was very happy to be able to see Tang Ying.

After all, Tang Ying could be considered to be the first friend he had made after arriving in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After separating, Chu Feng had expected to never see her again. Being able to reunite with her today could truly be considered fate.

Tang Ying did not say anything. Her large eyes were fixed onto

Chu Feng the entire time.

“You couldn’t possibly really not recognize me, right?” Chu Feng scratched his head awkwardly.

“Chu Feng, you really still remember me?” Tang Ying finally spoke. At the same time she spoke, her eyes started to tear up.

“Foolish girl, what are you talking about? How could I not remember you?” Chu Feng said.

“But... you’re already such a grand character now. How could you still remember an insignificant person like me?” Tang Ying said.

Seeing Tang Ying reacting like this, Chu Feng finally realized why she did not attempt to meet him even after arriving there.

Chu Feng had no idea what sort of status he held in Tang Ying’s heart. However, Chu Feng knew that she constantly had him on her mind.

Even her decision to visit Hero City was merely so that she could have a look at Chu Feng.

However, she did not plan to meet Chu Feng. She felt that compared to Chu Feng, who had become a grand existence in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, she was still an ordinary nobody.

Even if she were to die, no one would remember her. She felt that she was simply and completely negligible.

She was scared, scared that Chu Feng would have already forgotten her, or would look down on her and refuse to acknowledge her.

Her thoughts were understandable too. After all, the world of martial cultivators was a world where one’s strength and self-interest was the most important.

For the sake of their benefit, her family had abandoned her.

From that, it could be seen how important self-interest and benefits were to martial cultivators.

Thus, she felt that, with how enormously weak she was, she was currently unqualified to even be Chu Feng's friend.

Although the two of them both existed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they were simply people from two different worlds.

“Paa~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's hand landed lightly on Tang Ying's shoulder. With a smile on his face, he said, “How could I forget about you, my friend?”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a layer of golden-bright and dazzling spirit power sprinkled down like starlight. The light enveloped Tang Ying and her maid, A'Cai.

As the spirit power enveloped their bodies, Tang Ying and A'Cai's appearances began to change.

They no longer appeared ordinary-looking. Although their appearances could not be considered to be devastatingly beautiful like celestial fairies, they had become decently beautiful women.

These were the original appearances of Tang Ying and A'Cai.

When Chu Feng separated from Tang Ying and A'Cai, the two girls had specially requested that he give them ordinary appearances.

The two of them had had enough of the mutual deception of the world of martial cultivators. They did not wish to court unnecessary disaster because of their beauty, and only wanted to live ordinarily for the rest of their lives.

“Chu Feng, you...”

Seemingly able to sense that her appearance had returned to how

it was originally, Tang Ying was at a complete loss.

“You can return to being the person you were before. I dare to guarantee that no one will dare to harm you again,” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Chu Feng’s smile was so very warm. His smile was like a ray of sunshine that landed directly on Tang Ying’s heart.

At that moment, Tang Ying was completely moved. The tears in her eyes suddenly rolled down her cheeks, moistening her charming face.

Chu Feng did not urge Tang Ying to not cry. Instead, he hugged Tang Ying in his bosom.

Since she wanted to cry, he had decided to let her cry to her heart’s content.

After being hugged by Chu Feng, Tang Ying finally realized that Chu Feng had not changed even with the fame and strength he currently possessed.

Chu Feng was still that same Chu Feng. He was still as reliable as before.

.....

After that, a place for Tang Ying to live was arranged inside Hero City. She would stay with Li Xiaoli and the others.

As for Hero City, it had begun to plan how to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect with its allied powers.

The proposal made by Hero City was approved by both the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple.

Merely, not only was the Infant Soul Sect powerful, but the headquarters of the Infant Soul Sect had always been hidden too.

As such, finding the headquarters of the Infant Soul Sect had become the most difficult problem at hand.

Ying Mingchao felt that the matter would be dangerous. Thus, he refused to allow Chu Feng to participate.

As such, Chu Feng was only able to remain in Hero City. However, he was not idle the entire time.

At that moment, Chu Feng was holding a book in hand while sitting upright in his room. He was reading the book carefully.

That book was very simple, unadorned and shabby. However, the book gave off a very dense Ancient Era's aura.

Moreover, Chu Feng had been reading that book for several days already.

The title of the book was 'All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.'

Back then, for the sake of thanking Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao had forcibly given Chu Feng his Cosmos Sack.

There were countless treasures in that Cosmos Sack. In terms of quality, the treasures in that Cosmos Sack greatly surpassed the treasures from the Cosmos Sack that the World Spiritist Saintess offered to Chu Feng for reconciliation.

Chu Feng felt that the most valuable treasure in the Cosmos Sack was the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

This All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was written by a person known as Sage All Equilibrium. It recorded how world spiritists should refine weapons.

The All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart did not record how to refine specific weapons. Instead, it provided world spiritists techniques to refine all sorts of weapons.

In a nutshell, similar things possessed a common aspect to them. If Chu Feng was able to master the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, he would gain benefits regardless of what sort of weapon he might attempt to refine in the future.



This was similar to how Chu Feng possessed the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip that was helpful toward martial skills in his dantian. With that God Bestowment Bamboo Slip, his martial skills, regardless of what they might be, would always be a tier above those of ordinary individuals.

The All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was a very rare book. Even though Chu Feng had been meticulously studying it for several days now, he was still unable to understand it completely.

However, through the efforts of the past several days, Chu Feng knew that the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was not complete.

Furthermore, the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart also mentioned that world spirit techniques were capable of increasing one's cultivation.

Powerful world spiritists did not need to meticulously study martial cultivation methods. They would be able to increase their cultivation by only meticulously studying world spirit techniques.

For example, if Chu Feng was able to completely grasp the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart and use the method recorded in it to refine a weapon, not only would Chu Feng be able to gain a whole new level of insight while refining the weapon, but he would also be able to obtain martial comprehension.

This was something that Chu Feng had never experienced before. Thus, he was very excited.

If what was said in the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was true, Chu Feng would have another method to increase his cultivation in the future. What sort of sensation would that be?

Chu Feng felt that would most definitely be an extremely wondrous sensation.

“Stop studying it so meticulously. That is only a fragment. Regardless of how thoroughly you study it, you will still not be able

to use its contents to refine weapons,” Her Lady Queen said.

It was not that Her Lady Queen was trying to attack Chu Feng psychologically. Rather, after Chu Feng discovered that the book was only an incomplete fragment, he had gone to find Ying Mingchao to ask him about whether or not he knew about the whereabouts of the remainder of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Ying Mingchao told Chu Feng that he had obtained the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart unintentionally, and had no idea about the whereabouts of the remainder of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Even though Chu Feng had been studying the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart for several days now, he was still unable to comprehend it. However, it was not because his comprehension ability was lacking. Rather, it was because the book itself was incomplete.

In other words, if Chu Feng were to continue studying the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, he might be able to grasp something, or he might grasp nothing.

Her Lady Queen’s intention was clear. She did not want to Chu Feng to waste time on that All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

“Lord Chu Feng, there’s a letter for you,” Suddenly, a voice sounded from outside Chu Feng’s palace.

“Who sent the letter?” Chu Feng was surprised. Practically all of his acquaintances in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were gathered in Hero City. If they needed him, they could come find him directly. There was simply no need for them to write him a letter.

“Lord Chu Feng, there is no indication of who the sender is on the letter,” The person outside said.

Chu Feng did not ask anymore. Instead, he opened his door and received the letter from that person outside.

The moment Chu Feng touched the letter, he discovered that it was no small matter. Unless one were to open the letter, one would find it very difficult to see the contents inside.

“Thank you for your trouble,” Chu Feng thanked the letter deliverer courteously. Then, he closed the door to his palace again and opened the letter.

When Chu Feng saw the contents of the letter, he suddenly clenched the hands that he was holding the letter with. A worried expression emerged in his eyes.

## Chapter 2583 - Meeting Hun Lian Again

---

‘Chu Feng, if you want to save Zhao Hong, come find me here.

Remember, you are only allowed to come by yourself. Otherwise... Zhao Hong’s life shall end.’

--- Kong Heavenly Clansmen, Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua.

It turned out that the letter was sent to Chu Feng by Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua. They had actually managed to capture Zhao Hong.

Furthermore, on the lower right corner of the letter hung a ring. Chu Feng recognized that ring. It was the same ring that Zhao Hong carried with her.

“Zhao Hong was actually captured by them?”

Chu Feng started to frown. With the Kong Heavenly Clan extinguished, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua, these two Utmost Exalted Elders, could be said to be the few extremely powerful survivors of the Kong Heavenly Clan.

For them to demand that Chu Feng meet them now, it was obvious that they were finding Chu Feng for revenge.

“If you had known that they would be this ungrateful, you should’ve killed them two years ago,” Her Lady Queen said angrily.

Two years ago, Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword had lost control and was planning to unleash a massacre. Originally, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were going to be killed by the Evil God Sword.

It was Chu Feng who did not wish to kill them, and forcibly controlled his Evil God Sword to allow them the time to escape.

Never did Her Lady Queen expect that the two of them would capture Zhao Hong to threaten Chu Feng.

Even if they were not considered ungrateful, they most definitely could be said to have acted excessively.

“Go and find Ying Mingchao. With his strength, taking care of them would be an extremely easy task.”

“With Ying Mingchao, they simply would not even have the chance to attack Zhao Hong. You would not have to worry about Zhao Hong being injured,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Eggy, are you planning to have me ignore the safety of my friend?” However, Chu Feng revealed a displeased expression at Her Lady Queen’s suggestion.

“I...” Faced with Chu Feng’s displeased expression, Her Lady Queen actually revealed a guilty expression on her exceptionally beautiful face.

Her Lady Queen was exceptionally smart. How could she not know that since Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua dared to send the letter to Chu Feng, they most definitely possessed a surefire plan?

In other words, even if Chu Feng were to request assistance from powerful individuals capable of easily killing Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua, he might not necessarily be able to save Zhao Hong.

For example, they could imprison Zhao Hong somewhere hidden with a mechanism that would activate at a certain time, killing her.

In short, there were many methods for them to kill Zhao Hong. There was simply no need for them to be right beside Zhao Hong.

After a moment of silence, Her Lady Queen said, “I merely did not wish to put you in danger.”

Seeing Her Lady Queen’s reaction, Chu Feng felt very apologetic too. How could he not know what Eggy was thinking?

To Eggy, the lives and deaths of other people were insignificant. She only cared about Chu Feng’s safety.

“It would seem that I am unable to urge you against it,” Her Lady

Queen added.

“If I do not go, I will have no way to face Wang Qiang, no way to face my own conscience,” Chu Feng said.

“Forget about it. Since you insist on going, there’s no time to waste. Let’s set off right now,” Her Lady Queen had finally reached an agreement with Chu Feng.

After that, Chu Feng found a random excuse to leave Hero City and proceeded for the place where Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua wanted to meet him.

It was a vast desert. As the wind blew past, yellow sand filled the entire place.

However, there were oases in that vast desert. They were all man-made, and served as places where people resided.

Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua did not mention the precise location where Chu Feng was to meet them in the letter. Thus, Chu Feng could only search the oases one by one.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had to search them while showing himself. He was afraid that Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua would miss him.

“That city is strange.”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyes shifted.

At an oasis before him was a city.

Although that city appeared to be ordinary, as a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to notice that the city was strange.

“Buzz~~~”

Light started to twinkle in Chu Feng’s eyes. He had activated his Heaven’s Eyes.

After activating his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng immediately discovered that there was a concealment formation outside that

city.

That concealment formation concealed the true nature of the city. It made it so that others would see an ordinary city from the outside.

However, a devastating scene of unprecedented brutality was currently taking place in the city.

Massacre. A massacre was happening in the city. The city was already covered in blood. Countless corpses had fallen into the sea of blood.

Even though Chu Feng was only seeing it and not hearing anything, Chu Feng felt as if he could hear voices that brought utter distress upon one's heart and soul from the city.

There were wailing noises, voices begging for forgiveness and screams rising and falling in succession throughout the city.

It was the Infant Soul Sect. At that moment, the ones massacring the city were two members of the Infant Soul Sect.

“It's him?”

To Chu Feng's surprise, he actually recognized one of the two Infant Soul Sect members.

It was Hun Lian.

It was the same genius who was equally as famous as Li Yue'er back then, and was then defeated by Li Yue'er at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

As for that Hun Lian, he actually held another identity; he had actually always been a member of the Infant Soul Sect.

As for his master, he was an infamous great evil demon of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, Old Demon Rakshasa.

Back at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds, Chu Feng had defeated both Hun Lian and his master with the power of a spirit formation. However, in actuality, if Chu Feng did not have

the power of that spirit formation, the strength Chu Feng held back then would have been much inferior to Hun Lian's strength.

It had come into Chu Feng's mind that he might encounter Hun Lian again. Merely, he had never expected to encounter him there.

"Hahahaha, it's been so long since I've had a taste of infants. I can tell that you're extremely delicious just by looking at you."

At that moment, Hun Lian was standing on top of a palace. In his hand was an infant. He was laughing crazily and totally did not notice that Chu Feng was moving toward him.

A mother was kneeling beneath the palace and kowtowing as she begged, "Milord, please, please spare my child, please spare my child."

"Tsk, ts, sure enough, maternal love is the greatest of all. Since that's the case, I will allow you to personally witness how I'm going to refine your child."

As Hun Lian spoke, his eyes turned crimson like that of a ferocious beast. As he opened his mouth, an extremely frightening aura enveloped that infant.

He... was planning to refine the infant in his hand.

"Stop!!!"

Right at that moment, an ear-piercing voice exploded like thunder.

That sudden shout shocked Hun Lian so much that his body started to tremble. His opened mouth was also abruptly closed.

"Who is it?" Hun Lian cast his ice-cold gaze toward the direction of the voice.

Although he had not sensed the aura of his opponent, he subconsciously felt that the person who gave that shout was someone extraordinary.

"It's actually you?"



However, when Hun Lian saw the person who had come, he immediately revealed a joyous expression and burst into loud laughter.

“This is truly what they mean by finding by sheer luck what one has searched for far and wide. I had not gone to find you, yet you voluntarily came to me.”

Hun Lian had managed to recognize the person who had arrived. He was Chu Feng.

“Lord Chu Feng, please save us, please save us!”

At that moment, many people in the city also noticed Chu Feng.

They reacted as if they had seen a god when they saw Chu Feng, and they all started to kneel on the ground to kowtow to and beg for Chu Feng to save them.

“You all couldn’t have mistaken this right? You all actually want that trash to save you?”

“Hahaha, what a joke! This is truly the most ridiculous joke I’ve heard since exiting closed-door training.”

At that moment, Hun Lian was laughing even harder.

Compared to two years ago, his cultivation had progressed a lot. Back when he was only a rank three Martial Ancestor, he was already deemed to be one of the strongest geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

And now, his cultivation was that of a rank six Martial Ancestor. Thus, compared to two years ago, he was much more confident.

Most importantly, he had always looked down on Chu Feng. He had always thought that Chu Feng would not be a match for him if it wasn’t for that spirit formation.

Thus, he detested Chu Feng enormously, and had always wanted to take revenge on Chu Feng.

Chu Feng, without that grand formation, how could you possibly

contend against me?”

“Your daddy is already a rank six Martial Ancestor now!”

As Hun Lian spoke, he unleashed his rank six Martial Ancestor aura. In an instant, heaven and earth darkened. The weather began to change. Boundless killing intent could be felt from all around.

That killing intent was simply too strong. It caused the commoners that were still alive to shiver in fear. They were unable to even utter a word.

“Heh...” However, faced with such a Hun Lian, Chu Feng suddenly laughed.

Evidently, this Hun Lian still didn’t notice what Chu Feng’s current cultivation was.

However, that was also understandable. After all, there was an enormous different in strength between them.

With merely a cultivation of rank six Martial Ancestor, that Hun Lian would naturally not be able to see through the current Chu Feng.

“You still dare laugh? I see that you will not shed a tear until you see your coffin.”

Seeing that Chu Feng dared to still laugh at him, the anger in Hun Lian’s eyes increased many times over. As he spoke, he planned to attack Chu Feng.

“Big brother Hun Lian, let’s go, we’ve got to go!”

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect disciple that was accompanying Hun Lian suddenly appeared beside Hun Lian.

Not only did he have a flustered expression on his face, but he immediately grabbed Hun Lian’s arm and started to urge him to escape.

At that moment, Hun Lian was even able to sense that his

companion's hand was trembling.

“Xiaoleng, what are you doing?”

Hun Lian was completely confused by this sudden scene.

He was unable to understand why his companion would react in such a manner because of a mere Chu Feng.

## Chapter 2584 - Unbelievable

---

“Big brother Hun Lian, that is a long story to explain. I will tell you after we get back. Right now, we must flee,” Xiaoleng did not answer Hun Lian’s question. Instead, he grabbed Hun Lian and tried to run. Unfortunately, as his cultivation was weaker than Hun Lian’s, he was simply unable to pull Hun Lian away. [1. Xiaoleng means Little Cold. I don’t think that’s his nickname.]

“Xiaoleng, I believe you know that I entered closed-door training for two years precisely so that I could take revenge against that fellow Li Ming.”

“However, it is not only Li Ming who brought humiliation upon me at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds. There was also this Chu Feng.”

“I was planning to go and find this Chu Feng to begin with. Never did I expect that I would actually encounter him here.”

“This is most definitely the will of heaven. Even the heavens themselves are helping me. As such, how can I let him get away?” Hun Lian said to that Xiaoleng.

“Big brother Hun Lian, I will most definitely not stop you if you are to find Li Ming for revenge. However, you cannot find this Chu Feng for revenge.”

“You simply do not know what has happened in the past two years. Thus...” That Xiaoleng wanted to explain the situation to Hun Lian.

However, Hun Lian grew increasingly annoyed the more he listened. He did not understand why he could seek Li Ming to take revenge but not do the same for Chu Feng.

Could it be that this Chu Feng was stronger than Li Ming?

What a joke! In Hun Lian’s heart, Chu Feng was nothing more than trash.

He felt that Chu Feng was only able to defeat him because of that grand spirit formation. Otherwise, a casual spit from him would be able to drown Chu Feng alive.

Hun Lian felt that Young Master Li Ming was his actual rival. As for Chu Feng, he was nothing more than an ant that he could easily crush.

Thus, Hun Lian decided to completely ignore Xiaoleng. He once again turned his murderous-looking gaze to Chu Feng.

He said, “Chu Feng, today... I will definitely make you wish you were dead. I will make you kneel before me and beg for forgiveness.”

“Putt~~~”

However, right after Hun Lian said those words, that Xiaoleng actually knelt on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng.

“Lord Chu Feng, please spare us. We never intended to become your enemies. Please, please spare us.”

“Xiaoleng, you...”

Hun Lian felt extremely speechless as he looked to Xiaoleng before him.

Although he knew that Xiaoleng was craven and cowardly, he felt that one should determine who to show cowardice toward.

It would be one thing for Xiaoleng to act like this if the person before them was very powerful. However, Xiaoleng was actually scared by a mere Chu Feng. Hun Lian felt extremely displeased to see this.

“Scram!” Hun Lian grabbed Xiaoleng and tossed him ruthlessly to the ground. Seemingly still extremely displeased, he even spit at Xiaoleng, “Useless trash! You’re actually this scared of a mere Chu Feng?! You have truly and utterly disgraced our Infant Soul Sect!”

“Boom~~~”

However, right at that moment, Hun Liang's expression changed. He sensed an enormous aura moving toward him in a manner capable of toppling the mountains and overturning the seas.

That aura was so frighteningly powerful that he felt as if he would suffocate from it.

“Chu Feng?”

Subconsciously, Hun Lian looked over to Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he felt that the enormous aura was identical to Chu Feng's aura.

“Wuuahh~~~”

But before his gaze could reach Chu Feng, he was devastated by that aura. Not only did he fall from above the palace, but he was also smashed ruthlessly into the ground like a dying dog.

Even though Hun Lian exerted all of his strength to struggle, he was unable to move in the slightest.

“Chu Feng, you... you... how could you... how could your oppressive might be able to suppress me?”

At that moment, even speaking was a very strenuous task for Hun Lian. That said, a shocked expression filled his face.

Hun Lian felt great disbelief. As Chu Feng was only a Half Martial Ancestor two years ago, he felt that even if Chu Feng were to be able to make improvements in his cultivation through closed-door training, he would at most be a peak Half Martial Ancestor, and not be able to even cross the threshold to Martial Ancestor. As such, how could he possibly possess the capability to suppress him?

After all, he was currently a rank six Martial Ancestor.

“I got it now! You're relying on the power of a spirit formation again!” Hun Lian thought of a possibility. That is, he felt that Chu Feng was utilizing the power of a spirit formation again.

Otherwise, how could Chu Feng possibly suppress him?

“Chu Feng, you despicable and shameless, vile little man! Do you dare fight against me with your own cultivation?!” Hun Lian started to curse loudly at Chu Feng.

“Big brother Hun Lian, stop speaking. Chu Feng’s current cultivation is that of a rank nine Martial Ancestor. He is the publicly-renowned number one expert beneath the True Immortal realm,” Right at that moment, Xiaoleng started to urge Hun Lian to stop.

“Rank nine Martial Ancestor? You’re saying that this Chu Feng is a rank nine Martial Ancestor?” Hun Lian was dumbstruck. He simply did not dare to believe what he had just heard.

“That’s right, that is something everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knows,” Xiaoleng was seemingly afraid that Hun Lian would not believe him, and began to nod his head repeatedly.

“That’s impossible! How could that be?! How could he increase his cultivation by that much in such a short period of time?!” Hun Lian shook his head repeatedly. He found this news very difficult to accept.

How could a person possibly reach peak Martial Ancestor from Half Martial Ancestor in such a short period of time?”

Hun Lian was unable to accept this. This was especially the case when the person in question was Chu Feng.

“I’m not lying, that is the truth,” Xiaoleng re-emphasized his point.

“Wuuahh~~~”

The next moment, that Xiaoleng also let out a scream. His expression grew distorted.

It was not only Xiaoleng, as Hun Lian was also grimacing in pain.

The expression of pain filled his handsome face.

Chu Feng... had increased the strength of his oppressive might. Furthermore, he had enveloped both Xiaoleng and Hun Lian in his strengthened oppressive might.

“Lord Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me!!!”

“We never intended to be your enemies!”

That Xiaoleng started to beg for forgiveness nonstop. He was truly scared of Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng did not bother to pay attention to his begging. Instead, he coldly asked, “Tell me, where is the Infant Soul Sect located?”

“This...” Hearing those words, the expressions of both Hun Lian and Xiaoleng changed. Their faces turned paper pale. Furthermore, their appearances were not caused by Chu Feng’s oppressive might. Instead, at a glance, it was obvious that they’d turned paper pale from fear. It was as if they had recalled an extremely frightening matter.

“You want to know about the location of the Infant Soul Sect? It would seem that your Hero City is planning to attack our Infant Soul Sect.”

Right at that moment, an aged voice was suddenly heard.

Chu Feng frowned upon hearing that voice. From that voice, he felt an aura many times stronger than his own.

True Immortal; a True Immortal had appeared.

Looking toward the direction of the voice, Chu Feng’s expression changed once again.

It was an old man.

He possessed a head of white hair, and was wearing a black gown. He was extremely thin, and wrinkles covered his face.



Too old. Chu Feng was unable to determine how long that man had lived.

That man looked like a mummy that had walked out from its coffin. His appearance was truly frightening.

That said, Chu Feng knew this man. He was Hun Lian's master, Old Demon Rakshasa.

Merely, back then, Old Demon Rakshasa was still only a peak Martial Ancestor. However, at that moment it was clear he had become a True Immortal.

"Chu Feng, I must truly congratulate you," Old Demon Rakshasa said to Chu Feng in an eccentric manner.

"What's there to congratulate?" Chu Feng asked.

"The speed at which your cultivation increases could simply be said to be lightning fast. Is that not something worthy of congratulation?" Old Demon Rakshasa said to Chu Feng.

"If that really is the case, then I must congratulate you too. After all these years, you've finally managed to make a breakthrough and become a True Immortal."

"With this, you'll be able to live for many years longer, no?" Chu Feng said.

"Impudent!" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Old Demon Rakshasa revealed a furious expression.

Although Chu Feng's words might appear to be kind, he was actually mocking him. He was mocking Old Demon Rakshasa's inability to break through to the True Immortal realm for so long, to the point where he could only continue to extend his lifespan through special means.

Even though he had finally become a True Immortal, Old Demon Rakshasa's cultivation talent could not be considered to be top rated at all.

“So what if I am impudent toward someone like you?” As Chu Feng spoke, Chu Feng revealed an unrestrained smile.

“Zzzzz~”

The next moment, lightning started to flash in Chu Feng’s eyes. Then, both his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings appeared in unison.

After activating the power of his Heavenly Bloodline, lightning clouds began to form in both Chu Feng’s surroundings and the sky.

Lightning was flickering within the clouds. Furthermore, it was growing more and more ferocious. It was as if an abnormal sign would soon descend.

The reason for that was not merely because Chu Feng had unleashed his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings.

Most importantly, it had to do with the character on Chu Feng’s forehead. On Chu Feng’s forehead was the character ‘Divine.’

# Chapter 2585 - Martial Ancestor Vs. True Immortal

---

“A Divine Lightning Mark. How could this guy have such a Lightning Mark?!”

Hun Lian’s expression changed enormously upon seeing the Lightning Mark on Chu Feng’s forehead. It was only at that moment that he realized how extraordinary Chu Feng was.

“What a powerful aura. This is simply the most powerful Heavenly Bloodline I’ve ever experienced.”

“Lord Chu Feng’s reputation is truly well-deserved.”

At that moment, the survivors in the city were also all deeply attracted by the aura Chu Feng emitted.

“Woosh~~~”

At that moment, two Ancestral Armaments appeared in Chu Feng’s hands.

They were the Stormwind Edge and the Flame Dragon Greatsword. When Chu Feng held the two Ancestral Armaments in his hand, his aura greatly increased again.

Powerful, extremely powerful.

Chu Feng was so powerful that the crowd present even started feeling that Chu Feng, a Martial Ancestor, would be able to contend against True Immortals.

“Chu Feng, you couldn’t possibly be thinking that you will be able to contend against me with your cultivation, right?”

“Don’t forget, no matter how strong you might be, you are still only a Martial Ancestor. As for this old man, I am a True Immortal,” Old Demon Rakshasa laughed mockingly.

“It is not up to you or I to decide whether or not I am able to

contend against you,” As Chu Feng spoke, his gaze suddenly changed.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, a golden light started to shine from Chu Feng’s body. Soon, it turned into a golden-bright and dazzling large sword. Not only was that golden sword extremely bright, but it also emitted a very oppressive aura. The aura it emitted was sweeping through the sky as it started moving toward Old Demon Rakshasa.

“That is?”

Upon seeing that golden-bright and dazzling large sword, Old Demon Rakshasa’s expression changed too. Then, he shot forth his palms and sent forth boundless Immortal-level martial power from his palms. His Immortal-level martial power formed a defensive barrier before him.

“Boom~~~”

When the golden-bright and dazzling sword collided with the Immortal-level spirit power defensive barrier, not only was the defensive barrier shattered by the impact, even Old Demon Rakshasa was knocked several tens of thousands of meters away and straight out of the city.

“Heavens! Chu Feng actually managed to beat back a True Immortal?!”

The crowd was stupefied. They simply did not dare to believe what they were seeing.

As for this overwhelmingly powerful sword, it was naturally the Ancient Era’s War Sword.

At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa’s heart was wavering nonstop. Unable to contain his emotions, he asked, “Is this the secret skill that you obtained from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?”

“However, wasn’t it an axe according to the rumors? Why would it be a sword?”

Earlier, he had confronted the Ancient Era’s War Sword himself. Thus, he had deeply felt how powerful the Ancient Era’s War Sword was.

That was precisely the reason why he was so shocked. He was shocked that a Martial Ancestor would really be able to contend against him with the power of a secret skill.

One must know that before Old Demon Rakshasa encountered Chu Feng again, he had already confronted other peak Martial Ancestors.

Although those people were only a level of cultivation beneath him, they were powerless like ants before him.

Originally, he felt that it would be the case for Chu Feng too. However, the reality before him caused him to be taken aback.

“Who told you that I only obtained the Ancient Era’s War Axe from the Ancient Era’s War Clan?”

As Chu Feng spoke, he arrived before Old Demon Rakshasa. As for his Ancient Era’s War Sword, it carried with it boundless power as it moved to oppress Old Demon Rakshasa again.

“Chu Feng, did you really think that you could contend against this True Immortal?”

Old Demon Rakshasa was furious. He held his hands like swords and pointed them at Chu Feng.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, overwhelming martial power surged out from Old Demon Rakshasa’s hands like the tide. Soon, his martial power turned into two enormous martial power swords with a length over a thousand meters.

After those two enormous martial power swords appeared, they

immediately moved to cut down Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword.

“Clank, clank, clank~~~”

The three enormous swords began to confront one another in the sky. Their showdown caused the entire region to tremble violently.

The sky had darkened completely. Neither the sun nor the moon could be seen. Apart from the three dazzling enormous swords fighting in the sky, everything else was pitch-black.

Even the distant sky was filled with cracks. The earth itself was also sinking from the quaking. The city that they were fighting over, the city that had a spirit formation placed over it, was also crumbling. Fortunately, the survivors of the city were all fleeing with their lives on the line.

All of that was caused by those three enormous swords.

Not to mention the might of those three swords, merely their oppressive auras were capable of intimidating everything in their surroundings!!!

“Lord Chu Feng is truly amazing. He was actually really capable of contending against a True Immortal as a Martial Ancestor!”

“His reputation as the number one individual beneath True Immortals is truly not only in name, but also in reality. Likely, apart from him, there isn't anyone in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm capable of accomplishing what he has.”

The crowd was endlessly astonished. They were all stunned by the scene before them.

As the crowd looked more closely at the battle of the three enormous swords, they grew even more fearful.

Even though Old Demon Rakshasa's two enormous martial

power swords were larger in size, Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword possessed greater imposing might.

It was as if that Ancient Era's War Sword possessed fundamental bloodline powers.

It was as if the ones fighting were two mature rain dragons against a young true dragon.

Even though the rain dragons were very powerful, they were still nowhere near as imposing and ferocious as the young true dragon.

This was a fundamental difference in strength. Everyone was able to sense this fundamental divide.

That was the sensation that the crowd felt from the Ancient Era's War Sword.

"An ability that powerful is most definitely not something that ordinary people can manage."

"Exactly how powerful is Lord Chu Feng?"

The more they watched, the more astonished the crowd became. They were deeply astonished by Chu Feng's display of strength.

That said, even though everybody in the crowd was exclaiming in admiration at Chu Feng's strength, Chu Feng himself was frowning tightly.

"Seems like it still won't do. Even though you possess this many abilities, you are still unable to defeat a True Immortal," Her Lady Queen said.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded his head in agreement at Her Lady Queen's words.

Although he and Old Demon Rakshasa appeared to be equally matched, Chu Feng had already used two Ancestral Armaments, his Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and even the Divine level Lightning Mark.

Chu Feng had used practically all of his strongest abilities.

However, it was clear that Old Demon Rakshasa had not gone all-out yet.

If Old Demon Rakshasa were to go all-out, it was obvious as to what the outcome of the battle would be.

“Chu Feng, you cannot continue like this. If you want to win, you cannot sit and wait for death,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Understood,” As Chu Feng spoke, he quietly streaked the hand that he held the Stormwind Edge with across his Cosmos Sack. Then, three medicinal pellets entered his palm.

Then, with a shake of his palm, the three medicinal pellets secretly entered his mouth.

After the three medicinal pellets entered his mouth, there was no outward change to Chu Feng. However, the martial power within his body surged like a gathering storm or a soon-to-erupt volcano. His martial power was no longer tranquil.

That martial power was Chu Feng’s own martial power. It was currently revolving and galloping around the three medicinal pellets.

Those three medicinal pellets were not immediately refined after entering Chu Feng’s stomach. Instead, like three rulers, they began to guide the martial power within Chu Feng’s body. They were bringing about an abnormal transformation.

The three medicinal pellets were all a special sort of forbidden medicine.

The reason why they were forbidden medicine was because they were capable of allowing Chu Feng to increase his battle power enormously. Furthermore, that increase in battle power was a very frightening one.

As for the reason why those forbidden medicines were special, it was because they were only able to increase one’s battle power for a very short period of time -- a split second.



In other words, once Chu Feng refined those medicinal pellets, he could only unleash a single attack.

Thus, at that moment, Chu Feng was waiting for an opportunity.

Taking advantage of the fact that Old Demon Rakshasa was overly confident in his strength and had not gone all-out, Chu Feng waited for an opportunity to deliver a huge blow to Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Eeeaahhh!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng let out a shout. Following that shout, the veins all over his body bulged, Then wave upon wave of martial power visible to the naked eye was being emitted from his body. They revolved around him nonstop.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng’s aura became a bit more powerful. Most importantly, the power of the Ancient Era’s War Sword also grew a bit more powerful.

The Ancient Era’s War Sword was pushing back Old Demon Rakshasa’s two enormous martial power swords unceasingly. It was moving closer and closer to Old Demon Rakshasa.

# Chapter 2586 - Chu Feng's Surprise Attack

---

“Amazing, he actually managed to seize the upper hand in battle!” The crowd burst into an uproar.

They felt that it was simply impossible for a Martial Ancestor to be a match for a True Immortal. Yet, not only was Chu Feng able to contend against Old Demon Rakshasa, but he even managed to gain the upper hand in their battle.

This was most definitely something that had never happened before and would never happen again. It was definitely something truly heaven-defying.

“Humph, a bunch of fools. He is clearly an arrow at the end of its flight, yet you all react as if he is something exceptional.”

Old Demon Rakshasa was not only calm and composed even though Chu Feng had gained the upper hand in the battle, but he even looked to the crowd with a mocking expression.

“This old man simply does not have to go all-out. Merely by using a bit of my strength, I will be able to turn the battle around.”

“Chu Feng, since you’ve overestimated your capabilities, this old man shall play with you a bit longer today.”

“I shall see how long you, a mere peak Martial Ancestor, can last against me.”

As Old Demon Rakshasa spoke, his eyes moved slightly. Then, another wave of martial power spread forth from within him and assimilated into the two enormous martial power swords.

With that, not only did the two martial power swords grow even larger, but they also became more mighty.

“Damn it!”

At that moment, Chu Feng revealed a painful expression. It was as if he could not continue to persist against Old Demon Rakshasa.

Furthermore, the Ancient Era's War Sword that Chu Feng was controlling started to let out buzzing noises every time it collided with Old Demon Rakshasa's two enormous martial power swords.

Those were trembling noises. The Ancient Era's War Sword was no longer capable of contending against the two enormous martial power swords.

“What utter incompetence. This old man merely increased the power of my attacks by a slight bit, and has not even used any martial skills. Yet, you're already unable to withstand it anymore?”

“Sure enough, Martial Ancestors remain only Martial Ancestors, and are simply incapable of contending against True Immortals.”

The smile on Old Demon Rakshasa's face grew stronger and stronger. He was growing more and more complacent.

True Immortals being stronger than Martial Ancestors was an unvarying principle that had existed since the Ancient Era.

Thus, logically, there should be no reason for him to feel proud at being able to suppress a Martial Ancestor as a True Immortal.

However, the Martial Ancestor that he was suppressing was Chu Feng, the person deemed to be the strongest genius in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, someone who would very likely stand at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and rule over it like Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong did in the past.

That was the reason why he felt so proud at being able to suppress Chu Feng.

At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa had lost himself in joy. Although others did not notice it, Chu Feng took great note of it.

‘It's now!’

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes grew exceptionally sharp. This sort of

sharpness simply did not appear to be something that a person who was being suppressed could reveal.

That's right, the weakness Chu Feng revealed earlier was simply a disguise. He had simply not reached a point of being unable to withstand Old Demon Rakshasa.

He had deliberately pretended to be completely suppressed and on the verge of defeat so that Old Demon Rakshasa would lower his guard. He was planning to launch a surprise attack.

After deciding to unleash his surprise attack, the three forbidden medicines in Chu Feng's stomach were subsequently refined by him.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, golden gaseous flames began to surge from within Chu Feng. Those golden gaseous flames were very extraordinary. Like burning golden light, they were exceptionally formidable.

At the same time Chu Feng refined the forbidden medicines, he controlled his Ancient Era's War Sword to pierce at Old Demon Rakshasa.

“That is?”

Everything happened too quickly. Furthermore, Chu Feng had quietly lessened the distance between the Ancient Era's War Sword and Old Demon Rakshasa when he had managed to gain superiority over the two enormous martial power swords earlier.

Thus, when the Ancient Era's War Sword started to move to attack Old Demon Rakshasa with overwhelming power, even Old Demon Rakshasa was unable to react, unable to dodge, in time.

“Puu~~~”

Blood splattered everywhere. Old Demon Rakshasa's body was pierced through by the Ancient Era's War Sword and split into

pieces.

“Heavens! What happened?!”

The crowd were all astonished.

They were simply unable to capture the rapid battle between Chu Feng and Old Demon Rakshasa with their vision. Thus, they had not caught sight of how the Ancient Era’s War Sword shattered Old Demon Rakshasa’s body.

However, they had managed to witness the blood splattering down from the sky, as well as the shattered clothing.

As for the clothing, they were the Old Demon Rakshasa’s clothes.

“Chu Feng killed that True Immortal?!”

At that moment, the surrounding crowd burst into an uproar once again.

None of them dared to believe their eyes. However, judging by the situation at hand, Chu Feng had indeed managed to strike Old Demon Rakshasa with his enormous sword.

That was a True Immortal! A True Immortal-level expert!

Chu Feng actually managed to kill a True Immortal with the cultivation of a Martial Ancestor! That was something that had never happened before in history.

Everyone knew that True Immortals possessed strength greatly above that of Martial Ancestors. No matter what, it should be impossible for a Martial Ancestor to kill a True Immortal.

Yet, Chu Feng had accomplish that impossibility. As such, how could the crowd not be astonished?

“Chu Feng, you sly cur, you actually tricked me.”

Right at that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa’s voice sounded again.

The next moment, the blood, flesh and shattered clothes that

were falling to the ground began to gather together. Soon, Old Demon Rakshasa managed to recreate his body.

At that moment, he appeared to be completely fine. Not only was his body undamaged, but even his clothes had returned to how they were before. One simply could not tell that he had been injured.

“As expected of a True Immortal, even that was unable to kill you.”

Chu Feng shook his head. As he spoke, he put away the two Ancestral Armaments he held in his hands and revealed the red Evil God Sword.

Chu Feng knew that if he was unable to kill this Old Demon Rakshasa even with all the tricks and abilities he had used earlier, he must use the Evil God Sword if he wanted to survive the battle.

“Kill me? This old man is a True Immortal, my body is undying and indestructible. Your mere tricks are simply unable to even injure me in the slightest,” Old Demon Rakshasa spoke proudly.

At that moment, the surrounding crowd revealed dejected expressions.

Indeed, the True Immortal realm was a realm of cultivation that surpassed the limits of one’s corporeal body. They possessed undying and indestructible bodies.

To True Immortal-level experts, bodies were merely a form. Even if their dantian was struck by an attack, their cultivation would not decrease in the slightest.

If one wanted to kill a True Immortal, one must possess power greatly surpassing that True Immortal. Otherwise... even if one were to crush a True Immortal’s body to dust, that True Immortal would still be alive.

Upon thinking of all that, the crowd realized that Chu Feng would never be able to defeat Old Demon Rakshasa.

Thus, the survivors in the city no longer dared to stay in the city any longer. One by one, they turned around and started fleeing.

They knew that if Chu Feng could not win against Old Demon Rakshasa, they too would not be able to survive. Rather than staying to wait for death, it would be better for them to hurriedly escape this place while Chu Feng could still contend against Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Puuu~~~”

Right at that moment, a miserable voice sounded from the direction where Old Demon Rakshasa was.

Curious, the crowd involuntarily turned around. Upon seeing that scene, they were all stunned.

At that moment, blood dyed the corners of Old Demon Rakshasa’s mouth and his chest. Furthermore, his body was trembling nonstop.

After supporting himself with great difficulty, he lost strength and half kneeled in mid-air with a ‘putt.’

Old Demon Rakshasa was actually injured!!!

# Chapter 2587 - Capturing Old Demon Rakshasa Alive

---

Old Demon Rakshasa half kneeled in midair. Not only was he shivering and bleeding, but his aura was also much weaker than before.

The so-called undying, indestructible and incapable of being injured True Immortal was currently seriously injured.

“No, impossible, this is impossible...”

Even though he was already seriously injured, Old Demon Rakshasa was still unable to accept it.

After all, he was a True Immortal. How could he be injured by Chu Feng, a mere Martial Ancestor?”

“You have looked down on my Ancient Era’s War Sword. It is within reason for you to be injured by it.”

As Chu Feng spoke, rumbles sprang forth in the sky. Controlled by Chu Feng, his Ancient Era’s War Sword once again moved to attack Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Damn it!”

Old Demon Rakshasa let out a snarl. At the same time as he let out that snarl, a sound ripple visible to the naked eye began to charge toward the Ancient Era’s War Sword, shattering it.

“Damn it!”

Chu Feng frowned. His body shifted back. He began to hold onto the Evil God Sword even more tightly.

Old Demon Rakshasa was serious now. The attack he had used earlier was not a casual attack with martial power. Rather, it was a martial skill.

Even though it was only an Emperor Taboo Martial Skill, it



managed to defeat the Ancient Era's War Sword. This was the true strength of True Immortals.

At that moment, Chu Feng realized that no matter how strong he might be, he would not be able to contend against True Immortals as long as he had not stepped into the True Immortal realm.

“Chu Feng, I'll kill you!”

As Old Demon Rakshasa spoke, he flipped his palm. An Ancestral Armament appeared in his hand.

Having suffered by Chu Feng's hand once, Old Demon Rakshasa had become truly serious. He planned to kill Chu Feng immediately.

“A grand True Immortal was actually injured by a Martial Ancestor. Old Demon Rakshasa, you are truly humiliating.”

Right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard. Then, two figures appeared behind Old Demon Rakshasa.

Chu Feng's gaze changed the moment he saw those two people.

Not only were those two people True Immortal-level experts, but they were also people that Chu Feng knew. They were Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian.

Upon seeing Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian, Old Demon Rakshasa's expression changed immediately. He subconsciously felt that Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian had come to save Chu Feng.

“Damn it!!!”

Suddenly, Old Demon Rakshasa attacked. He thrust his Ancestral Armament at Chu Feng. Countless sword rays started flying toward Chu Feng.

Those sword rays were so powerful and their speed was so fast that even Chu Feng started frowning upon seeing them. He knew that... if he didn't use the Evil God Sword, he would most

definitely not be able to block that incoming attack.

The reason for that was because the sword rays that filled the sky were an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

Old Demon Rakshasa had utilized an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill right away. From this, it could be seen how determined he was to kill Chu Feng.

However, to the crowd's surprise, even though Old Demon Rakshasa had already unleashed his attack toward Chu Feng, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian were still standing there motionlessly. Furthermore, there was no change to their expressions either. It was as if they did not care about Chu Feng's life and death at all. Their tranquility at that moment was scary.

‘So they didn't come to save Chu Feng? That's understandable. After all, Chu Feng is the enemy of the Kong Heavenly Clan.’

At that moment, Old Demon Rakshasa started to rejoice. He felt that Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua had not come to save Chu Feng.

He felt that it was very possible that their appearance in that place was merely a coincidence.

And now, the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill that he had unleashed was already closing in on Chu Feng. Merely the might of his attack was something that Chu Feng would not be able to endure.

Even if Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian were to interfere now, they would not be able to save Chu Feng.

Chu Feng would be undoubtedly killed.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right at that moment, a purple shield suddenly appeared out of thin air right before Chu Feng.

That was not an ordinary shield. Rather, it was an Ancestral

Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was a very powerful Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

The reason why that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill was powerful was because that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill actually managed to directly block Old Demon Rakshasa's Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

“That is?”

It was only at that moment that Old Demon Rakshasa noticed that there was actually an individual wearing a black gown behind that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

One could not see that person's facial appearance. However, from his aura, one could tell that he was a True Immortal.

He was the one who had unleashed that purple shield to block Old Demon Rakshasa's attack.

“Who are you?”

Old Demon Rakshasa asked with a cold voice.

However, that black-gowned individual did not bother to respond to Old Demon Rakshasa. Instead, he turned around and bowed to Chu Feng. Then, with an extremely respectful tone, he said to Chu Feng, “Master, this subordinate has come late.”

“Subordinate?”

At that moment, not only was Old Demon Rakshasa astonished, but the surrounding crowd was also astonished.

That True Immortal-level expert actually addressed himself as subordinate and called Chu Feng master?

Could it be that they were was an expert from Hero City?

That said, regardless of who he might be, there was one thing that was certain -- he was on Chu Feng's side.

“Senior, it's you again?”

At that moment, Chu Feng also rejoiced in his heart. Although Chu Feng was unable to see the black-clothed individual's facial appearance due to his outfit, Chu Feng was able to feel his aura.

The black-clothed individual was the same mysterious expert that had come to his rescue when the Kong Heavenly Clan was trying to kill him two years ago.

He never expected that he would encounter that person again at that moment.

“Master, allow me to take care of this Old Demon Rakshasa for you first.”

As that mysterious expert spoke, he revealed his Ancestral Armament and moved to attack Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Come, as if this True Immortal would fear you!”

Old Demon Rakshasa was not to be outdone. He held his Ancestral Armament and rushed forth to confront the incoming mysterious expert.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, an astonishing scene happened.

Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua who were originally watching from the sidelines also revealed their Ancestral Armaments and joined the battle.

Furthermore, they were actually helping that mysterious individual against Old Demon Rakshasa.

“You all, to attack one with many, have you no sense of shame?! Is this what a righteous power is?!!!”

Old Demon Rakshasa was seriously injured by Chu Feng to begin with. Thus, it was already very difficult for him to take on that mysterious individual by himself. And now, with Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua joining the battle, his expression changed immediately.

“The Infant Soul Sect has done all sorts of evil. Everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is qualified to put you all to death. As such, how could confronting you be having no shame?” Kong Shunlian spoke coldly.

“Old Demon Rakshasa, with all the evil deeds that you’ve done in your lifetime, even dying ten thousand times will be insufficient to make up for them.”

“Thus, someone like you should not mention the word ‘shame’ to us. You are not qualified to use the word shame,” Kong Yuehua spoke ill-intended words at Old Demon Rakshasa. It could be seen that both Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua hated Old Demon Rakshasa.

“Eeaaahh~~~”

Faced with the joint attack from the three of them, how could Old Demon Rakshasa, who was already seriously injured, possibly be able to withstand them? Soon, he began to scream nonstop. He was easily defeated by the three of them.

However, the three of them did not immediately execute Old Demon Rakshasa. Instead, they used special methods to bind him.

After they finished binding Old Demon Rakshasa, Hun Lian and Xiaoleng, Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua and that mysterious expert brought Chu Feng with them and left. They were bringing Chu Feng elsewhere.

“Master, are you alright? Take these medicinal pellets immediately. Please allow this subordinate to help heal your injuries.”

While traveling, that mysterious individual suddenly stopped and moved to support Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had a very frightening complexion at that moment. His body was shivering nonstop, and his aura had become extremely weak.

Furthermore, he was bleeding from his seven facial orifices. That was especially true for his mouth, as a lot of blood was flowing from his mouth. Furthermore, the color of that blood was black.

# Chapter 2588 - Unknown Burial Ground

---

“I’m alright. This is merely a backlash from using forbidden medicines and forcibly using a secret skill that I cannot control.”

“I have already taken healing medicines. I will be fine after resting for some time,” Chu Feng said.

“If it’s a backlash, merely resting will not be enough. Master, you must immediately heal your injuries,” That mysterious man said.

“Seniors, do the two of you want to tell me something?” Chu Feng looked to Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua.

“Chu Feng, you should heal your injuries first. The pain from a backlash is no small matter. If serious, they can even cause one’s death. Moreover, you’ve even taken forbidden medicines,” Kong Shunlian said.

“You should cure your injuries first,” Kong Yuehua added.

“In that case, seniors, I shall trouble the three of you to wait for me a bit.”

Seeing that, Chu Feng no longer hesitated. He hurriedly sat cross-legged and set up a grand healing formation around himself.

Actually, the backlash Chu Feng had received this time was much more serious than the backlash he had received when he fought against Li Yue’er last time.

Not only had Chu Feng taken forbidden medicines, he had also utilized the Ancient Era’s War Sword for a much longer period of time, and did so with greater strength compared to last time.

Thus, the backlash he received from the Ancient Era’s War Sword would naturally be much more serious. On top of that, Chu Feng also received the backlash from the three forbidden medicines. Thus, the combined backlash Chu Feng was receiving was truly not something that ordinary people could endure.

Fortunately Chu Feng possessed astonishing willpower. If it were someone else, they would've already fainted from the pain that felt as if their body and soul were about to be torn apart.

.....

Although the pain from the backlash was extremely serious, Chu Feng was, after all, a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

By utilizing both healing medicines and world spirit formations, Chu Feng soon brought relief to the pain from the backlash. In the end, he managed to overcome the crisis.

Of course, as the backlash this time around was fiercer, the amount of time needed to neutralize the backlash was also longer.

When Chu Feng removed his spirit formation, he discovered that Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua and that mysterious individual were still standing there.

“Seniors, exactly why have the two of you asked me here? Where is Zhao Hong?” Chu Feng asked.

Upon seeing Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian, Chu Feng was able to tell that these two Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders didn't seem to hold great hostility toward him.

However, Chu Feng was still worried about Zhao Hong's safety.

“Let's change locations to talk,” Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua said. After saying that, they continued traveling.

“Master, you do not have to worry. It will be fine as long as you follow this subordinate,” That mysterious individual said to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was able to tell that it was most definitely not a coincidence for the mysterious individual to appear. Likely, he had been with Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua to begin with.

Furthermore, even though Chu Feng had no idea who that mysterious individual was, he could tell from his attitude that the



mysterious individual would definitely protect him should anything happen.

With the mysterious individual there, the discomfort in Chu Feng's heart had decreased greatly.

Finally, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua stopped in the middle of a desert.

“Here?”

Upon arriving, Chu Feng's gaze changed immediately.

He discovered that the desert was very different. Thus, he activated his Heaven's Eyes to carefully inspect the desert.

The more Chu Feng inspected, the more startled Chu Feng became. It was a burial ground.

Even though that place was especially hidden, Chu Feng was still able to determine very quickly using his Heaven's Eyes that there should be a burial ground or a treasure deposit below the desert.

Furthermore, judging by the scale of the burial ground, that burial ground should be very dangerous. The more dangerous a burial ground was, the greater the opportunity one could generally find within it.

“Wow, we are truly lucky. There's actually such a treasure deposit here,” Her Lady Queen was overjoyed.

“I'm afraid that things are not that simple,” Chu Feng shook his head. Then, he looked to Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua. He knew that Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua would not have brought him There for no reason.

They most definitely possessed some sort of goal.

“Chu Feng, we believe that you have already noticed,” Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua said in unison.

“Seniors, exactly what are you all...?” Chu Feng was confused. He did not understand exactly what Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua

were planning.

“Firstly, although our Kong Heavenly Clan was not personally extinguished by you, it is still related to you.”

“After all, two years ago, you indeed unleashed a massacre in our Kong Heavenly Clan. A lot of people from our Kong Heavenly Clan died by your hands.”

“Although it was our Kong Heavenly Clan that was in the wrong back then, but, to be honest, as members of the Kong Heavenly Clan, it is impossible for us to not feel hatred toward you,” Kong Yuehua said to Chu Feng.

“Seniors, this junior understands your frame of mind.”

“However, there is one thing that this junior needs to make clear,” Chu Feng raised the Evil God Sword he held in his hand, “Back then, being forced into a corner by your Kong Heavenly Clan, I had no choice but to use this Evil God Sword in order to survive.”

“As for this Evil God Sword, it is a Demon Armament. More often than not, I am unable to control its powers.”

“That day, I was under the control of this Demon Armament. I did not intend to unleash that massacre.”

“Furthermore, I also tried my best to hold the Evil God Sword back. Otherwise... the Kong Heavenly Clan would not have been exterminated by Ying Mingchao,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua’s expressions changed somewhat.

They understood what Chu Feng meant. After all, they had both witnessed Chu Feng’s strength when he was using the Evil God Sword.

If Chu Feng had not tried his hardest to hold the Evil God Sword back, Ying Mingchao would indeed not have eliminated the Kong

Heavenly Clan.

Because the Kong Heavenly Clan would've already been exterminated by Chu Feng two years ago.

Suddenly, Kong Shunlian Sighed deeply. He said, "Fate. This is the fate of our Kong Heavenly Clan."

After saying those words, Kong Shunlian turned around. No one knew what he was thinking.

"Chu Feng, we have actually not called you here because we want to seek you for revenge."

"Rather, we have called you here to save Zhao Hong," Kong Yuehua said to Chu Feng.

"Save Zhao Hong?"

"What has happened to Zhao Hong?" Chu Feng asked worriedly.

"There are a lot of remnants in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, the most dangerous of them all is the Unknown Burial Ground."

"Over the years, countless martial cultivation experts and world spiritists have entered the Unknown Burial Ground. However, not a single one was able to return alive."

"The remnant before us is the Unknown Burial Ground. The remnant that Zhao Hong entered is also the Unknown Burial Ground," Kong Yuehua said.

"How did you all come to know that Zhao Hong was in danger?"

"Furthermore, how did you all know that Zhao Hong entered this Unknown Burial Ground?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng knew that Zhao Hong had entered a remnant in search of an opportunity to reach a breakthrough in her cultivation. However, not even he knew where Zhao Hong had gone to.

Thus, he was unable to understand how Kong Yuehua and the

others knew Zhao Hong's whereabouts.

Kong Yuehua did not answer Chu Feng's question. Instead, she looked to the mysterious individual beside Chu Feng with a very meaningful gaze.

"Senior?" Chu Feng also looked to that mysterious individual.

He knew that this matter was very possibly more closely related to this mysterious individual.

"Master, can we speak in private?" The mysterious individual said to Chu Feng.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded.

Then, that mysterious individual brought Chu Feng far away from the location of the remnant.

Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian did not follow after them.

At that moment, that mysterious individual finally removed his hood and revealed his appearance to Chu Feng.

It turned out that he was an old man. There was nothing special about that old man's appearance. He looked very simple and down-to-earth.

Seeing the old man, Chu Feng was even more puzzled. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was certain that he had never met that old man before.

Suddenly, that mysterious old man kneeled before Chu Feng. Respectfully, he said, "This old man is the current clan chief of the guardian clan. I pay my respects to Young Master Chu Feng."

"Guardian clan? You are from the guardian clan?" Chu Feng came to a sudden realization.

Chu Feng naturally knew of the guardian clan. It was a mysterious clan in charge of looking after the Hundred Refinements Stage. Furthermore, there was an extraordinary relationship between the guardian clan and the Chu Heavenly

Clan.

It was no wonder the old man would address Chu Feng as 'Master.'

## Chapter 2589 - Sequence Of Events

---

“This subordinate is the current clan chief of the guardian clan. I also know that Young Master Chu Feng does not wish to reveal his identity. Thus... this subordinate has not exposed Young Master Chu Feng’s identity to anyone. I have also concealed my own identity,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

At that moment, Chu Feng finally realized why the guardian clan’s clan chief had to distance himself from Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua when telling Chu Feng these things.

Evidently, even the two of them had no idea that this mysterious True Immortal-level expert was actually the clan chief of the guardian clan in charge of guarding the Hundred Refinements Stage.

“Senior, I am actually no longer a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the guardian clan’s clan chief was slightly startled. Then, he said, “This subordinate has no idea what happened between Young Master Chu Feng and the Chu Heavenly Clan. However, it remains that the blood that flows through Young Master Chu Feng is the Chu Heavenly Clan’s blood. In the eyes of this subordinate, you are my master.”

“In that case, how did you find out that I am from the Chu Heavenly Clan? Was my identity revealed when I entered the Hundred Refinements Stage?” Chu Feng asked.

“Indeed. Ever since that day, this subordinate has been secretly protecting Young Master Chu Feng. I have done so all the way up to two years ago, when the Kong Heavenly Clan attacked Young Master Chu Feng,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“Senior, I have truly troubled you,” Chu Feng felt very grateful. After all, Chu Feng and the guardian clan’s clan chief had only

encountered each other once. Yet, the guardian clan's clan chief was able to treat him like this. From this, it could be seen how loyal and devoted the guardian clan was toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Putt~~~”

Suddenly, the guardian clan's clan chief kneeled onto the ground. He said, “Young Master Chu Feng, please don't address this subordinate as ‘senior’ anymore. This subordinate isn't qualified for such respect.”

“Quickly get up,” Chu Feng hurriedly helped the guardian clan's clan chief back up. He said, “If you consider me your master, then listen to me. From today onwards, you are to address me as Chu Feng. And I... will address you as senior.”

“This...” The guardian clan's clan chief started to hesitate.

“Else... you do not have to continue to protect me.”

“No matter how you view me, I do not wish to accept a master and servant relationship. After all, in my heart, I am no longer a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Feng said in a very serious manner.

“Very well. In that case, I will do as Young Master Chu Feng says. No... Chu Feng,” The guardian clan's clan chief corrected himself.

“Senior, can you tell me the situation with Zhao Hong?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mn,” The guardian clan's clan chief nodded. Then, he began to narrate to Chu Feng what had happened during that period of time.

Two years ago, in the battle against the Kong Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng was under the influence of the Evil God Sword and was about to lose himself.

With no other option, the guardian clan's clan chief followed

Chu Feng's request and brought Kong Yuehua, Kong Shunlian and Wang Qiang away from the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Both Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian were shocked by that battle. They began to doubt and distrust their clan.

Thus, they did not return to the Kong Heavenly Clan. In fact, some people even thought that they were dead.

The two of them had been staying together with the guardian clan's clan chief and Wang Qiang the entire time.

As the guardian clan's clan chief and Wang Qiang were worried about Chu Feng's safety, they went all over the place to search for Chu Feng's whereabouts. However, they were not able to find anything.

Not long afterward, the news of Chu Feng's death began to spread. Although they were skeptical of the news, they still slightly believed it.

Because of that, Wang Qiang grew extremely hateful toward the Kong Heavenly Clan, and vowed to make the Kong Heavenly Clan pay. After that, Wang Qiang found Zhao Hong. At that time, Zhao Hong also knew about what had happened, and also hated the Kong Heavenly Clan to the bone.

With that, the two of them began to plan how to take revenge upon the Kong Heavenly Clan.

Both Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua knew about the matter.

That said, even though the two of them were both part of the Kong Heavenly Clan, they were righteous people, and were capable of distinguishing gratitude and grudges.

They felt that the Kong Heavenly Clan was in the wrong in regards to what had happened to Chu Feng. Thus, even though they knew that Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were planning to take revenge upon the Kong Heavenly Clan, they did not stop them. Instead, they chose to enter closed-door training.



The place where they chose to enter their closed-door training was precisely this vast desert.

Although Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua entered closed-door training, the guardian clan's clan chief did not trust them.

He feared that Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua possessed ulterior motives, and would secretly attack Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Thus, the guardian clan's clan chief decided to stay and overlook the two of them as they continued with their closed-door training.

Furthermore, upon finding out that Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong wanted to become stronger, he wanted to help them. Thus, he told them the location of all the remnants that he knew of.

In the past two years, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had traveled back and forth from remnant to remnant. It was actually all thanks to the guardian clan's clan chief that the two of them managed to increase their cultivation so quickly.

Among the remnants that the guardian clan's clan chief told Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong about was the Unknown Burial Ground.

“In the end, that girl Zhao Hong lied to me.”

Chu Feng felt helpless. Although Zhao Hong had told him that the remnant she was going to enter was dangerous, she mentioned to him that she had been in that remnant before. Furthermore, she spoke with great confidence. Thus, Chu Feng decided to let her go.

However, looking at things now, that wasn't the case at all.

When Zhao Hong returned to the vast desert and expressed her desire to enter the Unknown Burial Ground, the guardian clan's clan chief was against it. In fact, even Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian were against it.

However, Zhao Hong insisted on entering the remnant.

Furthermore, she was extremely confident. Unable to get through her stubbornness, the guardian clan's clan chief took out a treasure.

It was a treasure allowing one to teleport a short distance. Regardless of where one might be, one would be able to teleport to a fixed location after using that treasure.

Naturally, the guardian clan's clan chief set the location for Zhao Hong to be teleported to outside of the Unknown Burial Ground.

Furthermore, the guardian clan's clan chief demanded that Zhao Hong must withdraw from the Unknown Burial Ground should she encounter danger; that she must not force herself.

Zhao Hong accepted his demands without hesitation.

However, the guardian clan's clan chief was still worried for Zhao Hong. Thus, he took out another treasure, a treasure capable of assimilating with Zhao Hong's soul.

If Zhao Hong was injured, in fatal danger or dead, that treasure would respond to all of those.

And the situation at hand was that Zhao Hong was in fatal danger. Furthermore, she was injured. However, even with that being the case, Zhao Hong still did not use the treasure to teleport back.

Furthermore, only those below True Immortal level of cultivation were capable of entering the Unknown Burial Ground.

Thus, even though the guardian clan's clan chief wanted to enter and inspect the situation inside, he was unable to do so.

With no other option, he decided to send that letter to Chu Feng.

# Chapter 2590 - The Origin Of The Unknown Burial Ground

---

“Why wasn’t the situation explained directly in the letter? Why did you have to write it like that?” Chu Feng asked in a confused manner.

Naturally, what Chu Feng was asking about was how, in the letter, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian were threatening Chu Feng, saying that Zhao Hong was in their hands.

“It remains that Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua are from the Kong Heavenly Clan. On the one hand, they felt hatred toward you. On the other hand, they felt that their Kong Heavenly Clan was in the wrong. Thus, their hearts have been in a state of torment the entire time.”

“They wanted to use this opportunity to verify exactly how much you value your friends.”

“If you truly valued friendship, they might... end up no longer looking further into the grudges between you and the Kong Heavenly Clan,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“So that’s the case,” Chu Feng came to a sudden realization.

“You should not blame them. After all, they are people from the Kong Heavenly Clan. Likely, their hearts are suffering more than anyone else,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“That I understand.”

“Senior, is it possible for you to show me what Zhao Hong’s current situation is?” Chu Feng asked.

“Young Master Chu Feng, please have a look. Zhao Hong’s current situation is not optimistic at all.”

The guardian clan’s clan chief took out a blue crystal. It was a very peculiar crystal; it was actually rectangular in shape.

At that moment, a black image like a person's shadow was flickering inside the rectangular crystal. That image was not fully black in color. Instead, it was flickering with a red light in many locations. Furthermore, the entire image was also flickering nonstop.

"The red lights signify injuries, and the flickering means she's in fatal danger?" Chu Feng turned to ask the guardian clan's clan chief.

"What Young Master Chu Feng says is correct. If the image disappears, it means that Zhao Hong has encountered a mishap," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"Then could it be that Zhao Hong has become incapable of using that treasure capable of teleporting her out of the Unknown Burial Ground?" Chu Feng asked.

"No, that teleportation treasure is definitely effective. I believe in the power of that treasure because it was something that a Lord from the Chu Heavenly Clan left behind," The guardian clan's clan chief said in a very determined manner.

After hearing that, Chu Feng came to realize why the guardian clan's clan chief was so certain in the effectiveness of that teleportation treasure. Since it was a treasure left behind by the Chu Heavenly Clan, it should possess great effectiveness in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"There's no time to lose. I will enter the Unknown Burial Ground right now," As Chu Feng spoke, he began to move toward the direction of the Unknown Burial Ground.

He was truly worried about Zhao Hong's safety.

"Young Master Chu Feng, please wait."

Right at that moment, the guardian clan's clan chief suddenly stopped Chu Feng. He said, "Please use this."

At that moment, the guardian clan's clan chief took out a case

from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a very exquisite and extraordinary case. From this, it could be seen that the item contained inside the case would be no small matter.

Otherwise, there would be no reason for the guardian clan's clan chief to keep that item in such an exquisite and extraordinary case.

After opening the case, what appeared was a compass.

That compass was very special. Although it appeared to be an actual substance, Chu Feng was able to tell from a single glance that the compass was a teleportation formation. Furthermore, it was a very powerful spirit formation. At the very least... it would be impossible for the current Chu Feng to set up such a spirit formation.

In the center of the compass was another smaller circular compass. That compass was only the size of a coin. However, it was glistening with golden light. Moreover, it possessed a very soft appearance. It was as if that compass was created from water, and would shatter upon the slightest exertion of strength.

This smaller compass was also a teleportation formation.

Even without the guardian clan's clan chief explaining things to him, Chu Feng knew what the two compasses were for.

Most likely, these two compasses were the treasure that could allow one to teleport anywhere in a close range to a specific location.

“Young Master Chu Feng, please extend your hand,” The guardian clan's clan chief said to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did as he said and extended his hand. The guardian clan's clan chief picked up the small compass and placed it on Chu Feng's palm. Then, he instilled his spirit power into the small compass and formed a special hand seal.

“Buzz~~~”

Like water, that small compass started to disperse. In the blink of an eye, it had assimilated into Chu Feng’s palm.

That small compass was still present. However, it was currently imprinted into Chu Feng’s palm like a tattoo.

“Young Master Chu Feng, if you are to encounter danger and want to leave the Unknown Burial Ground immediately, you merely need to clench your palm and think about activating the teleportation formation. With that, you will be teleported out,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“There’s also this. This is...” The guardian clan’s clan chief took out another case. After opening the case, two beads appeared.

One was a medicinal pellet, whereas the other was a blue rectangular crystal.

Chu Feng knew that this must be the same crystal that Zhao Hong used that could determine her state of being.

“Young Master Chu Feng, please swallow this medicinal pellet,” The guardian clan’s clan chief handed the medicinal pellet to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng swallowed the medicinal pellet without hesitation. After swallowing the medicinal pellet, Chu Feng felt a strange sort of power spreading through his body. Soon, that power was absorbed by his body. Not only did that power merge with Chu Feng’s flesh and bones, but it seemed to have even merged with Chu Feng’s source energy and soul.

Furthermore, Chu Feng was able to see that as the medicinal pellet merged with his body, a shadowy image gradually appeared on that blue rectangular crystal.

That shadowy image was different from the one in Zhao Hong’s rectangular crystal. Not only was it not emitting any red light, but it was also not flickering. It was very clear and stable.

Evidently, this shadowy image represented Chu Feng.

“Senior, you do not have to worry too much about me. I know what to do,” Chu Feng said to the guardian clan’s clan chief.

Chu Feng knew very well that the guardian clan’s clan chief did all this because he was worried about Chu Feng’s safety.

“Young Master Chu Feng, perhaps there are some words that this old man should not say. However, I urge you to keep in mind that your body, hair and skin are all given to you by your parents. If you are to truly encounter danger, you must not act impetuously.”

“Even if you do not consider yourself, you must still consider your family. Think about... what they will be feeling,” The guardian clan’s clan chief advised Chu Feng earnestly and well-meaningly.

He seemed to understand Chu Feng very well. He knew that Chu Feng was someone who was loyal and righteous. For his friend’s safety, he was able to disregard everything.

Chu Feng was moved by the words spoken by the guardian clan’s clan chief.

It was true. If something were to happen to him, how aggrieved would his father and mother be?

Most importantly, he had yet to even meet his mother. If he were to die just like that, Chu Feng would have deep regrets even in death.

“I will keep that in mind,” Chu Feng said.

Then, together with the guardian clan’s clan chief, Chu Feng returned to the area where the Unknown Burial Ground was located.

The guardian clan’s clan chief placed the other spirit formation compass on the ground.

If Chu Feng planned to teleport out, he would have to rely on

that grand spirit formation compass.

That said, some time was needed in order to activate the spirit formation compass.

After that compass reached the ground, it immediately increased in size. It grew to the size of a watermelon, and then continued to grow until it was thirty meters long and ninety meters tall. This enormous spirit formation was glistening with light.

Compared to how it was before, this spirit formation simply looked like a completely different thing.

Originally, Chu Feng wanted to help. However, the guardian clan's clan chief insisted on finishing the spirit formation himself.

With no other option, Chu Feng ended up standing aside as a spectator.

"Senior Kong Yuehua, can you tell me why this place is called the Unknown Burial Ground?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"Of course," Kong Yuehua nodded. Then, she said to Chu Feng, "Actually, compared to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's other remnants, this Unknown Burial Ground has not been around for long. In fact, it could be said that it was very recently discovered."

"It appeared roughly two thousand years ago. At that time, the Unknown Burial Ground was not buried underneath this desert. Instead, it was a vast building complex."

"It was exquisite, spectacular and intimidating."

"It was simply indescribable with words. It simply did not resemble buildings, but was more like a piece of art. Looking at it, one would easily be captivated by it."

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that Kong Yuehua's expression changed. It was as if she was recalling the scene back then.



At that moment, Chu Feng was certain that Kong Yuehua was one of the witnesses to the appearance of the Unknown Burial Ground back then.

# Chapter 2591 - The Path Of The Brave

---

“Those buildings were truly astonishing and extremely enticing.”

“Merely by looking at it with one’s naked eye, one could tell that it was a treasure deposit filled with extraordinary treasures.”

“As such, countless experts immediately entered the building complex. The various powers began to scramble with one another. They all wanted to obtain the decisive treasures that were sure to be within.”

“Even the strongest experts of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm from back then came out of their obscurity.”

“However, when those peak experts arrived, they discovered that True Immortal-level experts were unable to enter the remnant.”

“Due to the fact that True Immortals were unable to enter it, the True Immortal-level experts that had arrived back then were feeling aggravated.”

“After all, they all felt that the remnant that suddenly appeared out of nowhere definitely possessed an enormous amount of treasure. They felt that it was a great pity to not be able to enter it.”

“However, as time gradually passed, the crowd discovered a problem.”

“Although more and more people were entering the remnants, no one was leaving the remnant.”

“That remnant was like a bottomless pit. Everyone that entered it disappeared henceforth.”

“Suddenly, the crowd realized that the remnant was not as simple as they had anticipated.”

“Judging from the various signs, it seems that this remnant was deliberately luring people in.”

“All of a sudden, people were all on-guard against the remnant. However, faced with the enticement of the treasures inside, there were still people who disregarded their lives and entered it.”

“However, they suffered the same fate as those before them. Not a single person left the remnant alive.”

“At that moment, many people felt that the remnant was a slaughtering formation. They felt that people must not be allowed to enter it again.”

“However, people were unwilling to accept it. They were unable to accept that they’d been played for fools by the remnant. Thus... the True Immortal-level experts from the four tier one powers joined hands and tried to break through the remnant with force.”

“However, in the end, that remnant was not shaken in the slightest.”

“Furthermore, an intense ray of light suddenly shot out of the remnant. It reached the vast sky, brightly illuminating the entire region.”

“Several large characters appeared in the light.”

“Exceptional treasures are located within. Waiting... for true experts to obtain them!!!”

“After that, the remnant sunk deep into the desert.”

“As for those words, they were like a provocation. All those that witnessed what happened back then felt extremely unreconciled.”

“However, with how dangerous that remnant was, even though people wanted to enter it and obtain the treasures, they were powerless to do anything.”

“However, even after that, there were still people that entered the remnant one after another. However, they all suffered the same sort of fate. Not a single person was able to return alive.”

“That remnant was like a game, a game arranged for the people

in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“We have no idea who it is that set up such a game.”

“We also have no idea where the remnant came from.”

“In fact, we do not even know whether or not there are truly treasures in the remnant.”

“Everything regarding it is unknown. However, it resembled a burial ground, a burial ground for all those that entered it.”

“Because of that, that remnant became known as the Unknown Burial Ground.”

“That was also the reason why it was deemed to be the most dangerous remnant in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Kong Yuehua said.

“Unknown Burial Ground, its name is truly well-deserved,” After hearing Kong Yuehua’s explanation, Chu Feng also felt deeply that this Unknown Burial Ground was very fishy.

However, for some unknown reason, after hearing about the matter, Chu Feng did not feel fear. Instead, he started to look forward to entering the Unknown Burial Ground even more.

Could it be that this really was a game?

If it really was a game, then... Chu Feng did not wish to know who set up this game.

All Chu Feng wanted was to beat it.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the teleportation formation that the guardian clan’s clan chief was setting up suddenly started to shine brightly with light. Following that, the various layers of the spirit formation started to move.

However, when the guardian clan’s clan chief formed a hand seal, that extremely magnificent teleportation formation suddenly

disappeared.

Although Chu Feng knew that the teleportation formation had been hidden, Chu Feng was still very shocked by it. The reason for that was because... even he was unable to sense the existence of the teleportation formation, even though he knew it was there.

That once again served to prove how exceptionally amazing that teleportation formation was.

“Chu Feng, the teleportation formation is done setting up. If you are to encounter troubles, you must use the teleportation formation right away to escape the Unknown Burial Ground,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said to Chu Feng earnestly. A deep sense of worry filled his words.

“Senior, please rest assured. I will take care of myself. I will also bring Zhao Hong back,” Chu Feng said confidently.

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng turned around and began to move toward the location where the Unknown Burial Ground was submerged.

At that moment, the guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian all revealed a startled expression.

None of them had told Chu Feng where the entrance to the Unknown Burial Ground was. However, Chu Feng was currently proceeding toward the entrance to the Unknown Burial Ground.

“Little friend Chu Feng’s perceptive ability is truly astonishing,” Kong Shunlian, who had been silent for a very long time, suddenly spoke with great astonishment.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped.

Looking with one’s naked eye, the place where he stopped looked like an ordinary part of the desert.

A strong wind blew past and swirled up the sand. At that moment, yellow sand began to flutter everywhere.

Looking at the sand, one would feel desolate and detached.

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes changed. A sharp gaze emerged from his eyes.

“Boom!” A loud explosion was heard.

Then, a violently surging tornado appeared at Chu Feng's location.

That tornado was very special. It did not suck in the yellow sand. Instead, it began to push the yellow sand where Chu Feng was standing away.

As for Chu Feng, he also gradually sunk deeper as the yellow sands were pushed away.

When everything was over, Chu Feng was surprised to discover that there was not only sand surrounding him, but there was also an enormous entrance gate before him.

That entrance was composed of stones. It was not extremely magnificent or dazzling.

In fact, it could even be said that it was somewhat destroyed.

However, one would feel a special sort of sensation from that entrance gate. It possessed an indescribable sense of appeal.

Chu Feng pushed open the gate. in the beginning, what appeared before Chu Feng was pitch blackness. However, light soon began to appear from far away within the entrance.

It was candlelight. There were so many dots of candlelight that they completely lit up the spacious and empty passageway.

Although the passageway was very deep, it was full of carvings and paintings on either side, which had been created with uncanny workmanship. They were truly exquisite.

“Those should be formed with spirit techniques,” Her Lady Queen said.

“With how exquisite those carvings are, the person who created them should possess an extremely high level of world spirit techniques,” Chu Feng gasped in admiration. From the art alone, he felt himself to be inferior.

Although Chu Feng was able to, with his current level of world spirit techniques, instantly construct exquisite palaces, he had not reached this level of proficiency.

The carvings here were not merely beautiful, they each possessed their own unique charm. Their charm was telling everyone that they were unique and unmatched.

That sort of carving was something that only expert artists could accomplish using their entire life’s passion and effort.

However, it was clear that the carvings were created by a world spiritist. From this, it could be seen how powerful the person who created the Unknown Burial Ground was.

That said, even though that place was a superlative work of art and extremely enticing to world spiritists, Chu Feng had no heart to enjoy the art.

After verifying that there were no traps around him, Chu Feng quickened his pace. He wanted to find Zhao Hong as quickly as possible.

“That is?”

After walking for only a short period of time, Chu Feng suddenly stopped.

He revealed an incomparably surprised gaze. At the same time, he felt as if he was completely lost.

The reason for that was because he discovered that the path before him had been sealed off.

A wall had appeared before that long passageway. That wall was very tough. Chu Feng was able to tell just by looking at the wall

that he was unable to break through the wall with the strength that he currently possessed.

On the wall were eight large characters written with sharp handwriting.

‘The Path Of The Brave Is One Without Retreat.’ [1. This is eight characters in chinese.]



# Chapter 2592 - Trapped In A Predicament

---

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, an explosion suddenly sounded from behind Chu Feng.

Turning around, Chu Feng started to frown. Another wall had appeared behind him. It was the same sort of wall as the one before him.

Merely, the wall behind him had sealed off his way back.

This had verified to Chu Feng that the two walls were the same; they were both activated by some sort of mechanism.

“What sort of meaning is this?” Her Lady Queen revealed a confused expression.

Neither one of those two walls were a small matter. At the very least, Chu Feng was currently unable to breach them.

In fact, even the two walls beside him, the stone path underneath his feet and the roof above his head were also incomparably tough. None of them were things that Chu Feng could destroy with his current level of strength.

As such, the situation at hand was that Chu Feng was unable to proceed and unable to retreat.

“Likely, that is the case,” Chu Feng cast his gaze toward a corner of the wall.

When looking with one’s naked eye, one could not see anything there. However, once Chu Feng activated his Heaven’s Eyes, an item appeared at the place that originally had nothing there.

“Isn’t that a teleportation formation?” Her Lady Queen’s eyes started to shine.

The reason for that was because the item in the corner was exactly the same as the teleportation formation in Chu Feng’s

palm. Merely... that teleportation formation had the appearance from before it entered Chu Feng's palm.

"Did Zhao Hong put it there?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"That item was placed there and covered with a concealment formation. It is obvious that the person who did that was afraid that someone might discover it and take it away."

"I have managed to sense Zhao Hong's aura from that concealment formation. It was indeed done by her," Chu Feng said.

"With this, we now know why Zhao Hong did not escape the Unknown Burial Mound with her teleportation formation even after being seriously injured. It turns out that she had already removed the teleportation formation and placed it here. Even if she wanted to use it, she would not be able to," Her Lady Queen said.

"The path of the brave is one without retreat. I guess this is what it means."

Chu Feng looked at the eight large characters on the wall before him and revealed a wry smile.

Chu Feng had discovered how to proceed onward. Merely, he would have to give up some things. Right now, what Chu Feng needed to give up would be the teleportation formation within his palm.

After all, the intention of the those eight words were clear. If one wanted to proceed onward, one could not prepare a way out for oneself. As for the way out, it would be the teleportation formation that could send Chu Feng out from the Unknown Burial Ground, the greatest way out that Chu Feng possessed.

As Chu Feng spoke, he extended his fingers. Then, wave upon wave of spirit power started to flow into the teleportation formation in his palm.

As more and more spirit power entered it, the teleportation formation that had originally looked like a tattoo on Chu Feng's palm started to wiggle. It was as if the teleportation formation was planning to make its way out of Chu Feng's palm.

"Chu Feng, are you really planning to do this?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"There seems to be no other choice," Chu Feng said.

Her Lady Queen sighed. It was a sigh of helplessness. As Chu Feng said, there really didn't seem to be any other choice.

"Could there be someone guarding this place? Otherwise, how could they know that there's a teleportation formation on you?" Her Lady Queen said.

"Who knows? The answer to the riddles will likely be disclosed once I enter it," Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

Actually, he also felt helpless. After all, control was being completely taken away from him. He had entered an absolute state of passiveness.

During the moment when Chu Feng was talking with Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng finished removing the teleportation formation from his palm. That teleportation formation once again returned to normal.

"Rumble, rumble~~~"

At practically the same time that happened, the walls before and behind Chu Feng gradually descended into the ground. Soon, they disappeared.

Sure enough, Chu Feng's guess was correct. Once he removed the teleportation formation, the walls sealing off his path disappeared.

Even though he had guessed correctly, Chu Feng felt even more helpless, as this meant that... he was indeed under another's control.

Afterward, Chu Feng placed his teleportation formation beside Zhao Hong's teleportation formation. Then, he also set a concealment formation over his teleportation formation.

After finishing all that, Chu Feng continued onward. This time around, Chu Feng's traveling speed grew even faster.

The reason for that was because he discovered that that long passageway seemed to be never-ending. Chu Feng had no idea when he would be able to find traces of Zhao Hong.

“Rumble~~~”

However, after traveling for only a short while, an explosion sounded from behind Chu Feng. Another wall had appeared behind him.

“It would seem that I truly have no way out,” Chu Feng revealed a wry smile.

Evidently, the wall behind him did not have the intention of descending. In other words, Chu Feng could only continue onward. Even if he wanted to retreat from that place, he would not be able to.

After all, he had already left his teleportation formation behind.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was lamenting, dazzling light suddenly appeared under Chu Feng's feet.

Chu Feng looked down. Immediately, his expression changed.

At that moment, countless peculiar patterns appeared beneath Chu Feng's feet. The dazzling light was being emitted by those veined patterns.

At the beginning, Chu Feng was very nervous. He thought that it was a slaughtering formation. However, after taking a closer look, the nervousness in Chu Feng's eyes turned to astonishment.

“Teleportation formation?” Chu Feng voiced in shock.

That's right, what had appeared beneath Chu Feng was not a slaughtering formation. Rather, it was actually a teleportation formation.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt his surroundings turning fuzzy. When his field of view returned to normal, he was no longer in the long passageway. Instead, he had arrived at a completely different place.

Chu Feng was above a vast sea.

The sky was covered with densely surging purple clouds.

It was as if there were a myriad of monsters wreaking havoc in the clouds.

Not only were the clouds purple, but the lightning flashing in the clouds was black.

Not only was the lightning black, but they also let out exceptionally ear-piercing thunder when they appeared. The rumbling of the thunder was so strong that even Chu Feng felt a sting in his ears.

Chu Feng, a peak Martial Ancestor, was actually unable to resist the sound of the thunder.

As for the vast sea underneath, it was even more astonishing.

The sea was pitch-black in color. The waves were so enormously huge that they reached at least a hundred meters. Whilst the largest waves surpassed even a thousand meters.

Those waves moved as if they could topple the mountains and overturn the seas. How could they even be considered to be waves? They were simply walls of water that reached the sky moving atop the sea.

Most importantly, not only were the waves fierce, but the seawater was also emitting an extremely powerful aura. Chu Feng

felt a fatal danger from that aura.

“What sort of sea is this?” Chu Feng frowned deeply.

That place appeared to be boundless. It caused Chu Feng to lose his sense of direction. Most importantly... the sea below was simply too frightening. It was as if one would be seriously injured or even killed should one fall into the sea.

To Chu Feng, that sea was an enormous threat. It made Chu Feng feel extremely uncomfortable.

“No matter what sort of sea it is, you cannot approach it,” Her Lady Queen warned.

“This Unknown Burial Ground truly surpasses one’s imagination,” Chu Feng gasped with admiration.

Even though that place appeared to be vast and boundless, Chu Feng knew that... he was still in the Unknown Burial Ground.

For a remnant to actually contain such a vast and boundless land... it was evident that it was man-made.

What sort of person was capable of creating this sort of thing?

“Buzz~~~”

At the moment when Chu Feng was gasping in admiration, a strand of light emerged from the incomparably pitch-black sea filled with heaven-reaching waves.

A person could be seen in the light.

As for that person, it was actually Zhao Hong.

“Zhao Hong?”

Chu Feng’s heart tensed up the moment he saw Zhao Hong. Then, he shouted loudly for her.

Chu Feng’s shouts came in succession. His shouting was so loud that it even surpassed the thunder in the sky.

However, Zhao Hong never responded to his calls.

“It’s useless. She simply cannot hear you. This is merely an image. She is simply unable to sense you,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Damn it, she’s trapped.”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown. He grew even more uneasy.

The reason for that was because Zhao Hong did not appear to be fine. Although there was no sign of injury on her, she appeared very wan and sallow. It was as if... her life was nearing its end.

Furthermore, she was moving and observing her surroundings nonstop. From time to time, she would move as if she was setting up a spirit formation or unleashing a martial skill.

Evidently, she was trapped somewhere and trying her hardest to break free.

# Chapter 2593 - The Black Sea; Gates Of Hell

---

For such an image to appear appear above the black sea was simply too eye-catching.

However, that image started to grow fuzzy. Chu Feng was able to tell that the image was moving. It was moving deep into the sea.

“I understand now, it’s trying to lead me,” Chu Feng said.

“No, you must not enter that sea,” Her Lady Queen said.

She also realized that Zhao Hong’s image did not appear by itself without reason. Instead, it was being deliberately shown to Chu Feng.

It was telling Chu Feng that he must enter the sea if he wanted to find Zhao Hong. That Zhao Hong... was in the deep sea.

However, the seawater of this place contained immeasurable power and great hidden dangers.

If Chu Feng were to enter it, he would be injured in some manner, or potentially be killed.

Her Lady Queen did not wish for Chu Feng to take risks.

“I will make preparations before going down. Everything will be fine.”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he began to set up a spirit formation. A defensive formation soon covered his body.

In addition to that, Chu Feng also activated his Thunder Armor, Thunder Wings and Lightning Mark to increase his strength.

Then, Chu Feng leapt directly into the black sea.

“Wuu~~~”

Right after entering the sea, the spirit formation that surrounded Chu Feng was immediately destroyed.

The next moment, Chu Feng felt an enormous pressure engulfing



and crushing him from all sides.

Chu Feng felt as if he was simply not submerged in water. Rather, he felt as if he was being crushed by enormous rocks. Not only had moving become difficult, but even breathing was very challenging.

With the situation like this, Chu Feng became unable to move. He was stopped in the seawater.

He did not sink to the bottom of the sea either, as the seawater was very special. Even though he was inside the seawater, he did not automatically sink to the bottom or float to the top.

If he wanted to move, he would have to rely on himself.

“Chu Feng, are you alright?”

Seeing that Chu Feng had stopped moving and closed his eyes, Her Lady Queen became worried.

“It’s nothing. Although the seawater here appears to be very frightening, it actually does not pose any danger at all. Once I get used to it, I should be able to withstand the pressure of the seawater,” Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng said he was fine, it remained that his body was currently under enormous pressure. Thus... the crystal that had assimilated with his soul started to react.

Outside of the Unknown Burial Ground. The guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were all looking at that crystal with nervous expressions on their faces.

Seeing the image on the crystal being held by the guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Yuehua said, “It’s merely superficial wounds and nothing serious. There’s no need for you to be too worried.”

“But, did you notice that this sign greatly resembles the reaction Zhao Hong had right after entering the Unknown Burial Ground?” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“Indeed,” Kong Shunlian nodded in agreement, “This most likely means that Chu Feng is currently experiencing the same thing that Zhao Hong experienced. Could it be that they’ve met with an identical trap?”

“That’s very possible,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“However, there’s a slight difference,” Kong Yuehua said.

“What sort of difference?” Kong Shunlian and the guardian clan’s clan chief asked in unison.

“Chu Feng’s reaction is not as serious as Zhao Hong’s. This means that Chu Feng’s resistance is stronger than Zhao Hong’s,” Kong Yuehua said.

“What you say is true. That’s most likely the case,” Kong Shunlian nodded again.

However, the guardian clan’s clan chief did not say anything. If things were as they guessed, and Chu Feng was currently experiencing what Zhao Hong had experienced, then the following path would not be that easy to travel.

The reason for that was because this sort of situation only lasted for a short moment for Zhao Hong before signs of her being seriously injured appeared. As for her serious injury, it had been persistent.

At that moment, Chu Feng opened his eyes again.

He had gradually adapted to the pressure of the seawater. Although Chu Feng’s movements were still extremely slow, he was now able to gradually submerge himself into the depths of the black sea.

The pitch-blackness of the seawater was no ordinary black. Instead, there was special power contained in the blackness of the seawater.

Even though Chu Feng was using his Heaven’s Eyes, he was

unable to see more than ten meters away.

He could only hear the surging undercurrent surrounding him sounding like the roars of ferocious beasts.

The further down Chu Feng moved, the more powerful that ferocious aura grew.

It turned out that it was not that this black sea was not as dangerous as it appeared. Rather, the dangerous location was in the depths of this black sea.

The reason why Chu Feng felt this way was because the deeper he submerged himself, the more he felt that... extremely powerful and dangerous unknown aura.

“The reputation of the Unknown Burial Ground is truly not in vain. This sort of unknown sensation is truly unpleasant.”

At this moment, even Chu Feng started to voice complaints. The sensation that he was feeling right now was truly unbearable.

It was a sensation of feeling very helpless. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was surprised to discover that he could only sink downward, and not rise through the water.

In other words, he had no way of returning. He could either stop motionlessly in the sea or proceed downward toward that unknown danger.

No one wanted to die. However, the only way to survive for Chu Feng would be to slowly proceed toward that fatal aura.

Fortunately, Chu Feng possessed outstanding willpower. If his willpower was lacking, he would likely be suffering from a mental breakdown already.

“It’s here,” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze grew cautious and serious. He was looking closely at something.

“What?” Her Lady Queen asked. Although she was able to share Chu Feng’s vision and hearing, she was unable to understand what

Chu Feng meant by 'it's here.' After all, there was simply nothing before Chu Feng. At a glance, the only thing that could be seen was the pitch-black seawater.

“Rumble, rumble~~~”

Right at this moment, rumbles were heard. Although Chu Feng was unable to see anything, he was able to sense that the seawater beneath him was surging.

An intense light was shining toward him. Merely, that light was red in color.

Chu Feng hurriedly continued to descend. The further down he went, the more distinctively he was able to see.

There was a set of gates beneath him. That set of gates was very odd-looking. It seemed very ancient, and appeared to be made of copper. Signs of corrosion covered the gates. Those gates were not fixed onto anything. Just like that, they drifted in the sea.

Furthermore, chains were hanging around the gates. Although he was unable to see them clearly, Chu Feng was able to distinguish from the rustling sounds that those were indeed chains.

As for the intense red light, it was being emitted from the center of that gate.

That light was very intense. However, it shot out in a perfectly straight manner.

Chu Feng was simply unable to clearly see his surroundings. However, he was vaguely able to make out three words from the center of that gate.

“Gates of Hell!!!”

“Creak~~~”

Right at this moment, that gates moved. They were opening.

As the gates opened, the intense red light started to diffuse.

As the gates opened, Chu Feng's gaze became serious, and an astonished expression appeared in his eyes.

Even though it was clearly only a set of gates, they were filled with profoundness. The gates were leading to another location.

However, the insides of the gates was filled with blades, extremely sharp and hard blades. Even with the strength that Chu Feng possessed, he would not be able to destroy those blades.

Without a doubt, if one wanted to pass through the gates, one would have to be slashed by those blades.

Most importantly, those blades were most definitely not ordinary blades. The reason for that was because the dazzling red light was emitted by those blades.

That's right, those sharp blades were all crimson in color.

"Chu Feng, look at those chains," Her Lady Queen called to Chu Feng's attention.

After being called by Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng noticed that the red light grew more and more intense after the gates opened. Thus, he was able to faintly see the chains tied around the gates.

Chu Feng was able to see that there were a total of thirty-eight chains. Each and every chain had a different length. The shortest chain was roughly ten meters long. Chu Feng noticed that there was an item chained to the other side of the chain.

Looking closely, that was actually a human skeleton!!!

# Chapter 2594 - No Path Back

---

That skeleton bound to the chain was still wearing clothes. That said, its clothes were extremely tattered. Perhaps its clothes were affected by the power of the black sea.

In fact, even the bones of that skeleton were corroded. That skeleton was actually black in color.

A black skeleton was a very strange sight to begin with. After being illuminated by the red light, it looked extremely frightening.

“It seems that each of these chains is connected to a corpse,” Chu Feng said.

“What is the reason for this set of gates to appear here?” Her Lady Queen said.

“My beloved Eggy, even if you do not wish for me to take on dangers, you should not ask such an obvious question,” Chu Feng smiled wryly.

He knew that Her Lady Queen knew the meaning behind this gate better than he did. Merely, Her Lady Queen truly did not wish for Chu Feng to enter it.

“You couldn’t possibly really be planning to enter it, right? Do you still remember what that guardian clan’s old man said to you?”

“Your life is not only your own. Even if you do not care about yourself, you must consider your parents,” Her Lady Queen said.

“My dear Eggy, the problem is, apart from entering, I have no other option. After all, I am unable to leave this place. Do you want me to be trapped here forever?” Chu Feng said.

“Really! Exactly which bastard created this place?!” Her Lady Queen started to bulge her mouth furiously.

She was feeling extremely displeased. She felt that she and Chu

Feng and were being toyed around with by someone.

She truly did not enjoy this sort of sensation.

It had always been her who toyed with others. She was truly unable to tolerate being toyed with by others.

“In the end, I must enter,” Chu Feng said.

“Since you’ve already decided, why are you hesitating? Go on in,” Her Lady Queen said.

After hearing Her Lady Queen say that, Chu Feng really stopped hesitating and directly entered the so-called Gates of Hell.

Chu Feng was very cautious. However, after proceeding for less than ten meters, he was cut by a blade.

“Siii~~~”

Once he was cut by the blade, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. Unable to contain himself, he let out a slight groan.

With Chu Feng’s level of cultivation, he would not utter a single voice of pain even if his body was destroyed. His tolerance for pain greatly surpassed that of ordinary people.

However, after Chu Feng was only lightly cut by the blade, he started to grimace in pain.

Most importantly, Chu Feng was actually unable to stop the blood flowing out from the cut.

“This is truly strange.”

Chu Feng tried his hardest to resist the pain and continued onward.

However, the further he proceeded, the more injuries there were to his body. Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered that being cut by the blades would not only leave a superficial wound. Instead, he felt as if his soul was being injured.

Blood began to flow from his wounds nonstop. Gradually, his

movements grew slower.

However, this blade path filled with crimson blades was endless. Chu Feng had no idea when he would reach the end.

Under this sort of situation, not only was Her Lady Queen feeling very distressed, but the three True Immortals outside had also become extremely nervous.

The reason for that was because red lights had appeared on the crystal showing Chu Feng's condition.

This meant that even Chu Feng's soul was injured. This was extremely serious.

"Why isn't Chu Feng using that teleportation formation?" The guardian clan's clan chief was extremely nervous and restless.

"It would appear that Chu Feng also ran into some sort of hidden trouble after entering. Exactly what is happening inside? Could your teleportation formation be ineffective?" Kong Shunlian guessed.

"I... even I am uncertain of that," Originally, the guardian clan's clan chief was extremely confident that the teleportation formations would be effective. After all, they were treasures from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Furthermore, the person who left those treasures was an extraordinary individual. Thus, he was extremely certain that no one would be able to stop the teleportation formations.

However, Chu Feng was currently also seriously injured like Zhao Hong. In fact, his injuries had even reached his soul. Yet, he still had not used the teleportation formation.

Because of that, his confidence in the teleportation formations started to waver. His wavering confidence originated from his worry for Chu Feng.

"We cannot just sit around and wait like this," The guardian clan's clan chief said.



“What do you have in mind?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“You two should leave,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

Hearing those words, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua started to frown.

After a moment, Kong Yuehua asked, “You’re planning to go and find Ying Mingchao for assistance?”

The guardian clan’s clan chief did not answer.

“Even if it’s Ying Mingchao, I doubt he will be able to help. After all, he’s a True Immortal too. He will simply not be able to enter the Unknown Burial Ground.”

“Furthermore, with his strength, he will not be able to breach the Unknown Burial Ground with force,” Kong Shunlian said.

“I also know that finding Ying Mingchao will be an uncertain hope. However, Ying Mingchao entered countless remnants in his youth. He is no ordinary individual. Perhaps there might be a way to save them if I am to find him,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“Very well, I’ll go,” Kong Shunlian said.

“You’ll go?” The guardian clan’s clan chief revealed an astonished gaze.

“As matters stand, you still do not trust us, right?” Kong Yuehua asked.

“I might as well say the truth. Yes, that is indeed the case,” The guardian clan’s clan chief did not try to deny it.

“You...” Kong Yuehua was slightly angry at his response. She naturally knew that this mysterious individual before them had been tailing them the entire time. Even when they entered closed-door training, he continued to watch them. She knew that he did so because he did not trust them, and was afraid that they would do something detrimental to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and the

others.

However, when this mysterious man affirmed her suspicion without the slightest hesitation, she still felt very displeased.

After all, she knew very well that even though she felt hatred in her heart, neither her nor Kong Shunlian planned to do anything to Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and even Zhao Hong.

Furthermore, she truly wanted to help Chu Feng. That said... even she herself did not dare to believe that she would be worried for Chu Feng's safety. That said, it remained that she really did not want Chu Feng to die.

"Forget about it, Yuehua, just let him go," Kong Shunlian waved his hand.

"You two are not planning to leave?" The guardian clan's clan chief asked.

"We will not leave. If Ying Mingchao plans to eradicate us, then just let him," Kong Shunlian said.

"Very well, this knot between you all must be undone someday," The guardian clan's clan chief did not hesitate. He immediately started flying toward Hero City.

Hero City was not very far from this place. Furthermore, there were Ancient Era's teleportation formations on the way there. Thus, in merely a short few days, the guardian clan's clan chief had returned.

A large group of people were majestically approaching in a very domineering manner.

However, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua's expressions remained unchanged. That said, even though their expressions remained unchanged, they started to worry in their hearts.

They did not plan to seek revenge against Ying Mingchao because they knew that they did not possess the capability to do so, and

they also felt that they were indeed in the wrong for what happened back then.

However, they were uncertain as to whether Ying Mingchao would spare them or not.

After all, they were the Kong Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders.

Finally, the large group of people arrived. They were standing in the sky.

They had already reached Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua's line of sight.

However, after seeing them, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua revealed surprised expressions.

# Chapter 2595 - Rescue Chu Feng

---

At this moment, there were a lot of people standing in the sky.

Not only were all of the True Immortal-level experts from Hero City all here, but there were also many Martial Ancestor-level experts.

From the people standing in the sky, merely those from Hero City already numbered tens of thousands.

The reason why that was the case was because there were more than only people from Hero City there. There were also people from other powers.

Not to mention those tier two powers that had allied themselves with Hero City, but even the Immortal Sword School and Buddha's Heavenly Temple had send forth a great amount of experts.

Their numbers were truly great.

From this, one could image how magnificent of a sight it was to have all these people standing in the sky.

“Why would there be this many people? Exactly what is going on?”

Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua looked to one another. Confusion covered their faces.

If Ying Mingchao was planning to save Chu Feng, he shouldn't be bringing all these people.

However, if Ying Mingchao wanted to take care of them after finding out that they were here, there was even less of a reason for him to bring this many people.

At this moment, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were completely puzzled.

“This is strange,”

After surveying the crowd, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian's expressions changed once again.

They grew even more puzzled.

The amount of people gathered in the sky was truly a majestic sight. All those that should have come and all those that should not have come all came. However, a single person did not come.

The person that was supposed to come here the most, Ying Mingchao, was not here.

“There's no time to delay, let's start.”

Right at this moment, an old man stood forth and descended from the sky. He arrived at the central region of the Unknown Burial Ground.

That old monk was no ordinary individual. He was an Utmost Exalted Elder from the Buddha's Heavenly Temple. Not only was he a True Immortal, but he was also a Snake Mark Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

“Woosh, woosh~~~”

After that old monk descended to the ground, the people that were originally standing in the sky in an orderly fashion all started to descend to the ground.

There were people of all cultivations. There were both True Immortals and Martial Ancestors. However, they possessed a single common ground -- they were all world spiritists.

In an orderly manner, these people began to set up spirit formations to form a joint grand formation.

They seemed to have already planned this. Led by the Immortal-cloak World Spiritists, they began to divide up the work orderly as they set up their formations.

Apart from this, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua also felt some ill-intended gazes. Those were from Hero City's older

subordinates.

In fact, those sorts of gazes of hatred, gazes filled with killing intent, were being cast toward them from even True Immortal-level experts.

The two of them were capable of understanding this sort of situation. From their point of view, it was Ying Mingchao who was in the wrong to completely eradicate their clan.

However, when looking at things from the viewpoint of the people from Hero City, they would feel that the Kong Heavenly Clan was in the wrong for how they and the Zhou Heavenly Clan treated Ying Mingchao and Hero City back then.

As they were enemies, it was natural for the people from Hero City to hate the two of them.

However, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were confused. Although those people were revealing their hatred toward them, they did not seem to plan to attack them.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at this moment, a figure descended from the sky and arrived beside Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua.

Although this person was wearing a black gown, a hood and possessed the cultivation of a rank one True Immortal, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua did not grow alert in the slightest from his approach. The reason for that was because they knew... that this man was that mysterious individual.

“Exactly what is going on?” Kong Shunlian asked.

“The current Hero City is much more lively than I imagined it to be. These people were all at Hero City. After finding out about this matter, they were asked by Ying Mingchao to come help.”

“Right now, there is a good news. That is, Ying Mingchao knows how to help Chu Feng.”

“Merely, he needs the assistance of an individual. As such, he has gone to find that person,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“Apart from that, Ying Mingchao knows that the two of you are here. He has already informed the people from Hero City beforehand. Thus, they will not attack you all. As such, you all can continue to stay here at ease.”

“Actually, Ying Mingchao was very regretful for what happened back then. According to what he said, he did such a ruthless thing because he was overwhelmed by anger, and has been tormented by his actions from that day.”

“I can tell that he wants to reconcile with you all. What do you plan to do?” The guardian clan’s clan chief continued.

Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua looked to one another. Neither said anything.

That said, the guardian clan’s clan chief saw wavering in their gazes. Likely, they too had thought about reconciling with Ying Mingchao.

That was understandable. With the situation at hand, it would be favorable for them if they could reconcile.

“How long will Ying Mingchao be gone for?” Kong Yuehua asked.

“I’m not certain about that either. However, he grew very impatient upon finding out that Chu Feng was in trouble. Else, he would not have mustered such a great number of people,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“That’s true,” Kong Shunlian agreed.

With all these people coming here, even if there were still people guarding Hero City, it would not be much different from an empty city.

After all, for a major power, their pillars were their True Immortals. Looking at the situation at hand, it seemed that Ying

Mingchao had dispatched all of his True Immortals here.

It was not only their Hero City's True Immortals; even their allies' True Immortals had been dispatched here.

With this, one could see how much Ying Mingchao valued Chu Feng.

"Merely, will we be able to make it in time?" Kong Yuehua asked.

"Ying Mingchao saw my crystal, and inquired about the situation after seeing it. He said there should be enough time."

"He said that Chu Feng should have entered a place called the 'Gates of Hell.'"

"That 'Gates of Hell' is very long, and will become more and more difficult the further one proceeds. It will take Chu Feng some time to pass through that place."

"However, fortunately, one will not really suffer any fatal danger from the Gates of Hell. Thus, he said that there will be enough time," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"How did he know that there's a 'Gates of Hell' in the Unknown Burial Ground? Could it be....?" At this moment, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian's expressions both changed. They thought of a possibility.

"Ying Mingchao entered it before. Furthermore, he managed to come out alive," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"Siii~~~"

Hearing those words, both Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were unable to contain themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Ying Mingchao had actually managed to come out of the Unknown Burial Ground that no one was able to come out of alive. This was truly hard to believe.

However, although they were astonished by it, Kong Shunlian



and Kong Yuehua immediately revealed joyous expressions afterwards.

As Ying Mingchao had been to it before, this meant that he most definitely knew the Unknown Burial Ground very well. As such, there would be hope in saving Chu Feng.

“Right now, the crowd is setting up that grand formation to rescue Chu Feng. Merely... another person is required in order to successfully set up that grand formation. The person that Ying Mingchao has gone to find is precisely that person,” The guardian clan’s clan chief said.

“This is great, Chu Feng will be saved.”

“It seems that your decision to seek Ying Mingchao was the right one.”

At this moment, both Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were extremely overjoyed.

Seeing the two of them acting in this manner, the guardian clan’s clan chief revealed a change in expression.

It was only at this moment that he discovered that these two people that should be Chu Feng’s enemies were actually this concerned about Chu Feng.

Most importantly, their reactions didn’t seem to be a pretense. Instead, they were deeply concerned for Chu Feng from the bottoms of their hearts.

“Since they’re all helping to save Chu Feng, we cannot watch with folded arms. Can you obtain the design of that spirit formation?” Kong Yuehua asked.

The two of them also wished to join the people setting up the spirit formation. Merely, they had no idea what sort of spirit formation they were setting up right now. That was why they needed a spirit formation design.

“I have already prepared them for you two,” The guardian clan’s clan chief took out two spirit formation diagrams.

Upon receiving the spirit formation diagram, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua’s expressions changed again.

The two of them were both world spiritists. In fact, Kong Yuehua’s world spirit techniques could be said to be very excellent too.

However... neither of them were capable of telling exactly what sort of spirit formation it was. That said, they were certain that it was an extraordinary spirit formation. That spirit formation could be said to be extremely profound.

# Chapter 2596 - Undetermined Life And Death

---

Although they had no idea what sort of spirit formation this was, they were able to understand how to set up the spirit formation by following the spirit formation diagram.

Afterwards, Kong Yuehua and Kong Shunlian also joined the great army and began setting up the spirit formation.

This scene was truly magnificent. The experts from various powers were all gathered together doing the same task.

Even those who were originally enemies were able to temporarily set aside their grudges to set up a spirit formation together. This was truly an astonishing sight.

“Grandmaster, it’s been a long time.”

Among the vast gathering of world spiritists, a man with three swords quietly arrived before a monk.

“Well, well, is this not Daoist Three Swords? It has truly been a long time. Last time we met, it was on Mount Cloud Crane, no?” Upon seeing the person who called to him, that monk responded with a smile on his face and temporarily stopped what he was doing.

This man was the Immortal Sword School’s Daoist Three Swords. As for the ‘Grandmaster’ that he called for, it was Grandmaster Pocket.

Back then, both of them had received Chu Feng’s assistance and helped Chu Feng back on Mount Cloud Crane.

Although they had only met Chu Feng that one time, they could be said to possess a somewhat friendly relationship.

The two of them had thought very highly of Chu Feng since that time.

“Yes, that’s right. Recalling what happened back then, I truly felt a great amount of disbelief.”

“Although I’d already guessed that little friend Chu Feng would be able to obtain great accomplishments in the future, I never expected him to accomplish this much,” Daoist Three Sword gasped in admiration.

Grandmaster Pocket looked around. He swept his gaze over the magnificent scene around him and gasped with admiration, “This sort of charisma is truly astonishing. It is something that only rulers possess.”

“Charisma?” Daoist Three Swords was slightly startled. Then, he laughed, “Indeed. To be able to have this many people willingly cooperate is indeed a sign of little friend Chu Feng’s individual charisma.”

“In merely a short few years, he managed to conquer many of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

Daoist Three Swords agreed with what Grandmaster Pocket said.

The two of them felt that Chu Feng’s individual charisma was something that was not present even among countless people, that it was the charisma of a ruler.

Their agreement also served to verify that the two of them both felt that Chu Feng would ultimately become the ruler of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm in the future.

.....

For the sake of rescuing Chu Feng, the vast amount of people outside were joining hands to set up a spirit formation. It was a grand and magnificent scene.

However, Chu Feng had no idea what was happening outside. He was proceeding forward through the Gates of Hell the entire time.

As such, Chu Feng was naturally suffering from the constant

torment of the sharp blades.

Chu Feng was currently covered in cuts. His flesh was already badly mutilated. It could be said that there was not a single uninjured piece of flesh on him.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist and possessed many abilities to heal his injuries, they were all ineffective toward his injuries.

Chu Feng was unable to heal his wounds. Thus, he was completely covered in blood and looked extremely frightening.

In fact, he did not even resemble a human. Instead, he resembled a monster.

The reason for that was because red gaseous flames were burning from his wounds.

As the gaseous flames rose, crimson light surged forth. At a glance, it was truly frightening.

If it had been an ordinary person, they would most definitely not be able to withstand this sort of torment.

However, there was an aspect to Chu Feng that surpassed ordinary individuals. Not only did he possess extremely incredible willpower, but he was even able to gradually adapt to torment after experiencing it for a long period of time.

Although Chu Feng still felt the pain, the sensation of pain was much duller compared to the first time he felt it.

With this being the case, Chu Feng was able to hasten his pace.

Finally, an exit appeared before Chu Feng.

He passed through the final blades and walked out from the exit. Once he walked out, he discovered a pond.

The pond was not very large. However, the water in it was so clear that one could see the bottom of the pond.

“This pond...”

Seeing this pond, Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

As an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that this seemingly ordinary pond possessed a healing effect.

As such, how could Chu Feng possibly hesitate? He immediately leaped from the exit of the Gates of Hell into the pond.

“Splash~~~”

After entering the pond, the red gaseous flames coming from Chu Feng’s body grew even more intense. It looked like a small volcanic eruption. In an instant, the crimson gaseous flames soon filled this entire region.

Most importantly, with Chu Feng as the center, a layer of red gaseous substance began to spread through the water.

The pond water that was originally extremely clear turned muddy very quickly. It soon resembled a pond of blood.

That said, the pain Chu Feng felt was decreasing.

“It’s gone?”

After his pain started to subside, Chu Feng cast his gaze toward the Gates of Hell above the pond. Lingering fear was present in his eyes.

However, upon doing so, he was surprised to discover that the Gates of Hell had disappeared.

Chu Feng had no idea when it had disappeared.

The traps and mechanisms here truly appeared and disappeared unpredictably. Even Chu Feng was unable to catch them.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

Right at this moment, the pond water that was originally tranquil started to surge, forming a small-scale whirlpool. That

whirlpool was not far away from Chu Feng.

It turned out that the pond water was sinking and draining into that whirlpool.

Soon, all of the pond water disappeared. Chu Feng discovered that... a cave entrance had appeared at the location where the pond water had drained away.

Chu Feng carefully observed his surroundings. He discovered that apart from that cave entrance, there were only rocks that covered the walls. Evidently... this cave was the sole exit.

After Chu Feng approached the cave, he felt a bitter chill emanating from that cave. Unendurable chilliness filled that cave.

Most importantly, three large characters were written on top of the cave - 'Soul-extracting Cave.' [1. Those are 3 characters in chinese.]

“Is this the second trial?”

Seeing the name 'Soul-extracting Cave,' Chu Feng started to frown. He had realized that this not-very-large cave entrance was evidently the only path he could take.

That said, after Chu Feng experienced the trial of the Gates of Hell, he felt that this Soul-extracting Cave would be even more dangerous.

However, Chu Feng had no other choice.

Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to enter the Soul-extracting Cave, Her Lady Queen asked, “Are you planning to continue right away? Don't you want to relax a bit?”

She had accompanied Chu Feng the entire time. Thus, she knew how difficult this journey had been for Chu Feng.

“That pond water is extremely magical. My injuries are pretty much all healed. Furthermore, I am unable to sense the pain anymore. As for my stamina, there is no wear and tear either.

Thus, there's no need to rest."

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he leapt directly into that Soul-extracting Cave filled with chilliness.

After entering the Soul-extracting Cave, he began to slide downward. The most unbearable aspect was once again that bitter cold.

The coldness directly penetrated Chu Feng's bones. Then, Chu Feng felt as if the coldness had entered his bones directly. That sort of freezing sensation caused Chu Feng to feel as if his entire body was being ripped apart. Even his thoughts were no longer clear.

In this sort of situation, Chu Feng's awareness started to grow fuzzy. The only thing he could feel was the torment from the bitter cold, and a formless power that wanted to draw out his soul from him.

To put it briefly, the coldness that Chu Feng was feeling right now was even harder to bear than the cuts from the blades of the Gates of Hell.

"You cannot slow down and wait for death. You must leave this place immediately," Her Lady Queen said.

"That's my intention."

As Chu Feng spoke, he activated his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. After his cultivation increased, he unleashed a movement martial skill to increase the speed of his descent.

However, after his speed increased, the pain Chu Feng felt also grew stronger.

"Eeahh~~~"

The pain was so unbearable that even Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from shouting in pain.

Furthermore, Chu Feng's awareness also grew more and more fuzzy. That said, no matter how fuzzy his awareness became, it did



not slow down the speed of his descent.

Finally, the bitter cold was over. The pain Chu Feng endured was finally eased. Gradually, his awareness grew clear again. However, he discovered that he had not reached the end of the tunnel. Instead, he was still descending.

“Crap, there’s more?”

At this moment, Chu Feng shouted ‘oh no’ in his heart. Even though the bitter cold was gone, Chu Feng was able to feel an intense heat from beneath him. Beneath him was most definitely a ferocious heat.

“Boom~~~”

Sure enough, Chu Feng soon descended into the extreme heat. Soon, the heat covered his entire body.

The sensation of this intense heat was completely different from the bitter cold. One was a bone-chilling cold, whereas the other was so hot that he felt as if he would soon melt.

However, there was one similar aspect in the two.

That is, a formless power was invading his soul. That power transformed into countless large hands and was tightly grabbing onto his soul with the intention of ripping it to pieces and then removing it from Chu Feng’s body.

Under this sort of situation, Chu Feng soon experienced what he had felt earlier. His awareness that had gradually grown clear was once again becoming more and more fuzzy.

However, that was not the most cruel aspect...

Most cruel of all, this Soul-extracting Cave was like an unending tunnel with death being its final destination. Chu Feng felt as if only by dying would he be able to break free from all this.

Completely muddled, Chu Feng even lost track of time.

Finally, he landed on the ground. He had managed to escape that

Soul-extracting Cave.

However, at this moment, Chu Feng was motionless like a corpse. Just like that, he laid on the ground.

Bruises covered his entire body, and he showed no signs of life.

At this moment, Chu Feng's life and death was truly undetermined.

# Chapter 2597 - Extremely Astonishing

---

In the desert outside the Unknown Burial Ground.

An enormous construction had covered the entire region. It was a pyramid-like construction. It covered an area several tens of thousands of meters across. It was truly an enormous monster of an item. Like an enormous palace, it sat on the desert.

That said, that enormous construction was not an actual entity, as it was transparent.

As for what it was... it was the completed grand formation that everyone had spent the last several days setting up.

At this moment, everyone present was standing around that enormous spirit formation. Their gazes were fixed onto the summit of that grand formation.

There were two figures standing there. They were the crucial people for activating this grand formation.

One of them was Ying Mingchao, who had just rushed here. The other person was the person who had arrived with Ying Mingchao. In other words, the person that Ying Mingchao had gone to search for.

This person was someone that the people present did not know of.

She was a woman. She had a youthful and pretty appearance. Furthermore, the aura that she emitted was actually that of a rank two True Immortal.

Her cultivation had earned the reverence of the crowd. After all, rank two True Immortals were the apex level of cultivation in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

At this moment, the crowd finally realized why someone like Ying Mingchao had to personally go and request the assistance of

this individual. Merely by this woman's cultivation, the crowd knew that she was no small matter.

However, very few people knew who she was. Thus, the crowd present started to gasp in admiration at the fact that there was actually a hidden expert like her in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

As for this woman, she was actually none other than Zi Xunyi.

When Zi Xunyi left the Kong Heavenly Clan, she had brought back the corpse of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief to the Demon Elimination Cave.

Seeing that their clan chief was dead, the people from the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan all felt that his death was caused by Zi Xunyi.

However, Zi Xunyi's strength surpassed all of theirs. Thus, even though they deeply detested Zi Xunyi, they were unable to do anything to her.

That said, Zi Xunyi herself also felt that she had caused the death of the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's Clan Chief. Thus, she set up a grand formation and used it to torture and punish herself. She wanted to torture herself to death.

If it wasn't for Ying Mingchao's arrival, Zi Xunyi would likely have died in her grand formation.

Although Ying Mingchao had saved her, Zi Xunyi had no intention of thanking Ying Mingchao. Instead, she said to him coldly, "If you dare lie to me, I will hate you for eternity."

"Xunyi, I am truly not lying. Chu Feng is indeed trapped in the Unknown Burial Ground," Ying Mingchao said.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao was still feeling trauma. His emotions were very complicated.

He still remembered the situation inside the Demon Elimination

Cave, the situation in the Bloodscale Monstrous Clan's territory.

Zi Xunyi's situation was truly miserable. She was extremely weak, and at death's door. Most importantly... Zi Xunyi was doing that of her own accord.

If it wasn't for Chu Feng being in trouble that managed to stir up Zi Xunyi's emotions, Ying Mingchao would likely not have been able to prevent Zi Xunyi from committing suicide.

"It will be up to this to decide whether you're lying or not."

Zi Xunyi took out an item. It was a jade pendant.

However, it was only half of a jade pendant.

After that, Ying Mingchao also took out a half jade pendant. He handed it to Zi Xunyi. When the two halves were placed together, they formed a completed jade pendant.

Ying Mingchao looked thoughtfully at the two halves of the jade pendant. Only Zi Xunyi and him knew that those two jade pendants were their engagement keepsakes.

At the same time, those jade pendant halves were also the crucial items to activating the spirit formation.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi placed the two jade pendant halves together. Then, she placed the completed jade pendant onto the spirit formation.

After that, both Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao began to form different hand seals. They were jointly activating the jade pendant.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, complicated veined patterns appeared on the jade pendant and integrated with the spirit formation.

As more and more veined patterns assimilated into the grand spirit formation, the grand spirit formation started to shine

brightly. It had been activated.

“The crystal,” Ying Mongchao spoke loudly.

“Here,” Hearing that, the guardian clan’s clan chief immediately handed the crystal that could detect Chu Feng’s current state to Ying Mingchao.

Ying Mingchao placed that crystal above the jade pendant.

The next moment, the grand formation that was originally radiating with light grew completely dark. It was as if all of the light from earlier had disappeared.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, a golden radiance emerged from the summit of the grand spirit formation.

That golden radiance shot into the sky and began to spread around, illuminating the sky into a dazzling brightness.

Gradually, the radiance stopped being so eye-dazzling.

“That is?”

Seeing that, the crowd all revealed extremely astonished expressions.

They were able to see an image from the radiance in the sky. It was a grand formation. Merely by seeing it with their naked eyes, they were able to tell that it was an exceptionally grand formation.

That grand formation was simply enormous. What appeared in the sky was merely the tip of the iceberg.

Most importantly, the crowd were able to see a figure in the center of that image. That person was none other than Chu Feng.

“How could this be? He... how did he arrive there already?”

“Didn’t you say that he had only just entered the Gates of Hell?” Zi Xunyi asked in a very emotional manner.

Ying Mingchao also revealed a confused expression. Thus, he

turned to the guardian clan's clan chief and asked, "Is there a mistake to the time you informed me?"

"No, I told you when Chu Feng entered the Unknown Burial Ground truthfully. Since you've told me that it concerns Chu Feng's safety, how could I possibly lie about it?" The guardian clan's clan chief explained.

"He actually managed to pass the two checkpoints, the Gates of Hell and the Soul-extracting Cave this quickly to enter the Life and Death Formation."

"Chu Feng... exactly how did he accomplish that?" At this moment, the astonishment in Ying Mingchao's eyes grew even stronger.

Seeing that Ying Mingchao had not lied to her, Zi Xunyi also revealed the same sort of astonished expression.

Only the two of them knew what sorts of places the Gates of Hell and the Soul-extracting Cave were, as they had personally experienced them.

They felt that it would be impossible for Chu Feng to be able to pass through those two checkpoints in succession in such a short period of time.

However, Chu Feng had accomplished it.

That was the reason why they were so astonished.

# Chapter 2598 - Ridding The Illusions

---

“It would seem that little friend Chu Feng has accomplished something impossible again.”

The conversation between Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi was heard by the crowd. From their conversation, the crowd were able to tell that Chu Feng had accomplished something extraordinary again, something that made even Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi felt disbelief.

At this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar. They all began to discuss this matter spiritedly.

After all, this was the Unknown Burial Ground that we’re talking about here.

“Quiet!”

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao shouted.

Once his shout was heard, the sea of people that were originally extremely noisy immediately quieted down. The only sound that could be heard were the faint rumbles emitted by the grand formation, as well as the rustling sounds of the sand being blown by the wind.

After this place quieted down, Ying Mingchao spoke into the pearl that was connected to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, it’s me, Ying Mingchao. How are you right now?”

“Chu Feng, wake up.”

Ying Mingchao was calling to Chu Feng.

At this moment, the crowd finally realized the use of this grand spirit formation.

It turned out that not only was this grand spirit formation capable of locking onto Chu Feng and seeing his surroundings, but it was also capable of conversing with Chu Feng.



However, after Ying Mingchao called for Chu Feng, the crowd began to grow suspicious as to whether or not this grand spirit formation would be effective in conversing with Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng was currently lying on his stomach without the slightest reaction.

With the situation like this, Ying Mingchao grew even more anxious and uneasy. From this, it could be seen that he was truly concerned for Chu Feng's safety.

Ying Mingchao knew that Chu Feng was still alive. Merely, he feared that Chu Feng had been seriously injured.

This was precisely what they meant by a confused state of mind from being overly concerned.

“Judging from the situation, although Chu Feng is seriously injured, there is still no danger to his life yet.”

“It might be because he has just passed the Soul-extracting Cave that he is not responding to your continued calls,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Xunyi, you're saying that Chu Feng is still within that illusion?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“I am uncertain of that. However, there's that possibility,” Zi Xunyi said.

“In that case, let's wait a bit longer,” Ying Mingchao spoke those words very helplessly.

After all, apart from waiting for Chu Feng to wake up, there was nothing else they could do.

After all, only people below the True Immortal level of cultivation were able to enter the Unknown Burial Ground. Even if they wanted to go in to help Chu Feng, they would not be able to do so.

As for the people present that were not True Immortals, they most likely did not possess the capability to reach where Chu Feng

had gone.

Thus, Chu Feng could only rely on himself. The only thing Ying Mingchao could do would be to wait for Chu Feng to wake up and then communicate with him using the grand formation to advise him on how to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground's grand formation.

.....

Actually, Chu Feng had indeed entered an illusion.

Mists surrounded him. The mists were crimson red in color. It was an extremely horrifying sight.

Chu Feng stood in the bloody mist. He was looking around at his surroundings nonstop. While he was unable to see anyone, he was able to hear loud screams.

They were like the wailing of ghosts, the howling of wolves, the roaring of ferocious beasts and the weeping of malicious spirits.

In fact, Chu Feng could even hear the sounds of claws scratching.

In short, with all these voices together, it was truly horrifying. Even though it was Chu Feng, he still felt his blood run cold upon hearing those voices. He started to feel a chill in his heart.

“Do you wish to know where this is?”

Suddenly, a voice sounded. That voice was incomparably old. Yet, it possessed exceptional power.

Chu Feng opened his mouth with the intention of speaking. Yet, before he could speak, that voice sounded again.

“You do not need to know where this place is. You merely need to know that you will have to pass through the following formation if you want to live.”

“What formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Life and Death Formation,” That voice answered.

“Is it this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, it’s not this place. However, it is related to this place. Go on and comprehend things by yourself. Use your heart to do so. Whether you’ll live or die will be dependent on you own abilities.”

After that voice said those words, it disappeared completely.

“Senior? Senior?”

Chu Feng called out for that voice twice. He wanted to seek the answers to some more questions.

However, that voice never answered him again.

Chu Feng did not continue to ask that voice. Instead, he sat cross-legged on the ground. He set up a spirit formation and began to attentively listen to the sounds.

He had set up the spirit formation to increase his perception and hearing.

After Chu Feng’s perception and hearing grew stronger, the clamorous and horrifying noises also grew more distinct.

From this, Chu Feng was able to tell that the noises were much more complicated than he had originally thought.

Not only were there screams, snarls and roars, but there were also sounds from weapons colliding with one another, flames surging about, and water crashing down from high above, as well as the whistling of strong winds...

It was as if all of the noises in this world were present in his surroundings. The noises... seemed to possess some sort of indication.

Chu Feng felt that some sort of secret was contained in these noises. As for this secret... it was very likely the crucial aspect to breaching that so-called Life and Death Formation.

After an hour passed, and Chu Feng felt that the noises around him had instantly disappeared.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes, he discovered... that he was lying on the ground.

Chu Feng looked around and revealed a surprised expression.

Mountains and rocks covered his surroundings. Chu Feng felt as if he were in a vast mountain range.

However, fatal danger was all around him.

Chu Feng finally realized what Life and Death Formation meant. The place which he was in right now was the Life and Death Formation.

“Seems like Zhao Hong is in this Life and Death Formation.”

Chu Feng recalled the image of Zhao Hong using her various abilities.

“Chu Feng, are you able to hear my voice?”

Suddenly, a voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

That voice was very strange. It did not sound from outside, but rather within Chu Feng’s ears.

It felt like how Her Lady Queen would converse with Chu Feng. However, this voice was clearly not Her Lady Queen’s voice. Chu Feng was able to be certain that it was Ying Mingchao’s voice.

“Senior Ying, is that you?”

Chu Feng looked around. However, not only was he unable to see Ying Mingchao, but he did not even manage to feel Ying Mingchao’s aura.

“It’s me. Chu Feng, I am currently outside the Unknown Burial Ground. I am using a special spirit formation to communicate with you,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Spirit formation? Senior... how did you know that I was here?” Chu Feng felt astonished. However, he soon thought of a possibility. Thus, he asked, “Could it be...?”

“I was told by that person who claims to be your subordinate that you are here,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Sure enough,” Chu Feng sighed emotionally.

He guessed that the guardian clan’s clan chief had gone to find Ying Mingchao because the journey here had been very difficult.

He had been seriously injured, and even his soul had suffered greatly. Although he appeared to be fine right now, Chu Feng had experienced countless torments, and nearly died.

Having experienced that many things, the crystal that was linked to his body would have most definitely reacted.

The guardian clan’s clan chief must’ve discovered that the situation was amiss, and went to Ying Mingchao to seek for assistance out of worry for Chu Feng’s safety.

“Chu Feng, I’ll make this brief.”

“This Unknown Burial Ground is one of the most dangerous remnants in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It possesses a total of three checkpoints. They are respectively the Gates of Hell, the Soul-extracting Cave and the Life and Death Formation.”

“Right now, you are at the Unknown Burial Ground’s final checkpoint, the most dangerous checkpoint, the Life and Death Formation,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Senior, please don’t worry. I have managed to obtain some comprehension from that illusion earlier. As such, this junior will have a chance at breaking through this formation,” Chu Feng said.

Although he had only listened for an hour, Chu Feng had indeed managed to comprehend a lot of things in that illusion. Although he did not dare to guarantee that he would actually be able to pass through the Life and Death Formation, Chu Feng felt that he would have at least a thirty percent chance of being able to pass through this Life and Death Formation.

Although a thirty percent chance was not very high, and could even be said to be a very low level of success, it was already very high when compared to the others that passed through the Life and Death Formation.

“No, Chu Feng, listen to me. You must absolutely not be affected by that illusion. You must forget all that you’ve comprehended in that illusion. Else... you will definitely die.”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao warned Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

# Chapter 2599 - Breaking Through The Formation With One's Body

---

“Senior, could it be that that illusion is there to deliberately affect me?” Chu Feng felt very shocked.

“That’s right, it is there to deliberately affect you. If you are to attempt to break through this formation with what you’ve comprehended from that illusion, you will definitely die,” Ying Mingchao spoke in a very certain manner.

“But, if this Unknown Burial Ground does not plan to allow me to pass through the Life and Death Formation, it could totally make it into a death trap. Is there really a need for it to do all that?” Chu Feng asked.

He was truly confused. He felt that this simply doesn’t make sense.

“Chu Feng, it’s me, Zi Xunyi,” Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi’s voice sounded.

“Senior Zi, you also came?” Chu Feng was pleasantly surprised upon hearing Zi Xunyi’s voice.

Chu Feng had witnessed what had happened back then. He had thought that he would never see Zi Xunyi again. Never did he expect that he would hear her voice so soon.

“After hearing that you were trapped here, Xunyi immediately rushed over to help. Else... likely not even the gods would have been able to move her,” Ying Mingchao explained.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt even greater warmth in his heart. After all, that indirectly revealed that Zi Xunyi cared deeply about his safety.

Friendship between people was like this...

If one were to encounter someone that they got along well with,

one would not need to know the other for long in order to go through water and tread on fire for the other.

However, if one were to encounter someone fake, then regardless of how good the mutual relationship between the two might be, that person would not do anything when you were in a crisis.

As for Zi Xunyi, she was evidently the former type.

“Chu Feng, hear me out. Do not be discouraged and do not be scared. The reason for that is because there have been survivors among the people that have entered the Unknown Burial Ground,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Someone managed to successfully pass through the Unknown Burial Ground’s three checkpoints?” Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression after hearing what Zi Xunyi said.

The reason why Chu Feng felt this joyous was because what Zi Xunyi said meant that the Unknown Burial Ground was not a death trap. Instead, one could really pass through it.

At the same time, Chu Feng also felt admiration from the bottom of his heart toward that survivor.

Being inside the Unknown Burial Ground, Chu Feng knew very well how dangerous the Unknown Burial Ground was. He even felt that he only had a thirty percent chance of being able to pass through this Life and Death Formation.

As such, the person who managed to safely pass through the Life and Death Formation would naturally be qualified to receive Chu Feng’s admiration.

“Indeed, there have been people that managed to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground’s three checkpoints. As for those people, they are Xunyi and myself,” Ying Mingchao said.

“It’s seniors?” Chu Feng felt even more joyous upon hearing those words. If they had managed to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground, they most definitely knew how to pass through this



## Life and Death Formation.

It seemed that there was some promise in Chu Feng being able to pass through this Unknown Burial Ground.

“Back then, the two of us only managed to pass through this Unknown Burial Ground by accident. However, if you are to do as we did, you will definitely be able to return alive. Merely, our method was a bit extreme. You will have to end up suffering in the process.”

“As for that suffering, it is quite unendurable. However, as long as you endure it, you will be able to pass through the Life and Death Formation.”

“Thus... you must make mental preparations,” Ying Mingchao said.

“It’s alright. As long as I can quickly pass through this Life and Death Formation, I am not afraid of any suffering,” Chu Feng said.

Actually, he was this impatient not because he wanted to quickly leave the Unknown Burial Ground.

Rather, it was because he was worried for Zhao Hong.

One must know that Zhao Hong had been in the Life and Death Formation for much longer than him. Right now, her life and death was undetermined. As such, how could Chu Feng not worry?

Thus, it was a race against time for Chu Feng right now. He must quickly break through this Life and Death Formation.

“Very well, in that case, let’s begin.”

Then, Ying Mingchao began to give directions on how to pass through the Life and Death Formation to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng did not hesitate in the slightest. He began to crash through the Life and Death Formation as per Ying Mingchao’s instructions.

As Ying Mingchao stated, after Chu Feng started moving

according to Ying Mingchao's instructions, he began to encounter countless torments.

The reason for that was because Ying Mingchao's method was truly extreme. Whenever Chu Feng was to encounter slaughtering formations or traps, he would not try to find a way to break through them. Instead, he would directly pass through them. He would use his body to endure the countless attacks from the slaughtering formations.

Furthermore, the injuries brought forth by the slaughtering formations in this Life and Death Formation could not be healed.

As Chu Feng continued onward, his body once again became badly mangled. He was trembling. Each and every step onward became incomparably difficult.

In this sort of situation, even the crowd that had seen countless slaughters and corpses was unable to steel themselves to continue watching this.

The scene before them was simply too cruel. Chu Feng was crashing through the various obstacles with his life.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At this very moment, a sword formation filled the sky. Like a torrential rain, the swords were dancing about with blustering noises in the ravine.

The countless light swords were only attacking a single target, the person that was proceeding onward through the ravine, Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was like a loose leaf in a violent windstorm as he was knocked left and right by the swords that filled the sky.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng did not cower. Dragging his battered body, he continued onward with great difficulty.

“This sort of method to break through a formation is simply too cruel. This is simply using one’s body to forcibly withstand all of the attacks.”

Seeing Chu Feng’s current situation, Kong Yuehua started to waver. She was no longer certain as to whether or not such a method would work.

“Since it’s a trial, the most important aspect is to accept the trial. As to how to do so, that is not important.”

“Since this method is something that Ying Mingchao obtained through his own experience, it is most definitely effective,” Kong Shunlian said.

“But, that grand formation is simply too powerful. Will Chu Feng really be able to endure it if he is to continue to force his way through like this?” Kong Yuehua said worriedly.

“That is something that you do not have to worry about. Although Chu Feng is a Martial Ancestor, he is the strongest Martial Ancestor. Likely, the Ying Mingchao from back then was not be as strong as the current Chu Feng. Since Ying Mingchao was able to pass through it, Chu Feng will most definitely be able to do so too,” Compared to Kong Yuehua, Kong Shunlian was filled with confidence toward Chu Feng.

In fact, although Chu Feng’s situation was extremely devastating, the great majority of the people present felt the same way as Kong Shunlian.

They felt that Chu Feng would definitely be able to pass through the Life and Death Formation and walk out of the Unknown Burial Ground alive as long as he persisted.

Ying Mingchao was also extremely confident in Chu Feng. Even though Chu Feng was already on the verge of collapse, Ying Mingchao’s expression was growing more and more emotional, more and more excited.

“Almost, he’s almost there.”

“Chu Feng, hold on a bit longer, a bit longer and you’ll be able to leave this formation,” Ying Mingchao spoke very excitedly.

Hearing those words, the crowd also became extremely excited.

They all felt that Chu Feng would soon pass through the Unknown Burial Ground. As for them, they would be able to witness that scene.

Not to mention the others, it was true for even Chu Feng. Upon hearing what Ying Mingchao said, a greater amount of strength emerged from his body. His originally slow-moving pace accelerated greatly.

Most shockingly, Chu Feng actually managed to force his way through this sword formation that seemed to be impossible for one to force one’s way through.

At this moment, Chu Feng had arrived at an open land. A cliff was before him.

That cliff stood perfectly straight. It appeared as if it was leading directly to the sky.

This cliff blocked Chu Feng’s path forward.

“Senior, what must I do now?” Chu Feng asked.

However, Chu Feng did not receive an answer from Ying Mingchao.

“Senior?”

“Senior Ying Mingchao?”

Chu Feng continued to call for Ying Mingchao. Yet, he still did not receive a response.

“What is going on?”

“Could it be that some sort of problem has appeared in the spirit formation that they used to communicate with me?” Seeing that

Ying Mingchao did not respond, Chu Feng started to worry.

Actually, nothing had happened to the spirit formation that Ying Mingchao was using to communicate with Chu Feng.

Everyone was able to clearly see the situation that Chu Feng was in.

Merely, both Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had turned pale. They no longer possessed the joyous expressions that they did before.

“How could this be? Logically, Chu Feng should have passed through the Life and Death Formation. But.... why is he still in the Life and Death Formation?” Confused, Ying Mingchao looked to Zi Xunyi.

“Chu Feng took the exact same steps as we did. There was no mistake at all. Something like this shouldn’t be happening,” Zi Xunyi also had a confused expression.

“What is going on? Could it be... that it ended in a failure?”

The conversation between Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi was not done through voice transmissions. Thus, they were heard by everyone present.

This included even Chu Feng, who was inside the Unknown Burial Ground’s grand formation.

“Senior, you’re saying... that I failed?” Even though he had heard the conversation between Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng wanted to verify it.

“Chu Feng, hear me out. Logically, as you’ve arrived at this place now, you should have exited the Life and Death Formation.”

“For you to not be able to exit the Life and Death Formation, a problem must’ve occurred somewhere. Chu Feng, don’t panic. Let Xunyi and I analyze the situation. We will most definitely be able to let you leave that formation,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Analyze? What utter nonsense. Those two simply do not know

how to breach the formation. They must've gotten lucky and exited the Life and Death Formation by coincidence. They simply do not know the correct method to break through this formation."

"Chu Feng, you must absolutely not listen to them," After hearing what Ying Mingchao said, Her Lady Queen grew extremely furious.

As for Chu Feng, he also started to hesitate.

Even though Chu Feng was hesitant, he knew the state of his body very well.

After passing through all these trials, Chu Feng's body was extremely weak right now. Most importantly... he was actually unable to cure his injuries.

If he had a thirty percent chance of being able to pass through the Life and Death Formation when he first arrived, now that he was seriously injured, he would at the very most only have a ten percent chance of being able to pass through the Life and Death Formation.

But, to only have a ten percent chance, his hope of success was truly faint.

Should he continue to listen to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, or should he attempt to pass through the Life and Death Formation on his own?

At this moment, Chu Feng was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

## Chapter 2600 - Chu Feng's Decision

---

“Chu Feng, rather than relying on someone else, it is better to rely on yourself. At times like this, you need to rely on yourself,” Her Lady Queen advised Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

As for Chu Feng, he was deep in thought.

It was the same for Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. Both of them were pondering deeply. They wanted to find out exactly what had gone wrong.

.....

After some time passed, Ying Mingchao suddenly raised his head. His gaze had changed. He seemed to have thought of something. He turned to Zi Xunyi and asked, “Xunyi, how are Chu Feng’s injuries compared to how our injuries were back then?”

“Back then, we could be considered to have been on the verge of dying.”

“Although Chu Feng’s current situation is very serious too, there’s still an enormous difference in seriousness compared to how we were back then,” Zi Xunyi said.

“In that case, I should be right then. Chu Feng’s injuries are not serious enough,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Are you perhaps planning to suggest that Chu Feng walk through those slaughtering formations again?” Zi Xunyi asked.

“Everything else is correct. The only difference is his degree of injury. Apart from this, I cannot think of any other method,” Ying Mingchao said.

At this moment, Zi Xunyi grew silent. She was also unable to think of a way to break through the Life and Death Formation.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He said, “Senior, I’ve thought of a way.”

At the practically the same moment when Chu Feng spoke, Ying Mingchao also said, “Chu Feng, I’ve managed to think of what the problem is.”

The crowd were all startled by Chu Feng and Ying Mingchao speaking simultaneously. It was as if they had managed to see hope in Chu Feng passing through the Life and Death Formation.

“Chu Feng, you’ve also thought of it?” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao felt extremely happy.

After all, he felt very apologetic to have Chu Feng endure the torment again. To be honest, he didn’t really want to tell Chu Feng to do it.

If Chu Feng had also thought of the same thing as he did, things would be much easier.

“I think that I should still rely on what I’ve comprehended from the illusion to break through this formation,” Chu Feng said.

“What?”

Ying Mingchao’s heart tensed up the moment he heard what Chu Feng said. This was completely different than what he had thought.

Although Ying Mingchao approved of Chu Feng’s decision, he still asked, “Chu Feng, why do you say that?”

“Senior, I feel that illusion might not necessarily be trying to misguide us.”

“The reason for that is because on my way here, I grew more certain that the method to break through the formation that I’ve comprehended from the illusion is feasible,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, not mentioning whether what you’ve comprehended from the illusion is feasible or not, with your current state, you will simply not be able to use the method that you’ve comprehended from the illusion,” Ying Mingchao said.



“Senior, there is a method that might be able to allow me to recover,” Chu Feng said.

“To recover?” Ying Mingchao was very astonished.

“It’s a spirit formation that I’ve comprehended from the illusion. That spirit formation will be able to help me recover. Merely...”

Chu Feng did not finish his words. The reason for that was because while that spirit formation might be able to allow him to make a recovery and completely cure him of his injuries, returning him to his optimal state, it might also end up taking his life.

This was a gamble.

However, Chu Feng had a fifty percent chance of being able to completely recover his injuries.

“You’re talking about that healing formation?”

“No, you must not. That formation is too dangerous. It will be one thing if you are able to succeed. However, if you are to fail, it will take your life,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Chu Feng, you must trust me. Both Xunyi and I have been to the Unknown Burial Ground. We have both experienced what you’ve experienced.”

“We would never lie to you. We have also attempted many of the spirit formations from the illusion. However, the result was that we nearly lost our lives in the process. Chu Feng, you must not make rash decisions,” Ying Mingchao advised Chu Feng earnestly.

“Senior, have you tried that healing formation before?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have not. The reason for that is because that spirit formation is simply too dangerous,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Senior, earlier, you said that you knew what the issue is?” Chu Feng asked.

He wanted to know what Ying Mingchao had discovered the issue

to be.

“That’s right, I’ve found it...”

Ying Mingchao hesitated no more. He directly mentioned to Chu Feng what he felt the issue to be.

“What? He wants you to endure the torment from the slaughtering formations again?”

“Tell him to drop dead!”

After hearing Ying Mingchao’s proposal, before Chu Feng could respond, Her Lady Queen exploded.

“Chu Feng, you must absolutely not listen to him. He is not you. What he did then might not necessarily be the same as what you’ve done. I feel that he only managed to break through this Life and Death Formation by blind luck.”

“Even if you’re planning to gamble, you must do it according to your own thoughts. You cannot gamble with what he thinks to be right.”

Her Lady Queen was afraid that Chu Feng would continue to listen to Ying Mingchao’s instructions. Thus, she began to advise Chu Feng against it repeatedly.

At this moment, Chu Feng grew completely silent.

He was hesitating.

At the beginning, he felt great amount of certainty and trust toward Ying Mingchao’s words. That was why he did as Ying Mingchao instructed without the slightest hesitation and renounced the method to break through this Life and Death Formation that he had formulated himself.

However, he was now no longer that certain.

On the way here, he grew more and more certain that the method to break through this Life and Death Formation that he had comprehended from the illusion was the actual way out, whereas

the method proposed by Ying Mingchao resembled more of a gamble.

“Chu Feng, Lord City master will not deliberately harm you.”

“You are still very young. Thus, you do not know about how dangerous that Unknown Burial Ground is. All these years, practically no one was able to come out from the Unknown Burial Ground alive. Lord City Master and Senior Zi are the only two individuals that ever managed to come out alive.”

Seeing that Chu Feng was hesitating, many people present began to urge Chu Feng. They wanted him to trust Ying Mingchao.

Their actions were understandable. After all, the Unknown Burial Ground was an extremely dangerous place. As such, they would automatically believe that the experience from the sole survivors was undoubtedly correct.

“Chu Feng, don’t bother with their nonsense. You are different from them. Just because they cannot accomplish it does not mean that you also will not be able to accomplish it either.”

At this moment, her Lady Queen began to strongly urge Chu Feng against listening to Ying Mingchao.

“I’ve decided,” Finally, Chu Feng spoke.

“I know very well that Senior Ying and Senior Zi will not try to harm me.”

“However I, Chu Feng, have my own idea. Furthermore, the person that is being trapped in the Unknown Burial Ground right now is me.”

“Thus, I wish to use my own method to break through this formation,” Chu Feng said.

“This...”

“Young Hero Chu Feng, you must definitely not be stubborn and make rash decisions. This is something that concerns your life.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd grew silent for a moment. However, they soon burst into an uproar.

“Quiet!” Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao shouted loudly.

The crowd immediately closed their mouths and stopped talking.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao had a very complicated expression. Likely, he was feeling very tangled in his heart too.

However, in the end, he said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, since you’ve decided, you should do what you think is correct.”

“Mingchao, you can’t allow Chu Feng to do that,” Seeing that Ying Mingchao had given his consent, Zi Xunyi immediately grew nervous.

“Xunyi, can we guarantee that Chu Feng will definitely be able to escape from there if he is to use our method?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“I...” Zi Xunyi did not answer. She didn’t know how to answer.

“At the beginning, I was certain that was the case. However, I am now no longer certain. Thus, we should allow Chu Feng to make his own decision. After all, the person this decision concerns is Chu Feng himself,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Thank you senior. In that case, this junior will begin.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he sat cross-legged on the ground. Spirit power began to emerge from his body. He was setting up a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was actually very simple. However, as Chu Feng was suffering from very serious injuries all over, even his spirit power had grown much weaker than before. Thus, it took Chu Feng an entire hour to set up the spirit formation.

This spirit formation was a tunnel. There were two doors. One was the entrance, and the other was the exit.

Seeing this spirit formation, Chu Feng sucked in a mouthful of

cold air.

This spirit formation was something that he had managed to comprehend from the illusions.

This was a spirit formation that he could only set up in the Unknown Burial Ground.

As Chu Feng looked to this spirit formation that held a fifty-fifty chance of life and death, he had no idea what would happen after entering it.

However, Chu Feng still, before the crowd's fixed focus, dragged his seriously-injured body into the spirit formation.

“Buzz~~~”

Once Chu Feng entered the spirit formation, that spirit formation immediately started to shine with light. However, that light was crimson in color. It was the same color as blood.

In fact, strange sounds were heard from within the spirit formation.

Those sounds seemed to be the sound of chewing.

It was chewing Chu Feng.

At this moment, the people present became extremely worried for Chu Feng.

They all did not know whether or not Chu Feng would be able to walk out of that strange spirit formation alive after entering it.

# Chapter 2601 - Overcome All Obstacles

---

As if it was chewing, that spirit formation continued to wiggle for quite a while before calming down.

However, after that spirit formation calmed down, the exit-like gate did not open.

With the situation like this, even though the spirit formation had calmed down, the crowd present were unable to calm themselves.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng, it’s me, Ying Mingchao. Can you hear me?”

“Chu Feng, it’s me, Zi Xunyi. If you’re fine, can you give us a response?”

Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, the guardian clan’s clan chief and many other grand characters all started to panic.

That spirit formation was extremely strange. Even though this spirit formation that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were controlling should be able to connect with Chu Feng, it was still unable to see the situation inside that healing formation, unable to catch an image of Chu Feng.

At this moment, everyone felt that Chu Feng had suffered a mishap. As such, how could they not panic?

After all, that was the Unknown Burial Ground, that frightening place where countless geniuses had lost their lives.

After Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi called out for Chu Feng repeatedly with no response from the spirit formation that Chu Feng was in, the crowd felt that Chu Feng might’ve already died.

“Little friend Chu Feng was simply too stubborn. Why didn’t he listen to Lord City Master? Now he has suffered the consequences of his own actions.”

“It is truly a pity. An generation’s exceptional genius has fallen

just like this. This is a major loss to our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

At this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar. Some felt pity for Chu Feng, whereas others felt distress. Some even started to blame Chu Feng for his actions, saying that he had caused this because he refused to listen to Ying Mingchao.

“All of you, shut up!”

“If anyone dares criticize Chu Feng again, I will cut out their tongues!”

Zi Xunyi suddenly shouted. Her furious voice not only resonated through the heaven and earth, it also permeated into the hearts and souls of the crowd present, scaring many of them to a state of shivering.

At this moment, everyone shut their mouths. Even those that felt regret for Chu Feng’s death no longer dared utter another word.

The reason for that was because Zi Xunyi’s current expression was truly frightening. If they dared to provoke her again, they would likely not get off as easy as having only their tongues cut off. Instead, she might take their lives.

As for Zi Xunyi’s current reaction, it was actually understandable too. Although she had only known Chu Feng for a very short period of time, she thought very highly of Chu Feng. Else, she would not have come all the way here to save him.

And now, Chu Feng had most likely suffered a mishap. Yet, these people here were making cynical remarks. Naturally, she would not be able to tolerate it.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when everyone felt that Chu Feng had suffered a mishap, that spirit formation that Chu Feng had entered suddenly started to blossom with a strange light.

The next moment, that tightly closed gate actually opened.

After the gate opened, everyone revealed joyous gazes and all cast their eyes toward that opened gate.

A figure was currently walking out from that gate.

As for that person, he was none other than Chu Feng.

Merely, the current Chu Feng appeared completely different from before he entered the formation.

The current Chu Feng was actually wearing golden armor. Although that armor was a sort of body of light, it was not formed with spirit power. The crowd were unable to determine exactly what that armor was made of.

On Chu Feng's left hand was a golden compass. Light was spinning above that compass. It was very dazzling and extraordinary.

In Chu Feng's right hand was a large golden blade. Although the crowd were unable to feel the mighty aura of that blade, they were able to tell merely by looking at it that that golden blade was extremely powerful.

Most importantly, Chu Feng currently appeared to be extremely spirited. In fact, he appeared much more spirited compared to the first time the crowd saw him.

Evidently, Chu Feng had made a full recovery.

“Success! Chu Feng actually succeeded!!!”

A tsunami-like cheer sounded from the vast crowd.

Merely, this time around, they were no longer whispering and making their own assessments about Chu Feng's decision. Instead, it was all cheers.

Everyone was celebrating. They were all cheering for Chu Feng being still alive. They were all cheering for Chu Feng's success.



“That spirit formation seems to have had an isolation effect. While I was able to hear seniors’ voices, it seemed that seniors were unable to hear my voice. I have made seniors worry for me,” Chu Feng said in an apologetic manner.

It was as Chu Feng said. While he was in the healing formation, he was able to hear the voices of the crowd.

When Ying Mingchao and the others asked Chu Feng if he was fine, Chu Feng had responded to them. However, it was very evident that they were unable to hear his voice.

Even though Chu Feng was clearly fine, he had made everyone worry for him. As such, Chu Feng was feeling apologetic.

“It’s fine, all that matters is that you’re fine. Everything’s good now that you’re fine,” Zi Xunyi had turned into a completely different person compared to before. There was no longer any trace of anger on her face. Instead, it was replaced with a beautiful smile.

“Chu Feng, all those treasures of yours, did you obtain them from that formation?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“Senior Ying, these were indeed obtained from the healing formation. This golden armor, compass and war blade all possess different sorts of power. They were all able to help me pass through this Life and Death Formation,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, good, good. This is truly good.”

“It would seem that you’ve made the correct gamble. The comprehension you’ve obtained from that illusion was indeed feasible.”

“Since that’s the case, Chu Feng, there’s no time to delay. Take advantage of the fact that those treasures are still there to immediately attempt to break through the formation,” Ying Mingchao urged.

Merely by seeing them with his naked eyes, Ying Mingchao was

able to tell that Chu Feng's golden armor, blade and compass were all treasures of an immaterial nature.

As they were not formed from actual materials, they would sooner or later disappear. Ying Mingchao was afraid that those treasures would disappear too quickly and affect Chu Feng's progress in breaking through the formation.

“That is precisely what this junior planned.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he began to rely on the spirit formations that he had comprehended from that illusion to break through the various grand slaughtering formations.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt that there was simply no way out of this so-called Life and Death Formation.

He felt that he would have to break through each and every slaughtering formation present here if he wanted to leave.

Originally, with the comprehension that Chu Feng had obtained from that illusion, he only held a thirty percent certainty in being able to break through this Life and Death Formation.

However, to Chu Feng's enormous fortune, not only did the healing formation completely heal his injuries, but it also bestowed special powers upon him.

The special powers were naturally the golden armor, war blade and compass.

Those three items were all used for breaking through the Life and Death Formation. With those three items, Chu Feng's certainty in successfully passing the Life and Death Formation had increased from thirty percent to fifty percent.

Fifty percent, this was a very high probability of success.

Merely, even though it was fifty percent, it still remained that it would mean there was a half and half chance of either death or life.

As such, Chu Feng needed to think meticulously about every step

he took. Only then would he attempt to use the methods that he had comprehended to break through the slaughtering formations.

However, no matter how cautious and careful Chu Feng might be, many of the slaughtering formations in the Life and Death Formation still could not be trifled with.

As Chu Feng continued onward, he received many serious injuries. Fortunately, he had that golden armor.

Although that golden armor does not have an effect of blocking attacks, it had a healing effect.

Thus... at this moment, as long as it was not something fatal, Chu Feng would not have to fear.

All sorts of superficial injuries were completely cured by the golden armor.

As for that compass, it was actually a shield that possessed extremely powerful defensive capabilities. Although it was only capable of blocking head-on attacks, Chu Feng felt that it was already an extremely powerful defensive tool.

As for that war blade, it was an offensive weapon. It was capable of slicing through practically everything in the Life and Death Formation.

Merely, the slaughtering formations in the Life and Death Formation were not things that could be defeated merely by slicing through its contents.

If he wanted to break through them, he would have to use world spirit techniques.

Fortunately, as Chu Feng continued to defeat more and more slaughtering formations, the process became much easier, as Chu Feng began much more skilled in defeating the slaughtering formations.

This was especially true in the eyes of the crowd outside. To

them, Chu Feng was pushing his way through the various frighteningly powerful slaughtering formations one by one without the slightest amount of fear.

To them, Chu Feng was simply overcoming all of his obstacles in a majestic manner. The airs of a king were completely prominent.

# Chapter 2602 - Confidence

---

“Genius, truly a genius. Chu Feng is most definitely a most exceptional genius that rarely appears in ten thousand years.”

“He’s more than just a genius. The way I see it, Chu Feng’s future accomplishments will surpass even Ying Mingchao’s. He will become the true overlord of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“In fact, he might even overtake Grandmaster Kai Hong and Senior Zhan Haichuan.”

“Indeed. If I didn’t witness it myself, I truly would not dare believe that someone would be able to move about in such an unhindered manner in the Unknown Burial Ground. This is truly too astonishing.”

“Sure enough, we are unable to understand the world of geniuses.”

At this moment, the crowd outside were all deeply awed by Chu Feng’s actions.

The reason for that was because that Unknown Burial Ground was all of their nightmare. Yet, Chu Feng was able to move about unhindered in the Unknown Burial Ground.

Although the crowd did not believe that Chu Feng would be able to break through the Unknown Burial ground at the beginning, after they now saw that Chu Feng was defeating powerful spirit formations one after another, the crowd all felt that it would be possible for Chu Feng to break through the Unknown Burial Ground.

They all felt that Chu Feng might be able to escape from the Unknown Burial Ground using the methods he had comprehended.

“Could it be that we were mistaken?” At this moment, Ying Mingchao looked to Zi Xunyi. He had a complicated expression on

his face.

At the beginning, he had felt the entire time that the method that they used, the decision to endure the slaughtering formations with their own bodies, was the most effective method and the only method.

Yet now, he became skeptical. He started to suspect that the method he and Zi Xunyi had used to break through the Unknown Burial Ground might not be the only method there was.

In fact, he felt that the method that they used was simply incorrect. He felt that they had only managed to escape the Unknown Burial Ground by pure coincidence.

The reason for that was because they did not really break through the Life and Death Formation. Instead, they were sent out of the Life and Death Formation after experiencing a series of trials and tribulations.

However, with what Chu Feng was doing, if he was to succeed, he would be able to completely break through the Life and Death Formation.

“It is not that we are wrong. It can only be said that Chu Feng’s method to destroy the various slaughtering formations is another way out.”

“After all, back then, we did not just escape the Unknown Burial Ground. We also obtained benefits from it,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Right. After all, that All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was obtained from there.”

After being reminded by Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao grew confident again.

The reason for that was because they were not sent back out of the Unknown Burial Ground after escaping from the Life and Death Formation.

Instead, they were teleported to a cave palace.

They obtained some treasures from within that cave palace.

Not only was the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart one of the treasures, but they also obtained treasures that could directly increase their cultivation.

Those treasures could be deemed as their rewards for successfully passing through the Life and Death Formation.

“Look! Chu Feng is about to succeed!”

Right at this moment, the crowd burst into an uproar again.

After hearing the crowd’s voices of excitement, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi noticed that Chu Feng was currently breaking through a very powerful grand formation.

This grand formation was composed of six different types of gaseous flames.

Wind gaseous flames.

Lightning gaseous flames.

Water gaseous flames.

Fire gaseous flames.

Earth gaseous flames.

And the final type, a black gaseous flame.

It was unknown what sort of power this black gaseous flames contained. However, it was the most powerful of the six types of gaseous flames.

The six different gaseous flames were gathered together. They formed an extremely destructive slaughtering formation. Even for Chu Feng, it was very difficult to destroy this slaughtering formation.

However, the power of the six gaseous flames was growing weaker and fainter. Evidently... Chu Feng was about to succeed.

“That slaughtering formation is extremely difficult to breach. I wonder, will there be even more difficult formations after that one?” Zi Xunyi said.

“I don’t think so. That slaughtering formation seems to be the last formation in the Life and Death Formation,” Ying Mingchao said.

“How do you know?” Zi Xunyi asked in a very astonished manner.

“That is something that I comprehended from that illusion. Originally, I thought that the things from the illusion were all false.”

“However, looking at it now, the things that we’ve comprehended from the illusion were not all false.”

“Else, Chu Feng would not have been able to reach this far,” Ying Mingchao said.

“If that’s the case, then it would be truly great.”

Zi Xunyi felt extremely joyous. Although she had also experienced the Unknown Burial Ground, the things that one could comprehend from that illusion were all personal and different from one another.

For example, there were many things that Ying Mingchao managed to comprehend that Zi Xunyi did not.

Thus, Zi Xunyi was very trusting of Ying Mingchao’s words.

Most importantly, this Unknown Burial Ground was simply too dangerous. As long as Chu Feng was still in there, she would still be worried.

Thus, Zi Xunyi deeply hoped that Chu Feng would be able to break through the Life and Death Formation as quickly as possible.

“Those hand seals?”

Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi’s gaze changed. She revealed a



panicky expression.

“Xunyi, what’s wrong?” Ying Mingchao noticed the abnormal reaction that Zi Xunyi had.

Although Ying Mingchao’s battle power surpassed Zi Xunyi’s, and his talent for martial cultivation was also slightly better than hers, he was inferior to Zi Xunyi in terms of world spirit techniques.

Right now, what Chu Feng was using was his world spirit techniques. As such, he was unable to determine anything wrong with Chu Feng’s world spirit techniques, and could only consult Zi Xunyi.

“Chu Feng is removing the three treasures on him. Mingchao, you must stop him right now. You cannot allow him to do that,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Chu Feng, stop! That slaughtering formation is yet to be completely destroyed. You must not remove the power of your healing formation,” Ying Mingchao hurriedly spoke to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had managed to overcome all the obstacles on the way and cut through many slaughtering formations.

Although it was mainly due to Chu Feng’s meticulous techniques, the three treasures also provided enormous assistance.

And now, it was precisely the most crucial moment in breaking through this slaughtering formation for Chu Feng. If he was to lower his guard now, he could very well ruin everything.

However, even though Ying Mingchao’s words reached Chu Feng’s ears, Chu Feng did not stop.

He finished forming his hand seal. Then, Chu Feng tossed the war blade and compass toward the sky.

The next moment, Chu Feng unleashed his completed hand seal, and the golden armor that had covered his body was also removed

from him. That golden armor turned into a golden light and fused together with the war blade and compass.

After the three treasures fused together, they turned into dazzling golden radiance. Like a waterfall, the golden light began to fall from the sky, completely covering Chu Feng within it.

“What is that?” Many people were confused.

“It seems that Chu Feng has another plan in mind.”

At this moment, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi realized that Chu Feng did not do this with the intention of renouncing the three treasures. Evidently, he had something else in mind.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, the six gaseous flames that were gradually growing fainter suddenly became much stronger.

The intensity of those gaseous flames was ten times their strongest intensity from before.

“How could this be?!”

The crowd outside the Unknown Burial Ground were all deeply frightened upon seeing this scene.

Although they were only able to see with their naked eyes, and were simply unable to sense the true might and power of those gaseous flames, they were able to determine exactly how frighteningly powerful the gaseous flames that had grown much more intense now were, based on how difficult it was for Chu Feng to defeat the gaseous flames from before.

Counterattack. It was that slaughtering formation's counterattack. It was its strongest attack, its final attack.

If Chu Feng was able to withstand it, he would have defeated the slaughtering formation. If he was unable to withstand it, Chu Feng would die here.

The crowd felt that Chu Feng might not necessarily be able to

withstand it. After all, the gaseous flames were so much more ferocious this time around.

“Chu Feng... why isn't he panicking?”

At this moment when everyone was frightened by the gaseous flames, they were shocked to discover that Chu Feng, who was inside that slaughtering formation was actually completely confident. There was not the slightest trace of panic on his face.

His confident appearance seemed to indicate that everything was within his grasp.

## Chapter 2603 - Devised A Battle Plan

---

At the moment when the crowd were all puzzled by Chu Feng's confidence, Chu Feng suddenly sat down in a cross-legged manner.

With this, the crowd grew even more confused. Chu Feng's actions simply were not one of someone confident. Rather, he had simply not placed the dangers in his eyes at all.

However, this was strange. The crowd had all witnessed how Chu Feng had managed to defeat those slaughtering formations one after another.

The impression that they had of Chu Feng was that he was not a careless individual. Rather, he was an extremely cautious individual.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at the moment, the attack of the ferocious gaseous flames had already arrived by Chu Feng.

It was so ferocious and domineering that it seemed as if it would engulf, tear apart and destroy everything.

However, those six extremely powerful gaseous flames were unable to approach Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because they were unable to pass through that golden radiance.

They were all blocked by the golden light being emitted by the fused three treasures above Chu Feng.

“So that's how it is. Chu Feng realized that there would be a counterattack. That's why he fused the three treasures.”

Both Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi came to a sudden realization.

At the same time, the bystanders finally realized why Chu Feng was this confident.

It turned out that he was already prepared for this.

“This won’t do. That golden radiance doesn’t seem to be able to continue to withstand it for much longer.”

Although they understood what Chu Feng had planned, the bystanders were still extremely worried for Chu Feng.

Although the golden radiance formed by the three treasures had indeed managed to block the six gaseous flames, they were, judging from their appearance, evidently unable to continue to block the six gaseous flames for long. Chu Feng was still in great danger.

“Formation, open!!!”

Right at the moment when the crowd were all worried, Chu Feng suddenly opened his arms.

The next instant, waves of surging golden spirit power started to surge from Chu Feng’s body. They formed a spirit formation around Chu Feng.

Once this spirit formation appeared, the crowd’s eyes started to shine.

Even though this spirit formation took form immediately, anyone could tell that a lot of time had been spent in setting up this spirit formation.

This meant that Chu Feng had been setting up this spirit formation for a long time already. Merely, he was setting it up within his own body.

That was how this spirit formation managed to take form immediately after it was revealed.

Most importantly, this spirit formation possessed astonishing defensive power. It was an extremely powerful defensive formation.

Sure enough, Chu Feng already had an answer to take on that slaughtering formation. Merely, although that defensive

formation was powerful, the power of those six gaseous flames could not be compared to their power from before.

“With how powerful those gaseous flames are, will Chu Feng’s spirit formation really be able to take it on?”

Even though Chu Feng’s spirit formation had astonished everyone, they did not think that Chu Feng would definitely be able to block the attack of the gaseous flames.

While the crowd was worried, Chu Feng shouted, “Formation, merge!” Then, he folded his arms and clasped his palms.

The next moment, surging spirit power was emitted from Chu Feng’s body, and started to merge with the golden radiance sprinkling down from above him.

When Chu Feng’s spirit formation merged with the three treasures’ golden radiance, its power immediately increased enormously. It was no longer comparable to before.

“Formation, rise!!!”

Chu Feng suddenly opened his clasped palms and then spread his hands wide. He began to form two different peculiar hand seals with his two hands.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Then, that grand formation started to rotate. After Chu Feng’s grand formation started to rotate, the six gaseous flames that were frantically bombarding Chu Feng’s grand defensive formation were actually knocked away.

Chu Feng’s defensive formation had actually managed to gain the upper hand in the battle against the extremely domineering gaseous flames.

“That spirit formation?”

It was only at this moment that the crowd discovered that the power from the fusion of those three treasures was only meant to

be used as an assistant. Chu Feng's spirit formation was the actual crucial aspect to breaking through that slaughtering formation.

At the moment when the crowd were all exclaiming in admiration, Chu Feng, who was sitting on the ground, suddenly stood up.

He had a sharp expression in his eyes. He shouted, "Formation, break!!!"

"Boom~~~~"

After Chu Feng's voice sounded, his grand formation that was spinning around him started to unleash a massive offensive like a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses. It collided with the domineering gaseous flames.

The golden radiance was unstoppable. It actually managed to forcibly scatter the domineering gaseous flames.

Soon, the golden radiance covered everyone's field of view.

When the golden radiance dispersed, the crowd were astonished to discover that Chu Feng was standing there completely unscathed. As for the six different gaseous flames, they had completely disappeared.

"Defeated! Chu Feng successfully broke through that slaughtering formation!"

The crowd burst into an uproar once again. At this moment, they were truly astonished and overjoyed.

As the saying goes, the onlooker sees more of the game. Sometimes, that saying holds very true. Although they were merely spectators, they were able to sense how frightening that slaughtering formation was.

Yet, Chu Feng was able to defeat such a frightening slaughtering formation. As such, how could they not feel overjoyed?

Most importantly, Chu Feng's ability to defeat that slaughtering

formation was truly natural and unforced. Furthermore, he had already anticipated the counterattack from the slaughtering formation. He truly could be said to have devised a battle plan. It was an extraordinary feat.

It was something that none of the people present were capable of accomplishing. As such, how could they not be astonished?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at this moment, in the desert above the Unknown Burial Ground, the spirit formation that was connected to Chu Feng and capable of showing his current situation suddenly grew dim.

At the same time, the enormous curtain of light that was being projected onto the sky started to disappear. This grand spirit formation had lost its effect.

“How could this be?”

At this moment, not to mention the others, even Ying Mingchao was astonished. His previously joyful expression was immediately overshadowed with worry.

“It is not that the spirit formation has lost its effect. Rather, it seems more like some sort of power cut it off,” Zi Xunyi analyzed.

“You’re saying that someone deliberately sealed off our formation?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“That’s most likely the case,” Zi Xunyi replied.

After hearing what Zi Xunyi said, Ying Mingchao grew silent. However, the worried expression on his face grew stronger and stronger.

Having lost the effect of that spirit formation, it could be said that they had lost their means of communicating with Chu Feng.

Although Chu Feng had defeated the strongest slaughtering formation, they had no idea exactly what the situation was like inside the Unknown Burial Ground.



This was especially true because the crystal that was connected to Chu Feng had also lost its effect. With both of these methods gone, they were no longer able to determine whether or not Chu Feng was safe.

Originally, that crystal was capable of reacting to Chu Feng's state of being. If Chu Feng was injured, it would indicate it.

However, after Chu Feng entered the healing formation, that crystal lost its effect. That was the reason why the crowd felt that Chu Feng had died that time.

However, when Chu Feng reappeared from the healing formation, Chu Feng's shadow image once again appeared on that crystal.

However, Chu Feng's image had been lost from the crystal again now.

After what had happened earlier, Ying Mingchao and the others were not feeling so pessimistic about Chu Feng. After all, the various things that had happened before had verified that there was some sort of formidable power in the Unknown Burial Ground capable of severing the connection between Chu Feng and that crystal.

Thus, even though Chu Feng's image was lost from the crystal, that did not mean that Chu Feng had died.

That said, even with that being the case, Ying Mingchao and the others were still extremely worried.

To put it briefly, as long as they are not certain of Chu Feng's safety, Ying Mingchao and the others would always be worried about Chu Feng.

.....

“Strange.”

At this moment, Chu Feng, who was in the Life and Death

Formation, started to frown.

“What’s wrong?” Eggy asked.

“For some unknown reason, I’ve lost connection with Senior Ying and the others,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was able to sense that the connection had been severed. This was different from when he had entered the healing formation earlier.

At that time, he was able to hear the voices of Ying Mingchao and the others. However, he was now unable to hear any voices at all.

At this moment, the only sounds Chu Feng could hear were the sounds from the Life and Death Formation. All sounds from the outside world had been severed.

“Could it be that something has happened?” Eggy asked.

“I don’t know. However, the connection will most definitely not be lost without reason. Most likely, some sort of problem occurred with the spirit formation connecting us,” Chu Feng said.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Before Chu Feng could think much into the topic, landslide-and-tsunami-like wind noises suddenly emerged from his surroundings.

When Chu Feng looked over, he discovered that the surrounding mountain rocks were changing enormously.

The mountain rocks that were originally hard and solid had turned into white mist, and were dispersing into the sky.

# Chapter 2604 - True Immortal Mist

---

The amount of mist was simply too much. Soon, it completely covered the region.

Under this sort of situation, Chu Feng's field of view grew smaller and smaller. In the end, his sight was filled with a vast expanse of whiteness. He was unable to see anything else.

Fortunately, this sort of situation did not persist for long. After a short moment, the vast white mist started to gradually vanish.

“That is?”

As the mist waned, Chu Feng revealed a serious expression. He was able to sense that he was no longer in the Life and Death Formation. Rather, he had arrived at a completely different place.

Furthermore, Chu Feng discovered two silhouettes in the distant mist. Merely, as the mist surrounding him had yet to completely dissipate, those two figures were very fuzzy. Even Chu Feng was unable to determine their appearances.

“Seniors, might you be the creators of this Unknown Burial Ground?”

Chu Feng did not approach the two silhouettes. Instead, he first bowed respectfully to the two fuzzy silhouettes.

“Young man, come over,” An aged voice sounded.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng started to walk over. After approaching, Chu Feng revealed a slightly astonished expression.

One of the two silhouettes he saw from afar was an old man.

This old man was wearing a light yellow gown. His gown was very special. It seemed to be leather, yet seemed to not be leather. It appeared somewhat coarse. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that gown was not made out any ordinary material. Rather, it should be a treasure.

This old man was wearing a hood over his head. However, that hood was not tightly secured. As such, one could see his facial features.

He had relatively dark skin. There were not a lot of wrinkles on his face. However, his eyebrows were yellow as well, somewhat similar to the color of his gown.

His beard was not very long. However, his eyebrows were extremely long. They were actually over a meter long.

From this first glance, Chu Feng felt that this old man was the person that had called him over.

As for the reason why Chu Feng determined this to be the case, it was because the other silhouette was not that of a human.

Rather, it was a deer. This deer was not a humanoid deer-headed individual. Rather, it was an actual deer.

However, precisely one such actual deer was sitting on a stone chair and playing chess with the old man.

However, regardless of whether it was that yellow-gowned old man or that deer, they were both beings that Chu Feng could not see through.

Chu Feng knew that they both possessed strength much superior to his own. Likely... they were the creators of this Unknown Burial Ground.

“Creak~~~”

Right at this moment, a chess piece on the chessboard between the two suddenly moved.

Chu Feng was able to clearly see that neither the old man or the deer had moved at all. It was as if that chess piece had moved by itself.

That said, Chu Feng did not think too much about it. Experts of their level were beings that could kill people using only their

thoughts. To control a chess piece without moving was naturally extremely easy for them to accomplish.

That said, as that chess piece moved, Chu Feng also turned his gaze toward the chessboard. It was only at this moment that he discovered that the old man and the deer were playing a very simple game of chess.

To Chu Feng's great astonishment, the chess piece that had moved earlier was a very bad chess move by the yellow-gowned old man.

That one move had landed the yellow-gowned old man in a predicament. With one more move, that deer would be able to defeat the yellow-gowned old man and win the game of chess.

Merely, that deer did not make its move. Neither the old man nor the deer... gave any reaction.

Just like that, they stared at the chessboard. They were looking at the chessboard in the same manner as Chu Feng. It was as if they were spectators themselves.

"Junior Chu Feng pays his respects to senior," Chu Feng once again bowed to the two in a very polite manner.

"Chu Feng, right?" The yellow-gowned old man asked.

"Yes, precisely."

Chu Feng was not surprised that this old man knew of his name.

[1. No shit sherlock, you just told him your name.]

After all, Ying Mingchao and the others outside the Unknown Burial Ground had called his name countless times. As such, this person before him, this expert who possessed remarkable abilities, would naturally be able to hear the calls from Ying Mingchao and the others outside. As such, he would have already known Chu Feng's name.

"You're very interesting. You have not come for the treasures.

Instead, you've come to save your friend," That yellow-gowned old man said.

However, he had been staring at that chessboard the entire time. He had never even taken a single glance at Chu Feng while speaking.

However, his words brought great astonishment to Chu Feng. Chu Feng felt as if everything about him was under the control of that yellow-gowned old man. He felt extremely passive.

"What senior said is extremely correct. I have indeed come here to save my friend."

"Since senior knows that I have come to save my friend, may I dare ask where my friend might be right now?" As that yellow-gowned old man already knew the reason why Chu Feng came, Chu Feng decided to not beat around the bush and go straight to the main topic.

"While you've managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation, your friend has not. Furthermore, her current situation is extremely bad. I'm afraid that she will likely end up dying in the Life and Death Formation," The yellow-gowned old man said indifferently. It was as if he was speaking about something that he felt no great concern toward.

However, his indifferent words brought forth a great wave in Chu Feng's heart.

Based on what the yellow-gowned old man had said, Chu Feng could tell that there was more than a single Life and Death Formation. Not everyone would enter the same Life and Death Formation.

Likely, everyone would have their own Life and Death Formation.

Although Chu Feng had managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation, he had only managed to save himself, and was simply

unable to save Zhao Hong.

The reason for that was because the two of them were simply not in the same Life and Death Formation.

“Don’t be anxious. If you want to save her, there is a way to save her,” Right at this moment, that yellow-gowned old man spoke again.

“Senior, what must I do to save my friend?” Chu Feng asked.

“While the method is there, I’m afraid that you’ll have to make an enormous sacrifice,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“Senior, please tell me what I must do,” Chu Feng said.

“Don’t be so anxious to agree yet. That sacrifice is not something that you will necessarily be willing to do,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“Senior, please tell me what I must do,” Chu Feng repeated himself. His tone became even more urgent.

“What’s this? You’re willing to make any sacrifice?” The yellow-gowned old man asked.

“This junior is willing,” Chu Feng answered determinedly. There was not the slightest hesitation.

“Oh?” At this moment, the yellow-gowned old man finally turned around and looked to Chu Feng.

When those eyes were cast onto him, Chu Feng’s heart immediately grew tense.

He felt as if two sharp blades had pierced through his soul.

Powerful. This old man was extremely powerful. He had reached an inestimable level of power.

Chu Feng was absolutely certain that this old man was most definitely not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, he was an expert from the Upper Realms.

The reason for that was because it would be impossible for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to have an expert as powerful as this old man.

Fortunately, that sharp gaze only persisted for a short period of time. Soon, that yellow-gowned old man's sharp gaze turned gentle.

“Interesting,” That yellow-gowned old man smiled lightly. It was as if he had seen through everything.

“It has been a while since I've arrived here. You are the first to break through the Life and Death Formation, the first to successfully pass the three checkpoints.”

“Having successfully passed the three checkpoints, you will naturally be rewarded. This... is your reward.”

As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, he waved his sleeve, and a lump of golden-bright and dazzling mist floated out from his sleeve.

The mist grew more and more concentrated. In a blink of an eye, it grew from a lump of mist that was the size of an apple to a lump of mist over ten meters in diameter.

“That mist is a treasure!” Seeing the golden-bright and dazzling mist, Her Lady Queen revealed an overjoyed expression.

Not only was the mist twinkling with light, but there were also countless runes and symbols circulating throughout the mist. As such, Her Lady Queen was able to tell with a single glance that it was no ordinary mist. Instead, it was mist that should be able to increase Chu Feng's cultivation.

That's right, not only would Chu Feng gain martial power after entering that mist, but he would also be able to obtain martial comprehension. Should he enter that mist, Chu Feng's cultivation would most definitely increase.

“This mist is called the True Immortal Mist. Should you enter



the mist, it will help you break through the Martial Ancestor bottleneck and become a rank one True Immortal directly,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“However, if you want to save your friend, you must give up on this mist. You will have to give this mist to your friend instead. Are you willing to do that?”

After saying those words, the yellow-gowned old man revealed a change in expression once again. It turned into one of someone enjoying a show. It was as if he was certain that Chu Feng would not be willing to give the mist to Zhao Hong. Thus... he was waiting to laugh at Chu Feng.

“In other words, if I am to give this mist to my friend, she will be able to escape?” Chu Feng asked.

“Naturally,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“This junior is willing,” Chu feng said resolutely.

# Chapter 2605 - Obtaining Something Else

---

“Sigh,” After hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen was unable to help herself from sighing.

She naturally wanted Chu Feng to use that mist himself. After all, reaching a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm would be a complete change in the nature of his strength.

No matter how powerful Martial Ancestors might be, they would never be a match for True Immortals.

However, what if Chu Feng was a True Immortal?

With his talent and abilities, very few True Immortals in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be able to contend against him.

At that time, Chu Feng would truly be able to move about unhindered in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He might even be able to destroy that Infant Soul Sect and complete the mission given to him by his father all by himself.

However, Her Lady Queen did not try to urge Chu Feng against his decision to renounce the mist. The reason for that was because she knew Chu Feng’s personality; she knew that he would definitely choose to use the mist to save Zhao Hong.

No matter how she tried to urge him against it, it would be all be useless.

Thus, she decided to not bother urging him against it. That said, she still felt pained by Chu Feng’s decision.

“Are you certain?” The yellow-gowned old man asked.

Although Chu Feng’s answer was something that Her Lady Queen had anticipated, it was clearly... not something that the yellow-gowned old man had anticipated.

After hearing Chu Feng’s answer, that yellow-gowned old man

was very surprised.

“This junior is certain. Senior, please release my friend,” Chu Feng said.

“Young man, listen to my word of advice. While you’re a peak Martial Ancestor, this opportunity is nevertheless extremely important to you.”

“Do you know how many people have managed to reach peak Martial Ancestor in their youth, yet failed to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm in their entire lives?”

“While it might appear that there is only a fine distinction between peak Martial Ancestor and True Immortals, the distance is actually extremely far. It is not one that can be easily crossed,” The yellow-gowned old man said.

“This junior appreciates senior’s kind intentions. Merely, when compared to my friend’s life, this is simply insignificant,” Chu Feng said.

“It seems that you are determined to save her?” The yellow-gowned old man asked.

“Senior, that is precisely what this junior intends. Senior, please let my friend out,” Chu Feng spoke in a very serious manner and once again bowed to the yellow-gowned old man.

“Young lady, you have truly made a very loyal friend.”

Right at this moment, the yellow-gowned old man’s eyes moved. The next moment, a world spirit gate appeared beside him.

When that spirit formation gate appeared, a figure tumbled out of that world spirit gate and fell to the ground.

This person was none other than Zhao Hong. Merely, at this moment, Zhao Hong was seriously injured. She did not even have the strength to stand up.

Even though Zhao Hong was extremely weak, she still tried her

best to raise her head.

She looked to Chu Feng. With great difficulty, she spoke, “Chu Feng, you must not do that. Do not renounce on your reward just to save me.”

“You cannot do that. I will not accept it. I will definitely not accept that mist.”

It would appear that Zhao Hong was indeed in the Life and Death Formation earlier. However, it seemed that she had heard the conversation between Chu Feng and the yellow-gowned old man.

At this moment, Chu Feng felt something of a headache.

He had never expected that this yellow-gowned old man would deliberately let Zhao Hong hear their conversation.

That’s right, he had done it deliberately. If he didn’t do it deliberately, it would be impossible for Zhao Hong to hear their conversation.

That said, this was also precisely the reason why Chu Feng felt such a headache. He knew how stubborn Zhao Hong was. Even though he was trying to help her, Chu Feng knew that based on her personality, she would rather die than accept his kindness.

“Young lady, that is not up to you. This opportunity is something that you will have to accept regardless of whether or not you want it.”

Right at this moment, that yellow-gowned old man suddenly spoke. As he spoke, he also waved his sleeve. Then, the golden mist that was floating before Chu Feng began to float toward Zhao Hong.

Soon, that golden mist completely engulfed Zhao Hong.

“Buzz~~~”

As that golden mist with symbols and runes circulating through it engulfed Zhao Hong, the symbols and runes began to circulate

even more rapidly through the mist. As for Zhao Hong, she started to let out a miserable scream.

Hearing Zhao Hong's screams, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. He cast gaze filled with misgivings toward that yellow-gowned old man.

"Don't worry. This mist is forcibly imparting its power to that young lady. When it is done, not only will her injuries be completely healed, but she will also become a True Immortal," The yellow-gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

"Thank you, senior, for your troubles," Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng felt that this yellow-gowned old man would not deceive him. With that, it meant that Zhao Hong was safe. Not only that, but her cultivation will also increase.

Although Chu Feng was unable to obtain this opportunity to increase his own cultivation, it was not a waste, as Zhao Hong had obtained it. As such, Chu Feng would naturally be happy.

"I truly never expected there to be someone as righteous and loyal like you in a place as desolate as the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"That said, boy, the world of martial cultivators is extremely cruel. To be righteous and loyal might not necessarily be a good thing. It might end up causing you harm."

"For example, this time around, it caused you to lose the opportunity to directly reach the True Immortal realm," The yellow-gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

"Everyone possesses different ideologies. While the great majority of people will consider this True Immortal Mist to be extremely significant, and will even fall out with their own relatives and friends for it, killing one another and even slaughtering countless innocents all just so that they can obtain

it...”

“...in the eyes of this Chu Feng, it is nowhere as important as my friend’s life,” Chu Feng said.

“Haha, good. A young man should have the appearance of a young man. Very rarely are there young people like you.”

“Although I, when looking at your decision as a spectator, feel that your decision is silly, I personally greatly admire your decision.”

“That said, it remains that you are the only person that has ever managed to pass through all three of the Unknown Burial Ground’s checkpoints. As such, I will not have you come here in vain.”

“This shall be your reward,” As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, he lightly raised his hand, and a book entered Chu Feng’s hand.

Upon seeing the book in his hand, Chu Feng’s eyes immediately started shining. Then, he revealed an overjoyed expression.

The book that entered Chu Feng’s hand was the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. Merely... this was not an incomplete book. Instead, it was the completed All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

“I can tell that you not only possess outstanding talent for martial cultivation, but your talent for world spirit techniques is also exceptional.”

“This All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart is a treasure even in the Upper Realms. It is something that countless world spiritists will not be able to purchase even if they have the money to do so.”

“Take it and study it meticulously. Then, refine weapons according to the methods in it. I believe that with your talent, you will soon be able to reach the True Immortal realm,” The yellow-

gowned old man said to Chu Feng.

What the yellow-gowned old man said was the same as what Chu Feng had comprehended from the incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart that he had obtained from Ying Mingchao. This made Chu Feng even more certain that what he had comprehended was correct.

“Thank you senior.”

Chu Feng bowed respectfully to the yellow-gowned old man. He was truly overjoyed.

Although he had missed the True Immortal Mist that could allow him to break through to the True Immortal realm directly, he had obtained the complete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. With that, Chu Feng knew that he would, sooner or later, reach the True Immortal realm.

Not only that, but the complete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart would serve as an enormous assistance to Chu Feng’s breakthrough in cultivation.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that the value of this All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart was much more than that True Immortal Mist. As such, how could he not be delighted?

“You don’t have to thank me. That is what you deserve,” The yellow-gowned old man smiled lightly.

“Senior, may I ask you why you’ve set up this Unknown Burial Ground? Also, exactly who are you?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chu Feng was able to tell that this yellow-gowned old man was most definitely an extraordinary individual. Thus, he was very curious as to why he came here and set up the Unknown Burial Ground.

“If I am to tell you that I did not set this up, would you believe me?” The yellow-gowned old man said.

# Chapter 2606 - Game Cleared

---

“This junior believes senior.”

“Merely... if this place was not created by senior, then who created it?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“The mysteries of heaven must not be revealed,” The yellow-gowned old man said with a faint smile.

His smile contained a profound intention. However, Chu Feng had no idea exactly what that smile meant.

That said, since this yellow-gowned old man did not wish to tell, Chu Feng decided to not ask anymore. However, Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from thinking about it. If it was not this yellow-gowned old man that set this place up, who was it?

“Senior, you said earlier that I am the only person that has managed to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground?” Chu Feng asked.

He asked that because he was clearly not the only person to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground.

Chu Feng knew very well that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had also passed the Unknown Burial Ground.

“You are naturally the only person. As for that little couple outside, they did not manage to break through the Life and Death Formation. As such, there is no such thing as them passing the Unknown Burial Ground,” The yellow-gowned old man gave Chu Feng the answer to his question with a single sentence.

It turned out that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had not managed to defeat the Life and Death Formation. In other words, they did not manage to successfully pass through the Unknown Burial Ground.

“See? Didn’t I say that they were just lucky, that everything was



merely a coincidence?”

“Fortunately, you did not continue to listen to them. Else, you wouldn’t even know how you died.”

After hearing what that yellow-gowned old man said, Her Lady Queen grew even more furious. After all, Chu Feng had suffered greatly after listening to Ying Mingchao’s instructions.

“In that case, how did they managed to exit the Unknown Burial Ground?” Chu Feng asked. He was very curious, and wanted to know the truth.

“It could only be said that they were fortunate,” The yellow clothed old man said.

“Fortunate?” Chu Feng grew even more confused.

“Back when that little couple was in the Life and Death Formation, an old friend of mine just so happened to be present too.”

“That old friend of mine was a woman. Although she’s already extremely old, she still had the heart of a young girl, and was extremely good-natured.”

“When she saw how loving and affectionate that little couple was, how they were even willing to die for one another, she became emotionally moved. As such, she pleaded to me to let them live.”

“I was unable to endure her coaxing and pestering. As such, I reluctantly agreed. However, this place possesses its rules. Even if I wanted to let them live, I still had to do so according to the rules.”

“Thus, I could only alter the rules to break through the Life and Death Formation to make an exception that would allow them to pass it. Furthermore, I also gave them some rewards.”

“However, as they had not really managed to pass through the Life and Death Formation, their rewards were not that great,” The

yellow-gowned old man said.

At this moment, Chu Feng finally realized what had happened.

At this moment, he also realized how Ying Mingchao had obtained his incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

He must've obtained it from here. Merely, as Ying Mingchao did not manage to actually pass the Life and Death Formation, this yellow-gowned old man only gave Ying Mingchao an incomplete All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

While it might appear to be very valuable, it actually possessed no use at all.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the True Immortal Mist that had surrounded Zhao Hong started to dissipate.

At that moment, not only were Zhao Hong's injuries completely healed, but even her aura became much more powerful.

Her aura was very distinct. It was the aura of a completely different realm. Thus, even the surrounding martial power that was affected by her aura became completely different.

True Immortal, the current Zhao Hong was a rank one True Immortal.

For others, they would most definitely be endlessly happy to become a True Immortal. However, Zhao Hong did not have a joyous expression on her face. Instead, she had a very serious expression.

“Chu Feng, thanks. I, Zhao Hong, will definitely repay you for the favor today,” Zhao Hong said to Chu Feng.

There was a deep sense of gratitude in her tone. However, more than that, there was the feeling of guilt.

She felt very guilty and ashamed that Chu Feng had given up on

the opportunity to become a True Immortal just so that he could save her.

It was also because she was saved by Chu Feng that she had obtained this opportunity that should have been Chu Feng's.

“Zhao Hong, it's all good that you're fine now. Else... I really do not know how I would have faced Wang Qiang,” Chu Feng said.

“Has my husband awakened?” After hearing Chu Feng mention Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong immediately revealed a worried expression.

“He still hasn't awoken. However, he is currently doing very well. The Golden Crane True Immortal set up a spirit formation on him. Before he wakes up, no one will be able to disturb him,” Chu Feng said.

“In that case, where is he at now?” Zhao Hong asked.

“Rest assured, I have already moved him elsewhere. That said, with that spirit formation, he will be safe regardless of where he might be,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, the worry in Zhao Hong's eyes visibly lessened.

“Chu Feng, thank you, truly,” Zhao Hong expressed her thanks again. Furthermore, the expression of guilt in her eyes grew even stronger. She said, “Further, I am truly sorry.”

“Sorry?” Chu Feng revealed an astonished expression.

“I lied to you for the sake of obtaining strength. However, in the end, I still had to have you come and save me,” Zhao Hong spoke in a very ashamed manner.

Chu Feng finally understood why Zhao Hong was apologizing.

Back then, Zhao Hong had said to him that she had already been in this remnant before. Furthermore, she had said that she possessed certainty in being able to pass through the remnant.

However, the truth was that she had never been to the remnant. Furthermore, the level of danger that the remnant possessed was such that it ranked first in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

And at that moment, not only had Chu Feng also entered the remnant after her, but he had also successfully saved her.

Zhao Hong also knew very well that Chu Feng must've met with the guardian clan's clan chief and the others. Thus, she knew that he already knew that she had deceived him.

"That's not important. Everything is good as long as you're fine," Chu Feng said.

"No, if it wasn't for my selfishness, this sort of thing would not have happened."

"You have the ability to pass through this place. If it wasn't for me being trapped in here, you would have obtained the power within that mist. The person that should've become a True Immortal right now should be you," Zhao Hong said.

"If that's the case, this game is dead," Right at that moment, that yellow-gowned old man spoke.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong involuntarily looked to that yellow-gowned old man.

The reason for that was because his words contained deep implications.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Zhao Hong noticed that yellow-gowned old man was not looking at them. Instead, he was looking at that chessboard.

"Creak~~~"

Right at that moment, a chess piece on the chessboard moved. Once that chess piece moved, the entire game of chess concluded.

The reason for that was because the outcome had been

determined.

“Rumble~~~”

At practically the same moment as the chess game came to an end, Chu Feng felt violent trembling underneath his feet. Then, ear-piercing rumbles sounded from all around.

Furthermore, the trembling beneath his feet was growing stronger and stronger. The rumbles also grew more and more ear-piercing.

That place was collapsing.

“Senior, what is happening?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

He knew that the yellow-gowned old man must be able to explain the situation at hand.

“Are you still unable to tell?” The yellow-gowned old man looked to Chu Feng. With a smile on his face, he said, “This Unknown Burial Ground is actually a game. However, someone has managed to beat this game.”

“Since the game has been beaten, there is no meaning for it to exist.”

“As for the person who defeated [this game](#), it is you.”

[By ‘game,’ they are referring to chess terms. Well... the chinese word for chess (qi) is any board game with pieces. They generally do not refer to chinese chess (xiangqi), but instead weiqi (or known in english by its japanese name ‘go.’) I decided to use the word chess since very few people knows what ‘go’ is and Bee also did not specify what sort of board game.]

# Chapter 2607 - The Formation Cleared, The Treasures Gone

---

“Rumble~~~”

The rumbling was not only happening inside the Unknown Burial Ground; even the desert outside was rumbling violently.

“What is happening?!”

At that moment, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, who were standing before the grand formation, changed.

Their change in their expressions was due to their worry toward Chu Feng’s safety. After all, they were all able to tell that the Unknown Burial Ground would not rumble like that without a reason or cause. Something abnormal must’ve happened.

However, not only did the rumbling show no sign of stopping, but it instead grew more and more ear-piercing. Furthermore, they were able to clearly sense that the desert was trembling violently.

“Xunyi, move back.”

Seeing that the situation was amiss, Ying Mingchao immediately grabbed Zi Xunyi and moved away from the grand formation.

“Rumble~~~”

At practically the same moment the two of them left the grand formation, the Unknown Burial Ground that was covered by the grand formation immediately surged with smoke.

After that, the Unknown Burial Ground sunk in, forming an enormous pit.

Furthermore, the radius of that sunken pit was still expanding nonstop. It greatly surpassed the area covered by the grand formation.

With the situation being like that, the crowd all soared into the

sky and began to move away from that region.

The reason for that was because they were filled with dense fear toward the Unknown Burial Ground.

Even though it was merely the desert caving in, they still did not dare to linger in the sky above it. Only by escaping to a distance where they felt safe would they be at ease.

“Why would this be happening? Could it be that Chu Feng failed?”

Zi Xunyi was extremely nervous. In truth, it was not only her. Many others present also felt that Chu Feng might have failed.

After all, this was the first time that they had ever seen such an abnormality. Subconsciously, they started to think that it was a crisis.

“No, I must go down and save Chu Feng,” At that moment when everyone was cowering away from the Unknown Burial Ground, Ying Mingchao suddenly changed directions and arrived above the sky of the Unknown Burial Ground. He was planning to enter the Unknown Burial Ground.

“Mingchao, have you gone insane?” Right at the moment when Ying Mingchao turned around, Zi Xunyi also followed after him. She stopped him.

“Xunyi, Chu Feng saved my life. Now that he’s in trouble, I cannot ignore it,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Chu Feng had already broken through the Life and Death Formation. He is most likely not in danger. If he is fine, yet something is to happen to you because you wanted to save him, how would Chu Feng feel? He would most definitely blame himself,” Zi Xunyi urged.

“Xunyi, you can rest assured, I will definitely pay attention to my own safety. If I encounter something unexpected, I will immediately leave,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Very well. In that case, I will accompany you,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Xunyi, you...” Ying Mingchao felt lost as to what to do upon hearing what Zi Xunyi said.

After all, all the things he had said earlier were lies. For the sake of saving Chu Feng, he would be willing to bear any danger.

As such, he would naturally not be willing to have Zi Xunyi accompany him down.

While he could bear dangers, he did not want Zi Xunyi to bear dangers together with him.

At the same time inside the Unknown Burial Ground. The collapse was still ongoing. Merely, the collapse did not affect Chu Feng and the others inside.

A power had sealed off the region. Thus, that region did not collapse.

“Senior, exactly what is happening here?” Chu Feng asked the yellow-gowned old man.

“Back then, I made a bet with a person. Because of that bet, we created this game.”

“To clear this game, one cannot just pass through all three checkpoints. Instead, one must first pass through all three checkpoints, and then give to another what one has obtained afterwards.”

“Back then, I felt this to be impossible. How could anyone be willing to give what they had obtained with their life to another?”

“However, never would I have expected that she was right, never would I have expected that there really would be a foolish boy like you.”

“Thus, boy, you have made this old man lose the bet,” After the yellow-gowned old man said these words, his gaze suddenly changed.



Sensing the gaze from the yellow-gowned old man, Chu Feng's heart immediately grew tense. A chill emerged in his heart.

Killing intent. In that one moment, Chu Feng actually felt killing intent.

However, that sort of sensation only lasted for an instant. It arrived so rapidly and left so rapidly that Chu Feng felt that it might be his misperception.

This was especially true when Chu Feng saw the yellow-gowned old man beaming with a smile on his face. He became even more uncertain as to whether the killing intent he had felt in that one instant was real or fake.

“Senior, may I know your distinguished name, and who created this game along with senior?” Chu Feng asked. He knew that as the Unknown Burial Ground was collapsing, the yellow-gowned old man would soon leave too. Likely, if he did not ask those questions now, it would be very difficult for him to obtain an answer to those questions in the future.

Actually, Chu Feng merely wanted to remember their names so that he could repay them should the opportunity present itself in the future. After all, no matter what, if it wasn't for this game of theirs, he would not have obtained the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Although the journey was difficult, and he was indeed seen as a chess piece in another's game, Chu Feng was someone who was grateful toward those that helped him.

“Knowing too much will serve no benefit to you. Go on and leave this place. Also, do not mention the things regarding me to anyone.”

As the yellow-gowned old man spoke, a faint light emerged in his eyes. The next moment, Chu Feng felt that he was covered by some sort of power. He turned around and discovered that Zhao Hong

was in the same situation as him.

The light grew brighter and brighter. It grew so intense that Chu Feng was no longer capable of seeing his surroundings.

However, the intense light soon started to gradually vanish. When the light vanished, Chu Feng discovered that he was outside of the Unknown Burial Ground.

A vast crowd was present there. They numbered in the tens of thousands. Furthermore, they were all cultivation experts. They were all from different sects and powers.

That group of people were looking at the Unknown Burial Ground that had already caved in and were in utter panic.

“Chu Feng! Look, it’s Chu Feng!!!”

As there were many people, someone soon discovered Chu Feng.

Once the news of Chu Feng being seen was spread, everyone turned their gazes toward Chu Feng.

“Success! He succeeded!”

The guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua were all overjoyed.

The reason for that was because not only did they see Chu Feng, but they also saw the person beside Chu Feng, Zhao Hong. Both of them... were safe and sound.

“Chu Feng, is it really you?”

Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi arrived before Chu Feng together. Ying Mingchao was extremely emotional. He was so emotional that he did not dare to believe his eyes.

“Senior Ying, Senior Zi, I have made you two worry,” Chu Feng said.

“How did you two get out? What happened to the Unknown Burial Ground?” Ying Mingchao asked.

Once his questions were asked, the crowd present all grew quiet. They all started to silently look toward Chu Feng, awaiting his answer.

They were all very curious as to what had happened after Chu Feng broke through the Life and Death Formation. They wanted to know why the Unknown Burial Ground ended up disappearing.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a ray of light suddenly emerged from the center of the Unknown Burial Ground and shot straight toward the sky.

Soon, the light started to spread and formed six large characters.

‘The formation cleared, the treasures gone!!!’

Seeing the six enormous words in the sky, everyone’s heart tightened.

When they looked to Chu Feng again, the crowd, to a greater or lesser degree, all revealed gazes of admiration.

There was no longer a need for them to ask Chu Feng anymore. The reason for that was because those six large characters had already given them the answer.

# Chapter 2608 - Definitely Fishy

---

“Chu Feng, you are simply too amazing. You actually managed to even clear the Unknown Burial Ground.”

“Chu Feng, exactly what sort of treasures did you obtain from the Unknown Burial Ground?”

“Chu Feng, do you know who it is that created that Unknown Burial Ground? Why did he create the Unknown Burial Ground?”

After a moment of astonishment, the crowd started to batter Chu Feng with a torrential storm of questions.

Although they now knew that the Unknown Burial Ground had collapsed because Chu Feng had obtained its treasures, they still had a lot of questions that they wished to ask.

“Everyone, it’s enough. It was no easy task for Chu Feng to defeat the formation. Let’s give him some time to rest.”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao waved his sleeve. A layer of spirit power emerged, isolating Chu Feng from the others.

At this moment, only seven individuals were present in that layer of spirit power.

They were Chu Feng, Zhao Hong, the guardian clan’s clan chief, Kong Shunlian, Kong Yuehua, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao had a serious expression on his face. Everyone thought that Ying Mingchao was planning to say something. However, who would’ve thought that Ying Mingchao actually bowed to Chu Feng. Then, in a very apologetic manner, he said, “Chu Feng, my apologies. I have let you down.”

“Senior Ying, what are you doing?” Chu Feng hurriedly moved forward to support Ying Mingchao.

“The method that we used to break through the Life and Death Formation was wrong. Yet, I still made you do it. If it wasn't for

the fact that you managed to have a sudden flash of realization and decided to use the comprehension that you obtained from the illusion, we would most likely have caused your death,” Ying Mingchao said.

“Chu Feng, I am truly sorry,” Even Zi Xunyi started to apologize to Chu Feng remorsefully.

“Seniors, you must not act like this. Actually, the methods that you two used to break through the Life and Death Formation were most definitely effective. Else, how could the two of you be able to leave it?” Chu Feng said.

Even though he knew that their method was wrong, he did not wish to attack their egos. Since the Unknown Burial Ground was already gone, regardless of whether their method was effective or not, no one would be able to attempt to pass through the Unknown Burial Ground using their method anyways.

“Chu Feng, you don’t have to comfort us. We are able to imagine what happened,” However, regardless of what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao seemed to be determined that their method was incorrect.

That was understandable. After all, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were grand characters that had experienced a lot of things. As such, how could they not be able to tell?

In fact, it was not only Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. Many of the people present were all able to tell that Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi’s method was wrong.

Even if their method wasn’t wrong, it would still not be as authentic as Chu Feng’s method.

Else, why would the Unknown Burial Ground disappear after Chu Feng successfully broke through the Life and Death Formation, and remain after Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi broke through the Life and Death Formation?

The only reason no one mentioned it directly was because they were concerned for Ying Mingchao's reputation. However, they all already knew the truth in their hearts.

"That is not important. As long as Chu Feng and Zhao Hong are fine, everything's good," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"That's right, it's good that they're fine," Zi Xunyi voiced her agreement.

Although she felt that she had made a mistake, she did not wish for Ying Mingchao to endure too much of a mental burden.

"Zhao Hong's cultivation has actually already reached the True Immortal realm. It would seem that the harvest this time is truly great," The guardian clan's clan chief said.

"This cultivation was given to me by Chu Feng," Zhao Hong said.

"Oh?"

The people present were startled by those words. However, after seeing Zhao Hong's ashamed expression, they soon managed to guess what had happened.

The person to clear the Unknown Burial Ground should be Chu Feng. As for Zhao Hong, she should have only been saved by Chu Feng. As for her cultivation, since she said it like that, they were able to guess what had happened.

"Let's move on to proper business. Chu Feng, there's good news. We have managed to discover the Infant Soul Sect's hideout," Ying Mingchao said.

"Truly?" Chu Feng was immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words.

"This is all thanks to you. If it wasn't for you capturing those disciples from the Infant Soul Sect, we would not have been able to find out where they were located this quickly," Ying Mingchao said.

“In that case, when do we act?” Chu Feng asked. He was more impatient than anyone to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect had done all sorts of evil. They were a sect that trained using infants. If they were eliminated a day sooner, it would mean that they would be able to save the people of the world, as well as those innocent children, a day sooner.

“This matter should not be delayed. We plan to set off immediately,” Ying Mingchao said.

Then, Ying Mingchao removed the spirit formation. He informed the crowd of his desire to attack the Infant Soul Sect.

Actually, Ying Mingchao had already mentioned this matter to the various powers beforehand. He had also obtained the endorsement of those powers.

And now, as they knew the location of the Infant Soul Sect, they would naturally agree with Ying Mingchao’s decision without any objections. The crowd planned to immediately set off toward the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters.

“Are we able to lay down our grudges?” After gaining the approval of the crowd, Ying Mingchao especially turned toward Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua.

“Let’s eliminate our great enemy first,” Kong Shunlian said.

“Very well.”

Seeing that they’d agreed, Ying Mingchao nodded with a smile on his face. At this moment... they really did need Kong Shunlian and Kong Yuehua’s strength.

However, most importantly of all, Ying Mingchao truly wanted to reconcile with them.

“Xunyi, you...” Ying Mingchao looked to Zi Xunyi.

Ying Mingchao was extremely worried for Zi Xunyi. He was afraid that Zi Xunyi would leave him, that she would try to kill

herself again.

With his understanding of Zi Xunyi, Ying Mingchao knew that it would be very difficult to change what she had decided. Ying Mingchao truly did not wish for Zi Xunyi to die just like that.

“The Infant Soul Sect is the greatest scourge in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. There is nothing more important than eliminating them,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Xunyi, you’re willing to help me?”

Ying Mingchao was immediately overjoyed upon hearing what Zi Xunyi said. He was not overjoyed because Zi Xunyi was willing to help him. Rather, it was because this would, at the very minimum, meant that Zi Xunyi would continue to stay with him. With that, he would be able to find an opportunity to persuade Zi Xunyi against killing herself.

“No, it’s not to help you. Rather, it’s for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Zi Xunyi said.

“Very well. Xunyi, what you’ve said is very true. This battle is unrelated to us individually. Instead, it concerns the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Everyone, let us battle for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!” Ying Mingchao shouted.

“Battle for all the living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm!!!”

The crowd shouted in unison. Their voices were like a tsunami, a gathering of ten thousand thunderbolts, that echoed through the entire desert.

“Ji, ji, ji~~~”

Right when Ying Mingchao was planning to lead everyone to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters, several birds emitting blue light began to fly toward this place from all directions.



Those birds were very special. Not only were they extremely fast, but they were also flickering, as if they were teleporting.

In the end, these birds arrived in the sea of people.

These birds were called Bluelight Flickering Birds. They were a sort of method to transmit information. They were similar to the Golden Flash Bird. Merely, their speed was faster than the Golden Flash Bird.

“Lord City Master,” Upon receiving the news from the Bluelight Flickering Birds, an elder of Hero City revealed a serious expression.

“Could it be that something has happened in the city?” Ying Mingchao knew that those Bluelight Flickering Birds were sent from Hero City.

“News has come from the city that the Infant Soul Sect has sent out invitations. They are inviting everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to their headquarters to participate in a grand ceremony,” That elder said.

“Grand ceremony? What grand ceremony?” Many people present revealed surprised expressions after hearing that.

The Infant Soul Sect had always been extremely well-hidden and low-key. In fact, apart from the tier one powers, very few people knew of their existence.

Yet, now this Infant Soul Sect actually made such an open invitation. The crowd felt extremely astonished by their behavior.

“They say that it’s a cultivation grand ceremony that can help everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm increase their cultivation,” That elder said.

“In that case, does the invitation have the location of the Infant Soul Sect’s headquarters?” Ying Mingchao asked.

“It does. It is the same as the location that we’ve obtained,” That

elder answered.

“Could it be that everyone else has also received this information?” Ying Mingchao turned to the crowd.

He knew that, apart from Hero City, the other powers had also received information sent to them through the Bluelight Flickering Birds.

“City Master Ying, that is precisely the case,” The people from the various powers that had received information from their various Bluelight Flickering Birds all spoke in unison.

“Infant Soul Sect, exactly what are they planning?” At this moment, Ying Mingchao started to ponder.

He had originally thought that he would be able to catch the Infant Soul Sect unprepared after obtaining the location of their headquarters from Old Demon Rakshasa.

However, with the situation now, they were evidently unable to take the Infant Soul Sect by surprise. Since the Infant Soul Sect dared to invite everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to their headquarters, they must have made preparations.

“Lord City Master, what should we do now?” The crowd asked.

“This matter is definitely fishy. We cannot be careless.”

“Let’s return to Hero City first. We shall make a decision as to what to do after I discuss this matter with the various headmasters.”

After making that decision, Ying Mingchao lead the crowd back toward Hero City.

At the same time, the people from the Immortal Sword School, Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and the other powers also transmitted this news to their respective headmasters. They planned to gather at Hero City.

After this vast group of people left, the six characters that filled

the sky also started to gradually vanish. Soon, this desert was once again covered with wind and sand.

The desert had returned to how it was before.

However, suddenly, two figures appeared in the sky above the vast desert.

One of them was that yellow-gowned old man. As for the other, it was that deer.

Like an ordinary deer, that deer stood beside the yellow-gowned old man. However, its eyes were filled with spirit. From that, one could tell that it was no ordinary deer.

At this moment, both the yellow-gowned old man and the deer were staring at the direction that Chu Feng and the others had left in. No one knew what they were thinking.

# Chapter 2609 - Old Ancestor Of The Buddha's Heavenly Temple

---

Not long after Ying Mingchao and the others returned to Hero City, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot both arrived at Hero City.

After various investigations, they were all certain that the Infant Soul Sect was not bluffing with their invitations.

Furthermore, their invitations were not only sent to the major powers; practically all of the powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had received the invitation.

Their action was undoubtedly announcing their existence to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Furthermore, they were using the name of 'cultivation grand ceremony' to invite everyone.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao and the others were all confused. They did not know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect was planning.

However, one thing was certain. Based on their understanding of the Infant Soul Sect, the Infant Soul Sect's invitation was most definitely not as simple as it appeared.

In the end, the allied army decided to stake everything in one attack. They gave up defending their cities and gathered all of their strongest battle forces to directly attack the Infant Soul Sect. Victory or defeat would be determined by this one battle.

Currently, the strongest allied army was gathered in Hero City. This army, composed of people from Hero City, Buddha's Heavenly Temple, the Immortal Sword School and many tier two powers, began to proceed toward the Infant Soul Sect's headquarters. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's various other powers also began to proceed toward the Infant Soul

Sect.

Although their speed was much inferior to that of the allied army, they set off toward the Infant Soul Sect much sooner than the allied army.

These were all people that did not know the truth. They had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect before.

The sudden invitation made some of them felt that it was fortune falling from the sky. As for others, they felt that this was merely a scam.

That said, regardless of how they felt, regardless of how skeptical they might be, they all decided to check things out.

After all, this was something that concerned their cultivation. None of them wished to miss this opportunity.

A magnificent army with thousands of men and horses was proceeding with countless war banners. It was a truly imposing sight.

Among them were enormous war chariots. Those war chariots were actually crushing the air as they moved. They were truly impressive.

Those that were capable of being inside those war chariots were most definitely people that possessed grand status.

Among them was Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was receiving the highest treatment from the allied army. The war chariot that he was in was reserved for the strongest individuals in the allied army.

Apart from Chu Feng, everyone else here were True Immortals. Among them was Zhao Hong.

However, as Zhao Hong was not fond of of this sort of setting, she had left the war chariot. Seeing that Zhao Hong had not returned for a long time, Chu Feng planned to go out to find her. However,

right when he was planning to find Zhao Hong, he came across a familiar figure.

It was Grandmaster Pocket. Grandmaster Pocket was standing at the fringe of the allied army and looking forward.

Chu Feng walked toward Grandmaster Pocket and asked, “Grandmaster, why aren’t you resting in a war chariot?”

Although Grandmaster Pocket was not a True Immortal, he was a peak Martial Ancestor. Someone like him possessed the status to rest in a war chariot.

“Amitabha, it is rare that the various powers have decided to join hands to fight. Furthermore, they are doing so with the righteous intention to eliminate evil. As such, this old man wishes to feel the current situation,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Chu Feng was able to understand what he meant by ‘rare.’

After all, the various powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm all possessed their own selfish motives. To join hands to clear a remnant was something that happened very frequently. However, that was because they all possessed their own selfish motives.

Thus, a battle like this, a battle with an identical objective, was truly rare.

For the sake of traveling as fast as possible, Ying Mingchao was using his power to speed up the overall speed of the group.

Thus, regardless of whether it might be the people in the war chariots or the people outside, their traveling speeds were all identical. It was not exhausting for the crowd to travel.

“Grandmaster, this junior has one thing that I wish to consult Grandmaster on,” Chu Feng said.

“What is it?” Grandmaster Pocket asked.

“It’s regarding the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Founder,” Chu

Feng said.

Chu Feng had indirectly questioned others about the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple before.

The founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple was a person with the buddhist name Foguang. However, although this Abbot Foguang was the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple, his cultivation didn't seem very high. Furthermore, he died not long after founding the Temple.

[1.Foguang means Buddha's teachings. It is also the 'Buddha' in Buddha's Heavenly Temple. In other words, Buddha's Heavenly Temple could also be said to be Foguang's Heavenly Temple.]

The Buddha's Heavenly Temple had only emerged in power many years after Foguang died. That said, it was a mystery as to how the Buddha's Heavenly Temple managed to emerge in power.

The reason why Chu Feng was inquiring about this was because he wanted to inquire about that mysterious old cat.

After all, that old cat had declared itself to be the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

That said, Chu Feng felt that it would be impossible for that old cat to be the founder of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple, Monk Foguang. He felt that the old cat was most likely related to how the Buddha's Heavenly Temple emerged in power.

“So that's what you wanted to know.”

“Naturally, the founder of our Buddha's Heavenly Temple is Abbot Foguang. That is something that everyone knows,” After saying those words, Grandmaster Pocket smiled profoundly. Then, he said to Chu Feng, “I believe that is what Almsgiver Chu Feng wanted to know, no?”

Chu Feng noticed that a soundproofing spirit formation had quietly covered the two of them as Grandmaster Pocket said those words.

In other words, the conversation between the two of them could not be heard by others from this point on.

Seeing that Grandmaster Pocket had seen through him, Chu Feng did not try to beat around the bush anymore either. Instead, he directly asked, “Grandmaster, what I wanted to know is the person that helped the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple emerge in power.”

“I knew that’s what you wanted to ask about. That’s understandable too. After all, countless people want to know about that matter. However, that is a secret of our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart sunk. Since it was their secret, it was clear that he would not be able to obtain any information today.

However, right at this moment, Grandmaster Pocket smiled and said, “However, Lord Abbot mentioned to us before that if you wanted to know about this matter, we could tell you about it. Merely, there is a condition. That is, you must keep this matter confidential.”

“This junior will definitely keep this matter confidential,” Chu Feng said.

“Speaking of it, you might find it unbelievable. Others must definitely think that it was an Upper Realm’s expert that helped our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple emerge in power. They must all think that it was an immortal and virtuous monk that helped us. Else, there would be no reason for them to confer a favor upon our temple.”

“However, the truth is, it was not a virtuous saint that helped our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple emerge in power. In fact, it could even be said that the individual that helped us was not a human either. Instead, it was a cat,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“It’s a match! Sure enough, it is that old cat. Chu Feng, quickly



ask him about that old cat,” Her Lady Queen spoke excitedly.

That old cat was too mysterious. Not only had it snatched away Zhan Haichuan’s inheritance, but it had also snatched away the God Bestowment Bamboo Slip. That old cat was extremely powerful and cunning.

Most importantly, that old cat had also abducted Xue Ji. No one knew what it planned to do.

Thus, both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen wanted to know the origin of that old cat.

“Cat? Why would it be a cat? Could it be a monstrous beast?”

Even though Chu Feng had already met that old cat before, it was clear that the people from the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple had no idea about the interactions between Chu Feng and that old cat. As such, Chu Feng would naturally have to pretend that he had no idea about the old cat.

“That individual might be a monstrous beast, yet might also not be a monstrous beast. Regardless, it is extremely powerful. It is all thanks to it that our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple managed to obtain our current standing. Thus, our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple has always deemed it as our Old Ancestor,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“Could it be that not even you all know of the origin of your Old Ancestor?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is merely a coincidence that we obtained the assistance of our Old Ancestor. As for our Old Ancestor’s origin, we know nothing of it. All we know is that our Old Ancestor came to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to seal an item,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

“Seal an item? What sort of item?” Chu Feng asked.

“We have no clue as to what that item is or where that item is sealed.”

“All we know is that our Old Ancestor mentioned that that item was not something from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was from the Outer World, and possessed an extremely bloodthirsty and cruel nature.”

“Our Old Ancestor told us that if that item were to break free from its seal, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would fall into a calamity, and everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be killed.”

“It would be an inescapable fate for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” Grandmaster Pocket said.

# Chapter 2610 - Imminent Battle

---

“If that item is that dangerous, why did that Old Ancestor only seal it, and not destroy it?”

“For that Old Ancestor to seal it in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, wouldn’t it be placing a hidden danger in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Old Ancestor said that item possessed a former relationship with it. Thus, Old Ancestor was unwilling to kill it, and decided to seal it instead.”

“As for the issue of that item becoming a calamity, our then Abbot also asked Old Ancestor about it. As for the response from Old Ancestor...” After saying those words, Grandmaster Pocket sighed helplessly. It seemed that he had a hidden trouble that was hard to mention.

“What was the response?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Old Ancestor said ‘How is the death of others related to me?’” Grandmaster Pocket said. When he said those words, he had an ashamed expression.

Although that old cat was not a Buddhist monk, he was still related to the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple, and was respected as their Old Ancestor. However, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple needed to be righteous and benevolent. Thus, it would involuntarily make them feel embarrassed to mention their Old Ancestor.

After hearing what Grandmaster Pocket said, Chu Feng felt that actually made sense. Chu Feng did not feel surprise when he heard that that old cat had said something like that. On the contrary, it seemed like something it would say.

Afterwards, Chu Feng inquired more about that old cat. However, it seemed that Grandmaster Pocket only possessed

limited knowledge.

To put it briefly, that old cat had merely conveniently decided to help the Buddha's Heavenly Temple one time. With its cunning nature, it would naturally not say much about itself to the people from the Buddha's Heavenly Temple. Thus, Chu Feng believed that Grandmaster Pocket was not lying to him, and that the Buddha's Heavenly Temple knew very little about the old cat.

Although Chu Feng was unable to obtain any useful information regarding the old cat, Chu Feng did not return to rest in the war chariot.

Instead, he chose a secluded place to set up a concealment formation to conceal himself.

Chu Feng did that with the intention of creating a quiet place so that he could carefully read the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

After all, if Chu Feng were to completely grasp this book, he would be able to make progress in his cultivation.

Furthermore, this sort of progress would not be a one or two time thing. Instead, it could be said that it would be a lifelong benefit.

That said, even though Chu Feng had obtained the complete version of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, it would still take him some time in order to completely comprehend it.

Before Chu Feng could completely comprehend the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, the allied army arrived at Chen Heavenly City.

This Chen Heavenly City was a city ruled by a Chen Heavenly Clan.

The Chen Heavenly Clan also possessed a Heavenly Bloodline. Although they were far inferior to the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly Clan, they were a tier two power in the Hundred

Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for their strength, they were on par with the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall. However, they were more famous and prestigious than the Sunset Cloud Valley and the Three Stars Hall.

This Chen Heavenly Clan could be said to be a very reputed power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, from the Infant Soul Sect's invitations, as well as the information obtained from Old Demon Rakshasa, this Chen Heavenly Clan was actually the Infant Soul Sect's headquarters.

At this moment, not only was the Chen Heavenly City's entrance gates tightly closed, but its defensive formation was also active. Apart from the people inside, no one was capable of entering it.

Several hundreds of thousands of people were already gathered outside Chen Heavenly City.

They were all people that came here upon receiving the invitation. However, the Chen Heavenly City's gates had been closed the entire time. As such, they were simply unable to enter.

If it wasn't for the fact that the words 'Infant Soul Sect' were written on the large banners outside the Chen Heavenly Clan, the crowd would truly think that they'd been duped.

"Look! Who are those people?! They're actually this imposing and grand!"

"Heavens! It's Hero City, the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple!"

"Why would they send forth this many people? Could it be... that they have also received the Infant Soul Sect's invitation?"

"This is truly unfathomable! Exactly what is the origin of that Infant Soul Sect? It actually managed to invite even those huge monsters."

Upon seeing the grand and majestic allied army, the people

gathered here all burst into an uproar.

After all, to them, Hero City, the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple were the current rulers of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

It would not be an exaggeration at all to say that these three powers were akin to gods in the eyes of many people. They held extremely high status in the hearts of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Never would I have expected that the Chen Heavenly Clan was actually an accomplice to the Infant Soul Sect. They have truly hidden themselves well.”

Upon seeing the Infant Soul Sect's banners, many people revealed expressions of hatred and disgust.

If they hadn't witnessed it themselves, they would truly feel this to be unimaginable.

The reason for that was because the Chen Heavenly Clan's Chen Heavenly City was not a desolate place.

Inside this Chen Heavenly City was an auction house. That auction house was famous throughout the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Thus, not to mention the others from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, even many people from the allied army have been to that auction house.

However, never had they ever discovered any connection between the Chen Heavenly Clan and the Infant Soul Sect. From this, it could be seen that the Chen Heavenly Clan had kept things hidden extremely well.

“Infant Soul Sect, I shall see exactly what you all plan to do this time around.

At the moment when the allied army was gasping at the fact that

there was actually a massive connection between the Chen Heavenly Clan and the Infant Soul Sect, Ying Mingchao walked out from his war chariot and arrived at the forefront of the allied army.

“Look! It’s Ying Mingchao, it’s Lord Ying Mingchao!”

After Ying Mingchao appeared, the crowd gathered outside the Chen Heavenly Clan burst into an uproar once again.

They never expected that even a grand character like Ying Mingchao would show up here.

After all, Ying Mingchao was the publicly accepted number one expert of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“Everyone, I will make a long story short. This Infant Soul Sect is not any righteous or good-natured power.”

“The Infant Soul Sect is a demonic sect that has existed in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for many years. They train in demonic technique using the bodies of infants as their cultivation resource. Over the many years, they have slaughtered countless innocent lives. I believe everyone has heard about this matter before. Some among you all might have even suffered at their hands,” Ying Mingchao spoke with a thunder-like voice.

“What?! This Infant Soul Sect is actually the rumored evil power that uses the bodies of infants as their cultivation resource?”

After hearing what Ying Mingchao said, many people came to a sudden realization. After that, they revealed frightened expressions on their faces.

Although they had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect by name, they had heard of that evil power.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect had conducted all sorts of evil. They had massacred countless infants and cities. Furthermore, they would oftentimes not bother to even get rid of the corpses. This made it so that many people had witnessed the devastating

scenes they left in their wake.

Thus, while many people had never heard of the Infant Soul Sect, many among them had heard of the rumored evil power that specialized in killing infants.

“So this Infant Soul Sect is actually that power. Yet they actually dared to send us invitations? Could it be... that they’re planning to kill us?”

“Lord Ying Mingchao, this Infant Soul Sect has done countless evils. Their crimes cannot be forgiven. You must definitely uphold justice for us.”

At this moment, the crowd present all began to shout for a crusade against the Infant Soul Sect.

“Everyone, rest assured. Today, our Hero City has come here together with the Immortal Sword School, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and others precisely to eliminate the malignant tumor that is the Infant Soul Sect.”

“That said, perhaps everyone does not know about it. However, the power of the Infant Soul Sect must not be looked down upon. Once the battle begins, casualties will be inevitable. Thus, everyone, it would be best to withdraw from here so as to not be implicated by the battle,” Ying Mingchao said.

Once Ying Mingchao said those words, the people that were gathered outside the Chen Heavenly City immediately started to soar into the sky. Like a group of frightened birds, they began to fly away in all directions.

Ying Mingchao’s words did not sound like a joke. Furthermore, the allied army looked extremely ferocious.

As such, they felt that what Ying Mingchao said was the truth. As these people were all people that cherished their lives, they would naturally escape immediately after finding out about the dangers. None of them wanted to be implicated by the battle and lose their



lives.

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the crowd all scattered away from Chen Heavenly City, the spirit formation around Chen Heavenly City actually opened.

At this moment, everyone from the allied army and the people that were fleeing all turned their gazes toward Chen Heavenly City.

They all wanted to see exactly what sort of capability this notorious Infant Soul Sect possessed for them to dare to openly invite all these people here.

# Chapter 2611 - The Appearance Of The Infant Soul Sect

---

After that defensive formation was opened, the originally tranquil city was no longer still. Many densely packed figures began to fly out from the city. They covered the sky and appeared before the crowd.

These people were all wearing black gowns. There were so many of them that they numbered in the several hundred thousands.

Seeing this, the allied army became serious. The reason for that was because they were wearing the same outfit as that of the Infant Soul Sect.

Furthermore, with how many people there were, the allied army did not dare to underestimate them.

However, they soon discovered that while those people were all wearing the Infant Soul Sect's outfit, their overall level of cultivation was not very high. When compared with the allied army composed of elites, it was a heaven and earth difference. They were simply not at the same level at all.

If the allied army were eagles flying in the sky, then these people that had appeared above Chen Heavenly City were merely insignificant houseflies.

Upon closer inspection, the crowd discovered that those people were all from the Chen Heavenly Clan.

The Chen Heavenly Clan's army was standing in an orderly fashion in the sky. They were standing in confrontation against the allied army.

Even though the difference in strength between them was enormous, they were still extremely confident and without the slightest amount of fear when facing the allied army.

Soon, a figure walked out from among the Chen Heavenly Clan's army. That person arrived at the front of the army. This person was a peak Martial Ancestor-level old man. As for this person... he was the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"I am the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. On behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, I welcome all the honored guests that have arrived here today," The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke with a beaming smile.

"So, you've really joined the Infant Soul Sect?" Ying Mingchao asked.

"I never mentioned that any of this was a lie," The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Then let me ask you this, have the people of your Chen Heavenly Clan, these people wearing the outfit of the Infant Soul Sect, used innocent infants to cultivate a demonic technique?" Ying Mingchao asked.

"We have indeed trained in it. However, I must make one correction. That is not a demonic technique."

The Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke without hesitation. He firmly admitted to having used infants as cultivation resources. Furthermore, he spoke in such a frank and open manner. It was as if what they'd done was not shameful at all.

"You all are truly animals lower than pigs and dogs!!!!"

"How could people as cruel and merciless as you all exist?!"

After hearing the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief admitting to it, the allied army, as well as the people that had retreated, all grew extremely furious, and began to gnash their teeth.

"Very well. Since you all have admitted to it, do not blame me, Ying Mingchao, for being ruthless."

As Ying Mingchao spoke, his gown started to move, and his hair

started to flutter. Boundless oppressive might started to emit from his body. Like an invisible tide, his oppressive might covered Chen Heavenly City.

At the moment when Ying Mingchao unleashed his oppressive might, the expressions of everyone outside Chen Heavenly City changed. They were all able to sense how overwhelming the power of Ying Mingchao's oppressive might was.

Before Ying Mingchao's overwhelmingly powerful oppressive might, not to mention these people from the Chen Heavenly Clan, but even all of Chen Heavenly City could be instantly destroyed.

Thus, when they felt Ying Mingchao's oppressive might, a thought came to everyone's minds.

'Ying Mingchao's reputation of the number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is fully justified.'

When even the Kong Heavenly Clan was extinguished by Ying Mingchao alone, they believed that the Infant Soul Sect would not be able to escape calamity today.

However, right at the moment when everyone felt that the Chen Heavenly Clan would be instantly exterminated, a boundless wave of oppressive might suddenly swept forth from within the Chen Heavenly City and collided with Ying Mingchao's oppressive might outside Chen Heavenly City.

“Boom~~~”

The collision between the two oppressive mights created an ear-piercing explosion. The collision also created energy ripples that started to move toward the allied army.

“Woosh~~~”

Fortunately, Ying Mingchao was standing at the front of the allied army. With a wave of his sleeve, he managed to disperse the ferocious energy ripples.

When the crowd looked to Chen Heavenly City again, they were shocked to discover that Chen Heavenly City was completely unscathed. As for the people from the Chen Heavenly Clan, they were also completely uninjured.

That oppressive might from Chen Heavenly City was actually able to match Ying Mingchao's oppressive might.

This meant that there was a person in there that was at least a rank two True Immortal.

“This...”

The allied army were able to take what had occurred without much astonishment. However, the others that did not know the truth were extremely shocked.

They felt that regardless of how powerful the Infant Soul Sect might be, they would definitely not be able to compare to the allied army. They felt that Ying Mingchao would be able to exterminate all of them by himself.

However, judging the situation now, it was not as simple as they had anticipated. The Infant Soul Sect actually possessed a rank two True Immortal. This meant that they possessed strength on par with the tier one powers.

“Ying Mingchao, if you all wish to be our Infant Soul Sect's honored guests, I will welcome you all.”

“However, if you want to harm the people of our Infant Soul Sect, then I, Hun Poyuan, will definitely not allow it.”

At this moment when the crowd were astonished, a figure flew out from Chen Heavenly City and arrived before the crowd's field of view.

This person was also wearing a black gown. However, that identical black gown gave off an extraordinary presence when he wore it. It was incomparably domineering.

This person was a middle-aged man. He arrived before the crowd like a ruler descending upon the world.

Upon seeing this person, Chu Feng's expression changed. While this person had the appearance of a middle-aged man, Chu Feng was able to tell that he was actually an old monster that had lived for close to ten thousand years.

With the strength this man possessed, he was most likely the actual master of the Infant Soul Sect.

After the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster appeared, several tens of thousands more people flew out from Chen Heavenly City. They arrived outside Chen Heavenly City following the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster and stood in confrontation against the allied army.

At this moment, not to mention those that didn't know about the Infant Soul Sect, even the allied army felt an oppressive sensation.

Not only was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster emitting the aura of a rank two True Immortal, but there were also four rank one True Immortals beside him. Two among them were people that Chu Feng knew. He had met them before at the Extremely Remote Unmarked Burial Mounds.

Like four guardians, the four rank one True Immortals stood on either side of the middle-aged man.

Apart from these five True Immortals, the strength of the army of tens of thousands that appeared together with them could not be underestimated either. They were actually all Martial Ancestors. Furthermore, there were over a thousand peak Martial Ancestor-level experts among them.

This was the main force of the Infant Soul Sect, a vicious, merciless yet powerful bunch.

However, one thing worthy of mentioning was that the appearance of the Infant Soul Sect army was different from when

Chu Feng encountered them before.

Before, Chu Feng was able to sense a very intense heinous air from them. That heinous air originated from their use of infants to cultivate.

However today, none of them were actually emitting any heinous airs. They must've used some sort of special method to conceal it.

“There are quite a few old familiar faces here today. However, I know that many people here do not know of this old man.”

“Allow me to introduce myself. I am Hun Poyuan. I am the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. On behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, I welcome everyone that has arrived here today.”

Sure enough, that man by the name of Hun Poyuan was the sectmaster of the Infant Soul Sect.

“I truly never imagined for you all to all be here. This is the best, I am now able to completely exterminate all of you.”

Ying Mingchao did not feel the slightest favorable impression toward this Hun Poyuan's self-introduction. Overwhelming killing intent emerged from Ying Mingchao, and an uncontrollable wild joy emerged in his eyes.

Based on his understanding of the Infant Soul Sect, practically everyone from the Infant Soul Sect had arrived today.

To Ying Mingchao, who planned to eradicate the Infant Soul Sect, this was extremely good news.

## Chapter 2612 - Absurd Excuse

---

“Ying Mingchao, I know that you have a very deep prejudice toward our Infant Soul Sect. However, there really is no need for us to face one another with swords and blades drawn,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Ying Mingchao.

Compared to Ying Mingchao’s overflowing killing intent, this Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually had a calm and relaxed expression on his face.

It was as if he was not facing a life and death battle, but rather a friend.

“Prejudice? Is what you all have done just prejudice?”

“Are you to tell me that the deaths of all those innocent infants is merely prejudice?”

“Those were children that had not even managed to witness this world! How could you all be so ruthless as to kill them?!” Ying Mingchao’s furious voice echoed in this region.

It was so resounding and powerful!!!

“Infant Soul Sect, death will not wipe away your crimes. You all shall be dismembered into ten thousand pieces and consigned to eternal damnation.”

Following that, the people present all began to speak out against the Infant Soul Sect. After all, what the Infant Soul Sect had done was indeed something that many people found unacceptable.

“I admit that what our Infant Soul Sect has done is wrong. However, if I am to tell you all that our Infant Soul Sect’s actions were done to benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, would you all be able to understand me?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“What? Benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary



Realm. What a joke!”

Before Ying Mingchao could even say anything, the surrounding crowd immediately let out disdainful voices.

This was the most absurd thing that they had ever heard.

This was simply an insult to their intelligence. That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was simply treating them as fools.

“It’s as I said, you all won’t necessarily believe me. However, that is the truth,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“What utter absurdity!” Ying Mingchao was extremely furious, and did not feel like bothering with superfluous words. Thus, he pulled out his weapon and planned to attack.

“Wait a moment,” Right at this moment, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster stopped Ying Mingchao. He said, “They couldn’t possibly have lured us here without a reason. We should hear what they have to say and see what tricks they still have, and what their goal is.”

“Do as you wish,” Ying Mingchao spoke coldly.

He was annoyed. Ying Mingchao felt that there was simply no need to bother with superfluous words against an existence like the Infant Soul Sect. He felt that it would be better to just exterminate them directly.

That said, he was still was currently a member of the allied army. Furthermore, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster was also a rank two True Immortal, and an ally. Thus... he would have to take his proposals into consideration.

“Infant Soul Sect, do not blame me for not giving you all a chance. Since you all want to speak, I will allow you all to speak all to properly explain yourselves.”

“I shall see exactly what sort of trick you all can play,” The Immortal Sword Sect’s Headmaster said to the Infant Soul Sect’s

Sectmaster.

“The vast Outer World is filled with countless worlds. While we are unable to compare to the Upper Realms, when compared to the various Ordinary Realms, our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is still weak.”

“That deeply vexed the founder of our Infant Soul Sect. He was distressed by thoughts of how to increase the overall strength of everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for his entire life.”

“However, the way of martial cultivation places great importance upon one’s own comprehension. To increase the overall strength of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is an extremely difficult task. In fact, it could even be said to be simply impossible.”

“However, the heavens smile upon determined individuals. Our Infant Soul Sect’s founder managed to run into a fortuitous encounter. From that fortuitous encounter, he discovered a method to forcibly imbue others with martial comprehension, a method to help others increase their cultivation.”

“Merely, it is an extremely long process to achieve that method. Furthermore, an enormous price must be paid.”

“That is, one will have to use the lives of newborn infants to temper that method. Through various tempering processes and experiments, one will finally be able to achieve it.”

“Our Infant Soul Sect’s founder knew very well that our Infant Soul Sect would most definitely be detested by everyone in the world, and viewed as an enemy the moment we implemented that method.”

“After all, before we achieved our results, no one would know that we were doing all this to benefit the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, to benefit our descendants.”

“However, for the sake of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s future generations, for the sake of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s future, some sacrifices are necessary. For that, our Infant Soul Sect was formed.”

“All these years, our Infant Soul Sect has repeatedly been the target of scorn and attacks by so-called righteous sects and powers. Countless brothers of our Infant Soul Sect have been killed or injured. Yet, we continued on. While being detested by you all, we continued on doing what is beneficial to you all and your descendants,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Shut your mouth!!!” Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi suddenly shouted.

At this moment, Zi Xunyi was so furious that she started shivering. She pointed to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster and spoke with overwhelming anger, “You all have killed so many innocent children, yet you dare to find such pompous justification for your actions. You all are simply degenerates detested by both humans and gods. You all are simply lower than dogs and pigs.”

After saying those words, Zi Xunyi looked to Ying Mingchao. She said, “Mingchao, do not bother with superfluous words with them anymore. Do not allow them to continue on with their nonsense. Eliminate them all. We cannot allow this bunch of animals to continue living. We cannot allow them to harm innocent lives again.”

“That’s right, kill them!!!”

Once Zi Xunyi said those words, both the allied army as well as the bystanders echoed in agreement.

They all deeply detested the Infant Soul Sect to begin with. And now, the Infant Soul Sect actually gave such a justification for themselves. This had completely enraged them.

At this moment, the tens of thousands of people were all

shouting in unison. They all had a common desire, the desire to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

“It won’t happen again!!!”

Right at this moment, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke again. His voice was so loud that it actually drowned out the shouts of the tens of thousands of people.

In fact, when he spoke, both space and the earth started to shake. Buzzing noises accompanied constant trembles.

At this moment, everyone closed their mouths. The strength of a rank two True Immortal had brought fear upon many of the people present here.

After all, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was an existence that could completely obliterate them, leaving not even a corpse or skeleton behind, with a mere thought.

“We will no longer go and cause the death of another innocent infant. The reason for that is because we have, after many years of effort, finally succeeded. We have successfully grasped the method to increase everyone’s cultivation.”

“We have invited everyone here precisely so that we can reveal to everyone, reveal to the people of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, our achievement.”

“I also know that my words possess no basis to lean on, and that everyone will simply not believe me.”

“However... when the truth is placed before your eyes, you all will definitely believe it, believe what I have said to not be lies, to not be complete nonsense, but rather the truth, believe that I have not deceived everyone.”

“Thus, I will demonstrate to the fellow citizens of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the results that our Infant Soul Sect has gained after sacrificing countless newborn infants.”

“Come, allow them to all experience the power of the Infant Soul Great Formation!!!”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, he began to form a hand seal.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, a black gaseous flame appeared on the bodies of everyone from the Infant Soul Sect. The black gaseous flames started to interweave with one another and form a grand formation in the sky.

This grand formation was different from anything anyone had ever seen before. It was not an ordinary spirit formation. Rather, it was a formation formed by the heinous air emitted by all the people from the Infant Soul Sect.

“That formation!!!”

Upon seeing that formation, the expressions of many people changed. They were all intimidated by the vast imposing might of that formation.

“I believe everyone knows the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He reached peak Martial Ancestor over a thousand years ago. However, even after all these years, he has not been able to reach the True Immortal realm.”

“However, right now... I will assist him in reaching a breakthrough in cultivation.”

“Everyone, watch carefully. For you will all serve as witnesses to this miracle.”

As the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke, with a thought, black energy emerged from the grand formation. That energy surrounded the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Wuuahh, wuuahh, wuuahh~~~~~”

The next moment, the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief began to

scream miserably.

However, what caused the crowd's blood to run cold was the fact that when he screamed, they could also hear the wailing cries of infants.

Those were countless wailing cries of infants. They were being emitted from the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. However, those wailing cries were clearly not the voice of the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

At this moment, many people present started to tremble in fear from the aura of that grand formation and those infant cries.

# Chapter 2613 - Infant Soul Grand Formation

---

“Enough of trying to deceive others.”

Right at this moment, Zi Xunyi suddenly attacked. Boundless purple gaseous flames filled the entire sky like a vast blaze. They began to move toward the people of the Infant Soul Sect to burn them to death.

“Woosh~~~”

Faced with Zi Xunyi’s attack, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster merely waved his sleeve and boundless martial power immediately surged forth. He actually managed to easily block Zi Xunyi’s attack.

“Although we’re both rank two True Immortals, there is a still difference in our strengths. Young lady, you will not be able to defeat me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Zi Xunyi with a smile on his face.

It was an extremely mocking smile.

“You!!!” Zi Xunyi was immediately furious upon hearing those words.

If she were insulted by others, Zi Xunyi would not be this furious. However... the person that insulted her was actually a vicious and merciless demon that slaughtered innocent infants. Zi Xunyi was unable to tolerate an insult from him.

Overwhelmed with anger, Zi Xunyi actually revealed her Ancestral Armaments. She was planning to wage war.

“Xunyi.”

When at the moment when Zi Xunyi was about to attack, Ying Mingchao stopped her. He said to her, “Let me handle him.”

As Ying Mingchao spoke, he cast his sharp gaze to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

If it were an ordinary individual, even if they were able to not be scared to death upon seeing such a gaze from Ying Mingchao, they would most definitely start shivering.

However, not only did this Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's expression remained unchanged, but there was also not the slightest trace of fear in his eyes.

“Eeeahh~~~”

Right at this moment, that Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief let out another shout.

This shout was not a scream of pain. Rather, it was a roar. After he roared, the crowd all revealed startled expressions.

When they looked to the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief again, they revealed incomparable astonishment in their eyes.

The reason for that was because everyone felt the aura of that Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief when he roared.

His aura was no longer that of a Martial Ancestor. Instead, it was that of a True Immortal...

Although he was only a rank one True Immortal, it remained to be a completely different realm from Martial Ancestor.

“This, how could this be? How did his cultivation suddenly increase? Could it be that grand formation?”

At this moment, everyone was stunned. Expressions of shock filled their faces. This was especially true for the bystanders that did not know the Infant Soul Sect well.

The reason for that was because what had happened was simply unimaginable. How could a peak Martial Ancestor break through to rank one True Immortal in such a short period of time?

“I believe that everyone is very surprised right now. How could a formation possibly allow one to reach a breakthrough in cultivation? Something like that is simply heaven-defying, simply



going against the way of martial cultivation, simply impossible.”

“However, this Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of accomplishing this impossible task.”

“I might as well tell everyone the truth. Not only is the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief able to reach a breakthrough, everyone here is all able to reach a breakthrough using the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

“And this... this is what our Infant Soul Sect has been doing for all these years,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Truly? Is what you said the truth? You are really able to help us increase our cultivation?”

Once the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, the bystanders and even people in the allied army burst into an uproar.

Everyone’s eyes seemed to be shining. They were all staring deeply at that so-called Infant Soul Grand Formation.

At this moment, they no longer possessed any fear in their eyes as they looked to the Infant Soul Grand Formation. Instead, greed filled their eyes. It was as if they were looking at a priceless treasure.

For many people, due to the fact that their talent was limited, even if they spent their entire lives cultivating, they would not be able to make progress in their cultivation.

However, if that grand formation was truly capable of helping them obtain martial comprehension and letting them reach a breakthrough in cultivation, it would simply be an enormous fortunate encounter from the heavens itself. It was something that they had never even dared imagine before.

“I will not deceive everyone. There is also no reason for me to deceive everyone. Furthermore, everyone has witnessed the scene earlier.”

“Everyone has clearly witnessed the power of this Infant Soul Grand Formation. This is not a lie. Instead, it’s the truth. As for this truth, it is right before everyone’s eyes.

“As for this Infant Soul Grand Formation, it needed the members of our Infant Soul Sect to activate it. Why is that, you ask? It’s because flowing in our bodies, the bodies of the members of the Infant Soul Sect, are the lives of those children.”

“Indeed, those children have died innocently. Everyone in our Infant Soul Sect has felt ashamed and pained because of that. Every day and every night, we have to endure the condemnations of our own conscience.”

“However, today, even if we must still endure the condemnations from our own conscience, we are very delighted.”

“The reason for that is because we’ve succeeded. We have successfully accomplished what our ancestor did not. We have finally completed our ancestor’s grand ambition. We have finally completed the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

“We are finally able to rely on the Infant Soul Grand Formation to strengthen everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“The sacrifice of those children was not in vain. Their sacrifice will allow our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to make progress. Their sacrifice will serve as a previously unimaginable force for us.”

“From today onwards, no one will dare to look down on our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm again. Our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will become a powerful Ordinary Realm!!!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke emotionally.

“Bullshit!!!”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao shouted angrily. He pointed the Ancestral Armament in his hand toward the Infant

Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

While gnashing his teeth, he said, "Today, I will definitely make you all pay the price for what you've done!"

After he finished saying those words, Ying Mingchao's overwhelming killing intent swept forth.

"Wait a moment," Right at this moment, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster suddenly spoke. "City Master Ying, the Infant Soul Sect wouldn't have have gone through all the trouble to call us here just to deceive us and tell us such an absurd thing."

"There is simply no need for them to do something like this. I also cannot think of a reason for them to deceive us."

"I think we should calm down and clear things up first."

"That's right. City Master Ying, we should clear things up first," Many people from the Immortal Sword School began to echo what their headmaster said.

It was not only those people from the Immortal Sword School. Many of the bystanders, and even many of the people from the allied army started to plead to Ying Mingchao, asking him to calm down.

Earlier, those people were calling for the eradication of the Infant Soul Sect. Yet now, they were actually all telling Ying Mingchao to not attack the Infant Soul Sect.

How could Ying Mingchao not understand what they were thinking?

Clearly, they had witnessed the benefits of the Infant Soul Grand Formation, and become greedy. They wanted to gain benefits through the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

"You all really believe that formation to be able to help you all increase your cultivation? You all really believe in what the Infant Soul Sect says? You all believe in the words of this bunch who was

willing to slaughter innocent infants for the sake of increasing their own cultivation?”

Ying Mingchao's eyes turned deep red from anger. He was clenching his fists so hard that creaking sounds could be heard nonstop.

The reason for that was because he firmly believed the Infant Soul Sect to be a bunch of swindlers. He felt them to be an actual demonic sect, and all that they said were lies meant to confuse others.

However, these people just so happened to believe in their words.

It would be one thing if it were only those people that did not know about the Infant Soul Sect that believed in their words.

However, even the allied army was swayed by their words. In fact, even the Immortal Sword School that had been fighting against the Infant Soul Sect for many years was swayed by their words. Ying Mingchao found this to be truly unbearable.

Furious, Ying Mingchao unleashed his overwhelmingly powerful oppressive might. Even though the crowd did not wish to attack the Infant Soul Sect, they no longer dared to voice any objection at this moment.

“Amitabha, everyone, please hear this old man out,” Right at this moment, the Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple stood forth.

After the Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple stood forth, Ying Mingchao's gaze eased.

The Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple was a person of virtue and prestige. If he were to speak on his behalf, many people would start to have faith in him.

## Chapter 2614 - Collapse Of The Alliance

---

“City Master Ying, we have all borne witness to the power of that formation. This old monk is unable to think of a reason for the Infant Soul Sect to go through all this trouble to lure us here only to deceive us. This old monk feels what the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to be trustworthy.”

“Abbot, you!!!” After hearing what the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple said, many people in addition to Ying Mingchao were shocked.

In terms of righteous powers, the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple could be said to be the representation of all righteousness in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As for their Abbot, he was also widely accepted to be an upright individual.

Yet, at this moment, when faced with the enticement of an increase in cultivation, not only was this Abbot swayed, but he even began to speak on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect. This was truly unimaginable.

“City Master Ying, even Grandmaster said it like that, don’t you think that we should give the Infant Soul Sect a chance to reform themselves?” The Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster said.

“Heh...”

At this moment, Chu Feng let out a cold and mocking chuckle.

However, Chu Feng had merely chuckled and did not say anything. The reason for that was because his heart had already calmed.

The Infant Soul Sect killing innocent infants was something that everyone knew about. Even the people from the Infant Soul Sect did not deny it. Instead, they directly admitted to doing it.

That sort of evil deed was the most unforgivable.

However, when faced with the enticement of being able to increase their cultivation, all these people forgot about those infants that died miserably. Just like that, they planned to forgive the Infant Soul Sect.

Oh how selfish was this?

Holding his Ancestral Armament in his hand, Ying Mingchao loudly said, “Good, very good. Since this is the case, I will not bother with superfluous words with you all either. I, Ying Mingchao, will only ask you all one thing. Right now, who is still willing to fight alongside me?! Who is willing to fight against the Infant Soul Sect?!”

“Me!”

“Me!”

“Me!”

.....

Once Ying Mingchao said those words, many people stood forth. The majority of them were people from Hero City.

Of those from Hero City, the majority of them were Ying Mingchao’s old subordinates.

Although there were close to ten thousand people standing behind Ying Mingchao right now, they were many times smaller when compared to the original numbers of the allied army.

One thing worthy of mentioning was that there were a portion of people from both the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and Immortal Sword School that decided to stand behind Ying Mingchao.

Representing those people were Daoist Three Swords and Grandmaster Pocket.

However, no matter what, they remained to only be members of the Immortal Sword School and the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple.

Even though they had chosen to continue to be the Infant Soul

Sect's enemy, their headmaster and abbot had both chosen to believe the Infant Soul Sect.

This scene was truly astonishing.

“Ying Mingchao, are you truly planning to do this?”

“What if what the Infant Soul Sect says is true? What if they are not deceiving us? What if that formation is truly capable of increasing our cultivation?”

“Can you not calm yourself and make a decision after investigating everything?” said the Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple.

“Investigate? The Infant Soul Sect has slaughtered countless innocent infants. Is that something that still needs investigation?”

“You all have already had your eyes blinded by self-interest. No matter how you investigate, you will only end up believing their words.”

After Chu Feng finished seeing the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot say those words, he said to Ying Mingchao, “Senior, go ahead and do it.”

“Ying Mingchao, if you are to do this, you will end up regretting it,” Seeing that Ying Mingchao was truly planning to attack, many people began to tell him that he would regret it.

However, Ying Mingchao raised his Ancestral Armament. He did not appear to have the slightest bit of hesitation. His oppressive might swept forth like a tornado.

At this moment, apart from those that decided to follow him, everyone else was blown away. Only the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster were able to remain standing where they were.

“Clank~~~”

Right at this moment, an even most astonishing scene happened.

The Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster looked to one another. Then, the two of them actually revealed their Ancestral Armaments. Furthermore, judging from their appearance, they didn't seem to be planning to fight alongside Ying Mingchao. Instead, they were casting ill-intended gazes toward him.

"What's this, you all plan to fight against me?" Ying Mingchao asked coldly.

"We do not wish to fight against you. We merely want you to investigate the truth first. What if the Infant Soul Sect have truly done what they've done for the sake of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? What if what they're saying is the truth?" The Immortal Sword School's Headmaster said.

"Enough of your bullshit. If you want to stop me, then go ahead and do it directly. However, if you all are to decide to fight against me, I, Ying Mingchao, will not be lenient toward you all either."

As Ying Mingchao said these words, his eyes were surging with killing intent. His killing intent caused this entire region to suddenly become ice-cold. Everyone was able to feel that intense coldness.

Faced with such a Ying Mingchao, both the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot started to frown. Hesitation appeared in their eyes.

Perhaps it was because of their fear toward Ying Mingchao, or perhaps it was because of their affection toward the alliance, but in the end, the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster and the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot did not attack Ying Mingchao. Instead, they slowly lowered their raised Ancestral Armaments.

Right at this moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked, "Ying Mingchao, is the battle today truly unavoidable?"

"Today, I will exterminate every single one of you," Ying



Mingchao said.

“Since that’s the case, then I, Hun Poyuan, am delighted to take you on today. However, I do not wish to implicate the innocent. Thus, let the two of us fight one another. We shall determine the outcome of this battle. What say you?”

“If you can defeat me, then you can go ahead and kill everyone from our Infant Soul Sect. After all, it is likely no one will be able to stop you at that time.”

“However, if I am to defeat you, I will not make things difficult for you either. I merely hope that you will be able to understand me, be able to trust me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Those are some quality words that you’ve said. However, today, the only possible result is me defeating you, and not you defeating me.”

After Ying Mingchao finished saying these words, he held his Ancestral Armament and, with an overwhelming aura, moved to directly attack the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

As for that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, he did not hesitate either. He too revealed his Ancestral Armament and flew toward Ying Mingchao.

In the blink of an eye, the two rank two True Immortals collided with one another.

As the two of them fought, boundless energy ripples swept across the entire sky. For the allied army, their situation was alright. After all, Zi Xunyi, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster and the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot were there, these three rank two True Immortals, protecting them.

Thus, the energy ripples originating from the battle between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect’s Headmaster were all blocked by them. No casualties were inflicted upon the allied army.

However, the people from the Infant Soul Sect had to fall back.

The reason for that was because they were unable to withstand even the energy ripples.

“That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is extremely powerful. It seems to be very difficult for Ying Mingchao to defeat him.”

The entire battle was witnessed by Her Lady Queen. Even though Ying Mingchao was very powerful, he was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster even after using his various abilities. The two of them were in a stalemate the entire time.

During this stalemate, Chu Feng noticed that Zi Xunyi was growing eager to join the battle.

## Chapter 2615 - Stalemate

---

“Senior Zi, don’t join in,” Seeing Zi Xunyi’s expression, Chu Feng sent a voice transmission to her, “Senior Ying has yet to go all-out. Furthermore, I feel that with how confident the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is, he most definitely possesses more hidden techniques.”

“If the two of them are to both unleash their full abilities, their strength will be completely above that of ordinary rank two True Immortals. If you are to be in the battle at that time, you will only become a burden for Senior Ying.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Zi Xunyi, who was planning to join the battle, stopped thinking about joining the battle.

Although she did not know what sort of abilities the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster might still have, she knew very well that Ying Mingchao was a True Immortal that had managed to unlock the strength of his Divine Power.

This information had long been spread out by Grandmaster Prophet. It was something that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm knew about.

It was precisely because Ying Mingchao was a rank two True Immortal and possessed Divine Power that people viewed him as the strongest expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Likely, the reason why the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot and the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster did not try to stop Ying Mingchao from attacking the Infant Soul Sect earlier was also because they were afraid of Ying Mingchao’s actual strength.

However, precisely because the matter of Ying Mingchao having unlocked his Divine Power was known to everyone, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster must know about it too. As such, Zi Xunyi felt that what Chu Feng said was very reasonable.

Since he knew already that Ying Mingchao had unlocked his Divine Power and was not an ordinary rank two True Immortal, the confidence of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster meant that... he must possess some sort of method to handle him.

Thinking about that, Zi Xunyi began to grip her Ancestral Armaments even more tightly. In fact, Chu Feng could even hear the creaking sounds emitted by the Zi Xunyi's hand bones.

"Senior, we do not need to directly join the battle in order to help Senior Ying Mingchao," Chu Feng said via voice transmission.

"What do you mean by that?" Zi Xunyi asked. Her eyes started to shine with light.

"Senior, since you have also obtained Grandmaster Kai Hong's inheritance before, do you know of this formation?"

Chu Feng informed Zi Xunyi of a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was something that Zi Xunyi did not know about. However, it remained that Zi Xunyi was an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. Thus, just from Chu Feng's descriptions of the spirit formation, she was able to make out of what it did.

After that, Chu Feng began to secretly set up the spirit formation together with Zi Xunyi. As for why they had to do it secretly, it was naturally because they did not want others to discover it.

After all, the allied army had already fallen apart. For their own self-interest, even the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster had spoken out on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect.

If they were to discover that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were setting up a spirit formation beneficial to Ying Mingchao, who knew whether or not they would act to interfere.

Thus, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi must set up that spirit formation secretly. Fortunately, the spirit formation techniques that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi possessed were extremely powerful. Thus, even

though it would be more difficult to quietly set up a spirit formation within their bodies, the two of them would only each have to set up half of the spirit formation should they jointly set it up. Thus, as long as they were given a sufficient amount of time, they would be able to finish setting up that spirit formation.

Although Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were extremely worried by the stalemate between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, those people whose eyes were blinded by greed, those people that wished to obtain martial comprehension from that Infant Soul Sect's grand formation, were secretly delighted.

At the beginning when Ying Mingchao began to fight against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, they were all afraid, afraid that Ying Mingchao would be able to easily kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. After all, Ying Mingchao was the publicly-accepted number one expert in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, judging from the situation now, the two of them were actually equally matched. Furthermore, the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster were not planning to join the battle. Thus, the greedy crowd grew much more at ease.

“Roar~~~”

Right at this moment, a beast-like roar suddenly sounded from Ying Mingchao's body.

At the moment when that roar was heard, the image of a ferocious beast appeared in the sky. Its aura was extremely domineering. It was as if it were planning to devour all living things. Seeing it, many people started to tremble with fear.

“Boom~~~”

At practically the same time, an explosion sounded from the battlefield between Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was actually beaten

back.

Not only that, but there was a bloody hole in the left side of his chest. The left side of his chest had been penetrated, and a visible bloodstain was present at the corner of his mouth.

Looking to Ying Mingchao, he currently looked completely different from before. His eyes had turned dark green. Even his teeth had become sharp like a beast's. A jade green aura was coiling around his body like green flames.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao was several times stronger than he was before.

“Divine Power?”

Seeing this scene, the crowd were all frightened. They had nearly forgotten that Ying Mingchao was not only a rank two True Immortal, but he was also an existence that had managed to unlock the power of his Divine power.

Most importantly, they had only heard rumors of it before. As such, they were skeptical. However, they were now witnessing it with their very own eyes. With this, how could they not start to panic?

After unleashing his Divine Power, how could the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possibly contend against Ying Mingchao?

“Divine Power. It would seem that the rumors are true, you have indeed managed to unlock your Divine Power.”

Compared to others, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster merely smiled. Not only was he not panicking, but he even softly wiped away the bloodstain at the corner of his mouth. The wound on the left side of his chest also closed up.

At this moment when the crowd were confused as to why the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was still this calm, they were shocked to discover that... the eyes of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had turned pitch-black.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, a loud explosion sounded from the body of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. At the same time, dark black gaseous flames bubbled out of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster like a volcanic eruption.

In an instant, the dark black gaseous flames covered the entire sky. At this moment, apart from the enormous ferocious beast emitted by Ying Mingchao’s Divine Power, the rest of the sky was covered by those dark black gaseous flames.

Most importantly, the cries and wailings of infants could be heard from the dark black gaseous flames that covered the entire sky.

There were simply too many cries and wailings. They were simply too ear-piercing, simply too tragic.

The cries and wailings were simply over a thousand times more mournful than the cries and wailings emitted from the activation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Forbidden Mysterious Technique?”

“Sure enough, he’s prepared.”

Chu Feng was not surprised to see this scene. He had already anticipated that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster possessed the ability to contend against Ying Mingchao’s Divine Power.

Merely, Chu Feng did not expect it to be a Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

However, this Forbidden Mysterious Technique was clearly not an ordinary Forbidden Mysterious Technique. To be exact, this should be a Forbidden Demonic Technique.

The reason for that was because it could be determined merely by the mournful infant cries that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had used this demonic technique to refine countless infants.

He had used the lives of countless infants to obtain his powerful strength.

However, such a sinister demonic technique did not bring disdain from the crowd. Instead, many grew excited upon seeing it.

Those that were excited were naturally the selfish individuals that wanted to obtain the assistance of the Infant Soul Sect.

“Despicable bastard, I will have you die!!!”

After seeing the power of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao grew even more furious. With the unique imposing might of his Divine Power, Ying Mingchao rushed to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster again.

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

“Boom~~~”

.....

Green gaseous flames and dark black gaseous flames collided.

It was like a battle between light and darkness. However, this battle was once again in a stalemate.

The intensity of this battle had increased by several times. Now, even Zi Xunyi and the others were unable to withstand the energy ripples from this battle.

As such, the allied army had no choice but to move away from the battlefield. As for the people from the Infant Soul Sect, they moved even further away.

As for Chen Heavenly City that was in the center of the battlefield, it had long since been completely ruined by the energy ripples from the two fighters.

That vast city and those extravagant buildings were completely razed to the ground. It was a devastating scene.



The scope of the battle was growing larger and larger. The intensity of the battle also grew more and more world-shakingly powerful. Looking at it, everyone grew more and more afraid.

Once again, people began to worry about this life and death battle.

# Chapter 2616 - Two Grand Formations

---

“How could this be? That Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually mastered a demonic technique?”

At the moment when a great majority of the people were rejoicing, there were also people that grew furious and worried.

These people were naturally the ones that had stood behind Ying Mingchao earlier. They were people that were willing to betray their own powers to follow Ying Mingchao in taking on the Infant Soul Sect.

They all firmly believed the Infant Soul Sect to be a demonic sect. As such, they naturally hoped for Ying Mingchao to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng suddenly turned around and asked those people, “Everyone, are you all willing to help Senior Ying in this battle?”

“Of course,” The crowd answered in unison.

“In that case, let us all assist Senior Ying!!!”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he opened his arms, and a grand spirit formation was unleashed from his body.

Following that, Zi Xunyi also extended her arms. Another grand spirit formation appeared.

The two spirit formations overlayed one another. Soon, they started to fuse together. Most importantly, as Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi controlled that grand formation, it soon covered the people that had chosen to follow Ying Mingchao.

“Almsgiver Chu Feng, that spirit formation... could it be that we merely need to relax ourselves?”

At this moment, Grandmaster Pocket was unable to keep himself from asking that question. His tone was filled with astonishment.

As a world spiritist himself, he was able to sense how wondrous that spirit formation was. There was simply no need for them to do anything. Merely by relaxing themselves, they would be able to send their power into that spirit formation.

However, Grandmaster Pocket still wanted to verify with Chu Feng whether this was all they needed to do in order to help Ying Mingchao.

“Everyone, you all do not need to do anything special. It will do as long as you think about helping Senior Ying Mingchao.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he began to form hand seals with one hand. As for his other hand, he extended it toward Zi Xunyi.

Zi Xunyi was doing the same thing as Chu Feng. She too was forming hand seals with one hand and placed her other hand onto Chu Feng’s extended hand.

Immediately, boundless energy began to gather in the their joined palms. Then, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi pointed their hands toward Ying Mingchao.

A beam of golden light shot out from their hands. Like a golden dragon galloping through the skies, it assimilated into Ying Mingchao’s body.

After that golden beam of light entered Ying Mingchao’s body, Ying Mingchao’s body started to blossom with golden light in addition to the dark green gaseous flames.

Most importantly, Ying Mingchao’s aura had become much stronger.

After his battle power increased, Ying Mingchao immediately managed to break away from the stalemate and gain the upper hand in his battle.

“Set up the formation!!!”

However, right at this moment, the people from the Infant Soul

Sect actually also started to set up a formation.

However, their formation was much simpler compared to Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi's formation.

In fact, what they had set up simply could not be considered to be a grand formation. Instead, it was several tens of thousands of grand formations.

The reason for that was because each and every member of the Infant Soul Sect was a grand formation. Black gaseous flames were surging out from their bodies. Those black gaseous flames entered the sky and were assimilated into the black gaseous flames emitted by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster that covered the vast sky.

At this moment, the black gaseous flames emitted by each and every person from the Infant Soul Sect were filled with infant cries. Those grand formations were all formed using the demonic technique that they'd trained.

After the power from the Infant Soul Sect's crowd assimilated into his gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster also grew more powerful. It actually looked like his strength could surpass Ying Mingchao's.

"Puuu~~~"

Suddenly, a stream of blood splattered from Ying Mingchao's left shoulder. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had managed to penetrate Ying Mingchao's left shoulder with his Ancestral Armament.

"Puu, puu, puu~~~"

Following that, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster waved his Ancestral Armament repeatedly. Frantically, he began to assault Ying Mingchao. Even though Ying Mingchao tried his best to block the majority of the attacks, he was still penetrated by the attacks three times.

Every single time Ying Mingchao was injured by the Infant Soul

Sect's Sectmaster, the dark black gaseous flames entered Ying Mingchao's body through the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Ancestral Armament.

Under this sort of situation, Ying Mingchao's aura grew weaker and weaker.

In the end, not to mention fighting against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao did not even have the strength to continue flying.

“Mingchao!”

With the situation being like this, Zi Xunyi was unable to continue standing idly. She removed herself from the grand formation that she had set up together with Chu Feng, grabbed her Ancestral Armaments and rushed toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

It was not only Zi Xunyi that rushed over. Many of the old subordinates from Hero City, as well as people from the other powers that had chosen to follow Ying Mingchao also rushed over.

Although Chu Feng did not rush over, he had secretly taken out his Evil God Sword.

He knew that, judging from the situation at hand, not to mention Zi Xunyi and the others, even if the allied army was still intact, they would still not be a match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

If they wanted to overcome this crisis today, then they could only rely on the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“Woosh~~~”

However, at this moment, an astonishing scene occurred. When Zi Xunyi and the others approached, not only did the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster not attack them, but he instead tossed the seriously-injured Ying Mingchao to Zi Xunyi.

When Zi Xunyi received Ying Mingchao, she was able to sense how serious his injuries were.

Although the injuries the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster left upon Ying Mingchao by piercing his body with his Ancestral Armament were merely superficial wounds, the dark black gaseous flames that had entered Ying Mingchao's body were extremely frightening.

It was those dark black gaseous flames that had caused Ying Mingchao to become this weak.

"You damned demon, I will kill you!!!"

Zi Xunyi was so furious that her eyes turned red. Overflowing killing intent burst forth from her. Everyone present were capable of sensing that killing intent. She was truly furious, and wanted to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"I urge you to not try to attack me. The reason for that is because you are no match for me. As such, you are simply unable to gain your revenge."

"Thus... it is best that you go and heal Ying Mingchao's injuries instead," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Zi Xunyi. His tone was filled with contempt and mockery.

Right at this moment, Chu Feng, while holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, walked in the air and arrived beside Zi Xunyi.

Although Chu Feng did not reveal his anger as distinctively as Zi Xunyi did, the killing intent in his eyes was not at all weaker than Zi Xunyi's.

Merely, Chu Feng's killing intent could only be felt by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who Chu Feng was staring at.

After sensing Chu Feng's killing intent, that Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was not only not afraid, but he even chuckled. "Chu Feng, this is the first time that we've met. That said, I have already heard about you."

“Sure enough, your reputation is well-justified. The future of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm belongs to you.”

“Join us. Join our Infant Soul Sect. I am able to help you accelerate your growth.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually began to publicly invite Chu Feng to join them.

“Join you all? You want me to slaughter innocent infants with you all?” Chu Feng asked with a sneer.

“No, that won’t happen again. Our Infant Soul Grand Formation is already complete. There is no need to sacrifice children anymore. You can directly enjoy the results of our effort,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Did you think that I would believe you all?” As Chu Feng spoke, he raised the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“That’s a Demon Armament?!!!” Seeing that Chu Feng was planning to fight, many people revealed frightened expressions.

After all, the Demon Armament that Chu Feng possessed that was capable of killing True Immortals had already become something that everyone knew about.

If Ying Mingchao was the greatest danger, then Chu Feng would be the second greatest danger.

## Chapter 2617 - Blinded By Greed

---

“Is this that Demon Armament? It is truly extraordinary.”

“However, Chu Feng, listen to my advice. Even if you have a Demon Armament, it is best that you do not attack me, for it will be impossible for you to match me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng smiled coldly. He started to grip the Evil God Sword even tighter.

“Chu Feng, stop,” Right at this moment, Her Lady Queen’s voice suddenly sounded.

“Chu Feng, do not be this rash. It will not be too late for you to kill him after you become a True Immortal. After all, you’ve already obtained the method to become a True Immortal.”

“There is no need for you to utilize the Evil God Sword. You know very well the power of that Evil God Sword. If you are to fail in controlling it, not only will you die, but everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will die,” Her Lady Queen said.

After hearing what Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng slowly lowered his raised Evil God Sword.

What Her Lady Queen said was reasonable. Chu Feng was simply unable to control the Evil God Sword. Unless absolutely necessary, it would be best to not use it.

After lowering his sword, Chu Feng turned around and started to inspect Ying Mingchao’s injuries.

Seeing that Chu Feng had lowered his Evil God Sword, the complacent expression on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew even stronger.

He felt that Chu Feng had lowered his Evil God Sword because he



was scared.

However, Chu Feng simply did not concern himself with how others viewed him. The only thing he cared about right now was Ying Mingchao's injuries.

"Senior Zi, don't worry, Senior Ying's injuries can be cured," Chu Feng said to Zi Xunyi.

"Truly?" Zi Xunyi was extremely vexed by Ying Mingchao's injury. However, after hearing what Chu Feng said, she reacted as if she had seen hope.

"I will need your help," After that, Chu Feng taught Zi Xunyi the method to set up a spirit formation.

That spirit formation was not an ordinary healing formation. Instead, it was a spirit formation that specialized in removing demonic energy. It was extremely effective toward Ying Mingchao's injuries.

The reason for that was because Ying Mingchao's injuries were not simple physical injuries. Rather, his body was invaded by demonic energy.

"Everyone, you have all witnessed my strength. Thus, I wish to ask everyone a question. If I wanted to kill you all now, who could possibly escape from me?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"This..."

Hearing those words, the hearts of the crowd all tensed up. With the strength that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possessed, it would indeed be extremely easy for him to kill them.

This was especially true when they saw the dark black gaseous flames that were still surging about in the sky. They discovered that, at this moment, they were akin to having sharp blades pointed at their throats.

As long as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster willed it, all of them

would be killed. After all, even the strongest among them, Ying Mingchao, was no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Thus, how could they possibly contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster?

"Everyone, there's no need to be scared. Although I possess the ability to kill all of you, I will not kill a single person."

"The reason for that is because our Infant Soul Sect never thought about killing innocents. There has only ever been one goal since the founding of our Infant Soul Sect. That is, we want to benefit everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, we want to benefit all of you," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Lord Sectmaster, could it be... that you're really willing to help us increase our cultivation?"

At this moment, many people started to believe in the words spoken by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. They felt that there was no reason for him to lie to them.

After all, if the Infant Soul Sect really was a demonic sect, they could very well kill them all at this moment. There was no need for them to deceive them.

Furthermore, they had personally witnessed the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. It was truly a grand formation capable of helping them increase their cultivation.

"Of course," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke frankly.

"In that case, Lord Sectmaster, could you use that Infant Soul Grand Formation to help us increase our cultivation right now?"

"Lord Sectmaster, if you are able to help me increase my cultivation, I am willing to join the Infant Soul Sect and pledge my life to you."

"Lord Sectmaster, please impart strength upon me. I am willing to work for it with my life."

At this moment, countless people began to plead for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to help them increase their cultivation. They were willing to give up their lives for the sake of increasing their cultivations.

"Everyone, there's no need to be impatient. Everyone in our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will be able to increase their cultivation."

"However, I have a small request," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

Right after he said those words, Chu Feng cast his sharp gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"The fox is finally going to reveal his fox tail?" Her Lady Queen said.

Like Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen felt that it would be impossible for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to help everyone increase their cultivation for free.

In fact, they simply did not believe that the Infant Soul Sect would really be able to help the crowd increase their cultivation.

There was most definitely a goal, a reason why the Infant Soul Sect was fabricating this lie. However, regardless of what their goal might be, it was most definitely not good.

Thus, Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen wanted to know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect was planning for them to go through great pains to fabricate this lie.

However, the others were simply not thinking like Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen. They were all thinking that the Infant Soul Sect was truly planning to help them.

At this moment, the crowd all began to voice their acceptance of the request. Even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had not yet indicated to them what sort of request it was, they were already accepting the request. It was as if they were willing to do anything.

“Everyone, the task is actually very simple. I merely need to trouble everyone to spread this matter out to every nook and corner of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm so that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will know of this.”

“Then, I ask those that have the strength to help bring those that are weak here.”

“I hope that everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will be able to obtain the assistance of the Infant Soul Grand Formation when it is next activated,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Is that all that you need? Rest assured, we will definitely accomplish that and have everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm obtain your assistance,” the crowd accepted the request immediately. They did not have the slightest hesitation toward this sort of request.

“This old monk wishes to ask, if the Infant Soul Grand Formation is of use to those that have reached the True Immortal realm?” The Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple asked.

“This Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of benefiting everyone. Merely, as everyone possesses different levels of talent, the benefits that they obtain will also be different.”

“However, without a doubt, everyone will be able to obtain benefits from it. Everyone’s cultivation will increase.”

“Let me reemphasize it. By ‘everyone’, True Immortals are naturally also included.”

“Merely, it might not be possible to increase the cultivation of those that have reached the True Immortal realm. However, they will be able to obtain enormous profit that could serve as a foundation for increasing their cultivation in the future,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Very well, our Buddha’s Heavenly Temple will help you,” the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple said.

After that, the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster also agreed to help.

These two tier one powers that were originally allied with Hero City and had come here to eradicate the Infant Soul Sect, for the sake of increasing their own cultivation, now stood on the side of the Infant Soul Sect and agreed to help them.

# Chapter 2618 - Selfishness

---

“Do you all really believe that that Infant Soul Grand Formation will be able to help you all increase your cultivation?”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng stood up and looked to the crowd with a mocking expression.

“We have witnessed the power of that Infant Soul Grand Formation. Why shouldn't we believe it?” Someone asked in refute.

After the first person refuted him, more and more people started to refute Chu Feng.

It would be one thing if it were the bystanders that were refuting Chu Feng. However, many of the people that were refuting Chu Feng were from upright and righteous sects and schools, people that were originally part of the allied army.

Oh how ironic this scene was. These people that originally came to crusade against the Infant Soul Sect were now standing on the side of the Infant Soul Sect all so that they could increase their cultivation.

This was most definitely selfishness.

“You all already have your eyes blinded by greed. Anything I say now will be useless. However, do not blame me for not having warned you all.”

“That Infant Soul Grand Formation is most definitely unable to increase your cultivations. For you all to believe the Infant Soul Sect, only one end can come of it -- death,” Chu Feng said.

“Little friend Chu Feng, while it is true that our Infant Soul Sect and you have clashed with one another before, it is all because of your misunderstanding toward our Infant Soul Sect.”

“And now, I have already explained everything. Even our

decision to sacrifice those infants was done because we had no other choice.”

“Must you insist on viewing us as enemies?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke with an expression of helplessness.

“That’s right. Little friend Chu Feng, anyone can make mistakes. When possible, it is best to forgive. This is even more so the case when the Infant Soul Sect has done their wrongdoings for the sake of benefiting everyone.”

At this moment, many people began to speak on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect.

“For the sake of benefiting everyone? Are you to say that just because this matter is beneficial to you all that those infants can be slaughtered?”

“If those infants were your children, would you all continue to blabber on like this?” Zi Xunyi asked furiously.

“For the sake of a better future, so what if we have to sacrifice some lives? If we can allow the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to become more prosperous, even if it were my children, I would be willing to sacrifice them.”

“That’s right, I too would be willing.”

“The world of martial cultivators is one filled with disputes to begin with. People die every day here. However, were those people that died able to contribute to the betterment of our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm? No matter what, those infants have not died in vain. Their sacrifice was not made in vain.”

“That’s right. Their deaths were worthy. It is also something that we should accept.”

The crowd spoke in succession. They who had come to exterminate the Infant Soul Sect for the sake of those slaughtered infants were now turning their arguments around and declaring that it was right for those infants to be slaughtered.

“You all...” Hearing those words, Zi Xunyi was so furious her face turned pale. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out of her mouth.

She actually vomited blood out of anger.

However, that was understandable too. The scene at hand was truly extremely infuriating. However, they were powerless to do anything.

“Xunyi!!!”

Seeing this scene, Ying Mingchao, whose state had changed for the better thanks to Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi’s healing, grew incomparably furious.

He stood up and turned his gaze filled with killing intent toward the surrounding crowd. He said, “The ones that should be killed are you all.”

“Rumble~~~”

Right after Ying Mingchao finished saying those words, the dark black gaseous flames that covered the sky immediately let out intense killing intent. The intense killing intent was completely aimed at Ying Mingchao.

It was the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“Ying Mingchao, I will not take offense at you attacking me. However, if you dare try to harm them, I, Hun Poyuan, will definitely not allow you to do so,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

After this happened, Ying Mingchao started to shiver in anger. As for those who had spoken on behalf of the Infant Soul Sect, they were overjoyed. It was as if they have found a backer. One by one, they became more and more pleased with themselves, more and more insolent in their actions.

“Hahahaha...”

Right at this moment, Chu Feng burst into loud laughter. He was



laughing so hard that his body started to rock back and forth. He was laughing so hard that his body started to tremble.

“You all have truly opened my eyes with how foolish you are. Seniors, let’s go. For people like them, we do not have to concern ourselves with their life and death. Let them perish on their own.”

Chu Feng said to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

“Let’s go.”

Ying Mingchao stopped hesitating. He led the crowd and decided to leave.

Ying Mingchao was extremely furious. He had originally led the crowd to come and crusade against the Infant Soul Sect.

However, in the end, not only had the allied army collapsed, but he himself had become the target of the crowd’s scorn.

Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and the others left. That said, not a single person felt uneasy or guilty from their leaving.

Not only were they not feeling dejected, but they instead grew even more pleased and overjoyed.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and others were no longer heroes in their hearts.

Instead, they had become malignant stars that blocked their path to increase their cultivation. As such, how could they not be delighted when these malignant stars decided to leave?

At this moment when the crowd were immersed in their foolish joy, no one noticed that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a wicked smile on his face after Ying Mingchao and the others left.

That smile was extremely frightening. It was completely different from the gentleness that he had disguised himself with earlier.

That said, the people present did not notice his smile. In fact, even if they did, no one would find anything wrong with it.

It was as Chu Feng had said, these people had already had their eyes blinded by greed.

“Truly foolish.”

Suddenly, a voice sounded from above the sky that was covered by the black gaseous flames.

Merely, not a single one of the tens of thousands of people below was able to hear that voice.

That voice sounded from a certain corner above the sky. At that place... stood three figures.

They were a middle-aged man, a middle-aged woman and a white-haired old man.

The middle-aged man had a mature appearance. The middle-aged woman still possessed a trace of childish nature in her gaze.

Both the man and the woman were True Immortal-level experts.

As for that old man, his cultivation was unfathomable.

From the outfits of these three people, as well as the title plates on their waist, it could be seen that they were all from a single power.

The Chu Heavenly Clan.

At this moment, these three people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were looking down at everything that was happening below like gods high above.

“Truly foolish. They were actually deceived by such a lie,” The woman said mockingly.

“That is the nature of martial cultivators. For strength and power, they are willing to kill even their relatives. As for mere betrayals, that’s extremely common,” the middle-aged man said.

“Merely, that Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and the others are going to suffer. Should we help them? After all, it seems that Senior Chu

Xuanlang thought quite highly of that Chu Feng,” The middle-aged woman asked.

The middle-aged man did not answer her. Instead, he looked to the white-haired old man.

“If we are to interfere, we will have gone against the rules established by our Ancestor. Perhaps... this is the fate of that Chu Feng,” the old man said slowly.

“What Elder said is very correct,” the middle-aged man and middle-aged woman voiced in agreement.

# Chapter 2619 - Cut The Weeds And Eliminate The Roots

---

At this moment, Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng and the others were currently traveling back to Hero City.

Due to the fact that Ying Mingchao's injuries were still not completely healed, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi were still continuing to heal Ying Mingchao's injuries.

With the situation being like this, it became the task of the several True Immortals from Hero City to drive the crowd, hastening their traveling speed.

Although this was still the allied army, their numbers and grandeur were much less compared to when they had arrived.

Furthermore, perhaps it might be because they had failed in their crusade against the Infant Soul Sect, but the crowd members were all very downcast.

At the same time that they felt gloomy, they were also furious. Curses toward those that had betrayed them were being heard from the crowd nonstop.

“Who is it?!”

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao, who was concentrating on healing his injuries, suddenly opened his eyes and looked ahead.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk, as expected from Ying Mingchao, your perception is still this sharp.”

“However, it must be thanks to that Chu Feng that you were able to heal to such a state in such a short period of time, no?”

An eerie voice sounded. Then, a figure appeared. That person stood in front of the allied army.

It was only a single person. However, this person dared to

confront the entire allied army.

Most importantly, when faced with this individual, everyone from the allied army revealed alarmed expressions.

The reason for that was because this person was the person that had defeated Ying Mingchao earlier, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"What do you want?" Someone from the allied army asked with a shivering voice.

"What I want? Don't you all know very well what I want? How can I allow people like you all to leave like this?"

"Naturally, I have come to find you all so that I can eliminate you completely so as to not leave any future trouble," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said with cold laughter.

"Sure enough, that was all a plot?" Chu Feng asked.

"Since you've already managed to see through it, why bother asking? That said, Chu Feng, I am someone who cherishes talent. As long as you hand over that stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood to me, not only will I spare your life, but I am also willing to take you into our Infant Soul Sect so that you can enjoy the glory, splendor, wealth and rank together with us," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Chu Feng.

"Stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood? He's talking about the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler?" Chu Feng's heart tightened upon hearing those words.

The Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was the treasure that Chu Feng had obtained from Grandmaster Kai Hong's remnants. It was a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood.

Originally, Grandmaster Kai Hong had wanted to forge it into an Ancestral Armament. However, he had failed in doing so.

Chu Feng never expected this Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to

actually know about the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had no idea what Chu Feng was thinking about. Seeing that Chu Feng was hesitating, he thought that Chu Feng might give it up. Thus, he asked again, "Chu Feng, are you willing?"

"I am truly sorry. While I, Chu Feng, dare to do anything, I do not dare to wallow in the mire with someone like you who is inferior to even animals. I am afraid I will receive the wrath of Heaven should I do that," Chu Feng mocked.

"Since that's the case, you can go and die together with them," as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he revealed his Ancestral Armament.

At the same time, he also revealed his rank two True Immortal-level aura without the slightest restraint. Like an invisible tornado, it moved to engulf the entire allied army.

"Come, as if we're afraid of you!" Zi Xunyi shouted. She too unleashed her oppressive might.

Even though Zi Xunyi managed to block the oppressive might unleashed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, she was still pushed back two steps.

Those two steps were caught by everyone. This caused the people from the allied army to feel even more uneasy.

After all, it meant that even though both Zi Xunyi and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were both rank two True Immortals, Zi Xunyi was simply no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Xunyi, do not dirty your hand. It is better that you let me handle a shameless animal like him."

Right at this moment, Ying Mingchao stood up and pushed Zi Xunyi behind him.

"No, Mingchao, you can't. Your injuries..." Zi Xunyi wanted to

stop Ying Mingchao.

Even though Ying Mingchao's injuries had improved, he was still not completely healed. As such, she would naturally not be at ease to have him fight.

"Rest assured, without the help from that Infant Soul Sect bunch, he is simply no match for me."

After Ying Mingchao said those words, his eyes turned dark green. He had unleashed his Divine Power.

Then, he held his Ancestral Armament in his hand and rushed toward to attack the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The current Ying Mingchao simply did not appear like someone who was injured. Instead, he resembled an invincible warrior, a ruler who stood at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"Heh, overestimating one's abilities."

Faced with the incoming Ying Mingchao, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster laughed mockingly.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster no longer held back either. He too unleashed his black gaseous flames and collided with Ying Mingchao.

"Chu Feng," At this moment, Zi Xunyi looked to Chu Feng.

"Senior, let's begin," As Chu Feng spoke, he began to set up a grand spirit formation.

Seeing that Chu Feng understood her intention, Zi Xunyi also began to set up a grand spirit formation.

This was the same grand formation that Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi had jointly set up outside Chen Heavenly City to assist Ying Mingchao.

After all, Ying Mingchao's intention was very clear. He stated that he was no match for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster earlier

only because there were so many people from the Infant Soul Sect supplying their strength to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, in order to pull the wool over people's eyes and not make those fools suspect him, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had evidently come to eliminate them by himself.

While the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster no longer had the assistance of the people from the Infant Soul Sect, Ying Mingchao still possessed the assistance from Chu Feng and the others.

As long as Chu Feng and the others set up that grand spirit formation again, Ying Mingchao's strength should, logically, be a tier above the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's. As such, Ying Mingchao should be able to win this battle.

This time around, Zi Xunyi and Chu Feng were not setting up their spirit formation within their bodies. Instead, they openly joined hands and set up the grand spirit formation directly.

As they were openly setting up the spirit formation, their speed became much faster.

In only a short period of time, they finished setting up the grand spirit formation.

“Buzz~~~”

Once they finished setting up the spirit formation, Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi immediately gathered everyone's power and imbued Ying Mingchao with it using the grand spirit formation.

When Ying Mingchao received this power, his body once again started to shine with golden brightness. Like in the battle before, he once again gained the upper hand.

“Ying Mingchao, did you really think that I would not be able to defeat you without the assistance of everyone from the Infant Soul Sect?”

That said, even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was



now at a disadvantage, he was not scared in the slightest. Not only that, but he even had a mocking smile on his face.

That's right, it was an extremely mocking smile. He was not only mocking Ying Mingchao, but he was also mocking Zi Xunyi and the others.

“What do you mean by that?” Ying Mingchao sensed that the situation was amiss from his words.

“Since I dared to come to take care of you all by myself, I would naturally possess certainty in being able to take care of you all.”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster finished saying those words, a dagger appeared in his previously empty left hand.

It was a golden dagger. The dagger did not appear to be extremely sharp. The reason for that was because dragon-scale like veined patterns filled the dagger.

However, once that golden dagger appeared, the aura of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster immediately increased by several times. In an instant, it surpassed Ying Mingchao's aura.

“That is?”

Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were fighting in close range; they were less than three meters away from one another.

Thus, when Ying Mingchao saw the golden dagger, his expression immediately changed. A deep sense of unease emerged in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

At the moment when Ying Mingchao noticed the specialness of that dagger, the dagger let out a golden light.

That golden light shot straight toward Ying Mingchao's right shoulder. The speed was too fast. Before Ying Mingchao could

react, his right shoulder had been penetrated by the golden light.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly waved his hand and blood splattered everywhere. Ying Mingchao's right arm that he was holding his Ancestral Armament with was sliced off.

# Chapter 2620 - By Killing You

---

“Eeaahhh!!!”

After his right arm was sliced off, Ying Mingchao immediately covered his wound with his left hand. Not only did he immediately move back, but his expression also grew distorted, and he started screaming.

When Ying Mingchao let out his scream, Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng and the others all felt that the situation was extremely bad.

Ying Mingchao was a man of steel. He was most definitely not someone who would scream like that just from a superficial wound.

There was only a single possibility as to why Ying Mingchao screamed like that. That is, the seemingly normal pain from having his arm sliced off was actually an unbearable pain. Otherwise, there would not be a reason for Ying Mingchao to act like this.

“That weapon.”

At this moment, Chu Feng also noticed the golden dagger the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster held in his left hand. It was not an ordinary weapon.

That was simply not an Ancestral Armament. The reason for that was because Chu Feng felt the same sort of aura from that dagger as the aura he felt from Li Yuer’er’s pink sword.

That dagger was an Immortal Armament. This Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually possessed an Immortal Armament.

“You won’t be able to escape.”

Right at the moment when Ying Mingchao was retreating from the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster tossed away the Ancestral Armament he held with his

right hand and grabbed toward Ying Mingchao with his palm.

“Huu, huu, huu~~~”

In an instant, overwhelming suction energy was emitted from the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. In an instant, it completely enveloped Ying Mingchao, who was moving away.

Even though Ying Mingchao was extremely powerful, he was actually like a trapped chicken. No matter how hard he struggled, he was unable to break free from the suction energy. In the end, he could only look on helplessly as he was caught in the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s grasp.

At the moment when Ying Mingchao was about to reach the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not capture Ying Mingchao. Instead, he closed his palm, forming a blade hand, and pierced it directly into Ying Mingchao’s dantian.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

Ying Mingchao let out another painful scream. The reason for that was because the dark black gaseous flames that lingered around the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster were currently pouring into Ying Mingchao’s body in a steady stream.

Ying Mingchao’s skin started to turn purple. Black lines also started to appear on his purple skin. Those black lines were like veins as they covered Ying Mingchao’s entire body.

In this sort of situation, Ying Mingchao’s aura started to grow weaker and weaker. Not to mention rank two True Immortal, his current aura was inferior to even an ordinary Martial Ancestor.

The current Ying Mingchao was like a person suffering from an extreme poison. The sight was truly appalling.

“Do you now know why I dared to come kill you all by myself?”

“The reason for that is because of this Incomplete Immortal

Armament, the Dragonscale Dagger,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said as he fiddled with his golden dagger.

“So that’s actually an Incomplete Immortal Armament?”

After hearing what the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said, Chu Feng finally realized that powerful weapon was not an actual Immortal Armament, but rather an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

However, the weapon in the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s hand possessed a very similar aura to Li Yue’er’s pink sword. This meant that Li Yue’er’s weapon was actually also only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, and not an actual Immortal Armament.

This made sense. After all, Immortal Armaments were extremely powerful. Even though True Immortals were powerful, they remained to only be at the beginning of the Immortal realms. As such, they would naturally not be able to handle a true Immortal Armament.

In fact, Chu Feng felt that even though that dagger was only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was still unable to completely master its control. Instead, he had merely unleashed a portion of its power.

However, even though it was only a portion of its power, it made him invincible in battle and allowed him to easily defeat Ying Mingchao.

From this, it could be seen how powerful Incomplete Immortal Armaments were.

They were weapons that mere Ancestral Armaments could not compare to.

Although it was only an Incomplete Immortal Armament, the disparity between it and Ancestral Armaments was as enormous as the disparity between True Immortals and Martial Ancestors. It was so wide that it was simply uncrossable.

“Let go of Mingchao!!!”

Zi Xunyi shouted anxiously and furiously.

She simply did not care about how the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster managed to defeat Ying Mingchao. All she cared about was Ying Mingchao’s safety.

“Yo, Mingchao here and Mingchao there. That’s quite a close way to call him, no? Seems like you should be Ying Mingchao’s sweetheart, no?”

“You don’t want Ying Mingchao to die? That’s fine. Get on your knees and kowtow to me. Beg me to not kill him and I’ll consider sparing his life,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“You promise?” Zi Xunyi asked.

“Naturally,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Xunyi, you must not! You cannot trust this animal! Do not kneel to this anim...” Ying Mingchao shouted.

“Eeahhh~~~”

However, before Ying Mingchao could finish his words, the hand that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pierced into his dantian started to tremble. Following that, Ying Mingchao sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

That blood was black. Furthermore, it was very gooey, and was even emitting a stink.

After Ying Mingchao vomited out the blood, half of his pitch-black long hair turned white. Even his face aged greatly.

In an instant, his appearance went from that of a middle-aged man to an old man.

“Ying Mingchao, I know that your ego is very big. Truth be told, what our Infant Soul Sect feared the most back then was you.”

“If it wasn’t for the Kong Heavenly Clan and the Zhou Heavenly

Clan's plot to kill you back then, with the momentum that you had, our Infant Soul Sect would've likely already ceased to exist in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"However, things are very different now. The current me is no longer the same as the me from back then. You are no longer a threat to me," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster looked to Ying Mingchao with a beaming smile on his face.

Although he was smiling, his eyes were filled with hatred. It could be seen how much he hated Ying Mingchao.

Chu Feng was able to imagine that Ying Mingchao must've made the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suffer greatly back then. Else, he would not detest Ying Mingchao so much now.

"Release them! If you have the ability, then aim at me!" Ying Mingchao shouted. However, not only was his voice no longer vigorous, but it was instead incomparably weak and hoarse. It was as if a dying old man were speaking.

"Puu~~~"

Right after Ying Mingchao said those words, the hand that had pierced into Ying Mingchao's dantian trembled once more. Then, Ying Mingchao once again vomited a mouthful of blood.

At this moment, Ying Mingchao aged enormously once again. His hair had turned fully white. Wrinkles covered his face. His flesh was gone, and his skin started to cling tightly to his bones.

The current Ying Mingchao simply no longer resembled a vigorous and heroic hero. Instead, he had become someone with one foot in the grave.

"You are unable to even take care of yourself right now," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster mocked. Then, he looked to Zi Xunyi, "His life is in your hands right now. You decide what you want to do."

"I'll kneel, I'll kneel. Please stop torturing him," Zi Xunyi's face

was already covered with tears. As she spoke, she lowered her knees. She was truly planning to kneel.

“Paa~~~”

However, right at this moment, a hand held onto Zi Xunyi’s arm and turned her around.

It was Chu Feng. Not only was Chu Feng currently standing beside Zi Xunyi, but he was also holding onto the Evil God Sword tightly.

“Senior Zi, even if you are to kneel to someone like him, he will definitely not spare Senior Ying.”

“In fact, he simply never planned to spare any of us.”

“There is only one way to save Senior Ying from his hands,” Chu Feng said to Zi Xunyi.

“And what might that be?” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked with a beaming smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng turned his murderous-looking gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

With an incomparably cold tone, he said, “By killing you!!!”



# Chapter 2621 - Overflowing Demoniac Aura

---

“Killing me? What makes you think you can kill me?”

“Could it be that you think the Incomplete Imperial Armament in your hand will be able to kill me?”

“Oh, my mistake, that’s not an Incomplete Imperial Armament that you’re holding. Rather, that’s a Demon Armament. I’ve heard that it’s quite powerful too. Wasn’t it said that it could kill True Immortals?”

“However, I’ve also heard that you will suffer from a backlash from your Demon Armament after using it. Furthermore, it seems that backlash is quite intense too,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said to Chu Feng mockingly.

Even though Chu Feng had unleashed his Evil God Sword, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was still looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of expression that he was looking at Ying Mingchao with earlier -- an expression of disdain.

He had simply never placed Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword in his eyes at all.

“You will soon know what sort of power it possesses,” Chu Feng said coldly.

“It would appear that you are determined to fight against me?”

“Chu Feng, don’t say that I haven’t warned you. Even if you are to use your Evil God Sword, you will still simply not be a match for me.”

“The reason for that is because the Dragonscale Dagger in my hand is an actual Incomplete Immortal Armament!!!”

As the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke, he raised the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand. A golden ray shot into the sky. Upon reaching the sky, that golden ray started to

spread. In the blink of an eye, it fused with the black gaseous flames.

The golden radiance and the black gaseous flames were reflecting upon one another. As they covered the sky, it was as if light had fused with darkness. It gave off a peculiarly shocking sensation.

Most importantly, the enormous power of that Incomplete Immortal Armament was fully revealed.

Not only was the appearance of the sky changed, but one could feel the might of the Incomplete Immortal Armament from several miles away.

The allied army that was in the center of the Incomplete Immortal Armament's might was pushed back repeatedly. Even Zi Xunyi was unable to withstand it.

That said, it was fortunate that Zi Xunyi was here. Otherwise, Chu Feng and the others would've already been completely destroyed by that oppressive might.

Sure enough, that was a weapon that Ancestral Armaments could not compare against. Even rank two True Immortals were unable to contend against it.

"No matter how strong a Demon might be, it is still powerless before an Immortal. For your Demon Armament to encounter my Dragonscale Dagger, it is like a rain dragon encountering an true dragon. The only possible end will be for it to be suppressed," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke proudly.

"Is that so?"

Right at this moment, Chu Feng tightened his grasp on his Evil God Sword. Then, his power started to flow into the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, the Evil God Sword that originally appeared to be extremely ordinary started to emit crimson gaseous flames. Wave upon wave, the flames twisted about the sword.

“Rumble~~~”

Immediately afterward, with the sky above Chu Feng’s head as the center, crimson clouds appeared in the sky covered by the dark black gaseous flames and the golden radiance.

The crimson clouds were surging violently. In the blink of an eye, they completely swallowed the dark black gaseous flames and the golden radiance.

At this moment, the only thing present in the sky were the crimson clouds.

The crimson clouds surged about in a very imposing and domineering manner. It was as if they were telling everyone that this was its domain.

The crimson clouds were overflowing with demonic aura. Before this demonic aura, the heinous air emitted by the dark black gaseous flames that covered the sky earlier were simply unable to compare.

At this moment, not to mention the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, even the people behind Chu Feng turned pale with fear.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s body was currently completely covered by crimson gaseous flames. Chu Feng was also emitting boundless amounts of demonic aura from his body.

That demonic aura was simply too frightening. It was simply the most frightening aura that all these people had ever felt.

Even though Chu Feng was not targeting them, they felt their blood run cold and felt fear from the bottoms of their hearts.

In fact, even the previous complacent Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a frown on his face after seeing the sky covered by the crimson clouds.

When he looked to Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword again, there was

no longer the disdain he revealed earlier in his eyes. Instead, a restraining fear had emerged in his eyes.

“Quite an imposing aura. Merely, I wonder if it is true ability, or a bluff,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“You will soon know whether it is a bluff or not,” Chu Feng said indifferently. After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng’s eyes suddenly turned sharp.

He suddenly pointed his Evil God Sword at the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Then, from the crimson clouds in the sky, several hundred clusters of crimson gaseous flames were shot down.

Those crimson gaseous flames were very peculiar. They were like vines. They were connected to the crimson clouds, but were also extending rapidly. With an unimaginable speed, they pierced toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had originally thought that Chu Feng’s attack would strike toward him directly from the Evil God Sword when Chu Feng pointed it at him.

As such, he never anticipated for the crimson clouds to contain the Evil God Sword’s power. Moreover, he never expected that Chu Feng would be able to control that power to unleash such a fierce attack.

Being caught off-guard, he immediately slashed with his Dragonscale Dagger and sent forth many golden blade rays to slice apart the crimson gaseous flames. However, even with that being the case, he was still pierced by a crimson gaseous flame.

That crimson gaseous flame pierced into the arm that he was grabbing Ying Mingchao with. Then, a ‘rip’ was heard as gaseous flames emerged from his arm.

“Ahhh!!!”

At the same time that happened, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster let out a painful scream.

Half of his arm had already been sliced off by the crimson gaseous flames. To be exact, it was not sliced off, but rather burned off.

After the arm was burned, the crimson gaseous flames actually wound around Ying Mingchao and tossed him toward Chu Feng and the others.

That said, even though they were both covered by the crimson gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster ended up having his arm burned off, whereas Ying Mingchao was completely unharmed.

“Exactly what the hell is this?!”

At this moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was still grimacing in pain. When he looked to the location of his burned arm, he started to panic even more.

At this moment, crimson gaseous flames were still present on his arm. Although the speed was very slow, they were still burning away at his arm.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster tried to use the black gaseous flames from his demonic technique to try to extinguish the crimson gaseous flames to relieve his pain, heal his injuries and regrow his arm.

However, even though he possessed an extremely vast amount of dark black gaseous flames in his body, so much that it was like the vast sea against a little stream when compared to the crimson gaseous flames burning away at his arm, when his dark black gaseous flames moved toward the crimson gaseous flames, they not only failed to extinguish it, but they instead increased its size and intensity.

The dark black gaseous flames emitted by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were actually devoured by the crimson gaseous flames.

Not only had the crimson gaseous flames devoured the dark black

gaseous flames, but they also transformed its power to its own.

The strangeness of the crimson gaseous flames had completely surpassed the anticipation of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Damn it!”

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster raised the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand and hacked it down upon his burning arm.

He had directly sliced off the portion of his arm that was affected by the crimson gaseous flames.

This was the only option he had. Otherwise... if the crimson gaseous flames were to continue spreading, they would sooner or later cover his entire body. At that time, he might be killed.

After he sliced off his arm, he was now able to heal his injury. In the blink of an eye, he reformed his arm.

Merely, at this moment, there was no longer only restraining fear in his eyes when he looked to Chu Feng's Evil God Sword. Instead, there was deep fear.

## Chapter 2622 - Unable To Contend Against

---

“Exactly where did you obtain that Demon Armament of yours?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Instead, he turned to Zi Xunyi, who had caught Ying Mingchao, “Senior, bring them away from here.”

“No, we cannot leave you here alone,” Before Zi Xunyi could answer, Zhao Hong voiced her disagreement.

“Listen to me, get away from here!”

Chu Feng shouted. His tone actually contained intense amount of anger.

Once his words were said, the expressions of the crowd from the allied army all changed.

The reason for that was because not only did they feel anger from Chu Feng’s tone, but they even felt killing intent when Chu Feng said those words.

That killing intent was ice-cold. It did not appear to be there merely to scare them. It was as if... Chu Feng would really end up killing them.

“Everyone, we will not be able to help little friend Chu Feng by staying here. Only by leaving will we be able to help him. Let’s get away from here.”

Right at this moment, Kong Shunlian spoke to urge the crowd to leave. Following him, Kong Yuehua and the guardian clan’s clan chief also began to urge the crowd to leave.

They were people that had experienced the might of Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword. Thus, they knew that Chu Feng would suffer a backlash from using the Evil God Sword.

In the end, Chu Feng would not be able to control himself, and

would be devoured by the Demon Armament.

If they did not leave now, then they... would soon not only be people that Chu Feng would have to protect, but they would also... become people that Chu Feng would slaughter.

“Leave now!!!” Chu Feng shouted.

At that moment, the crimson clouds in the sky surged about even more violently. In fact, it was no longer as simple as only surging about.

The reason for that was because strange sounds were being emitted by the crimson clouds as they surged about. Those sounds were too strange, so strange that the crowd trembled with fear upon hearing them.

“Let’s go.”

Seeing the situation at hand, Zi Xunyi no longer hesitated. She led the crowd and left.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not stop them. At that moment, he was staring at Chu Feng.

“Hey! I am asking you a question here!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster called for Chu Feng.

“You wish to talk with me? I’m sorry, but I have no time to bother with your rubbish. Right now... there is only one thing that I wish to do.”

“As for that, it is to make you suffer a miserable death,” Chu Feng said to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

When Chu Feng said those words, his eyes turned blood-red. It was as if they were simply no longer his eyes at all.

Furthermore, an extremely wicked smile emerged on Chu Feng’s face.

The current Chu Feng was filled with a heinous air, filled with a demonic aura. Even though he had the same appearance as before,



the crimson gaseous flames that covered him were rising nonstop.

At a glance, he no longer resembled a human. Rather, he resembled an actual... demon!!!

“Don’t you try to scare me. I have trained in the Infant Soul Demonic Technique for this long, and refined countless infants. You are simply seeking your own disgrace by pretending to be a demon before me!!!”

“I shall have you know exactly what an actual demon is!!!”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished saying those words, dark black gaseous flames exploded out from his body. The dark black gaseous flames no longer entered the sky. Instead, they began to revolve around him, taking his image.

Although the body of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster remained unchanged, the dark black gaseous flames were simply too overwhelming. As such, the image that they formed was simply enormous. It was like a black flame giant.

Most importantly, it was not only enormous, but the black gaseous flames were also emitting extremely sinister and horrifying infant cries. They were like the roars of ghosts that had died unjustly and sought revenge.

A heinous air. Boundless amount of heinous air filled the entire surrounding region.

If it were someone else, they would most definitely be scared witless upon seeing such an Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, Chu Feng’s expression remained unchanged. Moreover, the smile he had on his face became more and more mocking.

“You dare look down on me?! I will have you know how powerful I am right now!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew incomparably furious.

The Dragonscale Dagger in his hand started to shine brightly with golden light.

As he waved his arm unceasingly, countless golden blade rays were shot forth. Like a golden torrential rain, they flew toward Chu Feng.

However, faced with such an attack by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, Chu Feng did not even bother to move. In fact, he did not even bother to move the Evil God Sword in his hand.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Although Chu Feng did not move, countless clusters of crimson gaseous flame flew down from the crimson clouds in the sky above. Like a wall, they appeared before Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

The next moment, the golden blade rays started to bombard the crimson gaseous flames.

However, when the golden blade rays finished bombarding the crimson gaseous flames, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was shocked to discover that not a single one of the many vine-like crimson gaseous flames that had emerged from the sky were damaged by the golden blade rays.

“How could this be?!” At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster grew extremely panicked.

Earlier, when the crimson gaseous flames were attacking him, he was able to easily slice them apart with the golden blade rays sent forth by the Dragonscale Dagger.

However, even though he had clearly increased the power of the golden blade rays just now, he was actually unable to cause any damage to the crimson gaseous flames.

There could only be one possible explanation for this -- the crimson gaseous flames had become more powerful, so powerful

that he could not contend against them.

“You’re a demon?” Right at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

“You are nothing more than an animal completely devoid of conscience who only knows about bullying the small and weak.”

“Demon, how could someone like you possibly qualify for the title of demon?”

After Chu Feng finished saying those words, crimson gaseous flames began to descend from everywhere the crimson clouds covered the sky.

At a glance, there were millions and millions of vine-like crimson gaseous flames shooting straight down from the crimson clouds.

It was an extremely frightening sight.

That said, a sight like that was also extremely spectacular.

However, that sight was akin to a nightmare to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Seeing it, he became extremely frightened.

The current him was unable to even cut apart a single crimson stretch of gaseous flames. As such, facing millions and millions of crimson gaseous flames, he had no idea what to do.

“God damn it!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was no longer as egotistical and arrogant as he was before. He was so scared that his face turned pale and his body started shivering.

Suddenly, his body shifted, and he disappeared.

He had escaped. He knew that he was no match for Chu Feng. Thus, he chose to escape.

Afraid that Chu Feng would capture him, he deliberately used special methods to conceal himself.

However, Chu Feng did not panic at all upon seeing the escape attempt. In fact, he had the same mocking smile on his face the

entire time.

Mockery, it was truly mockery.

It was as if a fierce tiger was mocking a mouse before killing it.

The mouse has already entered the tiger's killing range, yet it was still attempting to escape. Oh how ridiculous that was.

“Eeahhh!!!”

As expected, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's miserable scream soon sounded from the distance.

There was a stretch of crimson gaseous flames at the location where the scream had sounded. Merely, that stretch of crimson gaseous flames was different from the others. It was coiling around something.

As for that something, it was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Following that miserable scream, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster soon appeared.

The current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was in a very sorry state.

This time around, his entire body was covered by the crimson gaseous flames. The crimson gaseous flames were current burning away at his body.

Thus, his screams were over a hundred times more miserable than the time when his arm was being burned away.

It was truly a pain so miserable that he wished he was dead.

## Chapter 2623 - Fleeing In Defeat

---

“Chu Feng, don’t kill me! I beg of you, please don’t kill me, please don’t kill me!!!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster actually began to beg Chu Feng for forgiveness.

“You don’t want to die?”

“Very well, get down on your knees, kowtow and beg me,” Chu Feng said to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

He made the same demand as the one the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster made to Zi Xunyi earlier.

As Chu Feng made that demand, the crimson gaseous flames that had surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster released him.

The intention of this action was very obvious. Chu Feng wanted the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to kneel before him and beg for forgiveness.

“Chu Feng, please spare me, please spare me. As long as you spare my life, I will agree to do whatever you want me to do.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster kneeled in midair without the slightest hesitation. He began to kowtow and beg Chu Feng for forgiveness repeatedly.

His actions could be said to be very natural and unforced. There was not the slightest bit of hesitation at all.

However, Chu Feng had already anticipated such a thing.

Chu Feng had long since known that the great majority of the evildoers were people that would bully the weak but fear the strong. Before the weak, they would act like unyielding tough guys. However, when before the strong, their true, cowardly natures would be fully revealed.

Of course, there were most definitely unyielding and strong-

willed evildoers. Merely, their numbers were relatively small.

That said, this was also understandable. After all, being craven and cowardly was human nature.

Not to mention the evildoers, even the great majority of benevolent individuals were afraid of death.

In other words, what was rare were those that were not afraid of death.

“Chu Feng, please spare me. I am willing to do whatever you want me to do.”

Seeing that Chu Feng did not have any response, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew even more earnest in his begging. Even though he was clearly in the sky, resounding slamming noises could be heard every time he kowtowed to Chu Feng. His forehead even became bloody.

From this, it could be seen how earnestly he was in his begging for forgiveness.

“Did you ever think that you would see such a day when you killed those infants?” Chu Feng asked the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“You... what do you mean by that?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pulled his pupils back. He noticed that the situation was amiss.

“I am going to have you pay the price,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, several stretches of crimson gaseous flames flew over. They tightly surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“I have already begged you for forgiveness, why are you still planning to kill me?!”

“Ahhh~~~~, bastard, let me go!!!”

“Chu Feng, you are going back on your promise!!!”

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster screamed as he questioned Chu Feng's action.

"You're mistaken. I, Chu Feng, have always been one to keep my promises. Earlier, I said that I would have you die a miserable death."

"Thus, I will definitely make you suffer a miserable death."

"Nothing that I said after that was valid at all," Chu Feng said mockingly.

"You!!!"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to gnash his teeth furiously. However, he was powerless to do anything.

The reason for that was because he discovered that the disparity between his power and the Evil God Sword was simply too enormous. They were simply not on the same level at all.

He was filled with regret. By the time he discovered this, it was already too late.

"Save me! Save me!!!"

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to shout.

Hearing those shouts, Chu Feng's expression changed. He discovered that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's cry for help was not aimed at him. Instead, it was meant for someone else.

There was someone behind the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster?

"Who are you talking to?" Chu Feng asked coldly.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not answer Chu Feng. Instead, he continued to cry 'save me.'

"If you do not tell me, I will make you suffer so much that you'll wish you're dead," Chu Feng spoke coldly.

After Chu Feng said those words, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster began to sustain even greater sufferings.

The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to flicker with a dark black radiance. Even its aura became increasingly strange.

The torture that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was bearing at that moment was most definitely not as simple as just being burned.

“Speak!!!” Chu Feng shouted.

However, to Chu Feng's surprise, even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was in so much pain that he wished he was dead, he still refused to answer Chu Feng's question.

“Boy, you will not be able to obtain the answer from him. Let this Evil God help you.”

Right at that moment, a voice sounded by Chu Feng's ear. It was the Evil God Sword's voice.

When the Evil God Sword's voice was heard, Chu Feng felt that his body as well as his consciousness were being attacked.

It was an extremely intense attack from the Evil God Sword. The Evil God Sword was trying to invade his body and forcibly seize it.

“Damn it, at such a time!”

At that moment, Chu Feng looked to the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster with a gaze filled with irreconciliation.

He wanted to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. However, at that moment... he was unable to do so.

The reason for that was because he could not continue to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword. If he were to continue to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword, he would have his body seized by the Evil God Sword once again.

Chu Feng had no idea whether he would be as fortunate as he was last time if his body was seized again.

Thinking about that, Chu Feng wanted to put his Evil God Sword



away. However, he was shocked to discover that the Evil God Sword seemed to be stuck to his hand. Even though he wanted to put it away, he was unable to do so.

It was not only the hand that he held the Evil God Sword with. At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if his entire body was no longer under his control.

“Boy, even your body has grown fond of this Evil God’s powers.”

“Even your body is unwilling to break away from this Evil God. You want to break away from this Evil God, are you really capable of doing that?” The Evil God Sword’s mocking voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“My apologies, I am the one to decide upon my own body,” After Chu Feng finished saying those words, he gathered up his spirit and cast it upon the hand that he was holding the Evil God Sword with. Chu Feng needed to immediately release the Evil God Sword. Else... he would be in danger.

When Chu Feng began to battle against the Evil God Sword, the crimson clouds that filled the sky started to gradually dissipate.

Naturally, as the crimson clouds in the sky started to dissipate, the crimson gaseous flames that surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster also started to dissipate.

Although the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had regained his liberty after the crimson gaseous flames dissipated, not only were his clothes all burned away, but he was completely changed beyond recognition.

He was still screaming in pain. It was only after a while that he realized that he had managed to escape from the crimson flames.

Upon discovering that he had broken free, the first thing the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did was turn his gaze toward Chu Feng.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was unable to hear the

conversation between Chu Feng and the Evil God Sword. He was only able to see that Chu Feng was tightly holding onto the Evil God Sword. As for the hand that he was holding the Evil God Sword with, it was trembling violently.

“Is he receiving the backlash?”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster felt that to be what had happened. The reason for that was because Chu Feng’s eyes were tightly closed. He was not looking at him. The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded Chu Feng was also extremely unstable.

This Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was, after all, an old monster that had lived for thousands of years. He was able to tell with a single glance that Chu Feng was resisting the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Truly, the Heavens are helping me!”

Seeing that an opportunity had arrived, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster resisted the pain with great difficulty and tightly held the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand.

He planned to seize this opportunity to kill Chu Feng.

However, right after that thought came to his mind, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster suddenly ceased all movement.

Intense fear appeared in his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

That’s right. He was afraid. He did not dare to attack Chu Feng again.

He feared that he would not be a match for Chu Feng. If Chu Feng were to attack him again, he would most definitely die.

“Woosh~~~”

After a series of mental struggles, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not attack Chu Feng. Instead, he turned around and started flying toward the direction of Chen Heavenly City.

He had actually fled.

# Chapter 2624 - Astonishingly Beautiful

---

Chu Feng did not know that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had fled. At that moment, all of Chu Feng's focus was on fighting against the Evil God Sword.

He discovered that the power of the Evil God Sword had grown stronger and stronger. Even though he had clearly only used the Evil God Sword for a very short period of time at that moment, the power of the Evil God Sword was very fierce, and much stronger than before.

It was so strong that Chu Feng found it very difficult to break free from it.

“Wuu~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng felt an acute pain from his right arm that he held the Evil God Sword with.

The next moment, the attack the Evil God Sword was unleashing against him also started to decline.

Chu Feng's consciousness began to return. When he opened his eyes, he discovered a beautiful woman standing before him.

It was a young girl with a petite build. However, her proportions were superb.

As for that young woman's face, it was awfully beautiful. Her large eyes were extremely enchanting.

Merely, she gave off an ice-cold air. That ice-coldness she emitted was not a disguise. Rather, it originated from deep within her.

Fortunately, she was wearing a long yellow skirt. Although that skirt was not very dazzling, it gave her a sort of brightness that complemented her coldness, making her seem less cold and detached.

Coincidentally, right when Chu Feng cast his gaze toward the

young girl, a burst of wind just so happened to blow past. It lifted up the girl's long skirt and revealed her fair and beautiful legs.

With those legs, the beauty of the young girl was immediately increased to the extreme.

Beautiful. She was most definitely a rarely seen beauty.

Chu Feng had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for some time now. He had also seen many beauties.

However, this beauty was definitely the most stunning beauty Chu Feng had ever laid his eyes on.

That said, Chu Feng actually knew that beauty. Merely, Chu Feng was still astonished upon seeing her. He was deeply charmed by her beauty.

The reason for that was because that young girl was Li Yue'er.

Li Yue'er who had always dressed up in male outfits was actually wearing a typical female outfit. In a female outfit, she was truly stunning.

Even someone like Chu Feng who had seen countless beauties before was deeply attracted by her beauty.

Perhaps it was because Chu Feng had accidentally touched that area when Li Yue'er was wearing a male outfit, but Chu Feng started to involuntarily cast his gaze toward that area.

At that moment, he discovered that her development in that area was truly quite ample. It was no wonder that the sensation felt that good.

As Chu Feng began to survey Li Yue'er up and down with his gaze, Li Yue'er's face turned red like an apple. Then, she glared fiercely at Chu Feng and said, "Continue looking, if you are to continue looking, you're going to bleed to death."

"Eh?" Chu Feng only realized the pain in his right arm after hearing what Li Yue'er said. He looked over and discovered that

his right arm had actually been severed. His severed arm was on the ground.

However, even with that being the case, that severed arm was still tightly holding onto the Evil God Sword.

“Why are you so fierce after all this time? We have only just met, yet you’ve already decided to chop off my hand again?” Chu Feng said.

“If I didn’t chop of your arm, would you be able to break free from that Demon Armament?” Li Yue’er asked.

“Hehe, I knew that you were doing it for my sake. Thanks girl,” Chu Feng laughed mischievously.

How could he not know that Li Yue’er had hacked off his arm for his sake?

Earlier, Chu Feng’s entire body was not under his control. If it wasn’t for Li Yue’er severing his arm, he might really not have been able to break free from the Evil God Sword’s evil clutches.

As Chu Feng expressed his thanks, he extended his hand toward his severed arm on the ground. Even though he was over ten thousand meters in the air, his severed arm was instantly sucked into his grasp.

After the severed arm entered his hand, Chu Feng removed the Evil God Sword from it. Then, he placed his severed arm onto his severed wound.

With merely a thought, his spirit power surged forth. Not only did he manage to suture his arm without a single scar, but even his severed clothes were restored with his arm.

“You’re still planning to keep that sword?” Seeing that Chu Feng had put the Evil God Sword away, Li Yue’er narrowed her eyebrows slightly.

“Although it is a bit dangerous, it remains to be a method to save

myself. For example, it saved me this time around,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Is it really only a bit dangerous?”

Li Yue’er started to frown. She had witnessed the scene earlier in its entirety.

Even now, she felt lingering fear as she recalled the crimson clouds that had covered the sky and the demonic aura that had enveloped the earth.

That was truly a power capable of utter devastation.

“You should find a place to seal that sword. That sword is too strange. It is most definitely not an ordinary Demon Armament,” Li Yue’er said.

Chu Feng’s heart moved upon hearing what Li Yue’er said. Li Yue’er should possess an extraordinary origin. She knew much more than the people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

When even she gave the Evil God Sword such an evaluation, it verified to Chu Feng that the Evil God Sword was extremely remarkable.

That was understandable too. After all, the Evil God Sword was a weapon that not even his father could see through.

“I know what to do,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Even though he knew that the Evil God Sword was very dangerous, he still decided to continue to carry it with him.

“Do as you wish,” Seeing that Chu Feng was insistent on keeping the Evil God Sword, Li Yue’er no longer tried to urge him against it.

However, she still cast a glance at Chu Feng. It was a cold and detached glance. It was as if she was stating to him ‘your life and death is none of my concern.’

“Why would you appear here? You couldn’t possibly have been worried about me, right?” Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Yue’er cast a cold side-eye at Chu Feng. She said, “I have come to enjoy the liveliness. It is pure coincidence that I ran into you all.”

“That’s what I expected,” Chu Feng was not surprised by that answer. How could someone with Li Yue’er’s personality go out of her way to deliberately come find him?

Moreover, Li Yue’er should not know that he was there.

“I am leaving. I figured I might as well bid you farewell before leaving,” Li Yue’er said.

What Li Yue’er said next completely shifted the topic around. She originally said that she did not come to deliberately find Chu Feng.

However, what she now said was clearly indicating that she actually had deliberately come to find Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng sighed. That girl Li Yue’er was truly amusing.

However, Chu Feng was also feeling a bit glad. This ice-cold and detached girl had decided to deliberately made the trip to bid him farewell. This meant that she must consider him to be her friend.

“Where are you going? Are you returning home?” Chu Feng asked. He had long since known that Li Yue’er was definitely not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. A girl as talented as her was most definitely from the Upper Realms.

“No, I’m not returning home. Merely, I’ll be changing my training place,” Li Yue’er said.

“Where to?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Li Yue’er said.

“In that case, we might meet again in the future,” Chu Feng said

with a slight smile.

“Although this place is under the control of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and the teleportation formations here also lead to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, if you do not wish to go to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, I can help bring you to the Upper Realm that you want to go to,” Li Yue’er said.

“You truly have a lot of abilities. However, there’s no need for that. After all, the place that I want to go the most is the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Feng said.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly frowned. His previously smiling face was immediately replaced with an expression of pain.

In an instant, Chu Feng’s face turned paper pale. He was also clenching his fists tightly.

Upon closer inspection, Li Yue’er could see that Chu Feng’s entire body was shaking. He was trembling in pain.

“What’s wrong?” Li Yue’er immediately lent an arm to support Chu Feng.

“It’s the Demon Armament’s backlash,” Chu Feng said with great difficulty.



# Chapter 2625 - The Culprit From Behind The Shadows

---

“Backlash?”

After hearing that, Li Yue’er took out a golden medicinal pellet and handed it to Chu Feng, “Quickly, swallow that.”

“It’s useless,” Chu Feng shook his head.

“I said swallow it, so swallow it,” Li Yue’er forcibly shoved the medicinal pellet into Chu Feng’s mouth.

Then, she brought Chu Feng and started flying into the distance.

Chu Feng was surprised to discover that the medicinal pellet actually started to refine itself once it entered his mouth. It turned into strands of energy that assimilated with the various areas of his body.

At that moment, a warm current filled Chu Feng’s entire body. As the warm current moved through his body, Chu Feng’s unbearable pain actually really managed to improve greatly.

As that medicinal pellet possessed miraculous effects, Chu Feng knew that medicinal pellet was most definitely of considerable value. Else, it would be impossible for it to be able to curb the Evil God Sword’s backlash.

Once again, he owed Li Yue’er another favor.

“Girl, the speed at which your cultivation increases is truly fast,” At that moment, Chu Feng had noticed that Li Yue’er was traveling extremely fast even while bringing him along.

Li Yue’er’s cultivation was no longer that of a peak Martial Ancestor. She had already reached a breakthrough. Currently, she was a rank one True Immortal.

“Peak Martial Ancestor is not some sort of difficult mountain

pass. With your cultivation, you will, sooner or later, also reach a breakthrough,” Li Yue’er said.

However, after she finished saying those words, she discovered that Chu Feng did not answer her. Thus, she took a glance at Chu Feng.

It was only then that she discovered that Chu Feng was currently sweating immensely. His entire face was twisted. He seemed to be in even more pain than before.

“That medicinal pellet of mine should be especially effective against backlashes. Could it be that it’s ineffective?” Li Yue’er asked.

However, Chu Feng was in so much pain that he was nearly about to lose consciousness. The pain he was suffering was many times stronger than before Li Yue’er fed him the medicinal pellet.

That sort of pain was not something imaginable. It was as if his soul was being torn away by someone nonstop. Then, after it was completely torn apart, his soul would be reformed only to be torn apart again.

It was his soul, and not his body.

To a person of Chu Feng’s cultivation, physical pain was nothing serious. Only pain to one’s soul could be fatal.

If their physical body was destroyed, it could be reformed. However, if their soul was destroyed, there would be no cure, and they would truly die.

The pain that Chu Feng was suffering from at that moment was pain that originated from his soul.

Furthermore, the backlash this time was simply too powerful. Soon, Chu Feng’s consciousness grew completely fuzzy. Then, he lost consciousness.

.....

At the Southwestern region of Chen Heavenly City was an ancient mountain range. The peak of that mountain range reached above the clouds. It was an extremely cold region covered in snow all year round.

Inside a cave within this extremely cold region was the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. He was hiding there.

Even though that place was extremely ice-cold, his body was emitting steam.

Not only did the steam completely melt away the snow inside the cave, but it even melted away the snow covering the mountain peak.

After the Evil God Sword's power disappeared, the crimson gaseous flames that bound him also disappeared.

However, many crimson scars were left behind on his body. Not only were those scars emitting steam, but they were also inflicting him with unbearable pain.

Most importantly, he was unable to cure or heal those scars.

"Save me, Milord, I beg of you, please save me. I am soon to be unable to endure this anymore."

Resisting the pain he felt with great difficulty, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster kneeled onto the ground and begged.

However, before him was not a soul in sight.

"Buzz~~~"

Suddenly, a figure appeared before him. That person possessed white hair and gave off an extraordinary air.

That person... was actually the old man with the greatest seniority and strongest strength among the three Chu Heavenly Clansmen who were looking down on what was happening in Chen Heavenly City from above the clouds.

"Useless trash."

“You started to cry for me to help you right before Chu Feng. Did you know... that you’ve already exposed me?”

The old man looked to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster and spoke coldly. Ice-cold anger filled his eyes.

“Milord, I swear to the heavens that I did not mention your name to that Chu Feng.”

“In this world, apart from this lowly one here, there is no one who knows of your existence.”

“Milord, I beg of you, please save me. I do not want to die. I really don’t want to die.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was kneeling, kowtowing and begging nonstop.

However, that old man simply ignored him.

“Milord, as long as you save me, I will definitely accomplish what you wanted me to do. If I am to die, no one in the Infant Soul Sect will be able to properly accomplish that task,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster continued.

Originally, the old man’s expression remained unchanged from his begging. However, he was immediately moved upon hearing the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster mention the task that he gave him.

After a moment of silence, the old man took out a jade bottle from his Cosmos Sack.

Once he opened the jade bottle, a refreshing aura was immediately emitted from it. The old man gently flicked the jade bottle, and a droplet of water emerged from it. That droplet of water lightly landed on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“Buzz~~~”

Once the water droplet landed on him, it started to rapidly expand in size. “Splash~~” The water droplet formed an enormous

jade green splash of water that completely covered the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The splash of water did not roll down the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body. Rather, it stuck to his body and started to bubble. It was as if the splash of water was healing him.

However, that splash of water only lasted for an instant before disappearing.

It was as if a splash of water had fallen into a dry desert. Not only was it instantly absorbed, but there was not even the slightest trace of its existence remaining afterwards.

“Mn?”

Seeing this scene, the old man started to frown. Evidently... the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's injury was much more difficult to treat than he had originally anticipated.

Then, the old man flicked ten more droplets of water out of the jade bottle. All of the water droplets landed on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

This time around, it took a bit longer for the splashes of water to disappear. However, they still disappeared quickly. They were all engulfed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body.

To be exact, they were all engulfed by the scars on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body

With that being the case, the old man had no choice but to continue to increase the amount of water droplets. After using roughly half of the water in the jade bottle, the scars on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's body were finally healed.

“Milord, thank you for saving me, thank you for saving me!!!”

“I, Hun Poyuan, will forever remember Milord for saving my life.”

After his injuries were cured, Hun Poyuan looked to his healed

body and was completely overjoyed. He began to kowtow to the old man nonstop.

As he was suffering from his injuries earlier, he knew very well how frightening his injuries were. They were injuries that he was unable to remove. Those scars were capable of burning away his soul. If it wasn't for that old man saving him, he knew that he might not even be able to live to the end of the day.

However, faced with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's thankfulness, that old man did not even bother to take a single glance at him. He merely looked to the jade bottle in his hand. A distressed expression filled his eyes.

"If you are to mess up this matter, I will definitely make you suffer pain a hundredfold, a thousandfold, that of what you've suffered here today. Then, I will take away your life." The old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan said coldly.

"Milord, please rest assured. I will definitely not let down the trust Milord had placed upon me. I will definitely handle things properly," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster guaranteed.

"Don't speak it so quickly. That Chu Feng is still alive," The old man said.

"He's still alive?" Hearing those words, the expression of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster changed. A deep restraining fear emerged in his eyes.

"Milord, that Chu Feng's Demon Armament is simply too strange. This lowly one is not a match for him. Milord, could you..." When he reached this point, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to hesitate. However, he still clenched his teeth and said, "Milord, can you help this lowly one eliminate that Chu Feng?"

"That Chu Feng has killed someone from our Chu Heavenly Clan. If I could act, how could he have lived till today?"

“But, what sort of status do we possess? How could we possibly involve ourselves in matters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

“If I could kill him directly myself, how could there be a need for a trash like you to help me? This old man would have completely taken care of everything by now,” The old man spoke angrily.

## Chapter 2626 - Disgrace

---

“But, Milord... that Chu Feng feels enormous hatred toward me. In the future, he will definitely find me, and I am no match for him.”

“If he is to find me, this lowly one will not be able to accomplish the mission that Milord has given me,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Are you threatening me?” The old man narrowed his eyebrows. Immediately, boundless killing intent filled the entire cave.

“No, this lowly one would not dare.” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster immediately kneeled onto the ground. He did not dare to raise his head again.

“Actually, in the battle at the Kong Heavenly Clan, Chu Feng’s Demon Armament was suppressed by a Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. As long as you obtain that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, you will be able to curb his Evil God Sword. With his abilities, how could he possibly contend against you then?” That old man said.

“Demon Armament Suppression Talisman? Where is that thing right now?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

“It is in the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief’s possession,” The old man replied.

“That Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief has disappeared for a very long time now. Where should I go to find him?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a difficult expression.

“Humph, truly slow-witted. Everything that occurs in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is in my eyes. While others might not know where that Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief might be, how could this old man not know?” That old man said.

“What Milord says is extremely correct. This lowly one was truly



slow-witted,” After hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed a joyous expression.

However, he seemed to immediately recall something else. His expression changed slightly. Then, he asked, “Although this lowly one is slow-witted, I am still able to tell that the Demon Armament Chu Feng possessed is most definitely not an ordinary item. As such, how could the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief possess a treasure capable of curbing that Demon Armament?”

“He would naturally not be able to possess such a treasure. It is something given to him by a grand individual,” The old man said.

“Then, who is it that gave it to him?” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster asked.

“You are asking too many foolish questions,” After hearing those words, the old man was immediately furious. He shouted, “Since your injuries have been healed, why are you still here? Go and finish the task!”

After he finished saying those words, the old man tossed a stone toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Written on the stone was the location where the Zhou Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was currently hiding. Upon receiving the stone, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster respectfully bid his farewell to the old man and then left immediately. He proceeded to the location written on the stone.

He knew very well that he was only able to defeat Ying Mingchao because of that Incomplete Immortal Armament. As for that Incomplete Immortal Armament, it was given to him by the old man.

It was that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan who had bestowed upon him power surpassing everyone else in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, he also knew very well that his life was no longer his to

control since the day that old man got in contact with him.

If he wanted to live, then he must do one thing. That is... he must obey every word from that old man.

After the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster left, the old man did not immediately leave.

Instead, he looked into the distance and softly muttered, "Ever since Chu Feng entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm has become completely different. Those that originally did not meddle with things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm all started to involve themselves because of that Chu Feng."

"But... exactly who is it that gave them the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman? Originally, I thought he was someone with a conflict against Chu Feng, and that he would eliminate Chu Feng. However, he evidently did not do that."

"Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, exactly what is your origin? Could it be that you really are his descendant?"

Thinking about that, the old man started to tightly clench his fists that were within his sleeves.

Although he was tasked with monitoring the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, there were many things that he possessed no knowledge of.

This was especially true in regards to the many secrets concerning Chu Feng. Even now, he had no answer to them.

That was precisely the reason why he became furious when the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked about the origin of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

The reason for that was because he did not know who the owner of that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was. This made him feel a sense of failure.

Even though he should be an existence akin to a god in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was unable to control everything like a god.

The old man let out a soft sigh. However, he still didn't leave. He seemed to be waiting for something.

“Senior.”

After roughly six hours passed, the middle-aged man from the Chu Heavenly Clan flew over from afar. He landed before the old man and bowed respectfully to him.

“You've returned. How is Chu Feng?” That old man asked.

“Senior, Chu Feng has been taken away by that young woman called Li Yue'er. Although he has suffered from the pain brought forth by his backlash, there should be no danger to his life.”

“As for that Li Yue'er, she should be previously known as Young Master Li Ming. I truly never expected... that she actually hid herself this well.”

“However, Chu Feng clearly knew that Young Master Li Ming was actually a female. I wonder... did he come to know it when he was at Mount Cloud Crane, or was it from elsewhere?”

“This junior was truly negligent. I have failed to maintain my absolute surveillance on him,” When the middle-aged man said those words, he revealed an ashamed expression.

“This cannot be blamed on you. It is orders from above that transferred away too many of our clansmen in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As we lack the manpower, we are unable to monitor things to a satisfactory degree. It is all within reason,” The old man said.

After saying that, the old man asked, “Have all of our clan's younger generation that were sent to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm left?”

“Senior, please rest assured. They have all left. After all, our clan has already canceled all missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Without any mission, they will naturally not stay in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm,” The middle-aged man said.

“It is for the best that they’ve left. We have no idea what sort of shenanigans the Infant Soul Sect is planning to get up to this time around. We must not allow our clan’s younger generation to get involved in this matter. Else... according to our clan’s rules, even if they are to encounter danger, we must absolutely not act to save them,” The old man said.

“Senior, we are not allowed to save them because they were tasked with missions. Now that all the missions are canceled, they are no longer tempering themselves in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Are we still not allowed to save them should something happen to them in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?” The middle-aged man asked.

“Who said that all the missions were canceled? Isn’t the mission of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect still present?” The old man said.

“.....” Hearing those words, the expression of the middle-aged man changed. He looked to his left hand. On his wrist was a visible scar. It was a scar that he had from his palm being chopped off before.

Seeing that scar, the middle-aged man’s tone became complicated, “The mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect is too difficult. Likely, apart from our clan’s several heavenly beloved geniuses, no one will be able to accomplish it.”

“I feel that the mission that should be canceled the most is that mission.”

“Chu Huai, actually, the mission that you do not wish to be canceled the most is the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect,

no?”

“Actually, you, more than anyone else, want a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation to be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. Isn’t that right?” The old man said with a faint smile on his face.

The middle-aged man did not refute him.

“Actually, with your talent, you are more than capable of attaining accomplishments in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. There was no need for you to apply to come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to monitor it, no?” The old man said.

“I was incompetent. I failed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect within the age limit. Instead, I received the humiliation of a blade.”

“However, I still hope that someone from our clan will be able to help me obtain revenge for my humiliation,” That man by the name of Chu Huai said.

The old man sighed. “You are still young, you must let go of what you should let go. Do not let this matter linger in your heart the entire time, for it will not bring you any benefit,” As the old man spoke, he faced his palm toward Chu Huai’s wrist and gently swiped it across the air before him.

Then, a layer of spirit power entered Chu Huai’s wrist and completely removed the scar on his wrist.

The old man knew very well that with Chu Huai’s strength, he was more than capable of eliminating that scar by himself. He had deliberately left that scar on his wrist.

The old man knew that Chu Huai had left that scar to remind himself that he had been defeated in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that he had been defeated by the Infant Soul Sect.

He was trying to use that scar to urge himself to become stronger.

However, to someone as proud as Chu Huai, that scar did not become a motivation to become more powerful. Instead, it became an imprint in his heart that he was unable to erase.

As for that imprint, it was something called disgrace.

# Chapter 2627 - The Lifespan Of A Martial Cultivator

---

“Senior.”

Right at that moment, that middle-aged female flew over.

She did not bow to the old man respectfully like Chu Huai did after landing. Instead, casually, she said, “The people from Hero City did not return to Hero City. Likely, they feared that they would be implicated should Chu Feng fail, and have decided to hide elsewhere.”

“Where is elsewhere?” Chu Huai asked.

“Eh...” The woman did not know how to answer that question. An awkward expression appeared on her face.

“Why does this happen every single time? Do you not know what your duty is here? Why are you unable to even handle minor things like this properly?” Chu Huai was slightly annoyed.

The woman pouted her lips. With a tone filled with grievance, she said, “Aiyah, all those people have been transferred back to the clan, and all the missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm have been canceled. Not to mention that we do not have sufficient manpower, even the continued surveillance is meaningless.”

“They’re not people from our Chu Heavenly Clan. What they’ve done, whether they live or die, what does that have to do with us?”

Even though her appearance was that of a middle-aged woman, she still had the personality of a child.

“This is a mission given to us by senior. We must accomplish it earnestly,” Chu Huai said.

“Now, now. Chu Huai, stop blaming Chu Yue. What she said is correct. Everyone from our Chu Heavenly Clan has left, and the

missions here have all been cancelled. There really isn't much for us to monitor here."

"Actually, we will soon have to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and return to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm ourselves," The old man said.

"Senior, is what you said the truth?" Hearing those words, the woman called Chu Yue was overjoyed.

"Naturally," The old man said.

"But, senior, didn't you say that there's still the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Compared to Chu Yue's exultation, Chu Huai was unwilling to leave.

"Although our Chu Heavenly Clan's several heavenly beloved geniuses all possess the strength to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, they have all passed the age limit to accomplish that mission."

"Apart from them, there is currently no one in our clan who could accomplish that mission."

"Unless, of course, another heaven-defying member of the younger generation is to appear in our clan, and that person is willing to come to a place like this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to accomplish that mission."

"Otherwise, there will likely not be anyone from our Chu Heavenly Clan that will be willing to come to this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. As such, it will be meaningless for us to continue to stay here."

"Moreover, if there really is a person from the younger generation who is willing to come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to challenge that mission, we can just secretly follow that person here," The old man said.

Hearing those words, that woman called Chu Yue was overjoyed. She started to hop and skip around happily.



As for the middle-aged man, he grew downcast.

“The two of you are finally able to resume your original appearances too. There’s no need to be secretive anymore.”

As the old man spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, a burst of spirit power scattered over Chu Huai and Chu Yue like starlight.

The next moment, their appearances started to change. Chu Huai turned into a young man, and Chu Yue turned into a young woman.

Merely, compared to Chu Huai’s ordinary appearance, Chu Yue was somewhat of a beauty.

“It’s time to leave this desolate place. I’m finally able to use my own appearance now.”

“Being youthful is truly better.”

Chu Yue took out a mirror and looked at her charming face with a satisfied expression.

This was her actual face. This was her original appearance. This was what she was immensely proud of.

“We are middle-aged people to begin with,” As for Chu Huai, he had an expression of indifference.

“Foolish child, how could the world of martial cultivators be compared with that of ordinary people?”

“People that are less than a hundred years old are considered people of the younger generation. People that are less than a thousand years old are youths. After a thousand is middle-age, and only after five thousand years can one be considered old. That is something that our Ancestor set up.”

“As for the two of you, you are both not even a hundred years old. You two can only still be considered to be of the younger generation. Thus, how could you say that you’re middle-aged?”

“The two of you are still very far away from becoming middle-

aged,” The old man said with a beaming smile.

“But, in that case, why is it that many of the weak cultivators in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will grow old and weak after reaching fifty years of age, and be filled with white hair by the time they pass a hundred years old? If they want to maintain their youthful appearance, they will have to disguise themselves using world spirit techniques,” Chu Huai asked.

“Could the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possibly be considered to be actual cultivators? In the old man’s eyes, true cultivators need to have at least reached the True Immortal realm.”

“Let me ask you two this, do those cultivators who reach True Immortal realm grow old within a hundred years? Will they become an old man like myself within a thousand years?” The old man asked.

Chu Huai and Chu Yue started to recall the True Immortals that they’d met, and discovered that all those within a thousand years of age really did have youthful appearances. Only after they reached a thousand years of age did they show signs of aging. However, even if they were to age, they would only age to middle-aged appearances.

As for becoming actual old people, they would have to reach at least five thousand years of age. Apart from deliberately disguising themselves, True Immortals would only show signs of grizzled hair and distinctive wrinkles on their faces after they passed five thousand years of age.

As for True Immortals within a hundred years of age, they were people filled with spirit. Their skin was soft and tender like the water’s surface.

There were even some among them that looked like youngsters or young girls.

“In that case, does it mean that reaching True Immortal realm could be considered to be shedding one’s mortal body and being born again?” Chu Huai asked.

“You have been a True Immortal for all these years, yet you still didn’t notice that?” The old man smiled. Then, he said, “What you said is correct. Only by reaching the True Immortal realm will martial cultivators surpass the confinements of their mortal bodies.”

“Generally speaking, True Immortal-realm experts are all able to live for more than ten thousand years. Think about it. If non-cultivators have a life expectancy of a hundred years, then they will definitely become old when they reach sixty. Thus, to call them middle-aged at forty will not be an issue at all. After all, their lifespan is so short.”

“However, the lifespan of True Immortals must be determined using ten thousand years. With that... wouldn’t considering those under a thousand to be middle-aged far-fetched?” The old man asked.

“That’s right. Compared to ordinary people, a thousand years would only be ten years. How could it be considered to be middle-aged? It should be still considered to be childhood.”

“Wow! Big brother Chu Huai, so you’re actually still a child,” Chu Yue said to Chu Huai with a innocent expression.

“Haha, foolish girl,” Hearing those words, the old man laughed. He gently caressed Chu Yue’s hair and said, “The categorization of age is something that has been determined by our ancestor. As such, there is definitely a reason for it. Even if we find it unreasonable, we must still acknowledge it.”

“After all, even for True Immortals, they will still age after living for a thousand years. They will not be able to stay young forever,” The old man said.

“But, senior, logically, shouldn’t cultivators’ lifespans increase as their cultivation grows stronger?”

“In that case, why is it that in our clan, regardless of whether one might be a True Immortal, Heavenly Immortal or Martial Immortal, the limit of their lifespan can all be considered to be ten thousand years?” Chu Huai asked.

“That’s right. Not to mention the Half Martial Ancestors and Martial Ancestors, I’ve heard from my father that even Martial Emperors that managed to encounter fortuitous meetings will be able to live up to ten thousand years should they take good care of their health and use treasures to extend their lifespan.”

“In that case, why is it that the life expectancy for True Immortals, Heavenly Immortals and Martial Immortals is also only ten thousand years?”

“This is simply too unfair. Even though the difference in cultivation realms is so great, even though they’ve placed so much effort in reaching a breakthrough, they are unable to extend their lifespan even after reaching breakthroughs in cultivation,” Chu Yue said.

“One can extend one’s lifespan upon reaching the Exalted Realm,” The old man said.

“Exalted Realm? That’s too difficult, no?” Chu Yue said.

“Even upon reaching the Exalted Realm, the number of years their life is extended will also be determined by the individual.”

“However, something like that is also reasonable and fair. You two should not think of it as unfair. After all, even martial cultivators are limited by their lifespan. In the end, they will also grow old, become sick and die.”

“If one can extend one’s lifespan without limit by increasing one’s cultivation, then those experts from the Ancient Era would have been able to live till this day. With their strength, how could

the world be filled with modern people like us?”

“Likely, it would still be those seniors from the Ancient Era that rule the Galaxies and Starfields,” The old man said.

“That’s true. I’ve heard from my grandfather that those seniors from the Ancient Era were extremely frightening existences. Their strength was not something that we can compare to,” Chu Yue said.

“Actually, it is already very good that us cultivators can live up till ten thousand years of age. After all, compared to the lifespan of ordinary people, ten thousand years is an extremely long period of time,” The old man said.

“While that is true, it remains that we are True Immortals. When even those Martial Ancestors, Half Martial Ancestors and even Martial Emperors are able to live as long as we do, I still feel that it is very unfair,” Chu Yue said with pouted lips.

“While that might be the case, not mentioning the Martial Emperors, even for Half Martial Ancestors and Martial Ancestors, how many among them can really live till ten thousand years of age?” The old man asked.

“I don’t seem to have met any,” Chu Yue shook her head.

# Chapter 2628 - The Pain From The Backlash

---

“Actually, things like that all depend on one’s own encounters, one’s own luck. There is nothing absolute.”

“Using our clan as an example, there was once a True Immortal-level senior. He possessed limited talent, and was only able to stay at the True Immortal realm for the rest of his life.”

“However, he managed to live for fifty thousand years before passing away. Although he used various methods to extend his life expectancy, it remains that being able to live for fifty thousand years is extremely rare.”

“On the other hand, there was a senior from our clan that was a peak Martial Immortal. He was only a step away from becoming an Exalted. However, he only managed to live for six thousand years. Without even reaching ten thousand years, he reached the limit of his lifespan and died of old age,” The old man said.

“I heard of this matter before. That senior was a genius with great talent for martial cultivation. He was only a step away from becoming an Exalted. Unfortunately... his lifespan was too short. Reportedly, he started to age rapidly after reaching five thousand years of age.”

“Back then, for the sake of helping him extend his lifespan, our clan used countless methods to extend his lifespan. However, they were all useless on him. It was truly an enormous pity.”

“If it wasn’t for that, our clan would have another Exalted expert,” Chu Yue sighed.

“Thus, something like one’s life expectancy should be left to fate. It will not be beneficial to concern oneself too much with it,” The old man said.

“In that case, senior, you are one with a naturally long lifespan then, no?” Chu Yue said with a beaming smile.

“Senior, you must take good care of your health now. You need to make sure to use methods to increase your lifespan when needed,” Compared to Chu Yue’s mischievousness, Chu Huai was worried for the old man’s health from the bottom of his heart.

The two of them both knew that the old man before them possessed an extremely high seniority in the Chu Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because... he was someone who had lived for ten thousand years.

In other words, the old man was an old monster that had countless years of experience, and had seen through all forms of humanity.

“Something like one’s lifespan should be resigned to fate itself. To forcibly extend one’s lifespan would be going against the natural order. One should not do that,” The old man sighed and spoke indifferently.

“Senior truly has a broad vision. I hope that I will also be able to be like you when I reach your age,” Chu Yue said.

“Hahaha...” The old man burst into laughter.

Although the old man’s laughter seemed to be relaxed, worry filled his deep and profound eyes.

“Senior, this must be the place where that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was healing his injuries, right?”

“How is he? Could it be that his injuries are already healed?”

Suddenly, Chu Yue cast her gaze to the place where the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was earlier. The reason for that was because the aura of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was still there.

“They have already healed,” The old man said.

“How did he manage to cure himself? Chu Feng’s Demon Armament is extremely strange. Even if that Demon Armament’s power disappeared, the injuries left by it should not be that easily

cured, no?" Chu Huai said.

"That's true. His injuries didn't seem to be that easily cured," Chu Yue nodded in agreement.

The two of them both witnessed the battle between Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster in secret earlier. Thus, the power of the Evil God Sword was fresh in their memories.

No matter what, the two of them were True Immortal-level experts. Furthermore, both of them possessed cultivation above that of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Yet, neither of them knew what they could possibly do should they be injured by the Evil God Sword's powers. As such, how did the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster manage to cure himself despite such injuries?

"It is all because of that Infant Soul Demonic Technique that the Infant Soul Sect was able to exist in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for so long. That Infant Soul Demonic Technique is extremely strange. Else... it wouldn't be that difficult to handle. A genius like you, Chu Huai, would not have lost to them either," The old man looked to Chu Huai.

Hearing those words, Chu Huai said no more.

Even though he felt that the current him was able to easily eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, he knew that back then, when he was still much younger, he was indeed no match for the Infant Soul Sect.

It was precisely due to his defeat from back then that the Infant Soul Sect left a deep impression in his heart.

"But, senior, even if the Infant Soul Sect possesses special abilities, the power of that Demon Armament seems to have already surpassed them..." Chu Yue wanted to ask further questions.

Chu Yue had not fought against the Infant Soul Sect. Her



strength had already surpassed that of the Infant Soul Sect by the time she arrived.

Thus, she looked down on the Infant Soul Sect from the bottom of her heart. Thus, she questioned how the Infant Soul Sect could possibly cure the Demon Armament's injury when even she herself could not.

Thus, it was not that she did not believe it after finding out that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had managed to cure his injury. Merely, she was unable to accept it.

"Enough, there's no need to continue lingering on this matter. Let me tell you two some good news."

"I have actually already asked the clan to bring the two of you back into the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Likely, not long from now, the two of you will be able to return to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. There will not be a need for you two to accompany this old man and suffer here," The old man said.

"Senior, is what you said for real?" Chu Yue was overjoyed upon hearing those words.

"Foolish girl, when has this old man ever lied to you?" The old man said with a slight smile.

"This is great! I am finally able to leave this desolate place!" At that moment, Chu Yue was beaming with happiness. She was truly overjoyed.

"Senior, with such a major movement from the Infant Soul Sect, they are most definitely plotting something. This junior wants to know exactly what they plan to do. Might it be possible for me to continue to stay here?" Chu Huai asked.

"Chu Huai, we have come here with the purpose of monitoring our clan's younger generation. Our task was to record how they accomplished their missions in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

“As for what happens in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it is unrelated to us. Even if there was conflict between you and the Infant Soul Sect, you still cannot cross the line.”

“Go on and return. From today on, you two do not have to involve yourself with anything in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Just leave everything to me and wait for news from the clan to tell you two to return,” The old man said.

After hearing what the old man said, although Chu Huai was somewhat unwilling, he found it unsuitable to say anymore.

As such, he could only choose to leave. After all, they had to listen to the old man’s orders in this place.

After Chu Yue and Chu Huai left, the smile on the old man’s face instantly disappeared. An ice-cold ruthlessness emerged in his eyes.

“Brats, the two of you had best listen obediently and not ruin this old man’s plan. Else... don’t blame me for not taking into consideration the affections of being fellow clansmen.”

.....

Being assailed by the backlash, Chu Feng soon lost consciousness.

After a long time passed, Chu Feng finally managed to regain his consciousness. When he opened his eyes, he was surprised to discover that he was currently in a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood.

Chaos filled his entire field of view. Apart from corpses, there was no sign of life.

It was as if the entire world had been destroyed.

Suddenly, crimson clouds began to roll about in the sky. Two eyes appeared in the rolling crimson clouds.

Those eyes were crimson in color. In the sky and within the crimson clouds, they shone brightly like suns.

However, the two eyes were emitting an overflowing demonic aura. One would feel fear from the depths of one's soul upon seeing those eyes.

Frightening. Those eyes were truly frightening. Even Chu Feng was shivering.

It was not that Chu Feng was cowardly. Rather, he was unable to withstand that frightening gaze in the sky. He was simply unable to control his body.

His fear originated from the depths of his soul, from the bottom of his heart.

Suddenly, the crimson clouds started to descend. That pair of enormous and frightening eyes was also growing closer and closer to Chu Feng.

“Scram!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted hysterically.

He had screamed with all of his body's energy.

He had done so because he was afraid. He was scared that that frightening existence was growing too close to him.

“Boy, you will not be able to escape this Evil God's grasp. One day, you will be controlled by me.”

An extremely sinister and confident voice sounded from the crimson clouds.

That voice seemed to be able to snatch away one's soul. At the moment that voice sounded, Chu Feng felt as if his soul was being controlled by it. He felt as if he would be ripped apart by it. An unbearable pain once again filled his entire body.

Too painful. The pain caused Chu Feng to tightly close his eyes and scream nonstop.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued to suffer for an unknown amount of days.

Then, after days of sufferings, Chu Feng suddenly heard a familiar voice.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng...”

At that moment, Li Yue’er’s voice sounded beside Chu Feng’s ears.

Strangely, after hearing Li Yue’er’s voice, the pain that was tormenting Chu Feng started to fade away.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes, he discovered that he was no longer in that mountain of corpses and sea of blood. Instead, he was in a palace hall. That palace hall was not very large, yet it was very exquisite.

Chu Feng was currently covered by a grand healing formation. Even the bed that he was lying on was a bed specially made to help one heal.

A person was standing outside of the grand formation. That person was calling out his name. She was... Li Yue’er.

## Chapter 2629 - Weaponry Refinement

---

“It would appear that I have managed to endure the backlash.”

Chu Feng rubbed his still-hurting head and let out a bitter laugh.

He knew very well that he had returned to reality. As such, he should have managed to endure the torture of the backlash.

Seeing that Chu Feng was fine, Li Yue'er removed her healing formation. Although she did not say anything, Chu Feng noticed the change in her expression.

Earlier, there was obvious worry in her eyes as she looked to Chu Feng. However now, the worry in her eyes was gone.

Even though Li Yue'er appeared to not be feeling anything, she was clearly worried for Chu Feng before he woke up.

“It seems that this girl doesn't truly have a heart of stone. Chu Feng... how about we cook the raw rice and take her down? I can tell that this girl is pretty decent,” Her Lady Queen spoke with a mischievous laugh.

Chu Feng coughed, then said, “Do I resemble someone who will capture any pretty decent girl I encounter? I am a very single-minded man, okay?”

“Single-minded? Pah!” Her Lady Queen cast a ruthless side-eye at Chu Feng. Her side-eye was filled with disdain.

“Eh...” Chu Feng also started to blush after saying the words ‘single-minded.’

If he were single-minded, he wouldn't have Zi Ling, Su Rou and Su Mei, three lovers. That said, while Chu Feng felt that he might not be single-minded, he was not a fickle lover.

He would most definitely not like someone merely because of their appearance. More than that would be the feelings he felt after getting along with them.

As for feelings, that was something that was extremely difficult to control. If feelings were to come, one would not be able to stop them. If feelings did not come, one would not be able to insist on having them.

Seeing that Chu Feng had awakened, yet did not say anything, Li Yue'er was finally unable to contain herself, and asked, "Are you alright?"

"I'm fine," Chu Feng hurriedly answered. After all, the conversation between Eggy and him could not be heard by Li Yue'er.

"You're fine? Then why are you blushing?" Li Yue'er asked.

"It's because this room is too hot," Chu Feng said embarrassedly.

He would naturally not tell Li Yue'er that he blushed because he was discussing whether or not he was a single-minded lover with his world spirit.

Hearing those words, Li Yue'er frowned. Then, she took a glance around.

Hot?

For the sake of healing Chu Feng, she had placed meticulous effort into setting up that place. As such, even martial cultivators would feel that the temperature there was cold. Thus, how could it be hot?

Even though she knew that Chu Feng was lying, Li Yue'er didn't ask anymore. After all, she was not extremely curious.

"It would seem that you are fine," Li Yue'er said.

"Yeah. I should have managed to endure through it," Chu Feng stood up and started to stretch, "Oh, that's right. How long was I unconscious for?"

"A month and three days," Li Yue'er said.

"That long?" Chu Feng's gaze changed upon hearing those

words. The relaxed expression on his face immediately disappeared. Deep worry emerged in his eyes. He asked, “How are Zhao Hong, Senior Ying and the others doing?”

“I only know that they’ve returned to Hero City once. However, they left soon after. As for where they’re at right now, I have no idea.”

“That said, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster has been busy in the Infant Soul Sect the entire time. He did not go to deliberately find Ying Mingchao and the others. Perhaps he simply did not place them in his eyes at all. Or perhaps what he is dealing with is more important.”

“In short, I feel that your friends should all still be safe ,” Li Yue’er said.

“Thanks,” Chu Feng thanked Li Yue’er because he knew that she must’ve meticulously scouted for information to be able to tell him all these things so quickly.

Actually, the life and death of those people were completely unrelated to Li Yue’er. She had deliberately scouted the information about them all for the sake of telling Chu Feng about it.

She had already anticipated that Chu Feng would ask for news of those matters after waking up.

“What is the situation at the Infant Soul Sect right now?” Chu Feng asked.

“It is still unknown as to exactly what the Infant Soul Sect is planning. However, it seems that they are planning to gather everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm before acting.”

“The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm is a massive place. Furthermore, the general cultivation of the martial cultivators here is not very high. Even with the help of those various sects and

schools, I feel that it will take at least three months for them to gather everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to the Infant Soul Sect's location," Li Yue'er said.

"I wonder if I'll make it in time," Chu Feng took out the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart as he said those words.

"What is that?" Li Yue'er cast her curious gaze over.

"Come have a look. This weaponry refinement chart is no ordinary weaponry refinement chart. It is able to allow one to gain martial comprehension while refining weapons," Chu Feng said.

"That's a treasure. You should keep it for yourself," After hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Yue'er cast her curious gaze away from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

"There's no need for this, no? I don't mind sharing it with you," Chu Feng said.

"I mind. I don't want an unmerited reward," Li Yue'er said.

"In that case, consider it that I am asking you to help me analyze it. Would that work?" Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

Before Li Yue'er could answer, Chu Feng added, "Furthermore, with the care that you've given me these days, how could it be considered an unmerited reward?"

"Moreover, if it wasn't for you slicing off my arm and severing the connection between the Evil God Sword and I, I might already be dead by now. As such, you could be said to have saved my life."

However, Li Yue'er was still ignoring Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng was a smart individual. Since he was determined to share the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart with Li Yue'er, he would naturally have a way of doing so.

Chu Feng stopped trying to force Li Yue'er to read and comprehend it together with him.

Instead, he began to deliberately voice all the understanding he



already had from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

At the beginning, Li Yue'er ignored Chu Feng. However, later on, she also began to earnestly listen to the things he said.

It was not that she was excessively scheming and cunning. Rather, the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart were simply too fascinating. To world spiritists, it was truly irresistible.

Soon, Li Yue'er was swayed. She decided to bluntly stand behind Chu Feng and read the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart together with him.

It should be noted that not only was Li Yue'er's talent toward martial cultivation superb, but even her talent in world spirit techniques was excellent.

Thus, Li Yue'er helped Chu Feng quite a bit when she started to comprehend and analyze the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart with him. With the two of them jointly disassembling and analyzing its contents, they were able to increase their comprehension speed.

In merely half a month, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er actually managed to completely decipher the contents of the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, and gain a preliminary grasp of the weaponry refinement method stated within it.

“There's no time to lose, let's begin now.”

After grasping the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, Chu Feng took out all of his weaponry refinement treasures.

His treasures scattered all over the palace hall. As for the main item that he wanted to refine into a weapon, it was naturally that stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood, that so-called Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

That said, even though it was a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon's blood, as it has been refined by Grandmaster Kai Hong

before, it looked like a lump of rectangular-shaped metal.

“That scrap metal...”

When Chu Feng took out all of his precious weaponry refinement treasures, not a single item caught Li Yue’er’s attention. However, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler had managed to make Li Yue’er’s expression change.

# Chapter 2630 - Incomplete Immortal Armament

---

“Good eyesight. That is the best material that I have on me,” Chu Feng said.

“Its aura is very special. What is its origin?” Li Yue’er asked.

“It is a stone dyed with the Divine Dragon’s blood. Merely, as it is not complete, it is difficult to turn it into an Ancestral Armament,” Chu Feng said.

“You only plan to turn such a good material into an Ancestral Armament?” Li Yue’er asked in astonishment.

“Are you suggesting that I turn it into an Incomplete Immortal Armament? While this Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler is qualified, I do not have other materials to work with,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

After deciphering the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart, Chu Feng had obtained a whole new level of understanding toward weaponry refinement techniques.

Thus, he felt that he was capable of refining an Ancestral Armament using the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler. However, if he were to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, it would be absolutely impossible.

It wasn’t that he doubted his own weaponry refinement techniques, nor was it because he didn’t dare to attempt it. Rather, Chu Feng felt that apart from the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler, the rest of his weaponry refinement materials were simply unable to allow him to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Li Yue’er suddenly waved her sleeve. She pushed all of Chu Feng’s weaponry refinement materials into a

corner and left behind only the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Chu Feng revealed a confused expression upon seeing this.

However, before Chu Feng could question Li Yue'er's action, Li Yue'er took out a Cosmos Sack and tossed it into the air. The next moment, countless treasures flew out from the Cosmos Sack and landed on either side of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Those were all weaponry refinement treasures. Furthermore, they were all very precious materials. In fact... some of those weaponry refinement materials were comparable to the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

“Wow! This girl is truly rich!”

“Chu Feng, you must capture this girl and hug onto her thighs.”

At that moment, even her Lady Queen was unable to contain herself from exclaiming in admiration. In fact, even her eyes started to shine with light.

If Chu Feng did not possess any materials apart from the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler that could help him refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, then now, he possessed enough materials to refine three Incomplete Immortal Armaments.

“Choose whatever material you want from these. Use the best among them,” Li Yue'er said.

“Very well, consider it that I'm borrowing them from you. I will definitely repay you in the future.”

Chu Feng did not refuse the materials. After all, he really did need them.

However, those materials were truly precious. Chu Feng could not accept them just like that.

“There's no need. That All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart of yours is over a thousand times more precious than these materials here. I am the one who owes you here,” Li Yue'er said.

“That’s something completely different. I said that I’m borrowing them, so I’m borrowing them,” Chu Feng said.

“It will be very difficult for you to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament by yourself. Even if you are able to accomplish it, there would not be sufficient time. Let me help you. Although I can only provide assistance, it remains that I have also grasped the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart. Thus, if we are able to succeed in refining an Incomplete Immortal Armament, I would be able to benefit greatly too.”

“Thus, even though I am providing these materials, it is also for my sake. You do not have to think too hard about it,” Li Yue’er said.

“I said that I am just borrowing them,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

Seeing how determined Chu Feng was, Li Yue’er started to frown. Then, she said in an annoyed manner, “Do as you wish.”

“Heh... that’s more like it,” Seeing that Li Yue’er had come to terms with him, Chu Feng smiled.

Then, he said, “My little assistant, there’s no time to delay, let us begin right away.”

Then, Chu Feng and Li Yue’er began to set up the Weaponry Refinement Grand Formation according to the methods laid out in the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart.

Chu Feng was in charge of setting up the spirit formation, whereas Li Yue’er assisted him.

That said, even though the two of them were joining hands, even though there were sufficient materials, even though they were able to choose the best materials to refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament, it was still extremely difficult to successfully refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Chu Feng felt that they only had a fifty percent chance of success.

After all, that was an Incomplete Immortal Armament they were dealing with. Apart from Li Yue'er, only the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster possessed an Incomplete Immortal Armament in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, even with that being the case, Chu Feng still had to attempt it. After all, depending on the difference in the weaponry refinement's difficulty, Chu Feng would also be able to obtain different levels of martial comprehension.

.....

Then, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er began to jointly refine the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Although there were many materials that could compare to the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler, Chu Feng still insisted on having the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler be the main material in the refinement process.

This... was actually Li Yue'er's proposal.

Li Yue'er said that if the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was really dyed with the Divine Dragon's Blood, it would surpass the value of all the materials that she currently possessed.

If they were able to successfully forge an Incomplete Immortal Armament, then the Divine Dragon's blood in the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler might awaken.

If that were to happen, they might be able to refine a top quality Incomplete Immortal Armament.

After Chu Feng and Li Yue'er began, they spent three entire months in the refinement process.

After three months passed, the appearance of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler did not change much. Apart from the addition of a sword hilt that it could be held with, its body was still a four-sided lump of metal.

However, the carefully-selected materials used in the refinement process were all gone. They were fused into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Although the appearance of the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler did not change, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er had actually succeeded in assimilating those materials into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

Thus, the current Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was no longer the same as before. It possessed actual Immortal-level martial power.

It was only a step away from becoming an actual Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng shouted, "Girl, hang on! We are about to succeed!"

At that moment, they had reached the most crucial moment for the weaponry refinement process. However, both Chu Feng and Li Yue'er had exhausted an enormous amount of energy over the past three months.

The current Li Yue'er was already pale and covered in sweat.

Chu Feng, on the other hand, seemed to be doing better than her. He, at the very least, was still steady and stable. However, Li Yue'er's hands were already trembling slightly.

This was the greatest fear during weaponry refinement. The reason for that was because Li Yue'er was also contributing to the continued activation of the spirit formation. As for weaponry refinement, the hands that one used to activate the spirit formation were the most crucial aspect. Even if one were to waver one's hands in the slightest, it might affect the result of the weapon.

"Snap~~~"

Sure enough, as Li Yue'er's hands trembled, a crack suddenly appeared on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

.....

Following that, more and more cracks began to appear. Soon, cracks covered the entire body of the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

“Girl, steady yourself,” Seeing this scene, Chu Feng started to panic.

If the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler were to shatter at such a time, their efforts would truly have been wasted.

In fact, the two of them even might receive a backlash from the failure.

“Chu Feng, my apologies, I will soon be unable to continue,” Li Yue’er said with great difficulty. Even her voice was trembling when she said those words. Her health was truly weak.

Hearing what Li Yue’er said, Chu Feng’s heart immediately sunk.

After interacting with Li Yue’er, he knew that she was not someone that would easily give up.

Since she was saying something like that, it meant that she was truly unable to hold on any longer.

Right at that moment, surging spirit power suddenly emerged from Chu Feng’s body. That spirit power covered the entire weaponry refinement formation.

Then, Chu Feng tightly clasped his palms and shouted, “Slow!”

Then, the spirit formation actually stopped its operation.

To be exact, it didn’t stop. Instead, the speed had decreased. Chu Feng had forcibly decreased the speed of the weaponry refinement formation’s operation.

“Girl, help me out. Move the assistant’s formation core onto my



body,” Chu Feng said.

“No, Chu Feng... it will pose a danger to your life if I am to do that,” Hearing that, Li Yue’er immediately revealed an expression of panic.

“Chu Feng, you can’t make such a rash decision. Are you planning to throw away your life for cultivation?” Compared to Li Yue’er, Eggy was even more panicked

The two of them both knew very well that both Chu Feng’s stamina and spirit power had been greatly consumed. They were on the verge of being completely exhausted.

In such a situation, it was already extremely difficult for him to persist as the main operator of the formation.

If he were to take on the responsibility of the assistant operator too, the burden upon his body would be so great that Chu Feng would not be able to persist. Because of that, his body would be wrung dry by the spirit formation, and he would die from over-exhaustion.

# Chapter 2631 - Moment Of Life and Death

---

“Listen to me, I am still able to persist,” Chu Feng said.

“No,” Li Yue’er refused.

“I cannot afford to fail this time around. I must succeed. Girl... listen to me, help me,” Chu Feng said anxiously.

Although Chu Feng knew from the very start that they only had a fifty percent chance of success, Chu Feng began the weaponry refinement process with an absolute determination to succeed.

He must increase his cultivation immediately. Only by increasing his cultivation would he be able to contend against the Infant Soul Sect.

Else, he feared that if the Infant Soul Sect’s plot were to succeed, they would move on to take care of Ying Mingchao and the others.

“Do it! I am unable to persist for much longer!” Chu Feng shouted.

At that moment, Li Yue’er revealed a very difficult expression. However, after a moment of mental conflict, she still ended up carefully transferring the formation core on her body to Chu Feng’s body.

Then, she moved out of the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

After exiting the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Li Yue’er sat powerlessly onto the ground. She was truly exhausted.

However, she had no time to rest, as she immediately cast her worried gaze toward Chu Feng.

... she had exited the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

If the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was supported by both her and Chu Feng earlier, then it was now completely supported by Chu Feng alone. Thus, all of the pressure was placed

onto Chu Feng alone.

“Eeeahhh~~~~”

After Li Yue'er exited the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Chu Feng suddenly shouted. The next moment, boundless spirit power surged out of Chu Feng's body and fused with the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation.

“Chu Feng, have you gone insane?! How could you act this recklessly?!”

Seeing this scene, Her Lady Queen was immediately worried.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was attempting to fuse with the grand formation.

This sort of fusion would assist Chu Feng's control over the grand formation. With that, it would save a lot of power on Chu Feng's end.

In the current situation where Chu Feng's power was about to be completely exhausted, using this sort of method was indeed something feasible.

However, upon using this sort of method, Chu Feng's life and death would be linked with the grand spirit formation.

If Chu Feng wanted to live now, there was only a single way. That is, he must successfully refine the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Else... only death would await him.

From then on, Chu Feng would not be able to stop even if he wanted to. The reason for that was because the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation would automatically extract spirit power from Chu Feng's body without the need for Chu Feng's control at all.

“Eeeahhh~~~~”

As the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation continued to

operate, it started to forcibly extract spirit power from Chu Feng.

In such a situation, Chu Feng started to endure immense pressure. That immense pressure brought pain to Chu Feng and caused him to scream nonstop.

He was risking his life. He was using the final bits of strength he had to complete the grand formation.

If he didn't succeed, he would die!!!

With Chu Feng's full effort, the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation started to blossom with dazzling light.

The Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation started to tremble. The power within the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was trembling. In fact, even the entire palace was trembling.

The Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was shrinking. It was concentrating on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

At that moment, both Li Yue'er who was outside of the grand formation and Eggy who was within Chu Feng started to tightly clench their fists. They were extremely nervous.

The reason for that was because if the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation was to fuse into the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler, it would mean success.

If it didn't, then it was a failure.

That said, what they were worried about the most was whether or not Chu Feng would be able to hold on.

Chu Feng was operating the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation with his life. Thus, there would only be two possibilities.

Either Chu Feng would be able to successfully complete the Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Or his power would not be able to persist, and he would exhaust all of his power and die of exhaustion. As for the Incomplete

Immortal Armament, it would also end in a failure.

In such a critical situation, time seemed to be moving extremely slowly.

That said, neither Li Yue'er or Eggy had the heart to concern themselves with any of that. The two of them only hoped that the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation would be able to concentrate on the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler sooner.

"Almost, it's about to succeed. Chu Feng, hold on, hold on! It's halfway there!"

Finally, the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation had condensed halfway onto the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler. However, at that time, it suddenly stopped.

At such a time, neither Li Yue'er and Eggy were able to even open their mouths to encourage Chu Feng to continue.

They both felt that Chu Feng was unable to continue. However, it was already too late to give up.

Chu Feng could only succeed and not fail.

"Eggy, my apologies, I'm afraid that I'll be going first."

At the moment when worry filled the air, Eggy heard Chu Feng's voice. Merely, Chu Feng's voice was incomparably weak. It was as if his life was already hollowed out. It was as if he was already dead.

"Fool, clench your teeth and persist. How could you give up at a time like this?"

Her Lady Queen was so worried that she started shedding tears. This was a moment of life and death. At such a time, Chu Feng could decide upon his death with merely a thought.

"My head is already empty. My soul is already empty. I have completely exhausted all the spirit power within me. I am unable to support this Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation anymore,"

Chu Feng said with his weak voice.

“If you are to die at a time like this, then what about your mother?! Your mother went through all the effort to seal this Queen in your body for your sake! If you are to tumble here, it will be truly humiliating!”

“Your mother is a grand world spiritist who is capable of forcing her way into our Asura Spirit World and forcibly capture us! How could you be this weak?! How could you fail to control a mere Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation?!” Her Lady Queen shouted angrily.

It was not that she was truly angry at Chu Feng for failing. Merely, she wanted to encourage Chu Feng to persist through this ordeal.

If Chu Feng was to die from over exhaustion of his spirit power, Her Lady Queen would not be implicated by his death. She would continue to survive.

However, to Her Lady Queen, her life and death was not what mattered to her. She didn't want Chu Feng to die. She didn't want him to die at a place like this.

“Mother?” Hearing that word, Chu Feng's heart suddenly trembled.

At the moment when he thought of his mother, Chu Feng's consciousness suddenly grew fuzzy. Before him was no longer that Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation that was forcibly extracting his spirit power.

Instead, a vast expanse of whiteness filled his eyes. Faintly, he saw a figure. It should be a woman, a woman with fluttering long hair.

That figure was very close to him. She was right before him. However, Chu Feng was unable to clearly see her face.

No matter how hard he tried, he was unable to see it clearly. He

could only feel that woman was gently caressing his head with her hand.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if the softest and warmest hand in the world was caressing him.

An indescribable sensation exploded from his heart and filled his body.

At that Moment, Chu Feng wished to speak. However, he was unable to speak. He was unable to express himself.

Right at that moment, an incomparably gentle voice sounded by his ears.

“Feng’er, it’s all my fault. I am unable to be by your side and protect you.”

“I do not hope that you will forgive me. I merely wish that you will be able to stay strong and live on.”

After that voice said those words, the figure before him started to scatter away. The scene before Chu Feng returned to that of the palace hall. He was before that Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation again.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was able to sense that boundless spirit power had emerged from his completely dried up body.

It was a sensation like a volcanic eruption. He was unable to stop it at all.

“Heeaaahhh!!!”

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. Then, boundless spirit power burst forth from his body.

The spirit power was so strong that it actually brought forth waves of wind. In an instant, it covered the entire palace hall and blew everything all over the place.

Even Li Yue’er was blown back by the wind. The wind was so

strong that she found it difficult to open her eyes.



# Chapter 2632 - Mother's Bloodline

---

“This spirit power, how could it be this strong?”

At that moment, Li Yue'er had an astonished expression on her face.

She felt that even if Chu Feng's stamina and spirit power weren't completely exhausted, even if his state of being was the same as before, he would not possess such overwhelming spirit power.

Although this burst of spirit power was still Immortal-level spirit power, the sensation that she felt from it had already surpassed that of Immortal-level spirit power.

It was an extremely pure and grand spirit power.

If spirit power of the same level possessed a class difference, then the spirit power that Chu Feng emitted right now would be the noble among nobles, the king among kings.

Finally, the spirit power that rushed forth like a volcanic eruption from Chu Feng's body started to gradually vanish.

As Chu Feng's overwhelming spirit power vanished, Li Yue'er immediately revealed an overjoyed expression.

The reason for that was because the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was right before Chu Feng. However, the aura that it emitted was completely different from before.

It was no longer a lump of scrap metal. Instead, it was emitting intense Immortal-level martial power. It had become an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

“Chu Feng, you've succeeded. You managed to successfully refine an Incomplete Immortal Armament!” At that moment, Her Lady Queen was also overjoyed.

One must know that Chu Feng was on the verge of dying earlier. There was a very high chance that he could have died.

However, in the end, he had succeeded. This sort of success was simply too difficult. As such, how could Her Lady Queen not feel joy?

“Its appearance is a bit ugly. Before fusing the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation with it, I should’ve fixed its appearance. However, I was so anxious on fusing them that I decided to not bother with its appearance for the sake of saving my spirit power,” Chu Feng said with a light laugh.

The Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler was indeed a bit ugly. Although it now had a sword hilt that Chu Feng could hold onto, its appearance was still that of a block of metal.

Most importantly, it was even uglier than before it went through the whole weaponry refinement process. Due to Li Yue’er’s mistake, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler now had many cracks. It made it resemble a shattered iron block.

If it wasn’t for the fact that it was emitting Immortal-level martial power, no one would think that it was an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

“It’s all my fault. If I had been able to hold on, it wouldn’t have been like this,” said Li Yue’er with self-blame.

“It’s alright. Didn’t we still succeed? If it hadn’t been for you, I wouldn’t have been able to persist either. Refining an Incomplete Immortal Armament is simply too hard,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what was that spirit power you emitted earlier?” Li Yue’er asked.

Li Yue’er was not someone fond of meddling in others’ business. However, she was truly too curious as to what happened earlier.

The reason for that was because the spirit power Chu Feng had emitted earlier gave her a sensation that she had never felt before.

It she had to describe it, then it was a sensation of a ruler overlooking the world.

As a fellow world spiritist, she wanted to know exactly where Chu Feng's spirit power came from.

"Earlier? Was there something different about it?" Chu Feng was confused by Li Yue'er's question.

Earlier, he had merely felt that boundless spirit power had emerged from his dried up body.

Thus, he used that spirit power to operate the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation. Apart from that, he didn't do anything different.

"It was completely different," Li Yue'er said.

"That's right, your spirit power earlier was simply frighteningly powerful," Her Lady Queen said.

"Buzz~~~"

With a thought, Chu Feng unleashed his spirit power from his body.

"No, this is not the same spirit power you used earlier," Li Yue'er shook her head.

The spirit power Chu Feng unleashed this time around was the same as the spirit power that he always had. Although it was still Immortal-level spirit power, it simply did not possess the majestic grandeur of a ruler overlooking the world like earlier.

"I don't know what's going on. This is the spirit power that I can unleash," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng did not know what sort of spirit power he had managed to unleash earlier to astonish Li Yue'er and Her Lady Queen like that.

However... this was the sort of spirit power that he could unleash at that moment. It was the same as it had always been.

Hearing such a response from Chu Feng, Li Yue'er stopped inquiring further. She felt that Chu Feng was not lying to her, and

would most likely not lie to her.

“You really don’t know what happened? Why would you burst out with such a powerful spirit power for no reason at all?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Was it really that powerful?” Chu Feng asked.

As that matter was, after all, something that had happened to him, Chu Feng was also very curious.

“It’s wrong to say that it was powerful. After all, it was still Immortal-level spirit power. However, the feeling was completely different. Regardless, it was very powerful,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Eggy, did you not see what I saw earlier?” Chu Feng asked.

“What? What did you see?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“It seems that you didn’t see it,” Chu Feng said.

“Exactly what did you see? Tell me. You damned bastard, don’t tease this Queen, okay? Tell me, tell me, tell me, tell me, tell me...” Her Lady Queen urged with incomparable curiosity.

“I seemed to have seen my mother,” Chu Feng said.

“Mother? What is going on? Where did you see her? Your mother came to find you?” Her Lady Queen grew even more curious upon hearing that.

“It should be from when I was an infant. That sensation seemed more like a memory,” Chu Feng said.

“Did you manage to awaken some sort of power after seeing your mother? That’s very possible. After all, your mother’s world spirit techniques were extremely powerful. You should have inherited her bloodline and talent.”

“Merely... it’s possible that your bloodline and power have not awakened completely yet. As for earlier... it was awakened after you recalled the memory of your mother.”

“Although it only managed to awaken for an instant, it is very likely that such was the case earlier,” Her Lady Queen analyzed.

“It might be it,” Chu Feng did not dare to be certain of anything. He was only concerned with completing the Incomplete Immortal Armament earlier, and had truly not paid attention to his spirit power.

“It would be truly great if that is the case.”

Her Lady Queen was overjoyed. She had felt Chu Feng’s enormous spirit power. Because of how extraordinary that spirit power was, Her Lady Queen hoped that Chu Feng would continue to have that spirit power in the future.

“Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, what does your mother look like? As long as you know her appearance, you will be able to go and find her in the future,” Her Lady Queen said.

“I wasn’t able to see it clearly. However, I feel like my mother must be a great beauty,” Chu Feng said confidently. Although he had only managed to see a vague image, Chu Feng felt that his mother possessed a lot of class, and was a great beauty.

That was understandable. Likely, to everyone, their mother would be a very beautiful person.

“However... I remember her voice. It was extremely gentle,” Chu Feng felt a great amount of warmth as he recalled that voice.

Chu Feng felt intoxicated with that sensation of warmth. He did not want to let go of it.

He felt that perhaps this was the feeling of motherly love.

“It is truly a pity that you didn’t manage to see her appearance clearly. However, being able to hear her voice should be a very happy thing for you, no?” Her Lady Queen said.

Being with Chu Feng for so long, Her Lady Queen knew very well how much Chu Feng wanted to see his mother.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded. He was still remembering the scene that he had seen.

“Chu Feng, Chu Feng,” Right at that moment, Li Yue’er’s voice suddenly sounded.

“What’s wrong with you? I’m asking you a question, why aren’t you answering me?” Li Yue’er asked Chu Feng.

“Eh...” Chu Feng felt embarrassed. He was immersed in his memory, and had forgotten where he was. He had actually failed to hear Li Yue’er’s voice.

“You might be overly exhausted. Take a seat and have some rest,” Li Yue’er said.

“Girl, you don’t have to worry about me. You should take care of yourself first,” Chu Feng supported Li Yue’er with his arms and brought her to a seat.

Then, he began to set up a spirit formation to help her recover her spirit power.

Li Yue’er’s face was deathly pale. Her clothes were soaked with sweat. Even though she was a powerful little chili hot pepper, she currently resembled a weak woman, powerless to even truss a chicken.

Chu Feng felt very bad about it. If it wasn’t for helping him with his weaponry refinement, Li Yue’er would not have exhausted herself to such a state.

“Stop, your situation is worse than mine,” Seeing that Chu Feng was actually helping her recover her spirit power, Li Yue’er immediately urged him to stop.

“It’s alright, I am fine,” Chu Feng smiled and continued to help Li Yue’er recover.

After a short period of time, Li Yue’er managed to recover a lot. Although her complexion was still pale, she was at least spirited.

As for Chu Feng, he appeared to be completely fine. Compared to when they were still operating the Grand Weaponry Refinement Formation, Chu Feng looked like a completely different person.

“How could you suddenly recover this quickly?”

“Could it be that there is some sort of hidden power within you?” Li Yue’er was still curious.

She knew very well that Chu Feng’s recovery should be related to that overwhelming spirit power.

Ever since that spirit power emerged, Chu Feng became incomparably spirited. It was as if he had been reborn.

If Chu Feng had no idea what was going on still, then there could only be one possibility to explain it. That is, there was still a hidden power within Chu Feng’s body. That power was something that Chu Feng possessed no knowledge of, and did not know how to utilize.

“That would be great if that is the case,” Chu Feng smiled. Then, he said to Li Yue’er, “Oh that’s right, what is it that you wanted to ask me earlier?”

“I wanted to ask you how much progress you’ve managed to obtain from this weaponry refinement?” Li Yue’er asked.

# Chapter 2633 - Wang Qiang's Awakening

---

“Although you weren’t able to persist until the end, you should’ve also gained some harvest from this weaponry refinement process, no?” Chu Feng asked Li Yue’er.

Li Yue’er had directly asked him how much progress he gained from the completion of the weaponry refinement process, and not whether or not he had managed to obtain any harvest from it.

Chu Feng felt that Li Yue’er asked that because she had already obtained martial comprehension from the weaponry refinement process.

Since even she had managed to obtain martial comprehension, it would mean that Chu Feng must’ve definitely obtained martial comprehension too. Moreover, the martial comprehension he should’ve received should be greater than hers.

“Indeed, I have obtained martial comprehension. However, due to the fact that I was unable to persist through the latter half, due to my spirit power being insufficient, what I managed to comprehend grew less and less. Thus, it was not ideal.”

“What about you? You should’ve managed to gain quite a harvest, no?” Li Yue’er asked.

“The most crucial aspect in weaponry refinement would be the final step. However, due to the fact that my stamina was insufficient, I had neglected the comprehension method from the All Equilibrium Weaponry Refinement Chart during the crucial moment so that I could successfully craft the Incomplete Immortal Armament.”

“However, even with that being the case, I still received quite a harvest. I think... I can attempt to breakthrough to the True Immortal realm now,” Chu Feng said.

“When do you plan to begin?” Li Yue’er asked.



“We have spent three entire months in the weaponry refinement process. Regardless of what sort of conspiracy the Infant Soul Sect might have, they will most definitely be on the verge of accomplishing it. Time is urgent, I must immediately enter closed-door training,” Chu Feng said.

“Right now?” Li Yue’er was very shocked. She was worried about Chu Feng’s health.

However, as she saw how spirited Chu Feng appeared, she felt that her worries were somewhat unnecessary. Chu Feng’s current state could be said to be extremely good.

No matter how she looked at it, he did not resemble someone whose body was completely exhausted and on the verge of dying of exhaustion earlier.

After declaring that he would enter closed-door training, Chu Feng immediately did so. However, Li Yue’er knew that Martial Ancestors would definitely cause quite a commotion when breaking through to the True Immortal realm.

As for this commotion, it would differ according to the Self-Punishing Mysterious Technique that they trained in.

When Li Yue’er reached her breakthrough, she had made quite an enormous commotion. As for Chu Feng, he trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Thus, she felt that the commotion that Chu Feng would cause might be unprecedented.

For the sake of not catching the attention of the Infant Soul Sect and having them come and affect Chu Feng’s breakthrough, Li Yue’er not only took out the umbrella that was able to block Heavenly Lightning, but she even deliberately prepared many other treasures for Chu Feng.

Not only were those treasures capable of greatly lessening the commotion in the sky, but they were also able to decrease the fierceness of the Divine Tribulation’s Lightnings so that Chu Feng

would have a greater certainty of success in his breakthrough attempt.

At the moment when Chu Feng entered closed-door training, a large group of people were gathered in a certain ancient forest somewhere in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

This group of people were Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong and the others.

All of them were gathered there. The previously seriously-injured Ying Mingchao was vigorous and lively now. He had been completely healed from his injury that day.

However, at that moment, they all seemed to be awaiting something.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, the earth trembled, and trees began to rock back and forth violently. Soon, as the trembling grew even more intense, the enormous trees that reached the sky started to topple one after another.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. Then, a figure flew out from beneath the ground and arrived in midair.

That person possessed an extremely powerful aura. It was that of a rank two True Immortal.

As for that person, he was actually Wang Qiang.

“Husband, you’ve succeeded?”

Overjoyed, Zhao Hong immediately soared into the sky upon seeing Wang Qiang. She arrived beside him.

“W-wife, I’ve s-successfully made my b-breakthrough. O-on t-top of that, I have the p-power of my Divine Body. T-that cur, that Infant Soul Sect’s S-Sectmaster, will not be able to-to live for much longer.”

“L-Let us g-go and avenge my b-brother now,” Wang Qiang said.

As it turned out, Zhao Hong and the others had deliberately returned to Hero City after escaping from the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster so that they could bring the still-sleeping Wang Qiang away.

Not long after they brought Wang Qiang away, Wang Qiang emerged from the spirit formation that surrounded him. He had successfully fused with the power of his Divine Body.

After obtaining Divine Power, Wang Qiang’s cultivation had directly increased to that of a rank one True Immortal. Furthermore, his cultivation was at the peak of rank one True Immortal.

After the battle that day, there was no more news of Chu Feng. No one knew whether he was dead or alive. As such, everyone became very worried for him.

This was especially true after they verified that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was actually alive and healthy. With that, they became even more certain that a disaster might’ve happened to Chu Feng.

That said, regardless of whether Chu Feng was alive or dead, it remained that the main culprit was the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Thus, Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and the others had been making plans on how to take care of the Infant Soul Sect the entire time.

Unfortunately, even if Ying Mingchao were to recover from his injuries, he would not be a match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

As such, Wang Qiang proposed to enter closed-door training. The reason for that was because after he fused with his Divine Power, not only did his cultivation reach rank one True Immortal, but

even his comprehension ability had increased.

As a peak rank one True Immortal, Wang Qiang felt that he would be able to reach a breakthrough to rank two True Immortal.

Thus, he entered closed-door training, and managed to successfully break through to rank two True Immortal today.

“Little brother Wang Qiang, excuse me for speaking frankly. Even though your cultivation has increased to rank two True Immortal, you might still not necessarily be a match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. The reason for that is because he not only possesses the assistance of the Infant Soul Demonic Technique, but he also possesses an Incomplete Immortal Armament,” Ying Mingchao said.

“I do not know exactly how powerful an Incomplete Immortal Armament might be, but the power of my Divine Body is most definitely not something a mere demonic technique could contend against.”

As Wang Qiang spoke, the weather started to change. In the sky rolling with black clouds appeared the image of four extremely fierce-looking ferocious beasts.

To be exact, those were four demonic beasts. The reason for that was because the aura they were emitting was ice-cold and dark.

That said, regardless of what those demonic beasts were, when Wang Qiang unleashed them, an extremely powerful aura descended from the sky and covered the entire region.

“This aura.”

Upon sensing that aura, not to mention the others, even Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, who were both rank two True Immortals, revealed serious expressions.

Wang Qiang had been saying that his power was Divine Power the entire time. However, Divine Power was generally filled with auras of righteousness. Even Ying Mingchao’s ferocious beast-like

Divine Power emitted a righteous aura.

However, Wang Qiang's Divine Power was emitting a concentrated aura of darkness. To be exact... his Divine Power's aura resembled the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's dark black gaseous flames, or the Evil God Sword's crimson gaseous flames.

Such a Divine Power was truly rare. It could be said that Wang Qiang's Divine Power was strange.

That said, regardless of how strange Wang Qiang's Divine Power might be, it remained that his aura was extremely powerful. He was infinitely close to reaching rank three True Immortal. With such overwhelming power, it might really be able to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Mingchao, Wang Qiang's battle power is this strong. If we are to assist him using the grand formation, he might really be able to defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster,” Zi Xunyi said.

“N-n-no, r-regardless of whether or not i-it is feasible, I m-must still g-go and s-settle the d-debt with the Infant Soul Sect's S-Sectmaster today.”

“I a-am un-unable to wait any l-longer. I must g-go and fetch his head to a-avenge my b-br-brother,” Wang Qiang spoke with killing intent all over his face.

“Very well. Brothers, let us kill our way into the Infant Soul Sect today and avenge Brother Chu Feng!!!” Ying Mingchao shouted loudly.

“Avenge Brother Chu Feng!”

“Avenge Brother Chu Feng!!”

“Avenge Brother Chu Feng!!!”

The next moment, the people from the allied army all started to shout with raised arms.

Their voices resonated through the sky like thunder. They were

most definitely not shouting those words like a slogan.

They were all going to battle with death in mind. They were entering the battle with the determination to avenge Chu Feng. They did not know whether or not they would be able to survive.

Although the current allied army was scattered and much less imposing than before, these people who remained were a group of true warriors.

# Chapter 2634 - He Likes You

---

The palace that Li Yue'er and Chu Feng were in was actually a treasure that Li Yue'er possessed.

While the interior of the palace might appear to be glorious and dazzling, the two of them were actually only inside a piece of stone.

That piece of stone was placed into a mountain by Li Yue'er. As such, it looked very unremarkable.

No one would've ever imagined that that stone was actually a treasure. Furthermore, hidden in that treasure were two cultivation geniuses, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er.

However, at that moment, dazzling nine-colored lightning appeared over that desolate mountain.

The nine-colored lightning rushed forth from deep within the sky and covered the entire sky.

That lightning was galloping, raging and fluttering in an unpredictable manner.

Sometimes, the lightning would look like tens of thousands of dragons flying in the sky. At other times, the lightning would look like giant hands tearing the sky apart.

In short, such a scene was truly spectacular and intimidating.

“Heavens! What is going on with that?!”

The people that lived in the area that possessed ambitions of becoming stronger had all left for the Infant Soul Sect.

All those who remained were people without ambitions or those with extremely weak talent for martial cultivation.

Those people could be said to be the bottom rung of society who lived lives similar to those of ordinary commoners.

Moreover, that place was a desolate place without any major

powers around. Thus, powerful experts generally did not pass by.

As such, how could people like them possibly have witnessed something so spectacular. At that moment, practically everyone stopped the work they were doing.

Their attention was deeply caught by the lightning that covered the sky like divine dragons.

There were those among them that started to cheer, and those among them that started to scream. There were those who were excited, and those who started to panic.

However, the great majority of people were gasping in amazement at the scene.

“This should be caused by the breakthrough of someone with a Heavenly Bloodline, right?”

“I have heard that those with Divine Bloodlines will give rise to Divine Lightning during their breakthroughs,” A youngster said.

An old man that seemed to possess some expanse of knowledge said, “Indeed, the Nine-Colored Divine Lightning is indeed the special characteristic of Divine Bloodlines. I have witnessed those with Heavenly Bloodlines reaching breakthroughs in cultivation, but never have I witnessed such a spectacular sight. An abnormal sight like this simply does not resemble the breakthrough in cultivation of a Heavenly Bloodline possessor. Could it be... that it is the descent of a natural disaster?”

“The descent of a natural disaster?”

“Heavens! Why would a natural disaster suddenly arrive upon us? If I had known this would’ve happened, I should’ve followed my second son and left for the Infant Soul Sect.”

The less knowledgeable someone was, the more slow-witted they were. The more slow-witted someone was, the more timid they were. Upon hearing that this might be the arrival of a natural disaster, the people all began to panic. They began to tidy up their



possessions and started to flee while dragging their entire family with them.

However, the Divine Lightning simply covered too vast of an area. Furthermore, those people possessed limited cultivation. Thus, no matter how they tried to escape, no matter how far they fled, they were still underneath the lightning-filled sky.

They felt as if they would not be able to escape from the grasp of the Divine Lightning no matter how hard they tried to escape.

“We’re done for, we’re done for now. That frightening lightning seems to have covered the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. This is truly a calamity. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will perish.”

In this sort of situation, many people felt that they would not be able to escape from the impending calamity, and started to weep in fear.

This was especially true after the thunder grew more and more resounding. Even the earth itself started to rumble and tremble nonstop. At that moment, the people felt that they would not be able to escape from the calamity.

In fact, it was not only those ignorant commoners that were looking at the lightning-filled sky.

Within the palace, Li Yue’er also had her head raised upward.

For a world spiritist of her level, the special palace hall was simply unable to obstruct her line of sight.

Thus, at that moment, what she saw was not the top of the palace hall. Instead, it was the vast sky, as well as the nine-colored lightning galloping high in the sky.

It was precisely because Li Yue’er was able to see the spectacular sight high in the sky outside that she revealed deep worry in her eyes.

“The lightning this time is much more frightening than last time. Will Chu Feng be able to withstand it?”

“Although the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is powerful, its tribulation lightning is truly frightening.”

“That is something that ordinary individuals will not be able to withstand,” Li Yue’er said.

She was present during Chu Feng’s last breakthrough in cultivation. The Divine Tribulation’s lightning that appeared last time had already astonished her.

However, the lightning this time around was several times more ferocious than last time. Li Yue’er was afraid that Chu Feng would not be able to withstand the torment of the lightning.

Her worries were not unfounded. She felt that even she herself would not be able to withstand such ferocious lightning.

“Little girl, don’t be too worried. Chu Feng will definitely succeed,” Suddenly, a sweet-sounding voice was heard.

Upon hearing that voice, Li Yue’er immediately turned her gaze toward the direction of the voice.

At that location was a table. A young girl wearing a black short skirt was sitting on the table.

That girl was extremely beautiful. As she sat on the table, she moved her snow-white and slender beautiful legs back and forth in a hyperactive and mischievous manner.

As for that girl, she was naturally Her Lady Queen Eggy.

Her Lady Queen had asked Chu Feng to let her out so that she could watch from the outside while Chu Feng entered closed-door training.

Thus, Chu Feng had opened his world spirit gate and released Her Lady Queen before he attempted to make his breakthrough.

“Little girl?” Being addressed in such a manner by Her Lady

Queen, Li Yue'er took a careful glance at Her Lady Queen. Then, she said, "Shouldn't you be the little girl?"

Over the years, Chu Feng had grown from a youngster to a robust young man.

However, Her Lady Queen's appearance had remained that of a young girl. There was not the slightest change in her appearance at all.

Even though Li Yue'er's appearance was also that of a young woman, when compared to Her Lady Queen, Her Lady Queen seemed to be even younger.

"Rude little girl, watch how you talk to this Queen. Address me as big sister," Eggy said with a beaming smile.

Her Lady Queen had always been a proud and haughty person. For many people, they would not be able to enter her discerning eyes, and she would refuse to even acknowledge their existence.

However, Her Lady Queen was quite fond of Li Yue'er. Thus, Her Lady Queen was actually quite genial when speaking with her.

However, due to the fact that Her Lady Queen truly looked too young and possessed an exceptionally beautiful face, Li Yue'er felt that she did not resemble someone amiable and cute. Instead, she resembled more of a mischievous little beauty playing around with her.

Thus, Li Yue'er did not continue to argue the issue of seniority with Her Lady Queen.

"How are you so certain that Chu Feng will be able to successfully make this breakthrough? Right now, the sight outside is truly frightening."

"It is truly the sight of doomsday's arrival. The way I see it, no one would be able to withstand that lightning," Li Yue'er said.

"I can't be certain. However, I know that Chu Feng will be able to

persist through it.”

“Actually, according to the way this Queen sees it, no matter how overwhelmingly powerful one’s Self-Punishment Mysterious Technique might be, they will only be testing one’s spirit and endurance. They will not destroy the cultivator’s body, even with their overwhelming power.”

“As for Chu Feng, his spirit is very strong, and his endurance is also extremely strong. Thus, according to my understanding of him, no matter how ferocious that Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique might be, he will still be able to overcome it in the end.”

“To Chu Feng, what he needs the most is to reach the junction that will allow him to reach a breakthrough in cultivation. The most crucial aspect for him is to attain greater comprehension towards the way of martial cultivation.”

“As for the so-called Divine Tribulation’s Lightning, as long as he is able to draw upon it, it will mean that he has successfully reached a breakthrough in cultivation,” Her Lady Queen said.

“You are truly confident in him. However, you are a world spirit, and you do not know about the profoundness of the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques, nor do you know how frightening the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques are.”

“In short, the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques are not as simple as you imagine them to be,” Li Yue’er said.

“Oh?”

Hearing Li Yue’er saying such words, Her Lady Queen smiled sweetly. She did not try to argue with Li Yue’er.

After all, Li Yue’er was someone trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique. She had personally experienced the torment from the Heavenly Tribulation’s Lightning many times before. Thus, she most likely possessed her own impressions of the Self-Punishment Mysterious Techniques.

That said, regardless, Her Lady Queen still believed in Chu Feng. She felt that he would be able to endure the torment from the Divine Tribulation's Lightning.

Actually, what Li Yue'er said was very true. Her Lady Queen was merely confident in Chu Feng.

"Little girl, this Queen has a question for you," Her Lady Queen said.

"What is it?" Li Yue'er asked.

"Do you have someone that you like?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"No," Li Yue'er answered.

"Then is there someone that likes you?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"No," Li Yue'er answered.

"In that case, you do not have a lover, nor do you have a fiancée?" Her Lady Queen asked.

Li Yue'er's expression changed slightly upon hearing that question. She asked, "What do you mean?"

"What do you think about Chu Feng?" Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous smile.

"What do you mean, what do I think?" Li Yue'er was confused.

"Chu Feng has told me that he likes you," Her Lady Queen said.

"Ah?" Li Yue'er was immediately stunned upon hearing those words. Evidently, she was caught unprepared.

# Chapter 2635 - Rank One True Immortal

---

Although Li Yue'er was caught unprepared by Her Lady Queen's words, she was only surprised momentarily.

Soon, she adjusted her state of mind and asked, "And what of it?"

"I can tell that you have quite a decent opinion of that boy Chu Feng. Why don't you consider being with him? Actually, Chu Feng is quite a decent guy."

"Furthermore, let me tell you this, Chu Feng's parents are both extraordinary individuals. If you are to marry him, you will be able to have people back you in the future," Her Lady Queen said.

"You're overthinking things. I merely consider him to be my friend. Furthermore, the way I see it, he only considers me his friend too," Li Yue'er said.

"Friends can become lovers too. How about... you confess your love to him when he wakes up?"

"That boy Chu Feng is shy, and finds it embarrassing to confess to you. As such, he could only secretly tell me about it."

"But you're different. You're a woman. As the saying goes, for a man to woo a woman, a mountain stands between them, for a woman to woo a man, a layer of muslin stands before them."

"If you are to confess, the marriage between the two of you will be sealed," Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous laugh.

"Nonsense," Li Yue'er was a smart person. She soon realized that Her Lady Queen was messing with her.

Thus, after she cast a side-eye at Her Lady Queen, she turned her gaze towards the sky again.

After that, Li Yue'er completely ignored Her Lady Queen regardless of what she said.

However, Her Lady Queen's attitude toward Li Yue'er was

extremely good. She was actually urging Li Yue'er nonstop.

Although Li Yue'er was ignoring her, she continued to stand right before her and urge her.

Li Yue'er was truly unable to endure Her Lady Queen's endless pestering. Thus, she said to Her Lady Queen, "In that case, why don't you be with Chu Feng?"

"Little girl, this Queen is a world spirit, and Chu Feng is a world spiritist. How could I be together with him? That would be going against the natural order of things," Her Lady Queen said.

"But Chu Feng told me that he likes you," Li Yue'er said.

"Nonsense. I know everything he sees and hears. How come I don't remember him saying something like that to you?" Her Lady Queen had an expression of disbelief.

Li Yue'er did not say anything.

Seeing that Li Yue'er had grown quiet, Her Lady Queen became immensely proud.

"Little one, trying to use this trick against this Queen? Did you think this Queen is that easily deceived? Little girl, compared to this Queen, you are still very inexperienced."

"It's his gaze that told me that," Li Yue'er said.

"What?" Her Lady Queen's eyes' shifted. She revealed a surprised expression.

Gaze? How could one's gaze speak?

"I managed to tell that he likes you from the way he looks at you," Li Yue'er said to Her Lady Queen with a very serious tone.

"Yo, I really wasn't able to tell that, little girl, you are truly one to blabber nonsense," Her Lady Queen said.

"It's up to you whether or not you believe me," Li Yue'er said.

"Rumble~~~"

Right at that moment, a sudden ear-piercing rumble was heard.

In an instant, the nine-colored lightning gathered together, forming an enormous nine-colored dragon. With frightening oppressive might and an ear-piercing roar, it struck down from the ninth heaven. It was aimed straight at Chu Feng.

“Zzzzzz~~~~”

The next moment, the entire palace was covered by nine-colored lightning.

“This...”

At that moment, Her Lady Queen’s expression also changed enormously. Deep worry filled her eyes.

Being inside the Divine Tribulation’s lightning, she was able to sense with greater certainty how overwhelmingly powerful that Divine Tribulation’s lightning was. Sure enough, the lightning this time was stronger than all the lightning before.

Even though the lightning did not attack Her Lady Queen and Li Yue’er at all, they began to violently attack Chu Feng.

Their appearance simply seemed as if they wanted to rip Chu Feng apart alive.

When in such a situation, Chu Feng’s expression immediately became distorted and pain filled his face.

Even though Her Lady Queen was filled with confidence toward Chu Feng, she was still worried for him after seeing what he was going through.

The reason for that was because the lightning this time was truly much fiercer than every other lightning Chu Feng had experienced while making a breakthrough.

Soon, Chu Feng’s flesh started to tear. He was being torn apart and burned away by the lightning. He was being charred black like burned coal. Not only was his flesh changed beyond recognition,



but it was also steaming.

“Eeeahhh~~~”

Seemingly unable to tolerate the pain, Chu Feng started to scream hysterically. His voice was truly tragic.

“Chu Feng,” Her Lady Queen was unable to stand by upon seeing this scene.

However, although she wanted to rush toward Chu Feng, her arm was grabbed by Li Yue’er. Li Yue’er had stopped her.

“Do not disturb him. His tribulation’s lightning is completely different from all others. If his attention is to be disturbed, he might end up dying on the spot,” Li Yue’er said.

After hearing what Li Yue’er said, Her Lady Queen recalled Chu Feng telling her that the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique would bring about Divine level Tribulation. When the Divine Tribulation’s lightning arrives, he would have to either endure through the tribulation or die.

If he were to fail, he would simply die.

“Is there any way to help him?” Her Lady Queen asked Li Yue’er.

She was truly panicking. Even though she was a generally a calm and composed individual, Her Lady Queen would turn into a completely different person when it concerned Chu Feng’s life and death.

She recalled that Li Yue’er had trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique and possessed a vast amount of knowledge. Perhaps she might know of a way to help Chu Feng.

“No, this Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique is too powerful. The treasures that I’ve deployed for Chu Feng have all unleashed their effects already.”

“With such a ferocious Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, there is no one who can help him. As to whether or not

he will be able to successfully reach a breakthrough, he can only rely on himself,” Li Yue’er said.

Her Lady Queen grew even more worried upon hearing those words. However, because she was afraid of affecting Chu Feng, she grew even quieter.

Fortunately, the overwhelming Divine Tribulation’s lightning did not persist for a long time. Soon, the intensity of the ferocious lightning began to die down.

“Don’t worry, he has managed to endure it,” Li Yue’er said.

“You’re certain of that?” Her Lady Queen asked. Even though the lightning’s intensity was decreasing, it remained that the remaining lightning was still tormenting Chu Feng. Chu Feng still had a painful expression on his face.

“It seems that you’re not that confident in him either. However, that’s understandable. The more one loves a person, the more one will be concerned for that person. The more one is concerned for someone, the more one will worry,” Li Yue’er said to Her Lady Queen with a smile on her face.

That girl was actually ridiculing Her Lady Queen. However, Her Lady Queen had no heart to pay attention to her. At that moment, only concern for Chu Feng’s safety filled Her Lady Queen’s eyes.

Actually, with merely this... what Li Yue’er said was actually correct.

At that moment, it was as Li Yue’er had said, Chu Feng seemed to really have managed to endure the tribulation this time around.

The power of the lightning grew weaker and weaker. Even Chu Feng’s charred black skin started to peel away from him and new skin emerged from underneath. It was as if he was experiencing a rebirth.

When the lightning disappeared, Chu Feng had returned to having a completely undamaged appearance.

When Chu Feng's eyes opened, it signified that he had truly succeeded.

The current Chu Feng was no longer a Martial Ancestor. Instead, he was a True Immortal, an actual rank one True Immortal.

“Good job. This Queen knew that you would be able to endure through it,” Seeing that Chu Feng had succeeded, Her Lady Queen ran towards Chu Feng excitedly.

Her Lady Queen no longer possessed the worried expression that she did earlier. Instead, she was completely at ease. It was as if she had anticipated this would happen, that she had anticipated that Chu Feng would definitely succeed.

“The breakthrough this time around was truly a bit hard to bare. However, all of this was worth it,” Chu Feng sensed the power that he possessed at that moment and became extremely excited.

It was truly the feeling of tasting sweetness after enduring bitterness.

After a short moment of chatting with Her Lady Queen, Her Lady Queen entered the world spirit gate and returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

It was only at that moment that Chu Feng noticed that Li Yue'er was currently looking at him with a slightly strange expression.

“Girl, what's wrong? Why are you looking at me like that? Could it be that you can't recognize me?” Chu Feng asked.

“No, it's nothing. Your world spirit knows you very well,” Li Yue'er said.

“Why did you say that?” Chu Feng asked.

“Go and ask her,” Li Yue'er said.

“Milady Queen, what did you say to this girl?” Chu Feng immediately asked Her Lady Queen.

“It's nothing. That said, you can be at ease and pursue that girl.

Trust me, you will definitely succeed,” Her Lady Queen said with a mischievous laugh.

“Ah?” Chu Feng was confused by what Her Lady Queen said. Evidently, the two girls were not talking about the same thing.

“Let me tell you this in secret. Although your closed-door training was completed very quickly, that girl Li Yue’er told me a lot of intimate things. Most importantly, she told me that she likes you,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Ah?” Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing those words.

However, a smile soon emerged on Chu Feng’s face. He said, “Milady Queen, while your cheap trick might be enough to deceive others, they are not enough to deceive me.”

From his understanding of Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was certain that she was toying with him.

“Believe whatever you want. I have given you the chance. It will be up to you whether or not you’ll be able to grasp that chance,” Her Lady Queen said unyieldingly.

“I am finally able to subdue this weapon now, no?”

As Chu Feng spoke, he arrived before the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler and grabbed it.

The next moment, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler let out boundless power. In a flash, it surrounded Chu Feng.

It was a layer of golden gaseous flames. However, it was also emitting specks of faint red.

The gaseous flames sealed Chu Feng off completely. They surrounded him as if they were burning him. It was an extremely imposing sight.

“This weapon?”

Seeing that scene, Li Yue’er started to frown.

Although it was an Incomplete Immortal Armament refined by Chu Feng, it was currently an ownerless item.

If Chu Feng wanted to make it his weapon, he must subdue it.

And now, the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler was emitting an extremely intense opposition.

That weapon possessed an intense temper.

It was harder to subdue than she had anticipated.

# Chapter 2636 - Ocean Of People

---

Those gaseous flames appeared very imposing. It seemed as if they were planning to burn Chu Feng to death.

However, the gaseous flames soon started to gradually vanish. To be exact, they were being absorbed by Chu Feng. The gaseous flames were currently fusing with Chu Feng.

Seeing this, Li Yue'er heaved a sigh of relief. Even though the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler had initially resisted Chu Feng, from the way it appeared now, Chu Feng had evidently successfully subdued the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler.

"I had thought that it would enter Absolute Submission to me. After all, I personally forged it."

"Never did I imagine that this Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler would be this stubborn. It truly was quite taxing to subdue you," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile as he fiddled with the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler in his hand.

In the past, most of the weapons that he had subdued entered Absolute Submission. As such, he would, to a lesser or greater degree, receive power from the weapons that he subdued. Those weapons' power would, to a greater or lesser extent, provide assistance to his cultivation or even increase it directly.

However, even though he had managed to subdue the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and made it recognize him as its master, he was unable to make it undergo Absolute Submission.

"Incomplete Immortal Armaments all possess lives. It is best that you do not say those infuriating words toward it. Else... even if it is willing to be used by you, it will not entrust all of its power to you," Li Yue'er warned Chu Feng.

"Understood," Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he gently caressed the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler and said, "You are, after all, the

weapon that I have personally forged. I will definitely treat you well.”

“You should give it a name,” Li Yue’er said.

“Let’s just continue to call it the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler. After all, its appearance resembles a ruler more than a sword,” Chu Feng said with a wry smile.

Originally, Chu Feng and Li Yue’er had planned to forge the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler into a sword.

However, as Chu Feng had decided to skip the process of customizing the appearance of the weapon, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler ended up having the same appearance as it did before, and simply did not resemble a sword at all.

“That works,” Li Yue’er said.

“Oh, that’s right. When do you plan to enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m planning to set off right away. Do you want to journey there with me?” Li Yue’er asked.

“I’m afraid that I can’t. I must still go and settle my debt with the Infant Soul Sect,” Chu Feng said.

“Even though you’ve managed to successfully reach a breakthrough, your cultivation is still only that of a rank one True Immortal. Even though you’ve grasped that overwhelmingly powerful secret skill, you might not necessarily be a match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster with your current cultivation.”

“Unless... you’re planning to use the power of your Demon Armament again?” Li Yue’er asked.

“Rest assured, I do not have to utilize the power of the Demon Armament again. Furthermore... I will definitely be able to destroy the Infant Soul Sect with my own hands this time around,” Chu Feng said in a very confident manner.

As Chu Feng was extremely confident, he was also extremely excited at that moment.

His father, Chu Xuanyuan, had given him a mission before he went to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. That mission was to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

However, because of his insufficient strength and impatience to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, Chu Feng had given up on that mission, given up upon eliminating the Infant Soul Sect personally.

When the allied army was formed, Chu Feng felt that Ying Mingchao would be the one to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. After all, Ying Mingchao was the strongest individual in the allied army at that time.

However, never did any of them expect the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to be that powerful. Even Ying Mingchao was no match for him.

However, the situation had changed. After Chu Feng entered the True Immortal realm and felt the strength he currently possessed, Chu Feng felt that he would be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect by himself.

With that, he would be able to accomplish the mission given to him by his father.

Although Chu Feng was already thirty years old, compared to the age limit of being under forty years old to accomplish this mission, Chu Feng was still very young.

As long as Chu Feng was able to accomplish the mission, it would mean that he would have brought shame upon the Chu Heavenly Clan.

After all, the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect was a mission set up by the Chu Heavenly Clan for their younger generations.



However, not all of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation could attempt the mission, as there was also the forty year age limit. Those who were older than forty years old would not be able to attempt the mission.

This led to there being no one from the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation capable of accomplishing the mission even after many years had passed. In fact, many talents from the younger generation of the Chu Heavenly Clan had even been killed by the Infant Soul Sect.

The Infant Soul Sect, this Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's demonic sect, was simply incomparable to the powers in the Upper Realms.

However, it had become a nightmare in the eyes of countless Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. In fact, it became a taboo that they did not dare to touch.

As for Chu Feng, who was he? He was a child deemed trash and discarded by the Chu Heavenly Clan. On his forehead was still imprinted the character 'trash' that was personally branded upon him by the Chu Heavenly Clan.

If Chu Feng, this trash in the eyes of the Chu Heavenly Clan, was able to accomplish that mission, it would most definitely serve as an enormous humiliation to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

"Since you are determined to go, I will not stop you. Let us bid our farewells now," Li Yue'er said.

"I believe that we will meet again," Chu Feng said with a light smile.

"I think so too. As long as both of us are still alive," Li Yue'er said.

"We definitely will be," Chu Feng said.

Then, Chu Feng parted ways with Li Yue'er.

Li Yue'er proceeded toward the teleportation formation leading to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. In other words, she had proceeded for the so-called Stairway to Heaven.

As for Chu Feng, he proceeded directly toward Chen Heavenly City, the headquarters of the Infant Soul Sect.

Chu Feng wanted to know exactly what sort of grand activity was happening at the Infant Soul Sect, exactly what was it that the Infant Soul Sect spent so much time and effort plotting for.

.....

Chen Heavenly City was completely destroyed on the day when Ying Mingchao and the Infant Soul Sect's Sect master battled.

However, not only was Chen Heavenly City completely restored now, but it was even many times larger than before.

This new Chen Heavenly City was unimaginably large. Even when standing in the sky and looking down below, one could only see the tip of the iceberg known as Chen Heavenly City.

This city was large enough that it could accommodate everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

That said, even though the city had expanded many times in size, there were no other buildings apart from the city walls. To be exact, this was merely an empty city with city walls around it.

That said, the city was not a ghost city. On the contrary, it was utterly bustling with noise and excitement.

At a glance, one could see figures all over the city. Those were not ants. Instead, they were humans.

In fact, it was not only humans that were in the city. There were also a lot of monstrous beasts.

There were so many people that one simply could not see the end of them. At a glance, people's silhouettes seemed to extend all the way to the horizon.

This was a boundless ocean formed with people's bodies. This was... an ocean of people.

A scene like this could not be described even with the word 'spectacular.'

Although not everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was gathered in Chen Heavenly City, at least ninety percent of them were gathered there.

At that moment, the faces of those people were all filled with excitement. They were all anticipating the opening of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. They were all waiting for the Infant Soul Grand Formation to grant them martial comprehension that would allow them to increase their cultivation.

"Sectmaster Hun, everyone that should be here has arrived. The people that did not come are all those that do not want to come. How much longer are you planning to wait till the activation of your Infant Soul Grand Formation?" The Abbot of the Buddha's Heavenly Temple asked.

"Don't be so anxious. There are still people on their way here. The Infant Soul Grand Formation will be activated once they're all here."

"Everyone, please rest assured. The Infant Soul Grand Formation will bestow all of you with its power. Everyone here will be able to benefit from the Infant Soul Grand Formation," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke to the crowd with a deeply resonating voice.

Even though not everyone was able to see his image, they all heard his voice.

"Long live the Infant Soul Sect! Long live Lord Sectmaster!!!"

It was unknown who started shouting those words. However, soon, everyone started to echo those words.

The densely packed crowd of millions and millions of humans

and monstrous beasts were all shouting in unison. This scene was truly spectacular.

That said, it was also very lamentable at the same time. After all, the Infant Soul Sect was a power that willfully slaughtered the innocent.

Such a demonic sect should be the target of scorn. They should be detested by all.

Yet, the Infant Soul Sect... was actually revered and worshipped by everyone like gods.

As such, how was it not lamentable???

# Chapter 2637 - Bitterly Disappointed

---

“Today, the Infant Soul Sect shall perish!!!”

Suddenly, a voice sounded from the heavens. That voice forcibly suppressed the unified shouts from the hundreds of millions of people.

The crowd present were all surprised upon hearing that voice.

The current Infant Soul Sect could be said to be everyone’s light of dawn, a light that would increase their cultivations. As such, how could someone dare say these sorts of words at a time like this?

It was simply outrageous and insolent behavior.

“Finally, you’re here. Ying Mingchao... I knew that you would come.”

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster cast his gaze to the distant sky with a beaming smile on his face.

As the people present were mostly of a low level of cultivation, they were simply unable to see that far into the distance. However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was, after all, a rank two True Immortal. With his strength, he would naturally be able to see very far into the distance.

Thus, he had already noticed the allied army that was proceeding toward Chen Heavenly City.

Soon, the allied army led by Ying Mingchao appeared before the crowd’s field of view.

“Ying Mingchao. It really is them?”

“What? Ying Mingchao has come? Why did they come here?”

Although not everyone present was able to see Ying Mingchao and the others, they all came to know of their arrival from the conversations of others.

“Ying Mingchao, was the humiliation you received that day not enough for you? You actually still dare to come cause a disturbance?” The Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster said to Ying Mingchao.

“Amitabha, Almsgiver Ying, why must you do this?”

The Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple also stood up. There was a trace of mockery in his tone.

“Ying Mingchao, Lord Sectmaster has already spared you once. Yet, you dare to come stir up trouble again? How could there be someone as shameless as you?”

More and more people present started to mock Ying Mingchao and the others.

They were all people who were ignorant of the truth. They were people that believed that the Infant Soul Sect was truly going to help them.

Furthermore, they had no idea that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster went to secretly chase after Ying Mingchao and the others to kill them.

All they knew was that Ying Mingchao had led the allied army to attack the Infant Soul Sect, but was instead defeated by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster decided to let Ying Mingchao go.

Thus, they felt that the fact that Ying Mingchao and the others dared to come create a disturbance today meant that they were shameless pests.

As such, they naturally started to look down on Ying Mingchao and the others. Some among them also started to verbally attack Ying Mingchao and the others.

“If I hadn’t witnessed it myself, I truly would never have believed

that the renowned Lord Ying Mingchao was actually this sort of man.”

“Truly one may know a person for a long time, yet never understand their true nature.”

More and more people started to mock Ying Mingchao. In fact, even those that did not witness what happened that day, and even people that were unable to even see Ying Mingchao and the others started mocking Ying Mingchao.

At that moment, the great hero in the eyes of countless people had become the target of criticism from all around. He had become the object of public disgust, and even the target of hatred.

“Truly fools.”

Seeing that bunch of fickle people, Ying Mingchao revealed deep disgust on his face.

Ying Mingchao had already witnessed a lot of selfish actions in his life. However, the scene before him caused him to be bitterly disappointed.

After all, many of the people that were verbally attacking him were people who had previously worshipped and admired him.

Yet, for the sake of self-interest, they immediately changed their attitudes.

Such a rapid change in attitude had caused Ying Mingchao to feel utterly disappointed.

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang walked out from the allied army. He walked to the front of the ally army and said, “In-Infant Soul S-Sect’s Sectmaster, is it? W-W-Where is my B-Brother C-Chu Feng right now?”

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster simply ignored him.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster felt that even though Wang Qiang possessed some reputation in

the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he was nowhere near qualified enough to talk to him.

He felt that the only person in the allied army that was qualified to talk to him was Ying Mingchao.

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was ignoring him, Wang Qiang revealed a large blade and pointed it at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. He shouted, "Your g-granddaddy is questioning you right n-now! D-Don't you p-play d-deaf and mute w-with me! A-Answer me immediately!"

"This Wang Qiang's aura?"

Once Wang Qiang spoke again, all the experts from the Infant Soul Sect's side revealed a change in expression.

Even the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had a surprised expression in his eyes when he looked to Wang Qiang again.

They were all able to sense that Wang Qiang's aura was that of a rank two True Immortal.

Furthermore, they noticed that even though the weapon in Wang Qiang's hand resembled a kitchen cleaver, it was actually an Ancestral Armament. Furthermore, it was a top quality Ancestral Armament.

"You're asking about Chu Feng?"

"Didn't Chu Feng escape with Ying Mingchao that day? How would I know where he is?"

"If you want to ask someone, you should be asking Ying Mingchao instead," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said with a confused expression on his face.

"T-Truly to p-pretend to be s-stupid, is it? V-Very well, I'll beat the t-truth out of you!"

Wang Qiang was disinclined to bother with superfluous words. He raised his Vegetable Cutting Edge and hacked it down toward



the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Boom~~~”

A slash was sent forth from the sky to the ground. Even the air and space itself were sliced in half by it.

That powerful slash could be said to be truly capable of splitting apart the heavens and cleaving apart the earth. It directly shot toward Chen Heavenly City, where hundreds of millions of people were gathered.

If that slash were to successfully reach the Chen Heavenly City, it would definitely cause countless people to lose their lives.

However, Wang Qiang did not care about that. He only wanted to avenge Chu Feng, and simply could not care about the lives of those selfish fools.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster also revealed his Ancestral Armament. With a wave of his hand, he also shot forth a slash. That slash managed to block Wang Qiang's incoming slash outside of the Chen Heavenly Clan.

“If you want to kill me, then come at me directly! Do not harm the innocent!” The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shouted. As he spoke, he actually had a faint trace of anger in his tone.

Hearing those words, the people that were previously enveloped by Wang Qiang's attack, those people that felt that a great catastrophe was about to befall them, were all moved to tears.

They actually all ended up really considering the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster as a great hero who considered their well-being.

“Y-You're q-quite an actor. V-Very g-g-good, your daddy shall s-see how much longer you can c-continue your pretense!”

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was fond of being pretentious and putting on a show before the crowd, Wang Qiang

decided that he might as well send forth countless more slashes with his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

Although the slashes Wang Qiang sent forth this time around were about as powerful as his previous slashes, the scope of his attack was many times larger than his previous attack.

Furthermore, not a single one of his slashes that he sent forth this time around was aimed at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Instead, the many slashes were all aimed at the people inside Chen Heavenly City.

Wang Qiang wanted to see exactly how much longer the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster could continue to put up his disguise for.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster reacted extremely fast. Right after Wang Qiang sent forth his attacks, he immediately sent forth counterattacks. Many slashes were also shot out from his Ancestral Armament.

As explosions sounded, he actually managed to really block Wang Qiang's slashes. He had successfully prevented those innocent people from being injured or killed by Wang Qiang's slashes.

“Wang Qiang, you are truly too excessive! You actually planned to willfully slaughter the innocent!”

“Today, on behalf of all living things in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, I, Hun Poyuan, shall eliminate a scourge like you!” The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster held his Ancestral Armament in hand and rushed to attack Wang Qiang.

That said, when he rushed to attack Wang Qiang, he even gave himself a title of being righteous and fighting for justice.

# Chapter 2638 - Wang Qiang Revealing His Might

---

“Y-You’re c-calling me a scourge?”

“I, Wang Qiang, am a-actually being c-called a scourge?”

“F-Fucking hell! I’ve s-seen d-despicable people before, and I’ve a-also seen shameless people before, but y-your d-daddy I have never seen s-someone as d-despicable and s-shameless a-as-as you.”

“D-Doesn’t matter, I, W-Wang Qiang, do not c-care a-about how others view me. T-Today, I a-am de-definitely going to kill you and a-avenge my brother!”

Wang Qiang was not to be outdone. He held the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand and rushed forth to confront the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

As the two rank two True Immortals collided and started battling with one another, they created overflowing oppressive might even without using special martial skills. Their battle was truly world-shaking.

“He’s that Wang Qiang? Chu Feng’s friend and a person deemed to be one of the strongest geniuses in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, that Wang Qiang?”

“No wonder. No wonder he’s already a rank two True Immortal at such a young age. That talent of his is truly astonishing.”

“Although his strength is overwhelmingly powerful, his character is truly lacking. He actually wanted to kill us earlier. For Chu Feng to have a friend like him, it could be seen that Chu Feng is not someone good either.”

“Humph, that Chu Feng was not a good person to begin with. When the Infant Soul Sect announced to the world that the Infant Soul Grand Formation was capable of helping us increase our

cultivations, that Chu Feng insisted on saying that it was a trap. He even declared that we were blinded by self-interest and cursed us as fools.”

“Humph, we were all present and clearly witnessed the Infant Soul Grand Formation helping the Chen Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief increase his cultivation. The ability of the Infant Soul Grand Formation is real. It is not a trap at all.”

“Yet, merely because he possessed conflict with the Infant Soul Sect, that Chu Feng actually decided to invert right and wrong to speak ill of the Infant Soul Sect. He is simply not a good person at all.”

“That’s right. And here I was hearing rumors that Chu Feng was righteous and loyal. Turns out, he’s nothing but a phony.”

“That’s right. Facts speak louder than words. All the heroic deeds that Chu Feng did are merely lies. Even if they were real, they must all have been an act.”

“Truly, one may know a person for a long time without knowing their true nature. People are truly selfish.”

After Wang Qiang unleashed his attacks at them, the crowd grew even more certain that Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and the others were merely a bunch of hypocrites. In fact, they even began to verbally attack Chu Feng.

“It’s alright, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster is going to uphold justice for us. Today... those two-faced hypocrites will all be killed.”

Even more infuriating, those people actually really considered the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster as their savior. They all started to desire from the bottom of their hearts that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster would defeat Wang Qiang.

“Heavens! What is going on? Why does it seem like that Wang Qiang is holding the upper hand in their battle?”

At that moment, there were those with powerful strength that discovered that Wang Qiang was actually winning in the confrontation with Ancestral Armaments.

“What? That Wang Qiang is winning? That’s impossible! No matter how strong he might be, he couldn’t possibly surpass the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. After all, Lord Sectmaster is someone who defeated even Ying Mingchao.”

Due to the fact that the overall cultivation of the crowd gathered here was quite low, they could only enjoy the lively excitement, and were simply unable to make out anything from the battle in the sky.

The only things that they could see were the surging energy ripples and overflowing oppressive might caused by the battle in the sky. They were simply unable to even see the figures of the two fighters.

However, as the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had defeated Ying Mingchao before, the crowd all felt that he would definitely win the battle. They had all thought that it would most definitely be the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster who would be holding the upper hand in the battle.

“That guy... how could he be this powerful?”

While others might not be able to clearly see the battle, people like the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s Abbot and the Immortal Sword School’s Headmaster were able to witness the battle clearly.

They were able to clearly see that Wang Qiang, with his naked upper body, straw sandals on his feet and a kitchen cleaver-like weapon, was attacking recklessly in the sky.

However, his seemingly reckless and aimless attacks were able to suppress the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster could do nothing but defend himself against Wang Qiang’s nonstop attacks.

He did not even have the opportunity to fight back. He was completely locked down by Wang Qiang's barrage of attacks.

In fact... in a moment of carelessness, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster received a slash on his left arm from Wang Qiang. Immediately, blood started to splatter across the sky.

"Brother Wang Qiang's battle power is truly not something that we can compare with."

Seeing that Wang Qiang held the upper hand in the battle, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and the others were all overjoyed.

At that moment, neither Wang Qiang nor the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were using special methods to assist themselves. They were only fighting with one another with their rank two True Immortal-level cultivation and Ancestral Armaments.

Generally speaking, such a situation would cause the two fighters to be equally matched. However, Wang Qiang was able to rapidly gain the upper hand in their battle.

This signified one thing. That is, although they were both rank two True Immortals, Wang Qiang's battle power greatly surpassed that of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"Puchi~~~"

Suddenly, another slash from Wang Qiang landed on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's right leg. This time around, the power behind the slash was so strong that it actually managed to slice off the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's right leg.

"Haha. T-Trash. Y-You're nothing much either," Wang Qiang laughed out loud.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed incomparable fury.

He was infuriated by Wang Qiang. Wang Qiang had never stopped talking ever since they started fighting. Wang Qiang had

been insulting him nonstop the entire time.

At the beginning, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not take Wang Qiang's insults to heart. The reason for that was because he felt that even though Wang Qiang was a rank two True Immortal, his strength would definitely not surpass Ying Mingchao's.

When even Ying Mingchao was no match for him, he felt that someone like Wang Qiang would most definitely be easily defeated by him.

However, when he actually started fighting against Wang Qiang and was suppressed by Wang Qiang in battle, all of the insults that Wang Qiang had been showering him with turned true.

He had actually really become the trash that Wang Qiang spoke of.

He felt this to be completely unacceptable.

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shouted, "Set up the formation!!!"

Right after he said those words, the people from the Infant Soul Sect reacted as if they were already prepared. Immediately, they unleashed the formation.

Merely, as the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not utilize the Infant Soul Demonic Technique when fighting against Wang Qiang, the dark black gaseous flames emitted by those members of the Infant Soul Sect did not enter the sky.

Instead, they directly entered the body of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"W-What's wrong, trash? Y-You weren't able t-to win a-against your granddaddy W-Wang Qiang, and now need to f-find others to help you?" Wang Qiang started to laugh mockingly.

"Formation, rise!" At the moment when the people from the Infant Soul Sect used their formation to help the Infant Soul Sect's

Sectmaster increase his battle power, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong and the others who had already prepared for this immediately unleashed the same battle power-increasing spirit formation that they assisted Ying Mingchao with that day.

“No need.”

However, right when they started activating that spirit formation, before the crowd could assimilate their power into it and send it to Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang suddenly waved his hand.

He actually refused the assistance from Zi Xunyi and the others.

At that moment, it was not only Zi Xunyi and the others who were confused. Even the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect were confused by Wang Qiang's action.

“T-Trash, do y-you s-see this? Y-Your g-granddaddy Wang Q-Qiang simply does not need the assistance of o-others t-to take care of you. Your g-granddaddy is c-completely un-unlike you. G-Grandson, h-how could you be t-this u-useless to r-request the assistance of tha-that many people?”

“F-Furthermore, i-it's one t-thing to r-request the assistance of o-others, but t-they're actually e-even w-weeping and howling a-as they're providing you w-with their assistance. F-Furthermore, t-their c-cries even s-sounded like those of infants. D-Don't you f-find that disgusting?” Wang Qiang mocked.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not refute Wang Qiang's mockery. The reason for that was because his battle power had already increased enormously after receiving the assistance of the formation.

At that moment, he had unleashed many offensive techniques. There was only one goal in his mind. He planned to make Wang Qiang shut up with his strength.

Unfortunately, he was shocked to discover that Wang Qiang's battle power was overwhelmingly strong. It was strong enough to



make his hackles rise.

Even though he had obtained the assistance of the formation formed by the Infant Soul Sect's members and increased his battle power greatly, he was still no match for Wang Qiang.

“T-T-Trash, d-did you r-really think that you w-would be able to d-defeat your g-granddaddy Wang Qiang with j-just the h-help from that tr-trash? You a-are s-simply delusional.”

“Y-Your granddaddy W-Wang Qiang is merely playing with you. If I a-am to get serious, I will t-turn you into m-mincemeat in minutes,” Wang Qiang said.

# Chapter 2639 - Astonishing Battle Power

---

“You damned stutterer! This Sectmaster has yet to unleash my full strength. Don’t you continue to act this pleased here!”

“Right now, this Sectmaster shall have you experience my true strength!”

Finally, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was unable to tolerate Wang Qiang’s insults, and returned Wang Qiang insults.

Furthermore, as he said those words, boundless dark black gaseous flames began to surge outward from his body into the sky.

Immediately, the vast sky was covered by the dark black gaseous flames. The infant cries also began to fill their surroundings.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had unleashed his Infant Soul Demonic Technique, his technique that could contend against Divine Power.

“Die!!!”

After increasing his strength, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster immediately unleashed an attack at Wang Qiang.

“Heeahh~~~”

Wang Qiang shouted loudly. Then, four different-colored gaseous flames emerged from his body.

At the same time, from the sky that was originally covered by the dark black gaseous flames emerged four fierce and malevolent-looking beasts.

Those four ferocious beasts were simply too frightening. The auras that they emitted were extremely ice-cold. Even though those four ferocious beasts were only images and did not even let out a single roar, their grandeur surpassed that of the black gaseous flames that filled the sky and shadowed the infant cries.

They were truly frightening.

At the moment when Wang Qiang unleashed his Divine Power, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's attack was about to reach him.

Logically, at such a close distance, Wang Qiang would not be able to dodge the attack.

However, Wang Qiang merely raised his hand, and the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand actually arrived before him with an unimaginable speed.

"Clank!" Not only did Wang Qiang's Vegetable Cutting Edge manage to block the attack from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, it even knocked the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster back.

"This..." The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster only managed to stabilize himself in midair after being forced back several steps.

At that moment, astonishment filled his face. Logically, the attack earlier should have most definitely struck Wang Qiang.

However, not only did it not manage to land on Wang Qiang, but he himself was even knocked back by Wang Qiang. He felt this to be utterly unbelievable.

"S-Say, grandson, d-didn't you s-say that y-you wanted y-your granddaddy I to w-witness your p-power? Why d-don't you t-try doing th-that?" Wang Qiang mocked.

"Humph," The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was furious from the humiliation. After letting out a snort, he once again rushed forth to attack Wang Qiang.

However, regardless of whether he tried to fight Wang Qiang at close range or attack him from afar, all of his attacks were easily blocked by Wang Qiang. He was simply unable to injure Wang Qiang at all.

Instead, he was beaten back by Wang Qiang repeatedly.

He felt extremely humiliated by what was happening.

"It's those strange things?!"

After gradually calming down, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster took note of the four strange gaseous flames on Wang Qiang.

Then he looked upward, and discovered the ferocious image of the four imposing beasts in the sky.

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to frown. He discovered that the power that Wang Qiang was unleashing right now was actually even more frightening than his Infant Soul Demonic Technique.

"You've trained in a Forbidden Demonic Technique?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster asked.

"D-D-De-Demonic Technique? Your g-granddaddy's power is c-called Divine Power!" Wang Qiang mocked.

"Nonsense! That is Divine Power? How could a Divine Power's aura be like this?" The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster refused to accept Wang Qiang's declaration.

He simply did not believe that the power Wang Qiang unleashed was Divine Power.

As he had trained in the Infant Soul Demonic Technique his whole life, he firmly believed that Wang Qiang's power also originated from a Forbidden Demonic Technique.

The reason for that was because he felt that the aura of Wang Qiang's power was much stronger than his own Infant Soul Demonic Technique in both its murderousness and its heinous nature.

"F-For you t-to have never f-felt this s-sort of aura before only m-means that y-you are i-ignorant and l-lacking in knowledge," Wang Qiang said.

"Don't you act this arrogant! Even if you've trained in a Forbidden Demonic Technique, I will still eliminate a scourge like you today!" With a flip of his wrist, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster tossed away the Ancestral Armament in his hand.

Both the Buddha's Heavenly Temple's Abbot and the Immortal Sword School's Headmaster revealed a confused expression upon seeing that.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was not a match for Wang Qiang. Given that that was the case, if he were to throw away his Ancestral Armament, he would be even less of a match for Wang Qiang.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when they were having misgivings, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed a golden dagger in his hand.

“This aura, could that be... an Incomplete Immortal Armament?”

It was only after they saw the weapon held by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster that they came to a sudden realization.

Naturally, the golden dagger held by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster would be the Incomplete Immortal Armament Dragonscale Dagger.

“Y-You're f-finally re-revealing your final t-trump card? S-Sure enough, that Incomplete Immortal Ar-Armament possesses an e-extraordinary aura. H-However, y-your granddaddy is s-still going to kill you today.”

When the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster unleashed his Incomplete Immortal Armament, Wang Qiang finally revealed a serious expression.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's battle power had indeed increased enormously when the Incomplete Immortal Armament appeared.

The current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster now had the strength to make Wang Qiang take him seriously.

“C-Come. Let y-your g-granddaddy see exactly w-what sort of power your Incomplete Immortal Armament might have.”

As Wang Qiang became serious, he also became excited. Holding the Vegetable Cutting Edge, he actually took the initiative to rush to attack the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

He was impatient to experience the might of an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

"Humph, ignorant child, by the time you realize the strength of my Incomplete Immortal Armament, you will already be dead."

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster snorted coldly. Then, with the Dragonscale Dagger in hand, he rushed to confront Wang Qiang.

The two of them were thinking the same thing. They both wanted to kill their opponent using the most humiliating method.

Thus, neither of them used any martial skills. Instead, they decided to fight one another at close range using only their weapons.

One was an Ancestral Armament, whereas the other was an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

As the two fought, sparks scattered about and energy ripples started to wreak havoc.

To the crowd's astonishment, the battle that should have been easily decided entered a stalemate.

Wang Qiang actually managed to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with a kitchen cleaver-like Ancestral Armament.

"Brother Wang Qiang is truly powerful."

At that moment, even Ying Mingchao was unable to contain himself from praising Wang Qiang.

He knew very well that even though Wang Qiang's Ancestral Armament was a top quality Ancestral Armament, it was simply unable to contend against that Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Furthermore, Ying Mingchao had fought against that Incomplete

Immortal Armament before. Thus, he knew very well how powerful it was.

There was only one reason why Wang Qiang was able to fight on par with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with only an Ancestral Armament. That is, Wang Qiang's battle power was outstanding.

Wang Qiang was making up for the deficit in the strength of his weapon with his own battle power.

With how powerful Wang Qiang's battle power was, how could one not be astonished by it?

"S-Say, g-grandson, that Incomplete Immortal A-Armament of yours is not that s-strong either. W-Why is it th-that you are still n-no match for your g-granddaddy ev-even after fighting for so long?"

"That Incomplete I-Immortal Armament of yours couldn't possibly be a fake, right?"

Wang Qiang was blabbering nonstop as he fought against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Insults were being shot out from his mouth toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster incessantly.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was so furious that his face turned green. However, he didn't say anything, and merely continued with his attacks against Wang Qiang. Each and every one of his attacks were fatal. From this, it could be seen how much he detested Wang Qiang.

Unfortunately, all of his attacks were blocked by Wang Qiang. He was simply unable to injure Wang Qiang at all.

This caused the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to be even more furious. He was already using an Incomplete Immortal Armament. Thus, how could he not defeat an Ancestral Armament?

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang suddenly accelerated his attacks and caught the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster off-guard.

"Puu." A line of blood splattered forth. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was struck by Wang Qiang. His entire left shoulder was nearly severed.

Seeing such a scene, the expressions of the experts present all changed. They involuntarily opened their mouths in amazement.

Although the two fighters were both rank two True Immortals, Wang Qiang actually managed to injure the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, who was using an Incomplete Immortal Armament, with an Ancestral Armament.

"Impossible!"

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster looked at the deep wound on his left shoulder. He was actually unwilling to believe it to be real.

He was truly unable to accept it.

After all, he had utilized the power of his Incomplete Immortal Armament, which had increased his overall battle power.

It was one thing for him to not be able to kill Wang Qiang even with all this. Yet, how could he possibly be injured by Wang Qiang?

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, Wang Qiang unleashed a barrage of attacks at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster with his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster refused to accept his defeat, and rushed forth to meet Wang Qiang's attacks.

However, he was defeated even more thoroughly the second time around. After a mere couple bouts, his entire body was riddled with wounds.

"Woosh~~~"



With the situation being like that, even though the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unwilling to accept it, he had no choice but to admit that he was no match for Wang Qiang.

Thus, he moved back explosively and distanced himself from Wang Qiang.

# Chapter 2640 - Golden Forbidden Medicine

---

Wang Qiang did not chase after the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster who had turned around to escape. Instead, he burst into loud laughter.

Mockingly, Wang Qiang said, "S-Sure enough, you're t-trash. Even if you possess an In-Inc-Incomplete Immortal Arm-Armament, y-you r-remain t-trash still."

"Say, t-trash g-grandson, how a-are you s-supposed to kill your g-granddaddy like this? Wouldn't w-what you de-declared earlier be n-nothing more t-than a pipe d-dream?"

"H-How a-about your g-granddaddy g-give you a h-handicap, and u-use o-only one hand?"

"H-How about this. Y-Your g-granddaddy will give you a massive handicap of b-both hands and legs."

"Your granddaddy m-might a-as well not fight back. I-I'll just stand here and l-let you cut m-me down."

"Damned stutterer! Shut up!"

Finally, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke. He was filled with rage, Flames were shooting out from his eyes.

Not to mention the rage on his face, all of his veins in his entire body were bulging forth.

In fact, he was already shivering in anger.

The reason for that was because he discovered that he was truly unable to match the Wang Qiang before him.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's heart suddenly grew tense. He discovered that items had appeared in his palm.

“Swallow them.”

Then, a voice transmission entered the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s ears.

It was the voice of that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man.

When that voice was heard, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was immediately overjoyed. He immediately looked to his palm.

That old man possessed overwhelming power. If he were to help him, then regardless of how powerful Wang Qiang might be, Wang Qiang would still be defeated by him.

“These are...”

When the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster looked to his palm, he immediately revealed a stunned expression.

There were tens of medicinal pellets in his palm.

Those medicinal pellets were not very large. They were each only one tenth the size of an ordinary pearl.

Those medicinal pellets were golden, and were emitting bright golden light and extraordinary auras.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was able to tell with a single glance that they were forbidden medicines. Furthermore, they were an extremely powerful sort of forbidden medicine.

“Swallow them,” Right at that moment, that old man’s voice sounded again.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster did not do as he indicated. He knew very well that he would definitely die should he swallow all of the forbidden medicine.

“Swallow those medicinal pellets and this old man will guarantee that you will live.”

“If you are to refuse to swallow them, even this old man will not be able to save you,” that old man’s voice sounded again.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster actually knew very well what sort of situation he was in. Due to his identity, even if that old man possessed overwhelming power, he would not be able to act to help him.

If he wanted to defeat Wang Qiang and the others, he could only rely on himself. If he were to swallow those medicinal pellets, he would be able to defeat Wang Qiang.

If he did not swallow the medicinal pellets, he would only be killed by Wang Qiang.

Judging from that, swallowing the forbidden medicines would be the most optimal choice for now.

However, even though he knew that was the case, he still did not dare to swallow the forbidden medicine.

The reason for that was because he knew that swallowing those forbidden medicines would be equivalent to taking one foot and placing it over the gates of hell. He would have no way to go back on his decision.

"What's t-this? You're u-unable to d-defeat your g-granddaddy, and plan t-to use forbidden medicines now?"

"Say, my d-dear grandson, look at y-yourself. Y-You a-are t-truly a d-d-d-disappointment to your g-granddaddy."

"Forget a-about i-it-it. Go ahead and t-take them. Your granddaddy shall see w-what tricks you have l-left," Wang Qiang mocked.

Although Wang Qiang was able to tell that those were forbidden medicines, he did not stop the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang simply did not place those forbidden medicines in his eyes.

He felt that even if the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster were to take those forbidden medicines, he would still not be able to defeat him.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang was able to sense exactly how powerful his battle power was. It was precisely because he knew how powerful he was that he acted so confidently.

“Take t-them. Your g-granddaddy is telling you to take them. W-Why are you s-still lingering around?”

“Grandson, take them right n-now. S-Swallow them and c-come fight a-against your granddaddy again.”

Seeing that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was hesitant to take the forbidden medicines, Wang Qiang started to laugh mockingly.

“Damned stutterer! Shut the fuck up!”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster shouted furiously.

Then, he raised his hand and directly tossed the handful of golden forbidden medicines into his mouth.

He was truly and utterly enraged by Wang Qiang. It was precisely because of the fury he felt toward Wang Qiang that he gained the courage to take those forbidden medicines.

After all, those forbidden medicines would be able to help him teach Wang Qiang a proper and ruthless lesson. They would be able to help him vent the anger in his heart.

“Bang~~~”

Right after those forbidden medicine entered his mouth, an explosion sounded from within the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s body. It sounded as if something had exploded within him.

Following that, he started to emit a golden radiance.

The golden light was emitted directly from his body. It was like his bones were shining with golden light.

Soon, the skin of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to fall off of his body. He became a humanoid shaped pile of mutilated flesh that was shining with golden radiance.

After his skin started to fall off, his flesh also began to fall off. In the end, only his bones remained.

Round little pearls were present on his bones. Those pearls were shining golden bright.

Looking carefully, those pearls were the same golden forbidden medicines that he had swallowed earlier.

Merely, at that moment, those golden forbidden medicines had already fused with the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. They now resembled a part of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

That said, even though he was emitting golden light, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster appeared to be extremely frightening. After all, his flesh and skin were completely gone. All that remained was his skeleton.

“Hahahaha...”

Right at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster burst into loud laughter. It was an extremely frantic and crazy laughter, so much so that the crowd was unable to endure it.

Most importantly, with his current appearance and that laughter, he was truly frightening.

“What's wrong, grandson? D-Did you eat too m-many forbidden medicines that y-you've turned s-stupid?” Wang Qiang mocked.

“You will soon find out why I'm laughing,” The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said to Wang Qiang.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster moved. His speed was extremely fast. He was flying straight at Wang Qiang.

“This guy.”

At that moment, even Wang Qiang's expression changed.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster

had arrived before Wang Qiang instantly.

That Dragonscale Dagger was already slashing down on Wang Qiang. The speed was so fast that even Wang Qiang was caught off-guard.

However, Wang Qiang was not to be underestimated either. At the critical moment, Wang Qiang managed to, with all his might, raise the Vegetable Cutting Edge in his hand.

“Clank~~~”

Sparks scattered everywhere. Wang Qiang managed to block the attack.

However, Wang Qiang was knocked back several meters after blocking the attack.

Furthermore, a deep dent had appeared in his Vegetable Cutting Edge.

Not only that, but the arm that he was holding the Vegetable Cutting Edge with started to tremble violently.

“This guy’s power, it a-actually increased t-this much?”

At that moment, Wang Qiang’s heart sunk. Even though he knew that the forbidden medicines would increase the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s strength, Wang Qiang never expected the forbidden medicine to increase his strength to such a degree.

It seemed that he was truly no match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster now.

“Damned stutterer, come at me. Come and fight against this Sectmaster.”

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster stood where he was. He did not give chase. Instead, he began to insult Wang Qiang like Wang Qiang had insulted him earlier.

“Hehe... g-grandson, d-don’t t-think that y-your granddaddy w-will be a-afraid of you with m-merely this.”

Wang Qiang did not cower. His body shifted, and he disappeared.

When he reappeared again, he was right above the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. With the Vegetable Cutting Edge in hand, he hacked down on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's head.

However, right at the moment when Wang Qiang's slash was about to land, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly raised his hand. He had raised the Dragonscale Dagger above his head. Then, he slashed with it.

"Clank!" Wang Qiang was once again knocked away.

This time around, the hand and arm that Wang Qiang was holding his Vegetable Cutting Edge with started to tremble even more intensely. In fact, blood was flowing from his palm.

"Brother Wang Qiang, accept the power of the formation immediately!" Ying Mingchao shouted.

At practically the same moment Ying Mingchao shouted those words, the power of the grand formation that drew power from Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and everyone else from the allied army entered Wang Qiang.

After the power of that grand formation entered Wang Qiang, Wang Qiang's battle power increased greatly.



# Chapter 2641 - Arrival Of Doomsday

---

“Woosh~~~”

Right at the moment when Wang Qiang obtained the power of the spirit formation and strengthened his battle power, that Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster rushed toward him.

Faced with the incoming Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, Wang Qiang again did not cower. He too rushed forth to confront him. He wanted to have a final confrontation against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

The reason for that was because Wang Qiang knew very well that he had no way out of this apart from fighting with his all.

However, right after they started fighting, Wang Qiang was shocked to discover that he was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Even though he had obtained the assistance of the allied army’s power, he was still no match for the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“Puu~~~”

Soon, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s Dragonscale Dagger struck Wang Qiang.

With that one strike, Wang Qiang’s flesh was cut open. Even his bones were injured by the slash. From this, it could be seen how powerful the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s attack was.

However, that was merely the beginning. Following that.....

Another slash, two slashes, three slashes, four slashes, five slashes.....

Soon, Wang Qiang was covered with wounds. His body had become badly mutilated. He had become completely bloodied.

Most importantly, as Wang Qiang continued to be struck by the slashes, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster managed to assail Wang

Qiang's body with the strange dark black gaseous flames emitted by his Infant Soul Demonic Technique.

Soon, Wang Qiang started to scream miserably in pain. His aura also started to grow weaker and weaker. Not long afterward, he lost the ability to continue fighting, and could only allow himself to be thrashed around.

“Bastard, get the hell away from my husband!”

How could Zhao Hong possibly contain herself after seeing this? She immediately grabbed her Ancestral Armament and rushed forth.

Immediately afterward, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and everyone else from the allied army rushed forth.

They were all prepared for death the moment they'd decided to attack. They knew that they would either eliminate the Infant Soul Sect or die trying.

“Hahaha. Come at me, come all at once. I shall see who can possibly stop me today.”

Even though he was surrounded, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster burst into loud laughter. He began to shuttle through the allied army.

Regardless of what sort of ability the crowd tried to use, not a single person was able to injure him in the slightest.

However, the Dragonscale Dagger in his hand was like a butcher's knife. It streaked across the bodies of the crowd repeatedly. Blood splattered about all over the place. This was truly a miserable scene.

It was like a group of little hares were gathered around a tiger. Although they were not afraid of dying and extremely aggressive, the enormous disparity in strength made it so that they were unable to harm that tiger in the slightest. All that they could do was to allow themselves to receive a beating.

Although the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster attacked savagely, he left only superficial wounds on the crowd, and did not kill anyone. He merely mutilated everyone and left them covered in wounds.

It was not only the men, even Zhao Hong, Zi Xunyi and the other women were not spared by him.

However, the wounds he left were most definitely not merely superficial wounds. The reason for that was because black gaseous flames assailed their bodies through the wounds.

The entire allied army was affected by the black gaseous flames. They became an army without the strength to battle, without strength to even stand.

Seemingly deliberately humiliating Ying Mingchao and the others, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster set up a prison cell with his spirit power and then tossed everyone from the allied army into that prison cell.

That prison cell was floating in the sky, and was very noticeable. Furthermore, as it was very large, the people down below were all able to notice it.

What the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had done could be said to be extremely inhumane.

However, not only was he not criticized by the crowd, he was instead showered with cheers and praise.

“Long live Lord Sectmaster! Despicable vile things like them should be punished!”

“This sort of punishment is simply not sufficient at all! You should kill them all! Only by killing them all will we be safe! Only by killing them all will our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm be peaceful!”

There were even those that shouted for the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to kill Wang Qiang and the others.

Even though Wang Qiang and the others had never done anything wrong to them, these people were acting as if Wang Qiang and the others had killed their parents. They were truly ruthless.

Zi Xunyi was lying beside Ying Mingchao. With a weak voice, she asked, “Mingchao, don’t you regret that we’ve fought for people like them?”

“I do regret fighting for them. However, I don’t regret fighting against the Infant Soul Sect. Merely, I...”

As he saw Zi Xunyi beside him, as he saw her filled with wounds and changed beyond recognition, Ying Mingchao started to choke with emotions.

She was his most beloved woman. Yet now, she was tortured to such a state. But he was helpless to do anything about it.

He felt extremely pained in his heart. He started to blame himself for being so powerless.

“Everyone, don’t be so anxious. They will definitely receive their punishment.”

“However, before that, I wish to have everyone witness the power of our Infant Soul Grand Formation,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Lord Sectmaster, are you planning to activate the Infant Soul Grand Formation now?”

The crowd was immediately overjoyed upon hearing those words. After all, they had all traveled far and wide to this place for that Infant Soul Grand Formation, that grand formation capable of helping them increase their cultivation.

“That’s right, of course. Everyone, prepare yourselves for ascension to a higher state.”

After saying those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster

started to form hand seals. Then, dark black gaseous flames started to emit from everyone from the Infant Soul Sect. The dark black gaseous flames shot directly to the sky and formed an enormous formation.

As for that dark black grand formation, it was the so-called Infant Soul Grand Formation.

Merely, compared to last time, it was much more imposing.

Like an enormous range of black clouds, this grand formation filled the entire sky and completely covered the hundreds of millions of people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm within it.

It was spinning and surging about.

Even though such a thing clearly looked like the arrival of a calamity, the hundreds of millions of people down below did not feel the slightest bit of fear. Instead, they were all showing ecstatic expressions.

Cheering and excited noises were sounding from the vast crowd nonstop.

“Everyone, this Infant Soul Grand Formation is capable of helping you all increase your cultivation. However, you all must remember one thing firmly.”

“The Infant Soul Grand Formation will cover you all, assimilate itself into you and fuse with your souls.”

“At that time, you all must relax and willingly accept its powers, willingly allow its powers to enter you and fuse with your souls. You must not resist it.”

“The reason for that is because that is the only way for the Infant Soul Grand Formation to instill martial comprehension to you all. Else... you will have wasted the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. If you fail to obtain martial comprehension, do not blame the formation for being ineffective,” the Infant Soul Sect’s

Sectmaster said.

“We will definitely not let down Lord Sectmaster’s kind intentions.”

“Lord Sectmaster, go ahead and begin the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. We can wait no longer. We really want to fuse with the grand formation.”

“That’s right, we truly want to enjoy the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation sooner.”

“Lord Sectmaster, please begin. Everyone here will firmly remember your kindness, we will firmly remember this grand day.”

The hundreds of millions of people were all shouting excitedly. They were all impatient to fuse with the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

They were so excited that none of them noticed that a smile had emerged on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s fleshless skull-like face.

That smile was ice-cold, wicked and frightening.

“Rest assured, I will make sure that everyone receives the power of the Infant Soul Grand Formation.”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished saying those words, countless dark black gaseous flames started to surge from the Infant Soul Grand Formation. They descended straight down and landed on the hundreds of millions of people below.

Each dark black gaseous flame would reach a single person. They began to rapidly cover that person and completely seal them off.

At that moment, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang and the others that were trapped in the prison cell started to resist their injuries and looked down below.

They all wanted to see exactly what conspiracy the Infant Soul

Sect was plotting. They all felt that the foundation of the plot should be that Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Buzz~~~”

Soon, the dark black gaseous flames that covered the vast crowd below started to glow with light blue light.

Ying Mingchao and the others felt that those light blue lights should be coming from the people that those gaseous flames covered.

The reason for that was because even though they were all emitting light blue light, the intensity of the light was different. The ones that shone brighter should be emitted by those with stronger cultivations.

As for those weak lights, they should be emitted by those with a weak level of cultivation.

“Buzz, buzz, buzz, buzz~~~”

Suddenly, those blue lights started to be removed. Following the dark black gaseous flames, they emerged in the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Eeeaahhh~~~~~”

The next moment, miserable screams began to be heard from the millions of people.

Those screams were truly miserable. It was as if they were being tormented by thousands of blades. If a single person was to let out that sort of scream, it would be enough to cause others to feel panicky and uneasy.

When hundreds of millions of people all let out that sort of scream at the same time, it was truly frightening.

One would feel as if doomsday had arrived. Ninety percent of all the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were suffering from danger to their lives.

# Chapter 2642 - The Final Dawn

---

“Sure enough, there’s an issue. That is simply not a formation capable of increasing everyone’s cultivation. Instead, that is a demonic formation.”

“That formation is currently extracting everyone’s souls.”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao and the others that were imprisoned were finally able to understand the intention of the Infant Soul Sect.

Everyone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had been deceived. The Infant Soul Grand Formation that they had looked forward to, the Infant Soul Grand Formation that brought them all together, was simply not a formation capable of helping them increase their cultivations.

Instead, it was a formation that extracted their souls and lives.

“Nooo!!!!”

“Eeaaahhh!!!!!!!!!!”

The miserable screams grew louder and louder. They filled the entire region. It was as if screams were resonating through the entire vast land of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

It was an incomparably mournful sound.

At that moment, the people who were covered by the dark black gaseous flames started to struggle violently.

However, they seemed to already be powerless. Even though it could be seen that they were struggling violently, not even a single person was able to break free from the dark black gaseous flames.

Just like that, they continued to have their souls extracted by the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“This is truly too cruel. This Infant Soul Sect is actually planning to refine all the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary



Realm.”

At that moment, Grandmaster Pocket and many others were unable to continue watching. After all, such a scene was truly too miserable.

This was especially true for the monks like Grandmaster Pocket. Pitiful expressions filled their faces.

“Humph, those fools have wished for our deaths. They had forgotten about everything at the first sign of potential benefits.”

“What’s happening right now is for the best. They deserve it. Their deaths are their own fault.”

Zhao Hong said with an expression of hatred on her face. She was not a merciful person like Grandmaster Pocket.

All she knew was that when they, the allied army, fought for the sake of those people, they were betrayed by them. Then, they were insulted and held in contempt by them. She knew very well what sort of people they were.

“That’s right, those ignorant bastards deserve to die.”

What Zhao Hong said gained the approval of the great majority of the people from the allied army.

If it was before, they would definitely grieve upon seeing this sort of thing. After all, those were all living people.

However now, after they were betrayed by them, after they were spoken ill of and humiliated by them, after they witnessed those people’s true natures, they no longer felt any sympathy for those people. Instead, they only felt that the suffering of those people satisfied their hatred.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, an ear-piercing explosion suddenly sounded from the distant sky.

Looking toward the direction of the sound, the crowd was able to

see that a golden light was rapidly approaching. One should know that that entire region had already been covered by the dark black gaseous flames. That entire region was already pitch black.

Thus, the sudden appearance of a golden ray of light like that was particularly eye-catching.

As that golden light grew closer and closer, the area covered by the golden light started to expand more and more.

It was as if what was approaching was a sun that was once again illuminating the earth.

“That is?”

Suddenly, Ying Mingchao and the others revealed a change in expression. The reason for that was because they discovered that the source of the golden radiance was a sword.

It was an enormous golden sword that reached several hundred meters long.

That golden sword was shining brightly with golden light. Although the size of the sword was still insignificant when compared to the dark black gaseous flames that filled the entire region, that sword was shining with golden light and extraordinary dominance.

As it passed, even the dark black gaseous flames started to squirm violently. It was as if they were trembling in fear.

Most importantly, on that enormous golden sword stood a figure.

As for that person... his clothes and hair were fluttering in the wind.

As the golden radiance was simply too dazzling, they were actually unable to see that person's appearance clearly.

However, for that person to appear at such a time and with such golden light, it was like dawn appearing during an apocalypse. Looking at him, one would start to feel hope in one's heart.

“Chu Feng! Look! It’s C-Chu Feng! It’s my B-Brother Chu Feng!!!”

Suddenly, Wang Qiang shouted sutteringly. Even though his face was already mutilated, one could still feel the joy that he felt at that moment.

“Chu Feng! It’s Chu Feng! It really is Chu Feng!!!”

After verifying that it was Chu Feng, everyone in the allied army grew incomparably overjoyed.

After all, Chu Feng was someone who they all cared deeply about. While being able to be saved was one thing, Chu Feng’s appearance at such a time also informed them that he was still alive.

As such, how could they not be in joy?

“Chu Feng? Why would he come now?”

Upon seeing Chu Feng, The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke with a displeased tone. He felt that Chu Feng’s arrival would be a thorny problem.

He was able to sense how powerful Chu Feng was. Although Chu Feng’s aura was only that of a rank one True Immortal, the enormous golden sword he was standing on was giving off an extremely powerful aura.

Most importantly, he was wholly concentrated on the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation. As such, there was no way for him to fight Chu Feng. If he were to fight Chu Feng, this Infant Soul Grand Formation would have to cease operating.

At that moment, Chu Feng also noticed the situation with the Infant Soul Grand Formation. However, he did not even bother to pay attention to it. Instead, he directly rushed toward Ying Mingchao and the others.

The Ancient Era’s War Sword shot through the sky and directly shattered the prison cell that Ying Mingchao and the others were trapped in.

After the prison cell was destroyed, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others, all being seriously injured, lost the ability to fly and started falling toward the surface.

“Buzz~~~”

However, right after they started descending, a layer of gentle power caught them. It was a grand spirit formation.

After Chu Feng caught them with his grand spirit formation, he did not bother with the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Instead, he sat cross-legged on the grand spirit formation and started to set up a healing formation.

After an hour passed, a healing formation was completed. It covered everyone in the allied army.

The badly mutilated bodies of the crowd that were in the grand spirit formation floating in midair started to heal, and soon returned to their original appearances.

Furthermore, the expressions of pain on their faces also lessened greatly. Even the dark black gaseous flames were being expelled.

“Chu Feng, my d-dear brother, I k-knew t-th-that you w-were still alive. S-Sure enough, y-you’re alive.”

Wang Qiang was extremely overjoyed. Even though he was still extremely weak, he rushed limping toward Chu Feng and grabbed Chu Feng by the shoulder. He began to pat Chu Feng’s shoulder and size him up repeatedly.

“Your cultivation actually increased to rank two True Immortal? This progression speed is simply too fast, no?” Chu Feng was extremely happy to see the progress that Wang Qiang had made.

Actually, Chu Feng was feeling extremely happy. Even though the people from the allied army appeared to be in a miserable state, their injuries were only superficial.

None of them had suffered any fatal injuries. This could be said

to be great fortune among misfortune.

“O-of course. A-After all, I’m a g-ge-genius,” Wang Qiang revealed a proud expression upon hearing those words. He added, “That s-said, y-you’re pretty decent too, brother.”

Wang Qiang’s was naturally talking about Chu Feng’s cultivation of rank one True Immortal.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng’s cultivation was that of a rank one True Immortal, the aura of the Ancient Era’s War Sword controlled by Chu Feng had already surpassed that of a rank one True Immortal. It was truly a heaven-defying method.

“Brother Chu Feng, it’s truly great that you’re fine. We have been worried to death for you.”

At that moment, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi and everyone else from the allied army all dragged their weak bodies, arrived before Chu Feng and surrounded him.

Chu Feng’s appearance not only informed them that he was safe and sound, but the power that Chu Feng revealed also made them feel a sense of security.

Although Chu Feng was only a rank one True Immortal, the aura Chu Feng emitted caused them to feel at ease.

This was especially true for the aura of that Ancient Era’s War Sword. It was even greater than Wang Qiang from before.

This meant that the current Chu Feng was most definitely capable of contending against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Thus, Chu Feng’s arrival was like the dawn of hope to them.

Not only was this dawn of hope capable of possibly saving them, it might also be capable of beating back the black gaseous flames that filled the sky and rescuing the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

# Chapter 2643 - Chu Feng Vs. Infant Soul Sect

---

At that moment, Grandmaster Pocket rushed toward Chu Feng and begged with an anxious expression on his face, “Almsgiver Chu Feng, you must shatter that grand formation and stop the Infant Soul Sect. Else, all the people from our Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will die tragically by that grand formation.”

After hearing those words from Grandmaster Pocket, Chu Feng took a glance at the situation below. However, his expression was cold and detached.

Then, he looked to Grandmaster Pocket and said, “Grandmaster, even if you want to be merciful, you should still judge who to be merciful to.”

“For people like them, people who repay kindness with malice, people who are unable to distinguish right from wrong, people who decided to attack you all out of their own self-interest even though you have come to help them, are you really certain that you want to save them still?”

“Almsgiver Chu Feng, regardless of what they've done, we absolutely cannot sit and watch; remaining indifferent. If they are all to die, it would be equivalent to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm perishing,” Grandmaster Pocket continued to urge Chu Feng to help them.

However, Chu Feng ignored Grandmaster Pocket’s plea. Instead, he turned to Ying Mingchao and the others, “While this grand formation is able to heal everyone, its healing speed is relatively slow. Thus, it’s best that everyone continues to stay in this grand formation.”

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others also started to disperse. They sat back in the grand healing formation in an orderly manner.

However, one person did not return to the grand healing formation. It was Grandmaster Pocket. He was still standing beside Chu Feng and urging Chu Feng to save those people.

“Grandmaster, everyone has their own way of handling things. Today, I, Chu Feng, will not go and kill those foolish traitors.”

“However, I will definitely not save them either,” Chu Feng said determinedly.

Grandmaster Pocket still wanted to urge Chu Feng against it after hearing those words.

However, at that time, Chu Feng cast his sharp gaze toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. He said, “However, as for that person, I must kill him.”

“Rumble~~~”

After saying those words, the Ancient Era’s War Sword shot forth rapidly as if it were given a command. It was rushing toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

No matter how strong the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster might be, he was only the size of a regular human.

As for the Ancient Era’s War Sword, it was several hundred meters in length. As it flew toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, it resembled a giant mountain. That sort of pressure was not something that ordinary people could possibly endure.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was completely confident. He did not even bother to move. Just like that, he stood there and waited for the Ancient Era’s War Sword to arrive.

Finally, the Ancient Era’s War Sword arrived before him. The enormous power made the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s clothes flutter violently. Spatial cracks even appeared in the surrounding space.

However, even with that being the case, the Infant Soul Sect’s

Sectmaster still continued to stand there. Then, he raised his palm and pushed it forth explosively at the Ancient Era's War Sword. "Bang!" He had actually managed to push the Ancient Era's War Sword aside using only the power of his palm, causing it to return to Chu Feng.

However, once he attacked with his palm strike, his connection with the Infant Soul Grand Formation was severed. Immediately, the operation of the Infant Soul Grand Formation stopped.

Even though the Infant Soul Grand Formation had ceased its operation, the hundreds of millions of lives who were trapped by the Infant Soul Grand Formation were still unable to escape.

"Chu Feng, you are truly a genius. You've actually managed to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm this quickly."

"Since you've become a True Immortal, why aren't you entering the Upper Realms? Why did you return? If I were you, I would definitely not have done such a thing," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

"Because I cannot disregard the safety of my friends," Chu Feng said.

"You are quite loyal to your friends. However, what makes you think that you can save them? Is it because of that sword?"

"That sword must be from the inheritance you obtained from the Ancient Era's War Clan, no? It actually possesses the strength to surpass an entire level of cultivation. It is truly a heaven-defying secret skill."

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he put the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand away.

"What's this? Did you lose the will to fight after seeing my Ancient Era's War Sword?" Chu Feng asked.

"No," the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shook his head. He said, "I don't even need my Incomplete Immortal Armament to take



care of you.”

“Although your appearance has become even uglier, it seems that you’ve also become even more confident?” Chu Feng mocked.

“My confidence originates from the power that I currently possess.”

“As for your mere Ancient Era’s War Sword, it is simply impossible for it to match me,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“Oh?” Chu Feng sneered upon hearing those words, “Since you said it like that, I will insist on killing you with the Ancient Era’s War Sword today.”

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng said those words, his gaze shifted. Then, the Ancient Era’s War Sword started to rush toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster again.

“Although your Ancient Era’s War Sword possesses heaven-defying battle power, it will not be able to withstand a single blow from this Sectmaster.”

After the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said those words, he shot forth a palm strike.

“Boom~~~”

The overwhelming battle power turned into countless palm silhouettes. Those palm silhouettes started to bombard the Ancient Era’s War Sword repeatedly.

“Bang, bang, bang~~~”

The bombardment from the overwhelming power of the palm strike caused the Ancient Era’s War Sword to echo in vibration. It was being pushed back repeatedly.

“Humph.”

Chu Feng let out a cold snort. Then, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to emit even brighter golden light. At that moment, the power of the Ancient Era's War Sword greatly increased.

Even though the martial power that filled the sky was still bombarding the Ancient Era's War Sword, the Ancient Era's War Sword was not moved a single jolt.

"You want to defeat my Ancient Era's War Sword with merely an attack of this level? You are truly delusional," Chu Feng mocked.

"This is merely the beginning," After the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said those words, he unleashed another attack. This time around, he waved his sleeve, and an unending stream of martial power started to pour from his sleeves.

After his martial power was sent forth, it started to transform. Soon, a spear was formed.

Soon, countless more spears appeared. In an unceasing manner, they began to bombard the Ancient Era's War Sword.

Most importantly, those golden spears were not merely an ordinary attack using martial power. Rather, it was a martial skill, a taboo martial skill.

Thus, at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to sway left and right again. It appeared as if it would soon be defeated by the bombardment of spears.

However, Chu Feng did not panic in the slightest. He continued to have a calm and confident expression on his face.

"If that is all that you possess, then you really disappoint me. Seems like even after you've changed beyond recognition, you're still this weak," Chu Feng said indifferently. Then, he suddenly extended his fingers. At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to be directly controlled by him.

At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword seemed like an awakened lion that had lain dormant for a long time. The golden

spears that filled the sky and were attacking it nonstop were like a bunch of fleas.

With a shake of its body, those golden spears that filled the sky all dispersed from it.

Then, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to sweep across the sky and rush toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Seeing the incoming Ancient Era's War Sword, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster started to increase the power of his martial skill.

At that moment, more and more golden martial power was pouring out from his sleeves. Its power was also growing stronger and stronger.

However, even though the golden spears that filled the entire sky continued to bombard the Ancient Era's War Sword, they were unable to shake the Ancient Era's War Sword in the slightest.

In fact, they were unable to even slow it down.

"Seems like I have underestimated you."

"That said, I refuse to believe that your mere secret skill will be able to contend against me."

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster shouted. Then, his hands layered over one another and he began to form hand seals.

After he finished forming his hand seals, surging Immortal level martial power exploded from his body like a volcanic eruption.

Even the surrounding space started to violently tremble. In fact, both heaven and earth were trembling. Everyone present was able to clearly feel this intimidating power.

# Chapter 2644 - The Confident Chu Feng

---

“I shall see what other tricks you might have.”

Chu Feng knew very well that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was preparing some sort of ability.

However, Chu Feng was filled with confidence. He was confident that he would be able to kill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Thus... even though Chu Feng knew very well that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was preparing some sort of ability, he did not stop him. Instead, Chu Feng actually stayed the Ancient Era’s War Sword’s attack.

Just like that, he quietly waited. He wanted to know exactly what the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster would do.

Chu Feng planned to utterly defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Chu Feng wanted to make him realize that he would still be able to take his cur life even without utilizing the power of the Evil God Sword.

He wanted to get justice for his friends using his own strength.

“Buzz~~~”

Actually, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster finished preparing his trick very quickly.

Suddenly, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster clasped his palms together. The Immortal-level martial power that covered the sky above him started to gather together, and formed an enormous sword.

That sword was also golden in color. Not only was it emitting golden light, but it also appeared to be very life-like. It did not resemble something created with martial power. Instead, it resembled an enormous sword forged with gold.

Enormous sword, it was indeed an enormous sword. That enormous sword was over two thousand meters long. Even when looking at the sword from afar, it was still an actual colossus.

Before that enormous sword, the Ancient Era's War Sword's several hundred meter-length appeared to be extremely small.

Most importantly, the aura emitted by the enormous sword was also extremely fierce.

It was an Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Furthermore, it was no ordinary Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill. Instead, it was an extremely powerful Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

However, after the martial skill was formed, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did not rush to immediately attack Chu Feng with it.

Instead, dark black gaseous flames started to emit from his body. Those dark black gaseous flames were assimilated into the Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill.

In the blink of an eye, the enormous golden sword turned dark black.

Most importantly, the cries of infants were sounding nonstop from that enormous dark black sword. It was truly extremely horrifying.

At that moment, the power of that Ancestral Taboo Martial Skill increased by an entire level.

"This is bad. The martial skill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster is unleashing right now has fused with his demonic technique."

"That demonic technique is simply too strange. Although Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword is very powerful, it remains that Chu Feng's cultivation is actually a level below that of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster."

At that moment, Zi Xunyi revealed a worried expression. She was

able to sense that the aura of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's enormous dark black sword had completely surpassed Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword.

If the two of them were to fight, it would likely be very unfavorable for Chu Feng.

“W-With how c-confident my b-brother is acting, h-he m-most definitely possesses c-certainty in v-victory. The I-Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster w-will n-not be a m-match f-for my brother,” Compared to Zi Xunyi, Wang Qiang was filled with confidence in Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, I will let you have a taste of the power of my Infant Soul Demon Sword.”

“I will have you know exactly whether it is your Ancient Era's War Sword or my Infant Soul Demon Sword that is stronger.”

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said those words, he began to form hand seals with one hand. Then, he pointed at Chu Feng with his other hand.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, that so-called Infant Soul Demon Sword carried with it countless infant cries, a frightening aura and majestic oppressive might as it was shot toward the Ancient Era's War Sword.

That's right, the Infant Soul Demon Sword was aimed at the Ancient Era's War Sword, and not Chu Feng.

The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's intention was clear. He wanted to destroy Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword so as to manifest his strength.

“Precisely what I wanted.”

Chu Feng was not to be outdone. He too urged the Ancient Era's War Sword to attack the Infant Soul Demon Sword.

At that moment, how could Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and the others have the heart to continue healing their injuries?

All of them were staring at the battle ahead. All of them wanted to know exactly who would win the battle.

After all, this was not only a battle that concerned victory and defeat, it was also a battle that concerned one's honor and disgrace.

Finally, the two enormous swords reached one another.

One was an enormous dark black sword reaching two thousand meters in length.

The other was an enormous golden sword reaching three hundred meters in length.

One was called the Infant Soul Demon Sword and emitted an overwhelming demonic aura.

The other was called the Ancient Era's War Sword, and was filled with extraordinary battle intent.

“Rumble~~~”

Finally, the two enormous swords collided.

At that moment, dark black gaseous flames started to surge about.

The Infant Soul Demon Sword that reached two thousand meters in length was actually shattered.

As for the Ancient Era's War Sword, it was completely unscathed.

Seeing this scene, Ying Mingchao was unable to contain himself from shouting “Great job!” He was so excited that he was even tightly clenching his fists.

It was not only him, all the people in the allied army were

overjoyed.

At the same time, they also started to have a whole new level of respect for Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword.

Originally, they all felt that the Ancient Era's War Sword would be inferior to the Infant Soul Demonic Sword judging by their auras.

However, when they collided, they realized that there was actually such an enormous disparity in power between the two swords.

The Ancient Era's War Sword was the actual victor. At that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword was floating over ten thousand meters high in the sky. No matter how the dark black gaseous flames tried to attack it, it was unmoved in the slightest. The aura of a sovereign was completely revealed by it.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ancient Era's War Sword started to move. It was moving straight toward the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

Furthermore, the attack this time around was different from all of its previous attacks. Not only was the Ancient Era's War Sword extremely fast, but the aura that it emitted was also extremely frightening.

This time around, Chu Feng was no longer holding back. Instead, he had unleashed the true power of the Ancient Era's War Sword. He was really planning to kill the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

“Damn it!”

Sensing that the situation was amiss, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster placed his hand toward his Cosmos Sack.

The next moment, his Incomplete Immortal Armament Dragonscale Dagger appeared in his hand.



Once he held the Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's battle power immediately and greatly increased.

This was the power of an Incomplete Immortal Armament. With it in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was like an existence on a completely different power level. He was simply unable to be discussed alongside his previous self.

“Heeaahh!!!”

Once he held the Dragonscale Dagger in hand, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster immediately slashed with it, and sent forth an enormous golden blade ray that swept across the sky.

“Clank!” The Ancient Era's War Sword collided with the golden blade ray.

Merely, this time around, the Ancient Era's War Sword was unable to advance like it did before. It was actually beaten back. It was beaten back by that golden blade ray.

Not only was it beaten back, but a huge chip also appeared on the body of the Ancient Era's War Sword. That chip was precisely the location where the golden blade ray struck earlier.

“This...” Seeing this scene, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and the others changed enormously.

Deep worry emerged in their eyes. Judging from the situation at hand, it would appear that even Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword was unable to defeat the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster when he held an Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand.

“T-Truly despicable! D-Didn't you say that y-you wouldn't be using your I-Incomplete Immortal Armament? Y-Your a-actions are those of a s-sore loser!”

“Y-You damned t-trash, d-damned c-coward!!!”

Wang Qiang was unable to continue watching, and started to

loudly curse at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"That's right! So much for declaring how confident you were earlier, and stating that you would not use your Incomplete Immortal Armament! Turns out, you immediately used your Incomplete Immortal Armament the moment you started losing! You are despicable and shameless to the extreme!"

After Wang Qiang spoke, many others from the allied army also started to curse at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster refused to accept those curses.

Proudly, he declared, "This Incomplete Immortal Armament is this Sectmaster's possession. If I don't want to use it, I won't use it. When I want to use it, I'll use it. What can you all possibly do about it?"

"So what if I went back on my words today? What can you all possibly do about it?"

"This world is one where might is right. All the rest are merely farts."

"As for you all, regardless of how unjust you feel this is, regardless of how angry you might be, there's nothing that you can do to me."

"You all... can only wait to be slaughtered by me."

"You!!!" Hearing those words, the crowd from the allied army all started to gnash their teeth in fury.

They were truly unable to tolerate how openly despicable and shameless the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was.

"Are you certain that you will be able to defeat me today?" Right at that moment, Chu Feng's voice sounded.

Compared to the crowd from the allied army, Chu Feng did not reveal any anger. Instead, he was extremely calm.

Furthermore, he spoke with a very confident tone.

# Chapter 2645 - Mutual Destruction

---

“Humph.”

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster snorted coldly. Then, he looked to Chu Feng, seemingly as if he wanted to continue to insult him.

“That is?”

However, at that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed an enormous change in expression.

The reason for that was because he was shocked to discover that an item had appeared in Chu Feng’s previously-empty hands.

It was a piece of four-sided scrap metal.

However, it was precisely that scrap metal that made him feel enormous threat.

“Isn’t that thing Chu Feng holding the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler from Grandmaster Kai Hong’s remnant?”

At that moment, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang’s eyes started to shine. They had all seen the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler before.

However, the Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler from back then could not even be considered to be an Ancestral Armament. Yet now... it was emitting an aura far superior to an Ancestral Armament.

Only the Dragonscale Dagger that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster held in his hand was comparable to Chu Feng’s Divine Dragon’s Blood Ruler.

“Incomplete Immortal Armament. Brother Chu Feng actually managed to obtain an Incomplete Immortal Armament?” At that moment, Ying Mingchao and the others were all overjoyed.

They finally realized why Chu Feng was this confident. It turned out that not only did he grasp the powerful secret skill, the Ancient Era’s War Sword, but he also possessed an Incomplete Immortal

Armament.

At that moment when the people from the allied army were overjoyed, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster revealed a worried frown.

Actually, there were two more people secretly watching everything.

They were the Chu Heavenly Clan's Chu Huai and Chu Yue.

Chu Huai was holding an umbrella.

That umbrella was very large. Most importantly, that umbrella was sparkling with a faint light the entire time. As the light sprinkled down on them, it turned the two of them transparent like the umbrella.

It was a treasure, a treasure that could conceal the two of them.

At the very least, no one could detect the two of them as they watched Chu Feng and the others from afar.

Seeing the Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler in Chu Feng's hand, Chu Huai said, "No wonder that Chu Feng was able to reach a breakthrough to the True Immortal realm this quickly. Seems like he ran into some sort of chance encounter."

He felt that Chu Feng's Divine Dragon's Blood Ruler should be something that he obtained from a certain remnant, and that Chu Feng's breakthrough in cultivation must be related to that remnant too.

"Isn't his Incomplete Immortal Armament a bit too ugly? Why does it resemble a counterfeit?" Chu Yue said with a look of disgust.

"That is indeed an Incomplete Immortal Armament. Merely, its appearance is simply too lacking," Chu Huai shook his head. He also did not understand why an Incomplete Immortal Armament would have such an appearance.

“Regardless, with Chu Feng having that Incomplete Immortal Armament, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster will be in imminent peril.”

“Let’s get a bit closer,” As Chu Huai spoke, he pulled Chu Yue and began to move toward Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

“Hey! Don’t get closer. I think senior is most definitely in the vicinity and observing everything. If he is to discover that the two of us haven’t left yet, he will definitely scold us,” Chu Yue said.

“Didn’t I say that with this umbrella here, unless one is a Heavenly Immortal-level expert or above, no one will be able to see the two of us?”

“Even though senior is powerful, he is only a peak True Immortal. It is impossible for him to detect the two of us,” Chu Huai said.

“Really?” Chu Yue asked.

“Really,” Chu Huai nodded with certainty.

“Okay then,” Chu Yue was unable to change Chu Huai’s mind, and thus decided to agree with his decision.

However, an excited expression soon appeared in her eyes. It could be seen that she actually also wanted to approach the battle.

“Die!”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng unleashed his attack. That said, he did not directly rush to attack the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. Instead, he controlled the Ancient Era’s War Sword and moved it toward the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to attack him.

Since Chu Feng had declared that he would kill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster with his Ancient Era’s War Sword, he planned to use the Ancient Era’s War Sword to kill him.

“Damn it! Where did this little bastard obtain an Incomplete

Immortal Armament?”

At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster turned around and started to flee. He actually did not dare to face Chu Feng.

This action by the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was understandable. After Chu Feng revealed his Incomplete Immortal Armament, the chipped Ancient Era’s War Sword was immediately restored to how it was, and even grew much larger. Furthermore, the aura that it currently emitted brought fear to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s heart.

“Buzz~~~”

While escaping from Chu Feng, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster suddenly felt that some things had appeared in his palm again.

Looking down toward his palm, he discovered that they were forbidden medicines. It was the same golden forbidden medicine. The amount this time around was even greater than last time.

“Break them apart and their effect will be activated,” Right at that moment, that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man’s voice sounded again.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster grew nervous. The forbidden medicines he had taken earlier had already overburdened his body. He was already playing with his life. When the backlash from those forbidden medicines arrived, he might only have a slight chance of survival.

And if he were to take those forbidden medicines too, it was likely not even the heavens would be able to save him.

“Rest assured, those forbidden medicines will not take your life. They are extremely precious forbidden medicines. Their backlash is not as strong as you imagine them to be.”

“Break them apart, and I guarantee that you will live.”

Knowing that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was worried, that

old man started to urge him.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster still didn't believe that old man. He continued to hesitate on using the forbidden medicines.

"Use them immediately. Else, you will die by Chu Feng's sword. Are you really willing to be defeated by a brat like him?" The old man said.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster suddenly realized that the enormous aura was growing closer to him. He turned around and discovered that the Ancient Era's War Sword was already on him and approaching. He was unable to escape.

"Chu Feng, even if it ends in mutual destruction, I will still make you die first."

As the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster spoke, he smashed apart all of the forbidden medicines in his palm.

"Rumble~~~"

The next moment, surging golden gaseous flames erupted from his body. The gaseous flames were so powerful that they managed to knock the Ancient Era's War Sword away.

Like a loose leaf, the Ancient Era's War Sword that was over three hundred meters long started to roll in the sky as it was knocked several miles away in an instant.

"That is?" Witnessing that scene, the expressions of Ying Mingchao and the others all changed.

The reason for that was because none of them noticed that golden forbidden medicines appeared in the hand of the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster. Thus, none of them knew what had happened.

At that moment, they could only tell that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was enveloped by enormously powerful golden gaseous



flames. His silhouette simply could not even be seen clearly within the golden gaseous flames.

That said, an extremely powerful aura was being emitted from within the golden gaseous flames.

That sort of sensation caused the crowd to feel unease.

“Big brother Chu Huai, exactly what did he use?” Even Chu Yue from the Upper Realm was unable to contain her curiosity.

“It’s a forbidden medicine. An extremely precious forbidden medicine. The Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm shouldn’t possess this sort of forbidden medicine. It must be from the Upper Realms. How did this Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster obtain those forbidden medicines?” Chu Huai started to ponder.

“This is bad. The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s aura is rapidly rising. Heavens... it’s already infinitely close to that of a rank three True Immortal.”

“Those forbidden medicines are simply too powerful. With his strength, even though he has not truly reached rank three True Immortal, it is likely no one with a cultivation of rank two True Immortal or below will be a match for him,” Chu Yue said nervously.

As someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, she also deeply detested the Infant Soul Sect. Thus, neither she nor Chu Huai wanted the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster to defeat Chu Feng.

On the contrary, they both wanted Chu Feng to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, another loud explosion sounded. The golden gaseous flames that had surrounded the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to rapidly scatter about in all directions. At that moment, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster reappeared before the crowd.

“This guy?!”

Seeing the current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, Ying Mingchao and the others started to panic even more.

The current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was no longer a skeleton. He had regained his former appearance.

Merely, it was not an actual corporeal body. Rather, he was in a spirit body form.

Merely, his spirit body form was different from ordinary spirit bodies.

Ordinary spirit bodies were generally either transparent, light blue or dark blue.

However, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s spirit body was golden in color.

Furthermore, he was currently emitting an extremely powerful aura.

It was so powerful....

...that Ying Mingchao and the others felt despair.

# Chapter 2646 - Chu Feng's Trump Card

---

“Chu Feng, this is bad! You must escape! Do not worry about us!” Zi Xunyi shouted.

“B-Brother, g-get away from here!” Even Wang Qiang started to urge Chu Feng to leave.

In fact, the great majority of the people in the allied army were urging Chu Feng to escape.

The only difference between them was that some were shouting at Chu Feng, whereas others were sending him voice transmissions.

It was not that they looked down on Chu Feng.

Actually, it was already an extremely extraordinary accomplishment for Chu Feng to be able to suppress the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to such a state with his cultivation of rank one True Immortal.

They felt that Chu Feng's reputation as a genius was fully justified, that he was already the strongest among them.

However, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had used some sort of unknown method that actually evolved him to such a state.

The current Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was simply too powerful. They felt that Chu Feng would not be able to defeat him no matter what.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, with a thought, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster sent forth his overwhelming oppressive might to cover the entire region. At that moment, not a single person in that region was able to move.

“Escape? All of you will die here today. All of you will die by my hands. Not a single one of you will be able to escape,” the Infant

Soul Sect's Sectmaster said.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng slowly said, "Who told you that I'm going to escape?"

Not only was his tone calm, but there was not even the slightest change in Chu Feng's expression. Instead, Chu Feng was looking at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster with a gaze filled with mockery.

"That Chu Feng, how could he be this confident? Could it be... he still possesses a method to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster?" Chu Yue asked.

"I'm not sure. Merely, this Chu Feng's origin is no small matter. He might be a genius from a certain Upper Realm that was sent here to train. If that's the case, he should have some sort of method capable of contending against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster."

"No, it's not should. Instead, this Chu Feng most definitely possesses trump card or cards that he has yet to use," Chu Huai said with certainty.

"But, his cultivation is only a rank one True Immortal. He has also utilized his Incomplete Immortal Armament. What other method could he possibly have? Could it be that he's planning to take forbidden medicines too?" Chu Yue asked.

Chu Yue felt that apart from taking forbidden medicines, there was nothing more that Chu Feng could do that would allow him to contend against the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

"That's not necessarily the case. If he is really from a certain Upper Realm's Heavenly Clan, he most definitely possesses some sort of powerful treasure to dare to come here to train alone."

"With that treasure, not to mention the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, likely, even those more powerful than him will be killed," Chu Huai said.

"I have heard of that sort of treasure before. However, only

geniuses from the Upper Realms would possess that sort of treasure to protect themselves,” Chu Yue said.

“That Chu Feng is still so young. Yet he has already managed to possess that sort of cultivation. Could he not be considered a genius still?” Chu Huai asked.

“This...” Chu Yue hesitated for a while. She seemed to be unable to find grounds to refute Chu Huai. However, she didn’t really approve of Chu Huai saying that Chu Feng was a genius. Thus, she could only nod and say, “I guess he could reluctantly be considered one...”

“Look, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster has unleashed his attack,” Chu Huai said.

Hearing that, Chu Yue also cast her gaze to the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. It was only at that moment that she discovered that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had formed an enormous sword using his martial power.

That enormous sword was a thousand meters long. It was not a martial skill. Rather, it was formed purely with martial power.

However, the aura emitted by that enormous sword was much stronger than the Infant Soul Demon Sword that the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster unleashed earlier.

The reason for that was because the current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was simply too powerful.

Although he had not really become a rank three True Immortal, his aura was infinitely close to that of a rank three True Immortal.

In short, the current Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster could not be considered an ordinary rank two True Immortal.

“Chu Feng, I’ll admit that you’re a rarely-seen genius. If you are to continue to mature, your future accomplishments will be unlimited. This Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm will not be able to contain you.”

“But, why is it that you insist on making an enemy out of me today?”

“You’ve made the wrong decision. You should not have made an enemy out of me. However, you are already unable to go back on your decision.”

“The reason for that is because you’ve completely enraged me. I am determined to kill you.”

“I will personally end the future of a genius like you,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster spoke with rage fuming between his gritted teeth.

It could be seen that he was truly filled with hatred toward Chu Feng.

That was understandable too. He had been forced to take all those forbidden medicines by Chu Feng. Even his life was about to disappear. How could he not feel hatred for Chu Feng?

“This should be your final trump card, no?”

“You’ve taken a great amount of forbidden medicines to acquire your current power. After the effect of the forbidden medicine has passed, your soul will immediately dissipate.”

“For the sake of killing me, you have truly gone all-out without a concern for anything. However, there is still one thing that I must tell you,” Chu Feng said.

The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster started to frown. He asked impatiently, “What is it?”

“Even with that being the case, you will still not be able to injure me in the slightest,” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogance!” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was enraged upon hearing those words.

Then, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster pointed his palm at Chu Feng in a commanding manner. Then, that enormous sword

formed with martial power measuring over a thousand meters long began to fly straight toward Chu Feng to attack him.

Once the enormous martial power sword started to move, a buzzing noise began to be heard. The space around it started to tremble violently. Ying Mingchao and the others, even though they were in the grand healing formation, started to sway left and right. It was as if they could fall out of the grand healing formation at any time.

However, even though the enormous martial power sword was rapidly approaching Chu Feng, Chu Feng remained motionless with a confident expression on his face.

“Why is Chu Feng still not acting? Could it be that he has given up?” Chu Yue grew anxious.

“No, with how confident he is, he most definitely possesses a method to turn the situation around. He must still have a trump card,” compared to Chu Yue, Chu Huai was confident in Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion sounded from the sky.

It was an enormous lightning strike. Like a giant dragon, it appeared in the sky and was seemingly tearing it apart.

“How could this be?”

When that lightning strike appeared, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster revealed an enormous change in expression. He was astonished to discover that the enormous martial power sword that he had sent straight at Chu Feng grew completely motionless the moment that lightning strike’s thunder was heard.

No matter how he tried to urge it to move, his enormous martial power sword was unable to proceed forward in the slightest.

At that moment, Chu Huai had an enormous change in expression. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted, “Look! Chu Feng,

he...!”

“Heavens, that is?!”

Upon looking, even Chu Yue revealed an enormous change in expression; disbelief filled her eyes.

“How could this be?!”

In fact, even that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man who was hidden somewhere deep in the sky revealed an enormous change in expression.

That old man had been observing the battle below the entire time. Like a god, he was controlling the entire situation.

He felt that since he was helping the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, it would be impossible for Chu Feng to be able to defeat the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

However, at that moment, a frenetic expression emerged in his eyes.

That’s right, he had started to panic. He was unable to keep his calm after seeing the current Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~~”

Another loud explosion was heard. Following that, countless nine-colored bolts of lightning appeared in the sky that was covered by the dark black gaseous flames.

The nine-colored lightnings were like countless enormous dragons galloping about in the sky. They extended continuously for miles on end. It was a spectacular sight.

“Impossible! Impossible! This is impossible!!!” Shouted the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster in a completely unwilling manner as he stared at the current Chu Feng.

Actually, at that moment, everyone was staring at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was still standing where he was. However, compared to



before, he was like a completely different person.

The reason for that was because the lightning, the nine-colored lightning, was flickering in his eyes.

Most importantly, nine-colored lightning was also moving about on his forehead. Faintly, they formed a single character.

“Lightning Mark, Chu Feng was actually able to condense a Lightning Mark. He... just reached True Immortal realm and is already able to liberate the Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark’s power?” Chu Yue was unable to remain calm.

After reaching the True Immortal realm, both Heavenly Bloodlines and Divine Powers would be sealed. Only those with exceptional talent would be able to liberate those powers.

Furthermore, that was also something that required the accumulation of time to accomplish.

As for Chu Yue, although she had been a True Immortal for some time now, it remained that she was still unable to liberate the power of her Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark.

Yet, this Chu Feng, who had just stepped into the True Immortal realm, was able to liberate the power of his Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark. With this, how could she not be astonished?

One should know that even in the entire Chu Heavenly Clan, very few people were capable of liberating the power of their Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark in True Immortal realm.

As for those who were capable of liberating the power of their Heavenly Bloodline’s Lightning Mark right after becoming True Immortals, only those demon-level geniuses from their Chu Heavenly Clan were capable of accomplishing that.

“Big brother Chu Huai, you were right, this Chu Feng is truly a genius,” Chu Yue said to Chu Huai. If she did not acknowledge Chu Feng earlier, she fully acknowledged him now.

“No, he’s not merely a genius,” Chu Huai said.

“Ah?” Chu Yue was confused.

“Chu Yue, carefully look at the character on his forehead. That is no ordinary Lightning Mark. Instead, it’s the legendary Divine level Lightning Mark,” Chu Huai said.

## Chapter 2647 - Silencing

---

The nine-colored lightnings in the sky grew more and more numerous. They soon covered the entire sky and stretched continuously for several miles.

With the nine-colored lightnings in the sky, the might of the Infant Soul Grand Formation was completely suppressed.

All of it was because of Chu Feng.

However, if that was all there were to it, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster would not panic like he did.

The reason why he was panicking so much was because after Chu Feng used his Divine level Lightning Mark, his cultivation had increased from rank one True Immortal to rank two True Immortal.

Chu Feng had managed to increase his cultivation by an entire level. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster was unable to accept this fact.

There were many Heavenly Clans in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and countless Heavenly Bloodline possessors. The Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had witnessed these so-called Lightning Marks many times before.

However, those Lightning Marks were only able to increase one's battle power.

Although Lightning Marks were an ability that Heavenly Bloodline possessors would only obtain after their Nine Lightnings Fusion, and was the final ability that Heavenly Bloodline possessors would awaken, the Lightning Mark was relatively weak compared to the Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings, abilities that could increase one's cultivation.

However, Chu Feng's Lightning Mark was not at all weaker than his Thunder Armor and Thunder Wings. After all... his Lightning

Mark had increased his cultivation by an entire level.

“That seems to be the character Divine?”

“I’ve heard that only Divine Punishment Mysterious Techniques can allow one to condense a Divine level Lightning Mark.”

“As for this Chu Feng, he actually managed to even increase his cultivation by an entire level. He has most definitely trained in that legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.”

“Heavens! Exactly what is his origin? He actually managed to train in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, something that no one in our Chu Heavenly Clan possesses right now.”

After Chu Yue further observed Chu Feng, she grew even more astonished.

Actually, Chu Yue and Chu Huai had both heard rumors that Chu Feng’s Lightning Mark displayed the character Divine.

However, as they knew very well that only those who had trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique were able to condense a Divine level Lightning Mark, they did not trust the rumors.

The reason for that was because they did not feel that Chu Feng would be capable of training in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was a legend even for the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Not only was the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique extremely rare, even if one could learn it, very few people dared to train in it. The reason for that was because each and every tribulation from the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique could take one’s life. One must either succeed or die trying, with no other option.

The people from the Chu Heavenly Clan knew that very well.

The reason for that was because there had been people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Even now, there were many people from the Chu Heavenly Clan that had witnessed the might of the Divine Tribulation's lightning.

“Exactly what is the origin of this Chu Feng?” A trace of admiration appeared in the gaze with which Chu Huai looked to Chu Feng.

Asking himself truthfully, he knew that he would not be able to handle the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. However, Chu Feng had successfully managed to handle it. As such, he naturally felt admiration for Chu Feng.

After all, both of them were Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

Suddenly, Chu Yue asked, “Chu Huai, say, could this Chu Feng possibly be Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child?”

“That's impossible. Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child has already died,” Chu Huai said.

“But his name...” Chu Yue said.

“With how vast the world is, there are countless people with the same name and surname. You can't assume that just because it's a Heavenly Bloodline possessor with the name Chu Feng that he would definitely be Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child,” Chu Huai said.

“The key aspect is his Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique,” Chu Yue said.

Hearing those words, Chu Huai started to hesitate. However, he soon shook his head again, “No, Senior Chu Xuanyuan's child has already died. Furthermore, this Chu Feng must be using a pseudonym. His actual name couldn't possibly be Chu Feng. Rather, he simply cannot be surnamed Chu.”

Chu Huai spoke with great certainty.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword suddenly started moving. In merely the blink of an eye, it arrived before the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

That brightly shining Ancient Era's War Sword was less than a meter away from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

At such a short distance, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had simply lost all opportunity to escape. Only death by the Ancient Era's War Sword awaited him.

However, Chu Feng did not kill him immediately. Rather, he stood there and looked at the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

At the beginning, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had a panicky expression. He was filled with a fear of death. Soon, that fear grew stronger and stronger. Perhaps it was because he didn't want to die, but his body started to shiver and tremble violently. His trembling was so strong that anyone could see it.

However, after a short period of time passed, the fear on the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's face actually eased somewhat. Then, he started to laugh bitterly.

“My master once said to me that the most unreasonable people in this world are the geniuses.”

“Today, I finally believe his esteemed self's words.”

“Geniuses are truly the most unreasonable people in this world,” the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster said with a wry smile.

Earlier, he felt extremely unreconciled to be suppressed by Chu Feng. However, he now no longer possessed the feeling of irreconciliation.

As matters stood, he had no choice but to accept that he was inferior to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng possessed heaven-

defying powers.

It was something that ordinary people did not possess.

“Tell me, exactly what sort of seal are you trying to undo with this grand formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“What? Seal?” Hearing those words, the people from the allied army and even Chu Yue and Chu Huai were all surprised.

They all knew that the grand formation that Chu Feng was talking about was that Infant Soul Grand Formation. However, none of them were able to tell that it was an unsealing formation.

“Amazing, you actually managed to see through it,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster laughed bitterly. Then, he said, “However, I am someone who is definitely going to die. Why should I tell you?”

“If I were you, I would state the reason,” Chu Feng said.

“Is that so? Give me a reason why,” The Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“I know that all of this is not something that you planned to do. Your Infant Soul Sect... does not have the ability to set up such a grand formation.”

“Someone taught you this formation. Furthermore, you are being helped from the shadows.”

“You’ve done everything for the sake of another. You are but a tool, a puppet manipulated by another.”

“Being exploited for so long, what sort of benefits have you obtained? Is the benefit just continued exploitation? Is the benefit those forbidden medicines that you’ve taken that will cause you to lose your life?”

“The person exploiting you simply does not care about your life, the lives of everyone from your Infant Soul Sect or the lives of everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. All that person cares about is accomplishing their goal,” Chu Feng said.

As he spoke, his voice grew louder and louder, more and more intimidating.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster grew silent.

At that moment, Chu Huai, Chu Yue, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others all revealed marvelous expressions. They truly had no idea that everything the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster did was under someone else's dictation.

Most importantly, judging from the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's current appearance, it seemed that he had admitted to it.

"If I were you, I would say everything even if I was to die."

"It wouldn't be considered betrayal. After all, it is simply unworthy to shield someone like that," Chu Feng said.

Hearing those words, the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster closed his eyes. When he opened his eyes again, there was a trace of relief in his gaze.

"Indeed, this is an unsealing formation. It is a grand formation that can only be operated using living souls."

"Due to the fact that I possessed limited capabilities, I was unable to set up a grand formation that could forcibly deprive another of their soul."

As such, I needed the cooperation of others. I needed those whose souls are going to be extracted to willingly fuse with the grand formation."

"That is why... I created the lie stating that this grand formation was capable of helping others increase their cultivation."

"It was all so that I could obtain their cooperation."

"As for the Chen Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's cultivation breakthrough, he had actually already broken through to rank one



True Immortal. We merely hid his cultivation using special medicines. That is why others were unable to detect his actual cultivation, and thought that this grand formation actually helped him increase his cultivation,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster said.

“In that case, what is it that this grand formation is trying to unseal?” Chu Feng asked with a serious expression.

A grand formation that was operated using countless souls, the thing that it would unseal was most definitely not something good.

“I have no idea,” the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster shook his head.

“Then who is the person instructing you from the shadows?” Chu Feng asked.

“He is Chu...”

“Bang~~~~”

Before he could finish his words, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster exploded.

At that moment, everyone’s expression changed enormously. The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not act to kill the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Thus, it meant that someone else had killed the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

Someone had silenced him!!!

# Chapter 2648 - Mastermind

---

“Sure enough!”

At that moment, Chu Feng started to frown.

At the same time, the expressions of worry and astonishment on Ying Mingchao and the others' faces also grew stronger.

The scene earlier had allowed them to know that there was indeed a mastermind behind the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

As for the mastermind, he was most definitely an extremely powerful individual, so powerful that they simply could not contend against him.

Furthermore, that person was present. It was very likely that that person would attack Chu Feng and the others.

That said, as matters stood, there was already no choice left for Chu Feng.

He was making a gamble. He was gambling on that individual not daring to show himself and attacking them.

The reason why Chu Feng dared to make such a gamble was because he felt that if that individual was capable of doing things himself, he would definitely not have gone through the effort to have the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster help him.

Thus, he most definitely possessed some sort of reason that made it so that he was unable to handle things personally.

“Quickly, run away! Run away!”

At that moment, the people from the Infant Soul Sect started to flee in disarray.

When even their strongest Sectmaster was killed, if they were to continue stay there, they would only be waiting for death.

As Chu Feng saw the escaping members of the Infant Soul Sect,

coldness gleamed in his eyes.

Chu Feng started to recall the infants that had died miserably. Those people that were currently fleeing were the culprits that had slaughtered infants.

With a thought, Chu Feng's oppressive might began to move toward the fleeing members of the Infant Soul Sect in a manner capable of toppling mountains and overturning seas.

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

.....

At that moment, muffled explosions began to be heard nonstop in the air like firecrackers.

Following each muffled explosion, a person from the Infant Soul Sect's body and soul would be blown up.

In merely a split second, all the Infant Soul Sect's members were killed. Like rain, their blood began to sprinkle down from the sky.

It was a truly devastating scene. However, not a single person from the allied army felt any sympathy for them when they saw this. Even people like Grandmaster Pocket, people that possessed a kind and merciful heart, did not feel any sympathy.

They all knew very well that the people from the Infant Soul Sect had done countless evils, and that their deaths could not wipe away their sins.

“Chu Feng, that grand formation is still here,” right at that moment, Her Lady Queen called Chu Feng's attention to the Infant Soul Sect's grand formation.

Actually, Chu Feng had noticed it even without Her Lady Queen telling him about it. That grand formation condensed by the crowd from the Infant Soul Sect was still present in the sky, and covering the entire region.

Logically, as the people who had set up that formation had

already been killed, the grand formation should have dissipated. After all, it was a grand formation created by the special powers that the people from the Infant Soul Sect possessed, and not a spirit formation.

That said, it was precisely because that grand formation that should have dissipated had yet to dissipate that it was strange.

“This grand formation is too dangerous. We can’t stay here.”

“Woosh~~~”

After Chu Feng said those words, he swept the Ancient Era’s War Sword across the sky with a single thought, and severed all the dark black gaseous flames that served as the connections that Infant Soul Grand Formation had with the hundreds of millions of lives below.

The next moment, the crowd that was originally covered by the dark black gaseous flames finally managed to escape.

However, it was only when they escaped from the black gaseous flames that the crowd discovered that over half of the people had already died.

All those with weak levels of cultivation were already dead. All those who were still alive possessed relatively decent levels of cultivation.

That said, even all those that were still alive were left in a completely shriveled state of skin and bones. Regardless of what their ages were, they were all filled with wrinkles, and all of their hair had fallen out. They were incomparably aged.

Every one of them resembled corpses that had walked out from their coffins. Their appearances were extremely frightening.

It could be seen that they had not just had their souls extracted. This time around, they had paid an enormous price for their ignorance and greed.

“Putt~~~”

Right at that moment, a shocking scene occurred. All the people who were still alive, regardless of their gender and status, all knelt on the ground and began to bow to Chu Feng with both hands held in front of them.

“Lord Chu Feng, we were foolish. Thank you for saving us.”

“Lord Chu Feng, we were wrong. We wrongly accused you all. We deserve to die ten thousand times for our crimes.”

At that moment, the people kneeling on the ground, regardless of their age and gender, were all wailing and crying tears of remorse.

Chu Feng noticed that even the Abbot of the Buddha’s Heavenly Temple and the Headmaster of the Immortal Sword School were among them. Although they were not kowtowing with their hands before them like the others, their faces were also covered with tears of remorse.

From this, it could be seen that even though they were trapped, they had managed to hear everything that had happened earlier, hear the entire conversation between Chu Feng and the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster.

They now all knew that they’d fallen for the Infant Soul Sect’s plot, and that Ying Mingchao and the others were right.

Upon thinking about what they’d done, they felt endlessly ashamed.

“There’s no need to thank me. I did not come here to save you all. Your lives and deaths are unrelated to me,” Chu Feng said coldly. He was completely unmoved by the thanks from the crowd.

In fact, Chu Feng did not even bother to take a look at them. Chu Feng’s eyes have been fixed onto the sky. He was staring at the surging Infant Soul Grand Formation.

That grand formation was much more complicated than Chu

Feng had imagined it to be. Chu Feng felt that as long as the Infant Soul Grand Formation remained, they would still be in danger.

“Chu Feng, I have truly underestimated you.”

“That said, you are still unable to change anything.”

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from above the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

“Oh no!”

Hearing that voice, the crowd present all grew nervous. Some people even started to involuntarily shiver in fear.

As matters stood, they all knew that someone was instructing the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster from behind. As for that person... since he was capable of manipulating the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster, he was most definitely an exceptionally powerful existence.

As for that voice, it was very possible for it to be that individual’s voice.

Since that voice was heard, it meant that individual was most definitely planning to act.

If that individual were to act, who could possibly stop him? Even Chu Feng would likely not be a match for him.

With the situation being as it was, how could the crowd not be scared?

“Run away!”

Suddenly, someone shouted.

It was unknown who shouted the first cry to run away. However, immediately after that shout was heard, the crowd that was kneeling on the ground immediately stood up.

They began to soar into the sky, run on the ground and even dig into the earth. They were using all of their powers and all of their

abilities to escape far away from that place.

“That bunch of craven and cowardly trash,” Seeing such a scene, Zhao Hong felt disgust from the bottom of her heart.

It was no wonder Chu Feng did not appreciate the thanks from those people. Those people were simply too selfish.

“That voice earlier?”

At the moment when that voice sounded, Chu Huai revealed an expression of disbelief.

He then looked to Chu Yue, and discovered that she too had the same sort of expression of disbelief in her eyes.

“Chu Huai, am I mistaking things? That voice earlier seemed to be Senior Chu Bore’s voice,” Chu Yue said to Chu Huai.

[1. Bore is the chinese translation of the sanskrit word prajña meaning wisdom.]

She was unwilling to believe this, for that voice was their senior’s voice.

However, if it really was their senior Chu Bore’s voice, it would mean that the mastermind manipulating the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster was Chu Bore.

“I am also uncertain,” Chu Huai shook his head. Actually, it wasn’t that he was uncertain. Rather, he did not dare to make a judgment.

The reason for that was because this matter was of major significance.

Chu Bore was the person in charge of overseeing the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. His task was to determine whether they had accomplished their missions with their own power. Apart from that, he should not involve himself in anything in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, if Chu Bore was truly the mastermind behind the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster, then he would truly have committed an enormous taboo.

His action was an extremely serious crime. Furthermore, he was ordering the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster to murder hundreds of millions of people, something extremely inhumane.

This was simply committing a crime on top of his original crime. His crimes would absolutely not be forgiven.

"No, it's impossible. Senior Chu wouldn't do that sort of thing," Chu Yue said.

"Tsk, ts, tsk..."

Right after Chu Yue finished saying those words, a cold and sinister laugh sounded from the sky above the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

Soon, a figure slowly descended from the sky. It was an old man. He was emitting an incomparably powerful aura. That old man was descending from the sky like a god.

"Huuu~~~"

That old man waved his sleeve. Immediately, a burst of power surrounded the entire region. The people that had escaped far away were all dragged back by the invisible power.

The escaped crowd started to roll and crawl on the ground as they were dragged like a bunch of fallen leaves. They were once again gathered below the Infant Soul Grand Formation.

With merely a flip of his hand, that old man had managed to recapture all of the escapees.

"This..."

After that old man revealed his power, Ying Mingchao and the others all revealed dejected expressions whilst despair filled their faces.



The aura of that old man was simply too powerful. He was so powerful that they started to feel despair from the bottoms of their hearts.

An existence like him was someone that they would never be able to contend against.

Before that old man, they were like ants. A single movement from that old man would be able to easily obliterate them.

“It really is senior?!”

At that moment, Chu Yue was incomparably shocked.

The reason for that was because that old man was precisely their senior, the old man by the name of Chu Bore.

# Chapter 2649 - Inescapable Predestined Fate

---

“Really!”

“Senior... what is he doing?!”

After her astonishment passed, Chu Yue grew furious.

As she spoke, she moved to exit the umbrella. She was planning to reveal herself.

She wanted to openly question Chu Bore as to why he was doing this sort of thing.

She wanted to know why he had gone against the rules established by their Chu Heavenly Clan.

She wanted to know why he wanted to slaughter everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was the Chu Heavenly Clan's territory. The people living there could be considered to be the Chu Heavenly Clan's citizens.

“Chu Yue, have you gone insane?!” Right at that moment, Chu Huai grabbed Chu Yue. He prevented her from walking out of the umbrella that was concealing them.

“Release me! I need to go and ask exactly why senior is doing this!” Chu Yue shouted.

Her voice was truly loud and clear. It was even more ear-piercing than thunder. If it wasn't for the umbrella, it was likely everyone present would've heard her voice.

Fortunately, they were under the umbrella. It had contained her shout so that only Chu Huai could hear it.

“Do you want to die going out there at a time like this?!” Chu Huai lashed out at Chu Yue.

Hearing those words, Chu Yue revealed a stunned expression. Her aggressiveness to leave immediately calmed down.

Cautiously, she asked, “That’s senior out there. Are you saying that he will... kill me?”

“Look at the current Chu Bore. Is he the same Chu Bore that we knew? Is he still the senior that we knew?” Chu Huai asked.

Chu Yue looked to Chu Bore again. It was only at that moment that she discovered that Chu Bore had a sinister, gloomy and cold expression on his face. Compared to the genial Chu Bore that they knew, he was indeed a completely different person.

“One might know a person for a long time without knowing their true nature. The reason why he dared to reveal himself at such a time is precisely to unleash a massacre. As long as he kills everyone here, no one will know what he’s done.”

“If the two of us are to reveal ourselves at such a time, do you think he will spare us?” Chu Huai asked.

“But why is he doing such a thing? Is there something even more important than our lives? Something that he will kill us to accomplish?” Chu Yue asked.

“There is,” Chu Huai looked to Chu Bore. Then, he said, “His own life is more important than our lives.”

Hearing those words, Chu Yue’s expression changed. She seemed to be unable to find a way to refute Chu Huai.

Then, Chu Yue quietly pulled back the foot that she stepped forward with.

She also did not dare to take the risk of exiting the umbrella. She was also scared, scared that Chu Bore would really kill them should he find out that they were there.

She was scared that he would silence them!!!

“Never would I expect for someone of the Chu Heavenly Clan to

be the one to do this sort of thing,” Chu Feng said after sizing up Chu Bore.

The reason Chu Feng said that was because Chu Bore still had the Chu Heavenly Clan’s title plate on his waist.

Actually, Chu Feng was very surprised too. He never imagined that someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan would do this sort of thing.

“Chu Heavenly Clan?”

Once Chu Feng mentioned it, Ying Mingchao and the others also noticed the title plate on Chu Bore’s waist.

After verifying the identity of the old man, the people present started to panic even more. What was the Chu Heavenly Clan? They were not only the masters of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, but they also ruled over the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

While they could disregard the people of the younger generation that the Chu Heavenly Clan sent to train, as those people would not receive protection from the Chu Heavenly Clan while training there, the true experts of the Chu Heavenly Clan were existences capable of obliterating them instantly. They were beings that the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not dare to disrespect.

As for the old man before them, he was evidently one such being.

Before people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, those people simply could not be described as martial cultivators.

That old man possessed the power to rule over the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Before them, he was akin to a god, and possessed the power to control everything.

To go against a god, how could they possibly win?

“Chu Feng, exactly what is your origin? You’ve actually trained

in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?” Chu Bore asked Chu Feng.

“That is none of your concern,” Chu Feng said coldly.

“Heh...” Chu Bore laughed indifferently. Then, the corners of his mouth lifted into a cold and sinister smile. He said, “Actually, it doesn’t matter whether or not you tell me. After all, you will not be able to escape death today. Furthermore, no one will know that it was me that killed you.”

“Even if you have backing, there is nothing they can do.”

Although Chu Bore spoke with a very indifferent tone, he was actually worried that killing Chu Feng would offend the huge monster behind him.

While the Chu Heavenly Clan behind Chu Bore was a huge monster itself, it remained that Chu Feng was someone that trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. He felt that the power behind Chu Feng might not necessarily be weaker than the Chu Heavenly Clan.

With the abilities that Chu Feng had grasped and how talented he was, he would most definitely be considered a heavenly genius even in his power.

Chu Bore actually did not dare to offend a heavenly genius like Chu Feng. The reason for that was because if the power behind Chu Feng were to know that he had killed Chu Feng, then, with the status that he possessed, the Chu Heavenly Clan would definitely not protect him. For the sake of appeasing the power behind Chu Feng, they would send him to them to handle.

This was the greatest fear that Chu Bore possessed. However, he had no idea that Chu Feng actually did not have a huge monster behind him.

The person that he thought to be a heavenly genius was merely the Chu Heavenly Clan’s discarded trash child.

“You’re planning to kill us to silence us?”

“In that case, it would mean that this matter is not being conducted under orders from the Chu Heavenly Clan, but rather something that you decided on your own?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’ve guessed correctly,” Chu Bore said with a light chuckle.

“Milord, please spare us, please spare us!”

Right at that moment, voices begging for forgiveness sounded from the crowd below. More and more people began to beg for forgiveness.

Looking down, those people were all kneeling on the ground and kowtowing to Chu Bore nonstop.

Chu Bore took a glance at them. There was no trace of pity in his eyes. He said, “Don’t worry, I won’t kill you all immediately.”

After he finished saying those words, he looked to Chu Feng again, “Didn’t you want to know what it is that I’m trying to unseal with my formation?”

“Rest assured, before you die here, I will satisfy your curiosity and broaden everyone’s horizons.”

“This might be something that you all would not be able to witness in your entire lives otherwise.”

“Buzz~~~”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Bore began to form hand seals with one hand. The next moment, dark black gaseous flames began to emerge from his body, and started to assimilate into the grand formation.

The dark black gaseous flames that he emitted were different from those of the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster. They did not possess the miserable infant crying sounds, and did not seem that frightening and sinister. Naturally, they were not that sinister.

However, people like Chu Feng were able to clearly sense that the

dark black gaseous flames emitted by the Chu Heavenly Clan's old man before them was not something that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster could compare to. In fact, the dark black gaseous flames emitted by everyone from the Infant Soul Sect combined was greatly inferior to those this old man was currently emitting.

This was true frightening power.

“Rumble~~~”

Rumbles began to sound from the grand formation. They were deafening.

Chu Feng and the others raised their heads and looked toward the sky and unease filled their eyes.

The reason for that was because the Infant Soul Grand Formation was no longer completely black. Rays of blue light began to appear in that dark black grand formation. Those should be the extracted souls from the Hundred Refinement Ordinary Realm's hundreds of millions of lives.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, the blue lights started to gather together. They started to mix with the dark black gaseous flames, forming a gaseous pillar of flames that shot straight into the depths of the earth.

“Buzz~~~”

The next moment, golden lines began to appear on the surface of the earth. Those lines started to interweave with one another and continued to spread, like a vast sea of boundless golden lines.

At the very least, from where Chu Feng could see, the surface below was completely covered with golden lines.

It was a grand formation so enormous that even Chu Feng started feeling fearful.

“That's a sealing formation?”

Soon, Chu Feng determined that the formation that had

appeared on the surface of the earth was a sealing formation. It was an extremely vast sealing formation.

Merely, what could such a vast sealing formation be sealing?

“Chu Feng, this feeling, this is bad,” even Her Lady Queen revealed an expression of unease.

Such an enormous sealing formation could only mean one thing: it was sealing something extremely grand.

“Eggy, you’ve also noticed it?” Chu Feng asked.

“What?” Her Lady Queen was confused. Evidently... she did not notice what Chu Feng had noticed.

“Seems like you didn’t notice it. That’s understandable, you can only see what I see and hear what I hear, but not completely sense what I am sensing,” Chu Feng said.

“Exactly what did you manage to sense?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I sensed that old cat’s aura from the grand sealing formation below,” Chu Feng said.

“Old cat, you’re talking about that Buddha’s Heavenly Temple’s old cat?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Yes, that cat is precisely what I’m talking about,” Chu Feng said.

“Then, wouldn’t it mean that this grand formation is...?” Her Lady Queen grew even more astonished.

“There’s no mistake. What this Chu Heavenly Clansman is trying to unseal is the thing sealed by that old cat,” Chu Feng said.

“This is truly bad,” Her Lady Queen revealed an even more astonished and uneasy expression.

She still remembered how Grandmaster Pocket described the item sealed by that old cat.

‘That item was not something from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was from the Outer World, and possessed an



extremely bloodthirsty and cruel nature.'

'If that item were to break free from its seal, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would fall into a calamity, and everyone in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be killed.'

'It would be an inescapable fate for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.'

# Chapter 2650 - The Only Thing To Rely On

---

“Although I do not know why he is planning to unseal that item, he absolutely cannot be allowed to succeed.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he began to send voice transmissions to Ying Mingchao and the others.

Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong and everyone else from the allied army received Chu Feng’s voice transmission.

Chu Feng told them via voice transmission to immediately escape and leave this place with their fastest speed in the following moment.

The crowd were slightly confused by Chu Feng’s sudden voice transmission.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, an extremely powerful aura started to emit from where Chu Feng stood. That aura soon engulfed the entire sky.

Looking up, the crowd noticed that crimson gaseous flames had emerged in the sky above Chu Feng.

As for that, it was not caused by Chu Feng himself. Rather, it was caused by the sword Chu Feng held in his hand, the Demon Armament Evil God Sword.

Chu Feng had already instilled his power into the Evil God Sword. Thus, the Evil God Sword’s powers were activated.

The crimson clouds soon covered the entire sky. It actually covered the entire Infant Soul Grand Formation.

If one must describe it, then the crimson clouds that filled the sky were even stranger than the dark black gaseous flames from before. Seeing it, the crowd felt even greater unease.

“Is that Chu Feng’s Demon Armament that’s capable of killing

True Immortals?”

“What a frightening aura. I have never experienced such stifling power before.”

This was the first time for many people down below to witness the power of Chu Feng’s Evil God Sword. One by one, they revealed frightened expressions.

In fact, even Ying Mingchao and the others had expressions of unease on their faces.

This was no longer the first time they had witnessed the power of the Evil God Sword. However, they were astonished by the fact that the Evil God Sword seemed to be capable of unleashing an unparalleled power regardless of who it was facing.

They all knew that that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan possessed god-like power, and was an opponent that none of them could contend against.

Although they had no idea what that old man’s cultivation was, they were certain that the disparity of strength between them was enormous.

However, when the Evil God Sword was revealed by Chu Feng, they started to feel that perhaps Chu Feng would be able to take on that god-like old man.

The reason for that was because the power of that Evil God Sword was not at all weaker than that old man. In fact, the unparalleled grandeur from that Evil God Sword was many times more valiant than that old mans’.

“Hahahaha...”

At the moment when the people were astonished by the power of the Evil God Sword, that Chu Bore burst into loud laughter. Not only was his laughter loud, but it was also extremely mocking.

“Chu Feng, it is one thing for you to use that Evil God Sword to

take care of the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However, you actually want to use it to handle this old man?”

“You are simply looking down on this old man too much, no? You actually want to treat me the same way as those useless trash?”

“I can only say, you are truly ignorant,” Chu Bore said mockingly.

Even though he had also witnessed the power of the Evil God Sword, he evidently did not place the Evil God Sword in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly raised the Evil God Sword in his hand and pointed it at Chu Bore.

“This...”

The next moment, the expressions of everyone present changed enormously. Disbelief filled their eyes.

Even Chu Bore was stunned. Then, he slowly lowered his head and looked at his chest.

At that moment, a hole had appeared on his chest and Blood was flowing out from it. His chest had been pierced!

Not only that, but crimson gaseous flames had emerged on his chest. The crimson gaseous flames were spreading rapidly. They were devouring his body.

This sort of wound had also appeared on the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster before. It was the Evil God Sword. It was the power of the Evil God Sword.

“It’s you????”

Chu Bore still had a stunned and disbelieving expression on his face. He didn’t dare believe that someone of his cultivation would actually be injured by the Evil God Sword. Furthermore... he was

caught off-guard by the state of his wound.

“How could this be?”

In fact, even Chu Feng himself was filled with astonishment.

Even he did not anticipate that the Evil God Sword would be able to injure that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan so easily.

One must know that that old man’s aura was truly powerful.

He was so powerful that Chu Feng felt that he was incomparably small by comparison.

It was as if the old man standing before him was not a person at all. Rather, he was a giant insurmountable mountain.

“Chu Feng, the power of the Evil God Sword...” Her Lady Queen exclaimed in astonished.

“Eggy, so you’ve also realized it,” Chu Feng said.

Both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen had felt the power of the Evil God Sword since the first time Chu Feng had used it.

At that moment, Chu Feng had discovered an astonishing problem. As he used the Evil God Sword more frequently, the power of the Evil God Sword would increase every time. Every time he used it, it would be much more frightening than before.

Right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly shouted, “Die!!!”

The next moment, everyone, even including Chu Feng, felt the aura of death.

It was his oppressive might. Chu Bore did not use a martial skill, or even any martial power. He had only unleashed his oppressive might.

He was simply too powerful. With a single thought, his oppressive might filled the entire region. He simply didn’t give Chu Feng and the others the time to ponder.

Furthermore, his oppressive might was sufficient to completely

obliterate Chu Feng and everyone else.

The disparity in strength between Chu Feng and Chu Bore was simply too enormous.

“Ah?”

However, at the moment when everyone felt that they were going to die, they were suddenly stunned.

They were astonished to discover that the fatal oppressive might from earlier had actually disappeared.

“It’s you again?!”

Chu Bore looked to Chu Feng. The reason for that was because only he knew that the power that blocked his oppressive might originated from Chu Feng.

It was Chu Feng who had blocked his oppressive might and saved the crowd.

“What is going on?” Chu Feng looked to the Evil God Sword in his hand.

The reason for that was because the things earlier had happened too fast. Thus, he simply did not have the time to react and operate the Evil God Sword.

Thus, it was the Evil God Sword that automatically released its power and saved everyone.

In other words, without Chu Feng urging it, the Evil God Sword unleashed its oppressive might and blocked Chu Bore’s oppressive might.

“Boy, do you understand now that this God is not one of great evil?”

[1. Although both the evil in the Evil God Sword and the evil in ‘great evil’ means evil, they are two different terms. The former is something evil/nefarious/demonic, whereas the latter is the act of doing evil/bad deeds. Basically, it’s like a voodoo doll is evil

(former) whereas the person using it to harm someone would be evil (latter.)]

“With the situation at hand, you are simply unable to defeat your opponent. Thus, rest assured, and hand your body over to this God.”

“This God will stop everything and give you a satisfying result.”

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword’s voice sounded in Chu Feng’s ears.

“I will not fall for your trick. Only you will be used by me. Do not think about using me,” Chu Feng said resolutely.

Even though the Evil God Sword had indeed saved everyone using its power earlier, Chu Feng would still not hand his body over to the Evil God Sword.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew very well how sly and evil the Evil God Sword was. The Evil God Sword was an existence much more frightening than that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man. In fact, it was much more frightening than even that sealed item.

As such, Chu Feng did not believe anything it said.

“Tsk, tsk. Boy, do you still not understand the situation at hand?”

“In this sort of situation, if you and your bunch of friends want to survive, you must rely on this Evil God’s power. This Evil God is the only thing that you can rely on.”

“If you want to obtain my power, you must hand your body over to me.”

“Consider your actions properly,” The Evil God Sword said with a laugh.

Suddenly, Chu Bore asked, “How did you obtain your Demon Armament?”

“You don’t need to know that. However, if you are to give up now, I can consider letting you live,” Chu Feng said.

Actually, Chu Feng did not want to let Chu Bore get away. However, the Evil God Sword was already not listening to him anymore.

That’s right, right after the Evil God Sword told Chu Feng to make his decision, Chu Feng discovered that the power of the Evil God Sword was no longer under his control.

Even though Chu Feng was still holding the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was unable to attack with it again.

Having lost the power of the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was basically unable to contend against the Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man. Thus, he could only take advantage of the fact that this old man still didn’t know that he no longer had control of the Evil God Sword to threaten him to leave.

He hoped that the old man would fear the power of the Evil God Sword and retreat.



# Chapter 2651 - No Other Choice

---

“Although I do not know where you obtained that Demon Armament, don’t you think that you can scare this old man away with merely that Demon Armament,” Chu Bore said coldly.

Not only did he not show any sign of wanting to retreat, but he instead had a mocking expression on his face.

It was as if he had seen through Chu Feng’s intention.

In the beginning, Chu Feng thought that Chu Bore was merely bluffing. Thus, his expression remained unchanged, and he even smiled coldly. He was planning to continue to speak and scare Chu Bore.

However, right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly stopped operating the unsealing formation. He flipped his hand, and an item appeared in his hand.

It was a Cosmos Sack.

“That is?”

Chu Feng’s expression changed upon seeing that Cosmos Sack. He recognized that Cosmos Sack. It was the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster’s Cosmos Sack.

When he fought against the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster earlier, the Infant Soul Sect’s Sectmaster had that Cosmos Sack the entire time. Chu Feng had no idea when that Cosmos Sack had entered that old man’s hand.

That said, it was not surprising for the old man to possess that Cosmos Sack. After all, he possessed unfathomable strength. It would naturally be extremely easy for him to secretly take something like that away.

Merely, Chu Feng did not understand why the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan would take out the Infant Soul Sect’s

Sectmaster's Cosmos Sack.

In terms of treasures, the treasures inside the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster's Cosmos Sack would definitely not be able to compare to the treasures he possessed. After all, he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Right at that moment, the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan took out an item from the Cosmos Sack.

"Chu Feng, do you still recognize this?" Chu Bore asked Chu Feng while holding an item.

It was a jade pendant. The jade pendant was gold in color, and had a circular shape. Once it appeared, it immediately emitted a very strong Ancient Era's aura.

Most importantly, there were two large characters written in ancient calligraphy on the center of the circular jade pendant. They were 'Demon Suppression!!!'

How could Chu Feng not recognize that jade pendant? It was the treasure that was capable of suppressing even his Evil God Sword, the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

"How did you obtain that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman?"

"Could it be...?"

Chu Feng's heart tightened. That Demon Armament Suppression Talisman should be with the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Chu Feng did not see the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief among the crowd present. Even his corpse was not among the dead.

This meant that the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster had gone and obtained the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman for the sake of handling him. As for the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, he might already have been killed by the Infant Soul Sect's Sectmaster.

However, that was not what Chu Feng was worried about. After all, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was not a good person anyways. Even if he were to die, his death would not wipe away his crimes.

Chu Feng merely regretted not being able to kill him himself.

That said, Chu Feng was very worried. He was anxious because of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. After all, that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was indeed capable of suppressing the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Chu Feng, so even you know fear?”

Seemingly seeing through the worry in Chu Feng's heart, a proud smile emerged on Chu Bore's face.

“Chu Feng is afraid? Why would he be afraid? Could it be because of that jade pendant?”

Hearing what Chu Bore said, the crowd cast their eyes to the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Apart from Chu Feng and Zi Xunyi, this was the first time that all the others had seen that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. They did not know what the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman could do.

Although the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman appeared extraordinary, they were still unable to understand why Chu Feng would fear a mere jade pendant.

After all, Chu Feng's current aura surpassed that of Chu Bore. Furthermore, he had even managed to injure Chu Bore.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Bore gently raised his hand and tossed out the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Once the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman entered the sky, it reacted as if it had been liberated.

Immediately after, it started to emit dazzling golden light. Not only did that golden light grow more and more dazzling, but many characters also began to appear.

Those characters were flowing out from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman. Following the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman, they began to scatter and fill its surroundings.

It was as if the golden light was the sea, and those characters were fishes.

Just like that, those characters started to gallop in the sea, covering all the places the golden light reached.

Those characters were very ancient. They were most likely characters from the Ancient Era. Furthermore, one could not interpret them.

However, when those characters appeared, the power of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman started to increase.

Chu Feng and the others were even able to hear an ancient voice sounding from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

They were simply unable to understand that voice. However, they felt a very sacred sensation from it.

At that moment, the crimson clouds that filled the sky started to wane. The Infant Soul Grand Formation once again appeared before the crowd's field of view.

At the same time, the Evil God Sword Chu Feng held in his hand started to tremble violently. It was as if it were feeling extremely unreconciled with what was happening.

“Heavens, exactly what is that jade pendant?! It was actually able to curb Chu Feng's Demon Armament?!”

At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization. They finally understood why Chu Feng would show fear toward that

Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

After knowing the truth, the crowd started to panic.

Although the power of Chu Feng's Evil God Sword brought them great unease, it remained that Chu Feng was their only hope right now. If Chu Feng's Evil God Sword was curbed, they would not be able to escape the imminent calamity, and would definitely be killed.

"Chu Feng, now... what can you possibly contend against this old man with?" The expression of complacency grew more and more concentrated on Chu Bore's face.

"Boy, hand your body to this Evil God. This Evil God will help you eliminate this trash," right at that moment, the Evil God Sword's voice sounded again.

"If I am to hand my body over to you, will you be able to break through the restriction of that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman?" Chu Feng asked.

"Did you really think that thing would be able to suppress this Evil God's power? You are merely too weak, and unable to unleash this Evil God's powers."

"If this Evil God is to take control, I will immediately have them know who the true ruler is," the Evil God Sword said.

"If I am to hand my body over to you, can you not willfully slaughter the innocent?" Chu Feng asked.

"This Evil God promises you that I will only kill those you want to kill," the Evil God Sword said.

"Chu Feng, the Evil God Sword is simply untrustworthy. You absolutely must not hand your body over to it," Her Lady Queen hurriedly spoke against it.

She had managed to understand Chu Feng's intention from his words. Chu Feng was planning to hand his body over to the Evil

God Sword.

However, the intention of the Evil God Sword was extremely obvious. It wanted to take control of Chu Feng's body. If Chu Feng were to hand his body over to it, it would be no different from death.

“Eggy, I’m sorry. There’s really no other choice for me right now.”

“Allow me to take this gamble,” Chu Feng said to Eggy with a wry smile on his face.

How could Chu Feng not know how dangerous the Evil God Sword was?

However, it was as Chu Feng said. There was no other option for him.

If he were to hand his body to the Evil God Sword and release the true power of the Evil God Sword, he would be able to kill that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan and prevent a catastrophe.

As long as the Evil God Sword honored its promise, his friends would be able to continue living.

As for his body, even though it would be occupied by the Evil God Sword, it did not mean that there would be no chance for him to take it back. At the very least... this option was a path to survival.

# Chapter 2652 - The Sealed Item

---

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was planning to hand his body to the Evil God Sword, Chu Bore suddenly began to form hand seals. He once again started to operate that grand formation.

The next moment, that pillar of light shot into the surface once again. Shining golden light from the many miles-long grand sealing formation appeared once again.

“I will hand my body to you. Kill that man right away.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he no longer resisted the power of the Evil God Sword. He was really planning to hand his body to the Evil God Sword.

The reason Chu Feng was so anxious was because he did not wish for that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man to successfully release that sealed item.

Chu Feng felt that whatever was sealed would be much more frightening than that old man.

Although he had no idea why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan wanted to unseal it, Chu Feng firmly believed that that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had no idea how terrifying that sealed item might be. He felt that that old man would not be able to control it at all.

If the seal was lifted, it would mean that a true catastrophe would befall them. Thus, Chu Feng wanted to stop him.

However, surprisingly, after Chu Feng said those words, he discovered that there was no reaction from the Evil God Sword. His body was still his. It had not been controlled by the Evil God Sword. Furthermore, he was still unable to use the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Hey, what is this?! Say something!” Chu Feng loudly asked.

Although he was speaking in his mind and others were unable to hear it, he knew that the Evil God Sword would be able to hear him.

However, there was no reaction from the Evil God Sword at all. It was as if it had disappeared.

[1. By it, it refers to the awareness of the Evil God Sword... the one speaking to him. The physical Evil God Sword is still being held by Chu Feng.]

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the earth below started to cave in. It spread continuously for many miles. All the earth visible to Chu Feng’s field of view had sunk into the ground.

Ear-piercing rumbles were rising and falling in succession.

Surging thick smoke started to rise. At a glance, it looked like that thick smoke had covered the entire earth. It was as if the entire world was about to collapse.

Most importantly, Chu Feng noticed that the light emitted by the golden-bright and dazzling sealing formation started to grow dimmer and dimmer.

That sealing formation was about to disappear. One could very well imagine what would happen once that sealing formation disappears.

“What a grand disposition. Exactly how enormous is that sealed item?”

Her Lady Queen was following Chu Feng’s vision, and staring at the situation that was unfolding before Chu Feng. That scene was truly too stunning. This was the first time since the many years she had followed Chu Feng that she had witnessed a scene as spectacular as this.



This was truly the arrival of doomsday. Although the sky was still there, the earth had been completely shattered.

As for that, it was actually all caused by the unsealing of a sealed item.

“Quickly, hand your power to me!”

Chu Feng was unable to contain himself. Once again, he urged the Evil God Sword. He felt that he must prevent the unsealing before the seal was lifted.

“What’s there to be so anxious about?” Finally, the Evil God Sword responded. Merely, compared to Chu Feng’s anxiousness, the Evil God Sword’s voice was extremely calm. It said, “That little old man is simply insufficient for this Evil God to kill. As for this thing that’s soon to appear, although it is still insufficient for this Evil God to kill, it will still be somewhat satisfying to kill it.”

“You...” Hearing those words, Chu Feng was dumbfounded.

It turned out that the Evil God Sword was purposely acting as is. It was deliberately allowing that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan to lift the seal.

“You’re certain that you’ll be able to win against it?” Chu Feng asked. He was worried.

After all, that old cat was unfathomably powerful. As such, the item it sealed should be extremely powerful too.

And now, before the seal was even lifted, that item had already created such a spectacular scene of destruction. Chu Feng was worried that whatever might be sealed would be too powerful, so powerful that even the Evil God Sword would be no match for it.

“Humph. Boy, you being weak is your problem. However, do not think that this Evil God is as weak and small as you.”

“Soon, I will have you know exactly how powerful this Evil God is,” the Evil God Sword said.

Arrogance. The words spoken by the Evil God Sword were filled with arrogance.

If it were someone else that said those words, Chu Feng would most definitely think them to be boasting.

However, when those words were spoken by the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng believed them. At the same time he believed those words, he also started to feel a sense of dependence.

Even though he knew very well that the Evil God Sword was very dangerous, the Evil God Sword was indeed the only thing that he could rely on in the situation at hand.

If the Evil God Sword was sufficiently powerful, Chu Feng would have gained greater assurance in being able to protect his friends.

“Why would an existence like you be trapped in this sword? Furthermore, why would you have been in the Holy Land of Martialism?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that the Evil God Sword was very likely not a sword. Rather, it was a very powerful demon that was trapped in the sword.

It was precisely because it was trapped that it was unable to unleash its powers, and could only unleash its power through using Chu Feng as the medium.

Something as powerful as the Evil God Sword should not exist in the Holy Land of Martialism. Chu Feng felt that the Evil God Sword must be from elsewhere.

That said, the Evil God Sword did not answer Chu Feng’s questions.

Chu Feng was a tactful person. He knew very well that this should be the Evil God Sword’s secret. Furthermore, it seemed that the Evil God Sword was not planning to share his secret with him.

Thus, Chu Feng turned his gaze down below. The ground where

countless people were kneeling before had completely caved in. All those people who were kneeling before had soared into the sky.

At that moment, silhouettes filled the entire sky. They were not all humans, as many monstrous beasts were present too.

This was the first time that Chu Feng saw so many people standing in the sky at the same time.

It must be said that such a scene was truly spectacular.

There were so many people standing in the sky without relying on anything. Regardless of their cultivations, it remained an astonishing scene.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to recall the time when he was young.

At that time, he was still a child adopted by the Chu Family.

Back then, he had had a dream. He wanted to become an outstanding martial cultivator.

The reason why he wanted to become stronger was because he wanted his adoptive father to be respected by others. He wanted everyone from the Chu Family to know that he, Chu Feng, was not trash.

At that time, he had a dream. He wanted to see a sky filled with martial cultivators.

Chu Feng had even mentioned his dream to his adoptive father. His adoptive father had smiled upon hearing Chu Feng's dream. He told Chu Feng that as long as he focused on martial cultivation, he would one day see a sky filled with martial cultivators.

At that time, even Chu Feng himself did not believe in his adoptive father's words.

After all, in the Nine Provinces Continent, Heavenly Realm martial cultivators that were capable of flying in the sky were already peak experts. Their numbers were extremely few.

Thus, to the Chu Feng from back then, he felt that it was impossible to see a sky filled with flying martial cultivators. He felt that it was a scene that he could only witness in his dreams.

However, he never expected that he... would really see such a scene before him at that moment. Furthermore, his strength even surpassed those people flying in the sky.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, another loud explosion was heard. The explosion at that time was much more ear-piercing than all the other explosions before.

After that explosion sounded, all the explosions and rumbles from the earth caving in disappeared.

The only sound that could still be heard was the sound of sliding soil.

Apart from that, there was absolute silence, and a strange calm.

“Is it going to come out?”

Chu Feng noticed that the grand sealing formation down below had disappeared completely.

Likely, the sealed item had been completely unsealed too.

Chu Feng fixed his eyes down below. At that moment, he was actually a bit excited. He wanted to know exactly what that sealed item was, and exactly how powerful it was.

Merely, the earth was too deep. Even though Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes were able to see very far, he was still unable to see that far into the depths of the earth.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that that sealed item should have been sealed very deep underground.

It was also possible that the sealed item was concealed. That might be the reason why Chu Feng was unable to detect it.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

Right at that moment, laughter suddenly sounded from beneath the ground.

That voice was extremely strange. Hearing it, one would start to tremble with fear. That... simply did not resemble a human's voice.

At that moment, the people standing in the sky all started to panic. On by one, they scattered about the entire sky, and tried their best to escape from that place.

They were all extremely scared. If it wasn't for the fact that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had sealed off the area they would not have bothered to stay at all. Instead, they would've already escaped without a trace.

At that moment when the crowd was panicking, Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

Although that laughter was indeed very frightening, Chu Feng was able to tell that that laughter was that of a child.

# Chapter 2653 - Ginseng King Of Evil

---

“Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

That strange laughter sounded from deep underground and echoed nonstop in the vast sky.

Strange and frightening. Hearing that laughter, one would feel one's blood run cold, and feel ill at ease.

At that moment, the people in the sky were panicking like ants on a hot plate.

They were all afraid that they would be killed by the sealed item, and began to try all means to search for a secret place to hide. There were actually even those who were bold and fearless that directly ran toward the Chu Heavenly Clan's old man.

Regardless, the great majority of the people present were losing their heads out of fear.

Only Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and the others continued to stare at the ground below.

No, it was not only Chu Feng and the others. That old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Bore, was also doing the same.

Chu Bore was looking down with a very serious expression on his face. He even ignored those people from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm who flew towards him to hide behind him.

However, compared to the unease that covered Chu Feng and the others' faces, Chu Bore had an excited expression.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, a golden ray shot out from deep underground.

Following that, a figure flew out from deep underground and landed on the surface.

Through the surging thick smoke, the crowd was able to clearly

see its appearance.

At the beginning, the crowd was fearful. After all, they felt that whatever it was that flew out from underground was the sealed item.

However, after they saw what it was, the crowd was confused. The reason for that was because the sealed item was completely different from what they had imagined.

They had imagined that sealed item to be some incomparably fierce and extremely frightening huge monster.

However, what appeared before them was a little three-foot-tall child.

That's right, it's appearance was more or less the same as a human child. However, it was clear that it was not a human.

The reason for that was because its body was golden, and it was emitting a faint golden light.

Even though it possessed a head, a neck and a body, it did not possess any arms or legs.

Growing out from its body were tentacles. Those tentacles resembled vines. Yet, they were not vines. The reason for that was because they were clearly comprised of flesh.

There were over a dozen such tentacles growing out where its legs should be. They were supporting its body.

As for its arms, they were both replaced with a tentacle each. While they resembled arms, there were no hands attached to them.

As for its face, it possessed six eyes. However, those eyes were very small. Each eye was roughly the size of half an ordinary human eye.

It possessed ordinary-looking ears. Merely, those ears were a little bit pointy. There was no nose to be seen. However, there was an extremely large mouth on its face. Its mouth resembled a

hippo's mouth.

The insides of its mouth were filled with sharp teeth.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to see those teeth was because that child-like thing had its mouth open.

It was laughing loudly. It seemed to be laughing because it had managed to escape from being sealed. However, its laughter was very strange.

That said, compared to its strange appearance, Chu Feng was sensing its aura. Merely... he was unable to sense anything.

Not to mention being unable to sense its cultivation, if it wasn't for the fact that it was standing right before him, Chu Feng would not even be able to feel its existence.

The reason for that was because it simply did not emit any aura at all.

"It is it! It really is it! I've succeeded, I've succeeded! Hahaha!!!"

Right at that moment, Chu Bore suddenly burst into extremely excited laughter.

Hearing that, Chu Feng looked over, and discovered that Chu Bore was holding a scroll in his hand. It was an extremely ancient scroll.

"That is?"

Using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng saw the contents on the scroll. On the scroll was a drawing.

What was drawn on the scroll was precisely that thing down below.

Apart from the drawing, there were also accompanying words.

'Ginseng King of Evil. Sealed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Upon releasing it and allowing it to mature, one will be able to prolong one's lifespan for ten thousand years by



eating its flesh.'

Following those words, the scroll also listed the precise location where the Ginseng King of Evil was sealed, as well as what sort of formation was required to lift the seal.

"So he unsealed this item to prolong his lifespan?"

At that moment, Chu Feng not only found out that the name of that frightening existence was the Ginseng King of Evil, but he also found out the intention of that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, Chu Feng turned his gaze down toward the thing below again.

It was only then that he discovered that apart from a human-like head, that thing did resemble ginseng.

Merely, its body was much more plump, and its color was much more lustrous than ordinary ginseng.

"That thing is simply too strange. I don't think it's something that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan can control," Her Lady Queen said.

"Eggy, why do you say that?" Chu Feng asked.

"Look carefully at its eyes. That gaze is so astute and circumspect. It is most definitely not as simple as it appears to be," Her Lady Queen said.

After hearing what Her Lady Queen said, Chu Feng also noticed that even though the Ginseng King of Evil appeared to be very small and weak, it possessed a very frightening, shrewd and ruthless gaze.

It was a terrifying existence that had lived for countless years. Likely, it was already over several tens of thousands of years old.

"Woosh~~~"

Right at that moment, that Ginseng King of Evil suddenly moved.

It disappeared.

“Woosh~~~”

Right after the Ginseng King of Evil disappeared, Chu Feng suddenly moved too.

At that moment, Chu Feng was greatly startled. He discovered that it was not only him that was rapidly moving in midair; everyone else was also rapidly moving in midair just like him.

It was that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan. That old man had used his power to move all the people that were present and still alive. He was bringing Chu Feng and the others together with him using his power.

“Is he chasing that thing?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked down. He seemed to understand why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was doing this.

Due to the fact that the speed at which they were traveling was too fast, Chu Feng found it very difficult to see the surrounding scenery.

However, when he looked down, he was able to see a figure. It was the Ginseng King of Evil.

That thing’s dozen-plus tentacles were moving about on the ground nonstop. It was running rapidly. Its speed was extremely fast.

It turned out that it had not disappeared into thin air. Rather, it had fled by running. It was merely because its speed was too fast that Chu Feng thought it had disappeared.

If it wasn’t for the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan bringing them along while chasing after the Ginseng King of Evil, then Chu Feng would definitely not be able to chase after the Ginseng King of Evil with his current speed.

In fact, he wouldn’t even know where the Ginseng King of Evil

had run off to.

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped in admiration at the difference in strength between him and that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, as well as that Ginseng King of Evil.

As matters stood, the enemies Chu Feng was facing had already greatly surpassed his own capabilities.

They were beings that he could not possibly contend against.

“Interesting.”

Right at that moment, the voice of the Evil God Sword entered Chu Feng’s ears again.

Merely, there was no trace of surprise in its voice. Instead... there was actually a trace of joy.

“Did you discover something?” Chu Feng asked.

“Can’t you see it?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“See what?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s understandable. With your strength, it would be impossible for you to see it.”

“Well, that doesn’t matter. This Evil God can help you.”

“Buzz~~~”

Right after the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng felt a slight burning sensation in his eyes. Involuntarily, he closed them.

“That is?”

When Chu Feng opened his eyes again, he was startled.

At that moment, what Chu Feng could see had changed.

Originally, due to the fact that they were traveling too quickly, Chu Feng was unable to see anything apart from the running Ginseng King of Evil.

However, at that moment, Chu Feng was able to clearly see

everything. He was able to see what was happening while they were rapidly moving,

“This guy!”

After clearly seeing what was happening, the unease in Chu Feng’s heart grew even stronger.

At that moment, he realized for the first time how frightening that Ginseng King of Evil was.

# Chapter 2654 - You Are Merely Trash

---

That Ginseng King of Evil was currently running with an unimaginably fast speed.

Chu Feng was able to now see that all of the plants in the areas it passed as it ran would instantly wither and die.

In fact, it was not only the flowers, grass, and trees; even the rivers disappeared and the earth dried up. The earth that was originally full of life was instantly filled with cracks from being completely dried up. This was true for even mountain rocks.

After that Ginseng King of Evil passed by, the earth that was originally covered in vast greenness instantly turned into one of desolation, and was without the slightest trace of life.

All of that was currently being witnessed by Chu Feng.

“That thing is devouring all forms of life?”

Chu Feng was astonished. Although he had no idea how the Ginseng King of Evil managed to accomplish that, he firmly believed it to be something that Ginseng King of Evil did.

“It is starting to change,” Her Lady Queen suddenly called out to Chu Feng while he was observing the unceasing destruction of the surrounding landscape.

Chu Feng looked to the Ginseng King of Evil again, and discovered that the body of the Ginseng King of Evil was expanding in size. Even the tentacles on its body were increasing in number.

Furthermore, as the Ginseng King of Evil increased in size, countless feeler-like smaller tentacles would grow out from its original tentacles.

Seemingly noticing the change in the Ginseng King of Evil, the expression of joy on Chu Bore’s face grew even stronger..

“Heavens! Everyone, look! That monster is increasing in size!”

Suddenly, a shout sounded from the crowd. Following that, everyone revealed fear on their faces. Some were so scared that their complexions turned ashen and their bodies started shivering.

Due to the fact that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had brought them along as he chased after the Ginseng King of Evil, the people present were all able to witness the changes happening to the Ginseng King of Evil.

It was growing larger and larger. It had transformed from a three meter tall child-like appearance into an enormous creature over a dozen meters tall. Furthermore, the transformation was still ongoing. The speed at which it grew was simply too fast. In merely a short moment, it had grown from over a dozen meters to tens of meters tall.

A while after that, the Ginseng King of Evil grew to over a hundred meters tall.

Soon after, it grew to become a huge monster over a thousand meters tall.

It had been less than an hour since that Ginseng King of Evil was unsealed from the bottom of the earth.

From this, it could be seen how fast the Ginseng King of Evil was growing.

As the Ginseng King of Evil increased in size, its appearance also changed. The tentacles and feelers on its body had grown by so much that they were simply uncountable now.

Its appearance also grew more and more malevolent.

Its eyes were also incomparably large. Those eyes were emitting a crimson light. Its laughter had also become much more deafening. Even space itself was trembling from its laughter.

“It’s meaningless to refine only those things. These people here have all been prepared for you. Go ahead and refine them.”

Suddenly, that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan spoke. His words... were clearly meant for the Ginseng King of Evil.

Hearing those words, the Ginseng King of Evil suddenly stopped. It swept its six enormous eyes across the crowd present.

Its gaze was exceptionally ice-cold. Being glared at, one would feel as if one's body had been hollowed out. One would feel as if one had died.

At that moment, the crowd grew even more scared. Some people even fell from midair. They had lost the ability to fly.

Those people had all lost consciousness due to fear.

They finally realized why that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had trapped them.

It turned out that he had considered everyone present as food. He was planning to feed them to that Ginseng King of Evil.

However, after sweeping its gaze over the crowd, the Ginseng King of Evil actually fixed its gaze onto that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Devouring them would not do much for me.”

“However, you, on the other hand, should benefit me slightly.”

After it finished saying those words, the Ginseng King of Evil extended an enormous tongue from its mouth filled with sharp teeth and licked its lips.

That tongue was covered with hook-like thorns. It was very disgusting and terrifying to look at.

That said, judging from the appearance of the Ginseng King of Evil, it seemed to be extremely excited.

“Humph. You want to refine me?”

Hearing those words, the expression on Chu Bore's face changed.

Then, he shouted, “Away!”

Then he opened his palm, and a layer of golden light started to gently scatter downward like a waterfall. The golden light turned into an enormous golden-bright and dazzling net.

That net was extremely vast. It was as if it could cover the entire region. Furthermore, the speed of that net was extremely fast. In an instant, it had covered the Ginseng King of Evil and tightly restricted it.

“Roar~~~”

The next moment, ear-piercing roars began to resonate through heaven and earth. The Ginseng King of Evil began to struggle. Its enormous powers caused the earth to tremble violently. Dust swirled in the air, and shattered rocks started to fly into the sky.

However, no matter how it struggled, the net only grew tighter and tighter.

“Since you refuse to be obedient, I have no choice but to collect you now,” that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan said.

“It’s too late,” Right at that moment, the voice of the Evil God Sword also sounded.

Of course, only Chu Feng could hear its voice.

“What’s too late?” Chu Feng asked.

“If that fool were to capture that little thing right when it emerged from underground, then perhaps he could take advantage of the fact that it was still weak after being sealed for so long, and might have had a slight chance at being able to subdue it.”

“However, it is already too late now. Although that little thing has only managed to recover a bit of its strength, it is sufficient to slaughter that old codger,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Really?” Chu Feng was skeptical toward what the Evil God Sword said. After all, that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan clearly held the upper hand at that moment. Furthermore, the



shouts from that Ginseng King of Evil had already changed in tone.

It was no longer shouting in anger. Instead, they resembled screams of pain.

“Bang~~~”

Suddenly, a loud explosion was heard. The next moment, Chu Feng’s eyes pulled back as his expression changed enormously.

Everything happened too fast. Chu Feng was simply unable to clearly see what had happened.

By the time he managed to react, he saw that the golden net that had captured the Ginseng King of Evil earlier had shattered.

At that moment, a tentacle from the Ginseng King of Evil shot straight into the sky and wrapped around that Chu Bore.

At that moment, Chu Bore had a painful expression on his face. He was struggling to break free. However... his struggles were useless. He simply did not possess the strength to contend against that tentacle.

Withessing that scene, Chu Feng grew even more astonished. The reason for that was because things were happening exactly as the Evil God Sword had said.

This meant that the Evil God Sword was indeed extremely powerful. At least... it had managed to see through all of this.

“Boy, if you do not want your friends to die, then hand your body over to this Evil God right away,” the Evil God Sword said.

As the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng was able to sense that the Evil God Sword’s power was starting to invade his body.

Chu Feng did not resist it. Instead, he allowed the power of the Evil God Sword to invade and occupy his body.

Soon, Chu Feng lost total control over his body. Although he had lost control over his body, Chu Feng felt as if his body was

currently being burned by a raging inferno. It was a bit painful.

However, Chu Feng was able to tolerate that sort of pain.

At the moment when Chu Feng's body was occupied by the Evil God Sword, the crimson gaseous flames started to devour his body.

At that moment, Chu Feng appeared as if he were covered by flames. Only the raging crimson flames could be seen. As for Chu Feng, he could not be seen through the flames.

“Run away!”

At the moment when that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was captured by the Ginseng King of Evil, the power that had sealed the crowd disappeared.

At that moment, the crowd immediately started fleeing like trapped birds that had just been released.

“Eeeaaahhh~~~~”

However, immediately after the crowd began to flee, screams started being heard.

Those people who tried to escape were all captured by the Ginseng King of Evil's tentacle-feelers. One by one, they revealed expressions of pain.

Soon, their appearances started to change. They began to wither like trees. Their vitality sucked dry.

They all died. In merely the blink of an eye, those people were all killed. They all died after having their life force sucked dry by the Ginseng King of Evil.

Seeing this, the others simply did not dare to attempt to escape again. They were all deeply afraid that they would suffer the same fate as those people.

“You have unsealed me because you wanted to eat my flesh, right?”

“Fool, someone would actually have delusions about eating my flesh in a place like this?”

“You should know that I am akin to a God in this place. A god that rules over everything.”

The Ginseng King of Evil let out a deep and low, yet loud and clear voice.

It was very excited, and acting extremely arrogant. It was as if it were looking down on everyone.

It did not place anyone there in its eyes, including that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In its eyes, perhaps that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was the same as Chu Feng and everyone else - nothing more than an ant.

“No, with this Evil God here, you... are merely trash.”

Right at that moment, another voice sounded. It originated from where Chu Feng stood.

# Chapter 2655 - Who Is The Monster?

---

The sudden voice shook the attention of everyone present.

Involuntarily, they turned their gazes toward the direction of the voice. However, the moment they did, astonishment filled their eyes.

“Who is that?”

“That couldn’t possibly be Chu Feng, right?”

As the crowd looked to the person that spoke, they all began to guess who it was.

The reason for that was because the current appearance of Chu Feng had changed.

His entire body was burning with crimson flames. At a glance, he appeared to be a humanoid crimson flame.

If it wasn’t for the fact that he was holding the Evil God Sword, no one would think that he was Chu Feng.

That said, even though Chu Feng was still holding the Evil God Sword in his hand, the crowd was still unable to be certain as to whether or not he was Chu Feng.

Apart from the frightening and uneasy aura, Chu Feng’s gaze was also very scary.

His eyes were crimson in color. They were even more crimson than the crimson flames that surrounded him. Furthermore, his eyes were shining. They were extremely scary-looking.

Those eyes were like the eyes of ferocious beasts at night. They were extremely bright. However, those eyes were not something that mere ferocious beasts’ eyes could compare to.

That said, regardless of how one looked at it, those did not resemble human eyes. Rather, they resembled the eyes of some sort of bloodthirsty creature.

If one had to describe those eyes, then... they would not be something from the world of humans, but rather the eyes of some sort of existence from the depths of hell.

The Ginseng King of Evil ran its eyes over Chu Feng and asked in a very displeased manner, “Who the hell are you? You dare to vainly attempt to contend against me?”

Even though the current Chu Feng brought great unease and fear upon the people present, the Ginseng King of Evil simply did not place him in its eyes at all.

To the Ginseng King of Evil, Chu Feng was nothing more than trash.

It felt that Chu Feng was simply unqualified to even be placed on the same level as itself.

In fact, it felt that there was not a single person, a single existence, in the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that could contend against it.

“Originally, I planned to give you a delightful death. Never did I expect you to actually have the nerve to speak this rudely toward this Evil God.”

“Since that’s the case, this Evil God shall have you experience the taste of misery that makes one wish they were dead,” Chu Feng said.

“You dare speak to me in such a manner?! You are the one courting death!”

“Woosh~~~”

Coldness flashed through the eyes of the Ginseng King of Evil. The next moment, a tentacle-feeler flew toward Chu Feng.

Everything happened too quickly. Logically, with the speed of that tentacle-feeler, Chu Feng should not have been able to see it. After all, it was simply too fast, so fast that he should not have

been able to react.

If it were the Chu Feng from back then, he might not even know how he died.

However, after Chu Feng's body was occupied by the Evil God Sword, Chu Feng was able to clearly see the movements of the Ginseng King of Evil. He was able to clearly see the Ginseng King of Evil sending out a tentacle-feeler to attack him.

“Snap~~~”

Chu Feng waved the Evil God Sword in his hand, and a crimson blade ray swept across the sky. He chopped off that tentacle-feeler easily.

To be exact, it was no longer Chu Feng. At that moment, the Evil God Sword was controlling Chu Feng's body. Even the words spoken earlier were spoken by the Evil God Sword.

Although... it was still Chu Feng's voice, it remained that it was the Evil God Sword who had spoken earlier.

The current Chu Feng was in a similar situation to Eggy. Although he was able to share the Evil God Sword's vision and hearing, he had completely lost control of his body.

“Mn?”

Seeing that its attack was easily neutralized, astonishment appeared in the Ginseng King of Evil's six enormous eyes.

Evidently, it did not expect that there would be someone capable of blocking its attack and... even slicing off its tentacle-feeler.

In fact, it was not only the Ginseng King of Evil that was astonished. Chu Bore, who was being held captive by the Ginseng King of Evil, also revealed an enormous change in expression.

Chu Bore knew very well how powerful the Evil God Sword was. However, the power of the Evil God Sword was being suppressed by the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

Since it was being suppressed, it should not have been able to unleash its powers.

At that moment, Chu Bore turned his gaze to the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

In the beginning, he thought that some sort of problem might have arisen from the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

However, upon doing so, he discovered that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was still in the sky. It was above Chu Feng and shining gloriously like the sun, covering Chu Feng with its golden radiance.

There was no problem with the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman at all. It was still suppressing the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng's hand with its special power.

However, the aura emitted by the Evil God Sword right now appeared to be much more powerful than before. It... had already broken free from the suppression of the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman.

“Could it be that the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman is simply unable to curb it?” At that moment, Chu Bore started to ponder in his heart.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil once again unleashed an attack at Chu Feng.

This time around, it was no longer a mere tentacle-feeler. Instead, the Ginseng King of Evil sent forth many enormous tentacles, as well as countless tentacle-feelers, to attack Chu Feng at the same time.

The tentacles and feelers were so numerous that they completely covered the entire sky. They had sealed off Chu Feng's escape. Chu Feng was simply unable to dodge them all.

Perhaps it might be because the body was his, but Chu Feng was not only able to share the Evil God Sword's sight and hearing, but he was also able to clearly feel the sensations the Evil God Sword was feeling.

Thus, he was able to clearly sense how enormously powerful the attack unleashed by the Ginseng King of Evil was.

It was a fatal attack. It was an attack that Chu Feng would never have been able to withstand before.

The attack this time around could be said to be over a hundred times more powerful than the attack of that single tentacle-feeler from earlier.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng once again waved the Evil God Sword in his hand. Another enormous crimson blade ray was sent forth.

Then, the countless tentacles and tentacle-feelers, regardless of how thick they were, were all sliced apart.

The tentacles that appeared to be incomparably tough and exceptionally powerful were akin to tofu before the Evil God Sword. They were unable to withstand a single blow from the Evil God Sword.

“Exactly who are you?”

At that moment, the gaze with which the Ginseng King of Evil looked to Chu Feng had changed.

It had already realized that the existence before it was not as simple as it had originally anticipated. It was very possible that this person before it was not someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“I am someone that you cannot afford to offend,” The Evil God Sword said.



“What arrogance!”

The Ginseng King of Evil was enraged by the aggressive and egotistical tone of the Evil God Sword.

As it spoke, its body started to emit light. At the same time, its aura started to increase.

The next moment, those tentacles and tentacle-feelers that were sliced off by the Evil God Sword started to regrow. Then, they started attacking Chu Feng again.

“Woosh~~~”

However, faced with the incoming attacks, Chu Feng merely waved his Evil God Sword. Once again, he effortlessly sliced off all of the tentacles and tentacle-feelers with a single slash.

“It’s useless. It will be the same regardless of how many times you attempt this,” The Evil God Sword said.

The Evil God Sword said those words very calmly. However, it was precisely because of how tranquil and indifferent Chu Feng’s tone was that it appeared to be exceptionally domineering.

Since the very beginning, the Evil God Sword had never placed the Ginseng King of Evil in its eyes.

Even though the Ginseng King of Evil possessed the power to bring utter destruction to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the Evil God Sword never considered it to be its opponent.

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil revealed a serious expression.

It stopped attacking the Evil God Sword rashly. Instead, it started to carefully size up the Evil God Sword.

After a short moment, the Ginseng King of Evil spoke.

It said, “It was not my intention to make an enemy out of you. Can you spare my life?”

“This...”

The crowd present were all astonished upon hearing those words. They never expected that the Ginseng King of Evil that possessed the capability to destroy the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and was able to easily defeat that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan would beg Chu Feng for its life.

This dramatic change was simply too shocking.

This did not resemble something that a monster capable of utter destruction would do.

However, upon carefully thinking about it, it was also understandable. Evidently... compared to this monster, Chu Feng who held the Evil God Sword in hand was more of a monster.

No matter how fierce a hungry wolf might be, its fierceness was something that only displayed before sheep and hares. If it were to encounter a tiger, it would also feel fear.

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil was like a hungry wolf. Before the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, it was a monster capable of utter destruction.

However, in the eyes of the Ginseng King of Evil, Chu Feng who held the Evil God Sword in his hand was a monster too.

# Chapter 2656 - The Might Of The Evil God

---

“What is the meaning of this?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“There doesn’t seem to have been any conflict between us before. As for what happened today, I did not have the intention to offend you. Thus, is it possible for you to let me go?” The Ginseng King of Evil asked.

This time around, its voice was somewhat timid. Compared to the arrogance from before, it was much more polite now.

It could be seen that it was truly afraid when facing the Evil God Sword. At the very least... it did not wish to continue fighting the Evil God Sword.

As the saying goes, evildoers fear other evildoers. Perhaps this was what was happening.

“What do you think?”

The Evil God Sword started to chuckle. It was a ridiculing laughter.

“Exactly what do you want?”

At that moment, the fear in the Ginseng King of Evil’s eyes grew stronger. It sensed that the situation was bad from the answer the Evil God Sword gave it.

“I never planned to let you go to begin with,” The Evil God Sword said.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, the Ginseng King of Evil moved. This time around, it did not unleash an attack at Chu Feng. Instead, it turned around and started fleeing.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at the same time the Ginseng King of Evil moved, the

crimson gaseous flames in the sky started to spread out, covering several miles.

Soon, the entire sky that the crowd could see was covered by the crimson gaseous flames. At the same time, crimson gaseous flames began to shoot down from the sky like enormous crimson pillars. Then, those pillars pierced deep into the earth.

Those crimson pillars were present in all directions. They had completely sealed off that region. Like a cage, those pillars trapped everyone inside it.

That Ginseng King of Evil no longer had a way out.

Seemingly unwilling to accept that fact, the Ginseng King of Evil extended its tentacles and began to attack the crimson pillars.

It wanted to use its tentacles to break the crimson pillars.

However, although those crimson pillars appeared to be very fragile, they were actually sharp like blades.

At the moment when the Ginseng King of Evil's tentacles collided with the crimson pillars, they were instantly cut off.

Furthermore, this time around... crimson gaseous flames appeared on the wounds where the tentacles were cut off.

Not only did the crimson gaseous flames make it so that the Ginseng King of Evil was unable to regrow its lost tentacles, but it also started to gradually eat away at the Ginseng King of Evil.

“You, exactly what are you?”

At that moment, the Ginseng King of Evil revealed an extremely alarmed expression. It was not as simple as being only scared.

It was only at that moment that it fully realized how frightening this crimson humanoid fellow before him was.

Even it was powerless to fight back before that crimson humanoid fellow.

“I’ve said it already. With this Evil God here, you are nothing more than trash,” The Evil God Sword said.

“If you continue to force me, you can forget about living too,” The Ginseng King of Evil said ruthlessly.

“You’re trying to say that you plan to take down this Evil God in mutual destruction?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“No, I’m going to have all of you here accompany me in death!”

The Ginseng King of Evil shouted furiously. The next moment, its body was no longer dazzling with a golden shine. Instead, it turned dark black.

Most importantly, a dark black light began to shine from its enormous body. The light was extremely bright. Furthermore... the Ginseng King of Evil’s body was also rapidly expanding in size.

It was an enormous monster to begin with. After it expanded in size, it became a colossus over ten thousand meters tall. Even the clouds were now floating beneath its head.

“This is truly bad!”

Perhaps the Ginseng King of Evil decided to deliberately let the crowd sense its aura. Thus, the people present were all able to sense the aura currently emitted by the Ginseng King of Evil.

Because of that, everyone started to panic. The reason for that was because the aura emitted by the Ginseng King of Evil right now was truly devastating.

An enormously powerful energy was surging about in its body. If that energy were to explode, not to mention the people present, over half of the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be destroyed.

“Is this all you’ve got?”

“You are truly a disappointment,” The Evil God Sword said.

“You dare look down on me?! Very well, I shall have you

experience what I've got! I shall see whether or not you will be able to withstand it!"

The words spoken by the Evil God Sword had completely enraged the Ginseng King of Evil. After saying those words, a characteristic change occurred to the power within the Ginseng King of Evil. It was planning to unleash this power. It was planning to take down the Evil God Sword as well as everyone else present with that power. It was planning mutual destruction.

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword using Chu Feng's body opened his mouth. Then, an enormous suction power was emitted from Chu Feng's mouth. In an instant, it completely enveloped the Ginseng King of Evil.

"Ahhh~~~"

"No, what have you done to me?!!!"

The next moment, the Ginseng King of Evil let out a roar of enormous pain.

The reason for that was because the suction power emitted from Chu Feng's mouth was extremely strange. It was absorbing the Ginseng King of Evil's body.

That's right, the Ginseng King of Evil's enormous physical body was currently being broken down and ripped apart by that enormous suction power. The ripped apart pieces turned into dark black gaseous flames before steadily flowing into Chu Feng's mouth.

"Stop! You damned bastard! Stop immediately!"

The Ginseng King of Evil shouted furiously. However, its shouts were of no use. The Evil God Sword completely ignored it.

"Bastard! You damned bastard! You dare treat me like this?! I'll kill you!!!"

The shouts from the Ginseng King of Evil grew more and more

furious. It once again started to urge the power within itself. It was planning to unleash that power to end in mutual destruction with the Evil God Sword.

However, upon attempting to do so, it soon discovered that its body was actually no longer under its control. It was no longer capable of unleashing that power.

All it could do was look on helplessly as its body was refined and devoured by its opponent. It... was unable to do anything.

It could only endure the pain, the pain of its body decomposing and being refined.

“You... you... just kill me. I cannot tolerate this anymore. You... please... just kill me.”

The Ginseng King of Evil’s voice grew weak. It seemed to be unable to endure the suffering and pain from its body being decomposed.

Seeing that it would undoubtedly be killed today, it actually started to ask the Evil God Sword to give it a quick death.

It did not want to continue to endure this sort of pain anymore.

“This Evil God has said it already. Since you were rude to me earlier, I will have you experience a taste of misery that will make you wish you were dead,” The Evil God Sword said.

Chu Feng’s mouth was open the entire time. That attractive power did not stop in the slightest. However, Chu Feng was still capable of speaking.

“You damned bastard! You shall suffer a miserable death!”

Upon hearing what the Evil God Sword said, the Ginseng King of Evil started to curse loudly at it.

A monster that was capable of destroying the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was actually forced to such a state by someone. This scene was actually a bit comedic.

“You dare continue to insult me? It would appear that the pain this Evil God is bestowing upon you is still insufficient.”

“Ahhhh~”

After the Evil God Sword said those words, the Ginseng King of Evil started to emit even more painful screams.

Merely by hearing those screams, one would feel one’s blood run cold. The crowd were unable to imagine what sort of pain the Ginseng King of Evil was enduring at that moment.

However, they were certain that that sort of pain was most definitely not something that they would be able to endure.

At that moment, someone from the allied army asked, “That... is that really still Chu Feng?”

“Why do I feel that something’s amiss?”

“I’m not certain either,” Ying Mingchao said.

After saying those words, he took a deliberate glance at Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang.

However, even Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang, these two people with a very good relationship with Chu Feng, shook their heads.

The reason for that was because even they were unable to determine whether or not it was still Chu Feng.

Even though that voice was indeed Chu Feng’s voice, they felt that... that the person in front of them was not Chu Feng.

In actuality, that was indeed not Chu Feng. At this moment, the person controlling the situation was the Evil God Sword.

As for Chu Feng, he could only watch as things unfolded before him. He was unable to do anything.

The reason for that was because his body was currently under the control of the Evil God Sword. His every movement and his every word were all controlled by the Evil God Sword.



That said, Chu Feng still could not help but gasp in admiration at how powerful the Evil God Sword was.

He truly did not dare to believe that such a frightening Evil God Sword had actually... allowed itself to be used by him before.

Logically, with how powerful the Evil God Sword was, it would be extremely easy for it to devour his body.

However, the Evil God Sword didn't do that.

# Chapter 2657 - Hidden Secret

---

“Seems like the Evil God Sword most definitely has some sort of secret that no one knew about,” Chu Feng thought in his heart.

Chu Feng felt that it was not that the Evil God Sword did not want to occupy his body. Rather, it was unable to do so.

As for the most likely reason why, it would be as he had guessed before, that the Evil God Sword was sealed in the weapon. Although the Evil God Sword possessed enormous power, it was unable to unleash it. In order to unleash its powers, it would need a medium. As for Chu Feng... he was that medium.

Time slowly passed. The screams from the Ginseng King of Evil grew softer and softer. In the end, its voice completely disappeared.

As for its enormous body that towered above the clouds, it too grew smaller and smaller, and also disappeared in the end.

The Ginseng King of Evil was completely devoured and refined by Chu Feng.

If they didn't witness it with their very eyes, the crowd would not believe that a human's body would be able to devour a colossus that reached over ten thousand meters tall and towered above the clouds.

At this moment, although the crowd was no longer screaming in panic like before, and everybody was standing in the sky in a strangely quiet manner, they were looking at Chu Feng with the same sort of fear-filled eyes that they looked at the Ginseng King of Evil with earlier.

In fact, the fear in their eyes was even a bit stronger.

“Boy, after devouring that thing, not only are you able to prolong your lifespan, but you are also able to be forever young now. For the rest of your life, your physical appearance will remain this

young. You will not become an old man,” Finally, the Evil God Sword’s voice sounded again.

Merely, this voice from the Evil God Sword was spoken by the Evil God Sword, and not through Chu Feng’s mouth. It was a voice that only Chu Feng could hear.

“Oh, I nearly forgot. I shouldn’t have said you, but rather me. After all, this body is already no longer yours. Instead, it belongs to this Evil God now.”

The Evil God Sword’s voice sounded again. After hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s heart shivered.

The reason for that was because what the Evil God Sword said had revealed his scheme. Sure enough, it was not planning to return Chu Feng’s body.

However, as matters stood, there was nothing Chu Feng could do. He had already lost the power to contend for his body. At the very least, he could not contend for his body right now. He could only think of a way to do so in the future.

“I hope that you will honor your promise and not harm my friends,” Chu Feng said.

“Rest assured, this Evil God will definitely do as I’ve said. Since I’ve already promised you, I will definitely not harm them,” The Evil God Sword said.

“I have another request. Might you be able to go and ask that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man where he obtained that scroll?” Chu Feng asked.

He wanted to know exactly where that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan found out that the Ginseng King of Evil was sealed here.

Logically, he should not know about this matter.

After all, not even the people from the Buddha’s Heavenly

Temple knew exactly what it was that was sealed by the old cat, much less where it was sealed.

That should have been a secret. Thus, how did that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan obtain that information? In fact, he even knew the method to undo the seal, as well as what was sealed.

Chu Feng felt that there was most definitely a hidden secret to all this.

“This Evil God is able to satisfy that request of yours,” The Evil God Sword said.

“Woosh~~~”

After it finished saying those words, Chu Feng’s body moved, and he landed on the ground.

At that moment, a person was lying on the crater-filled surface. That person was none other than that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Merely, that Chu Heavenly Clan’s old man was now incomparably weak. He did not even possess the strength to fly.

That was why he crashed directly from the sky after the Ginseng King of Evil was refined by the Evil God Sword.

This existence that was high and above like a god looking down on all living things was only able to lie on the ground like a dying dog.

“How could this be?”

Chu Bore slowly raised his head. He took a glance at Chu Feng and then took a glance at the Demon Armament Suppression Talisman that had been following Chu Feng the entire time.

The Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was emitting that golden radiance the entire time. That golden radiance had been enveloping the Evil God Sword the entire time. However, it seemed that it was ineffective.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword extended Chu Feng’s left hand and grabbed at the air before it.

The next moment, that Demon Armament Suppression Talisman that was still emitting bright golden light landed on its hand.

He clenched his hand, and a ‘snap’ was heard. The Demon Armament Suppression Talisman was crushed to pieces.

At the same time that happened, the golden-bright and dazzling light started to dissipate.

“I understand now. So that thing was simply unable to suppress you to begin with,” Chu Bore laughed wryly.

“Where did you obtain that scroll?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“If I am to tell you the truth, will you spare my life?” Chu Bore asked.

The Evil God Sword did not answer Chu Bore. Instead, it said to Chu Feng, “Boy, you decide something like this.”

Chu Feng pondered for a moment. Then, he said, “Tell him to speak the truth.”

Compared to taking Chu Bore’s life, Chu Feng wanted to know where Chu Bore obtained that scroll more.

After receiving Chu Feng’s decision, the Evil God Sword said to Chu Bore, “Speak.”

“This old man has already reached the end of his allocated lifespan. I was only able to continue living till this day by using methods to extend my life. However, ordinary methods to extend one’s life have long since been unable to extend my life. Thus... I could only exhaust all means to find other methods of extending one’s life.”

“Finally, I discovered a person. I paid an enormous price, and bought that scroll from that person.”

“Merely, I do not know that person,” Chu Bore said.

“He’s not lying,” The Evil God Sword said to Chu Feng.

The Evil God Sword’s power of observation greatly surpassed Chu Feng’s. When it said that Chu Bore wasn’t lying, Chu Feng felt that Chu Bore most likely wasn’t lying.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had also paid attention to the reaction of that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan as he answered the question. With Chu Feng’s own perception, he too felt that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan had not lied.

After all, when faced with death, one’s heart would become extremely weak. If one were to attempt to lie at that time... it would be very easily discovered.

“Ask him where he found that person, as well as the characteristics that person possessed,” Chu Feng said.

“Where did you find that person? What are that person’s characteristics?” The Evil God Sword asked as Chu Feng requested.

“In the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s Ghost Sect Hall. As for characteristics...” After saying those words, the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan extended his hand with great difficulty. Then, he took out a picture scroll from his Cosmos Sack.

Upon opening the picture scroll, the image of a person could be seen.

That person was roughly three meters tall. However, they were very skinny, and wore a hood and a black gown.

However, that hood was not on that person’s head. Thus, one could see that person’s face.

That person had a very frightening appearance. To be exact, that person did not resemble a human. Rather, their appearance resembled that of a monstrous beast.

That person had a very thin face. Yet, it was also very fierce. The

left half of the face was normal. However, there was an enormous scar on the right half of the face. That scar was somewhat scary-looking.

That scar resembled a giant centipede on his face. Passing over their right eye. It ooked truly disgusting.

That person's right eye was green. Thus, it was most likely not his eye. Rather, it resembled a monstrous beast's eye.

# Chapter 2658 - New Lease Of Life

---

“I was afraid he would scam me. Thus, after I met him, I drew a portrait of him so that I could search for him should he have scammed me.”

“Never did I expect for all of this to be true. Never did I expect for there to actually be a Ginseng King of Evil sealed in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Even in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, Ginseng Kings of Evil are only legends,” Chu Bore said.

“Ginseng Kings of Evil are also legends in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?”

Chu Feng was astonished. From merely those words, Chu Bore revealed how precious the Ginseng King of Evil was.

“I have told you everything that I know. I truly did not lie to you. Please spare me,” Chu Bore said.

“You can scram,” The Evil God Sword said.

Hearing those words, Chu Bore unleashed all of his body’s strength and stood up with great difficulty. Staggeringly, he ran away.

His running speed was very slow. It was roughly the same speed as that of ordinary people.

From this, it could be seen that his injuries were truly serious, and that the Ginseng King of Evil was truly powerful.

Without a doubt, the Ginseng King of Evil truly possessed the power to completely destroy the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

At the very least, it could turn the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm into a lifeless place of desolation.

Unfortunately, it had encountered an even stronger opponent.



## The Evil God Sword!!!

The Evil God Sword turned around and swept its gaze across the crowd.

When the Evil God Sword's gaze moved toward them, practically everyone, with the exception of Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and a few others, did not dare to face the Evil God Sword's eyes. They were all very afraid of that crimson figure.

While that person was not enormous in size, it was even more frightening than the Ginseng King of Evil.

"You all need to thank Chu Feng for being able to live today," the Evil God Sword said.

"Thank Chu Feng?"

"He... he isn't Chu Feng?"

The crowd immediately burst into an uproar upon hearing those words from the Evil God Sword.

With merely one sentence, the Evil God Sword had revealed to the crowd that it wasn't Chu Feng.

After all, if it were Chu Feng, Chu Feng would definitely not tell the crowd to express thanks to him.

"Who are you? Whe-Where is my b-brother?" Wang Qiang asked anxiously.

As he spoke, he rushed toward the Evil God Sword.

"Haha..."

The Evil God Sword chuckled. It watched as Wang Qiang approached.

"Woosh~~~"

However, by the time Wang Qiang managed to reach the Evil God Sword, the Evil God Sword had disappeared.

Following that, the crimson clouds that filled the sky also started

to dissipate.

Both the dark black gaseous flames and the crimson gaseous flames disappeared from the sky.

The blue sky and white clouds once again appeared over the crowd.

At that moment, the crowd present realized that this most commonly seen sight was actually very beautiful.

After all, to them, this was equivalent to obtaining a new lease on life.

The things that they'd experienced earlier were simply akin to entering hell itself.

In fact, the crowd was unable to be certain even now as to whether or not their calamity was truly over or not.

After a short period of time, someone said, "We... survived?"

The tone of those words was filled with skepticism.

Even they themselves were uncertain as to whether they would be able to survive.

Suddenly, someone shouted, "Run away!"

Then, a figure started to fly into the distance with an extremely fast speed. In the blink of an eye, it disappeared.

"Run!!!"

Immediately afterward, many others also began to flee in disarray.

This time around, there was no longer any power restricting them. As such, the crowd all managed to successfully escape.

Seeing that they could now escape, some people started to laugh loudly, whereas others started to cry bitterly.

All of those were reactions from obtaining a new lease on life after a great calamity.

One thing that was somewhat comedic was the fact that the old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan, that old man who once stood high and above all the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's cultivators, was currently running away with a speed less than one ten thousandth of those cultivators.

That said, even though that old man from the Chu Heavenly Clan was already so very weak, not a single person dared to attack him.

After all, he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Who would dare to kill him?

That said, there were two individuals who were not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm witnessing all of this.

Although the two of them were hidden, they were brought over when Chu Bore completely enveloped everyone in the surrounding region with his power and proceeded to chase after the Ginseng King of Evil.

Thus, the two of them witnessed everything that happened.

"Chu Huai, let's go help senior. Let's bring him back to the clan," Chu Yue said.

"If you want to die, then go do that," Chu Huai said.

"Are you saying that senior will still try to kill us in his current state?" Chu Yue asked.

"You have already seen his true appearance. What do you think he will do?" Chu Huai said.

Chu Yue grew quiet. After a while, she asked, "Do you really think that Chu Feng has been devoured by his Demon Armament?"

"That's most likely the case," Chu Huai said.

"Then, will he be able to survive?" Chu Yue asked.

"Most definitely not," Chu Huai said in a very determined manner.

“Why is that? Didn’t you say that a genius like him most definitely possesses some sort of treasure to protect his life?” Chu Yue asked.

“Can’t you tell how powerful that Demon Armament was? No matter how powerful of a treasure he might have, it would not be able to contend against that Demon Armament.”

“To use that sort of Demon Armament is simply equivalent to playing with fire. Since he has lost control of the Demon Armament, it means that only death awaits Chu Feng.”

After saying those words, Chu Huai sighed. He was feeling pity for Chu Feng’s death.

“Then what should we do now?” Chu Yue asked.

“We must immediately return to the clan. We must report all of this before Chu Bore returns to the clan,” Chu Huai said.

“Okay,” Chu Yue nodded.

Chu Huai and Chu Yue left. The people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were still immersed in a state of being overjoyed.

After all... they had managed to survive a great catastrophe.

That said, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others were not among those cheerful people.

They all knew that Chu Feng might’ve met with an accident, and that the person holding the Evil God Sword might not be Chu Feng.

“Damn it! D-Damn it!”

Wang Qiang kneeled on the ground and started to roar hysterically. He was pounding the ground with his fists, creating many large craters and countless cracks on the surface of the ground.

He was feeling extremely unreconciled.

It also seemed that he was regretting the fact that he was unable to catch that Evil God Sword.

“Husband, don’t act like this. What you’re doing right now is meaningless. This is not what Chu Feng would want to see,” Zhao Hong landed beside Wang Qiang and started to urge him to stop.

“T-Then what do y-you want me to do? W-Where did my b-brother go? W-Who e-exactly is that g-guy? Where d-did he t-take my b-brother?” Wang Qiang was extremely emotional and irritable.

“The way I see it, little friend Chu Feng should’ve been devoured by his Demon Armament. That body is still his. Merely, it is now controlled by the Demon Armament. Or perhaps... he is now being controlled by the Demon Armament.”

“That said, it might not necessarily be true that little friend Chu Feng has suffered some sort of mishap. After all... it is not the first time that little friend Chu Feng has used that Demon Armament. He should be able to handle it,” Zi Xunyi said.

“That’s right. What Xunyi says is very reasonable. Don’t worry too much. Perhaps Brother Chu Feng did not encounter any mishap,” Ying Mingchao said.

Even though both Zi Xunyi and Ying Mingchao were saying things like that, they were feeling very unwell in their hearts.

They had all witnessed the power of that Demon Armament. If it wanted to devour Chu Feng, who could possibly stop it?

.....

The Evil God Sword was flying in the sky. Its speed was extremely fast. Simply no one from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was able to catch sight of it.

“Where are you going?” Chu Feng asked.

“I am waiting for someone,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Waiting for someone? Who are you waiting for?” Chu Feng asked.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk. Boy, you do not possess the qualifications to know these things.”

“After all, this Evil God has already done all that should be done. Your friends are also safe and sound now. Thus, it is now your turn to help this Evil God do some things,” the Evil God Sword said.

# Chapter 2659 - Protecting From The Shadows

---

“What do you want me to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“It will do for you to completely hand over your body to this Evil God.”

“Ahhh~~~~”

After the Evil God Sword said those words, Chu Feng felt an unbearable pain.

That pain was from the raging flames. However, it was much more unbearable than the ordinary pain of one's body being burned.

Even Chu Feng found it to be intolerable. Perhaps it might be because it was simply too painful, or perhaps it might be because Chu Feng was going to die, Chu Feng started to gradually lose consciousness.

“Chu Feng, what's wrong with you? Say something. C'mon, say something.”

“Say something! Damn it! What did they guy did to you?!”

Chu Feng was able to hear Her Lady Queen's voice resonating beside his ears nonstop. Her voice was filled with worry.

Gradually, that voice grew weaker and weaker.

Finally, Chu Feng lost consciousness.

“I have already taken control of him. Are you still not going to reveal yourself?”

The Evil God Sword roared loudly as it flew rapidly in the sky.

It was most definitely waiting for someone. However, in a place like this, who could possibly match the Evil God Sword's speed?

There was. There really was someone capable of matching the Evil God Sword's speed.

It was a deer and a yellow-gowned old man.

They were the creators of the Unknown Burial Ground.

The old man was not riding on the deer. Rather, they were traveling alongside each other like old friends.

The old man and the deer were walking very slowly in midair. However... they were able to keep up with the Evil God Sword's speed.

However, it seemed that not even the Evil God Sword was able to detect them.

"That brat by the name of Chu Feng is truly amazing. He actually possessed such a Demon Armament."

"If he were to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, enter the Starfields, he would likely really become a top genius."

"If that were to happen, I would truly have lost the gamble," the yellow-gowned old man had a slightly worried expression as he said those words.

It turned out that the two of them had been hidden the entire time, and witnessed everything that had happened before.

"That Chu Feng has already been devoured by the Demon Armament. He will likely not be able to survive this."

Right at that moment, the deer spoke. Its voice was actually that of a female's voice.

"No. Although that Demon Armament has devoured Chu Feng's body and is controlling him, it seems to be waiting for someone."

"The way I see it, that Demon Armament was merely threatening. It was using Chu Feng's body to threaten that person."



“That’s understandable too. With how talented Chu Feng is, he most definitely possesses a robust background and a powerful backer.”

“Thus, there is most definitely someone protecting him from the shadows. That Demon Armament is waiting for that person to appear,” the old man said.

Hearing those words, that deer looked left and right. Then, it sniffed several times with its nose.

“I cannot sense the aura of anyone else. Could it be... it’s someone with strength surpassing us?” That deer said.

“That’s impossible. How could there be someone with strength surpassing us in a place like this?”

“Even if that boy has a backing, the power standing behind him is most definitely not a match for us,” the old man shook his head. Then, he said, “Most likely that person hasn’t arrived yet. However, that person will definitely come.”

“Even if Chu Feng is able to be saved and successfully enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, he might not necessarily be able to successfully enter the Starfields.”

“Even if he is to enter a Starfield, he might not necessarily be able to move about unhindered through that Starfield. Not to mention the geniuses in the Starfields, just the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm itself already contains many outstanding geniuses.”

“As for things like geniuses dying young and prematurely, that is simply too common.”

“We might not necessarily lose in this gamble,” that deer said.

“Indeed, it’s not necessarily a loss. However, I cannot afford to lose. I must make sure that we will definitely win,” the old man said.

“You plan to kill him?” That deer said with a slightly surprised

tone.

“That is the only option left. After all, everything that is happening right now is going according to his prophecy.”

“If things are to continue like this, we will really end up losing,” the old man said.

“However, according to the rules of the gamble, neither side can interfere with him. As such, neither side, naturally cannot injure him either, much less kill him,” that deer said.

“Although we cannot kill him, it has never been said that we cannot find someone to kill him,” the old man said.

“But, that Chu Feng’s Demon Armament is not easy to deal with. If we are to find someone else to do the task, they might not necessarily be able to subdue him.”

“Furthermore, the person protecting Chu Feng from the shadows still hasn’t shown himself. We still do not know exactly how powerful that person is,” the deer said in a slightly worried manner.

“Rest assured, if they were to act, they would definitely be able to handle this matter,” After the old man said those words, he took out a paper talisman. It was a communication talisman.

“Buzz~~~”

The old man pinched the paper talisman apart. Then, a ray of blue light began to rapidly fly toward them from afar. Soon, it arrived before the old man and the deer.

It was a man. An extremely tall man. His height surpassed ten meters. He was simply a small giant.

Not only was he very tall, but he was also very robust. Muscles covered his body from head to toe. Even though he was wearing clothes, the outlines of his muscles could still be seen.

However, that man was not a human. The reason for that was

because his skin was blue, and his eyes were crimson red. At a glance, that man's appearance was truly frightening.

Furthermore, his blue skin was filled with scars. Those scars seemed to be carved into his body deliberately, as they seemed to follow some sort of pattern. Those scars seemed to take the shape of some sort of special symbol.

In short, those scars were somewhat strange.

"Murdergod Blue Demon," seeing that person, the deer revealed a surprised expression.

"Exalted Sacred Deer, long time no see," that ferocious-looking blue giant clasped his fist respectfully at the deer. He was actually very courteous.

That said, his voice was very vigorous and powerful. His voice sounded like the roars of ferocious beasts. It was extremely intimidating.

"Seems like you've planned this to begin with," that so-called Exalted Sacred Deer said to the old man.

"I've said it already, I can't afford to lose."

"Who would've thought that there was really someone capable of breaking through that spirit formation of mine? Furthermore... he really decided to renounce the treasure that he should've obtained to save his friend."

"This is exactly the same as he prophesied. This means that he really will enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and then the Starfields to defeat various geniuses."

"Should that day arrive, I will have truly lost," the old man said.

Hearing those words, the Exalted Sacred Deer grew silent for a moment. Then, it said, "Since you've already decided, go ahead and do it."

Right at that moment, that Murdergod Blue Demon said, "That

brat's gone."

"What?" Both the yellow-gowned old man and the Exalted Sacred Deer were startled upon hearing those words.

When they looked to the direction of the Evil God Sword, they discovered... that Chu Feng had really disappeared.

"Chase after him," at that moment, the old man wanted to give chase.

"Boom~~~"

However, right at that moment, an enormous lightning strike suddenly appeared before them.

That lightning strike was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, it struck down. A loud clap of thunder boomed. In the blink of an eye, the clear and boundless sky was filled with surging lightning and clouds.

Clouds covered the entire sky. Lightning flashed, and thunder filled the entire region. It was an extremely strange sight to behold.

"We've been discovered?" the Exalted Sacred Deer said.

This sort of weather was most definitely not caused by nature. It was most definitely created by a certain martial cultivator.

"This is a bit troublesome," the old man started to frown. He was not afraid that he would not be a match for his opponent. Rather, he was afraid of being discovered.

At that moment, the old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon all swept their serious gazes around their surroundings.

They were using their various methods to observe their surroundings. They were trying to find the person that was hidden.

They were unable to be certain as to whether the abnormal sign

was caused by the Demon Armament or the person secretly protecting Chu Feng from the shadows.

However, they were unable to find anyone, nor were they able to sense anyone.

The clouds grew thicker and thicker, the thunder more and more ear-piercing.

“Splash, splash~~~”

Soon, a downpour started to sprinkle down from the clouds. The rain was very heavy. It was coming down from the sky like a massive waterfall.

No matter how heavy a normal downpour was, it would not be able to affect these three people’s vision.

However, the rain that was currently pouring down was actually able to obstruct their vision. At that moment, they were only able to see for less than a hundred meters.

“This is bad,” the Exalted Sacred Deer said. Deep unease appeared in its eyes.

Actually, both the Murdergod Blue Demon and the yellow-gowned old man had also noticed that their current situation was very bad.

# Chapter 2660 - Slight Punishment

---

“Since you’ve come, why not show yourself?” The yellow-gowned old man said.

Although he spoke with a mild tone, his voice was very loud and clear.

“There are some people who you all are not qualified to touch,” a voice sounded directly from in front of the three individuals.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, that Murdergod Blue Demon unleashed an attack. A punch was shot forth explosively. Boundless martial power started to wreak havoc. The punch formed a golden pillar of light that linked heaven and earth as it shot forward.

The earth was overturned by the impact. Countless cracks appeared in an instant. Even the magma hidden deep beneath the earth started to surge violently before erupting.

The space in the sky above was shattered by the violent trembling and all of a sudden, the entire region turned pitch-black.

However, the shattered space soon returned to normal.

That said, the earth below had been changed beyond recognition.

Deep cracks covered many miles of the surface.

Deep-red magma was flowing and erupting from the cracks, engulfing everything in its path.

The surface of the ground was akin to that of hell at that moment.

That said, those black clouds were still surging in the sky. The lightning was still flickering between the clouds. In fact, even the rain was still violently pouring and blocking the three individuals’ vision.

“This?”

Seeing this scene, the Murdergod Blue Demon that had thrown that ferocious punch earlier had a change in expression. Then, he looked to that yellow-gowned old man.

At that moment, both that yellow-gowned old man and that Exalted Sacred Deer revealed incomparable shock on their faces.

Those three individuals who were supposed to be high and above were starting to panic.

That was understandable too. They all knew very well how powerful the Murdergod Blue Demon was. That punch he had unleashed earlier was no small matter either.

In fact, that punch had caused enormous destruction to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Yet, it was unable to affect the lightning, the clouds or the pouring rain in the sky.

This meant that the three of them would not be a match for their unknown opponent.

“Our apologies. We didn’t know that Chu Feng would have a person like you supporting him.”

“If we had known, we wouldn’t have dared to have wicked thoughts. Might you be willing to let us off by taking into consideration that we didn’t know?”

The yellow-gowned old man actually directly clasped his fist and begged for forgiveness.

Although this appeared to be very humiliating, this was a wise and sensible decision.

Since they already knew that they would not be a match for their opponent, it would be the best to admit defeat early.

Moreover, the yellow-gowned old man did not lower himself when admitting defeat.

[1. While he was begging for forgiveness, he merely clasped his fist respectfully, but did not kneel down and kowtow.]

“If I wanted to kill, you three would’ve already been dead,” that voice sounded.

“Thank you, senior, for your kindness,” the yellow-gowned old man immediately expressed his thanks.

“Senior?”

“Haha, don’t address me like that, your age is much older than mine,” that voice said.

Hearing those words, the yellow-gowned old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon looked to one another. The astonishment in their eyes grew even stronger.

Younger than them, yet stronger than them. This could only mean one thing... the person that they had provoked was no small matter. This person was most definitely an existence renowned through the Starfields.

This time around, they had truly provoked someone that they could not afford to provoke.

Although they already knew that a genius like Chu Feng most definitely possessed a backer, they had never expected his backer to be so powerful.

At that moment, regret filled their hearts.

“Our apologies. We are truly sorry. If we had known that Chu Feng had someone like you backing him, we would never have dared to think about killing him,” the old man started to apologize again.

He was telling the truth. With how powerful their opponent was, he most likely had already heard the conversation between them earlier.

At that time, it would be much better for him to tell the truth and



apologize for his former actions than to attempt to lie.

However, after he apologized, there was no reaction from the unknown individual.

After a long while passed, there was still no reaction.

The old man and the two others did not immediately leave. Instead, they asked cautiously, "Are we allowed to leave now?"

The reason for that was because the lightning, the clouds and the pouring rain were still present. They knew very well that that individual was most definitely still here.

"Leave? Haha..."

That individual's voice sounded again. There was a trace of a sneer in the voice now.

Hearing that voice, the old man and the two others all grew nervous. They all knew... that they would not be able to escape unscathed this time around.

However, they still did not try to flee. Even though there was fear in their eyes, their expressions remained unchanged.

From this, it could be seen that the three of them were people accustomed to grand spectacles.

"Then, what do you want from us?" The old man asked cautiously. His tone was also very respectful.

"A slight punishment," that person said.

Even though they had anticipated this, the three of them were still frightened upon hearing those words.

"This is all my fault," the yellow-gowned old man smiled to the Exalted Sacred Deer. He had a guilt-ridden expression in his eyes.

"Don't blame yourself. I also approved of your decision. Since we've provoked a disaster, let us take on its trials and tribulations, take on this punishment, together. It's alright," the Exalted Sacred

Deer said. It appeared to be very calm.

“My apologies,” the yellow-gowned old man looked to the Murdergod Blue Demon.

“It’s fine. As long as my life is not taken, anything else will be fine,” the Murdergod Blue Demon said with a smile. He looked very heroic.

“We were in the wrong. Please punish us accordingly,” even though they were going to be punished, the yellow-gowned old man still bowed respectfully as he said those words.

Following that, the Murdergod Blue Demon and the Exalted Sacred Deer also lowered their heads respectfully.

“Don’t think that I will be lenient toward you all because of your respectful actions. I have... encountered a lot of people like you,” that individual said.

Hearing those words, the yellow-gowned old man smiled. He seemed to want to say something more.

“Zzzzzzz~::~”

Right at that moment, the lightning in the sky rushed out from the clouds and struck the yellow-gowned old man, the Exalted Sacred Deer and the Murdergod Blue Demon.

“Rumble~::~”

A loud explosion was heard. In an instant, the three individual’s bodies turned pitch-black. A burnt smell began to waft from their bodies.

“Eeeahhh~::~”

The next moment, those three individuals who were always calm and collected actually let out miserable screams at the same time.

It wasn’t that the three of them lacked tolerance for pain. Rather, being struck by tens of thousands of lightning strikes was simply too difficult to endure.

The three of them were in enormous pain. They were unable to speak due to the pain, and could only scream miserably.

However, the tens of thousands of lightning bolts were still striking nonstop in an unforgiving manner.

Far away, within the vast heavy rain, a pair of eyes was watching this scene attentively without the slightest sympathy.

.....

Nightfall. Specks of starlight filled the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's sky. It was a flowing river of stars.

On a plain that was not affected by the vast destruction wrought throughout the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. The plain was covered densely with grasses. The grass swayed back and forth as a gentle breeze blew past them.

Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged on the ground.

To be exact, this was the Evil God Sword.

The Evil God Sword's crimson gaseous flames that covered Chu Feng's body were emitting bright light. In the dark, they appeared extra dazzling.

It was as if those gaseous flames were truly crimson flames.

The Evil God Sword's crimson eyes were exceptionally sharp and ferocious. Seeing those eyes, even ferocious beasts would immediately withdraw. In such a dark night, those eyes looked exceptionally scary.

“Rustle~~~”

Suddenly, footsteps sounded from behind.

The Evil God Sword immediately stood up and looked back. A sinister yet joyous expression emerged in its crimson eyes.

# Chapter 2661 - The Evil God Sword's Purpose

---

“You’re finally here,” the Evil God Sword said.

At that moment, a person was standing in front of the Evil God Sword.

That person was a man. His height was not especially tall, and his build was not especially muscular. His face could not be said to be extremely handsome either. It could be said that he looked very mediocre.

However, the sensation that he gave off was very extraordinary. In fact, it could even be said that the sensation one would feel upon seeing him was that he was not a human.

That’s right, the sensation one would feel upon seeing him was that he was not human. Regardless of how ordinary his appearance was, regardless of how simple and unadorned his clothes might be, the sensation that he emitted from the core of his being was not something that ordinary people could compare to.

As for that person, he was Chu Feng’s father, Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan looked at the Evil God Sword with a smile on his face. Then, he sat down cross-legged. He was completely calm and composed.

“You seem to not be worried about your son’s life and death at all,” the Evil God Sword said.

“That’s because I know he’s still alive,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Not bad. Your perception is very sharp. Even though your son has been sealed by me so thoroughly, you actually still managed to detect his vital signs,” the Evil God Sword said.

The Evil God Sword did not feel any unease from Chu Xuanyuan’s sharp perception. On the contrary, it was actually joyous at that fact.

“You’re quite decent yourself,” Chu Xuanyuan smiled again. Then, he said, “What say you about a chat?”

“What do you want to chat about?” The Evil God Sword asked.

“How about we chat about where you’re from and why you appeared in the Holy Land of Martialism?” Chu Xuanyuan suggested.

“Even if you are to know about the origin of this Evil God, it will serve no purpose. In addition, this Evil God does not wish you to know.”

“Furthermore, you do not possess the qualifications to chat with me,” the Evil God Sword said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s move onto the main subject then.”

“Tell me, exactly what is your purpose in seizing my son’s body?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“Your son’s cultivation is too weak. He is unable to withstand this Evil God’s power. If I am to completely devour his body, his soul and body will soon be destroyed. That is not something I want.”

“However... you are different,” the Evil God Sword looked to Chu Xuanyuan with lust in its eyes.

“So you actually want to occupy my body. It seems that you’ve managed to see through my cultivation already?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“This Evil God saw through your cultivation the first time I met you on the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm’s Heavenly Road,” the Evil God Sword said.

“It seems that you’ve decided on me since that time?” Chu Xuanyuan had a slight smile on his face. In a seemingly joking manner, he asked, “Then what about now? Are you able to determine my cultivation now?”

“Your cultivation has increased again. This speed of increase is extremely fast. I am truly in admiration.”

“This Evil God has never witnessed someone with such astonishingly fast growth. You... will definitely become a greatly capable individual in the future.”

“If you are able to leave this Starfield, it will not take long for your name to resonate through the entire Outer World,” the Evil God Sword said.

“I thank you for your kind words,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Unfortunately for you, you will not have that chance,” the Evil God Sword said.

“How are you so certain?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“I am absolutely certain. Unless... you are willing to have your son die by my hands,” the Evil God Sword said.

“It seems that you are determined to get me,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“That’s right,” the Evil God Sword said.

“You’re quite confident,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“This Evil God’s confidence originates from my unsurpassed strength.”

“In this place, everything will be dictated by this Evil God.”

“I am able to see through all of you people with merely one glance.”

“Those three tailing this Evil God are the same. You... are also the same.”

“All of you are inferior to this Evil God. Thus... this Evil God has you in his grasp completely.”

“How about this? Hand over your body to this Evil God, and this Evil God will help you take care of those three people that wanted

to take care of Chu Feng. You can consider it that I have helped you and your son take revenge,” the Evil God Sword said.

It turned out that the Evil God Sword had known about the Exalted Sacred Deer and that yellow-gowned old man tailing him. It had even managed to detect the Murdergod Blue Demon.

Evidently, it has also heard the conversation between the yellow-gowned old man and the Exalted Sacred Deer.

“If you have the leisure to think about all that, you should look after yourself first,” Chu Xuanyuan slowly stood up.

“You wish to fight?” Killing intent emerged in the Evil God Sword’s eyes. It said, “This Evil God urges you to not be reckless. If you are to attack me, you will most definitely suffer a consequence that you do not want.”

“Heh...” Chu Xuanyuan chuckled. Then, coldness emerged in his eyes.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan rapidly opened his palm. He extended his opened palm and pointed it at the Evil God Sword.

The moment that happened, the Evil God Sword’s body trembled. Then, a surprised expression appeared in its eyes.

“You were concealing your cultivation?”

The Evil God Sword was shocked. It realized that the power Chu Xuanyuan revealed was stronger than he had detected.

At that moment, it was completely restricted by Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan did not answer the Evil God Sword’s question. Instead, he chuckled lightly and shouted, “Scatter!!!”

“Eeaahhh~~~”

The next moment, the Evil God Sword started roaring in miserable pain.

It was enduring extreme pain. The crimson gaseous flames that surrounded Chu Feng were waning. They were moving away from Chu Feng's body and into the Evil God Sword itself.

The power that the Evil God Sword had devoured Chu Feng with was being forcibly dispersed.

As he had already occupied Chu Feng's body, being forcibly dispersed from Chu Feng's body was a pain akin to being skinned and having one's tendons pulled out from one's body alive. As such, it was naturally unbearable.

As for all that, it was caused by Chu Xuanyuan.

"Impossible! This is impossible! How could you possess the power to suppress this Evil God?!" The Evil God Sword was endlessly astonished.

The power emitted by Chu Xuanyuan at that moment was much more powerful than he had anticipated. It... was simply no match for Chu Xuanyuan.

Even when faced with Chu Xuanyuan forcibly removing it from Chu Feng's body, the Evil God Sword was unable to do anything.

"You are very powerful. You have indeed managed to see through a lot of things. However, you were unable to see through me."

"Thus, you are destined to be defeated here, destined to fall by my hands," Chu Xuanyuan said.

After Chu Xuanyuan said those words, his open palm trembled.

"Nooo!!!!"

A loud shout resonated through the night sky. The shout transmitted for many miles and echoed in the sky.

"Clank~~~"

A sharp sound was heard. It was the sound of the Evil God Sword falling to the ground.



Chu Xuanyuan was still standing there. Chu Feng was also still standing there.

Merely, the current Chu Feng was no longer the Evil God Sword. Rather, it was the actual Chu Feng.

The crimson gaseous flames that covered him were gone. Chu Feng had regained his former appearance.

However, his complexion was deathly pale, and his eyes were tightly closed. There was not the slightest trace of breath or aura from him. His appearance was akin to that of a dead man.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s body swayed to the side, and he toppled toward the ground.

However, before he could reach the ground, a powerful arm caught him. It was Chu Xuanyuan.

Chu Xuanyuan laid Chu Feng on the ground gently. Then, he extended his finger and gently pointed at Chu Feng’s forehead.

“Buzz~~~”

A light blue circle of light began to spread from Chu Feng’s forehead in a ripple-like manner. Which then spread throughout Chu Feng’s entire body.

The next moment, Chu Feng’s deathly pale complexion started to turn rosy. His stopped heart started beating again. Even his aura returned.

Even though Chu Feng was still unconscious, he was completely cured of his injuries.

“It seems that Chu Feng’s fine now.”

Right at that moment, a figure descended from the sky and landed behind Chu Xuanyuan.

That person was not a human. Rather, he was an ape. He was the

Old Ape that was with Chu Xuanyuan in the Chu Heavenly Clan's remnant inside the Heavenly Road.

“Have you finished?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“It's done,” the Old Ape said.

“What's the result?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“The three of them have all been driven insane. Unless they are discovered... they will likely not be able to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for some period of time,” the Old Ape said.

“I'm asking why the Exalted Sacred Deer and Exalted Sacred Tiger have come here? Exactly who did they gamble with?”

“Furthermore, what sort of gambling stake caused them to want to attack my son?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

# Chapter 2662 - Restricting The Sword

---

“The Exalted Sacred Tiger gambled with the Exalted Heavenly Fate.”

“The gamble originated from a conversation between the Exalted Heavenly Fate and Exalted Sacred Tiger, where Exalted Sacred Tiger belittled the people from the various lower realms.”

[1. Lower realms here includes Ordinary Realms. The reason for that is because both Lower Realms and Ordinary Realms are lower realms in the eyes of people from the Upper Realms.]

“He stated that he did not understand why those people from the lower realms refuse to properly stay in the lower realms, and instead think themselves to be extremely talented upon obtaining a mere True Immortal-level cultivation and insist on coming to make a name for themselves in the Upper Realms.”

“He declared that those people from the lower realms will all end up with the same fate. That is, they will abandon themselves to despair after being trampled upon and riddled with scars and bruises by the geniuses of the Upper Realms. He declared that they were truly foolish.”

“However, Exalted Heavenly Fate didn’t think that to be the case. He pointed out many examples of people that moved about unhindered in the Upper Realms who had come from the lower realms.”

“However, Exalted Sacred Tiger was unwilling to accept this. He stated that those examples were very rare cases. Even though such examples existed, those people were only capable of moving about unhindered through the Upper Realms. None of them were able to move about unhindered through Starfields. He declared that those who came from the lower realms were still unable to compare to the people from the Upper Realms.”

“The two of them were very serious in their respective arguments. Later on, they both grew angry at one another, and quarreled with each other. The two of them insisted on making things clear.”

“Finally, Exalted Heavenly Fate declared that a genius would appear in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm within three thousand years. He declared that that genius would not only sweep through the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, but he would even sweep through the entire Starfield. He declared that if Exalted Sacred Tiger did not believe him, then they could make a bet.”

“Naturally, Exalted Sacred Tiger did not believe him. This was how their gamble came to be.”

“Merely, as the two of them were both very furious, they ended up making an enormous bet. That is, the one to lose the bet would have to cripple their own cultivation.”

“Exalted Sacred Tiger arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and set up that grand formation over two thousand years ago. During that time, the person prophesied by Exalted Heavenly Fate never appeared. As such, he thought that he would most certainly win the gamble, and was immensely pleased. In fact, he would from time to time go and find Exalted Heavenly Fate to insult him.”

“Never had he ever anticipated that Chu Feng would appear at a time like this.”

“Exalted Sacred Tiger saw that Chu Feng was simply exactly as Exalted Heavenly Fate prophesied, and grew scared that he would lose the bet. Thus... he decided to kill Chu Feng. That is why he went to find Murdergod Blue Demon,” the Old Ape narrated.

“How accurate is it?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

“This is something that I obtained through my interrogation

while punishing them. He shouldn't be lying to me. Merely, I don't understand. The two of them were originally close friends, why would they decide to make one another cripple their own cultivation because of a mere argument over a topic?" Old Ape said.

"That's because Exalted Heavenly Fate is from the lower realms. The fact that Exalted Sacred Tiger looks down on those from the lower realms is equivalent to him insulting Exalted Heavenly Fate," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"So that's the case. But the two of them were originally good friends. Even if there is a reason for this, there shouldn't be a need to go this far, no?" Old Ape was still unable to understand.

"Exalted Heavenly Fate obtained an enormous chance encounter in the past. As such, his prophecies are no small matter. Perhaps this is fate. If it wasn't for Exalted Heavenly Fate's gamble with Exalted Sacred Tiger, Exalted Sacred Tiger would not have come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to set up that grand formation, and Feng'er would have received one less chance encounter."

"Furthermore, I think that even if Exalted Sacred Tiger is to lose the gamble, Exalted Heavenly Fate might still not necessarily make him cripple his own cultivation."

"This gamble was only to make Exalted Sacred Tiger come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and stay here for three thousand years to guard his formation. The reason for that is because Exalted Heavenly Fate knew very well that Exalted Sacred Tiger held deep resentment towards him."

"Thus, Exalted Sacred Tiger did not come to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to stand guard over his spirit formation for over two thousand years with the goal of three thousand so that he could win the gamble. Mainly, it is because he wanted to make Exalted Heavenly Fate cripple his cultivation."

“Between the two of them, it is Exalted Sacred Tiger that is heartless, and not Exalted Heavenly Fate,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“What makes the Exalted Sacred Tiger detest Exalted Heavenly Fate like this?” Old Ape asked.

Chu Xuanyuan smiled. It was a very profound smile. However, he did not answer Old Ape’s question.

“It seems that there’s a story between them unknown to the public,” Old Ape said. He revealed his curiosity.

However, Chu Xuanyuan still didn’t say anything.

The Old Ape did not try to further inquire about it. He knew Chu Xuanyuan very well, and knew that Chu Xuanyuan was someone that would never say what he didn’t want to, no matter how much he inquired about it.

It was not only limited to him. No one would be able to make Chu Xuanyuan speak.

“It was you who deliberately drove them insane, right?” Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan asked Old Ape.

“No. They were driven insane because they were unable to endure my power, and received a mental breakdown from the punishment.”

“Speaking of it, it is all thanks to your Chu Heavenly Clan’s remnant that I was able to obtain my current level of cultivation.”

As the Old Ape said those words, he involuntarily clenched his fist. An expression of joy and pride emerged on his monkey face.

His current reaction was understandable. Before entering the Chu Heavenly Clan’s remnants, those three people were all capable of easily obliterating him.

However, he was now able to easily obliterate the three of them.

This shift in power happened in merely thirty years. With such a great change in strength, how could he not rejoice?

At that moment, Chu Xuanyuan extended his hand and picked up the Evil God Sword that had fallen to the ground. He began to inspect it carefully.

Old Ape also walked over and began to inspect the Evil God Sword alongside Chu Xuanyuan. He was also extremely curious about the sword.

“This sword is extremely strange. Do you know where it comes from?” Old Ape asked.

“The way I see it, that thing is most definitely not the embodiment of the sword’s soul. Rather, some sort of demonic being is sealed in this sword,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“How can one be sure?” The Old Ape asked.

“This sword itself is most definitely not an ordinary item. Its sealing power is extremely strong. I have never experienced anything this strong before,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Really?” Old Ape inspected the sword carefully. However, he was confused. It would seem that even with Old Ape’s powers, he was unable to sense the Evil God Sword’s sealing power that Chu Xuanyuan mentioned.

“Place your hand on top of my hand and sense again,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

The Old Ape did as Chu Xuanyuan said. Then, he revealed an enormous change in expression. Incomparable astonishment filled his eyes. He said, “Such an overwhelmingly powerful sealing power. In that case, wouldn’t it mean that the thing sealed inside this sword is...”

The Old Ape was completely shaken. The sealing power of the sword was truly strong. It was precisely because of how powerful that sealing power was that he realized how frightening the monster sealed inside the sword was.

“If it wasn’t for the fact that the sword has restricted that thing,

the current me would not be a match for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Exactly what sort of purpose does that thing have?” Old Ape asked.

The power of the Evil God Sword had already surpassed Old Ape’s imagination. As such, he started to feel uneasy.

“It actually wanted to occupy my body.”

“As for it seizing Feng’er’s body, it did that only to use Feng’er’s body to threaten me,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Occupy your body? Could it be that it wanted to seize your power?” The Old Ape asked.

“No. Its own power surpasses my own. It is only because it is sealed by the sword that it was unable to unleash its true powers.”

“As for its intention to occupy my body, it merely wanted to use my body as a medium to release its true powers.”

“With that, it could find ways to break free from the seal of the sword and regain its freedom,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“We cannot leave such a dangerous thing with Chu Feng,” the Old Ape said.

“Keeping it will save Feng’er’s life during crucial moments,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But...” The Old Ape felt this was unwise.

“I understand your worry. It’s alright, I can restrict its power,” as Chu Xuanyuan spoke, he clasped the Evil God Sword between his palms.

Then, faint golden light began to shine from his palms. It took the form of a net, and began to spread. The golden net covered the body of the Evil God Sword and was then assimilated into it.

Following that, more net-shaped golden light appeared, entered and assimilated into the Evil God Sword.



“This is?” Seeing this scene, Old Ape revealed a complicated expression.

However, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression remained unchanged. He was wholly concentrated on his task. As he continued to operate, golden light continued to appear, take the form of a net, envelope the body of the Evil God Sword and then assimilate into it.

This continued on and on for an entire hour before Chu Xuanyuan finally placed the sword on the ground.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the Evil God Sword that was placed onto the ground started to tremble violently.

Its trembling sound was extremely ear-piercing. It was as if a great demon was about to burst out of the sword.

# Chapter 2663 - Bloodline Protection Formation

---

“Woosh~~~”

Seeing this, Old Ape’s expression changed greatly.

He immediately picked Chu Feng up from the ground and moved behind Chu Xuanyuan. Then, he revealed an appearance as if preparing for a battle. With nervousness and unease in his eyes, he looked to the Evil God Sword.

However, compared to Old Ape who was trembling with fear, Chu Xuanyuan’s expression remained unchanged. Indifferently, he said, “Don’t panic. With my formation limiting it, even if Feng’er is to use it again, it will not be able to seize Feng’er’s body.”

“It is currently even weaker than before. As such, it will naturally not be able to do anything to us.”

After hearing those words, the Old Ape came to a sudden realization. He finally managed to ease his nervousness. Then, he placed Chu Feng, who he was holding, back onto the ground.

He knew very well that even though the sealing method Chu Xuanyuan had used earlier appeared to be ordinary, its power was no small matter.

It was a sealing method that originated from the Ancient Era. Its power surpassed one’s imagination.

Back in the day, Chu Xuanyuan had used that exact sealing formation to seal an extremely savage Ancient Era’s Organism.

As for the Evil God Sword, while it was very powerful, it remained that it had already been sealed within the sword. Thus, Chu Xuanyuan adding his sealing formation on top of the sword was most definitely going to be effective.

“Actually, you still care deeply about Chu Feng, no? After all, a

sealing formation like that will consume your lifespan,” Old Ape said to Chu Xuanyuan with a beaming smile on his face.

It was precisely because he knew that sealing formation very well that he not only knew that it was very difficult to handle, but that its user would also have to pay an enormous price should it be cast successfully. That sealing formation was a formation cast with one’s own lifespan as the price.

Even though it only took Chu Xuanyuan an hour to finish setting up the sealing formation, this one hour would consume roughly a thousand years of his lifespan.

“This matter concerns Feng’er’s safety. I do not wish for there to be any mistakes.”

“As long as no mistake is made, this sealing formation will make it so that the Evil God Sword will not be able to devour Feng’er’s body for at least a hundred years,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“What about after a hundred years have passed? Are you going to seal the Evil God Sword again?” Old Ape asked.

“After a hundred years have passed, Feng’er will be able to handle it himself,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“You’re this confident?” Old Ape asked with a smile.

“When it’s Feng’er, I am,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

Old Ape smiled again. It was a smile of agreement. It could be seen that Old Ape also thought very highly of Chu Feng’s future accomplishments.

Then, Old Ape looked to the Evil God Sword. He discovered that the Evil God Sword was still trembling. Merely, its trembling was no longer as intense as before.

That’s right, the trembling of the Evil God Sword was growing weaker in intensity.

“It will not be able to break free, yet it still struggles like this,

isn't it just wasting its power?" Old Ape asked.

He knew very well that in addition to the Evil God Sword that was sealing the thing within, Chu Xuanyuan's sealing formation had also taken effect.

Thus, if there was no medium helping the Evil God Sword release its power, it would be useless for it to struggle. Thus... it would not be able to struggle for much longer.

"It wanted to tell me something," Chu Xuanyuan said.

"What did it want to say?" Old Ape asked.

"Meaningless words," Chu Xuanyuan said. Then, he looked to the Old Ape. With a smile on his face, he said, "Seems like you want to hear it out?"

"It wouldn't be able to do anything to us anyways. It wouldn't hurt to listen, no?" Old Ape said with a smile.

"Then let's hear it out," Chu Xuanyuan lightly swiped his palm across the space before him while facing the Evil God Sword. Then, a faint light started to flicker from the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, the Evil God Sword let out an incomparably furious roar.

"While you can trap this Evil God for now, you will not be able to trap this Evil God forever!"

"Since you know how powerful this Evil God is, you should know what sort of consequence you will suffer when this Evil God breaks free!"

The Evil God Sword's voice was deafening. Its voice resonated through heaven and earth. Standing on the ground, one could feel that the ground was trembling violently.

Furthermore, the voice was emitting a very terrifying killing intent. It was a voice that would make anyone feel fear from the bottom of their heart should they hear it.

Not to mention the others feeling fear upon hearing the voice, even Old Ape revealed a change in expression upon hearing the voice.

The reason for that change in expression was because he suddenly felt fear in his heart upon hearing that voice.

Old Ape was panicked. Even though he knew very well that the Evil God Sword did not pose a threat at that moment, he was still very afraid.

He did not understand why this was the case. This sort of fear was not something that he could conceal, nor was it something that he could suppress. He was truly at a complete loss as to what to do.

However, Chu Xuanyuan's expression remained unchanged. He still did not possess the slightest bit of fear when faced with the Evil God Sword.

"I admit that I am currently inferior to you. However, never did I say that I would be inferior to you in the future."

"Should you be able to break free from the sword one day in the future, you can very well come and find me."

"At that time, I will make you completely disappear from this world," Chu Xuanyuan said as he looked to the Evil God Sword.

"What arrogance!!!!" The Evil God Sword roared again. Compared to earlier, its roar was even more furious, even more frightening.

However, faced with that roar, Chu Xuanyuan revealed a faint smile. "Indeed, I am arrogant. However, I possess the ability to be arrogant."

After he finished saying those words, Chu Xuanyuan gently flicked his hand at the Evil God Sword from afar.

"Ding!" The Evil God Sword's voice was gone. Even the

trembling had stopped.

After the Evil God Sword grew quiet, Chu Xuanyuan walked to Chu Feng and took out an item from his Cosmos Sack.

It was a jade pendant. However, it was clearly not an ordinary jade pendant. Chu Xuanyuan opened the jade pendant. There was actually a separate space within the jade pendant.

There was a body of light within the jade pendant. This body of light was roughly the size of a fingernail and was emitting a faint glimmer.

It was a very weak glimmer. It was only because it was currently nighttime that the glimmer appeared to be slightly more intense and eye-catching.

If one didn't pay careful attention to the body of light inside the jade pendant, one would not notice it at all.

However, if one were to look at it carefully, one would be astonished.

Nine different colored lightnings were present in the body of light. As they rushed around, they seemed to form an entire world.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the body of light composed of lightning drifted out from the jade pendant and landed on Chu Xuanyuan's fingertip.

“Woosh~~~”

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan pointed to Chu Feng. Then, the body of light composed of lightnings turned into a ray of light that entered Chu Feng's body in a flash.

“Boom~~~”

The next moment, a loud explosion sounded from Chu Feng's body. With Chu Feng as the center, a myriad of lightnings took a spheroid shape and began to spread out from Chu Feng's body.

The moment that power emerged, the vast amount of grass that covered this plain instantly turned to ash. Not a single blade of grass remained.

Countless deep cracks had appeared in the ground. Even space itself was shattered.

Wherever the light spread to, everything was destroyed.

An enormous and deep crater had appeared in the ground.

If that lightning continued to spread, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would be destroyed.

This was truly a power capable of utter destruction.

“Halt!”

Before the lightning could expand, Chu Xuanyuan stretched forth his palm and shouted at the lightning.

The lightning that was expanding instantly came to a halt. Gradually, it began to move back. Soon, it had completely returned to Chu Feng’s body.

If it wasn’t for the fact that that enormous hemispherical crater was still present; the entire surrounding grassland had been burned to ashes and sinking noises were still being emitted by the cracks that filled the ground, no one would believe that such an enormous amount of lightning had appeared earlier and nearly destroyed the entire world.

“So the reason why you took great pains and effort to set up this Bloodline Protection Formation is because you wanted to protect Chu Feng,” Old Ape said with a smile on his face.

“We will be leaving this Starfield. He can only rely on himself now. I am indeed slightly worried about him,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“Even your Bloodline Protection Formation will only be able to save him once. However, the dangers that he will experience will most definitely not be limited to a single instance,” Old Ape said.

Hearing those words, Chu Xuanyuan looked to Chu Feng. Emotions appeared for the first time in his serene eyes.

However, the emotions in Chu Xuanyuan's eyes soon disappeared, and were replaced with determination.

“It is his path. He must walk that path alone,” Chu Xuanyuan said.



# Chapter 2664 - The Promise Between Father And Son

---

“If you’re worried, you could directly bring him with you. There’s no need to temper him through experience by himself, no?”

“If you are to help him, he will grow at least ten times faster than he is now,” Old Ape said.

It could be seen that Old Ape was somewhat reluctant to part with Chu Feng. He did not wish for Chu Feng to face the challenges in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm by himself. After all, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was over a hundred times more dangerous than the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“If I am to help him, he will indeed be able to become an expert capable of traveling about unhindered through the Starfields in a short period of time.”

“However, that will become his limit. He will not be able to become a character that can move about unhindered through the entire Outer World,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, didn’t you help Zi Ling?” The Old Ape said.

“Feng’er is different from Zi Ling. Zi Ling’s talent is limited. I must help her increase her talent. Only by doing so can she have a chance to chase after Feng’er.”

“As for Feng’er, he is very talented. Even without my help, he will most definitely be able to steadily mature.”

“Furthermore, it is only through being left to one’s own devices without the assistance of others that he will be able to create his own martial cultivation path.”

“Only through finding a martial cultivation path that belongs to him, and which is not just a duplicate of another will he be able to

walk further,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“In the end, it’s all because it’s you. If it were another father, they would most definitely not be willing to do something like this,” Old Ape grumbled.

“One day, Feng’er will understand that I am doing this for his own good,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“But, back then, you promised Chu Feng’s mother that you would properly protect Chu Feng.”

“If Chu Feng’s mother is to find out that you consider your protection of Chu Feng to be something like this, she might end up killing you.”

“No, if his mother were to find out that her son is actually enduring all sorts of hardships in a distant Starfield, she would likely massacre her way here and forcibly retrieve Chu Feng,” Old Ape said with a beaming smile.

“According to her temperament, that is indeed possible. However... she wouldn’t be able to do that. After all, she is confined by...” As he said those words, Chu Xuanyuan started to tightly clench his fists. The expression of his gaze had changed.

The surrounding temperature started to plummet. Layers of frost appeared on the ground whilst Snowflakes emerged in the sky.

At that moment, Chu Feng, who was lying on the ground started to shiver involuntarily. Even Old Ape felt a chill through his bones.

“Xuanyuan,” Old Ape immediately patted Chu Xuanyuan’s shoulder with his hand.

It was only at that moment that Chu Xuanyuan noticed the changes that had occurred to their surroundings. His expression started to ease, and he began to emit a gentle aura. The snowflakes that covered the sky started to disappear. The frost that covered the ground also started to disappear.

“Everyone possesses an Achilles’ heel. As for yours, it is her. Forget about it, I will not mention her again before you,” Old Ape said in a helpless manner.

He knew Chu Xuanyuan very well. Thus, he knew that he was a very calm and cool-headed individual.

However, whenever Chu Feng’s mother was mentioned, Chu Xuanyuan would lose control of his emotions.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanyuan said, “One day, I will definitely rescue her.”

“Xuanyuan, don’t be reckless. Her clan is not one to be trifled with,” Old Ape advised him against it.

The place that confined Chu Feng’s mother was actually her home. She was confined by her clan.

Merely, the clan that Chu Feng’s mother belonged to was truly no small matter.

Her clan was not the ruler of an Upper Realm, nor was it the ruler of a Starfield.

Instead, they were a power renowned throughout the entire Outer World. Her clan was truly a huge monster. It was a monster that stood at the apex of the Outer World, and was revered by various Starfields and other powers.

Although the Chu Heavenly Clan was the ruler of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, they were simply incomparable against Chu Feng’s mother’s clan.

Even the current Chu Xuanyuan would not be a match for them.

The disparity between them could even be said to be enormous.

“If I wanted to act recklessly, I would’ve done it back then. I wouldn’t have waited till today.”

“Actually, I know very well. With her talent and status, even if she is confined by her clan, they will not truly harm her.”

“As long as she is in good health, I will have sufficient time to increase my cultivation. Regardless of how powerful her clan might be, I will definitely be able to confront them one day...”

“That said, the top priority right now is to find my father,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“You investigated your father before. However, the result you obtained was not optimistic at all. If you plan to continue with your investigation, you will have to confront unknown dangers. Are you certain that you want to do this?” Old Ape asked.

“I must do this,” Chu Xuanyuan replied in a very determined manner.

“Do you really think your father is still alive?” Old Ape asked.

“I cannot be certain,” as Chu Xuanyuan said those words, a trace of sadness appeared in his eyes. Then, he said, “However, if he is alive, I must see him. If he is dead, I must see his corpse.”

“Then, even though we’re not going to bring Chu Feng with us, are we not going to bring Zi Ling with us?”

“Chu Feng’s talent is obvious to the eyes. Through the many years of trials he has experienced, he has indeed matured greatly. He possesses the ability to experience and endure trials and tribulations by himself.”

“However, Zi Ling is inferior to Chu Feng. Yet, you want her to go train by herself too. What if some sort of accident is to happen to her? How are you to explain that to Chu Feng?” The Old Ape asked.

“Zi Ling is, after all, my disciple. If she is unable to endure this bit of difficulty, I will have taught her in vain.”

“Moreover, it is Zi Ling herself who chose to go and train there. Even if an accident is to happen, I cannot be blamed for it,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I have never met a master as ruthless and cold-hearted as you,” Old Ape shook his head helplessly.

“Wuuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng let out a light groan. His tightly closed eyes trembled slightly.

“Chu Feng is about to awaken. It is time for us to go,” Old Ape said.

However, not only did Chu Xuanyuan not leave, but he instead walked over to Chu Feng’s side.

Then, he waved his sleeve and the surrounding scenery instantly changed.

The surrounding scenery changed to that of the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm’s Heavenly Road. It was the Chu Heavenly Clan’s forbidden area.

Then, Chu Xuanyuan gently stroked Chu Feng’s hair. Chu Feng’s tightly closed eyes trembled slightly. Then, they slowly opened.

Chu Feng had awakened.

“Father, is it really you?”

Seeing Chu Xuanyuan, Chu Feng was overjoyed. He did not dare believe what he saw. He began to rub his eyes repeatedly.

“Feng’er, do you still remember the promise between you and father?” Chu Xuanyuan asked.

[1. Chu Xuanyuan is referring to himself in the third person. In chinese, it’s an intimate sort of speaking mannerism in this context. It’s kinda like how I address myself as daddy to my sons.]

“Promise?” Chu Feng was confused.

“Although this place is unable to confine father, father still wishes for the Chu Heavenly Clan to personally release me.”

“Only you are able to help father. You must obtain the

acknowledgement of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Only by obtaining their acknowledgement will they release father.”

“At that time, father will tell you everything about your mother,” Chu Xuanyuan said.

“I will. I will accomplish it,” Chu Feng nodded his head repeatedly.

Chu Feng was not only anxious to know about his mother, but he also did not wish for his father to continue to be imprisoned in a forbidden area.

“Father will wait for that day,” with a smile on his face, Chu Xuanyuan stroked Chu Feng’s head again.

At that moment, Chu Feng, whose eyes were originally shining brightly, immediately felt sleepy all of a sudden. Soon, his eyes closed, and he fell asleep.

After Chu Feng fell asleep, Chu Xuanyuan stood up. With a wave of his sleeve, the surrounding illusion was dissipated. The surrounding scenery returned to how it was before.

“If you’re reluctant to part with him, you can actually bring him with you,” Old Ape urged again.

He was able to tell from Chu Xuanyuan’s behavior that he was worried about Chu Feng.

“Let’s go.” However, Chu Xuanyuan was determined. After he finished saying those words, he walked into the sky. Although he walked with a slow pace, he disappeared into the sky in the blink of an eye.

Old Ape sighed and shook his head. Then, he took a profound glance at Chu Feng before following after Chu Xuanyuan.

After Chu Xuanyuan and Old Ape left, that region became particularly desolate.

Chu Feng continued to lay on the ground for a very long time

before he opened his eyes again.

# Chapter 2665 - The Awakened Chu Feng

---

After Chu Feng opened his eyes, he rubbed his still-hurting head. Then, he ran his eyes over his surroundings.

The surrounding scenery was a bit frightening. Cracks filled the ground, and a decently large and somewhat strange-looking semi-circular crater was beneath him.

Evidently, this place had undergone some sort of destruction that was caused by martial cultivators. Otherwise, it would not be possible for the destruction to be so enormous.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng, with his current level of cultivation, possessed an extremely sharp vision. He was able to see a very far distance.

However, the scenery that he could see was all like that. This meant that the range of destruction was extremely vast.

Most strangely, there was a sort of indescribable chilliness there.

That chilliness was not bone-piercingly cold. However, it was clearly not something that should be present there.

“I’m still alive?”

Chu Feng was astonished. Although that place was very strange, when he saw the white clouds and blue sky above his head and heard the sharp birdcries, Chu Feng knew that he should still be in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, it was currently daytime. He was able to clearly see everything.

“Eggy, are you alright?” Chu Feng asked.

Although he was safe, Chu Feng was very worried for Her Lady Queen’s safety.

After all, the Evil God Sword had caused Chu Feng to feel an intolerable pain earlier. In fact, Chu Feng was simply unable to



resist the pain.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether or not Her Lady Queen was affected or not.

“Chu Feng, I’m fine. What about you?” Eggy’s concerned voice was heard.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng realized that Her Lady Queen was indeed fine. Merely, her voice contained deep worry.

“I’m also fine. Speaking of it, it’s quite strange. My body feels very relaxed. There is no trace of pain at all. It doesn’t appear that I have received a backlash at all,” Chu Feng said.

He had received the backlash from the Evil God Sword multiple times. Thus, he would still receive residual pain even after enduring the backlash. Time was required to gradually and completely eradicate the pain.

Never had he ever experienced such an uncomplicated and relaxed sensation, as if he were completely fine.

“Regardless, it’s good that you’re fine,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng stood up and carefully inspected his surroundings. After careful inspection, a nervous expression emerged in his eyes. He said, “What did that Evil God Sword do using my body?”

Chu Feng started to ponder as he looked at his surroundings. The scenery surrounding him was simply too desolate. Furthermore, Chu Feng felt that the range of destruction was most likely much greater than what he could see.

This sort of destruction caused Chu Feng to feel fearful and uneasy.

Chu Feng felt that this was most likely caused by the Evil God Sword.

All of this indicated that the Evil God Sword had caused

unrestrained destruction after occupying Chu Feng's body.

Likely, the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm would've met with a calamity. After all, the Evil God Sword possessed that sort of power.

"Chu Feng, I think that the Evil God Sword will not violate the promise it made with you. Since even you are safe, it would mean that your friends should be safe too," Her Lady Queen said.

She knew very well what Chu Feng was worried about. Naturally, what Chu Feng was most worried about were his friends.

"I hope that's the case," Chu Feng still had doubt in his heart.

Firstly, he could not be certain if his friends were still alive. After all... he did not believe in the Evil God Sword much.

Back then, he had decided to hand his body to the Evil God Sword because he had no other option.

That said, what Chu Feng was more confused about was why his body had returned to his possession.

The Evil God Sword had tried all means to seize his body, and had at last managed to occupy his body. The Evil God Sword should not have returned his body to him so quickly.

The situation at hand was somewhat unnatural.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng cast his gaze to the Evil God Sword nearby.

Chu Feng felt a bit scared upon seeing that sword again. He actually didn't dare to pick it up.

In fact, Chu Feng was uncertain as to whether or not the Evil God Sword would continue to occupy his body should he pick it up again.

It was only when the Evil God Sword fully released its power that Chu Feng realized exactly how frightening the Demon Armament that he carried along with him the entire time was.

However, after some time passed, Chu Feng still extended his hand and picked up the Evil God Sword.

“There’s nothing peculiar. It’s just like how it was before. This is simply too strange.”

Chu Feng grew even more puzzled. The Evil God Sword was exactly the same as how it was before the whole event. It was still within the range of Chu Feng’s control.

However, logically, it shouldn’t be so easy to control.

Suddenly, a trace of determination flashed through Chu Feng’s eyes. The hand that Chu Feng grabbed the Evil God Sword with started to grow even tighter.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Do not act recklessly,” Her Lady Queen shouted anxiously.

She sensed that Chu Feng might be planning to do something very dangerous.

“I will know what exactly happened after asking it,” Chu Feng said.

“Buzz~~~”

After saying those words, Chu Feng actually started to instill his power into the Evil God Sword.

The next moment, crimson gaseous flames began to emerge from the Evil God Sword. Thick layers of crimson gaseous flames started to fill the sky.

The crimson gaseous flames were like crimson clouds as they extend continuously for several miles. It covered Chu Feng’s entire field of view.

It was eerie and frightening. It was like the arrival of doomsday. Seeing it, one would feel very uneasy.

Chu Feng had truly activated the power of the Evil God Sword.

“Tell me, exactly what did you do?”

“Why would you go through great effort to seize my body only to return my body to me?”

“Did you harm my friends? Why did you create such destruction?”

Chu Feng asked successive questions.

However, the Evil God Sword did not answer him. It was deathly silent.

“Say something!” Chu Feng shouted.

However, there was still no answer from the Evil God Sword.

Just like that, Chu Feng continued to repeat his questions tens of times. Yet, the Evil God Sword still didn’t answer.

In that sort of situation, Chu Feng ended up retrieving his power. Following that, the Evil God Sword’s power also started to gradually vanish.

Chu Feng started to frown. He felt even more uneasy.

He knew that as long as he unleashed the power of the Evil God Sword, that so-called Evil God would appear, and he would be able to communicate with it.

Yet, there was no response from the Evil God Sword. This meant that so-called Evil God did not wish to answer him.

If possible, Chu Feng really wanted to continue questioning the Evil God Sword until he received an answer.

However, he could not do so. After all, he would receive a backlash from using the Evil God Sword and releasing its power. As for the intensity of the backlash, it would depend on how long he used the Evil God Sword. Thus... Chu Feng did not dare to activate the Evil God Sword and unleash its power for an extended period of time.

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly felt a pain in his chest. Immediately afterward, that pain extended to his entire body. It was the backlash from using the Evil God Sword.

It was just like how it was before. It was the same sort of familiar pain, the same unbearable pain.

This made Chu Feng even more certain that the Evil God Sword had not changed. The reason for that was because that painful sensation was exactly the same as before.

Even though Chu Feng had only used the Evil God Sword for a very short period of time, the backlash he received was still extremely difficult to bare. Chu Feng had to sit down and adjust his condition.

When Chu Feng finished adjusting his condition, he discovered that the sun had already set, and the sky was nearly fully dark.

“Chu Feng, what do you plan to do now?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Since it refused to give me an answer, I will have to find the answers to my questions myself,” As Chu Feng spoke, he soared into the sky. He began to proceed toward the direction of Hero City.

He felt that if Wang Qiang and the others were fine, they should be at Hero City right now.

However, the further Chu Feng flew, the more uneasy he became. As he was very anxious, his flying speed was extremely fast.

That said, even though he was flying this fast, the scenery below him... remained practically identical.

It was completely barren, without a single blade of grass. Not only was there no trace of life on the ground, but the ground was also covered with cracks.

That sort of scenery differed to some extent compared to the destruction caused by the Ginseng King of Evil.

The Ginseng King of Evil had refined all the lives around it using its own powers.

However, the scenery below him appeared to be destruction caused by some sort of power.

Although the destruction had not reached an extremely frightening level, such a vast range went to show how strong that power was.

Chu Feng firmly believed that no one in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm possessed that sort of power.

Thus, he grew even more certain that it should be caused by the Evil God Sword.

As such, Chu Feng grew even more worried about the safety of his friends.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen said, "Chu Feng, there is one thing that I think I should tell you."

"What is it?" Chu Feng asked.

"Not long after you lost consciousness, I also lost consciousness."

"However, strangely, I had a dream. You should know that I never have dreams," Her Lady Queen said.

"What sort of dream?" Chu Feng asked. He felt that since Her Lady Queen had deliberately mentioned this matter to him, her dream must be special.

Hearing that, Her Lady Queen began to tell Chu Feng the dream that she had in full detail.

"This dream?"

Chu Feng's heart tensed up upon hearing the narration of Her Lady Queen's dream. He felt great disbelief.

The reason for that was because the dream that Her Lady Queen had was Chu Feng returning to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, to the Heavenly Road and the Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area.

At that place, Chu Feng saw his father. His father mentioned the promise between them again.

As for that dream, Chu Feng had also dreamed it.

Originally, Chu Feng felt that it was merely an ordinary dream.

However, judging from the situation now, it was definitely not an ordinary dream.

Otherwise, how could he and Her Lady Queen have the same dream?

# Chapter 2666 - The Great Law Enforcement Hall

---

Could it be that it was not a dream at all?

However, upon carefully recalling it, Chu Feng was determined that it was a dream.

The reason for that was because the sensations he felt and everything that occurred when he saw his father were so very unrealistic. It was truly like a dream, and most definitely not real.

That was a dream. That was most definitely a dream. Chu Feng was determined that it was a dream.

“Eggy, I also dreamed that dream of yours,” Chu Feng said.

“You also dreamed it? You’re saying that you had the same dream as me?” Her Lady Queen was very shocked.

“That’s right, it was the same dream,” Chu Feng said.

“You’re kidding. That’s simply too miraculous,” Her Lady Queen grew even more astonished.

Miraculous. Sure enough, this matter was very miraculous. That was the reason why Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were so astonished and feeling such disbelief.

Had it been before, Chu Feng would definitely ponder something like this deeply.

Merely, Chu Feng did not have the heart to do so right just then. The reason being, he was very worried. He was worried that the Evil God Sword had done some sort of irreversible thing during the time when his body was occupied by the Evil God Sword.

However, to Chu Feng’s joy, after he continued to travel for some time, the ground below was no longer filled with cracks. Instead, living things could be seen.



He was able to see emerald-green grass and dark green mountains, as well as waterfalls and streams. Upon seeing those, the unease in Chu Feng's heart immediately lessened greatly.

This meant that even though the Evil God Sword had unleashed massive destruction, the range of the destruction was limited. The entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm had not experienced heavy destruction.

This increased the possibility that his friends would be alive.

Afterward, Chu Feng discovered an Ancient Era's Teleportation Formation. Using that teleportation formation, Chu Feng was teleported to the vicinity of Hero City.

A sea of people were gathered outside Hero City. Many of them were kneeling on the ground.

Those people were practically all people that had experienced the calamity that day.

To those people, the gates of Hero City remained shut.

That was understandable too. After all, Hero City had witnessed the true appearances of these people.

Likely, the people from Hero City would never show any consideration for those people in the future. Furthermore, they would most definitely not allow them to join Hero City.

That said, although the fact that many people were still alive indicated that the Evil God Sword had not unleashed a massacre, Chu Feng's worry was still not completely eliminated.

The reason for that was because he did not sense Ying Mingchao and the others' auras upon entering Hero City. He only managed to sense Grandmaster Pocket's aura.

For the sake of finding out what had happened, Chu Feng decided to go and find Grandmaster Pocket.

"Almsgiver Chu Feng, is it really you?"

Grandmaster Pocket was extremely emotional upon seeing Chu Feng. He, who had always been a calm individual, actually moved toward Chu Feng and started to touch him all over. It was as if he did not dare to believe that it really was Chu Feng who stood before him.

“Grandmaster, it’s me. I’m alright now.”

Chu Feng smiled faintly. He was emotionally moved.

He could tell that Grandmaster Pocket was truly worried for him. Otherwise, he would not have reacted in such a manner.

Then, Chu Feng came to find out what had happened afterwards from Grandmaster Pocket.

That day, after Chu Feng had been devoured by the Evil God Sword, the calamity came to an end.

However, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others were all extremely worried for Chu Feng’s safety. Thus, they did not return to Hero City. Instead, they separated with one another and began to search for Chu Feng separately.

Fortunately, they had all left methods to communicate with one another.

Thus, through those methods, Grandmaster Pocket conveyed the news of Chu Feng’s return to Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others.

After some days passed, Ying Mingchao, Wang Qiang and the others that had received news of Chu Feng’s return, all returned to Hero City in succession.

Without any exception, they were all shocked and pleasantly surprised upon seeing that Chu Feng was truly safe and sound. The person that reacted in the most exaggerated manner was Wang Qiang. Not only was Wang Qiang so emotional that his speech grew unintelligible, but he even started to weep bitter tears, and rubbed his snot and tears all over Chu Feng’s clothes.

However, Chu Feng did not blame Wang Qiang for his reaction. Instead, he was speechlessly moved by him. It could be seen from Wang Qiang's reaction that Wang Qiang truly cared about him.

After verifying that Chu Feng was safe and sound, the crowd began to ask Chu Feng about where he went, and what happened after his body was devoured by the Evil God Sword.

As for Chu Feng, he answered that he was not sure.

Chu Feng was not lying. He was truly unsure.

Regardless, the crowd was feeling very happy, overjoyed even. After all, Chu Feng, the person that they were worried about the most, had safely returned.

After what happened, Chu Feng's status in their hearts had changed completely. Chu Feng was no longer an ordinary genius. Instead, he was a hero now. He was a great hero who had saved them from a demon's clutches.

Chu Feng was also feeling very happy. It was not because the crowd viewed him as a hero. Rather, it was because the people that he cared about were all safe and sound.

.....

Right when Chu Feng was having a reunion with his friends, another scene was happening in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

This was a vast palace hall. It was not extremely extravagant in appearance. However, it appeared very imposing. A solemn and dignified sensation filled the entire palace hall.

It made it so that people did not dare to have the slightest blasphemous intention there.

That palace hall was called the Great Law Enforcement Hall. It was a place under the administration of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall.

At that moment, Chu Huai and Chu Yue were kneeling in the Great Law Enforcement Hall. There were tens of people standing on either side of them.

Those people were all standing there in an orderly fashion. Each and every one of them possessed strength above Chu Huai and Chu Yue.

They had stern and imposing expressions and there was no trace of emotion on their faces. They gave off an invisible sort of oppressive pressure.

That said, even though those people all possessed powerful strength, and there was a seat behind every one of them, not a single person dared to sit down.

They seemed to be waiting for someone.

No, not all of them were standing. There was a single exception. It was a girl.

That girl had a head of pink hair tied into a long ponytail. Her hair was so long that it reached down to her heels. Perhaps it was because she took great care of her hair, but her hair was emitting a faint shine under the sunshine. It was quite eye-catching.

One could not determine what the true exact age of that pink-haired ponytailed girl was. However, her appearance was truly that of a young girl. Her skin was very young and tender.

Furthermore, she was not only limited to having a youthful and tender skin, but her appearance was also very stunning.

Her skin was fair like jade; Her facial features charmingly refined. This was especially true for her eyes; they were quick-witted and spirited.

Even Chu Yue, a beauty in her own right, was eclipsed by her beauty when appearing in the palace hall alongside her.

That said, although that woman possessed excellent beauty, she

gave off a prideful air. She sat there with a proud attitude, and gave off a sensation of looking down on everyone.

Even though she was facing all the seniors present, she did not reveal the slightest bit of humility. On the contrary, she simply did not place the crowd present in her eyes at all.

However, faced with a girl acting like her, none of the people present actually dared to voice any complaint.

It seemed that they had already grown accustomed to the girl's prideful attitude. Furthermore, they had already accepted it.

“My apologies. I was delayed by some matter. I have made everyone wait.”

Suddenly, an apologetic voice sounded. At the same time, a figure appeared in the palace hall.

That person was a middle-aged man. He was over two meters tall, and had a very robust build. There were two scars visible on his face. They seemed to be scars caused by a bladed weapon. Those scars looked very fierce, and made the man look somewhat scary.

However, if one were to remove those two scars, that man would actually have a very good-natured face. This was especially true just then, as that man had an apologetic smile on his face. That smile made him even more amiable and approachable.

That said, all the people present started to feel deep veneration for the middle-aged man once he appeared. They immediately half kneeled onto the ground and bowed respectfully, “We pay our respect to Lord Vice Hall Master.”

That's right, that amiable looking middle-aged man was no small matter.

Even in the Chu Heavenly Clan, he was someone with a very high status. His name was Chu Xuanzhengfa. He was the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

[1. His name is Chu Xuanzhengfa. It means Chu Xuan(carry out the law). The Xuan is the same Xuan as Chu Feng's father's Chu Xuanyuan's Xuan. This most likely signifies that they're from the same generation (Chinese people oftentimes name their children the same first character in their name according to the generation they're in.)]

This Chu Xuanzhengfa was a truly grand character. Not only was he revered in the Chu Heavenly Clan, but he was also renowned throughout the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

However, even though he was a grand character, that girl did not place him in her eyes at all.

Not only did she not stand up to respectfully greet him, but she did not even bother to lift her head. She did not even bother to look at the Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not reveal any trace of displeasure at the girl's attitude. Instead, he walked over to the girl's side and gently poked her forehead.

He said, "Lingxi, are you not going to greet your father?"

It turned out that the girl by the name of Chu Lingxi was actually the daughter of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master.

However, everyone knew that that was not the sole reason why Chu Lingxi dared to act so arrogantly and rude in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In addition to having her father behind her, she was also one of the Chu Heavenly Clan's current five strongest members of the younger generation.

Due to the fact that she possessed extraordinary talent, she was deemed to be a demon-level genius.

# Chapter 2667 - Important Matter To Report

---

“Humph.”

Faced with Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Lingxi pouted her lips and raised her face.

With a haughty attitude, she said, “Dear Lord Father, I came to find you right after returning.”

“Merely, Lord Father, you are simply too arrogant, no? Your daughter, I, have traveled far and hard to return and, out of filial piety, came to find you immediately. Yet you...”

“You actually refused to see me. If it wasn’t for those two’s appearance, I would likely not have been able to get to see you, no?”

After saying those words, Chu Lingxi cast a glance at the kneeling Chu Huai and Chu Yue. A displeased expression was present in her eyes.

“Foolish girl, your father had things to care of,” Chu Xuanzhengfa smiled. Then, he looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue, “Chu Huai, Chu Yue, you can get up.”

After he said those words, he waved his sleeve, and a gentle power brought Chu Huai and Chu Yue to their feet.

After that, Chu Xuanzhengfa arrived at the Law Enforcement Hall’s Master Seat.

“The two of you have stated that you have something important to report that must be conveyed to me directly. What is it?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

However, before the two of them could speak, Chu Xuanzhengfa looked over to Chu Lingxi. He said, “You’ve finally gotten to see your father, why are you leaving already?”

It turned out that Chu Lingxi had gotten up, and was walking

toward the exit of the Law Enforcement Hall.

“I am in no mood to listen to your troublesome things. I will return home first. If you want to see your daughter, you can find me at home later.”

“Oh, that’s right. There’s a limit of one hour. If you do not return in an hour, you will not be able to see me,” Chu Lingxi said haughtily.

Chu Xuanzhengfa shook his head with a smile. Then, he looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue, “Go ahead and tell me exactly what the important matter is.”

“Milord, we have come mainly to report two things to you.”

“Firstly, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm’s Infant Soul Sect has been exterminated,” Chu Huai said.

“What? The Infant Soul Sect has been exterminated?”

Hearing those words, not only was the crowd inside the Law Enforcement Hall shocked, but even Chu Lingxi, who had arrived by the exit, stopped in her tracks. Then, she pulled back her raised foot and looked to Chu Huai and Chu Yue with quick-witted eyes.

“Are you certain?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“Absolutely certain,” Chu Huai said.

“Who did it? Have you managed to discover that?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“It was done by a member of the younger generation by the name of Chu Feng,” Chu Huai said.

“Chu Feng?”

“Younger generation?”

Hearing those words, the gazes of the crowd all changed. Although they appeared to be undisturbed, they were all sending voice transmissions to one another and discussing the matter.



If it were some other power from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm that was eliminated, the people present would not even blink an eye.

However, the Infant Soul Sect was different. The Infant Soul Sect was a power that the Chu Heavenly Clan had not been able to eliminate for all these years.

In fact, many of the people present had challenged the Infant Soul Sect in their youth. However, it went without saying that all of them had returned in failure.

And now, someone had actually managed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect. How could they not be shocked by the news?

Furthermore, it was a member of the younger generation.

“Is this Chu Feng a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“He shouldn’t be a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Huai said.

“Then, he shouldn’t be someone from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, no?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“No, he should be from some other Upper Realm. However, he is most definitely not from our Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Huai said.

“You said that he’s a member of the younger generation, do you know his actual age?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“I am uncertain of his actual age. However, from my observation, he should have only just passed thirty years of age, and be no older than thirty-three,” Chu Huai said.

“Sssss~~~~” Hearing those words, many people present were unable to stop themselves from sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

Even Chu Xuanzhengfa’s expression changed. In fact, even the Chu Heavenly Clan’s demon-level genius, Chu Lingxi, revealed

interest in her eyes.

She had already returned to the Law Enforcement Hall from the exit. Furthermore, she had found a seat and sat down.

Logically, it was rare for something to make people of their status react in such a manner.

Thus, it indirectly illustrated how enormous of a thing it was to them for Chu Feng to have eliminated the Infant Soul Sect.

Actually, there were quite a few from the various Upper Realms' younger generations who were capable of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect. However, those capable of eliminating the Infant Soul Sect in their early thirties were extremely few.

At the very least, no one in the Chu Heavenly Clan was capable of accomplishing such a feat. This included the current five most talented demon-level geniuses. Even they were unable to accomplish that sort of thing at that age.

"Chu Huai, tell me all that you know about this Chu Feng," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Chu Huai began to narrate all that he knew about Chu Feng to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

This included Chu Fang having obtained the inheritance of the Ancient Era's War Clan.

He also mentioned that Chu Feng was not only a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline, but also someone that trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, as well as having a heaven-defying Demon Armament.

Hearing those things, many of the people present were unable to remain calm anymore. Merely the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was already able to sway their composure.

The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was something that no one in the current Chu Heavenly Clan had grasped.

Then, Chu Huai began to narrate what Chu Feng had experienced in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

He let the crowd know that Chu Feng's cultivation was originally not strong. However, in a mere few years, his cultivation increased by leaps and bounds.

From a mere nobody at the beginning, he became someone who managed to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect, someone who managed to kill the Ginseng King of Evil and save the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After hearing about all the things regarding Chu Feng, the crowd actually grew excited. Although those things had happened in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they were sufficient to become known as a legend.

“In other words, you two do not know exactly which Heavenly Clan that Chu Feng is from?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“We are incompetent. We were unable to obtain that information from our investigations,” Chu Huai and Chu Yue said with ashamed expressions.

Although their mission in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm was to monitor the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation, they felt that their actual duty was to monitor everything that happened in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

After all, they possessed strength much superior to the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

“You must immediately return to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to investigate. You must thoroughly investigate what that Chu Feng's origin is. It is very possible for that Chu Feng to be our Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation's strongest rival in the future,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord,” everyone from the Law Enforcement Hall spoke in

unison.

“Milord, there is no need for that. That Chu Feng is already dead,” Chu Huai said.

“Dead? How did he die?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

Then, Chu Huai began to narrate to Chu Xuanzhengfa what he had witnessed.

After finding out that Chu Feng had been killed after being devoured by his Demon Armament, many of the people present started to feel a bit of joy.

It was as Chu Xuanzhengfa had said. A member of the younger generation like Chu Feng could very well become the strongest rival to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations in the future.

If a mishap were to happen to him, it would mean that there was one less opponent for their Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations. To the Chu Heavenly Clan, this was a good thing.

However, compared to the great majority of the people in the Law Enforcement Hall, Chu Xuanzhengfa had a stern expression on his face. There was actually a trace of regret in his eyes.

“You said that you had two things to report. Apart from this, what else do you have to report?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“The person that made use of the Infant Soul Sect to undo the seal of the Ginseng King of Evil was a member of our clan, Chu Bore,” Chu Huai said.

“Bang~~~~”

Hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa stood up abruptly. An ice-cold chilliness filled the entire palace hall.

# Chapter 2668 - Incomparably Astonished

---

“Putt~~~”

Seeing that Chu Xuanzhengfa was furious, Chu Yue and Chu Huai immediately kneeled back onto the ground and did not dare to even raise their heads.

It could be seen that they were very afraid of Chu Xuanzhengfa.

“Vice Hall Master, please quell your anger,” the crowd in the Law Enforcement Hall said in unison.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa’s anger did not diminish. He turned to Chu Huai and asked, “Do you possess proof of your accusation?”

“Milord, this matter is absolutely true. The two of us have personally witnessed it.”

“Furthermore, it is not only the two of us that have witnessed this.”

“Due to the fact that Chu Bore wanted to silence everyone by killing them, he revealed himself and acted openly.”

“Thus, many people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm also witnessed Chu Bore’s true identity.”

“They all know that the mastermind behind the calamity was him,” Chu Huai said.

“I already knew that he has done some despicable things for the sake of extending his lifespan.”

“However, never would I have imagined that he would do this sort of inhumane thing for the sake of living longer. His actions are simply a disgrace to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s reputation.”

“If the evidence is conclusive, Chu Bore will not be spared.”

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s state of mind eased slightly. However, the anger in his eyes did not decrease.

“Men! Immediately go to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and arrest Chu Bore,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Yes, Milord.” Ten individuals from the Law Enforcement Hall stood forth of their own accord. After bowing respectfully, they began to walk toward the exit of the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Chu Huai, Chu Yue, I will investigate this matter. If it is really as you two have said, not only will I punish Chu Bore for his crimes, but I will also reward the two of you,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Thank you Milord,” Chu Huai and Chu Yue both revealed joyous expressions.

The two of them believed in Chu Xuanzhengfa’s investigative abilities. Since he got involved, they believed that Chu Bore would definitely admit to his crimes.

If that wasn’t the case, the two of them would not have come to report this matter to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Thus, when Chu Xuanzhengfa had decided to personally order an investigation into the matter, they did not fear that Chu Bore would refuse to admit to it. They were only waiting for Chu Bore to be convicted of his crimes and then obtain their rewards.

“All of you can leave now,” Chu Xuanzhengfa waved his hand.

Then, Chu Huai, Chu Yue and everyone else from the Law Enforcement Hall left.

At that moment, only Chu Xuanzhengfa and his daughter Chu Lingxi remained in the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

“Chu Feng...” Chu Xuanzhengfa had a pensive appearance on his face as he muttered that name.

“Father, it seems that you’re quite interested in that Chu Feng?” Chu Lingxi walked toward Chu Xuanzhengfa with graceful steps and hands behind her back.

“Aren’t you yourself also very interested? If you weren’t

interested, you wouldn't have returned after leaving, no?" Chu Xuanzhengfa said with a smile on his face.

"Humph, I have no interest in him at all. I was merely interested in the mission to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect."

"If it wasn't for you refusing to allow me to challenge that mission, how could that Chu Feng possibly be able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect?" Chu Lingxi said with a pout.

"Lingxi, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm's Infant Soul Sect was not as easy to handle as you imagined. Else... I would not have prevented you from taking the mission like I did," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"You do not trust me. Back then, if you had allowed me to go, I would definitely have been able to eliminate the Infant Soul Sect."

"I have already made inquiries about them. The strongest among the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm are only rank two True Immortals."

"As for me, I reached rank three True Immortal when I was thirty-nine years old. At that time, I was still within the age limit for the mission. As such, how could I be unable to eliminate a mere Infant Soul Sect?" Chu Lingxi said in a very annoyed manner.

"Okay okay, father was wrong, okay?" Chu Xuanzhengfa said with a smile on his face.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not truly believe that he was wrong. Merely, he did not wish to continue to quarrel with Chu Lingxi.

"Humph," Chu Lingxi raised her head. She did not appreciate her father giving in at all.

"Lingxi, do you wish to know what father is thinking about?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"What are you thinking about?" Chu Lingxi asked.

“I’m thinking that this Chu Feng might not be as simple as Chu Huai and Chu Yue have found out,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Why do you say that?” Chu Lingxi asked curiously.

“I’m thinking that Chu Feng might be Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Wasn’t it said that that trash already died? Even if he’s still alive, he is still trash. Thus, it shouldn’t be possible for this Chu Feng to be that trash, no?” Chu Lingxi said.

“There’s an exception to everything. Furthermore... you all simply do not know Chu Xuanyuan. He is an unfathomable individual,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Assuming he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, what more could it signify?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“If he really is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, then this Chu Feng would be a truly serious matter,” Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke with deep emotions.

“Why’s that?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Merely because he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Father, is that Chu Xuanyuan really that amazing? You’re exaggerating things, no?” Chu Lingxi narrowed her long, shapely eyebrows in a disbelieving manner.

“Haha...” Chu Xuanzhengfa burst into faint laughter. He said, “After what happened back then, Chu Xuanyuan became a taboo in the clan. Very few people dared to mention his name, and even fewer people dared to mention things concerning him.”

“Furthermore, many people in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were afraid of offending our Chu Heavenly Clan, and thus didn’t dare to mention Chu Xuanyuan either. This has led to you all knowing very little about Chu Xuanyuan.”



“Because of that, it is normal for you all to doubt Chu Xuanyuan’s strength.”

“However, if anyone from my generation dared to doubt Chu Xuanyuan’s strength, we would be laughed at by others.”

“Then, between him and father, who is stronger?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Haha,” Chu Xuanzhengfa laughed. This time around, he laughed very loudly. It was as if he had heard a funny joke.

Then, he turned to Chu Lingxi and asked, “Lingxi, how old are you now?”

“Forty-five. Why do you ask me that when you already know?” Chu Lingxi curled her lips.

“Lingxi, you possess excellent talent. Compared to when father was forty-five, you are stronger,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Of course,” Chu Lingxi curled her lips proudly.

“When father was forty-five, Chu Xuanyuan was only twenty-nine,” Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke meaningfully.

“In that case, it would mean that when father was forty-five, that Chu Xuanyuan was inferior to you, no?” Chu Lingxi said.

There was a sixteen year difference between Chu Xuanyuan and her father. During the early years of martial cultivation, such a difference in age was sufficient to create an enormous disparity in cultivation. This was even more so considering her father was not some nobody. Instead, he was known to be a genius in the Chu Heavenly Clan since his youth.

Thus, Chu Lingxi felt that when Chu Xuanyuan was twenty-nine years old, he should have been weaker than her father.

However, Chu Xuanzhengfa smiled and shook his head at Chu Lingxi’s response.

“Lingxi, when your father was forty-five years old, your

grandfather held the status that your father currently holds. He was our Chu Heavenly Clan's Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master."

"I know that. Grandfather was a Vice Hall Master for many years before finally ascending to Hall Master," Chu Lingxi said.

"Indeed, you knew that. However, there is one thing that you do not know," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"What is it?" Chu Lingxi asked curiously.

"When your father was forty-five years old, I was still training hard for the sake of my ranking among the younger generations. As for the things regarding the clan, I simply did not concern myself with them at all. Furthermore, I did not possess the strength to concern myself with the clan's matters either."

"However, at that time, Chu Xuanyuan, who was a total of sixteen years younger than your father, was this Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Ah?"

Chu Lingxi's beautiful eyes and mouth immediately opened wide upon hearing those words. Incomparable astonishment filled her beautiful young face.

She had thought the entire time that when her grandfather ascended to the Law Enforcement Hall's Hall Master, the person that held the status before her grandfather must have been one of the few Utmost Exalted Elders of their Chu Heavenly Clan.

After all, with the strength that her grandfather had back then, only those existences were capable of surpassing her grandfather.

Thus, she never expected for the person that stood above her grandfather to be a twenty-nine-year-old member of the younger generation.

# Chapter 2669 - Frighteningly Powerful

---

“Father, you’re toying with me, right?” Chu Lingxi asked.

The reason she said that was because she was unable to believe that Chu Xuanyuan’s strength was actually that powerful.

“Does your father seem like someone who would deceive you with something like that?”

“That is something known by the great majority of the people in our Chu Heavenly Clan. It is only you all, the people of the younger generation, who do not know,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“If Chu Xuanyuan was that powerful, how could he be imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm?” Chu Lingxi asked.

Chu Lingxi knew that Chu Xuanyuan was banished from the Chu Heavenly Clan over thirty years ago and imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

Thirty years ago, her father Chu Xuanzhengfa had been exactly nine hundred years old. Even if Chu Xuanyuan was sixteen years younger than her father, he must have been over eight hundred years old when he was banished.

If Chu Xuanyuan really possessed the power to become the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master when he was only twenty-nine, what sort of strength would he possess when he reached over eight hundred?

It was very likely that not even the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and those Utmost Exalted Elders would be a match for Chu Xuanyuan, even if they were to join hands against him.

However, it was true that Chu Xuanyuan was imprisoned in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

This precisely indicated that Chu Xuanyuan’s strength was

inferior to the Chu Heavenly Clan's.

In short, all of this was very unreasonable.

"Lingxi, what do you think of the strength of the Dao Imperial Palace?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"The Dao Imperial Palace? They possess very few disciples. However, they only accept elite disciples. As such, their overall strength is pretty decent."

"Not counting our Chu Heavenly Clan, I feel that the Dao Imperial Palace could be ranked third amongst the powers in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm."

"Unfortunately, the current Palace Master of the Dao Imperial Palace, Daoist Golden Crane, is extremely unattentive of his duties."

"I do not know why, but he actually went to a desolate place like the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm to enter closed-door training. He became an arm-flinging shopkeeper, and stopped managing the affairs of the Dao Imperial Palace."

"If that wasn't the case, the Dao Imperial Palace should be able to be ranked second among the various powers," Chu Lingxi said.

"I truly couldn't tell that you actually knew about the state of affairs of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm so well," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Of course," Chu Lingxi raised her head proudly.

"In that case, do you know about the Dao Imperial Palace's previous Palace Master, Daoist Golden Crane's master?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"I only care about the current state of affairs, and not things from the past. Furthermore, I have been undertaking missions all over the place, and rarely stay in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm for long. As such, how could I know about all those things?"

“Furthermore, aren’t we talking about Chu Xuanyuan? Why would you ask about all these other people?” Chu Lingxi said with her lips curled and a proud attitude.

Evidently, she had been baffled by her father’s question, and was feeling very displeased because of that.

“The Dao Imperial Palace’s previous Palace Master, Daoist Jing Tian, was deemed to be the strongest Palace Master to have ever appeared in the Dao Imperial Palace’s history.”

“You said it yourself. If you don’t count our Chu Heavenly Clan, the Dao Imperial Palace could be ranked third in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

“If it were during the the reign of Daoist Jing Tian, then the Dao Imperial Palace would be ranked first in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm when disregarding our Chu Heavenly Clan. Furthermore, they would be ranked first with absolute certainty.”

“When Daoist Jing Tian left for the Starfield Master Realm, he was... even able to stand on equal footings with our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, and receive the same sort of treatment,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Equal footing? Same sort of treatment?”

“In that case, wouldn’t it mean that the Dao Imperial Palace back then had managed to pose a threat to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s position as the overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?” Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi finally revealed an astonished expression on her face.

She knew very well that the Starfield Master Realm was the true overlord of this Starfield. Every year, the overlords from the various Upper Realms would have to proceed to the Starfield Master Realm to participate in the Starfield Governmental Assembly.

Apart from the overlords of the various Upper Realms, some

experts who were famous across the entire Starfield would also receive invitations to participate in the Starfield Governmental Assembly.

However, regardless of how powerful those experts might be, they would not receive the same sort of treatment as the overlords of the various Upper Realms.

If something like that were to happen, it would mean that that person or that person's power had managed to pose a threat to their Upper Realm's overlord. Furthermore, that person or that person's power had also managed to obtain the acceptance of the Starfield Master Realm.

“Indeed, they threatened our status.”

“Back then, the Dao Imperial Palace was filled with ambition. They were issuing provocations at our Chu Heavenly Clan repeatedly, and seemed to be trying to set off a war to seize the position of overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“In that case, how was the matter settled?” Curiosity filled Chu Lingxi's beautiful eyes.

The reason for that was because something like this was very serious. For the sake of maintaining their status as the overlord of their Upper Realm, the overlords would generally beat down those powers that posed a threat to their status.

Under that sort of situation, a power that posed a threat to the overlord would either rise to the occasion, rebel against the overlord and fight over the position of overlord...

Or, they would have to cower to the overlord and make some sacrifices to neutralize the crisis.

Judging from the way the Dao Imperial Palace behaved back then, it was very clear what their intention was. They had planned to settle the issue of who the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's

overlord would be through war.

However, no such war had occurred between the Chu Heavenly Clan and the Dao Imperial Palace.

That was why Chu Lingxi was curious as to exactly how the matter was settled.

“It was Chu Xuanyuan.”

“Chu Xuanyuan entered the Dao Imperial Palace by himself. Then, with no assistance, he defeated numerous experts from the Dao Imperial Palace.”

“Even Daoist Jing Tian, who was deemed to be the strongest Palace Master in the Dao Imperial Palace’s existence, was defeated by Chu Xuanyuan.”

“Not long after that happened, Daoist Jing Tian passed away. Because of that, the Dao Imperial Palace suffered a massive loss in strength. Naturally, they no longer posed a threat to our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi’s eyes were wide open. Astonishment filled her eyes. Even her fair-skinned face had turned red.

She was shaken by Chu Xuanyuan’s accomplishment. As a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, she involuntarily felt fired up upon hearing of Chu Xuanyuan’s accomplishment.

“Father, in that case, how old was Chu Xuanyuan back then?” Chu Lingxi asked.

Chu Lingxi felt that if the Dao Imperial Palace truly managed to pose a threat to their Chu Heavenly Clan, the Dao Imperial Palace’s Palace Master should have strength equivalent to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. Even if he was weaker, he wouldn’t be much weaker.

The fact that Chu Xuanyuan had defeated the Dao Imperial

Palace's Palace Master back then meant Chu Xuanyuan was capable of defeating their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Or, at the very least, he would not be inferior to their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Thus, Chu Lingxi was very curious as to how old Chu Xuanyuan was back then.

Judging by his age, she could determine exactly how talented Chu Xuanyuan was.

"Back then, Chu Xuanyuan was precisely twenty-nine years of age," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"You're kidding!!!"

The astonishment in Chu Lingxi's eyes instantly increased by several times. Even her 'you're kidding' was said in a screaming manner.

She was truly startled.

"Do you still think that I'm lying to you?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked with a smile.

"But, if Chu Xuanyuan truly possessed strength capable of matching our clan's Clan Chief when he was only twenty-nine years old, he should be far stronger than everyone in our Chu Heavenly Clan when he was arrested and imprisoned."

"Thus, how could he be willingly banished by our clan, and then imprisoned in the Ancestral Lower Martial Realm?" Chu Lingxi had a puzzled expression.

She had started to somewhat believe the stories about Chu Xuanyuan. However, it was precisely because she had started to somewhat believe it that she was unable to understand.

A person who was capable of matching their clan chief at the age of twenty-nine was no longer a genius that appeared once every ten thousand years. Instead, he was most likely a genius that



would not even appear once in a million years. Someone like Chu Xuanyuan was an actual demon-level genius, a person capable of changing the equilibrium of the martial cultivation world.

Someone like him would definitely have been able to advance his cultivation by leaps and bounds. When he was over eight hundred years old, what sort of strength would he possess? This was simply something unimaginable.

At the very least, Chu Lingxi felt that Chu Xuanyuan must have been extremely frightening back then.

The disparity between the strength of the Chu Heavenly Clan and Chu Xuanyuan must have been enormous.

The strength of the entire Chu Heavenly Clan was most likely inferior to Chu Xuanyuan alone.

# Chapter 2670 - Looking Forward To Being Alive

---

“After Chu Xuanyuan defeated the Dao Imperial Palace’s Palace Master, he retired from his position as the Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master and left the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“Once he left, he left for over eight hundred years.”

“There was no correspondence from him for over eight hundred years straight. No one knew where he went, and no one knew what he had experienced.”

“When he returned again, he brought an infant back with him. That infant was Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, Chu Hanxian’s grandson. Back then, the entire Starfield was shaken by his appearance.”

“The reason for that was because Chu Feng had inherited the strongest bloodline of our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Experts from various regions all arrived at our Chu Heavenly Clan to see exactly what sort of talent Chu Xuanyuan’s son would have.”

“Because of that, our clan soon prepared the talent test for Chu Feng.”

“That talent test could be said to be the most magnificent and unprecedented of all the talent tests conducted by our clan. It was truly bustling with noise and excitement.”

“Everyone was filled with anticipation. Merely...”

At that moment, Chu Xuanzhengfa started to sigh. He had a helpless expression on his face.

“You also know the result. It was revealed that Chu Feng did not possess any talent for martial cultivation, and was determined to

be trash, unable to partake in martial cultivation.”

“Everyone was greatly disappointed by this. Some even started to insult Chu Feng.”

“As for Chu Xuanyuan, how could he allow his own son to be insulted? He was enraged by the insults, and killed all those who insulted Chu Feng.”

“However, the great majority of those people were our Chu Heavenly Clan’s distinguished guests. There were even people from the Starfield Master Realm among those that he killed. They were people that not even our Chu Heavenly Clan could afford to offend.”

“For the sake of alleviating the various powers’ anger and presenting an explanation to the Starfield Master Realm, our clan had no choice but to banish Chu Xuanyuan and Chu Feng. Furthermore, we bestowed severe punishment upon them.”

“Actually, based on the situation back then, it was already a miracle that Chu Xuanyuan was able to survive.”

“Furthermore, Chu Xuanyuan did not resist when our clan wanted to severely punish him. Just like that, he allowed himself to be captured.”

“Many people felt that Chu Xuanyuan did not dare to resist because he knew that he was no match for our Chu Heavenly Clan and the various distinguished guests.”

“However, I do not feel that to be the case. I was also present at the time. I witnessed the expression in his eyes. There was not the slightest bit of fear in his eyes,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“In that case, it would mean that he accepted the punishment willingly. But... why would he do that? Even if he did not wish to make an enemy of our clan, he could’ve escaped. Why would he decide to accept the punishment?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Who knows? He has always been an unfathomable individual

since he was a child. Even I, your father, was never able to see through him,” Chu Xuanzhengfa shook his head.

At that moment, Chu Lingxi grew silent.

“Lingxi, you couldn’t have been shocked, right?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked with a smile.

He knew that his daughter was a very conceited girl. It was indeed very possible for her to be shocked after hearing about Chu Xuanyuan’s past deeds.

After all, regardless of how strong a genius might be, they would all be unworthy of being mentioned when compared against Chu Xuanyuan.

“Suddenly, I hope that Chu Xuanyuan’s son is still alive,” Chu Lingxi said.

“Why is that?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“Due to the difference in age, I am destined to be unable to compare against Chu Xuanyuan. However, if his son is still alive, I will be able to compare myself against him,” Chu Lingxi said.

“Perhaps you will have that opportunity,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Father, could it be that you feel that Chu Feng to still be alive? That he did not die after being devoured by his Demon Armament?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“I do not know whether Chu Feng is still alive or not. However, if that Chu Feng is really Chu Xuanyuan’s son, I dare to guarantee that he will most definitely be still alive,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Why is that?” Chu Lingxi asked.

“Merely because he is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, Chu Hanxian’s grandson,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi went quiet for a moment. However, soon, a beautiful smile emerged on her face.

Furthermore, anticipation filled her beautiful eyes.

.....

While Chu Lingxi and Chu Xuanzhengfa were conversing with one another, Chu Huai and Chu Yue had been standing outside the Great Law Enforcement Hall.

Chu Yue had been staring at the entrance of the Great Law Enforcement Hall the entire time. She did not even blink once.

Judging from their appearance, it seemed like they were waiting for someone. As for the person that they were waiting for, it would either be Chu Xuanzhengfa or Chu Lingxi.

After all, only Chu Xuanzhengfa and Chu Lingxi remained in the palace hall.

Finally, the entrance to the palace hall opened, and Chu Lingxi walked out from it.

Chu Lingxi obviously took notice of Chu Huai and Chu Yue. However, she did not even bother to take a glance at them. Instead, she began to walk away directly.

“Lingxi,” Seeing that, Chu Yue hurriedly shouted and then rushed toward her.

Hearing Chu Yue’s shout, Chu Lingxi stopped and turned around to look toward Chu Yue.

Her gaze was truly cold and detached. She simply did not seem to be seeing someone from her same clan, a relative. Instead, she was looking at Chu Yue as if she were seeing a stranger.

“You need something?” Chu Lingxi asked in a slightly annoyed manner.

“Lingxi, I’ve heard that you’ve been to the Daytime Upper Realm this time around and completed the hunting mission in the Daytime Upper Realm.”

“You are simply too amazing. You must know that that mission

had been set in place for seven hundred years now. Yet, no one has been able to accomplish it.”

“However, you’ve accomplished it. You are simply the number one genius in our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Yue declared with a joyous expression on her face. She was truly delighted. It was as if she was the one that had accomplished the mission.

However, Chu Lingxi did not appreciate Chu Yue’s praise in the slightest. Instead, she cast a disdain-filled glance at Chu Yue. Then, without saying any more, she continued to walk away.

Chu Yue felt very awkward. However, she did not give up. Instead, she took out a small jade case from her Cosmos Sack.

That jade case was of considerable value. Furthermore, it was meticulously decorated. Likely, the item contained inside would be extraordinary.

With the jade case in her hand, Chu Yue chased after Chu Lingxi, “Lingxi, this is a present that I’ve brought back from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for you. Please don’t mind it.”

“I’m sorry but I do mind, greatly,” Chu Lingxi turned around and left those words. Then, she continued walking around without a second thought.

At that moment, Chu Huai who was still standing where he was started to frown. He revealed a displeased expression.

The reason for that was because he had noticed that Chu Lingxi did not even bother to take a glance at the present Chu Yue prepared for her. Just like that, she turned her back toward Chu Yue.

How could this be minding and disliking the present? Chu Lingxi was simply feeling that Chu Yue was beneath her.

However, even though Chu Yue was left in an awkward situation, she did not reveal any clear sort of gloominess. Just like that, she put the jade case she held in her hand away.

“Chu Yue, why must you do this to yourself? Although we are from the same clan, people like Chu Lingxi are simply from a different world from us. Why must you always act like this toward them?”

“Aren’t you just asking to be snubbed by them?” Chu Huai stepped forward and asked Chu Yue.

He was slightly angry. However, it seemed that he was not only angry toward Chu Lingxi, but he was also angry at Chu Yue.

“How could I not know that? I know that I am going to be snubbed.”

“However, even if this is the case, I must still continue to do this, for this is an opportunity for me to change my destiny,” Chu Yue said in a very determined manner.

This time around, Chu Huai did not say anything. Merely, a sort of gaze emerged in his eyes.

It was a gaze of disappointment.

.....

An enormous change occurred to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm after experiencing that catastrophe.

The catastrophe had not only inflicted disastrous losses to all the sects and schools, but it had inflicted disastrous losses to the entire Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm did not grow peaceful because of that. Instead, it became even more chaotic.

The reason for that was because the great majority of those people that had survived the catastrophe were people with great ambitions. They began to take advantage of the situation to seize territories, and were stirring up wars nonstop.

The catastrophe completely altered the Hundred Refinements

Ordinary Realm.

As for the allied army, it was originally composed of elites from various schools and sects. However, after the catastrophe, those people managed to see a lot of things clearly. Thus, after the allied army was disbanded, many of them decided to directly join Hero City.

They felt that only the people from Hero City were their kindred spirits.

Furthermore, Hero City had once again become the most popular power in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Many of the survivors all wanted to join Hero City.

The reason for that was because Hero City was the only 'pure land' that remained in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, Hero City no longer allowed anyone to join it.

If one wanted to become a member of Hero City, one's cultivation would no longer be the most crucial matter. Instead, one's character had become the most crucial aspect. This caused the great majority of people to stay outside Hero City, unable to enter.

During this period of time, Chu Feng did not do anything. He had been accompanying his friends in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the entire time.

He enjoyed alcohol with them and talked endlessly. In fact, they would even go sightseeing.

Day and night, they enjoyed themselves.

The reason why Chu Feng was doing this was because he had accomplished all that he had to do.

Chu Feng was planning to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Once he left, he had no idea when he would be able to return.



Thus, he wanted to properly accompany his friends who had helped and journeyed with him in the past.

# Chapter 2671 - Farewell

---

On the day, Chu Feng finally left his group of close friends. Only Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang were with him.

Chu Feng was not preparing to leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, before leaving the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he had a place that he had to go to first.

They arrived at the Zhou Heavenly Clan, formerly one of the strongest powers in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Merely, the Zhou Heavenly Clan's palaces had already been destroyed. The mountains surrounding it had been flattened and the rivers dried out.

That place had turned into ruins. The former glory was gone from that vast land. All that remained... was an utter mess.

However, nine enormous characters were left behind in the sky.

'This is the consequence of provoking Chu Feng' [1.They're 9 characters in chinese.]

Those nine enormous characters were shining brightly in the sky. They were like suns hanging in the sky, visible from over a hundred miles away.

They were like a decree from the gods signaling the end of the Zhou Heavenly Clan, announcing the result of offending Chu Feng.

"W-Wow, this is s-simply too a-aggressive, n-no? If s-someone d-dares to p-provoke you t-two in the future, I w-will do t-this too," Wang Qiang said with a mischievous laugh as he looked at the words in the sky.

To the people from the Zhou Heavenly Clan, those nine characters were most definitely a nightmare.

However, to Wang Qiang, those nine characters were a pleasant surprise.

At the very least, he thought very highly of the person who had left those words.

Then, Wang Qiang looked to Chu Feng. He said, “S-Say, b-brother, do you r-really not know who helped you?”

Chu Feng shook his head. He was also pondering who wrote those nine characters while looking at them.

He wanted to know exactly who it was that had helped him from the shadows. That was his purpose for visiting the Zhou Heavenly Clan.

“Chu Feng, I feel that you should try using your Heaven’s Eyes to see if you can find any clues,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Eggy, you think that there are clues in the words?” Chu Feng asked.

“If there are no clues within the words, there will be no clues at all. This would only serve to prove that the person that left those words and exterminated the Zhou Heavenly Clan did not wish for you to know who they were,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded his head in agreement. Then, his eyes moved, and his expression changed.

His gaze became extremely sharp. It was as if he could penetrate everything, as if he could see through everything.

Before his Heaven’s Eyes, everything changed. Everything became clear.

“That is?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s gaze shifted. Then, he immediately soared into the sky and arrived between the characters ‘Chu’ and ‘Feng.’

If one were to inspect them with one’s naked eye, one would not see anything from those two characters. However, when viewing them with his Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that a bracelet was hidden in both the ‘Chu’ character and the ‘Feng’ character.

Chu Feng recognized those bracelets. Those were the bracelets that Su Rou and Su Mei wore.

“Bang~~~”

“Bang~~~”

Chu Feng shot forth both his fists simultaneously. He shattered both large characters. However, those two bracelets were completely intact.

Chu Feng held the two bracelets in his palms. At that moment, his heart was trembling.

He knew that it had been many days now since those bracelets were hidden within the words. However, he was still able to sense Su Mei and Su Rou’s auras from those bracelets.

In fact, he was even able to distinguish the fragrances of Su Mei and Su Rou from the two bracelets.

He was absolutely certain that those two bracelets belonged to Su Mei and Su Rou.

“Lil’ Rou, Lil’ Mei, it was done by you?”

“No, it was the Moon Immortal. It’s her? She’s also in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?”

Chu Feng became extremely emotional when he thought of that. After all, apart from eliminating the Infant Soul Sect and proving himself, he had other important tasks in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

For one, he needed to find Su Rou and Su Mei, and then retrieve them from the Moon Immortal.

For the other, he needed to find Ya Fei, Murong Wan and Yan Ruyu, who had mysteriously disappeared.

He had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for so long now. During the entire time he was there, he had been making inquiries about them. However, he had not been able to

scout out any information concerning their traces.

In the beginning, Chu Feng had thought that they had not arrived in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. However... he actually managed to discover Su Rou and Su Mei's bracelets. This meant that the two of them had been there before.

"Chu Feng, look, there's marks on those bracelets," suddenly, Her Lady Queen called something to Chu Feng's attention.

Chu Feng was so immersed in his complicated emotions upon discovering Su Rou and Su Mei's bracelets that he did not carefully inspect them.

It was only after hearing what Her Lady Queen said that Chu Feng noticed that there were indeed marks on the two bracelets.

Once those two marks were placed together, they would form a symbol. It was a symbol that only world spiritists could see.

Chu Feng hurriedly held the two bracelets together. The reason for that was because he knew very well that those two marks were not present on the bracelets before.

Thus, someone must've purposely left those two marks on the bracelets.

Those marks were the clue.

"Buzz~~~"

Sure enough, at the moment when the two bracelets were placed together, a message flew out from among them.

Chu Feng extended his hand and grabbed. With that, the message entered his head.

"Chu Feng, rest assured, Su Rou and Su Mei are very safe right now. You do not have to worry about them."

"I will be able to form my own body not long from now. At that time... I will personally bring the two of them back to you."

This message was left behind by the Moon Immortal.

“Damn it.”

Chu Feng felt furious in his heart.

The truth had finally been revealed.

Evidently, the person to eliminate the Zhou Heavenly Clan was the Moon Immortal. As for Su Rou and Su Mei, they were still in her grasp.

Even though Chu Feng knew that the Moon Immortal was forced into occupying Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies, and that the clues that she had spent great effort to leave behind also served to prove that she did not plan to cause harm to Su Rou and Su Mei, and that she was also extremely apologetic toward him, Chu Feng remained very angry.

After all, those were his beloved women. The Moon Immortal had seized Su Rou and Su Mei’s bodies without their consent at all.

She had forcibly seized their bodies.

Chu Feng had also experienced the feeling of having his body seized by the Evil God Sword. Thus, he knew very well the feeling of helplessness, when he no longer held control over his body.

As for Su Rou and Su Mei, the two of them had had to endure that sort of feeling for so long. As such, how could Chu Feng not feel distressed? How could he not be angry?

“Chu Feng, your anger will not be able to do anything. She should’ve been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm the entire time. However, she was able to avoid you for so long. This means that she most definitely possesses some sort of concealment ability.”

“Fortunately, she does not plan to cause any harm to Su Rou and Su Mei. I believe that they should be safe.”

“You shouldn’t worry too much about it either,” Her Lady Queen

advised.

Chu Feng understood all of that. However, he was still unable to contain his anger. That said... he did not wish to worry Her Lady Queen. Thus, he could only forcibly suppress the anger deep down into his heart and not directly reveal it. He planned to endure the anger alone.

Afterwards, Chu Feng returned to Hero City. After bidding farewell to everyone, he proceeded toward an ancient teleportation formation. That teleportation formation was called the Stairway to Heaven.

Merely, this Stairway to Heaven did not lead to the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Rather, it led to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

“Chu Feng, don’t forget about us.”

“Chu Feng, you must definitely come back and visit us in the future.”

A large group of people were gathered underneath the Stairway to Heaven. Many people from Hero City had showed up to see Chu Feng off.

It was not only those who had friendships with Chu Feng. Even those who did not possess any friendship with Chu Feng also gathered to see him off.

If Zhan Haichuan and Grandmaster Kai Hong were two legendary individuals of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm from two different periods, then Chu Feng would be, in their eyes, the legend of the present era.

They all felt that even after entering the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, Chu Feng would be able to attain standing there. They were all filled with anticipation toward Chu Feng’s future.

Although they were unable to personally witness what Chu Feng would experience and how he would overcome his obstacles upon

reaching the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they were able to witness with their very eyes how Chu Feng would leave the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, how he would end his story in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

With that... Chu Feng would have a new beginning.

To them, being able to personally see Chu Feng off was a sort of honor.

It was something that they could brag about for the rest of their lives.

“Everyone, please rest assured. I will definitely return.”

“These are my kind regards. Everyone, please accept them.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out stones from his Cosmos Sack,

Then, he personally handed those stones to Daoist Three Swords, Grandmaster Pocket, Tang Ying, Xu Yiyi, Song Biyu... and many others.

Originally, the crowd thought that Chu Feng was planning to gift them some sort of precious gift. Thus, they had originally thought about refusing him.

However, upon discovering that they were merely ordinary stones, they all gladly accepted them.

Chu Feng handed the last stone to the guardian clan's clan chief.

Merely, the guardian clan's clan chief was still wearing that long gown that concealed his appearance. No one knew who he was.

“Senior, I will entrust that matter to you,” Chu Feng said through a voice transmission.

“Young Master Chu Feng, please rest assured. I will definitely carry out your request,” the guardian clan's clan chief guaranteed.



## Chapter 2672 - Chu Feng's Gifts

---

The request that Chu Feng made to the guardian clan's clan chief was related to Xian Miaomiao.

When Chu Feng left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and entered the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, he knew that Xian Miaomiao would one day enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm too.

Firstly, she was sufficiently talented enough to enter the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Secondly... she needed to find her mother.

Because of that, Chu Feng had given her two items. One was a key capable of making a breach in the formation barrier surrounding the Hundred Refinements Stage. As for the other, it was a Golden Flash Bird. Using that Golden Flash Bird, Xian Miaomiao could search for him upon entering the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Merely, Chu Feng had been in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm for a long time already. Yet, there had been no news from Xian Miaomiao at all. Chu Feng guessed that she should not have arrived at the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm yet.

However, Chu Feng had things to take care of, and could not continue to wait for Xian Miaomiao forever. That why was Chu Feng made a request of the guardian clan's clan chief.

He asked the guardian clan's clan chief to take note of Xian Miaomiao, and asked him to take care of her should he run into her.

As for the guardian clan's clan chief, he naturally accepted Chu Feng's request. After all, to him, Chu Feng was his master.

“Who is that person?”

Suddenly, questioning words sounded from the vast crowd.

As that place was the Stairway to Heaven that led to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, very few people would generally show up there.

The reason for that was because that place was the place that was closest to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Thus, it became a sacred place for the people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, at that moment, an old man wearing tattered clothes and covered in dust had appeared nearby.

If those with insufficient strength going there was already something disrespectful, then to arrive dressed as that old man was, would be absolutely disrespectful.

Inevitably, this caught the attention of the Hero City crowd.

Due to curiosity, Chu Feng also cast a glance over there. However, upon seeing the old man, Chu Feng's expression immediately changed. He was shocked.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that old man. He was the master of the Unknown Burial Ground.

Although he was dressed like one, he was not a beggar. Instead, he was an unfathomably powerful expert, a truly grand individual.

Upon seeing the old man, Chu Feng subconsciously walked toward him. He wanted to greet him.

Although Chu Feng had managed to clear the Unknown Burial Ground with his own ability, it remained that he obtained benefits from the old man. Thus, Chu Feng was very respectful toward the old man.

“Don't! Don't come over! Don't come over!”

Before Chu Feng could approach, that old man suddenly turned frantic. He shouted at Chu Feng to not approach him, and began to rapidly run away.

He had a very flustered appearance, and was actually unable to even stand straight. From time to time, he would tumble. However, he would immediately get back up and continue running away.

Chu Feng stood there, confused. He discovered that the situation seemed to be amiss and that the old man seemed to be affected by some sort of shock.

However, that place was the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Who could possibly shock him to a state like that?

Chu Feng started to ponder. However, he was unable to think of an answer.

“Brother Chu Feng, do you know that person? Could it be that he is someone who has offended you before? Should we go and capture him for you so that you can properly teach him a lesson?” Lil’ Ball said after walking over.

Back then, Lil’ Ball had disliked Chu Feng because of how well Ying Mingchao treated him. He had even deliberately tried to make things difficult for Chu Feng in front of everyone.

However, after that calamity, not only did Lil’ Ball no longer feel any antipathy toward Chu Feng, but he was instead filled with admiration for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was looking thoughtfully at the direction where that old man had left. After a short while, he turned to Lil’ Ball and the others, “You all must not go and provoke that man.”

“Why is that?”

The crowd were all bewildered by Chu Feng’s words. They all felt that tattered old man to be no different from a beggar.

However, what Chu Feng said caused the crowd to feel that that old man possessed a remarkable origin.

Naturally, that old man possessed a remarkable origin. He was

the Exalted Sacred Tiger.

He was someone who could drown all these people to death with a mere spit.

He had merely become like this after being tortured by the Old Ape.

Of course, no one there knew that old man to be Exalted Sacred Tiger. Not even Chu Feng knew about his identity.

“Remember his appearance. If you all are to encounter him again, you all must not attempt to provoke him,” Chu Feng warned again. He had a very serious expression as he said those words.

He had no idea what that old man had encountered. However, he knew that old man’s strength to be extraordinary. After all, that old man was the master of the Unknown Burial Ground.

Because of that, Chu Feng did not dare to rashly approach him even though he currently suffered from a confused mental state. As such, it would be extremely unwise for Lil’ Ball and the others to approach that old man.

“Definitely.”

Although Lil’ Ball and the others had no idea why Chu Feng was telling them to be careful of that old man, they all nodded at Chu Feng’s warning. They did not dare to disobey Chu Feng’s words.

“Everyone, farewell,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

Then, together with Wang Qiang, Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng stepped onto the Stairway to Heaven.

That’s right, it was not only Chu Feng, Zhao Hong and Wang Qiang. Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, after reconciling with one another, also planned to enter the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, and decided to accompany Chu Feng and the others.

After all, they would be able to keep each other company by journeying together.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please wait.”

Right at that moment, an aged voice was heard. An old man was flying over from afar. And landed before the Stairway to Heaven.

That person was Grandmaster Prophet.

Originally, Chu Feng held ill feelings toward Grandmaster Prophet. After all, if it wasn't for his prophecy, the Kong Heavenly Clan would not have tried to kill him.

However, Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies actually ended up happening. For example, Grandmaster Prophet had accurately prophesied that calamity.

Furthermore, Chu Feng really became the person to save everyone from the calamity.

“Grandmaster, could it be that you've managed to make a prophecy?” Chu Feng asked.

After Chu Feng discovered that Grandmaster Prophet's prophecies were indeed trustworthy, Chu Feng entrusted Grandmaster Prophet to help him find traces of the Moon Immortal, as well as places where Ya Fei and the others might be. He wanted to know where he had to go to find them.

However, even after so many days had passed, Grandmaster Prophet was unable to make any prophecies regarding their whereabouts.

Seeing that Grandmaster Prophet was rushing over here, Chu Feng thought that Grandmaster Prophet had managed to prophesize something.

“My apologies, this old man is incompetent, and was unable to make any prophecies,” Grandmaster Prophet shook his head.

“Don't mind it,” Chu Feng said with a light smile. Then, he asked, “Then, Grandmaster, what might have brought you here?”

“Little friend Chu Feng, this old man owes you. Thus, I've always

wanted to make it up to you.”

“Although I was unable to predict the whereabouts of your friends... I managed to predict things concerning you,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“Little friend Chu Feng, after you reach the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, it is best to leave immediately, and proceed for other Upper Realms to train,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Why?” Chu Feng asked.

“I prophesied that you will encounter countless trials and tribulations after entering the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. It is going to be extremely dangerous, and you might even suffer a mishap and die in there.”

“To you, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm is an ominous place. You absolutely cannot stay there for long,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

The crowd’s expressions all changed enormously upon hearing those words. Then, they looked nervously at Chu Feng. Although they did not say anything, worry filled their eyes.

After all, they all knew very well that Grandmaster Prophet’s prophecies were extremely accurate.

As for his current prophecy, it stated that Chu Feng would be met with countless trials and tribulations in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

“Y-yo-you s-shut the fuck up!”

“What t-the fuck did you come here for? A-Are you here to dampen o-our mood?”

Wang Qiang was angry. He walked out from the Stairway to Heaven and then grabbed Grandmaster Prophet. He was planning to beat him up.

Wang Qiang's reaction was also understandable. After all, they were filled with expectations for the journey to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. What Grandmaster Prophet said was simply equivalent to throwing a basin of cold water over Chu Feng. This was indeed dampening the mood.

“Wang Qiang, let him go.”

However, right at that moment, Chu Feng stopped Wang Qiang and rescued Grandmaster Prophet from Wang Qiang's grasp.

Compared to the furious Wang Qiang and the nervous crowd, Chu Feng remained very calm after hearing what Grandmaster Prophet said.

Chu Feng knew very well how dangerous the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was even without others telling him about it.

Thus, Chu Feng was not surprised at all by Grandmaster Prophet's prophecy.

“Everyone, please don't worry. I have known from the very start that my journey to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm will not simply be filled with smooth sailing.”

“In fact, I, Chu Feng, have never had a smooth journey ever since I stepped onto the road of martial cultivation.”

“However, this is how the path of martial cultivation is. Even though I know that there are countless trials and tribulations ahead, I cannot retreat in the slightest.”

“After all, the path of martial cultivation is a path going against the heavens. If I want to obtain strength, I must fight against the heavens for it.”

“Else, I will make no progress,” Chu Feng said to the crowd.

“That's right. What Lord Chu Feng said is correct.”

At that moment, cries of applause sounded from the crowd. They were all cheering for Chu Feng.

“However, Grandmaster Prophet, I must still thank you for reminding me. That said, Grandmaster Prophet, I am actually more curious about another thing than this. Might Grandmaster be willing to present to me an answer?” Chu Feng said to Grandmaster Prophet.

“Little friend Chu Feng, please ask away. As long as it is something that I know, I will definitely tell you,” Grandmaster Prophet said.

“Exactly who gave you your Prophecy Crystal Ball?” Chu Feng asked.

“...” Grandmaster Prophet grew silent upon hearing those words. A difficult expression appeared on his face.

“If it is too difficult, then you don’t have to worry about it,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

Chu Feng had heard from Grandmaster Prophet that his Prophecy Crystal Ball was given to him by a godly individual. It was precisely that Prophecy Crystal Ball that had changed his destiny.

However, it was likely that that godly individual had told Grandmaster Prophet to not mention him or her. Thus, Grandmaster Prophet did not wish to reveal who that person was to anyone.

Right at that moment, Grandmaster Prophet’s voice transmission entered Chu Feng’s ears. “Little friend Chu Feng, I can tell you. However, you must not tell others.”

“Although I do not know that godly individual’s name, he once mentioned to me before that others addressed him as Exalted Heavenly Fate.”

“My thanks,” Chu Feng remembered the name.

Although Chu Feng had no idea who that person might be, he felt that the fact that that person possessed such a treasure and was



willing to gift it to another meant that that person must be an extremely extraordinary individual.

Furthermore, his name was Exalted Heavenly Fate. Could it be that he was an Exalted-level expert?

If that was the case, it would be even more amazing.

“Everyone, farewell. The future is long, we will definitely meet again.”

Chu Feng clasped his fist at the crowd again. Then, together with Zhao Hong, Wang Qiang, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng stepped onto the Stairway to Heaven.

After stepping onto the Stairway to Heaven, Chu Feng began to ascend the steps reaching upward. Soon, he disappeared from the crowd’s line of sight.

“Buzz~~~”

After Chu Feng and the others disappeared, the rocks that the crowd held in their hands suddenly started to emit light.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

Immediately afterward, those rocks all shattered like watermelons.

After those rocks shattered, the crowd discovered that there was a Cosmos Sack in each rock.

The crowd held the Cosmos Sacks and started to inspect them. It was only then that they discovered that the Cosmos Sacks contained a great amount of treasures.

At that moment, those people who had received rocks from Chu Feng started to look to one another. A pleasantly surprised expression filled their faces.

Originally, they had thought those rocks to be a simple parting gift. Never did they expect Chu Feng to give them such enormous gifts.

All the people who obtained rocks from Chu Feng were people who had previously befriended him.

Some among them had helped Chu Feng in the past, and others did not. However, Chu Feng still prepared gifts for them. The gifts that Chu Feng prepared for them were all different.

Those were meticulously prepared gifts. Not only were the things in the Cosmos Sacks capable of helping them in their present, but they would also help them in the future.

Those were gifts prepared personally for each and every one of them.

Xu Yiyi and the others who had befriended Chu Feng, regardless of their gender and age, were all tightly holding onto the Cosmos Sack given to them by Chu Feng, whilst emotions filled their hearts.

As for those who did not receive gifts from Chu Feng, they all had envious expressions on their faces.

Although they did not know what was in the Cosmos Sacks, they were able to guess from the reaction of those who had received the Cosmos Sacks that they most definitely contained precious gifts.